



Margaret Ferguson

Mary Jo Salter

Jon Stallworthy

Shorter Fifth Edition

The NORTON
ANTHOLOGY *of*
POETRY

The Norton Anthology
of Poetry

FIFTH EDITION

Editors Emeriti

Alexander Allison

LATE OF THE UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

Herbert Barrows

PROFESSOR EMERITUS, UNIVERSITY OF MI
CHIGAN

Caesar R. Blake

UNIVERSITY OF TORONTO

Arthur J. Carr

LATE OF WILLIAMSCOLLEGE

Arthur M. Eastman

LATE OF VIRGINIA POLYTECHNIC
INSTITUTE AND STATE UNIVERSITY

Hubert M. English, Jr.

UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN



The Norton Anthology
of Poetry

FIFTH EDITION

Margaret Ferguson

UNIVERSITY OF CALIFORNIA, DAVIS

Mary Jo Salter

MOUNT HOLYOKE COLLEGE

Jon Stallworthy

OXFORD UNIVERSITY

W • W • NORTON & COMPANY • New York • London

W. W. Norton & Company has been independent since its founding in 1923, when William Warder Norton and Mary D. Herter Norton first published lectures delivered at the People's Institute, the adult education division of New York City's Cooper Union. The Nortons soon expanded their program beyond the Institute, publishing books by celebrated academics from America and abroad. By mid-century, the two major pillars of Norton's publishing program—

trade books and college texts—were firmly established. In the 1950s, the Norton family transferred control of the company to its employees, and today—with a staff of four hundred and a comparable number of trade, college, and professional titles published each year—W. W.

Norton & Company stands as the largest and oldest publishing house owned wholly by its employees.

Copyright © 2005, 1996, 1983, 1975, 1970 by W. W. Norton & Company, Inc.

All rights reserved.

Printed in the United States of America.

Since this page cannot legibly accommodate all of the copyright notices, pp. 2140—50

constitute an extension of the copyright page.

The text of this book is composed in Fairfield Medium with the display set in Bernhard Modern.

Composition by Binghamton Valley Composition.

Manufacturing by R. R. Donnelley & Sons, Inc.

Editor: Julia Reidhead

Developmental Editor: Kurt Wildermuth

Electronic Media and Ancillaries Editor: Eileen Connell

Assistant Editor: Erin Dye

Permissions Manager and Associate: Nancy Rodwan,
Margaret Gorenstein Book Designer: Antonina Krass

Production Manager: Diane O'Connor

Managing Editor, College: Marian Johnson

Library of Congress Cataloging-in-Publication Data

The Norton anthology of poetry / [edited by] Margaret
Ferguson, Mary Jo Salter, Jon Stallworthy.—5 th ed.

p. cm.

Includes bibliographical references and index.

ISBN **0-393-97920-2 (pbk.)**

1. English poetry. 2. American poetry. I. Ferguson, Margaret,
W., 1948— II. Salter, Mary Jo. III. Stallworthy, Jon.

PR1174.N6 2004b

821.008—dc22 2004058100

W. W. Norton & Company, Inc., 500 Fifth Avenue, New York,
N.Y. 10110

www.wwnorton.com

W. W. Norton & Company Ltd., Castle House, 75/76 Wells
Street, London W I T 3QT

1 2 3 4 5 6 7 8 9 0

Contents

[PREFACE TO THE FIFTH EDITION lix](#)

[Editorial Procedures lxi](#)

[ACKNOWLEDGMENTS lxiii](#)

M D M O N ' S HYMN (translated by John Pope) 1

From BEOWULF (translated by Seamus Heaney) 2

R I D D L E S (TRANSLATED BY R I C H A R D H A M E
R) 1 0

1 ("I am a lonely being, scarred by swords")

2 ("My dress is silent when I tread the ground") 10

3 ("A moth ate words; a marvellous event") 11

THE WIFE'S LAMENT (translated by Richard Hamer) 11

THE SEAFARER (translated by Ezra Pound) 12

ANONYMOUS

Now Go'thS LYRIC

Sun

S O

undeFr THE

WooTdHIRTEE

1 NTH AN

5 D FOURTEENTH CENTURIES 15

The Cuckoo Song 15

Ubi Sunt Qui ante Nos Fuerunt? 16

Alison 18

Fowls in the Frith 19

I Am of Ireland 19

G E O F F R E Y C H A U C E R (ca. 1343-1400) 19

T H E C A N T E R B U R Y T A L E S 1 9

The General Prologue 19

The Wife of Bath's Prologue and Tale 39

T R O I L U S A N D C R I S E I D E 6 7

Cantus Troili 67

L Y R I C S A N D O C C A S I O N A L V E R S E 6 8

To Rosamond 68

Truth 69

Complaint to His Purse 69

To His Scribe Adam 70

W I L L I A M L A N G L A N D (ca. 1330-ca. 1400)

7 1

Piers Plowman, lines 1—111 71

v i / C O N T E N T S

PEARL, 1-5 (1375-1400)

CHARLES D'ORLEANS (1391-1465)

The Smiling Mouth 77

Oft in My Thought 78

A N O N Y M O U S LYRICS OF THE F I F T E E N T H C
E N T U R Y

Adam Lay I-bounden 79

I Sing of a Maiden 79

Out of Your Sleep Arise and Wake 80

I Have a Young Sister 81

I Have a Gentle Cock 82

Timor Mortis 82

The Corpus Christi Carol 83

Western Wind 84

A Carol of Agincourt 84

The Sacrament of the Altar 85

See! Here, My Heart 86

WILLIAM DUNBAR (ca. 1460-ca. 1525)

Lament for the Makaris 86

Done Is a Battle 89

JOHN SKELTON (1460-1529)

Mannerly Margery Milk and Ale 90

To Mistress Margaret Hussey 91

From Colin Clout 92

Phillip Sparow 94

EARLY M O D E R N BALLADS

The Douglas Tragedy 97

Lord Randal 100

The Three Ravens 101

The Twa Corbies 102

Sir Patrick Spens 103

The Unquiet Grave 104

The Wife of Usher's Well 105

Bonny Barbara Allan 107

Mary Hamilton 108

Get Up and Bar the Door 110

The Bitter Withy 112

The Knight and Shepherd's Daughter 113

A N O N Y M O U S ELIZABETHAN AND JACOBEAN P O E M S

Love Me Little, Love Me Long 117

Fine Knacks for Ladies 119

To His Love 119

Weep You No More, Sad Fountains 120

There Is a Lady Sweet and Kind 121

The Silver Swan 121

C O N T E N T S / v i i

A Song Bewailing the Time of Christmas, So Much Decayed
in

England 122

Tom o' Bedlam's Song 124

THOMAS WYATT (1503-1542) 126

The Long Love, That in My Thought Doth Harbor 126

Whoso List to Hunt 126

My Galley 127

They Flee from Me 127

Patience, Though I Have Not 128
My Lute Awake! 129
Is It Possible 130
Forget Not Yet 131
Blame Not My Lute 131
What Should I Say 132
Lucks, My Fair Falcon 133
Stand Whoso List 134
Mine Own John Poins 134
HENRY HOWARD, EARL OF SURREY (ca. 1517-1547) 137
The Soote Season 137
Love, That Doth Reign and Live within My Thought 137
Wyatt Resteth Here 138
So Cruel Prison 139
ANNE ASKEW (1521-1546) 140
The Ballad Which Anne Askew Made and Sang When She
Was in
Newgate 140
[QUEEN ELIZABETH I \(1533-1603\) 142](#)
When I Was Fair and Young 142
[The Doubt of Future Foes Exiles My Present Joy] 142
[Ah Silly Pug, Wert Thou So Sore Afraid] 143
[GEORGE GASCOIGNE \(ca. 1534-1577\) 144](#)
And If I Did, What Then? 144
For That He Looked Not upon Her 144
Gascoigne's Lullaby 145
[ISABELLA WHITNEY \(fl. 1567-1573\) 146](#)
A S W E E T N O S E G A Y 1 4 6

A Communication Which the Author Had to London, Before
She Made Her Will 146

From The Manner of Her Will, & What She Left to London,
and to All Those in It, at Her Departing 147

CHIDIOCK TICHBORNE (d. 1586)

1128

[My Prime of Youth Is but a Frost of Cares] 151

viii / CONTENTS

SIR WALTER RALEGH (ca. 1552-1618) 151

A Vision upon the Fairy Queen 151

The Nymph's Reply to the Shepherd 152

The Passionate Man's Pilgrimage 153

The Lie 154

Nature, That Washed Her Hands in Milk 156

If Cynthia Be a Queen, a Princess, and Supreme 157

[Fortune Hath Taken Thee Away, My Love] 158

EDMUND SPENSER (1552-1599) 159

THE SHEPHEARDES CALENDER 159

Aprill 159

THE FAERIE QUEENE 165

Book 1, Canto 1 166

Book 1, Canto 2 179

AMORETTI 190

Sonnet 1 ("Happy ye leaves when as those lilly hands") 190

Sonnet 8 ("More then most faire, full of the living fire") 190

Sonnet 15 ("Ye tradefull Merchants that with weary
toyle") 191

Sonnet 23 ("Penelope for her Ulisses sake") 191

Sonnet 54 (“Of this worlds Theatre in which we stay”) 192

Sonnet 67 (“Lyke as a huntsman after weary chace”) 192

Sonnet 68 (“Most glorious Lord of lyfe that on this
day”) 192

Sonnet 70 (“Fresh spring the herald of loves mighty
king”) 193

Sonnet 71 (“I joy to see how in your drawn work”) 193

Sonnet 75 (“One day I wrote her name upon the
strand”) 194

Sonnet 79 (“Men call you fayre, and you doe credit it”) 194

Sonnet 81 (“Fayre is my love, when her fayre golden
heares”) 194

Sonnet 89 (“Lyke as the Culver on the bared bough”) 195

Epithalamion 195

FULKE GREVILLE, LORD BROOKE (1554-1628) 206

C A E L I C A 2 0 6

4 (“You little stars that live in skies”) 206

39 (“The nurse-life wheat within his green husk
growing”) 206

JOHN LYLY (1554-1606) 207

Cupid and My Campaspe 207

Oh, For a Bowl of Fat Canary 207

SIR PHILIP SIDNEY (1554-1586) 208

Ye Goatherd Gods 208

What Length of Verse? 210

The Nightingale 211

Ring Out Your Bells 212

C O N T E N T S / i x

A S T R O P H I L A N D S T E L L A 2 1 3

1 (“Loving in truth, and fain in verse my love to show”) 213

14 (“Alas, have I not pain enough, my friend”) 213

21 (“Your words my friend [right healthful caustics]
blame”) 214

25 (“The wisest scholar of the wight most wise”) 214

31 (“With how sad steps, Oh Moon, thou climb’st the
skies”) 214

39 (“Come sleep, Oh sleep, the certain knot of peace”) 215

47 (“What, have I thus betrayed my liberty?”) 215

48 (“Soul’s joy, bend not those morning stars from me”) 216

49 (“I on my horse, and Love on me, doth try”) 216

52 (“A strife is grown between Virtue and Love”) 216

63 (“O Grammar rules, o now your virtues show”) 217

71 (“Who will in fairest book of Nature know”) 217

72 (“Desire, though thou my old companion art”) 218

Fourth Song (“Only joy, now here you are”) 218

Seventh Song (“Whose senses in so evil consort, their
stepdame

Nature lays”) 219

90 (“Stella, think not that I by verse seek fame”) 220

107 (“Stella, since thou so right a princess art”) 220

GEORGE PEELE (1557-1596) 221

His Golden Locks Time Hath to Silver Turned 221

Hot Sun, Cool Fire 221

THOMAS LODGE (1558-1625) 222

Rosalind’s Madrigal 222

ROBERT SOUTHWELL (ca. 1561-1595) **223**

The Burning Babe 223

New Heaven, New War 223

[MARY SIDNEY \(1561-1621\) 225](#)

Psalm 58: *Si Were Utique* 225

Psalm 114: *In Exitu Israel* 226

To the Thrice-Sacred Queen Elizabeth 226

[SAMUEL DANIEL \(1563-1619\) 230](#)

DELIA 230

1 (“Unto the boundless Ocean of thy beauty”) 230

2 (“Go wailing verse, the infants of my love”) 230

6 (“Fair is my love, and cruel as she’s fair”) 231

36 (“But love whilst that thou mayst be loved again”) 231

37 (“When men shall find thy flower, thy glory pass”) 231

49 (“Care-charmer Sleep, son of the sable Night”) 232

50 (“Let others sing of knights and paladins”) 232

53 (“Unhappy pen and ill accepted papers”) 233

Ulysses and the Siren 233

Are They Shadows 235

x / C O N T E N T S

MICHAEL DRAYTON (1563-1631) 235

A Roundelay between Two Shepherds 235

IDEA 236

To the Reader of these Sonnets 236

6 (“How many paltry, foolish, painted things”) 237

14 (“If he from heaven that filched that living fire”) 237

61 (“Since there’s no help, come let us kiss and part”) 238

CHRISTOPHER MARLOWE (1564-1593) 238

Hero and Leander 238

The Passionate Shepherd to His Love 256

WILLIAM SHAKESPEARE (1564-1616) 257

SONNETS 257

Dedication 257

- 1 ("From fairest creatures we desire increase") 257
- 2 ("When forty winters shall besiege thy brow") 258
- 3 ("Look in thy glass and tell the face thou viewest") 258
- 12 ("When I do count the clock that tells the time") 258
- 15 ("When I consider everything that grows") 259
- 18 ("Shall I compare thee to a summer's day?") 259
- 20 ("A woman's face, with nature's own hand painted") 260
- 29 ("When, in disgrace with fortune and men's eyes") 260
- 30 ("When to the sessions of sweet silent thought") 261
- 33 ("Full many a glorious morning have I seen") 261
- 35 ("No more be grieved at that which thou hast done") 261
- 55 ("Not marble, nor the gilded monuments") 262
- 60 ("Like as the waves make towards the pebbled shore") 262
- 65 ("Since brass, nor stone, nor earth, nor boundless sea") 263
- 71 ("No longer mourn for me when I am dead") 263
- 73 ("That time of year thou mayst in me behold") 263
- 76 ("Why is my verse so barren of new pride") 264
- 87 ("Farewell, thou art too dear for my possessing") 264
- 94 ("They that have power to hurt and will do none") 265
- 97 ("How like a winter hath my absence been") 265
- 106 ("When in the chronicle of wasted time") 265
- 107 ("Not mine own fears, nor the prophetic soul") 266
- 116 ("Let me not to the marriage of true minds") 266

126 (“O thou, my lovely boy, who in thy power”) 267
129 (“Th’ expense of spirit in a waste of shame”) 267
130 (“My mistress’ eyes are nothing like the sun”) 267
135 (“Whoever hath her wish, thou hast thy Will”) 268
138 (“When my love swears that she is made of truth”) 268
144 (“Two loves I have of comfort and despair”) 269
146 (“Poor soul, the center of my sinful earth”) 269

The Phoenix and the Turtle 270

SONGS FROM THE PLAYS 272

When Daisies Pied 272

Under the Greenwood Tree 273

Blow, Blow, Thou Winter Wind 273

It Was a Lover and His Lass 274

Sigh No More 274

Oh Mistress Mine 275

Come Away, Come Away, Death 275

When That I Was and a Little Tiny Boy 276

Fear No More the Heat o’ the Sun 276

Full Fathom Five 277

Where the Bee Sucks, There Suck I 277

THOMAS CAMPION (1567-1620)

My Sweetest Lesbia 278

I Care Not for These Ladies 278

Follow Thy Fair Sun 279

When to Her Lute Corinna Sings 280

When Thou Must Home 280

Rose-cheeked Laura 280

Now Winter Nights Enlarge 281

There Is a Garden in Her Face 282
T H O M A S N A S H E (1567-1601)
S U M M E R ‘ S L A S T W I L L 2 8 2
[Spring, the Sweet Spring] 282
[Adieu, Farewell, Earth’s Bliss] 283
A E M I L I A L A N Y E R (1569-1645)
Frow Salve Deus Rex Judaeorum 284
The Description of Cooke-ham 288
J O H N D O N N E (1572-1631)
The Good-Morrow 293
Song (“Go and catch a falling star”) 294
Woman’s Constancy 294
The Apparition 295
The Sun Rising 295
The Canonization 296
Song (“Sweetest love, I do not go”) 298
The Anniversary 299
Love’s Growth 300
A Valediction of Weeping 300
A Valediction of the Book 301
Love’s Alchemy 303
A Nocturnal upon St. Lucy’s Day, Being the Shortest Day
A Valediction Forbidding Mourning 306
The Ecstasy 307
The Funeral 309
The Flea 309
The Relic 310
Elegy VII 311

Elegy XIX. To His Mistress Going to Bed 312

Satire III 314

x i i / C O N T E N T S

Good Friday, 1613. Riding Westward 317

Holy Sonnets 318

1 (“Thou hast made me, and shall thy work decay?”) 318

5 (“I am a little world made cunningly”) 318

7 (“At the round earth’s imagined corners, blow”) 319

9 (“If poisonous minerals, and if that tree”) 319

10 (“Death, be not proud, though some have called thee”) 320

14 (“Batter my heart, three-personed God; for You”) 320

18 (“Show me, dear Christ, thy spouse so bright and clear”) 320

A Hymn to God the Father 321

Hymn to God My God, in My Sickness 322

BEN JONSON (1572-1637) 323

To the Reader 323

On My First Daughter 323

On My First Son 323

On Spies 324

To Fool or Knave 324

To Sir Henry Cary 324

On Playwright 325

To Elizabeth, Countess of Rutland 325

On English Monsieur 325

To John Donne 326

Inviting a Friend to Supper 326

On Gut	328
Epitaph on Elizabeth, L. H.	328
To Penshurst	328
Song: To Celia (I)	331
Song: To Celia (II)	331
A Fit of Rhyme against Rhyme	332
A Hymn to God the Father	333
Her Triumph	334
An Elegy	335
An Ode to Himself	336
To the Immortal Memory and Friendship of That Noble Pair, Sir Lucius Cary and Sir Henry Morison	337
Still to Be Neat	341
Though I Am Young and Cannot Tell	341
To the Memory of My Beloved, the Author Mr. William Shakespeare	342
A Sonnet to the Noble Lady, the Lady Mary Wroth	344
Slow, Slow, Fresh Fount	344
Queen and Huntress	345
JOHN FLETCHER (1579-1625)	345
Take, Oh, Take Those Lips Away	345
EDWARD HERBERT (1582-1648)	
1865	
Sonnet of Black Beauty	346
Another Sonnet to Black Itself	346
C O N T E N T S / x i i i	
MARY WROTH (1587-1651?)	347
Pamphilia to Amphilanthus	347

I (“When night’s black mantle could most darkness
prove”) 347
3 (“Yet is there Hope: then Love but play thy part”) 347
II (“You endless torment that my rest oppress”) 348
22 (“Like to the Indians, scorched with the sun”) 348
25 (“Poor eyes be blind, the light behold no more”) 349
37 (“Night, welcome art thou to my mind distressed”) 349
39 (“If I were giv’n to mirth, ‘twould be more cross”) 350
74 Song (“Love a child is ever crying”) 350
A Crown of Sonnets Dedicated to Love 351
77 (“In this strange labyrinth how shall I turn”) 351
78 (“Is to leave all and take the thread of Love”) 351
82 (“He may our prophet, and our tutor prove”) 352
85 (“But where they may return with honor’s grace”) 352
Urania 353
Song (“Love what art thou? A vain thought”) 353
ROBERT HERRICK (1591-1674)

354

The Argument of His Book 354
The Vine 354
To the Sour Reader 355
Delight in Disorder 355
Corinna’s Going A-Maying 356
To the Virgins, to Make Much of Time
357
Upon Julia’s Breasts 358
Upon a Child That Died 358
His Prayer to Ben Jonson 358

The Night Piece, to Julia	359
Upon Julia's Clothes	359
Upon Prue, His Maid	360
Upon Ben Jonson	360
An Ode for Him	360
The Pillar of Fame	361
Neutrality Loathsome	361
To His Conscience	361
To Find God	362
The White Island, or Place of the Blest	362
HENRY KING (1592-1669)	363
An Exequy to His Matchless, Never-to-Be-Forgotten Friend	363
The Boy's Answer to the Blackmoor	366
GEORGE HERBERT (1593-1633)	367
THE TEMPLE : SACRED POEMS AND PRIVATE EJACULATIONS 3 6 7	
The Altar	367
Redemption	367
Easter Wings	368
Sin (I)	369
Affliction (I)	369
x i v / C O N T E N T S	
Prayer (I)	371
The Temper (I)	372
Jordan (I)	373
The Windows	373

Denial 374
Vanity (I) 374
Virtue 375
Man 376
Life 377
Artillery 378
The Collar 379
The Pulley 379
The Flower 380
The Forerunners 381
Discipline 382
The Elixir 383
Death 384
Love (III) 385
THOMAS CAREW (ca. 1595-1640) 385
A Song (“Ask me no more where Jove bestows”) 385
The Spring 386
Mediocrity in Love Rejected 387
Song. To My Inconstant Mistress 387
An Elegy upon the Death of the Dean of Paul’s, Dr. John
Donne 388
[JAMES SHIRLEY \(1596-1666\) 390](#)
AJAX 390
Dirge (“The glories of our blood and state”) 390
[THE MASSACHUSETTS BAY PSALM BOOK
\(1640\) 391](#)
Psalm 58 391
Psalm 114 392

[EDMUND WALLER \(1606-1687\) 393](#)

Song (“Go, lovely rose!”) 393

Of the Last Verses in the Book 393

JOHN MILTON (1608-1674) 394

On the Morning of Christ’s Nativity 394

On Shakespeare 401

L’Allegro 402

II Penseroso 405

How Soon Hath Time 410

Lycidas 410

Comus 415

Song (“Sweet Echo, sweetest nymph, that liv’st unseen”) 415

Song (“Sabrina fair”) 416

To Mr. H. Lawes, On His Airs 416

I Did but Prompt the Age 417

C O N T E N T S / x v

To the Lord General Cromwell 417

When I Consider How My Light Is Spent 418

On the Late Massacre in Piedmont 418

Cyriack, Whose Grandsire 419

Methought I Saw 419

PARADISE L O S T 4 2 0

The Verse 420

Book 1 [The Invocation] 421

From Book 4 [lines 1-113] 422

Book 9 425

From Samson Agonistes 450

SIR JOHN SUCKLING (1609-1642) 452

Song (“Why so pale and wan, fond lover?”) 452

Sonnet II (“Of thee, kind boy, I ask no red and white”) 452

Upon My Lady Carlisle’s Walking in Hampton Court
Garden 453

A Ballad upon a Wedding 454

Out upon It! 458

ANNE BRADSTREET (ca. 1612-1672) 458

In Honor of that High and Mighty Princess, Queen Elizabeth,
of Most Happy Memory 458

The Prologue 462

Before the Birth of One of Her Children 464

To My Dear and Loving Husband 465

The Author to Her Book 465

A Letter to Her Husband, Absent upon Public
Employment 466

Here Follows Some Verses upon the Burning of Our House
July 10th, 1666 466

RICHARD CRASHAW (1613-1649)

468

On the Baptized Ethiopian 468

To the Infant Martyrs 468

Upon the Infant Martyrs 468

The Tear 468

ABRAHAM COWLEY (1618-1667)

470

The Wish 470

Platonic Love 471

RICHARD LOVELACE (1618-1658)

472

To Althea, from Prison 472

To Lucasta, Going to the Wars 473

To Amarantha, That She Would Dishevel Her Hair 473

The Grasshopper 474

1128

ANDREW MARVELL (1621-1678)

The Coronet 475

Bermudas 476

x v i / C O N T E N T S

A Dialogue between the Soul and Body 477

To His Coy Mistress 478

The Fair Singer 480

The Definition of Love 480

The Picture of Little T. C. in a Prospect of Flowers 481

The Mower against Gardens 482

The Mower to the Glowworms 483

The Garden 484

An Horatian Ode 486

HENRY VAUGHAN (1621-1695) 490

Regeneration 490

The Retreat 492

The World 493

They Are All Gone into the World of Light! 494
The Waterfall 496
The Night 497
MARGARET CAVENDISH (1623-1673) 499
An Apology for Writing So Much upon This Book 499
The Sea Similized to Meadows and Pastures: the Mariners, to
Shepherds: the Mast, to a May-pole: the Fish, to
Beasts 499
Of Many Worlds in This World 500
JOHN DRYDEN (1631-1700)
500
Song from *The Indian Emperor* 500
Song from *Troilus and Cressida* 501
From Absalom and Achitophel: A Poem
501
Mac Flecknoe 517
To the Memory of Mr. Oldham 523
A Song for St. Cecilia's Day 524
KATHERINE PHILIPS (1632-1664) 526
Epitaph 526
To Mr. Henry Lawes 527
On the Welsh Language 528
To My Excellent Lucasia, on Our Friendship 530
THOMAS TRAHERNE (1637-1674) 531
The Salutation 531
Wonder 532
To the Same Purpose 533
Shadows in the Water 534

EDWARD TAYLOR (ca. 1642-1729)	536
Meditation 8 (“I kenning through astronomy divine”)	536
Upon Wedlock, and Death of Children	537
Upon a Spider Catching a Fly	538
Housewifery	540
CONTENTS / x v i i	
APHRA BEHN (1640?-1689)	540
Song (“Love Armed”)	540
The Disappointment	541
Song (“On Her Loving Two Equally”)	545
On the Death of the Late Earl of Rochester	546
To the Fair Clarinda, Who Made Love to Me, Imagined More Than Woman	548
A Thousand Martyrs	549
JOHN WILMOT, EARL OF ROCHESTER (1647-1680)	549
The Disabled Debauchee	549
The Imperfect Enjoyment	551
The Mock Song	552
A Song of a Young Lady to Her Ancient Lover	553
ANNE KILLIGREW (1660-1685)	554
Alexandreis	554
ANNE FINCH, COUNTESS OF WINCHILSEA (1661-1720)	556
The Introduction	556
The Spleen	558
Adam Posed	562
To Death	562
Friendship between Ephelia and Ardelia	563

A Nocturnal Reverie	563
The Answer (To Pope's <i>Impromptu</i>)	565
On Myself	566
MATTHEW PRIOR (1664-1721)	566
A Fable	566
To a Lady: She Refusing to Continue a Dispute with Me, and Leaving Me in the Argument	567
An Ode ("The merchant, to secure his treasure")	568
JONATHAN SWIFT (1667-1745)	568
A Description of the Morning	568
A Description of a City Shower	569
Stella's Birthday	570
The Lady's Dressing Room	572
A Beautiful Young Nymph Going to Bed	575
Verses on the Death of Dr. Swift, D.S.P.D.	577
ISAAC WATTS (1674-1748)	589
The Day of Judgment	589
A Prospect of Heaven Makes Death Easy	590
Our God, Our Help	591
Psalm 58	592
Psalm 114	593
x v i i i / C O N T E N T S	
JOHN GAY (1685-1732)	594
Songs from <i>The Beggar's Opera</i>	594
Air X—"Thomas, I Cannot"	594
Air XI—"A Soldier and a Sailor"	595
Air XVI—"Over the Hills, and Far Away"	595
Air IV—"Cotillion"	595

Air XXII—"The Lass of Patie's Mill" 596

Air XXVII—"Green Sleeves" 596

ALEXANDER POPE (1688-1744) 596

An Essay on Criticism 596

Part II 596

The Rape of the Lock 604

Epistle to Miss Blount 621

An Essay on Man, in Four Epistles 623

From Epistle 1 (lines 1-130) 623

Epistle to Dr. Arbuthnot 626

The Universal Prayer 635

Impromptu 637

The Dunciad 638

[The Triumph of Dulness] 638

LADY MARY WORTLEY MONTAGU (1689-1762) 639

Saturday (The Smallpox) 639

The Lover: A Ballad 641

A Receipt to Cure the Vapors 642

Epistle from Mrs. Yonge to Her Husband 643

MATTHEW GREEN (1696-1737)

645

From The Spleen 645

JAMES THOMSON (1700-1748)

649

The Seasons 649

From Winter (lines 223-358) 649

CHARLES WESLEY (1707-1788)

652

H Y M N S 6 5 2

[My God! I Know, I Feel Thee Mine]

652

[Come on, My Partners in Distress]

653

SAMUEL JOHNSON (1709-1784) 655

Prologue Spoken by Mr. Garrick 655

The Vanity of Human Wishes 656

On the Death of Dr. Robert Levet 664

THOMAS GRAY (1716-1771) 666

Ode on a Distant Prospect of Eton College 666

Ode (On the Death of a Favorite Cat, Drowned in a Tub of Goldfishes) 668

C O N T E N T S / x i x

Elegy Written in a Country Churchyard 669

Sonnet (On the Death of Mr. Richard West) 673

WILLIAM COLLINS (1721-1759)

673

Ode Written in the Beginning of the Year 1746

673

Ode on the Poetical Character 674

Ode to Evening 675

JEAN ELLIOT (1727-1805) **677**

The Flowers of the Forest 677

CHRISTOPHER SMART (1722-1771) **678**

Jubilate Agno, lines 697—770 (“For I will consider my Cat Jeoffry”) 678

From A Song to David 680

Psalm 58 684

Psalm 114 685

OLIVER GOLDSMITH (ca. 1730-1774) 686

When Lovely Woman Stoops to Folly 686

The Deserted Village 686

WILLIAM COWPER (1731-1800) **695**

Olney Hymns 695

Light Shining out of Darkness 695

Epitaph on a Hare 696

The Task 697

From Book IV: The Winter Evening 697

From Book VI: The Winter Walk at Noon 699

The Castaway 702

Lines Written during a Period of Insanity 704

[ANNA LAETITIA BARBAULD \(1743-1825\) 705](#)

The Rights of Woman 705

To the Poor 706

Life 706

HANNAH MORE (1745-1833) 707

Inscription in a Beautiful Retreat Called Fairy Bower 707

From The Slave Trade 709

CHARLOTTE SMITH (1749-1806) 711

Written in the Church Yard at Middleton in Sussex 711

To the Shade of Burns 711

Written near a Port on a Dark Evening 712

Written in October 712

Nepenthe 713

Stanzas 713

Ode to Death 714

From Beachy Head 715

x x / C O N T E N T S

PHILIP FRENEAU (1752-1832) 716

The Indian Burying Ground 716

To Sir Toby 717

PHILLIS WHEATLEY (ca. 1753-1784) 719

A Farewell to America. To Mrs. S. W. 719

On Being Brought from Africa to America 720

To S. M., a Young African Painter, on Seeing His Works 721

On Imagination 722

GEORGE CRABBE (1754-1832) 723

From The Parish Register: I 723

The Borough 730

From Letter XXII, The Poor of The Borough: Peter
Grimes 730

WILLIAM BLAKE (1 7 5 7 - 1 8 2 7) 7 3 2

P O E T I C A L S K E T C H E S 7 3 2

To the Muses 732

Song (“How sweet I roam’d from field to field”) 732

To the Evening Star 733

S O N G S O F I N N O C E N C E 7 3 3

Introduction (“Piping down the valleys wild”) 733

The Lamb 734

Holy Thursday [I.] 734

The Divine Image 735

The Little Black Boy 735

The Little Boy Lost 736

The Little Boy Found 737

T H E B O O K O F T H E L 7 3 7

SONGS OF EXPERIENCE 740

Introduction (“Hear the voice of the Bard!”) 740

A Divine Image 741

Holy Thursday [II.] 741

The Clod & the Pebble 742

The Sick Rose 742

A Poison Tree 743

The Tyger 743

Ah Sun-flower 744

The Garden of Love 744

London 744

SONGS AND BALLADS 745

I Asked a Thief 745

Mock on, Mock on, Voltaire, Rousseau 745

Eternity 746

A Question Answered 746

MILTON 746

And Did Those Feet 746

JERUSALEM 747

England! Awake! Awake! Awake! 747

CONTENTS / x x i

ROBERT BURNS (1759-1796)

747

Green Grow the Rashes 747

To a Mouse 748

Holy Willie’s Prayer 750

Of A ‘ t h e A i r t s 752

Auld Lang Syne 753

John Anderson My Jo 754
Tam O'Shanter 754
The Banks o' Doon 759
A Red Red Rose 759
O Wert Thou in the Cauld Blast
760
JOANNA BAILLIE (1762-1851) 760
A Mother to Her Waking Infant 760
Song: Woo'd and Married and A' 762
WILLIAM WORDSWORTH (1770-1850) 763
Expostulation and Reply 763
The Tables Turned 764
Lines Composed a Few Miles above Tintern Abbey 765
The Ruined Cottage 768
Anecdote for Fathers 780
The Prelude 781
Book I, lines 301—647 ("Fair seedtime had my soul, and I
grew
up") 781
She Dwelt among the Untrodden Ways 789
Three Years She Grew 789
A Slumber Did My Spirit Seal 790
Resolution and Independence 790
It Is a Beauteous Evening 794
London, 1802 795
Composed upon Westminster Bridge, September 3, 1802 795
Nuns Fret Not at Their Convent's Narrow Room 796
My Heart Leaps Up 796

Ode: Intimations of Immortality	796
I Wandered Lonely as a Cloud	801
She Was a Phantom of Delight	802
The World Is Too Much with Us	802
The Solitary Reaper	803
Surprised by Joy	804
Mutability	804
Scorn Not the Sonnet	804
SAMUEL TAYLOR COLERIDGE (1772-1834)	805
The Aeolian Harp	805
This Lime-Tree Bower My Prison	807
Kubla Khan	809
Frost at Midnight	810
The Rime of the Ancient Mariner	812
Dejection: An Ode	828
x x i i / C O N T E N T S	
WALTER SAVAGE LANDOR (1775-1864)	831
Rose Aylmer	831
Past Ruined Iliion Helen Lives	832
Dirce	832
To Robert Browning	832
Dying Speech of an Old Philosopher	833
GEORGE GORDON, LORD BYRON (1788-1824)	833
Written after Swimming from Sestos to Abydos	833
She Walks in Beauty	834
The Destruction of Sennacherib	834
When We Two Parted	835
So We'll Go No More A-Roving	836

Don Juan 837
Fragment on the Back of the Ms. of Canto I 837
Canto the First. Stanzas 1-119 837
Stanzas (When a Man Hath No Freedom to Fight for at Home) 862
On This Day I Complete My Thirty-sixth Year 862
PERCY BYSSHE SHELLEY (1792-1822) 863
To Wordsworth 863
Mutability 864
Hymn to Intellectual Beauty 864
Mont Blanc 866
Ozymandias 870
Stanzas Written in Dejection, Near Naples 870
England in 1819 871
Ode to the West Wind 872
The Cloud 874
To a Skylark 876
Adonais 879
H E L L A S 8 9 2
The World's Great Age 892
JOHN CLARE (1793-1864) 893
Badger 893
Gypsies 894
Song: Love Lives beyond the Tomb 894
First Love 895
Farewell 896
I Am 896
FELICIA DOROTHEA HEMANS (1793-1835) 897

England's Dead 897
The Landing of the Pilgrim Fathers in New England 898
Casabianca 899
Indian Woman's Death-Song 901
WILLIAM CULLEN BRYANT (1794-1878) 902
To a Waterfowl 902
Thanatopsis 903
JOHN KEATS (1795-1821)
On First Looking into Chapman's Homer 905
On Sitting Down to Read *King Lear* Once Again 905
When I Have Fears 906
To Homer 906
The Eve of St. Agnes 907
On the Sonnet 916
La Belle Dame sans Merci 917
Lamia 918
Ode to Psyche 933
Ode to a Nightingale 935
Ode on Melancholy 937
Ode on a Grecian Urn 938
To Autumn 939
Bright Star 940
This Living Hand 940
RALPH WALDO EMERSON (1803-1882)
Concord Hymn 941
The Rhodora 941
The Snow-Storm 942
Ode (Inscribed to W. H. Channing) 943

Intellect 945

Brahma 945

Days 946

Fate 946

ELIZABETH BARRETT BROWNING (1806-1861)

Sonnets from the Portuguese 947

1 (“I thought once how Theocritus had sung”) 947

43 (“How do I love thee? Let me count the ways”) 947

Aurora Leigh 948

From Book 5 [Poets and the Present Age] 948

A Musical Instrument 950

HENRY WADSWORTH LONGFELLOW (1807-1882)

From Evangeline 951

The Jewish Cemetery at Newport 952

The Song of Hiawatha 954

From Part III: Hiawatha’s Childhood 954

Snow-Flakes 956

The Cross of Snow 956

JOHN GREENLEAF WHITTIER (1807-1892)

Telling the Bees 957

From Snowbound: A Winter Idyl 958

EDWARD FITZGERALD (1809-1883)

The Rubaiyat of Omar Khayyam of Naishapur 961

x x i v / C O N T E N T S

OLIVER WENDELL HOLMES (1809-1894) 974

The Chambered Nautilus 974

EDGAR ALLAN POE (1809-1849) 975

Sonnet—To Science 975

To Helen 975
The City in the Sea 976
The Raven 977
Eldorado 980
Annabel Lee 981
ALFRED, LORD TENNYSON (1809-1892) 982
Mariana 982
The Kraken 984
The Lady of Shalott 984
The Lotos-Eaters 988
Ulysses 992
Break, Break, Break 994
Songs from *The Princess* 994
The Splendor Falls 994
Tears, Idle Tears 995
Now Sleeps the Crimson Petal 995
In Memoriam A. H. H. 996
1 ("I held it truth, with him who sings") 996
2 ("Old Yew, which graspest at the stones") 997
7 ("Dark house, by which once more I stand") 997
11 ("Calm is the morn without a sound") 997
19 ("The Danube to the Severn gave") 998
50 ("Be near me when my light is low") 998
54 ("Oh yet we trust that somehow good") 999
55 ("The wish, that of the living whole") 999
56 (" 'So careful of the type?' but no") 1000
67 ("When on my bed the moonlight falls") 1001
88 ("Wild bird, whose warble, liquid sweet") 1001

95 (“By night we lingered on the lawn”) 1001
119 (“Doors, where my heart was used to beat”) 1003
121 (“Sad Hesper o’er the buried sun”) 1003
130 (“Thy voice is on the rolling air”) 1004
The Eagle 1004
The Charge of the Light Brigade 1005
Tithonus 1006
“Frater Ave atque Vale” 1008
Crossing the Bar 1008
ROBERT BROWNING (1812-1889) 1009
Porphyria’s Lover 1009
Soliloquy of the Spanish Cloister 1010
My Last Duchess 1012
The Bishop Orders His Tomb at Saint Praxed’s Church 1014
Home-Thoughts, from Abroad 1017
A Toccata of Galuppi’s 1017
Memorabilia 1019
“Childe Roland to the Dark Tower Came” 1020
Fra Lippo Lippi 1026
Andrea del Sarto 1034
Two in the Campagna 1040
EDWARD LEAR (1812-1888)
There Was an Old Man with a Beard 1041
There Was an Old Man in a Tree 1042
There Was an Old Man Who Supposed 1042
The Owl and the Pussy-Cat 1042
How Pleasant to Know Mr. Lear 1043
JONES VERY (1813-1880)

The Dead 1044

The Lost 1044

HENRY DAVID THOREAU (1817-1862)

I Am a Parcel of Vain Strivings Tied 1045

Smoke 1046

EMILY BRONTE (1818-1848)

[Long Neglect Has Worn Away] 1046

Hope 1046

Remembrance 1047

The Prisoner. A Fragment 1048

No Coward Soul Is Mine 1050

ARTHUR HUGH CLOUGH (1819-1861)

Amours de Voyage 1051

From Canto I 1051

The Latest Decalogue 1052

Say Not the Struggle Nought Availeth 1053

JULIA WARD HOWE (1819-1910)

Battle-Hymn of the Republic 1054

HERMAN MELVILLE (1819-1891)

The Portent 1054

Shiloh 1055

The Maldive Shark 1055

The Berg 1056

Monody 1057

SPIRITUALS

Go Down, Moses 1057

Steal Away to Jesus 1058

Ezekiel Saw the Wheel 1059

x x v i / C O N T E N T S

WALT WHITMAN (1819-1892) 1060

Song of Myself 1060

I (“I celebrate myself, and sing myself”) 1060

5 (“I believe in you my soul, the other I am must not
abase itself to you”) 1061

6 (“A child said *What is the grass?* fetching it to me
with full hands”) 1061

II (“Twenty-eight young men bathe by the shore”) 1062

13 (“The negro holds firmly the reins of his four
h o r s e s . . . ”) 1063

24 (“Walt Whitman, a kosmos, of Manhattan the son”) 1064

52 (“The spotted hawk swoops by and accuses
me . . .”) 1065

Crossing Brooklyn Ferry 1066

When I Heard the Learn’d Astronomer 1071

Vigil Strange I Kept on the Field One Night 1071

Beat! Beat! Drums! 1072

Cavalry Crossing a Ford 1073

Out of the Cradle Endlessly Rocking 1073

The Dalliance of the Eagles 1078

Reconciliation 1078

When Lilacs Last in the Dooryard Bloom’d 1078

A Noiseless Patient Spider 1085

To a Locomotive in Winter 1085

FREDERICK GODDARD TUCKERMAN (1821-1873) 1086

Sonnets, Third Series 1086

IV (“Thin little leaves of wood fern, ribbed and

toothed")	1086
V ("How well do I recall that walk in state")	1087
VI ("I looked across the rollers of the deep")	1087
MATTHEW ARNOLD (1822-1888)	1087
Shakespeare	1087
To Marguerite	1088
The Scholar-Gypsy	1089
Thyrsis	1095
Dover Beach	1101
DANTE GABRIEL ROSSETTI (1828-1882)	1102
The Blessed Damozel	1102
Sudden Light	1105
The Woodspurge	1105
The House of Life	1106
A Sonnet	1106
19. Silent Noon	1106
70. The Hill Summit	1107
GEORGE MEREDITH (1828-1909)	1107
Modern Love	1107
1 ("By this he knew she wept with waking eyes")	1107
17 ("At dinner, she is hostess, I am host")	1108
C O N T E N T S / x x v i i	
30 ("What are we first? First, animals; and next")	1108
48 ("Their sense is with their senses all mixed in")	1108
49 ("He found her by the ocean's moaning verge")	1109
50 ("Thus piteously Love closed what he begat")	1109
Lucifer in Starlight	1110
EMILY DICKINSON (1830-1886)	

1110

39 (49) ("I never lost as much but twice -") 1110

68 (89) (Some things that fly there be -") 1110

112 (67) ("Success is counted sweetest") 1111

'Safe in their Alabaster Chambers -" (1 8 5 9) 1 1 1 1

'Safe in their Alabaster Chambers -" (1 8 6 2) 1 1 1 2

A little East of Jordan") 1112

' 'Faith' is a fine invention") 1113

'A Clock stopped -" 1113

'I'm Nobody! Who are you?") 1113

'Wild nights - Wild nights!") 1114

' 'Hope' is the thing with feathers -" 1114

'There's a certain Slant of light") 1114

'I like a look of Agony") 1115

'I felt a Funeral, in my Brain") 1115

'I would not paint - a picture -" 1116

'A Bird, came down the Walk -" 1116

'After great pain, a formal feeling comes -" 1117

'I like to see it lap the Miles -" 1117

'The Soul selects her own Society -" 1118

'Mine - by the Right of the White Election!") 1118

'They shut me up in Prose -" 1119

'Because I could not stop for Death -" 1119

'I reckon - When I count at all -" 1120

'The Heart asks Pleasure - first -" 1120

'I heard a Fly buzz - when I died -" 1121

'Much Madness is divinest Sense -" 1121

'On a Columnar Self-" 1121

‘My Life had stood - a Loaded Gun -“)	1122
‘Remorse - is Memory - awake -“)	1122
‘Renunciation - is a piercing Virtue -“)	1123
‘Publication - is the Auction”)	1123
(“Further in Summer than the Birds -“)	1124
“Split the Lark - and you’ll find the Music -“)	1124
(“As imperceptibly as Grief”)	1125
(“A narrow Fellow in the Grass”)	1125
1108 (1078) (“The Bustle in a House”)	1126
1263 (1129) (“Tell all the Truth but tell it slant -“)	1126
1489 (1463) (“A Route of Evanescence”)	1126
1577 (1545) (“The Bible is an antique Volume -“)	1127
1793 (1732) (“My life closed twice before it’s close”)	1127
1788 (1763) (“Fame is a bee”)	1127
CHRISTINA ROSSETTI (1830-1894)	
1128	
Song (“When I am dead, my dearest”)	1128
Remember	1128
x x v i i i / C O N T E N T S	
Echo	1128
In an Artist’s Studio	1129
Up-Hill	1129
The Convent Threshold	1130
Passing Away, Saith the World, Passing Away	1133
AmorMundi	1134
LEWIS CARROLL (CHARLES LUTWIDGE DODGSON)	
(1832-1898)	1135
Jabberwocky	1135

[Humpty Dumpty's Explication of *Jabberwocky*] 1136

The White Knight's Song 1137

[WILLIAM MORRIS \(1834-1896\) 1139](#)

The Haystack in the Floods 1139

From The Earthly Paradise 1143

W. S. GILBERT (1836-1911) 1144

I Am the Very Model of a Modern Major-General 1144

Titwillow 1146

[ALGERNON CHARLES SWINBURNE \(1837-1909\) 1146](#)

Chorus from *Atalanta in Calydon* 1146

When the Hounds of Spring Are on Winter's Traces 1146

The Garden of Proserpine 1148

A Forsaken Garden 1150

THOMAS HARDY (1840-1928)

1152

Hap 1152

Neutral Tones 1153

I Look into My Glass 1153

Drummer Hodge 1154

A Broken Appointment 1154

The Darkling Thrush 1155

The Ruined Maid 1156

The Convergence of the Twain 11

Channel Firing 1157

Under the Waterfall 1159

The Voice 1160

During Wind and Rain 1160

In Time of "The Breaking of Nations"

1161

Afterwards 1162

SIDNEY LANIER (1842-1881) 1162

From the Flats 1162

The Marshes of Glynn 1163

GERARD MANLEY HOPKINS (1844-1889) 1166

God's Grandeur 1166

The Windhover 1166

Pied Beauty 1167

[As Kingfishers Catch Fire, Dragonflies Draw Flame]

1167

Felix Randal 1168

Spring and Fall 1168

[Carrion Comfort] 1169

[No Worst, There Is None. Pitched Past Pitch of Grief]

1169

[I Wake and Feel the Fell of Dark, Not Day] 1170

[My Own Heart Let Me More Have Pity On] 1170

That Nature is a Heraclitean Fire and of the comfort of the

Resurrection 1171

[Thou Art Indeed Just, Lord ...] 1172

EMMA LAZARUS (1849-1887)

The New Colossus 1172

A. E. HOUSMAN (1859-1936)

Loveliest of Trees, the Cherry Now 1173

Reveille 1173

When I Watch the Living Meet 1174

To an Athlete Dying Young 1174

Is My Team Ploughing 1175
On Wenlock Edge the Wood's in Trouble 1176
From Far, from Eve and Morning 1177
With Rue My Heart Is Laden 1177
"Terence, This Is Stupid Stuff ... " 1177
Astronomy 1179
Epitaph on an Army of Mercenaries 1180
Crossing Alone the Nighted Ferry 1180
Here Dead Lie We Because We Did Not Choose 1180
RUDYARD KIPLING (1865-1936)
Tommy 1181
Recessional 1182
Epitaphs of the War 1183
WILLIAM BUTLER YEATS (1865-1939)
The Stolen Child 1188
The Lake Isle of Innisfree 1190
When You Are Old 1190
Adam's Curse 1190
No Second Troy 1191
The Wild Swans at Coole 1192
An Irish Airman Foresees His Death 1193
The Scholars 1193
Easter 1916 1194
The Second Coming 1196
A Prayer for My Daughter 1196
To Be Carved on a Stone at Thoor Ballylee 1198
Sailing to Byzantium 1199
Leda and the Swan 1200

Among School Children 1200

x x x / C O N T E N T S

Byzantium 1202

Crazy Jane Talks with the Bishop 1204

Lapis Lazuli 1204

Long-Legged Fly 1206

The Circus Animals' Desertion 1207

Under Ben Bulbin 1208

ERNEST DOWSON (1867-1900) 1211

Vitae summa brevis spem nos vetat incohare longam 1211

Non sum qualis eram bonae sub regno Cynarae 1211

EDWIN ARLINGTON ROBINSON (1869-1935) 1212

Richard Cory 1212

George Crabbe 1212

Reuben Bright 1213

Miniver Cheevy 1213

The Mill 1214

Mr. Flood's Party 1215

CHARLOTTE MEW (1869-1928) 1216

The Farmer's Bride 1216

In Nunhead Cemetery 1218

STEPHEN CRANE (1871-1900) 1220

From The Black Riders and Other Lines 1220

I ("BLACK RIDERS CAME FROM THE SEA") 1220

III ("IN THE DESERT") 1220

XXV ("BEHOLD, THE GRAVE OF A WICKED
MAN") 1220

LVI ("A MAN FEARED THAT HE MIGHT FIND AN

ASSASSIN”) 1221

From War is Kind 1221

[A Man Adrift on a Slim Spar] 1221

PAUL LAURENCE DUNBAR (1872-1906) 1222

A Summer’s Night 1222

We Wear the Mask 1223

Little Brown Baby 1223

Sympathy 1224

[JOHN McCRAE \(1872-1918\) 1225](#)

In Flanders Fields 1225

[WALTER DE LA MARE \(1873-1956\) 1225](#)

The Listeners 1225

Fare Well 1226

[ROBERT FROST \(1874-1963\) 1227](#)

Mending Wall 1227

Home Burial 1228

CONTENTS / x x x i

After Apple Picking 1231

The Wood-Pile 1232

The Road Not Taken 1232

The Oven Bird 1233

Birches 1233

The Hill Wife 1235

Stopping by Woods on a Snowy Evening 1237

Acquainted with the Night 1237

West-Running Brook 1238

Neither Out Far Nor In Deep 1240

Design 1240

Provide, Provide 1241

The Silken Tent 1241

Come In 1242

Never Again Would Birds' Song Be the Same 1242

The Most of It 1243

The Gift Outright 1243

Directive 1244

AMY LOWELL (1874-1925) 1245

Patterns 1245

The Weather-Cock Points South 1248

GERTRUDE STEIN (1874-1946) 1248

Stanzas in Meditation 1248

Part I, Stanza XIII ("She may count three little daisies very well") 1248

Part III, Stanza II ("I think very well of Susan but I do not know her name") 1249

Part III, Stanza V ("It is not a range of a mountain") 1249

Part V, Stanza XXXVIII ("Which I wish to say is this") 1249

Part V, Stanza LXIII ("I wish that I had spoken only of it all.") 1250

TRUMBULL STICKNEY (1874-1904) 1250

[And, the Last Day Being Come, Man Stood Alone] 1250

An Athenian Garden 1251

Fragments 1252

IX ("I hear a river thro' the valley wander") 1252

CARL SANDBURG (1878-1967) 1252

Chicago 1252

Grass	1253
EDWARD THOMAS (1878-1917)	1253
Adlestrop	1253
The Owl	1254
In Memoriam [Easter 1915]	1254
Rain	1255
As the team's head brass	1255
x x x i i / C O N T E N T S	
WALLACE STEVENS (1879-1955)	1256
The Snow Man	1256
The Emperor of Ice-Cream	1256
Sunday Morning	1257
Anecdote of the Jar	1260
Thirteen Ways of Looking at a Blackbird	1260
Peter Quince at the Clavier	1262
The Idea of Order at Key West	1264
Waving Adieu, Adieu, Adieu	1265
The Poems of Our Climate	1266
The House Was Quiet and the World Was Calm	1267
Table Talk	1267
A Room on a Garden	1268
Of Mere Being	1268
WITTER BYNNER (1881-1968)	1269
Haskell	1269
Chinese Drawings	1270
A Philosopher	1270
The Wintry Mind	1270
More Lovely than Antiquity	1270

E.J. PRATT (1883-1964) 1270

Come Not the Seasons Here 1270

From Stone to Steel 1271

WILLIAM CARLOS WILLIAMS (1883-1963) 1272

Danse Russe 1272

Portrait of a Lady 1273

Queen-Anne's-Lace 1273

The Red Wheelbarrow 1274

This Is Just to Say 1274

Poem 1275

The Yachts 1275

A Sort of a Song 1276

Asphodel, That Greeny Flower 1276

Book I 1276

Pictures from Brueghel 1283

Landscape with the Fall of Icarus 1283

D. H. LAWRENCE (1885-1930) 1284

Love on the Farm 1284

Piano 1285

Snake 1286

Elemental 1288

Self-Protection 1288

Trees in the Garden 1289

The English Are So Nice! 1290

Andraitx—Pomegranate Flowers 1290

Bavarian Gentians 1291

The Ship of Death 1291

EZRA POUND (1885-1972)

Portrait d'une Femme 1295

The Garden 1296

A Pact 1296

Ts'ai Chi'h 1296

In a Station of the Metro 1297

The River-Merchant's Wife: a Letter 1297

Hugh Selwyn Mauberley: Life and Contacts 1298

Medallion 1306

The Cantos 1306

I ("And then went down to the ship") 1306

XLV (“With Usura”) 1309
ELINOR WYLIE (1885-1928)
Full Moon 1310
Doomsday 1311
H. D. (HILDA DOOLITTLE) (1886-1961)
Sea Rose 1311
Sea Violet 1312
Helen 1312
Wine Bowl 1313
The Walls Do Not Fall 1315
[1] (“An incident here and there”) 1315
SIEGFRIED SASSOON (1886-1967)
Christ and the Soldier 1317
“They” 1318
The General 1318
Glory of Women 1319
Everyone Sang 1319
On Passing the New Menin Gate 1320
ROBINSON JEFFERS (1887-1962)
Shine, Perishing Republic 1320
Boats in a Fog 1321
Hurt Hawks 1321
The Purse-Seine 1322
Birds and Fishes 1323
RUPERT BROOKE (1887-1915)
Sonnet 1324
From The Old Vicarage, Grantchester 1325
The Soldier 1327

MARIANNE MOORE (1887-1972)

To a Steam Roller 1328

To a Chameleon 1328

The Fish 1328

Poetry 1329

x x x i v / CONTENTS

A Grave 1330

The Steeple-Jack 1331

No Swan So Fine 1333

What Are Years? 1334

Nevertheless 1334

The Mind Is an Enchanting Thing 1335

EDWIN MUIR (1887-1959) 1336

Childhood 1336

The Return of the Greeks 1337

Adam's Dream 1338

T. S. ELIOT (1 8 8 8 - 1 9 6 5) 1 3 4 0

The Love Song of J. Alfred Prufrock 1340

The Waste Land 1344

The Hollow Men 1356

Journey of the Magi 1359

F O U R Q U A R T E T S 1 3 6 0

Little Gidding 1360

J O H N C R O W E R A N S O M (1888-1974) 1367

Bells for John Whiteside's Daughter 1367

Piazza Piece 1367

Blue Girls 1368

Parting, without a Sequel 1368

Lady Lost 1369

[CONRAD AIKEN \(1889-1973\) 1370](#)

Senlin: A Biography 1370

II. His Futile Preoccupations, 2 1370

[IVOR GURNEY \(1890-1937\) 1371](#)

To His Love 1371

The Silent One 1372

First Time In 1372

[ISAAC ROSENBERG \(1890-1918\) 1373](#)

Break of Day in the Trenches 1373

Louse Hunting 1374

Dead Man's Dump 1374

HUGH MACDIARMID (CHRISTOPHER MURRAY
GRIEVE)

(1892-1978) 1376

From Lament for the Great Music 1376

Another Epitaph on an Army of Mercenaries 1379

From In Memoriam James Joyce 1380

ARCHIBALD MACLEISH (1892-1982)

1865

Ars Poetica 1381

The Snowflake Which Is Now and Hence Forever 1382

C O N T E N T S / x x x v

EDNA ST. VINCENT MILLAY (1892-1950) 1382

First Fig 1382

Second Fig 1382

Euclid Alone Has Looked on Beauty Bare 1383

Spring 1383

[I, Being Born a Woman and Distressed] 1383
The Buck in the Snow 1384
I Dreamed I Moved among the Elysian Fields 1384
Ragged Island 1385
Armenonville 1385
WILFRED OWEN (1893-1918) 1386
Anthem for Doomed Youth 1386
Dulce Et Decorum Est 1387
Insensibility 1387
Strange Meeting 1389
Futility 1390
DOROTHY PARKER (1893-1967) 1391
Unfortunate Coincidence 1391
Resume 1391
One Perfect Rose 1391
E. E. CUMMINGS (1894-1962) 1392
All in green went my love riding 1392
the Cambridge ladies who live in furnished souls 1393
Spring is like a perhaps hand 1393
“next to of course god america i 1394
since feeling is first 1394
somewhere i have never travelled,gladly beyond 1395
may I feel said he 1395
anyone lived in a pretty how town 1396
who are you,little I 1397
JEAN TOOMER (1894-1967) 1398
C A N E 1 3 9 8
Reapers 1398

Face	1398
Georgia Dusk	1398
Portrait in Georgia	1399
Harvest Song	1399
ROBERT GRAVES (1895-1985)	1400
Love Without Hope	1400
In Broken Images	1400
Warning to Children	1401
The Persian Version	1402
To Juan at the Winter Solstice	1402
The White Goddess	1404
xxxvi / C O N T E N T S	
EDMUND BLUNDEN (1896-1974)	1404
Forefathers	1404
1916 seen from 1921	1405
LOUISE BOGAN (1897-1970)	1406
Medusa	1406
Juan's Song	1407
Man Alone	1407
Roman Fountain	1408
Song for the Last Act	1408
Night	1409
HART CRANE (1899-1932)	1410
My Grandmother's Love Letters	1410
At Melville's Tomb	1410
Voyages	1411
The Bridge	1415
Proem: To Brooklyn Bridge	1415

To Emily Dickinson 1416
ALLEN TATE (1899-1979) 1417
Ode to the Confederate Dead 1417
The Swimmers 1419
[BASIL BUNTING \(1900-1985\) 1421](#)
From Briggflatts 1421
[LAURA \(RIDING\) JACKSON \(1901-1991\) 1425](#)
The Wind Suffers 1425
Ding-Donging 1426
[STERLING A. BROWN \(1901-1989\) 1426](#)
Slim in Atlanta 1426
Chillen Get Shoes 1428
Bitter Fruit of the Tree 1428
Conjured 1429
LANGSTON HUGHES (1902-1967) 1429
The Weary Blues 1429
The Negro Speaks of Rivers 1430
Dream Variations 1431
Cross 1431
Bad Luck Card 1432
Song for a Dark Girl 1432
Harlem Sweeties 1432
Harlem 1433
Theme for English B 1434
Dinner Guest: Me 1435
CONTENTS / x x x v i i
ROY CAMPBELL (1902-1957) 1436
The Zulu Girl 1436

The Sisters 1436
OGDEN NASH (1902-1971) 1437
The Cow 1437
Reflections on Ice-breaking 1437
Requiem 1437
Columbus 1438
The Turtle 1438
STEVIE SMITH (1902-1971) 1439
No Categories! 1439
Mr. Over 1439
The Death Sentence 1440
Not Waving but Drowning 1440
The Celts 1441
Thoughts about the Person from Porlock 1441
[COUNTEE CULLEN \(1903-1946\) 1443](#)
Heritage 1443
Incident 1446
Yet Do I Marvel 1446
EARLE BIRNEY (1904-1991) 1447
Bushed 1447
The Bear on the Delhi Road 1447
[C. DAY LEWIS \(1904-1972\) 1448](#)
Two Songs 1448
("I've heard them lilting at loom and belting") 1448
("Come, live with me and be my love") 1449
Where are the War Poets? 1449
RICHARD EBERHART (b. 1904) 1450
The Fury of Aerial Bombardment 1450

PATRICK KAVANAGH (1904-1967) 1450

Sanctity 1450

From The Great Hunger 1451

Epic 1453

Canal Bank Walk 1453

STANLEY KUNITZ(b. 1905) 1454

He 1454

Robin Redbreast 1454

Touch Me 1455

ROBERT PENN WARREN (1905-1989) 1456

Bearded Oaks 1456

x x x v i i i / C O N T E N T S

Masts at Dawn 1457

There's a Grandfather's Clock in the Hall 1458

Evening Hawk 1459

JOHN BETJEMAN (1906-1984) 1460

Death in Leamington 1460

The Arrest of Oscar Wilde at the Cadogan Hotel 1461

East Anglian Bathe 1462

False Security 1463

WILLIAM EMPSON (1906-1984) 1463

Legal Fiction 1463

Missing Dates 1464

W. H. AUDEN (1907-1973) 1465

Lullaby [Lay your sleeping head, my love] 1465

Spain 1937 1466

As I Walked Out One Evening 1468

Twelve Songs 1470

IX [Funeral Blues] 1470
XII [Tell Me the Truth About Love] 1470
Musee des Beaux Arts 1471
In Memory of W. B. Yeats 1472
September 1, 1939 1474
In Praise of Limestone 1477
Their Lonely Betters 1479
The Shield of Achilles 1479
A. D. HOPE (1907-2000) 1481
Australia 1481
Imperial Adam 1482
Advice to Young Ladies 1483
Inscription for a War 1485
LOUIS MACNEICE (1907-1963) 1485
The Sunlight on the Garden 1485
Bagpipe Music 1486
Autumn Journal
IV (“September has come and I wake”) 1487
London Rain 1489
Star-gazer 1490
JOSEPHINE JACOBSEN (1908-2003) 1491
The Primer 1491
Bush 1492
Hourglass 1492
THEODORE ROETHKE (1908-1963)
1865
Root Cellar 1493
Child on Top of a Greenhouse 1494

CONTENTS / x x x i x

My Papa's Waltz 1494

The Lost Son 1495

Elegy for Jane 1499

The Waking 1500

I Knew a Woman 1500

Wish for a Young Wife 1501

In a Dark Time 1501

R I C H A R D W R I G H T (1908-1960) 1502

H A I K U : T H I S O T H E R W O R L D 1 5 0 2

21 ("On winter mornings") 1502

31 ("In the falling snow") 1502

120 ("Crying and crying") 1502

490 ("Waking from a nap") 1503

762 ("Droning autumn rain") 1 503

783 ("I cannot find it") 1503

M A L C O L M L O W R Y (1909-1957) 1503

Delirium in Vera Cruz 1503

The Wild Cherry 1504

Eye-Opener 1504

Strange Type 1504

S T E P H E N S P E N D E R (1909-1995) 1505

I Think Continually of Those Who Were Truly Great 1505

Ultima Ratio Regum 1505

Seascape 1506

[ROBERT FITZGERALD \(1910-1985\) 1507](#)

Figlio Maggiore 1507

[NORMAN MACCAIG \(1910-1996\) 1508](#)

Summer Farm 1508

Return to Scalpay 1509

Kingfisher 1510

[CHARLES OLSON \(1910-1970\) 1511](#)

Merce of Egypt 1511

Variations Done for Gerald Van De Wiele 1512

[ELIZABETH BISHOP \(1911-1979\) 1515](#)

Casabianca 1515

The Fish 1516

Filling Station 1517

Sandpiper 1518

The Armadillo 1519

Sestina 1520

In the Waiting Room 1521

The Moose 1523

One Art 1527

x 1 / C O N T E N T S

ALLEN CURNOW (1911-2001)

1528

Landfall in Unknown Seas 1528

IRVING LAYTON (b. 1912)

1530

The Birth of Tragedy 1530

The Cold Green Element 1531

Berry Picking 1532

ROBERT HAYDEN (1913-1980)

1533

Those Winter Sundays 1533

Mourning Poem for the Queen of Sunday 1533
Night, Death, Mississippi 1534
” ‘Mystery Boy’ Looks for Kin in Nashville” 1535
Paul Laurence Dunbar 1536
MURIEL RUKEYSER (1913-1980) 1537
Boy with His Hair Cut Short 1537
Night Feeding 1537
Rondel 1538
Ballad of Orange and Grape 1538
MAY SWENSON (1913-1989) 1540
Motherhood 1540
Cardinal Ideograms 1541
Waterbird 1542
Goodbye, Goldeneye 1543
R. S. THOMAS (1913-2000) 1544
Welsh Landscape 1544
The View from the Window 1544
On the Farm 1545
Lore 1545
JOHN BERRYMAN (1914-1972) 1546
Homage to Mistress Bradstreet 1546
17-21 1546
A Sympathy, A Welcome 1547
The Dream Songs 1548
1 (“Huffy Henry hid the day”) 1548
4 (“Filling her compact & delicious body”) 1548
14 (“Life, friends, is boring. We must not say so”) 1549
29 (“There sat down, once, a thing on Henry’s heart”) 1549

40 (“I’m scared a lonely. Never see my son”) 1550
145 (“Also I love him: me he’s done no wrong”) 1550
324. An Elegy for W.C.W., The Lovely Man 1551
382 (“At Henry’s bier let some thing fall out well:”) 1551
RANDALL JARRELL (1914-1965)
1552
90 North 1552
The Death of the Ball Turret Gunner 1553
Eighth Air Force 1553
A Front 1554
A Field Hospital 1554
Next Day 1555
A Man Meets a Woman in the Street 1556
WELDON KEES (1914-1955)
What the Spider Heard 1559
For H. V. (1901-1927) 1559
When the Lease Is Up 1560
Robinson 1560
NORMAN NICHOLSON (1914-1987)
To the River Duddon 1561
Halley’s Comet 1562
HENRY REED (1914-1986)
Chard Whitlow 1563
Lessons of the War 1 564
1. Naming of Parts 1564
2. Judging Distances 1565
DYLAN THOMAS (1914-1953)
The Force That Through the Green Fuse Drives the

Flower 1566

The Hand That Signed the Paper 1 567

After the Funeral 1567

The Hunchback in the Park 1 568

A Refusal to Mourn the Death, by Fire, of a Child in
London 1569

The Conversation of Prayer 1570

Fern Hill 1571

In My Craft or Sullen Art 1 572

Do Not Go Gentle into That Good Night 1 572

ALUN LEWIS (1915-1944)

All Day It Has Rained 1573

Song 1574

Goodbye 1575

MARGARET WALKER (1915-1998)

Since 1619 1576

Childhood 1577

JUDITH WRIGHT (1915-2000)

Woman to Man 1577

Train Journey 1578

Request to a Year 1 578

Eve to Her Daughters 1579

x l i i / CONTENTS

DAVID GASCOYNE (1916-2001)

1580

Yves Tanguy 1580

Ecce Homo 1581

P. K. PAGE (b. 1916)

1583

Stories of Snow 1 583

Deaf-Mute in the Pear Tree 1 584

GWENDOLYN BROOKS (1917-2000)

1586

kitchenette building 1586

my dreams, my works, must wait till after hell 1586

the birth in a narrow room 1586

the rites for Cousin Vit 1 587

The Bean Eaters 1587

We Real Cool 1588

MedgarEvers 1588

Boy Breaking Glass 1 589

CHARLES CAUSLEY (1917-2003)

1590

Armistice Day 1 590

At the British War Cemetery, Bayeux

1590

Eden Rock 1591

ROBERT LOWELL (1917-1977) 1592

The Quaker Graveyard in Nantucket 1592

Mr. Edwards and the Spider 1 596

My Last Afternoon with Uncle Devereux Winslow 1597

Skunk Hour 1601

Water 1602

For the Union Dead 1603

Harriet 1605

Epilogue 1605

[LAWRENCE FERLINGHETTI \(b. 1919\) 1606](#)

Sometime During Eternity ... 1606

[WILLIAM MEREDITH \(b. 1919\) 1608](#)

The Illiterate 1608

Rhode Island 1608

[AMY CLAMPITT \(1920-1994\) 1609](#)

Beach Glass 1609

Beethoven, Opus 111 1610

The Sun Underfoot Among the Sundews 1613

The Cormorant in Its Element 1614

Syrinx 1614

BARBARA GUEST (b. 1920)

1616

Roses 1616

Twilight Polka Dots 1617

CONTENTS / x l i i i

EDWIN MORGAN (b. 1920) 1618

Strawberries 1618

King Billy 1618

The Dowser 1619

KEITH DOUGLAS (1920-1944) 1620

Vergissmeinnicht 1620

Aristocrats 1621

Gallantry 1622

On a Return from Egypt 1622

[HOWARD NEMEROV\(1920-1991\) 1623](#)

The Goose Fish 1623

A Primer of the Daily Round 1624

The Blue Swallows 1625

Boy with Book of Knowledge 1626

Strange Metamorphosis of Poets 1626

[A Cabinet of Seeds Displayed 1627](#)

[GEORGE MACKAY BROWN \(1921-1996\) 1627](#)

The Old Women 1627

Haddock Fishermen 1628

Shroud 1628

MONA VAN DUYN (b. 1921) 1629

Letters from a Father 1629

Falling in Love at Sixty-Five 1631

[RICHARD WILBUR \(b. 1921\) 1632](#)

First Snow in Alsace 1632

Love Calls Us to the Things of This World 1633

Piazza di Spagna, Early Morning 1634

A Plain Song for Comadre 1635

A Baroque Wall-Fountain in the Villa Sciarra 1635

Advice to a Prophet 1637

Junk 1638

Cottage Street, 1953 1640

Zea 1640

DONALD DAVIE (1922-1995) 1641

Remembering the Thirties 1641

The Fountain 1643

Time Passing, Beloved 1643

SIDNEY KEYES (1922-1943) 1644

Elegy 1644

From The Foreign Gate 1645

War Poet 1647

x l i v / C O N T E N T S

PHILIP LARKIN (1922-1985) 1648

For Sidney Bechet 1648

Born Yesterday 1648

Church Going 1649

An Arundel Tomb 1650

The Whitsun Weddings 1652

MCMXIV 1653

Talking in Bed 1654

Ambulances 1655

The Trees 1656

Sad Steps 1656

The Explosion 1657

This Be The Verse 1657

Aubade 1658

HOWARD MOSS (1922-1987) 1659

The Persistence of Song 1659

Tourists 1660

[JAMES DICKEY \(1923-1997\) 1661](#)

The Lifeguard 1661

Buckdancer's Choice 1663

Sled Burial, Dream Ceremony 1664

[PETER KANE DUFAULT \(b. 1923\) 1665](#)

A Letter for All-Hallows (1949) 1665

A First Night 1666

Burden 1666

[ANTHONY HECHT \(1923-2004\) 1667](#)

A Hill 1667

The Dover Bitch 1668

The Ghost in the Martini 1669

Still Life 1671

The Book of Yolek 1672

Death the Painter 1673

RICHARD HUGO (1923-1982) 1674

The Way a Ghost Dissolves 1674

The Lady in Kicking Horse Reservoir 1675

DENISE LEVERTOV (1923-1997) 1677

Scenes from the Life of the Peppertrees 1677

Triple Feature 1678

O Taste and See 1678

Tenebrae 1679

Caedmon 1680

JOHN ORMOND (1923-1990)

1681

Cathedral Builders 1681

Lament for a Leg 1681

C O N T E N T S / x l v

JAMES SCHUYLER (1923-1991) 1683

Freely Espousing 1683

Shimmer 1684

DONALD JUSTICE (1925-2004) 1684

Counting the Mad 1684

Men at Forty 1685
Nostalgia of the Lakefronts 1686
Pantom of the Great Depression 1687
CAROLYN KIZER (b. 1925) 1688
The Erotic Philosophers (Part Five of “Pro Femina”) 1688
KENNETH KOCH (1925-2002) 1691
Permanently 1691
You Were Wearing 1692
Variations on a Theme by William Carlos Williams 1693
Energy in Sweden 1693
To My Twenties 1694
A. R. AMMONS (1926-2001) 1695
Corsons Inlet 1695
The City Limits 1698
The Arc Inside and Out 1699
Pet Panther 1700
All’s All 1701
[JAMES K. BAXTER \(1926-1972\) 1701](#)
Wild Bees 1701
East Coast Journey 1702
New Zealand 1703
[ROBERT BLY\(b. 1926\) 1704](#)
Waking from Sleep 1704
Johnson’s Cabinet Watched by Ants 1704
ROBERT CREELEY(b. 1926) 1705
Heroes 1705
I Know a Man 1705
The World 1706

Bresson's Movies 1707
ALLEN GINSBERG (1926-1997) 1708
Howl 1708
P a r t i 1708
A Supermarket in California 1713
To Aunt Rose 1714
JAMES MERRILL (1926-1995)
1716
The Broken Home 1716
x l v i / C O N T E N T S
The Victor Dog 1719
Lost in Translation 1720
The Book of Ephraim 1725
C. ("Correct but cautious, that first night, we asked") 1725
Arabian Night 1727
FRANK O'HARA (1926-1966) 1728
The Day Lady Died 1728
How to Get There 1729
Ave Maria 1730
Why I Am Not a Painter 1730
W. D. SNODGRASS (b. 1926) 1731
Heart's Needle 1731
2 ("Late April and you are three; today") 1732
3 ("The child between them on the street") 1732
7 ("Here in the scuffled dust") 1733
10 ("The vicious winter finally yields") 1733
Mementos, 1 1734
ELIZABETH JENNINGS (1926-2001) 1735

My Grandmother 1735
One Flesh 1735
JOHN ASHBERY (b. 1927) 1736
The Painter 1736
Soonest Mended 1737
Ode to Bill 1739
Paradoxes and Oxymorons 1739
Brute Image 1740
GALWAY KINNELL (b. 1927) 1740
First Song 1 740
The Correspondence School Instructor Says Goodbye to His
Poetry Students 1741
After Making Love We Hear Footsteps 1742
W. S. MERWIN (b. 1927) 1743
The Drunk in the Furnace 1743
Odysseus 1743
Separation 1744
Losing a Language 1744
Whoever You Are 174 5
CHARLES TOMLINSON (b. 1927) 1746
Farewell to Van Gogh 1746
The Picture of J.T. in a Prospect of Stone 1746
Mr. Brodsky 1747
Ararat 1748
CONTENTS / x l v i i
[JAMES WRIGHT \(1927-1980\) 1749](#)
A Note Left in Jimmy Leonard's Shack 1749
A Blessing 1750

Speak 1750

[PETER DAVISON \(b. 1928\) 1751](#)

Equinox 1980 1751

Peaches 1752

[DONALD HALL \(b. 1928\) 1753](#)

Exile 1753

The One Day 1753

Prophecy 1753

Independence Day Letter 1756

[THOMAS KINSELLA \(b. 1928\) 1757](#)

Another September 1757

Ancestor 1757

Tear 1758

[PHILIP LEVINE \(b. 1928\) 1761](#)

They Feed They Lion 1761

You Can Have It 1761

The Simple Truth 1763

ANNE SEXTON (1928-1974) 1764

The Truth the Dead Know 1764

And One for My Dame 1764

[L. E. SISSMAN \(1928-1976\) 1766](#)

Dying: An Introduction 1766

IV. Path. Report 1766

V. Outbound 1766

A Deathplace 1767

THOM GUNN (1929-2004) 1768

On the Move 1768

A Map of the City 1769

Black Jackets 1770
My Sad Captains 1771
From the Wave 1771
“All Do Not All Things Well” 1772
The Missing 1774
JOHN HOLLANDER (b. 1929) 1775
Swan and Shadow 1775
Adam’s Task 1776
An Old-Fashioned Song 1776
Variations on a Fragment by Trumbull Stickney 1 777
xlviii / C O N T E N T S
RICHARD HOWARD (b. 1929) 1778
Nikolaus Mardruz to his Master Ferdinand, Count of Tyrol,
1565 1778
JOHN MONTAGUE (b. 1929) 1783
Like Dolmens Round My Childhood, the Old People 1783
Old Mythologies 1784
The Trout 1785
All Legendary Obstacles 1785
PETER PORTER (b. 1929)
1786
A Consumer’s Report 1786
An Angel in Blythburgh Church
1787
An Exequy 1788
ADRIENNE RICH (b. 1929)
1791
Aunt Jennifer’s Tigers 1791

Snapshots of a Daughter-in-Law
1791
Orion 1795
A Valediction Forbidding Mourning 1796
Diving into the Wreck 1797
Eastern War Time 1799
1 (“Memory lifts her smoky mirror: 1943”) 1799
8 (“A woman wired in memories”) 1 799
Modotti 1800
A. K. RAMANUJAN (1929-1993) 1801
Snakes 1801
Breaded Fish 1802
Self-Portrait 1803
EDWARD KAMAU BRATHWAITE (b. 1930) 1803
The Arrivants: A New World Trilogy 1803
New World A-Comin’ 1803
1 (“Helpless like this”) 1803
2 (“It will be a long long time before we see”) 1805
Ancestors 1806
1 (“Every Friday morning my grandfather”) 1806
2 (“All that I can remember of his wife”) 1806
3 (“Come-a look”) 1807
GREGORY CORSO (1930-2001) 1807
Marriage 1807
TED HUGHES (1930-1998) 1810
The Thought-Fox 1810
Wind 1811
Pike 1812

Theology 1813

Examination at the Womb-Door 1813

Daffodils 1814

Platform One 1815

GARY SNYDER (b. 1930)

Above Pate Valley 1816

Four Poems for Robin 1817

Instructions 1819

DEREK WALCOTT(b. 1930)

A Far Cry from Africa 1820

Nights in the Gardens of Port of Spain 1821

The Glory Trumpeter 1821

The Gulf 1822

From The Schooner Flight 1825

Midsummer 1827

Omeros 1827

Chapter XXXVIII 1827

ALAN BROWNJOHN (b. 1931)

Common Sense 1829

J A Y M A C P H E R S O N (b . 1 9 3 1)

The Swan 1830

A Lost Soul 1831

GEOFFREY HILL (b. 1932)

The Distant Fury of Battle 1831

The Guardians 1832

September Song 1832

Mercian Hymns 1833

VI (“The princes of Mercia were badger and raven.
Thrall”) 1833

VII (“Gasholders, russet among fields. Milldams,
marlpools”) 1833

VIII (“The mad are predators. Too often lately they
harbour”) 1834

Lachrimae 1834

1. Lachrimae Verae 1834

An Apology for the Revival of Christian Architecture in
England 1835

9. The Laurel Axe 1835

Veni Coronaberis 1836

SYLVIA PLATH (1932-1963)

The Colossus 1836

Morning Song 1837

Tulips 1838

Elm 1839

Daddy 1840

I / C O N T E N T S

Ariel 1842

Lady Lazarus 1843

[JOHN UPDIKE \(b. 1932\) 1846](#)

V. B. Nimble, V. B. Quick 1846

I Missed His Book, but I Read His Name 1846

[ANNE STEVENSON \(b. 1933\) 1847](#)

Temporarily in Oxford 1847

Arioso Dolente 1848

FLEUR ADCOCK (b. 1934) 1849

The Ex-Queen Among the Astronomers 1849

Poem Ended by a Death 1850

The Soho Hospital for Women 1851

[P O P U L A R B A L L A D S O F T H E T W E N T I E T H C E
N T U R Y 1 8 5 3](#)

Pete Seeger (b. 1919) • Where Have All the Flowers
Gone? 1853

Bob Dylan (b. 1941) • Boots of Spanish Leather 1854

Dudley Randall (b. 1914) • Ballad of Birmingham 1855

[AMIRI BARAKA \(LEROI JONES\) \(b. 1934\) 1856](#)

In Memory of Radio 1856

An Agony. As Now. 1857

[AUDRE LORDE \(1934-1992\) 1858](#)

Coal 1858

From the House of Yemanjá 1859

Echoes 1860

[N. SCOTT MOMADAY\(b. 1934\) 1861](#)

Headwaters 1861

The Eagle-Feather Fan 1861

The Gift 1861

Two Figures 1862

WOLE SOYINKA (b. 1934) 1862

Telephone Conversation 1862

MARK STRAND (b. 1934) 1863

The Prediction 1863

Always 1863

D A R K H A R B O R 1 8 6 4

XVI (“It is true, as someone has said, that in”) 1864

XX (“Is it you standing among the olive trees”) 1865

CHARLES WRIGHT (b. 1935)

1865

Homage to Claude Lorraine 1865

Chinese Journal 1866

C O N T E N T S / i

As Our Bodies Rise, Our Names Turn into Light 1867

Quotations 1867

DARYL HINE (b. 1936)

1868

Letting Go 1868

Riddle 1869

C. K. WILLIAMS (b. 1936)

1869

Repression 1869

Snow: II 1870

The Question 1870

TONY HARRISON (b. 1937)

1872

On Not Being Milton 1872

Classics Society 1873

Them & [uz] 1873

A Kumquat for John Keats 1875

The Heartless Art 1877

[ELEANOR WILNER \(b. 1937\) 1879](#)

Reading the Bible Backwards 1879

High Noon at Los Alamos 1881

DOM MORAES (b. 1938) 1883

Kanheri Caves 1883

Snow on a Mountain 1883

From Two from Israel 1884

[LES MURRAY \(b. 1938\) 1885](#)

Noonday Axeman 1885

Once in a Lifetime, Snow 1887

The Quality of Sprawl 1888

Morse 1890

CHARLES SIMIC (b. 1938) 1891

Watch Repair 1891

Prodigy 1892

A Book Full of Pictures 1892

Cameo Appearance 1893

MARGARET ATWOOD (b. 1939) 1894

This Is a Photograph of Me 1894

At the Tourist Center in Boston 1894
You Begin 1896
Flowers 1896
Up 1898
SEAMUS HEANEY (b. 1939)
1899
Digging 1899
The Forge 1900
l i i / C O N T E N T S
Punishment 1900
The Skunk 1902
A Dream of Jealousy 1902
From Station Island 1903
From Clearances 1905
Casting and Gathering 1906
The Settle Bed 1907
Glanmore Revisited 1908
6. Bedside Reading 1908
7. The Skylight 1908
Fosterling 1908
From Squarings 1909
Two Lorries 1909
MICHAEL LONGLEY(b. 1939) 1910
The Linen Industry 1910
Gorse Fires 1911
Ghetto 1911
ROBERT PINSKY(b. 1940) 1913
Essay on Psychiatrists 1913

IV. A Lakeside Identification 1913

V. Physical Comparison With Professors And Others 1914

A Long Branch Song 1914

The Street 1914

ABC 1916

[BILLY COLLINS \(b. 1941\) 1917](#)

Japan 1917

Litany 1918

ROBERT HASS (b. 1941) 1919

Meditation at Lagunitas 1919

Tahoe in August 1919

DEREK MAHON (b. 1941) 1921

In Carrowdore Churchyard 1921

A Disused Shed in Co. Wexford 1921

The Window 1923

Girls on the Bridge 1924

ERIC ORMSBY (b. 1941) 1925

Starfish 1925

Skunk Cabbage 1926

Origins 1926

DOUGLAS DUNN (b. 1942)

1927

A Removal from Terry Street 1927

In the Grounds 1927

C O N T E N T S / l i i i

Elegies 1928

Thirteen Steps and the Thirteenth of March 1928

[ALFRED CORN \(b. 1943\) 1929](#)

Navidad, St. Nicholas Ave. 1929

A Conch from Sicily 1930

LOUISE GLUCK(b. 1943) 1931

Gretel in Darkness 1931

The Garden 1931

Vita Nova 1932

[MICHAEL ONDAATJE \(b. 1943\) 1933](#)

Letters & Other Worlds 1933

Driving with Dominic in the Southern Province We See Hints
of

the Circus 1935

House on a Red Cliff 1935

MICHAEL PALMER (b. 1943) 1936

Of this cloth doll which 1936

I Do Not 1937

EAVAN BOLAND (b. 1944) 1938

That the Science of Cartography Is Limited 1938

The Dolls Museum in Dublin 1939

The Pomegranate 1941

[CRAIG RAINE \(b. 1944\) 1942](#)

The Onion, Memory 1942

A Martian Sends a Postcard Home 1943

For Hans Keller 1944

KIT WRIGHT (b. 1944) 1946

Mantles 1946

A Love Song of Tooting 1946

My Version 1947

[WENDY COPE \(b. 1945\) 1947](#)

Bloody Men 1947

Flowers 1948

Valentine 1948

Serious Concerns 1949

YUSEF KOMUNYAKAA (b. 1947) 1949

Facing It 1949

Banking Potatoes 1950

The Smokehouse 1950

Sunday Afternoons 1951

J i v / C O N T E N T S

[JANE SHORE \(b. 1947\) 1952](#)

High Holy Days 1952

RICHARD KENNEY (b. 1948) 1954

Aubade 1954

Apples on Champlain 1955

Sawmill 1956

ROBYN SARA (b. 1949) 1956

Courtney, Mentioned in Passing, Years After 1956

Relics 1957

[AG HA SHAHID ALI \(1949-2001\) 1958](#)

The Dacca Gauzes 1958

Lenox Hill 1959

[JAMES FENTON \(b. 1949\) 1961](#)

Dead Soldiers 1961

A German Requiem 1963

God, A Poem 1965

In Paris with You 1966

CHARLES BERNSTEIN (b. 1950) 1967

Of Time and the Line 1967
frequently unasked questions 1968
why we ask you not to touch 1968
this poem intentionally left blank 1968
ANNE CARSON (b. 1950)
1969
New Rule 1969
Sumptuous Destitution 1969
The Beauty of the Husband 1970
IV. HE SHE WE THEY YOU ...
1970
DANA GIOIA (b. 1950) 1972
Prayer 1972
The Next Poem 1972
NICHOLAS CHRISTOPHER (b. 1951) 1973
The Palm Reader 1973
Far from Home 1974
[JORIE GRAHAM \(b. 1951\) 1975](#)
The Geese 1975
At Luca Signorelli's Resurrection of the Body 1976
The Surface 1979
PAUL MULDOON (b. 1951)
1979
Why Brownlee Left 1979
Meeting the British 1980
Milkweed and Monarch 1980
Third Epistle to Timothy 1981
RITA DOVE (b. 1952)

Parsley 1985
Dusting 1987
The Bistro Styx 1988
DANIEL HALL (b. 1952)
Love-Letter-Burning 1990
Mangosteens 1991
SEAN O'BRIEN (b. 1952)
Cousin Coat 1992
Welcome, Major Poet! 1993
VIKRAM SETH (b. 1952)
From The Golden Gate 1994
GARY SOTO (b. 1952)
The Soup 1996
Not Knowing 1997
BRAD LEITHAUSER (b. 1953)
The Buried Graves 1998
In Minako Wada's House 1998
Old Bachelor Brother 1999
GJERTRUD SCHNACKENBERG (b. 1953)
Darwin in 1881 2000
Supernatural Love 2003
LOUISE ERDRICH (b. 1954)
The Butcher's Wife 2005
I Was Sleeping Where the Black Oaks Move 2006
Birth 2006
CAROL ANN DUFFY (b. 1955)
Warming Her Pearls 2007
Prayer 2007

Anne Hathaway 2008

Little Red-Cap 2008

DIONISIO D. MARTINEZ (b. 1956)

In a Duplex Near the San Andreas Fault 2009

What the Men Talk About When the Women Leave the
Room 2010

Stieglitz 2010

l v i / C O N T E N T S

LI-YOUNG LEE (b. 1957)

2 0 1 1

Persimmons 2011

Out of Hiding 2013

CYNTHIA ZARIN (b. 1959)

2013

The Ant Hill 2013

Song 2014

LAVINIA GREENLAW (b. 1962)

2015

Skin Full 2015

What's Going On 2015

A World Where News Travelled Slowly 2016

GLYN MAXWELL (b. 1962)

2016

From Letters to Edward Thomas 2016

SIMON ARMITAGE (b. 1963)

2021

From Killing Time 2021

The Shout 2022

GREG WILLIAMSON (b. 1964)

2023

Outbound 2023

Double Exposures 2024

III. Visiting Couple Kissing and Halved Onion 2024

XXV. Group Photo with Winter Trees 2024

New Year's: A Short Pantoum 2024

VERSIFICATION 2027

Rhythm 2028

Meter 2029

Rhyme 2036

Forms 2039

Basic Forms 2039

Composite Forms 2046

Irregular Forms 2048

Open Forms or Free Verse 2048

Suggestions for Further Reading 2051

POETIC SYNTAX 2053

What Is Syntax? 2053

Parts of Syntax 2055

Sentences and Words 2055

Clauses 2056

Moves in the Game 2060

Nominal Syntax 2060

Double Syntax 2061

Word Order Inversions 2062

The Game of Interpretation 2065

Emily Dickinson 2065

John Keats 2067

Thomas Gray 2067

John Dryden 2068

William Blake 2069

Scorn Not Syntax 2072

Suggestions for Further Reading 2073

BIOGRAPHICAL SKETCHES

PERMISSIONS ACKNOWLEDGMENTS

INDEX

Preface to the Fifth Edition

What is a poem? The definitions offered over the centuries are almost as

numerous as the examples in this book. Although no two people may settle

on the qualities all poems share, it might not be foolish to say that the best definition of poetry encompasses all definitions—even those that contradict

each other. Poetry, after all, encourages us to embrace paradox and contra-

diction, the unexpected, the never-thought-of (and also, paradoxically, the

universal, the shared, the familiar). Poetry began as song and continues as

song; it is usually best appreciated when spoken or sung by a human voice.

Since the advent of writing, however, the act of reading a poem on the page

has added new dimensions to our experience. In these pages, we necessarily

feature the written pleasures of poetry—even in those poems that were

meant originally as song. What all these poems share, we hope, is something

in the manner of their telling that cannot be achieved any better way. The

best poems, too, make a claim on our memory. W. H. Auden wrote that “of the many definitions of poetry, the simplest is still the best: ‘memorable

speech.’ ” Many poems in this book have been part of English-speaking culture for centuries, while the newest poems here might well lodge in readers’

memories in the future.

This Fifth Edition of *The Norton Anthology of Poetry* brings together more than eighteen hundred such records from “the round earth’s imagined corners.” We have set out to provide readers with a wide and deep sampling of the best poetry written in English. That previous editions have succeeded in this endeavor, within the limits of the pages available in a single volume,

seems manifest in the acceptance of those editions by teachers and students

alike. But as our friend and advisor M. H. Abrams has said in another context,

“a vital literary culture is always on the move,” both in the appearance of new works and in the altering response to existing texts: hence a Fifth Edition, which broadens and refines that cultural tradition. We believe that the vitality of our literary culture has been demonstrated by this collaboration.

In assembling the new edition, we have aimed to respond to the practical

criticism and informed suggestions provided by teachers who have used the

anthology. Our goal has been to make the anthology an even better teaching

tool for their classes. In response to instructors' requests, a number of important works by major poets have been added to the Fifth Edition, among them

a selection from *Beowulf* in Seamus Heaney's prize-winning translation; Chaucer, "The Wife of Bath's Prologue and Tale"; Spenser, "The Shepheardes Calendar: Aprill" and book 1, canto 2 of *The Faerie Queene*; Shakespeare, ten additional sonnets; Milton, Book 4 of *Paradise Lost*; Wroth, seven additional sonnets; Swift, "Verses on the Death of Dr. Swift"; Keats, "Lamia"; Eliot, "Little Gidding" and "The Hollow Men." We have worked toward a balance between the older and the newer. Instructors committed to teaching

lix

l x / P R E F A C E T O T H E F I F T H E D I T I O N

the rich diversity—of forms and techniques as well as historical and geo-

graphic range—of English-language poetry in the twentieth century will wel-

come the Fifth Edition's increased attention to world poetry in English as

well as the greater range of American voices. Among the seventeen poets

newly included are Richard Wright, Weldon Kees, Robyn Sarah, Charles

Bernstein, Anne Carson, Vikram Seth, and Simon Armitage.

In addition to

expanding representation, we have reconsidered, and in some instances rese-

lected, the work of poets retained from earlier editions. Among the poets

reselected are John Ashbery, Adrienne Rich, Derek Walcott, Seamus Hea-

ney, Michael Ondaatje, Yusef Komunyakaa, Agha Shahid Ali, Jorie Graham,

Carol Ann Duffy, and Li-Young Li.

The vernacular tradition, in which the poet “Anon” has spoken eloquently over the centuries, is brought forward from medieval lyrics and Elizabethan

and Jacobean poems to African American spirituals and popular ballads of

the twentieth century. Teachers can trace the history of the epic by com-

paring openings and selections from *Beowulf*, *The Faerie Queene*, *Paradise Lost*, Killigrew’s (unfinished) *Alexandreis*, Pope’s *Rape of the Lock*, and Wordsworth’s *Prelude*. The tradition of light verse, too, can be traced from Lewis Carroll, W. S. Gilbert, and Edward Lear to Ogden Nash and Dorothy Parker to Wendy Cope, James Fenton, and John Updike.

We continue to expand opportunities for teaching intertextual “dialogues”

among poets: the addition of Donne’s “A Hymn to God the Father,” for instance, allows that poem to be read with Jonson’s hymn of the same name.

Among the pairs entirely new to this edition: Elizabeth Bishop’s “Casabianca”

responds to Felicia Dorothea Hemans’s poem of that title, which was, as

Bishop knew, one of the most often taught and recited poems of the nine-

teenth century. Also new are Aphra Behn’s “The Disappointment” and John Wilmot, earl of Rochester’s “The Imperfect Enjoyment,” which together form a dialogue about impotence. Other poetic dialogues present English-language responses to foreign sources, which may be secular—a Petrarchan

sonnet, for instance, such as the one rendered in English by Wyatt (“Whoso List to Hunt”) and by Spenser (*Amoretti* 67)—or biblical: we now include four versions of Psalms 58 and

114, ranging from Mary Sidney's to Christopher Smart's. Some poetic conversations present different perspectives on culturally fraught issues: a set of eighteenth-century poems on "spleen"—a malady strikingly like the one we call depression today—includes texts by

Anne Finch, Alexander Pope, and Matthew Green; a newly augmented cluster

of poems on the meaning of the color black includes Edward Herbert's

"Sonnet of Black Beauty," Mary Wroth's sonnet 22 ("Like to the Indians),"

Henry King's "The Boy's Answer to the Blackmoor," and Phillis Wheatley's

"On Being Brought from Africa to America." We continue to emphasize call-and-response patterns that extend across periods: our selection from William Cowper's *The Task* includes the lines that inspired part of Coleridge's "Frost at Midnight"; and we invite readers to consider Marlowe's "The Passionate Shepherd to His Love" with Raleigh's "The Nymph's Reply to the Shepherd,"

then both of these poems with C. Day Lewis's elegiac, war-shocked "Two

Songs," which reprises them as well as Jean Elliot's "The Flowers of the Forest." In turn, Elliot's and Lewis's poems may be set in dialogue with Pete Seeger's modern ballad "Where Have All the Flowers Gone?" To bring these P R E F

A C E T O T H E F I F T H E D I T I O N / I x i

potential dialogues to readers' attention, we have provided a number of cross-referencing annotations and expanded the discussion of intertextual pairs

and groups in the Course Guide.

The Fifth Edition includes not merely the lyric and the epigrammatic but

instead the entire range of poetic genres in English. Among the many longer

poems are Aemilia Lanyer's "The Description of Cooke-ham" and Richard Howard's "Nikolaus Mardruz to his Master Ferdinand, Count of Tyrol,

1565," as well as teachable excerpts from John Skelton's "Phillip Sparow"

and "Colin Clout," Charlotte Smith's "Beachy Head," Elizabeth Barrett Browning's *Aurora Leigh*, William Carlos Williams's "Asphodel, That Greeny Flower," and James Merrill's *The Changing Light at Sandover*. Although it is impossible to include all of *The Faerie Queene*, *Paradise Lost*, *The Prelude*, *Song of Myself*, or *The Dream Songs*, readers will find representative and self-sufficient selections from each of these works.

Three other features within the anthology facilitate its usefulness in the

classroom. An indispensable aid in helping students become better readers

and interpreters of poetry, Margaret Ferguson's new essay, "Poetic Syntax,"

addresses a perennial stumbling block—how to recognize, describe, analyze,

and appreciate syntactic ambiguity in English poetry. Among the "types of ambiguity" (to borrow William Empson's phrase) discussed in the essay are those involving parts of speech, elisions, and punctuation, as well as the

difficulties that the poet's traditional license to invert normal English word order can create for readers. Jon Stallworthy's essay, "Versification," has been selectively expanded to offer clearer explanations of rhyme, plus more attention to forms such as prose poetry, found poetry, and shaped poetry and to the metrics of Old and Middle English and Renaissance verse. In addition,

the appendix of biographical sketches has been updated, streamlined, and

cross-referenced to the individual poets.

Editorial Procedures

The order is chronological, poets appearing according to their dates of birth and their poems according to dates of publication in volume form (or estimated dates of composition in the case of Old and Middle English poets).

The publication date is printed at the end of each poem, and to the right;

when two dates are printed, they indicate published versions that differ in

an important way. Dates on the left, when given, are those of composition.

Many of our texts are modernized to help readers, but we continue an ongo-

ing project of remarking editorial decisions in annotations, to let teachers and students consider issues pertaining to the materiality and complex histories of many poems in the anthology.

Annotation in the Fifth Edition has been thoroughly revised. In keeping

with recent developments in editing, we have introduced notes that mention

significant textual variants. These are intended to spark classroom discussion about poems whose multiple versions challenge the idea of textual “authority.” We have added many notes that provide contextual information and

clarify archaisms and allusions; however, as in previous editions, we mini-

Ixii / P R E F A C E TO THE F I F T H E D I T I O N

mize commentary that is interpretive rather than, in a limited sense, explanatory. As further help with teaching poetic syntax, we have added notes that discuss syntactical difficulties.

Marginal glosses for archaic, dialect, or unfamiliar words have been recon-

sidered and, for many poems, increased in number. For the convenience of

the student, we have used square brackets to indicate titles supplied by the editors and have, whenever a portion of a text has been omitted, indicated

that omission with three asterisks.

Instructors have long made inventive use of the rich intertextuality of *The Norton Anthology of Poetry*. Three supplemental resources—two in print and one online—expand the possibilities for teachers who wish to convey how

poems speak to each other across time, place, and tradition through literal

borrowings, form, theme, cultural concern, and conventions. *Teaching with The Norton Anthology of Poetry: A Guide for Instructors*, by Tyler Hoffman, makes available to teachers varied reading lists that help shape a course or courses along a number of lines—according to form, figurative language, traditions and countertraditions, and topics—and to establish relationships

among poets and poems of different genres, periods, and concerns. Also for

instructors, *Teaching Poetry: A Handbook of Exercises for Large and Small Classes*, by Allan J. Gedalof, offers innovative ideas and exercises for structuring a class centered on performance and discussion. Instructors should

visit www.wwnorton.com for further information about obtaining these materials. For students, a new Web site, *The Norton Poetry Workshop Online*

(www.wwnorton.com/nap), prepared by James F. Knapp (based on his innovative *Norton Poetry Workshop* CD-ROM), contains texts and recordings of thirty of the most-taught poems from the anthology, supported by a rich array of multimedia, exercises, and study aids.

We are indebted to our predecessors, the editors emeriti of *The Norton*

Anthology of Poetry, whose presence on the title page signals their ongoing contribution, and to M. H. Abrams, advisor to the Norton English list, for

his wise and ready counsel. We also thank the staff at Norton who helped

this book come into being: Julia Reidhead used her remarkable resources of

energy, intelligence, and good humor to keep the book on course; Diane

O'Connor guided the book through production; Erin Dye gracefully facili-

tated communications and meetings; Nancy Rodwan and Margaret Goren-

stein handled the massive task of securing permissions; and Eileen Connell

capably oversaw the interrelated projects of the Web site and the Course

Guide. Our development editor, Kurt Wildermuth, paid attention to (and in

many cases perfected) the book's "minute particulars" in ways that William Blake would have admired. Kurt also kept a steady eye on the book's larger

shape and primary goal: to bring English-language poems originating in dif-

ferent times and places to modern readers—who will, we hope, find pleasure

within these covers.

MARGARET FERGUSON

MARY JO SALTER

JONSTALL WORTHY

Acknowledgments

A m o n g o u r m a n y c r i t i c s , a d v i s o r s , a n d f r i e n d s , t h e f o l l o w i n g w e r e o f s p e c i a l h e l p i n p r e p a r

ing the Fifth Edition. For assisting us in research and preparing texts and other materials, thanks to John Barrell, Mike Bell, Steve Cassal, Alfred E. David, Ed Doughtie, Harriet Guest, S. Kristin Hall, Katie Kalpin, Laura Maestrelli, Andy Majeske, Frank Murphy, Marijane Osborn, and Beth Robertson. For preparing the biographical sketches, thanks to Sherri Vandeen Akker and Jane Potter. Special thanks for their invaluable help goes to Andrea Bundy, Sandie Byrne, Sarita Cargas, Stephen L. Carr, Tony Edwards, Barry Goldensohn, Linda Gregerson, Marshall Grossman, Jenny Houlby, Tim Kendall, Elizabeth Langland (dean of arts and letters at the University of California at Davis), David Simpson, Claire M. Waters, and Carolyn Williams.

We take pleasure in thanking those teachers who provided critiques and questionnaire responses: Paul F. Betz (Georgetown University), Michael Borich (Southwest Missouri State University), Suzannah Bowser (Humboldt State University), Joel J. Brattin (Worcester Polytechnic University), Seeta Chaganti (University of California, Davis), John Cobb (Wofford College), Rian Cooney (Santa Rosa Junior College), Martha Crowe (East Tennessee State University), Diana Cruz (Boston College), Jane Donawerth (University of Maryland), Sheila P. Donohue (Northwestern University), Beverly Friend (Oakton Community College), Julie Funderburk (University of North Carolina at Greensboro), Barry Goldensohn (Skidmore College), Marshall Grossman (University of Maryland), Brooke Haley (UC Irvine), Amy Has-

singer (Iowa State University), Jeremy Hawthorn (Norwegian University of Science and Technology), Patrick Hicks (University of

St. Thomas), Emily A. Bernhard Jackson (Brandeis University), Albert C. Labriola (Duquesne University), Mark Larabee (U.S. Naval Academy), Cynthia Lee Katona (Oholone College), Eric LeMay (Northwestern), Julia Levine, Tim Kendall (University of Bristol), Terry L. Kennedy (University of North Carolina at Greensboro), Millie M. Kidd (Mount St. Mary's College), Stephanie Kuduk (Wesleyan University), Herbert Lindemberger (Stanford University), Leon Litvack (University of Belfast), Debbie Lopez (University of Texas at San Antonio), Christopher Lurasik (Boston University), Stacey Margolis (University of Utah), Patrick McGuire (University of Wisconsin at Parkside), Geoffrey Morley-Mower (James Madison University), Sandra Morris (Bucknell University), Micki Myers (University of Pittsburgh), Laura Orem (Villa Julie College), Kirk Nessel (Allegheny College), Larry Newman, Carol Percy (University of Toronto), Dwight Purdy (University of Minnesota), Morris, Elizabeth Robertson (University of Colorado at Boulder), Jeffrey Robinson (University of Colorado at Boulder), Catherine Robson (University of California, Davis), J. N. R. Saunders (University of Newcastle), Paul

lxiv / ACKNOWLEDGMENTS

Schlicke (University of Aberdeen), Mark Silverberg (Dalhousie University), Ellen M. Smith (University of Pittsburgh), David St. John (University of Southern California), Carol Simpson Stern (Northwestern University), John Thomas Stovall (National-Louis University), Herbert Tucker

(University of Virginia), Anita Tully (Nicholls State University), Peter Van Egmond (University of Maryland), Claire Waters (University of California, Davis), Sallie P. Wolf (Anapahoe Community College).

C/EDMON'S HYMN1

N u s c u l o n f o e r i g e a n
f o e o f o n r i c e s W e a r d
N o w w e m u s t p r a i s e
h e a v e n - k i n g d o m ' s G u a r d i a n ,
M e o t o d e s m e a h t e
a n d h i s w o d g e J) a n c
t h e M e a s u r e r ' s m i g h t
a n d h i s m i n d - p l a n s ,
w e o r c W u l d o r - F a e d e r
s w a h e w u n d r a g e h w a e s
t h e w o r k o f t h e G l o r y - F a t h e r ,
w h e n h e o f w o n d e r s o f e v e r y o n e ,
e c e D r i h t e n
o r o n s t e a l d e
e t e r n a l L o r d ,
t h e b e g i n n i n g e s t a b l i s h e d . 2
5 H e a e r e s t s c e o p
i e l d a 3 b e a r n u m
H e f i r s t c r e a t e d
f o r m e n ' s s o n s
f o e o f o n t o f o r o f e
f o a l i g S c y p p e n d
h e a v e n a s a r o o f ,

h o l y C r e a t o r ;
5 a m i d d a n g e a r d
w o n c y n n e s W e a r d
t h e n m i d d l e - e a r t h
m a n k i n d ' s G u a r d i a n ,
e c c e D r i h t e n
a s f t e r t e o d e
e t e r n a l L o r d ,
a f t e r w a r d s m a d e —
^ i r u m / o l d a n
F r e a a e l m i h t i g
f o r m e n e a r t h ,
M a s t e r a l m i g h t y .

1. Caedmon's "Hymn" is probably the earliest gift was from God, and he composed other religious poems based on biblical stories they told him. extant Old English poem (composed sometime between 658 and 680). Old English texts have The Germanic tribes had oral poets (the *Beowulf* been preserved in copies of the Latin *Ecclesiastical* poet portrays such a bard, or "scop," performing in *History of the English People*, written by the great the mead hall), and Caedmon might have been scholar Bede (ca. 673—735). Bede tells how trained as such a singer but concealed his knowl- Caedmon, an illiterate herdsman employed by the edge of pagan poetry—what Bede calls "vain and monastery of Whitby, miraculously received the

idle songs.” The “Hymn” is typical of Germanic gift of religious song, was received by the monks verse: two half-lines, each containing two stressed as a lay brother, and founded a school of Christian and two or more unstressed syllables, linked by poetry. At feasts where the farmhands took turns alliteration; interweaving of syntactically parallel singing and playing the harp, Caedmon would with-formulaic expressions. For example, eight of the draw to his bed in the stable whenever the harp poem’s half-lines consist of varying epithets for was passed his way. One night a man appeared to God: “Weard” (Guardian), “Meotod” (Measurer), him in a dream and commanded, “Caedmon, sing “Wuldor-Faederu” (Glory-Father), “Drihten” me something.” When Caedmon protested that he (Lord), “Scyppend” (Creator), and “Frea” (Mas- didn’t know how to sing, the man insisted and told ter). The poem is given here in a West Saxon form him to sing about the Creation. “At this, Caedmon with a literal interlinear translation by John Pope. immediately began to sing verses in praise of God In Old English spelling, ae (as in Caedmon’s name the Creator, which he had never heard before.” and line 3) is a vowel symbol that has not survived; (Aicer transcribing the hymn, Bede remarks that it represents the vowel of Modern English *cat*; P “this is the general sense but not the exact order

(line 2) and 3 (line 7) both represent the sound *th*. of the words that [Caedmon] sang in his sleep; for The large space in the middle of the line indicates it is impossible to make a literal translation, no the caesura. The alliterating sounds that connect matter how well written, of poetry into another lan- the half-lines have been italicized.

guage without losing some of the beauty and dig- 2. I.e., when he established the beginning of every nity.” Bede refers here to his translation of the wonder.

poem from Old English to Latin, but the poem also

3. Later manuscript copies have “eorPan” (earth) changes significantly from an oral to a written in place of “aelda” (West Saxon *ield*, meaning medium.) After Caedmon told the story to his fore- “men’s”).

man, the monks tested him to establish that the

1

2

FROM BEOWULF 1

[Introduction: History and Praise of the Danes; Account of Grendel's

Attacks on Heorot]

So. T h e S p e a r - D a n e s i n d a y s g o n e b y

and t h e k i n g s w h o r u l e d t h e m h a d c o u r a g e a n d greatness.

W e h a v e h e a r d o f t h o s e p r i n c e s ' h e r o i c c a m p a i g n s

.

T h e r e w a s S h i e l d S h e a f s o n , 2 s c o u r g e o f m a n y tribes, 5 a w r e c k e r o f m e a d - b e n c h e s , r a m p a g i n g a m o n g f o e s .

T h i s t e r r o r o f t h e h a l l - t r o o p s h a d c o m e f a r .

A f o u n d l i n g t o s t a r t w i t h , h e w o u l d f l o u r i s h l a t e r o n a s h i s p o w e r s w a x e d a n d h i s w o r t h w a s p r o v e d .

I n t h e e n d e a c h c l a n o n t h e o u t l y i n g c o a s t s

10 b e y o n d t h e w h a l e - r o a d h a d t o y i e l d t o h i m

a n d b e g i n t o p a y t r i b u t e . T h a t w a s o n e g o o d k i n g .

A f t e r w a r d a b o y - c h i l d w a s b o r n t o S h i e l d ,

a c u b i n t h e y a r d , a c o m f o r t s e n t

b y G o d t o t h a t n a t i o n . H e k n e w w h a t t h e y h a d t h o l e d , 0 s u f f e r e d 15 t h e l o n g t i m e s a n d t r o u b l e s t h e y ' d c o m e t h r o u g h

w i t h o u t a l e a d e r ; s o t h e L o r d o f L i f e ,

t h e g l o r i o u s A l m i g h t y , m a d e t h i s m a n r e n o w n e d .

S h i e l d h a d f a t h e r e d a f a m o u s s o n :

B e o w ' s n a m e w a s k n o w n t h r o u g h t h e n o r t h .

20 A n d a y o u n g p r i n c e m u s t b e p r u d e n t l i k e t h a t ,

g i v i n g f r e e l y w h i l e h i s f a t h e r l i v e s

s o t h a t a f t e r w a r d i n a g e w h e n f i g h t i n g s t a r t s

s t e a d f a s t c o m p a n i o n s w i l l s t a n d b y h i m

a n d h o l d t h e l i n e . B e h a v i o r t h a t ' s a d m i r e d

25 i s t h e p a t h t o p o w e r a m o n g p e o p l e e v e r y w h e r e .

S h i e l d w a s s t i l l t h r i v i n g w h e n h i s t i m e c a m e

a n d h e c r o s s e d o v e r i n t o t h e L o r d ' s k e e p i n g .

H i s w a r r i o r b a n d d i d w h a t h e b a d e t h e m

w h e n h e l a i d d o w n t h e l a w a m o n g t h e D a n e s :

30 t h e y s h o u l d e r e d h i m o u t t o t h e s e a ' s f l o o d s

t h e c h i e f t h e y r e v e r e d w h o h a d l o n g r u l e d t h e m .

A r i n g - w h o r l e d p r o w r o d e i n t h e h a r b o r ,

i c e - c l a d , o u t b o u n d , a c r a f t f o r a p r i n c e .

T h e y s t r e t c h e d t h e i r b e l o v e d l o r d i n h i s b o a t ,

35 l a i d o u t b y t h e m a s t , a m i d s h i p s ,

t h e g r e a t r i n g - g i v e r . F a r - f e t c h e d t r e a s u r e s

w e r e p i l e d u p o n h i m , a n d p r e c i o u s g e a r .

I n e v e r h e a r d b e f o r e o f a s h i p s o w e l l f u r b i s h e d

1. This epic poem was written in an Old English the Geats, the poem mixes elements of Christian dialect sometime between the first part of the tradition (the Germanic settlers in England had eighth century and the tenth century. Preserved in been converted to Christianity by the time the a late tenth-century manuscript, it was probably poem was written) with the heroic ideals of a non-composed by a literate poet following the versifi- Christian, warrior society.

cation and style of Germanic oral poetry; the trans- 2. A mythical king of the Scyldings (Danes), of lation here is by the Irish poet Seamus Heaney (b. divine origin and associated with agricultural fer-1939; see pp. 1899-1910). The poem deals with tility. Shield is the father of Beowulf the Dane, not the Germanic forebears of the English people, spe- Beowulf of the Geats.

cifically the Danes, who inhabited the Danish 3. Sea burials for chieftains, such as this one for island of Zealand, and the Geats of southern Swe- Shield Sheafson, were probably more mythical den. In recounting the heroic feats of Beowulf of than historical.

B E O W U L F / 3

w i t h b a t t l e - t a c k l e , b l a d e d w e a p o n s

40 a n d c o a t s o f m a i l . T h e m a s s e d t r e a s u r e

w a s l o a d e d o n t o p o f h i m : i t w o u l d t r a v e l f a r

o n o u t i n t o t h e o c e a n ' s s w a y .

They decked his body no less bountifully
with offerings than those first ones did
45 who cast him away when he was a child
and launched him alone out over the waves.⁴
And they set a gold standard up
high above his head and let him drift
to wind and tide, bewailing him
50 and mourning their loss. No man can tell,
no wise man in hall or weathered veteran
knows for certain who salvaged that load.
Then it fell to Beow to keep the forts.
He was well regarded and ruled the Danes
55 for a long time after his father took leave
of his life on earth. And then his heir,
the great Halfdane, held sway
for as long as he lived, their elder and warlord.
He was four times a father, this fighter prince:
60 one by one they entered the world,
Heorogar, Hrothgar, the good Halga,
and a daughter, I have heard, who was Onela's queen,
a balm in bed to the battle-scarred Swede.
The fortunes of war favored Hrothgar.
65 Friends and kinsmen flocked to his ranks,
young followers, a force that grew
to be a mighty army. So his mind turned
to hall-building: he handed down orders
for men to work on a great mead-hall
70 meant to be a wonder of the world forever;

it would be his throne-room and there he would dispense
his God-given goods to young and old—
but not the common land or people's lives.
Far and wide through the world, I have heard,
75 orders for work to adorn that wallstead
were sent to many peoples. And soon it stood there
finished and ready, in full view,
the hall of halls. Heorot was the name
he had settled on it, whose utterance was law.
so Nor did he renege, but doled out rings
and torques' at the table. The hall towered,
its gables wide and high and awaiting
a barbarous burning. That doom abided,
but in time it would come: the killer instinct
85 unleashed among in-laws, the blood-lust rampant.⁶
Then a powerful demon, a prowler through the dark,
4. Shield appeared from the sea as a child, appar-
treasures to seal a mutual bond of loyalty between
ently on a divinely ordained mission.
them.

5. Collars, necklaces, or bracelets. Early Ger-

6. An allusion to the future destruction of Heorot
manic tribal kings, such as Hrothgar here, tradi-
in a family feud.

tionally presented retainers with rings or other

4 / B E O W U L F

nursed a hard grievance. It harrowed him
to hear the din of the loud banquet

every day in the hall, the harp being struck
90 and the clear song of a skilled poet
telling with mastery of man's beginnings,
how the Almighty had made the earth
a gleaming plain girdled with waters;
in His splendor He set the sun and the moon
95 to be earth's lamplight, lanterns for men,
and filled the broad lap of the world
with branches and leaves; and quickened life
in every other thing that moved.

So times were pleasant for the people there
100 until finally one, a fiend out of hell,
began to work his evil in the world.

Grendel was the name of this grim demon
haunting the marches, marauding round the heath
and the desolate fens; he had dwelt for a time
105 in misery among the banished monsters,
Cain's clan, whom the Creator had outlawed
and condemned as outcasts.⁷ For the killing of Abel
the Eternal Lord had exacted a price:

Cain got no good from committing that murder
110 because the Almighty made him anathema,
and out of the curse of his exile there sprang
ogres and elves and evil phantoms
and the giants too who strove with God
time and again until He gave them their reward.

115 So, after nightfall, Grendel set out
for the lofty house, to see how the Ring-Danes

were settling into it after their drink,
and there he came upon them, a company of the best
asleep from their feasting, insensible to pain
120 and human sorrow. Suddenly then
the God-cursed brute was creating havoc:
greedy and grim, he grabbed thirty men
from their resting places and rushed to his lair,
flushed up and inflamed from the raid,
125 blundering back with the butchered corpses.
Then as dawn brightened and the day broke,
Grendel's powers of destruction were plain:
their wassail⁰ was over, they wept to heaven *revelry*
and mourned under morning. Their mighty prince,
130 the storied leader, sat stricken and helpless,
humiliated by the loss of his guard,
bewildered and stunned, staring aghast
at the demon's trail, in deep distress.
He was numb with grief, but got no respite
135 for one night later merciless Grendel
7. Grendel's descent is traced back to the biblical
tenced to roam the earth as an outcast (Genesis
Cain, son of Adam and Eve. For the crime of killing
4).
his brother Abel, Cain was marked by God and sen-
B E O W U L F / 5
struck again with more gruesome murders.
Malignant by nature, he never showed remorse.
It was easy then to meet with a man

shifting himself to a safer distance
140 to bed in the bothies,⁸ for who could be blind
to the evidence of his eyes, the obviousness
of the hall-watcher's hate? Whoever escaped
kept a weather-eye open and moved away.
So Grendel ruled in defiance of right,
145 one against all, until the greatest house
in the world stood empty, a deserted wallstead.
For twelve winters, seasons of woe,
the lord of the Shieldings suffered under
his load of sorrow; and so, before long,
150 the news was known over the whole world.
Sad lays were sung about the beset king,
the vicious raids and ravages of Grendel,
his long and unrelenting feud,
nothing but war; how he would never
155 parley or make peace with any Dane
nor stop his death-dealing nor pay the death-price.⁹
No counselor could ever expect
fair reparation from those rabid hands.
All were endangered; young and old
i60 were hunted down by that dark death-shadow
who lurked and swooped in the long nights
on the misty moors; nobody knows
where these reavers⁰ from hell roam on their errands.
marauders
So Grendel waged his lonely war,
165 inflicting constant cruelties on the people,

atrocious hurt. He took over Heorot,
haunted the glittering hall after dark,
but the throne itself, the treasure-seat,
he was kept from approaching; he was the Lord's outcast.

170 These were hard times, heartbreaking
for the prince of the Shieldings; powerful counselors,
the highest in the land, would lend advice,
plotting how best the bold defenders
might resist and beat off sudden attacks.

175 Sometimes at pagan shrines they vowed
offerings to idols, swore oaths
that the killer of souls¹ might come to their aid
and save the people. That was their way,
their heathenish hope; deep in their hearts
i80 they remembered hell. The Almighty Judge
of good deeds and bad, the Lord God,
Head of the Heavens and High King of the World,
was unknown to them. Oh, cursed is he

8. "The Irish word *bothog* means 'hut' or 'shanty,'
tion (Norton Critical Edition)].

often for unmarried workers on a farm. Grendel

9. A Germanic law, called *wergild*, required com-
pensatory payment by a criminal to the victim of a
ignores the outlying buildings" [Editor Daniel
crime or to the victim's kin.

Donoghue's note, from *Beowulf: A Verse Transla-*

1. I.e., the Devil.

6 / B E O W U L F

who in time of trouble has to thrust his soul
185 in the fire's embrace, forfeiting help;
he has nowhere to turn. But blessed is he
who after death can approach the Lord
and find friendship in the Father's embrace.

So that troubled time continued, woe
190 that never stopped, steady affliction
for Halfdane's son, too hard an ordeal.

There was panic after dark, people endured
raids in the night, riven by the terror.

[The Fight with Grendel]

Then out of the night
came the shadow-stalker, stealthy and swift.
The hall-guards were slack, asleep at their posts,
705 all except one; it was widely understood
that as long as God disallowed it,
the fiend could not bear them to his shadow-bourne.

One man,² however, was in fighting mood,
awake and on edge, spoiling for action.

710 In off the moors, down through the mist-bands
God-cursed Grendel came greedily loping.

The bane of the race of men roamed forth,
hunting for a prey in the high hall.

Under the cloud-murk he moved toward it
715 until it shone above him, a sheer keep
of fortified gold. Nor was that the first time
he had scouted the grounds of Hrothgar's dwelling—

although never in his life, before or since,
did he find harder fortune or hall-defenders.
720 Spurned and joyless, he journeyed on ahead
and arrived at the bawn.³ The iron-braced door
turned on its hinge when his hands touched it.
Then his rage boiled over, he ripped open
the mouth of the building, maddening for blood,
725 pacing the length of the patterned floor
with his loathsome tread, while a baleful light,
flame more than light, flared from his eyes.
He saw many men in the mansion, sleeping,
a ranked company of kinsmen and warriors
730 quartered together. And his glee was demonic,
picturing the mayhem: before morning
he would rip life from limb and devour them,
feed on their flesh; but his fate that night
was due to change, his days of ravaging

2. I.e., Beowulf.

3. "Fortified outwork of a court or castle" [from Heaney's note
to line 523], B E O W U L F / 7

735 had come to an end.

Mighty and canny,
Hygelac's kinsman was keenly watching
for the first move the monster would make.
Nor did the creature keep him waiting
but struck suddenly and started in;
740 he grabbed and mauled a man on his bench,
bit into his bone-lappings, bolted down his blood

and gorged on him in lumps, leaving the body
utterly lifeless, eaten up
hand and foot. Venturing closer,
745 his talon was raised to attack Beowulf
where he lay on the bed, he was bearing in
with open claw when the alert hero's
comeback and armlock forestalled him utterly.
The captain of evil discovered himself
750 in a handgrip harder than anything
he had ever encountered in any man
on the face of the earth. Every bone in his body
quailed and recoiled, but he could not escape.
He was desperate to flee to his den and hide
755 with the devil's litter, for in all his days
he had never been clamped or cornered like this.
Then Hygelac's trusty retainer recalled
his bedtime speech, sprang to his feet
and got a firm hold. Fingers were bursting,
760 the monster back-tracking, the man overpowering.
The dread of the land was desperate to escape,
to take a roundabout road and flee
to his lair in the fens. The latching power
in his fingers weakened; it was the worst trip
765 the terror-monger had taken to Heorot.
And now the timbers trembled and sang,
a hall-session that harrowed every Dane
inside the stockade: stumbling in fury,
the two contenders crashed through the building.

770 The hall clattered and hammered, but somehow
survived the onslaught and kept standing:
it was handsomely structured, a sturdy frame
braced with the best of blacksmith's work
inside and out. The story goes
775 that as the pair struggled, mead-benches were smashed
and sprung off the floor, gold fittings and all.
Before then, no Shielding elder would believe
there was any power or person upon earth
capable of wrecking their horn-rigged hall
780 unless the burning embrace of a fire
engulf it in flame. Then an extraordinary
wail arose, and bewildering fear
came over the Danes. Everyone felt it
who heard that cry as it echoed off the wall,
785 a God-cursed scream and strain of catastrophe,

8 / B E O W U L F

**t h e h o w l o f t h e l o s e r , t h e l a m e n t o f t h e h e l l - s e
r f k e e n i n g h i s w o u n d . H e w a s o v e r w h e l m e d
,**

**m a n a c l e d t i g h t b y t h e m a n w h o o f a l l m e n
w a s f o r e m o s t a n d s t r o n g e s t i n t h e d a y s o f t h i s
l i f e .**

**790 B u t t h e e a r l - t r o o p ' s l e a d e r w a s n o t i n c l i n e d
t o a l l o w h i s c a l l e r t o d e p a r t a l i v e :**

**h e d i d n o t c o n s i d e r t h a t l i f e o f m u c h a c c o u n t
t o a n y o n e a n y w h e r e . T i m e a n d a g a i n ,**

B e o w u l f ' s w a r r i o r s w o r k e d t o d e f e n d

795 t h e i r l o r d ' s l i f e , l a y i n g a b o u t t h e m

as best they could, with their ancestral blades.

Stalwart in action, they kept striking out
on every side, seeking to cut

straight to the soul. When they joined the
struggle 800 there was something they could not
have known at the time, that no blade on
earth, no blacksmith's art

could ever damage their demon opponent.

He had conjured the harm from the cutting
edge of every weapon. But his going away

805 out of this world and the days of his life

would be agony to him, and his alien spirit

would travel far into fiends' keeping.

Then he who had harrowed the hearts of men
with pain and affliction in former times
810 and had given offense also to God

found that his bodily powers failed him.

Higelac's kinsman kept him helplessly

locked in a handgrip. As long as either lived,

he was hateful to the other. The monster's
whole 815 body was in pain; a tremendous wound
and

appeared on his shoulder. Sinews split

and the bone-lappings burst. Beowulf was
granted the glory of winning; Grendel was
driven

under the fen-banks, fatally hurt,

820 to his desolate lair. His days were numbered,
the end of his life was coming over him,

he knew it for certain; and one bloody clash

had fulfilled the dearest wishes of the Danes.

The man who had lately landed among them,
825 proud and sure, had purged the hall,
kept it from harm; he was happy with his night
work and the courage he had shown. The Geat
captain had boldly fulfilled his boast to the
Danes:

he had healed and relieved a huge distress,
830 unremitting humiliations,
the hard fate they'd been forced to undergo,
no small affliction. Clear proof of this
could be seen in the hand the hero displayed
high up near the roof: the whole of Grendel's
835 shoulder and arm, his awesome grasp.

BEOWULF / 9

[The Last Survivor's Speech]

Death had come
and taken them all in times gone by
and the only one left to tell their tale,
the last of their line, could look forward to nothing
2240 but the same fate for himself: he foresaw
that his joy in the treasure would be brief.⁴

A newly constructed
barrow stood waiting, on a wide headland
close to the waves, its entry way secured.
Into it the keeper of the hoard had carried
2245 all the goods and golden ware
worth preserving. His words were few:
"Now, earth, hold what earls once held

and heroes can no more; it was mined from
my first by honorable men. My own people
2250 have been ruined in war; one by one
they went down to death, looked their last
on sweet life in the hall. I am left with nobody
to bear a sword or to burnish plated goblets,
put a sheen on the cup. The companies have
departed.

2255 The hard helmet, hasped with gold,
will be stripped of its hoops; and the helmet-shi-
ner who should polish the metal of the war-
masks sleeps; the coat of mail that came thro-
ugh all fights,

through shield-collapse and cut of sword,

2260 decays with the warrior. No r may webbed
mail range far and wide on the warlord's back

beside his mustered troops. No trembling
harp,

not tuned timber, not tumbling hawk

swerving through the hall, no swift horse

2265 pawing the courtyard. Pillage and slaughter
have emptied the earth of entire peoples."

And so he mourned as he moved about the
world, deserted and alone, lamenting his un-
happiness day and night, until death's flood

brimmed up in his heart.

[The Last Survivor's Speech in Old English]

" Heald J)u nu, hruse, nu haeled ne mostan,

eorla ashte! Hwast, hyt aer on 5e

gode be geaton. Guf>-dead fornam,

2250 feorh-bealo frecne fyra gehwylcne

**l e o d a minra, f>ara 5e f>is lif o f g e a f ,
g e s a w o n s e l e - d r e a m a s . N a h h w a s w e o r d w
e g e 4.** This passage comes near the end of the poem.

ished. The “only one left to tell their tale” is the
Beowulf, now an old king who has ruled the Geats
last survivor of the tribe. He carries the treasure to
for fifty years, must fight a fierce flying dragon that
the barrow where his people are buried and speaks
guards a treasure hoard and terrorizes the region.
these words on the transience of earthly things.

These lines tell the history of the treasure: it is the
The Old English lines coincide with lines 2247—
accumulated wealth of a tribe of warriors, now per-
66 of the translation.

10 / R I D D L E S

odde feormie fasted waege,
drync-faet deore; dugud ellor scoc.
2255 Sceal se hearda helm hyrsted golde
fastum befeallen; feormynd swefad
|ja 5e beado-griman bywan sceoldon;
ge swylce seo here-pad, sio aet hilde gebad
ofer borda gebrasc bite irena,
2260 brosnad asfter beorne; ne maeg byrnan hring
asfter wig-fruman wide feran
hasledum be healfe. Nass hearpan wyn
gomen gleo-beames, ne god hafoc
geond sasl swinged, ne se swifta mearh
2265 burh-stede beated. Bealo-cwealm hafad

fela feorh-cynna ford onsended!”

R I D D L E S 1

1

I am a lonely being, scarred by swords,
Wounded by iron, sated with battle-deeds,
Wearied by blades. Often I witness war,
Perilous fight, nor hope for consolation,
5 That any help may rescue me from strife
Before I perish among fighting men;
But hammered swords, hard edged and grimly sharp,
Batter me, and the handwork of the smith
Bites in the castles; I must ever wait
10 A contest yet more cruel. I could never
In any habitation find the sort
Of doctor who could heal my wounds with herbs;
But cuts from swords ever increase on me
Through deadly contest, both by day and night.

2

My dress is silent when I tread the ground
Or stay at home or stir upon the waters.
Sometimes my trappings and the lofty air
Raise me above the dwelling-place of men,
5 And then the power of clouds carries me far
Above the people; and my ornaments
Loudly resound, send forth a melody

1. The Old English riddles, like their counterparts
Richard Hamer, are among those found in the Exe-
in Latin poetic tradition (from which many of them

ter Book, a tenth-century manuscript collection of
are derived), are poems in which beings or objects
Old English poetry. The “answers” appear in note
from ordinary life are presented disguised in meta-
3 below.

phoric terms. The riddles below, translated by

THE WIFE ‘SLAMENT / 11

And clearly sing, when I am not in touch
With earth or water, but a flying spirit.

3

A moth ate words; a marvellous event
I thought it when I heard about that wonder,
A worm had swallowed some man’s lay,² a thief
In darkness had consumed the mighty saying
5 With its foundation firm. The thief was not
One whit the wiser when he ate those words.³

[Riddle 3 in Old English]

Modde word fraet. Me Jjaet Jjuhte
wraetlicu wyrd, Jja ic Jjaet wundor gefraegn,
Jjaet se wurm forswealg wera gied sumes,
Jjeof in Jjystro, Jjrymfaestne cwide
5 ond Jjaes strangen staJ)ol. Staslgiest ne wass
wihte J)j gleawra, J)e he J)am wordum swealg.

THE WIFE ‘SLAMENT 1

I sing this song about myself, full sad,
My own distress, and tell what hardships I
Have had to suffer since I first grew up,
Present and past, but never more than now;

5 I ever suffered grief through banishment.
For since my lord departed from this people
Over the sea, each dawn have I had care
Wondering where my lord may be on land.
When I set off to join and serve my lord,
10 A friendless exile in my sorry plight,
My husband's kinsmen plotted secretly
How they might separate us from each other
That we might live in wretchedness apart
Most widely in the world: and my heart longed.

15 In the first place my lord had ordered me
To take up my abode here, though I had
Among these people few dear loyal friends;
Therefore my heart is sad. Then had I found

2. A short poem intended to be sung.

interpretations of the poem; the one below, by

3. The solutions to these riddles are *shield*, *swan*,
Richard Hamer, suggests that the poem is a dra-
and *bookworm*, respectively.

matic monologue spoken by a wife separated from

1. This poem appears in the Exeter Book, a tenth-
her husband. Some critics have suggested that the
century manuscript collection of Old English

poem may be an allegory in which the speaker rep-
poetry, immediately following a series of riddles.

resents either the soul or the children of Israel dur-

Different translations offer somewhat different

ing the Babylonian captivity.

1 2 / T H E S E A F A R E R

A fitting man, but one ill-starred, distressed,
20 Whose hiding heart was contemplating crime,
Though cheerful his demeanor. We had vowed
Full many a time that nought should come between us
But death alone, and nothing else at all.

All that has changed, and it is now as though
25 Our marriage and our love had never been,
And far or near forever I must suffer
The feud of my beloved husband dear.

So in this forest grove they made me dwell,
Under the oak-tree, in this earthy barrow.

30 Old is this earth-cave, all I do is yearn.

The dales are dark with high hills up above,
Sharp hedge surrounds it, overgrown with briars,
And joyless is the place. Full often here

The absence of my lord comes sharply to me.

35 Dear lovers in this world lie in their beds,

While I alone at crack of dawn must walk

Under the oak-tree round this earthy cave,

Where I must stay the length of summer days,

Where I may weep my banishment and all

40 My many hardships, for I never can

Contrive to set at rest my careworn heart,

Nor all the longing that this life has brought me.

A young man always must be serious,

And tough his character; likewise he should

45 Seem cheerful, even though his heart is sad

With multitude of cares. All earthly joy
Must come from his own self. Since my dear lord
Is outcast, far off in a distant land,
Frozen by storms beneath a stormy cliff
50 And dwelling in some desolate abode
Beside the sea, my weary-hearted lord
Must suffer pitiless anxiety.
And all too often he will call to mind
A happier dwelling. Grief must always be
55 For him who yearning longs for his beloved.

T H E S E A F A R E R 1

From the Anglo-Saxon

May I for my own self song's truth reckon,
Journey's jargon, how I in harsh days

1. This poem appears in the Exeter Book, a tenth-century manuscript collection of Old English life, but some critics suggest that it is also a Christian allegory in which life is represented as a difficult journey over rough seas toward the harbor of heaven. Pound's translation plays down the Christian elements of the poem.

translation, is provided in note 8 below. The poem

T H E S E A F A R E R / 1 3

Hardship endured oft.

Bitter breast-cares have I abided,

5 Known on my keel² may a care's hold,

And dire sea-surge, and there I oft spent

Narrow nightwatch nigh the ship's head

While she tossed close to cliffs. Coldly afflicted,

My feet were by frost benumbed.

10 Chill its chains are; chafing sighs

Hew^o my heart round and hunger begot *strike*

Mere^o-weary mood. Lest man know not *sea*

That he on dry land loveliest liveth,

List how I, care-wretched, on ice-cold sea,

15 Weathered the winter, wretched outcast

Deprived of my kinsmen;

Hung with hard ice-flakes, where hail-scur^o flew, *hailstorms*

There I heard naught save the harsh sea

And ice-cold wave, at whiles the swan cries,

20 Did for my games the gannet's^o clamor, *large seabird's*

Sea-fowls' loudness was for me laughter,

The mews^{'o} singing all my mead-drink. *seagulls'*

Storms, on the stone-cliffs beaten, fell on the stern

In icy feathers; full oft the eagle screamed

25 With spray on his pinion.^o *wing*

Not any protector

May make merry man faring needy.

This he little believes, who aye in winsome^o life *pleasant*

Abides 'mid burghers^o some heavy business, *citizens*

Wealthy and wine-flushed, how I weary oft

30 Must bide above brine.³

Neareth nightshade, snoweth from north,
Frost froze the land, hail fell on earth then,
Corn of the coldest. Nathless⁴ there knocketh now

The heart's thought that I on high streams

35 The salt-wavy tumult traverse alone.

Moaneth always my mind's lust

That I fare forth, that I afar hence

Seek out a foreign⁰ fastness.⁰ *remote /place*

For this there's no mood-lofty man over earth's midst,

40 Not though he be given his good, but will have in his youth
greed;

Nor his deed to the daring, nor his king to the faithful

But shall have his sorrow for sea-fare

Whatever his lord will.

He hath not heart for harping, nor in ring-having

45 Nor winsomeness to wife, nor world's delight

Nor any whit else save the wave's slash,

Yet longing comes upon him to fare forth on the water.

Bosque⁰ taketh blossom, cometh beauty of berries, *grove*

Fields to fairness, land fares brisker,

50 All this admonisheth man eager of mood,

2. The timber of a ship or boat upon which the

4. Nevertheless. *Corn*: small, hard particles or
framework of the whole is built.

grains.

3. I.e., must live a life at sea.

1 4 / T H E S E A F A R E R

The heart turns to travel so that he then thinks
On flood-ways to be far departing.
Cuckoo calleth with gloomy crying,
He singeth summerward, bodeth sorrow,
The bitter heart's blood. Burgher knows not—
He the prosperous man—what some perform
Where wandering them widest draweth.
So that but now my heart burst from my breastlock,
My mood 'mid the mere-flood,
Over the whale's acre, would wander wide.⁵
On earth's shelter cometh oft to me,
Eager and ready, the crying lone-flyer,^o *cuckoo*
Whets for the whale-path the heart irresistibly,
O'er tracks of ocean; seeing that anyhow
My lord deems to me this dead life
On loan and on land,⁶ I believe not
That any earth-weal eternal standeth
Save there be somewhat calamitous
That, ere a man's tide go, turn it to twain.
Disease or oldness or sword-hate
Beats out the breath from doom-gripped body.
And for this, every earl whatever, for those speaking after—
Laud of the living, boasteth some last word,
That he will work ere he pass onward,
Frame on the fair earth 'gainst foes his malice,
Daring^o ado,^o ... *brave /deeds*
So that all men shall honor him after
And his laud beyond them remain 'mid the English,⁷

Aye, for ever, a lasting life's-blast,
 Delight 'mid the doughty.0 *valiant*
 Days little durable,
 And all arrogance of earthen riches,
 There come now no kings nor Caesars0 *emperors*
 Nor gold-giving lords like those gone.
 Howe'er in mirth most magnified
 Who'er lived in life most lordliest,
 Drear all this excellence, delights undurable!
 Waneth the watch, but the world holdeth.
 Tomb hideth trouble. The blade is layed low.
 Earthly glory ageth and seareth.
 No man at all going the earth's gait,
 But age fares against him, his face paleth,
 Gray-haired he groaneth, knows gone companions,
 Lordly men, are to earth o'ergiven,
 Nor may he then the flesh-cover, whose life ceaseth,
 Nor eat the sweet nor feel the sorry,
 Nor stir hand nor think in mid heart,
 And though he strew the grave with gold,

5. Pound changes the original here by substituting 6. Behind Pound's phrase "on loan and on land"

"mood" for the O.E. term for "thoughts" and then is an O.E. phrase meaning "briefly on Earth."

by omitting a line describing the thoughts return- 7. In the original, the sense is "with the angels,"

ing to the speaker "with greed and longing." not "mid the English."

THE CUCKOO SONG / 15

His born brothers, their buried bodies

Be an unlikely treasure hoard.⁸

[The First Lines of “The Seafarer” in Old English]

Maeg ic be me sylfum sodgied wrecan,

sij)as secgan, hu ic geswincdagum

earfodhwile oft J)rowade,

bitre breostceare gebiden haebbe,

5 gecunnad in ceole cearselda fela,

atol yj)a gewearc, J>aer mec oft bigeat

nearo nihtwaco ast nacan stefnan

J)onne he be clifum crossad ...

ANONYMOUS LYRICS OF THE THIRTEEN TH

AND FOURTEENTH CENTURIES

Now Go’th Sun under Wood¹

Nou goth sonne under wode—

Me reweth, Marie, thi faire rode.²

Nou goth sonne under tre—

Me reweth, Marie, thi sone and the.° *thee*

The Cuckoo Song³

Sing, cuccu, nu.° Sing, cuccu. *now*

Sing, cuccu. Sing, cuccu, nu.

8. Pound’s translation omits the part of the original

And let us labor also, so that we

sentence that describes the gold buried with the

May pass into eternal blessedness,

brother’s corpse as something that can “bring no

Where life belongs amid the love of God,

help to the soul that's full of sins, / Against God's
Hope in the heavens. The Holy One be thanked
wrath, although he [the dead person] hide it here /
That He has raised us up, the Prince of Glory,
Ready before his death while yet he lives." The
Lord without end, to all eternity.

ensuing lines, in Hamer's translation, go as follows:
Amen.

Great is the might of God, by which earth moves;
1. This is one of the earliest Middle English lyrics
For He established its foundations firm,
presenting the Passion of Christ (his Crucifixion at
The land's expanses, and the sky above.

Calvary), a subject that occurs frequently in Mid-
Foolish is he who does not fear his Lord,
dle English lyrics. This poem, which was perhaps
For death will come upon him unprepared.

originally part of a longer one on the Passion, is
Blessed is he who humble lives; for grace
notable for its wordplay: e.g., "sonne" means both
Shall come to him from heaven. The Creator

"sun" and "son"; and the "wode" of line 1 refers Shall make
his spirit steadfast, for his faith

both to the woods behind which the sun is setting
Is in God's might. Man must control himself
and to Christ's wooden cross; "rode" (line 2) also
With strength of mind, and firmly hold to that,
plays on "cross" (the Old English *rood*), as does

True to his pledges, pure in all his ways.

“tre” (line 3).

With moderation should each man behave
In all his dealings with both friend and foe.

2. Face. According to John 19.25, Christ’s
No man will wish the friend he’s made to burn
mother, the Virgin Mary, witnessed the Crucifix-
In fires of hell, or on an earthly pyre,
ion. *Me reweth*: I pity.

Yet fate is mightier, the Lord’s ordaining

3. This song about summer or spring “coming in”
More powerful than any man can know.

is one of the earliest surviving Middle English lyr-

Let us think where we have our real home,

ics. It is written, with music, in a manuscript that

And then consider how we may come thither;

was owned by a religious house.

16 / LYRICS OF THE THIRTEENTH AND FOURTEENTH CENTURIES

Sumer is i-cumen in—

Lhude° sing, cuccu!

loudly

5 Groweth sed and bloweth0 med°

blooms / field

And springth0 the wude° nu.

buds / wood

Sing, cuccu!

Awe° bleteth after lomb,

ewe

Lhouth⁰ after calve cu,^o

lows / cow

10 Bulluc sterteth,⁰ bucke verteth⁴-

leaps

Murie^o sing, cuccu!

merrily

Cuccu, cuccu.

Wei singes thu,^o cuccu.

thou

Ne swik thu naver nu!⁵

Ubi Sunt Qui ante Nos Fuerunt?⁶

Were beth they biforen us weren,

Houndes ladden⁰ and hauekes⁰ beren^o *led / hawks / carried*

And hadden⁰ feld and wode?^o *owned / wood*

The riche levedies⁰ in hoere^o bour,^o *ladies / their/bower*

That wereden gold in hoere tressour,⁰ *headdress*

With hoere brightte rode,^o *face*

Eten and drounken and maden hem^o glad; *them*

Hoere lif was al with gamen^o i-lad;^o *pleasure / led*

Men keneleden⁰ hem biforen; *knelt*

They beren hem wel swithe⁰ heye^o— *very / haughtily*

And in a twincling of an eye

Hoere soules weren forloren.⁰ *completely lost*

Were is that lawing⁰ and that song,

laughing

That trayling and that proude yong,⁷

Tho hauekes and tho houndes?

Al that joye is went away;
 That wele^o is comen to welaway/
happiness / sadness
 To manie harde stoundes.0
times
 Hoere paradis hy^o nomen^o here,
they / took
 20 And nou they lien in helle i-fere^o—
together
 The fuir^o hit brennes0 hevere.0
fire / burns / ever
 Long is ay^o and long is ho,^o
ah / oh
 Long is wy^o and long is wo^o—
alas / woe
 Thennes0 ne cometh they nevere.
thence

4. Farts; thought to derive from the Old English are now those who lived before us?” This lyric is *feortan*, although some commentators suggest a part of an extensive medieval tradition of *ubi sunt* derivation from the Latin *vertere*, “to turn” or “to poems lamenting the mutability of human life and cavort.”

institutions; for an Old English example, see “The 5. Cease (“swik”) thou never now, i.e., don’t ever Seafarer” (p. 12).

stop.

7. That trailing (of garments) and that proud gait.

6. The first line translates the Latin title: "Where

UBISUNTQUIANTENOSFUERUNT? / 17

25 **D r e g h y 0** here, **m a n , t h e n n e i f t h o u w i l t ,** *suffer*
A l u i t e l p i n e , 0 t h a t m e t h e b i t . 8 *pain*

W i t h d r a u t h i n e e y e s o f t e .

T h e y 0 t h i p i n e b e o u n r e d e , 0 *though /severe*

A n d ° t h o u t h e n k e o n t h i m e d e , ° *if/reward.*

30 H i t s a l t h e t h i n k e n s o f t e . 9

I f t h a t f e n d , 1 t h a t f o u l e t h i n g ,

T h o r o u w i k k e r o u n , ° t h o r o u f a l s e g g i n g , 0
temptation /urging N e t h e r e 0 t h e h a v e t h i - c a s t , d o w n

O u p , ° a n d b e g o d c h a u n p i o u n ! *up*

35 S t o n d , n e f a l ° n a m o r e a d o u n *fall*

F o r a l u y t e l b l a s t . 0 *puff of wind*

T h o u t a k t h e r o d e t o 2 t h i s t a f

A n d t h e n k o n h i m t h a t t h e r e o n n e y a P *gave*

H i s l i f t h a t w e s s o l e f . ° *dear*

40 H e h i t y a f f o r t h e ; t h o u y e l d e h i t h i m . 3

A y e i n 0 h i s f o t h a t s t a f t h o u n i m , ° *against/take*

A n d w r e k h i m o f t h a t t h e f . 4

O f r i g h t t e b i l e v e 5 t h o u n i m t h a t s h e l d

T h e w i l e s 0 t h a t t h o u b e s t 0 i n t h a t f e l d .

while /I

T h i n h o n d t o s t r e n k t h e n f o n d e 6

A n d k e p t h y f o w i t h s t a v e s o r d 7

A n d d o t h a t t r a y t r e s e i e n t h a t w o r d .

B i g e t 0 t h a t m u r i e l o n d e

gam

**T h e r e i n n e i s d a y w i t h o u t e n n i g h t ,
W i t h o u t e n e n d e s t r e n k t h e a n d m i g h t ,
A n d w r e c h e 0 o P e v e r i c h f o ,**

vengeance / on

M i d ° g o d h i m s e l w e n e c h e ° l i f

with / eternal

A n d p e s a n d r e s t w i t h o u t e s t r i f ,

W e l e ° w i t h o u t e n w o .

happiness

55 M a y d e n m o d e r , h e v e n e q u e n e ,

**T h o u m i g h t a n d c o n s t 0 a n d o w e s t 0 t o b e n e 0
c a n / o u g h t / h e O u r e s h e l d a y e i n 0 t h e f e n d e .**

against

H e l p o u s s u n n e f o r t o f l e n 9

T h a t w e m o t e n 0 t h i s o n e i - s e e n *might*

60 I n j o y e w i t h o u t e n h e n d e . 0 *end*

A m e n .

8. That you are asked to bear. Literally, one (“me”)

6. Then try to strengthen your hand; an allusion
that bids thee.

to the “shield of faith” (Ephesians 6.16).

9. It shall seem soft to thee.

7. I.e., the point of your staff.

1. Fiend, or enemy (German *Feind*); i.e., Satan,

8. Make the traitor say the word (of surrender).

whose name means “adversary” in Hebrew; cf. “fo”

Some editors place a comma after “word” and a

(line 41): foe.

period after “londe” in the next line. Our editorial

2. Rod to be, with “rode” here also referring to decision about punctuating these difficult lines—Christ’s cross (*rood*).

a decision that breaks the pattern of syntactically

3. He gave it [his life] for thee; thou repay him for self-contained stanzas—requires “thereinne” of it. *Yelde*: yield.

line 49 to be interpreted as “wherein.”

4. Against his foe take thou that staff [the cross]

9. Help us to flee from sin—with a play on and revenge him upon that thief [the Devil], “sunne” (line 58) and “sone” (line 59).

5. Right belief, or true faith.

18 / LYRICS OF THE THIRTEENTH AND FORTIETH CENTURIES

Alison1

Bytwene Mersh° and Averil,

March

When spray0 biginneth to springe,0

twigs / open, leaf out

The lutel° foul° hath hire0 wyl

little / bird / its

On hyre lud° to synge.

birdsong

Ich° libbe° in love-longinge

I / live

For semlokest0 of alle thinge—

seemliest

He° may me blisse bringe;

she

Ich am in hire baundoun0

power

An hendy hap ichahhe yhent2—

Ichot° from hevene it is me sent:

I know

From alle wymmen mi love is lent°

turned

And lyht° on Alysoun.

fallen

On° heu° hire her° is fayr ynoh,°

in / color / hair / enough

Hire browe broune, hire eye blake—

With lossum chere he on me loh3—

With middel0 smal and wel ymake.°

waist / made

Bote0 he° me wolle to hire take,

unless / she

Forte buen hire owen make,4

Longe to lyven ichulle0 forsake

I will

And feye° fallen adoun

dead, lifeless

An hendy hap ichahhe yhent— ...

Nightes when I wende° and wake-

turn

Forthi° myn wonges0 waxeth won0— *therefore / cheeks / wan,*
pale

Levedi,0 al for thine sake

lady

Longinge is ylent me on.5

In world nis non so wyter mon6

That al hire bounte0 telle con.

excellence

Hire swyre° is whittore then the swon,c

neck / sivan

And feyrest may° in toune.

maid

An hendy hap ichahhe yhent— ...

Icham for wowyng al forwake,7

Wery so water in wore,8

Lest eny reve me my make9

Ichabbe y-yerned yore.1

Betere is tholien whyle sore2

Then mournen evermore.

Geynest under gore,3

1. This lyric (like most Middle English poems,

5. I.e., come upon me.

originally untitled) occurs in a famous anthology

6. I.e., in the world there is no man so wise.

containing the so-called Harley Lyrics, written in

7. I.e., I am entirely worn out from wooing.

the west of England in the early fourteenth cen-

8. I.e., like water in a weir, a pool made by dam-

tury; the manuscript is now in the British Library
ming up water.

(MS. Harley 2253).

9. I.e., lest anyone deprive me of my mate (“reve”

2. A happy chance I have received.

being a form of the old verb *reave*, to rob).

3. I.e., with lovely face she laughed at (“loh” “on”)

1. I.e., [the mate] I have desired a long time.

me.

2. I.e., better it is to suffer sorely for a while.

4. For to be her own mate.

3. I.e., kindest of ladies (persons “under gown”).

THE GENERAL PROLOGUE / 19

Herkne⁰ to my roun.^o *listen/song*

An hendy hap ichahhe yhent— ...

Fowls in the Frith⁴

Fowles in the frith,

The fisshes in the flood,

And I mon^o waxe^o wood:⁰ *must/go/mad*

Much sorwe^o I walke with *sorrow*

For beste of boon⁵ and blood.

I Am of Ireland⁶

Ich^o am of Irlonde, I

And of the holy londe

Of Irlonde.

Goode sire, praye ich thee,

5 F o r o f^o s a i n t e⁰ c h a r i t e e , *sake of/holy*

Com and dance with me

In Irlonde.

G E O F F R E Y C H A U C E R

ca. 1343-1400

FROM THE CANTERBURY TALES

The General Prologue

Whan that April with his^o showres soote^o *its/fresh*

The droughte of March hath perced to the roote,

And bathed every veine in swich licour,¹

Of which vertu² engendred is the flowr;

5 Whan Zephyrus⁰ eek^o with his sweete breeth *the West Wind*
/ also

Inspired⁰ hath in every holt^o and heeth^o *breathed into /*
grove/field

The tendre croppes,⁰ and the yonge sonne *shoots*

Hath in the Ram his halve cours yronne,³

4. This poem, with a musical accompaniment

a longer poem; it is written in prose in the manu-
designed for two voices, appears on one side of a
script. The first three lines are the burden, or
page in a manuscript comprised mainly of legal
refrain.

texts (it contains no other poems). The title means

1. Such liquid. *Veine*: i.e., in plants.

“Birds in the Woods.”

2. By the power of which.

5. Either “the best” or “beast” of bone. The ambi-

3. The sun is young because it has run only half-

guity allows for both religious and erotic interpre-

way through its course in Aries, the Ram—the first

tations.

sign of the zodiac in the solar year.

6. This lyric may be a fragment or an extract from

20 / G E O F F R E Y C H A U C E R

And smale fowles⁰ maken melodye *birds*

That sleepen al the night with open ye^o— *eye*

So priketh hem^o Nature in hir^o corages⁰— *them / their / hearts*

Thanne longen folk to goon^o on pilgrimages, *go*

And palmeres for to seeken straunge strondes

To feme halwes,⁴ couthe⁰ in sondry⁰ londes; *known / various*

And specially from every shires ende

Of Engeland to Canterbury they wende,

The holy blisful martyr⁵ for to seeke

That hem hath holpen⁰ whan that they were seke.^o *helped/sick*

Bife^P that in that seson on a day, *it happened*

In Southwerk⁶ at the Tabard as I lay,

Redy to wenden on my pilgrimage

To Canterbury with ful^o devout corage, *very*

At night was come into that hostelrye

Wei nine and twenty in a compaignye

Of sondry folk, by aventure⁰ yfalle *chance*

In felawshipe, and pilgrimes were they alle

That toward Canterbury wolden⁰ ride. *would*

The chambres and the stables weren wide,

And wel we weren esed at the beste.⁷

And shortly, whan the sonne was to reste,⁸

So hadde I spoken with hem everichoon⁰ *every one*

That I was of hir felawshipe anon,^o *at once*

And made forward⁹ erly for to rise,
 To take oure way ther as I you devise.¹
 But nathelees,⁰ whil I have time and Space, *nevertheless*
 Er^o that I ferther in this tale pace,⁰ *before / proceed*
 Me thinketh it accordant to resoun³
 To telle you al the condicioun
 Of eech of hem, so as it seemed me,
 And whiche they were, and of what degree,⁰ *social rank*
 And eek in what array that they were inne:
 And at a knight thanne⁰ wol I first biginne. *then*
 A Knight ther was, and that a worthy man,
 That fro the time that he first bigan
 To riden out, he loved chivalrye,
 Trouthe and honour, freedom and curteisye.⁴
 Ful worthy was he in his lordes werre,^o *war*
 And therto hadde he riden, no man ferre,^o *further*
 As wel in Cristendom as hethenesse,⁰ *heathen lands*
 And⁵ evere honoured for his worthinesse.
 At Alisandre⁶ he was whan it was wonne;

4. Far-off shrines. *Palmeres*: palmers, wide-

1. I.e., where I describe to you.

ranging pilgrims—especially those who sought out

2. I.e., while I have the opportunity.

the “straunge strondes” (foreign shores) of the

3. It seems to me according to reason.

Holy Land.

4. Courtesy. *Trouthe*: integrity. *Freedom*: gener-

5. St. Thomas a Becket, murdered in Canterbury

osity of spirit.

Cathedral (1170); his shrine was associated with

5. I.e., and he was.

healing.

6. The Knight has taken part in campaigns fought

6. Southwark, site of the Tabard Inn, was then a

against three groups who threatened Christian

suburb of London, south of the Thames River.

Europe during the fourteenth century: the Mus-

7. Accommodated in the best possible way.

lims in the Near East, from whom Alexandria was

8. I.e., had set.

seized after a famous siege; the northern barbari-

9. I.e., (we) made an agreement.

ans in Prussia, Lithuania, and Russia; and the

THE GENERAL PROLOGUE / 21

Ful ofte time he hadde the boord bigonne⁷

Aboven alle nacions in Pruce;

In Lettou had he reised,⁰ and in Ruce,

campaigned.

No Cristen man so ofte of his degree;

In Gernade⁰ at the sege eek hadde he be

Granada

Of Algezir, and riden in Belmarye;

At Lyeis was he, and at Satalye,

Whan they were wonne; and in the Grete See^o

Mediterranean Sea

At many a noble arivee^o hadde he be.

military landing

At mortal batailes⁸ hadde he been fifteene,
And foughten for oure faith at Tramissene
In listes⁹ thries,⁰ and ay^o slain his fo.

thrice / always

This ilke^o worthy Knight hadde been also
Somtime with the lord of Palatye¹
Against⁰ another hethen in Turkye;

against

And everemore he hadde a sovereign pris.^o

reputation

And though that he were worthy, he was wis,²
And of his port⁰ as meeke as is a maide.

demeanor

He nevere yit no vilainye⁰ ne saide

rudeness

In al his lif unto no manere wight:³
He was a verray,⁰ parfit,⁰ gentil⁰ knight.

true / perfect / noble

But for to tellen you of his array,
His hors^o were goode, but he was nat gay.⁴

horses

Of fustian he wered a gipoun⁵
Al bismotered with his haubergeoun,⁶
For he was late^o come from his viage,^o

lately / expedition

And wente for to doon his pilgrimage.
With him ther was his sone, a yong Squier,⁷

A lovere and a lusty bachelor,
With lokkes crulle⁰ as^o they were laid in presse.

curly / as if

Of twenty yeer of age he was, I gesse.

Of his stature he was of evene^o lengthe,

moderate

And wonderly delivere,⁰ and of greet⁰ strengthe

agile / great

And he hadde been som time in chivachye⁸

In Flandres, in Artois, and Picardye,

And born him wel as of so litel space,⁹

In hope to stonden in his lady^o grace.

lady's

Embrouded⁰ was he as it were a mede,

embroidered / mead, meadow

Al ful of fresshe flowres, white and rede;^o

red

Singing he was, or floiting,⁰ al the day:

whistling

He was as fressh as is the month of May.

Short was his gowne, with sleeves longe and wide.

Moors in North Africa. The place-names in the fol-

4. I.e., gaily dressed.

lowing lines refer to battlegrounds in these contin-

5. I.e., he wore a tunic of thick cloth underneath

uing wars.

the coat of mail.

7. Sat in the seat of honor at military feasts.

6. All rust-stained from his hauberk (coat of mail).

8. Tournaments fought to the death.

7. The vague term “Squier” (Squire) here seems

9. Lists, tournament grounds.

the equivalent of “bachelor,” a young knight still in

1. “The lord of Palatye” was a Muslim; alliances
the service of an older one.

of convenience were often made during the Cru-

8. On cavalry expeditions. The places in the next
sades between Christians and Muslims.

line are sites of skirmishes in the constant warfare

2. I.e., he was wise as well as bold.

between the English and the French.

3. Any sort of person. In Middle English, negatives

9. I.e., considering the little time he had been in
are multiplied for emphasis, as in these two lines:
service.

“nevere,” “no,” “ne,” “no.”

22 / G E O F F R E Y C H A U C E R

Wel coude he sitte on hors, and faire ride;

He coude songes make, and wel endite,⁰

compose verse

Juste and eek daunce,¹ and wel portraye⁰ and write.

sketch

So hote^o he loved that by^o nightertale⁰

hotly /at / night

He slepte namore than dooth a nightingale.

Curteis he was, lowely,⁰ and servisable,

humble

And carf biforn his fader at the table.²

A Yeman hadde he³ and servants namo^o

no more

At that time, for him liste^o ride so;

it pleased to

And he⁴ was clad in cote and hood of greene.

A sheef of pecok arwes,^o bright and keene,

arrows

Under his belt he bar^o ful thriftily;⁰

bore / properly

Wel coude he dresse his takel yemanly:⁵

His arwes drouped nought with fetheres lowe.

And in his hand he bar a mighty bowe.

A not-heed^o hadde he with a brown visage.

close-cut head

Of wodecraft wel coude⁰ he al the usage.

knew

Upon his arm he bar a gay bracer,⁶

And by his side a swerd^o and a bokeler,⁷

sword

And on that other side a gay daggere,

Harneised⁰ wel and sharp as point of spere;

mounted

A Cristophre⁸ on his brest of silver sheene;⁰

bright

An horn he bar, the baudrik⁹ was of greene.

A forster⁰ was he soothly,⁰ as I gesse.

forester / truly

Ther was also a Nonne, a Prioressse,¹
That of hir smiling was ful simple⁰ and coy.^o

sincere / mild

Hir grettteste ooth was but by sainte Loy!²
And she was cleped⁰ Madame Eglantine.

named

Ful wel she soong^o the service divine,

sang

Entuned in hir nose ful semely;³
And Frenssh she spak ful faire and fetisly,⁰

aantly

After the scole of Stratford at the Bowe⁴—
For Frenssh of Paris was to hire unknowe.

At mete^o wel ytaught was she withalle:⁰

meals / besides

She leet^o no morsel from hir lippes falle,

let

Ne wette hir fingres in hir sauce deepe;
Wel coude she carye a morsel, and wel keepe^o

take care

That no drope ne fille^upon hir brest.

should fall

In curteisye was set ful muchel hir lest.⁵

Hir over-lippe wiped she so clene

That in hir coppe^o ther was no ferthing⁰ seene

cup / bit

Of grece,^o whan she dronken hadde hir draughte;

grease

Ful semely after hir mete she raughte.0

reached

And sikerly0 she was of greet disport,6

certainly

1. Joust (fight in a tournament) and also dance.

1. The Prioress is the mother superior of her nun-

2. It was a squire's duty to carve his lord's meat.

nery.

3. The Knight. *Yeman*: Yeoman; an independent

2. Eloi, or Eligius, a saint associated with journeys

commoner who acts as the Knight's military ser-

and craftsmanship, was also famous for his per-

vant.

sonal beauty, courtesy, and refusal to swear.

4. I.e., the Yeoman.

3. I.e., chanted in a seemly manner.

5. Tend to his gear in a workmanlike way.

4. The French learned in a convent school

6. Wristguard for archers.

("scole") in Stratford-at-the-Bow, a suburb of Lon-

7. Buckler (a small shield).

don, was evidently not up to the Parisian standard.

8. A medal of St. Christopher, patron saint of trav-

5. I.e., her chief delight lay in good manners.

elers.

6. Of great good cheer.

9. Baldric (a supporting strap).

THE GENERAL PROLOGUE / 23

And ful plesant, and amiable of port,⁰

mien

And pained hire to countrefete cheere⁷

140 Of court, and to been statlich⁰ of manere,

dignified

And to been holden digne⁸ of reverence.

But, for to speken of hir conscience,

She was so charitable and so pitous⁰

merciful

She wolde weepe if that she saw a mous

145 Caught in a trappe, if it were deed⁰ or bledde.

dead

Of⁹ smale houndes hadde she that she fedde

With rosted flessh, or milk and wastelbreed;⁰

fine white bread

But sore wepte she if oon of hem were deed,

Or if men smoot it with a yerde smerte;⁷

150 And al was conscience and tendre herte.

Ful semely hir wimpel⁰ pinched⁰ was,

headdress / pleated

Hir nose tretis, hir yen greye² as glas,

Hir mouth ful smal, and therto⁰ softe and reed,^o

moreover / red

But sikerly she hadde a fair forheed:

155 It was almost a spanne brood, I trowe,³

For hardily,⁰ she was nat undergrowe.

assuredly

Ful fetis⁰ was hir cloke, as I was war;⁰

becoming / aware

Of smal^o coral aboute hir arm she bar

dainty

A paire of bedes, gauded al with greene,⁴

160 And theron heeng⁰ a brooch of gold ful sheene,⁰

hung / bright

On which ther was first writen a crowned A,⁵

And after, *Amor vincit omnia.*⁶

Another Nonne with hire hadde she

That was hir chapelaine,⁰ and preestes three.⁷

secretary

165 A Monk ther was, a fair for the maistrye,⁸

An outridere⁹ that loved venerye,⁰

hunting

A manly man, to been an abbot able.⁰

worthy

Ful many a daintee⁰ hors hadde he in stable,

fine

And whan he rood,⁰ men mighte his bridel heere

rode

170 Ginglen⁰ in a whistling wind as clere

jingle

And eek as loude as dooth the chapel belle

Ther as this lord was kepere of the celle.¹

The rule of Saint Maure or of Saint Beneit,

By cause that it was old and somdeel strait²—

175 This ilke^o Monk leet olde thinges pace,⁰

same / pass away

And heeld⁰ after the newe world the space.³

held

He yaf nought of that text a pulled hen⁴

That saith that hunteres been⁰ nought holy men,

are

Ne that a monk, whan he is recchelees,⁵

180 Is likned til^o a fissh that is waterlees—

to

7. And took pains to imitate the behavior.

8. I.e., a superlatively fine one.

8. And to be considered worthy.

9. A monk charged with supervising property dis-

9. I.e., some.

tant from the monastery.

1. If someone struck it with a rod sharply.

1. Prior of an outlying cell (branch) of the mon-

2. Her nose well-formed, her eyes gray (a conventional color for the eyes of heroines in romances).

2. Somewhat straight. *Saint Maure* and *Saint*

3. A handsbreadth wide, I believe.

Beneit: St. Maurus and St. Benedict, authors of

4. Provided with green beads to mark certain monastic rules.

prayers. *Paire*: string (i.e., a rosary).

3. The course, or direction. I.e., he followed the

5. An A with an ornamental crown on it.

new direction of things.

6. A Latin motto meaning “Love conquers all.”

4. He didn’t give a plucked hen for that text.

7. Later there is only one priest, who tells “The

5. Reckless; careless of rule.

Nun’s Priest’s Tale.”

24 / G E O F F R E Y C H A U C E R

This is to sayn, a monk out of his cloistre;

But thilke0 text heeld he nat worth an oystre.

that same

And I saide his opinion was good:

What0 sholde he studye and make himselven woodc

•*why / crazy*

Upon a book in cloistre alway to poure,°

pour; read intently

Or swinke0 with his handes and laboure,

work

As Austin bit?6 How shal the world be served?

Lat Austin have his swink to him reserved!

Therefore he was a prikasour0 aright.

hard rider

Grehoundes he hadde as swift as fowl in flight.

Of priking0 and of hunting for the hare

riding

Was al his lust,° for no cost wolde he spare.

pleasure

I sawgh his sleeves purfiled0 at the hand

fur-lined

With gris,^o and that the fineste of a land;
gray fur
And for to festne his hood under his chin
He hadde of gold wrought a ful curious⁷ pin:
A love-knotte in the grettere⁰ ende ther was.
greater
His heed was balled,⁰ that shoon as any glas,
hald
And eek his face, as he hadde been anoint:
He was a lord ful fat and in good point;⁸
His yen steepe,⁰ and rolling in his heed,
protruding
That stemed as a furnais of a leed,⁹
His bootes souple,⁰ his hors in greet estat^o—
supple / condition
Now certainly he was a fair prelat.¹
205
He was nat pale as a forpined⁰ gost:
wasted-away
A fat swan loved he best of any rost.
His palfrey⁰ was as brown as is a berye.
saddle horse
A Frere² ther was, a wantoune⁰ and a merye,
jovial
A limitour, a ful solempne⁰ man.
ceremonious
In alle the ordres foure is noon that can^o
knows

So much of daliaunce⁰ and fair langage:

sociability

He hadde maad ful many a mariage
Of yonge wommen at his owene cost;
Unto his ordre he was a noble post.³
Ful wel biloved and familier was he
With frankelains over al⁴ in his contree,
And with worthy wommen of the town—
For he hadde power of confessioun,
As saide himself, more than a curat,⁰

parish priest

For of^o his ordre he was licenciat.⁵

by

Ful swetely herde he confessioun,
And plesant was his absolucioun.
He was an esy man to yive^o penaunce

give

Ther as he wiste to have a good pitaunce⁶
For unto a poore ordre for to yive
Is signe that a man is wel yshrive;⁰

shriven, absolved

6. I.e., as St. Augustine bids. St. Augustine had a “limitour” (line 209) he has been granted exclusive begging rights within a certain limited area.

7. Of careful workmanship.

3. I.e., pillar, a staunch supporter.

8. In good shape, plump.

4. I.e., with franklins everywhere. Franklins were
 9. That glowed like a furnace with a pot in it.
 well-to-do country men.
1. Prelate (an important churchman).
 5. I.e., licensed to hear confessions.
 2. The “Frere” (Friar) belongs to one of the four
 6. Where he knew he would have a good donation.
 religious orders whose members live by begging; as

THE GENERAL PROLOGUE / 25

For if he yaf, he dorste make avaunt
 He wiste⁷ that a man was repentaunt;
 For many a man so hard is of his herte
 He may nat weepe though him sore smerte:⁸
 Therefore, in stede of weeping and prayeres,
 Men mote^o yive silver to the poore freres.⁹ *may*
 His tipet^o was ay farsed⁰ ful of knives *scarf/packed*.
 And pinnes, for to yiven faire wives;
 And certainly he hadde a merye note;
 Wei coude he singe and playen on a rote;^o *fiddle*
 Of yeddinges he bar outrely the pris.¹
 His nekke whit was as the flowr-de-lis;^o *lily*
 Therto he strong was as a champioun.
 He knew the tavernes wel in every town,
 And every hostiler⁰ and tappestere,⁰ *innkeeper / barmaid*
 Bet than a lazar or a beggestere.²
 For unto swich a worthy man as he
 Accorded nat, as by his facultee,³
 To have with sike^o lazars aquaintaunce: *sick*

It is nat honeste,0 it may nought avaunce,0 *dignified / profit*
 For to delen with no swich poraile,4
 But al with riche, and selleres of vitaile;0 *foodstuffs*
 And over al ther as profit sholde arise,
 Curteis he was, and lowely of servise.
 Ther was no man nowher so vertuous:0 *effective*
 He was the beste beggere in his hous.° *friary*
 And yaf a certain ferme for the graunt:5
 Noon of his bretheren cam ther in his haunt.0 *assigned territory*
 For though a widwe° hadde nought a sho,° *widow/shoe*
 So plesant was his *In principio*6
 Yit wolde he have a ferthing0 er he wente; *small coin*
 His purchas was wel bettre than his rente.7
 And rage he coude as it were right a whelpe,8
 In love-dayes9 ther coude he muchel0 helpe, *much*
 For ther he was nat lik a cloisterer,
 With a thredbare cope,° as is a poore scoler, *cloak*
 But he was lik a maister1 or a pope.
 Of double worstede was his semicope,0 *short cloak*
 And rounded as a belle out of the presse.0 *bell mold*
 Somwhat he lipped for his wantounesse2
 To make his Englissh sweete upon his tonge;
 7. I.e., for if a man gave, the Friar would assert
 spiritual needs of precisely those classes the Friar
 that he [the Friar] knew.
 avoids.
 8. Though he is sorely grieved.

5. And he paid a certain rent for the privilege of
9. Before granting absolution, the confessor must
begging.

be sure the sinner is contrite; moreover, the abso-

6. A friar's usual salutation: "In the beginning
lution is contingent upon the sinner's performance
[was the Word]" (John 1.1).

of an act of satisfaction. In the case of Chaucer's

7. I.e., the money he got through such activity was
Friar, a liberal contribution served both as proof of
more than his regular income.

contrition and as satisfaction.

8. And he could flirt wantonly, as if he were a

1. He absolutely took the prize for ballads.

puppy.

2. Better than a leper or a female beggar.

9. Days appointed for the settlement of lawsuits

3. It was not suitable because of his position.

out of court.

4. I.e., poor people. The oldest order of friars had

1. A man of recognized learning.

been founded by St. Francis to administer to the

2. I.e., lisped in affectation.

26 / G E O F F R E Y C H A U C E R

And in his harping, whan he hadde songe,^o

sung

His yen twinkled in his heed aright

As doon the sterres^o in the frosty night.

This worthy limitour was cleped Huberd.
A Marchant was ther with a forked beard,
In motelee,³ and hye on hors he sat,
Upon his heed a Flandrissh⁰ bevere hat,
Flemish
His bootes clasped faire and fetisly.⁰
elegantly
His resons⁰ he spak ful solempnely,
opinions
Souning⁰ alway th'encrees⁰ of his winning.
sounding / increase

He wolde the see were kept for any thing⁴
Bitwixen Middelburgh and Orewelle.
Wel coude he in eschaunge sheeldes⁵ selle.
This worthy man ful wel his wit bisette:⁰
employed
Ther wiste^o no wight⁰ that he was in dette,
knew / person

So statly⁰ was he of his governaunce,⁶
dignified

With his bargaines,⁰ and with his chevissaunce.⁰ *bargainings / borrowing*
Forsoothe he was a worthy man withalle;

But, sooth to sayn, I noot^o how men him calle.

don't know

A Clerk⁷ ther was of Oxenforde also

That unto logik hadde longe ygo.⁸

As lene was his hors as is a rake,

And he was nought right fat, I undertake,

But looked holwe,^o and therto sobrelly.

hollow

Ful thredbare was his overeste⁰ courtepy,⁰

outer / cloak

For he hadde geten him yit no benefice,⁹

Ne was so worldly for to have office.⁰

secular employment

For him was levere¹ have at his beddes heed

Twenty bookes, clad in blak or reed,

Of Aristotle and his philosophye,

Than robes riche, or fithel⁰, or gay sautrye.²

fiddle

But al be that he was a philosophre³

Yit hadde he but litel gold in cofre;^o

coffer

But al that he mighte of his freendes hente,^o

take

On bookes and on lerning he it spente,

And bisily gan for the soules praye

Of hem that yaf him wherwith to scoleye.⁰

study

Of studye took he most cure⁰ and most heede.

care

Nought oo^o word spak he more than was neede,

one

And that was said in forme⁴ and reverence,

And short and quik,^o and ful of heigh sentence:⁵

lively

Sounding in moral vertu was his speche,
resounding

3. Motley, a cloth of mixed color.

of becoming a cleric, but he was not bound to pro-

4. I.e., he wished the sea to be guarded at all costs.

ceed to a position of responsibility in the Church.

The sea route between Middleburgh (in the Neth-

8. Who had long since matriculated in philosophy.

erlands) and Orwell (in Suffolk) was vital to the

9. Ecclesiastical living, such as the income a par-

Merchant's export and import of wool—the basis

ish priest receives.

of England's chief trade at the time.

1. He would rather.

5. Shields, *ecus* (French coins), were units of

2. Psaltery (a kind of harp).

transfer in international credit, which he ex-

3. The word may also mean "alchemist," someone
changed at a profit.

who tries to turn base metals into gold. The Clerk's

6. The management of his affairs.

"philosophy" does not pay either way.

7. The Clerk is a student at Oxford; to become a

4. With decorum.

student, he would have had to signify his intention

5. Elevated thought.

THE GENERAL PROLOGUE / 27

310 And gladly wolde he lerne, and gladly teche.

A Sergeant of the Lawe, war and wis,⁶
That often hadde been at the Parvis⁷
Ther was also, ful riche of excellence.
Discreet he was, and of greet reverence—
315 He seemed swich, his wordes weren so wise.

Justice he was ful often in assise⁰

circuit courts

By patente⁰ and by plein^o commissioun.

royal warrant / full

For his science⁰ and for his heigh renown

knowledge

Of fees and robes hadde he many oon.

320 So greet a purchasour⁰ was nowher noon;

speculator in land

Al was fee simple⁸ to him in effect—

His purchasing mighte nat been infect.⁹

Nowher so bisy a man as he ther nas;^o

was not

And yit he seemed bisier than he was.

325 In termes hadde he caas and doomes¹ alle

That from the time of King William² were falle.

Therto he coude endite and make a thing,³

Ther coude no wight pinchen⁰ at his writing;

cavil

And every statut coude⁰ he plein^o by rote.^o

knew / entire / heart

330 He rood but hoomly⁰ in a medlee cote,⁴

unpretentiously

Girt with a ceint^o of silk, with barres^o smale.

belt / transverse stripes

Of his array telle I no lenger tale.

A Frankelains was in his compaignye:

Whit was his beerd as is the dayesye;^o

daisy

335 Of his complexion he was sanguin.⁶

Wel loved he by the morwe a sop in win.⁷

To liven in delit^o was evere his wone,^o

pleasure / custom

For he was Epicurus⁸ owene sone,

That heeld opinion that plein^o delit

full

340 Was verray felicitee parfit.⁹

An housholdere and that a greet was he:

Saint Julian¹ he was in his contree.

His breed, his ale, was always after oon;²

A bettre envined^o man was nevere noon.

wine-stocked

345 Withouten bake mete was nevere his hous,

Of fissh and flessch, and that so plentevous^o

plenteous

It snewed^o in his hous of mete^o and drinke,

snowed / food

Of alle daintees that men coude thinke.

After^o the sondry sesons of the yeer

according to

350 So chaunged he his mete^o and his soper.^o

dinner / supper

6. Wary and wise; the Sergeant is not only a practice country man, whose lower-class ancestry is not a hindering lawyer but one of the high justices of the impediment to the importance he has attained in nation.

his county.

7. The “Paradise,” the porch of St. Paul’s Cathedral.

6. A reference to the fact that the Franklin’s temple, a meeting place for lawyers and their clients.

perament is dominated by blood as well as to his

8. Owned outright without legal impediments.

red face (see note to line 423).

9. Invalidated on a legal technicality.

7. I.e., in the morning he was very fond of a piece

1. Probably, he had in Year Books (“termes”) all of bread soaked in wine.

the cases (“caas”) and decisions (“doomes”). The

8. The ancient Greek philosopher whose teaching

Year Books were compiled from notes taken at

is popularly believed to make pleasure the chief trials.

goal of life.

2. I.e., the Conqueror (reigned 1066—87).

9. I.e., was true perfect happiness.

3. Compose and draw up a deed.

1. The patron saint of hospitality.

4. A coat of mixed color.

2. Always of the same high quality.

5. The “Frankelain” (Franklin) is a prosperous

28 / G E O F F R E Y C H A U C E R

Ful many a fat partrich hadde he in mewe,^o *cage*

And many a breem,^o and many a luce^o in stewe.^o *carp*
/pike/fishpond

Wo was his cook but if his sauce were

Poinant^o and sharp, and redy all his gere. *pungent*

355 His table dormant in his halle alway

Stood redy covered all the longe day.³

At sessions ther was he lord and sire.

Ful ofte time he was Knight of the Shire.⁴

An anlaas^o and a gipser^o al of silk *dagger/purse*

360 Heeng at his girdel,⁵ whit as morne^o milk. *morning*

A shirreve^o hadde he been, and countour.⁶ *sheriff*

Was nowher swich a worthy vavasour.⁷

An Haberdasshere and a Carpenter,

A W e b b e ,^o a D y e r e , a n d a T a p i c e r^o — *weaver /*
tapestry maker 365 And they were clothed alle in oo liverree⁸

Of a solempne and greet fraternitee.

Ful fresshe and newe hir gere apiked^o was; *trimmed*

Hir knives were chaped^o nought with bras, *mounted*

But al with silver; wrought ful clene and weel

370 Hir girdles and hir pouches everydeel.^o

altogether

Wel seemed eech of hem a fair burgeis^o

burgher

To sitten in a yeldehalle^o on a dais.

guildhall

Everich, for the wisdom that he can,^o
was capable of

Was shaply⁰ for to been an alderman.
suitable

375 For catel^o hadde they ynough and rente,⁰
property / income

And eek hir wives wolde it wel assente—

And elles certain were they to blame:

It is ful fair to been ycleped⁰ “Madame,”
called

And goon to vigilies all bifore,⁹

380 And have a mantel royalliche ybore.¹

A Cook they hadde with hem for the nones,⁰ *occasion*

To boile the chiknes with the marybones,⁰ *marrowbones*

And powdre-marchant tart and galingale.²

Wel coude he knowe^o a draughte of London ale. *recognize*

385 He coude roste, and seethe,⁰ and broile, and frye, *boil*

Maken mortreux,⁰ and wel bake a pie. *stews*

But greet harm was it thoughte⁰ me, *seemed to*

That on his shine a mormaP hadde he. *ulcer*

For blankmanger,³ that made he with the beste.

390 A Shipman was ther, woning⁰ fer by weste— *dwelling*

For ought I woot,^o he was of Dertemouthe.⁴ *know*

He rood upon a rounchy⁰ as he couthe,⁵ *large nag*

In a gowne of falding⁰ to the knee. *heavy wool*

A daggere hanging on a laas^o hadde he *strap*

3. Tables were usually dismounted when not in
nitee,” or guild, a partly religious, partly social

use, but the Franklin kept his mounted and set organization.

(“covered”), hence “dormant.”

9. I.e., at the head of the procession. *Vigilies*:

4. County representative in Parliament. *Sessions*: feasts held on the eve of saints’ days.

i.e., sessions of the justices of the peace.

1. A covering or cloak with a train, royally carried.

5. Hung at his belt.

2. Like “powdre-marchant,” a flavoring material.

6. Auditor of county finances.

3. A white stew or mousse, from the French *blanc*

7. Feudal landholder of lowest rank; a provincial (white) + *manger* (to eat).

gentleman.

4. Dartmouth, a port in the southwest of England.

8. In one livery, i.e., the uniform of their “frater-

5. As best he could.

THE GENERAL PROLOGUE / 29

395 Aboute his nekke, under his arm adown.

The hote somer hadde maad his hewe^o al brown;
color

And certainly he was a good felawe.

Ful many a draughte⁰ of win hadde he ydrawe
drink

Fro Burdeuxward, whil that the chapman sleep:6

400 Of nice⁰ conscience took he no keep⁰

fastidious / heed

If that he faught and hadde the hyer hand,
By water he sente hem hoom to every land.⁷
But of his craft, to rekene wel his tides,
His stremes⁰ and his daungers⁰ him bisides,⁸
currents / hazards
405 His herberwe⁰ and his moone, his lodemenage,⁰
anchorage / pilotage
There was noon swich from Hulle to Cartage.⁹
Hardy he was and wis to undertake;
With many a tempest hadde his beard been shake;
He knew alle the havenes⁰ as they were
harbors
410 Fro Gotlond to the Cape of Finistere,¹
And every crike^o in Britaine⁰ and in Spaine.
inlet / Brittany
His barge ycleped was the Maudelaine.⁰
Magdalene
With us ther was a Doctour of Physik:⁰
medicine
In al this world ne was ther noon him lik
415 To speken of physik and of surgerye.
For^o he was grounded in astronomye,⁰
because / astrology
He kepte^o his pacient a ful greet deel²
tended to
In houres by his magik naturel.³
Wel coude he fortunen the ascendent
420 Of his images⁴ for his pacient.

He knew the cause of every maladye,
Were it of hoot or cold or moiste or drye,
And where engendred and of what humour:5
He was a verray parfit praktisour.6
425 The cause yknowe,0 and of his° harm the roote,
known / its

Anoon he yaf the sike man his boote.°
remedy

Ful redy hadde he his apothecaries
To senden him drogges0 and his letuaries,0
drugs / medicines

For each of hem made other for to winne:

430 Hir frendshipe was nought newe to biginne.

Wel knew he the olde Esculapius,7

6. I.e., drawn (stolen) wine from Bordeaux (the
“humors,” each of which, like the four elements,
wine center of France), while the Merchant slept.
was a compound of two of the elementary qualities

7. I.e., he drowned his prisoners.

mentioned in line 422: the melancholy humor,

8. Around him.

seated in the black bile, was cold and dry (like

9. From Hull (in northern England) to Cartagena
earth); the sanguine, seated in the blood, hot and
(in Spain).

moist (like air); the choleric, seated in the yellow

1. From Gotland (an island in the Baltic) to Fin-
bile, hot and dry (like fire); the phlegmatic, seated

isterre (the westernmost point in Spain).

in the phlegm, cold and moist (like water).

2. I.e., closely.

6. True perfect practitioner.

3. Natural—as opposed to black—magic. *In*

7. The Doctor is familiar with the treatises that

houres: i.e., the astrologically important hours

the Middle Ages attributed to the “great names” of

(when conjunctions of the planets might help his

medical history, whom Chaucer lists in lines 431 —

recovery).

36: the purely legendary Greek demigod Aescula-

4. Assign the propitious time, according to the

pius; the Greeks Dioscorides, Rufus, Hippocrates,

position of stars, for using talismanic images. Such

Galen, and Serapion; the Persians Hali and

images, representing either the patient or points in

Rhazes; the Arabians Avicenna and Averroes; the

the zodiac, were thought to influence the course

early Christians John (?) of Damascus and Con-

of the disease.

stantine Afer; the Scotsman Bernard Gordon; the

5. Diseases were thought to be caused by a dis-

Englishmen John of Gatesden and Gilbert, the for-

turbance of one or another of the four bodily

mer an early contemporary of Chaucer.

30 / G E O F F R E Y C H A U C E R

And Deiscorides and eek Rufus,

Olde Ipocras, Hali, and Galien,
Serapion, Razis, and Avicen,
Averrois, Damascien, and Constantin,
Bernard, and Gatesden, and Gilbertin.

Of his diete mesurable⁰ was he,
moderate

For it was of no superfluitee,
But of greet norissing⁰ and digestible.
nourishment

His studye was but litel on the Bible.
In sanguin⁰ and in pers^o he clad was al,
blood red / blue

Lined with taffata and with sendal;⁰
silk

And yit he was but esy of dispence;⁰
He kepte that he wan in pestilence.⁸
expenditure

For^o gold in physik is a cordial,⁹
Therefore he loved gold in special.
because

A good Wif was ther of biside Bathe,
But she was somdeel deaf, and that was scathe.⁰
a pity

Of cloth-making she hadde swich an haunt,⁰
practice

She passed⁰ hem of Ypres and of Gaunt.¹
In al the pariss wif ne was ther noon
That to the offring² bifore hire sholde goon,

And if ther dide, certain so wroth⁰ was she
angry

That she was out of alle charitee.

Hir coverchiefs ful fine were of ground⁰—
texture

I dorste⁰ swere they weyeden⁰ ten pound
dare / weighed

That on a Sondag weren⁰ upon hir heed.
were

Hir hosen weren of fin scarlet reed,^o
red

Ful straite yteyd,³ and shoes ful moiste⁰ and newe.
supple

Bold was hir face and fair and reed of hewe.

She was a worthy womman al hir live:

Housbondes at chirche dore⁴ she hadde five,

Withouten⁰ other compaigny in youthe—
not counting

But therof needeth nought to speke as nouthe.⁰
now

And thries hadde she been at Jerusalem;

She hadde passed many a straunge⁰ strem;
foreign

At Rome she hadde been, and at Boloigne,

In Galice at Saint Jame, and at Coloigne:⁵

She coude⁰ muchel of wandring by the waye.

knew

Gat-toothed⁶ was she, soothly for to saye.

Upon an amblere⁰ esily she sat, *horse*
with an easy gait

Ywimpled⁰ wel, and on hir heed an hat
veiled

As brood as is a bokeler or a targe,⁷
A foot-mantel⁰ aboute hir hipes large,
riding skirt

And on hir feet a paire of spores⁰ sharpe.
spurs

8. He saved the money he made during the plague
formed at the church door.
time.

5. Rome, Boulogne (in France), St. James (of

9. A stimulant. Gold was thought to have some
Compostella) in Galicia (Spain), Cologne (in Ger-
medicinal properties.

many) were all sites of shrines much visited by pil-

1. Ypres and Ghent (“Gaunt”) were Flemish cloth-
grims.

making centers.

6. Gap-toothed; in medieval physiognomy, such

2. The offering in church, when the congregation
teeth indicated an irreverent, luxurious, sexualized
brought its gifts forward.

nature.

3. Tightly laced.

7. Like a “bokeler,” a small shield.

4. In medieval times, weddings were often per-

THE GENERAL PROLOGUE / 31

In f e l a w e s h i p e w e l c o u d e s h e l a u g h e a n d
c a r p e : °

talk

O f r e m e d i e s o f l o v e s h e k n e w p a r c h a u n c e , °
F o r s h e c o u d e o f t h a t a r t t h e o l d e d a u n c e . 8

A g o o d m a n w a s t h e r o f r e l i g i o u n ,
A n d w a s a p o o r e P e r s o n ° o f a t o w n ,

parson

B u t r i c h e h e w a s o f h o l y t h o u g h t a n d w e r k .

H e w a s a l s o a l e r n e d m a n , a c l e r k ,

T h a t C r i s t e s g o s p e l t r e w e l y ° w o l d e p r e c h e ;

faithfully

H i s p a r i s s h e n s ° d e v o u t l y w o l d e h e t e c h e .

parishioners

B e n i g n e h e w a s , a n d w o n d e r ° d i l i g e n t ,

wonderfully

A n d i n a d v e r s i t e e f u l p a c i e n t ,

A n d s w i c h h e w a s p r e v e d ° o f t e ° s i t h e s . °

proved / often / times

F u l l o t h w e r e h i m t o c u r s e n f o r h i s t i t h e s , 9

B u t r a t h e r w o l d e h e y i v e n , o u t o f d o u t e , 1

U n t o h i s p o o r e p a r i s s h e n s a b o u t e

O f h i s o f f r i n g 2 a n d e e k o f h i s s u b s t a n c e : °

property

H e c o u d e i n l i t e l t h i n g h a v e s u f f i s a u n c e . °

sufficiency

W i d w a s h i s p a r i s s h , a n d h o u s e s f e r a s o n d e r ,

B u t h e n e l a f t e 0 n o u g h t f o r r a i n n e t h o n d e r ,
neglected

I n s i k n e s s e n o r i n m e s c h i e f , 0 t o v i s i t e
misfortune

T h e f e r r e s t e 0 i n h i s p a r i s s h , m u c h e a n d l i t e , 3
farthest

U p o n h i s f e e t , a n d i n h i s h a n d a s t a f .

T h i s n o b l e e n s a m p l e 0 t o h i s s h e e p h e y a f

T h a t f i r s t h e w r o u g h t e , 4 a n d a f t e r w a r d h e t a u
g h t e .

O u t o f t h e G o s p e l h e t h o ° w o r d e s c a u g h t e , 0
those / took

A n d t h i s f i g u r e 0 h e a d d e d e e k t h e r t o :
metaphor

T h a t i f g o l d r u s t e , w h a t s h a l i r e n d o ?

F o r i f a p r e e s t b e f o u l , o n w h o m w e t r u s t e ,

N o w o n d e r i s a l e w e d ° m a n t o r u s t e .

uneducated

A n d s h a m e i t i s , i f a p r e e s t t a k e k e e p , 0
heed

A s h i t e n 0 s h e p h e r d e a n d a c l e n e s h e e p .
befouled

W e l o u g h t e a p r e e s t e n s a m p l e f o r t o y i v e

B y h i s c l e n n e s s e h o w t h a t h i s s h e e p s h o l d e l i v e .

H e s e t t e n o u g h t h i s b e n e f i c e t o h i r e

A n d l e e t h i s s h e e p 5 e n c o m b r e d i n t h e m i r e

A n d r a n t o L o n d o n , u n t o S a i n t e 0 P o u l e s , 0

St. / Paul's (Cathedral)

To seek en him a chaunterye 6 for soules,
Or with a brether hede to been with holde, 7
But dwel teathoom and keptewel his folde,
So that the wolf ne made it nought miscarye:
He was a shepherde and nought a mercenar
ye.

And though he holy were and vertuous,
He was to sinful men nought despitous, 0
scornful

Ne of his speche daungerous 0 ne digne, 0
disdainful / haughty

But in his teching discreet and benigne,

8. I.e., she knew all the tricks of that trade.

sheep. A priest might rent his parish to another and

9. He would be most reluctant to invoke excom-
take a more profitable position.

munication in order to collect his tithes.

6. Chantry, i.e., a foundation that employed

1. Without doubt.

priests for the sole duty of saying Masses for the

2. The offering made by the congregation of his
souls of certain persons. St. Paul's had many of
church was at the Parson's disposal.

them.

3. I.e., great and small.

7. Or to be employed by a brotherhood; i.e., to

4. I.e., he practiced what he preached.

take a lucrative and fairly easy position as chaplain

5. I.e., he did not hire out his parish or leave his

with a parish guild.

32 / GEOFFREY CHAUCER

To drawen folk to hevene by fairnesse

By goodensample — this was his businessse.

But it° were any persone obstinat,

if there

What so he were, of heigh or lowe estat,

Him wolde he sniben 0 sharply for thenones:

8

scold

A bettre prest I trowe° ther now her noon is.

believe

He waited after 9 no pompe and reverence,

Ne made him a spiced conscience, 1

But Cristes lore 0 and his Apostles twelve

teaching

He taughte, but first he folwedithimselfe

.

With him ther was a Plowman, was his brother

That hadde ylad° of dong° ful many a fother. 0

carried / dung / load

Atreweswinkere 0 and a good washe,

worker

Living in pees° and parfitcharitee.

peace

God loved he best withal his hoole° herte

whole

At alle times, though him gamedorsmerte, 2

**A n d t h a n n e h i s n e i g h e b o r r i g h t a s h i m s e l v e .
H e w o l d e t h r e s s h e , a n d t h e r t o d i k e 0 a n d d e l v e
, 0**

make ditches / dig

**F o r C r i s t e s s a k e , f o r e v e r y p o o r e w i g h t ,
W i t h o u t e n h i r e , i f i t l a y e i n h i s m i g h t .
H i s t i t h e s p a y e d h e f u l f a i r e a n d w e l ,
B o t h e o f h i s p r o p r e 0 s w i n k ° a n d h i s c a t e l . °**

own / work / property

I n a t a b a r d 0 h e r o o d u p o n a m e r e . 0

workman's smock / mare

**T h e r w a s a l s o a R e e v e a n d a M i l l e r e ,
A S o m n o u r , a n d a P a r d o n e r a l s o ,
A M a n c i p l e , a n d m y s e l f — t h e r w e r e n a m o .
3**

T h e M i l l e r e w a s a s t o u t c a r l ° f o r t h e n o n e s .

fellow

**F u l b i g h e w a s o f b r a w n 0 a n d e e k o f b o n e s —
*muscle***

**T h a t p r e v e d 4 w e l , f o r o v e r a l t h e c a m
A t w r a s t l i n g h e w o l d e h a v e a l w a y t h e r a m . 5
H e w a s s h o r t - s h u l d r e d , b r o o d , 0 a t h i k k e 0
k n a r r e .**

broad / stout / fellow

**T h e r w a s n o d o r e t h a t h e n o l d e h e v e o f h a r r e , 6
O r b r e k e i t a t a r e n n i n g 0 w i t h h i s h e e d . °**

running / head

H i s b e e r d a s a n y s o w e o r f o x w a s r e e d , °

red

A n d t h e r t o b r o o d , a s t h o u g h i t w e r e a s p a d e ;

U p o n t h e c o p ° r i g h t o f h i s n o s e h e h a d e

tip

A w e r t e , ° a n d t h e r o n s t o o d a t u f t o f h e r e s ,

wart

R e d e a s t h e b r i s t l e s o f a s o w e s e r e s ; °

ears

H i s n o s e t h i r l e s 0 b l a k e w e r e a n d w i d e .

nostrils

A s w e r d a n d a b o k e l e r 0 b a r ° h e b y h i s s i d e .

shield / bore

H i s m o u t h a s g r e e t w a s a s a g r e e t f u r n a i s . 0

furnace

H e w a s a j a n g l e r e 0 a n d a G o l i a r d a i s , 7

chatterer

A n d t h a t w a s m o s t o f s i n n e a n d h a r l o t r i e s . 0

obscenities

W e l c o u d e h e s t e l e n c o r n a n d t o l l e n t h r i e s

8 —

A n d y i t h e h a d d e a t h o m b e o f g o l d , p a r d e e . 9

8. On any occasion.

625; the Pardoner, at line 671.

9. I.e., expected.

4. Proved, i.e., was evident.

1. Nor did he assume an overfastidious con-

5. A ram was frequently offered as the prize in science.

wrestling.

2. Whether he was pleased or grieved.

6. He would not heave off (its) hinge.

3. No more. *Reeve*: estate manager. *Somnour*:

7. Goliard, teller of ribald stories.

Summoner, server of summonses to the ecclesi-

8. Take toll thrice—i.e., deduct from the grain far
astical court. *Pardoner*: dispenser of papal pardons.

more than the lawful percentage.

Manciple: Steward. The Somnour appears at line

9. By heaven. *Thombe*: possibly an ironic refer-

THE GENERAL PROLOGUE / 33

A whit cote and a blewhood were d° he .

wore

**A bagge pipe wel coude he blowe and soun e ,
0**

sound

**And therewithal 0 he broughte us out of tow
ne .**

therewith

A gentil Manciple 1 was ther of a temple ,

**570 Of which a chatours 0 might take exem
ple *buyers of food***

For to been wise in bying of vitale; 0

victuals

For wheither that he paide or took by taile, 2

Algate he waited so in his achat 3

That he was a ybiforn and in good stat. 4

575 Now is nat that of God a ful fair grace

That swich a lewed° mannes with halpace 0

uneducated / surpass

The wisdom of a heep of lerned men?

Of maistres 0 hadde he mo than thrieste n

masters

That were noflawe expert and curious, 0

cunning

**580 Of which ether were a doze in e in that ho
us Worthy to be enstewardes of rente 0 and l
ond *income***

Of any lord that is in Engelond,

To make him live by his propre 0 good 0

own / money

In honour dette leas but if he were wood, 5

585 Or live as scarsly as him list desire, 6

And able for to helpen a lashire

**In any caas ° that mighte falle ° or happe,
*event / befall***

And yit this Manciple sette hir aller cappe! 7

The Reeve was a splendre colerik 8 man;

**590 His beard was shave as neigh 0 as ever he
e can;**

close

His heer was by hiseresful roundyshorn;

His top was dokked 9 lik a preest biforn;

Fullongewere his legges and fullene,

Ylik a staf, ther was no calfyseene. 0

visible

**595 Welcoude he keepe ° agerner 0 and a binn
e —**

guard / granary

Ther was noon auditour coude on him winne.
e. 1

Wel wiste ° he by the droughte and by the ra
in *knew*

The yeelding of his seed and of his grain.

His lordess sheep, his neet, ° his dayerye, 0
cattle / dairy herd

600 His swin, his hors, his stoor, ° and his pu
ltrye *stock*

Was wholly 0 in this Reeves governinge,
wholly

And by his covenantyaf 2 therekeninge,

Sin ° that his lord was twenty-yeer of age.

since

There coude no man bringe him in a rre age
. 3

605 Ther nas baillif, hierde, nor other hine,

That he knew his sleighte and his covine
4 —

They were adrad ° of him as of the deeth. °

afraid / plague

His woning 0 was ful faire upon an heeth; °

dwelling / meadow

ence to the proverb *An honest miller hath a golden*

8. Slender choleric. “Colerik” (choleric) describes

thumb, which apparently means “There are no

a person whose dominant humor is yellow bile

honest millers.”

(choler)—i.e., a hot-tempered person. The Reeve

1. The Manciple is the steward of a community of

is the superintendent of a large farming estate.

lawyers in London (a “temple”).

9. Cut short; the clergy wore the head partially

2. By talley, i.e., on credit.

shaved.

3. Always he was on the watch in his purchasing.

1. I.e., find him in default.

4. I.e., he was ahead of the game and in good

2. And according to his contract he gave.

financial condition.

3. Convict him of being in arrears financially.

5. Out of debt unless he were insane.

4. There was no bailiff (i.e., foreman), shepherd,

6. I.e., as economically as he would want.

nor other farm laborer whose craftiness and plots

7. This Manciple made fools of them all.

he didn't know.

34 / G E O F F R E Y C H A U C E R

With greene trees shadwed was his place.

He coude bettre than his lord purchace.0

acquire i

Ful riche he was astored0 prively.0

stocked / secretly

His lord wel coude he plesen subtilly,

To yive and lene^o him of his owene good,0

lend / property

And have a thank, and yit a cote and hood.

In youthe he hadde lerned a good mister:0

occupation

He was a wel good wrighte, a carpenter.

This Reeve sat upon a ful good stot°

stallion

That was a pomely⁰ grey and highte⁰ Scot.

dapple / was named

A long surcote of pers upon he hade,^s

And by his side he bar° a rusty blade.

bore

Of Northfolk was this Reeve of which I telle,

Biside a town men clepen Baldeswelle.⁰

Bawdswell

Tukked⁰ he was as is a frere aboute,

with clothing tucked up

And evere he rood the hindreste of oure route.

A Somnour⁷ was ther with us in that place

That hadde a fir-reed cherubinnes⁸ face,

For saucefleem⁰ he was, with yen° narwe,[°]

pimply / eyes / slitlike

And hoot° he was, and lecherous as a sparwe,⁹

hot

With scaled⁰ browes blake and piled¹ beard:

scabby

Of his visage children were aferd.[°]

afraid

Ther nas quiksilver, litarge, ne brimstoon,

Boras, ceruce, ne oile of tartre noon,²

Ne oinement that wolde dense and bite,

That him mighte helpen of his whelkes⁰ white,
pimples

Nor of the knobbes⁰ sitting on his cheekes.
lumps

Wel loved he garlek, oinons, and eek leekes,
And for to drinke strong win reed as blood.

Thanne wolde he speke and crye as he were wood;⁰
And whan that he wel dronken hadde the win,
Thanne wolde he speke no word but Latin:

A fewe termes hadde he, two or three,
That he hadde lerned out of som decree;
No wonder is—he herde it al the day,
And eek ye knowe wel how that a jay^o

parrot

Can clepen “Watte”³ as wel as can the Pope—
But whoso coude in other thing him grope,⁰
Thanne hadde he spent all his philosophye;⁴
Ay *Questio quid juris*”’ wolde he crye.

He was a gentil harlot⁰ and a kinde;

rascal

A bettre felawe sholde men nought finde:

He wolde suffre,0 for a quart of win,

permit

A good felawe to have his concubin

5. I.e., he had on a long blue overcoat.

in art with red faces.

6. Hindmost of our group.

9. The sparrow was traditionally associated with

7. The “Somnour” (Summoner) is an employee of lechery.

the ecclesiastical court, whose defined duty is to

1. Uneven; partly hairless.

bring to court persons whom the archdeacon—the

2. These are all ointments for diseases affecting justice of the court—suspects of offenses against the skin, probably diseases of venereal origin.

canon law. By this time, however, summoners had

3. Call out “Walter” (like modern parrots’ “Polly”).

generally transformed themselves into corrupt

4. I.e., learning.

detectives who spied out offenders and black-

5. “What point of law does this investigation

mailed them by threats of summonses.

involve?”: a phrase frequently used in ecclesiastical

8. Fire-red cherub’s. Cherubs were often depicted courts.

THE GENERAL PROLOGUE / 35

A twelfmonth, and excusen him at the fulle;6

Ful prively0 a finch eek coude he pulle.7

secretly

655 And if he foond^o owher^o a good felawe

found / anywhere

He wolde techen him to have noon awe

In swich caas of the Ercedekenes curs,⁸

But if⁹ a mannes soule were in his purs,

For in his purs he sholde ypunisshed be.

660 “Purs is the Ercedekenes helle,” saide he.

But wel I woot he lied right in deede:

Of cursing⁰ oughte eech gilty man drede,

excommunication

For curs wol slee⁰ right as assoiling⁰ savith—

slay / absolution

And also war him of a *significavit*.¹

665 In daunger² hadde he at his owene gise^o

disposal

The yonge girles of the diocise,

And knew hir conseil,⁰ and was al hir reed.³

secrets

A gerland hadde he set upon his heed

As greet as it were for an ale-stake;⁴

670 A bokeler hadde he maad him of a cake.

With him ther rood a gentil Pardoner⁵

Of Rouncival, his freend and his compeer,⁰

comrade

That straight was comen fro the Court of Rome.

Ful loude he soong,^o “Com hider, love, to me.”

sang

675 This Somnour bar to him a stif burdoun:6
Was nevere trompe0 of half so greet a soun.

trumpet

This Pardoner hadde heer as yelow as wex,
But smoothe it heeng° as dooth a strike0 of flex;°

hung / hank / flax

By ounces7 heenge his lokkes that he hadde,
680 And therwith he his shuldres overspradde,0

overspread

But thinne it lay, by colpons,0 oon by oon;

strands

But hood for jolitee0 wered0 he noon,

attractiveness / wore

For it was trussed up in his walet:0

pack

Him thoughte he rood al of the newe jet.°

fashion

685 Dischevelee0 save his cappe he rood al bare.

with hair down

Swiche glaring yen hadde he as an hare.

A vernicle8 hadde he sowed upon his cappe,

His walet biforn him in his lappe,

Bretful0 of pardon, comen from Rome al hoot.°

brimful / hot

690 A vois he hadde as smal° as hath a goot;0

fine / goat

No beerd hadde he, ne nevere sholde have;

As smoothe it was as it were late yshave:

I trowe he were a gelding or a mare.⁹

6. Fully. Ecclesiastical courts had jurisdiction

5. A Pardoner dispensed papal pardon for sins to over many offenses that today would come under those who contributed to the charitable institution civil law, including sexual offenses.

that he was licensed to represent; this Pardoner

7. I.e., “to pluck a finch”: to swindle someone; purported to be collecting for the hospital of Ron-

cesvalles (“Rouncival”) in Spain, which had a Lon-

8. Archdeacon’s sentence of excommunication.

don branch.

9. *But if*: unless.

6. I.e., provided him with a strong bass accompa-

1. And also one should be careful of a *significavit* niment.

(the writ that transferred the guilty offender from

7. I.e., thin strands.

the ecclesiastical to the civil arm for punishment).

8. Portrait of Christ’s face as it was said to have

2. Under his domination.

been impressed on St. Veronica’s handkerchief,

3. Was their chief source of advice.

i.e., a souvenir reproduction of a famous relic in

4. A tavern was signalized by a pole (“alestake”),

Rome.

rather like a modern flagpole, projecting from its

9. I believe he was a castrated male horse or a
front wall; on this hung a garland, or “bush.”
female horse.

36 / G E O F F R E Y C H A U C E R

But of his craft, fro Berwik into Ware,¹

Ne was ther swich another pardonere;

For in his male⁰ he hadde a pilwe-beer⁰

bag / pillowcase

Which that he saide was Oure Lady veil;

He saide he hadde a gobet⁰ of the sail

piece

That Sainte Peter hadde whan that he wente

Upon the see, til Jesu Crist him hente.⁰

seized

He hadde a crois⁰ of laton,⁰ ful of stones,

And in a glas he hadde pigges bones,

cross / brassy metal

But with thise relikes² whan that he foond⁰

A poore person dwelling upon lond,³

found

Upon⁰ a day he gat⁰ him more moneye

in / got

Than that the person gat in monthes twaye;⁰

two

And thus with feined⁰ laterye and japes⁰

false / tricks

He made the person and the peple his apes.^o

dupes

But trewely to tellen at the laste,
He was in chirche a noble ecclesiaste;
Wel coude he rede a lesson and a storye,⁰
liturgical narrative
But alderbest⁰ he soong an offertorye,⁴
best of all
For wel he wiste^o whan that song was songe,
knew
He moste⁰ preche and wel affile⁰ his tonge
must / sharpen
To winne silver, as he ful wel coude—
Therefore he soong the merierly⁰ and loude.
more merrily
Now have I told you soothly in a clause⁵
Th'estaat, th'array, the nombre, and eek the cause
Why that assembled was this compaignye
In Southwerk at this gentil hostelrye
That highte the Tabard, faste by the Belle;⁶
But now is time to you for to telle
How that we baren^{us}^o that ilke⁰ night
bore / ourselves / <
Whan we were in that hostelrye alight;
And after wol I telle of oure viage,⁰
trip
And al the remenant of oure pilgrimage.
But first I praye you of youre curteisye
That ye n'arete it nought my vilainye⁷
Though that I plainly speke in this matere

To telle you hir wordes and hir cheere,0

behavior

Ne though I speke hir wordes proprely;0

accurately

For this ye knowen also wel as I:

Who so shal telle a tale after a man

He moot0 reherce,0 as neigh as evere he can,

must / repeat

Everich a word, if it be in his charge,0

responsibility

AP speke he nevere so rudeliche and large,0

although / broadly

Or elles he moot telle his tale untrewe,

Or feine^o thing, or finde^o wordes newe;

falsify / devise

He may nought spare⁸ although he were his brother:

He moot as wel saye oo word as another.

Crist spake himself ful brode^o in Holy Writ,

broadly

1. I.e., from one end of England to another.

5. I.e., in a few words.

2. Relics—i.e., the pigs' bones that the Pardoner

6. Close by the Belle (another tavern in South-
represented as saints' bones.

wark, possibly a brothel).

3. A poor parson living upcountry.

7. That you do not charge it to my boorishness.

4. Part of the Mass sung before the offering of

8. I.e., spare anyone.

alms.

THE GENERAL PROLOGUE / 37

And wel ye woot no vilainye⁰ is it;

rudeness

Eek Plato saith, who so can him rede,

The wordes mote be cosin to the deede.

Also I praye you to foryive it me

Al^o have I nat set folk in hir degree

although

Here in this tale as that they sholde stonde:

My wit is short, ye may wel understonde.

Greet cheere made oure Host⁹ us everichoon,

750

And to the soper sette he us anoon.^o

at once

He served us with vitaile⁰ at the beste.

food

Strong was the win, and wel to drinke us leste.^o

it pleased

A semely man oure Hoste was withalle

For to been a marchall in an halle;

755

A large man he was, with yen steepe,⁰

prominent

A fairer burgeis⁰ was ther noon in Chepe²—

townsman

Bold of his speeche, and wis, and wel ytaught,

And of manhood him lakkede right naught.

Eek therto he was right a merye man,

760

And after soper playen he bigan,

And spak of mirthe amonges othere thinges—

Whan that we hadde maad^o oure rekeninges^o—

paid /bills

And saide thus, “Now, lordinges, trewely,

Ye been to me right welcome, hertely.^o

heartily

For by my trouthe, if that I shal nat lie,

765

I sawgh nat this yeer so merye a compaignye

At ones in this herberwe^o as is now.

inn

Fain^o wolde I doon you mirthe, wiste I³ how.

gladly

And of a mirthe I am right now bithought,

To doon you ese, and it shal coste nought.

770

“Ye goon to Canterbury—God you speede;

The blisful martyr quite you youre meede.⁴

And wel I woot as ye goon by the waye

Ye shapen you⁵ to talen^o and to playe,

tell tales

775

For trewely, confort ne mirthe is noon

To ride by the waye domb as stoon;^o

stone

And therefore wol I maken you disport
As I saide erst,^o and doon you som confort;

before

And if you liketh alle, by oon assent,

780

For to stonden at⁶ my juggement,

And for to werken as I shal you saye,

Tomorwe whan ye riden by the waye—

Now by my fader⁰ soule that is deed,

father's

But^o ye be merye I wol yive you myn heed!^o

unless / head

Holde up youre handes withouten more speche.”

785

Oure counseil was nat longe for to seeche;⁰

seek

Us thoughte it was nat worth to make it wis,⁷

And graunted him withouten more avis,^o

deliberation

And bade him saye his voirdit as him leste.⁸

790

“Lordinges,” quod he, “now herkneth for the beste;

The Host is the landlord of the Tabard Inn.

5. *Ye shapen you:* you intend.

Marshal, one who was in charge of feasts.

6. Abide by.

Cheapside, business center of London.

7. We didn't think it worthwhile to make an issue
If I knew.

of it.

Pay you your reward.

8. I.e., give his verdict as he pleased.

38 / G E O F F R E Y C H A U C E R

But taketh it nought, I praye you, in desdain.

This is the point, to speken short and plain,

That eech of you, to shorte⁰ with oure waye *shorten*

In this viage, shal tellen tales twaye^o— *two*

795 To Canterburyward, I mene it so,

And hoomward he shal tellen othere two,

Of aventures that whilom⁰ have bifalle; *once upon a time*

And which of you that bereth him best of alle—

That is to sayn, that telleth in this cas

800 Tales of best sentence⁰ and most solas⁰— *meaning / delight*

Shal have a soper at oure aller cost,⁹

Here in this place, sitting by this post,

Whan that we come again fro Canterbury.

And for to make you the more mury^o

merry

805 I wol myself goodly⁰ with you ride—

kindly

Right at myn owene cost—and be youre gide.

And who so wol my juggement withsaye⁰

contradict

Shal paye al that we spende by the waye.

And if ye vouche sauf that it be so,
810 Telle me anoon, withouten wordes mo,^o *more*
And I wol erly shape me¹ therefore.”

This thing was graunted and oure othes swore
With ful glad herte, and prayden² him also
That he wolde vouche sauf for to do so,
815 And that he wolde been oure governour,
And of oure tales juge and reportour,⁰
accountant

And sette a soper at a certain pris,^o
price

And we wol ruled been at his devis,⁰
wish, plan

In heigh and lowe; and thus by oon assent
820 We been accorded to his juggement.
And therupon the win was fet^o anoon;
fetched

We dronken and to reste wente eechoon
Withouten any lenger⁰ taryinge.
longer

Amorwe⁰ whan that day bigan to springe
in the morning

825 Up roos oure Host and was oure aller cok,³
And gadred us togidres in a flok,
And forth we riden, a litel more than pas,^o
walking pace

Unto the watering of Saint Thomas;⁴
And ther oure Host bigan his hors arreste,⁰

to halt

830 And saide, “Lordes, herkneth if you leste:°

it please

Ye woot youre forward and it you recorde:’

If evensong and morwesong⁰ accorde,⁰ *morningsong / agree*

Lat see now who shal telle the firste tale.

As evere mote⁰ I drinken win or ale, *may*

835 Who so be rebel to my juggement

Shal paye for al that by the way is spent.

Now draweth cut er that we ferre twinne:⁶

He which that hath the shorteste shal biginne.

9. I.e., at the expense of us all. 4. A watering place near Southwark.

1. Will prepare myself. 5. You know your agreement and you recall it.

2. I.e., we prayed. 6. I.e., draw straws before we go farther.

3. I.e., was rooster for us all.

THE WIFE OF BATH ‘ S P R O L O G U E AND T A L
E / 3 9

“Sire Knight,” quod he, “my maister and my lord,

840 Now draweth cut, for that is myn accord.⁰ *will*

Cometh neer,” quod he, “my lady Prioress,

And ye, sire Clerk, lat be youre shamefastnesse⁰— *modesty*

Ne studieth nought. Lay hand to, every man!”

Anoon to drawen every wight bigan,

845 And shortly for to tellen as it was,

Were it by aventure,⁰ or sort⁰, or cas,[°] *luck I fate I chance*

The soothe⁰ is this, the cut fil[°] to the Knight; *truth/fell*

Of which ful blithe and glad was every wight,

And telle he moste⁰ his tale, as was resoun, *must*
850 By forward⁰ a n d by composicioun,⁰ *agreement I*
compact
As ye han herd. What needeth wordes mo?
And whan this goode man sawgh that it was so,
As he that wis was and obedient
To keepe his forward by his free assent,
855 He saide, “Sin I shal biginne the game,
What, welcome be the cut, in Goddes name!
Now lat us ride, and herkneth what I saye.”
And with that word we riden forth oure waye,
And he bigan with right a merye cheere⁰ *countenance*
860 His tale anoon, and saide as ye may heere.

The Wife of Bath’s Prologue and Tale¹

The Prologue

Experience, though noon auctoritee
Were in this world, is right ynough for me
To speke of wo that is in mariage:
For lordinges,⁰ sith I twelf yeer was of age— *gentlemen*
5 Thanked be God that is eterne on live—
Housbondes at chirche dore² I have had five
(If I so ofte mighte han wedded be),

1. The Wife of Bath’s prologue and tale have no men. In creating a female character who uses a link to a preceding tale and together occupy different positions in the many manuscript versions battle with generations of literate clerks and their

of The Canterbury Tales. Most scholars agree, how-
writings about women, Chaucer engages in lively
ever, that the Wife's powerful voice begins a
but also serious play in an arena of (ongoing) cul-
sequence of tales dealing with marriage. In her
tural debate.

prologue, the Wife draws on and often comically
The Wife's tale illustrates some of the claims she
questions classical and Christian traditions of anti-
makes in her prologue about women's right to be
woman and antimarriage discourse in various gen-
"sovereign" (to rule) over men. While the Wife's
res. At once embodying and satirizing common
prologue draws on contemporary history and her
stereotypes of women drawn from Christian and
own life story, her tale transports us to a distant,
classical "authorities" (whom she sometimes com-

largely fictional world of chivalric romance.
ically misquotes), the Wife speaks from a position
Although the Wife at one point "interrupts" her
shaped, she claims, by her "experience," rather
fairly tale to continue the authority-citing debate of
than by "auctoritee." In so doing, she reminds us
the prologue, her argument is mostly carried by a
that many fewer women than men had access to
plot that combines elements from two traditional
literacy—and its cultural prestige—during the
stories found in many European languages: that of

Middle Ages than do today. This was, in part, a knight and a “loathly” lady and that of a man because fewer girls than boys received formal education, whose life depends on his being able to answer a question, but also because literacy was commonly defined as mastery of Latin, the language of the Church and the priesthood, which was often inaccessible or incomprehensible to women and to lay-

2. The actual wedding ceremony was performed at the church door.

cessible or incomprehensible to women and to lay-

40 / G E O F F R E Y C H A U C E R

And alle were worthy men in hir degree.

But me was told, certain, nat longe agoon is,
That sith that Crist ne wente nevere but ones³
To wedding in the Cane⁴ of Galilee,
That by the same ensample⁰ taughte he me
example

That I ne sholde wedded be but ones.

Herke eek, lo, which a sharp word for the nones,⁵
Biside a welle, Jesus, God and man,
Spak in repreve⁰ of the Samaritan:

reproof

“Thou hast yhad five housbondes,” quod he,
“And that ilke^o man that now hath thee
Is nat thyn housbonde.” Thus saide he certain.
What that he mente therby I can nat sayn,
But that I axe^o why the fifthe man

ask

Was noon housbonde to the Samaritan?6

How manye mighte she han in marriage?

Yit herde I nevere tellen in myn age

Upon this nombre diffinicioun.0

definition

Men may divine0 and glosen0 up and down,

guess / interpret

But wel I woot,° expres,0 withouten lie,

know / expressly

God bad us for to wexe7 and multiplie:

That gentil0 text can I wel understonde.

excellent, worthy

Eek wel I woot° he saide that myn housbonde

know

Sholde lete° fader and moder and take to me,8

leave

But of no nombre mencion made he—

Of bigamye or of octogamye:9

Why sholde men thanne speke of it vilainye?

Lo, here the wise king daun° Salomon:

master

I trowe° he hadde wives many oon,1

believe

As wolde God it leveful0 were to me

permissible

To be refreshed half so ofte as he.

Which yifte° of God hadde he for alle his wives!

gift

No man hath swich⁰ that in this world alive is.

such

God woot this noble king, as to my wit,^o

knowledge

The firste night hadde many a merye fit⁰

bout

With eech of hem, so wel was him on live.²

Blessed be God that I have wedded five,

Of whiche I have piked out the beste,³

Bothe of hir nether purs and of hir cheste.⁴

Diverse scoles maken parfit⁰ clerkes,

perfect

And diverse practikes in sondry werkes⁵

3. Once. *Ne ... nevere*: in Middle English, double become “one” with his wife; see Genesis 2.24 and negatives reinforce each other rather than cancel Matthew 19.5.

each other out.

9. I.e., of two or eight marriages. The Wife is refer-

4. Cana, a town in Galilee where Christ attended ring to successive rather than simultaneous mar- a wedding and turned water into wine (see John riages.

2.1).

1. Solomon had seven hundred wives and three

5. Hark also, lo, what a sharp word to the purpose. hundred concubines (1 Kings 11.3).

6. Christ was actually referring to a sixth man,

2. I.e., so happy was he with life.

with whom the Samaritan woman was living but to

3. Whom I have cleaned out of everything worth-

whom she was not married (cf. John 4.16—19).

while.

7. I.e., increase (see Genesis 1.28).

4. Of their lower purse (i.e., testicles) and their

8. Both the Hebrew and Christian Scriptures

money box.

explain marriage as a union between husband and

5. Practical experiences in various works.

wife that requires the man to leave his parents to

THE WIFE OF BATH 'S PROLOGUE AND TA

LE / 4 1

Maken the werkman parfit sikerly:0

certainly

Of five housbondes scoleying0 am I.

learning

Welcome the sixte whan that evere he shal!6

For sith I wol nat kepe me chast in al,

Whan my housbonde is fro the world agoon,7

Som Cristen man shal wedde me anoon.0

right away

For thanne th' Apostle0 saith that I am free

St. Paul

To wedde, a Goddes half, where it liketh me.8

He saide that to be wedded is no sinne:

Bet is to be wedded than to brinne.⁹

What rekketh me¹ though folk saye vilainye

Of shrewed Lamech² and his bigamye?

I woot wel Abraham was an holy man,

And Jacob eek, as fer as evere I can,^o

know

And eech of hem hadde wives mo than two,

And many another holy man also.

Where can ye saye in any manere age

That hye God defended⁰ mariage

prohibited

By expres word? I praye you, telleth me.

Or where comanded he virginitee?

I woot as wel as ye, it is no drede,^o

doubt

Th' Apostle, whan he speketh of maidenhede,⁰

virginity

He saide that precept⁰ therof hadde he noon:

command

Men may conseile a womman to be oon,^o

single

But conseiling nis^o no comandement.

is not

He putte it in oure owene juggement.

For hadde God comanded maidenhede,

Thanne hadde he dampned wedding with the deede;

And certes, if there were no seed ysowe,

Virginitee, thanne wherof sholde it growe?

Paul dorste nat comanden at the leeste
A thing of which his maister yaf^o no heeste.0

gave / command

The dart⁴ is set up for virginitee:

Cacche whoso may, who renneth^o best lat see.

But this word is nought take of every wight,⁵

But ther as⁶ God list^o yive it of his might.

it pleases

I woot wel that th' Apostle was a maide,^o

virgin

But natheless, though that he wroot and saide

He wolde that every wight were swich^o as he,

such

Al nis but conseil to virginitee;

And for to been a wif he yaf^o me leve

gave

Of indulgence; so nis it no repreve^o

disgrace

To wedde me⁷ if that my make^o die,

mate

Withouten excepcion of bigamye⁸—

6. Number six will be welcome when he comes

3. I.e., then at the same time he condemned
along.

(“dampned”) weddings.

7. I.e., when my husband has passed away.

4. I.e., prize in a race.

8. To wed, on God's behalf, as I please.

5. I.e., this word is not applicable to every person.

9. “It is better to marry than to burn” (1 Corin-

6. *There as*: where.

thians 7.9). Many of the Wife’s citations of St. Paul

7. For me to marry.

are from this chapter.

8. I.e., as long as there is not a legal objection to

1. What do I care.

the “bigamy,” here understood as occurring when

2. The first man whom the Bible (Genesis 4.19—

a widow remarries (in contrast to the meaning at

24) mentions as having two wives at once (bigamy).

line 60).

Shrewed: cursed.

42 / G E O F F R E Y C H A U C E R

Al° were it good no womman for to touche⁹ *although*

(He mente as in his bed or in his couche,

For peril is bothe fir° and tow° t’assemble— *fire/flax*

Ye knowe what this ensample may resemble).¹

This al and som,² he heeld virginitee

More parfit than wedding in freletee.⁰ *frailty*

(Freletee clepe I but if that³ he and she

Wolde leden al hir lif in chastitee.)

I graunte it wel, I have noon envye° *hard feelings*

Though maidenhede preferre⁰ bigamye. *surpass*

It liketh hem to be clene in body and gost.° *spirit*

Of myn estaat ne wol I make no boost;

For wel ye knowe, a lord in his houshold

Ne hath nat every vessel al of gold:
Some been of tree,⁰ and doon hir lord servise. *wood*
God clepeth⁰ folk to him in sondry wise, *calls*
And everich hath of God a propre⁴ yifte,
Som this, som that, as him liketh shifte:⁰ *ordain*
Virginitee is greet perfeccioun,
And continence eek with devocioun,⁵
But Crist, that of perfeccion is welle,^o *source*
Bad nat every wight he sholde go selle
Al that he hadde and yive it to the poore,
And in swich wise folwe him and his fore:⁶
He spak to hem that wolde live parfitly⁰— *perfectly*
And lordinges, by youre leve, that am nat I.
I wol bistowe the flour of al myn age
In th'actes and in fruit of mariage.
Telle me also, to what conclusioun⁰ *end*
Were membres maad of generacioun
And of so parfit wis a wrighte ywrought?⁷
Trusteth right wel, they were nat maad for nought.
Glose^o whoso wol, and saye bothe up and down *interpret*
That they were maked for purgacioun
Of urine, and oure bothe thinges smale
Was eek^o to knowe a femele from a male, *also*
And for noon other cause—saye ye no?
Th'experience woot it is nought so.
So that the clerkes be nat with me wrothe,⁰ *angry*
I saye this, that they been maad for bothe—
That is to sayn, for office⁰ and for ese^o *use/pleasure*

Of engendrure,0 ther we nat God displese. *procreation*

Why sholde men elles in hir bookes sette

That man shal yeelde0 to his wif hir dette?° *pay / (marital)*
debt

Now wherwith sholde he make his payement

If he ne used his sely° instrument? *innocent*

9. “It is good for a man not to touch a woman” (1
unmarried persons and “contenance” for husbands
Corinthians 7.1).

and wives.

1. I.e., what this metaphor may refer to.

6. Footsteps. In Matthew 19.21, Christ tells a rich

2. This is all there is to it.

man to give up his wealth if he wishes to gain

3. Frailty I call it unless.

riches in heaven.

4. I.e., his or her own.

7. And made by so perfectly wise a maker.

5. The Wife distinguishes between “virginitie” for

THE WIFE OF BATH ‘SPROLOGUE AND TALE / 43

T h a n n e w e r e t h e y m a a d u p o n a c r e a t u r e

T o p u r g e u r i n e , a n d e e k f o r e n g e n d r u r e .

B u t I s a y e n o u g h t t h a t e v e r y w i g h t i s h o l d e , °
bound

T h a t h a t s w i c h h a r n e i s 0 a s I t o y o u t o l d e ,
equipment

T o g o o n a n d u s e n h e m i n e n g e n d r u r e :

**T h a n n e s h o l d e m e n t a k e o f c h a s t i t e e n o c u r e
. 0**

heed

C r i s t w a s a m a i d e ° a n d s h a p e n a s a m a n ,

virgin

A n d m a n y a s a i n t s i t h t h e w o r l d b i g a n ,

Y i t l i v e d t h e y e v e r e i n p a r f i t c h a s t i t e e .

I n i l ° e n v y e n o v i r g i n i t e e :

will not

L a t h e m b e b r e e d 0 o f p u r e d ° w h e t e s e e d ,

bread / refined

A n d l a t u s w i v e s h o t e ° b a r l y b r e e d —

be called

A n d y i t w i t h b a r l y b r e e d , M a r k t e l l e c a n ,

O u r e L o r d J e s u r e f r e s s h e d m a n y a m a n . 8

I n s w i c h e s t a a t a s G o d h a t h c l e p e d 0 u s

called

I w o l p e r s e v e r e : I n a m n a t p r e c i o u s . 0

careful

I n w i f h o o d w o l I u s e m y n i n s t r u m e n t

A s f r e e l y 0 a s m y M a k e r e h a t h i t s e n t .

generously

I f I b e d a u n g e r o u s , 9 G o d y i v e m e s o r w e :

**M y n h o u s b o n d e s h a l i t h a n b o t h e v e a n d m o r
w e , °**

morning

W h a n t h a t h i m l i s t 1 c o m e f o r t h a n d p a y e h i s d e t t e .

A n h o u s b o n d e w o l I h a v e , I w o l n a t l e t t e , °

leave off, stop

Which shall be both my detour 0 and my thral,
o

debtor / slave

And have his tribulation withal 0

as well

Upon his flesh whil that I am his wif.

I have the power during al my lif

Upon his propre body, and nat he:2

Right thus th' Apostle tolde it unto me,

And bad our hous bondes for to love us weel.

Al this sentence 0 me liketh everydeel. 0 *opinion /
entirely*

[AN INTERLUDE]

Up sterte 0 the Pardonere and that a noon: *started*
170 "Now dame," quod he, "by God and by Sain
nt John, Ye been a noble prechour in this cas.

I was a bouete to wedde a wif: alias,

What 0 shold I bye^o it on my flesh so dere? *why /
purchase* Yit hadde I levere 0 wedde now i ftoyere, "0
rather / this year 175 "Abid," quod she, "my tale is nat b
i gone.

Nay, thou shalt drinke of another tonne, 0
tun, barrel Er^o that I go, shal savoure worst than ale.
before And whan that I have told thee forth my
tale

Of tribulation in mariage,

180 Of which I am expert in al myn age —

This is to saye, myself hath been the whippe
—

Thanne maistouchese 0 whether thou wol
tsippe *choose* 8. In the descriptions of the miracle of the
loaves

not withhold sexual favors, in emulation of God's and fishes, it is actually John, not Mark, who men- generosity (line 156).

tions barley bread (6.9).

1. When he wishes her to.

9. In the vocabulary of romance, *dangerous* refers

2. I.e., as long as I am alive, he does not even con- to the disdainfulness with which a highborn trol his body.

woman rejects a lover. The Wife means she will

44 / G E O F F R E Y C H A U C E R

Of thilke0 tonne that I shal abroche;0

this same / o-pen

Be war of it, er thou too neigh0 approche,

For I shal telle ensamples mo than ten.

'Whoso that niP be war by othere men,

will not

By him shal othere men corrected be.'

This same wordes writeth Ptolomee:

Rede in his *Almageste* and take it there."3

"Dame, I wolde praye you if youre wil it were,'

Saide this Pardoner, "as ye bigan,

Telle forth youre tale; spareth for no man,

And teche us yonge men of youre practike."0

mode of operation

"Gladly," quod she, "sith it may you like;0

please

But that I praye to al this compaignye,

If that I speke after my fantasye,⁴
As taketh nat agrief⁰ of that I saye,
For myn entente nis but for to playe.”

[T H E W I F E C O N T I N U E S]

Now sire, thanne wol I telle you forth my tale.

As evere mote I drinke win or ale,
I shal saye sooth: tho^o housbondes that I hadde,
those

As three of hem were goode, and two were badde.

The three men were goode, and riche, and olde;

Unnethe⁰ mighte they the statut holde
scarcely

In which they were bounden unto me—

Ye woot wel what I mene of this, pardee.⁰
by God

As help me God, I laughe whan I thinke
How pitously anight I made hem swinke⁰
work

And by my fay,^o I tolde of it no stoor:⁵
faith

They hadde me yiven hir land and hir tresor;

Me needed nat do lenger diligence⁶

To winne hir love or doon hem reverence.

They loved me so wel, by God above,

That I ne tolde no daintee of⁷ hir love.

A wis womman wol bisye hire evere in oon⁸

To gete hire love, ye, ther as she hatch noon.

But sith I hadde hem hoolly in myn hand,

And sith that they hadde yiven me al hir land,
What⁰ sholde I take keep⁰ hem for to plese,
why / care

But it were for my profit and myn ese?
I sette hem so awerke,⁰ by my fay,
awork

That many a night they songen⁰ wailaway.
sang

The bacon was nat fet^o for hem, I trowe,
brought back

That some men han in Essex at Dunmowe.⁹
I governed hem so wel after⁰ my lawe
according to

3. "He who will not be warned by the example of
ther effort.

others shall become an example to others." The

7. Set no value on.

Wife wrongly attributes this proverb to the *Alma-*

8. I.e., be busy constantly

gest, an astronomical work by the second-century

9. At Dunmow, a side of bacon was awarded to

Greek astronomer and mathematician Ptolemy.

the couple who after a year of marriage could claim

4. If I speak according to my fancy.

no quarrels, no regrets, and the desire, if freed, to

5. I set no store by it.

remarry one another.

6. I.e., there was no need for me to make any fur-

THE WIFE OF BATH 'S PROLOGUE AND TALE
E / 45

That eech of hem ful blisful was and fawe° *glad*
To bringe me gaye thinges fro the faire;
They were ful glade whan I spak hem faire,
For God it woot, I chidde0 hem spitously.0 *chided I cruelly*
230 Now herkneth how I bar me1 proprely:
Ye wise wives, that conne understonde,
Thus sholde ye speke and bere him wrong on honde2—
For half so boldely can ther no man
Swere and lie as a woman can.
235 I saye nat this by wives that been wise,
But if it be whan they hem misavise,3
A wis wif, if that she can hir good,4
Shal bere him on hande the cow is wood,5
And take witesse of hir owene maide
240 Of hir assent.6 But herkneth how I saide:
“Sire olde cainard, is this thyn array?7
Why is my neighebores wif so gay?
She is honoured overaF ther she gooth: *wherever*
I sitte at hoom; I have no thrifty0 cloth. *decent*
245 What doostou at my neighebores hous?
Is she so fair? Artou so amorous?
What roun° ye with oure maide, benedicite?0 *whisper / bless*
ye
Sire olde lechour, lat thy japes0 be. *tricks, intrigues*
And if I have a gossib0 or a freend *confidant*
250 Withouten gilt, ye chiden as a feend,
If that I walke or playe unto his hous.

Thou comest hoom as dronken as a mous,
 And prechest on thy bench, with yvel preef.⁸
 Thou saist to me, it is a greet meschief⁰ *misfortune*
 255 To wedde a poore womman for costage.⁹
 And if that she be riche, of heigh parage,⁰ *descent*
 Thanne saistou that it is a tormentrye
 To suffre hir pride and hir malencolye,⁰ *bad mood*
 And if that she be fair, thou verray knave,
 260 Thou saist that every holour⁰ wol hire have: *lecher*
 She may no while in chastitee abide
 That is assailed upon eech a side.
 “Thou saist som folk desiren us for richesse,
 Som¹ for oure shap, and som for oure fairnesse,
 265 And som for she can outhere⁰ singe or daunce, *either*
 And som for gentillesse and daliaunce,⁰ *flirtatiousness*
 Som for hir handes and hir armes smale^o— *slender*
 Thus gooth al to the devel by thy tale!²
 Thou saist men may nat keepe³ a castel wal,
 270 It may so longe assailed been overal.⁰ *everywhere*
 And if that she be foul,^o thou saist that she *ugly*

1. *Bar me*: behaved. side.

2. I.e., accuse him falsely. 7. I.e., sir old sluggard, is this how you behave?

3. Unless it happens that they make a mistake. 8. I.e., (may you have) bad luck.

4. If she knows what’s good for her. 9. Because of the expense.

5. Shall persuade him the chough has gone crazy. 1. In this and the following lines, meaning “one.”

The chough, a talking bird, was said to tell hus- 2. I.e., according to your story.

bands of their wives' infidelity. 3. I.e., keep safe.

6. And call as a witness her maid, who is on her

1 1 0 / G E O F F R E Y C H A U C E R

Coveiteth0 every man that she may see;

desires

For as a spaniel she wol on him lepe,

Til that she finde som man hire to chepe.°

bargain for

Ne noon so grey goos gooth ther in the lake,

As, saistou, wol be withoute make;0

mate

And saist it is an hard thing for to weelde0

possess

A thing that no man wol, his thanks, heelde.4

Thus saistou, lorel,° whan thou goost to bedde,

wretch

And that no wis man needeth for to wedde,

Ne no man that entendeth0 unto hevene—

With wilde thonder-dint° and firy levene0

thunderbolt / lightning

Mote thy welked nekke be tobroke!5

Thou saist that dropping0 houses and eek smoke

leaking

And chiding wives maken men to flee

Out of hir owene hous: a, benedicite,6

What aileth swich an old man for to chide?

Thou saist we wives wil oure vices hide
Til we be fast,⁷ and thanne we wol hem shewe—
Wel may that be a proverbe of a shrewe!⁸

Thou saist that oxen, asses, hors,^o and houndes,
horses

They been assayed⁰ at diverse stoundes⁰
tried out / times

Bacins, lavours,⁰ er that men hem bye;^o
washbowls / buy

Spoons, stooles, and al swich housbondrye,⁰
household goods

And so be^o pottes, clothes, and array⁰—
are / clothing

But folk of wives maken noon assay
Til they be wedded—olde dotard shrewe!
And thanne, saistou, we wil oure vices shewe.

Thou saist also that it displeseth me
But if⁹ that thou wolt praise my beautee,
And but thou poure⁰ alway upon my face,
gaze

And clepe me ‘Faire Dame’ in every place,
And but thou make a feeste on tilke day
That I was born, and make me fressh and gay,
And but thou do to my norice⁰ honour,
And to my chamberere within my bowr,¹
And to my fadres folk, and his allies⁰—
Thus saistou, olde barel-ful of lies.

relatives by marriage

And yit of our apprentice Janekin,
For his crispe⁰ heer, shining as gold so fin,
And for
curly
O he squiereth me bothe up and down,
Yit hastou caught a fals suspeciou;
because
I wil^o him nat though thou were deed⁰ tomorwe.

want/dead

“But tel me this, why hidestou with sorwe⁰

sorrow

The keyes of thy cheste⁰ away fro me?

money box

It is my good⁰ as wel as thyn, pardee.⁰

property / by God

What, weenestou⁰ make an idiot of oure dame?²

do you think to

Now by that lord that called is Saint Jame,
Thou shalt nought bothe, though thou were wood,
furious

. No man would willingly hold.

person” (see line 361), but by Chaucer’s time it

. May your withered neck be broken!

could also signify a “scolding wife.”

. Oh, blessings upon you. The Wife appropriates

9. *But if*: unless.

Latin phrase used by priests in the Mass.

1. And to my chambermaid within my bedroom.

. I.e., married.

2. I.e., me, the mistress of the house.

. The word initially meant “rascal” or “malignant

THE WIFE OF BATH ‘SPROLOGUE AND TALE / 47

Be maister of my body and of my good:

That oon thou shalt forgo, maugree thine yen.³

“What helpeth it of me enquire⁰ and spyen?

inquire

I trowe thou woldest loke^o me in thy cheste.

lock

Thou sholdest saye, ‘Wif, go wher thee leste.^o

it may please

Taak youre disport.⁴ I nil leve^o no tales:

believe

I lknowe you for a tre we wif, dame Alis.’

We love no man that taketh keep⁰ or charge⁰

notice / interest

Wher that we goon: we wol been at oure large.⁵

Of alle men yblessed mote he be

The wise astrologen⁰ daun Ptolomee,

astronomer

That saith this proverbe in his *Almageste*:

‘Of alle men his wisdom is the hyeste

That rekketh nat who hath the world in honde.⁶

By this proverbe thou shalt understonde,

Have thou⁷ ynough, what thar^o thee rekke or care

need

How merily that othere folkes fare?
For certes, olde dotard, by youre leve,
Ye shal han queinte⁸ right ynough at eve:

He is too greet a nigard that wil werne^o
refuse

A man to lighte a candle at his lanterne;
He shal han nevere the lasse^o lighte, pardee.

less

Have thou ynough, thee thar nat plaine thee.⁹

“Thou saist also that if we make us gay
With clothing and with precious array,
That it is peril of oure chastitee,
And yit, with sorwe, thou moste enforce thee,¹
And saye these wordes in th’Apostles⁰ name:

St. Paul’s

‘In habit⁰ maad with chastitee and shame
clothing

Ye wommen shal appaile you,’ quod he,
‘And nat in tressed heer and gay perree,²
As perles, ne with gold ne clothes riche.³

After thy text, ne after thy rubriche,⁴

I wol nat werke as muchel as a gnat.

Thou saidest this, that I was lik a cat:

For whoso wolde senge⁰ a cattes skin,

singe

Thanne wolde the cat wel dwellen in his in;^o

lodging

And if the cattes skin be slik^o and gay,

sleek

She wol nat dwelle in house half a day,
But forth she wol, er any day be^o dawed,^o

has / dawned

To shewe her skin and goon a-caterwawed.^o

caterwauling

This is to saye, if I be gay, sire shrewe,
I wol renne^o out, my bore^F for to shewe.

run / clothing

Sir olde fool, what helpeth^o thee t'espyn?

does it help

Though thou praye Argus with his hundred yen⁵

3. Despite your eyes, i.e., despite anything you can

9. I.e., you need not complain.

do about it.

1. Strengthen your position.

4. Enjoy yourself.

2. I.e., not in elaborate hairdo and gay jewelry.

5. I.e., liberty.

3. See St. Paul's prescriptions for modest female

6. That cares not who rules the world.

dress and behavior, in 1 Timothy 2.9.

7. If you have.

4. Rubric, i.e., direction.

8. Elegant, pleasing thing (from the Old French

5. In Roman mythology, Argus was a monster sent

adjective *coint*); also *cunt*, as Chaucer uses it in

by the goddess Juno to watch over one of Jupiter's

line 90 of the Miller's tale: "Prively he caught hir
(her husband's) mistresses. The god Mercury put
by the queynte."

all of Argus's hundred eyes to sleep and killed him.

48 / G E O F F R E Y C H A U C E R

To be my wardecors,⁰ as he can best, *bodyguard*

In faith, he shal nat keepe me but me lest:⁶

Yit coude I make his beard,⁷ so mote I thee.^o *prosper*

"Thou saigest eek that ther been thinges three,

The whiche thinges troublen al this erthe,

And that no wight may endure the ferthe.^o *fourth*

O leve⁰ sire shrewe, Jesu shorte^o thy lif! *dear /shorten*

Yit prechestou and saist an hateful wif

Yrekened⁰ is for oon of these meschaunces.⁸ *is counted*

Been ther nat none othere resemblaunces

That ye may lilcne youre parables to,⁹

But if a sely¹ wif be oon of tho?

"Thou liknest eek wommanes love to helle,

To bareine⁰ land ther water may nat dwelle; *barren*

Thou liknest it also to wilde fir—

The more it brenneth,⁰ the more it hath desir *burns*

To consumen every thing that brent⁰ wol be; *burned*

Thou saist right⁰ as wormes shende^o a tree, *just/destroy*

Right so a wif destroyeth hir housbonde—

This knowen they that been to wives bonde."^o *bound*

Lordinges, right thus, as ye hand understonde,

Bar I stifly mine olde housbondes on honde²

That thus they saiden in hir dronkenesse—

And al was fals, but that I took witesse
 On Janekin and on my nece also.
 0 Lord, the paine I dide hem and the wo,
 Ful giltelees, by Goddes sweete pine!³
 For as an hors I coude bite and whine;⁰ *-whinny*
 1 coude plaine and I was in the gilt,⁴
 Or elles often time I hadde been spilt.⁰ *ruined*
 Whoso that first to mille comth first grint.^o *grinds*
 I plained first: so was oure werre stint.⁵
 They were ful glade to excusen hem ful blive^o *quickly*
 Of thing of which they nevere agilte hir live.⁶
 Of wenchis wolde I beren hem on honde,⁷
 Whan that for sik⁸ they mighte unnethe⁰ stonde, *scarcely*
 Yit tikled I his herte for that he
 Wende^o I hadde had of him so greet cheertee.⁰ *thought*
/affection
 I swoor that al my walking out by nighte
 Was for to espye wenchis that he dighte.⁰ *had intercourse -*
with
 Under that colour⁹ hadde I many a mirthe.
 For al swich wit is yiven us in oure birthe:
 Deceite, weeping, spinning God hath yive
 To wommen kindely⁰ whil they may live. *naturally*
 And thus of oo thing I avaunte me: 1
 6. Guard me unless I please.
 because of the happiness that resulted from it.
 7. I.e., yet could I deceive him.
 4. I could complain if I was in the wrong.
 8. For the other three misfortunes, see Proverbs

5. So was our war ended.

30.21-23.

6. Of which they were never guilty in their lives.

9. Are there no other (appropriate) similitudes to

7. Falsely accuse them.

which you might draw analogies.

8. I.e., sickness.

1. *But if a seely*: unless an innocent.

9. I.e., pretense.

2. I rigorously accused my husbands.

1. *Avaunt me*: boast.

3. Christ's suffering ("pine") is called *sweet*

THE WIFE OF BATH 'S PROLOGUE AND TALE / 49

At ende I hadde the bet^o in eech degree,

better

By sleighte or force, or by som manere thing,

As by continuel murmur^o or grucching;^o

complaint /grumbling

Namely^o abedde hadden they meschaunce:

especially

Ther wolde I chide and do hem no plesaunce;²

I wolde no lenger in the bed abide

If that I felte his arm over my side,

Til he hadde maad his raunson^o unto me;

ransom

Thanne wolde I suffre him do his nicetee.^o

foolishness (sex)

And therefore every man this tale I telle:
Winne whoso may, for al is for to selle;
With empty hand men may no hawkes lure.

For winning⁰ wolde I al his lust endure,
profit

And make me a feined^o appetit—
pretended

And yit in bacon³ hadde I nevere delit.
That made me that evere I wolde hem chide;
For though the Pope hadde seten^o hem biside,
sat

I wolde nought spare hem at hir owene boord.^o
table

For by my trouthe, I quitte⁰ hem word for word.
repaid

As help me verray God omnipotent,
Though I right now sholde make my testament,
I ne owe hem nat a word that it nis quit.⁴

I broughte it so aboute by my wit
That they moste yive it up as for the beste,
Or elles hadde we nevere been in reste;
For though he looked as a wood⁰ leoun,^o

furious / lion

Yit sholde he faile of his conclusioun.⁰
object

Thanne wolde I saye, “Goodelief, taak keep,⁵
How mekely looketh Wilekin,⁰oure sheep!

Willie

Com neer my spouse, lat, me ba^o thy cheeke—

kiss

Ye sholden be al pacient and meeke, •

And han a sweete-spiced^o conscience,

mild

Sith ye so preche of Jobes pacience;

Suffreth alway, sin ye so wel can preche;

And but ye do, certain, we shal you teche

That it is fair to han a wif in pees.^o

peace

Oon of us two moste bowen, doutelees,

And sith a man is more resonable

Than womman is, ye mosten been suffrable.^o

patient

What aileth you to grucche^o thus and grone?

grumble

Is it for ye wolde have my queinte^o allone?

sexual organ

Why, taak it al—lo, have it everydeel.^o

all of it

Peter, I shrewe you but ye⁶ love it weel.

For if I wolde selle my bele chose,⁷

I coude walke as fressh as is a rose;

But I wol keepe it for youre owene tooth.^o

taste

Ye be to blame. By God, I saye you sooth!“^o

the truth

Swiche manere^o wordes hadde we on honde.

kind of

2. Give them no pleasure.

5. Good friend, take notice.

3. I.e., old meat.

6. By St. Peter, I curse you if you don't.

4. I don't owe them (my husbands) one word that

7. Beautiful thing (French); a euphemism for

I haven't (re)paid; or, I gave as good as I got!

female genitals.

50 / G E O F F R E Y C H A U C E R

Now wol I speke of my ferthe⁰ housbonde. *fourth*

My ferthe housbonde was a revelour⁰ *reveler*

This is to sayn, he hadde a paramour⁰ *mistress*

And I was yong and ful of ragerye,⁰

passion

Stibourne⁰ and strong and joly as a pie:^o

untamable / magpie

How coude I daunce to an harpe smale,^o

gracefully

And singe, ywis,^o as any nightingale,

indeed

Whan I hadde dronke a draughte of sweete win.

Metellius,⁸ the foule cherl, the swin,

That with a staf birafte⁰ his wif hir lif

deprived

For^o she drank win, though I hadde been his wif,

because

Ne sholde nat han daunted⁰ me fro drinke,

frightened

And after win on Venus moste° I thinke,

must

For also siker° as cold engendreth hail,

sure

A likerous0 mouth moste han a likerous0 tail:

greedy / lecherous

In womman vinolent0 is no defence—

who drinks

This knowen leohours by experience.

But Lord Crist, whan that it remembreth me9

Upon my youthe and on my jolitee,

It tikleth me aboute myn herte roote—

Unto this day it dooth myn herte boote°

That I have had my world as in my time.

But age, alias, that al wol envenime,0

poison

Hath me biraft my beautee and my pith1—

Lat go, farewell, the devel go therwith!

The flour is goon, ther is namore to telle:

The bren° as I best can now moste I selle;

bran

But yit to be right merye wol I fonde.°

strive

Now wol I tellen of my ferthe housbonde.

I saye I hadde in herte greet despit

That he of any other hadde delit,

But he was quit,0 by God and by Saint Joce:

paid back

I made him of the same wode a croce²—
Nat of my body in no foul manere—
But, certainly, I made folk swich cheere³
That in his owene grece I made him frye,⁴
For angre and for verray jalousye.
By God, in erthe I was his purgatorye,
For which I hope his soule be in glorye.⁵
For God it woot, he sat ful ofte and soong⁰ *sang*
Whan that his sho ful bitterly him wroong.⁰ *pinched*
Ther was no wight save God and he that wiste^o *knew*
In many wise how sore I him twiste.
He deide whan I cam fro Jerusalem,
And lith ygrave under the roode-beem,⁶
Al^o is his tombe nought SO curious *although/ carefully*
wrought

8. Egnatius Metellius, a Roman whose story is told

3. I.e., pretended to be in love with others.

by the writer Valerius Maximus (ca. 20 **B.C.E.**—ca.

4. I.e., I made him stew in his own juice.

5 0 C . E .) .

5. I.e., I provided so much suffering on Earth for

9. When I look back.

my husband that his enjoyment of celestial bliss

1. I.e., age has taken away from me (“biraft”) my
was assured.

beauty and my vigor (“pith”).

6. I.e., and lies buried under the rood beam (the

2. I made him a cross of the same wood. This prov-
crucifix beam running between nave and chancel).

erb anticipates the one quoted in line 493.

THE WIFE OF BATH 'S PROLOGUE AND TA
LE / 51

As was the sepulcre of him Darius,

Which that Apelles wroughte subtilly:7

It nis but wast to burye him preciously.0

expensively

Lat him fare wel, God yive his soule reste;

He is now in his grave and in his cheste.°

coffin

Now of my fifthe housbonde wol I telle—

God lete his soule nevere come in helle—

And yit he was to me the moste0 shrewe:0

worst / rascal

That feele I on my ribbes al° by° rewe,°

in! a! row

And evere shal unto myn ending day.

But in oure bed he was so fressh and gay,

And therwithal so wel coulde he me glose°

flatter, coax

Whan that he wolde han my bele chose,

That though he hadde me bet° on every boon,0

beaten / bone

He coude winne again my love anon.0

immediately

I trowe I loved him best for that he

Was of his love daungerous to me.⁸

We wommen han, if that I shal nat lie,

In this matere a quainte⁰ fantasye:⁰

strange / fancy

Waite what⁹ thing we may nat lightly⁰ have,

iily

Therafter wol we crye al day and crave;

Forbede us thing, and that desiren we;

Preesse on us faste, and thanne wol we flee.

With daunger oute we al oure chaffare:¹

Greet prees^o at market maketh dere^o ware,

crowd / expensive

And too greet chepe is holden at litel pris.²

This knoweth every womman that is wis.

My fifthe housbonde—God his soule blesse!—

Which that I took for love and no richesse,

He somtime was a clerk at Oxenforde,

And hadde laft^o scole and wente at hoom to boorde

left

With my gossib,⁰ dwelling in oure town

confidante

God have hir soule!—hir name was Alisoun;

She knew myn herte and eek my privetee⁰

Bet than oure parissch preest, as mote I thee.³

To hire biwrayed⁰ I my conseiP al,

disclosed / secrets

For hadde myn housbonde pissed on a wal,

Or doon a thing that sholde han cost his lif,

To hire,0 and to another worthy wif,

her

And to my nece which I loved weel,

I wolde han told his conseil everydeel;0

entirely

And so I dide ful often, God it woot,°

knew

That made his face often reed° and hoot0

red / hot

For verray shame, and blamed himself for he

Hadde told to me so greet a privetee.

And so bifel that ones0 in a Lente—

So often times I to my gossib wente,

For evere yit I loved to be gay,

7. According to medieval legend, the artist Apelles
chandise.

decorated the tomb of Darius, king of the Persians.

2. Too good a bargain is held at little value.

8. I.e., he played hard to get.

3. The Wife's friend knew more of her secrets than

9. *Waite what*: whatever.

did her official confessor. *Bet*: better. As *mote I*

1. (Meeting) with reserve, we spread out our mer-
thee: as may I prosper (oath).

52 / G E O F F R E Y C H A U C E R

And for to walke in March, Averil, and May,

From hous to hous, to heere sondry tales—

That Janekin clerk and my gossib dame Alis

And I myself into the feeldes wente.
Myn housbonde was at London al that Lente:
I hadde the better leiser⁰ for to playe,
leisure
And for to see, and eek for to be seye^o
seen
Of lusty folk—what wiste I wher my grace⁴
Was shapen⁰ for to be, or in what place?
destined
Therefore I made my visitaciouns
To vigilies⁵ and to processiouns,
To preching eek, and to thise pilgrimages,
To playes of miracles⁶ and to mariages,
And wered upon⁷ my gaye scarlet gites⁰—
gowns
Thise wormes ne thise motthes ne thise mites,
Upon my peril, frete hem reveradeel:⁸
And woostou why? For they were used weel.
Now wol I tellen forth what happed me.
I saye that in the feeldes walked we,
Til trewely we hadde swich daliaunce,⁰
flirtation
This clerk and I, that of my purveyaunce⁰
foresight
I spak to him and saide him how that he,
If I were widwe, sholde wedde me.
For certainly, I saye for no bobaunce,⁰
hoast

Yit was I nevere withouten purveyaunce
Of mariage n' of othere thinges eek.
I holde a mouses herte nought worth a leek
That hath but oon hole for to sterte⁰ to,
And if that faile thanne is al ydo.⁹
I bar him on hand¹ he hadde enchanted me
(My dame^o taughte me that subtiltee);
mother
And eek I saide I mette⁰ of him al night;
dreamed
He wolde han slain me as I lay upright,⁰
on my hack
And al my bed was ful of verray blood—
“But yit I hope that ye shul do me good;
For blood bitokeneth gold² as me was taught.”
And al was fals, I dremed of it right naught,³
But as I folwed ay my dames⁰ lore⁰
mother's / teaching
As wel of that as othere thinges more.
But now sire—lat me see, what shal I sayn?
Aha, by God, I have my tale again.
Whan that my ferthe housbonde was on beere,^c
funeral bier
I weep,⁰ algate,⁰ and made sory cheere,
wept/anyhow
As wives moten,⁰ for it is usage,⁰
must / custom
And with my coverchief covered my visage;⁰

face

4. I.e., how would I know where my favor was desired all (*freten*: to consume); so she swears, ironically, fated to be bestowed? *Grace*: luck.

on her peril, i.e., at risk of being damned.

5. Evening services before religious holidays.

9. I.e., the game is up.

6. Plays dealing with the lives of saints or martyrs

1. I pretended that.

that were performed in various English towns.

2. Because both are red. Chaucer, like Shake-

7. *Wered upon*: wore.

spere, frequently relates the two through their

8. I.e., when attending various religious events, common color.

the Wife wore worldly (gay, scarlet) clothes that

3. I never dreamed of it at all.

neither worms, nor moths, nor mites devoured at

THE WIFE OF BATH 'S PROLOGUE AND TALE / 53

But for I was purveyed of a make.

/ mate

I wepte but smale, and that I undertake.

guarantee

To chirche was myn housbonde born amorwe;

With neighebores that for him maden sorwe,

And Janekin oure clerk was oon of tho.

As help me God, whan that I saw him go

After the beere, me thoughte he hadde a paire
Of legges and of feet so clene⁰ and faire,

neat

That al myn herte I yaf unto his hold.⁰

possession

He was, I trowe,⁰ twenty winter old,

believe

And I was fourty, if I shal saye sooth—

But yit I hadde alway a coltes tooth:⁵

Gat-toothed was I,⁶ and that bicam me weel:

I hadde the prente of Sainte Venus seel.⁷

As help me God, I was a lusty oon,

And fair and riche and yong and wel-bigoon,^o

well-situated

And trewely, as mine housbondes tolde me,

I hadde the beste quoniam⁸ mighte be.

For certes I am al Venerien

In feeling, and myn herte is Marcien:⁹

Venus me yaf^o my lust, my likerousnesse,⁰

gave / amorousness

And Mars yaf me my sturdy hardinesse,

Myn ascendent was Taur¹ and Mars therinne—

Alias, alias, that evere love was sinne!²

I folwed ay^o my inclinacioun

By vertu of my constellacioun;³

That made me I coude nought withdrawe

My chambre of Venus from a good felawe.

Yit have I Martes⁰ merk upon my face,

Mars's

And also in another privee place.⁴

For God so wis^o be my savacioun,⁰

surely / salvation

I loved nevere by no discrecioun,⁰

moderation

But evere folwede myn appetit,

Al were he short or long or blak or whit;

I took no keep,⁰ so that he liked⁰ me,

How poore he was, ne eek of what degree.

heed / pleased

What sholde I saye but at the monthes ende

This joly clerk Janekin that was so hende⁰

courteous, nice

Hath wedded me with greet solempnitee,⁰

splendor

And to him yaf I al the land and fee⁰

property

That evere was me given therbifore—

But afterward repented me ful sore:

He nolde suffre no thing of my list.⁵

By God, he smoot^o me ones on the list⁰

struck / ear

4. Carried (on his bier) in the morning.

sign in which Venus is dominant.

5. I.e., youthful appetites.

2. I.e., alas that theologians and others view pas-

6. Gap-toothed women were thought to be lustful.

sionate love as sinful.

7. I.e., I was lascivious because I had the birth-

3. I.e., I always followed my desires because of my mark (*print*) of Venus's own mark (*seal*).

“nature,” as determined (she claims) by astrology.

8. Because (Latin); another of the Wife's many

4. I.e., I have a reddish birthmark (thought to be terms for female genitals.

a sign of Mars) on my face and also on my “private”

9. Influenced by Mars, Roman god of war; i.e., my parts.

heart is courageous. *Venerien*: influenced by

5. He would not allow me anything of my own

Venus, Roman goddess of love and beauty.

way.

1. My birth sign was the constellation Taurus, a

54 / G E O F F R E Y C H A U C E R

For that I rente0 out of his book a leef,

tore

That of the strook0 myn ere weex° al deef.

blow / grew

Stibourne01 was as is a leonesse,

stubborn

And of my tonge a verray jangleresse,0

chatterbox

And walke I wolde, as I hadde doon biforn,

From hous to hous, although he hadde it6 sworn;

For which he often times wolde preche,

And me of olde Romain geestes⁰ teche,
stories
How he Simplicius Gallus lafte^o his wif,
left
And hire forsook for terme of al his lif,
Nought but for open-heveded he hire sey⁷
Looking out at his dore upon a day.
Another Romain tolde he me by name
That, for his wif was at a someres game⁸
Withouten his witing,^o he forsook hire eke;
And thanne wolde he upon his Bible seeke
That ilke proverbe of Ecclesiaste⁹
Where he comandeth and forbedeth faste^o
strictly
Man shal nat suffre his wif go roule^o aboute;
Thanne wolde he saye right thus withouten doute:
“Whoso that buildeth his hous al of salwes,⁰
willow sticks
And priketh⁰ his blinde hors over the falwes,⁰
spurs / plowed land
And suffreth⁰ his wif to go seeken halwes,⁰
allows / shrines
Is worthy to be hanged on the galwes,⁰
gallows
But al for nought—I sette nought an hawe¹
Of his proverbes n’ of his olde sawe;
N’ I wolde nat of him corrected be:
I hate him that my vices telleth me,

And so doon mo, God woot, of us than I.²

This made him with me wood al outrelly:

entirely

I nolde nought forbere⁰ him in no cas.

submit to

Now wol I saye you sooth, by Saint Thomas,

Why that I rente⁰ out of his book a leef,

tore

For which he smoot me so that I was deaf.

He hadde a book that gladly night and day

For his disport⁰ he wolde rede alway.

entertainment

He cleped it *Valerie and Theofraste*,³

At which book he lough⁰ alway ful faste;

laughed

And eek ther was somtime a clerk at Rome,

A cardinal,⁴ that highte Saint Jerome,

That made a book again Jovinian;⁵

In which book eek ther was Tertulan,

Crysippus, Trotula, and Helouis,

That was abbesse nat fer fro Paris;⁶

6. I.e., he had forbidden this.

and I'm not the only one, heaven knows.

7. Just because he saw her bareheaded. This story

3. I.e., Walter Map's *Letter of Valerius Concerning*

about Simplicius Gallus comes from the Roman

Not Marrying and Theophrastus's *Book Concern-*

writer Valerius Maximus, as does the story Jankyn

ing Marriage. Medieval manuscripts often con-
told her about “another Roman” (lines 653 ff.).

tained a number of different works, sometimes, as

8. Summer’s game; i.e., sports, bonfires, and
here, dealing with the same subject.

merrymaking, similar to events held in England on

4. Until the late Middle Ages, a term applied to
Midsummer’s Eve.

prominent priests in important churches.

9. Ecclesiasticus (25.25).

5. St. Jerome’s *Against Jovinian* denigrates

1. I did not rate at the value of a hawthorn berry.

women. *Again*: against.

2. I hate anyone who tells me my shortcomings—

6. *Tertulan*: Tertullian, author of treatises on sex-

THE WIFE OF BATH ‘SPROLOGUE AND TALE / 55

And eek the Parables of Salomon

Ovides Art,⁷ and bookes many oon—

And alle thise were bounden in oo volume.

And every night and day was his custume,

Whan he hadde leiser and vacacioun⁰

free time

From other worldly occupacioun,

To reden in this book of wikked wives.

He knew of hem mo legendes and lives

Than been of goode wives in the Bible.

For trusteth wel, it is an impossible⁰

impossibility

That any clerk wol speke good of wives,
But if it be of holy saintes lives,
N'of noon other womman nevere the mo—
Who painted the leon, tel me who?8
By God, if wommen hadden written stories,
As clerkes han within hir oratories,0

chapels

They wolde han writen of men more wikkednesse
Than al the merk° of Adam may redresse.

mark, sex

The children of Mercurye and Venus9
Been in hir werking0 ful contrarious:0

operation / opposed

Mercurye loveth wisdom and science,
And Venus loveth riot° and dispence;0

revelry / spending

And for hir diverse disposicioun
Each falleth in otheres exaltacioun,1
And thus, God woot, Mercurye is desolat
In Pisces wher Venus is exaltat,2
And Venus falleth ther Mercurye is raised:
Therefore no womman of no clerk is praised.
The clerk, whan he is old and may nought do
Of Venus werkes worth his olde sho,°

shoe

Thanne sit° he down and writ0 in his dotage

sits / writes

That wommen can nat keepe hir mariage.
But now to purpose why I tolde thee
That I was beten for a book, pardee:
Upon a night Janekin, that was our⁰ sire,^o
my / husband
Redde on his book as he sat by the fire
Of Eva first, that for hir wikkednesse
Was al mankinde brought to wrecchednesse,
For which that Jesu Crist himself was slain
That boughte⁰ us with his herte blood again—
redeemed
Lo, heer expres of wommen may ye finde
That womman was the los^o of al mankinde.

ruin

Tho^o redde he me how Sampson loste his heres:
then

ual modesty. *Crysippus*: mentioned by Jerome as a
8. In one of Aesop's fables, the lion, shown a pic-
writer who "ridiculed" women. *Trotula*: a female
ture of a man killing a lion, asked who painted the
doctor believed to have written a treatise on
picture. The suggestion is that had the artist been
women's diseases. *Helouis*: Heloise, who wrote
a lion, the roles would have been reversed.
well-known letters to her lover, the great scholar
9. I.e., clerks and women, astrologically ruled by
Abelard. The Wife draws on some of the anti-
Mercury and Venus, respectively.

female Latin texts in Jankyn's book, while resembling Trotula and Heloise in being capable of each one descends (in the belt of the zodiac) as the engaging in learned discourse with clerks.

other rises; hence one loses its power as the other

7. *Art of Love*, by the Roman poet Ovid (43 B.C.E.— becomes dominant.

? 17 C . E .) . *Parables of Salomon*: the biblical book of 2. I.e., Mercury is deprived of power in Pisces (the Proverbs.

sign of the fish), where Venus is most powerful.

56 / G E O F F R E Y C H A U C E R

Sleeping his lemman^o kitte^o it with hir sheres,

lover / cut

Thurgh which treson loste he both his yen.

Tho redde he me, if that I shal nat lien,

Of Ercules and of his Dianire,

That caused him to sette himself afire.³

No thing forgat he the sorwe and wo

That Socrates hadde with his wives two—

How Xantippa caste pisse upon his heed:⁴

This sely^o man sat stille as he were deed;

poor; hapless

He wiped his heed, namore dorste^o he sayn

dared

But “Er that thonder stinte,^o comth a rain.”

stops

Of Pasipha⁵ that was the queene of Crete—
For shrewednesse⁰ him thoughte the tale sweete-
malice

Fy, speek namore, it is a grisly thing
Of hir horrible lust and hir liking.⁰
Of Clytermistra⁶ for hir lecherye
That falsly made hir housbonde for to die,
He redde it with ful good devocioun.
He tolde me eek for what occasioun
Amphiorax⁷ at Thebes loste his lif:
Myn housbonde hadde a legende of his wif
Eriphylem, that for an ouche^o of gold
trinket

Hath prively unto the Greekes told
Wher that hir housbonde hidde him in a place,
For which he hadde at Thebes sory grace.
Of Livia tolde he me and of Lucie:⁸
They bothe made hir housbondes for to die,
That oon for love, that other was for hate;
Livia hir housbonde on an even⁰ late
evening

Empoisoned hath for that she was his fo;
Lucia likerous⁰ loved hir housbonde so
lecherous
That for⁹ he sholde alway upon hire thinke,
She yaf him swich a manere love-drinke
That he was deed er it were by the morwe.¹
And thus algates⁰ housbondes han sorwe.

in every way

Thanne tolde he me how oon Latumius
Complained unto his felawe Arrius
That in his garden growed swich a tree,
On which he saide how that his wives three
Hanged hemself for herte despitous.0

spiteful

“O leve^o brother,” quod this Arrius,

dear

“Yif me a plante of thilke blessed tree,
And in my gardin planted shal it be.”

Of latter date of wives hath he red

3. In Greek mythology, Dejanira unwittingly gave
with her lover, Aegisthus, slew her husband, Aga-
Hercules a poisoned shirt, which hurt him so much
memnon.

that he committed suicide by fire.

7. Amphiaraus, betrayed by his wife, Eriphyle, and

4. From St. Jerome, the Wife borrows a story
forced to go to the war against Thebes.

about the ancient Greek philosopher Socrates

8. I.e., Lucilla, who was said to have poisoned her
having two wives; many other sources relate the
husband, the poet Lucretius, with a potion
story of his patiently enduring the torments of his
designed to keep him faithful. Livia murdered her
shrewish wife, Xantippa.

husband on behalf of her lover, Sejanus.

5. Pasiphae, Greek mythological figure who had

9. In order that.

intercourse with a bull.

1. He was dead before it was near morning.

6. Clytemnestra, Greek mythological figure who,

THE WIFE OF BATH 'S PROLOGUE AND TALE / 57

That some han slain hir housbondes in hir bed

And lete hir lechour dighte⁰ hire al the night,

have intercourse with

Whan that the cors^o lay in the floor upright;⁰

corpse / on his hack

And some han driven nailes in hir brain

Whil that they sleepe, and thus they han hem slain;

Some han hem yiven poison in hir drinke.

He spak more hram than herte may bithinke,⁰

imagine

And therwithal he knew of mo proverbes

Than in this world ther growen gras or herbes:

“Bet^o is,” quod he, “thyn habitacioun

better

Be with a leon or a foul dragoun

Than with a womman using⁰ for to chide.”

accustomed

“Bet is,” quod he, “hye in the roof abide

Than with an angry wif down in the hous:

They been so wikked⁰ and contrarious,

perverse

They ha ten that hir housbondes loveth ay.”

He saide, “A womman cast⁰ hir shame away

When she cast of hir smoke,“² and ferthermo,

“A fair womman, but^o she be chast also,

unless

Is like a gold ring in a sowes nose.“³

Who wolde weene,^o or who wolde suppose

think

The wo that in myn herte was and pine?⁰

suffering

And whan I sawgh he wolde nevere fine⁰

end

To reden on this cursed book al night,

Al sodeinly three leves have I plight⁰

snatched

Out of his book right as he redde, and eke

I with my fist so took⁴ him on the cheeke

That in oure fir he fi^P bakward adown.

fell

And up he sterte as dooth a wood⁰ leoun,

raging

And with his fist he smoot⁰ me on the heed⁰

hit / head

That in the floor I lay as I were deed.⁰

dead

And whan he sawgh how stille that I lay,

He was agast, and wolde have fled his way,

Til atte laste out of my swough⁰ I braide:⁰

swoon / started

“O hastou slain me, false thief?” I saide,
“And for my land thus hastou mordred⁰ me?

murdered

Er I be deed yit wol I kisse thee.”

And neer he cam and kneeled faire adown,

And saide, “Dere suster Alisoun,

As help me God, I shal thee nevere smite.

That I have doon, it is thyself to wite.^o

blame

Foryif it me, and that I thee biseeke,“⁰

beseech

And yit eftsoones⁰ I hitte him on the cheeke,

another time

And saide, “Thief, thus muchel am I wreke.⁰

Now wol I die: I may no lenger speke.”

But at the laste with muchel care and wo

We fille accorded by us selven two.⁵

2. Casts off her undergarment.

a fair woman without discretion”).

3. I.e., a fair woman who is not chaste is like a

4. I.e., hit.

gold ring in a sow’s nose. The Wife here makes a

5. I.e., but in the end, after great difficulty and

biblical proverb even more derogatory toward

complaint, we fell into accord, i.e., made it up

women than it is in the original (cf. Proverbs

between the two of us.

11.22: “As a jewel of gold in a swine’s snout, so is

58 / G E O F F R E Y C H A U C E R

He yaf me al the brideP in myn hand, *bridle*

To han the governance of hous and land,

And of his tonge and his hand also;

And made him brenne0 his book anoonright tho. *bum*

And whan that I hadde geten unto me

By maistrye0 al the sovereyn etee, *skill / dominion* And that he saide, “Myn owene trewe wif,

Do as thee lust° the terme of al thy lif; *it pleases*

Keep thyn honour, and keep eek myn estat,”

After that day we hadde nevere debat.

God help me so, I was to him as kinde

As any wif from Denmark unto Inde,° *India*

And also trewe, and so was he to me.

I praye to God that sit° in majestee, *sits*

So blesse his soule for his mercy dere.

Now wol I saye my tale if ye wol heere.

[A N O T H E R I N T E R R U P T I O N]

The Frere lough0 whan he hadde herd all this:

laughed

“Now dame,” quod he, “so have I joye or blis,

This is a long preamble of a tale.”

And whan the Somnour6 herde the Frere gale,°

exclaim

“Lo,” quod the Somnour, “Goddess armes two,

A frere wol entremette0 him° evermo!

intrude / himself

Lo, goode men, a flye and eek a frere
Wol falle in every dissh and eek matere.⁷
What spekestou of preambulacioun?
What, amble or trotte or pisse or go sitte down!
Thou lettest⁰ oure disport in this manere.”

hinder

“Ye, woltou so, sire Somnour?” quod the Frere.
“Now by my faith, I shal er that I go
Telle of a somnour swich a tale or two
That al the folk shal laughen in this place.”
“Now elles, Frere, I wol bishrewe⁰ thy face,”
Quod this Somnour, “and I bishrewe me,
But if I telle tales two or three
Of freres, er I come to Sidingborne,⁸
That I shal make thyn herte for to moorne⁰—
For wel I woot thy pacience is goon.”
Oure Hoste cride, “Pees,^o and that anoon!”

peace

And saide, “Lat the womman telle hir tale:
Ye fare as folk that dronken been of ale.
Do, dame, tel forth youre tale, and that is best.”
“Al redy, sire,” quod she, “right as you Iest^o—

it pleases

If I have licence of this worthy Frere.”

“Yis, dame,” quod he, “tel forth and I wol heere.”

6. A secular servant of the ecclesiastical courts. feres in everyone else’s affairs.

7. Just as a fly alights on every dish, so a friar inter- 8. Sittingbourne, a town forty miles from London.

THE WIFE OF BATH 'S PROLOGUE AND TALE / 59

The Tale

In th'olde dayes of the King Arthour,
Of which that Britouns⁹ speken greet honour,
Al was this land fulfild of fai'rye:¹
The elf-queene^o with hir joly compaignye *queen of the fairies*
Daunced ful ofte in many a greene mede^o— *meadow*
This was the olde opinion as I rede;^o *think*
I speke of many hundred yeres ago.
But now can no man see none elves mo,
For now the grete charitee and prayeres
Of limitours,² and othere holy freres,
That serchen every land and every stroom,
As thikke as motes⁰ in the sonne-beem,
dust particles
Blessing halles, chambres, kichenes, bowres,
Citees, burghes,⁰ castels, hye towres,
townships
Thropes, bernes, shipnes,³ dayeries—
This maketh that ther been no fairies.
For ther as wont to walken was an elf
Ther walketh now the limitour himself,
In undermeles⁰ and in morweninges,⁰
afternoons / mornings
And saith his Matins and his holy thinges,
As he gooth in his limitacioun.⁴
Wommen may go saufly⁰ up and down:

safely

In every bussh or under every tree
Ther is noon other incubus⁵ but he,
And he ne wol doon hem but dishonour.⁶
And so bifel it that this King Arthour
Hadde in his hous a lusty bachelor,⁰

young knight

That on a day cam riding fro river,⁷
And happed⁰ that, allone as he was born,

it happened

He sawgh a maide walking him biforn;
Of which maide anoon, maugree hir heed.⁸
By verray force he rafte hir maidenheed;⁹
For which oppression⁰ was swich clamour,

rape

And swich pursuite⁰ unto the King Arthour,

petitioning

That dampned was this knight for to be deed¹
By cours of lawe, and sholde han lost his heed—
Paraventure⁰ swich was the statut tho— *perchance*
But that the queene and othere ladies mo
So longe prayeden the king of grace,
Til he his lif him graunted in the place,
And yaf him to the queene, al at hir wille,
To chese wheither she wolde him save or spille²
9. I.e., Bretons. The stories of the Breton lais, or
be only loss of honor, while consorting with an
ballads, deal with the trials of lovers and often have

incubus would result in conception.

supernatural elements.

7. Hawking, usually carried out on the banks of a

1. I.e., filled full of supernatural creatures.

stream.

2. Friars licensed to beg in a certain territory.

8. Despite her head, i.e., despite anything she

3. Villages (*thorps*), barns, stables.

could do.

4. I.e., the friar's assigned area. His "holy things"

9. By force, he robbed her of her maidenhead.

are prayers.

1. This knight was condemned to death.

5. An evil spirit that seduces mortal women.

2. To choose whether to save or end his life.

6. I.e., the result of consorting with a friar would

60 / G E O F F R E Y C H A U C E R

The queene thanked the king with al hir might,

And after this thus spak she to the knight,

Whan that she saw hir time upon a day:

"Thou standest yit," quod she, "in swich array0

condition

That of thy lif yit hastou no suretee.0

guarantee

I graunte thee lif if thou canst tellen me

What thing it is that wommen most desiren:

Be war and keep thy nekke boon from iren.3

And if thou canst nat tellen me anoon,0

right away

Yit wol I yive thee leve for to goon

A twelfmonth and a day to seeche⁰ and lere^o

search / learn

An answeere suffisant⁰ in this matere,

satisfactory

And suretee wol I han er that thou pace,⁰

•*pass*

Thy body for to yeelden in this place.”

Wo was this knight, and sorwefully he siketh.⁰

sighs

But what, he may nat doon al as him liketh,

And atte laste he chees⁰ him for to wende,⁰

chose / go

And come again right at the yeres ende,

With swich answeere as God wolde him purveye,⁰

provide

And taketh his leve and wendeth forth his waye.

He seeketh every hous and every place

Wher as he hopeth for to finde grace,

To lerne what thing wommen love most.

But he ne coude arriven in no coost⁴

Wher as he mighte finde in this matere

Two creatures according in fere.⁵

Some saiden wommen loven best richesse;

Some saide honour, some saide jolinesse;⁰

pleasure

Some riche array, some saiden lust abedde,

And ofte time to be widwe and wedde.
Some saide that oure herte is most esed
Whan that we been yflatered and yplesed—
He gooth ful neigh the soothe, I wol nat lie:
truth

A man shal winne us best with flaterye,
And with attendance and with businesse
attention / solicitude
Been we ylimed, bothe more and lesse.
ensnared

And some sayen that we loven best
For to be free, and do right as us lest,
it pleases

And that no man repreve us of oure vice,
reprove
But saye that we be wise and no thing nice.
foolish

For trewely, ther is noon of us alle,
If any wight wol clawe us on the galle,
rub / sore spot

That we nil kike for he saith us sooth:
kick / because

Assaye and he shal finde it that so dooth.
try

For be we nevere so vicious withinne,
We wol be holden wise and clene of sinne.
considered

And some sayn that greet delit han we

For to be holden stable and eek secree,⁷

3. I.e., be very careful in choosing and save your-

6. The Wife speaks in her own person here and
self from execution. *Boon*: bone.

does not return to her story for more than sixty

4. I.e., country.

lines.

5. Agreeing together.

7. To be held reliable and also closemouthed.

THE WIFE OF BATH 'S PROLOGUE AND TA
LE / 61

And in oo° purpos stedefastly to dwelle,

one

And nat biwraye0 thing that men us telle—

disclose

But that tale is nat worth a rake-stele.0

rake handle

Pardee,0 we wommen conne no thing hele:°

by God / conceal

Witnesse on Mida.° Wol ye heere the tale?

Midas

Ovide, amonges othere thinges smale,

Saide Mida hadde under his longe heres,

Growing upon his heed, two asses eres,

The whiche vice0 he hidde as he best mighte

defect

Ful subtilly from every mannes sighte,

That save his wif ther wiste0 of it namo.

knew

He loved hire most and trusted hire also.

He prayed hire that to no creature

She sholde tellen of his disfigure.0

deformity

She swoor him nay, for al this world to winne,

She nolde do that vilainye or sinne

To make hir housbonde han so foul a name:

She nolde nat telle it for hir owene shame.

But natheless, hir thoughte that she dyde^o

would die

That she so longe sholde a conseiP hide;

secret

Hire thoughte it swal^o so sore about hir herte

swelled

That nedely som word hire moste asterte,8

And sith she dorste nat telle it to no man,

Down to a mareis0 faste0 by she ran—

marsh / close

Til she cam there hir herte was afire—

And as a bitore bombleth9 in the mire,

She laide hir mouth unto the water down:

“Biwray0 me nat, thou water, with thy soun,”^o

betray / sound

Quod she. “To thee I telle it and namo:^o

to no one else

Myn housbonde hath longe asses eres two.

Now is myn herte al hool,1 now is it oute.

I mighte no lenger keep it, out of doute.”
Here may ye see, though we a time abide,
Yit oute it moot:0 we can no conseil hide.

must

The remenant of the tale if ye wol heere,
Redeth Ovide, and ther ye may it lere.²
This knight of which my tale is specially,
Whan that he sawgh he mighte nat come thereby—
This is to saye what wommen loven most—
Within his brest ful sorweful was his gost,^o

spirit

But hoom he gooth, he mighte nat sojourne:0

delay

The day was come that hoomward moste0 he turne.

must

And in his way it happed him to ride
In al this care under0 a forest side,

by

Wher as he sawgh upon a daunce go
Of ladies foure and twenty and yit mo;
Toward the whiche daunce he drow ful yerne,³
In hope that som wisdom sholde he lerne.

8. Of necessity some word must escape her.

2. Learn. In Ovid’s *Metamorphoses*, Midas’s secret

9. A bittern (type of heron) makes a booming
is betrayed not by his wife but by his barber.
noise.

3. Drew very quickly.

1. I.e., sound, calm.

62 / GEOFFREY CHAUCER

But certainly, er he cam fully there,
Vanished was this daunce, he niste^o where.

knew not

No creature sawgh he that bar^o lif,

bore

Save on the greene he sawgh sitting a wiP—

woman

A fouler wight ther may no man devise.0

imagine

Again4 the knight this olde wif gan rise,

And saide, “Sire knight, heer forth lith^o no way.^o”

lies / road

Telle me what ye seeken, by youre fay.^o

faith

Paraventure it may the better be:

Thisse olde folk conne^o muchel thing,” quod she.

know

“My leve moder,”^o quod this knight, “certain,

mother

I nam but deed but if that I can sayn

What thing it is that wommen most desire.

Coude ye me wisse,^o I wolde wel quite youre hire.“s

teach

“Plight0 me thy trouthe here in myn hand,” quod she

“The nexte thing that I requere0 thee,

require of

Thou shalt it do, if it lie in thy might,
And I wol telle it you er it be night.”

“Have heer my trouthe,” quod the knight. “I graunte.

“Thanne,” quod she, “I dar me wel avaunte⁰
boast

Thy lif is sauf,^o for I wol stande therby.
safe

Upon my lif the queene wol saye as I.
Lat see which is the pruddest⁰ of hem alle
proudest

That wereth on⁶ a coverchief or a calle^o
headdress

That dar saye nay of that I shal thee teche.
Lat us go forth withouten lenger speche.”

Tho rouned⁰ she a pistel⁰ in his ere,
whispered / message

And bad^o him to be glad and have no fere.
ordered

Whan they be comen to the court, this knight
Saide he hadde holde his day as he hadde hight,
promised

And redy was his answeere, as he saide.
Ful many a noble wif, and many a maide,
And many a widwe—for that they been wise—
The queene hirsself sitting as justise,
Assembled been this answeere for to heere,
And afterward this knight was bode^o appere.
bidden to

To every wight comanded was silence,
And that the knight sholde telle in audience⁰
open hearing
What thing that worldly wommen loven best.
This knight ne stood nat stille as dooth a best,⁰
beast

But to his question anoon answerde
With manly vois that al the court it herde.
“My lige^o lady, generally,” quod he,
liege

“Wommen desire to have sovereynetee⁰
dominion

As wel over hir housbonde as hir love,⁷
And for to been in maistrye him above.
This is youre moste desir though ye me kille.
Dooth as you list:⁰ I am here at youre wille.”

4. I.e., to meet.

word was her lover’s law. Here, the knight claims

5. Repay your trouble.

that women want to exercise the same dominion

6. That wears.

over their husbands.

7. In the courtly love tradition, the lady’s lightest

THE WIFE OF BATH ‘SPROLOGUE AND TA
LE / 63

In al the court ne was ther wif ne maide

Ne widwe that contraried⁰ that he saide,

contradicted

But saiden he was worthy han^o his lif.

to have

And with that word up sterte⁰ that olde wif,

started

Which that the knight sawgh sitting on the greene;

“Mercy,” quod she, “my sovereign lady queene,

Er that youre court departe, do me right.

I taughte this answeere unto the knight,

For which he plighte me his trouthe there

The firste thing I wolde him requere⁰

require

He wolde it do, if it laye in his might.

Bifore the court thanne praye I thee, sire knight,”

Quod she, “that thou me take unto thy wif,

For wel thou woost that I have kept⁰ thy lif.

saved

If I saye fals, say nay, upon thy fay.”

This knight answerde, “Alias and wailaway,

I woot right wel that swich was my biheeste.⁰

promise

For Goddes love, as chees^o a newe requeste:

choose

Taak al my good and lat my body go.”

“Nay thanne,” quod she, “I shrewe⁰ us bothe two.

For though that I be foul and old and poore,

I nolde for al the metal ne for ore

That under erthe is grave⁰ or lith⁰ above,

buried / lies

But if thy wif I were and eek thy love.”

“My love,” quod he. “Nay, my dampnacioun!

damnation

Alias, that any of my nacioun

family

Sholde evere so foule disparaged be.”

degraded

But al for nought, th’ende is this, that he

Constrained was: he needes moste hire wedde,

And taketh his olde wif and gooth to bedde.

Now wolden some men saye, paraventure,

That for my necligence I do no cure

To tellen you the joye and al th’array

That at the feeste was that ilke day.

To which thing shortly answer I shal:

I saye ther nas no joye ne feeste at al;

Ther nas but hevinesse and mucche sorwe.

For prively he wedded hire on^o morwe,^o

in / the morning

And al day after hidde him as an owle,

So wo was him, his wif looked so foule.

Greet was the wo the knight hadde in his thought:

Whan he was with his wif abedde brought,

He walweth and he turneth to and fro.

tosses

His olde wif lay smiling everemo,

And saide, “O dere housbonde, benedicite,

bless ye

Fareth⁰ every knight thus with his wif as ye?

behaves

Is this the lawe of King Arthures hous?

Is every knight of his thus daungerous?⁰

standoffish

I am youre owene love and youre wif;

I am she which that saved hath youre lif;

And certes yit ne dide I you nevere unright.

8. I do not take the trouble.

64 / G E O F F R E Y C H A U C E R

Why fare ye thus with me this firste night?

Ye faren like a man hadde lost his wit.

What is my gilt? For Goddes love, telle it,

And it shal been amended if I may.”

“Amended!” quod this knight. “Alias, nay, nay,

It wol nat been amended neveremo.

Thou art so lothly⁰ and so old also,

hideous

And therto comen of so lowe a kinde,^o

lineage

That litel wonder is though I walwe and winde.^o

turn

So wolde God myn herte wolde breste!“⁰

break

“Is this,” quod she, “the cause of youre unreste?”

“Ye, certainly,” quod he. “No wonder is.”

“Now sire,” quod she, “I coude amende al this,

If that me liste, er it were dayes three,

So° wel ye mighte bere you unto me.9

provided that

“But for ye speken of swich gentillesse0

nobility

As is descended out of old richesse—

That therefore sholden ye be gentilmen—

Swich arrogance is nat worth an hen.

Looke who that is most vertuous alway,

Privee and apert, and most entendeth ay1

To do the gentil deedes that he can,

Taak him for the gretteste0 gentilman.

greatest

Crist woP we claime of him oure gentillesse,

desires that

Nat of oure eldres for hir ‘old richesse.’

For though they yive us al hir heritage,

For which we claime to been of heigh parage,0

descent

Yit may they nat biquethe for no thing

To noon of us hir vertuous living,

That made hem gentilmen ycalled be,

And badus folwen hem in swich degree.

ordered

“Wel can the wise poete of Florence,

That highte Dant,° speken in this sentence;0

Dante / topic

Lo, in swich manere rym is Dantes tale:

‘Ful selde up riseth by his braunches smale

Prowesse of man,² for God of his prowesse
Wol that of him we claime oure gentillesse.’
For of oure eldres may we no thing claime
But temporel thing that man may hurte and maime.-
Eek every wight woot this as wel as I,
If gentillesse were planted natureelly
Unto a certain linage down the line,
Privee and apert, thanne wolde they nevere fine⁰
cease

To doon of gentillesse the faire office⁰—
function

They mighte do no vilainye or vice.
“Taak fir and beer⁰ it in the derkeste hous
bear

Bitwixe this and the Mount of Caucasus,
And lat men shette⁰ the dores and go thenne,⁰
shut/thence

9. I.e., you might behave so satisfactorily toward family tree. The Wife is quoting mainly from me that I could change all this for the better—if I Dante, *Purgatorio* 7.121—23; she repeats this point so desired—before three days had passed. against inherited nobility at line 1170.

1. I.e., privately and publicly, and always tries.

3. “Man” is the object of the verbs “hurte” and

2. I.e., seldom (“selde”) does man’s excellence “maime.”

(“prowesse”) come through the branches of his

THE WIFE OF BATH 'S PROLOGUE AND TALE / 65

Yit wol the fir as faire lye^o and brenne⁰ *blaze / burn*

As twenty thousand men mighte it biholde:

His^o office natureel ay wol it holde, its

Up^o peril of my lif, til that it die. *upon*

Heer may ye see wel how that genterye⁰ *gentility*

Is nat annexed to possessioun,⁴

Sith folk ne doon hir operacioun

Alway, as dooth the fir, lo, in his kinde.^o *nature*

For God it woot, men may wel often finde

A lordes sone do shame and vilainye;

And he that wol han pris of his gentrye,⁵

For he was boren^o of a gentil⁰ hous,

born / noble

1160

And hadde his eldres noble and vertuous,

And nil himselven do no gentil deedes,

Ne folwen his gentil auncestre that deed⁰ is,

dead

He nis nat gentil, be he duc^o or erl—

duke

For vilaines sinful deedes maken a cherl.^o

lout

Thy gentillesse nis but renomee⁶

Of thine auncestres for hir heigh bountee,⁰

magnanimity

Which is a straunge⁰ thing for thy persone.

external

For gentillesse cometh fro God allone.⁷
Thanne comth oure verray gentillesse of grace.
It was no thing biquethe us with oure place.
Thenketh how noble, as saith Valerius,
Was thilke Tullius Hostilius⁸
That out of povertē⁰ roos to heigh noblesse. *poverty*
Redeth Senek and redeth eek Boece:⁹
Ther shul ye seen expres that no drede^o is **doubt**
That he is gentil that dooth gentil deedes.
And therefore, leve housbonde, I thus conclude:
Al^o were it that mine auncestres weren rude,^o *although / lowborn*
Yit may the hye God—and so hope I—
Graunte me grace to liven vertuously.
Thanne am I gentil whan that I biginne
To liven vertuously and waive⁰ sinne. *avoid*
“And ther as ye of povertē me repreve,⁰ *reprove*
The hye God, on whom that we bileve,
In wilful⁰ povertē chees^o to live his lif; *voluntary / chose*
And certes every man, maiden, or wif
May understonde that Jesus, hevne king,
Ne wolde nat chese^o a vicious living. *choose*
Glad povertē is an honeste⁰ thing, certain; *honorable*
This wol Senek and othere clerkes sayn.
Whoso that halt him paid of¹ his povertē,
I holde him riche al hadde he nat a sherte.⁰ **shirt**
He that coveiteth² is a poore wight,

For he wolde han that is nat in his might;
4. I.e., is not related to inheritable property.
9. I.e., the Roman philosopher Boethius (ca. 480—
5. Have credit for his noble birth.
524); Chaucer translated Boethius's *Consolation of*
6. I.e., the gentility you claim isn't just the
Philosophy from Latin to English (as Boece).
renown.

Senek: the Roman statesman, dramatist, and phi-
7. I.e., nobility cannot be handed down from
losopher Seneca (4 B.C.E.—65 C.E.).
father to son, but is God's gift to the individual.

1. Considers himself satisfied with.

See lines 1134-36.

2. Covets, desires what another person has.

8. The legendary third king of Rome.

66 / G E O F F R E Y C H A U C E R

But he that nought hath, ne coveiteth⁰ have, *desires to*
Is riche, although we holde him but a knave.

Verray⁰ poverte it singeth proprely.⁰

true / appropriately

Juvenal saith of poverte, 'Merily

The poore man, whan he gooth by the waye,

Biforn the theves he may singe and playe.'

Poverte is hateful good, and as I gesse,

A ful greet bringere out of business;³

A greet amendere eek of sapience⁰

wisdom

To him that taketh it in pacience;
Poverté is thing, although it seeme elenge,⁰
wretched

Possession that no wight wol challenge;⁰
claim as his property

Poverté ful often, whan a man is lowe,
Maketh⁴ his God and eek himself to knowe;
Poverté a spectacle⁰ is as thinketh me,
pair of spectacles

Thurgh which he may his verray⁰ freendes see.
true

And therefore, sire, sin that I nought you greve,
Of my poverté namore ye me repreve.⁰ *reproach*

“Now sire, of elde^o ye repreve me: *old age*

And certes sire, though noon auctoritee

Were in no book, ye gentils of honour

Sayn that men sholde an old wight doon favour,

And clepe him fader for youre gentillesse—

And auctours⁵ shal I finde, as I gesse.

“Now ther ye saye that I am foul and old:

Thanne drede you nought to been a cokewold,⁰ *cuckold*

For filthe and elde, also mote I thee,⁶

Been grete wardeins⁰ upon chastitee. *guardians*

But nathelees, sin I knowe your delit,

I shal fulfille youre worldly appetit.

“Chees⁰ now,” quod she, “oon of thise thinges twaye: *choose*

To han me foul and old til that I deye

And be to you a trewe humble wif,

And nevere you displese in al my lif,
 Or elles ye wol han me yong and fair,
 And take youre aventure of the repair⁷
 That shal be to youre hous by cause of me—
 Or in some other place, wel may be.
 Now chees youreselven wheither⁰ that you liketh.” *whichever*
 This knight aviseth him⁸ and sore siketh;⁰ *sighs*
 But atte laste he saide in this manere:
 “My lady and my love, and wif so dere,
 I putte me in youre wise governaunce:
 Cheseth⁰ youreself which may be most plesaunce⁰ *choose /*
pleasure
 And most honour to you and me also.
 I do no fors the wheither⁹ of the two,
 For as you liketh it suffiseth⁰ me.” *satisfies*
 “Thanne have I gete^o of you maistrye,” quod she, *got*
 “Sin I may chese and governe as me lest?”⁰ *it pleases*
 3. I.e., remover of cares. 7. I.e., your chances on the visits.
 4. I.e., makes him. 8. Considers.
 5. I.e., authorities. 9. I do not care whichever.
 6. So may I prosper.
 CANTUSTROILI / 67
 “Ye, certes, wif,” quod he. “I holde it best.”
 “Kisse me,” quod she. “We be no lenger wrothe.
 For by my trouthe, I wol be to you bothe—
 This is to sayn, ye, bothe fair and good.
 I praye to God that I mote sterven wood,¹
 But⁰ I to you be al so good and trewe

unless

As evere was wif sin that the world was newe.

And but I be tomorn0 as fair to seene

tomorrow morning

As any lady, emperisse, or queene,

That is bitwixe the eest and eek the west,

Do with my lif and deeth right as you lest:

Caste up the curtin, looke how that it is.“2

And whan the knight sawgh verraily0 al this,

truly

That she so fair was and so yong therto,

For joye he hente0 hire in his armes two;

took

His herte bathed0 in a bath of blisse;

basked

A thousand time are we0 he gan hire kisse,

And she obeyed him in every thing

That mighte do him plesance or liking.0

And thus they live unto hir lives ende

In parfit0 joye. And Jesu Crist us sende

perfect

Housbondes meeke, yonge, and fresshe abedde—

And grace t'overbide0 hem that we wedde.

outlive

And eek I praye Jesu shorte0 hir lives

shorten

That nought wol be governed by hir wives.

And olde and angry nigardes of dispence0—

spending

God sende hem soone a verray⁰ pestilence!

veritable

FROM TROILUS AND CRISEIDE 1

Cantus Troili²

400 “If no love is, O God, what feele I so?

And if love is, what thing and which is he?

If love be good, from whennes cometh my wo?

If it be wikke, a wonder thinketh me,

Whan every torment and adversitee

405 That cometh of him may to me savory⁰ thinke,⁰ *pleasant*
/seem

For ay thurste I, the more that ich^o it drinke. I

And if that at myn owene lust I brenne,⁰ *burn*

From whennes cometh my wailing and my plainte?⁰ *lament*

If harm agree me, wherto plaine I thenne?³—

410

I noot, ne why unwery that I fainte.⁴

1. Might die insane.

song just after he has fallen in love with Criseide

2. I.e., lift up the curtain around the bed and see

in book 1. Prior to falling in love, Troilus had

how things are.

spurned love and mocked other lovers. These stan-

1. In this long poem, Chaucer tells the tragic story

zas are adapted from the eighty-eighth sonnet of

of the love between Troilus, the son of King Priam

the Italian poet Petrarch (1304-1374).

of Troy, and Criseide, the daughter of Calkas (a
3. I.e., if suffering is agreeable to me, why, then,
Trojan priest who defects to the Greek side during
do I lament?
the Trojan War).

4. I.e., I know not, nor why I faint even though I
2. The song of Troilus (Latin). Troilus sings this
am not weary.

68 / G E O F F R E Y C H A U C E R

**O quikke0 deeth, O sweete harm so quainte,0 *living /
strange***

How may0 of thee in me swich quantitee, *can there be*

But if0 that I consente that it be? *except*

And if that I consente, I wrongfully

**415 Complaine: ywis,0 thus possessed0 to and fro, *indeed. /
tossed***

Al stereless0 within a boot am I *rudderless*

Amidde the see, bitwixen windes two,

That in contrarye0 stonden everemo. *opposition*

Alias, what is this wonder maladye?

420 For hoot0 of cold, for cold of hoot I die.“5 *heat*

L Y R I C S A N D O C C A S I O N A L V E R S E

To Rosamond

Madame, ye been of alle beautee shrine

As fer as cerclid is the mapemounde:6

For as the crystal glorious ye shine,

And like ruby been0 youre cheekes rounde. *are*

5 Therwith ye been so merye and so jocounde

That at a revel whan that I see you daunce

It is an oinement unto my wounde,
Though ye to me ne do no daliaunce.⁷
For though I weepe of teres ful a tine,⁰ *tub*
10
Yit may that wo myn herte nat confounde;
Youre semy⁰ vois, that ye so smale outtwine,⁸ *small*
Maketh my thought in joye and blis habounde:⁰ *abound*
So curteisly I go with love bounde
That to myself I saye in my penaunce,⁹
15
“Suffiseth me to love you, Rosemounde,
Though ye to me ne do no daliaunce.”
Was nevere pik walwed in galauntine¹
As I in love am walwed and ywounde,
For which ful ofte I of myself divine
20 That I am trewe Tristam² the secounde;
My love may not refreide⁰ nor affounde;⁰
cool / chill
I brenne⁰ ay in amorous plesaunce:
burn-
Do what you list, I wol youre thra^F be founde,
slave
Though ye to me ne do no daliaunce.

5. Such oxymorons were a convention of Petrarch-

8. That you so delicately spin out.

chan love poetry.

9. I.e., pangs of unrequited love.

6. I.e., to the shrine of all beauty, to the farthest

1. Pike rolled in galantine sauce.

circumference of the map of the world.

2. The famous lover of Isolt (Iseult, Isolde) in

7. I.e., show me no encouragement.

medieval legend, renowned for his constancy.

COMPLAINT TO HIS PURSE / 69

Truth

Flee fro the prees and dwelle with soothfastnesse;³

Suffise unto thy thing,⁴ though it be smal;

For hoord hath⁵ hate, and climbing tikelnesse;⁰ *insecurity*

Prees hath envye, and wele^o blent⁰ overal. *prosperity / blinds*

5 Savoure⁰ no more than three bihoove shal; *relish*

Rule wel thyself that other folk canst rede:^o *advise*

And Trouthe shal deliver,⁶ it is no drede.^o *doubt*

Tempest thee nought al crooked to redresse⁷

In trust of hire that turneth as a bal;⁸

10 Muche wele stant in litel businesse;⁹

Be war therefore to spurne ayains an al.¹

Strive nat as dooth the crokke⁰ with the wal.² *pot*

Daunte⁰ thyself that dauntest otheres deede: *master*

And Trouthe shal deliver, it is no drede.^o *fear*

15 That thee is sent, receive in buxomnesse;⁰ *obedience*

The wrastling for the world axeth^o a fal; *asks for*

Here is noon hoom, here nis but wildernesse:³

Forth, pilgrim, forth! Forth, beest, out of thy stal!

Know thy countree, looke up, thank God of al.

20 Hold the heigh way and lat thy gost⁰ thee lede: *spirit*

And Trouthe shal deliver, it is no drede.^o *fear*

Envoy

Therefore, thou Vache,⁴ leve thyn olde wrecchednesse
Unto the world; leve⁵ now to be thral.

Crye him mercy that of his heigh goodnesse

25 Made thee of nought, and in especial

Draw unto him, and pray in general,

For thee and eek for othere, hevenelich meede:^o *reward*

And Trouthe shal delivere, it is no drede.

Complaint to His Purse

To you, my purs, and to noon other wight,^o *person*

Complaine I, for ye be my lady dere.

3. Truthfulness. *Prees*: crowd; also, ambition. In

9. I.e., much happiness will be found in little

some early manuscripts and printed editions, this activity.

poem is subtitled “Balade de Bon Conseyl” (“Bal-

1. I.e., be careful therefore not to kick against an
lad of Good Counsel”).

awl (a small, sharply pointed tool).

4. Be content with your possessions.

2. I.e., do not strive against impossible odds (as

5. Hoarding causes.

when a clay pot fights with a wall).

6. I.e., truth shall make you free; cf. John 8.32.

3. Here is no home, here is nothing but wilder-

7. Do not struggle to correct all that’s crooked.
ness.

8. I.e., do not trust in Fortune, who turns like a

4. Probably Sir Philip de la Vache, with a pun on ball in that she is always presenting a different the French for “cow.” aspect to people.

5. I.e., cease

70 / G E O F F R E Y C H A U C E R

I am so sory, now that ye be light,
For certes, but if⁶ ye make me hevy cheere,
5 Me were as lief⁷ be laid upon my beere;⁰ *bier*
For which unto youre mercy thus I crye:
Beeth hevy again, or elles moot⁰ I die. *must*
Now voucheth sauf this day er⁸ it be night
That I of you the blisful soun may heere,
10 Or see youre colour, lik the sonne bright,
That of yelownesse hadde nevere peere.
Ye be my life, ye be myn hertes steere, *rudder, guide*
Queene of confort and of good compaignye:
Beeth hevy again, or elles moot I die.
15 Ye purs, that been to me my lives light
And saviour, as in this world down here,
Out of this towne⁹ helpe me thurgh your might,
Sith that ye wol nat be my tresorere;⁰ *treasurer*
For I am shave as neigh as any frere.¹
20 But yit I praye unto youre curteisye:
Beeth hevy again, or elles moot I die.

Envoy to Henry IV

O conquerour of Brutus Albioun,²
Which that by line and free eleccioun

Been verray king, this song to you I sende:

25 And ye, that mowen⁰ alle oure harmes amende, *may*

Have minde upon my supplicacioun.

To His Scribe³ Adam

Adam scrivain,⁰ if evere it thee bifalle *scribe*

Boece or *Troilus*⁴ for to written newe,

Under thy longe lokkes thou moste have the scalle,⁵

But after my making thou write more trewe,

5 So ofte a day I moot⁰ thy werk renewe, *must*

It to correcte, and eek⁰ to rubbe and scrape:⁶ *also*

And al is thurgh thy necligence and rape.⁰ *haste*

6. *But if:* unless.

poet's work.

7. I'd just as soon.

4. Chaucer's long poem *Troilus and Criseide* (see

8. Now grant this day before.

p. 67). *Boece*: Chaucer's translation of the *Conso-*

9. Probably Westminster, where Chaucer had

lation of Philosophy, by the Roman philosopher

rented a house.

Boethius (ca. 480-524).

1. Shaved as close as any (tonsured) friar, an

5. I.e., may you have scurf, a scaly or scabby dis-
expression for being broke.

ease of the scalp.

2. Britain (Albion) was said to have been founded

6. Corrections on parchment were made by scrap-
by Brutus, the grandson of Aeneas (the founder of

ing off the ink and rubbing the surface smooth
Rome).

again.

3. Copyist, responsible for making copies of the

7 1

W I L L I A M L A N G L A N D

ca. 1330—ca. 1400

Piers Plowman¹

In a somer seson, whan softe was the sonne, Swⁿ

I shoop me into shroudes as I a sheep were,²

In habite as an heremite unholy of werkes,³

Wente wide in this world wondres to here.⁰ *hear*

Ac⁰ on a May morwenynge⁴ on Malverne Hilles *hut; and*

Me bifel a ferly, of Fairye me thoghte.⁵

I was wery [of] wandred and wente me to reste

Under a brood bank by a bournes⁰ syde; *stream's*

And as I lay and lenede and loked on the watres,

I slombred into a slepyng, it sweyed so murye.^o *merry*

Thanne gan [me] to meten^o a merveillous SWevene — *dream / dream*

That I was in a wilderness, wiste⁰ I nevere where. *knew*

As I biheeld into the eest an heigh to the sonne,⁶

I seigh a tour⁰ on a toft⁰ trieliche ymaked,⁷ *tower / knoll*

A deep dale⁰ bynethe, a dongeon⁰ therinne, *valley / dungeon*

With depe diches and derke and dredfulle of sighte.

A fair feeld ful of folk fond⁸ I ther bitwene—

Of alle manere⁰ of men, the meene⁰ and the riche, *kinds / lowly*

Werchyng⁰ and wandryng⁰ as the world asketh.⁰ *working / requires*

Somme putten hem^o to the plough, pleiden⁰ ful *themselves / playing*

selde,⁰ *seldom*

In settyng⁰ and sowyng⁰ swonken⁰ ful harde, *planting / toiled*

And wonnen that thise wastours with glotonye destroyeth⁹

And somme putten hem⁰ to pride, apparaild hem *themselves* thereafter,

1. Probably composed between 1360 and 1387,

2. I.e., I dressed in garments as if I were either a

The Vision of Piers Plowman is a long religious, sheep or a shepherd.

social, and political allegory. It is written in allit-

3. Perhaps meaning one without holy works to his erative verse in a west-midlands dialect, which dif-

credit, but not necessarily one of sinful works. *In*

fers in many ways from that used by Chaucer in

habite ... heremite: thus the simple clothes resemble the nearly contemporaneous *Canterbury Tales*.

ble those of a hermit.

Piers survives in several distinct versions, which

4. Traveling forth on a May morning often initi-

scholars refer to as the A-, B-, C-, and Z-texts. The

ated a dream vision in medieval poetry. As the set-

A-text (about twenty-four hundred lines) breaks off

ting of the vision, the “Malverne Hills,” in the West

inconclusively; the B-text, which we follow here, is

Midlands, are generally thought to have been the about four thousand lines longer. The C-text is site of Langland's early home (if such a person poetically and doctrinally more conservative. existed; see biographical sketch, p. 2107).

Recently, scholars have focused on the Z-text as 5. I.e., a marvel ("ferly") that seemed to be from possibly being an earlier text than the other three. fairyland.

That a large number of manuscripts (and two 6. I.e., looked toward the east on high, toward the sixteenth-century printed editions) survive suggests that the poem was quite popular during the 7. This phrase has several possible meanings, early modern period.

including "well or wonderfully made" and "made The poem takes the form of a dream vision, a like a tree," i.e., like the cross.

popular genre during the Middle Ages in which the 8. Found. The fair field of folk is commonly interpreted as a representation of the world, situated character. The selection here from the poem's prologue introduces the dreamer's vision of the Field in the valley).

of Folk, which represents fourteenth-century

9. I.e., and won that which wasters destroyed with English society and its failures to live in accordance with Christian principles.

ers was a common idea during the period.

72 / W I L L I A M L A N G L A N D

In contenance of clothyng comen disgised.¹

In preieres⁰ and penaunce putten hem manye, *prayers*

Al for love of Oure Lord lyveden⁰ ful streyte⁰ *living / strictly*

In hope to have heveneriche⁰ blisse— *heavenly*

As ances and heremites that holden hem in hire selles,

Coveiten noght in contree to cairen aboute

For no likerous liflode hire likame to plese.²

And somme chosen chaffare;⁰ they cheveden⁰ the *trade I succeeded*

bette—

As it semeth to oure sight that swiche men thryveth;

And somme murthes⁰ to make as mynstralles *entertainments*

konne,⁰ *know how*

And geten gold with hire⁰ glee⁰—synnelees,⁰ I *their / singing /guiltless leeve.⁰ believe*

Ac japeres⁰ and jangeleres, Judas children,³ *jesters*

Feynen hem fantasies, and fooles hem maketh,

And han wit at wille to werken if they sholde.⁴

That Poul⁵ precheth of hem I wol nat preve⁰ it here: *prove*

Qui loquitur turpiloquium is Luciferes hyne.⁶

Bidderes⁰ and beggeres faste aboute yede⁰ *beggars/went*

[Til] hire bely and hire bagge [were] bredful ycrammed;⁷

Faiteden⁰ for hire foode, foughten at the ale.⁰ *begged falsely /
alehouse* In glotonye, God woot,⁰ go thei to bedde, *knows*

And risen with ribaudie,⁰ tho Roberdes knaves;⁸ *obscenities*

Sleep and sory⁰ sleuthe⁰ seweth hem evere.⁰ *wretched /sloth
/follow*

Pilgrymes and palmeres plighen hem togidere

To seken Seint Jame and seintes in Rome;⁹

Wenten forth in hire wey^o with many wise tales,⁰ *way /
speeches*

And hadden leve⁰ to lyen⁰ al hire lif after. *leave / tell lies*

I seigh⁰ somme that seiden⁰ thei hadde ysought seintes:
saw/said

To ech a tale that thei tolde hire tonge was tempred⁰ to lye
tuned

Moore than to seye sooth,⁰ it semed bi hire speche. *truth*

Heremytes on an heep⁰ with hoked⁰ staves *crowd / crooked*

Wenten to Walsyngham¹—and hire wenches after:

Grete lobies and longe that lothe were to swynke

1. I.e., and dressed themselves accordingly, dis-
resemblance to his words in Ephesians 5.4 and
guised in an outward show of finery.

Colossians 3.8.

2. I.e., like anchorites and hermits who keep to

7. I.e., until their bellies and their bags were

their cells, instead of coveting to wander (“cairen”)

crammed to the brimful; a bag was carried by beg-

about the land (“contree”) to indulge their bodies

gars for receiving the food bestowed on them as

(“likame”) with a luxurious way of life (“likerous

alms.

liflode”). An anchorite (male) or anchoress

8. A term for robbers; “roberdes” men were lawless (female) vowed to live a reclusive, religious life in vagabonds, notorious for their crimes during the a cell.

period when *Piers Plowman* was written.

3. A proverbial term for sinners.

9. I.e., pilgrims and palmers pledged themselves

4. I.e., they devise fantasies and make fools of to visit famous shrines of the day. Palmers were themselves even though they possess intelligence pilgrims who had gone to the Holy Land and carried if they should choose to work.

ried a palm leaf or a badge in token of their journey.

5. Perhaps an allusion to St. Paul’s words in 2

The shrine of St. James, or Santiago, was a famous Thessalonians 3.10: “For even when we were with place of pilgrimage in Spain, and one of the four

you, this we commanded you, that if any would not
pilgrimages assigned as penance for particularly
work, neither should he eat.”

grave sins. Rome was known for its many shrines.

6. “He who utters foul speech” (Latin) is the

1. The Walsingham shrine was the most famous
Devil’s servant; the quotation is not from St. Paul
shrine in England dedicated to the Virgin Mary.

(nor does Langland say it is), but it bears some

P I E R S P L O W M A N / 7 3

Clothed hem in copes to ben knowen from othere,

And shopen hem heremytes hire ese to have.²

I fond there freres, alle the foure ordres,³

Prechyng the peple for profit of [the] womb[e]:^o *belly*

60 Glosed the gospel as hem good liked;⁴

For coveitise of copes construwed it as thei wolde.

Manye of this maistres freres mowe clothen hem at likyng⁵

For hire moneie⁰ and marchaundise marchen togideres. *money*

For sith charite hath ben chapman and chief to shryve lordes⁶

65 Manye ferlies⁰ han fallen in a fewe yeres. *wondrous events*

But Holy Chirche and hii holde bettre togidres

The mooste meschief on molde is mountyng up faste.⁷

Ther preched a pardoner as he a preest were:⁸

Broughte forth a bulle with bisshopes seles,

70 And seide that hymself myghte assoillen⁰ hem alle *absolve*

Of falshede⁰ of fastyng, of avowes⁰ ybroken. *deceit I vows*

Lewed⁰ men leved hym wel and liked hise wordes, *unlearned*

Comen up knelyng to kissen hise bulles.

He bonched hem with his brevet and blered hire eighen,
75 And raughte with his rageman rynges and broches.⁹
Thus [ye] gyven [youre] gold glotons to helpe,
And leneth it losels that leccherie haunten!¹
Were the bisshop yblessed and worth bothe his eris,
His seel² sholde nocht be sent to deceyve the peple.
so Ac it is nocht by the bisshop that the boy precheth³—
For the parisshe preest and the pardoner parten⁰ the silver
divide
That the povere⁰ [peple] of the parissche sholde have if they
poor
ne were.

Persons⁰ and parisshe preestes pleynd⁰ hem to *rectors* /
complained

the bisshop

That hire parissches weren povere sith the pestilence⁰ tyme,
plague

85 To have a licence and leve⁰ at London to dwelle,
permission

2. Lubbers (“lobies”) or tall (“longe”) idle louts,
ishment by the Church for the sin, but not for-
who are loath to work (“swynke”), disguised them-
giveness from the guilt of the sin. While the
selves as hermits to have their comfort. *Copes*: the
payment was supposed to be a voluntary contri-
special dress of friars or monks.

bution to the works of the Church, the system was

3. The four orders of friars: the Carmelites;

open to the kind of abuse shown in this pardoner.

Augustinians; Dominicans, or Jacobins; and Fran-

A papal bull was a formal statement of “indul-

gence,” and the seals of bishops in whose diocese

4. Complaints were frequently made in medieval
the pardoner was (ostensibly) licensed to preach
literature that friars interpreted (“glosed”) the
were affixed to it.

Scriptures to serve their own purposes.

9. I.e., he struck (“bonched”) them with his doc-

5. I.e., many of these masters can (“mowe”) dress
ument (“brevet”), and bleared their eyes, and thus
themselves as they like.

got (“raughte”) rings and brooches with his bull

6. I.e., since Charity (or those who claim to work
 (“rageman”: a long parchment with ragged edges),
for it) has become a merchant and first (“chief”) to
in payment for pardon.

hear the confessions (“shryve”) of noblemen; allud-

1. I.e., thus you give your gold to help gluttons,
ing to money received by friars for hearing confes-
and hand it (“leneth”) to wretches (“losels”) who
sions.

indulge in lechery.

7. I.e., unless Holy Church and they (“hii”: i.e.,

2. Seal of authorization. *Worth bothe his eris*: i.e.,
the friars) hold together better, then great misfor-
worthy to have his ears, being alert and vigilant.

tune (“meschief”) on Earth (“molde”) is coming.

3. I.e., it is not with the bishop's permission that

8. I.e., as if he were a priest. A pardoner was

the rogue preaches. Thus, the pardoner has illicitly

empowered by the pope to supply an indulgence

obtained the bishop's seal; moreover, he has bribed

for a sin, in return for some payment toward the

the parish priest and divides the money with him.

Church. An indulgence granted remission of pun-

74 / W I L L I A M L A N G L A N D

And syngen ther for symonie⁴ for silver is swete.

Bisshopes and bachelers, bothe maistres and doctours—

That han cure under Crist, and crownynge in tokene

And signe that thei sholden shryven hire parissens,

90 Prechen and praye for hem, and the povere fede—

Liggen in Londoun in Lenten and ellis.⁵

Somme serven the King and his silver tellen,⁰ *keep account of*

In the Cheker and in the Chauncelrie chalangen hise dettes

Of wardes and of wardemotes, weyves and streyves.⁶

95 And somme serven as servaunts lordes and ladies,

And in stede^o of stywardes sitten and demen.⁰ *position / judge*

Hire messe^o and hire matyns⁰ and many of *Masses / morning prayers*

hire houres⁰ *divine offices*

Arn doone undevoutliche;⁰ drede is at the laste *undevoutly*

Lest Crist in his Consistorie acorse⁷ ful manye!

100 I parced⁰ of the power that Peter hadde to kepe—
comprehended

To bynden and to unbynden, as the Book telleth⁸—

How he it left with love as Oure Lorde highte⁰ *commanded*

Amonges foure vertues,⁹ most vertuous of alle vertues,
 That cardinals ben called and closynge yates¹
 105 There Crist is in kyngdom, to close and to shette,⁰ *shut*
 And to opene it to hem and hevene blisse shewe.
 Ac of the Cardinals at court that kaughte of that name
 And power presumed in hem a Pope to make
 To han the power that Peter hadde, impugnen I nelle²—
 no For in love and lettrure⁰ the eleccion³ bilongeth; *learning*
 Forthi⁰ I kan and kan naught of court speke moore. *therefore*
 4. I.e., and sing Masses for payment; *simony*: the
 8. In Matthew 16.15, Christ tells Peter: “And I
 practice of buying or selling ecclesiastical prefer-
 will give unto thee the keys of the kingdom of
 ment. After the plague caused depopulation and a
 heaven: and whatsoever thou shalt bind on earth
 loss of tithes and income, many priests went to
 shall be bound in heaven: and whatsoever thou
 London to make money by saying Masses for the
 shalt loose on earth shall be loosed in heaven.”
 souls of rich dead persons.
 9. The four cardinal virtues: prudence, temper-
 5. I.e., those who have responsibility under Christ,
 ance, fortitude, and justice.
 and clerical tonsure (or “crownynge”: the part of a
 1. Closing gates. A rough translation of Latin *car-*
 monk’s or priest’s head that has been shaved) as a
dinalis, which is derived from *cardo*, or hinge; thus
 symbol of their responsibility to hear the confes-

the power of the four cardinal virtues is made into
sions of their parishioners, instead reside (“Lig-
the power of the hinges on the gates to heaven,
gen”) in London during Lent (the busiest time of
where Christ rules. The word “cardinals” also plays
the Christian year) and at other times (“ellis”).

on a double meaning, referring to the cardinals of
6. In the courts, those serving the king claim
the papal consistory.

dues arising to him from guardianship cases

2. I.e., but of the cardinals (or church officials)
 (“wardes”), meetings held in each ward (“warde-
who grabbed (“kaughte”) that name, and presumed
motes”), lost property (“weyves”) and stray animals
to claim they have the power St. Peter had to name
 (“streyves”). The Exchequer (“Cheker”) was the
a pope, I will not find fault with them. Perhaps an
commission to receive revenue and the audit of
allusion to the French cardinals who elected an
accounts; the Chancery (“Chauncelrie”) heard
antipope in 1378 (Clement VII, a Frenchman),
petitions addressed to the king.

thus creating the Great Schism.

7. Condemn. A consistory court was held by a

3. Election of popes; also, a reference to salva-
bishop or his official to consider any case in which
tion.

an ecclesiastic was involved.

75

FROM PEARL 1

1375-1400

Perle plesaunte to prynces paye
Pearl,² the precious prize of a
king,

To clanky clos in golde so clere
Chastely set in cherished gold,
Oute of Oryent I hardyly saye
In all the East none equalling,
Ne proued I neuer her precios
No peer to her could I behold.

pere

5 So rounde so reken in vche arave
So round, so rare, a radiant thing,
So smal so smo[^]e her syde³ were
So smooth she was, so small of
mold,

Quere so euer I jugged gemme³
Wherever I judged gems

gaye

glimmering

I sette hyr sengely in synglure
I set her apart, her price untold.

Alias I leste hyr in on erbere

Alas, I lost her in earth's green
fold;

10 f[>]ur³ gresse to grounde hit fro me

Through grass to the ground, I

yot

searched in vain.

I dewyne fordolke of luf daun-

I languish alone; my heart grows

gere

cold

Of þat pryuy perle wythouten spot For my precious pearl
without a

stain.³

Syben in bat spote hit fro me

Since in that spot it slipped from

sprange

me,

Ofte haf I wayted wyschande bat

I lingered, longing for that delight

wele

15 f>at wont wat³ whyle deuoyde my

That from my sins once set me

wrange

free

& heuen my happe & al my hele

And my happiness raised to the

highest height.

Pat dot³ bot brych my hert grange

Her going wounds me grievously;

1 . *Pearl* was written in the latter half of the four-

side with the original in Middle English (they mod-

teenth century by an unknown author who prob-ernized only the capitalization). They have ably lived in the northwest midlands of England. attempted to remain true to the original form, The one manuscript of the poem still extant also retaining, where possible, the four-beat alliterative contains the poems *Sir Gawain and the Green line*, rhyme pattern, and repetition of words and *Knight, Purity*, and *Patience*, all generally thought phrases of the original. The first five stanzas of the to be by the same author. *Pearl*, in the form of a poem, reproduced here, recount the narrator's dream vision, a popular convention of the time, is grief at the loss of his Pearl, and the beginning of an elegy on the death of a child, perhaps the poet's the "slumber" that will produce his dream vision of daughter. Many scholars, however, read the poem the maid. (The roman numeral I above our selec- as an allegory. In the poem's 101 stanzas, the tion marks the first five-stanza section of the orig- dreamer carries on a dialogue with the Pearl inal text.)

maiden, who instructs him in Christian doctrine.

2. In medieval tradition, the pearl symbolizes the The intricate pattern of the poem involves rhyme pure and precious.

and repeated words and phrases that link the stan-

3. The translators note that the word "spot" is

zas, forming, finally, a circular structure. The
used in the first five stanzas, but because of the
translation used here was done by Sara deFord and
limited rhyme possibilities, they have substituted
a group of her students at Goucher College. The
“stain” in the terminal position.

translators chose to print their translation side by

76 / P E A R L

My breste in bale bot bolne &
It burns my breast both day and
bele
night.

3et J)o3t me neuer so swete a
Yet I never imagined a melody
sange

So sweet as she, so brief, and
20 As stulle stounde let to me stele
slight.

But memory flowed through my
For sojje J)er fleten to me fele
mind’s sight:

I thought how her color in clods4
To Jjenke hir color so clad in clot
had Iain

O dust that dims what once was
O moul f)ou marre3 a myry iuele
bright,

My precious pearl without a stain.

My priuy perle wythouten spotte

3

25 Pat spot of spyse³ [mo] t nede³

Rare spices on that spot must

sprede

spread:

Per such ryche³ to rot is runne

Such riches there to rot have run,

Blome³ blayke & blwe & rede

Blooms of yellow and blue and

red,

Per schyne³ ful schyr agayn $\text{f} > \text{e}$

Their sheen a shimmer against

sunne

the sun.

Flor & fryte may not be fede

Flower and fruit nor faded nor

dead,

30 Per hit doun drof in moIde³

Where the pearl dropped down in

dunne

mouldering dun;⁵

For vch gresse mot grow of

Each grass from a lifeless grain is

grayne³ dede

bred,

No whete were elle³ to wone³

Else to harvest no wheat were

wonne

won:6

Of goud vche goude is ay bygonne Always from good is good begun.

So semly a sede mo3t fayly not

So seemly7 a seed could not die in

vain,

35 Pat spryg ande spyce3 vp ne

That sprig nor spice there would

sponne

be none

Of Jjat precios perle wythouten

Of that precious pearl without a

spotte

stain.

To Jjat spot Jjat I in speche

To the spot which I in speech

expoun

portray,

I entred in Jjat erber grene

I entered in that arbor green,

In Augoste in a hy3 seysoun

In August on a holy day,

40 Quen corne is coruen wyth

When the corn is cut with sickles

croke3 kene

keen.

On huyle £>er perle hit trendeled

On the little rise where my pearl
doun

rolled away,

4. I.e., clods of earth.

Except a corn of wheat fall into the ground and

5. “Molde³ dunne” may be translated “dark clods
die, it abideth alone; but if it die, it bringeth forth
of earth.”

much fruit” (John 12.24).

6. Christ uses this metaphor in reference to his

7. Beautiful.

own Crucifixion: “Verily, verily, I say unto you,

T H E S M I L I N G M O U T H / 7 7

Schadowed f)is \v0rte³ ful schyre

The fairest flowers formed a

& schene

screen:

Gilofre gyngure & gromylyoun

Gillyflower, ginger, gromwell

spray,

& pyonys powdered ay bytwene

With peonies⁸ powdered in

between.

45 3if hit wat³ semly on to sene

If they were seemly to be seen,

A fayr reflayr 3et fro hit flot

Far sweeter the scents from that

domain,

Per wonys J)at worjyly I wot &
More worthy her dwelling, well I
wene
ween,9

My precious pearl without a stain.
My precious perle wythouten spot
5

I mourned, hands clenched,
Bifore f)at spot my honde I
before that mound,
spenn[e]d

For the piercing cold of grief had
50 For care ful colde f)at to me ca3t
caught

Me in the doleful dread and
A deuely dele in my hert denned
bound

My heart, though reason solace
Pa3 resoun sette myseluen sa3t
sought.

I longed for my pearl, locked in
I playned my perle f)at f)er wat3
the ground,
spenned

While fierce contentions in me
Wyth fyrte skylle3 J)at faste fa3t
fought.

55 Pa3 kynde of Kryst me comfort

In Christ, though comfort could
kenned
be found,
My wretched will was still
My wreched wyllle in wo ay
wra3te
dистраught.

I felle vpon f)at floury fla3t
I fell upon that flowery plot.
Suche odour to my herne3 schot
Such odors eddied in my brain,
I slode vpon a slepyng-sla3te
To sudden slumber I was brought
60 On f)at prec[i]os perle wythouten
By that precious pearl without a
spot
stain.

CHARLES D'ORLEANS

1391-1465

The Smiling Mouth¹

The smiling mouth and laughing eyen⁰ gray, *eyes*
The breastes round and long small⁰ armes twain,⁰ *slender/two*
The handes smooth, the sides straight and plain,
Your feetes lit⁰—what should I further say? *little*

8. All these plants are types of spices; spices were 1. This lyric is a rondel, with a refrain in lines 1

precious plants valued for their rich scent. and 2, 7 and 8, and 13 and 14.

9. Know.

78 / CHARLES D'ORLEANS

5 It is my craft⁰ when ye are far away *practice*
To muse thereon in stinting⁰ of my pain— *soothing*
The smiling mouth and laughing eyen gray,
The breastes round and long small armes twain.
So would I pray you, if I durst or may,
10 The sight to see as I have seen,
Forwhy⁰ that craft me is most fain,⁰ *because /pleasing*
And will be to the hour in which I day⁰— *die*
The smiling mouth and laughing eyen gray,
The breastes round and long small armes twain.
Oft in My Thought
Oft in my thought full busily have I sought,
Against the beginning of this fresh new year,
What pretty thing that I best given ought
To her that was mine hearte's lady dear;²
5 But all that thought bitane⁰ is fro⁰ me clear *taken/from*
Since death, alas, hath closed her under clay
And hath this world fornaked⁰ with her here— *stripped bare*
God have her soul, I can no better say.
But for to keep in custom, lo, my thought,
10 And of my seely⁰ service the manere, *simple*
In showing als⁰ that I forget her not *also*
Unto each wight,³ I shall to my powere
This dead her serve⁴ with masses and prayere;
For all too foul a shame were me, mafay,⁰ *by my faith*
15 Her to forget this time that nigheth⁰ near— *draws*
God have her soul, I can no better say.

To her profit now nis0 there to be bought *is not*
 None other thing all0 will I buy it dear;⁵ *although [I]*
 Wherefore, thou Lord that lordest0 all aloft, *rules*
 20 My deedes take, such as goodness steer,
 And crown her, Lord, within thine heavenly sphere
 As for most truest lady, may I say,
 Most good, most fair, and most benign of cheer0—
countenance
 God have her soul, I can no better say.
 25 When I her praise, or praising of her hear,
 Although it whilom0 were to me pleasere, *formerly*
 It fill enough it doth mine heart today,
 And doth0 me wish I clothed had my bier⁶— *makes*
 God have her soul, I can no better say.

2. The occasion of the poem is the approaching that he does not forget his lady.

New Year; New Year's Day was the day for gift-

4. I.e., I will serve this dead woman ("her") to the giving during the Middle Ages. The speaker asks best of my power.

what gift he can give his love, who is dead. He can

5. I.e., if anything else could help her, I would pay endow Masses, but the poem itself, a *ballade*, is a any cost.

symbolic gift in memory of the lady.

6. A movable stand on which a corpse is placed

3. Person; the speaker wants to show everyone before burial; i.e., I wish that I had died.

ANONYMOUS LYRICS OF THE
FIFTEENTH CENTURY 1

Adam Lay I-bounden²

Adam lay i-bounden, bounden in a bond;
Foure thousand winter³ thought he not too long.
And all was for an apple, an apple that he took,
As clerkes linden written in their book.

5 Ne hadde the apple taken been,⁴ the apple taken been,
Ne hadde never our Lady aye been heavene queen.

Blessed be the time that apple taken was,
Therefore we moun^o singen, "*Deo gracias!*"⁵

I Sing of a Maiden⁶

I sing of a maiden

That is makeles:⁷

King of alle kinges

To⁰ her sone she chees.⁰ *for/chose*

He cam also⁰ stille⁰ *as/silently*

T h e r⁰ his moder⁰ was *where / mother*

As dewe in Aprille

That falleth on the gras.

He cam also stille

To his modres bowr⁸

As dewe in Aprille

That falleth on the flowr.

1. The poems in this section do not appear in
became associated, as they are today, with the feast
chronological order, since they cannot be dated

of Christmas.

with any certainty. Like the “Anonymous Lyrics of
2. This poem survives only in a fifteenth-century
the Thirteenth and Fourteenth Centuries” (see
manuscript collection of carols. It explores the the-
pp. 15—19), these works often blend religious and
ological idea of the *felix culpa* (Latin, “happy
secular themes; the line between sacred love and
fault”). The poet, in a kind of humorous, courtly
erotic love is particularly ambiguous in poems such
gesture, identifies the happy event not as human-
as “I Have a Young Sister” and “The Corpus Christi
kind’s redemption but as the elevation of the Virgin
Carol.”

Mary as queen of heaven. *I-bounden*: bound.

English poems explicitly titled “carols” first

3. One tradition placed the Creation at about
appear in fifteenth-century manuscripts. In earlier
4000 **B.C.E.**

centuries, the term usually denoted a ring-dance

4. I.e., if the apple had not been taken.

accompanied by singing that originated in France

5. “Thanks be to God!” (Latin).

(the French *carole*) and was fashionable during

6. This poem celebrating the purity of Christ’s

Chaucer’s lifetime. In the fifteenth and sixteenth

mother and the mystery of Christ’s birth from a

centuries, carols were poems with uniform stanzas

virgin appears in a manuscript containing a variety often rhyming *aaab* and linked by the last rhyme of English ballads and carols as well as several to a “burden,” or refrain. The burden typically songs in Latin.

appears at the beginning of the carol and after each

7. A triple pun: mateless, matchless, and spotless.

stanza. Carols initially treated many subjects, even

8. A covert made of leafy branches; also, a bed-celebrations of battle victories as in the “Carol chamber.

of Agincourt” below. Gradually, however, they

80 / ANONYMOUS LYRICS OF THE FIFTEENTH CENTURY

He cam also stille

Ther his moder lay

As dewe in Aprille

That falleth on the spray. *budding twig*

Moder and maiden⁰ *virgin*

Was nevere noon but she:

Well may swich⁰ a lady *such*

Godes moder be.

Out of Your Sleep Arise and Wake

*Noel, noel, noel,*⁹

Noel, noel, noel!

Out of your sleep¹ arise and wake,

For God m a n k i n d ⁰ n o w h a t h i - t a k e , ^o *human nature / taken*

5 All oP a maid without any make:⁰ *from / match, mate*

Of all women she beareth the bell.²

Noel, noel, noel...

And through a maide fair and wise

Now man is made of full great price;⁰ *worth*

10 Now angels kneel to man's servise,

And at this time all this befell.

Noel, noel, noel...

Now man is brighter than the sun;

Now man in heaven on high shall wone;⁰ *dwell*

15 Blessed be God this game³ is begun,

And his mother empress of hell.⁴

Noel, noel, noel...

That⁰ ever was thrall,⁰ now is he free; *who /captive*

That ever was small, now great is she;

20 Now shall God deem⁰ both thee and me *judge*

Unto his bliss if we do well.

Noel, noel, noel...

Now man may to heaven wend;⁰ *go*

Now heaven and earth to him they bend;

9. A word sung as an expression of joy, originally

2. I.e., takes the prize; also, takes the foremost

to commemorate Christ's birth; in this carol,

position; also, with a pun on bearing a child.

included with music in two fifteenth-century man-

3. I.e., joy, delight.

uscripts, the refrain celebrates both Christ and his

4. According to medieval Catholic doctrine, Mary,

virgin mother.

as queen of heaven, had the power to intercede for
1. Figuratively, the repose of death; also, inactivity
those sent to hell.

or sluggishness.

I H A V E A Y O U N G S I S T E R / 81

25 He that was foe now is our friend.

This is no nay that I you tell.⁵

Noel, noel, noel ...

Now, blessed brother, grant us grace

At doomesday⁰ to see thy face *Judgment Day*

30 And in thy court to have a place,

That we may there sing noel.

Noel, noel, noel ...

I Have a Young Sister

I have a yong sister

Fer^o beyond the sea;

far

Manye be the druries⁰

love tokens

That she sente me.

5 She sente me the cherry

Withouten any stone,

And so she did the dove

Withouten any bone.

She sente me the brere⁰

briar

io Withouten any rinde;⁰

bark

She bade me love my lemman⁰

sweetheart

Without longing.

How should any cherry

Be withoute stone?

15 And how should any dove

Be withoute bone?

How should any brere

Be withoute rind?

How should I love my lemman

20 Without longing?

When the cherry was a flowr,

Then hadde it no stone.

When the dove was an ey,^o egg

Then hadde it no bone.

25 When the briar was unbred,⁶

Then hadde it no rinde.

When the maiden hath that she loveth,

She is without longinge.

5. I.e., what I tell you cannot be denied. 6. Unknown, i.e., still in the seed.

82 / ANONYMOUS LYRICS OF THE FIFTEEN
CENTURY

I Have a Gentle Cock

I have a gentle⁰ cock,

noble

Croweth me day;

He doth me risen⁷ early

My matins⁰ for to say.

morning prayers

I have a gentle cock,
Comen he is of great;0

lofty lineage

His comb is of red coral,
His tail is of jet.0

black

I have a gentle cock,
Comen he is of kind;0

good stock

His comb is of red coral,
His tail is of inde.0

His legges be of azure,
So gentle and so small;0

slender

His spurres0 are of silver white

back claws

Into the wortewale.8

His eyen0 are of crystal,

eyes

Locked0 all in amber;

set

And every night he percheth him

In my lady's chamber.

Timor Mortis9

In what estate1 so ever I be

Timor mortis conturbat me.

As I went on a merry morning,

I heard a bird both weep and sing.

5 This was the tenor⁰ of her talking: *meaning*

“*Timor mortis conturbat me.*”

I asked that bird what she meant.

“I am a musket² both fair and gent;⁰ *gentle, noble*

7. Makes me rise. *Croweth me day*: crows at day-

later poem by William Dunbar (see p. 86). This

break.

poem is unusual in combining the carol form with

8. I.e., down to the base or imbedded portion of

a narrative convention—that of the “unexpected

the spurs.

encounter”—typical of the *chanson d’aventure*

9. The title and refrain of this poem come from a

(French, “adventure song”).

prayer recited (in Latin) during the Catholic reli-

1. Condition; also, more specifically, an allusion

gious rite known as the Office of the Dead. “Since

to the medieval view of society as divided into three

I have been sinning daily and repenting not,” the

great “estates”: the nobility, the clergy, and the

prayer says, “the fear of death dismays me” (*timor*

workers.

mortis conturbat me). A number of other medieval

2. Male sparrowhawk.

lyrics use the same line as their refrain, as does the

THE CORPUS CHRISTICAROL / 83

For dread of death I am all shent:°

ruined

10 *Timor mortis conturbat me.*

“When I shall die, I know no day;
What country or place I cannot say;
Wherefore this song sing I may:

Timor mortis conturbat me.

15 “Jesu Christ, when he should die,
To his Father he gan^o say,

began [to]

‘Father,’ he said, ‘in Trinity,³

Timor mortis conturbat me

“All Christian people, behold and see:

20 This world is but a vanity
And replete with necessity.

Timor mortis conturbat me.

“Wake I or sleep, eate or drink,
When I on my last end^o do think,

death

25 For greate fear my soul do shrink:

Timor mortis conturbat me.

“God grant us grace him for to serve,
And be at our end when we sterve,^o

die

And from the fiend^o he us preserve.

Devil

30 *Timor mortis conturbat me.*”

The Corpus Christi Carol⁴

Lully, lullay, lully, lullay,⁵

The falcon hath born my make0 away.

mate

He bore him up, he bore him down,

He bore him into an orchard brown.

5 Lully, lullay, lully, lullay, ...

In that orchard there was a hall

That was hanged with purple and pall.°

black velvet

3. The Christian doctrine that God the Father, God the Son, and God the Holy Ghost form one true, eternal God, and some scholars believe that the poem dates from that century rather than from the fifteenth.

The late dating has given rise to a historical-

4. The title of this carol, Latin for “body of Christ,” allegorical interpretation that takes the knight as a alludes both to the sacrament of the Holy Communion and to a feast of the Church in celebration divorced his first wife, Katherine of Aragon, to marry Anne Boleyn, whose heraldic badge was a falcon. The appearance of the words on a stone in the poem’s final line has led some critics

to interpret the wounded knight as the crucified

5. This lullabylike refrain appears only in the version of the carol printed here, although several

version of a hero in an ancient fertility myth.

Other versions have been recorded by folk-song col-

The version of the carol printed here first

lectors.

appears in a sixteenth-century manuscript anthol-

84 / ANONYMOUS LYRICS OF THE FIFTEEN
CENTURY

Lully, lullay, lully, lullay, ...

And in that hall there was a bed,

10 It was hanged with gold so red.

Lully, lullay, lully, lullay, ...

And in that bed there lieth a knight,

His woundes bleeding day and night.

Lully, lullay, lully, lullay, ...

15 By that bed's side there kneeleth a may⁰ *maiden*

And she weepeth both night and day.

Lully, lullay, lully, lullay, ...

And by that, bed's side there standeth a stone,

Corpus Christi written thereon.

20 *Lully, lullay, lully, lullay, ...*

Western Wind⁶

Westron wynde, when wylle thou blow,

The smalle rayne down can rayne?

Cryst, yf my love were in my Armys⁰ *arms*

And I yn my bed a gayne!

A Carol of Agincourt⁷

Deo gracias, Anglia,

*Redde pro victoria.*⁸

Oure kinge went forth to Normandy
With grace and might of chivalry.⁰ *men at arms*

5 Ther God for him wrought mervelusly:
Wherefore Englonde may calle and cry.

Deo gracias ...

6. This lyric survives, with music, in an early accounts record a number of celebratory proces-
sixteenth-century manuscript. Although it seems
sions on Henry V's triumphant return to London
to be a secular love song, several Tudor composers
at which such songs were sting. "Carol" is used
used it in settings of the Mass.

here in the sense of a poem in short stanzas with

7. This is one of several poems in carol form cel-
a burden, or refrain, repeated after each stanza.

celebrating the English victory over the French at

8. Return thanks to God, England, for victory
Agincourt in 1415. This version is accompanied by
(Latin).

music for solo voices and chorus. Contemporary

THE SACRAMENT OF THE ALTAR / 85

He sette a sege, the sothe⁰ for to say,

truth

To Harflu towne with ryal array:⁹

10 That towne he wan and made affray⁰

terror

That Fraunce shall riwe⁰ till Domesday.⁰

rue / Judgment Day

Deo gracias ...

Than went oure kinge with alle his hoste0

army

Throwe Fraunce, for alle the Frenshe boste:1

15 He spared, no drede, of lest ne moste,2

Till he come to Agincourt coste.0

district

Deo gracias ...

Than, forsoth,0 that knight comely0

truly / handsome

In Agincourt feld0 he faught manly.

field

20 Thorw grace of God most mighty

He had bothe the felde and the victory.

Deo gracias ...

There dukis and erlis, lorde and barone,

Where take0 and slaine, and that well sone,0 *captured / quickly*

25 And summe were ladde0 into Lundone0

led / London

With joye and merthe and grete renone.0

pomp

Deo gracias ...

Now gracious God he save oure kinge,3

His peple and alle his well-willinge:0

friends

30 YeP him gode life and gode ending,

give

That we with merthe mowe0 safely singe,

may

Deo gracias ...

The Sacrament of the Altar⁴

It semes white and is red;

It is quike0 and semes dede;0

living / dead

It is fleshe and semes bred;

It is on0 and semes too;⁵

one

⁵ It is God body and no mo.0

more

9. Display of his military forces. Henry laid siege

3. I.e., may he save our king.

to and captured the French port of Harfleur shortly

4. This poem, which dates from about 1450,

before the victory at Agincourt.

examines the paradox of the sacrament of the

1. I.e., in spite of French boasts or threats.

bread used in the Communion service. According

2. I.e., he spared, no doubt, neither the great nor

to the doctrine of transubstantiation, the bread

the humble. Some editors print this line without

becomes the living body of Christ.

punctuation, in which case it may be read: he

5. Two, probably a reference to the bread and the

avoided no dangers, great or small.

wine of the Eucharist.

86 / W I L L I A M D U N B A R

See! Here, My Heart⁶

O! Mankinde,

Have in thy minde

My Passion smert,⁰ *painful*

And thou shall finde

5 Me full kinde—

Lo! here my hert.

W I L L I A M D U N B A R

ca. 1460—ca. 1525

Lament for the Makaris¹

I that in heill⁰ was and gladnes,

health

Am trublit now with gret seiknes,^c

sickness

And feblit with infermite:

*Timor Mortis conturbat me.*²

5 Our plesance heir is all vane glory

This fals warld is bot transitory,

The flesche is brukle,⁰ the Fend is sle;^o

frail / sly

Timor Mortis conturbat me.

The state of man dois change and vary,

10 Now sound, now seik, now blith,^o now sary,

happy / sorry

Now dansand mery, now like to dee;³

Timor Mortis conturbat me.

No stait in erd^o heir standis sickir;⁰

earth / securely

As with the wynd wavis⁰ the wickir,c

waves / willow

Wavis this warldis vanite;

Timor Mortis conturbat me.

On to the ded gois all estatis,⁴

Princis, prelotis,⁰ and potestatis,⁰

prelates / potentates

Baith riche and pur⁰ of al degre;

poor

Timor Mortis conturbat me.

He takis the knychtis⁰ in to feild,

knights

Anarmit^under helme and scheid;

armed

6. This poem is an early type of “emblem poem,”

2. The fear of death dismays me (Latin); a line
a verse that interprets a symbolic picture. In a man-
from the liturgical Office of the Dead. Cf. the
uscript from the early 1500s, the poem appears to
anonymous fifteenth-century poem with the same
the right of the face of a naked and wounded
refrain (p. 82).

Christ, who is offering a kneeling supplicant a large

3. I.e., now dance and be merry, now likely to die.

and bleeding heart (“hert”) with a wound in its

4. Estates. Society was said to be divided into
center.

three estates, or groups: those who ruled, those

1. Makers, poets.

who prayed, and those who labored.

L A M E N T F O R T H E M A K A R I S / 8 7

Victour he is at all mellie;0

battles

Timor Mortis conturbat me.

25 That **Strang0** unmercifull tyrand

strong

Takis on the moderis0 breist sowkand0

mother's / sucking

The bab, full of benignite;0

gentleness

Timor Mortis conturbat me.

He takis the campion0 in the stour,0

champion / battle

30 The capitane closit in the tour,°

tower

The lady in bour0 full of bewte;

bower, chamber

Timor Mortis conturbat me.

He sparis no lord for his piscense,0

power

Na clerk0 for his intelligence;

scholar

35 His awful strak0 may no man fie;

stroke

Timor Mortis conturbat me.

Art magicianis,5 and astrologgis,0

astrologers

Rethoris,0 logicianis, and theologgis,

rhetoricians

Thame helpis no conclusionis sle;6

40 Timor Mortis conturbat me.

In medicyne the most0 practicianis,

greatest

Leichis,0 surriganis, and phisicianis,

doctors

Thame self fra ded^o may not supple;0

death / deliver

Timor Mortis conturbat me.

45 I see that makaris amang the laif0

remainder

Playis heir ther pageant, syne0 gois to grave;

then

Sparit0 is nocht0 ther faculte;

spared / not

Timor Mortis conturbat me.

He hes done petuously0 devour

piteously

50 The noble Chaucer, of makaris flour,0

flower

The Monk of Bery, and Gower, all thre;7

Timor Mortis conturbat me.

The gude Syr Hew of Eglintoun,8

And eik^o Heryot, and Wyntoun,

also

55 He hes tane out of this cuntre;

Timor Mortis conturbat me.

That scorpion fell hes done infeck⁰

infected

Maister Johne Clerk and James Afflek,

Fra ballat making and tragidie;

60 *Timor Mortis conturbat me.*

5. Those practicing the art of magic.

Amantis.

6. I.e., no clever conclusions help them.

8. The first in a list of Scots poets, some well-

7. Three English poets. *The Monk of Bery*: John known (e.g., Dunbar's contemporary Robert Henry Lydgate (1370?—1451?) wrote a great variety of rison, line 82), some obscure; Dunbar presented verse; he was considered second only to Chaucer Walter Kennedy (line 89) as his adversary in the during the sixteenth century. *Gower*: John Gower poem *Flyting of Dunbar and Kennedie*.

(1325?—1408), whose main poem is the *Confessio*

88 / W I L L I A M D U N B A R

Holland and Barbour he hes berevit;

Allace!^o that he nocht with us levit *alas*

Schir Mungo Lokert of the Le;^o *lea, meado-w*

Timor Mortis conturbat me.

65 Clerk of Tranent eik he hes tane,

That maid the Anteris⁰ of Gawane; *adventures*

Sir Gilbert Hay endit has he;9

Timor Mortis conturbat me.

He has Blind Hary, and Sandy Traill

70 Slaine with his schour° of mortal hail, *shower*

Quhilk0 Patrick Johnestoun myght nocht *which*
flee;

Timor Mortis conturbat me.

He has reft Merseir his endite,1

That did in luf so lifly write,

75 So schort, so quyk, of sentence hie;° *lively*

Timor Mortis conturbat me.

He hes tane Roull of Aberdene,

And gentill Roull of Corstorphin;

Two bettir fallowis did no man se;

so *Timor Mortis conturbat me.*

In Dunfermelyne he has done0 roune° *made / a circuit*

With Maister Robert Henrisoun;

Schir Johne the Ros embrast hes he;

Timor Mortis conturbat me.

85 And he hes now tane, last of aw,

Gud gentill Stobo and Quintyne Schaw,2

Of quham° all wichtis0 has pete:° *whom / creatures / pity*

Timor Mortis conturbat me.

Gud Maister Walter Kennedy

90 In poynt of dede lyis veraly,3

Gret reuth° it wer that so suld° be; *pity /should*

Timor Mortis conturbat me.

Sen he hes all my brether0 tane, *brothers*

He will nocht lat me lif alane,
95 On forse I man his nyxt pray be;⁴

Timor Mortis conturbat me.

9. The “clerkly” author is not known, but Arthur-Mercer.

rian romances focusing on the hero Gawain were

2. A Scots poet. *Stobo*: a name for John Reid, popular in Scotland. Sir Gilbert Hay (d. 1456) priest and secretary to James II, III, and IV.

translated from French the poem *The Buik* [i.e.,

3. I.e., lies truly on the point of death.

Book] of *Alexander*.

4. Of necessity, I must be his next prey.

1. I.e., Death has taken the practice of poetry from

D O N E I S A B A T T L E / 8 9

Sen for the deid remeid^o is none, *remedy*

Best is that we for dede dispone,^o *prepare*

Eftir our deid that lif may we;

100 *Timor Mortis conturbat me.*

1508

Done Is a Battle⁵

Done is a battle on^o the dragon black, with

Our campion⁶ Christ confoundit has his force;

The yettis^o of hell are broken with a crack, *gates*

The sign triumphal raisit is of the cross,

5 The devillis trymmillis^o with hiddous voce, *tremble*

The saulis^o are borrowit^o and to the bliss can go, *souls / ransomed*

Christ with his bloud our ransonis dois indoce:0 *endorse*

Surrexit Dominus de sepulchro

Dungan0 is the deidly dragon Lucifer, *beaten*

The cruewall serpent with the mortal stang;

The auld kene tiger, with his teith on char,8

Whilk0 in a wait has lyen for us so lang, *which*

Thinking to grip us in his clawis **Strang;**

The merciful Lord wald0 nocht0 that it were so, *would/not*

He made him for to failye0 of that fang.0 *fail /prey*

Surrexit Dominus de sepulchro.

He for our saik that sufferit to be slane,

And lyk a lamb in sacrifice was dicht,0 *prepared*

Is lyk a lion rissen up agane,

20 And as a gyane0 raxit0 him on hicht;0 *giant /stretched /
high*

Sprungin is Aurora9 rarious0 and bricht, *radiant*

On loft is gone the glorious Apollo,1

The blissful day departit0 fro the nicht: *separated*

Surrexit Dominus de sepulchro.

25 The grit victour again is rissen on hicht,

That for our querrell to the deth was woundit;

The sun that wox° all pale now shynis bricht, *waxed*

And, derkness clearit,0 our faith is now refoundit;0 *cleared /
reestablished* The knell of mercy fra the heaven is soundit,

30 The Christin are deliverit of their wo,

The Jowis0 and their errour are confoundit: **Jews**

Surrexit Dominus de sepulchro.

5. This Easter hymn depicts Christ's Resurrection

7. The Lord is risen from the grave (Latin); the

as a battle with the Devil. Dunbar draws on the line echoes the opening of the Matins, or Easter-narrative of the harrowing of hell in the apocryphal morning church service.

Gospel of Nicodemus, in which Christ journeys to 8. Ajar, i.e., with his mouth open.

hell to free virtuous souls born before his coming.

9. Roman goddess of the dawn.

6. Champion, i.e., one who fights on behalf of

1. Greek and Roman god of sunlight, prophecy, another.

music, and poetry.

90 / J O H N S K E L T O N

The fo is chasit, the battle is done ceis,^o
ceased

The presone broken, the jevellouris^o fleit^o and
jailers / fled

flemit;^o
banished

The weir^o is gon, confermit is the peis,
war

The fetteris^o lowsit^o and the dungeon temit,^o
shackles / loosed / emptied

The ransoun made, the prisoneris redeemit;

The field is won, owrecomen is the fo,

Dispuilit^o of the treasure that he yemit:^o

despoiled / kept

Surrexit Dominus de sepulchro.

ca. 1510

JOHNSKELTON

1460-1529

Mannerly Margery Milk and Ale¹

Ay, beshrew⁰ you! by my fay,[°] *curse /faith*

These wanton clerks be nice² alway!

Avaunt,[°] avaunt, my popinjay!³ *get out*

What, will ye do nothing but play?

⁵ Tilly vally, straw,⁴ let be I say!

Gup, Christian Clout, gup, Jack of the Vale!⁵

With Mannerly Margery Milk and Ale.

By God, ye be a pretty pode,[°]

toad

And I love you an whole cart-load.⁶

¹⁰ Straw, James Foder,⁷ ye play the fode,[°]

deceiver

I am no hackney⁸ for your rod:[°]

riding

Go watch a bull,⁹ your back is broad!

Gup, Christian Clout, gup, Jack of the Vale!

With Mannerly Margery Milk and Ale.

¹⁵ Ywis[°] ye deal uncourteously; *for certain*

What, would ye frumple⁰ me? now fy! *wrinkle, muss up*

1. Two copies of this poem survive, with consid-

3. Parrot; a symbol of vanity.

erable variation between them. Critics disagree

4. Expressions of contemptuous rejection: fiddle-

about which lines belong to which speaker and

sticks, poppycock, nonsense.

about what “happens” between the third and

5. A contemptuous name. *Gup*: contracted (?)

fourth stanzas. The refrain could be divided

from *go up*; sometimes an exclamation of derision,

between Margery and James, or it could be spoken

remonstrance, or surprise, sometimes a command

by a third party, as is suggested by an early musical

(get along, get out; get up; also, a command to a

setting that makes the poem a song for three

horse, giddy up). *Christian Clout*: an epithet for a

voices.

rural fellow.

The title is an epithet for a servant girl. *Man-*

6. I.e., a large amount.

nerly: well-mannered, with a possible ironic reflec-

7. James weed, ragwort, useless stuff. *Straw*:

tion on a serving girl’s aspirations.

expression of contempt.

2. Variously meant foolish, finicky, or lascivious.

8. I.e., an ordinary riding horse (as distinct from a

“Clerk” originally denoted a member of the clergy

warhorse or a plowhorse); a prostitute.

(from Latin, *clericus*), but it became a general

9. I.e., go look after farm animals.

name for a scholar or student.

T o M I S T R E S S M A R G A R E T H U S S E Y / 9 1

What, and ye shall be my pigesnye?1

By Christ, ye shall not, no hardely:0 *indeed*
I will not be japed² bodily!
20 Gup, Christian Clout, gup, Jack of the Vale!
With Mannerly Margery Milk and Ale.
Walk forth your way, ye cost me nought;
Now have I found that I have sought:
The best cheap flesh that ever I bought.
25 Yet, for his love that all hath wrought,
Wed me, or else I die for thought.
Gup, Christian Clout, your breath is stale!
Go, Mannerly Margery Milk and Ale!
Gup, Christian Clout, gup, Jack of the Vale!
30 With Mannerly Margery Milk and Ale.

ca. 1 4 9 5 1 5 2 3

To Mistress Margaret Hussey³
Merry Margaret,⁴
As midsummer flower,
Gentle as falcon
Or hawk of the tower:⁵
5 With solace and gladness,
Much mirth and no madness,
All good and no badness;
So joyously,
So maidenly,
10 So womanly
Her demeaning⁰ *demeanour*
In every thing,
Far, far passing

That I can indite,⁰ *compose*

15 Or suffice to write

Of Merry Margaret

As midsummer flower,

Gentle as falcon

Or hawk of the tower.

20 As patient and still

And as full of good will

As fair Isaphill,⁶

1. Pet; also, a common flower.

Hussey; she died in August 1492. *Mistress*: title for

2. Tricked, with a reference to sexual intercourse.

an upper-class married woman; a courteous form.

3. This poem is one of ten lyrics included in Skel-

4. Meaning daisy, the flower.

ton's *The Garland of Laurel*, in which the poet is

5. A hawk bred and trained to fly high.

crowned with a laurel wreath (the symbol of poetic

6. Hypsipyle, mythological daughter of Thaos,

achievement) by the countess of Surrey and her

king of Lemnos, saved her father when the women

ladies; in return, he writes a poem in praise of each

of Lemnos killed the men of the island, bore twin

of them. "Margaret Hussey," while not identified

sons to Jason, and was then deserted by him. She

with any certainty, was perhaps the daughter of

endured slavery while searching for her father and

Simon Blount of Mangotsfield and married to John

her sons.

92 / JOHNSKELTON

Coriander,7

Sweet pomander,8

25 Good Cassander,9

Steadfast of thought,

Well made, well wrought,

Far may be sought

Ere that ye can find

30 So courteous, so kind

As Merry Margaret,

This midsummer flower,

Gentle as falcon

Or hawk of the tower.

1492, 15221523

From Colin Clout1

HEREAFTERFOLLOWETHALITTLEBOOK
CALLED COLIN CLOUT, COMPILED BY
MASTERSKELTON, POETLAUREATE. 2

*Quis consurget mecum adversus malignantes? aut quis stabit
mecum*

adversus operantes iniquitatem? Nemo, Domine!3

What can it avail4

To drive forth a snail,

Or to make a sail

Of an herring's tail;

5 To rhyme or to rail,

To write or to indict,

Either for delight

Or else for despight;
Or books to compile
10 Of divers manner of style,
Vice to revile
And sin to exile;

7. An aromatic herb, believed to soothe pain.

a blow with the hand. In this poem of more than

8. A mixture of perfumed or aromatic substances
twelve hundred lines, Skelton uses his verse as a
made into a ball.

satirical weapon against bishops and archbishops

9. Cassandra, mythological daughter of Priam,

of the English Church who placed worldly ambi-

king of Troy; another figure of steadfastness. After

tions above their ecclesiastical duties. Skelton's

she refused him as a lover, the god Apollo made

prime opponent is Cardinal Thomas Wolsey (ca.

her a prophet whom listeners would always disbe-

1475—1530), who rose to and fell from great power

lieve, as they did when she foretold the fall of Troy.

during Henry VIII's reign (1509-47), and who

1. Colin, from the Latin *colonus* (farmer), was a

began the dissolution of monasteries—a process of

stock name for a person of humble birth in the late

alleged “reform” that Skelton abhorred.

medieval and Renaissance periods; “clout” has

2. In 1488, Skelton received the honorable title of

multiple meanings relevant to the poetic persona

“laureate” from Oxford University.

that Skelton creates and that Spenser significantly

3. Who will rise up for me against the evil-doers?

imitates in his *Shepheardes Calender* (see “Aprill,”

or who will stand up for me against the workers of

p. 159). Skelton plays on meanings not only of

iniquity? (Latin); from Psalm 94.14. No one, lord

humble birth but also of satirical force: “clout”

(Latin); from John 8.11.

(variously spelled in this era) can signify a patch of

4. I.e., what good can it do. The first four lines

cloth such as those worn by vagrant clerks, a clot

and many others in the poem are based on well-

or clod of earth (recalling Langland’s persona Piers

known proverbs.

Plowman; see p. 71), a type of rough shoe, and also

COLINCLOUT / 93

To teach or to preach,

As reason will reach?

15 Say this, and say that,

His5 head is so fat,

He wotteth0 never what *knows*

Nor whereof he speaketh;

He crieth and he creaketh,

20 He prieth and he peeketh,6

He chides and he chatters,

He prates and he patters,

He clitters0 and he clatters, *chatters*

He meddles and he smatters,
25 He gloses⁰ and he flatters; *interprets*
Or if he speak plain,
Then he lacketh brain,
He is but a fool;
Let him go to school,
30 On a three footed stool
That he may down sit,
For he lacketh wit;
And if that he hit
The nail on the head,
35 It standeth in no stead;
The devil, they say, is dead,
The devil is dead.⁷
It may well so be,
Or else they would see
40 Otherwise, and flee
From worldly vanity,
And foul covetousness,
And other wretchedness,
Fickle falseness,
45 Variableness,
With unstableness.
And if ye stand in doubt
Who brought this rhyme about,
My name is Colin Clout.
50 I purpose⁰ to shake out *aim*
All my connying bag,

**Like a clerkly hag;⁸
For though my rhyme be ragged,
Tattered and jagged,
55 Rudely rain beaten,**

5. Apparently refers to the poet as seen by his critique of evil.

detractors, who scorn him whether he writes and

8. Wandering clerks (members of the clergy) typically carried pouches; although “hag” usually (line 26).

referred to an old woman, it was sometimes used

6. I.e., he pries into things and goads us (or, possibly, he pries and peeks into things).

“connyng” bag, to which the poet compares his

7. Based on a proverbial saying, these lines evidently express the reaction of an imaginary audience that doesn’t want to be bothered by Skelton’s duping through cleverness.

94 / J O H N S K E L T O N

Rusty and moth eaten,

If ye take well therewith,

It hath in it some pith.^o *meaning*

ca. 1521-22 ca. 1531

Phillip Sparow⁹

HEREAFTERFOLLOWETH[*SELECTIONS*
FROM]THEBOOKOF

PHILLIP SPAROW, COMPILED BY MASTERS
KELTON, POET LAUREATE. 1

Pla ce bo,2

Who is there, who?

Di le xi,3

Dame Margery;

5 Fa, re, my, my,4

Wherefore and why, why?

For the soul of Phillip Sparow,

That was late slain at Carow,

Among the Nuns Black,5

10 For that sweet soul's sake,

And for all sparrows' souls,

Set in our bead-rolls,6

Pater noster qui,

With an *Ave Mari*,7

15 And with the corner of a creed,8

The more shall be your meed,^o *reward*

Whan I remember again

How my Phillip was slain,

Never half the pain

20 Was between you twain,

Pyramus and Thisbe,9

As then befell^o to me: *happened*

9. This poem of approximately 1,380 lines begins

3. I love [the Lord, because he hath heard my

with a long elegy (lines 1—884) for the pet sparrow

voice] (Latin); from Psalm 114.1.

of a gentlewoman named Jane Scrope. (The sec-

4. Musical notes used at the close of the Office of
ond part eulogizes Jane, and in the third part Skel-
the Dead.

ton defends himself against a detractor.) Imitating

5. Refers to the black robes worn by members of
classical elegies for dead birds by Catullus and

the Benedictine order. *Carow*: Carrow Abbey,

Ovid and perhaps also the description of how a fox

where Jane Scrope went to live after her mother was

killed Chantekler's daughter in William Caxton's

widowed for the second time, in 1502. Aseniornun

early printed translation of the Dutch *Reynard the*

named Margery is mentioned in the records of this

Fox (1481), Skelton's poem makes Jane the first-

abbey, which was founded by the Benedictines.

person comic narrator of the first part, interweav-

6. List of people for whom the nuns prayed with

ing her lamenting verse (in the running-rhyme

the "beads" of their rosaries.

form known as "Skeltonic"; see "Versification,"

7. "Hail Mary"; the previous Latin phrase opens

pp. 2046—47) with Latin phrases from the solemn

the Lord's Prayer ("Our Father which ...").

Catholic funeral service called the Office of the

8. A prayer about Christian beliefs (from *credere*,

Dead.

Latin for “to believe”) that was typically printed,

1. See note 2, p. 92.

along with the “Hail Mary” and “Our Father,” on

2. I shall please [the Lord] (Latin); from Psalm

the first page of elementary reading books (prim-

114.9. “Placebo,” like all other citations of the

ers). Skelton probably refers to the “corner” of the

Psalms in this poem (cited according to their num-

“creed” because only part of that prayer usually fit

bering in the Catholic Bible known as the Vulgate),

on the first page of the primer.

is used in the Vespers, or evening service of the

9. Lovers tragically separated in a story told by

Office of the Dead. The spacing of the syllables

Ovid (*Metamorphoses*) and Chaucer (*Legend of*

suggests the plainsong music of the Mass.

Good Women), among others.

P H I L L I P S P A R O W / 9 5

I wept and I wailed,

The tears down hailed;

But nothing it availed¹

To call Phillip again,

Whom Gib our cat hath slain.

Gib, I say, our cat

Worowed² her on that

Which I loved best:

It can not be expressed

My sorowful heaviness,

But all without redress;
For within that stound,° *moment*
Half slumb'ring, in a sound⁰ *faint*
I fell down to the ground.
Unneth° I cast mine eyes *scarcely*
Toward the cloudy skies:
But when I did behold
My sparrow dead and cold,
No creature but that would
Have rewedūpon me, *had pity*
To behold and see
What heaviness did me pang;° *affect with pain*
Wherewith my hands I wrang,
That my sinews cracked,
As though I had been racked,⁰ *tortured*
So pained and so strained
That no life wellnigh remained.
I sighed and I sobbed,
For that I was robbed
Of my sparrow's life.
O maiden, widow, and wife,
Of what estate ye be,
Of high or low degree,
Great sorow than⁰ ye might see, *then*
And learn to weep at° me! *from*
Such pains did me fret,
That mine heart did beat,
My visage pale and dead,

Wan, and blue as lead;
The pangs of hateful death
Wellnigh had stopped my breath.
Though I have enrolled⁰ *inscribed*
750 A thousand new and old
Of these historious⁰ tales, *historical*
To fill bougets⁰ and males⁰ *bags/pouches*
With books that I have read,
Yet I am nothing sped ... 3

1. I.e., it did no good. sparrow.

2. Worried, i.e., bit. "Gib," short for Gilbert, was 3. I.e., I've gotten nowhere, a standard name for a cat, as Phillip was for a pet

96 / J O H N S K E L T O N

For, as I tofore⁰ have said, *before*
I am but a young maid,
And cannot in effect
My style as yet direct⁰ *control*
With English words elect:⁰ *-well chosen*
Our natural tongue is rude,⁴
And hard to be ennewed⁰ *revived*
With polished terms lusty;
Our language is so rusty,
So cankered,⁰ and so full *infected*
Of f r o w a r d s , ⁰ a n d s o d u l l , *badly formed -words*
That if I would apply⁰ *try*
To write ornately,⁵
I wot⁰ not where to find *know*
Terms to serve my mind.

Wherefore hold me excused
If I have not well perused⁰ *studied carefully*
Mine English half abused;
Though it be refused,
In worth I shall it take,⁶
And fewer wordes make.
But, for my sparrow's sake,
Yet as a woman may,
My wit I shall assay
An epitaph to write
In Latin plain and light,
Whereof the elegy
Followeth by and by:

*Flos volucrum formose, vale!*⁷

Philippe, sub isto

Marmore jam recubas,

Qui mihi carus eras.

Semper erunt nitido

Radiantia sidera cselo;

Impressusque meo

Pectore semper eris.

Per me laurigerum

Britonum Skeltonida vatem

Hsec cecinisse licet

4. Uneducated, lacking in polish.

birds, beautiful one! Phillip, you lie now beneath

5. With rhetorical embellishment of the kind

this marble, you who were dear to me. So long as

taught in the grammar schools, which focused dur-
the stars shine in the sky, you will always be
ing Skelton’s era on Latin rather than English com-
engraved in my heart. By me, Skelton, the laureate
position and which were generally closed to girls.
poet of Britain, these things could be sung under
6. I.e., I’ll take it in good part.

a feigned likeness. She whose bird you were is a
7. Although Jane claims to write the following
maiden of surpassing beauty. Nias [presumably
lines, Skelton implicitly (and perhaps ironically)
one of the classical water nymphs known as ‘nai-
undermines her claim by switching to Latin; he
ads’] was fair, but Jane is lovelier; Corinna was
explicitly asserts his own authorship of the entire
learned, but Jane is wiser.” Corinna is the woman
first part of the poem in lines 827—44. Translated,
who laments her dead parrot in Ovid’s *Amores*.

lines 826—43 go as follows: “Farewell, flower of

THE DOUGLASS TRAGEDY / 97

Ficta sub imagine texta.

Cujus eras volucris,

Praestanti corfore virgo:

840 Candida Nais erat,

Formosior ista Joanna est;

Docta Corinna fuit,

Sed magis ista sapit.

Bien m’en souvient.⁸

ca. 1505-07 ca. 1545

EARLY MODERN BALLADS 1

The Douglas Tragedy²

i

“Rise up, rise up, now, Lord Douglas,” she says,

“And put on your armor so bright;

Let it never be said that a daughter of thine

Was married to a lord under night.

2

5 “Rise up, rise up, my seven bold sons,

And put on your armor so bright,

And take better care of your youngest sister,

For your eldest’s awa’^o the last night.” *away*

3

He’s mounted her on a milk-white steed,

10 And himself on a dapple gray,

With a bugelet^o horn hung down by his side, *small bugle*

And lightly they rode away.

4

Lord William looked o’er his left shoulder,

To see what he could see,

15 And there he spied her seven brethren bold,

Come riding over the lea.^o *meadow*

8. I remember it well (French); Skelton uses this
tunes. While some ballads originated as folk songs
phrase elsewhere in his poetry.

and were written down (and/or printed) much later

I. The following ballads exist in numerous ver-

(sometimes centuries later), other ballads were initially made to be read—and sold—as printed objects. Even manuscript or printed versions of *Ballads* (five volumes, 1882-98). Child's different ballads, among the latter being the "broadsides" versions, designated by alphabetical letters here printed cheaply on single sheets and sold at fairs and in his edition, reveal different political and and by peddlers along the road, might sub-ethical interpretations of a given story. Ballads frequently be orally transmitted, since they could be often contain topical allusions, and most popular heard and memorized by the non- or partially lit- ballads from the fourteenth through the seven-
erate person.

teenth centuries, in contrast to later literary

2. From Child, No. 7.B.

instances of the genre, were sung to well-known

9 8 / E A R L Y M O D E R N B A L L A D S

5

"Light down, light down, Lady Margret," he said,

"And hold my steed in your hand,

Until that against your seven brethren bold,

20 And your father, I mak a stand."

6

She held his steed in her milk-white hand,

And never shed one tear,
Until that she saw her seven brethren fa', ° *fall*
And her father hard fighting, who loved her so dear.

7

25 “O hold your hand, Lord William!” she said,
“For your strokes they are wondrous sair; ° *sore*
True lovers I can get many a ane, ° *one*
But a father I can never get mair.” ° *more*

8

O she's ta'en out her handkerchief,
30 It was o ' t h e holland ° *sae* ° fine, *linen/so*
And aye she dighted ° her father's bloody wounds, *dressed*
That were redder than the wine.

9

“O choose, O choose, Lady Margret,” he said,
“O whether will ye gang ° or bide?”
35 “I'll gang, I'll gang, Lord William,” she said,
“For ye have left me no other guide.”

io

He's lifted her on a milk-white steed,
And himself on a dapple gray,
With a bugelet horn hung down by his side,
40 And slowly they baith rade away.

II

O they rade on, and on they rade,
And a' by the light of the moon,
Until they came to yon wan ° water, *dark*
And there they lighted down.

12

45 They lighted down to tak a drink
Of the spring that ran sae clear,
And down the stream ran his good heart's blood,
And sair she 'gan to fear.

THE DOUGLAS TRAGEDY / 99

13

"Hold up, hold up, Lord William," she says,
50 "For I fear that you are slain."
"Tis naething but the shadow of my scarlet cloak,
That shines in the watersae plain."

14

O they rade on, and on they rade,
And a' by the light of the moon,
55 Until they came to his mother's ha'° door,
hall
And there they lighted down.

15

"Get up, get up, lady mother," he says,
"Get up, and let me in!
Get up, get up, lady mother," he says,
60 "For this night my fair lady I've win."

16

"O mak my bed, lady mother," he says,
"O mak it braid and deep, *broad*
And lay Lady Margret close at my back,
And the soulder I will sleep."

17

Lord William was dead lang 0 ere midnight,
long Lady Margret langered day,
And all true loversthatgothegither, 0 *together*
Maytheyhavemairluckthanthey!

18

Lord William was buried in St. Mary's kirk,^o
church 7 0 Lady Margret in Mary's choir;
Outo'thelady'sgravegrewabonnyredrose
,Andouto'theknight'sabriar.

19

Andtheytwamet, andtheytwaplat, 0 *plaited* A
ndfaintheywad^o benear; *would*
75 Anda'theworldmightken^o rightweelknow
Theyweretwaloversdear.

20

ButbyandradetheBlackDouglas,
Andwowbuthewasrough!
Forhepulledupthebonnybriar,
soAndflang'tinSt. Mary'sLoch. 0 *lake*

100 / EARLY MODERN BALLADS

Lord Randal3

i

"O where ha' you been, Lord Randal, my son?
And where ha' you been, my handsome young man?"
"I ha' been at the greenwood; mother, mak my bed soon,
For I'm wearied wi' huntin', and fain wad0 lie down." *would*

2

5 "And wha^o met ye there, Lord Randal, my son? *who*
And wha met you there, my handsome young man?"
"O I met wi' my true-love; mother, mak my bed soon,

For I'm wearied wi' huntin', and fain wad lie down."

3

"And what did she give you, Lord Randal, my son?

10 And what did she give you, my handsome young man?"

"Eels fried in a pan; mother, mak my bed soon,

For I'm wearied wi' huntin', and fain wad lie down."

4

"And wha gat your leavin's, Lord Randal, my son?

And wha gat your leavin's, my handsome young man?"

15 "My hawks and my hounds; mother, mak my bed soon,

For I'm wearied wi' huntin', and fain wad lie down."

5

"And what becam of them, Lord Randal, my son?

And what becam of them, my handsome young man?"

"They stretched their legs out and died; mother, mak my bed soon,

20 For I'm wearied wi' huntin', and fain wad lie down."

6

"O I fear you are poisoned, Lord Randal, my son!

I fear you are poisoned, my handsome young man!"

"O yes, I am poisoned; mother, mak my bed soon,

For I'm sick at the heart, and I fain wad lie down."

7

25 "What d' ye leave to your mother, Lord Randal, my son?

What d'ye leave to your mother, my handsome young man?"

"Four and twenty milk kye^o; mother, mak my bed soon, *kine, cattle*

For I'm sick at the heart, and I fain wad lie down."

8

“What d’ ye leave to your sister, Lord Randal, my son?
30 What d’ ye leave to your sister, my handsome young man?”

3. Child, No. 12.A.

THE THREE RAVENS / 101

**“My gold and my silver; mother, mak my bed soon,
For I’m sick at the heart, and I fain wad lie down.”**

9

**“What d’ ye leave to your brother, Lord Randal, my son?
What d’ ye leave to your brother, my handsome young
man?”**

35 **“My houses and my lands; mother, mak my bed soon,
For I’m sick at the heart, and I fain wad lie down.”**

10

**“What d’ ye leave to your true-love, Lord Randal, my son?
What d’ ye leave to your true-love, my handsome young
man?”**

**“I leave her hell and fire; mother, mak my bed soon,
40 For I’m sick at the heart, and I fain wad lie down.”**

The Three Ravens⁴

i

There were three ravens sat on a tree,

Down a down, hay down, hay down.

There were three ravens sat on a tree,

With a down,

5 There were three ravens sat on a tree,

They were as black as they might be.

With a down derry, derry, derry, down, down.

2

The one of them said to his mate,

“Where shall we our breakfast take?”

3

**10 “Down in yonder greene field,
There lies a knight slain under his shield.**

4

**“His hounds they lie down at his feet,
So well they can their master keep.**

5

**“His hawks they fly so eagerly,⁰ *fiercely*
15 There’s no fowl dare him come nigh.”**

6

**Down there comes a fallow⁵ doe,
As great with young as she might go.**

4. Child, No. 26; first printed in a songbook in line repeated in line 5.

1611. All stanzas follow the pattern of the first, 5. A species of pale-brownish or reddish-yellow with the refrain in lines 2, 4, and 7, and the first deer.

1 0 2 / E A R L Y M O D E R N B A L L A D S

7

She lift up his bloody head
And kissed his wounds that were so red.

20 She got him up upon her back
And carried him to earthen lake.⁰ *ditch*

9

She buried him before the prime;⁶
She was dead herself ere even-song time.

10

God send every gentleman

25 Such hawks, such hounds, and such a leman.° *lover, sweetheart*

The Twa Corbies⁷

i

As I was walking all alane,

I heard twa corbies making a mane;° *moan*

The taneunto the t'other say, *one*

“Where salP we gang⁰ and dine to-day?” *shall/go*

2

5 “In behint you auld° fail⁰ dyke,° *old / turf / ditch*

I wot° there lies a new slain knight; *know*

And naebody kens° that he lies there, *knows*

But his hawk, his hound, and lady fair.

3

“His hound is to the hunting gane,° *gone*

10 His hawk to fetch the wild-fowl hame,

His lady's ta'en another mate,

So we may mak our dinner sweet.

4

“Ye'll sit on his white hause-bane,° *neck hone*

And I'll pike° out his bonny blue een° *pick/eyes*

15 Wi' ae° lock o' his gowden⁰ hair *one /golden*

We'll theek° our nest when it grows bare. *thatch*

5

“Mony° a one for him makes mane, *many*

But nane° sall° ken° where he is gane; *none/shall /know*

O'er his white banes,⁰ when they are bare, *hones*

20 The wind sail blaw for evermair.”

6. According to Catholic Church ritual, the first Scott's *Minstrelsy of the Scottish Border* (1802-03), hour of the day, between 6 and 9 A.M. this ballad is a cynical version of "The Three Ravens." The two ravens. First printed in Sir Walter Scott's, "above."

SIR PATRICK SPENS / 103

Sir Patrick Spens⁸

The king sits in Dumferling town,
Drinking the blude-reid⁰ wine: *blood-red*
"O whar will I get guid⁰ sailor, *good*
To sail this ship of mine?"
Up and spak⁰ an eldern knicht, *spoke*
Sat at the king's richt knee:
"Sir Patrick Spens is the best sailor
That sails upon the sea."

3

The king has written a braid⁹ letter
And signed it wi' his hand,
And sent it to Sir Patrick Spens,
Was walking on the sand.

4

The first line that Sir Patrick read,
A loud lauch⁰ lauched he; *laugh*
The next line that Sir Patrick read,
The tear blinded his ee.^o *eye*

5

"O wha is this has done this deed,
This ill deed done to me,
To send me out this time o' the year,

To sail upon the sea?

6

“Mak haste, mak haste, my mirry men all,
Our guid ship sails the morn.”

“O say na sae,° my master dear, *so*
For I fear a deadly storm.

7

“Late, late yestre’en I saw the new moon
Wi’ the auld moon in hir arm,
And I fear, I fear, my dear master,
That we will come to harm.”

8. Child, No. 58.A. This ballad, first printed in
also named Margaret, was drowned with her escort
1765, tells a story that may be based on two voy-
on the way to a marriage in Scotland in 1290. In
ages of thirteenth-century Scots noblemen to con-
Child version H, Patrick is sent to Norway to bring
duct princesses to royal marriages. Margaret,
the king’s daughter home. In all versions, Patrick
daughter of Alexander III, was married in 1281 to
is sent to sea against his will.

Eric of Norway, and many members of her escort

9. Broad, i.e., long.

were drowned on the voyage home. Her daughter,

104 / EARLY MODERN BALLADS

O our Scots nobles were richt laith°

loath

To weet0 their cork-heeled shoon,c

wet / shoes

But lang or0 a' the play were played

before

Their hats they swam aboon.1

O lang,° lang may their ladies sit,

long

Wi' their fans into their hand,

Or ere they see Sir Patrick Spens

Come sailing to the land.

O lang, lang may the ladies stand

Wi' their gold kerns0 in their hair,

combs

Waiting for their ain dear lords,

For they'll see them na mair.

I I

Half o'er, half o'er to Aberdour

It's fifty fathom deep,

And there lies guid Sir Patrick Spens

Wi' the Scots lords at his feet.

The Unquiet Grave2

i

“The wind doth blow today, my love,

And a few small drops of rain;

I never had but one true-love,

In cold grave she was lain.

2

5 “I'll do as much for my true-love

As any young man may;

I'll sit and mourn all at her grave
For a twelvemonth and a day."

3

The twelvemonth and a day being up,
10 The dead began to speak:
"Oh who sits weeping on my grave,
And will not let me sleep?"

4

" 'T is I, my love, sits on your grave,
And will not let you sleep;

1. I.e., their hats swam above (them).

2. Child, No. 78.A; from a nineteenth-century version
collected in the journal *Folk Lore Record*.

T H E W I F E O F U S H E R ' S W E L L / 1 0 5

15 For I crave one kiss of your clay-cold lips,
And that is all I seek."

5

"You crave one kiss of my clay-cold lips,
But my breath smells earthy strong;
If you have one kiss of my clay-cold lips,
20 Your time will not be long.

6

" 'T is down in yonder garden green,
Love, where we used to walk,
The finest flower that e'er was seen
Is withered to a stalk.

7

25 "The stalk is withered dry, my love,

So will our hearts decay;
So make yourself content, my love,
Till God calls you away.”

The Wife of Usher's Well³

i

There lived a wife at Usher's Well,
And a wealthy wife was she;
She had three stout and stalwart sons,
And sent them o'er the sea.

They hadna been a week from her,

A week but barely ane,^o *one*

Whan word came to the carlin^o wife *old*

That her three sons were gane.

3

They hadna been a week from her,

A week but barely three,

Whan word came to the carlin wife

That her sons she'd never see.

4

“I wish the wind may never cease,

Nor fashes^o in the flood, *troubles*

15 Till my three sons come hame to me,

In earthly flesh and blood.”

3. Child, No. 79.A; from Sir Walter Scott's *Minstrelsy of the Scottish Border* (1802-03).

106 / EARLY MODERN BALLADS

14

It fell about the Martinmass,⁴

When nights are lang and mirk,0 *murky*
The carlin wife's three sons came hame,
20 And their hats were o' the birk.0 *birch*
6

It neither grew in syke0 nor ditch, *trench*
N o r yet in any sheugh;0 *furrow*
But at the gates o' Paradise,
That birk grew fair eneugh.

7

25 "Blow up the fire, my maidens,
Bring water from the well;
For a' my house shall feast this night,
Since my three sons are well."
And she has made to them a bed,
She's made it large and wide,
And she's ta'en her mantle0 her about, *cloak*
Sat down at the bed-side.

9

Up then crew the red, red cock,
And up and crew the gray;
The eldest to the youngest said,
" 'T is time we were away."
The cock he hadna crawled but once,
And clapped his wings at a',
When the youngest to the eldest said,
"Brother, we must awa'".
"The cock doth craw, the day doth daw,
The channerin'0 worm doth chide; *fretting*

Gin0 we be missed out o' our place, *if*
A sair0 pain we maun0 bide. *sore / must*

12

“Fare ye weel, my mother dear!
Fareweel to barn and byre!0 *cowhouse*
And fare ye weel, the bonny lass,
That kindles my mother’s fire!”

4. The feast of St. Martin (Pope Martin I, martyred 655 C.E.),
November 11.

B O N N Y B A R B A R A A L L A N / 1 0 7

Bonny Barbara Allan5

i

**It was in and about the Martinmas6 time,
When the green leaves were a falling,
That Sir John Graeme, in the West Country,
Fell in love with Barbara Allan.**

**He sent his man down through the town,
To the place where she was dwelling:**

**“O haste and come to my master dear,
Gin0 ye be Barbara Allan.” *if***

3

**O hooly,0 hooly rose she up, *slowly, gently*
To the place where he was lying,**

And when she drew the curtain by:

“Young man, I think you’re dying.”

4

**“O it’s I’m sick, and very, very sick,
And ‘tis a’ for Barbara Allan.”**

**“O the better for me ye s’^o never be, *shall*
Though your heart’s blood were a-spilling.**

5

**“O dinna⁰ ye mind, young man,” said she, *don’t*
“When ye was in the tavern a drinking,
That ye made the healths gae^o round and round, *go*
And slighted Barbara Allan?”**

6

**He turned his face unto the wall,
And death was with him dealing:
“Adieu, adieu, my dear friends all,
And be kind to Barbara Allan.”**

7

**25 And slowly, slowly raise she up,
And slowly, slowly left him,
And sighing said, she could not stay,
Since death of life had reft him.**

8

**She had not gane a mile but twa,
30 When she heard the dead-bell ringing,**

5. Child, No. 84.A; from the *Tea Table Miscellany* 6. See note
4, p. 106.

(1763).

108 / EARLY MODERN BALLADS

And every jow^o that the dead-bell geid,⁰ *stroke /gave*
It cried, “Woe to Barbara Allan!”

9

“O mother, mother, make my bed!

O make it soft and narrow!

35 Since my love died for me to-day,

I'll die for him to-morrow."

Mary Hamilton⁷

i

Word's gane to the kitchen,

And word's gane to the ha',^o *hall*

That Marie Hamilton gangs⁰ wi' bairn⁰ *goes/child*

To the hichest⁰ Stewart of a'. *highest*

He's courted her in the kitchen,

He's courted her in the ha',

He's courted her in the laigh cellar,⁸

And that was warst of a'.

3

She's tied it in her apron

And she's thrown it in the sea;

Says, "Sink ye, swim ye, bonny wee babe!

You'll ne'er get mair o' me."

4

Down then cam the auld queen,

Goud⁰ tassels tying her hair: *gold*

"O Marie, where's the bonny wee babe

That I heard greet⁰ sae⁰ sair?"⁰ *cry / so / sorely*

5

"There was never a babe intil^P my room, *in*

As little designs to be;

It was but a touch o' my sair⁰ side, *sore*

Come o'er my fair body."

7. Child, No. 173.A. This ballad, first cited in ballad form identify the baby's father as the king, 1790 and first printed in the early nineteenth century, probably alluding to Lord Darnley, Mary Stuart's frequently unfaithful second husband. Different versions of the ballad offer different views on Mary Papers, Mary, queen of Scotland, had four maids-in-waiting who bore her first name. The Protestant Child believes that this ballad alludes to events writer John Knox, hostile both to female rulers and that occurred in the Russian court of Peter the Great (1672-1725) rather than in that of Mary Stuart. the maids-in-waiting for murdering a child she had conceived illicitly with the court apothecary (*His-*

8. Low cellar, basement.
tory of the Reformation). Most versions of the story

MARY HAMILTON / 109

6

“O Marie, put on your robes o’ black,
Or else your robes o’ brown,
For ye maun0 gang wi’ me the night, *must*
To see fair Edinbro’ town.”

7

“I winna0 put on my robes o’ black, *won’t*
Nor yet my robes o’ brown;
But I’ll put on my robes o’ white,
To shine through Edinbro’ town.”
When she gaed0 up the Cannogate,⁹ *went*
She laughed loud laughters three;
But when she cam down the Cannogate
The tear blinded her ee.° *eye*

9

When she gaed up the Parliament stair,
The heel cam aff her shee;
And lang or0 she cam down again *before*
She was condemned to dee.

10

When she cam down the Cannogate,
The Cannogate sae free,
Many a lady looked o’er her window,
40 Weeping for this lady.

11

“Ye need nae weep for me,” she says,
“Ye need nae weep for me;
For had I not slain mine own sweet babe,
This death I wadna dee.

12

45 “Bring me a bottle of wine,” she says,
“The best that e’er ye ha’e,
That I may drink to my weil-wishers,
And they may drink to me.

13

“Here’s a health to the jolly sailors,

50 That sail upon the main;

Let them never let on to my father and mother

But what I’m coming hame.

9. The Canongate is the Edinburgh street leading which was both jail and judicial chamber and, on uphill from Holyrood House (where the queen and occasion, the place where Parliament (line 33) sat.

the “four Maries” of line 69 lived) to the Tolbooth,

1 1 0 / E A R L Y M O D E R N B A L L A D S

1 4

“Here’s a health to the jolly sailors,

That sail upon the sea;

55 Let them never let on to my father and mother

That I cam here to dee.

15

“Oh little did my mother think,

The day she cradled me,

What lands I was to travel through,

60 What death I was to dee.

16

“Oh little did my father think,

The day he held up me,

What lands I was to travel through,

What death I was to dee.

17

65 “Last night I washed the queen’s feet,

And gently laid her down;

And a' the thanks I've gotten the night¹
To be hanged in Edinbro' town!

18

“Last night there was four Maries,
70 The night there'll be but three;
There was Marie Seton, and Marie Beton,
And Marie Carmichael, and me.”

Get Up and Bar the Door²

It fell about the Martinmas³ time,
And a gay time it was then,
When our goodwife got puddings to make,
And she's boiled them in the pan.

2

5 The wind sae^o cauld blew south and north, so
And blew into the floor;

Quoth our goodman to our goodwife,

“Gae^o out and bar the door.” *go*

3

“My hand is in my hussyfskap.⁰ *housewife's work*

10 Goodman, as ye may see;

1. I.e., tonight. *Ancient and Modern Scots Songs* (1769).

2. Child, No. 275.A; from David Herd, *The* 3. See note 4, p. 106.

GET UP AND BARTHE DOOR / 1 1 1

An^o it should nae be barred this hundred year, *if*

It s'^o no be barred for me.” *shall*

4

They made a paction⁰ 'tween them twa, *pact*

They made it firm and sure,
That the first word whae'er should speak,
Should rise and bar the door.

5

Then by there came two gentlemen,
At twelve o'clock at night,
And they could neither see house nor hall,
Nor coal nor candle-light.

6

"Now whether is this a rich man's house,
Or whether is it a poor?"
But ne'er a word wad0 ane o' them speak, *would*
For barring of the door.

7

And first they ate the white puddings,
And then they ate the black;
Though muckle0 thought the goodwife to hersel, *much, a lot*
Yet ne'er a word she spak.

Then said the one unto the other,
"Here, man, tak ye my knife;
Do ye tak afP the auld man's beard, *off*
And I'll kiss the goodwife."

9

"But there's nae water in the house,
And what shall we do then?"
"What ails ye at4 the pudding-broo,0 *-broth*
That boils into the pan?"

10

O up then started our goodman,
An angry man was he:
“Will ye kiss my wife before my een,^o *eyes*
And scald^o me wi’ pudding-bree?”^o *scald/-broth*
Then up and started our goodwife,
Gied^o three skips on the floor: *gave*
4. I.e., what’s the matter with.

1 1 2 / E A R L Y M O D E R N B A L L A D S

“Goodman, you’ve spoken the foremost word,
Get up and bar the door.”

The Bitter Withy⁵

i

As it fell out on a holy day,
The drops of rain did fall, did fall,
Our Saviour asked leave of his mother Mary
If he might go play at ball.

2

5 “To play at ball, my own dear son,
It’s time you was going or gone,
But be sure let me hear no complain of you,
At night when you do come home.”

3

It was upling scorn and downling scorn,⁶
10 Oh, there he met three jolly jerdins;^o *fellows*
Oh, there he asked the jolly jerdins
If they would go play at ball.

4

“Oh, we are lords’ and ladies’ sons,

Born in bower⁰ or in hall, *chamber*
15 And you are some poor maid's child
Borned in an ox's stall."

5

"If you are lords' and ladies' sons,
Borned in bower or in hall,
Then at last I'll make it appear
20 That I am above you all."

6

Our Saviour built a bridge with the beams of the sun,⁷
And over it he gone, he gone he.
And after followed the three jolly jerdins,
And drowned they were all three.

7

25 It was upling scorn and downling scorn,
The mothers of them did whoop and call,
5. This ballad was first published in full in 1905,
6. I.e., there was scorn everywhere ("upling,"
but is believed to be of much earlier origin. It
"downling").

describes an event found not in canonical Chris-
7. The miracle of the bridge of sunbeams derives
tian writings but rather in pseudo-evangelical
from a legend about Christ frequently found in
chronicles of Christ's childhood. *Withy*: willow.
medieval lives of the saints.

THE KNIGHT AND SHEPHERD'S DAUGHTER / 113

Crying out, "Mary mild, call home your child,
For ours are drowned all."

8

Mary mild, Mary mild, called home her child,
30 And laid our Saviour across her knee,
And with a whole handful of bitter withy
She gave him slashes three.

9

Then he says to his mother, "Oh! the withy, oh! the withy,
The bitter withy that causes me to smart, to smart,
35 Oh! the withy, it shall be the very first tree
That perishes at the heart."

The Knight and Shepherd's Daughter⁸

i

There was a shepherd's dochter
Kept sheep on yonder hill;
Bye cam a knicht frae⁰ the High College,⁹ *from*
And he wad⁰ hae^o his will. *would /have*

2

Whan he had got his wills o her,
His will as he has taen:⁰ *taken*
"Wad ye be sae^o gude⁰ and kind *so!good*
As tell to me your name?"¹

3

"Some ca's me Jock, some ca's me John,
10 Some disna⁰ ken⁰ my name, *do not / know*
But whan I ' m into the king's court,
Mitchcock² is my name."

4

“Mitchcock! hey!” the lady did say,

And spelt it oure⁰ again; *over*

15 “If t h a t ‘ s your name in the Latin tongue,

Earl Richard is your name!”

5

O jumpt he upon his horse,

And said he wad go ride;

8. This Scottish ballad has several variants in

Scottish Ballads.

which the identities of the knight and the shep-

9. King’s court.

herd’s daughter differ but the events and outcome

1. The shepherd’s daughter asks this question.

are similar. The version printed here, the C variant

2. The knight gives the shepherd’s daughter a false

of Child Ballad No. 110, is from Kinloch’s Awciewt

name (though she is not fooled).

1 1 4 / E A R L Y M O D E R N B A L L A D S

Kilted⁰ she her green claithing, *tucked up*

20 And said she wad na^o bide.⁰ *not/stay*

6

The knicht rade on, the lady ran,

A live-lang simmer’s⁰ day, *summer’s*

Till they cam to a wan⁰ water *dark*

Was calld the river Tay.³

7

25 “Jump on behind, ye weill-faurd⁰ may,⁰ *well-favored /*
maid

Or do ye chuse to ride?”

“No, thank ye, sir,” the lady said,

“I rather chuse to wade”;

And afore that he was mid-water,

30 She was at the ither side.

8

“Turn back, turn back, ye weill-faurd may,

My heart will brak in three:”

“And sae did mine in yon bonny hill-side,

Whan ye was [na] lat me be.”

9

“Whare gat ye that gay⁰ claithing *fine*

This day I see on thee?”

“My mither was a gude milk-nurse,

And a gude nourice⁰ was she; *nurse*

She nursd the Earl of Stockford’s daughter,

And gat aw this to me.”

10

Whan she cam to the king’s court,

She rappit wi a ring;⁴

Sae ready as the king himsel

Was to let the lady in!

11

45

“There is a knicht into your court

This day has robbed me:”

“O has he taen your gowd,“0 he says, *gold*

“Or has he taen your fee?“0 *wealth, possessions*

12

“He has na taen my gowd,“ she says,

50 “Nor yet has he my fee;

But he has taen my maiden-head,

The flowr o0 my fair bodie.” *of*

3. The longest river in Scotland.

4. I.e., rapped with the door knocker.

THE KNIGHT AND SHEPHERD ‘ S DAUGHTER / 1 1 5

Then out bespak0 the queen hersel, *spoke*

Wha sat by the king’s knee:

55 There’s na a knicht in aw° our court *all*

Wad hae dune that to thee,

Unless it war my brither, Earl Richard,

And forbid it it war he!5

Wad ye ken your love,

60 Amang a hunder0 men? *hundred*

“I wad,“ said the bonnie ladie,

“Amang five hunder and ten.”

The king made aw his merry men pass,

By ane,° by twa, and three; *one*

65 Earl Richard us’d to be the first man,

But he was hinmost man that day.

16

He cam hauping0 on ane foot,

And winking with ae° ee;°

one / eye

But “Ha! ha!” said the bonnie ladie,

70 “That same young man are ye.”

17

H e ‘ s taen⁰ her up to a hie towr-head

taken

And offerd her hunder pundis in a glove:⁶

“Gin^o ye be a courteous maid,

if

Ye ‘ 11 choice⁰ anither love.”

choose

18

75 “What care I for your hunder pund?

Na mair⁰ than ye wad for mine; *more*

W h a t ‘ s a hunder pund to me,

To a marriage wi a king!”

19

Whan the marriage it was oure,

so And ilk^o ane took them horse, *each*

“It never set a beggar’s brat

At nae knicht’s back to be.”⁷

5. I.e., God forbid (it)! 7. I.e., it never suited a beggar’s child to ride

6. I.e., a hundred pounds tied up in a glove (which behind a lord,

he offers in exchange for having to marry her).

1 1 6 / E A R L Y M O D E R N B A L L A D S

2 0

The ladie met wi a beggar-wife,

And gied her half o crown:

85 “Tell aw your neebours, whan ye gang hame,
That Earl Richard’s your gude-son.”^o *son-in-law*

21

“O hold your tongue, ye beggar’s brat,
My heart will brak in three”;

“And sae did mine on yon bonny hill-side,
90 Whan ye wad na let me be.”

22

Whan she cam to yon nettle-dyke,⁰ *nettle-covered ditch*

8

“An my auld⁰ mither she was here, *old*

Sae weill as she wad ye pu.⁹

2 3

95 “She wad boil ye weill and butter ye weill,

And sup till she war fu,¹

And lay her hed upon her dish-doup,²

And sleep like onie⁰ sow.” *any*

24

Whan she cam to Earl Richard’s house,

100 The sheets war holland fine:³

“O haud⁰ awa thae linen sheets, *hold*

And bring to me the linsey clouts⁴

I hae been best used⁰ in.⁰” *accustomed / to*

25

[“Awa, awa wi your siller⁰ spoons, *silver*

105 Haud them awa frae me;

It would set⁰ me better to feed my flocks *suit*

Wi the brose-cap⁰ on me knee: *oatmeal sack*

Sae bring to me the gude ram's horn,

The spoons I've been used wi."]5

26

110 "Hold your tongue, ye beggar's brat,

My heart will brak in three";

"And sae did mine on yon bonnie hillside,

Whan ye wadna lat me be."

8. Line 92 is missing; like most folk ballads, this

1. I.e., and eat till she was full.

poem was transcribed from sung versions. Other

2. The bottom of her bowl.

printed versions suggest, however, that the line

3. A linen fabric made in Holland.

describes how the nettles were spread on the

4. Woven patches of coarse wool and flax.

ground.

5. Child's brackets indicate that stanza 25 had

9. I.e., you would have to pull ("pu") the plough

been inserted in Kinloch's copy of *Ancient Scottish*

as well as she does.

Ballads.

LOVEMELITTLE, LOVEMELONG / 117

27

"I wish I had drank the well-water

Whan first I drank the wine!

Never a shepherd's dochter

Wad hae been a love o mine."

28

“O I wish I’d drank the well-water
Whan first I drank the beer,
That ever a shepherd’s dochter
Shoud hae been my only dear!”

29

“Ye ‘11 turn about, Earl Richard,
And mak some mair° o me;
An ye mak me lady o ae puir plow,⁷
I can mak ye laird⁰ o three.”

lord

3°

“If ye be the Earl of Stockford’s dochter,
As I’ve taen some thoughts ye be,
Aft° hae I waited at your father’s yett,[°]

oft / gate

But your face I coud never see.“⁸

A N O N Y M O U S E L I Z A B E T H A N A N D
J A C O B E A N P O E M S

Love Me Little, Love Me Long¹

Love me little, love me long,

Is the burden⁰ of my S^Ong. *refrain*

Love that is too hot and strong

Burneth soon to waste.

5 Still, I would not have thee cold,

Not too backward, nor too bold;

Love that lasteth till ‘tis old

Fadeth not in haste.

Love me little, love me long,

10 *Is the burden of my song.*

6. Child's asterisks signal a gap in the story.

terious at the end; and in one text, the knight is

7. I.e., if you make me the lady of one poor plow revealed to be a blacksmith's son whereas the lady (the area of land one plow will till in a year).

is a king's daughter.

8. With the suggestion that she can make the

1. This song was registered in 1569—70 with the

knight lord of three plows, the story begins to

Stationers' Company, which authorized all printed

reveal that the shepherd's daughter is high born.

texts from 1557 onward. Our source is the *Extracts*

In some versions, however, her social status is mysterious.
from the Stationers' Company (1848).

118 / ANONYMOUS ELIZABETHAN AND JACOBAN POEMS

If thou lovest me too much,

It will not prove as true as touch;²

Love me little, more than such,

For I fear the end.

15 I am with little well content,

And a little from thee sent

Is enough, with true intent

To be steadfast friend.

Love me little, love me long,

20 *Is the hurden of my song.*

Say thou lov'st me while thou live;
I to thee my love will give,
Never dreaming to deceive
Whiles that life endures.

25 Nay, and after death, in sooth,
I to thee will keep my truth,
As now, when in my May of youth;
This my love assures.

Love me little, love me long,

30 Is the burden of my song.

Constant love is moderate ever,
And it will through life persever;
Give me that, with true endeavor
I will it restore.

35 A suit of durance⁰ let it be, *durability*

For all weathers that for me,
For the land or for the sea,
Lasting evermore.

Love me little, love me long,

40 Is the burden of my song.

Winter's cold, or summer's heat,
Autumn's tempests on it beat,
It can never know defeat,
Never can rebel.

45 Such the love that I would gain,
Such the love, I tell thee plain,
Thou must give, or woo in vain;
So to thee, farewell!

*Love me little, love me long,
50 Is the burden of my song.*

ca. 1570

2. Touchstone or hasanite; gold or silver rubbed on touchstone produces a streak, the appearance of which was formerly used as a test for the purity of the metal.

T o H i s L O V E / 1 1 9

Fine Knacks for Ladies³

Fine knacks for ladies, cheap, choice, brave and new!

Good pennyworths—but money cannot move:

I keep a fair but for the fair to view;

A beggar may be liberal of love.

5 Though all my wares be trash, the heart is true,

The heart is true.

Great gifts are guiles⁰ and look for gifts again; *deceits*

My trifles come as treasures from my mind.

It is a precious jewel to be plain;

10 Sometimes in shell the orient's^t pearls we find. *most lustrous*

Of others take a sheaf, of me a grain!

Of me a grain!

Within this pack pins, points,⁴ laces, and gloves,

And divers toys fitting a country fair;

15 But in my heart, where duty serves and loves,

Turtles and twins,⁵ court's brood, a heavenly pair.

Happy the heart that thinks of no removes!

Of no removes!

1600

To His Love⁶

Come away! come, sweet love!
The golden morning breaks;
All the earth, all the air,
Of love and pleasure speaks.
5 Teach thine arms then to embrace,
And sweet rosy lips to kiss,
And mix our souls in mutual bliss.
Eyes were made for beauty's grace,
Viewing, rueing, love's long pain,
10 Procured by beauty's rude disdain.

Come away! come, sweet love!

The golden morning wastes,
3. This anonymous peddler's song was set for lute
5. Turtledoves ("turtles") and the "heavenly pair"
accompaniment by John Dowland, a well-known
of twins, Castor and Pollux of the constellation
Elizabethan composer, and included in his *Second*
Gemini, were symbols of true love and constancy.
Book of Songs or Airs (1600).

6. From *England's Helicon* (1600), an influential

4. Laces (such as shoelaces) with the ends tagged
anthology of verse.

or pointed for convenience in lacing.

120 / ANONYMOUS ELIZABETHAN AND J
ACOB EAN POEMS

While the sun from his sphere

His fiery arrows casts,

15 Making all the shadows fly,

Playing, staying in the grove,
To entertain the stealth of love.
Thither, sweet love, let us hie⁰ **go**
Flying, dying, in desire,
20 Wing'd with sweet hopes and heavenly fire.
Come away! come, sweet love!
Do not in vain adorn
Beauty's grace that should rise
Like to the naked morn.
25 Lilies on the river's side,
And fair Cyprian⁷ flowers new-blown,
Desire no beauties but their own;
Ornament is nurse of pride.
Pleasure, measure love's delight.
30 Haste then, sweet love, our wished flight!

1600

Weep You No More, Sad Fountains⁸
Weep you no more, sad fountains;
What need you flow so fast?
Look how the snowy mountains
Heaven's sun doth gently waste.
5 But my sun's heavenly eyes
View not your weeping,
That now lie sleeping
Softly, now softly lies
Sleeping.
10 Sleep is a reconciling,
A rest that peace begets.

Doth not the sun rise smiling
When fair at even⁰ he sets? *evening*
Rest you then, rest, sad eyes,
15 Melt not in weeping
While she lies sleeping
Softly, now softly lies
Sleeping.

1603

7. An allusion to Venus, Roman goddess of love 8. From John Dowland's *Third Book of Songs or* and beauty; the center of her cult was the island *Airs* (1603).

of Cyprus.

THE SILVER SWAN / 1 2 1

There Is a Lady Sweet and Kind⁹

There is a lady sweet and kind,
Was never face so pleased my mind;
I did but see her passing by,
And yet I love her till I die.

5 Her gesture, motion and her smiles,
Her wit, her voice, my heart beguiles,
Beguiles my heart, I know not why,
And yet I love her till I die.

Her free behavior, winning looks,
10 Will make a lawyer burn his books.

I touched her not, alas, not I,
And yet I love her till I die.

Had I her fast betwixt mine arms,
Judge you that think such sports were harms,
15 Were't any harm? No, no, fie, fie!

For I will love her till I die.
Should I remain confined there,
So long as Phoebus¹ in his sphere,
I to request, she to deny,
20 Yet would I love her till I die.
Cupid² is winged and doth range;
Her country so my love doth change,
But change she earth, or change she sky,
Yet will I love her till I die.

1607

The Silver Swan³

The silver swan, who living had no note,
When death approached, unlocked her silent throat;
Leaning her breast against the reedy shore,
Thus sung her first and last, and sung no more:
5 “Farewell, all joys; Oh death, come close mine eyes;
More geese than swans now live, more fools than wise.”

1612

9. From Thomas Ford’s *Music of Sundry Kinds*

3. From Orlando Gibbons’s *First Set of Madrigals*
(1607).

and Motets (1612). Gibbons, one of the last mad-

1. Apollo, Greek and Roman god of the sun.

rigalists, may be implying an analogy between him-

2. Roman god of erotic love.

self and the swan.

1 2 2 / A N O N Y M O U S E L I Z A B E T H A N A N D J
A C O B E A N P O E M S

A Song Bewailing the Time of Christmas, So Much Decayed
in England⁴

Christmas is my name, far have I gone, have I gone, have I
gone,

have I gone without regard,

Whereas great men, by flocks they be flown, they be flown,
they be flown, they be flown to London ward,

5 Where they in pomp and pleasure do waste

that which Christmas had wont^o to feast; *been accustomed*

Welay day.

Houses where music was wonted^o to ring, *accustomed*

Nothing but bats, and owls now do sing

10 Welay day, wallay day, wallay day, where should I stay.

Christmas bread and beef is turned into stones, into stones,
into

stones,

Into stones and silken rags.

And lady money⁵ it doth sleep, it doth sleep, it doth sleep,

It doth sleep in misers' bags.

15 Where many gallants once abound,

Nought but a dog and a shepherd is found,

Welay day.

Places where Christmas revels did keep,

Are now become habitations for sheep.

20 Wallay day, wallay day, wellay day, where should I stay.

Pan, the shepherd's god, doth deface, doth deface, doth deface,
doth deface, Lady Ceres' crown,⁶

And tilliges^o doth decay, doth decay, doth decay, *plowed land*
doth decay in every town.⁷

25 Landlords their rents so highly enhance,
That Peares the plowman⁸ barefoot doth dance,
Welay day.

Farmers that Christmas would entertain,
hath scarcely withal them selves to maintain,
30 Welay day, wellay day, wellay day, where should I stay.

4. This lament for Christmas festivities banned by
and huntsmen, here symbolizes Protestant “icon-
Protestants after the Reformation (and for other
olasts,” who frequently “defaced” Catholic rituals
social changes the speaker deplors) comes from a
and works of art, especially beheading or otherwise
manuscript in the British Library (MS. Additional
mutilating statues of religious figures in Catholic
38599); a longer version of the poem was printed
churches.

around 1635.

7. Probably a reference to the practice of “enclo-
5. Probably a reference to the money traditionally
sure,” whereby peasant farmers who were tenants
given out for charity on “Lady Days,” dates in the
of a manor lost their traditional access to “com-
Roman Catholic calendar devoted to celebrating
mon” lands; during the sixteenth century, many
events in the life of the Virgin Mary. One such
wealthy landowners enclosed “tilled” land for the
celebration occurred (before the Reformation) on
sake of the sheep being raised for England’s

December 8, when the Virgin's immaculate con-
expanding wool trade.

ception was honored.

8. Peares is a traditional name for a plowman; cf.

6. Ceres was the Roman goddess of grain and
William Langland, "Piers Plowman" (p. 71).

hence of the harvest; Pan, Greek god of shepherds

A S O N G B E W A I L I N G T H E T I M E O F C H R I S
T M A S / 1 2 3

Go to the Protestant, he'll protest, he'll protest, he'll protest,
he will protest and boldly boast,

And to the Puritan, he is so hot, he is so hot, he is so hot,
he is so hot he will burn the roast,

35 The Catholic good deeds will not scorn,
nor will not see poor Christmas forlorn,
Welay day.

Since Holiness no good deeds will do,
Protestants had best turn Papists too,

40 Welay day, wellay day, wellay day, where should I stay.

Pride and Luxury doth devour, doth devour, doth devour,
doth devour house keeping quite,⁰ *completely*

And beggary doth beget, doth beget, doth beget,
doth beget in many a knight.

45 Madam for^o sooth^o in coach she must reel *in /truth*

Although she wear her hose out at heel,
Welay day.

And on her back were that for her weed,
that would both me, and many other feed,

50 Wellay day, wellay day, wellay day, where should I stay.

Briefly for to end, here I find, here I find,

here I find such great vacation⁰ *emptying*

That some great houses do seem to have, seem to have,
seem to have,

for to have some great purgation,

55 With purging pills, such effects they have showed,

that out of doors, their owners they have spewed.⁹

Wellay day.

And when Christmas goes by and calls,

Nothing but solitude, and naked walls,

60 Wellay day, wellay day, wellay day, where should I stay.

Philemel's cottages are turned into gold, into gold,

Into gold for harboring Jove.¹

And great mens' houses up for to hold, up for to hold,

up for to hold, make great men moan,

65 But in the city they say they do live,

Where gold by handfuls away they do give,

Wellay day.

And therefor thither I purpose to pass,

hoping at London to find the golden ass,

70 I'll away, I'll away, I'll away, I'll no longer stay.

ca. 1624 1635

9. Probably a reference to the widespread "disso-

1. An allusion to the classical myth of Philemon,
lution" of ecclesiastical manors that began during
a poor man who was visited by Jove and Mercury
the reign of Henry VIII; the king (and his succes-

in disguise. For entertaining the gods well, Phile-
sors) raised money by dispossessing monasteries of
mon and his wife, Baucis, were rewarded by having
their lands and houses.

their cottage transformed into a luxurious temple.

124 / ANONYMOUS ELIZABETHAN AND J
ACOBEOAN POEMS

Tom o' Bedlam's Song 2

From the hagg^o and hungry goblin *haggard*

That into rags would rend ye,

All the spirits that stand by the naked man

In the Book of Moons³ defend ye!

5 That of your five sound senses

You never be forsaken,

Nor wander from your selves with Tom

Abroad to beg your bacon.

While I do sing "any food, any feeding,

10 *Feeding, drink or clothing,"*

Come dame or maid, be not afraid,

Poor Tom will injure nothing.

Of thirty bare years have I

Twice twenty been enraged,⁰ *mad*

15 And of forty been three times fifteen

In durance⁰ soundly caged. *confinement, prison*

On the lordly lofts of Bedlam,

With stubble soft and dainty,

Brave bracelets strong, sweet whip's ding-dong,

20 With wholesome hunger plenty.

And now I sing "any food, any feeding, ...

With a thought I took for Maudlin⁴

And a cruse⁰ of cockle⁰ pottage,⁰ *pitcher / shellfish / soup*

With a thing thus tall, sky bless you all,

²⁵ I befell into this dotage.

I slept not since the Conquest,⁵

Till then I never waked,

Till the roguish boy⁰ of love where I lay *Cupid*

Me found and stripped me naked.

30 *And now I sing "any food, any feeding, ...*

When I short have shorn my sour face

And swigged my horny barrel,

In an oaken inn I pound my skin

As a suit of gilt apparel.

35 The moon's my constant Mistress,

2. This poem, like a number of other anonymous poem has been echoed by writers from Ben Jonson lyrics, purports to be sung by a madman, Tom, through Sir Walter Scott to Rudyard Kipling.

from "Bedlam," that is, the Hospital of St. Mary of

3. Probably an astrological book.

Bethlehem, an asylum in London that housed the

4. Tom's "lady" is frequently named Maudline mentally ill from the fifteenth century on. The earliest (short for Magdalene and probably an allusion to the Christian Scripture character Mary Magdalene) known version of this poem is in a manuscript of songs and verses in the British Museum (MS. lene).

Additional 24665). Edgar in Shakespeare's *King*

5. William of Normandy's conquest of England, in *Lear* assumes the persona of "Poor Tom," and this 1066.

T O M o ' B E D L A M ' S S O N G / 1 2 5

And the lowly owl my marrow,

The flaming Drake⁰ and the Nightcrow make *male duck*

Me music to my sorrow.

While I do sing “any food, any feeding, ...

40 The palsy plagues my pulses

When I prigg^o their pigs or pullen,^o *steal / chicken*

Your culvers^o take, or matchless make *wood pigeons*

Your Chanticleare,⁶ or sullen.

When I want provant,^o with Humfry *food*

45 I sup,⁷ and when benighted,

I repose in Paul’s with waking souls,

Yet never am affrighted.

But I do sing “any food, any feeding, ...

I know more than Apollo,⁸

50 For oft, when hee lies sleeping,

I see the stars at bloody wars

In the wounded welkin^o weeping; *sky*

The moon embrace her shepherd,

And the queen of Love her warrior,

55 While the first doth horn the star of morn,

And the next the heavenly Farrier.⁹

While I do sing “any food, any feeding, ...

The Gipsy Snap and Pedro¹

Are none of Tom’s comrados.

60 The punk I scorn and the cut purse sworn

And the roaring boys bravado.

The meek, the white, the gentle,

Me handle, touch, and spare not,

But those that cross Tom Rynosseros

65 Do what the panther dare not.

Although I sing “any food, any feeding, ...

**With an host of furious fancies,
Whereof I am commander,
With a burning spear, and a horse of air,
70 To the wilderness I wander.**

By a knight of ghosts and shadows

6. I.e., take away your rooster's mate.

"heavenly Farrier," or horseshoer. The verb "horn,"

7. Refers to the legendary "Duke Humphrey's
printed as "born" in some texts of the poem, sug-
Walk," in front of St. Paul's Cathedral in London
gests an image of the new moon "embracing" the
("Paul's," line 46), where the poor congregated.

morning star; in the second clause governed by this

8. Greek and Roman god of poetry and the sun.

verb, there is a play on horn's figurative meaning

9. In Greek mythology, the Moon loved the shep-
as cuckold.

herd Endymion, and Venus, the goddess of love,

1. I.e., a gypsy rogue (with "Snap" probably con-
preferred Mars, the god of war, to her husband,
noting thievery) and a Spaniard.

Hephaestos, the god of metalworking and hence a

1 2 6 / T H O M A S W Y A T T

I s u m m o n e d a m t o t o u r n e y 0 *take part in a tournament*

Ten leagues beyond the wide world's end.

Me thinks it is no journey.

75 *Yet will I sing "any food, any feeding, ...*

Before 1615 1656

T H O M A S W Y A T T *

1 5 0 3 - 1 5 4 2

The Long Love, That in My Thought Doth Harbor¹

The long⁰ love, that in my thought doth harbor,⁰ *enduring / lodge*

And in mine heart doth keep his residence,

Into my face presseth with bold pretense,

And therein campeth, spreading his banner.²

⁵ She that me learneth⁰ to love and suffer, *teaches*

And wills that my trust and lust's negligence

Be reined³ by reason, shame and reverence,

With his hardiness⁰ taketh displeasure. *boldness*

Wherewithal, unto the heart's⁴ forest he fleeth,

¹⁰ Leaving his enterprise with pain and cry;

And there him hideth, and not appeareth.

What may I do when my master feareth

But in the field with him to live and die?

For good is the life, ending faithfully.

E. MS.

Whoso List⁵ to Hunt

Whoso list to hunt, I know where is an hind,^o *female deer*

But as for me, alas, I may no more:

The vain travail hath wearied me so sore.

*Though Wyatt apparently meant to publish a col-

Whenever possible, we have used this manuscript's

lection of his poems, only a few of the poems were

versions of Wyatt's poems. We also print poems

printed before his death (several appeared in *The*

from the Devonshire manuscript (D. MS.) and sev-

Court of Venus, a collection published between

eral others in which some of Wyatt's texts are pre-1536 and 1540). Most of his works circulated in manuscript among aristocratic readers. After his death, however, the printer Richard Tottel published the notes.

lished ninety-seven poems attributed to Wyatt—

1. Translated from Petrarch, *Rime* 140. Cf. the translation by Henry Howard, earl of Surrey, of Surrey (ca. 1517-1547; see pp. 137-40) and “Love, That Doth Reign and Live within My Thought” (p. 137).

and some by “Uncertain Authors”—in the book *Songs and Sonnets* (1557).

2. Raising the flag, i.e., taking up a position for battle and, figuratively, blushing.

The Egerton manuscript (E. MS.) contains a

3. Checked; with a probable pun on *reigned*.

number of poems in Wyatt's hand as well as his

4. With a pun on *heart* and *hart* (as deer).

corrections of poems in other scribes' hands.

5. Whoever likes.

THEY FLEE FROM ME / 127

I am of them that farthest cometh behind;

5 Yet may I by no means my wearied mind

Draw from the deer: but as she fleeth afore,

Fainting I follow. I leave off therefore,
Since in a net I seek to hold the wind.
Who list her hunt, I put him out of doubt,
10 As well as I may spend his time in vain:
And, graven with diamonds, in letters plain
There is written her fair neck round about:
Noli me tangere,⁶ for Caesar's I am;
And wild for to hold, though I seem tame.

E. MS.

My Galley⁷

My galley charged⁰ with forgetfulness
loaded
Thorough⁰ sharp seas in winter nights doth pass
through
'Tween rock and rock; and eke^o mine enemy, alas,
also
That is my lord,⁸ steereth with cruelty;
And every oar a thought in readiness,
As though that death were light in such a case.
An endless wind doth tear the sail apace
Of forced sighs and trusty fearfulness.
A rain of tears, a cloud of dark disdain,
Hath done the wearied cords⁹ great hinderance;
Wreathed with error and eke with ignorance.
The stars¹ be hid that led me to this pain;
Drowned is reason that should me consort,⁰
accompany
And I remain despairing of the port.

E. MS.

They Flee from Me

They flee from me that sometime did me seek
With naked foot stalking in my chamber.

I have seen them gentle tame and meek
That now are wild and do not remember

6. Touch me not (Latin). The phrase (in Italian in
break with the Roman Catholic Church.

Petrarch) has roots both in Petrarch's sonnet *Rime*

7. It is difficult to say with certainty when Wyatt
190—Wyatt's main source—and in the Bible (see
intended an *-ed* ending to be pronounced as a sec-
especially the Catholic Bible, the Vulgate: John
ond syllable and when not. Hence no attempt has
20.17 and Matthew 22.21). Renaissance commen-
been made to mark syllabic endings with an accent
tators on Petrarch maintained that the deer in Cae-
in any of Wyatt's poems (although in this particular
sar's royal forest wore collars bearing a similar
poem such endings may occur in lines 1, 8, 11,
inscription, to prevent anyone from hunting the
and 13). Wyatt's poem is based on Petrarch's *Rime*
animals. The allusion raises questions about
189.

Wyatt's relation to King Henry VIII ("Caesar," line
8. I.e., the god of love.

13). Wyatt was accused during his lifetime of

9. The worn lines of the sail, with a possible pun
having been the lover of Anne Boleyn, who became
on the Latin for heart (*cor, cordis*).

Henry VIII's second wife and a major cause of his

1. I.e., the lady's eyes.

1 2 8 / T H O M A S W Y A T T

5 That sometime they put themselves in danger

To take bread at my hand; and now they range

Busily seeking with a continual change.

Thanked be fortune, it hath been otherwise

Twenty times better;² but once in special

10 In thin array after a pleasant guise³

When her loose gown from her shoulders did fall,

And she me caught in her arms long and small;⁰ *slender*

Therewithal sweetly did me kiss,

And softly said *Dear heart,*⁴ *how like you this?*

15 It was no dream: I lay broad waking.⁵

But all is turned thorough⁰ my gentleness *through*

Into a strange fashion of forsaking;

And I have leave to go of her goodness⁶

And she also to use newfangleness.

20 But since that I so kindly⁷ am served,

I would fain know what she hath deserved.

E. MS.

Patience, Though I Have Not

Patience, though I have not

The thing that I require,

I must of force, God wot,^o *knows*

Forbear my most desire;⁸

5 For no ways can I find

To sail against the wind.

Patience, do what they will

To work me woe or spite,
I shall content me still
10 To think both day and night,
To think and hold my peace,
Since there is no redress.
Patience, withouten blame,⁹
For I offended nought;
15 I know they know the same,
Though they have changed their thought.
Was ever thought so moved
To hate that it hath loved?

2. I.e., better on twenty occasions or twenty times

7. I.e., in the way typical of female nature, or better.

“kind”; in a way that the narrator deserves (accord-

3. In a thin gown made in a pleasing fashion.

ing to his “nature,” or being repaid “in kind”); with

4. With a pun on *heart* and *hart* (as deer);

kindness (ironic). Spelled “kyndely” in Wyatt’s

“sweetly” (line 13) is spelled “swetely” in Wyatt’s

original and perhaps thus pronounced with three

original and perhaps was pronounced with three

syllables. *Newfangledness*: a new fashion; novelty or syllables.

inconstancy in her erotic relationships with men.

5. I.e., wide awake.

8. I.e., restrain or endure my strongest desire.

6. Because of her goodness (ironic).

9. I.e., when one is without blame.

MY LUTE AWAKE! / 129

Patience of all my harm,¹

20 For fortune is my foe;

Patience must be the charm

To heal me of my woe:

Patience without offence

Is a painful patience.

E. MS.

My Lute Awake!

My lute awake! Perform the last

Labor that thou and I shall waste,

And end that I have now begun;

For when this song is sung and past,

5 My lute be still, for I have done.

As to be heard where ear is none,

As lead to grave in marble stone,

My song may pierce her heart as soon;²

Should we then sigh, or sing, or moan?

10 No, no, my lute, for I have done.

The rocks do not so cruelly

Repulse the waves continually

As she my suit and affection.

So that I am past remedy:

15 Whereby my lute and I have done.

Proud of the spoil that thou hast got

Of simple hearts through love's shot,³

By whom, unkind, thou hast them won,

Think not he hath his bow forgot,

20 Although my lute and I have done.

Vengeance shall fall on thy disdain,
 That makest but game on earnest pain;⁴
 Think not alone under the sun
 Unquit^o to cause thy lovers plain,^o *unrequited / lamentation*
 25 Although my lute and I have done.
 Perchance thee lie withered and old,
 The winter nights that are so cold,
 Plaining in vain unto the moon;
 Thy wishes then dare not be told;
 30 Care then who list,^o for I have done. *likes*

1. I.e., in all the harm I suffer.
3. The arrow of Cupid (Roman god of erotic love).
2. I.e., it is as likely that sound will be heard with
 “Through” is spelled “thorough” in Wyatt’s origi-
 no ear to hear it, or soft lead will be able to engrave
 nal, perhaps indicating a two-syllable pronuncia-
 (“grave”) hard marble, as it is that my song will
 tion. The referent for “thou” is unclear.
- move her. “Ear” is spelled “ere” in Wyatt’s manu-
 4. Makes f u n of or plays games with one in pain.
script.

130 / T H O M A S W Y A T T

And then may chance thee to repent
 The time that thou hast lost and spent
 To cause thy lovers sigh and swoon;
 Then shalt thou know beauty but lent,
 35 And wish and want as I have done.
 Now cease, my lute, this is the last
 Labor that thou and I shall waste,

And ended is that we begun;
Now is this song both sung and past:
40 My lute be still, for I have done.

E. MS.

Is It Possible

Is it possible

That so high debate,

So sharp, so sore, and of such rate,⁰ *pace; value*

Should end so soon and was begun so late?

Is it possible?

Is it possible

So cruel intent,

So hasty heat and so soon spent,

From love to hate, and thence for to relent?

Is it possible?

Is it possible

That any may find

Within one heart so diverse mind,

To change or turn as weather and wind?

Is it possible?

Is it possible

To spy it in an eye⁵

That turns as oft as chance on die?⁶

The troth⁰ whereof can any try? *truth, faith*

Is it possible?

It is possible

For to turn so oft,

To bring that lowest that was most aloft,

And to fall highest⁷ yet to light soft?

It is possible.

5. I.e., to spy love; the eyes were often said to be

7. From the highest place. The imagery here plays where a person's true feelings could be seen.

on the Renaissance figure of the wheel of life, the

6. I.e., as often as fortune changes in tosses of the frequent turning of which causes people's fortunes dice. "Turns" is spelled "tornys" in Wyatt's original, to rise and fall unpredictably.

perhaps indicating a two-syllable pronunciation.

B L A M E N O T M Y L U T E / 1 3 1

All is possible,

Whoso^o list^o believe; *whoever / cares to*

Trust therefore first, and after preve:8

As men wed ladies by license and leave,

BO All is possible.

D. MS.

Forget Not Yet

Forget not yet the tried intent

Of such a truth as I have meant,

My great travail so gladly spent

Forget not yet.

Forget not yet when first began

The weary life ye know since whan,^o *when*

The suit, the service none tell⁹ can.

Forget not yet.

Forget not yet the great assays,⁰ *trials*

The cruel wrong, the scornful ways,

The painful patience in denays,⁰ *denials*

Forget not yet.
Forget not yet, forget not this,
How long ago hath been and is
The mind that never meant amiss,
Forget not yet.

Forget not then thine own approved,¹
The which so long hath thee so loved,
Whose steadfast faith yet never moved,
Forget not this.

D. MS.

Blame Not My Lute

Blame not my lute, for he must sound
Of this or that as liketh me;
For lack of wit the lute is bound
To give such tunes as pleaseth me;
5 Though my songs be somewhat strange
And speaks such words as touch thy change,²
Blame not my lute.

I.e., learn by experience.

1. I.e., the one of whom you approved.

Give an account of, estimate. In courtly rheto-

2. I.e., the lute “speaks”—probably through a
, “service” often meant the actions of a male
change of musical key and/or rhythm—in a way
that reflects the lady’s change of heart.

1 3 2 / T H O M A S W Y A T T

My lute, alas, doth not offend,
Though that perforce he must agree
10 To sound such tunes as I intend

To sing to them that heareth me;
Then though my songs be somewhat plain,
And toucheth some that use to fain,³
Blame not my lute.

15 My lute and strings may not deny
But as I strike they must obey;
Break not them then so wrongfully,
But wreak⁰ thyself some wiser way;
avenge

And though the songs which I endite⁰
compose

20 Do quit⁰ thy change with rightful spite,
answer

Blame not my lute.
Spite asketh spite and changing change,
And falsed⁰ faith must needs be known,
betrayed

The fault so great, the case so strange,
25 Of right it must abroad be blown:
Then since that by thine own desert
My songs do tell how true thou art,
Blame not my lute.

Blame but thy self that hast misdone
30 And well deserved to have blame;
Change thou thy way so evil begun
And then my lute shall sound that same;
But if till then my fingers play
By thy desart their wonted⁰ way, *usual*

35 Blame not my lute.

Farewell, unknown, for though thou break
My strings in spite with great disdain
Yet have I found out for thy sake
Strings for to string my lute again;
40 And if perchance this foolish rhyme
Do make thee blush at any time
Blame not my lute.

D. MS.

What Should I Say
What should I say
Since faith is dead,
And truth away
From you is fled?

5 Should I be led

3. I.e., some who used to “feign,” meaning both dissemble and desire.

L U C K S , M Y F A I R F A L C O N / 1 3 3

With doubleness?

Nay, nay, Mistress!⁴

I promised you

And you promised me,

10 To be as true

As I would be;

But since I see

Your double heart,

Farewell my part!⁵

15 Though for to take

It is not my mind

But to forsake—

I am not blind—
And as I find
20 So will I trust.
Farewell, unjust!
Can ye say nay?
But you said
That I alway⁰ *always*
Should be obeyed;⁶
And thus betrayed
Or^o that I wist^o— *before / knew*
Farewell, unkist!⁰ *unkissed*
D. MS.

Lucks, My Fair Falcon⁷

Lucks, my fair falcon, and your fellows all,
How well pleasant it were your liberty!
Ye not forsake me that fair might ye befall.⁸
But they that sometime⁰ liked my company: *formerly*
5 Like lice away from dead bodies they crawl.
Lo what a proof in light adversity!
But ye my birds, I swear by all your bells,⁹
Ye be my friends, and so be but few else.

Ad. Ms.

4. Title for an upper-class married woman; a cour-
name evidently puns on *luck* and on the Latin word
teous form.

for light, *lux*. The first printed version of the poem

5. Share in the relationship; spelled “perte” in
gives the falcon’s name as “Lux,” whereas all the
Wyatt’s original, suggesting a pun on the French

manuscripts give it as “luckes,” possibly pro-
word for loss (*•perte*).

nounced with two syllables. Scholars speculate

6. Some contemporary marriage services included
that the poem was written shortly before Wyatt was
a vow by the woman to obey the man; the point
imprisoned in 1541.

raises the possibility that the poem is addressed to

8. I.e., you do not forsake me so that fair fortune
the speaker’s wife.

(good luck) will come to you. This line, with its

7. This poem appears in one manuscript (Addi-
compressed syntax, begins a contrast between the
tional MS. 36529) in the British Museum; it also
faithful falcon and unfaithful humans.

appears in an early printed anthology (*Tattel’s Mis-*

9. A bell was attached by a leather strap to each
cellany, 15 57), with the title “Of Such as Had For-
leg of a falcon.

saken Him.” The speaker addresses a falcon whose

1 3 4 / T H O M A S W Y A T T

Stand Whoso List1

Stand whoso list upon the slipper0 top

slippery

Of court’s estates,2 and let me here rejoice;

And use me quiet without let or stop,0

hindrance

Unknown in court, that hath such brackish3 joys:

In hidden place, so let my days forth pass,

That when my years be done, withouten noise,
I may die aged after the common trace.⁰

way

For him death gripeth right hard by the crope^o

throat

That is much known of other; and of himself alas,
Doth die unknown, dazed with dreadful⁴ face.

Arundel Castle MS.

Mine Own John Poins⁵

Mine own John Poins, since ye delight to know

The cause why that homeward I me draw,

And flee the press of courts whereso they go,⁶

Rather than to live thrall, under the awe

5 Of lordly looks, wrapped within my cloak,

To will and lust learning to set a law;⁷

It is not for because I scorn and mock

The power of them, to whom fortune hath lent

Charge over us, of right, to strike the stroke:⁸

10 But true it is that I have always meant

Less to esteem them than the common sort,

Of outward things that judge in their intent,

Without regard what doth inward resort.⁹

I grant sometime that of glory the fire

15 Doth touch my heart: me^o list⁰ not to report *ll care*

Blame by honor and honor to desire.¹

But how may I this honor now attain

That cannot dye the color black a liar?²

My Poins, I cannot frame me tune to feign,³

20 To cloak the truth, for praise without desert,

Of them that list all vice for to retain.⁴

1. This poem, a translation of Seneca's play *Thyestes*

6. In Renaissance England, the royal court frequently moved residence, sometimes through version by Tottel under the title "Of the Mean and highly elaborate "progresses," or processions.

Sure Estate." *Whoso list*: whoever likes.

7. I.e., learning to set a law to (or keep in check)

2. Society was said to be divided into three groups: my passions. *Lust*: pleasure.

those who ruled, those who prayed, and those who

8. I.e., rightfully empowered to command and to labored.

punish us.

3. Spoiled, like water that has gone bad.

9. I.e., to have less esteem for them than do the

4. Has a variety of possible meanings, including common people (line 11), who base their judgment awful, terrified, and frightening.

on what appears outwardly (lines 12—13).

5. Wyatt's friend; a member of Henry VIII's court.

1. I.e., I have no wish to represent faults as virtues

This verse epistle of informal satire is based on the or pleasure as honor.

tenth satire of the Italian poet Luigi Alamanni

2. A common proverb held that *black will take no*

(1495 - 1556), but Wyatt Anglicizes it and adds *per-other hue*.

sonal details. It apparently was written during

3. I.e., shape my style falsely.

Wyatt's banishment from court in 1536.

4. I.e., desire to keep vice in their service.

MINE OWN JOHN POINS / 135

I cannot honor them that sets their part

With Venus and Bacchus⁵ all their life long;

Nor hold my peace of them although I smart.

25 I cannot crouch nor kneel to do so great a wrong,

To worship them, like God on earth alone,

That are as wolves these sely⁰ lambs among. *innocent*

I cannot with my words complain and moan,

And suffer naught; nor smart without complaint,

30 Nor turn the word that from my mouth is gone.

I cannot speak and look like a saint,

Use wiles⁰ for wit or make deceit a pleasure, *cunning*

And call craft⁰ counsel, for profit still to paint;⁰ *scheming*
/flatter

I cannot wrest the law to fill the coffer

35 With innocent blood to feed myself fat,

And do most hurt where most help I offer.

I am not he that can allow⁰ the state *accept*

Of high Caesar and damn Cato to die,

That with his death did 'scape out of the gate

40 From Caesar's hands (if Livy do not lie)⁶

And would not live where liberty was lost:

So did his heart the common weal apply.⁷

I am not he such eloquence to boast,

To make the crow singing as the swan,⁸

45 Nor call the lion of coward beasts the most⁹
 That cannot take a mouse as the cat can:
 And he that dieth for hunger of the gold
 Call him Alexander;¹ and say that Pan
 Passeth Apollo in music manifold;²
 50 Praise Sir Thopas for a noble tale,
 And scorn the story that the Knight told.³
 Praise him for counsel that is drunk of ale;
 Grin when he laugheth that beareth all the sway,
 Frown when he frowneth and groan when he is pale;
 55 On others' lust to hang both night and day:
 None of these points would ever frame in me;⁴
 My wit is naught—I cannot learn the way.
 And much the less of things that greater be,
 That asken help of colors of device⁵
 60 To join the mean⁰ with each extremity, *middle*
 With the nearest virtue to cloak⁰ always the vice: *soften; cover*
 And as to purpose likewise it shall fall,
 To press⁰ the virtue that it may not rise;⁶ *to press down*

5. Venus was the Roman goddess of love and prefers glory.

beauty; Bacchus, the Roman god of wine.

2. The Greek god Pan played simple ditties on his

6. The Roman historian Livy recounts the death pipe; the Greek and Roman god Apollo played of Cato the Younger, a statesman who committed divine melodies on his lyre.

suicide rather than submit to Julius Caesar's tyr-

3. Chaucer's tale of Sir Thopas (in *The Canterbury*

anny.

Tales) is a deliberately dull parody that is cut off
7. I.e., so did his heart practice the common good.
after a few stanzas by the Host. The Knight's tale,
8. Swans supposedly sang beautifully just before
according to other pilgrims, is "a noble storie."
dying.

4. I.e., suit my character.

9. Nor call a lion (a symbol of bravery) a coward.

5. Artful language that "colors," or falsifies.

1. Say that he is Alexander the Great, who was

6. I.e., and intention will be subsumed by the
said to prefer glory and action to riches; i.e., he
deceit.

cannot say that one who is greedy for gold instead

1 3 6 / T H O M A S W Y A T T

As drunkenness good fellowship to call;

65 The friendly foe with his double face

Say he is gentle and courteous therewithal;

And say that faveP hath a goodly grace *flattery*

In eloquence; and cruelty to name

Zeal of justice and change in time and place;

70 And he that suff'reth offense without blame

Call him pitiful; and him true and plain

That railleth reckless⁷ to every man's shame.

Say he is rude that cannot lie and feign;

The lecher a lover; and tyranny

75 To be the right of a prince's reign.

I cannot, I. No, no, it will not be.

This is the cause⁰ that I could never yet *reason*
Hang on their sleeves that weigh as thou mayst see
A chip⁰ of chance more than a pound of wit. *small amount*
so This maketh me at home to hunt and hawk
And in foul weather at my book to sit.
In frost and snow then with my bow to stalk,
No man doth mark whereso I ride or go;
In lusty⁰ leas⁰ at liberty I walk, *pleasant / meadows*
85 And of these news I feel nor weal⁰ nor woe, *happiness*
Save that a clog⁸ doth hang yet at my heel:
No force⁰ for that for it is ordered so, *matter*
That I may leap both hedge and dike⁹ full well.
I am not now in France to judge the wine,
90 With sav'ry sauce those delicates to feel;¹
Nor yet in Spain where one must him incline
Rather than to be, outwardly to seem.
I meddle not with wits that be so fine,
Nor Flanders' cheer letteth not my sight to deem
95 Of black and white,² nor taketh my wit away
With beastliness, they beasts do so esteem;
Nor am I not where Christ is given in prey
For money, poison, and treason at Rome,³
A common practice used night and day:
100 But here I am in Kent and Christendom
Among the Muses⁴ where I read and rhyme;
Where if thou list, my Poins, for to come,
Thou shalt be judge how I do spend my time.

E. MS.

7. Rants abusively.

in 1557, during the reign of the Catholic Queen

8. Heavy object tied to a prisoner's foot to impede

Mary, these lines read: "where truth is given prey
motion.

/ For money, poison and treason; of some."

9. Ditch, used as a boundary.

4. In Greek mythology, nine sister goddesses who

1. To savor exquisite food.

presided over song and poetry and the arts and sci-

2. I.e., to be able to tell the difference between

ences. Wyatt had extensive lands in Kent and could

black and white. *Flanders' cheer*: in the sixteenth

retire there when out of favor at court. He was

century, the Flemings were notorious for drinking.

elected to Parliament from Kent shortly before his

Lettesth: hinders.

death.

3. In *Tottel's Miscellany*, an anthology published

137

HENRY HOWARD, EARL OF SURREY

ca. 1517-1547

The Soote Season¹

The soote⁰ season, that bud and bloom forth brings, *sweet*

With green hath clad the hill and eke⁰ the vale; **also**

The nightingale with feathers new she sings;

The turtle⁰ to her make⁰ hath told her tale. *turtledove / mate*

5 Summer is come, for every spray now springs;

The hart hath hung his old head on the pale;²

The buck in brake⁰ his winter coat he flings, *the hushes*

The fishes float with new repaired scale;
The adder all her slough away she slings,
10 The swift swallow pursueth the flies small;
The busy bee her honey now she mings.⁰ *discharges*
Winter is worn, that was the flowers' bale.⁰ *harm*
And thus I see among these pleasant things,
Each care decays, and yet my sorrow springs.

1557

Love, That Doth Reign and Live within My Thought³
Love, that doth reign and live within my thought,
And built his seat within my captive breast,
Clad in the arms⁰ wherein with me he fought, *heraldic insignia*
Oft in my face he doth his banner rest.
5 But she that taught me love and suffer pain,
My doubtful hope and eke⁰ my hot desire *also*
With shamefast⁰ look to shadow and refrain, *shamefaced*
Her smiling grace converteth straight to ire.
And coward Love, then, to the heart apace⁰ *quickly*
10 Taketh his flight, where he doth lurk and plain,⁰ *complain*
His purpose lost, and dare not show his face.
For my lord's guilt thus faultless bide⁰ I pain, *endure*
Yet from my lord shall not my foot remove:⁴
Sweet is the death that taketh end by love.

1557

1. Translated and adapted from Petrarch, *Rime*
fence.

310; first published, along with poems by Wyatt

3. Translated from Petrarch, *Rime* 140. C o m p a r e
and others, in *Tottel's Miscellany* (1557), an early

the translation by Sir Thomas Wyatt, “The Long
anthology.

Love, That in My Thought Doth Harbor” (p. 126).

2. I.e., has hung his antlers on the paling, or

4. I.e., I will not leave his side.

138 / HENRY HOWARD, EARL OF SURREY

Wyatt Resteth Here⁵

Wyatt resteth here, that quick⁰ could never rest; *living*

Whose heavenly gifts increased by disdain,⁶

And virtue sank the deeper in his breast;

Such profit he of envy could obtain.

A head where wisdom mysteries⁷ did frame,

Whose hammers beat still in that lively brain

As on a stithy,⁰ where some work of fame *anvil*

Was daily wrought, to turn to Britain’s gain.

A visage stern and mild, where both did grow,

Vice to contemn, in virtues to rejoice,

Amid great storms, whom grace assured so,

To live upright, and smile at fortune’s choice.

A hand that taught what might be said in rhyme;

That reft⁰ Chaucer the glory of his wit; *bereft*

A mark, the which—unperfited,⁰ for time— *uncompleted*

Some may approach, but never none shall hit.

A tongue that served in foreign realms his king;

Whose courteous talk to virtue did enflame

Each noble heart; a worthy guide to bring

Our English youth, by travail, unto fame.

An eye whose judgment no affect⁰ could blind, *passion*

Friends to allure, and foes to reconcile;

Whose piercing look did represent a mind
 With virtue fraught, reposed, void of guile.
 A heart where dread yet never so impressed
 To hide the thought that might the truth advance;
 In neither fortune lost, nor so repressed,
 To swell in wealth, nor yield unto mischance.
 A valiant corps,⁰ where force and beauty met, *body*
 Happy, alas! too happy, but for foes,
 Lived, and ran the race that nature set;
 Of manhood's shape, where she the mold did lose.
 But to the heavens that simple soul is fled,
 Which left with such as covet Christ to know⁸
 Witness of faith that never shall be dead,
 Sent for our health, but not received so.
 Thus, for our guilt, this jewel have we lost;
 The earth his bones, the heavens possess his ghost.

1 5 5 7

5. Surrey's epitaph on Thomas Wyatt (1503— "envy").
 1542; see pp. 126—36), published in 1542, soon 7. Hidden or
 subtle meanings, after Wyatt's death. 8. I.e., Christians.

6. I.e., by others' disdain (as in line 4, of others')

S o C R U E L P R I S O N / 1 3 9

So Cruel Prison⁹

So cruel prison how could betide,⁰ alas, *befall*
 As proud Windsor?¹ Where I in lust⁰ and joy *pleasure*
 With a king's son my childish⁰ years did pass *youthful*
 In greater feast than Priam's² sons of Troy;
 5 Where each sweet place returns a taste full sour:
 The large green courts where we were wont to hove³

With eyes cast up unto the maidens' tower,
And easy sighs, such as folk draw in love;
The stately sales,⁰ the ladies bright of hue, *halls*
10 The dances short, long tales of great delight;
With words and looks that tigers could but rue,⁴
Where each of us did plead the other's right;
The palm play,⁰ where, despoiled⁰ for the *handball / disrobed*
game,
With dazed eyes oft we by gleams of love
15 Have missed the ball and got sight of our dame,
To bait⁵ her eyes, which kept the leads above;
The graveled ground, with sleeves tied on the helm,⁶
On foaming horse, with swords and friendly hearts,
With cheer, as though the one should overwhelm;
20 Where we have fought, and chased oft with darts,
With silver drops the meads⁰ yet spread for ruth,⁰ *meadows I*
pity
In active games of nimbleness and strength,
Where we did strain, trailed by swarms of youth,
Our tender limbs that yet shot up in length;
25 The secret groves which oft we made resound
Of pleasant plaint and of our ladies' praise,
Recording soft what grace each one had found,
What hope of speed, what dread of long delays;
The wild forest, the clothed holt⁰ with green, *small -wood*
30 With reins ahaled,⁰ and swift ybreathed⁰ *slackened /*
exercised
horse,
With cry of hounds and merry blasts between,

Where we did chase the fearful hart aforce;0 *strenuously*
The void walls eke0 that harbored us each night, *also*
Wherewith, alas, revive within my breast

35 The sweet accord; such sleeps as yet delight,
The pleasant dreams, the quiet bed of rest;

The secret thoughts imparted with such trust,

The wanton talk, the divers change of play,

The friendship sworn, each promise kept so just,

9. As a boy and young man, Surrey had enjoyed

4. The tiger conventionally symbolized unfeeling
the life at Windsor Palace as the close friend of
savagery.

Henry Fitzroy, an illegitimate son of Henry VIII.

5. To feed or to attract. The “leads” from which

In 1537, a year after the death of his friend, Surrey
the lady watches may be either a leaded window or
was imprisoned temporarily at Windsor for striking
a flat, leaded roof.

another courtier.

6. A knight would customarily tie a favor received

1. I.e., how could proud Windsor (Castle) have
from a lady to his sleeve or helmet and wear it into
become such a cruel prison?

a joust or a battle. *Graveled ground*: tiltyard, i.e.,

2. Priam, king of Troy in Homer’s *Iliad*.

space strewn with gravel for jousting.

3. Accustomed to linger.

1 4 0 / A N N E A S K E W

40 Wherewith we passed the winter nights away.

And with this thought the blood forsakes my face,
The tears berain⁰ my cheeks of deadly hue, *wet*
The which as soon as sobbing sighs, alas,
Upsupped⁰ have, thus I my plaint renew: *absorbed*
45 O place of bliss, renewer of my woes,
Give me accompt⁷—where is my noble fere?⁰ *companion*
Whom in thy walls thou didst each night enclose,
To other lief,⁰ but unto me most dear! *beloved*
Echo, alas, that doth my sorrow rue,
50 Returns thereto a hollow sound of plaint.
Thus I, alone, where all my freedom grew,
In prison pine with bondage and restraint;
And with remembrance of the greater grief
To banish the less, I find my chief relief.

1 5 5 7

A N N E A S K E W

1521-1546

The Ballad Which Anne Askew Made and Sang When She
Was in Newgate¹

Like as the armed knight
Appointed to the field,
With this world will I fight
And faith shall be my shield.²
5 Faith is that weapon strong
Which will not fail at need;
My foes therefore among
Therewith will I proceed.
As it is had in strength
10 And force of Christ's way,

It will prevail at length
Though all the devils say nay.
Faith in the father's old
Obtained rightwiseness⁰ *righteousness*
15 Which make me very bold
To fear no world's distress.
7. I.e., tell me.

printed in 1546 and 1547, respectively. *Newgate*:

1. Askew was arrested and examined for heresy in
a London prison.

June 1545. She was released, but was arrested

2. Ephesians 6 . 13 - 17 exhorts the Christian to put
again in J u n e 1546, subjected to torture, and
on "the whole armor of God," including "the shield
burned at the stake the next month. This ballad
of faith, with which ye shall be able to quench all
was included in the Protestant Bishop John Bale's
the fiery darts of the wicked."

two accounts of her examination and death,

T H E B A L L A D W H I C H A N N E A S K E W M A D E
A N D S A N G / 1 4 1

I now rejoyce in heart
And hope bid me do so,
For Christ will take my part
And ease me of my woe.
Thou sayst lord, who so kneck,³
To them wilt thou attend;
Undo therefore the lock
And thy strong power send.

More enemies now I have
Than hairs upon my head
Let them not me deprave,⁰ *villify*
But fight thou in my stead.
On thee my care I cast
For all their cruel spite
I set not by their haste,⁴
For thou art my delight.
I am not she that list⁰ *chooses*
My anchor to let fall
For every drizzling mist
My ship substantial.
Not oft use I to write
In prose nor yet in rhyme,
Yet will I show one sight
That I saw in my time.
I saw a royal throne
Where Justice should have sit,
But in her stead was one
Of modie⁰ cruel wit. *wrathful*
Absorbed⁰ was rightwiseness *swallowed up*
As of the raging flood;
Satan in his excess
Sucked up the guiltless blood.
Then thought I, Jesus lord,
When thou shalt judge us all,
Hard is it to record
On these men what will fall.
Yet lord I thee desire

For that⁰ they do to me, *what*
Let them not taste the hire⁰ *reward*
Of their iniquity.⁵

1 5 4 6

3. Knocks. Matthew 7.7: "Ask, and it shall be 5. Christ on the cross also asks mercy for his per-given you; seek, and ye shall find; knock, and it secutors: "Father, forgive them; for they know not shall be opened unto you." what they do" (Luke 23.34).

4. I have no regard for their rashness.

1 4 2

QUEENE L I Z A B E T H I

1533-1603

When I Was Fair and Young¹

When I was fair and young, then favor graced me.

Of many was I sought their mistress⁰ for to be, *sweetheart*

But I did scorn them all and answered them therefore:

Go, go, go, seek some other where, importune me no more.

5 How many weeping eyes I made to pine in woe,

How many sighing hearts I have not skill to show,

But I the prouder grew and still this spake therefore:

Go, go, go, seek some other where, importune me no more.

Then spake fair Venus' son,² that proud victorious boy,

10 Saying: You dainty dame, for that you be so coy,

I will so pluck your plumes³ as you shall say no more:

Go, go, go, seek some other where, importune me no more.

As soon as he had said, such change⁴ grew in my breast

That neither night nor day I could take any rest.

15 Wherefore I did repent that I had said before:

Go, go, go, seek some other where, importune me no more.

ca. 1585? 1964

[The Doubt of Future Foes Exiles My Present Joy]5

The doubt of future foes exiles my present joy,
And wit me warns to shun such snares as threaten mine annoy;⁶
For falsehood now doth flow, and subjects' faith doth ebb,
Which should not be if reason ruled or wisdom weaved the web.
5 But clouds of joys untried do cloak aspiring minds,
Which turn to rain of late repent by changed course of winds.

1. This poem is found with many variations in five alternating lines of six and seven beats (see “Ver-
manuscripts. We follow Leicester Bradner, *The
sification,*” p. 2047) — a popular form at this time
Poems of Queen Elizabeth, in using the British
(see Philip Sidney, “What Length of Verse?”
M u s e u m ‘ s Harleian 7392 as the basis for our text.
p. 210). It appears to answer a sonnet written by
The Bodleian Library’s Rawlinson manuscript,
Elizabeth’s Catholic cousin Mary Stuart, q u e e n of
written between 1590 and 1600, also contains a
Scotland, in which Mary, who had fled to England
version of the poem and states, furthermore, that
from imprisonment in Scotland in 1568, asks to
it was written w h e n Elizabeth “was supposed to be
see Elizabeth. Until her execution in 1587, Mary
in love with mounsyre,” that is, her F r e n c h suitor,
was a constant threat, the impetus of m a n y plots
the duke of Alençon. Some m o d e r n scholars doubt
to depose Elizabeth and seat herself on the English
that Elizabeth wrote the poem, b u t all accept it as

throne. “The daughter of debate” in line 11 and an important cultural document about her. the “foreign banished wight” in line 13 apparently refer to Mary.

2. Cupid, Roman god of erotic love, was the son of Venus, goddess of love and beauty.

Versions of this poem appear in six manuscripts

3. I.e., remove your pride; a reference to the and two early printed texts, including George Put-tenham’s *Art of English Poesy* (1589). Our text fol-ditionally symbol of pride.

lowers that of Bodleian MS. Rawlinson, thought to

4. One manuscript, in the Folger Library, substitute have been compiled around 1570.

tutes “care” for “change.”

Doubt: danger or thing to be dreaded.

5. This poem is written in poulter’s measure —

6. I.e., cause me discomfort or trouble.

[A H S I L L Y P U G , W E R T T H O U S O S O R E A F R A I D] / 1 4 3

The top of hope supposed the root upreared shall be,⁷

And fruitless all their grafted guile,⁸ as shortly ye shall see.

The dazzled eyes with pride, which great ambition blinds,

10 Shall be unsealed by worthy wights⁹ whose foresight falsehood finds.

The daughter of debate that discord aye doth sow

Shall reap no gain where former rule still peace hath taught to know.

No foreign banished wight¹ shall anchor in this port;

Our realm brooks⁰ not seditious sects, let them elsewhere resort,
allows 15 My rusty sword through rest shall first his edge
employ

To poll their tops² that seek such change or gape⁰ for future joy.
long ca. 1570 1589

[Ah Silly Pug, Wert Thou So Sore Afraid]³

Ah silly pug, wert thou so sore afraid,
Mourn not (my Wat⁴) nor be thou so dismayed,
It passeth fickle fortune's power and skill,
To force my heart to think thee any ill.
No fortune base thou sayest shall alter thee,
And may so blind a witch⁵ so conquer me?
No no my pug, though fortune were not blind,
Assure thy self she could not rule my mind.
Fortune I know sometimes doth conquer kings
And rules & reigns on earth & earthly things,
But never think fortune can bear the sway,
If virtue watch & will not her obey.

Ne^o chose I thee by fickle fortune's rede,⁰ *neither / advice*

Ne^o she shall force me alter⁰ with such speed *nor I to*

But if to try this mistress jest with thee,

Pull up thy heart, suppress thy brackish⁰ tears, *salty*

Torment thee not, but put away thy fears;

Dead to all joys & living unto woe,

Slain quite by her that ne're gave wiseman blow

20 Revive again & live without all dread,

The less afraid the better thou shalt speed.⁰ *succeed, prosper*

ca. 1578 - 88 1992

7. Variants on this line include: "The top of hope
Sir Walter Raleigh, probably "Fortune Hath Taken

suppressed the root upreared [i.e., exalted] shall
Thee Away, My Love” (p. 158). *Silly*: deserving of
be” and “The top of hope supposed the root of ruth
pity or compassion; also foolish, lacking in judg-
[sorrow] will be.”

ment, helpless, defenseless, insignificant, or lowly.

8. The image of grafting, or inserting a shoot into

Pug: a term of endearment.

the root stock of another tree or plant, suggests

4. A diminutive of Walter.

that conspirators have attempted to plant their

5. Fortune was often personified as a fickle

own seditious thoughts in the minds of others.

woman and sometimes depicted as blind or blind-

9. People. *Unsealed*: unsewn or unopened, as the
folded.

eyes of a hawk in the sport of hawking.

6. A line of the poem may be missing at this point;

1. I.e., no person exiled to a foreign land.

alternatively, the queen may have written lines 13—

2. I.e., cut off their heads.

1 5 as a triplet of near-rhymes.

3. This poem was written in answer to a poem by

1 4 4

GEORGE GASCOIGNE *

ca. 1534-1577

And If I Did, What Then?

“And if I did, what then?

Are you aggrieved therefore?

The sea hath fish for every man,
And what would you have more?"

5 Thus did my mistress once
Amaze my mind with doubt,
And popped a question for the nonce
To beat my brains about.

Whereto I thus replied:

10 "Each fisherman can wish
That all the sea at every tide
Were his alone to fish.

And so did I, in vain;
But since it may not be,

15 Let such fish there as find the gain,
And leave the loss for me.

And with such luck and loss
I will content myself,
Till tides of turning time may toss

20 Such fishers on the shelf.
And when they stick on sands,
That every man may see,
Then will I laugh and clap my hands,
As they do now at me."

For That He Looked Not upon Her

You must not wonder, though you think it strange,
To see me hold my luring⁰ head so low, *sullen*
And that mine eyes take no delight to range
About the gleams which on your face do grow.

5 The mouse which once hath broken out of trap
Is seldom 'ticed^o with the trustless bait, *enticed*,

But lies aloof for fear of more mishap,
And feedeth still in doubt⁰ of deep deceit. *suspicion*
The scorched fly, which once hath 'scaped the flame,
10 Will hardly come to play again with fire,

*Gascoigne's poems were first published in *A Hundreth*

Sundry Flowers (1573), the source of our 1. Expressly for the purpose of.

GASCOIGNE'S LULLABY / 145

Whereby I learn that grievous is the game
Which follows fancy dazzled by desire:
So that I wink² or else hold down my head,
Because your blazing eyes my bale⁰ have bred. *anguish*

Gascoigne's Lullaby

Sing lullaby, as women do,
Wherewith they bring their babes to rest,
And lullaby can I sing too,
As womanly as can the best.

5 With lullaby they still the child,
And if I be not much beguiled,
Full many wanton babes have I,
Which must be stilled with lullaby.

First, lullaby, my youthful years,
10 It is now time to go to bed,
For crooked age and hoary hairs
Have won the haven within my head.

With lullaby then, youth, be still,
With lullaby content they will,

15 Since courage quails⁰ and comes behind, *shrinks*
Go sleep, and so beguile thy mind.

Next, lullaby, my gazing eyes,
Which wonted were³ to glance apace.⁰

directly

For every glass may now suffice
20 To show the furrows in my face.
With lullaby then wink⁴ awhile,
With lullaby your looks beguile.
Let no fair face nor beauty bright
Entice you e^{ft}⁰ with vain delight.

after

25 And lullaby, my wanton will,
Let reason's rule now rein thy thought,
Since all too late I find by skill⁰ *experience*
How dear I have thy fancies bought.
With lullaby now take thine ease,
30 With lullaby thy doubts appease.
For trust to this, if thou be still,
My body shall obey thy will.
Eke⁰ lullaby, my loving boy,

also

My little Robin,⁵ take thy rest.
35 Since age is cold and nothing coy,⁰

lascivious

Keep close thy coin,⁶ for so is best.

2. I.e., close my eyes; also, blink.

5. I.e., a nickname for his penis.

3. Which were accustomed.

6. I.e., don't expend your semen; with a play on

4. I.e., shut your eyes.

“coin” as money and as a sound in the poet’s name.

1 4 6 / I S A B E L L A W H I T N E Y

With lullaby be thou content,

With lullaby thy lusts relent.

Let others pay which⁰ hath mo^o pence; *who I more*

40 Thou art too poor for such expense.

Thus, lullaby, my youth, mine eyes,

My will, my ware, and all that was.

I can no mo delays devise,

But welcome pain, let pleasure pass.

45 With lullaby now take your leave,

With lullaby your dreams deceive,

And when you rise with waking eye,

Remember Gascoigne’s lullaby.

1 5 7 3

I S A B E L L A W H I T N E Y

fl. 1567-1573

FROM A S W E E T NOSEGAY

A Communication Which the Author Had to London,

Before She Made Her Will

The time is come, I must depart

from thee, ah famous city;

I never yet to rue my smart,⁰ *pain*

did find that thou had’st pity.

5 Wherefore small cause there is, that I

should grieve from thee to go;

But many women foolishly,

like me, and other moe,^o *more*

Do such a fixed fancy set,

10 on those which least deserve,
That long it is ere wit we get
away from them to swerve.
But time with pity oft will tell
to those that will her try,
15 Whether it best be more to mell,^o *mix with*
or utterly defy.

And now hath time me put in mind
of thy great cruelty,

1. This poem and the poetic testament that follows it conclude Whitney's *A Sweet Nosegay* (1573), a collection of poems that begins with 110 verse couplets of advice explicitly borrowed from Hugh Plat's *Flowers of Philosophy* (1572). While city's riches are the author's to bequeath as she Plat's classicizing verses were aimed at an audience likes.

of university men and lawyers, Whitney's book

THE MANNER OF HER WILL, & WHAT SHE LEAVETH
BEHIND HER IN HER LAST WILL AND TESTAMENT
EFTTOLONDON/147

That never once a help would find,
20 to ease me in distress.

Thou never yet would'st credit give
to board me for a year;
Nor with apparel me relieve,

except thou payed were.

25 No, no, thou never did'st me good,
nor ever wilt, I know.

Yet am I in no angry mood,
but will, or ere² I go,

In perfect love and charity,
30 my testament here write,

And leave to thee such treasury,
as I in it recite.

Now stand aside and give me leave
to write my latest will;

35 And see that none you do deceive
of that I leave them till.³

*From The Manner of Her Will, & What She Left to London,
and to All Those in It, at Her Departing*

I whole in body, and in mind,
but very weak in purse,

Do make, and write my testament
for fear it will be worse.

5 And first I wholly do commend
my soul and body eke,^o *also*

To God the Father and the Son,
so long as I can speak.

And after speech, my soul to him,
10 and body to the grave,

Till time that all shall rise again,
their Judgement for to have.

And then I hope they both shall meet,
to dwell for aye⁰ in joy; *ever*

15 Whereas I trust to see my friends *-when*
released from all annoy.

Thus have you heard touching my soul,
and body what I mean:

I trust you all will witness bear,

20 I have a steadfast brain.

O God, now let me dispose such things,
as I shall leave behind,

That those which shall receive the same,
may know my willing mind.

2. In early modern English, “or” was often used 3. I.e., of what I
leave to them, with “ere” to mean “before.”

148 / I S A B E L L A W H I T N E Y

I first of all to London I leave,

because I there was bred,

Brave buildings rare, of churches store,
and Paul's to the head.⁴

Between the same, fair treats there be,
and people goodly store;

Because their keeping craveth⁰ cost,
requires

I yet will leave him^o more.

them

First for their food, I butchers leave,
that every day shall kill;

By Thames⁰ you shall have brewers' store,
river Thames

and bakers at your will.

And such as orders do observe,

and eat fish thrice a week,⁵
I leave two streets, full fraught therewith,⁶
they need not far to seek.

Watling Street, and Canwick Street,
I full of woolen⁰ leave;
And linen store in Friday Street,
if they me not deceive.

And those which are of calling such,
that costlier they require,

I mercers⁰ leave, with silk so rich,

textile merchants

as any would desire.⁷

In Cheap of them, they store shall find,
and likewise in that street,

I goldsmiths leave, with jewels such,⁸

as are for ladies meet.⁰

suitable

Now when the folk are fed and clad

with such as I have named,

For dainty mouths, and stomachs weak

some juncets⁰ must be framed.

sweet cakes

Wherefore I potecaries leave,

with banquets in their shop;⁹

Physicians also for the sick,

Diseases for to stop.

Some roysters⁰ still must bide in thee,

revellers

and such as cut it out;¹

4. The greatest of the “store” (supply) of London’s

7. Possibly an ironic allusion to the Sumptuary
sixteenth-century churches was St. Paul’s Cathe-
Laws that prevented persons below certain social
dral.

ranks (or “callings,” a Protestant term for voca-

5. Evidently playing on religious and secular
tions) from wearing luxurious fabrics.

meanings of “order,” i.e., the clergy (those “in

8. I.e., she bequeathes to goldsmiths their own
orders”) and also anyone who obeyed the Act of
street, Goldsmith’s Row, which was on the south
1563, which sought to stimulate the fishing trade
side of Cheapside Market (“Cheap”); there, those
by decreeing that fish was to be eaten three days a
who “require costlier” things may find many (a
week rather than the two days stipulated in an Act
“store”) of them.

of 1548.

9. Apothecaries carried not only drugs but also

6. Possibly Old Fish Street, London’s original fish
spices; hence one could supply “banquets” in their
market, and New Fish Street, in a different part of
shops.

the city. There were, however, other streets in

1. Show off.

which fish was sold.

THE MANNER OF HER WILL, & WHAT SHE L
EFT TO LONDON / 149

That with the guiltless quarrel will,
100 to let their blood about.
For them I cunning surgeons² leave,
some plasters to apply,
That ruffians may not still be hanged,
nor quiet persons die.

» * *

To all the bookbinders by Paul's,
because I like their art,
195 They every week shall money have,
when they from books depart.
Among them all, my printer must
have somewhat to his share;
I will my friends these books to buy
200 of him, with other ware.
For maidens poor, I widowers rich
do leave, that oft shall dote:
And by that means shall marry them,
to set the girls afloat.
205 And wealthy widows will I leave
to help young gentlemen;
Which when you have, in any case,
be courteous to them then:
And see their plate⁰ and jewels eke^o *silverware / also*
210 may not be marred with rust;
Nor let their bags too long be full,
for fear that they do burst.

s s s

225 And Bedlam³ must not be forgot,

for that was oft my walk:

I people there too many leave,
that out of tune do talk.

235 At th' Inns of Court, I lawyers leave
to take their case in hand.

And also leave I at each Inn
of Court, or Chancery,⁴

Of gentlemen, a youthful roote,^o *rout*, *throng*
240 full of activity,

For whom I store of books have left,
at each bookbinder's stall:

And part of all that London hath,
to furnish them withal.

2. Surgeons generally practiced "manual" arts of
mentally ill; cf. "Tom o' Bedlam's Song" (p. 124).

healing and operating in the early modern era and

4. The court of the lord chancellor of England, in
hence were often regarded as distinct from (and
which a number of young men lived and trained as
inferior to) physicians (see line 95).

clerks; the Inns of Court housed and trained stu-

3. The Hospital of St. Mary of Bethlehem, for the
dents in the C o m m o n Law.

1 5 0 / I S A B E L L A W H I T N E Y

245 And when they are with study cloyed,^o *overfed*
to recreate their mind,

Of tennis courts, of dancing schools,
and fence^o they store shall find. *fencing*

And every Sunday at the least,

250 I leave to make them sport,
In divers places players,0 that *actors*
of wonders shall report.
Now, London, have I (for thy sake)
within thee, and without,5
255 As comes into my memory,
dispersed 'round about
Such needful things as they should have,
here left now unto thee;
When I am gone, with conscience,
260 let them dispersed be.
And though I nothing named have,
to bury me withal,
Consider that above the ground,
annoyance be I shall.
265 And let me have a shrouding sheet
to cover me from shame,
And in oblivion bury me,
and never more me name.
Ringings nor other ceremonies
270 use you not for cost,
Nor at my burial, make no feast,
your money were but lost.
\$ \$ s
This xx of October, I,
in ANNO0 DOMINI,0
year / of our Lord
A thousand, v.° hundred seventy-three,
five

315 as almanacs descry,⁰

show

Did write this will with mine own hand,
and it to London gave;

In witness of the standers-by,
whose names, if you will have,

320 paper, pen and standish⁰ were,

writing stand

at that same present by,^o

nearby

With Time, who promised to reveal
so fast as she could buy

The same, lest of my nearer kin

325 for any thing should vary;⁶

So finally I make an end

no longer can I tarry.

1 5 7 3

5. A number of the places and institutions 6. I.e., lest anything should change for my close described, including the theaters, were outside the relatives, Time promised to reveal my bequests as city proper, in suburbs called the "liberties." fast as she could buy them.

1 5 1

CHIDIOCKTICHBORNE

d. 1586

[My Prime of Youth Is but a Frost of Cares]¹

My prime of youth is but a frost of cares,

My feast of joy is but a dish of pain,

My crop of corn is but a field of tares,⁰ *weeds*

And all my good is but vain hope of gain;

5 The day is past, and yet I saw no sun,
And now I live, and now my life is done.
My tale was heard and yet it was not told,
My fruit is fallen and yet my leaves are green,
My youth is spent and yet I am not old,
10 I saw the world and yet I was not seen;
My thread is cut and yet it is not spun,²
And now I live, and now my life is done.
I sought my death and found it in my womb,
I looked for life and saw it was a shade,
15 I trod the earth and knew it was my tomb,
And now I die, and now I was but made;
My glass⁰ is full, and now my glass is run, *hourglass*
And now I live, and now my life is done.

1 5 8 6

SIR W A L T E R R A L E G H

ca. 1552-1618

A Vision upon the Fairy Queen¹

Methought I saw the grave where Laura² lay,
Within that temple where the vestal flame³
Was wont^o to burn; and, passing by that way, *accustomed*
To see that buried dust of living fame,
5 Whose tomb fair Love, and fairer Virtue kept:
All suddenly I saw the Fairy Queen;

1. This poem, first printed as “Tychborne’s Lam-
w h e n he or she was destined to die.

entation,” was preserved in more than thirty man-

1. This p o e m appeared in both the 1590 and the
uscripts written soon after Tichborne’s execution

1596 editions of Edmund Spenser's epic poem *The Faerie Queene* (see p. 165).

against Queen Elizabeth's life. Our text is from the

2. The woman to whom the Italian poet Petrarch

Tanner MS. (in Oxford's Bodleian Library); the

(1304—1374) addressed his sonnet sequence; with

first owner of this manuscript noted that Tich-

appon "laurel," a symbol of poetic achievement.

borne had written the poem "with his own hand e

3. The sacred fire, guarded by virgin priestesses,

... not three days before his execution."

in the temple of Vesta, Roman goddess of the

2. An allusion to the Fates, three goddesses in

hearth; thus an allusion to Laura's chastity and

classical mythology; they spun the thread that

purity.

determined the length of a person's life, cutting it

152 / SIR WALTER RALEGH

At whose approach the soul of Petrarch wept,

And, from thenceforth, those Graces⁴ were not seen:

For they this queen attended; in whose stead

10 Oblivion laid him down on Laura's hearse:⁰ *tomb*

Hereat the hardest stones were seen to bleed,

And groans of buried ghosts the heavens did pierce:

Where Homer's sprights did tremble all for grief,

And cursed the access of that celestial thief!

1590

The Nymph's Reply to the Shepherd⁶

If all the world and love were young,
And truth in every shepherd's tongue,
These pretty pleasures might me move
To live with thee and be thy love.
5 Time drives the flocks from field to fold
When rivers rage and rocks grow cold,
And Philomel⁷ becometh dumb;
The rest complains of cares to come.
The flowers do fade, and wanton fields⁸
10 To wayward winter reckoning yields;
A honey tongue, a heart of gall,^o *bitterness*
Is fancy's spring, but sorrow's fall.
Thy gowns, thy shoes, thy beds of roses,
Thy cap, thy kirtle,⁹ and thy posies
15 Soon break, soon wither, soon forgotten—
In folly ripe, in reason rotten.
Thy belt of straw and ivy buds,
Thy coral clasps and amber studs,^o *buttons*
All these in me no means can move
20 To come to thee and be thy love.
But could youth last and love still breed,
Had joys no date¹ nor age no need,
Then these delights my mind might move
To live with thee and be thy love.

1600

4. I.e., Love and Virtue.

story in a tapestry and sent it to her sister, who

5. Ghost of the ancient Greek poet credited with
rescued her. Later changed into a nightingale

composing the epic poems the *Iliad* and the *Odyssey*.
while in flight from Tereus, she sings a mournful

song in the springtime.

6. Written in reply to Christopher Marlowe's "The
8. I.e., carelessly cultivated fields; also, fields with
Passionate Shepherd to His Love" (p. 256).

luxuriant summer growth.

7. In Greek mythology, Philomela was raped by

9. A long dress, often worn under an outer garment.
her brother-in-law, Tereus, who then tore out her
tongue so that she could not speak. She wove the

1. I.e., terminal date.

THE PASSIONATE MAN'S PILGRIMAGE / 1
53

The Passionate Man's Pilgrimage

Give me my scallop-shell² of quiet,

My staff of faith to walk upon,

My scrip³ of joy, immortal diet,

My bottle of salvation,

⁵ My gown of glory, hope's true gage,^o *pledge*

And thus I'll take my pilgrimage.

Blood must be my body's balmer,^o *embalmer*

No other balm⁴ will there be given,

Whilst my soul like a white palmer⁵

¹⁰ Travels to the land of heaven,

Over the silver mountains,

Where spring the nectar fountains;

And there I'll kiss
The bowl of bliss,
15 And drink my eternal fill
On every milken hill.
My soul will be a-dry^o before, *dried out, thirsty*
But after it will ne'er thirst more;⁶
And by the happy blissful way
20 More peaceful pilgrims I shall see
That have shook off their gowns of clay⁷
And go appareled fresh like me.
I'll bring them first
To slake^o their thirst, *quench*
25 And then to taste those nectar suckets,^o *confections*
At the clear wells
Where sweetness dwells,
Drawn up by saints in crystal buckets.
And when our bottles and all we
30 Are filled with immortality,
Then the holy paths we'll travel,
Strewed with rubies thick as gravel,
Ceilings of diamonds, sapphire floors,
High walls of coral, and pearl bowers,^o *chambers*
35 From thence to heaven's bribeless hall
Where no corrupted voices brawl,
No conscience molten into gold,
Nor forged accusers bought and sold,
No cause deferred, nor vain-spent journey,
2. A scallop shell or something resembling it was
6. Alludes to John 4.14: "But whosoever drinketh

worn as the sign of a pilgrim.

of the water that I shall give him shall never

3. Pilgrim's knapsack or bag.

thirst... ." In line 16, "milken hill" alludes to the

4. Aromatic preparation for embalming the dead.

Promised Land as a land flowing in milk and honey

5. Person wearing a palm leaf as a sign that he or
(Joshua 5.6).

she had made a pilgrimage to the Holy Land.

7. Earth, i.e., earthly bodies.

1 5 4 / S I R W A L T E R R A L E G H

40 For there Christ is the king's attorney,

Who pleads for all, without degrees,⁰ *respect to rank*

And he hath angels,⁸ but no fees.

When the grand twelve million jury

Of our sins and sinful fury,

45 'Gainst our souls black verdicts give,

Christ pleads his death, and then we live.

Be thou my speaker, taintless pleader,

Unblotted lawyer, true proceeder;

Thou movest salvation even for alms,⁰ *charitable deeds*

50 Not with a bribed lawyer's palms.

And this is my eternal plea

To him that made heaven, earth, and sea,

Seeing my flesh must die so soon,

And want⁰ a head to dine next noon, *need, lack*

55 Just at the stroke when my veins start and spread,

Set on my soul an everlasting head.

Then am I ready, like a palmer fit,⁹

To tread those blest paths which before I writ.

1 6 0 4

The Lie

Go, soul, the body's guest,

Upon a thankless errand;

Fear not to touch the best;

The truth shall be thy warrant.⁰ *guarantee, proof*

5 Go, since I needs must die,

And give the world the lie.¹

Say to the court, it glows

And shines like rotten wood;

Say to the church, it shows

io What's good, and doth no good.

If church and court reply,

Then give them both the lie.

Tell potentates,⁰ they live *rulers*

Acting by others' action;

15 Not loved unless they give,

Not strong but by a faction.

If potentates reply,

Give potentates the lie.

8. A punning reference to the gold coin of that occurred in 1618. W h e n he wrote this poem, he name, ten shillings in value.

was in prison, charged with treason.

9. Outfitted (refers back to the first stanza);

1. To "give the lie" means to contradict, or to Raleigh is imagining his death by beheading, which prove the falsity of something.

T H E L I E / 1 5 5

Tell men of high condition,
20 That manage the estate,²
Their purpose is ambition,
Their practice only hate.
And if they once reply,
Then give them all the lie.
25 Tell them that brave it most,³
They beg for more by spending,
Who, in their greatest cost,
Seek nothing but commending.
And if they make reply,
30 Then give them all the lie.
Tell zeal it wants⁰ devotion;
lacks
Tell love it is but lust;
Tell time it is but motion;
Tell flesh it is but dust.
35 And wish them not reply,
For thou must give the lie.
Tell age it daily wasteth;
Tell honor how it alters;
Tell beauty how she blasteth;⁰
withers
40 Tell favor how it falters.
And as they shall reply,
Give every one the lie.
Tell wit how much it wrangles
In tickle⁰ points of niceness;

delicate, unreliable

45 Tell wisdom she entangles
Herself in overwiseness.
And when they do reply,
Straight give them both the lie.

Tell physic⁰ of her boldness;
medicine

50 Tell skill it is pretension;
Tell charity of coldness;
Tell law it is contention.

And as they do reply,
So give them still the lie.

55 Tell fortune of her blindness;
Tell nature of decay;
Tell friendship of unkindness;
Tell justice of delay.

And if they will reply,
60 Then give them all the lie.

2. Condition of h u m a n beings with respect to 3. I.e., show off
the most; also, to dress extrava-worldly prosperity; also, an
implied analogy gantly.

between England and a nobleman's estate or land.

1 5 6 / S I R W A L T E R R A L E G H

Tell arts they have no soundness,
But vary by esteeming;
Tell schools they want profoundness,
And stand too much on seeming.

65 If arts and schools reply,
Give arts and schools the lie.

Tell faith it's fled the city;
Tell how the country erreth;
Tell manhood shakes off pity; *say how*
70 Tell virtue least preferreth.⁴
And if they do reply,
Spare not to give the lie.
So when thou hast, as I
Commanded thee, done blabbing⁰— *revealing secrets*
75 Although to give the lie
Deserves no less than stabbing—
Stab at thee he that will,
No stab the soul can kill.

1608

Nature, That Washed Her Hands in Milk
Nature, that washed her hands in milk,
And had forgot to dry them,
Instead of earth took snow and silk,
At love's request to try them,
5 If she a mistress could compose
To please love's fancy out of those.
Her eyes he would should be of light,
A violet breath, and lips of jelly;
Her hair not black, nor overbright,
10 And of the softest down her belly;
As for her inside he'd have it
Only of wantonness and wit.
At love's entreaty such a one
Nature made, but with her beauty
15 She hath framed a heart of stone;

So as love, by ill destiny,
Must die for her whom nature gave him,
Because her darling would not save him.

4. I.e., tell virtue that it succeeds least (less than vice does).

IF CYNTHIA BE A QUEEN, A PRINCESS, AND
D SUPREME / 1 5 7

But time (which nature doth despise,
20 And rudely gives her love the lie,
Makes hope a fool, and sorrow wise)
His hands do neither wash nor dry;
But being made of steel and rust,
Turns snow and silk and milk to dust.
25 The light, the belly, lips, and breath,
He dims, discolors, and destroys;
With those he feeds but fills not death,
Which sometimes⁰ were the food of joys. *formerly*
Yea, time doth dull each lively wit,
30 And dries all wantonness with it.
Oh, cruel time! which takes in trust
Our youth, our joys, and all we have,
And pays us but with age and dust;
Who in the dark and silent grave
35 When we have wandered all our ways
Shuts up the story of our days.⁵

ca. 1610

If Cynthia Be a Queen, a Princess, and Supreme⁶
If Cynthia be a queen, a princess, and supreme,
Keep these among the rest,⁷ or say it was a dream,
For those that like, expound, and those that loathe express

Meanings according as their minds are moved more or less;
5 For writing what thou art, or showing what thou were,
Adds to the one disdain, to the other but despair,
Thy mind of neither needs, in both seeing it exceeds.

1 5 8 9 ? 1 8 7 0

5. Another version of this stanza, traditionally supposed to have been written by Raleigh on the night before his execution, was published in 1628. In it, the first three words are changed to “Even such is for Queen Elizabeth I and was one she approved time,” and the following couplet is added at the end: “And from which earth, and grave, and dust suggests that the queen rules him as the moon / The Lord shall raise me up, I trust.” The poem rules the tides.

as a whole existed only in manuscript until 1902.

7. If Raleigh is addressing himself, “keep” may

6. This enigmatic poem probably was written at a mean “don’t send to her”; if the poet addresses the queen, he is telling her to keep his verses with the favor. It appears in a manuscript before a fragment rest of the many poems of courtly love and praise of the longer poem “The Ocean to Cynthia.” The she has received from him and other court poets.

“thou” of the poem may be the queen, Raleigh, or

158 / SIR WALTER RALEGH

[Fortune Hath Taken Thee Away, My Love]⁸

Fortune hath taken thee away, my love,
My life's soul and my soul's heaven above;
Fortune hath taken thee away, my princess;
My only light and my true fancy's mistress.

5 Fortune hath taken all away from me,
Fortune hath taken all by taking thee.

Dead to all joy, I only live to woe,
So fortune now becomes my mortal foe.

In vain you eyes, you eyes do waste your tears,
10 In vain you sighs do smoke forth my despairs,
In vain you search the earth and heaven above,
In vain you search, for fortune rules in love.

Thus now I leave my love in fortune's hands,
Thus now I leave my love in fortune's bands,
15 And only love the sorrows due to me;
Sorrow henceforth it shall my princess be.

I joy in this, that fortune conquers kings;
Fortune that rules on earth and earthly things
Hath taken my love in spite of Cupid's⁹ might;
20 So blind a dame¹ did never Cupid right.

With wisdom's eyes had but blind Cupid seen,
Then had my love my love for ever been;
But love farewell; though fortune conquer thee,
No fortune base shall ever alter me.

Before 1589 1992

8. This poem appears to have been written to

lished in that year.

Queen Elizabeth I, who replied to it with her poem

9. Cupid, the Roman god of erotic love, is often

“Ah Silly Pug, Wert Thou So Sore Afraid” (p. 143).

depicted as a blind and winged boy.

Both poems are included in a manuscript of the

1. Fortune was often personified as a fickle

1620s in the Wiltshire record office, and both were

woman and sometimes depicted as blind or blind-

written before 1589; George Puttenham quotes

folded. “Fortune My Foe” was a popular tune.

from both poems in his *Art of English Poesy*, pub-



159

EDMUND SPENSER *

1552-1599

FROM THE SHEPHEARDES CALENDER I

Aprill

^Because Spenser adopted many archaisms to lend

series of twelve interlinked poems that draws on an antique appearance to his poetry, the English several literary genres including the classical poet Ben Jonson (1572—1673; see pp. 323—45) eclogue, or short pastoral poem, the calendar-said that Spenser “writ no language.” For example, almanac, the romance, the beast fable, the satire, he imitated the archaic form of the participle command and the Petrarchan lyric (from the fourteenth-century Italian poet Petrarch). Spenser presents form of the Old English prefix *ge*. Spenser was himself following a career path famously modeled innovative as well: he coined many new words and by the ancient Roman poet Virgil: the young poet played—often fancifully—with the native and for-prepares for epic endeavor by writing pastoral eign etymologies of English words. He thus participated in a project dear to the hearts of many old-fashioned English rendering) is named after a educated Elizabethan writers—“enriching” the month and contains several parts. First comes a vernacular with borrowings from classical and woodcut depicting the month’s zodiacal sign and modern languages and dialects to create a “king-the poem’s dramatic scenario. Then comes a brief dom of our own language,” as Spenser called it in prose “Argument,” a synopsis of the poem’s action.

a letter to his friend the writer Gabriel Harvey
Following that are the verse text of the eclogue and
(1 5 5 0 - 1 6 3 0) .

then one or more verbal emblems, or “mottos,”

Because Spenser’s verbal wit depends in part on
usually one for each of the poem’s speakers.

showing words’ multiple meanings and various

Finally, there are lengthy glosses on parts of the
“roots,” historical and imaginary, we have not mod-
p o e m and on the emblems.

ernized Spenser’s texts except in minor ways. We

The glosses, and perhaps the “Arguments,” are
regularize i s, j’s, M’S, and v’s according to modern

conspicuously attributed to someone designated

conventions, replace diphthongs with separate char-

only by the initials “E. K.” This figure first appears

acters, and occasionally r e p u n c t u a t e lines w h e n

as the a u t h o r of the *Calender*’s dedicatory epistle

they seem particularly difficult for modern readers.

to Gabriel Harvey (see preceding note) and has

We also print in roman type words italicized in the

been identified both as Harvey and as Spenser,

editions printed during Spenser’s lifetime. (In gen-

who would be adopting a scholarly, even pedantic

eral, we follow the first editions of his texts except

persona to promote his reputation as an important

in the case of *The Faerie Queene*, where we rely

poet. E. K.’s glosses, which include explications of

on the 1596 edition rather than the one of 1590.)

difficult or archaic words as well as learned, and
Finally, to aid the reader in pronouncing and scan-
sometimes critical, discussions of Spenser's poetic
ning Spenser's poetry, which often plays on con-
texts, are usually published in full with the
respondences and differences between the way
eclogues. Here, we incorporate those of E. K.'s
words sound and the ways in which they appear on
glosses that seem especially useful to the modern
the page, we add some metrical accents.
reader; they too retain original spellings.

1. Spenser's first independently published work, a
160 / EDMUND SPENSER

*Aegloga Quarto*²

ARGUMENT

*This Aeglogue is purposely intended to the honor and prayse of
our most gracious sovereigne, Queene Elizabeth. The speakers
herein he Hohhinoll and Thenott, two shepheardes: the which
Hohhinoll heing before mentioned,*

*greatly to have loved Colin, is here set forth more largely,
complayning him of that boyes great misadventure in Love,
whereby his rnynd was alienate and with drawen not onely from
him, who moste loved him, but also from all former delightes
and studies, aswell in pleasaunt pyping, as conning³ ryming
and singing, and other his laudable exercises. Whereby he
taketh occasion, for prooffe of his more excellencie and skill in
poetrie, to recorde⁴ a songe, which the sayd Colin sometime
made in honor of her Majestie, whom abruptly he termeth*

*Elysa.*⁵

THE NOTHOBBINOLL

Tell me good Hobbinoll, what garres thee greete?⁶

What? hath some Wolfe thy tender Lambes ytorne?

Or is thy Bagpype broke, that soundes so sweete?
Or art thou of thy loved lasse forlorne? *0 forsaken*
5 Or bene thine eyes attempted to the yeare,⁷
Quenching the gasping furrowes thirst with rayne?
Like April shoure, so stremes the trickling teares
Adowne thy cheeke, to quenche thy thristye *0 payne. thirsty*

H O B B I N O L L

Nor thys, nor that, so mucche doeth make me mourne,
10 But for *0* the ladde, whome long I lovd so deare, *that*
Nowe loves a lasse, that all his love doth scorne:
He plongd in payne, his tressed *0* locks dooth teare. *curled*
Shepheards delights he dooth them all forswear,
Hys pleasaunt Pipe, whych made us meriment,
15 He wylfully hath broke, and doth forbear
His wonted songs, wherein he all outwent.⁸

2. I.e., Fourth Eclogue; “April” thus alludes to

4. Remember.

Virgil’s Fourth Eclogue, which joyously predicts

5. I.e., he called Elizabeth “Elysa” because it’s
the return of a “virgin” goddess and associates the
shorter. For Spenser’s learned contemporaries, the
mythical Golden Age ruled by the goddess Astraea
name would also have recalled “Elissa,” the ancient
with the era of Virgil’s patron, Caesar Augustus.

Carthaginian queen whom Virgil called “Dido” and

Drawing not only on Virgil’s poem but also on
depicted falling fatally in love with the Trojan hero
medieval Christian texts that read it as foretelling
Aeneas. In many non-Virgilian versions of this

Christ's birth through the "vessel" of the Virgin queen's story, Dido is named "Elissa" and remains Mary, Spenser fashions his eclogue as a complex a chaste widow; in that guise, she was often hon-compliment to England's Queen Elizabeth I orifically linked to England's queen Elizabeth. (1533 - 1604; see pp. 142-43).

6. "Caused thee [to] weep and complain"

The woodcut for "Aprill" shows the shepherd [E. K.].

Colin Clout—Spenser's autobiographical persona

7. "Agreeable to the season of the yeare, that is —piping a song in honor of Elizabeth ("Elysa," the Aprill, which moneth is most bent to shoures and shepherd's queen). She is shown with her ladies of seasonable rayne: to quench ... the drought" the court; the shepherds Thenot and Hobbinol are [E. K.].

in the background, and the astrological sign for

8. His usual songs, which surpassed those of all April, Taurus the bull, is at the top.

others.

3. I.e., learning.

THE SHEPHERDES CALENDAR: APRILL /
161

THE NOT

What is he for a Ladde,⁹ you so lament?

Ys love such pinching payne to them, that prove?⁰ *experience it*

And hath he skill to make¹ so excellent,

20 Yet hath so little skill to brydle love?

H O B B I N O L L

Colin thou kenst,0 the Southerne shepheardes boye:2 *knowest*

Him Love hath wounded with a deadly darte.

Whilome on him was all my care and joye,

Forcing0 with gyfts to winne his wanton heart. *striving*

But now from me hys madding0 mynd is starte,0 *foolish /
broken away*

And woes0 the Widdowes daughter of the glenne:3 *woos*

So nowe fayre Rosalind hath bredde0 hys smart, *caused / hurt*

So now his frend is chaunged for a frenne.0 *stranger*

T H E N O T

But if hys ditties bene so trimly dight,0 *adorned*

30 I pray thee Hobbinoll, recorde0 some one: *sing*

The whiles our flockes doe graze about in sight,

And we close shrowded in thys shade alone.

H O B B I N O L L

Contented I: then will I singe his laye0 *song*

Of fayre Elisa, Queene of shepheardes all:4

35 Which once he made, as by a spring he laye,

And tuned it unto the Waters fall.

Ye daynty Nymphs, that in this blessed Brooke
doe bathe your brest,

For sake your watry bowres, and hether looke,

40 at my request:

And eke you Virgins, that on Parnasse dwell,

Whence floweth Helicon the learned well,5

Helpe me to blaze6

Her worthy praise,

45 Which in her sexe doth all excell.

9. “What maner of Ladde is he?” [E.K.].

person, then simply spoken. For it is well knowen

1. “To rime and versifye” [E. K.]. The English

... that shee is a Gentle woman of no meane

word *poet* comes from the Greek word *poiein*, to

house” [E. K.].

make.

4. “In all this songe is not to be respected, what

2. “Seemeth hereby that Colin perteyneth to some

the worthinesse of her Majestie deserveth, nor

Southern noble man” [E. K.]. Spenser may be

what to the highnes of a Prince is agreeable, but

referring to the earl of Leicester, a courtier with

what is moste comely for the meanesse of a shep-

whom Q u e e n Elizabeth was romantically linked;

heards witte, or to conceive, or to utter” [E. K.]

more likely, the reference is to Bishop John Young,

5. “The nine Muses ... whose abode the Poets

for whom Spenser served as secretary while com-

faine to be on Parnassus, a hill in Greece” [E. K.].

posing the *Calender*.

In Greek mythology, the Muses were nine sister

3. “He calleth Rosalind the Widowes daughter of

goddesses who presided over song, poetry, and the

the glenne, that is, of a country hamlet or borough

arts and sciences.

[the word may also mean “a wooded mountain val-

6. A blazon was a poem cataloging and praising a

ley”], which I thinke is rather sayde to concele the
lady’s various physical features.

162 / E D M U N D S P E N S E R

Of fayre Elisa be your silver song,
that blessed wight:0 *person*

The flowre of Virgins, may shee florish long,
In princely plight.0 *condition*

50 For shee is Syrinx daughter without spotte,
Which Pan the shepheards God of her begot:7

So sprong her grace

Of heavenly race,

No mortall blemishe may her blotte.

55 See, where she sits upon the grassie greene,
(O seemely0 sight) *pleasing*

Yclad in Scarlot like a mayden Queene,
And Ermines white.

Upon her head a Cremosin0 coronet, *crimson*

60 With Damaske roses and Daffadillies set:

Bayleaves betweene,

And Primroses greene

Embellish8 the sweete Violet.

Tell me, have ye seene her angelick face,

65 Like Phoebe fayre?9

Her heavenly haveour,0 her princely grace *bearing*
can you well compare?

The Redde rose medled with the White yfere,1

In either cheeke depeincten0 lively chere. *depict*

70 Her modest eye,

Her Majestie,

Where have you seene the like, but there?
 I sawe Phoebus thrust out his golden hedde,
 upon her to gaze:
 75 But when he sawe, how broade her beames did spredde,²
 it did him amaze.
 He blusht to see another Sunne belowe,
 Ne durst againe his fyrye⁰ face out showe: *fiery*
 Let him, if he dare,
 80 His brightnesse compare
 With hers, to have the overthrowe.³
 Shewe thy selfe Cynthia⁴ with thy silver rayes,
 and be not abasht:

7. In Greek mythology, “Syrinx is the name of a
 Poets faine to be sister unto Phoebus, that is the
 Nympe of Arcadie, whom when Pan being in love
 Sunne” [E. K.].

pursued. ... By Pan is here meant the most

1. “Together” [E. K.]. *Medled*: mingled. Henry
 famous and victorious King, her highnesse Father,
 and Elizabeth were descended from the houses of
 late of worthy memorye K. Henry the eyght”
 Lancaster and York (symbolized, respectively, by
 [E. K.]. “Without spotte” qualifies “Syrinx,” not
 the red rose and the white rose), whose conflicting
 “daughter,” thus covertly repudiating the scandals
 claims to the throne caused the Wars of the Roses
 surrounding Anne Boleyn (1507?—1536), second
 (1453-97).

wife of King Henry VIII (1491-1547) and mother

2. The lady outshining the sun is a Petrarchan
of Elizabeth.

motif.

8. “Beautifye and set out” [E. K.], i.e., by contrast

3. I.e., have the victory.

of colors.

4. “The M o o n e ” [E. K.]. A c o m m o n epithet for

9. In Greek mythology, “the M o o n e , whom the

Q u e e n Elizabeth.

T H E S H E P H E A R D E S C A L E N D A R : A P R I L L /
1 6 3

When shee the beames of her beauty displayes,

85 O how art thou dasht?

But I will not match her with Latonaes seede,

Such follic great sorow to Niobe did breede.s

Now she is a stone,

And makes dayly mone,

90 Warning all other to take heede.

Pan may be proud, that ever he begot

such a Bellibone,⁶

And Syrinx rejoyse, that ever was her lot

to beare such an one.

95 Soone as my younglings cryen for the dam,

To her will I offer a milkwhite Lamb:

Shee is my goddesse plaine,⁰ *absolute*

And I her shepherds swayne,⁰ *servant*

Albee forswonck and forswatt⁷ I am.

100 I see Calliope⁰ speede her to the place, *Muse of epic poetry*

where my Goddesse shines:

And after her the other Muses trace,⁰ *step*
with their Violines.

Bene they not Bay braunches,⁸ which they doe beare,
105 All for Elisa in her hand to weare?

So sweetely they play,
And sing all the way,
That it a heaven is to heare.

Lo how finely the graces⁹ can it foote^o *dance*
110 to t h e I n s t r u m e n t . ⁰ *shepherd's pipe*

They dauncen deffly,⁰ and singen soote,⁰ *nimbly / sweetly*
in their meriment.

Wants not a fourth grace, to make the daunce even?
Let that rowme^o to my Lady be yeven.^o *place/given*

115 She shalbe a grace,
To fyll the fourth place,
And reigne with the rest in heaven.

And whither rennes⁰ this bevie⁰ of Ladies bright, *runs /*
company

raunged in a rowe?

120 They bene all Ladyes of the lake behight,¹
that unto her goe.

Chloris,² that is the chiefest Nymph of al,
Of Olive braunches beares a Coronall:⁰ *crown*

5. Niobe boasted that her seven sons and seven
crown of laurel, given as a prize in ancient Greece.
daughters made her superior to Latona, a goddess,

9. "Be three sisters, the daughters of Jupiter,
whose two children, Apollo and Diana, then slew
whose n a m e s are Aglaia, Thalia, Euphrosyne ...

Niobe's entire progeny, after which her sorrow
with the Poets feigned to be Goddesses of all
transformed her to stone. Cf. Ovid, *Metamorphoses*
"bountie and comelines" [E. K.].

6 . 1 4 8 - 3 1 2 .

1. Called. E. K. records the ancient view that

6. *Belle bonne*: "homely spoken for a fayre mayde
every spring and fountain had a goddess, or water
or Bonilasse" [E. K.].

nymph, as its sovereign.

7. "Overlaboured and sunneburnt" [E. K.].

2. According to E. K., the nymph of flowers and

8. "Be the signe of honor and victory ... and eke
green herbs; her name signifies greenness.

[also] of famous Poets" [E. K.]; i.e., the garland or

1 6 4 / E D M U N D S P E N S E R

Olives bene for peace,

When wars doe surcease:

Such for a Princesse bene principall.³

Ye shepheards daughters, that dwell on the greene,

hye° you there apace:0

come / quickly

Let none come there, but that Virgins bene,

to adorne her grace.

And when you come, whereas⁰ shee is in place,

where

See, that your rudenesse doe not you disgrace:

Binde your fillets⁰ faste,

hair ribbons

And gird in your waste,
For more finesse, with a tawdrie lace.⁴
Bring hether the Pincke and purple Cullambine,
With Gelliflowres:⁵
Bring Coronations, and Sops in wine,
worne of Paramoures.⁰ *lovers*
140 Strowe me the ground with Daffadowndillies,
And Cowslips, and Kingcups, and loved Lillies:
The pretie Pawnee,
And the Chevisaunce;
Shall match with the fayre flowre Delice.
145 Now ryse up Elisa,⁶ decked as thou art,
in royall aray:
And now ye daintie Damsells may depart
echeone her way.
I feare, I have troubled your troupes to longe:
150 Let dame Eliza thanke you for her song.
And if you come hether,
When Damsines⁰ I gether, *damsons, plums*
I will part them all you among.⁷

T H E N O T

And was thilk⁰ same song of Colins owne making? *this*
155 Ah foolish boy, that is with love yblent:⁰ *blinded*
Great pittie is, he be in such taking,⁰ *plight*
For naught caren, that bene so lewdly bent.⁸

H O B B I N O L

Sicker⁰ I hold him, for a great fon,⁰ *surely/fool*
That loves the thing, he cannot purchase.
160 But let us homeward: for night draweth on,

And twinkling starres the daylight hence chase.

3. Of prime importance. Elizabeth was celebrated species of wallflower; “flowre Delice,” fleur de lis, in the 1570s for the continuous peace her reign a kind of iris.

had brought.

6. “Is the conclusion. For having so decked her

4. A band of lace or silk, sold during the fair of St. prayses and comparisons, he returneth all the Audrey.

thanck of hys laboure to the excellencie of her

5. The following lines list flowers common in pastoral poetry: “Coronations” are carnations; “Sops

7. Among you all.

in wine,” clove pinks; “Daffadowndillies,” daffo-

8. I.e., for they that are so foolishly inclined are

dils; “Pawnee,” pansies; “Chevisaunce,” maybe a heedless of everything.

THE FAERIE QUEENE: THE FIRST BOOKE /
165

Thenots Embleme.

O quam te memorem virgo?

Hobbinols Embleme.

*O dea certe.*⁹

1579

FROM THE FAERIE QUEENE

The First Booke

Contayning

*The Legende of the
Knight of the Red Crosse,
or
Of Holinesse*

i

Lo I the man, whose Muse² whilome⁰ did maske, *formerly*
As time her taught, in lowly Shepherds weeds,³
Am now enforst a far unfitter taske,
For trumpets sterne to chaunge mine Oaten reeds,⁴
5 And sing of Knights and Ladies gentle⁰ deeds; *noble*
Whose prayes having slept in silence long,
Me, all too meane, the sacred Muse areeds⁵
To blazon⁶ broad emongst her learned throng:
Fierce warres and faithfull loves shall moralize my song.

9. These emblems are the words Aeneas speaks to Elizabeth not only in the figure of Gloriana b u t also his mother, Venus, disguised as a huntress: “What in several other characters. In addition to various n a m e shall I know you by, maiden? Surely a god- modes of allegory, the p o e m draws on m a n y dess” (*Aeneid* 1 . 3 2 7 - 2 8) .

Renaissance genres, some of the most important

1. In a letter to the English poet Sir Walter Raleigh being the courtesy book, the romance, and the (ca. 1 5 5 2 - 1 6 1 8 ; see pp. 1 5 1 - 5 8) published with epic.

the first edition, Spenser declares that his principal

2. O n e of nine Greek sister goddesses believed to intention in writing the p o e m is “to fashion a gen-

be sources of inspiration for the arts.

tleman or noble person in virtuous and gentle dis-

3. G a r m e n t s ; i.e., the poet who before wrote h u m -
cipline.” T h u s he sets forth a plan to write twelve
ble pastoral poetry. Lines 1—4 imitate verses pre-
books, each one having a hero distinguished for
fixed to Renaissance editions of the ancient R o m a n
one of the private virtues; twelve books on the pub-
poet Virgil’s epic p o e m the *Aeneid* and signal Spen-
lic virtues will follow. The six books that Spenser
ser’s imitation of Virgil, w h o began his poetic
completed (the first three published in 1590, the
career with pastoral poetry and moved on to the
remaining three published in 1596) present the
epic, a move that Spenser copied (with the 1579
virtues of Holiness, T e m p e r a n c e , Chastity, Friend-
publication of *The Shepheardes Calender*, followed
ship, Justice, and Courtesy. In addition, two cantos
by the 1590 publication of *The Faerie Queene*).

on Mutability (the principle of constant c h a n g e in
Spenser’s organization of each book into twelve
nature) were published in 1609 after Spenser’s
cantos also imitates the twelve books of Virgil’s
death, although no known authority exists for their
Aeneid.

division and numbering, or for the r u n n i n g title,

4. Or pipes, a symbol of pastoral poetry. *Trumpets*:

“The Seventh Booke.”

a symbol of epic poetry.

The title of the poem contains a dual reference
5. Commands and instructs. *Sacred Muse*: per-
to its character, Gloriana, the Fairy Queen, who
haps Clio, the Muse of history, often said to be the
bids the poem's heroes to set out on particular
eldest of the nine Muses; or perhaps Calliope, the
adventures, and to Queen Elizabeth I (1533—1603;
Muse of epic poetry; the “holy Virgin chiefe of
see pp. 142—43), England's ruler from 1558 until
nine” (line 10) also seems to refer to one of these
1603, or for almost all of Spenser's life; as an “Alle-
two Muses.

gory, or darke conceit” (again, a claim that Spenser
6. To proclaim (from *blaze*, to announce by
makes in the letter to Raleigh), the poem mirrors
blowing a trumpet).

166 / EDMUND SPENSER

2

10 Helpe then, O holy Virgin chiefe of nine,
Thy weaker⁰ Novice to performe thy will, *too weak*
Lay forth out of thine everlasting scryne⁰ *coffer or shrine*
The antique rolles, which there lye hidden still,
Of Faerie knights and fairest Tanaquill,⁷
15 Whom that most noble Briton Prince⁸ so long
Sought through the world, and suffered so much ill,
That I must rue his undeserved wrong:

O helpe thou my weake wit, and sharpen my dull tong.

3

And thou most dreaded impe⁹ of highest Jove,

20 Faire Venus sonne, that with thy cruell dart
At that good knight so cunningly didst rove,^o *shoot*
That glorious fire it kindled in his hart,^o *heart*
Lay now thy deadly Heben⁰ bow apart, *ebony*
And with thy mother milde come to mine ayde:
25 Come both, and with you bring triumphant Mart,⁰ *Mars*
In loves and gentle jollities arrayd,
After his murdrous spoiles and bloody rage allayd.

4

And with them eke,^o O Goddesse heavenly bright, *also*
Mirroure of grace and Majestie divine,
BO Great Lady of the greatest Isle, whose light
Like Phoebus lampe¹ throughout the world doth shine,
Shed thy faire beames into my feeble eyne,
And raise my thoughts too humble and too vile,
To thinke of that true glorious type of thine,
35 The argument⁰ of mine afflicted stile:² *subject*
The which to heare, vouchsafe, O dearest dred³ a-while.

Canto 1

The Patron⁰ of true Holinesse, sponsor or pattern

Foule Errour doth defeate:

Hypocrisie him to entrappe,

Doth to his home entreate.

i

A Gentle Knight was pricking⁰ on the plaine, *riding briskly*
Ycladd in mightie armes and silver shielde,
Wherein old dints of deepe wounds did remaine,
7. The wife of Tarquin, the first Etruscan king of
but Spenser stresses the line of descent from Jove,

Rome; noted for her chastity; i.e., a reference to Venus's father and ruler of the gods.

Gloriana.

1. The sun; Phoebus Apollo was the Roman god

8. I.e., Arthur, first named in canto 9.

of the sun; Spenser is comparing Apollo to Queen

9. Offspring, i.e., Cupid, Roman god of love,

Elizabeth, the "Goddess" of line 28.

whose arrows ("cruell dart," line 21) caused their

2. Humble pen; also, "stile" may refer to the poem

victims to fall in love; he was the son of Venus,

itself.

goddess of love and beauty. Mars, god of war and

3. Object of awe and fear. *Vouchsafe*: bestow (i.e.,

lover of Venus, was often said to be Cupid's father,

confer your ear upon my poem).

THE FAERIE QUEENE: THE FIRST BOOKE /
167

The cruell markes of many a bloody felde;

5 Yet armes till that time did he never wield:

His angry steede did chide his foming bitt,

As much disdayning to the curbe to yield:

Full jolly⁴ knight he seemd, and faire did sitt,

As one for knightly giusts⁰ and fierce encounters fitt.⁰ *jousts /
suited* 2

io But on his brest a bloudie Crosse he bore,

The deare remembrance of his dying Lord,

For whose sweete sake that glorious badge he wore,

And dead as living ever him ador'd:

Upon his shield the like was also scor'd,
15 For souveraine hope, which in his helpe he had:
Right faithfull true⁵ he was in deede and word,
But of his cheere⁰ did seeme too solemne sad;⁰ *face/grave*
Yet nothing did he dread, but ever was ydrad.⁰ *dreaded*

3

Upon a great adventure he was bond,⁰ *going; bound by a vow*
20 That greatest Gloriana to him gave,
That greatest Glorious Queene of Faerie lond,
To winne him worship,⁰ and her grace to have, *honor*
Which of all earthly things he most did crave;
And ever as he rode, his hart⁰ did earne⁰
heart / yearn

25 To prove his puissance⁰ in battell brave
strength

Upon his foe, and his new force to learne;
Upon his foe, a Dragon horrible and stearne.

4

A lovely Ladie rode him faire beside,
Upon a lowly Asse more white then⁰ snow,

than

30 Yet she much whiter, but the same did hide
Under a vele, that wimpled⁰ was full low,
lying in folds

And over all a blacke stole⁰ she did throw,
shawl

As one that inly⁰ mourned: so was she sad,
inwardly

And heavie sat upon her palfrey slow:

35 Seemed in heart some hidden care she had,
And by her in a line a milke white lambe she 1; ad.0 *led*

5

So pure an innocent, as that same lambe,
She was in life and every vertuous0 lore,0 *moral / doctrine*

And by descent from Royall lynage came

40 Of ancient Kings and Queenes, that had of yore

Their scepters stretcht from East to Westerne shore,

And all the world in their subjection held;

Till that infernall feend with foule uprore *revolt*

4. The range of meanings includes gallant, hand- opened; and behold a white horse; and he that sat some, amorous, brave, cheerful. upon him was called Faithful and True... .”

5. Echoes Revelation 19.11: “And I saw heaven

168

/ E D M U N D S P E N S E R

Forwasted0 all their land, and them expeld: *laid waste*

45 Whom to avenge, she had this Knight from far compeld.0
summoned

6

Behind her farre away a Dwarfe did lag,

That lasie seemd in being ever last,

Or wearied with bearing of her bag

Of needments at his backe. Thus as they past,

50 The day with cloudes was suddeine overcast,

And angry Jove an hideous storme of raine

Did poure into his Lemans6 lap so fast,

That every wight0 to shrowd0 it did constrain, *creature / take cover*

And this faire couple eke0 to shroud themselves were *also*

fain.⁰ *obliged*

7

55 Enforst to seeke some covert nigh at hand,
A shadie grove not far away they spide,
That promist ayde the tempest to withstand:
Whose loftie trees yclad with sommers pride,
Did spred so broad, that heavens light did hide,
60 Not perceable⁰ with power of any starre: *penetrable*
And all within were pathes and alleies wide,
With footing worne, and leading inward farre:
Faire harbour that them seemes; so in they entred arre.

8

And fourth they passe, with pleasure forward led,
65 Joying to heare the birdes sweete harmony,
Which therein shrouded from the tempest dred,⁰ *fearful*
Seemd in their song to scorne the cruell sky.
Much can⁰ they prayse the trees so straight and hy, *did*
The sayling Pine,⁷ the Cedar proud and tall,
70 The vine-prop Elme, the Poplar never dry,
The builder Oake, sole king of forrests all,
The Aspine good for staves, the Cypresse funerall.

9

The Laurell, meed⁰ of mightie Conquerours *reward*
And Poets sage, the Firre that weepeth still,
75 The Willow worne of forlorne Paramours,
The Eugh obedient to the benders will,
The Birch for shaftes, the Sallow for the mill,
6. His lover, i.e., the earth.

stagnant water like that found at a millpond; the

7. Spenser's catalog of trees imitates similar catalogs in Chaucer's *Parliament of Fowls*, Virgil's *Aeneid*, and Ovid's *Metamorphoses*. The "Mirrhe" (myrrh), used as incense because of its sweet smell, was one of the gifts presented by the wise men to the infant Christ; the "Beech" was used to make the axle of the war chariot, according to Homer's *Iliad*; the "Poplar" grew by water; the "Oake" was used in building; the "Platane" is perhaps listed as "Cypresse" was used to decorate graves. Garlands made from the "Laurell" were a sign of military or poetic achievement; the "Firre" continually exudes resin; the "Eugh" (yew) was traditionally used for bows; the "Sallow" (willow) was associated with

THE FAERIE QUEENE: THE FIRST BOOKE /
169

The Mirrhe sweete bleeding in the bitter wound,
The warlike Beech, the Ash for nothing ill,
so The fruitful Olive, and the Platane round,
The carver Holme, the Maple seeldom inward sound.

10

Led with delight, they thus beguile⁰ the way, *wile away; charm*
Untill the blustering storme is overblowne;
When weening⁰ to returne, whence they did stray, *intending*

85 They cannot finde that path, which first was showne,
But wander too and fro in wayes unknowne,
Furthest from end then, when they nearest weene.⁸
That makes them doubt, their wits be not their owne:
So many pathes, so many turnings seene,
90 That which of them to take, in diverse⁰ doubt they been.
distracting 11

At last resolving forward still to fare,
Till that some end they finde or in or out,
That path they take, that beaten seemd most bare,
And like to lead the labyrinth about;⁰
out of

95 Which when by tract⁰ they hunted had throughout,
track

At length it brought them to a hollow cave,
Amid the thickest woods. The Champion stout⁰
brave

Eftsoones⁰ dismounted from his courser brave,
soon after

And to the Dwarfe a while his needlesse spere⁹ he gave
12

100 Be well aware, quoth then that Ladie milde,
Least suddaine mischiefe⁰ ye too rash provoke: *misfortune*
The danger hid, the place unknowne and wilde,
Breedes dreadfull doubts: Oft fire is without smoke,
And perill without show: therefore your stroke

105 Sir knight with-hold, till further triall made.

Ah Ladie (said he) shame were to revoke⁰ *draw back*
The forward footing for an hidden shade:

Vertue gives her selfe light, through darkenesse for to wade.
Yea but (quoth she) the perill of this place
110 I better wot^o then^o you, though now too late *know I than*
To wish you backe returne with foule disgrace,
Yet wisdomes warnes, whilest foot is in the gate,
To stay the steppe, ere forced to retrate.^o *retreat*
This is the wandring wood, this Errours den,
115 A monster vile, whom God and man does hate:
Therefore I read^o beware. Fly fly (quoth then *advise*
The fearefull Dwarfe:) this is no place for living men.

8. I.e., think to be nearest to it.

9. "Needlesse" because t h e spear is generally used only on horseback.

170 / E D M U N D S P E N S E R

32

But full of fire and greedy hardiment,^o *boldness*
The youthfull knight could not for ought^o be staide, *anything*
120 But forth unto the darksome hole he went,
And looked in: his glistring^o armor made *shining*
A litle glooming light, much like a shade,
By which he saw the ugly monster plaine,
Halfe like a serpent horribly displaide,
125 But th' other halfe did womans shape retaine,
Most lothsom, filthie, foule, and full of vile disdaine.^o
loathsomeness

15

And as she lay upon the durtie ground,
Her huge long taile her den all overspred,
Yet was in knots and many boughtes^o upwound, *coils*

130 Pointed with mortall sting. Of her there bred
A thousand yong ones, which she dayly fed,
Sucking upon her poisonous dugs, eachone
Of sundry shapes, yet all ill favored:
Soone as that uncouth⁰ light upon them shone, *unfamiliar*
135 Into her mouth they crept, and suddain all were gone.

16

Their dam upstart, out of her den effraide,⁰ *alarmed*
And rushed forth, hurling her hideous taile
About her cursed head, whose folds displaid⁰ *extended*
Were stretcht now forth at length without entraile.⁰ *winding*
140 She lookt about, and seeing one in mayle
Armed to point,¹ sought backe to turne againe;
For light she hated as the deadly bale,⁰ *injury*
Ay⁰ wont⁰ in desert darknesse to remaine, *ever I accustomed*
Where plaine none might her see, nor she see any plaine.

17

145 Which when the valiant Elfe² perceiv'd, he lept
As Lyon fierce upon the flying pray,
And with his trenchand⁰ blade her boldly kept *sharp*
From turning backe, and forced her to stay:
Therewith enrag'd she loudly gan to bray,
150 And turning fierce, her speckled taile advaunst,
Threatning her angry sting, him to dismay:⁰ *defeat*
Who nough⁰ aghast, his mightie hand enhaunst:⁰ *now/raised up*
The stroke down from her head unto her shoulder glaunst.

18

Much daunted with that dint,⁰ her sence was dazd, *blow*
155 Yet kindling rage, her selfe she gathered⁰ round, *coiled*

And all attonce her beastly body raizd
With doubled forces high above the ground:

1. Fully armed.

crossed Knight, who is later described as “a Faeries
2. Literally, fairy; but Spenser often uses the term
sonne” (but who is ultimately revealed to be a
to designate a knight from his imagined Faerie
changeling “of Saxon kings ... in Britaine land”
Land rather than from Britain—as, here, Red-
[1.10.64-65]).

THE FAERIE QUEENE: THE FIRST BOOKE /
171

Thou wrapping up her wreathed sterne arownd, *then*
Lept fierce upon his shield, and her huge traine *tail*
160 All suddenly about his body wound,
That hand or foot to stirre he strove in vaine:
God helpe the man so wrapt in Errours endlesse traine.
His Lady sad to see his sore constraint, *fettered state*
Cride out, Now now Sir knight, shew what ye bee,
165 Add faith unto your force, and be not faint:
Strangle her, else she sure will strangle thee.
That when he heard, in great perplexitie,
His gall did grate for grieffe and high disdain, *anger*
And knitting all his force got one hand free,
170 Wherewith he grypt her gorge with so great paine, *throat*
That soone to loose her wicked bands did her constraîne.
20

Therewith she spewd out of her filthy maw
A floud of poyson horrible and blacke,

Full of great lumpes of flesh and gobbets raw,⁴
175 Which stunck so vildly, that it forst him slacke
His grasping hold, and from her turne him backe:
Her vomit full of bookes and papers was,⁵
With loathly frogs and toades, which eyes did lacke,
And creeping sought way in the weedy gras:
180 Her filthy parbreake⁰ all the place defiled has. *vomit*

21

As when old father Nilus⁶ gins to swell
With timely⁰ pride above the Aegyptian vale, *seasonal*
His fattie⁰ waves do fertile slime outwell, *rich*
And overflow each plaine and lowly dale:
185 But when his later spring gins to avale,⁰ *subside*
Huge heapes of mudd he leaves, wherein there breed
Ten thousand kindes of creatures, partly male
And partly female of his fruitfull seed;
Such ugly monstrous shapes elsewhere may no man reed.⁰ *see*

22

190 The same so sore annoyed has the knight,
That welnigh choked with the deadly stinke,
His forces faile, ne can no longer fight.
Whose corage when the feend perceived to shrink,
She poured forth out of her hellish sinke⁷

195 Her fruitfull cursed spawne of serpents small,
Deformed monsters, fowle, and blacke as inke,
3. Gall bladder, considered t h e seat of anger.
other things, an allegorical representation of the
4. C h u n k s of undigested food.

Catholic C h u r c h .

5. Among other meanings, t h e “bookes and
6. T h e Nile River, which r u n s from East Africa to
papers” may include a reference to Catholic books
the Mediterranean Sea in Egypt, was commonly
and pamphlets that attacked t h e Protestant Q u e e n
said to breed strange monsters.

Elizabeth, in which case Error may be, a m o n g

7. I.e., her m o u t h .

1 7 2 / E D M U N D S P E N S E R

Which swarming all about his legs did crall,
And him encombred sore, but could not hurt at all.

2 3

As gentle Shepheard in sweete even-tide,
200 When ruddy Phoebus gins to welke⁰ in west, *sink*
High on an hill, his flocke to vewen wide,
Markes⁰ which do byte their hasty supper best; *observes*
A cloud of combrous⁰ gnattes do him molest, *encumbering*
All striving to infixe their feeble stings,
205 That from their noyance he no where can rest,
But with his clownish⁰ hands their tender wings *rustic*
He brusheth oft, and oft doth mar their murmurings.

24

Thus ill bestedd,⁰ and fearfull more of shame,
situated.

Then of the certaine perill he stood in,
210 Halfe furious unto his foe he came,
Resolv'd in minde all suddenly to win,
Or soone to lose, before he once would lin;^o
And strooke at her with more then manly force,

That from her body full of filthie sin

215 He raft⁰ her hatefull head without remorse;

struck off

A streame of cole black bloud forth gushed from her corse.⁰

corpse

2 5

Her scattred brood, soone as their Parent deare

They saw so rudely⁰ falling to the ground,

violently

Groning full deadly, all with troublous feare,

220 Gathred themselves about her body round,

Weening⁰ their wonted entrance to have found

thinking

At her wide mouth: but being there withstood

They flocked all about her bleeding wound,

And sucked up their dying mothers blood,

225 Making her death their life, and eke⁰ her hurt their good

26

That detestable sight him much amazde,

To see th' unkindly⁰ Impes⁰ of heaven accurst, *unnatural /
offspring*

Devoure their dam; on whom while so he gazd,

Having all satisfide their bloody thirst,

230 Their bellies swolne he saw with fulnesse burst,

And bowels gushing forth: well worthy end

Of such as drunke her life, the which them nurst;

Now needeth him no lenger labour spend,

His foes have slaine themselves, with whom he should contend.

2 7

235 His Ladie seeing all, that chaunst, from farre
Approcht in hast to greet⁰ his victorie, *congratulate*
And said, Faire knight, borne under happy⁰ starre, *auspicious*
THE FAERIE QUEENE: THE FIRST BOOKE /
173

Who see your vanquisht foes before you lye:
Well worthy be you of that Armorie,⁰ *armor*
240 Wherein ye have great glory wonne this day,
And proov'd your strength on a strong enimie,
Your first adventure: many such I pray,
And henceforth ever wish, that like succeed it may.

28

Then mounted he upon his Steede againe,
245 And with the Lady backward sought to wend;⁰
8°

That path he kept, which beaten was most plaine,
Ne ever would to any by-way bend,
But still did follow one unto the end,
The which at last out of the wood them brought.
250 So forward on his way (with God to^o friend)⁰
as a friend

He passed forth, and new adventure sought;
Long way he travelled, before he heard of ought.

29

At length they chaunst to meet upon the way
An aged Sire, in long blacke weedes⁰ yclad,^o
garments / dressed

255 His feete all bare, his beard all hoarie⁰ gray,
ancient

And by his belt his booke he hanging had;
Sober he seemde, and very sagely sad,0

pensive

And to the ground his eyes were lowly bent,
Simple in shew, and voyde of malice bad,
260 And all the way he prayed, as he went,
And often knockt his brest, as one that did repent

3 °

He faire the knight saluted, louting0 low,

bowing

Who faire him quited,0 as that courteous was:

answered

And after asked him, if he did know
265 Of straunge adventures, which abroad did pas.
Ah my deare Sonne (quoth he) how should, alas,
Silly0 old man, that lives in hidden cell,

simple

Bidding his beades8 all day for his trespas,
Tydings of warre and worldly trouble tell?
270 With holy father sits not with such things to mell.°

meddle

3 1

But if of daunger which hereby doth dwell,
And homebred evill ye desire to heare,
Of a straunge man I can you tidings tell,
That wasteth all this countrey farre and neare.
275 Of such (said he) I chiefly do inquere,
And shall you well reward to shew the place,
In which that wicked wight his dayes doth weare: *spend*

For to all knighthood it is foule disgrace,
That such a cursed creature lives so long a space.

8. Saying his prayers, i.e., c o u n t i n g rosary beads.

1 7 4 / E D M U N D S P E N S E R

3 2

280 Far hence (quoth he) in wastfull⁰ wildernesse *desolate*

His dwelling is, by which no living wight

May ever passe, but thorough great distresse.

Now (sayd the Lady) draweth toward night,

And well I wote,⁰ that of your later⁰ fight *know / recent*

285 Ye all forweared be: for what so strong,

But wanting rest will also want of might?

The Sunne that measures heaven all day long,

At night doth baite⁰ his steedes the Ocean waves emong. *feed*

3 3

Then with the Sunne take Sir, your timely rest,

290 And with new day new worke at once begin:

Untroubled night they say gives counsell best.

Right well Sir knight ye have advised bin,

(Quoth then that aged man;) the way to win

Is wisely to advise:⁰ now day is spent;

take thought

295 Therefore with me ye may take up your In⁰

lodging

For this same night. The knight was well content

So with that godly father to his home they went.

3 4

A little lowly Hermitage it was,

Downe in a dale, hard by a forests side,

300 Far from resort of people, that did pas
In travell to and froe: a little wyde0

apart

There was an holy Chappell edifyde,⁰

built

Wherein the Hermite dewly wont⁰ to say

was accustomed

His holy things⁰ each morne and eventyde:

prayers

305 Thereby a Christall streame did gently play,

Which from a sacred fountaine welled forth alway

3 5

Arrived there, the little house they fill,

Ne looke for entertainment, where none was:

Rest is their feast, and all things at their will;

310 The noblest mind the best contentment has.

With faire discourse the evening so they pas:

For that old man of pleasing wordes had store,

And well could file⁰ his tongue as smooth as glas; *polish*

He told of Saintes and Popes, and evermore

315 He strowd an Ave-Mary⁹ after and before.

36

The drouping Night thus creepeth on them fast,

And the sad humour¹ loading their eye liddes,

As messenger of Morpheus² on them cast

Sweet slombring deaw, the which to sleepe them biddes.

9. Hail Mary (Latin); a Catholic prayer. 2. Greek god of sleep and of dreams.

1. Heavy moisture, t h e “deaw” (line 319) of sleep.

THE FAERIE QUEENE : THE FIRST BOOKE
/ 1 7 5

320 Unto their lodgings then his gueses he riddes:0 *dispatches*
Where when all drownd in deadly0 sleepe he findes, *deathlike*
He to his study goes, and there amiddes
His Magick bookes and artes of sundry kindes,
He seekes out mighty charmes, to trouble sleepy mindes.

3 7

325 Then choosing out few wordes most horrible,
(Let none them read) thereof did verses frame,
With which and other spelles like terrible,
He bade awake blacke Plutoes griesly Dame,3
And cursed heaven, and spake reprochfull shame
330 Of highest God, the Lord of life and light;
A bold bad man, that dared to call by name
Great Gorgon,4 Prince of darknesse and dead night,
At which Cocytus quakes, and Styx is put to flight.

38

And forth he cald out of deepe darknesse dred
335 Legions of Sprights, the which like little flyes5
Fluttring about his ever damned hed,
A-waite whereto their service he applyes,
To aide his friends, or fray0 his enimies: *frighten*
Of those he chose out two, the falsest twoo,
340 And fittest for to forge true-seeming lyes;
The one of them he gave a message too,
The other by him selfe staide other worke to doo.

He making speedy way through spersed⁰ ayre, *dispersed*
 And through the world of waters wide and deepe,
 345 To Morpheus house doth hastily repaire.
 Amid the bowels of the earth full steepe,
 And low, where dawning day doth never peepe,
 His dwelling is; there Tethys⁶ his wet bed
 Doth ever wash, and Cynthia still⁷ doth steepe
 350 In silver deaw his ever-drouping hed,
 Whiles sad⁰ Night over him her mantle black doth spread.
sober

40

Whose double gates he findeth locked fast,
 The one faire fram'd of burnisht Yvory,
 The other all with silver overcast;
 355 And wakefull dogges before them farre do lye,
 Watching to banish Care their enemy,
 Who oft is wont⁰ to trouble gentle Sleepe. *accustomed*
 By them the Sprite doth passe in quietly,

3. Persephone: Greek goddess of the underworld,

5. The simile connects him to Beelzebub, lord of
 wife of Pluto, and patron of witches.

the flies.

4. Demogorgon, whose power is so great that the

6. Roman goddess of the sea; wife of Neptune.
 mention of his name causes hell's rivers (Cocytus

7. Continually. *Cynthia*: Roman goddess of the
 and Styx) to quake.

moon.

176

/ E D M U N D S P E N S E R

And unto Morpheus comes, whom drowned deepe

360 In drowsie fit he findes: of nothing he takes keepe.0 *notice*

4i

And more, to lulle him in his slumber soft,

A trickling streame from high rocke tumbling downe

And ever-drizling raine upon the loft,

Mixt with a murmuring winde, much like the sowne0 *sound*

365 Of swarming Bees, did cast him in a swowne:0 *faint*

No other noyse, nor peoples troublous cryes,

As still0 are wont t annoy the walled towne, *always*

Might there be heard: but carelesse0 Quiet lyes, *free from care*

Wrapt in eternall silence farre from enemyes.

42

The messenger approaching to him spake,

But his wast0 wordes returnd to him in vaine: *wasted*

So sound he slept, that nought mought0 him awake. *might*

Then rudely he him thrust, and pusht with paine,0 *effort*

Whereat he gan to stretch: but he againe

Shooke him so hard, that forced him to speake.

As one then in a dreame, whose dryer braine8

Is tost with troubled sights and fancies0 weake, *fantasies*

He mumbled soft, but would not alP his silence breake.

altogether

43

The Sprite then gan more boldly him to wake,

380 And threatned unto him the dreaded name
Of Hecate:⁹ whereat he gan to quake,
And lifting up his lumpish head, with blame
Halfe angry asked him, for what he came.
Hither (quoth he) me Archimago¹ sent,
385 He that the stubborne Sprites can wisely tame,
He bids thee to him send for his intent
A fit false dreame, that can delude the sleepers sent.⁰ *senses*
4 4

The God obeyde, and calling forth straight way
A diverse⁰ dreame out of his prison darke, *distracting*
390 Delivered it to him, and downe did lay
His heavie head, devoide of careful^P carke,⁰ *anxious I*
concerns
Whose senses all were straight benumbd and starke.⁰
paralyzed

He backe returning by the Yvorie dore,²
Remounted up as light as chearefull Larke,
395 And on his litle winges the dreame he bore
In hast unto his Lord, where he him left afore.

8. Renaissance ideas of physiology held that being
1. Archmagician or chief deceiver, from the Latin
too “dry,” or lacking a proper balance of bodily
archi (first) + *magus* (magician); also, the arch-
moisture, resulted in troubled dreams.

imago, or chief image-maker.

9. A Greek goddess of Hades; associated with

2. According to Homer’s *Odyssey* and Virgil’s
witches, magic, and dreams.

Aeneid, false dreams came through the ivory door.

THE FAERIE QUEENE: THE FIRST BOOKE
/ 177

45

Who all this while with charmes and hidden artes,

Had made a Lady of that other Spright,

And fram'd of liquid ayre her tender partes

400 So lively,⁰ and so like in all mens sight, *lifelike*

That weaker⁰ sence it could have ravisht quight: *too weak*

The maker selfe for all his wondrous witt,

Was nigh beguiled with so goodly sight:

Her all in white he clad, and over it

405 Cast a blacke stole, most like to seeme for Una³ fit.

46

Now when that ydle^o dreame was to him brought,
unsubstantial

Unto that Elfin knight he bad him fly,

Where he slept soundly void of evill thought,

And with false shewes abuse his fantasy,⁰ *imagination*

410 In sort⁰ as^o he him schooled privily: *the way/that*

And that new creature borne without her dew,⁴

Full of the makers guile, with usage sly

He taught to imitate that Lady trew,

Whose semblance she did carrie under feigned hew.^o *form*

47

Thus well instructed, to their worke they hast

And comming where the knight in slomber lay

The one upon his hardy head him plast,^o *placed*

And made him dreame of loves and lustfull play,

That nigh his manly hart^o did melt away, *heart*
Bathed in wanton blis and wicked joy:
Then seemed him his Lady by him lay,
And to him playnd,^o how that false winged boy,^s *complained*
Her chast hart had subdewd, to learne Dame pleasures toy.⁶
48

And she her selfe of beautie soveraigne Queene
425 Faire Venus seemde unto his bed to bring
Her, whom he waking evermore did weene^o *think*
To be the chastest flowre, that ay^o did spring *ever*
On earthly braunch, the daughter of a king,
Now a loose Lemn^o to vile service bound: *lover*
430 And eke the Graces seemed all to sing,
Hymen io Hymen, dauncing all around,
Whilst freshest Flora⁷ her with Yvie girlond crownd.
49

In this great passion of unwonted^o lust, *unaccustomed*
Or wonted feare of doing ought amis,

3. One, unity (Latin). Many Elizabethan readers

6. Lustful play. *Dame pleasures*: Venus.

would have known the Latin phrase *Una Vera Fides*

7. Flower goddess; sometimes referred to as sex-
(one true faith).

ually unchaste. *Graces*: h a n d m a i d s of Venus; here,

4. Unnaturally.

they sing in praise of the marriage bed. *Hymen*:

5. Cupid.

Greek god of marriage.

178 / EDMUND SPENSER

435 He started up, as seeming to mistrust⁰ *suspect*

Some secret ill, or hidden foe of his:

Lo there before his face his Lady is,

Under blake stole hyding her bayted hooke,

And as halfe blushing offred him to kis,

440 With gentle blandishment⁰ and lovely⁰ looke, *flattering
speech / loving* Most like that virgin true, which for her knight
him took.

5 °

All cleane dismayd to see so uncouth⁰ sight,

strange

And halfe enraged at her shamelesse guise,

He thought have slaine her in his fierce despight:⁰

indignation

445 But hasty heat tempring with sufferance wise,

He stayde his hand, and gan himselfe advise

To prove his sense, and tempt⁰ her faigned truth.

test

Wringing her hands in wemens pitteous wise,

Tho^o can⁰ she weepe, to stirre up gentle ruth,^o

then / did / pity

450 Both for her noble bloud, and for her tender youth.

5 1

And said, Ah Sir, my liege Lord and my love,

Shall I accuse the hidden cruell fate,

And mightie causes wrought in heaven above,

Or the blind God, that doth me thus amate,⁰

dismay

455 For⁰ hoped love to winne me certaine hate?

instead of

Yet thus perforce⁰ he bids me do, or die.

forcibly

Die is my dew:⁸ yet rew^o my wretched state

pity

You, whom my hard avenging destinie

Hath made judge of my life or death indifferently

5 2

460 Your owne deare sake forst me at first to leave

My Fathers kingdome, There she stopt with teares;

Her swollen hart⁰ her speach seemd to bereave, *heart*

And then againe begun, My weaker yeares

Captiv'd to fortune and frayle worldly feares,

465 Fly to your faith for succour and sure ayde:

Let me not dye in languor⁰ and long teares. *sorrow*

Why Dame (quoth he) what hath ye thus dismayd?

What frayes⁰ ye, that were wont to comfort me affrayd?

frightens

5 3

Love of your selfe, she said, and deare⁰ constraint *dire*

470 Lets me not sleepe, but wast the wearie night

In secret anguish and unpittied plaint,

Whiles you in carelesse sleepe are drowned quight.

Her doubtfull words made that redoubted⁹ knight

Suspect her truth: yet since no untruth he knew,

475 Her fawning love with foule disdainfull spight⁰ *contempt*

8. I.e., I deserve to die.

9. Dreaded; also, doubting again. *Doubtfull*: fearful; also, questionable.

THE FAERIE QUEENE: THE FIRST BOOKE
/ 1 7 9

He would not shend,° but said, Deare dame I rew,° *reject!pity*
That for my sake unknowne such grieffe unto you grew.

5 4

Assure your selfe, it fell not all to ground;

For all so deare as life is to my hart,° *heart*

480 I deeme your love, and hold me to you bound;

Ne let vaine feares procure0 your needlesse smart,0 *cause*
/harm

Where cause is none, but to your rest depart.

Not all content, yet seemd she to appease0 *cease*

Her mournfull plaintes, beguiled0 of her art, *deprived*

485 And fed with words, that could not chuse but please,

So slyding softly forth, she turnd° as to her ease. *returned*

5 5

Long after lay he musing at her mood,

Much griev'd to thinke that gentle Dame so light,1

For whose defence he was to shed his blood.

490 At last dull wearinesse of former fight

Having yrockt a sleepe his irkesome spright,2

That troublous dreame gan freshly tesse his braine,

With bowres, and beds, and Ladies deare delight:

But when he° saw his labour all was vaine, *the dream*

495 With that misformed spright he° backe returnd againe. *the*
dream

Canto 2

*The guilefull great Enchaunter parts
The Redcrosse Knight from Truth:
Into whose stead faire falshood steps,
And workes him wofull ruth^o harm*

i

By this the Northerne wagoner had set
His seven fold teame behind the stedfast starre,¹
That was in Ocean waves yet never wet,
But firme is fixt, and sendeth light from farre
5 To all, that in the wide deepe wandring arre:
And chearefull Chaunticlere with his note shrill
Had warned once, that Phoebus fiery carre²
In hast was climbing up the Easterne hill,
Full envious that night so long his roome did fill.

2

io When those accursed messengers of hell,
That feigning dreame,³ and that faire-forged Spright

1. I.e., so unchaste.

“teame” of the seven bright stars in Ursa M a j o r —

2. Tired or troublesome spirit (as mind or soul, b u t
had set behind the North Star.

stressing the hero’s similarity to the “misformed

2. T h e sun’s chariot. *Chaunticlere*: a c o m m o n
spright” of line 495, sent by Archimago).

n a m e for a rooster.

1. I.e., by this time the “northerne Waggoner”—

3. I.e., the dream has caused the Knight to “feign”
the constellation Bootes seen as the driver of the

in the senses of “to desire” and “to imagine falsely”:

180 / E D M U N D S P E N S E R

Came to their wicked maister, and gan tell

Their bootlesse⁰ paines, and ill succeeding night: *useless*

Who all in rage to see his skilfull might

15 Deluded so, gan threaten hellish paine

And sad Proserpines⁴ wrath, them to affright.

But when he saw his threatning was but vaine,

He cast about, and searcht his balefull⁰ bookes againe. *deadly*

3

Eftsoones⁰ he tooke that miscreated faire, *soon after*

20 And that false other Spright, on whom he spread

A seeming body of the subtile⁰ aire, *rarefied*

Like a young Squire, in loves and lusty-hed

His wanton dayes that ever loosely led,

Without regard of armes and dreaded fight:

25 Those two he tooke, and in a secret bed,

Covered with darknesse and misdeeming⁰ night, *misleading*

Them both together laid, to joy in vaine delight.

4

Forthwith he runnes with feigned faithfull hast

Unto his guest, who after troublous sights

30 And dreames, gan now to take more sound repast,⁰ *rest*

Whom suddenly he wakes with fearefull frights,

As one aghast with feends or damned sprights,

And to him cals, “Rise rise unhappy Swaine,⁰ *rustic youth*

That here wex^o old in sleepe, whiles wicked wights⁰ *grow / creatures*

35 Have knit themselves in Venus shamefull chaine;
Come see, where your false Lady doth her honour staine.”

5

All in amaze he suddenly up start
With sword in hand, and with the old man went;
Who soone him brought into a secret part,
40 Where that false couple were full closely ment⁰

mingled

In wanton lust and lewd embracement:
Which when he saw, he burnt with gealous fire,
The eye of reason was with rage yblent,⁰

blinded

And would have slaine them in his furious ire,
45 But hardly⁰ was restrained oP that aged sire.

with difficulty / by

6

Returning to his bed in torment great,
And bitter anguish of his guiltie sight,
He could not rest, but did his stout heart eat,
And wast⁰ his inward gall with deepe despight,⁰ *waste / malice*

so Yrkesome⁰ of life, and too long lingring night. *tired*

At last faire Hesperus⁵ in highest skie

see canto 1, stanzas 46—47. god of the underworld.

4. R o m a n n a m e for Persephone, who in Greek 5. The evening and morning star, i.e., the planet mythology was seized and held captive by Pluto, Venus.

THE FAERIE QUEENE : THE FIRST BOOKE
/ 1 8 1

Had spent his lampe, and brought forth dawning light,
Then up he rose, and clad him hastily;
The Dwarfe him brought his steed: so both away do fly.

7

55 Now when the rosy-fingred Morning faire,
Weary of aged Tithones⁶ saffron bed,
Had spred her purple robe through deawy aire,
And the high hils Titan⁰ discovered,⁰ *the sun/revealed*
The royall virgin shooke off drowsy-hed,
60 And rising forth out of her baser⁰ bowre, *too lowly*
Lookt for her knight, who far away was fled,
And for her Dwarfe, that wont^o to wait each houre: *was*
accustomed

Then gan she waile and weepe, to see that woefull stowre.⁰
affliction

8

And after him she rode with so much speede
65 As her slow beast could make; but all in vaine:
For him so far had borne his light-foot steede,
Pricked with wrath and fiery fierce disdaine,⁰ *indignation*
That him to follow was but fruitless paine;
Yet she her weary limbes would never rest,
70 But every hill and dale, each wood and plaine
Did search, sore grieved in her gentle brest,
He so ungently left her, whom she loved best.

9

But subtil^P Archimago, when his guests
cunning
He saw divided into double parts,

75 And Una wandring in woods and forrests,
Th' end of his drift,0 he praisd his divelish arts
plot

That had such might over true meaning harts;0
hearts

Yet rests not so, but other meanes doth make,
How he may worke unto her further smarts:0
harm

so For her he hated as the hissing snake,
And in her many troubles did most pleasure take.

10

He then devisde himselfe how to disguise;
For by his mightie science0 he could take *knowledge*
As many formes and shapes in seeming wise,
85 As ever Proteus7 to himselfe could make:
Sometime a fowle, sometime a fish in lake,
Now like a foxe, now like a dragon fell,0 *fierce*
That of himselfe he oft for feare would quake,
And oft would flie away. O who can tell

90 The hidden power of herbes, and might of Magicke spell?

6. Tithonus, in Roman mythology the husband of
will (*Odyssey* 4.398—424). *In seeming wise*: in
Aurora, goddess of the dawn.
appearance.

7. A Greek sea god who could change his shape at

182 / EDMUND SPENSER

II

But now seemde best, the person to put on

Of that good knight, his late beguiled⁸ guest:
In mighty armes he was yclad anon,^o *soon*
And silver shield: upon his coward brest
95 A bloody crosse, and on his craven crest
A bouch of haire discolourd⁰ diversly:⁰ *colored / variously*
Full jolly⁰ knight he seemde, and well adrest,⁰ *gallant /*
armed
And when he sate upon his courser free,⁹
Saint George¹ himself ye would have deemed him to be.
But he the knight, whose semblaunt⁰ he did beare,
likeness
The true Saint George was wandred far away,
Still flying from⁰ his thoughts and gealous feare;
because of
Will was his guide,² and grieve led him astray.
At last him chaunst to meete upon the way
A faithlesse Sarazin³ all armed to point,
In whose great shield was writ with letters gay
Sans^o foy:^o full large of limbe and every joint
without / faith
He was, and cared not for God or man a^o point.⁰
at / all
He had a faire companion of his way,
110 A goodly Lady clad in scarlot red,
Purfled⁰ with gold and pearle of rich assay,⁰ *embroidered /*
value
And like a Persian mitre⁰ on her hed *headdress*
She wore, with crownes and owches⁰ garnished, *brooches*
The which her lavish⁰ lovers to her gave;⁴ *extravagant*

115 Her wanton palFREY all was overspread
unruly / lady's saddle horse With tinsel trappings, woven like
a wave,

Whose bridle rung with golden bells and bosses ornaments
brave. handsome

H

With faire disport and courting dalliance diversion / talk

She intertainde her lover all the way:

120 But when she saw the knight his speare advance,

She soone left off her mirth and wanton play,

And bad her knight addresse him to the fray:

His foe was nigh at hand. He prickt with pride

8. Deluded, deceived by guile; but contrast its use

3. I.e., Saracen, a name loosely and usually neg-

at canto 1, line 82. To put on: to assume.

actively denoting non-Christians and, more specif-

9. I.e., noble horse.

ically, the Turkish or Arabic enemies of medieval

1. I.e., Archimago now assumes not only the Red-
Christian "crusaders."

cross Knight's appearance but also the saintly

4. The lady's clothes associate her with the Whore

identity that the Knight will acquire after his

of Babylon (Revelation 17.3-4): "And I saw a

earthly adventures are over; the Knight will later

woman sit upon a scarlet colored beast, full of

learn that he is to become England's dragon-

name of blasphemy, having seven heads and ten

slaying patron, Saint George (10.61.8).

horns. And the woman was arrayed in purple and
2. In Christian thought, the faculty of the will is
scarlet color, and decked with gold and precious
below and should be guided by the faculty of rea-
stones and pearls.” She represents false religion,
son, but the Knight’s is “blinded” (see stanza 5, line
especially what Protestants saw as the pomp and
7) by passion.

hypocrisy of Rome.

THE FAERIE QUEENE: THE FIRST BOOKE
/ 1 8 3

And hope to winne his Ladies heart that day,
Forth spurred fast: adowne his coursers side
The red bloud trickling staid the way, as he did ride.

15

The knight of the Redcrosse when him he spide,
Spurring so hote with rage dispiteous, *cruel*
Gan fairely couch⁰ his speare, and towards ride: *lower*
Soone meete they both, both fell⁰ and furious, *fierce*
That daunted⁰ with their forces hideous, *dazed*.
Their steeds do stagger, and amazed stand,
And eke^o themselves too rudely rigorous, *also / violent*
Astonied⁰ with the stroke of their owne hand, *stunned*
Do backe rebut,⁰ and each to other yeeldeth land. *recoil*
As when two rams stird with ambitious pride,
Fight for the rule of the rich fleeced flocke,
Their horned fronts so fierce on either side
Do meete, that with the terrour of the shocke

Astonied⁰ both, stand sencelesse as a blocke,
stunned, made stonelike

Forgetfull of the hanging⁰ victory:

in the balance

So stood these twaine, unmoved as a rocke,

Both staring fierce, and holding idely

The broken reliques⁰ of their former cruelty.

remnants

17

The Sarazin sore daunted with the buffe⁰ *blow*

Snatcheth his sword, and fiercely to him flies;

Who well it wards, and quyteth⁰ cuff with cuff: *requites*

Each others equall puissaunce⁰ envies, *strength*

And through their iron sides with cruell spies⁰ *looks*

Does seeke to perce: repining⁰ courage yields *angry*

No foote to foe. The flashing fier flies

As from a forge out of their burning shields,

And streams of purple bloud new dies the verdant fields.

“Curse on that Crosse,” quoth then the Sarazin,

“That keepes thy body from the bitter fit;⁵

Dead long ygoe I wote^o thou haddest bin,

thought

Had not that charme from thee forwarned⁰ it:

prevented

But yet I warne thee now assured⁰ sitt,

securely

And hide thy head.” Therewith upon his crest

With rigour⁰ so outrageous he smitt,

violence; rigidity

That a large share⁰ it hewd out of the rest,

piece

And glauncing downe his shield, from blame⁰ him

harm

fairely blest.⁰

preserved

5. Death pangs.

1 8 4

/ E D M U N D S P E N S E R

!9

Who thereat wondrous wrath,⁰ the sleeping spark

angry

Of native vertue⁰ gan eftsoones⁰ revive,

165 And at his haughtie helmet making mark,

strength / soon after

So hugely⁰ stroke, that it the Steele did rive,⁰

And cleft his head. He tumbling downe alive,

mightily / tear apart

With bloody mouth his mother earth did kis

Greeting his grave: his grudging⁰ ghost did strive *complaining*

170 With the fraile flesh; at last it flitted is,

Whither the soules do fly of men, that live amis.

20

The Lady when she saw her champion fall,

Like the old ruines of a broken towre,

Staid not to waile his woefull funerall,⁰ *death*

175 But from him fled away with all her powre;

Who after her as hastily gan scowre,⁰ *scurry*
Bidding the Dwarfe with him to bring away
The Sarazins shield, signe of the conqueroure.
Her soone he⁰ overtooke, and bad to stay, *Redcrosse*
180 For present cause was none of dread her to dismay.⁶

21

She turning backe with ruefull⁷ countenance
Cride, “Mercy mercy Sir vouchsafe to show
On silly⁰ Dame, subject to hard mischaunce, *helpless*
And to your mighty will.” Her humblesse low
185 In so ritch weedes⁰ and seeming glorious show *clothes*
Did much emmove his stout heroike heart,
And said, “Deare dame, your sudden overthrow
Much rueth^o me; but now put feare apart, *grieves*
And tell, both who ye be, and who that tooke your part.”

22

190 Melting in teares, then gan she thus lament;
“The wretched woman, whom unhappy howre
Hath now made thrall⁰ to your commandement, *slave*
Before that angry heavens list to lowre,^o *frown*
And fortune false betraide me to your powre
195 Was (O what now availeth that I was!)
Borne the sole daughter of an Emperour,
He that the wide West under his rule has,
And high hath set his throne, where Tiberis doth pas.⁸

23

“He in the first flowre of my freshest age,
200 Betrothed me unto the onely haire^o *heir*

Of a most mighty king, most rich and sage;

6. There was no present cause for her to flee in

8. The Tiber River runs through Rome; hence the
fear.

lady is associated with the Catholic Church.

7. Seeking to incite pity.

THE FAERIE QUEENE: THE FIRST BOOKE
/ 185

Was never Prince so faithfull and so faire,

Was never Prince so meeke and debonaire;⁰ *gracious*

But ere my hoped day of spousall shone,

205 My dearest Lord fell from high honours staire,

Into the hands of his accursed fone,^o *foes*

And cruelly was slaine, that shall I ever mone.⁹

24

“His blessed body spoild of lively breath,

Was afterward, I know not how, convoid⁰ *carried a-way*

210 And fro me hid: of whose most innocent death

When tidings came to me unhappy maid,

O how great sorrow my sad soule assaid.⁰ *afflicted*

Then forth I went his woefull corse⁰ to find, *corpse*

And many yeares throughout the world I straid,⁰ *strayed*

215 A virgin widow, whose deepe wounded mind

With love, long time did languish as the striken hind.^o *deer*

25

“At last it chanced this proud Sarazin

To meete me wandring, who perforce⁰ me led *by violence*

With him away, but yet could never wih

220 The fort, that Ladies hold in soveraigne dread.
There lies he now with foule dishonour dead,
Who whiles he livde, was called proud Sans foy,
The eldest of three brethren, all three bred
Of one bad sire, whose youngest is Sans^o joy, *without*
225 And twixt them both was borne the bloody bold Sans
loy.¹

26

“In this sad plight, friendless unfortunate,
Now miserable I Fidessa^o dwell, *Faith*
Craving of you in pittie of my state,
To do none^o ill, if please ye not do well.” *no*
230 He in great passion all this while did dwell,^o *continue*
More busying his quicke eyes, her face to view,
then his dull eares, to heare what she did tell;
And said, “Faire Lady hart of flint would rew^o *pity*
The undeserved woes and sorrowes, which ye shew.
27

235 “Henceforth in safe assurance may ye rest,
Having both found a new friend you to aid,
And lost an old foe, that did you molest:
Better new friend than an old foe is^o said.” *it is*
With chaunge of cheare the seeming simple maid
9. The lady claims to have been engaged to Christ,
three “Sans” brothers hark back to St. Paul’s Epis-
bridegroom of the Church, who was cruelly killed—
tle to the Galatians 5.22-23: “But the fruit of the
which event the lady will forever lament.

Spirit is love, joy ... faith ... temperance: against

1. Literally, without law. The names of Spenser's
such there is no law."

1 8 6 / E D M U N D S P E N S E R

240 Let fall her eye, as^o shamefast^o to the earth, *as
if/modestly*

And yeelding soft, in that she nought gain-said,

So forth they rode, he feining^o seemely merth, *simulating*

And she coy lookes: so dainty they say maketh derth.²

28

Long time they thus together travelled,

245 Till weary of their way, they came at last,

Where grew two goodly trees, that faire did spread

Their armes abroad, with gray mosse overcast,

And their greene leaves trembling with every blast,^o *breeze*

Made a calme shadow far in compasse round:

250 The fearefull Shepheard often there aghast

Under them never sat, ne wont^o there sound *was accustomed
to*

His mery oaten pipe, but shund th' unlucky ground.

29

But this good knight soone as he them can^o spie, *did*

For the coole shade him thither hastily got:

255 For golden Phoebus now ymounted hie,

From fiery wheelles of his faire chariot

Hurled his beame so scorching cruell hot,

That living creature mote^o it not abide; *might*

And his new Lady it endured not.

260 There they alight, in hope themselves to hide

From the fierce heat, and rest their weary limbs a tide.⁰ *time*

3 °

Faire seemely pleasaunce⁰ each to other makes, *courtesy*

With goodly purposes there as they sit:

And in his falsed⁰ fancy he her takes *deceived*

265 To be the fairest wight⁰ that lived yit; *creature*

Which to expresse, he bends his gentle wit,

And thinking of those braunches greene to frame

A girlond⁰ for her dainty forehead fit, *garland*

He pluckt a bough; out of whose rift there came

270 Small drops of gory bloud, that trickled downe the same.

3 1

Therewith a piteous yelling voyce was heard,

Crying, “O spare with guilty hands to teare

My tender sides in this rough rynd embard,⁰ *imprisoned*

But fly, ah fly far hence away, for feare

275 Least⁰ to you hap, that happened to me heare, *lest*

And to this wretched Lady, my deare love,

O too deare love, love bought with death too deare.”

Astond he stood,³ and up his haire did hove⁰ *heave, raise*

And with that sudden horror could no member move.

2. Proverbial: what’s dear is rare; here, coyness 3. I.e.,
astonished, Redcrosse Knight stood up.

creates unsatisfied desire.

THE FAERIE QUEENE: THE FIRST BOOKE

/ 1 8 7

32

280 At last whenas the dreadful passion

Was overpast, and manhood well awake,

Yet musing at the straunge occasion
And doubting much his sense, he thus bespake;
“What voyce of damned Ghost from Limbo⁴ lake,
285 Or guilefull spright wandring in empty aire,
Both which fraile men do oftentimes mistake,⁰ *mislead*
Sends to my doubtfull eares these speaches rare,
And ruefull plaints, me bidding guiltless bloud to spare?”

33

Then groning deepe, “Nor damned Ghost,” quoth he,
290 “Nor guilefull sprite to thee these wordes doth speake,
But once a man Fradubio,⁵ now a tree,
Wretched man, wretched tree; whose nature weake,
A cruell witch her cursed will to wreake,
Hath thus transformed, and plast^o in open plaines, *placed*
295 Where Boreas⁰ doth blow full bitter bleake, *the north*
wind
And scorching Sunne does dry my secret vaines:
For though a tree I seeme, yet cold and heat me paines.”

34

“Say on Fradubio then, or^o man, or tree,” *whether*
Quoth then the knight, “by whose mischievous arts
300 Art thou misshaped thus, as now I see?
He oft finds med’cine, who his grieffe imparts;
But double griefs afflict concealing harts,⁰ *hearts*
As raging flames who striveth to suppressse.”
“The author then,” said he, “of all my smarts,⁰ *hurts*
305 Is one Duessa⁶ a false sorceresse,
That many errant knights hath brought to wretchednesse.⁷

35

“In prime of youthly yeares, when corage hot
The fire of love and joy of chevalree
First kindled in my brest, it was my lot
310 To love this gentle Lady, whom ye see,
Now not a Lady, but a seeming tree;
With whom as once I rode accompanyde,
Me chaunced of a knight encountred bee,
That had a like faire Lady by his syde,
315 Like a faire Lady, but did fowle Duessa hyde.

36

“Whose forged beauty he did take in hand,⁸
All other Dames to have exceeded farre,
4. A region of hell and, traditionally, the place of
(*Orlando Furioso* 6.26—53), and Tasso (*Gerusa-*
the unbaptized.

lemma Liberata 13.38—46).

5. *Fra* (Italian, “in” or “brother”) + *dubbio* 6. *Due* (Italian,
“two,” or double) + *esse* (Latin, (“doubt”). Spenser borrows
details from many pre-

“being”).

vious epic depictions of a man imprisoned in a

7. I.e., Duessa has brought many wandering (with
bleeding tree; among his sources are Virgil (*Aeneid*
a pun on *erring*) knights to wretchedness.

3.27-42), Dante (*Inferno* 13.28-109), Ariosto

8. He maintained.

1 8 8 / E D M U N D S P E N S E R

I in defence of mine did likewise stand,

Mine, that did then shine as the Morning starre:
320 So both to battell fierce arraunged arre,
In which his harder fortune was to fall
Under my speare: such is the dye^o of warre: *hazard*
His Lady left as a prise^o martiall,^o *spoil / of battle*
Did yield her comely person, to be at my call.

37

325 “So doubly loved of Ladies unlike^o faire,
differently
Th’ one seeming such, the other such indeede,
One day in doubt I cast^o for^o to compare,
decided / to

Whether^o in beauties glorie did exceede;
which one (of two)

A Rosy girlond^o was the victors meede:^o
garland / reward

330 Both seemde to win, and both seemde won to bee,
So hard the discord was to be agreede.

Fraelissa⁹ was as faire, as faire mote bee,
And ever false Duessa seemde as faire as shee.

38

“The wicked witch now seeing all this white
335 The doubtfull ballaunce equally to sway,
What not by right, she cast to win by guile,
And by her hellish science^o raisd streight way *knowledge*
A foggy mist, that overcast the day,
And a dull blast, that breathing on her face,
340 Dimmed her former beauties shining ray,

And with foule ugly forme did her disgrace
Then was she faire alone, when none was faire in place.¹

39

“Then cride she out, ‘Fye, fye, deformed wight,
Whose borrowed beautie now appeareth plaine
345 To have before bewitched all mens sight;
0 leave her soone, or let her soone be slaine.’
Her lothly visage viewing with disdain.

Eftsoone⁰ I thought her such, as she me told,

before

And would have kild her, but with faigned paine,
350 The false witch did my wrathfull hand withhold;
So left her, where she now is turnd to treen^o mould.⁰

a tree's / form

40

“Thens forth I tooke Duessa for my Dame,
And in the witch unweeting⁰ joyd long time,
unknowingly

Ne ever wist,^o but that she was the same,

knew

355 Till on a day (that day is every Prime,²
When Witches wont^o do penance for their crime)

are accustomed to

1 chaunst to see her in her proper⁰ hew,^o

own / shape

Bathing her selfe in origane and thyme:³

9. Frailty (in Italian, *Fralezza*). moon.

1. W h e n nobody else was fair. *She*: Duessa. 3. Oregano and thyme were used to cure scabs 2. Spring; or the first appearance of the new and itching.

THE FAERIE QUEENE: THE FIRST BOOKE
/ 1 8 9

A filthy foule old woman I did vew,

360 That ever to have toucht her, I did deadly rew.° *regret*

41

“Her neather partes misshapen, monstrous,

Were hidd in water, that I could not see,

But they did seeme more foule and hideous,

Then womans shape man would beleeeve to bee.

365 Thens forth from her most beastly companie

I gan refraine, in minde to slip away,

Soone as appeared safe opportunitie:

For danger great, if not assured decay0 *destruction*

I saw before mine eyes, if I were knowne to stray.

4 2

370 “The divelish hag by chaunges of my cheare0

countenance

Perceived my thought, and drownd in sleepe night,

With wicked herbes and ointments did besmeare

My bodie all, through charmes and magicke might,

That all my senses were bereaved quight:0

quite

375 Then brought she me into this desert waste,

And by my wretched lovers side me pight,°

planted

Where now enclosd in wooden wals full faste,4

Banisht from living wights,⁰ our wearie dayes we waste.”

persons

43

“But how long time,” said then the Elfin knight,

380 “Are you in this misformed house to dwell?”

“We may not chaunge,” quoth he, “this evil plight,

Till we be bathed in a living well;⁵

That is the terme prescribed by the spell.”

“O how,” said he, “mote^o I that well out find,

might

385 That may restore you to your wonted well?“⁰

well-being

“Time and suffised fates to former kynd

Shall us restore,⁶ none else from hence may us unbynd.”

44

The false Duessa, now Fidessa hight,⁰ *called*

Heard how in vaine Fradubio did lament,

390 And knew well all was true. But the good knight

Full of sad feare and ghastly dreriment,⁰ *gloom*

When all this speech the living tree had spent,

The bleeding bough did thrust into the ground,

That from the bloud he might be innocent,

395 And with fresh clay did close the wooden wound:

Then turning to his Lady, dead with feare her found.

4. I.e., imprisoned within the trees.

6. I.e., time and the satisfaction of the fates alone

5. Allusion to 1 John 4.14: “well of water,
can restore us to our former human nature.

springing up into eternal life.”

190 / EDMUND SPENSER

45

Her seeming dead he found with feigned feare,

As all unweeting of that well she knew,⁷

And paynd himselfe with busie care to reare

400 Her out of carelesse⁰ swowne. Her eyelids blew
unconscious

And dimmed sight with pale and deadly⁰ hew^o *deathlike /
appearance*

At last she up gan lift: with trembling cheare⁰ *demeanor*

Her up he tooke, too simple and too trew,

And oft her kist. At length all passed feare,⁸

405 He set her on her steede, and forward forth did beare.

1590, 1596

FROM AMORETTI1

Sonnet 1

Happy ye leaves² when as those lilly hands,

Which hold my life in their dead doing might³

Shall handle you and hold in loves soft bands,

Lyke captives trembling at the victors sight.

5 And happy lines, on which with starry light,

Those laming⁰ eyes will deigne sometimes to look *shining*

And reade the sorrowes of my dying spright,⁰ *spirit*

Written with teares in harts⁰ close⁰ bleeding book. *heart's /
secret*

And happy rymes bath'd in the sacred brooke,

10 Of Helicon⁴ whence she derived is,

When ye behold that Angels blessed looke,

My soules long lacked foode, my heavens blis.
Leaves, lines, and rymes, seeke her to please alone,
Whom if ye please, I care for other none.

Sonnet 8

More then⁰ most faire, full of the living fire, *than*
Kindled above unto the maker neere:

No eies⁵ but joyes, in which al powers conspire,
That to the world naught else be counted deare.

7. I.e., pretending ignorance of what she knew
rhyme scheme is *abab bcbc cdcd ee*, a difficult pat-
well.

tern in English because of the frequency of the

8. I.e., having overcome all fear.

repeating rhymes.

1. Little loves (Italian). This sequence of eighty-

2. Pages; in line 13, the poet addresses his poems
nine sonnets was published in 1595, together with
as “leaves, lines, and rymes.”

Epithalamion (p. 195), a kind of poem written to

3. Death-dealing power.

celebrate a marriage. It is generally believed that

4. The Hippocrene Spring, on Mt. Helicon, was
these poems were written to Spenser’s bride-to-be,
the haunt of the Muses, the nine Greek sister god-
Elizabeth Boyle. The Petrarchan sonnet cycle was
desses believed to be the source of inspiration for
popular at this time, but Spenser’s sequence is
the arts.

unusual because the desire expressed is directed
5. The lover's eyes are imagined as the source of
not at an unattainable mistress but toward the
love, both erotic and spiritual (Platonic).

woman who became the poet's second wife. The

A M O R E T T I : S O N N E T 2 3 / 1 9 1

5 Through your bright beams doth not the blinded guest
6 Shoot out his darts to base affections wound?
But Angels come to lead fraile mindes to rest
In chast desires on heavenly beauty bound.

You frame my thoughts and fashion me within,

10 You stop my tounge, and teach my hart^o to speake, *heart*

You calme the storme that passion did begin,

Strong thugh your cause, but by your vertue weak.

Dark is the world, where your light shined never;

Well is he borne, that may behold you ever.

Sonnet 157

Ye tradefull⁸ Merchants that with weary toyle,

Do seeke most pretious things to make your gain:

And both the Indias⁹ of their treasures spoile,⁰ *despoil*

What needeth you to seeke so farre in vaine?

5 For loe my love doth in her selfe containe

All this worlds riches that may farre be found,

If Saphyres, loe her eies be Saphyres plaine,⁰ *perfect*

If Rubies, loe hir lips be Rubies sound:⁰ *free from defect*

If Pearles, hir teeth be pearles both pure and round;

10 If Yvorie, her forehead yvory weene;¹

If Gold, her locks are finest gold on ground;⁰ *Earth*

If silver, her faire hands are silver sheene;⁰ *bright*
But that which fairest is, but few behold,
Her mind adornd with vertues manifold.

Sonnet 23

Penelope for her Ulisses sake,
Deviz'd a Web her woovers to deceave:
In which the worke that she all day did make
The same at night she did again unreave:²
⁵ Such subtile⁰ craft my Damzell doth conceave,⁰ *fine, clever*
/ devise
Th' importune⁰ suit of my desire to shonne:³ *importunate*
For all that I in many dayes doo weave,
In one short houre I find by her undonne.
So when I thinke to end that⁰ I begonne, *that which*
¹⁰ I must begin and never bring to end:
For with one looke she spils^o that long I sponne, *destroys*
And with one word my whole years work doth rend.

6. I.e., Cupid, Roman god of erotic love.

ative, i.e., “think her forehead ivory.”

7. This sonnet is a blazon, a series of comparisons

2. During the long absence of her husband, Odys-
or depictions cataloging the lady's parts.

seus, Penelope warded off her suitors by saying she

8. Fully occupied with trading (this is the *O.E.D.*'s
would choose one of them as soon as she finished
first recorded usage of the word).

weaving a shroud. Each night for three years she

9. The East and West Indies.

undid her day's work (Homer, *Odyssey* 2).

1. Beautiful; or, possibly, may be read as an imper-

3. I.e., she shuns his desire's pleading.

192 / EDMUND SPENSER

Such labour like the Spyderys web I fynd,

Whose fruitlesse worke is broken with least wynd.

Sonnet 54

Of this worlds Theatre in which we stay,

My love lyke the Spectator ydly sits

Beholding me that all the pageants⁰ play, *roles*

Disguysing diversly my troubled wits.

5 Sometimes I joy when glad occasion fits,

And mask⁴ in myrth lyke to a Comedy:

Soone after when my joy to sorrow flits,

I waile and make my woes a Tragedy.

Yet she beholding me with constant eye,

10 Delights not in my merth nor rues^o my smart:⁰ *pities/hurt*

But when I laugh she mocks, and when I cry

She laughes, and hardens evermore her hart.^o *heart*

What then can move her? if nor merth nor mone,^o *moan*

She is no woman, but a sencelesse stone.

Sonnet 675

Lyke as a huntsman after weary chace,

Seeing the game from him escapt away,

Sits downe to rest him in some shady place,

With panting hounds beguiled of their pray:

5 So after long pursuit and vaine assay,⁰ *attempt*

When I all weary had the chace forsooke,

The gentle deare⁶ returned the selfe-same way,
Thinking to quench her thirst at the next brooke.
There she beholding me with mylder looke,
io Sought not to fly, but fearelesse still did bide:
Till I in hand her yet halfe trembling tooke,
And with her owne goodwill hir fymely tyde.
Strange thing me seemd⁷ to see a beast so wyld,
So goodly wonne with her owne will beguyld.

Sonnet 68

Most glorious Lord of lyfe that on this day,⁸
Didst make thy triumph over death and sin:

4. Cover (or mask) his emotions; also, act in a
“Whoso List to Hunt” (p. 126).

masque, a short, allegorical drama.

6. With a pun on *deer* and *dear* (beloved).

5. An imitation of Petrarch’s *Rime* 190, although

7. I.e., it seemed to me.

with a dissimilar ending. Cf. Thomas Wyatt,

8. Easter.

A M O R E T T I : S O N N E T 7 1 / 1 9 3

And having harrowd hell⁹ didst bring away
Captivity thence captive us to win:1

5 This joyous day, deare Lord, with joy begin,

And grant that we for whom thou diddest dye

Being with thy deare blood clene washt from sin,

May live for ever in felicity.

And that thy love we weighing worthily,

10 May likewise love thee for the same againe:2

And for thy sake that all lyke deare³ didst buy,
With love may one another entertayne.

So let us love, deare love, lyke as we ought,
Love is the lesson which the Lord us taught.⁴

Sonnet 70

Fresh spring the herald of loves mighty king,
In whose cote^o armour^o richly are displayd *coat / of arms*

All sorts of flowers the which on earth do spring
In goodly colours gloriously arrayd:

5 Goe to my love, where she is carelesse layd,
Yet in her winters bowre not well awake:

Tell her the joyous time wil not be staid^o *detained*
Unless she doe him by the forelock take.⁵

Bid her therefore her selfe soone ready make,
10 To wayt on love⁶ amongst his lovely crew:

Where every one that misseth then her make,^o *mate*
Shall be by him amearst^o with penance dew. *punished*
Make hast therefore sweet love,⁷ whilst it is prime,^o *spring*
For none can call againe the passed time.

Sonnet 71

I joy to see how in your drawen work,⁸
Your selfe unto the Bee ye doe compare;

And me unto the Spyder that doth lurke,
In close^o awayt^o to catch her unaware. *secret / ambush*

5 Right so your selfe were caught in cunning snare
Of a deare foe, and thralld^o to his love: *enslaved*

In whose streight^o bands ye now captived are *tight*
So firmly, that ye never may remove.

9. A reference to the apocryphal account of

5. “To take time by the forelock” is to act
Christ’s descent into hell, after his Crucifixion, to
promptly.

rescue the captive souls of the just.

6. I.e., to attend and serve Cupid.

1. “When he ascended up on high, he led captivity

7. The addressee of the poem changes here from
captive” (Ephesians 4.8).

Spring, as the herald of love, to the loved one her-

2. I.e., grant also that we, weighing thy love
self.

rightly, might love thee in the same way.

8. Ornamental work done in textile fabrics by

3. I.e., at the same cost.

drawing out some of the threads so as to form pat-

4. “This is my commandment, That ye love one
terns.

another, as I have loved you” (John 15.12).

194 / EDMUND SPENSER

But as your worke is woven all about,

10 With woodbynd⁰ flowers and fragrant *honeysuckle*

Enlantine:⁰ *sweethriar*

So sweet your prison you in time shall prove,⁰ *find*

With many deare delights bedecked fyne.

And all thensforth eternall peace shall see

Betweene the Spyder and the gentle Bee.

Sonnet 75

One day I wrote her name upon the strand,
shore

But came the waves and washed it away:

Agayne I wrote it with a second hand,
for / time

But came the tyde, and made my paynes his pray.
prey

5 Vayne man, sayd she, that doest in vaine assay,
attempt

A mortall thing so to immortalize,

For I my selve shall lyke to this decay,

And eek^o my name bee wyped out lykewize. *also*

Not so, (quod^o I) let baser things devize^o *quoth/plan*

10 To dy in dust, but you shall live by fame:

My verse your vertues rare shall eternize,

And in the heavens wryte your glorious name.

Where whenas death shall all the world subdew,

Our love shall live, and later life renew.

Sonnet 79

Men call you fayre, and you doe credit^o it, *believe*

For that your selfe ye dayly such doe see:

But the trew fayre,^o that is the gentle wit, *beauty*

And vertuous mind, is much more prayd of me.

5 For all the rest, how ever fayre it be,

Shall turne to nought and loose that glorious hew:^o *form*

But onely that is permanent and free

From frayle corruption, that doth flesh ensee.^o *attend*

That is true beautie: that doth argue you

10 To be divine and borne of heavenly seed:
Deriv'd from that fayre Spirit,⁹ from whom al true
And perfect beauty did at first proceed.
He onely fayre, and what he fayre hath made,
All other fayre lyke flowres untymely fade.

Sonnet 81

Fayre is my love, when her fayre golden heares,^{0 hairs}
With the loose wynd ye waving chance to marke:^{0 notice}

9. I.e., God, the "he" of line 13.

EPITHALAMION / 195

Fayre when the rose in her red cheekes appeares,
Or in her eyes the fyre of love does sparke.

5 Fayre when her brest lyke a rich laden barke,
With pretious merchandize she forth doth lay:

Fayre when that cloud of pryde, which oft doth dark
Her goodly light with smiles she drives away.

But fayrest she, when so she doth display

10 The gate with pearles and rubyes richly dight:^{° adorned,}

Throgh which her words so wise do make their way

To beare the message of her gentle spright.^{0 spirit}

The rest be works of natures wonderment,

But this the worke of harts⁰ astonishment. *heart's*

Sonnet 89

Lyke as the Culver¹ on the bared bough,

Sits mourning for the absence of her mate:

And in her songs sends many a wishfull vow,

For his returne that seemes to linger late,

5 So I alone now left disconsolate,

Mourne to my selfe the absence of my love:
And wandring here and there all desolate,
Seek with my playnts⁰ to match that mournful *laments*,
complaints
dove:
Ne joy of ought that under heaven doth hove,^o *abide*
io Can comfort me, but her owne joyous sight:
Whose sweet aspect both God and man can move,
In her unspotted pleasauns² to delight.
Dark is my day, whyles her fayre light I mis,
And dead my life that wants such lively blis.

15 9 5

Epithalamion¹

Ye learned sisters² which have oftentimes
Beene to me ayding, others to adorne:
Whom ye thought worthy of your graceful!³ rymes,
1. Dove; a bird associated with fidelity, peace, and
tral section on the church ceremony (lines 185—
the Holy Spirit.
222) is flanked by two symmetrical ten-stanza sec-
2. Charm or pleasing manners; also, a garden's
tions, each divided into units of three-four-three.
pleasure area; cf. Song of Solomon 4.12, in which
The poem's structure reinforces the theme of time,
the bride is compared to an enclosed garden.
with exactly 365 long lines, matching the number
1. Meaning a wedding song or poem; its Greek
of days in the year, and twenty-four stanzas

name conveys that it was sung on the threshold of (including the envoy), matching the number of the bridal chamber. The genre, practiced by the hours in one day. The first sixteen stanzas describe Latin poets, characteristically includes the invocation to the Muses (the nine sister goddesses sixteen and one-quarter stanzas: contemporary believed to be sources of inspiration for the arts), almanacs indicate sixteen and one-quarter hours the bringing home of the bride, the singing and of daylight in southern Ireland on June 11, 1594, dancing at the wedding party, and the preparations the day Spenser was married.

for the wedding night.

2. The Muses.

Published with the *Amoretti*, Spenser's *Epitha-*

3. Graceful; also, conferring grace.

lamion has a uniquely complex structure. The cen-

196 / EDMUND SPENSER

That even the greatest did not greatly scorne

To heare theyr names sung in your simple layes,^o *songs*

But joyed in theyr prayse.

And when ye list^o your owne mishaps to mourne, *desire*

Which death, or love, or fortunes wreck did rayse,

Your string could soone to sadder tenor^o turne, *mood*

And teach the woods and waters to lament

Your dolefull dremment.^o *sadness*

Now lay those sorrowfull complaints aside,
And having all your heads with girland⁰ crownd, *garland*
Helpe me mine owne loves prayes to resound,
Ne let the same of^o any be envide: *by*
So Orpheus⁴ did for his owne bride,
So I unto my selfe alone will sing,
The woods shall to me answer and my Eccho ring.
Early before the worlds light giving lampe,⁵
His golden beame upon the hils doth spread,
Having disperst the nights unchearefull dampe,
Doe ye awake, and with fresh lusty hed,^o *cheerfulness*
Go to the bowre^o of my beloved love, *bedchamber*
My truest turtle dove,
Bid her awake; for Hymen⁶ is awake,
And long since ready forth his maske to move,
With his bright Tead that flames with many a flake,^o *spark*
And many a bachelor to waite on him,
In theyr fresh garments trim.
Bid her awake therefore and soone her dight,^o *dress*
For lo the wished day is come at last,
That shall for al the paynes and sorrowes past,
Pay to her usury^o of long delight: *interest*
And whylest she doth her dight,^o *dress*
Doe ye to her of joy and solace^o sing, *pleasure*
That all the woods may answer and your eccho ring.
Bring with you all the Nymphes that you can heare⁷
Both of the rivers and the forrests greene:
And of the sea that neighbours to her neare,

40 Al with gay girlands⁰ goodly wel beseene.⁰ *garlands / beautified*

And let them also with them bring in hand

Another gay girland

For my fayre love of lillyes and of roses,

Bound true love wize⁸ with a blew silke riband.

45 And let them make great store of bridale poses,⁰ *posies*

And let them eeke^o bring store of other flowers *also*

To deck the bridale bowers.

4. Son of the Muse Calliope, he was a figure of

6. The Greek god of the wedding feast, repre-

the poet in classical antiquity; his music was said

sented as a young man bearing a torch (“Tead,” line

to charm wild animals and to make stones and

27) and leading a “maske” (line 26), or procession.

trees move. According to one tradition, he won his

7. I.e., that can hear you. *Nymphes*: nymphs;

wife, Euridyce, with music. However, he failed to

mythological female spirits inhabiting a particular

free her from the underworld after her death

place, object, or natural phenomenon.

because he looked back at her on the journey out.

8. I.e., in the manner of true love.

5. I.e., the sun.

EPITHALAMION / 197

And let the ground whereas⁰ her foot shall tread, *whereon*

For feare the stones her tender foot should wrong

50 Be strewed with fragrant flowers all along,

And diapred lyke the discolored mead.⁹
Which done, doe at her chamber dore awayt,
For she will waken strayt,⁰ *straightway*
The whiles doe ye this song unto her sing,
55 The woods shall to you answer and your Eccho ring.
Ye Nymphes of Mulla⁰ which with carefull heed, *an Irish*
river
The silver scaly trouts doe tend full well,
And greedy pikes which use therein to feed,
(Those trouts and pikes all others doo excell)
60 And ye likewise which keepe the rushy lake,
Where none doo fishes take,
Bynd up the locks¹ the which hang scatterd light,
And in his waters which your mirror make,
Behold your faces as the christall bright,
65 That when you come whereas my love doth lie,
No blemish she may spie.
And eke^o ye lightfoot mayds which keepe the deere, *also*
That on the hoary mountayne use to towre,²
And the wyld woves which seeke them to devoure,
70 With your **S t e e l e** darts doo chace from comming neer,
Be also present heere,
To helpe to decke her and to help to sing,
That all the woods may answer and your eccho ring.
Wake, now my love, awake; for it is time,
75 The Rosy Morne long since left Tithones bed,³
All ready to her silver coche^o to clyme, *coach*
And Phoebus⁴ gins to shew his glorious hed.

Hark how the cheerefull birds do chaunt theyr laies⁰ *songs*
And carroll of loves praise.⁵

so The merry Larke hir mattins⁰ sings aloft,
morning prayers

The thrush replies, the Mavis descant⁰ playes,
melodic counterpart

The Ouzell shrills, the Ruddock warbles soft,
So goodly all agree with sweet consent,
To this dayes merriment.

85 Ah my deere love why doe ye sleepe thus long,
When meeter⁰ were that ye should now awake,
more appropriate

T' awayt the comming of your joyous make,⁰
mate

And hearken to the birds lovelearned song,
The deawy leaves among.

90 For they of joy and pleasance to you sing,
That all the woods them answer and theyr eccho ring.

9. And variegated like the many-colored meadow.
stayed young.

1. I.e., the rushes.

4. Phoebus Apollo, the Greek sun god.

2. A hawking term meaning "to climb high." *Light-*

5. The birds' concert (following lines) is a conven-
foot mayds: i.e., the nymphs.

tion of love poetry. The lark (a songbird) was asso-

3. The dawn, personified in mythology as the god-
ciated with dawn. The mavis (song thrush), the

dess Eos, or Aurora, was married to Tithonus, a
ouzell (European blackbird), and the ruddock
mortal Trojan prince who aged while his wife
(robin) are all varieties of thrush.

198 / EDMUND SPENSER

My love is now awake out of her dreames,
And her fayre eyes like stars that dimmed were
With darksome cloud, now shew theyr goodly beams
95 More bright then⁰ Hesperus⁶ his head doth rere. *than*
Come now ye damzels, daughters of delight,
Helpe quickly her to dight,
But first come ye fayre houres⁷ which were begot
In Joves sweet paradice, of Day and Night,
100 Which doe the seasons of the yeare allot,
And al that ever in this world is fayre
Doe make and still⁰ repayre. *continually*
And ye three handmayds of the Cyprian Queene,⁸
The which doe still adorne her beauties pride,
105 Helpe to adorne my beautifullest bride:
And as ye her array,⁰ still throw betweene⁰ *dress / at intervals*
Some graces to be seene,
And as ye use to Venus, to her sing,⁹
The whiles the woods shal answer and your eccho ring.
Now is my love all ready forth to come,
Let all the virgins therefore well awayt,
And ye fresh boyes that tend upon her groome¹
Prepare your selves; for he is comming strayt.⁰
straightaway

Set all your things in seemely good aray⁰
order

Fit for so joyfull day,

The joyfullst day that ever sunne did see.

Faire Sun, shew forth thy favourable ray,

And let thy liful^P heat not fervent be

life-giving

For feare of burning her sunshyny face,

Her beauty to disgrace.⁰

O fayrest Phoebus, father of the Muse,²

If ever I did honour thee aright,

Or sing the thing, that mote⁰ thy mind delight,

might

Doe not thy servants simple boone⁰ refuse,

request

But let this day let this one day be myne,

Let all the rest be thine.

Then I thy soverayne prayes loud wil sing,

That all the woods shal answer and theyr eccho ring.

Harke how the Minstrels gin to shrill aloud

130 Their merry Musick that resounds from far,

The pipe,⁰ the tabor,⁰ and the trembling Croud,³

bagpipe/drum

That well agree withouten breach or jar.⁰ *discord*

But most of all the Damzels doe delite,

When they their tymbrels⁰ smyte,⁰ *tambourines / hit*

135 And thereunto doe daunce and carrol sweet,

6. The evening or morning star, sacred to Venus,

flowers,” and “she who rejoices the heart.”

Roman goddess of love and beauty.

9. I.e., as you are accustomed to sing to Venus, so

7. The Horae, or Hours, were three daughters of
sing to my bride.

Jove (ruler of the gods), commonly associated with

1. Her bridegroom, i.e., the speaker of the poem.

the seasons and the principle of order.

2. Usually, Zeus (Jove) was considered father of

8. Venus, whose handmaids were the three

the Muses; in contrast, Spenser names Phoebus as

Graces: Aglaia, Thalia, and Euphrosyne. Their
their father.

names mean “the brilliant one,” “she who brings

3. Primitive fiddle.

E P I T H A L A M I O N / 1 9 9

That all the sences they doe ravish quite,

The whyles the boyes run up and downe the street,

Crying aloud with strong confused noyce,

As if it were one voyce.

140 Hymen io Hymen, Hymen⁴ they do shout,

That even to the heavens theyr shouting shrill

Doth reach, and all the firmament doth fill,

To which the people standing all about,

As in approvance doe thereto applaud

- 145 And loud advaunce her laud,⁰ *praise*

And evermore they Hymen Hymen sing,

That al the woods them answer and theyr eccho ring.

Loe where she comes along with portly⁰ pace, *stately*
Lyke Phoebe⁵ from her chamber of the East,
iso Aysing forth to run her mighty race,
Clad all in white, that seemes⁰ a virgin best. *befits*
So well it her beseemes that ye would weene⁰ *think*
Some angell she had beene.
Her long loose yellow locks lyke golden wyre,
155 Sprinckled with perle, and perling⁰ flowres a tweene,
winding
Doe lyke a golden mantle her attyre,
And being crowned with a girland⁰ greene, *garland*
Seeme lyke some mayden Queene.
Her modest eyes abashed to behold
160 So many gazers, as on her do stare,
Upon the lowly ground affixed are.
Ne dare lift up her countenance too bold,
But blush to heare her prayyses sung so loud,
So farre from being proud.
165 Nathlesse⁰ doe ye still loud her prayyses sing, *nevertheless*
That all the woods may answer and your eccho ring.
Tell me ye merchants daughters did ye see
So fayre a creature in your towne before?
So sweet, so lovely, and so mild as she,
170 Adornd with beautyes grace and vertues store,⁰ *wealth*
Her goodly eyes lyke Saphyres shining bright,
Her forehead yvory white,
Her cheekes lyke apples which the sun hath rudded,
Her lips lyke cheryes charming men to byte,

175 Her brest like to a bowle of creame uncrudded,⁰
uncurdled

Her paps lyke lyllies budded,

Her snowie necke lyke to a marble towre,

And all her body lyke a pallace fayre,

Ascending uppe with many a stately stayre,

iso To honors seat and chastities sweet bowre.⁶

4. Ritual exclamation at weddings in antiquity (see virgins but also to faithful wives.

note 6, p. 196).

6. The head, seat of reason. The catalog, or bla-

5. Another name for the virgin moon goddess,

zon, of the beloved's beauties harks back to the

Diana, and thus an anticipation of night's coming.

biblical Song of Solomon (4—8) and was a conven-

Phoebe was associated with chastity, a concept

tion of love poetry.

that Protestants defined as belonging not only to

200 / EDMUND SPENSER

Why stand ye still ye virgins in amaze,

Upon her so to gaze,

Whiles ye forget your former lay to sing,

To which the woods did answer and your eccho ring:¹

185 But if ye saw that which no eyes can see,

The inward beauty of her lively spright,⁰ *spirit*

Garnisht with heavenly guifts⁰ of high degree, *gifts*

Much more then would ye wonder at that sight,

And stand astonisht lyke to those which red⁰ *saw*

190 Medusaes mazeful hed.7

There dwels sweet love and constant chastity,
Unspotted fayth and comely womanhed,
Regard of honour and mild modesty,
There Vertue raynes as Queene in royal throne,
195 And giveth lawes alone.

The which the base⁰ affections⁰ doe obay, *lowly / emotions*
And yeeld theyr services unto her will,
Ne thought of thing uncomely ever may
Thereto approach to tempt her mind to ill.

200 Had ye once seene these her celestial treasures,
And unrevealed pleasures,

Then would ye wonder and her prayses sing,
That al the woods should answer and your echo ring.

Open the temple gates unto my love,

205 Open them wide that she may enter in,
And all the postes adorne as doth behove,⁸

And all the pillours deck with girlands⁰ trim, *garlands*
For to recyve this Saynt with honour dew,
That commeth in to you.

210 With trembling steps and humble reverence,
She commeth in, before th' almighties vew:

Of her ye virgins learne obedience,

When so ye come into those holy places,

To humble your proud faces;

215 Bring her up to th' high altar that she may,

The sacred ceremonies there partake,

The which do endlesse matrimony make,

And let the roring Organs loudly play
The praises of the Lord in lively notes,
220 The whiles with hollow throates
The Choristers the joyous Antheme sing,
That al the woods may answeare and their eccho ring.
Behold whiles she before the altar stands
Hearing the holy priest that to her speakes

225 And blesseth her with his two happy hands,
How the red roses flush up in her cheekes,

7. In Greek mythology, the Gorgon Medusa had with chastity,
serpents for hair; whoever looked upon her was 8. I.e., as is
fitting,

turned to stone. She was sometimes associated

EPITHALAMION / 201

And the pure snow with goodly vermill⁰ stayne, *scarlet*
Like crimsin dyde in grayne,⁹

That even th' Angels which continually,
230 About the sacred Altare doe remaine,
Forget their service and about her fly,
Ofte peeping in her face that seemes more fayre,
The more they on it stare.

But her sad⁰ eyes still fastened on the ground,
sober

235 Are governed with goodly modesty,
That suffers not one looke to glaunce awry,
Which may let in a little thought unsownd.⁰
unsound

Why blush ye love to give to me your hand,

The pledge of all our band?0

bond

240 Sing ye sweet Angels, Alleluya sing,
That all the woods may answer and your eccho ring.
Now al is done; bring home the bride againe,
Bring home the triumph of our victory,
Bring home with you the glory of her gaine,1
245 With joyance bring her and with jollity.
Never had man more joyfull day then this,
Whom heaven would heape with blis.
Make feast therefore now all this live long day,
This day for ever to me holy is,
250 Poure out the wine without restraint or stay,
Poure not by cups, but by the belly full,
Poure out to all that wull,0

will

And sprinkle all the postes and wals with wine,
That they may sweat, and drunken be withall.
255 Crowne ye God Bacchus2 with a coronall,0

garland

And Hymen also crowne with wreathes of vine,
And let the Graces daunce unto the rest;
For they can doo it best:
The whiles the maydens doe theyr carroll sing,
260 To which the woods shal answer and theyr eccho ring
Ring ye the bells, ye yong men of the towne,
And leave your wonted0 labors for this day: *usual*
This day is holy; doe ye write it downe,

That ye for ever it remember may.

265 This day the sunne is in his chiefest hight,

With Barnaby the bright,³

From whence declining daily by degrees,

He somewhat loseth of his heat and light,

When once the Crab⁴ behind his back he sees.

270 But for this time it ill ordained was,

To chose the longest day in all the yeare,

And shortest night, when longest fitter weare:

I.e., dyed with colorfast dye. of the summer solstice (the longest day of the year) I.e., of gaining her. in the calendar used during Spenser's time.

Roman god of wine and ecstasy. 4. Cancer the Crab, the fourth constellation in the St. Barnabas's Day (June 11) was also the day zodiac, through which the sun passes in July.

202 / E D M U N D S P E N S E R

Yet never day so long, but late⁰ would passe. *finally*

Ring ye the bells, to make it weare away,

275 And bonafiers⁰ make all day, *bonfires*

And daunce about them, and about them sing:

That all the woods may answer, and your eccho ring.

Ah when will this long weary day have end,

And lende me leave to come unto my love?

280 How slowly do the houres theyr numbers spend?

How slowly does sad Time his feathers move?

Hast⁰ thee O fayrest Planet to thy home⁵ *haste*

Within the Westerne fome:

Thy tyred steedes long since have need of rest.

285 Long though it be, at last I see it gloome,

And the bright evening star with golden creast⁰ *crest*
Appeare out of the East.

Fayre childe of beauty, glorious lampe of love
That all the host of heaven in rankes doost lead,
290 And guydest lovers through the nights dread,
How chearefully thou lookest from above,
And seemst to laugh atweene thy twinkling light
As joying in the sight
Of these glad many which for joy doe sing,
295 That all the woods them answer and their echo ring.

Now ceasse ye damsels⁶ your delights forepast;
Enough is it, that all the day was youres:

Now day is doen, and night is nighing fast:

Now bring the Bryde into the brydall boures.⁰
bowers, chambers

Now night is come,⁷ now soone her disaray,⁰
undress

And in her bed her lay;

Lay her in lillies and in violets,

And silken courteins⁰ over her display,
curtains

And odour⁰ sheetes, and Arras⁸ coverlets.
perfumed

Behold how goodly my faire love does ly

In proud humility;

Like unto Maia,⁹ when as Jove her tooke,

In Tempe, lying on the Howry gras,

Twixt sleepe and wake, after she weary was,

With bathing in the Acidalian brooke.

Now it is night, ye damsels may be gon,

And leave my love alone,

And leave likewise your former lay to sing:

The woods no more shal answere, nor your echo ring

5. The sun, drawn in its chariot (by “tyred stee-

9. Said to be the most beautiful and modest of the

des,” line 284); in Ptolemaic astronomy, still often

Pleiades, who were, in Greek mythology, the seven

accepted in Spenser’s time, the sun was one of the

daughters of Atlas and the Oceanid Pleione; Maia

planets, which revolved about Earth.

was the mother of the god Hermes (and Jove was

6. I.e., all the aforementioned nymphs and spirits.

his father, though Jove’s encounter with Maia did

7. On the placement of this phrase, see the end of

not traditionally take place in the Vale of Tempe,

note 1, p. 195.

in Thessaly). The “Acidalian brooke” (line 310) is

8. A northeastern French city famous for its tap-

associated with Venus.

estries.

E P I T H A L A M I O N / 2 0 3

315 Now welcome night, thou night so long expected,0

awaited

That long daies labour doest at last defray,0 *pay for*

And all my cares, which cruell love collected,

Hast sumd in one, and cancelled for aye:

Spread thy broad wing over my love and me,
320 That no man may us see,
And in thy sable mantle us enwrap,
From feare of perrill and foule horror free.
Let no false treason seeke us to entrap,
Nor any dread disquiet once annoy
325 The safety of our joy:
But let the night be calme and quiet some,
Without tempestuous storms or sad⁰ afray:⁰ *dark (terror*
Lyke as when Jove with fayre Alcmena¹ lay,
When he begot the great Tirynthian groome:
330 Or lyke as when he with thy selfe did lie,
And begot Majesty.²
And let the mayds and yongmen cease to sing:
Ne let the woods them answer, nor theyr eccho ring.
Let no lamenting cryes, nor dolefull teares,
335 Be heard all night within nor yet without:
Ne let false whispers breeding hidden feares,
Breake gentle sleepe with misconceived dout.⁰ *fear*
Let no deluding dreames, nor dreadful sights
Make sudden sad affrights;
340 Ne let housefyres, nor lightnings helpelesse harmes,
Ne let the Pouke,³ nor other evill sprights,
Ne let mischivous witches with theyr charmes,
Ne let hob Goblins, names whose sence we see not,
Fray⁰ us with things that be not. *frighten*
345 Let not the shrieck Oule, nor the Storke be heard:
Nor the night Raven⁴ that still⁰ deadly yels, *continually*

Nor damned ghosts cald up with mighty spels,
 Nor griesly vultures make us once affeard:
 Ne let th' unpleasant Quayre of Frogs still croking
350 Make us to wish theyr choking.
 Let none of these theyr drery accents sing;
 Ne let the woods them answer, nor theyr eccho ring.
 But let stil Silence trew night watches keepe,
 That sacred peace may in assurance rayne,
355 And tymely sleep, when it is tyme to sleepe,
 May poure his limbs forth on your pleasant playne,⁰ *plain*
 The whiles an hundred little winged loves,⁰ *cupids (or*
amoretti)

1. According to several versions of the story, Jove
 3. Puck, also called Hobgoblin; a small supernat-
 ordered the sun not to shine to make the night
 ural creature popular in English folklore and a
 longer; the “Tiryinthian groome” conceived by
 character in Shakespeare’s *A Midsummer Night’s*
 Alcmena was Heracles.

Dream.

2. Spenser invents this myth of Night’s creation.
 4. The night raven and the owl were birds of ill
 Ovid identifies Night’s parents as Honor and Rev-
 omen; the stork was sometimes figured as an
 erence (*Fasti* 5.23).
 avenger of adultery.

204 / EDMUND SPENSER

Like divers fethered doves,

Shall fly and flutter round about your bed,
360 And in the secret darke, that none reproveth,
Their pretty stealthes shall worke, and snares shall spread
To filch away sweet snatches of delight,
Conceald through covert night.

Ye sonnes of Venus, play your sports at will,
365 For greedy pleasure, carelesse of your toys,0

amorous s-ports

Thinks more upon her paradise of joyes,
Then0 what ye do, albe it good or ill.

than

All night therefore attend your merry play,
For it will soone be day:

370 Now none doth hinder you, that say or sing,
Ne will the woods now answer, nor your Eccho ring.

Who is the same, which at my window peepes?

Or whose is that faire face, that shines so bright,

Is it not Cinthia,5 she that never sleepes,

But walkes about high heaven al the night?

O fayrest goddesse, do thou not envy

My love with me to spy:

For thou likewise didst love, though now unthought,6

And for a fleece of woll,0 which privily,

wool

The Latmian shephard once unto thee brought,

His pleasures with thee wrought.

Therefore to us be favorable now;

And sith0 of wemens labours thou hast charge,

And generation goodly dost enlarge,
 Encline thy will t' effect our wishfull vow,
 And the chast wombe informe with timely seed,
 That may our comfort breed:
 Till which we cease our hopefulP hap0 to sing,
hoped for / fate
 Ne let the woods us answere, nor our Eccho ring.
 And thou great Juno,7 which with awful0 ight
awe-inspiring
 The lawes of wedlock still dost patronize,
 And the religion0 of the faith first plight
sanctity
 With sacred rites hast taught to solemnize:8
 And eeke for comfort often called art
 Of women in their smart,0
pains of childbirth
 Eternally bind thou this lovely0 band,0
loving / bond
 And all thy blessings unto us impart.
 And thou glad Genius,9 in whose gentle hand,
 The bridale bowre and genialP bed remaine,
marriage

5. Another name for Diana, the moon goddess,

7. Roman goddess of marriage and childbirth.

who was associated with chastity and also with

8. I.e., with the marriage vows.

Queen Elizabeth; see also "Phoebe," line 149 and

9. A spirit presiding over generation. By invoking

note 5 there.

both Juno and Genius as patrons of the marriage
6. Not thought of. According to some versions of
bed, Spenser draws also on the belief that each
the story, Cynthia and Endymion, the “Latmian
individual is watched over from birth by a tutelary
shepherd” (line 380), made love on Mt. Latmos,
spirit called a “Juno” (for girls) or a “Genius” (for
after he brought her a fleece. In revenge, Zeus
boys).

made Endymion sleep eternally.

E P I T H A L A M I O N / 2 0 5

400 Without blemish or staine,
And the sweet pleasures of theyr loves delight
With secret ayde doest succour and supply,
Till they bring forth the fruitfull progeny,
Send us the timely fruit of this same night.
405 And thou fayre Hebe,¹ and thou Hymen free,
Grant that it may so be.
Til which we cease your further prayse to sing,
Ne any woods shal answer, nor your Eccho ring.
And ye high heavens, the temple of the gods,
410 In which a thousand torches flaming bright
Doe burne, that to us wretched earthly clods,
In dreadful darknesse lend desired light;
And all ye powers which in the same remayne,
More then we men can fayne,⁰ *imagine*
415 Poure out your blessing on us plentiously,

And happy influence upon us raine,
 That we may raise a large posterity,
 Which from the earth, which they may long possesse,
 With lasting happinesse,
 420 Up to your haughty pallaces may mount,
 And for the guerdon⁰ of theyr glorious merit *reward*
 May heavenly tabernacles there inherit,
 Of blessed Saints for to increase the count.
 So let us rest, sweet love, in hope of this,
 425 And cease till then our tymelyjoyes to sing,
 The woods no more us answer, nor our eccho ring.
 Song made in lieu of many ornaments,²
 With which my love should duly have bene dect,⁰ *adorned*
 Which cutting off through hasty accidents,
 430 Ye would not stay your dew time to expect,³
 But promist both to recompens,⁴
 Be unto her a goodly ornament,
 And for short time an endlesse monument.

1 5 9 5

1. Daughter of Juno and goddess of youth.

to be born (“Ye would not stay” [remain] to

2. These last seven lines are the poem’s envoy, a
 “expect” [await] your due time); or these lines may
 traditional concluding verse paragraph in which
 describe the other ornaments or wedding gifts for
 the poet addresses and bids farewell to the work of
 which this poem is modestly said to substitute, i.e.,
 art (“song”) just completed. Spenser’s envoy is full

those other gifts didn't arrive in time for the bride of puns and syntactical complexities expressing the to deck herself out in them appropriately ("duly," poet's mingled attitudes of humility, impatience, line 4 2 8 — b u t that adverb, like the adjective "dew," and pride in his achievement of creating an "orna- has multiple meanings).

ment" that is also a permanent m o n u m e n t for 4. For the fault of a premature "cutting off," the swiftly passing time.

poet offers the "recompense" of the song; the ref- 3. Two possible readings: the thing being prema- erents of "both" are open to interpretation; possi- turely ended ("cut off") through sudden or rushed bly, the poet is seeking to fulfill a promise or repay ("hasty") events or contingencies ("accidents") may a debt both to his bride and to time.

be the poem itself, ended before it was really ready 2 0 6

F U L K E G R E V I L L E , L O R D B R O O K E

1554-1628

*FROM CAELICA*1

You little stars that live in skies

And glory in Apollo's² glory,

In whose aspects conjoined lies

The heaven's will and nature's story,³

5 Joy to be likened to those eyes,⁴

Which eyes make all eyes glad or sorry;

For when you force thoughts from above,
These overrule your force by love.
And thou, O Love, which in these eyes
10 Hast married Reason with Affection,
And made them saints of Beauty's skies,
Where joys are shadows of perfection,
Lend me thy wings that I may rise
Up, not by worth, but thy election;⁵
15 For I have vowed in strangest fashion
To love and never seek compassion.

ca. 1580 1633

39

The nurse-life⁰ wheat within his green husk growing, *life-*
fostering

Flatters our hope, and tickles our desire,
Nature's true riches in sweet beauties showing,
Which set all hearts, with labor's love, on fire.
5 No less fair is the wheat when golden ear
Shows unto hope the joys of near enjoying;
Fair and sweet is the bud, more sweet and fair
The rose, which proves that time is not destroying.
Caelica, your youth, the morning of delight,
10 Enamel'd o'er with beauties white and red,
All sense and thoughts did to belief invite,

1. Heavenly (Latin). The title of Greville's poetic
was its position in the sky from an observation
sequence refers to one of three ladies he addresses
point on Earth. When two heavenly bodies occu-

in the poems; the others are Cynthia and Myra. They occupied approximately the same position, their aspects heavily influenced by Sidney's *Astrophil and Stella* were said to be "conjoined" or "in conjunction," a circumstance thought to exert a powerful influence ("the heaven's will") on mundane affairs as erotic ones.

("nature's story").

2. Greek and Roman god of the sun; here, the sun

4. I.e., the stars.

itself.

5. Calvinist theology held that salvation depended

3. As in astrology. The "aspect" of a star or planet not on human merit but on "election" by God.

O H , F O R A B O W L O F F A T C A N A R Y / 2 0 7

That love and glory there are brought to bed;

And your ripe year's love-noon; he goes no higher,⁶

Turns all the spirits of man into desire.

ca. 1580-1600 1633

J O H N L Y L Y

1554-1606

Cupid and My Campaspe¹

Cupid and my Campaspe played

At cards for kisses; Cupid paid.

He stakes his quiver, bow, and arrows,

His mother's doves and team of sparrows,

5 Loses them too; then down he throws
The coral of his lip, the rose
Growing on 's cheek (but none knows how),
With these the crystal of his brow,
And then the dimple of his chin:
10 All these did my Campaspe win.
At last he set her both his eyes;
She won, and Cupid blind did rise.
Oh Love! has she done this to thee?
What shall (alas) become of me?

1632

Oh, For a Bowl of Fat Canary²
Oh, for a bowl of fat Canary,
Rich Palermo, sparkling Sherry,
Some nectar else, from Juno's dairy;³
Oh, these draughts would make us merry!
5 Oh, for a wench (I deal in faces,
And in other daintier things);
Tickled am I with her embraces,
Fine dancing in such fairy rings.⁴

6. I.e., your year or present age is love's noon; he
and Manes) sing this song as they prepare to feast
(the morning sun) goes no higher.

at someone else's expense. Each boy sings one

1. This song appears in act 3, scene 5 of Lyly's play
stanza, and all three sing the final verse. *Fat
Campaspe* (published in 1584), which tells the
Canary: well-bodied, light, sweet wine.

story of Alexander the Great's love for his Theban
3. *Nectar*: the drink of the gods, hence coming
captive, Campaspe. Sung by Apelles, the painter
from the "dairy" of Juno, queen of the gods in
who falls in love with Campaspe while painting her
Roman mythology. *Palermo*: a wine from Palermo,
portrait, the song expresses his erotic frustration.
in Sicily.

Cupid: Roman god of erotic love; son of Venus,
4. Circles of grass, differing in color from the sur-
goddess of love and beauty.

rounding grass; a phenomenon commonly sup-

2. Also from *Campaspe* (see note 1 above). In act
posed to be caused by dancing fairies.

1, scene 2, three servant boys (Granichus, Psyllus,

208 / SIR PHILIP SIDNEY

Oh, for a plump fat leg of mutton,

10 Veal, lamb, capon, pig, and coney;⁵

None is happy but a glutton,

None an ass but who wants money.

Wines indeed and girls are good,

But brave victuals⁰ feast the blood; *provisions, food*

15 For wenches, wine, and lusty cheer,

Jove⁶ would leap down to surfeit here.

1640

SIR PHILIP SIDNEY

1554-1586

Ye Goatherd Gods¹

S T R E P H O N . 2 Ye goatherd gods, that love the grassy mountains, Ye nymphs which haunt the springs in pleasant valleys,

Ye satyrs³ joyed with free and quiet forests,

Vouchsafe your silent ears to plaining music,

5 Which to my woes gives still an early morning,

And draws the dolor on till weary evening.

KLAIUS. O Mercury, foregoer to the evening,

O heavenly huntress⁴ of the savage mountains,

O lovely star, entitled of the morning,

10 While that my voice doth fill these woeful valleys,

Vouchsafe your silent ears to plaining music,

Which oft hath Echo⁵ tired in secret forests.

S T R E P H O N . I, that was once free burgess⁰ of the forests, *citizen* Where shade from sun, and sport I sought in evening,

15 I, that was once esteemed for pleasant music,

Am banished now among the monstrous mountains

Of huge despair, and foul affliction's valleys,

Am grown a screech owl⁶ to myself each morning.

5. Rabbit. *Capon*: a castrated rooster, especially with the absent Urania, in Sidney's heroic romance one fattened for eating.

Arcadia, in which this poem appears.

6. Or Jupiter, chief Roman god.

3. In Greek mythology, woodland gods, usually

1. This poem is in the form of a double sestina, having the head and torso of a man and the lower two sets of six six-line stanzas, with a triplet con-

body of a goat; commonly associated with merri-
cluding the whole. The same six key words end the
ment and lust. *Nymphs*: minor nature goddesses.
lines of each stanza; their order is always a per-
4. The goddess Diana, the moon. *Mercury*: the
mutation of the order in the stanza just preceding:
evening star.

the pattern is 6 1 5 2 4 3, i.e., the last word of line
5. A nymph who was punished for her excessive
1 of any stanza is always the same as the last word
talking by being deprived of her power of indepen-
of line 6 in the preceding stanza. Line 2 ends like
dent speech; when she fell in love with the youth
line 1 of the preceding stanza; line 3 like line 5;
Narcissus, she could express her (unrequited) feel-
line 4 like line 2; line 5 like line 4; and line 6 like
ings only by echoing his words.

line 3. All six key words appear in the triplet in the
6. Named for the sound of its voice and consid-
same order as that of the first and seventh stanzas.
ered a bird of ill omen.

2. Strephon and Klaius are shepherds, both in love

Y E G O A T H E R D G O D S / 2 0 9

KLAIUS. I, that was once delighted every morning,

20 Hunting the wild inhabitants of forests,

I, that was once the music of these valleys,

So darkened am that all my day is evening,

Heartbroken so, that molehills seem high mountains

And fill the vales with cries instead of music.

25 S T R E P H O N . Long since, alas, my deadly swannish⁷
music

Hath made itself a crier of the morning,

And hath with wailing strength climbed highest
mountains;

Long since my thoughts more desert be than forests,

Long since I see my joys come to their evening,

30 And state thrown down to overtrodden valleys.

KLAIUS. Long since the happy dwellers of these valleys

Have prayed me leave my strange exclaiming music,

Which troubles their day's work and joys of evening;

Long since I hate the night, more hate the morning;

35 Long since my thoughts chase me like beasts in forests,

And make me wish myself laid under mountains.

S T R E P H O N . Meseems⁰ I see the high and stately *it*
seems to me mountains

Transform themselves to low dejected valleys;

Meseems I hear in these ill-changed forests

40 The nightingales do learn of owls their music;

Meseems I feel the comfort of the morning

Turned to the mortal serene⁸ of an evening.

KLAIUS.

Meseems I see a filthy cloudy evening

As soon as sun begins to climb the mountains;

45

Meseems I feel a noisome⁰ scent, the morning *offensive*

When I do smell the flowers of these valleys;

Meseems I hear, when I do hear sweet music,

The dreadful cries of murdered men in forests.

STREPHON. I wish to fire the trees of all these forests;

50 I give the sun a last farewell each evening;

I curse the fiddling finders-out of music;

With envy I do hate the lofty mountains,

And with despite despise the humble valleys;

I do detest night, evening, day, and morning.

55 **KLAIUS**. Curse to myself my prayer is, the morning;

My fire is more than can be made with forests,

My state more base than are the basest valleys.

I wish no evenings more to see, each evening;

Shamed, I hate myself in sight of mountains

60 And stop mine ears, lest I grow mad with music.

7. The swan was supposed to sing only just before 8. Damp evening air, thought to produce sickness it died. (*mortal*: deadly). The stress is on the first syllable.

210 / S I R P H I L I P S I D N E Y

STREPHON. For she whose parts maintained a perfect music,

Whose beauties shined more than the blushing morning,

Who much did pass⁹ in state the stately mountains,

In straightness passed the cedars of the forests,

65 Hath cast me, wretch, into eternal evening

By taking her two suns¹ from these dark valleys.

KLAIUS. For she, with whom compared, the Alps are valleys,

She, whose least word brings from the spheres their music,²

At whose approach the sun rose in the evening,

70 Who where she went bare⁰ in her forehead *bore*
morning,

Is gone, is gone, from these our spoiled forests,
Turning to deserts our best pastured mountains.

STREPHON. These mountains witness shall, so shall these
valleys,

KLAIUS. These forests eke,^o made wretched by our music,
also

75 Our morning hymn this is, and song at evening.

1 5 7 7 - 8 3 1 5 9 3

What Length of Verse?³

What length of verse can serve brave⁰ Mopsa's good to show,
splendid

Whose virtues strange, and beauties such, as no man them may
know?

Thus shrewdly⁰ burden, then, how can my Muse⁴ escape?
severally

The gods must help, and precious things must serve to show
her

shape.

5 Like great god Saturn, fair, and like fair Venus, chaste;⁵

As smooth as Pan, as Juno mild, like goddess Iris fast.⁶

9. Surpass.

the meter, see Queen Elizabeth I, "The Doubt of

1. I.e., her eyes.

Future Foes Exiles My Present Joy" (p. 142).

2. Music of the spheres: a popular theory during

4. Source of poetic inspiration.

the period, based on the Pythagorean idea that the

5. This line initiates an inversion of classical gods'

movement of the celestial bodies produced a musical harmony, inaudible to human ears.

unchaste; Cupid, blind; Vulcan, lame; and

3. This fourteen-line poem parodies the sonnet

Moinus, god of laughter and rebuke, censorious.

form and a number of conventions of pastoral love

6. Iris is goddess of the rainbow, the ephemeral

poetry. Written in poulter's measure (see "Versifi-

quality of which leads us to interpret the adjective

cation," p. 2047), the poem occurs early in the first

spelled "faste" in several manuscripts as "fast"—

version of Sidney's pastoral romance, a version

meaning "steadfast"—rather than as "faced." Wil-

known now as the *Old Arcadia*. The poem is attrib-

uted to Alethes, whose name plays on a Greek word

choose "faced," and Ringler attempts to make this

meaning "truth" or "sincerity"; in his verses, Ale-

choice work by emending "Iris" (the reading of all

thes ironically praises "Mistress Mopsa," ugly

manuscripts) to "Isis," an Egyptian goddess some-

daughter of boorish rural parents. Mopsa's quali-

ties are associated with those of the verse itself.

son for rejecting "Iris"—that she was "fast" in the

Although popular for much of the sixteenth cen-

sense of speedy, and hence the line so read would

tury, poulter's measure is here defined as anti-lose its irony—disappears if one reads “fast” as quoted and “vulgar.” For a different perspective on “steadfast.”

THE NIGHTINGALE / 211

With Cupid she foresees, and goes⁰ god Vulcan's pace; *walks with*

And for a taste of all these gifts, she borrows Momus' grace.

Her forehead jacinth-like, her cheeks of opal⁷ hue,

¹⁰ Her twinkling eyes bedecked with pearl, her lips of sapphire blue,

Her hair pure crapall stone,⁸ her mouth, O heavenly wide,

Her skin like burnished gold, her hands like silver ore untried.

As for those parts unknown, which hidden sure are best,

Happy be they which will believe, and never seek the rest.

ca. 1580 1593

The Nightingale⁹

The nightingale, as soon as April bringeth

Unto her rested sense a perfect waking,

While late⁰ bare earth, proud of new clothing, springeth,
recently

Sings out her woes, a thorn her song-book making,

⁵ And mournfully bewailing,

Her throat in tunes expresseth

What grief her breast oppresseth

For Tereus' force on her chaste will prevailing.

O Philomela fair, O take some gladness,

¹⁰ That here is juster cause of plaintful sadness:

Thine earth now springs, mine fadeth;

Thy thorn without, my thorn my heart invadeth.
Alas, she hath no other cause of anguish
But Tereus' love, on her by strong hand wroken,¹
15 Wherein she suffering, all her spirits languish;
Full womanlike complains her will was broken.
But I, who daily craving,
Cannot have to content me,
Have more cause to lament me,
20 Since wanting is more woe than too much having.
O Philomela fair, O take some gladness,
That here is juster cause of plaintful sadness:
Thine earth now springs, mine fadeth;
Thy thorn without, my thorn my heart invadeth.
ca. 1581 1598

7. Many-colored. *Jacinth-like*: yellow, reddish
law, Tereus, who then tore out her tongue so that
orange, or blue.

she could not reveal his crime. She wove the story

8. With a pun on *crap*, the line refers to *cheloni-*
in a tapestry and sent it to her sister, who rescued
tis—according to bestiaries, a stone in the head
her. She was later changed into a nightingale while
of a frog. The stone was described as green or
in flight from Tereus. Sidney follows the version in
tortoise-shell colored.

Ovid, *Metamorphoses* 6.424 ff.

9. Philomela, the nightingale, who sings a mourn-

1. Old past participle of *wreak*, “to urge or force

ful song in the springtime. According to classical
upon.”

mythology, Philomela was raped by her brother-in-

2 1 2 / S I R P H I L I P S I D N E Y

Ring Out Your Bells

Ring out your bells, let mourning shows be spread,

For Love is dead.

All Love is dead, infected

With plague of deep disdain;

5 Worth as naught worth rejected,

And Faith fair scorn² doth gain.

From so ungrateful fancy,

From such a female franzy,⁰ frenzy

From them that use men thus,

10 Good Lord, deliver us!

Weep, neighbors, weep; do you not hear it said

That Love is dead?

His deathbed peacock's folly,³

His winding sheet⁴ is shame,

15 His will false-seeming holy,

His sole exec'tor blame.

From so ungrateful fancy, ...

Let dirge be sung and trentals⁵ rightly read,

For Love is dead.

20 Sir Wrong his tomb ordaineth

My mistress, marble heart,

Which epitaph containeth,

“Her eyes were once his dart.”

From so ungrateful fancy, ...

25 Alas, I lie, rage hath this error bred;

Love is not dead.

Love is not dead, but sleepeth

In her unmatched mind,

Where she his counsel keepeth,

30 Till due desert⁰ she find. *reward*

Therefore from so vile fancy,

To call such wit a franzy,

Who Love can temper thus,

Good Lord, deliver us!

ca. 1 5 8 1 1 5 9 8

2. I.e., scorn from a fair lady.

5. A series of thirty Masses for the dead, designed

3. I.e., ostentatious pride, as peacocks were a symbol to mitigate the pains of purgatory; in Sidney's day, bol of pride.

no longer accepted as a service by the Church of

4. His shroud.

England.

ASTROPHIL AND STELLA : SEVENTH SON
G / 2 1 3

*FROM ASTROPHIL AND STELLA*⁶

1

Loving in truth, and fain⁰ in verse my love to show, *eager*

That she dear she might take some pleasure of my pain,

Pleasure might cause her read, reading might make her know,

Knowledge might pity win, and pity grace obtain,

5 I sought fit words to paint the blackest face of woe:
Studying inventions⁷ fine, her wits to entertain,
Oft turning others' leaves, to see if thence would flow
Some fresh and fruitful showers upon my sunburned brain.
But words came halting forth, wanting Invention's stay;⁰
support
10 Invention, Nature's child, fled stepdame Study's blows;
And others' feet⁸ still seemed but strangers in my way.
Thus, great with child to speak, and helpless in my throes,⁹
Biting my truant pen, beating myself for spite:
"Fool," said my Muse¹ to me, "look in thy heart, and write."

14

Alas, have I not pain enough, my friend,
Upon whose breast a fiercer gripe⁰ doth tire⁰ *vulture / tear*
Than did on him who first stale⁰ down the fire, *stole*
While Love² on me doth all his quiver spend,
5 But with your rhubarb⁰ words you must contend *cynical*
To grieve me worse, in saying that Desire
Doth plunge my well-formed soul even in the mire
Of sinful thoughts, which do in ruin end?
If that be sin which doth the manners frame,³
10 Well stayed⁰ with truth in word and faith of deed,
supported
Ready of wit, and fearing naught but shame;
If that be sin which in fixed hearts doth breed
A loathing of all loose unchastity,
Then love is sin, and let me sinful be.

6. Starlover and Star (Latin). The first of the great
imagination.

Elizabethan sonnet cycles that relied heavily on the
8. With a pun on the units of poetic measure
conventions developed by the Italian poet Petrarch
(called *feet*).

(1304-1374), *Astrophil and Stella* has 108 sonnets

9. I.e., birth-throes.

and eleven songs. The sequence alludes to Sidney's

1. Source of poetic inspiration.

ambiguous relationship with Penelope Devereux,

2. Cupid, Roman god of erotic love. *Him ...fire:*

who married Lord Robert Rich in 1581. It was cir-

In Greek mythology, Prometheus, for having stolen

culated in manuscript form during Sidney's life-

fire for man's benefit, was chained to a rock and

time.

preyed upon daily by a vulture that tore at his vitals.

7. In art and literary composition, the devising of

3. Which builds character (*manners:* morals).

a subject or idea by the exercise of the intellect or

2 1 4 / S I R P H I L I P S I D N E Y

2 1 4

Your words my friend (right healthful caustics⁵) blame

My young mind marred, whom Love doth windlass⁰ so,
ensnare

That mine own writings like bad servants show

My wits, quick in vain thoughts, in virtue lame,

5 That Plato I read for nought, but i f ⁰ he tame *unless*

Such coltish gyres,⁶ that to my birth I owe

Nobler desires, lest else that friendly foe, *lest*
Great expectation,⁷ wear a train of shame.
For since mad March great promise made of me,
10 If now the May of my years much decline,
What can be hoped my harvest time will be?
Sure you say well, your wisdom's golden mine
Dig deep with learning's spade, now tell me this,
Hath this world ought so fair as Stella is? *anything*
25

The wisest scholar of the wight most wise *creature*
By Phoebus' doom,⁸ with sugared sentence says
That Virtue, if it once met with our eyes,
Strange flames of love it in our souls would raise;
5 But, for that man with pain this truth describes,⁹
While he each thing in sense's balance weighs,
And so nor will nor can behold those skies
Which inward sun to heroic mind displays,
Virtue of late, with virtuous care to stir
10 Love of herself, takes Stella's shape, that she
To mortal eyes might sweetly shine in her.²
It is most true, for since I her did see,
Virtue's great beauty in that face I prove,⁰ *experience*
And find th'effect, for I do burn in love.

31

With how sad steps, Oh Moon, thou climb'st the skies,
How silently, and with how wan a face!
What may it be, that even in heav'nly place
4. One of several sonnets addressed to a friend—

the eldest son in a rich and powerful aristocratic perhaps the English poet Fulke Greville (1554— family.

1628; see pp. 206—07)—who takes a skeptical view

8. Judgment. The “wight most wise” was Socrates, of the poet’s love.

so called by the oracle of Apollo (Phoebus) at Del-

5. Medicines used for burning away diseased tis-
phi. His “wisest scholar,” or pupil, was Plato, who
sue.

(in *Phaedrus* 250D) provides the basis for lines 3—

6. Youthful gyrations; cf. Plato, *Phaedrus* 254,
8.

where the charioteer Reason reins in the horses of

9. Discovers or perceives. *For that*: because.

Passion.

1. I.e., Virtue.

7. Hope of prestigious public employment and/or

2. I.e., Stella.

recognition. *Birth*: position in society; Sidney was

A S T R O P H I L A N D S T E L L A : S E V E N T H S O N
G / 2 1 5

That busy archer³ his sharp arrows tries?

5 Sure, if that long-with-love-acquainted eyes

Can judge of love, thou feel’st a lover’s case;

I read it in thy looks: thy languished grace,

To me that feel the like, thy state descries.⁰ *reveals*

Then even of fellowship, Oh Moon, tell me,

10 Is constant love deemed there but want of wit?
Are beauties there as proud as here they be?
Do they above love to be loved, and yet
Those lovers scorn whom that love doth possess?
Do they call virtue there ungratefulness?⁴

39

Come sleep, Oh sleep, the certain knot of peace,
The baiting place⁵ of wit, the balm of woe,
The poor man's wealth, the prisoner's release,
Th'indifferent⁰ judge between the high and low; *impartial*
5 With shield of proof⁶ shield me from out the prease⁰ *press*,
multitude

Of those fierce darts Despair at me doth throw;
Oh make in me⁷ those civil wars to cease;
I will good tribute pay, if thou do so.
Take thou of me smooth pillows, sweetest bed,
10 A chamber deaf to noise and blind to light,
A rosy garland and a weary head;
And if these things, as being thine by right,
Move not thy heavy grace, thou shalt in me,
Livelier⁰ than elsewhere, Stella's image see. *more lifelike*

47

What, have I thus betrayed my liberty?
Can those black beams such burning marks⁸ engrave
In my free side? or am I born a slave,
Whose neck becomes⁰ such yoke of tyranny? *befits*
5 Or want I sense to feel my misery?
Or sprite,⁰ disdain of such disdain to have? *spirit*

Who for long faith, though daily help I crave,
May get no alms but scorn of beggary.
Virtue, awake! Beauty but beauty is;
10 I may, I must, I can, I will, I do
Leave following that which it is gain to miss.
Let her go. Soft, but here she comes. Go to,
Unkind, I love you not! O me, that eye
Doth make my heart give to my tongue the lie!

3. I.e., Cupid.

6. Of proven strength.

4. I.e., do they give the name of virtue to ungrate-

7. The speaker is offering these things to Sleep as
fulness?

a tribute.

5. Resting place on a journey.

8. Brands; i.e., disdainful looks from his lover.

/ S I R P H I L I P S I D N E Y

214

Soul's joy, bend not those morning stars⁰ from me, *Stella's*
eyes

Where virtue is made strong by beauty's might,
Where love is chasteness, pain doth learn delight,
And humbleness grows one with majesty.

5 Whatever may ensue, O let me be

Co-partner of the riches of that sight;

Let not mine eyes be hell-driv'n^o from that light; *driven to hell*

O look, O shine, O let me die and see.

For though I oft my self of them bemoan,

10 That through my heart their beamy darts be gone,
Whose cureless wounds even now most freshly bleed,
Yet since my death wound is already got,
Dear⁹ killer, spare not thy sweet cruel shot;
A kind of grace it is to slay with speed.

49

I on my horse, and Love on me, doth try
Our horsemanships, while by strange work I prove
A horseman to my horse, a horse to Love,
And now man's wrongs in me, poor beast, descry.⁰ *discern*

5 The reins wherewith my rider doth me tie
Are humbled thoughts, which bit of reverence move,
Curbed¹ in with fear, but with gilt boss above
Of hope, which makes it seem fair to the eye.
The wand⁰ is will; thou, fancy, saddle art, whip
10 Girt fast by memory; and while I spur
My horse, he spurs with sharp desire my heart;
He sits me fast, however I do stir;
And now hath made me to his hand so right
That in the manage² myself takes delight.

52

A strife is grown between Virtue and Love,
While each pretends⁰ that Stella must be his: *claims*
Her eyes, her lips, her all, saith Love, do this,
Since they do wear his badge,³ most firmly prove.

5 But Virtue thus that title doth disprove,
That Stella (O dear name) that Stella is
That virtuous soul, sure heir of heav'nly bliss;

9. With a pun on *dear* and *deer*.
2. The schooling or handling of a horse.
1. The curb is a short chain or strap connecting
3. Clothing or device worn to identify someone's
the upper branches of the bit and ornamented, in
(here, Cupid's) servants.

this case, with a metal "boss" or decorative stud.

A S T R O P H I L A N D S T E L L A : S E V E N T H S O N
G / 2 1 7

Not this fair outside, which our hearts doth move.

And therefore, though her beauty and her grace

10 Be Love's indeed, in Stella's self he may

By no pretense claim any manner⁰ place. *kind of*

Well, Love, since this demur⁰ our suit doth **Stay**, *objection /*
detain Let Virtue have that Stella's self; **yet** thus,

That Virtue but that body grant to us.

63

0 Grammar rules, o now your virtues show;

So children still read you with awful⁰ eyes, *awed*

As my young Dove may in your precepts wise

Her grant to me, by her own virtue know.

5 For late with heart most high, with eyes most low,

1 crav'd the thing which ever she denies:

She lightning Love, displaying Venus' skies,⁴

Least once should not be heard, twice said, No, No.

Sing then my Muse, now lo Pean⁵ sing,

10 Heav'ns envy not at my high triumphing:

But Grammar's force with sweet success confirme,

For Grammar says (o this deare Stella weigh,)

For Grammar says (to Grammar who says nay)
That in one speech two Negatives affirm.⁶

71

Who will in fairest book of Nature know
How virtue may best lodged in beauty be,
Let him but learn of love to read in thee,
Stella, those fair lines which true goodness show.

5 There shall he find all vices' overthrow,
Not by rude force, but sweetest sovereignty
Of reason, from whose light those night birds fly,
That inward sun in thine eyes shineth so.

And, not content to be perfection's heir
io Thyself, dost strive all minds that way to move,
Who mark in thee what is in thee most fair.
So while thy beauty draws the heart to love,
As fast thy virtue bends that love to good.

"But ah," Desire still cries, "give me some food."

4. Venus is the Roman goddess of love and beauty.
pursued love. *Muse*: source of poetic inspiration.

Some editors modernize "lightning" as "lighten-

6. In several of the preceding sonnets, Stella has
ing," a present participle parallel to "displaying,"
engaged in scholastic disputation; the poet's rea-
but one can also read the word as a noun compar-
soning here is sophistic, since the lady's double
ing Stella to lightning that "displays" the night sky.

"no" is emphatic rather than a grammatical double

5. A hymn of thanksgiving for victory. Ovid uses

negative signifying “yes”—as it did in Latin, but not this phrase in the opening of the second book of in Elizabethan English.

the *Ars Amatoria* to celebrate success with a long-

218

/SIRPHILIPSIDNEY

214

Desire, though thou my old companion art,
And oft so clings to my pure Love that I
One from the other scarcely can descry,⁰ *distinguish*
While each doth blow the fire of my heart,
5 Now from thy fellowship I needs must part;
Venus is taught with Dian's⁷ wings to fly;
I must no more in thy sweet passions lie;
Virtue's gold now must head my Cupid's dart.
Service and honor, wonder with delight,
10 Fear to offend, will worthy to appear,⁸
Care shining in mine eyes, faith in my sprite:⁰ *spirit*
These things are let me by my only dear;
But thou, Desire, because thou wouldst have all,
Now banished art. But yet alas how shall?

Fourth Song

Only joy, now here you are,
Fit to hear and ease my care;
Let my whispering voice obtain,
Sweet reward for sharpest pain;
5 Take me to thee, and thee to me.
*No, no, no, no, my dear, let be.*⁹

Night hath closed all in her cloak,
Twinkling stars love-thoughts provoke:
Danger hence good care doth keep,
10 Jealousy itself doth sleep;
Take me to thee, and thee to me.

No, no, no, no, my dear, let be.

Better place no wit can find,
Cupid's¹ yoke to loose or bind:

15 These sweet flowers on fine bed too,
Us in their best language woo;
Take me to thee, and thee to me.

No, no, no, no, my dear, let be.

This small light the moon bestows,
20 Serves thy beams but to disclose,
So to raise my hap⁰ more high; *chances*
Fear not else, none can us spy:
Take me to thee, and thee to me.

No, no, no, no, my dear, let be.

7. Diana, Roman goddess of the moon and patron
(i.e., not shameful).”

of chastity. Venus, goddess of love and beauty;

9. Stella's "reply" to Astrophil occurs after each
mother of Cupid, god of erotic love.

stanza and becomes the refrain.

8. The phrase can mean alternately "the desire to

1. Roman god of erotic love.

appear worthy" or "desire that is worthy to appear

ASTROPHIL AND STELLA : SEVENTH SON
G / 2 1 9

25 That⁰ you heard was but a mouse, *what*

Dumb sleep holdeth all the house;

Yet asleep, methinks they say,

Young folks, take time while you may:²

Take me to thee, and thee to me.

30 No, *no, no, no, my dear, let be.*

Niggard⁰ Time threats, if we miss *miserly*

This large offer of our bliss,

Long stay⁰ ere he grant the same; *wait*

Sweet then, while each thing doth frame,⁰ *serve*

35 Take me to thee, and thee to me.

No, *no, no, no, my dear, let be.*

Your fair mother is abed,

Candles out, and curtains spread:

She thinks you do letters write.

40 Write, but first let me indite:⁰ *dictate*

Take me to thee and thee to me.

No, *no, no, no, my dear, let be.*

Sweet, alas, why strive you thus?

Concord better fitteth us:

45 Leave to Mars³ the force of hands,

Your power in your beauty stands;

Take me to thee, and thee to me.

No, *no, no, no, my dear, let be.*

Woe to me, and do you swear

50 Me to hate, but I forbear,

Cursed be my destinies all
That brought me so high to fall:
Soon with my death I will please thee.

No, *no, no, no, my dear, let be.*

Seventh Song

Whose senses in so evil consort,⁴ their stepdame Nature lays,
That ravishing delight in them most sweet tunes do not raise;
Or if they do delight therein, yet are so cloyed⁰ with wit,
sated, burdened As with sententious⁰ lips to set a title vain on
it: *full of maxims*

5 O let them hear these sacred tunes, and learn in wonder's
schools,

To be (in things past bounds of wit) fools, if they be not
fools.⁵

Who have so leaden eyes, as not to see sweet beauty's show,
Or seeing, have so wooden⁰ wits, as not that worth to know;
dull

Or knowing, have so muddy minds, as not to be in love;

2. An allusion to the traditional *carpe diem* (Latin,

5. I.e., the music will teach them (if they are not
“seize the day”) motif of seduction lyrics.

fools) that, in things that are beyond the limita-

3. Roman god of war.

tions of reason and intellect (“wit”), they are defi-

4. Company; accord, agreement.

cient in understanding (“fools”).

2 2 0 / S I R P H I L I P S I D N E Y

IO Or loving, have so frothy⁰ thoughts, as eas'ly thence to
shallow, trifling move:

Or let them see these heavenly beams, and in fair letters read

A lesson fit, both sight and skill, love and firm love to breed.
Hear then, but then with wonder hear; see but adoring see,
No mortal gifts, no earthly fruits, now here descended be;
15 See, do you see this face? a face? nay, image of the skies,
Of which the two life-giving lights⁶ are figured in her eyes:
Hear you this soul-invading voice, and count it but a voice?
The very essence of their tunes, when Angels do rejoice.

90

Stella, think not that I by verse seek fame,
Who seek, who hope, who love, who live but thee;
Thine eyes my pride, thy lips my history;
If thou praise not, all other praise is shame.
5 Nor so ambitious am I, as to frame
A nest for my young praise in laurel tree:⁷
In truth I swear, I wish not there should be
Graved in mine epitaph a Poet's name:
Nay if I would, could I just title make,
io That any laud^o to me thereof should grow, *praise*
Without^o my plumes from others' wings I take. *unless*
For nothing from my wit or will doth flow,
Since all my words thy beauty doth endite,⁸
And love doth hold my hand, and makes me write.

107

Stella, since thou so right a princess art
Of all the powers which life bestows on me,
That ere by them aught^o undertaken be *anything*
They first resort unto that sovereign part;
5 Sweet, for a while give respite to my heart,

Which pants as though it still should leap to thee,
And on my thoughts give thy lieutenancy
To⁹ this great cause, which needs both use⁰ and art,
experience

And as a queen, who from her presence sends
io Whom she employs, dismiss from thee my wit,
Till it have wrought what thy own will attends.¹
On servants' shame oft master's blame doth sit.
Oh let not fools in me thy works reprove,
And scorning say, "See what it is to love."

ca. 1582

1591

6. I.e., the sun and the moon.

9. I.e., delegate your authority to my thoughts so

7. The laurel symbolized poetic achievement.
that they may pursue.

8. A variation of both *indict* (to proclaim) and

1. Is concerned about.

indite (to inscribe or give literary form to).

221

G E O R G E P E E L E

1557-1596

His Golden Locks Time Hath to Silver Turned¹

His golden locks time hath to silver turned;

Oh, time too swift, oh, swiftness never ceasing!

His youth 'gainst time and age hath ever spurned.⁰ *kicked*

But spurned in vain; youth waneth by increasing.

5 Beauty, strength, youth, are flowers but fading seen;

Duty, faith, love, are roots, and ever green.
His helmet now shall make a hive for bees,
And lover's sonnets turned to holy psalms,
A man-at-arms must now serve on his knees,
10 And feed on prayers, which are age his² alms;
But though from court to cottage he depart,
His saint³ is sure of his unspotted heart.
And when he saddest sits in homely cell,
He'll teach his swains⁰ this carol for a song: *followers*
15 Blest be the hearts that wish my sovereign well,
Cursed be the souls that think her any wrong!
Goddess, allow this aged man his right,
To be your beadsman⁴ now, that was your knight.

1590

Hot Sun, Cool Fire

Hot sun, cool fire, tempered with sweet air,
Black shade, fair nurse, shadow my white hair.
Shine, sun; burn, fire; breathe, air, and ease me;
Black shade, fair nurse, shroud me and please me.
5 Shadow, my sweet nurse, keep me from burning;
Make not my glad cause cause of mourning.
Let not my beauty's fire
Inflame unstaid desire,
Nor pierce any bright eye
10 That wandereth lightly.

1599

1. This poem refers to Sir Henry Lee, for years
2. *Age his*: age's.

Queen Elizabeth I's champion in courtly jousts or
3. Seems to refer to Queen Elizabeth, as does
contests of arms. At sixty, too old to take part in
"Goddess" in line 17.

the queen's birthday tournament of 1590, he
4. One who offers prayers for the soul of another.
retired in favor of a younger man.

2 2 2

T H O M A S L O D G E

1558-1625

Rosalind's Madrigal

Love in my bosom like a bee

Doth suck his sweet;

Now with his wings he plays with me,

Now with his feet.

5 Within mine eyes he makes his nest,

His bed amidst my tender breast;

My kisses are his daily feast,

And yet he robs me of my rest.

Ah, wanton, will ye?

io And if I sleep, then percheth he

With pretty flight,

And makes his pillow of my knee

The livelong night.

Strike I my lute, he tunes the string;

15 He music plays if so I sing;

He lends me every lovely thing;

Yet cruel he my heart doth sting.

Whist,0 wanton, still ye! *be silent*
Else I with roses every day
20 Will whip you hence,
And bind you, when you long to play,
For your offense.
I'll shut mine eyes to keep you in,
I'll make you fast it for your sin,
25 I'll count your power not worth a pin.
Alas! what hereby shall I win
If he gainsay me?
What if I beat the wanton boy
With many a rod?
30 He will repay me with annoy,
Because a god.
Then sit thou safely on my knee,
And let thy bower0 my bosom be;
shelter
Lurk in mine eyes, I like of thee.
35 O Cupid, so thou pity me,2
Spare not, but play thee!

1 5 9 0

1. *Madrigal*: a short lyrical poem, usually about 2. I.e., as long as you show me some pity. *Cupid*: love, suitable for a musical setting; a song. Roman god of erotic love.

2 2 3

ROBERT SOUTHWELL

ca. 1561-1595

The Burning Babe

As I in hoary winter's night stood shivering in the snow,

Surprised I was with sudden heat which made my heart to glow;

And lifting up a fearful eye to view what fire was near,

A pretty babe all burning bright did in the air appear;

5 Who, scorched with excessive heat, such floods of tears did shed

As though his floods should quench his flames which with his tears

were fed.

“Alas,” quoth he, “but newly born in fiery heats I fry,

Yet none approach to warm their hearts or feel my fire but I!

My faultless breast the furnace is, the fuel wounding thorns,

io Love is the fire, and sighs the smoke, the ashes shame and scorns; The fuel justice layeth on, and mercy blows the coals,

The metal in this furnace wrought are men’s defiled souls,

For which, as now on fire I am to work them to their good,

So will I melt into a bath to wash them in my blood.”

is With this he vanished out of sight and swiftly shrunk away,

And straight^o I called unto mind that it was Christmas day.

straightaway 1602

New Heaven, New War

Come to your heaven, you heavenly choirs,

Earth hath the heaven of your desires.

Remove your dwelling to your God;

A stall^o is now his best abode.

stable

5 Sith^o men their homage do deny,

since

Come, angels, all their fault supply.

His chilling cold doth heat require;

Come, seraphins,¹ in lieu of fire.

This little ark no cover hath;

io Let cherubs' wings his body swathe.⁰

enwrap

Come, Raphael,² this babe must eat;

Provide our little Toby meat.

1. Seraphs and cherubs (line 10) were generally and protector of Tobias in the book of Tobit (one understood to be orders among the angels, derived of the apocryphal books of the Hebrew Scriptures), in Christian theology from Hebrew Scripture. Gabriel (line 13) and Michael (line 15) are also 2. One of the seven archangels, the companion archangels.

2 2 4 / R O B E R T S O U T H W E L L

Let Gabriel be now his groom,

That first took up his earthly room.

15 Let Michael stand in his defense,

W h o m love hath linked to feeble sense.

Let graces rock when he doth cry,

And angels sing his lullaby.

The same you saw in heavenly seat

20 Is he that now sucks Mary's teat;

Agnize⁰ your king a mortal wight,⁰ *acknowledge / person*

His borrowed weed⁰ lets⁰ not your sight. *clothing / hinders*

Come, kiss the manger where he lies,

That is your bliss above the skies.

25

This little babe, so few days old,

Is come to rifle Satan's fold;

All hell doth at his presence quake,

Though he himself for cold do shake,

For in this weak unarmed **Wise** *manner*

30

The gates of hell he will surprise.
With tears he fights and wins the field;
His naked breast stands for a shield;
His battering shot are babish cries,
His arrows looks of weeping eyes,
35 His martial ensigns cold and need,
And feeble flesh his warrior's steed.
His camp is pitched in a stall,
His bulwark but a broken wall,
The crib his trench, hay stalks his stakes,
40 Of shepherds he his muster³ makes;
And thus, as sure his foe to wound,
The angels' trumps⁰ alarum sound.

trumpets

My soul, with Christ join thou in fight;
Stick to the tents that he hath pight;⁰

pitched

45 Within his crib is surest ward,⁰

protection

This little babe will be thy guard.
If thou wilt foil thy foes with joy,
Then flit not from this heavenly boy.

1602

3. An assembly of troops for inspection.

225

MARY SIDNEY

1561-1621

Psalm 58: *Si Vere Utique* 1

And call ye this to utter what is just,

You that of justice hold the sov' reign throne?

And call ye this to yield, O sons of dust,

To wronged brethren ev'ry man his own?

5 O no: it is your long malicious will

Now to the world to make by practice known,

With whose oppression you the balance fill,

Just to your selves, indiff'rent⁰ else to none.² *impartial*

But what could they, who ev'n in birth declined,³

io From truth and right to lies and injuries?

To show the venom of their cankred⁰ mind *corrupt, malignant*

The adder's image scarcely can suffice;

Nay scarce the aspic⁰ may with them contend, *asp*

On whom the charmer all in vain applies

15 His skillfull'st spells: ay^o missing of his end, *always*

While she self-deaf, and unaffected lies.⁴

Lord crack their teeth, Lord crush these lion's jaws,

So let them sink as water in the sand:

When deadly bow their aiming fury draws,

20 Shiver⁰ the shaft ere past the shooter's hand. *shatter*

So make them melt as the dishoused snail

Or as the embryo, whose vital band

Breaks ere it holds,⁵ and formless eyes do fail

To see the sun, though brought to lightful land.

25 O let their brood, a brood of springing thorns,

Be by untimely rooting overthrown⁶

Ere bushes waxt,^o they push with pricking horns, *grew*
As fruits yet green are oft by tempest blown.⁷

The good with gladness this revenge shall see,

1. If, indeed, it is true (Latin). Frequently the
she stops her ears.

Latin titles for Psalms were taken from the Psalm's

5. A reference to premature birth.

first line in the Vulgate version of the Bible. How-

6. The Hebrew original here is problematic and

ever, in this case the first line in the Vulgate is

hinges on the translation of an ambiguous word,

Numquid vere ("Is it true?"). Mary Sidney probably

sir, which can mean "pot" or "thorns." The verse derived her
title from one of the French or English

has thus been rendered in a variety of ways, includ-

Psalms she imitated. Cf. the versions of this Psalm

ing: "Sooner than your poets can feel the heat of

and the next one from *The Massachusetts Bay*

thorns, whether green or ablaze, may he sweep

Psalm Book (pp. 391-93), by Isaac Watts

them away" (Revised Standard Version) and,

(pp. 592-94), and by Christopher Smart (pp. 684 -

"Before your thorns have ripened on the thorn-

86).

bush, a wrath will tear them out while they are still

2. I.e., now to make known to the world, through

green" (Luther). Luther interpreted the "thorns" as

continual repetition, with whose oppression you

the Jews.

fill the balance, being just to yourselves, but impar-

7. I.e., before the bushes have fully grown, they
tial to no one else.

[already] begin to grow thorns, and, as still unripe

3. I.e., but what else could they do, those who
fruits, are often blown by the tempest. A further
from birth turned aside?

elaboration of the images of the thorns in the lines

4. The snake is “unaffected” by the snake
above.

charmer’s music because she is “self-deaf,” i.e.,

226 / MARY SIDNEY

30 And bathe his feet in blood of wicked one

While all shall say: the just rewarded be,

There is a God that carves to each his own.⁸

ca. 1588-99 1823

Psalm 114: *In Exitu Israel*⁹

At what time Jacob’s race did leave of Egypt take,

And Egypt’s barbarous folk forsake:

Then, then our God, our king, elected Jacob’s race

His temple there and throne to place.

5 The sea beheld and fled: Jordan¹ with swift return

To twinned spring his² streams did turn.

The mountains bounded so, as, fed in fruitful ground,

The fleeced rams do frisking bound.

The hillocks capreol¹ so, as wanton by their dams

10 We capreol see^o the lusty lambs. *to see*

O sea, why didst thou fly? Jordan, with swift return
To twinned spring, what made thee turn?
Mountains, why bounded ye, as, fed in fruitful
The fleeced rams do frisking bound?
is Hillocks why capreold ye, as wanton by their dams
We capreol see the lusty lambs?
Nay you, and Earth with you, quake ever at the sight
Of God Jehovah, Jacob's might,
Who in the hardest rocks makes standing waters grow
20 And purling⁰ springs from flints to flow. *ri-ppling*
ca. 1588-99 1823

To the Thrice-Sacred Queen Elizabeth⁴

i

Even now that care,^o which on thy crown attends *burden*
And with thy happy⁰ greatness daily grows, *fortunate*
Tells me, thrice-sacred Queen, my muse⁵ offends,
And of respect to thee the line out goes.⁶

8. I.e., the good person is glad to see the wicked
unique manuscript copy, was probably prepared
overthrown in this manner, and bathes his feet in
for a presentation volume to be given to the queen
the blood of the wicked one, who has been
(1553 - 1603 ; see pp. 142—43) when she visited the
destroyed before he has come to fruition. Seeing
Sidney home in 1599. The expected visit did not
this, everyone will recognize that the just are
occur. Sir Philip Sidney had been exiled from court
rewarded and that God gives each person what he

after incurring Elizabeth's disfavor by counseling
deserves.

against a marriage with the duke of Anjou; fur-

9. A famous Psalm about the Israelites' departure
thermore, the Sidneys, devoted to the cause of
from Egypt.

Protestantism, felt that the queen should adopt a

1. River in Palestine that empties into the Dead
more aggressive policy in support of Protestant fac-
Sea.

tions on the continent (especially the Nether-

2. I.e., the river Jordan's.

lands). *Thrice*: to a high degree.

3. Capered, i.e., leaped or skipped.

5. Source of poetic inspiration.

4. This is a dedicatory poem originally prefixed to

6. Ambiguous syntax; possibly: from respect to you
a translation of the Psalms of David, begun by
(and the demands that your royal duties place on
Mary Sidney's brother Sir Philip Sidney (1554—
your time), my poetry ("the line") should be thrown
1586; see pp. 208—20) and completed by Mary
out (as unworthy of your attention).

after Philip's death. The poem, preserved in a

T O T H E T H R I C E - S A C R E D Q U E E N E L I Z A B
E T H / 2 2 7

5 One instant will or willing can she lose⁷

I say not reading, but receiving rhymes,

On whom in chief dependeth to dispose⁰ *settle*

What Europe acts in these most active times?

2

Yet dare I so, as humbleness may dare,

io Cherish some hope they⁰ shall acceptance find; *the poems*

Not weighing less thy state, lighter thy care,

But knowing more thy grace, abler thy mind.⁸

What heavenly powers thee highest throne assigned,

Assigned thee goodness suiting that degree,⁰ *position or rank*

is And by thy strength thy burthen so defined,

To others toil, is exercise to thee.⁹

3

Cares, though still⁰ great, cannot be greatest still, *always*

Business must ebb, though leisure never flow;

Then these the posts¹ of duty and goodwill

²⁰ Shall press⁰ to offer what their senders owe, *hurry*

Which once in two, now in one subject go,²

The poorer left, the richer reft^o away, *stolen*

Who better might (O might, ah word of woe)

Have given for me what I for him defray.⁰ *pay*

4

²⁵ How can I name whom sighing signs extend,³

And not unstop my tears' eternal spring?

But he did warp, I weaved this web to end;⁴

The stuff⁵ not ours, our work no curious⁰ thing, *novel or ingenious*

Wherein yet well we thought the Psalmist King⁶

³⁰ Now English denized, though Hebrew born,⁷

Would to thy music undispleas'd sing,
Oft having worse, without repining, worn;⁸

5

And I the cloth⁰ in both our names present, *poems*
A livery robe⁹ to be bestowed by thee;

7. I.e., will she, or can she willingly, lose one
threads on a loom run lengthwise and are set first;
instant?

the woof threads are then woven crosswise through

8. I.e., not because I judge your status or respon-
them.

sibilities to be less than they are, but because I

5. Raw material (i.e., the Hebrew Scriptures).

know how great is your grace and how able your

6. King David, the second king of Israel, believed
mind.

to have written many of the Psalms of the Bible.

9. I.e., your "burthen" is defined according to your

7. I.e., admitted to English citizenship, though
strength, such that what would be burdensome
born a Hebrew.

labor to others is mere "exercise," i.e., customary

8. I.e., often having worn worse (than "thy music,"
practice, to you.

i.e., the English language) without complaining

1. Postmen or letter carriers, here referring to the
("repining"); "worse" probably refers to translations
poems that convey the poet's "duty" and "goodwill"

of the Psalms in other languages; these two lines
to the queen.

might also refer to David's service, as a youth, to

2. Sir Philip Sidney wrote the first forty-three
the tyrant Saul, whom David often soothed with
translations (of 150 Psalms); the rest are Mary's.
his singing.

Philip died in 1586 fighting for the Protestant

9. A suit of clothes bestowed by a noble upon his
cause in the Netherlands.

male retainers by which they may be recognized as

3. I.e., how can I name him (Philip Sidney) whose
his servants. Sidney seems to be saying that she
memory is extended by "sighing signs" (i.e., the
presents the poems to Elizabeth, who will then give
signs of grief)?

them a "livery robe" as a sign that they are her

4. To completion. In clothmaking, the warp
servants.

2 2 8 / M A R Y S I D N E Y

35 Small parcel of that undischarged⁰ rent, *unpaid*

From which nor⁰ pains nor payments can us free. *neither*

And yet enough to cause our neighbors see

We will⁰ our best, though scant⁰ in our will; *attempt /
limited*

And those nigh⁰ fields where sown thy favors be *nearby*

40 Unwealthy do, not else unworthy, till.¹

For in our work what bring we but thine own?

What English is, by many names is thine,

There humble laurels² in thy shadows grown

To garland others would themselves repine.³

45 Thy breast the cabinet,⁰ thy seat⁴ the shrine, *small room*

Where muses hang their vowed⁰ memories; *consecrated*

Where wit, where art, where all that is divine

Conceived best, and best defended lies.

7

Which if men did not (as they do) confess,⁵

50 And wronging worlds would otherwise consent,

Yet here who minds so meet a patroness⁶

For authors' state⁰ or writings' argument?⁰ *financial condition / subject* A King should only to a Queen be sent;

God's loved choice unto his chosen love;

55 Devotion to devotion's president;⁷

What all applaud, to her whom none reprove.

8

And who sees ought,⁰ but sees how justly square⁰ *anything / correspond*

His haughty⁰ ditties⁰ to thy glorious days? *lofty / songs*

How well beseeming⁰ thee his triumphs⁸ are? *resembling or matching*

60 His hope, his zeal, his prayer, plaint,⁰ and praise, *lamentation*

Needless thy person to their height to raise;

Less need to bend them down to thy degree;

These holy garments⁹ each good soul assays,⁰ *tries on*

Some sorting all, all sort to none but thee.¹

65 For even thy rule is painted in his reign;²

Both clear in right; both nigh by wrong oppressed;³

1. I.e., we till those nearby fields where your favors
lines 53 through 56 refers to King David, the sec-
are sown without a show of wealth but not other-
ond to Queen Elizabeth.

wise unworthily.

8. Both victories and triumphal songs.

2. Leaves used to crown the heads of great poets;

9. I.e., the Psalms.

hence, the symbol of poetic achievement.

1. I.e., some fitting everyone, but all fitting no one

3. I.e., the laurels grown in your shadow would
but you.

complain at being worn by others besides you.

2. I.e., is represented in David's reign.

4. Place of abode as well as Elizabeth's throne.

3. Defeated (rather than its modern meaning);

5. I.e., if people did not (as they do) agree that

nigh: almost. David's succession to the throne of
Elizabeth is the source of all English works.

Israel was opposed by Saul, the first king of Israel,

6. I.e., who in England can remember so suitable
who tried to kill David. Elizabeth's succession to
("meet") a supporter (as Elizabeth)?

the crown of England was disputed (especially by

7. One who presides over, perhaps referring to the

Catholics who championed her cousin, Mary,
fact that, as queen, Elizabeth was head of the
queen of Scots) because of the questionable legal-
Church of England. The first element in each of
ity of Henry VIII's second marriage to Anne Bol-

**T O T H E T H R I C E - S A C R E D Q U E E N E L I Z A B
E T H / 2 2 9**

And each at length (man crossing God in vain)
Possessed of place, and each in peace possessed.
Proud Philistines did interrupt his rest,
70 The foes of heaven no less have been thy foes;⁴
He with great conquest, thou with greater blessed;
Thou sure to win, and he secure to lose.⁵

10

Thus hand in hand with him thy glories walk;
But who can trace them⁶ where alone they go?
75 Of thee two hemispheres on honor talk,⁷
And lands and seas thy trophies jointly show.
The very winds did on thy party blow,
And rocks in arms thy foemen e^{ft}⁸ defy.
But soft, my muse, thy pitch⁹ is earthly low;
so Forbear⁰ this heaven where only eagles fly. *avoid*

11

Kings on a Queen enforced their states to lay;¹
Mainlands for empire waiting on an isle;²
Men drawn by worth a woman to obey;
One moving all, herself unmoved³ the while;
85 Truth's restitution, vanity exile,⁴

Wealth sprung of want, war held without annoy,⁰ *vexation*

Let subject be of some inspired style,

Till then the object of her subjects' joy.

12

Thy utmost can but offer to her sight

90 Her handmaid's task, which most her will endears,⁵

And pray unto thy pains life from that light

Which lively lightsome, court and kingdom cheers,⁶

What⁰ wish she may (far past her living peers *who*

And rival still to Judah's faithful king)

eyn, Elizabeth's mother. Despite opposition, both

prey soars before swooping down on its prey, but

David and Elizabeth came to possess their respec-

also height in a figurative sense: degree, rank,

tive thrones, although "each in peace possessed"

status.

(line 68) is a questionable claim. David continued

1. I.e., kings compelled to humble their greatness,

to put down rebellions, including one by his own

splendor, power (all meanings of "state") to Eliza-

son, until late in his life. In 1587, Elizabeth had

beth.

her cousin, Mary, beheaded, ending that particular

2. Continental countries, because of the greatness

claim to her throne.

of Elizabeth's empire, serving England.

4. Elizabeth and David both reigned in times of

3. Perhaps a reference to Aristotle's idea of God

war; their enemies, the Spanish (who were Catholic as an “Unmoved Mover” (in *Nicomachean Ethics* 10 and *Metaphysics* 12).

perceived as enemies of the true religion.

4. Perhaps a reference to Elizabeth’s restoration

5. Enigmatic phrasing; probably: secure (sure) of the Protestant faith (“truth”) in England after against losing (so as not to contradict line 71).

the reign of her half-sister, the Catholic Mary

6. I.e., who can follow or put down in writing thy Tudor. The banishment of “vanity” would then glories.

refer to the banishment of the ornate rituals of the

7. I.e., about you, the whole world talks on the Catholic religion.

topic of honor.

5. I.e., the most you can do is offer her the work

8. Afterwards. The British defeated the Spanish of a handmaid, which most endears itself to her Armada in 1588, aided by favorable winds; the will. “Thy” seems to refer to Sidney’s muse.

remnant of the defeated Spanish fleet lost more

6. I.e., and pray to get life (a favorable response?)

ships when storms drove them onto the western from that light, which, lively lightsome (luminous coast of Ireland.

or bright), cheers the kingdom and court.

9. The height to which a falcon or other bird of

230 / S A M U E L D A N I E L

95 In more than he and more triumphant years,

Sing what God doth, and do what men may sing.⁷

15991962

S A M U E L D A N I E L

1563-1619

*FROM DELIA*¹

1

Unto the boundless Ocean of thy beauty

Runs this poor river, charged with streams of zeal:

Returning thee the tribute of my duty,

Which here my love, my youth, my plaints reveal.

5 Here I unclasp the book of my charged soul,

Where I have cast th'accounts of all my care:

Here have I summed my sighs, here I enroll⁰ *register*

How they were spent for thee; look what they are.

Look on the dear expenses of my youth,

io And see how just I reckon with thine eyes:

Examine well thy beauty with my truth,

And cross my cares ere greater sum arise.

Read it sweet maid, though it be done but slightly;

Who can show all his love, doth love but lightly.

2

Go wailing verse, the infants of my love,

*Minerva*²-\ like, brought forth without a Mother:

Present the image of the cares I prove,

Witness your Father's grief exceeds all other.

5 Sigh out a story of her cruel deeds,
With interrupted accents of despair:
A monument that whosoever reads,
May justly praise, and blame my loveless Fair.
Say her disdain hath dried up my blood,
io And starved you, in succours⁰ still denying: *aid*.

7. I.e., who (members of her court and kingdom)
matically on the lady's status as the poet's "Ideal."
wish that she (the queen) may sing what God does,
A dedicatory sonnet addressed to Mary Sidney
and do (i.e., great things) that men may praise, (in
(1 5 6 1 - 1 6 2 1 ; see pp. 2 2 5 - 3 0) appears in early edi-
a way that will be) far better than what other (con-
ditions of the sequence. The numbering of the
temporary) monarchs do, and equal, still, to (what
sonnets varies by edition; we have followed the
was done by) Judah's king, David.
numbering and the text of the first edition.

1. A sequence of fifty sonnets. The title, which
2. In Roman mythology, the goddess of war, wis-
recalls *Delie*, a collection by the French poet Mau-
dom, arts, and justice; she sprang fully formed
rice Sceve (ca. 1500—ca. 1564), plays anagram-
from the head of her father, Jove.

DELIA : 3 7 / 2 3 1

Press to her eyes, importune me some good;
Waken her sleeping pity with your crying.
Knock at that hard heart, beg till you have moved her;

And tell th'unkind, how dearly I have loved her.

6

Fair is my love, and cruel as she's fair:

Her brow shades frowns, although her eyes are sunny,

Her smiles are lightning, though her pride despair,

And her disdains are gall,^o her favors honey. *bitterness*

5 A modest maid, decked with a blush of honor,

Whose feet do tread green paths of youth and love;

The wonder of all eyes that look upon her,

Sacred on earth, designed a Saint above.

Chastity and Beauty, which were deadly foes,

io Live reconciled friends within her brow;

And had she pity to conjoin with those,

Then who had heard the plaints I utter now?

Oh had she not been fair and thus unkind,

My Muse³ had slept, and none had known my mind.

36

But love whilst that thou mayst be loved again,

Now whilst thy May hath filled thy lap with flowers,

Now whilst thy beauty bears without a stain,

Now use the summer smiles, ere winter lowers.

5 And whilst thou spread'st unto the rising sun

The fairest flower that ever saw the light,

Now joy thy time before thy sweet be done,

And, Delia, think thy morning must have night,

And that thy brightness sets at length to west,

io When thou wilt close up that which now thou shew'st;

And think the same becomes thy fading best

Which then shall most inveil⁰ and shadow most. *cover*

Men do not weigh the stalk for what it was,
When once they find her flower, her glory, pass.

37

When men shall find thy flower, thy glory pass,
And thou, with careful brow sitting alone,
Received hast this message from thy glass,⁰ *looking glass*

3. Source of poetic inspiration.

2 3 2 / S A M U E L D A N I E L

That tells thee truth, and says that all is gone,
5 Fresh shalt thou see in me the wounds thou madest,
Though spent thy flame, in me the heat remaining,
I that have loved thee thus before thou fadest,
My faith shall wax, when thou art in thy waning.
The world shall find this miracle in me,
10 That fire can burn when all the matter's spent;
Then what my faith hath been thyself shall see,
And that thou wast unkind thou mayst repent.
Thou mayst repent that thou hast scorned my tears,
When Winter snows upon thy golden hairs.

49

Care-charmer Sleep, son of the sable⁰ Night, *black*
Brother to Death, in silent darkness born.
Relieve my languish and restore the light;
With dark forgetting of my cares, return.
5 And let the day be time enough to mourn
The shipwreck of my ill-adventured youth;
Let waking eyes suffice to wail their scorn

Without the torment of the night's untruth.
Cease, dreams, th' imagery of our day desires,
io To model forth⁴ the passions of the morrow;
Never let rising sun approve⁰ you liars, *prove*
To add more grief to aggravate my sorrow.
Still let me sleep, embracing clouds in vain,
And never wake to feel the day's disdain.

50

Let others sing of knights and paladins⁰ *chivalric heroes*
In aged accents, and untimely⁰ words; *outdated*
Paint shadows in imaginary lines
Which well the reach of their high wits records;
5 But I must sing of thee, and those fair eyes
Authentic⁰ shall my verse in time to come, *authenticate*
When yet th' unborn shall say, "Lo where she lies,
Whose beauty made him speak that else was dumb."
These are the arks, the trophies I erect,
io That fortify thy name against old age;
And these thy sacred virtues must protect
Against the dark and time's consuming rage.
Though th' error of my youth they shall discover,
Suffice, they show I lived and was thy lover.
4. To portray.

U L Y S S E S A N D T H E S I R E N / 2 3 3

5 3

Unhappy pen and ill accepted papers,
That intimate in vain my chaste desires,
My chaste desires, the ever burning tapers,

Enkindled by her eyes' celestial fires.
5 Celestial fires and unrespecting powers,
That deign not view the glory of your might,5
In humble lines the work of careful hours,
The sacrifice I offer to her sight.
But since she scorns her own, this rests⁰ for me, *remains*
io I'll moan my self, and hide the wrong I have:
And so content me that her frowns should be
To my infant style the cradle, and the grave.
What though my self no honor get thereby,6
Each bird sings t'herself, and so will I.
1 5 9 2

Ulysses and the Siren⁷

SIREN. Come, worthy Greek, Ulysses, come,
Possess these shores with me;
The winds and seas are troublesome,
And here we may be free.

5 Here may we sit and view their toil
That travail in the deep,
And joy the day in mirth the while,
And spend the night in sleep.

ULYSSES. Fair nymph, if fame or honor were
io To be attained with ease,
Then would I come and rest me there,
And leave such toils as these.
But here it dwells, and here must I
With danger seek it forth;
is To spend the time luxuriously

Becomes not men of worth.

SIREN. Ulysses, Oh be not deceived

With that unreal name;

This honor is a thing conceived,

20 And rests on others' fame.

5. Now addressing the lady's eyes as "celestial

but only partly human creatures who sang so

fires" and as "powers" that refuse to "respect" his sweetly that passing sailors would forget their work

poem, the speaker defines his poem as that which

and homes and be lured to their destruction. When

glorifies the power of the lady's eyes.

Ulysses (Odysseus), the hero of Homer's *Odyssey*,

6. I.e., although I'll get no respect for my attempt

passed by, he had his sailors' ears filled with bees-

to be satisfied by her frowns alone.

wax and had himself tied to the ship's mast so that

7. In Greek mythology, the Sirens were beautiful

he could listen without succumbing to their song.

234 / SAMUEL DANIEL

Begotten only to molest

Our peace, and to beguile

The best thing of our life, our rest,

And give us up to toil.

25 ULYSSES. Delicious nymph, suppose there were

Nor honor nor report,

Yet manliness would scorn to wear

The time in idle sport.

For toil doth give a better touch,
30 To make us feel our joy;
And ease finds tediousness, as much
As labor yields annoy.

SIREN. Then pleasure likewise seems the shore
Whereto tends all your toil,
35 Which you forgo to make it more,
And perish oft the while.

Who may disport them diversly,
Find never tedious day,
And ease may have variety
40 As well as action may.

ULYSSES. But natures of the noblest frame
These toils and dangers please,
And they take comfort in the same
As much as you in ease,
45 And with the thoughts of actions past
Are recreated still;
When pleasure leaves a touch at last
To show that it was ill.

SIREN. That doth opinion only cause
50 That's out of custom bred,
Which makes us many other laws
Than ever nature did.
No widows wail for our delights,
Our sports are without blood;
55 The world, we see, by warlike wights0 *persons*
Receives more hurt than good.

ULYSSES. But yet the state of things require

These motions of unrest,

And these great spirits of high desire

60 Seem born to turn them best,

To purge the mischiefs that increase

And all good order mar;

For oft we see a wicked peace

To be well changed for war.

65 **SIREN.** Well, well, Ulysses, then I see

I shall not have thee here,

**A R O U N D E L A Y B E T W E E N T w o S H E P H E R
D S / 2 3 5**

And therefore I will come to thee,

And take my fortunes there.

I must be won that cannot win,

70 Yet lost were I not won;

For beauty hath created been

T' undo, or be undone.

1605

Are They Shadows

Are they shadows that we see?

And can shadows pleasure give?

Pleasures only shadows be

Cast by bodies we conceive

5 And are made the things we deem

In those figures which they seem.

But these pleasures vanish fast

Which by shadows are expressed;

Pleasures are not, if they last;
io In their passing is their best.
Glory is most bright and gay
In a flash, and so away.
Feed apace⁰ then, greedy eyes, *quickly*
On the wonder you behold;
15 Take it sudden as it flies,
Though you take it not to hold.
When your eyes have done their part,
Thought must length⁰ it in the heart. *lengthen*
1610

M I C H A E L DRAYTON

1563-1631

A Roundelay between Two Shepherds¹

I Shep. Tell me, thou gentle shepherd swain,
Who's yonder in the vale is set?

1. This roundelay, or simple song, was included in poet Virgil and others, are populated by shepherds the anthology *England's Helicon* (1600); it also and nymphs, and usually portray a simple, happy appeared (in a slightly different form) in the Ninth life of singing and dancing, rather than a life of Eclogue of Drayton's "Pastorals," published in his farm labor. The Ninth Eclogue describes a "Shep- collected *Poems* (1619). Pastoral poems, or herd's Board," or feast, and contains several songs eclogues, a classical form practiced by the Roman by shepherds, or "swains," in praise of their lovers.

236 / MICHAEL DRAYTON

2 *Shep.* Oh, it is she, whose sweets do stain
The lily, rose, the violet!

1 *Shep.* Why doth the sun against his kind, *0 nature*
Fix^o his bright chariot in the skies? *2 make motionless*

2 *Shep.* Because the sun is stricken blind
With looking on her heavenly eyes.

1 *Shep.* Why do thy flocks forbear their food,
Which sometime *0* were thy chief delight? *formerly*

2 *Shep.* Because they need no other good
That live in presence of her sight.

1 *Shep.* Why look these flowers so pale and ill,
That once attired this goodly heath?

2 *Shep.* She hath robb'd Nature of her skill,
And sweetens all things with her breath.

1 *Shep.* Why slide these brooks so slow away,
Whose bubbling murmur pleased thine ear?

2 *Shep.* Oh, marvel not although they stay, *0 stand still*
When they her heavenly voice do hear!

1 *Shep.* From whence come all these shepherd swains,
And lovely nymphs attired in green?

2 *Shep.* From gathering garlands on the plains,
To crown our fair the shepherds' queen.

Both. The sun that lights this world below,
Flocks, flowers, and brooks will witness bear:
These nymphs and shepherds all do know,
That it is she is only fair.

1600

*FROM IDEA*³

To the Reader of these Sonnets
Into these loves who but for passion looks,
At this first sight here let him lay them by
And seek elsewhere, in turning other books,
Which better may his labor satisfy.

5 No far-fetched sigh shall ever wound my breast,
Love from mine eye a tear shall never wring,
Nor in *Ah me*'s my whining sonnets dressed,
A libertine,⁴ fantastically⁰ I sing.

capriciously

2. In Greek mythology, the sun was a chariot
resents his lifelong devotion (in the manner of a
driven daily across the sky by the god Apollo.
courtly lover) to Anne Goodyere, Lady Rainsford.
3. Drayton's fifty-nine sonnets addressed to "Idea"
His sequence first appeared as *Idea's Mirror* in
are concerned with the embodiment of the Pla-
1594, and after revisions as *Idea* in 1619.
tonic ideas of virtue and beauty: the sequence rep-
4. One not bound by conventional morality.

I D E A : 1 4 / 2 3 7

My verse is the true image of my mind,
10 Ever in motion, still⁰ desiring change; *ever*
And as thus to variety inclined,
So in all humors⁰ sportively I range: *moods*
My muse⁵ is rightly of the English strain,
That cannot long one fashion entertain.

6

How many paltry, foolish, painted things,
That now in coaches trouble every street,
Shall be forgotten, whom no poet sings,
Ere they be well wrapped in their winding-sheet?⁰ *shroud*
5 Where⁰ I to thee eternity shall give, *whereas*
When nothing else remaineth of these days,
And queens hereafter shall be glad to live
Upon the alms of thy superfluous praise.
Virgins and matrons reading these my rhymes
io Shall be so much delighted with thy story
That they shall grieve they lived not in these times,
To have seen thee, their sex's only glory.
So shalt thou fly above the vulgar throng,
Still to survive in my immortal song.

14

If he from heaven that filched that living fire⁶
Condemned by Jove to endless torment be,
I greatly marvel how you still go free,
That far beyond Prometheus did aspire,
s The fire he stole, although of heavenly kind,

Which from above he craftily did take,
Of liveless clods,⁰ us living men to make, *lumps of earth or
clay*

He did bestow in temper of the mind.

But you broke into heaven's immortal store,

io Where virtue, honor, wit, and beauty lay;

Which taking thence you have escaped away,

Yet stand as free as ere^o you did before; *ever*

Yet old Prometheus punished for his rape.⁷

Thus poor thieves suffer when the greater 'scape.⁰ *escape*

5. Source of poetic inspiration.

vitals. In some versions of the myth, Prometheus

6. Prometheus, a Greek mythological hero who
created humankind out of clay.

stole fire from heaven and gave it to humans. He

7. "Rape" referred not only to sexual assault but
was chained to a rock by Jove (Zeus), the chief god,
also to other acts of forceful appropriation such as
and preyed upon daily by a vulture that tore at his
Prometheus's theft of heavenly fire.

2 3 8 / C H R I S T O P H E R M A R L O W E

61

Since there's no help, come let us kiss and part;

Nay, I have done, you get no more of me,

And I am glad, yea glad with all my heart

That thus so cleanly I myself can free;

5 Shake hands forever, cancel all our vows,

And when we meet at any time again,

Be it not seen in either of our brows
That we one jot of former love retain.
Now at the last gasp of love's latest breath,
io When, his pulse failing, Passion speechless lies,
When Faith is kneeling by his bed of death,
And Innocence is closing up his eyes,
Now if thou wouldst, when all have given him over,
From death to life thou mightst him yet recover.

1919

C H R I S T O P H E R M A R L O W E

1 5 6 4 - 1 5 9 3

Hero and Leander

*First Sestiad*¹

On Hellespont,² guilty of true love's blood,
In view and opposite, two cities stood
Sea-borderers, disjoined by Neptune's⁰ might;
god of the sea

The one Abydos, the other Sestos hight.^o
called

At Sestos Hero dwelt; Hero the fair,
Whom young Apollo⁰ courted for her hair,
god of the sun

And offered as a dower⁰ his burning throne,
wedding gift

Where she should sit for men to gaze upon.
The outside of her garments were of lawn,³
The lining purple silk, with gilt stars drawn;
Her wide sleeves green, and bordered with a grove

Where Venus in her naked glory strove
To please the careless and disdainful eyes
Of proud Adonis,⁴ that before her lies;

1. A term for a book or canto (from Hero's city, the *Elegies* Marlowe had translated.

Sestos). W h e n the English playwright and trans-

2. The modern Dardanelles, a strait between the
latter George Chapman (1559?—1634) wrote a
Aegean Sea and the Sea of Marmora, one mile
four-part continuation of Marlowe's work, he
wide at its narrowest point.

divided the entire poem into sestads. The poem

3. A sheer cotton or linen fabric.

belongs to the genre of the minor epic, or *e-pyllion*,

4. Venus, goddess of love and beauty, passionately
which flourished in the 1590s and showed the
loved the young hunter Adonis, who was killed by
strong influence of the ancient Roman poet Ovid.
a boar; in lines 91—93, Marlowe claims that the
Ovid told the story of Hero and Leander in two of
men of Sestos hold a festival in honor of Adonis
his *Heroides* (fictional love letters) and in one of
every year.

HERO AND LEANDER / 239

15 Her kirtle⁰ blue, whereon was many a stain, *gown*
Made with the blood of wretched lovers slain.
Upon her head she ware a myrtle wreath,
From whence her veil reached to the ground beneath.

Her veil was artificial flowers and leaves,
20 Whose workmanship both man and beast deceives;
Many would praise the sweet smell as she passed,
When 'twas the odor which her breath forth cast;
And there for honey, bees have sought in vain,
And, beat from thence, have lighted there again.
25 About her neck hung chains of pebble-stone,
Which, lightened⁰ by her neck, like diamonds shone.
illuminated
She ware no gloves, for neither sun nor wind
Would burn or parch her hands, but to her mind⁵
Or^o warm or cool them, for they took delight *either*
30 To play upon those hands, they were so white.
Buskins⁰ of shells all silvered, used she, *high shoes, boots*
And branched⁰ with blushing coral to the knee, *decorated*
Where sparrows perched, of hollow pearl and gold,
Such as the world would wonder to behold;
35 Those with sweet water oft her handmaid fills,
Which, as she went, would chirrup through the^o bills. *their*
Some say, for her the fairest Cupid⁶ pined,
And looking in her face, was strooken⁰ blind. *struck*
But this is true: so like was one the other,
40 As he imagined Hero was his mother;
And oftentimes into her bosom flew,
About her naked neck his bare arms threw,
And laid his childish head upon her breast,
And with still panting rocked, there took his rest.
45 So lovely fair was Hero, Venus' nun,

As Nature wept, thinking she was undone,
Because she took more from her than she left
And of such wondrous beauty her bereft;
Therefore, in sign her treasure suffered wrack,
50 Since Hero's time hath half the world been black.⁷
Amorous Leander, beautiful and young,
(Whose tragedy divine Musaeus⁸ sung)
Dwelt at Abydos; since him dwelt there none
For whom succeeding times make greater moan.
55 His dangling tresses that were never shorn,
Had they been cut and unto Colchos⁹ borne,
Would have allured the vent'rous youth of Greece
To hazard more than for the Golden Fleece.
Fair Cynthia' wished his arms might be her sphere;⁰ *orbit*
60 Grief makes her pale, because she moves not there.

5. As she wished.

Hero and Leander served Marlowe as a source.

6. Venus's son, god of erotic love.

Marlowe's term "divine" suggests that he may have

7. I.e., therefore, as a sign that her (Nature's)

identified him with an earlier, legendary Musaeus.

wealth had suffered a shipwreck (i.e., been harmed

9. The country in Asia where Jason and his Argo-

by Hero's beauty), Nature made half the world

nauts find the Golden Fleece.

dark-haired or -complexioned.

1. The moon. Leander is being compared to the

8. A fifth-century Alexandrian whose poem on

moon's lover, Endymion.

240 / CHRISTOPHER MARLOWE

His body was as straight as Circe's wand;²

Jove might have sipped out nectar from his hand.³

Even as delicious meat is to the taste,

So was his neck in touching, and surpassed

65 The white of Pelops' shoulder.⁴ I could tell ye

How smooth his breast was, and how white his belly,

And whose immortal fingers did imprint

That heavenly path, with many a curious⁰ dint, *exquisite*

That runs along his back; but my rude pen

70 Can hardly blazon⁰ forth the loves of men, *show*

Much less of powerful gods; let it suffice

That my slack muse⁵ sings of Leander's eyes,

Those orient cheeks and lips, exceeding his⁶

That leapt into the water for a kiss

75 Of his own shadow, and despising many,

Died ere he could enjoy the love of any.

Had wild Hippolytus⁷ Leander seen,

Enamored of his beauty had he been;

His presence made the rudest peasant melt,

so That in the vast uplandish⁰ country dwelt; *wild*

The barbarous Thracian soldier, moved with naught,

Was moved with him, and for his favor sought.

Some swore he was a maid in man's attire,

For in his looks were all that men desire:

85 A pleasant smiling cheek, a speaking⁰ eye, *expressive*

A brow for love to banquet royally;

And such as knew he was a man, would say,
 “Leander, thou art made for amorous play;
 Why art thou not in love, and loved of all?
 90 Though thou be fair, yet be not thine own thrall.”⁰ *captive*
 The men of wealthy Sestos every year,
 For his sake whom their goddess held so dear,
 Rose-cheeked Adonis, kept a solemn feast.
 Thither resorted many a wandering guest
 95 To meet their loves; such as had none at all
 Came lovers home from this great festival;
 For every street, like to a firmament,⁰ *sky*
 Glistened with breathing stars, who, where they went,
 Frighted the melancholy earth, which deemed
 100 Eternal heaven to burn, for so it seemed
 As if another Phaeton⁸ had got
 The guidance of the sun’s rich chariot.
 But, far above the loveliest, Hero shined,
 And stole away the enchanted gazer’s mind;
 105 For like sea nymphs’ inveigling⁰ harmony, *beguiling*
 2. The enchantress Circe, in the *Odyssey*, pos-
 later reconstituted Pelops, giving him a shoulder
 sessed a magical wand capable of turning men into
 of ivory.
 beasts.
 5. Source of poetic inspiration.
 3. Leander is being compared to Ganymede, the
 6. I.e., Narcissus’s. *Orient*: glowing like eastern
 shepherd boy whom Jove “ravished” and made into

skies or gems.

his cupbearer.

7. A great hunter, contemptuous of love.

4. Pelops's father, Tantalus, killed, cut up,

8. Son of the sun god, Apollo; Phaeton drove his
cooked, and served his son at a dinner of the gods.

father's chariot for one day, went too close to

The goddess Demeter ate his shoulder. Hermes

Earth, and was destroyed by Jove's thunderbolt.

HERO AND LEANDER / 241

So was her beauty to the standers by.

Nor that night-wandering pale and watery star⁹

(When yawning dragons draw her thirling¹ car

From Latmus' mount up to the gloomy sky,

Where, crowned with blazing light and majesty,

She proudly sits) more over-rules⁰ the flood,

rules over

Than she the hearts of those that near her stood.

Even as when gaudy nymphs pursue the chase,

Wretched Ixion's shaggy-footed race,²

Incensed with savage heat, gallop amain

From steep pine-bearing mountains to the plain,

So ran the people forth to gaze upon her,

And all that viewed her were enamored on her.

And as in fury of a dreadful fight,

Their fellows being slain or put to flight,

Poor soldiers stand with fear of death dead-strooken,

So at her presence all, surprised and taken,⁰

taken

Await the sentence of her scornful eyes;
He whom she favors lives, the other dies.
There might you see one sigh, another rage,
And some, their violent passions to assuage,
Compile sharp satires; but alas, too late,
For faithful love will never turn to hate.
And many, seeing great princes were denied,
Pined as they went, and thinking on her, died.
On this feast day, oh, cursed day and hour!
Went Hero thorough Sestos, from her tower

through

To Venus' temple, where unhappily,
As after chanced, they did each other spy.
So fair a church as this had Venus none;
The walls were of discolored jasper stone,
Wherein was Proteus carved, and o'erhead

a sea god

A lively vine of green sea-agate spread,
Where, by one hand, light-headed Bacchus hung,
And with the other, wine from grapes out-wrung.

Of crystal shining fair the pavement was;
The town of Sestos called it Venus' glass;
There might you see the gods in sundry shapes,
Committing heady riots, incest, rapes;

For know that underneath this radiant floor

violent; impetuous

Was Danae's statue in a brazen tower;³

Jove slyly stealing from his sister's bed

To dally with Idalian Ganymed,

9. The moon.

depends on the particular account of a given myth,

1. Piercing, like a flying arrow; also, whirling. Lat-

as well as on interpretation. Danae was the daugh-

ter of the king of Argos, who imprisoned her

loved by Diana, the moon goddess.

because of a prophecy that a son born to her would

2. The centaurs, half man and half horse, were the

kill him; Jove came to her in the form of a shower

offspring of Ixion and a cloud. For loving Juno,

of gold, and as a result she gave birth to Perseus.

Ixion was made "wretched" by being chained to a

Jove took the form of an eagle to abduct Ganymede

ceaselessly rolling wheel.

(see note to line 62); the sexual nature of their

3. The next lines give specific examples of the

relationship was a topic of great interest during the

"riots, incest, rapes." Jove frequently left Juno, his

Renaissance. Jove took the form of a bull to rape

sister and wife, to pursue other women; whether

Europa. The goddess of the rainbow (line 150) was

his actions constituted seduction or rape often

Iris, a messenger of the gods.

242 / CHRISTOPHER MARLOWE

And for his love Europa bellowing loud,

150

And tumbling with the rainbow in a cloud;

Blood-quaffing Mars heaving the iron net

Which limping Vulcan and his Cyclops set;⁴

Love kindling fire to burn such towns as Troy;

Silvanus weeping for the lovely boy

155

That now is turned into a cypress tree,⁵

Under whose shade the wood gods love to be.

And in the midst a silver altar stood;

There Hero sacrificing turtles' ⁶ blood,

Veiled⁰ to the ground, veiling her eyelids close, *bowed, bent*

160 And modestly they opened as she rose;

Thence flew love's arrow with the golden head,⁷

And thus Leander was enamored.

Stone still he stood, and evermore he gazed,

Till with the fire that from his countenance blazed,

165

Relenting Hero's gentle heart was strook;

Such force and virtue⁰ hath an amorous look. *power, efficacy*

It lies not in our power to love or hate,

For will in us is over-ruled by fate.

When two are stripped,⁸ long ere the course begin

170

We wish that one should lose, the other win;

And one especially do we affect⁰ *prefer*
Of two gold ingots, like in each respect.
The reason no man knows, let it suffice,
What we behold is censured⁰ by our eyes. *judged*

175

Where both deliberate, the love is slight;
Who ever loved, that loved not at first sight?
He kneeled, but unto her devoutly prayed;
Chaste Hero to herself thus softly said:
“Were I the saint he worships, I would hear him”;
180 And as she spake these words, came somewhat near him.
He started up; she blushed as one ashamed;
Wherewith Leander much more was inflamed.
He touched her hand; in touching it she trembled;
Love deeply grounded hardly⁰ is dissembled. *with difficulty*

185

These lovers parled⁰ by the touch of hands; *spoke*
True love is mute, and oft amazed stands.
Thus while dumb signs their yielding hearts entangled,
The air with sparks of living fire was spangled,⁰ *speckled*
And night, deep drenched in misty Acheron,⁹

190

Heaved up her head, and half the world upon
Breathed darkness forth (dark night is Cupid’s day).
And now begins Leander to display
Love’s holy fire with words, with sighs, and tears,
Which like sweet music entered Hero’s ears;

195

And yet at every word she turned aside,

4. Vulcan and his helpers, the Cyclopes, trapped
love.

his wife, Venus, in bed with Mars, the god of war,

7. According to Ovid, Cupid's arrows were tipped
and exposed them to the laughter of the other gods.

with gold or lead, the one producing love and the

5. Cyparissus, changed by Apollo into a cypress
other loathing.

tree, was mourned by the forest god, Sylvanus.

8. I.e., for a race.

6. Turtledoves, which symbolized constancy in

9. The river of woe in the underworld.

HERO AND LEANDER / 243

And always cut him off as he replied.

At last, like to a bold sharp sophister,¹

With cheerful hope thus he accosted her:

“Fair creature, let me speak without offense;

200 I would my rude words had the influence

To lead thy thoughts as thy fair looks do mine!

Then shouldst thou be his prisoner who is thine.

Be not unkind and fair; misshapen stuff⁰ *persons*

Are of behavior boisterous and rough.

205 Oh, shun me not, but hear me ere you go,

God knows I cannot force love, as you do.

My words shall be as spotless as my youth,

Full of simplicity and naked truth.

This sacrifice, whose sweet perfume descending

210 From Venus' altar to your footsteps bending,
Doth testify that you exceed her far,
To whom you offer, and whose nun you are.
Why should you worship her? her you surpass
As much as sparkling diamonds flaring⁰ gl ass. *glaring*>
gaudy

215 A diamond set in lead his worth retains;
A heavenly nymph,² beloved of human swains,⁰ *rustics*
Receives no blemish, but oft times more grace;
Which makes me hope, although I am but base,
Base in respect⁰ of^o thee, divine and pure, *comparison / with*

220 Dutiful service may thy love procure,
And I in duty will excel all other,
As thou in beauty dost exceed Love's⁰ mother. *Cupid's*
Nor heaven, nor thou, were made to gaze upon;
As heaven preserves all things, so save thou one.

225 A stately builded ship, well rigged and tall,
The ocean maketh more majestic;
Why vowest thou then to live in Sestos here,
Who on love's seas more glorious wouldst appear?
Like untuned golden strings all women are,

230 Which long time lie untouched, will harshly jar.³
Vessels of brass, oft handled, brightly shine;
What difference betwixt the richest mine⁰ *ore*
And basest mold,⁰ but use? for both, not used, *earth*
Are of like worth. Then treasure is abused,

235 When misers keep it; being put to loan,
In time it will return us two for one.

Rich robes themselves and others do adorn;
Neither themselves nor others, if not worn.
Who builds a palace, and rams up the gate,
240 Shall see it ruinous and desolate.
Ah, simple Hero, learn thyself to cherish!
Lone women, like to empty houses, perish.
Less sins the poor rich man that starves himself
In heaping up a mass of drossy⁰ pelf,^o *worthless / riches*

1. One who reasons adroitly rather than soundly;

2. Minor nature goddess.

also, a university student in his junior or senior

3. I.e., unplayed musical instruments go out of
year.

tune.

244 / CHRISTOPHER MARLOWE

Than such as you; his golden earth remains,
Which, after his decease, some other gains;
But this fair gem, sweet in the loss alone,
When you fleet⁰ hence, can be bequeathed to none. *fly*
Or if it could, down from th' enameled⁰ sky *varicolored*
All heaven would come to claim this legacy,
And with intestine⁰ broils⁰ the world destroy, *internal,*
civil/wars
And quite confound nature's sweet harmony.
Well therefore by the gods decreed it is
We human creatures should enjoy that bliss.
One is no number;4 maids are nothing, then,
Without the sweet society of men.

Wilt thou live single still r5 one shalt thou be
Though never-singling Hymen0 couple thee.

god of marriage

Wild savages, that drink of running springs,
Think water far excels all earthly things,
But they that daily taste neat0 wine, despise it;

undiluted

Virginity, albeit some highly prize it,
Compared with marriage, had you tried them both,
Differs as much as wine and water doth.

Base bullion for the stamp's5 sake we allow;
Even so for men's impression do we you,
By which alone, our reverend fathers say,
Women receive perfection every way.

This idol which you term virginity
Is neither essence0 subject to the eye,

existing thing

No, nor to any one exterior sense,
Nor hath it any place of residence,
Nor is't of earth or mold0 celestial,

form

Or capable of any form at all.

Of that which hath no being, do not boast;
Things that are not at all, are never lost.

Men foolishly do call it virtuous;

What virtue is it, that is born with us?

Much less can honor be ascribed thereto;

Honor is purchased by the deeds we do.

Believe me, Hero, honor is not won
Until some honorable deed be done.
Seek you, for chastity, immortal fame,
And know that some have wronged Diana's name?⁶
Whose name is it, if she be false or not,
So she be fair, but some vile tongues will blot?
But you are fair, ay me, so wondrous fair,
So young, so gentle, and so debonair,⁰ *affable, courteous*
As Greece will think, if thus you live alone,
Some one or other keeps you as his own.
Then, Hero, hate me not, nor from me fly
To follow swiftly blasting infamy.

4. The theory that one is not a number appears in
metal ("bullion") into a coin.

Aristotle's *Metaphysics* and was often discussed by

6. Diana was the goddess of chastity. Neverthe-
later, Neoplatonic philosophers.

less, some stories attribute amorous relationships

5. I.e., the impression that turns a mere piece of
to her.

HERO AND LEANDER / 245

Perhaps thy sacred priesthood makes thee loath;

Tell me, to whom mad'st thou that heedless oath?"

295 "To Venus," answered she, and as she spake,

Forth from those two tralucen⁰t cisterns brake *translucent*

A stream of liquid pearl, which down her face

Made milk-white paths, whereon the gods might trace⁰ go

To Jove's high court. He thus replied: "The rites

300 In which love's beauteous empress most delights
Are banquets, Doric music,⁷ midnight revel,
Plays, masques, and all that stern age counteth evil.
Thee as a holy idiot⁰ doth she scorn, *untutored person*
For thou, in vowing chastity, hast sworn
305 To rob her name and honor, and thereby
Commit'st a sin far worse than perjury,
Even sacrilege against her deity,
Through regular and formal purity.
To expiate which sin, kiss and shake hands;
310 Such sacrifice as this Venus demands.”
Thereat she smiled, and did deny him so
As, put⁰ thereby, yet might he hope for mo.^o *put off I more*
Which makes him quickly reinforce his speech,
And her in humble manner thus beseech:
315 “Though neither gods nor men may thee deserve,
Yet for her sake whom you have vowed to serve,
Abandon fruitless cold virginity,
The gentle queen of love's sole enemy.
Then shall you most resemble Venus' nun,
320 When Venus' sweet rites are performed and done.
Flint-breasted Pallas⁸ joys in single life,
But Pallas and your mistress are at strife.
Love, Hero, then, and be not tyrannous,
But heal the heart that thou hast wounded thus;
325 Nor stain thy youthful years with avarice;
Fair fools delight to be accounted nice.⁰ *coy*
The richest corn dies if it be not reaped;

Beauty alone⁰ is lost, too warily kept.” *on its own*

These arguments he used, and many more,

330 Wherewith she yielded, that was won before.

Hero’s looks yielded, but her words made war;

Women are won when they begin to jar.⁰ *argue*

Thus having swallowed Cupid’s golden hook,

The more she strived, the deeper was she strook;⁰ *love-struck*

335 Yet, evilly feigning anger, strove she still,

And would be thought to grant against her will.

So having paused awhile, at last she said:

“Who taught thee rhetoric to deceive a maid?

Ay me! such words as these should I abhor,

340 And yet I like them for the orator.”

With that Leander stooped to have embraced her,

7. Leander apparently confuses Doric music, 8. Pallas Athena, the virgin goddess of wisdom, which was stirring and martial, with Lydian music, usually portrayed in armor, which was soft and voluptuous.

2 4 6 / C H R I S T O P H E R M A R L O W E

But from his spreading arms away she cast her,

And thus bespake him: “Gentle youth, forbear

To touch the sacred garments which I wear.

345 Upon a rock, and underneath a hill,

Far from the town, where all is whist⁰ and still *silent*

Save that the sea playing on yellow sand

Sends forth a rattling murmur to the land,

Whose sound allures the golden Morpheus⁰ *god of sleep*

350 In silence of the night to visit us,

My turret stands; and there, God knows, I play

With Venus' swans and sparrows all the day.
A dwarfish beldame⁰ bears me company, *old woman*
That hops about the chamber where I lie,
355 And spends the night, that might be better spent,
In vain discourse and apish⁰ merriment. *silly*
Come thither." As she spake this, her tongue tripped,
For unawares, "Come thither," from her slipped;
And suddenly her former color changed,
360 And here and there her eyes, through anger, ranged.
And like a planet moving several ways⁹
At one self⁰ instant, she, poor soul, assays,⁰ *and the same /*
tries
Loving, not to love at all, and every part
Strove to resist the motions of her heart;
365 And hands so pure, so innocent, nay such
As might have made heaven stoop to have a touch,
Did she uphold to Venus, and again
Vowed spotless chastity, but all in vain.
Cupid beats down her prayers with his wings;
370 Her vows above the empty air he flings;
All deep enraged, his sinewy⁰ bow he bent, *strong*
And shot a shaft that burning from him went;
Wherewith she, strooken,⁰ looked so dolefully, *struck*
As made Love sigh to see his tyranny.
375 And as she wept, her tears to pearl he turned,
And wound them on his arm, and for her mourned.
Then towards the palace of the Destinies,¹
Laden with languishment and grief, he flies,

And to those stern nymphs⁰ humbly made request, *girls*

380 Both might enjoy each other, and be blest.

But with a ghastly dreadful countenance,

Threatening a thousand deaths at every glance,

They answered Love, nor would vouchsafe so much

As one poor word, their hate to him was such.

385 Hearken awhile, and I will tell you why:

Heaven's winged herald, Jove-born Mercury,⁰ *messenger god*

The selfsame day that he asleep had laid

Enchanted Argus,² spied a country maid,

9. As in Ptolemaic astronomy, where planets
cutting threads.

moved both in their own orbits and through the

2. The watchman with a hundred eyes set by Juno
influence of other planets' motion. *Several*: differ-
to guard Io, beloved of Jupiter. Mercury (also
ently.

called Hermes) lulled Argus asleep with his music,

1. The Fates, three sister goddesses who deter-
then killed him, at Jove's command.

mined the course of h u m a n life by spinning and

HERO AND LEANDER / 247

Whose careless hair, instead of pearl t' adorn it,

390 Glistered⁰ with dew, as one that seemed to scorn it;³
glistened.

Her breath as fragrant as the morning rose,

Her mind pure, and her tongue untaught to gloze;^o *flatter*

Yet proud she was, for lofty pride that dwells

In towered courts is oft in shepherds' cells,⁰ *huts*
395 And too too well the fair vermilion⁰ knew, *scarlet*
And silver tincture of her cheeks, that drew
The love of every swain.⁰ On her this god *rustic*
Enamored was, and with his snaky rod⁴
Did charm her nimble feet, and made her stay,
400 The while upon a hillock down he lay,
And sweetly on his pipe began to play,
And with smooth speech her fancy to assay;⁰ *try*
Till in his twining arms he locked her fast,
And then he wooed with kisses, and at last,
405 As shepherds do, her on the ground he laid,
And tumbling in the grass, he often strayed
Beyond the bounds of shame, in being bold
To eye those parts which no eye should behold.
And like an insolent commanding lover,
410 Boasting his parentage, would needs discover
The way to new Elysium;⁵ but she,
Whose only dower⁰ was her chastity, *dowry*
Having striv'n in vain, was now about to cry,
And crave the help of shepherds that were nigh.
415 Herewith he stayed his fury,⁰ and began *passion*
To give her leave to rise; away she ran;
After went Mercury, who used such cunning,
As she, to hear his tale, left off her running;
Maids are not won by brutish force and might,
420 But speeches full of pleasure and delight;
And knowing Hermes courted her, was glad

That she such loveliness and beauty had
 As could provoke his liking, yet was mute,
 And neither would deny nor grant his suit.
 425 Still vowed he love, she wanting no excuse
 To feed him with delays, as women use,⁰ *usually do*
 Or thirsting after immortality—
 All women are ambitious naturally—
 Imposed upon her lover such a task
 430 As he ought not perform, nor yet she ask.
 A draught of flowing nectar she requested,
 Wherewith the king of gods and men is feasted.
 He, ready to accomplish what she willed,
 Stole some from Hebe⁶ (Hebe Jove's cup filled)
 435 And gave it to his simple rustic love;
 Which being known (as^o what is hid from Jove?) *for*
 He inly⁰ stormed, and waxed more furious *inwardly*
 3. I.e., pearl or other jewelry.

inhabited by the blessed dead.

4. The caduceus, Mercury's magic staff.

6. Jove's cupbearer before Jove ravished Gany-

5. In Greek mythology, a place of ideal happiness
 mede (see note to line 62).

248 / CHRISTOPHER MARLOWE

Than for the fire filched by Prometheus,⁷
 And thrusts him down from heaven; he wandering here
 440

In mournful terms,⁰ with sad and heavy cheer,⁰ *state /look*
 Complained to Cupid. Cupid, for his^o sake, *Prometheus's*

To be revenged on Jove did undertake;
And those on whom heaven, earth, and hell relies,
I mean the adamantin⁰ Destinies, *unyielding*
445

He wounds with love, and forced them equally
To dote upon deceitful Mercury.

They offered him the deadly fatal knife
That shears the slender threads of human life;
At his fair-feathered feet the engines laid
450

Which th' earth from ugly Chaos' den upweighed;⁸
These he regarded not, but did entreat
That Jove, usurper of his father's seat,⁹
Might presently be banished into hell,
And aged Saturn in Olympus dwell.
455

They granted what he craved, and once again
Saturn and Ops^o began their golden reign. *Saturn's wife*
Murder, rape, war, lust, and treachery
Were with Jove closed in Stygian empery.¹
But long this blessed time continued not;
460

As soon as he his wished purpose got,
He, reckless of his promise, did despise
The love of th' everlasting Destinies.
They seeing it, both Love and him abhorred,
And Jupiter unto his place restored.
465

And but that Learning,² in despite of Fate,
Will mount aloft, and enter heaven gate,
And to the seat of Jove itself advance,
Hermes had slept in hell with Ignorance;
Yet as a punishment they added this,
470

That he and Poverty should always kiss.
And to this day is every scholar poor;
Gross gold from them runs headlong to the boor.³
Likewise, the angry sisters thus deluded,
To venge themselves on Hermes, have concluded
475

That Midas⁴ brood shall sit in Honor's chair,
To which the Muses' sons⁵ are only heir;
And fruitful wits that inaspiring⁰ are *not greedy*
Shall, discontent, run into regions far;
And few great lords in virtuous deeds shall joy,
480

But be surprised with every garish toy;⁶
7. Prometheus angered Jove by stealing fire from
lines, Marlowe claims that Learning, because it is
the gods for the benefit of humans.
divine, naturally rises, but that the Fates, to punish
8. The Fates also controlled the "beams" that
Mercury for neglecting them, decreed that Learn-
"upweighed," or supported, Earth, since it was
ing went together with Poverty.
formed out of Chaos, the undifferentiated mass

3. I.e., large amounts (a “gross”) of gold go swiftly from which all things came.

to the “boor,” one who lacks refinement, rather

9. I.e., that of Jove’s father, Saturn, whose peaceful reign in heaven, before Jove dethroned him,

4. The king whose touch turned objects to gold.

was known as the Golden Age.

5. I.e., people involved in music, poetry, and the

1. Dominion. *Stygian*: pertaining to the river Styx, arts and sciences, all of which were presided over in Hades.

by nine sister goddesses called the Muses.

2. Mercury, the god of learning. In the following

6. I.e., be delighted with trivial things.

HERO AND LEANDER / 249

And still enrich the lofty⁰ servile clown, *proud*.

Who with encroaching guile keeps learning down.

Then muse^o not Cupid’s suit no better sped,⁰ *marvel*
/succeeded

Seeing in their loves the Fates were injured.

Second Sestiad

By^o this, sad Hero, with love unacquainted, *at*

Viewing Leander’s face, fell down and fainted.

He kissed her and breathed life into her lips,

Wherewith, as one displeased, away she trips.

5 Yet as she went, full often looked behind,

And many poor excuses did she find

To linger by the way, and once she stayed
And would have turned again, but was afraid,
In offering parley,0 to be counted light.0 *talk/wanton*
10 So on she goes, and in her idle flight,
Her painted fan of curled plumes let fall,
Thinking to train0 Leander therewithal. *entice*
He, being a novice, knew not what she meant,
But stayed, and after her a letter sent,
15 Which joyful Hero answered in such sort
As he had hoped to scale the beauteous fort
Wherein the liberal graces7 locked their wealth,
And therefore to her tower he got by stealth.
Wide open stood the door, he need not climb;
20 And she herself, before the 'pointed time,
Had spread the board, with roses strewed the room,
And oft looked out, and mused0 he did not come. *wondered*
why
At last he came; Oh, who can tell the greeting
These greedy lovers had at their first meeting?
25 He asked, she gave, and nothing was denied;
Both to each other quickly were affied.0 *affianced*
Look how their hands, so were their hearts united,
And what he did she willingly requited.
(Sweet are the kisses, the embracements sweet,
30 When like desires and affections meet;
For from the earth to heaven is Cupid raised,
Where fancy is in equal balance peised.0) *weighed*
Yet she this rashness suddenly repented,

And turned aside, and to herself lamented,
35 As if her name and honor had been wronged
By being possessed of him for whom she longed;
Aye, and she wished, albeit not from her heart,
That he would leave her turret and depart.
The mirthful god of amorous pleasure smiled
40 To see how he this captive nymph⁰ beguiled; *girl*
For hitherto he did but fan the fire,
And kept it down that it might mount the higher.
Now waxed she jealous⁰ lest his love abated, *fearful*
7. Charm and beauty (given by three sister goddesses called
the Graces).

250 / CHRISTOPHER MARLOWE

**Fearing her own thoughts made her to be ha-
ted.**

45

**Therefore unto him hastily she goes,
And like light Salmacis, ⁸ her body throws
Upon his bosom, where with yielding eyes
She offers up herself, a sacrifice
To slake⁰ his anger if he were displeas'd.
decrease ⁵⁰**

**Oh, what god would not there with be appea-
s'd?**

**Like Aesop's cock, ⁹ this jewel he enjoyed,
And as a brother with his sister toyed,
Supposing nothing else was to be done,
Now her favor and good will had won.**

55

**B u t k n o w y o u n o t t h a t c r e a t u r e s w a n t i n g s e
n s e 1**

**B y n a t u r e h a v e a m u t u a l a p p e t e n c e , 0 *affinity*
A n d w a n t i n g o r g a n s t o a d v a n c e a s t e p ,**

M o v e d b y l o v e ' s f o r c e , u n t o e a c h o t h e r l e a p ?

M u c h m o r e i n s u b j e c t s h a v i n g i n t e l l e c t ,

60

S o m e h i d d e n i n f l u e n c e b r e e d s l i k e e f f e c t .

A l b e i t L e a n d e r , r u d e ° i n l o v e a n d r a w , *untutored*

L o n g d a l l y i n g w i t h H e r o , n o t h i n g s a w

**T h a t m i g h t d e l i g h t h i m m o r e , y e t h e s u s p e c
t e d S o m e a m o r o u s r i t e s o r o t h e r w e r e n e g l e c
t e d .**

65

**T h e r e f o r e u n t o h i s b o d y h e r s h e c l u n g ; 0
clasped S h e , f e a r i n g o n t h e r u s h e s 2 t o b e f l u n
g ,**

**S t r i v e d w i t h r e d o u b l e d s t r e n g t h ; t h e m o r e s h e
s t r i v e d , T h e m o r e a g e n t l e p l e a s i n g h e a t
r e v i v e d ,**

W h i c h t a u g h t h i m a l l t h a t e l d e r l o v e r s k n o w ;

70

**A n d n o w t h e s a m e g a n s o t o s c o r c h a n d g l o w
, A s i n p l a i n t e r m s , y e t c u n n i n g l y , 0 h e c r a v e d i t ;
skillfully L o v e a l w a y s m a k e s t h o s e e l o q u e n t t h a t
h a v e i t .**

S h e , w i t h a k i n d o f g r a n t i n g , p u t h i m b y i t , 3

A n d e v e r a s h e t h o u g h t h i m s e l f m o s t n i g h t ,

75

L i k e t o t h e t r e e o f T a n t a l u s 4 s h e f l e d ,

**A n d , s e e m i n g l a v i s h , 0 s a v e d h e r m a i d e n h e a d
. *immodest* N e ' e r k i n g m o r e s o u g h t t o k e e p h i s d**

**i a d e m , 0 c r o w n T h a n H e r o t h i s i n e s t i m a b l e g e
m .**

**A b o v e o u r l i f e w e l o v e a s t e a d f a s t f r i e n d ,
80**

**Y e t w h e n a t o k e n o f g r e a t w o r t h w e s e n d ,
W e o f t e n k i s s i t , o f t e n l o o k t h e r e o n ,
A n d s t a y t h e m e s s e n g e r t h a t w o u l d b e g o n e ;
N o m a r v e l t h e n t h o u g h H e r o w o u l d n o t y i e l d
S o s o o n t o p a r t f r o m t h a t s h e d e a r l y h e l d ;
85**

**J e w e l s b e i n g l o s t a r e f o u n d a g a i n , t h i s n e v e r ;
'T i s l o s t b u t o n c e , a n d o n c e l o s t , l o s t f o r e v e r .**

N o w h a d t h e m o r n e s p i e d h e r l o v e r ' s s t e e d s , 5

8. A nymph (minor nature goddess) who became

2. Reeds, used as floor mats in Elizabethan
enamored of Hermaphroditus when she saw him
homes.

bathing in her lake. Throwing herself upon him in
i. Deflected him.

spite of his resistance, she called on the gods to

4. For stealing nectar from the gods to give to
keep them together forever. In answer to her
humans, Jove punished Tantalus by placing him in
prayer, their two bodies united and became one,
a pool in Hades. Whenever Tantalus bent to drink,
both male and female.

the water receded from his lips; when he reached

9. In one of Aesop's fables, a cock found a jewel

for the fruit that dangled above his head, it rose
in a dung heap, but had no notion of its value and
out of his grasp.

traded it for a grain of corn.

5. The horses that pull the sun's chariot.

1. I.e., that inanimate objects.

HERO AND LEANDER / 251

**Where at she starts, put on her purple weeds
, And, red for anger that he stayed so long,**

**90 All headlong throws herself the clouds a
mong.**

And now Leander, fearing to be missed,

**Embraced her suddenly, took leave, and
kissed.**

Long was he taking leave, and loath to go,

And kissed again, as lovers use to do.

**95 Sad Hero wrung him by the hand and wept
, Saying, "Let your vows and promises be kept."**

**Then, standing at the door, she turned about
, As loath to see Leander going out.**

**And now the sun that through th' horizon peeps,
100 As pitying these lovers, downward creeps,
s,**

So that in silence of the cloudy night,

Though it was morning, did he take his flight.

**But what these secret trusty night concealed,
Leander's amorous habit⁰ soon revealed; *clothing***

**105 With Cupid's myrtle⁶ was his bonnet crowned,
d,**

About his arms the purple riband⁰ wound *ribbon*

Where with she wreathed her largely spreading
hair; Nor could they out abstain, but them
must wear The sacred ring where with she was
endowed, no When first religious chastity she
vowed;
Which made his love through Sestos to be
known, And thence unto Abydos sooner blown
Than he could sail; for incorporeal Flame,
Whose weight consists in nothing but her
name, 115 Is swifter than the wind, whose
tardy plumes

Are reeking water and dull earthly fumes. 7

Home, when he came, he seemed not to be
there, But like exiled air thrust from his
sphere,
Set in a foreign place; 8 and straight from
thence, 120 Alcides 0 like, by mighty violence
Hercules
He would have chased away the swelling
main 0 *ocean* That him from her unjustly
did detain.

Like as the sun in a diameter 9

Fires and in flames objects removed far,

125 And heat eth kindly, shining laterally,

So beautys sweetly quickens when 'tis
nigh, But being separated and removed,

Burns where it cherished, murders where
it loved.

Therefore even as an index to a book,

130 So to his mind was young Leander's
look.

Oh, none but gods have power their
love to hide;
Affection by the countenance is
descried. 0
made known The light of hidden
fire itself discovers,

And love that is concealed betrays
poor lovers.

135 His secret flame apparently 0
was seen;
openly Leander's father knew where
he had been

n ,

6. Plant sacred to Cupid and Venus, symbolic of

8. I.e., air rushes to fill a vacuum.

love.

9. Directly overhead, where it appears to be far-

7. I.e., are producing fog and mist.

ther off than when low in the sky.

252 / CHRISTOPHER MARLOWE

A n d f o r t h e s a m e m i l d l y r e b u k e d h i s s o n ,

T h i n k i n g t o q u e n c h t h e s p a r k l e s n e w b e g u n .

B u t l o v e , r e s i s t e d o n c e , g r o w s p a s s i o n a t e ,

140 A n d n o t h i n g m o r e t h a n c o u n s e l l o v e r s
h a t e ;

F o r a s a h o t p r o u d h o r s e h i g h l y d i s d a i n s

T o h a v e h i s h e a d c o n t r o l l e d , b u t b r e a k s t h e
r e i n s , S p i t s f o r t h t h e r i n g l e d b i t , a n d w i t h h i s h o o v e
s r i n g e d C h e c k s t h e s u b m i s s i v e g r o u n d , s o h
e t h a t l o v e s , s t a m p s 145 T h e m o r e h e i s r e s t r a i n e d , t h
e w o r s e h e f a r e s .

W h a t i s i t n o w b u t m a d L e a n d e r d a r e s ? 1

“O h H e r o , H e r o ! ” t h u s h e c r i e d f u l l o f t ,

A n d t h e n h e g o t h i m t o a r o c k a l o f t ,

W h e r e h a v i n g s p i e d h e r t o w e r , l o n g s t a r e d h e o
n ‘ t , 150 A n d p r a y e d t h e n a r r o w t o i l i n g H e l l e s p o
n t

T o p a r t i n t w a i n , t h a t h e m i g h t c o m e a n d g o ;

B u t s t i l l t h e r i s i n g b i l l o w s a n s w e r e d “N o .”

W i t h t h a t h e s t r i p p e d h i m t o t h e i v o r y s k i n ,

A n d c r y i n g , “L o v e , I c o m e ! ” l e a p e d l i v e l y i n .

155 Where at the sapphire-visaged god grew
w proud, And made his capering Triton² sound
d aloud,

Imagining that Ganymede,³ displeased,
Had left the heavens; therefore on him he
seized.

Leander strived; the waves about him wound
,

160 And pulled him to the bottom, where the
ground Was strewed with pearl, and in low
coral groves

Sweet singing mermaids sported with their
loves On heaps of heavy gold, and took great ple
asure To spurn in careless sort the shipwreck
k treasure.

165 For here the stately azure palace stood,
Where kingly Neptune and his train abode.

The lusty god embraced him, called him love,
And swore he never should return to Jove.

But when he knew it was not Ganymede,

170 For under water he was almost dead,

He heaved him up, and looking on his face,

Beat down the bold waves with his triple mace,⁴

Which mounted up, intending to have kisse
d him, And fell in drops like tears, because they m
issed him.

175 Leander, being up, began to swim,

And looking back, saw Neptune follow him;

Where at aghast, the poor soul gant to cry:

“Oh, let me visit Her ere I die!”

The god put Helle's⁵ bracelet on his arm,

iso **A n d s w o r e t h e s e a s h o u l d n e v e r d o h i m h a r m .**

H e c l a p p e d h i s p l u m p c h e e k s , w i t h h i s t r e s s e s p l a y e d , A n d s m i l i n g w a n t o n l y , h i s l o v e b e w r a y e d . 0 r e v e a l e d H e w a t c h e d h i s a r m s , a n d a s t h e y o p e n e d w i d e , 1. I.e., there is nothing now that mad Leander

5. A Theban princess who, while fleeing from her wouldn't dare do.

stepmother on the back of a winged, golden-

2. The son and trumpeter of the "sapphire-fleeced ram, fell into the strait that separates visaged" sea god, Neptune.

Europe and Asia, named the Hellespont for her.

3. Jove's cupbearer (see note 3, p. 240).

Marlowe seems to have invented the detail of the

4. The three-pronged fork carried by Neptune. bracelet.

HERO AND LEANDER / 253

At every stroke betwixt them would he slide,
185 And steal a kiss, and then run out and dance,
And as he turned, cast many a lustful glance,
And threw him gaudy toys to please his eye,
And dive into the water, and there pry
Upon his breast, his thighs, and every limb,
190 And up again, and close beside him swim,
And talk of love. Leander made reply:
"You are deceived, I am no woman, I."
Thereat smiled Neptune, and then told a tale
How that a shepherd, sitting in a vale,

195 Played with a boy so lovely, fair, and kind,
As for his love both earth and heaven pined;
That of the cooling river durst not drink
Lest water nymphs should pull him from the brink;
And when he sported in the fragrant lawns,
200 Goat-footed satyrs and up-staring fauns⁶
Would steal him thence. Ere half this tale was done,
“Ay me,” Leander cried, “th’ enamored sun,
That now should shine on Thetis’ glassy bower,⁷
Descends upon my radiant Hero’s tower.
205 Oh, that these tardy arms of mine were wings!”
And as he spake, upon the waves he springs.
Neptune was angry that he gave no ear,
And in his heart revenging malice bare;
He flung at him his mace, but as it went
210 He called it in, for love made him repent.
The mace returning back, his own hand hit,
As meaning to be venged for darting it.
When this fresh bleeding wound Leander viewed,
His color went and came, as if he rued
215 The grief which Neptune felt. In gentle breasts
Relenting thoughts, remorse, and pity rests;
And who have hard hearts and obdurate minds
But vicious, harebrained, and illiterate hinds?⁸ *rustics*
The god, seeing him with pity to be moved,
220 Thereon concluded that he was beloved.
(Love is too full of faith, too credulous,
With folly and false hope deluding us.)

Wherefore, Leander's fancy⁰ to surprise,⁰ *love/capture*
To the rich ocean for gifts he flies.

225 Tis wisdom to give much; a gift prevails
When deep persuading oratory fails.

By this,⁰ Leander, being near the land, *this time*
Cast down his weary feet and felt the sand.

Breathless albeit he were, he rested not

230 Till to the solitary tower he got,
And knocked and called, at which celestial noise
The longing heart of Hero much more joys

6. Like satyrs, woodland deities; fauns prophesied 7. I.e., the
sea. Thetis was a daughter of the sea by looking to the
heavens. *Nymphs*: minor nature god Nereus.

goddesses.

254 / CHRISTOPHER MARLOWE

Than nymphs or shepherds when the timbrel⁰ rings,
tambourine

Or crooked⁰ dolphin when the sailor sings; *curving*

235

She stayed not for her robes, but straight arose,

And drunk with gladness, to the door she goes;

Where seeing a naked man, she screeched for fear,

(Such sights as this to tender maids are rare)

And ran into the dark herself to hide.

240

Rich jewels in the dark are soonest spied;

Unto her was he led, or rather drawn,

By those white limbs which sparkled through the lawn.⁸

The nearer that he came, the more she fled,

And seeking refuge, slipped into her bed.

245

Whereon Leander sitting, thus began,

Through numbing cold all feeble, faint, and wan:^o *pale*

“If not for love, yet, love, for pity sake,

Me in thy bed and maiden bosom take;

At least vouchsafe these arms some little room,

250

Who, hoping to embrace thee, cheerly^o swum; *gladly*

This head was beat with many a churlish billow,

And therefore let it rest upon thy pillow.”

Herewith affrighted Hero shrunk away,

And in her lukewarm place Leander lay,

255

Whose lively heat like fire from heaven fet,^o *fetched*

Would animate gross clay, and higher set

The drooping thoughts of base declining souls,

Than dreary^o Mars^o carousing nectar bowls. *bloody / god of war*

His hands he cast upon her like a snare;

260

She, overcome with shame and sallow^o fear, *pale, yellowish*

Like chaste Diana, when Actaeon spied her,⁹

Being suddenly betrayed, dived down to hide her;

And as her silver body downward went,

With both her hands she made the bed a tent,

265

And in her own mind thought herself secure,

O'er cast with dim and darksome coverture.

And now she lets him whisper in her ear,
Flatter, entreat, promise, protest, and swear;
Yet ever as he greedily assayed⁰ *tried*

270

To touch those dainties, she the harpy¹ played,
And every limb did, as a soldier stout,
Defend the fort and keep the foeman out;
For though the rising ivory mount he scaled,
Which is with azure circling lines empaled,
275

Much like a globe (a globe may I term this,
By which love sails to regions full of bliss)
Yet there with Sisyphus² he toiled in vain,
Till gentle parley⁰ did the truce obtain. *conference*
Wherein Leander on her quivering breast,
280

Breathless spoke something, and sighed out the rest;

8. A sheer cotton or linen fabric.

tures, half woman and half bird; in Virgil's *Aeneid*,

9. Actaeon, a hunter who saw the naked Diana
several harpies seize the meal of an old prophet.

about to bathe in her favorite pool; as punishment,

2. Who was condemned to Hades and made to roll
he was turned into a stag and killed by hounds.

a stone uphill forever.

1. Harpies were often pictured as hideous crea-

HERO AND LEANDER / 255

Which so prevailed, as he with small ado
Enclosed her in his arms and kissed her too.
And every kiss to her was as a charm,
And to Leander as a fresh alarm,⁰ *call to battle*
285 So that the truce was broke, and she, alas,
Poor silly⁰ maiden, at his mercy was. *innocent*
Love is not full of pity, as men say,
But deaf and cruel where he means to prey.
Even as a bird, which in our hands we wring,
290 Forth plungeth and oft flutters with her wing,
She trembling strove; this strife of hers, like that
Which made the world,³ another world begat
Of unknown joy. Treason was in her thought,
And cunningly to yield herself she sought.
295 Seeming not won, yet won she was at length;
In such wars women use but half their strength.
Leander now, like Theban Hercules,
Entered the orchard of th' Hesperides,⁴
Whose fruit none rightly can describe but he
300 That pulls or shakes it from the golden tree.
And now she wished this night were never done,
And sighed to think upon th' approaching sun;
For much it grieved her that the bright daylight
Should know the pleasure of this blessed night,
305 And them like Mars and Erycine⁵ display,
Both in each other's arms chained as they lay.
Again she knew not how to frame her look,
Or speak to him who in a moment took

That which so long, so charily she kept;
310 And fain by stealth away she would have crept,
And to some corner secretly have gone,
Leaving Leander in the bed alone.
But as her naked feet were whipping out,
He on the sudden clinged her so about,
315 That mermaid-like unto the floor she slid,
One half appeared, the other half was hid.
Thus near the bed she blushing stood upright,
And from her countenance behold ye might
A kind of twilight break, which through the hair,
320 As from an orient⁰ cloud, glimpse here and there; *bright*
And round about the chamber this false morn
Brought forth the day before the day was born.
So Hero's ruddy cheek Hero betrayed,
And her all naked to his sight displayed;
325 Whence his admiring eyes more pleasure took
Than Dis⁶ on heaps of gold fixing his look.

By this, Apollo's golden harp began

3. According to the ancient Greek philosopher
a tree that bore golden apples. One of Hercules'
Empedocles, love and strife opposed each other
superhuman labors was to steal the apples.

and thus brought about creation.

5. Venus; see note 4, p. 242.

4. Daughters of the Titan Atlas and custodians of

6. Pluto, god of the underworld and god of wealth.

256 / CHRISTOPHER MARLOWE

To sound forth music to the ocean;⁷
Which watchful Hesperus no sooner heard,
330 But he the day-bright-bearing car prepared,
And ran before, as harbinger of light,
And with his flaring beams mocked ugly night
Till she, o'ercome with anguish, shame, and rage,
Danged⁰ down to hell her loathsome carriage. *drove*
violently

1598

The Passionate Shepherd to His Love⁸
Come live with me and be my love,
And we will all the pleasures prove⁰ *try*
That valleys, groves, hills, and fields,
Woods, or steepy mountain yields.
5 And we will sit upon the rocks,
Seeing the shepherds feed their flocks,
By shallow rivers to whose falls
Melodious birds sing madrigals.
And I will make thee beds of roses
io And a thousand fragrant posies,
A cap of flowers, and a kirtle⁰ *gown*
Embroidered all with leaves of myrtle;
A gown made of the finest wool
Which from our pretty lambs we pull;
15 Fair lined slippers for the cold,
With buckles of the purest gold;
A belt of straw and ivy buds,
With coral clasps and amber studs:⁰ *buttons*

And if these pleasures may thee move,

20 Come live with me, and be my love.

The shepherds' swains⁰ shall dance and sing *followers*

For thy delight each May morning:

If these delights thy mind may move,

Then live with me and be my love.

1599, 1600

7. Presaging the rising of the sun. Hesperus is nor-

8. Cf. the response by Sir Walter Raleigh, "The
mally the evening star, but in the next line Marlowe
Nymph's Reply to the Shepherd" (p. 152); cf. also
applies the name to the morning star, usually

C. Day Lewis's version of this poem (p. 1449).
called Phosphorus or Lucifer.

2 5 7

W I L L I A M S H A K E S P E A R E

1564-1616

FROM SONNETS

T O t h e O n l y B e g e t t e r o f

T h e s e E n s u i n g S o n n e t s

M R . W . H . A l l H a p p i n e s s

a n d T h a t E t e r n i t y

P r o m i s e d

By

O u r E v e r - L i v i n g P o e t

W i s h e t h

t h e W e l l - W i s h i n g

A d v e n t u r e r i n

Setting Forth

T.T.1

1

**From fairest creatures we desire increase,
That thereby beauty's rose might never die,
But as the ripper should by time decease,
His tender⁰ heir might bear his memory; *young*
5 But thou, contracted² to thine own bright eyes,
Feed'st thy light's flame with self-substantial³ fuel,
Making a famine where abundance lies,
Thyself thy foe, to thy sweet self too cruel.
Thou that art now the world's fresh ornament
io And only⁰ herald to the gaudy spring, *principal; solitary*
Within thine own bud buriest thy content,⁴
And, tender churl,^s mak'st waste in niggarding.⁰ *hoarding*
Pity the world, or else this glutton be,
To eat the world's due, by the grave and thee.**

1. Much critical debate focuses on this dedication addressed in the sonnets or with the "Dark Lady" and its first set of initials (the second set refers to evoked as the third member of the erotic triangle the publisher, Thomas Thorpe). "Mr. W. H." may Shakespeare dramatizes in these poems.

be William Herbert, earl of Pembroke, or Henry
The sonnets evidently circulated in manuscript
Wriothesley, earl of Southampton; the former is a
for some years before they were first published as
dedicatee of the volume of Shakespeare's plays

a group in 1609 (a few appeared separately in known as the First Folio, while the latter is the anthologies). The ordering of the 154 poems in the dedicatee of Shakespeare's narrative poems *Venus and Adonis* and *Lucrece*. Patrons were often flat-design.

teringly depicted as "begetters" of poems, and it is

2. Betrothed; also implying withdrawn into, therefore tempting to see an association between shrunken (not increased).

"Mr. W. H." and the beloved young man addressed

3. Of your own (unique) substance.

in many of Shakespeare's sonnets, especially

4. What contents you (marriage and fatherhood) because the first seventeen poems in the sequence and also what you contain (potential for fatherhood). stress the young man's need to marry and beget hood).

heirs. No clear evidence, however, identifies a spe-

5. Gentle boor.

cific historical person either with the young man

258 / WILLIAM SHAKESPEARE

20

When forty winters shall besiege thy brow

And dig deep trenches in thy beauty's field,

**Thy youth's proud livery, so gazed on now, splendid /
clothing Will be a tottered weed of small worth held.**

tattered /garment 5 Then being asked where all thy beauty
lies—

Where all the treasure of thy lusty days—
To say within thine own deep-sunken eyes
Were an all-eating shame⁶ and thriftless praise.
How much more praise deserved thy beauty's use,⁷
10 If thou couldst answer, "This fair child of mine
Shall sum my count and make my old excuse"⁸—
Proving his beauty by succession thine.

This were to be new made when thou art old,
And see thy blood warm when thou feel'st it cold.

3

Look in thy glass⁰ and tell the face thou viewest, *mirror*
Now is the time that face should form another,
Whose fresh repair⁰ if now thou not renewest, *condition*
Thou dost beguile the world, unbless some mother.

5 For where is she so fair whose unneared⁹ womb
Disdains the tillage of thy husbandry?
Or who is he so fond⁰ will be the tomb *foolish*
Of his self-love, to stop posterity?

Thou art thy mother's glass, and she in thee
10 Calls back the lovely April of her prime;
So thou through windows of thine age shalt see,
Despite of wrinkles, this thy golden time.

But if thou live rememb' red not to be,
Die single, and thine image dies with thee.

12

When I do count the clock that tells the time,

And see the brave⁰ day sunk in hideous night; *resplendent*
When I behold the violet past prime,
And sable curls all silvered o'er with white;
5 When lofty trees I see barren of leaves,
Which erst^o from heat did canopy the herd, *formerly*
And summer's green all girded up in sheaves,
Borne on the bier¹ with white and bristly beard,

6. A total disgrace; also, an offense in which the
my old age.

beauty of youth has been devoured.

9. Immature; also, unplowed.

7. Investment for profit; also, sexual use.

1. A frame for carrying harvested grain; also, a

8. Shall complete my account and justify me in
stand on which a corpse is carried to the grave.

S O N N E T S : 1 8 / 2 5 9

Then of thy beauty do I question make,
10 That thou among the wastes of time must go,
Since sweets and beauties do themselves forsake
And die as fast as they see others grow;
And nothing 'gainst Time's scythe can make defense
Save breed,⁰ to brave⁰ him when he takes thee hence,
progeny /defy 15

When I consider everything that grows
Holds⁰ in perfection but a little moment, *remains*
That this huge stage presenteth nought but shows²
Whereon the stars in secret influence comment;³
5 When I perceive that men as plants increase,

Cheered and checked⁰ ev'n by the selfsame sky, *repressed*
Vaunt in their youthful sap,⁴ at height decrease,
And wear their brave state out of memory,⁵
Then the conceit⁰ of this inconstant stay *conception, idea*
io Sets you most rich in youth before my sight,
Where wasteful time debateth with⁶ decay
To change your day of youth to sullied⁰ night; *soiled;*
darkened
And all in war with time for love of you,
As he takes from you, I engraft you new.⁷

18

Shall I compare thee to a summer's day?
Thou art more lovely and more temperate:
Rough winds do shake the darling buds of May,
And summer's lease⁰ hath all too short a date; *allotted time*
5 Sometimes too hot the eye of heaven shines,
And often is his gold complexion dimmed;
And every fair⁰ from fair sometimes declines, *beauty*
By chance or nature's changing course untrimmed;⁸
But thy eternal summer shall not fade,
io Nor lose possession of that fair thou ow'st;⁹
Nor shall death brag thou wand'rest in his shade,
When in eternal lines to Time thou grow'st:¹
So long as men can breathe, or eyes can see,
So long lives this, and this gives life to thee.

2. This can be read as “presents only appearances
ten.

of performances” with “shows” functioning as a

6. Fights with, fights against.

noun, but “shows” also can operate as a verb and

7. As time withers you, I renew you (with my
mean “reveals.”

poetry).

3. The stars secretly affect humankind’s explana-

8. Divested of its beauty.

tion of the world.

9. Own, with a play on *owe*.

4. Exult in their youthful vigor; also, display them-

1. I.e., when you are grafted to Time in this
selves.

immortal poetry.

5. Wear out their splendid finery and are forgot-

2 6 0 / W I L L I A M S H A K E S P E A R E

20

A woman’s face, with nature’s own hand painted,²

Hast thou, the master mistress of my passion—

A woman’s gentle heart, but not acquainted

With shifting change, as is false⁰ women’s fashion;

deceitful; artificial **5 An eye more bright than theirs, less**

false in rolling,⁰ roving

Gilding the object whereupon it gazeth;

A man in hue all hues in his controlling,³

Which steals men’s eyes and women’s souls amazeth.

And for a woman wert thou first created,

10 Till nature as she wrought thee fell a-doting,^o crazy;

infatuated **And by addition me of thee defeated,**

By adding one thing to my purpose nothing.

**But since she pricked thee out for women's pleasure,
Mine be thy love and thy love's use their treasure.⁴**

29

**When, in disgrace⁰ with fortune and men's eyes, *disfavor*
I all alone bewep my outcast state,
And trouble deaf heaven with my bootless⁰ cries, *futile*
And look upon myself, and curse my fate,
5 Wishing me like to one more rich in hope,
Featured⁰ like him, like him with friends *formed;*
handsome
possessed,
Desiring this man's art⁰ and that man's scope,⁶ skill
With what I most enjoy contented least;
Yet in these thoughts myself almost despising,
10 Haply I think on thee—and then my state,⁷
Like to the lark at break of day arising
From sullen earth, sings hymns at heaven's gate;
For thy sweet love rememb'ed such wealth brings
That then I scorn to change my state with kings.**

2. I.e., not made up with cosmetics.

4. Interest (as in usury), sexual enjoyment. Mod-

3. "Controlling" works as a noun and as an adjective. Modern editors usually punctuate this line with a comma after "love," but some recent critics argue that "hue" (form, complexion, color, and apparition are the main possibilities). The line has been paraphrased in

1609 Quarto in not punctuating the line internally, many ways, among them: “a man in form, all forms, thereby allowing for more than one interpretation i.e., all people, are subject to his power”; “a man of the final couplet.

in complexion, he has control over all other com-

5. The “him”s here refer to two different men.

plexions, i.e., he causes people to grow pale or

6. Freedom, range of ability.

blush”; “a man in appearance, he can present any

7. Condition, state of mind (setting up the pun in appearance he chooses.”

line 14, where it also means chair of state, throne).

SONNETS : 35 / 261

30

When to the sessions of sweet silent thought

I summon up remembrance of things past,

I sigh the lack of many a thing I sought,

And with old woes new wail my dear time's waste:

5 Then can I drown an eye, unused to flow,

For precious friends hid in death's dateless night, *endless*

And weep afresh love's long since canceled woe,

And moan the expense of many a vanished sight: *loss*

Then can I grieve at grievances foregone, *past*

io And heavily from woe to woe tell o'er *count*

The sad account of fore-bemoaned moan, *report; financial record* Which I new pay as if not paid before.

But if the while I think on thee, dear friend,

All losses are restored and sorrows end.

33

Full many a glorious morning have I seen

Flatter the mountain-tops with sovereign eye,^o *sunlight*

Kissing with golden face the meadows green,

Gilding pale streams with heavenly alchemy,

5 Anon^o permit the basest clouds to ride *soon*

With ugly rack⁹ on his celestial face,

And from the forlorn world his visage hide,

Stealing unseen to west with this disgrace:

Even so my sun one early morn did shine

10 With all-triumphant splendor on my brow;

But, out, alack!⁰ he was but one hour mine, *also*

The region cloud¹ hath masked him from me now.

Yet him for this my love no whit disdaineth;

Suns of the world may stain² when heaven's sun staineth.

35

No more be grieved at that which thou hast done:

Roses have thorns, and silver fountains mud,

Clouds and eclipses stain⁰ both moon and sun, *dim; defile*

And loathsome canker⁰ lives in sweetest bud. *rose worm*

5 All men make faults, and even I in this,

Authorizing⁰ thy trespass with compare, *justifying*

Myself corrupting salving thy amiss,³

Excusing thy sins more than thy sins are:

8. One may be "summoned" to the "sessions" (sit- 1. I.e., the clouds in the vicinity, tings) of a court. 2. I.e., be stained.

9. A wind-driven mass of high, broken clouds. 3. Explaining, making acceptable or palliating 2 6 2 / W I L L I A M S H A

K E S P E A R E

For to thy sensual fault I bring in sense⁰— *reason*

10 Thy adverse party is thy advocate—

And ‘gainst myself a lawful plea commence.

Such civil war is in my love and hate,

That I an accessory needs must be

To that sweet thief which sourly robs from me.

55

Not marble, nor the gilded monuments

Of princes, shall outlive this powerful rhyme;

But you shall shine more bright in these contents

Than unswept stone, besmeared with sluttish time.

5 When wasteful war shall statues overturn,

And broils⁰ root out the work of masonry,⁴ *disturbances*

Nor Mars hiss sword nor war’s quick fire shall burn

The living record of your memory.

‘Gainst death and all-oblivious enmity⁶

io Shall you pace forth; your praise shall still find room

Even in the eyes of all posterity

**That wear this world out to the ending doom.⁰ *Judgment*
*Day***

So, till the judgment that yourself arise,⁷

You live in this, and dwell in lovers’ eyes.

60

Like as the waves make towards the pebbled shore,

So do our minutes hasten to their end,

Each changing place with that which goes before,

In sequent toil⁸ all forwards do contend.

5 Nativity, once in the main⁰ of light, *sea*
Crawls to maturity, wherewith being crowned,
Crooked⁹ eclipses ‘gainst his glory fight,
And time that gave doth now his gift confound.
Time doth transfix the flourish set on youth,
io And delves the parallels¹ in beauty’s brow,
Feeds on the rarities of nature’s truth,
And nothing stands but for² his scythe to mow.
And yet to times in hope³ my verse shall stand,
Praising thy worth, despite his cruel hand.

your offense; also, smoothing and healing, as with
 ous succession, in unbroken series.

an ointment, your misdeed.

9. Malignant (in an astrological sense), but also

4. Products of the stonemason’s work; work made
 suggesting the crookedness of an old man bent by
 of stone.

age-

5. I.e., neither Mars’s.

1. Digs the wrinkles (“parallels” are military

6. The enmity of being forgotten.

trenches). *Transfix the flourish*: destroy the beauty;

7. I.e., until the Judgment Day when (“that”) you

to “flourish” is also to blossom.

rise from the dead.

2. I.e., and stands for nothing except.

8. I.e., our minutes (like the waves) toil in contin-

3. Future times.

S O N N E T S : 7 3 / 2 6 3

65

**Since brass, nor⁴ stone, nor earth, nor boundless sea
But sad mortality o'er-sways their power,
How with this rage^o shall beauty hold a plea, *destructive
power***

Whose action is no stronger than a flower?

**5 O, how shall summer's honey breath hold out
Against the wrackfu^P siege of batt'ring days, *destructive*
When rocks impregnable are not so stout,
Nor gates of steel so strong, but time decays?**

O fearful meditation! where, alack,^o *alas*

**10 Shall time's best jewel from time's chest lie hid?
Or what strong hand can hold his swift foot back?
Or who his spoil of beauty⁵ can forbid?
O, none, unless this miracle have might,
That in black ink my love may still shine bright.**

71

**No longer mourn for me when I am dead
Than you shall hear the surly sullen bell⁶
Give warning to the world that I am fled
From this vile world, with vilest worms to dwell:
5 Nay, if you read this line, remember not
The hand that writ it; for I love you so,
That I in your sweet thoughts would be forgot,
If thinking on me then should make you woe.
Oh, if, I say, you look upon this verse
10 When I (perhaps) compounded am with clay,**

**Do not so much as my poor name rehearse,
But let your love even with my life decay;
Lest the wise world should look into your moan,
And mock you with me after I am gone.**

73

**That time of year thou mayst in me behold
When yellow leaves, or none, or few, do hang
Upon those boughs which shake against the cold,
Bare ruined choirs,⁷ where late the sweet birds sang.**

**5 In me thou see'st the twilight of such day
As after sunset fadeth in the west;**

Which by and by black night doth take away,

4. I.e., since there is neither brass nor

member, one stroke for each year he or she had

5. Ravaging of beauty; the Quarto has "or" for "of,"
lived.

and some modern editors follow that reading.

7. Parts of churches occupied by singers or clergy.

6. The bell rang to announce the death of a parish

264 / W I L L I A M S H A K E S P E A R E

Death's second self, that seals up all in rest.

In me thou see'st the glowing of such fire,

10 That on the ashes of his youth doth lie,

As the deathbed whereon it must expire,

Consumed with that which it was nourished by.

This thou perceiv'st, which makes thy love more strong,

To love that well which thou must leave ere long.

76

Why is my verse so barren of new pride,⁰ *adornment*

So far from variation or quick change?⁸

Why with the time do I not glance aside

To new-found methods, and to compounds⁹ strange?

5 Why write I still all one, ever the same,

And keep invention in a noted⁰ weed,⁰ *familiar / clothing*

That every word doth almost tell my name,

Showing their,⁰ birth, and where they did proceed? *the words'*

O know, sweet love, I always write of you,

io And you and love are still my argument.⁰ *theme*

So all my best is dressing old words new,

Spending again what is already spent:

For as the sun is daily new and old,

So is my love still telling what is told.

87

Farewell, thou art too dear¹ for my possessing,

And like enough thou know'st thy estimate.⁰ *value*

The charter⁰ of thy worth gives thee releasing; *privilege;*
deed

My bonds in thee are all determinate.⁰ *expired*

5 For how do I hold thee but by thy granting,

And for that riches where is my deserving?

The cause of this fair gift in me is wanting,

And so my patent⁰ back again is swerving. *title*

Thyself thou gav'st, thy own worth then not knowing,

io Or me, to whom thou gav'st it, else mistaking;

So thy great gift, upon misprision⁰ growing, *error; oversight*

Comes home again, on better judgement making.²

Thus have I had thee as a dream doth flatter:3

In sleep a king, but waking no such matter.

8. Facile innovation; modishness. 1. Precious (i.e., beloved), costly, grievous.

9. Mixture, compound words, literary compositions. 2. I.e., on your making a better judgment, tions. 3. As in a flattering dream.

S O N N E T S : 1 0 6 / 2 6 5

94

They that have power to hurt and will do none,

That do not do the thing they most do show,4

Who, moving others, are themselves as stone,

Unmoved, cold, and to temptation slow;

5 They rightly do inherit heaven's graces,

And husband nature's riches from expense;5

They are the lords and owners of their faces,

Others but stewards⁰ of their excellence. *hired managers*

The summer's flower is to the summer sweet,

io Though to itself it only live and die,

But if that flower with base infection meet,

The basest weed outbraves⁰ his dignity: *surpasses*

For sweetest things turn sourest by their deeds;

Lilies that fester smell far worse than weeds.

97

How like a winter hath my absence been

From thee, the pleasure of the fleeting year!

What freezings have I felt, what dark days seen!

What old December's bareness everywhere!

5 And yet this time removed⁰ was summer's time, *of separation*

The teeming autumn big with rich increase,
Bearing the wanton burthen of the prime,⁶
Like widowed wombs after their lords' decease.
Yet this abundant issue seemed to me
io But hope of orphans, and unfathered fruit;
For summer and his⁰ pleasures wait on thee, *its*
And thou away, the very birds are mute;
Or if they sing, 'tis with so dull a cheer,⁷
That leaves look pale, dreading the winter's near.

106

When in the chronicle of wasted⁰ time *past; destroyed*
I see descriptions of the fairest wights,⁰ *persons*
And beauty making beautiful old rhyme
In praise of ladies dead and lovely knights,
5 Then, in the blazon⁸ of sweet beauty's best,
Of hand, of foot, of lip, of eye, of brow,

I.e., what their appearance indicates they will
wantonness of one's sexual prime.

7. So gloomily; so downcast.

I.e., guard against squandering nature's riches.

8. A catalog of attributes; a literary form charac-

The children of wanton springtime, i.e., the
terized by a standardized description of the
>ps planted at that time; also, the fruits of the
woman's body parts.

266 / WILLIAM SHAKESPEARE

I see their antique pen would have expressed
Even such a beauty as you master now.

**So all their praises are but prophecies
io Of this our time, all you prefiguring;
And, for^o they looked but^o with divining eyes, *because /
only***

**They had not skill enough your worth to sing:
For we, which now behold these present days,
Have eyes to wonder, but lack tongues to praise.**

107

**Not mine own fears, nor the prophetic soul
Of the wide world dreaming on things to come,
Can yet the lease of my true love control,
Supposed as forfeit to a confined doom.⁹
5 The mortal moon' hath her eclipse endured,
And the sad augurs mock their own presage;⁰ *prediction*
Uncertainties now crown themselves assured,
And peace proclaims olives of endless age.
Now with the drops of this most balmy time
io My love looks fresh, and death to me subscribes,⁰
submits
Since, spite of him, I'll live in this poor rhyme,
While he insults o'er dull and speechless tribes:
And thou in this shalt find thy monument,
When tyrants' crests and tombs of brass are spent.⁰
*destroyed***

116

**Let me not to the marriage of true minds
Admit impediments. Love is not love
Which alters when it alteration finds,
Or bends with the remover to remove:**

**5 Oh, no! it is an ever-fixed mark,
That looks on tempests and is never shaken;
It is the star to every wandering bark,⁰ *ship*
Whose worth's unknown, although his height be taken.²
Love's not Time's fool, though rosy lips and cheeks
io Within his bending sickle's compass come;
Love alters not with his brief hours and weeks,
But bears it out even to the edge⁰ of doom.⁰ *brink*
*/Judgment Day***

**If this be error and upon me proved,
I never writ, nor no man ever loved.**

9. Playing on metaphors of real estate, the lines (43), whose sixty-third year had been erroneously suggest that despite his fears, the poet's love has anticipated by astrologers ("augurs," line 6) as a not yet suffered the fate of being limited ("con-time of disaster. fined") by death.

2. I.e., although the star's altitude may be mea-

1. Queen Elizabeth I (1533 - 1603; see pp. 142 - sured.

SONNETS : 130 / 267

1263

**O thou, my lovely boy, who in thy pow'r
Dost hold time's fickle glass his sickle hour,⁴
Who hast by waning grown,⁵ and therein⁰ show'st
*in contrast***

Thy lovers withering, as thy sweet self grow'st—

If nature, sovereign mistress over wrack,⁰
destruction,

As thou goest onwards still will pluck thee back,
She keeps thee to this purpose, that her skill
May time disgrace, and wretched minute kill.
Yet fear her, O thou minion⁶ of her pleasure;
She may detain but not still⁰ keep her treasure.
always, forever

Her audit,⁰ though delayed, answered must be,
final accounting

And her quietus⁰ is to render⁰ thee.
settlement / surrender

129

Th' expense of spirit in a waste of shame
Is lust in action;⁷ and till action, lust
Is perjured, murderous, bloody, full of blame,
Savage, extreme, rude,⁰ cruel, not to trust; *brutal*
5 Enjoyed no sooner but despised straight:
Past reason hunted; and no sooner had,
Past reason hated, as a swallowed bait,
On purpose laid to make the taker mad:
Mad in pursuit, and in possession so;
10 Had, having, and in quest to have, extreme;
A bliss in proof,⁰ and proved, a very woe; *the experience*
Before, a joy proposed; behind, a dream.
All this the world well knows; yet none knows well
To shun the heaven that leads men to this hell.

130

My mistress' eyes are nothing like the sun;

Coral is far more red than her lips' red;

If snow be white, why then her breasts are dun;⁰ *dull grayish brown*
If hairs be wires, black wires grow on her head.

5 I have seen roses damasked,⁰ *red and white, variegated*

But no such roses see I in her cheeks;

And in some perfumes is there more delight

3. An envoy of six couplets, this "sonnet" ends the

5. Grown more beautiful over time.

part of Shakespeare's sequence that seems ad-

6. Darling, favorite, plaything, servile follower.

dressed to a young man.

7. I.e., lust, when put into action, is an expendi-

4. Hourglass. *Glass*: mirror, presumably in which

ture of "spirit" (life, vigor, also semen) in a waste
the viewer can see time's ravaging of beauty.

(desert, with a play on the crotch, or "waist," of

Sickle: scythe, here in adjectival sense, cutting.

shame).

2 6 8 / W I L L I A M SHAKESPEARE

Than in the breath that from my mistress reeks.

I love to hear her speak, yet well I know

10 That music hath a far more pleasing sound;

I grant I never saw a goddess go;⁰ *walk*
My mistress, when she walks, treads on the ground.
And yet, by heaven, I think my love as rare
As any she⁰ belied with false compare. *woman*

135

Whoever hath her wish, thou hast thy *Will**
And *Will* to boot, and *Will* in overplus;
More than enough am I that vex thee still,⁰ *always*
To thy sweet will making addition thus.
5 Wilt thou, whose will is large and spacious,
Not once vouchsafe⁰ to hide my will in thine? *consent*
Shall will in others seem right gracious,
And in⁰ my will no fair acceptance shine? *in the case of*
The sea, all water, yet receives rain still,
io And in abundance addeth to his⁰ store;⁰ *its / reserves*
So thou being rich in *Will* add to thy *Will*
One will of mine, to make thy large *Will* more.
Let no unkind, no fair beseechers kill;⁹
Think all but one, and me in that one *Will*.

138

When my love swears that she is made of truth,
I do believe her, though I know she lies,¹
That⁰ she might think me some untutored youth, *so that*
Unlearned in the world's false subtleties.
5 Thus vainly thinking that she thinks me young,
Although she knows my days are past the best,²
Simply⁰ I credit her false-speaking tongue: *like a simpleton*
On both sides thus is simple truth suppressed.

But wherefore says she not she is unjust?³

io And wherefore say not I that I am old?

Oh, love's best habit⁰ is in seeming trust, *clothes; custom*

And age in love loves not to have years told.⁰ *counted*

Therefore I lie with her and she with me,

And in our faults by lies we flattered be.

8. Here, the word can refer to wishes, carnal

1. Does not tell the truth, with a pun on "lies" with desire, male and female sexual organs, and a lover men.

named Will (Shakespeare?). Three, possibly four,

2. When this sonnet was first published, in the sonnets pun on "will"; we follow the 1609 Quarto's anthology *The Passionate Pilgrim* (1599), Shakespeare way of printing the word.

speare was thirty-five.

9. Do not kill any of your suitors with unkindness.

3. I.e., why does she not say that she is unfaithful?

S O N N E T S : 1 4 6 / 2 6 9

144

Two loves I have of comfort and despair,⁴

Which like two spirits do suggest⁰ me still⁰ *tempt/always*

The better angel is a man right fair,

The worser spirit a woman coloured ill.^o *dark*

5 To win me soon to hell, my female evil

Tempteth my better angel from my side,

And would corrupt my saint to be a devil,

Wooing his purity with her foul pride.⁰ *vanity; sexual wantonness*

And, whether that my angel be turn'd fiend,

io Suspect I may, yet not directly tell,

But being both from⁰ me both to each⁰ friend, *away from / each other*

I guess one angel in another's hell.⁵

Yet this shall I ne'er know, but live in doubt,

Till my bad angel fire my good one out.⁶

146

Poor soul, the center of my sinful earth,

Lord of⁷ these rebel powers that thee array,⁰ *dress, deck out*

Why dost thou pine within and suffer dearth,

Painting thy outward walls so costly gay?

5 Why so large cost, having so short a lease,

Dost thou upon thy fading mansion spend?

Shall worms, inheritors of this excess,

Eat up thy charge?⁸ Is this thy body's end?

Then, soul, live thou upon thy servant's loss,

io And let that pine to aggravate thy store;⁹

Buy terms divine in selling hours of dross;¹

Within be fed, without be rich no more.

So shalt thou feed on death, that feeds on men,

And death once dead, there's no more dying then.

1609

4. I have two beloveds; one brings me comfort,

apparently a mistake, in place of "Lord of" (an edi-

and the other despair.

torial conjecture) at the beginning of this line.

5. Each is a punishment for the other; also, a double entendre.
Other possibilities have been suggested, e.g.,

“Rebuke,” “Thrall to,” “Pressed by.”

6. The metaphor is from hunting: using fire and

8. Your expenditure; your trust, i.e., your body; smoke to drive a fox from its hole. The line also your burden.

alludes to the onset of venereal disease, to the

9. I.e., let the body suffer (“pine”) to increase your Renaissance coin called an *angel*, and to various riches.

proverbial sayings including *One fire drives out*

1. I.e., purchase ages of immortality through selling hours of mortal time. *Dross*: rubbish.

7. The 1609 Quarto repeats “My sinful earth,”

270 / WILLIAM SHAKESPEARE

The Phoenix and the Turtle²

Let the bird of loudest lay,^o

song

On the sole^o Arabian tree,

unique

Herald sad^o and trumpet be,

solemn

To whose sound chaste wings obey.

5 But thou shrieking harbinger,³

Foul precurrer of the fiend,⁴
Augur of the fever's end,⁵
To this troop come thou not near!

From this session interdict⁰
forbid

10 Every fowl of tyrant wing,⁶
Save the eagle, feathered king:
Keep the obsequy⁰ so strict.

funeral rites

Let the priest in surplice⁰ white,
vestment

That defunctive⁰ music can,"

funeral / knows

15 Be the death-divining swan,⁷
Lest the requiem lack his^o right.⁰

its / due ceremony

And thou treble-dated crow,⁸
That thy sable⁰ gender mak'st
With the breath thou giv'st and tak'st,

black

20 'Mongst our mourners shalt thou go.

Here the anthem doth commence:

Love and constancy is dead,

Phoenix and the turtle fled

In a mutual flame from hence.

25 So they loved as^o love in twain *as if*

Had the essence but in one;

Two distincts, division none:

Number there in love was slain.⁹

Hearts remote, yet not asunder;

30 Distance, and no space was seen

‘Twixt this turtle and his queen;

But in them it were a wonder.¹

2. Turtledove, famous for steadfastness in love.

drew near, it “divined” (knew) the time of its death.

The phoenix is a legendary bird, the only one of its

8. The crow was supposed to live three times

kind. It is represented as living five hundred years

longer than humans and to conceive its young

in the Arabian desert before setting itself on fire,

(“sable gender,” line 18) through its beak.

then rising anew from its own ashes. The identity of

9. Refers to the Aristotelian theory that “one is no

the bird in line 1 has been much debated; most

number,” as Marlowe puts it in *Hero and Leander*,

critics agree that it is not the phoenix, which left

line 255 (p. 244). The stanza depicts the lovers as

“no posterity” (line 59).

paradoxically united but separate. Because they

3. I.e., the screech owl, harbinger of death.

are neither one nor two, their “love” has “slain” the

4. I.e., forerunner of Satan.

idea of “number.”

5. I.e., presager of death.

1. I.e., in anyone except (“but”) them, it would

6. I.e., every predatory bird.

have been a wonder.

7. Since the swan was said to sing only as its death

T H E P H O E N I X AND THE T U R T L E / 2 7 1

So° between them love did shine *so much*

That the turtle saw his right⁰ *due; possession; nature*

35 Flaming in the phoenix' sight:⁰ *eyes*

Either was the other's mine.²

Property was thus appalled,

That the self was not the same;

Single nature's double name

40 Neither two nor one was called.

Reason, in itself confounded,⁰ *destroyed*

Saw division grow together,

To themselves yet either neither,

Simple were so well compounded;

45 That it cried, "How true⁰ a twain *faithful; truly*

Seemeth this concordant one!

Love hath reason, reason none,

If what parts can so remain."³

Whereupon it made this threne⁴

50 To the phoenix and the dove,

Co-supremes° and stars of love, *joint rulers*

As chorus to their tragic scene.

Threnos

Beauty, truth,⁰ and rarity, *fidelity*

Grace in all simplicity,

55 Here enclosed in cinders lie.

Death is now the phoenix' nest;

And the turtle's loyal breast
To eternity doth rest,⁵
Leaving no posterity:
60 'Twas not their infirmity,⁰ *sterility*
It was married chastity.
Truth may seem, but cannot be;
Beauty brag, but 'tis not she:
Truth and Beauty buried be.
65 To this urn let those repair
That are either true or fair;
For these dead birds sigh a prayer.

1601

2. I.e., self; with a pun on source of (mineral)

4. Threnos or threnody (Greek), a lyrical lament
wealth.

over the dead.

3. I.e., if what is separate can remain joined, then

5. Rests eternally; endures forever.

reason yields to love as more reasonable.

272 / WILLIAM SHAKESPEARE

S O N G S FROM THE PLAYS

When Daisies Pied⁶

Spring

When daisies pied⁰ and violets blue *variegated*

And lady-smocks all silver-white

And cuckoo-buds of yellow hue⁷

Do paint the meadows with delight,

5 The cuckoo then, on every tree,

Mocks married men;⁸ for thus sings he,
Cuckoo;
Cuckoo, cuckoo: Oh word of fear,
Unpleasing to a married ear!
10 When shepherds pipe on oaten⁰ straws,⁰ *reed/pipes*
And merry larks are plowmen's clocks,⁹
When turtles tread, and rooks, and daws,¹
And maidens bleach their summer smocks,
The cuckoo then, on every tree,
15 Mocks married men; for thus sings he,
Cuckoo;
Cuckoo, cuckoo: Oh word of fear,
Unpleasing to a married ear!

Winter

When icicles hang by the wall
20 And Dick the shepherd blows his nail²
And Tom bears logs into the hall,
And milk comes frozen home in pail.
When blood is nipped⁰ and ways⁰ be foul, *chilled /paths*
Then nightly sings the staring owl,
25 Tu-who;
Tu-whit,³ tu-who: a merry note,
While greasy Joan doth keel⁰ the pot. *stir to cool*
When all aloud the wind doth blow,
And coughing drowns the parson's saw,⁰ *wise saying*
30 And birds sit brooding in the snow,
And Marian's nose looks red and raw,
When roasted crabs⁰ hiss in the bowl,⁰ *crab apples / (of ale)*

Then nightly sings the staring owl,

Tu-who;

35 Tu-whit, tu-who: a merry note

While greasy Joan doth keel the pot.

1595? 1598

6. This song concludes *Love's Labour's Lost*.

old, meaning a husband whose wife is unfaithful.

Announced as a "Dialogue ... in praise of the Owl

9. Larks sing at sunrise.

and the Cuckoo," it provides a lyric commentary

1. Two kinds of crows. *When turtles tread*: i.e.,

on the bittersweet mood that pervades the play's

when turtledoves mate.

final scene.

2. I.e., breathes on his fingers to warm them; also,

7. Modern commentators differ in identifying

waits patiently while he has nothing to do.

these flowers.

3. Possibly "to woo; to it" (the latter a hunter's cry,

8. The cuckoo's song was often translated as *cuck-*

here with sexual overtones).

B L O W , B L O W , T H O U W I N T E R W I N D / 2 7 3

Under the Greenwood Tree⁴

Under the greenwood tree

Who loves to lie with me,

And turn⁰ his merry note *attune*

Unto the sweet bird's throat,

5 Come hither, come hither, come hither:

Here shall he see

No enemy

But winter and rough weather.

Who doth ambition shun

10 And loves to live i' the sun,

Seeking the food he eats,

And pleased with what he gets,

Come hither, come hither, come hither:

Here shall he see

15 No enemy

But winter and rough weather.

1599? 1623

Blow, Blow, Thou Winter Wind⁵

Blow, blow, thou winter wind,

Thou art not so unkind

As man's ingratitude;

Thy tooth is not so keen,

5 Because thou art not seen,

Although thy breath be rude.⁰ *rough*

Heigh-ho! sing, heigh-ho! unto the green holly:6

Most friendship is feigning, most loving mere folly:

Then, heigh-ho, the holly!

io This life is most jolly.

Freeze, freeze, thou bitter sky,

That dost not bite so nigh

As benefits forgot:

Though thou the waters warp,⁷

15 Thy sting is not so sharp

As friend remembered not.

Heigh-ho! sing, heigh-ho! unto the green holly ...

1599? 1623

4. From *As You Like It* (2.5). Sung by Amiens, a lord attending the banished duke in the Forest of Arden, this lyric elaborates on the play's thematic contrast between nature and human behavior.

the traditional opposition between pastoral and

6. An emblem of mirth.

courtly modes of life.

7. I.e., freeze.

5. From *As You Like It* (2.7). Sung by Amiens, a

274 / W I L L I A M SHAKESPEARE

It Was a Lover and His Lass⁸

It was a lover and his lass,

With a hey, and a ho, and a hey nonino,

That o'er the green corn⁰ field did pass *wheat*

In springtime, the only pretty ring time,⁹

5 *When birds do sing, hey ding a ding, ding:*

Sweet lovers love the spring.

Between the acres of the rye,¹

With a hey, and a ho, and a hey nonino,

These pretty country folks would lie,

10 In springtime, the only pretty ring time ...

This carol⁰ they began that hour, *song*

With a hey, and a ho, and a hey nonino,

How that a life was but a flower

In springtime, the only pretty ring time ...

**15 And therefore take0 the present time,
seize**

**With a hey, and a ho, and a hey nonino;
For love is crowned with the prime0
springtime**

In springtime, the only pretty ring time .

1599? 1623

Sigh No More²

Sigh no more, ladies, sigh no more.

Men were deceivers ever,

One foot in sea, and one on shore,

To one thing constant never.

5 Then sigh not so, but let them go,

And be you blithe0 and bonny,0 *cheerful /joyful*

Converting all your sounds of woe

Into hey nonny, nonny.³

Sign no more ditties, sing no more

10 Of dumps0 SO dull and heavy. *mournful songs or moods*

The fraud of men was ever so

Since summer first was leafy.

Then sigh not so, but let them go,

And be you blithe and bonny,

8. From *As You Like It* (5.3). Sung by two pages

1. On unplowed ground between the planted
to the clown, Touchstone, and the “country
fields.

wench,” Audrey; in the next (and final) scene, this

2. Sung by Balthasar, attendant to the villainous couple and three other couples will marry.

Don Pedro, in *Much Ado About Nothing* (2.3).

9. I.e., marriage season.

3. (A nonsense refrain.)

C O M E A W A Y , C O M E A W A Y , D E A T H / 2 7 5

15 Converting all your sounds of woe

Into hey nonny, nonny.

1600 1623

Oh Mistress Mine⁴

Oh mistress mine! where are you roaming?

Oh! stay and hear; your true love’s coming,

That can sing both high and low.

Trip⁰ no further, pretty sweeting; go

5 Journeys end in lovers meeting,

Every wise man’s son⁵ doth know.

What is love? ‘tis not hereafter;

Present mirth hath present laughter;

What’s to come is still⁰ unsure: *always*

10 In delay there lies no plenty;

Then come kiss me, sweet and twenty,

Youth’s a stuff will not endure.

1602 1623

Come Away, Come Away, Death⁶

Come away, come away, death,

And in sad cypress⁷ let me be laid.

Fly away, fly away, breath;

**I am slain by a fair cruel maid.
5 My shroud of white, stuck all with yew,⁸
O, prepare it!
My part of death, no one so true
Did share it.
Not a flower, not a flower sweet,
10 On my black coffin let there be strown.
Not a friend, not a friend greet
My poor corpse, where my bones shall be thrown.
A thousand thousand sighs to save,
Lay me, O, where
15 Sad true lover never find my grave,
To weep there!**

1602

1623

4. From *Twelfth Night* (2.3). Sung by the clown, choly request for a song.

Feste, in response to a request by Sir Toby and Sir

7. A coffin of cypress or a bier covered with Andrew for a “love-song.”

cypress boughs. The tree symbolized mourning.

5. I.e., proverbially: every fool.

8. A tree symbolizing sadness, often planted in

6. From *Twelfth Night* (2.4). Sung by the clown, churchyards.

Feste, in response to the lovesick duke’s melan-

276 / W I L L I A M SHAKESPEARE

When That I Was and a Little Tiny Boy⁹

When that I was and a little tiny boy,
With hey, ho, the wind and the rain,
A foolish thing was but a toy,¹
For the rain it raineth every day.
5 But when I came to man's estate,⁰ *state, condition*
With hey, ho, the wind and the rain,
'Gainst knaves and thieves men shut their gate,
For the rain it raineth every day.
But when I came, alas! to wive,
10 With hey, ho, the wind and the rain,
By swaggering⁰ could I never thrive, *blustering*
For the rain it raineth every day.
But when I came unto my beds,
With hey, ho, the wind and the rain,
15 With toss-pots⁰ still had drunken heads, *drunkards*
For the rain it raineth every day.
A great while ago the world begun,
With hey, ho, the wind and the rain,
But that's all one, our play is done,
20 And we'll strive to please you every day.

1602 1623

Fear No More the Heat o' the Sun²
Fear no more the heat o' the sun,
Nor the furious winter's rages;
Thou thy worldly task hast done,
Home art gone, and ta'en thy wages:
5 Golden lads and girls all must,
As⁰ chimney-sweepers, come to dust. *like*

**Fear no more the frown o' the great;
Thou art past the tyrant's stroke;
Care no more to clothe and eat;
io To thee the reed is as the oak:3
The scepter,0 learning, physic,0 must *royal power /
medicine*
All follow this, and come to dust.**

9. Sung by the clown, Feste, to conclude *Twelfth Night* for Fidele, a "young boy" who is actually Imogen

in disguise and is not actually dead.

1. Trifle. I.e., my mischief was not taken seriously.

3. I.e., to you, what is fragile ("the reed") is the

2. From *Cymheline* (4.2). A lament by two singers-
same as what is enduring ("the oak").

**WHERE THE BEES SUCKS, THERE SUCK I /
277**

**Fear no more the lightning flash,
Nor the all-dreaded thunder stone;4
15 Fear not slander, censure rash;
Thou hast finished joy and moan:
All lovers young, all lovers must
Consign to thee,5 and come to dust.
No exorciser harm thee!
20 Nor no witchcraft charm thee!
Ghost unlaid forbear thee!
Nothing ill come near thee!
Quiet consummation have;
And renowned be thy grave!**

1 6 1 0 ? 1 6 2 3

Full Fathom Five⁶

Full fathom five thy father lies;

Of his bones are coral made;

Those are pearls that were his eyes:

Nothing of him that doth fade,

5 But doth suffer a sea change

Into something rich and strange.

Sea nymphs⁷ hourly ring his knell:

Ding-dong.

Hark! now I hear them—Ding-dong, bell.

1 6 1 1 1 6 2 3

Where the Bee Sucks, There Suck I⁸

Where the bee sucks, there suck I:

In a cowslip's⁹ bell I lie; *a wildflower's*

There I couch when owls do cry.

On the bat's back I do fly

5 After summer merrily.

Merrily, merrily shall I live now

Under the blossom that hangs on the bough.

1 6 1 1 1 6 2 3

4. Thunder was thought to be caused by meteor-

7. In Greek mythology, minor goddesses who lived
ites falling from the sky.

in water.

5. I.e., accept the same terms that governed you.

8. From *The Tempest* (5.1). Ariel, the airy spirit of

6. From *The Tempest* (1.2). Ariel, the airy spirit of

the enchanted isle, sings this song in anticipation
the enchanted isle, sings this song to lead the ship-
of his approaching freedom from servitude.
wrecked Ferdinand, prince of Naples, to Prospero.

2 7 8

THOMAS CAMPION

1567-1620

My Sweetest Lesbia¹

**My sweetest Lesbia, let us live and love,
And though the sager sort our deeds reprove,
Let us not weigh⁰ them. Heaven's great lamps do dive *heed*
Into their west, and straight again revive,
5 But soon as once set is our little light,
Then must we sleep one ever-during night.
If all would lead their lives in love like me,
Then bloody swords and armor should not be;
No drum nor trumpet peaceful sleeps should move,
io Unless alarm came from the camp of love.
But fools do live, and waste their little light,
And seek with pain their ever-during night.
When timely death my life and fortune ends,
Let not my hearse be vexed with mourning friends,
15 But let all lovers, rich in triumph, come
And with sweet pastimes grace my happy tomb;
And Lesbia, close up thou my little light,
And crown with love my ever-during night.**

1601

I Care Not for These Ladies

**I care not for these ladies,
That must be wooed and prayed:
Give me kind Amaryllis,
The wanton country² maid.
5 Nature art disdaineth,
Her beauty is her own.
Her when we court and kiss,
She cries, “Forsooth, let go!”
But when we come where comfort is,
10 She never will say no.
If I love Amaryllis,
She gives me fruit and flowers:
But if we love these ladies,
We must give golden showers.³
15 Give them gold, that sell love,**

1. The Roman poet Catullus (ca. 84-ca. 54 B.C.E.) 2. With an obscene pun, as in line 9.

sang the praises of his beloved Lesbia in a poem 3. An allusion to the Greek myth in which Jove here imitated and partly translated by Campion. takes the form of a shower of gold to ravish Danae.

F O L L O W T H Y F A I R S U N / 2 7 9

**Give me the nut-brown lass,
Who, when we court and kiss,
She cries, “Forsooth, let go!”
But when we come where comfort is,
20 She never will say no.
These ladies must have pillows,
And beds by strangers wrought;**

**Give me a bower of willows,
Of moss and leaves unbought,
25 And fresh Amaryllis,
With milk and honey fed;
Who, when we court and kiss,
She cries, "Forsooth, let go!"
But when we come where comfort is,
30 She never will say no.**

1601

Follow Thy Fair Sun

**Follow thy fair sun, unhappy shadow;4
Though thou be black as night,
And she made all of light,
Yet follow thy fair sun, unhappy shadow.
5 Follow her whose light thy light depriveth;
Though here thou liv'st disgraced,
And she in heaven is placed,
Yet follow her whose light the world revive th!
Follow those pure beams whose beauty burneth,
10 That so have scorched thee,
As thou still black must be,5
Till her kind beams thy black to brightness turneth.
Follow her while yet her glory shineth;
There comes a luckless night,
15 That will dim all her light;
And this the black unhappy shade divineth.
Follow still since so thy fates ordained;
The sun must have his shade,**

Till both at once do fade;

**20 The sun still proved,0 the shadow still disdained.
*approved.***

1601

4. Soul; also, a person imagined as dead (a *shade*, also plays on the idea of black as the color of sin and lost to heaven's light).

(pointing toward an afterlife in hell) and as the sign

5. In Renaissance England, dark skins were often of mourning.

held to be caused by the sun's burning; the line

280 / T H O M A S C A M P I O N

When to Her Lute Corinna Sings

When to her lute Corinna sings,

Her voice revives the leaden strings,

And doth in highest notes appear

As any challenged0 echo clear; *aroused*

5 But when she doth of mourning speak,

Ev'n with her sighs the strings do break.

And as her lute doth live or die,

Led by her passion, so must I:

For when of pleasure she doth sing,

10 My thoughts enjoy a sudden spring,

But if she doth of sorrow speak,

Ev'n from my heart the strings do break.

1601

When Thou Must Home⁶

When thou must home to shades of underground,

And there arrived, a new admired guest,
The beauteous spirits do engirt⁰ thee round, *encircle*
White lope, blithe Helen,⁷ and the rest,
5 To hear the stories of thy finished love
From that smooth tongue whose music hell can move,⁸
Then wilt thou speak of banqueting delights,
Of masques⁹ and revels which sweet youth did make,
Of tourneys and great challenges of knights,
io And all these triumphs for thy beauty's sake;
When thou hast told these honors done to thee,
Then tell, Oh tell, how thou didst murder⁰ me. *murder*
1601

Rose-cheeked Laura¹

**Rose-cheeked Laura, come,
Sing thou smoothly with thy beauty's**

6. This poem addresses a woman the speaker to reclaim his wife, Eurydice, his music moved, i.e., imagines as already dead, "home" in hell. touched, the spirits of Hades.

7. The Greek mythological figures lope, or Cassi-

9. Elaborate court entertainments in which aris-
opeia, and Helen of Troy, the first renowned for
tocrats performed a dignified play, usually allegor-
beauty and vanity, the second for beauty and fick-
ical and mythological, that ended in a formal
leness. *Blithe*: happy.

dance.

8. I.e., whose music can move hell. In Greek

1. This poem exemplifies Campion's interest in mythology, when Orpheus went to the underworld
quantitative verse (see "Versification," p. 2036).

N o w W I N T E R N I G H T S E N L A R G E / 2 8 1

Silent music, either⁰ other *each the*

Sweetly gracing.

5 Lovely forms do flow

From concent⁰ divinely framed; *sounds in harmony*

Heav'n is music, and thy beauty's

Birth is heavenly.

These dull notes we sing

io Discords need for helps to grace them;

Only beauty purely loving

Knows no discord,

But still moves delight,

Like clear springs renewed by flowing,

15 Ever perfect, ever in them-

Selves eternal.

1602

Now Winter Nights Enlarge

Now winter nights enlarge

The number of their hours;

And clouds their storms discharge

Upon the airy towers.

5 Let now the chimneys blaze

And cups o'erflow with wine,

Let well-tuned words amaze

With harmony divine.

Now yellow waxen lights
io Shall wait on honey love
While youthful revels, masques,² and courtly sights
Sleep's leaden spells remove.
This time doth well dispense³
With lovers' long discourse;
15 Much speech hath some defense,
Though beauty no remorse.
All do not all things well;
Some measures comely tread,⁴
Some knotted riddles tell,
20 Some poems smoothly read.
The summer hath his joys,
And winter his delights;
Though love and all his pleasures are but toys,
They shorten tedious nights.

1 6 1 7

2. See note 9 above. 4. I.e., some dance (tread measures) in a beautiful

3. I.e., this time deals indulgently. way.

2 8 2 / T H O M A S N A S H E

There Is a Garden in Her Face

**There is a garden in her face,
Where roses and white lilies grow,
A heavenly paradise is that place,
Wherein all pleasant fruits do flow.**

5 There cherries grow, which none may buy
Till "Cherry ripe!"⁵ themselves do cry.

Those cherries fairly do enclose
Of orient pearl a double row,
Which when her lovely laughter shows,
10 They look like rosebuds filled with snow.
Yet them nor^o peer nor prince can buy, *neither*
Till “Cherry ripe!” themselves do cry.
Her eyes like angels watch them still;
Her brows like bended bows do stand,
15 Threatening with piercing frowns to kill
All that attempt with eye or hand
Those sacred cherries to come nigh,
Till “Cherry ripe!” themselves do cry.
1 6 1 7

T H O M A S N A S H E

1567-1601

F R O M S U M M E R ‘ S L A S T W I L L

[Spring, the Sweet Spring]¹

Spring, the sweet spring, is the year’s pleasant king,
Then blooms each thing, then maids dance in a ring,
Cold doth not sting, the pretty birds do sing:
Cuckoo, jug-jug, pu-we, to-witta-woo!²

5 The palm and may³ make country houses gay,
Lambs frisk and play, the shepherds pipe all day,

5. A London street vendor’s cry.

owl.

1. Sung by Ver (Latin for “spring”) in Nashe’s alle-

3. Hawthorn blossoms. The palms may be left over
gorical drama *Summer’s Last Will and Testament*,

from the religious celebration known as Palm Sunday first performed in 1592 in the palace of the archbishop of Canterbury.

memorates Christ's entry into Jerusalem.

2. Birdsongs of the cuckoo, nightingale, lapwing,

[A D I E U , F A R E W E L L , E A R T H ' S B L I S S] / 2 8

3

And we hear aye birds tune this merry lay:0 *song*

Cuckoo, jug-jug, pu-we, to-witta-woo!

The fields breathe sweet, the daisies kiss our feet,

10 Young lovers meet, old wives a-sunning sit,

In every street these tunes our ears do greet:

Cuckoo, jug-jug, pu-we, to-witta-woo!

Spring, the sweet spring!

[Adieu, Farewell, Earth's Bliss]4

Adieu, farewell, earth's bliss;

This world uncertain is;

Fond0 are life's lustful joys; *foolish*

Death proves them all but toys;0 *trifles*

5 None from his darts can fly;

I am sick, I must die.

Lord, have mercy on us!5

Rich men, trust not in wealth,

Gold cannot buy you health;

io Physic0 himself0 must fade. *medicine / itself*

All things to end are made,

The plague full swift goes by;

I am sick, I must die.

Lord, have mercy on us!

15 Beauty is but a flower

Which wrinkles will devour;

Brightness falls from the air;

Queens have died young and fair;

Dust hath closed Helen's⁶ eye.

20 I am sick, I must die.

Lord, have mercy on us!

Strength stoops unto the grave,

Worms feed on Hector⁷ brave;

4. Often titled by editors “A Litany in Time of

5. These recurring words—from the Litany, a Plague,” this lyric comes from Nashe’s allegorical standard prayer in Church of England services—drama *Summer’s Last Will and Testament*. First were inscribed in red letters on plague-stricken performed during the summer of 1592 in the pal-houses.

ace of the archbishop of Canterbury, the play

6. Helen of Troy, who was renowned for her repeatedly alludes to the epidemic of plague that beauty, and whose abduction was said to be the had driven the archbishop and his aristocratic cause of the Trojan War.

guests from London. Summer, who enters the play

7. Renowned for his bravery, he was the son of already sick, requests a “doleful ditty” that will

Priam and leader of the Trojans against the
lament his “near-approaching death.”

Greeks.

284 / A E M I L I A L A N Y E R

Swords may not fight with fate,
25 Earth still holds ope her gate.

“Come, come!” the bells do cry.

I am sick, I must die.

Lord, have mercy on us.

Wit with his wantonness

30 Tasteth death’s bitterness;

Hell’s executioner

Hath no ears for to hear

What vain art can reply.

I am sick, I must die.

35 Lord, have mercy on us.

Haste, therefore, each degree,⁰ *rank; social station*

To welcome destiny;

Heaven is our heritage,

Earth but a player’s stage;

40 Mount we unto the sky.

I am sick, I must die.

Lord, have mercy on us.

1592 1600

AEMILIA LANYER

1569-1645

From Salve Deus Rex Judaeorum¹

Sith^o Cynthia² is ascended to that rest *since*

Of endless joy and true eternity,
That glorious place that cannot be expressed
By any wight0 clad in mortality, *person*
5 In her almighty love so highly blessed,
And crowned with everlasting sov'reignty;
Where saints and angels do attend her throne,
And she gives glory unto God alone.

1. Hail God, King of the Jews (Latin); a variant of "The Passion of Christ," "Eve's Apology in Defense the inscription on Christ's cross. Lanyer claimed of Women," "The Tears of the Daughters of Jerusalem," and "The Salutation and Sorrow of the Virgin Mary." The stanzas reprinted here are from the opening of the poem and from its second section. patrons including Mary Sidney, countess of Pembroke (1561-1621; see pp. 225-30). The main part of Lanyer's poem begins and ends with praise of the moon, frequently applied to Queen Elizabeth I (1533-1603; see pp. 142-43). As a powerful and much-revered queen, she is an appropriate "first patron. The poem itself is divided into four parts:

invoke.

SALVE DEUS REX JUDAEORUM / 285

To thee great Countess³ now I will apply

10 My pen, to write thy never dying fame;

That when to heaven thy blessed soul shall fly,

These lines on earth record thy reverend name:

And to this task I mean my Muse to tie,

Though wanting skill I shall but purchase blame:

15 Pardon (dear Lady) want of woman's wit

To pen thy praise, when few can equal it.

745 Now Pontius Pilate is to judge the cause⁴

Of faultless Jesus, who before him stands;

Who neither hath offended prince, nor laws,

Although he now be brought in woeful bands:

O noble governor, make thou yet a pause,

750 Do not in innocent blood imbrue⁰ thy hands; *stain*

But hear the words of thy most worthy wife,

Who sends to thee, to beg her Savior's life.⁵

Let barb'rous cruelty far depart from thee,

And in true justice take affliction's part;

755 Open thine eyes, that thou the truth may'st see,

Do not the thing that goes against thy heart,

Condemn not him that must thy Savior be;

But view his holy life, his good desert.

Let not us women glory in men's fall,

760 Who had power given to over-rule us all.⁶

Eve's Apology

Till now your indiscretion sets us free,

And makes our former fault much less appear;⁷
Our Mother Eve, who tasted of the Tree,
Giving to Adam what she held most dear,
765 Was simply⁰ good, and had no power to see, *ignorantly*
The after-coming harm did not appear;
The subtle⁰ serpent that our sex betrayed, *crafty*
Before our fall so sure a plot had laid.
That undiscerning Ignorance⁸ perceived
770 No guile, or craft that was by him^o intended: *the*
serpent

3. Margaret Clifford, countess of Cumberland directly from Pontius Pilate's (unwise) refusal to (see note 1 above).

heed his wife's words about her prophetic dream.

4. Case. Pilate was the Roman governor of Jerusalem's speaker addresses Pilate, in an apostrophe, beginning in line 761.

Christ, see Matthew 27.11-24.

6. According to Genesis 3.16, Eve was punished

5. In Matthew 27.19, Pontius Pilate's wife sends for the Fall by being made subject to her husband. a message saying "Have thou nothing to do with

7. I.e., men "over-ruled" women until this (imagined) moment of Christ's judgment, when your day in a dream because of him." Lanyer gives this error in condemning Christ (Pilate's error and by

minor biblical character a major narrative role,
extension that of men in general) frees women by
making her the dramatic advocate both of Christ
making Eve's sin seem much less by comparison.
and of Eve and hence a fulcrum linking the first
8. I.e., Eve.

and second parts of the poem; the "Apology" flows

286 / A E M I L I A L A N Y E R

For, had she known of what we were bereaved,⁹

To his request she had not condescended.

But she (poor soul) by cunning was deceived¹

No hurt therein her harmless heart intended:

775 For she alleged⁰ God's word, which he⁰ denies,
asserted / the serpent **That they should die, but even as**
gods, be wise.²

But surely Adam cannot be excused,

Her fault, though great, yet he was most to blame;

What weakness offered, strength might have refused,

780 Being lord of all, the greater was his shame:

Although the serpent's craft had her abused,

God's holy word ought all his actions frame:⁰ *shape*

For he was lord and king of all the earth,

Before poor Eve had either life or breath.

785 Who being framed by God's eternal hand,

The perfect'st man that ever breathed on earth,

And from God's mouth received that strait⁰ *strict, narrow*
command,

The breach whereof he knew was present death:

Yea having power to rule both sea and land,

**790 Yet with one apple won to lose that breath,
Which God hath breathed in his beauteous face,
Bringing us all in danger and disgrace.
And then to lay the fault on Patience back,³
That we (poor women) must endure it all;
795 We know right well he did discretion lack,
Being not persuaded thereunto at all;
If Eve did err, it was for knowledge sake,
The fruit being fair persuaded him⁰ to fall: *Adam*
No subtle serpent's falsehood did betray him,
800 If he would eat it, who had power to stay him?
Not Eve, whose fault was only too much love,
Which made her give this present to her dear,
That what she tasted, he likewise might prove,⁰ *experience*
Whereby his knowledge might become more clear;
805 He never sought her weakness to reprove,
With those sharp words, which he of God did hear;
Yet men will boast of knowledge, which he took
From Eve's fair hand, as from a learned book.**

9. I.e., of eternal life. In Genesis 3, Eve is enticed
2. Eve put forward God's "word" (that humans
by the serpent to eat the forbidden fruit, and Adam
would die if they disobeyed), and the serpent
then eats when she offers it to him. God expels
denied that idea, arguing instead that humans
them from Eden, condemning Adam to hard work,
would become "wise" as gods.

Eve to pain in childbirth, and both to suffering and

3. Eve is allegorized as Patience, with a glance at death.

the literary tradition of the wronged but patient

1. Cf. 1 Timoth} 2.14: “And Adam was not wife (e.g. the “patient Griselda” in Chaucer’s deceived but the woman being deceived was in the “Clerk’s Tale”).

transgression.”

SALVE DEUS REX JUDAEORUM / 287

If any evil did in her remain,

8io Being made of him, he was the ground of all;4

If one of many worlds5 could lay a stain

Upon our sex, and work so great a fall

To wretched man, by Satan’s subtle train;6

What will so foul a fault amongst you all?

815 Her weakness did the serpent’s words obey,

But you in malice God’s dear Son betray.7

Whom, if unjustly you condemn to die,

Her^o sin was small, to what you do commit; *Eve’s*

All mortal^o sins that do for vengeance cry, *punishable by damnation* 820 Are not to be compared unto it:

If many worlds would altogether try,

By all their sins the wrath of God to get;

This sin of yours, surmounts them all as far

As doth the sun, another little star.8

825 Then let us have our liberty again,

And challenge^o to your selves no Sov’reignty; *claim*

You came not in the world without our pain,^o *of childbirth*

Make that a bar against⁹ your cruelty;
Your fault being greater, why should you disdain
830 Our being your equals, free from tyranny?
If one weak woman simply did offend,
This sin of yours hath no excuse, nor end.
To which (poor souls) we never gave consent,
Witness thy wife (O Pilate) speaks for all;
835 Who did but dream, and yet a message sent,
That thou should'st have nothing to do at all
With that just man; which, if thy heart relent,
Why wilt thou be a reprobate with Saul?¹
To seek the death of him that is so good,
840 For thy soul's health to shed his dearest blood.

1611

4. With a pun on, in Hebrew, Adam's name wife addresses both men in general ("you all") and (*ha'adam*) and the word for ground (*ha'adama*). her husband, recalling the specific dramatic situation of Christ's trial.

which the Lord God had taken from man, made

8. In Ptolemaic astronomy, the sun was larger than the planets and fixed stars.

Genesis 2.22).

9. I.e., let that prevent.

5. Perhaps an allusion to the popular seventeenth-

1. I.e., morally unprincipled like Saul, the first

century belief in a plurality of inhabited globes in
king of Israel, who was rejected by God for dis-
the universe, or at least in the solar system. Cf.
obedience, and who plotted to kill David, his suc-
Milton, *Paradise Lost* 3.565 ff. *One*: Adam.
cessor (1 Samuel 22—23). (Or perhaps another
6. Trickery. The identification of Satan with the
Saul, who persecuted the first Christians, and who
serpent is traditional but not made in Genesis.
later converted to Christianity, changing his name
7. Here and in the preceding question, Pilate's
to Paul [Acts 9.1-31].)

288 / A E M I L I A L A N Y E R

The Description of Cooke-ham²

Farewell (sweet Cooke-ham) where I first obtained
Grace from that grace where perfect grace³ remained;
And where the muses⁴ gave their full consent,
I should have power the virtuous to content;
5 Wher e princely palace willed me to indite,⁰ *compose, write*
The sacred story⁵ of the soul's delight.
Farewell (sweet place) where virtue then did rest,
And all delights did harbor in her breast;
Never shall my sad eyes again behold
10 Those pleasures which my thoughts did then unfold.
Yet you (great Lady) Mistress of that place,
From whose desires did spring this work of grace;
Vouchsafe to think upon those pleasures past,
As fleeting worldly joys that could not last,

15 Or, as dim shadows of celestial⁶ pleasures,
 Which are desired above all earthly treasures.
 Oh how (methought) against you thither came,⁷
 Each part did seem some new delight to frame!
 The house received all ornaments to grace it,
 20 And would endure no foulness to deface it.
 And walks put on their summer liveries,⁰ *uniforms*
 And all things else did hold like similes.⁸
 The trees with leaves, with fruits, with flowers clad,
 Embraced each other, seeming to be glad,
 25 Turning themselves to beauteous Canopies,
 To shade the bright sun from your brighter eyes;
 The crystal streams with silver spangles graced,
 While by the glorious sun they were embraced;
 The little birds in chirping notes did sing,
 30 To entertain both you and that sweet spring.
 And Philomela⁹ with her sundry lays,
 Both you and that delightful place did praise.
 Oh how me thought each plant, each flower, each tree

2. The crown manor leased to William Russell,

3. Respectively (line 2): favor, noble person (i.e.,
 whose sister, Margaret Clifford, the countess of
 Margaret Clifford, countess of Cumberland); God-
 Cumberland (see note 1, p. 284), resided there
 given virtues.

periodically until 1605. The unhappiness alluded

4. The nine Greek sister goddesses believed to be
 to in this poem refers to the countess's alienation

sources of inspiration for the arts.

from her husband, George Clifford, third earl of
5. I.e., Christ's passion in *Salve Deus Rex Judaeo-*
Cumberland, and her legal battles with his rela-
rum.

tives after his death in 1605. The countess fought

6. As reflections or images of heavenly.

for the claims of her daughter, Cumberland's only

7. I.e., when you went there.

heir, Anne Clifford, to his estates. King James and

8. Similarities; i.e., did the same.

the court bureaucracy offered only a cash settle-

9. The nightingale, whose various songs ("sundry
ment—far less than the value of Cumberland's
lays") were said to express lovesickness and/or

lands and titles—which the countess and her
mourning; here, associated with the female poetic
daughter refused to accept. This poem, which

voice. In classical mythology, Philomela was raped
probably dates from 1609—10 and which followed

by her brother-in-law, Tereus, who then tore out

the title poem in the first edition of Lanyer's *Salve*

her tongue so that she could not speak. She wove
Deus Rex Judaeorum, is an early example of what

the story in a tapestry and sent it to her sister, who
would become the popular genre of the "country

rescued her. She was later changed into a night-

house" poem; cf. Ben Jonson's "To Penshurst"

ingale while in flight from Tereus.

(p. 328).

**T H E D E S C R I P T I O N O F C O O K E - H A M / 2 8
9**

Set forth their beauties then to welcome thee!

35 The very hills right humbly did descend,

When you to tread on them did intend.

And as you set your feet, they still did rise,

Glad that they could receive so rich a prize.

The gentle winds did take delight to be

40 Among those woods that were so graced by thee,

And in sad murmur uttered pleasing sound,

That pleasure in that place might more abound.

The swelling banks delivered all their pride

When such a Phoenix¹ once they had espied.

45 Each arbor, bank, each seat, each stately tree,

Thought themselves honored in supporting thee.

The pretty birds would oft come to attend thee,

Yet fly away for fear they should offend thee;

The little creatures in the burrough⁰ by *burrow*

50 Would come abroad to sport them in your eye,

Yet fearful of the bow in your fair hand.²

Would run away when you did make a stand.

Now let me come unto that stately tree,

Wherein such goodly prospects you did see;

55 That oak that did in height his fellows pass,

As much as lofty trees, low growing grass,

Much like a comely cedar straight and tall,

Whose beauteous stature far exceeded all.
 How often did you visit this fair tree,
 60 Which seeming joyful in receiving thee,
 Would like a palm tree spread his arms abroad,
 Desirous that you there should make abode;
 Whose fair green leaves much like a comely veil, *attractive*
 Defended Phoebus³ when he would assail;
 65 Whose pleasing boughs did yield a cool fresh air,
 Joying⁰ his happiness when you were there. *enjoying*
 Where being seated, you might plainly see
 Hills, vales, and woods, as if on bended knee
 They had appeared, your honor to salute,
 70 Or to prefer⁰ some strange unlooked-for suit;⁰ *offer / request*
 All interlaced with brooks and crystal springs,
 A prospect fit to please the eyes of kings.
 And⁰ thirteen shires appeared all in your sight, *if*
 Europe could not afford much more delight.
 75 What was there then but gave you all content,
 While you the time in meditation spent
 Of their Creator's power, which there you saw,
 In all his creatures held a perfect law;⁰ *order*
 And in their beauties did you plain descry⁰ *perceive*
 so His beauty, wisdom, grace, love, majesty.

1. A legendary bird, the only one of its kind, rep-

2. I.e., the countess is figured as Diana, the clas-
 resented as living five hundred years in the Arabian
 sical goddess of hunting, the moon, and chastity.

desert before setting itself on fire, then rising anew

3. I.e., protected you from the sun; Phoebus from its own ashes; here, also a reference to the Apollo was the mythological god of the sun. countess.

290 / A E M I L I A L A N Y E R

In these sweet woods how often did you walk,
With Christ and his Apostles there to talk;
Placing his holy Writ in some fair tree
To meditate what you therein did see.

85 With Moses⁴ you did mount his holy hill
To know his pleasure, and perform his will.

With lowly David⁵ you did often sing
His holy hymns to Heaven's eternal King.

And in sweet music did your soul delight
90 To sound his praises, morning, noon, and night.

With blessed Joseph⁶ you did often feed
Your pined⁰ brethren, when they stood in need. *tired from hunger*

And that sweet Lady sprung from Clifford's race,⁷
Of noble Bedford's blood, fair stem of grace,

95 To honorable Dorset now espoused,
In whose fair breast true virtue then was housed,

Oh what delight did my weak spirits find
In those pure parts of her well framed mind.

And yet it grieves me that I cannot be
100 Near unto her, whose virtues did agree
With those fair ornaments of outward beauty,

Which did enforce from all both love and duty.
 Unconstant Fortune, thou art most to blame,
 Who casts us down into so low a frame
 105 Where our great friends we cannot daily see,
 So great a difference is there in degree.
 Many are placed in those orbs of state,⁸
 Parters⁰ in honor, so ordained by Fate, *participants*
 Nearer in show, yet farther off in love,
 no In which, the lowest always are above.⁹
 But whither am I carried in conceit,⁰ *thought; pride*
 My wit too weak to conster⁰ of the great. *consider, understand*
 Why not? although we are but born of earth.
 We may behold the heavens, despising death;
 115 And loving heaven that is so far above,
 May in the end vouchsafe us entire love.¹
 Therefore sweet memory do thou retain
 Those pleasures past, which will not turn again:
 Remember beauteous Dorset's⁰ former sports, *Anne Clifford's*
 120 So far from being touched by ill reports,
 Wherein myself did always bear a part,
 While reverend love presented my true heart.
 Those recreations let me bear in mind,

4. Who spoke with God on a mountaintop (Exo-
 ried into the Sackville family, earls of Dorset.
 dus 24.13-18).

8. I.e., exalted social spheres.

5. The psalmist of the Bible; the second king of

9. I.e., while circumstance may place the high and

Judah and Israel.

the low near to each other, the lower-born are

6. Who was sold by his brothers into Egypt; after more devoted to the higher-born. In *Nichomachean Ethics*, Aristotle says that in friendship between unequals, “the better and more useful partner should receive more affection than he of Cumberland’s daughter. Her father came from gives” (7.1158).

the Cliffords, earls of Cumberland; her mother

1. I.e., may bestow all love on us. came from the Russells, earls of Bedford. She mar-

gives” (7.1158).

the Cliffords, earls of Cumberland; her mother

1. I.e., may bestow all love on us. came from the Russells, earls of Bedford. She mar-

T H E D E S C R I P T I O N O F C O O K E - H A M / 2 9 1

Which her sweet youth and noble thoughts did find,

125 Whereof deprived, I evermore must grieve,

Hating blind Fortune, careless to relieve.

And you sweet Cooke-ham, whom these ladies leave,

I now must tell the grief you did conceive

At their departure, when they went away,

BO How everything retained a sad dismay.

Nay long before, when once an inkling came,

Methought each thing did unto sorrow frame:

The trees that were so glorious in our view,

Forsook both flowers and fruit, when once they knew

135 Of your depart, their very leaves did wither,
Changing their colors as they grew together.
But when they saw this had no power to stay you,
They often wept, though, speechless, could not pray you,²
Letting their tears in your fair bosoms fall,
140 As if they said, Why will ye leave us all?
This being vain, they cast their leaves away
Hoping that pity would have made you stay:
Their frozen tops, like age's hoary⁰ hairs, *grayish white*
Shows their disasters, languishing in fears.
145 A swarthy⁰ riveled⁰ rind⁰ all over spread, *dark / rough /
bark*
Their dying bodies half alive, half dead.
But your occasions called you so away
That nothing there had power to make you stay.
Yet did I see a noble grateful mind
150 Requiting⁰ each according to their kind, *rewarding*
Forgetting not to turn and take your leave
Of these sad creatures, powerless to receive
Your favor, when with grief you did depart,
Placing their former pleasures in your heart,
155 Giving great charge to noble memory
There to preserve their love continually.
But specially the love of that fair tree,
That first and last you did vouchsafe to see,
In which it pleased you oft to take the air
160 With noble Dorset, then a virgin fair,³
Where many a learned book was read and scanned,

To this fair tree, taking me by the hand,
You did repeat the pleasures which had passed,
Seeming to grieve they could no longer last.
165 And with a chaste, yet loving kiss took leave,
Of which sweet kiss I did it soon bereave,⁴
Scorning a senseless creature should possess
So rare a favor, so great happiness.

No other kiss it could receive from me,
170 For fear to give back what it took of thee,
So I ungrateful creature did deceive⁰ it *deprive*

2. I.e., beg you (to stay).

the countess did, and so deprived the tree of the

3. I.e., before marriage.

countess's kiss.

4. I.e., Lanyer claims to have kissed the tree after

292 / A E M I L I A L A N Y E R

Of that which you in love vouchsafed⁰ to leave it.

granted

And though it oft had given me much content,

Yet this great wrong I never could repent;

But of the happiest made it most forlorn,

To show that nothing's free from Fortune's scorne,

While all the rest with this most beauteous tree

Made their sad consort⁵ sorrow's harmony.

The flowers that on the banks and walks did grow,

Crept in the ground, the grass did weep for woe.

The winds and waters seemed to chide together

Because you went away they knew not whither;

And those sweet brooks that ran so fair and clear,
With grief and trouble wrinkled did appear.

Those pretty birds that wonted⁰ were to sing,
accustomed

Now neither sing, nor chirp, nor use their wing,
But with their tender feet on some bare spray,
Warble forth sorrow, and their own dismay.

Fair Philomela leaves her mournful ditty,⁰
song

Drowned in deep sleep, yet can procure no pity.
Each arbor, bank, each seat, each stately tree
Looks bare and desolate now for want⁰ of thee,
lack

Turning green tresses⁶ into frosty gray,
While in cold grief they wither all away.

The sun grew weak, his beams no comfort gave,
While all green things did make the earth their grave.

Each brier, each bramble, when you went away
Caught fast your clothes, thinking to make you stay;
Delightful Echo wonted⁷ to reply

To our last words, did now for sorrow die;
The house cast off each garment that might grace it,
Putting on dust and cobwebs to deface it.

All desolation then there did appear,
When you were going whom they held so dear.

This last farewell to Cooke-ham here I give,
When I am dead thy name in this may live,
Wherein I have performed her noble hest^o

**Whose virtues lodge in my unworthy breast,
And ever shall, so long as life remains,
Tying my life to her by those rich chains.**

1611

5. Company, with a pun on “consort” as a musical speech by being allowed only to repeat the last “accord.”

words of others; scorned by her beloved, the youth

6. I.e., leaves.

Narcissus, she eventually lost her body and lived

7. Was accustomed to; with a pun on *wanted*, on as a sad voice. Lanyer revises this myth in line desired. In classical mythology, the nymph (minor 200.

nature goddess) Echo was punished for excessive

2 9 3

J O H N D O N N E *

1572-1631

The Good-Morrow

**I wonder, by my troth, what thou and I
Did, till we loved? were we not weaned till then?
But sucked on country¹ pleasures, childishly?
Or snorted⁰ we in the Seven Sleepers' den?² *snored*
⁵ ‘Twas so; but^o this, all pleasures fancies be. *except for*
If ever any beauty I did see,
Which I desired, and got, ‘twas but a dream of thee.
And now good-morrow to our waking souls,
Which watch not one another out of fear;**

**10 For love, all love of other sights controls,
 And makes one little room an everywhere.³
 Let sea-discoverers to new worlds have gone,
 Let maps⁴ to others, worlds on worlds have shown,
 Let us possess one⁵ world, each hath one, and is one.
 15 My face in thine eye, thine in mine appears,
 And true plain hearts do in the faces rest;
 Where can we find two better hemispheres,
 Without sharp North, without declining West?
 Whatever dies was not mixed equally;⁶
 20 If our two loves be one, or, thou and I
 Love so alike that none do slacken, none can die.**

1 6 3 3

The Donne poems in this anthology up through
 lables are fused in pronunciation and counted as
 “The Relic” are usually called *Songs and Sonnets*,
 one metrically. Such contractions occur only
 a rubric applied to Donne’s love poems in the sec-
 under certain phonetic conditions (e.g., when one
 ond edition of his *Poems* (1635). There is no
 word ends, and the next begins, with a vowel).
 authorial warrant for that rubric, however, since
 1. Also with a sexual connotation.
 even the first edition (1633) appeared after his
 2. Seven Christian youths, under the persecutions
 death, and no copies of his poems in his own hand-
 of the Roman Emperor Decius (who ruled 249—
 writing survive. Instead, the poems exist in post-

51), were said to have been sealed in a cave, where humorous printed editions as well as in a large they slept for nearly two centuries. On awakening, number of manuscript copies, many of which cir- they found Christianity established as a world reli- culated during Donne's lifetime; some manuscripts gion.

include musical settings for the poems. We cannot

3. The common Renaissance trope of the individ- date most of Donne's love poems with any cer- ual as a microcosm of the universe.

tainty, and the multiple copies, printed and in

4. Terrestrial maps or sky charts.

manuscript, show many variations in stanza forms,

5. In some manuscripts, "our."

punctuation, spelling, and even diction and gram-

6. In medieval and Renaissance medical theory,

mar. Like most modern editors, we base our texts

death was often considered the result of an imbal-

on the 1633 *Poems*; significant variations are men-

ance in the body's elements. When elements were

tioned in the notes.

"not mixed equally," matter was mutable and mor-

Donne's poems frequently have an apostrophe

tal, but when they were mixed perfectly, it was

between words to indicate that the neighboring syl-

changing and immortal.

294 / J O H N D O N N E

Song

Go and catch a falling star,
Get with child a mandrake root,⁷
Tell me where all past years are,
Or who cleft the Devil's foot,
5 Teach me to hear mermaids⁸ singing,
Or to keep off envy's stinging,
And find
What wind
Serves to advance an honest mind.
10 If thou beest born to strange sights,⁹
Things invisible to see,
Ride ten thousand days and nights,
Till age snow white hairs on thee,
Thou, when thou return'st, wilt tell me
15 All strange wonders that befell thee,
And swear
Nowhere
Lives a woman true, and fair.
If thou find'st one, let me know,
20 Such a pilgrimage were sweet;
Yet do not, I would not go,
Though at next door we might meet;
Though she were true when you met her,
And last till you write your letter,
25 Yet she
Will be
False, ere I come, to two, or three.

1633

Woman's Constancy

**Now thou hast loved me one whole day,
Tomorrow when thou leav'st, what wilt thou say?
Wilt thou then antedate some new-made vow?¹
Or say that now**

**5 We are not just those persons which we were?
Or, that oaths made in reverential fear
Of Love, and his wrath, any may forswear?**

7. The large, forked root of the mandrake roughly
sights; alternatively, if you are carried ("borne," as
resembles a human body and was thought to be an
the word is spelled in the 1633 text and most man-
aphrodisiac.

uscript versions) to strange sights (cf. "return'st,"

8. I.e., the Sirens (in Homer's *Odyssey*), whose
line 14).

seductive song only the cunning Odysseus suc-

1. I.e., will you pretend that a new vow of love is
cessfully resisted.

older than that you have made to me? *Antedate:*

9. I.e., if your nature inclines you to seek strange
affix an earlier date than the true date.

THE SUNRISING / 295

**Or, as true⁰ deaths, true marriages untie, *real*
So lovers' contracts, images of those,²
10 Bind but till sleep, death's image, them unloose?
Or, your own end to justify,**

For having purposed change, and falsehood, you
Can have no way but falsehood to be true?

Vain lunatic,³ against these 'scapes⁰ I could *escapes,*
deceptions

15 Dispute, and conquer, if I would,
Which I abstain to do,
For by tomorrow, I may think so too.

1 6 3 3

The Apparition

When by thy scorn, O murd'ress, I am dead,
And that thou thinkst thee free
From all solicitation from me,
Then shall my ghost come to thy bed,
5 And thee, fained vestal,⁴ in worse arms shall see;
Then thy sick taper⁰ will begin to wink,⁰ *candle/flicker*
And he, whose thou art then, being tired before,
Will, if thou stir, or pinch to wake him, think
Thou call'st for more,
io And in false sleep will from thee shrink,
And then, poor aspen wretch,⁵ neglected thou
Bathed in a cold quicksilver sweat⁶ wilt lie,
A verier⁰ ghost than I; *truer*
What I will say, I will not tell thee now,
is Lest that preserve thee; and since my love is spent,
I had rather thou shouldst painfully repent,
Than by my threatnings rest still innocent.

1 6 3 3

The Sun Rising

**Busy old fool, unruly sun,
Why dost thou thus,
Through windows, and through curtains call on us?
Must to thy motions lovers' seasons run?**

**5 Saucy pedantic wretch, go chide
Late school boys and sour prentices,⁰ *apprentices*
Go tell court huntsmen⁷ that the king will ride,**

2. I.e., of true marriages.

5. Aspen leaves flutter in the slightest breeze.

3. The word has for Donne the additional mean-

6. Sweating in terror; quicksilver (mercury) was a
ing of "inconstant" or "fickle," since lunacy (from
stock prescription for venereal disease, and sweat-
luna, moon) was supposed to be affected by the
ing was part of the cure.

changing phases of the moon.

7. I.e., courtiers who hunt office by emulating

4. One of the virgins consecrated to the Roman
King James's passion for hunting.

goddess Vesta. *Fained*: counterfeit.

296 / J O H N D O N N E

**Call country ants to harvest offices;⁸
Love, all alike,⁹ no season knows nor clime,
¹⁰ Nor hours, days, months, which are the rags^o of time.
*fragments***

Thy beams, so reverend and strong

Why shouldst thou think?¹

I could eclipse and cloud them with a wink,

But that I would not lose her sight so long;
15 If her eyes have not blinded thine,
Look, and tomorrow late, tell me,
Whether both th' Indias of spice and mine²
Be where thou leftst them, or lie here with me.
Ask for those kings whom thou saw'st yesterday,
20 And thou shalt hear, All here in one bed lay.
She's all states, and all princes, I,³
Nothing else is.
Princes do but play us; compared to this,
All honor's mimic, all wealth alchemy.⁴
25 Thou, sun, art half as happy as we,⁵
In that the world's contracted thus.
Thine age asks ease, and since thy duties be
To warm the world, that's done in warming us.
Shine here to us, and thou art everywhere;
30 This bed thy center is, these walls, thy sphere.⁶

1 6 3 3

The Canonization⁷

For God's sake hold your tongue, and let me love,
Or chide my palsy, or my gout,
My five gray hairs, or ruined fortune, flout,
With wealth your state, your mind with arts improve,
5 Take you a course, get you a place,⁸
Observe his honor, or his grace,⁹
Or the King's real, or his stamped face¹

8. "Harvest" may be read both as part of a noun
two lovers.

phrase (“duties of the harvest,” in which case
6. I.e., the bedroom and the lovers are a micro-
“country ants” would refer to farm workers) and as
cosm of the solar system, with the bed (like Earth,
a verb, in which case the “ants” would be provincial
in Ptolemaic astronomy) as the point around which
courtiers seeking to collect (“harvest”) paid posi-

tions.

7. The title refers to admission into the canon of

9. The same at all times.

Church saints, often attested by martyrdom. As

1. I.e., what makes you think your light is so awe-
part of the canonization process, a “devil’s advo-
some?

cate” sought to ensure that the whole truth, includ-
2. India and the West Indies, whence came spices
ing faults, emerged about a candidate.

and gold (from mines) respectively.

8. An appointment, at court or elsewhere. *Take*

3. One manuscript has “She is all princes, and all
you a course: begin a career.

states, I, ...”

9. Pay court to a lord or bishop.

4. A metallic composition imitating gold; i.e., a

1. I.e., on coins. The contrast is complicated by
fraud.

the fact that “real,” spelled “royall” in several man-

5. The sun, being one thing, is half as happy as
uscripts, is also a term for a Spanish coin.

THE CANONIZATION / 297

Contemplate; what you will, approve,⁰ *try*

So you will let me love.

10 Alas, alas, who's injured by my love?

What merchant's ships have my sighs drowned?

Who says my tears have overflowed his ground?

When did my colds a forward spring remove?²

When did the heats which my veins fill

15 Add one more to the plaguy bill?³

Soldiers find wars, and lawyers find out still

Litigious⁰ men, which quarrels move, *contentious*

Though she and I do love.

Call us what you will, we're made such by love;

20 Call her one, me another fly,

We're tapers too, and at our own cost die,⁴

And we in us find th' eagle and the dove.⁵

The phoenix riddle hath more wit^o *sense*

By us: we two being one, are it.

25 So, to one neutral thing both sexes fit.

We die and rise the same, and prove

Mysterious by this love.

We can die by it, if not live by love,

And if unfit for tombs and hearse

30 Our legend be, it will be fit for verse;

And if no piece of chronicle⁰ we prove,⁶ *history*

We'll build in sonnets pretty rooms;⁷

As well a well-wrought urn becomes⁰ *befits*
The greatest ashes, as half-acre tombs;
35 And by these hymns,⁸ all shall approve
Us canonized for love.
And thus invoke us: You whom reverend love
Made one another's hermitage;
You, to whom love was peace, that now is rage,⁰ *lust*
40 Who did the whole world's soul contract, and drove⁹
Into the glasses of your eyes
So made such mirrors, and such spies,

2. A common poetic conceit figured lovers as from mutation of metals. The phoenix is a legendary bird; it was thought to be the only one of its kind, protests that his "colds" have not removed the warmth of an early ("forward") spring.

years in the Arabian desert before setting itself on

3. Weekly list of plague victims; many manuscripts have "man" instead of "more."

fire's ashes, the bird was often a symbol of the res-

4. I.e., we're both "fly" (a moth or any winged uncorrected Christ.

insect) and "tapers," the self-consuming candles

6. One manuscript has "Chronicles." The biblical that attract winged insects. "Dying" was a popular book of 1 Chronicles (1-9) lists the genealogies of

metaphor for sexual climax in seventeenth-century the tribes of Israel. The speaker may be implying English. "At our own cost" reflects the common that if the "timeless" lovers leave no "progeny," supersitition that each orgasm shortened the man's they will leave poetry.

life by a day.

7. The "rooms" (punning on *stanza*, Italian for

5. A common symbol of peace and meekness; the room) will hold the ashes, i.e., record their deeds.

"eagle" signifies strength. "Eagle" and "dove" are 8. I.e., the lover's poems.

also alchemical terms for processes leading to the

9. Some manuscripts have "extract" for "contract" rise of "phoenix" (line 23), a stage in the trans- and "draw" for "drove."

298 / JOHN DONNE

That they did all to you epitomize,

Countries, towns, courts:1 Beg from above

45 A pattern of your love!2

1633

Song

Sweetest love, I do not go

For weariness of thee,

Nor in hope the world can show

A fitter love for me;

5 But since that I

Must die at last, 'tis best

To use myself in jest,
Thus by feigned deaths to die.³
Yesternight the sun went hence,
io And yet is here today;
He hath no desire nor sense,
Nor half so short a way:
Then fear not me,
But believe that I shall make
15 Speedier journeys, since I take
More wings and spurs than he.
O how feeble is man's power,
That if good fortune fall,
Cannot add another hour,
20 Nor a lost hour recall!
But come bad chance,
And we join to't our strength,
And we teach it art and length,
Itself o'er us to'advance.
25 When thou sigh'st, thou sigh'st not wind,
But sigh'st my soul away;
When thou weep'st, unkindly⁴ kind,
My life's blood doth decay.
It cannot be
30 That thou lov'st me, as thou say'st,
If in thine my life thou waste;
Thou art the best of me.

1. I.e., you who contracted or distilled the whole
direct address ends. Some editors put quotation

world's soul and drove countries, towns, courts
markes before "You" (line 37) and after "love," and
into the glasses of your eyes, which were thus made
some manuscripts have "our" for "your."

into such mirrors and "spies" (spyglasses, tele-

3. Partings, and perhaps orgasms, as rehearsals for
scopes) that they epitomized (rendered in small but
the final death of life. "Dying" was a popular meta-
intense form) everything to you. Note that the
phor for sexual climax in seventeenth-century
direct object of "drove" comes in line 44.

English.

2. Interpretations of this syntactically complex

4. Can also mean "unnatural."

stanza turn, in part, on where one thinks that the

T H E A N N I V E R S A R Y / 2 9 9

Let not thy divining⁰ heart *foreseeing*

Forethink me any ill;

35 Destiny may take thy part,

And may thy fears fulfill;

But think that we

Are but turned aside to sleep;

They who one another keep

40 Alive, ne'er parted be.

1 6 3 3

The Anniversary

All kings, and all their favorites,

All glory'of honors, beauties, wits,

The sun itself, which makes times, as they pass,
Is elder by a year, now, than it was
5 When thou and I first one another saw:
All other things to their destruction draw,
Only our love hath no decay;
This, no tomorrow hath, nor yesterday;
Running it never runs from us away,
10 But truly keeps his first, last, everlasting day.
Two graves must hide thine and my corse;⁰ *corpse*
If one might, death were no divorce.
Alas, as well as other princes, we
(Who prince enough in one another be)
15 Must leave at last in death, these eyes, and ears,
Oft fed with true oaths, and with sweet salt tears;
But souls where nothing dwells but love
(All other thoughts being inmates⁰) then shall *lodgers*

prove⁰ *experience*

This, or a love increased there above,

20 When bodies to their graves, souls from their graves
remove.

And then we shall be throughly⁰ blest, *thoroughly*

But we no more than all the rest;⁵

Here upon earth, we're kings, and none but we

Can be such kings, nor of such subjects be;⁶

25 Who is so safe as we, where none can do

Treason to us, except one of us two?

True and false fears let us refrain,

Let us love nobly, and live, and add again

Years and years unto years, till we attain

30 To write threescore, this is the second of our reign.

1 6 3 3

5. Scholastic philosophers maintained that all 6. The conceit is that each lover is the other's king, souls are equally content in heaven but not equally and therefore each is also the other's only subject, blessed.

3 0 0 / J O H N D O N N E

Love's Growth⁷

I scarce believe my love to be so pure

As I had thought it was,

Because it doth endure

Vicissitude,⁰ and season, as the grass; *change*

5 Methinks I lied all winter, when I swore

My love was infinite, if spring make't more.

But if this medicine, love, which cures all sorrow

With more, not only be no quintessence,⁸

But mixed of all stuffs paining soul or sense,
10 And of the sun his working vigor borrow,
Love's not so pure, and abstract, as they use
To say, which have no mistress but their muse,
But as all else, being elemented⁹ too,
Love sometimes would contemplate, sometimes do.
15 And yet no greater, but more eminent,⁰ *conspicuous,*
evident
Love by the spring is grown;
As, in the firmament,
Stars by the sun are not enlarged, but shown,
Gentle love deeds, as blossoms on a bough,
20 From love's awakened root do bud out now.
If, as in water stirred more circles be
Produced by one, love such additions take,
Those, like so many spheres, but one heaven make,
For they are all concentric unto thee;¹
25 And though each spring do add to love new heat,
As princes do in times of action get
New taxes, and remit them not in peace,
No winter shall abate the spring's increase.

1 6 3 3

A Valediction² of Weeping

Let me pour forth

My tears before thy face whilst I stay here,

7. In some manuscripts, titled "Spring." If "love's sought according to a principle of likeness between growth" refers to the swelling of pregnancy, then

medicine and illness.

the irregular “growing” shape of the stanzas in the
9. Made up of a mixture of elements. *Muse*: source
early editions and some manuscripts may be an
of inspiration.

instance of imitative form. The stanzas play on (by
1. Most astronomers in Donne’s time conceived of
inverting) the Italian sonnet pattern of an octave
nine concentric spheres, each of transparent crys-
followed by a sestet (see “Versification,” p. 2042).

tal, turning around Earth. The various heavenly
8. According to many ancient and medieval phi-
bodies were thought to be fixed in the surfaces of
losophers, there was a fifth, “quintessential” ele-
these spheres.

ment, purer than the four elements of ordinary life

2. A departure speech or discourse; a bidding of
(earth, air, fire, and water); the quintessence was
farewell. Several manuscripts place a colon after
thought to be a cure for all diseases. *This medicine*:
“Valediction,” but many, along with the 1633 edi-
in the early seventeenth century, cures were often
tion, do not.

A V A L E D I C T I O N O F T H E B O O K / 3 0 1

For thy face coins them, and thy stamp they bear,³

And by this mintage⁰ they are something worth, *coining a
word*

5 For thus they be

Pregnant of thee;
Fruits of much grief they are, emblems of more;
When a tear falls, that Thou falls which it bore,⁴
So thou and I are nothing then, when on a diverse⁰ shore.
separate

10 On a round ball
A workman that hath copies by, can lay
An Europe, Afric, and an Asia,
And quickly make that, which was nothing, all,⁵
So doth each tear

15 Which thee doth wear,⁶
A globe, yea world, by that impression grow,
Till thy tears mixed with mine do overflow
This world; by waters sent from thee, my heaven dissolved so.
O more than moon,

20 Draw not up seas to drown me in thy sphere;⁷
Weep me not dead,⁸ in thine arms, but forbear
To teach the sea what it may do too soon.

Let not the wind

Example find

25 To do me more harm than it purposeth;
Since thou and I sigh one another's breath,
Whoe'er sighs most is cruelest, and hastes the other's death.

1633

A Valediction⁹ of the Book

I'll tell thee now (dear Love) what thou shalt do
To anger destiny, as she doth us,
How I shall stay, though she esloygne⁰ me thus *remove far off*

And how posterity shall know it too;

5 How thine may out-endure

Sybil's¹ glory, and obscure

Her² who from Pindar could allure,

3. I.e., they reflect your face (among other mean-

1. The best-known "sibyl," or prophetess, was the
ings).

Cumaean Sibyl, who (according to Virgil's *Aeneid*)

4. With a play on the image of pregnancy in the

lived for a thousand years. In a trancelike frenzy,

preceding lines. "That" is a demonstrative adjective

she wrote inspired prophecies on leaves, which

modifying "Thou"; the tear of the speaker bears the

were scattered abroad by the wind. Her prophecies

impression of the lover.

concerning the destiny of the Roman state were

5. I.e., an artist can paste maps of the continents

gathered into the Sibylline Books, which were pre-

on a blank globe. The "o" of the globe's shape is

served in the Roman temple of Capitoline Jupiter.

echoed in the word "nothing."

These books were consulted during national emer-

6. Can be read as either "which bears your impres-

gencies and required interpretation by male

sion" (i.e., the speaker's tears) or "which you weep"

priests.

(i.e., bearing the speaker's impression).

2. According to tradition, Corinna the Boeotian

7. I.e., heavenly body with greater power of attraction than the moon's, (when you affect the tides) successfully with the Greek lyric poet Pindar (ca. don't pull the seas up to yourself.

522—ca. 438 B.C.E.). His poems are extant; Cor-

8. I.e., do not weep me to death.

inna's are not, except in fragments.

9. See note 2, p. 300.

302 / J O H N D O N N E

And her,³ through whose help Lucan is not lame,

And her, whose book (they say) Homer did find, and name.⁴

10 Study our manuscripts, those myriads

Of letters, which have past twixt thee and me,

Thence write our annals, and in them will be

To all whom love's subliming fire invades,

Rule and example found;

15 There, the faith of any ground⁵

No schismatic⁶ will dare to wound,

That sees, how Love this grace to us affords,

To make, to keep, to use, to be these his records.

This book, as long-lived as the elements,

20 Or as the world's form, this all-graved tome⁷

In cipher writ, or new made idiom;⁰ *language, dialect*

We for love's clergy only'are instruments,⁸

When this book is made thus,

Should again the ravenous

25 Vandals and the Goths⁹ invade us,

Learning were safe; in this our universe
Schools might learn sciences, spheres music, angels verse.¹
Here Love's divines⁰ (since all divinity *prophets, priests*
Is love or wonder) may find all they seek,
30 Whether abstract spiritual love they like,
Their souls exhaled⁰ with⁰ what they do not see, *drawn out/by*
Or loth so to amuse
Faith's² infirmity, they choose
Something which they may see and use;
35 For, though mind be the heaven, where love doth sit,
Beauty'a convenient type³ may be to figure⁰ it. *represent*
Here more than in their books may lawyers find,
Both by what titles⁴ mistresses are ours,
And how prerogative these states⁵ devours,
3. Polla Argentaria, who helped her husband, the
8. I.e., we are, in these letters, documents for
Roman poet Lucan (39-65 C.E.), write his histor-
love's initiates only; one variant has "are only" for
ical epic, *Pharsalia*.

"only'are."

4. One tradition holds that Homer, the supposed
9. Vandals and Goths were Germanic tribes that
author of the *Iliad* (and the *Odyssey*), took the sub-
invaded Western Europe during the third, fourth,
ject of the siege of Troy from an epic poem on that
and fifth centuries; here, those who willfully and
event by Phantasia of Memphis. In another version
ignorantly destroy anything beautiful or worthy of

of Donne's poem, the last three lines of this stanza preservation.

read: "Her who from old allure, / And, through

1. I.e., angelic hymns. *Schools*: scholastic philosophy whose help Lucan is not lame, / And her, whose spheres. *Spheres music*: according to Pythagorean look (they say) Homer did find, and name." Note tradition, the motion of the planetary spheres created that this variant substitutes "look" for "book" and added a music inaudible to human ears.

omits Corinna and Phantasia. The "her" of this last line refers to Helen of Troy, wife of the Greek king Menelaus, whose abduction (or seduction) by Paris, son of the king of Troy, began the Trojan War.

2. One variant has "doth" for "loth" and "faithless" for "Faith's."

3. A symbol or earthly reflection of the celestial original.

4. I.e., legal rights to the possession of property.

5. I.e., the trustworthiness of any fundamental

5. I.e., estates, presumably the "titles" mentioned doctrine.

in the above line. *Prerogative*: official right or privilege.

6. One who promotes schism, or breach of unity

ilege. Donne alludes here to the feudal practice

in the Church; in this stanza and the next, the poet

by which a lord could demand from his vassals

speaks of love as a sort of religion.

dues over and above those that were customary;

7. This indelibly written heavy book; one manu-

also, at issue in the Parliament of 1601 was the

script has “tomb” and another has “to me.”

prerogative of the monarch to levy special grants

LOVE’S ALCHEMY / 303

**40 Transferred from Love himself, to wom
an kind. 6**

Who though from heart, and eyes,

They exact great subsidies,

Forsake him who on them relies

**And for the cause, honor, or conscience gi
ve, 45 Chimeras, vain as they, or their prer
ogative. 7**

**Here statesmen (or of them, they which can
read) May of their occupation find the gro
unds, 0 *basic principles***

**Love and their art alike it deadly wounds, I
fto consider what ‘tis, one proceed, 8**

50 In both they do excel

Who the present govern well, 9

Whose weakness none doth, or darestell; 1

**In this thy book, such 0 will there nothings
ee, *such people***

As in the Bible some can find out alchemy. 2

**55 Thus vent thy thoughts; abroad 3 I’ll stu
dy thee, As he removes far off, that 0 great
eight stakes; 4 *who* How great love is, prese
nce best trial makes, But absence tries ho
w long this love will be; To take a latitude**

**60 Sun, or stars, are fitliest viewed
At their brightest, but to conclude,
Of longitudes, what other way have we,
But to mark when, and where the darke clip
ses be? 5**

1633

Love's Alchemy

**Somethathavedeeperdiggedlove'sminet
hanI, Saywherehiscentric0happinessdo
thlie; *central, essential***

I'veloved, andgot, andtold, 6

**ButshouldIlove, get, tell, tillIwereold, 5 I
shouldnotfindthathiddenmystery;**

against noblemen's estates at time of need.

tation of baser metals into gold and also to the

6. The "ours" of line 38 seems to refer to men.

search for a panacea or universal remedy. *Nothing:*

Thus the first four lines of this stanza might be

worthlessness; one variant (printed in the 1633

paraphrased "Here, more than in their books, law-

edition) has "something" in place of "nothing."

yers may discover both by what titles (legal rights

Find out: show the falsity of; or possibly, find sup-

to property, with, perhaps, a pun on *names*) mis-

port for (the Bible could be used to show the falsity

tresses belong to us (men), and how women's usur-

of alchemy, but alchemists found support for their

pation of the prerogative (privileges attendant on

theories there).

those legal rights), which rightfully belongs to

3. I.e., while I'm away.

Love, eats away at those rights ('states')."

4. Measures. One variant has "shadows" for "great

7. I.e., and for their reason they plead conscience heights."

or honor, both illusions ("chimeras") as empty as

5. The latitude of a place may be measured by calculating its distance from the zenith of a star whose

8. I.e., neither love nor politics can bear close

altitude (its distance from the equator) is known; scrutiny.

longitude can be measured by noting the time at

9. The suggestion of these lines seems to be that which an eclipse occurs at different points on opportunists do well in both love and politics.

Earth's surface. Donne here puns on "longitude,"

1. I.e., the weakness of lovers and politicians, as it suggests (but does not mean) length or duration. about which "none doth, or dares tell" because they have been either deceived or intimidated.

6. Tallied (counted) or estimated the quality of.

2. The science applied to the pursuit of transmu-

3 0 4 / J O H N D O N N E

0 , ' t i s i m p o s t u r e a l l :

And as no chemie^o yet th' elixir⁷ got,
alchemist

But glorifies his pregnant pot, 8

If by the way to him befall

10 Some odoriferous thing, or medicinal;
So lovers dream a rich and long delight,

But get a winter-seeming summer's night.

Ourease, our thrift, our honor, and our day,
Shall we for this vain bubble's shadow pay?

15 Ends love in this, that my man^o *servant*

Can be as happy 'as I can if he can

Endure the shortscorn of a bridegroom's
play?

That loving wretch that swears,

'Tis not the bodies marry, but the minds, 2

0 Which he in her angelic finds,

Would swear as justly that he hears,

In that day's rude hoarse minstrelsy, the
pheres. 9

Hopenot for mind in women; at their best
weetness and wit they're but mummy
possed.

1633

A Nocturnal upon St. Lucy's Day,

Being the Shortest Day 2

'Tis the year's midnight, and it is the day's
, Lucy's, 3 whose scarce seven hours herself
unmasks; The sun is spent, and now his
flasks 4

Send forth lightsquibs, no constant rays;

5 The world's whole sap is sunk: 5

**The general balm that hydroptic bears that
h drunk**, 7. A hypothetical substance, the goal of the alche-
“best.”

mists’ endeavors, supposedly capable of transmuted-

2. The “nocturns” of the Roman Catholic Church
ing base metals into gold, curing all illnesses, and
were night offices, or services; the title may also
prolonging life indefinitely.

allude to an astronomical instrument used for tell-

8. His fertile (also womb-shaped) retort; alche-
ing time at night. According to the calendar in use
mists’ quests to create the elixir of life were often
during Donne’s time, the winter solstice, or short-
compared to human reproduction.

est day of the year, fell on December 12, the eve

9. I.e., the music of the spheres, or concentric
of St. Lucy’s Day. St. Lucy was patron saint of the
transparent shells containing the heavenly bodies
blind. Her festival is celebrated with lights and
in Ptolemaic astronomy; they were thought to pro-
candles, and her name recalls the Latin word for
duce angelic music as they turned. Here, they are
light (*lux, lucis*). Lucy was the name of Donne’s
contrasted with the *charivari*, a raucous serenade
patron, the countess of Bedford, and some com-
using pots, pans, and trumpets, traditionally per-
mentators have suggested that the poem was writ-
formed on the wedding night.

ten on her death, in 1627. Others believe that the
1. Lifeless flesh; also, a medication prepared from
“she” of the poem is Donne’s wife, Anne, who died
mummified remains. The poem is titled “Mummy”
in 1617. Donne’s daughter, named Lucy after the
in some manuscripts.

countess of Bedford, also died in 1627.

The syntax of the last two lines is obscure; the

3. In Latin, *lux, lucis* also means “day.” “Lucy’s”

last line may be read with a comma after “wit,”

here is an appositive to “day’s.”

after “they’re,” after “but,” and/or after “mummy.”

4. Powder flasks. I.e., the sun is compared to a

The final word may modify “mummy,” to signify

gun shooting powder from powder flasks, but in

“mummy with a demon in it,” or “they,” to signify

“squibs” like small fireworks that spurt and fizzle

“women, once possessed by men” (i.e., married) or

as they burn.

“women, after men possess them” (i.e., after mar-

5. Like that of trees and vegetation in winter.

riage). Some manuscripts have a comma after

6. Implies both saturation and insatiable thirst;

A N O C T U R N A L U P O N S T . L U C Y ‘ S D A Y , B E I N G T H E S H O R T E S T D A Y / 3 0 5

Whither, as to the bed’s-feet, life is shrunk,

Dead and interred; yet all these seem to laugh,

Compared with me, who am their epitaph.⁷

io Study me then, you who shall lovers be
At the next world, that is, at the next spring:
For I am every dead thing,
In whom love wrought new alchemy.
For his art did express⁰ *squeeze out*
15 A quintessence⁸ even from nothingness,
From dull privations, and lean emptiness:
He ruined me, and I am re-begot
Of absence, darkness, death; things which are not.
All others, from all things, draw all that's good,
20 Life, soul, form, spirit, whence they being have;
I, by love's limbeck,⁹ am the grave
Of all that's nothing. Oft a flood
Have we two wept, and so
Drowned the whole world, us two; oft did we grow
25 To be two chaoses,¹ when we did show
Care to aught else;² and often absences
Withdrew our souls, and made us carcasses.
But I am by her death (which word wrongs her)
Of the first nothing, the elixir grown;³
30 Were I a man, that I were one
I needs must know; I should prefer,
If I were any beast,
Some ends, some means; yea plants, yea stones detest,
And love;⁴ all, all some properties invest;⁰ *put on*
35 If I an ordinary nothing were,
As shadow, 'a light and body must be here.
But I am none; nor will my suns renew.

You lovers, for whose sake the lesser sun
At this time to the Goat is run
40 To fetch new lust, and give it you,
Enjoy your summer all;
Since she enjoys her long night's festival,
Let me prepare towards her, and let me call
i.e., insatiably thirsty. *General balm: the balsa-*
2. I.e., when we turned our attention from each
mum, regarded as the vital, life-giving force in the
other.

branch of Renaissance medicine associated with
3. He is now “grown” (become) the “elixir of the
Paracelsus.

first nothing,” i.e., the quintessence of the nothing
7. Inscription on a tombstone.
that preceded creation of the world.

8. A highly concentrated essence or extract, often
4. I.e., even plants and stones (like lodestones)
identified with the “fifth essence” of ancient and
have attractions and antipathies; even “beasts”
medieval philosophy (see note 8, p. 300 and note
have intentions.

7, p. 304).

5. I.e., the dead woman. The “lesser sun” (line 38)

9. An alembic, an apparatus used in distillation,
is the real sun, which is in the constellation of Cap-
here associated with alchemy.

ricorn (“the Goat”) during December. Goats were

1. Includes a reference to the primordial emptiness out of which all form arises.

ness out of which all form arises.

306 / JOHN D O N N E

**T h i s h o u r h e r v i g i l , 6 a n d h e r e v e , s i n c e t h i s 4
5 B o t h t h e y e a r ' s , a n d t h e d a y ' s d e e p m i d n i g h t
i s .**

1633

A Valediction Forbidding Mourning⁷

A s v i r t u o u s m e n p a s s m i l d l y a w a y ,

A n d w h i s p e r t o t h e i r s o u l s t o g o ,

W h i l s t s o m e o f t h e i r s a d f r i e n d s d o s a y

T h e b r e a t h g o e s n o w , a n d s o m e s a y , n o ;

5 S o l e t u s m e l t , a n d m a k e n o n o i s e ,

N o t e a r - f l o o d s , n o r s i g h - t e m p e s t s m o v e ,

' T w e r e p r o f a n a t i o n o f f o u r j o y s

T o t e l l t h e l a i t y 8 o u r l o v e .

**M o v i n g o f t h ' e a r t h b r i n g s h a r m s a n d f e a r s
, i o M e n r e c k o n w h a t i t d i d a n d m e a n t ;**

B u t t r e p i d a t i o n o f t h e s p h e r e s , 9

T h o u g h g r e a t e r f a r , i s i n n o c e n t .

D u l l s u b l u n a r y 1 l o v e r s ' l o v e

(W h o s e s o u l i s s e n s e) c a n n o t a d m i t

15 A b s e n c e , b e c a u s e i t d o t h r e m o v e

T h o s e t h i n g s w h i c h e l e m e n t e d 0 i t . *composed*

B u t w e b y ' a l o v e s o m u c h r e f i n e d

T h a t o u r s e l v e s k n o w n o t w h a t i t i s ,

I n t e r - a s s u r e d o f t h e m i n d ,

20 C a r e l e s s , 2 e y e s , l i p s , a n d h a n d s t o m i s s .

**O u r t w o s o u l s t h e r e f o r e , w h i c h a r e o n e ,
T h o u g h I m u s t g o , e n d u r e n o t y e t
A b r e a c h , b u t a n e x p a n s i o n ,
L i k e g o l d t o a i r y t h i n n e s s b e a t .**

**25 I f t h e y b e t w o , t h e y a r e t w o s o
A s s t i f f t w i n c o m p a s s e s 3 a r e t w o ;
T h y s o u l , t h e f i x e d f o o t , m a k e s n o s h o w
T o m o v e , b u t d o t h , i f t h ' o t h e r d o .**

6. The watch kept on the eve of a feast, with
unpredicted variations in the paths of the heavenly
prayer.

bodies.

7. Donne's friend Izaak Walton reported that this

1. Beneath the moon; earthly, hence changeable.

poem was written to Donne's wife when Donne

2. At least one manuscript and many editions from

went to the Continent in 1611. *Valediction*: see

1639 to 1654 give "carelesse" for "care lesse"; we
note 2, p. 300.

choose the latter form because it allows for two

8. I.e., those who do not understand such love.

interpretations of the lines.

9. A trembling of the celestial spheres, hypothe-

3. I.e., the two legs of compasses used in drawing

sized by Ptolemaic astronomers to account for
circles.

T H E E C S T A S Y / 3 0 7

A n d t h o u g h i t i n t h e c e n t e r s i t ,

30 Yet when the other far doth roam,
It leans and hearkens after it,
And grows erect, as that comes home.
Such wilt thou be to me, whom must
Like th' other foot, obliquely run.
diagonally, aslant

35 Thy firmness makes my circle just,
And makes me end where I begun.

1633

The Ecstasy⁵

Where, like a pillow on a bed,
A pregnant bank swelled up to rest
The violet's reclining head,
Sat we two, one another's best.
5 Our hands were firmly cemented
With a fast balm, ⁷ which thence did spring
.
Oureye-beamstwisted, and did thread
Oureyes upon one double string;
Soto'intergraftourhands, as yet
io Was all the meanstomakeusone, ⁸
And pictures ⁰ inoureyes to get ⁰ *reflections /*
beget
Was all our propagation. ⁹
As 'twixt two equal armies, Fate
Suspenduncertainvictory,
15 Oursouls (which to advancetheirstate,
Weregoneout) hung 'twixtherandme.
And whilst oursouls negotiatethere,

**We like sepulchral statues lay;
 All day the same our postures were,
 20 And we said nothing all the day.
 If any, so by lover refined
 That the soul's language understood,
 And by good love were grown all mind,
 Within convenient distance stood,
 25 He (though he knew not which soul spake
 , Because both meant, both spake the same
) Might thence a new concoction take,
 And part far purer than he came.**

This ecstasy doth unperplex,

4. A symbol of perfection; with a dot in the middle, serves them steadfast.

the alchemist's symbol for gold.

8. The lovers are joined "as yet" only by hands and

5. Literally, "a standing out" (from the Greek eyes; "eye-beams" are invisible shafts of light, *ekstasis*); a term used by religious mystics to

thought of as going out of the eyes and so enabling describe the experience in which the soul seemed one to see.

to leave the body and rise superior to it in a state

9. Reflection of each person in the other's eyes; of heightened awareness.

known also as "making babies."

6. An emblem of faithful love and truth.

1. Mixture of diverse elements refined (literally,

7. I.e., perspiration; also, a moisture that pre-

cooked together) by heat; an alchemical term.

308 / JOHN D O N N E

30 We said, and tell us what we love;

We see by this it was not sex;

We see we saw not what did move;²

But as all several⁰ souls contain *separate*

Mixture of things, they know not what,

35 Love these mixed souls doth mix again,

And makes both one, each this and that.

A single violet transplant,

The strength, the color, and the size

(All which before was poor, and scant)

40 Redoubles still, and multiplies.

When love, with one another so

Interinanimates two souls,

That abler soul, which thence doth flow,³

Defects of loneliness controls.

45 We then, who are this new soul, know,

Of what we are composed, and made,

For, th' atomies⁰ of which we grow, *atoms, components*

Are souls, whom no change can invade.

But O alas, so long, so far

50 Our bodies why do we forbear?

They're ours, though they're not we; we are

Th' intelligences, they the spheres.⁴

We owe them thanks because they thus

Did us to us at first convey,

55 Yielded their forces, sense, to us,

Nor are dross to us, but alloy.⁵
 On man heaven's influence works not so,
 But that it first imprints the air,⁶
 So soul into the soul may flow,
 60 Though it to body first repair.⁰ go
 As our blood labors to beget
 Spirits⁷ like souls as it can,
 Because such fingers need⁰ to knit *are needed*
 That subtle knot which makes us man:
 65 So must pure lovers' souls descend
 To' affections,⁰ and to faculties,⁸ *feelings*
 Which sense may reach and apprehend;
 Else a great Prince in prison lies.

To' our bodies turn we then, that so
 70 Weak men on love revealed may look;
 Love's mysteries in souls do grow,
 But yet the body is his book.

And if some lover, such as we,
 Have heard this dialogue of one,
 2. I.e., we see that we did not understand before
 5. Alloy, an impurity that strengthens metal.
 what "did move" (motivated) us.

Dross: an impurity that weakens metal.

3. The "abler soul" derives from the union of the

6. Astrological influences were conceived of as
 two lesser ones. *Interinanimates*: i.e., mutually
 being transmitted through the medium of air; also,
 breathes life into and mutually removes the con-

angels were thought to assume bodies of air in their
consciousness of.

dealings with humans.

4. The nine orders of angels (“intelligences”) were

7. Vapors believed to permeate the blood and to
believed to govern the nine spheres of Ptolemaic
mediate between the body and the soul.

astronomy.

8. Dispositions; powers of the body.

T H E F L E A / 3 0 9

75 Let him still mark us; he shall see

Small change when we’re to bodies gone.

1 6 3 3

The Funeral

Whoever comes to shroud me, do not harm

Nor question much

That subtle wreath of hair which crowns my arm;⁹

The mystery, the sign you must not touch,

5 For ‘tis my outward soul,

Viceroy to that, which then to heaven being gone,

Will leave this to control,

And keep these limbs, her¹ provinces, from dissolution.

For if the sinewy thread² my brain lets fall

io Through every part

Can tie those parts and make me one of all;

These hairs, which upward grew, and strength and art

Have from a better brain,

Can better do’it; except⁰ she meant that I *unless*

15 By this should know my pain,
 As prisoners then are manacled, when they're condemned to
 die.
 Whate'er she meant by 'it, bury it with me,
 For since I am
 Love's martyr, it might breed idolatry,³
 20 If into other's hands these relics came;
 As 'twas humility
 To'afford to it all that a soul can do,
 So 'tis some bravery,
 That since you would save none of me, I bury some of you.

1633

The Flea⁴

Mark but this flea, and mark in this,
 How little that which thou deniest me is;
 It sucked me first, and now sucks thee,
 9. I.e., a lock of hair that he had tied about his
 (relics) associated with them, such as bones or
 arm.
 clothing.

1. The soul's, but also the mistress's (cf. "she," line

4. The flea was a popular subject of Renaissance

14). *Viceroy*: one who acts in the name and by the
 erotic poems in which, frequently, the narrator
 authority of the supreme ruler.

envies the flea for the liberties it takes with his lady

2. One theory during the period maintained that
 and for its death at her hands (both *die* and *kill*

the body is held in organic order by sinews or
were Renaissance slang terms for orgasm; the act
nerves emanating from the brain to every part.
of sexual intercourse was believed to reduce the
3. A reference to the Roman Catholic practice of
man's life span). The narrator here addresses a
idolizing martyrs as saints and venerating objects
woman who has scorned his advances.

3 3 1 0 / J O H N D O N N E

And in this flea, our two bloods mingled be;
5 Thou know'st that this cannot be said
A sin, nor shame nor loss of maidenhead,⁵
Yet this enjoys before it woo,⁶
And pampered swells with one blood made of two,⁷
And this, alas, is more than we would do.
10 Oh stay,⁸ three lives in one flea spare,
Where we almost, yea more than married are.
This flea is you and I, and this
Our marriage bed, and marriage temple is;
Though parents grudge, and you, w'are met,
15 And cloistered in these living walls of jet.⁹
Though use^o make you apt to kill me, *custom*,
Let not to that, self murder added be,
And sacrilege,¹ three sins in killing three.
Cruel and sudden, hast thou since
20 Purpled thy nail, in blood of innocence?
Wherein could this flea guilty be,
Except in that drop which it sucked from thee?

Yet thou triumph'st, and say'st that thou
Find'st not thy self, nor me the weaker now;²
25 'Tis true, then learn how false, fears be;
Just so much honor, when thou yield'st to me,
Will waste, as this flea's death took life from thee.

1 6 3 3

The Relic³

When my grave is broke up again
Some second guest to entertain⁴
(For graves have learned that woman-head⁰ *womanhood*
To be to more than one a bed),
5 And he that digs it, spies
A bracelet of bright hair about the bone,⁵
Will he not let us alone,
And think that there a loving couple lies,
Who thought that this device might be some way
io To make their souls, at the last busy day,⁶
Meet at this grave, and make a little stay?

5. I.e., loss of virginity; the maidenhead is the
would be sacrilege.

hymen.

2. I.e., now that she has killed the flea.

6. I.e., the flea enjoys this liberty without the

3. See note 3, p. 309.

effort of wooing the lady.

4. Reuse of a grave after an interval of several

7. Renaissance medical theory held that blood was
years was a common seventeenth-century practice

mingled during sexual intercourse, leading to conception; thus the image of swelling suggests pregnancy in charnel houses).

nancy.

5. See "The Funeral," line 3 and note 9 (p. 309).

8. I.e., refrain from killing the flea.

6. Judgment Day, when all parts of the body would

9. Black marble; the "living walls of jet" here refer

be reassembled and reunited with the soul in res-

urrection.

urrection.

1. Since the flea is a "marriage temple," killing it

ELEGY VII / 311

If this fall⁰ in a time, or land, *happen*

Where mis-devotion⁷ doth command,

Then he that digs us up, will bring

15 Us to the Bishop and the King,

To make us relics; then

Thou shalt be 'a Mary Magdalen,⁸ and I

A something else thereby;

All women shall adore us, and some men;

20 And since at such time, miracles are sought,

I would have that age by this paper taught

What miracles we harmless lovers wrought.

First, we loved well and faithfully,

Yet knew not what we loved, nor why,

25 Difference of sex no more we knew,

Than our guardian angels do;
Coming and going, we
Perchance might kiss, but not between those meals;⁹
Our hands ne'er touched the seals,
30 Which nature, injured by late law,¹ sets free:
These miracles we did; but now, alas,
All measure and all language I should pass,
Should I tell what a miracle she was.

1 6 3 3

Elegy VII²

Nature's lay idiot,³ I taught thee to love,
And in that sophistry,⁴ oh, thou dost prove
Too subtle: Fool, thou didst not understand
The mystic language of the eye nor hand:
5 Nor couldst thou judge the difference of the air
Of sighs, and say, this lies, this sounds⁰ despair: *expresses*
Nor by the'eye's water call a malady
Desperately hot, or changing feverously.
I had not taught thee then, the alphabet
io Of flowers, how they devicefully⁰ being set *ingeniously*
And bound up, might with speechless secrecy

7. False devotion; seems to refer to Catholicism.

poems treating various topics including love and

8. The woman out of whom Christ had cast seven

(increasingly often) devils (Luke 8.2), traditionally identified with the

thought to be early poems, mostly written in the

repentant prostitute of Luke 7.37—50. Renaissance

poems treating various topics including love and

1590s. Five of the thirteen elegies designed for painters often depicted her with long, golden hair. printing in the 1633 edition of the *Poems* were 9. I.e., customary kisses of greeting and parting; refused a licence by the official censors; the second kisses were thought to be food for the soul. edition of 1635 printed seventeen elegies, and others. I.e., human law puts prohibitions (“seals,” which may also here signify sexual organs) on that There is still no scholarly consensus on the canon which nature originally set free.

of Donne’s elegies, and the Roman numerals in the 2. Donne’s “Elegies,” heavily influenced by Ovid’s titles first appeared in twentieth-century editions. *Amores*, are written in heroic couplets (rhyming 3. I.e., one who is ignorant of the workings of iambic pentameter lines) that provide an apt nature, as a “layperson” is ignorant of religious English equivalent for the Latin elegiac meter of mysteries.

alternating dactylic pentameter and hexameter

4. Plausible but fallacious reasoning.

lines. In Donne’s time, elegies were reflective

3 3 1 2 / J O H N D O N N E

D e l i v e r e r r a n d s m u t e l y , a n d m u t u a l l y .

R e m e m b e r s i n c e 0 a l l t h y w o r d s u s e d t o b e *when*
T o e v e r y s u i t o r , “ I , 5 ‘ i f m y f r i e n d s a g r e e ’ ;

15 Since, household charms, 6 thy husband's
name to teach, Were all the love-tricks, that thy
wit could reach;

And since, an hour's discourse could scarce
have made One answer in thee, 7 and that ill
arrayed

In broken proverbs, and torn sentences.

20 Thou art not by so many duties his,

That from the world's common having severed
thee, Inlaid thee, 8 neither to be seen, nor se-
e,

As mine: who have with a morous delicacies
Refined thee 'into a blissful paradise.

25 Thy graces and good words my creatures
be; I planted knowledge and life's tree⁹ in thee,

Which oh, shall strangers taste? Must I alas

Frame and enamell plate, and drink in glass?¹

Chafe⁰ wax for others' seals? break a colt's force
heat³⁰ And leave him then, being made a ready
horse?

1633

Elegy XIX. To His Mistress Going to Bed²

Come, madam, come, all rest my powers defy,

Until I labor, I in labor³ lie.

The foe oft-time having the foe in sight,

Is tired with standing though he never fight.

5 Off with that girdle, like heaven's zone⁴
glistening, But a far fairer world encompassing.

Unpin that spangled breastplate⁵ which you
wear,

That th' eyes of busy fools may be stopped
there.

**U n l a c e y o u r s e l f , f o r t h a t h a r m o n i o u s c h i m e
0 c h i m i n g w a t c h 10 T e l l s m e f r o m y o u t h a t n o w i t i s b
e d t i m e .**

**O f f w i t h t h a t h a p p y b u s k , 0 w h i c h I e n v y , c o r s e t
T h a t s t i l l c a n b e , a n d s t i l l c a n s t a n d s o n i g h .**

**Your g o w n g o i n g o f f , s u c h b e a u t e o u s s t a t e
r e v e a l s , 5 .** Some modern editions change “I”—the reading

the knowledge of good and evil and the tree of life

of all early editions and manuscripts—to “Ay.”

(Genesis 2.9).

6. Magic used to learn her future “husband’s

1. I.e., must I fashion and decorate a silver cup
name.”

but drink from a glass one?

7. I.e., could hardly have elicited a response from

2. This poem was one of the five refused license
you.

for the 1633 edition (see note 2, p. 311).

8. I.e., laid thee in, set thee aside for his own use;

3. Meaning “get to work” (sexually) in the first
with an allusion to the contested Renaissance
instance and “distress” (as of a woman in child-
practice of “enclosing” common agricultural lands
birth) in the second.

for private uses.

4. The belt of Orion.

9. The first paradise, Eden, included the tree of

5. Jeweled covering for the chest.

**ELEGY XIX . T o H i s M I S T R E S S G O I N G T O B
E D / 3 1 3**

As when from flowry meads 0 th'hill's shadow
steals . *meadows* 15 Off with that wiry coronet and
show

The hairy diadem 6 which on you doth grow :

Now off with those shoes, and then safely 7 tread
In this love's hallowed temple, this soft bed.

In such white robes, heaven's angels used to
be 20 Received by men; thou, Angel,
bring'st with thee A heaven like Mahomet's Paradise; 8
and though 111 spirits walk in white, we easily know

By this these angels from an evil sprite:

Those set our hairs, but these our flesh upright.

25 License my roving hands, and let them go
Before, behind, between, above, below.

O my America! my new-found-land,

My kingdom, safe liest when with one man
manned, My mine of precious stones, my empery, 0 *empire* 30
How blest am I in this discovering thee!

To enter in these bonds is to be free;

Then where my hand is set, my seal shall be.

Full nakedness! All joys are due to thee,

As souls unbodied, bodies unclothed must
be, 35 To taste whole joys. Gems which you
women use Are like Atlanta's balls, 9 cast in
men's views, That when a fool's eye lighteth
on a gem,

His earthly soul may covet theirs, not them:
Like pictures, or like books' gay coverings
made 40 For lay-men, are all women thus
arrayed.

**Themselves are mystic books, 1 which only
 we (Whom their imputed grace will dignify)
 Must see revealed. Then, since that I may know,
 As liberally as to a midwife, show
 45 Thyself: cast all, yea, this whitelinen
 hence, There is no penance due to innocence: 2
 To teach thee, I am naked first; why than, 0
 then What needst thou have more covering
 than a man?**

1669

6. A word for “crown,” like the preceding line’s cast in her path three golden apples (or “balls”) “coronet”; but Donne leaves ambiguous the relation between figurative and literal crowns, and beauty. Distracted by their beauty, Atalanta their bodily location.

stopped to retrieve them, and Hippomenes won

7. Here and elsewhere in this poem, we substitute the race.

some manuscript variants for phrases in the 1669

1. A manuscript variant for “books” is “bodies.”

edition, which has “softly” for “safely,” “revealed 2. Some manuscripts have “here is no penance

to” (for “received by”) in line 20, and “court” (for much less innocence.” White clothing was often

“covet”) in line 38.

considered penitential vestment; the speaker

8. A heaven of sensual pleasures.

seems to be arguing that the women should cast

9. According to Greek mythology, Atalanta agreed off such clothing since innocence does not require to marry Hippomenes if he could defeat her in a penance.

foot race. As she was about to overtake him, he

3314 / JOHN DONNE

Satire IIP

**Kind pity chokes my spleen; 4 brave scorn forbids
Those tears to issue which swell my eyelids;
I must not laugh, nor weep 0 sins, and be wise,
mock/lament Can railing then cure these worn maladies?**

5 Is not our mistress fair Religion,

As worthy 'of all our souls' devotion,

As virtue was to the first blinded age? 5

**Are not the heaven's joys as valiant to assuage
Lusts, as earth's honor was to them? 6 Alas,
10 As we do them in means, shall they surpass
Us in the end, and shall thy father's spirit
Meet blind philosophers in heaven, whose merit
Of strict life maybe 'imputed faith, 7 and hear
Thee, whom he taught so easy ways and near
15 To follow, damned? O, if thou dar'st, fear this;
This fear great courage and high valor is.**

**Dar'st thou aid mutinous Dutch, 8 and dar'st
Thou lay Thee in ships, woodensepulchers, a prey**

To leaders' rage, to storms, to shot, to death? 0

famine

20 Dar'st thou dive seas and dungeons 0 of the earth?

mines, caves

**Hast thou courageous fire to thaw the ice
Of frozen North discoveries? and thrice
Colder than salamanders, like divine
Children in the oven, 9 fires of Spain, and t
helix, 0**

equator

**25 Whose countries limbbecksto our bodies
be, Canst thou for gain bear? 1 And must ev
ery he Which cries not, "Goddess!" to thy
mistress, draw, 2**

**Oreat thy poisonous words? Courage of st
raw!**

**O desperate coward, wilt thou seem bold, a
nd 3.** In this poem, Donne adapts techniques of clas-able to
appease the lusts of the pagans.

sical Roman satirists (e.g., Horace, Juvenal, and

7. Donne reverses a reformed Protestant theolog-
Persius) to a contemporary problem: the prolifer-
ical concept: instead of achieving Christians' sal-
ating divisions of belief among Christians in the
vation by imputing Christ's merits to them through
period after the Protestant break with the Roman
faith, here virtuous pagans' salvation might be
Catholic Church. Donne was raised Catholic and
gained by imputing faith to them based on their
seems to have retained considerable sympathy for
moral lives.

Catholic beliefs even after he abandoned them in

8. In the last twenty years of the sixteenth century,

the 1590s; still dubious about the “official” Church the English aided the Protestant Dutch in their of England’s doctrines, he refused to take Anglican revolt against Spanish (and Catholic) rule. Donne orders in 1607 despite King James’s wish that had sailed in two raiding expeditions against the Spanish. Donne pursue a career in the Church. Later, he Spanish.

became an Anglican minister, and in 1621 he was 9. After alluding to expeditions to discover the appointed dean of St. Paul’s Cathedral. W h e n Northwest Passage, Donne invokes the “divine “Satire III” was written, however—probably in the children” Shadrach, Meshach, and Abednego, who 1590s—Donne like many other English people are described in the Book of Daniel (3.20—30) as was in a state of doubt about religious “truth.” surviving a fiery furnace unharmed after refusing Donne’s five satires are among the first formal to worship a golden idol. Salamanders were experiments in the genre in English; they were ini- thought to be so cold-blooded that they could tially refused a publication license, but the ban was endure fire.

later removed.

1. The object of “bear” is “fires of Spain, and the 4. The seat of laughter and of melancholy (accord- line.” “Fires of Spain” refers to the Inquisition, in

ing to Renaissance physiology).

which heretics were burned at the stake. Inquisi-
5. I.e., the age of paganism, “blinded” to Christi-
torial and equatorial heats burn people as chemists
anity but capable of a natural devotion to “virtue.”
heat materials in “limbecks,” apparatuses used for
6. I.e., hope of heaven’s “joys” should be as capa-
distilling liquids.

ble of calming our “lusts” as earthly “honor” was
2. I.e., fight a duel.

SATIRE H I / 3 1 5

30 To thy foes and his⁰ (who made thee to stand *God’s*
Sentinel in his world’s garrison) thus yield,
And for forbidden wars, leave th’appointed field?
Know thy foes: The foul Devil he’is, whom thou
Strivest to please: for hate, not love, would allow
35 Thee fain his whole realm to be quit;³ and as
The world’s all parts wither away and pass,
So the world’s self, thy other loved foe, is
In her decrepit wane, and thou, loving this,
Dost love a withered and worn strumpet; last,
40 Flesh (itself’s death) and joys which flesh can taste,
Thou lovest; and thy fair goodly soul, which doth
Give this flesh power to taste joy, thou dost loathe;
Seek true religion. O, where? Mirreus,⁴
Thinking her unhoused here, and fled from us,
45 Seeks her at Rome; there, because he doth know
That she was there a thousand years ago.

He loves her rags so, as we here obey
The statecloth⁵ where the Prince sat yesterday.
Crantz to such brave loves will not be enthralled,
50 But loves her only, who⁶ at Geneva is called
Religion—plain, simple, sullen, young,
Contemptuous, yet unhandsome; as among
Lecherous humors,⁰ there is one that judges *dispositions*
No wenches wholesome but coarse country drudges.
55 Graius⁷ stays still at home here, and because
Some preachers, vile ambitious bawds, and laws
Still new, like fashions, bid him think that she
Which dwells with us, is only⁰ perfect, he *solely*
Embraceth her whom his Godfathers will
60 Tender to him, being tender, as wards still
Take such wives as their guardians offer, or
Pay values. Careless Phrygius⁸ doth abhor
All, because all cannot be good, as one
Knowing some women whores, dares marry none.
65 Graccus⁹ loves all as one, and thinks that so
As women do in divers countries go
In divers habits, yet are still one kind,
So doth, so is religion; and this blind-
ness too much light breeds;¹ but unmoved thou
70 Of force⁰ must one, and forced but one allow; *necessity*
3. I.e., the devil would willingly (“fain”)—but for
8. Seems to be a skeptic, or one who rejects all
hate, not love—give you his whole realm of hell to
creeds. “Values,” or fines, had to be paid by young

discharge a debt (“to be quit”).

men (of “tender” years) who rejected the marriages

4. The fictional characters that follow represent arranged by their guardians; Catholics also had to different creeds. “Mirreus,” from myrrh, a gum pay fines if they refused to attend Anglican serv- resin that gives incense its smell, is a Roman Cath- olic.

9. A Universalist, or one who considers all creeds

5. The royal canopy; a symbol of royal power. basically alike.

6. The center of Calvinism; “Crantz” is a Geneva

1. I.e., “too much light” grows for anyone to see Presbyterian.

the truth. Unlike Graccus, who finds the “light of

7. Probably an Erastian, i.e., one who believes that truth” in every creed, the reader is advised to find religious belief should be determined by the state; the one “right” religion without being moved by he could also be an Anglican, a follower of other forces.

England’s state religion after the Reformation.

3316 / JOHN D O N N E

A n d t h e r i g h t ; a s k t h y f a t h e r w h i c h i s s h e ,

L e t h i m a s k h i s ; t h o u g h t r u t h a n d f a l s e h o o d b e

N e a r t w i n s , y e t t r u t h a l l e l d e r i s ;

B e b u s y t o s e e k h e r , b e l i e v e m e t h i s ,

75 He 's n o t o f n o n e , n o r w o r s t , t h a t s e e k s t h e b e
s t . 2

To 'a d o r e , o r s c o r n a n i m a g e , o r p r o t e s t , 3

M a y a l l b e b a d ; d o u b t w i s e l y ; i n s t r a n g e w a y

T o s t a n d i n q u i r i n g r i g h t , i s n o t t o s t r a y ;

T o s l e e p , o r r u n w r o n g , i s . O n a h u g e h i l l ,

80 C r a g g e d a n d s t e e p , T r u t h s t a n d s , a n d h e
t h a t w i l l R e a c h h e r , a b o u t 0 m u s t , a n d a b o u t m
u s t g o , *a r o u n d* A n d w h a t t h ' h i l l ' s s u d d e n e s s 0
r e s i s t s , w i n s o ; *u n e x p e c t e d a b r u p t n e s s* Y e t s t r i v e s o , t h a t b e
f o r e a g e , d e a t h ' s t w i l i g h t ,

T h y s o u l r e s t , f o r n o n e c a n w o r k i n t h a t n i g h t . 4

85 T o w i l l 0 i m p l i e s d e l a y , t h e r e f o r e n o w d o . *i n t e n d*
a f u t u r e a c t H a r d d e e d s , t h e b o d y ' s p a i n s ; h a r d k n o
w l e d g e t o o

T h e m i n d ' s e n d e a v o r s r e a c h , 5 a n d m y s t e r
i e s A r e l i k e t h e s u n , d a z z l i n g , y e t p l a i n t o ' a l l e y e s .

K e e p t h e ' t r u t h w h i c h t h o u h a s t f o u n d ; m e n d o
n o t s t a n d 90 I n s o i l l c a s e t h a t G o d h a t h w i t h h i s
h a n d

S i g n e d k i n g s ' b l a n k c h a r t e r s t o k i l l w h o m t h e y h
a t e , N o r a r e t h e y v i c a r s , b u t h a n g m e n t o f a t e . 6

F o o l a n d w r e t c h , w i l t t h o u l e t t h y S o u l b e t i e d

T o m a n ' s l a w s , b y w h i c h s h e s h a l l n o t b e t r i e d

95 A t t h e l a s t d a y ? O , w i l l i t t h e n b o o t 0 t h e e *p r o f i t* T o
s a y a P h i l i p , o r a G r e g o r y ,

A H a r r y , o r a M a r t i n 7 t a u g h t t h e e t h i s ?

I s n o t t h i s e x c u s e f o r m e r e 0 c o n t r a r i e s *a b s o l u t e* ,
c o m p l e t e E q u a l l y s t r o n g ? C a n n o t b o t h s i d e s s a y s o ?

100 T h a t t h o u m a y e s t r i g h t l y ' o b e y p o w e r , h e r 0 b
o u n d s k n o w ; *p o w e r ' s* T h o s e p a s s e d , h e r n a t u r e ' a
n d n a m e i s c h a n g e d ; t o b e T h e n h u m b l e t o
h e r i s i d o l a t r y .

**As streams are, power is; those blest flowers
that dwell At the rough stream's calm head,
thrive and do well, 105 But having left their roots, and
themselves given To the stream's tyrannous
rage, alas, are driven**

**Through mills, and rocks, and woods, and at
last, almost Consumed in going, in these are
lost:**

**So perish souls, which more choose men's
unjust no Power from God claimed, than God
himself to trust.**

1633

2. I.e., the person who seeks the true Church is

6. These syntactically and conceptually difficult
not an unbeliever ("of none") nor the "worst" sort
lines seem to say that God has not given earthly
of believer.

rulers unconditional authority ("blank charters") to

3. "To'adore" alludes to Catholic worship,
kill whomever they choose; when they do kill, they
whereas to "scorn an image" and to "protest" are
are serving not as God's "vicars" but rather as hang-
typical Protestant gestures.

men to "fate."

4. Cf John 9.4: "I must work the work of him that

7. Martin Luther (1483-1546), German Refor-
sent me, while it is day. The night cometh, when
mation leader. *Philip*: Philip II (1527 - 1598) of
no man can work."

Spain. *Gregory*.- any one of several Pope Gregorys

5. I.e., just as the body's pains achieve ("reach")
(VII, XIII, XIV). Harry: Henry VIII (1491 - 1547) of
hard deeds, the mind's endeavors reach hard
England.
knowledge.

**GOOD FRIDAY, 1613. RIDING WESTWARD /
317**

Good Friday,⁸ 1613. Riding Westward

**Let man's soul be a sphere, and then, in this,
The 'intelligencethat moves, devotion is,⁹
And as the otherspheres, by being grown
Subject to foreign motions, lose their own
,⁵ And being by others hurried every day,
Scarce in a year their natural form obey;
Pleasure or business, so, our souls admit
For their first mover, and are whirled by it.¹
Hence is 't, that I am carried towards the W
estio This day, when my soul's form bends to wa
rds the East.**

**There I should see a Sun, ² by rising, set,
And by that setting endless day be get;
But that ⁰ Christ on this cross did rise and fall,
except that Sin had eternally benighted all.
¹⁵ Yet dare I 'almost be glad I do not see
That spectacle, of too much weight for me.
Whosees God's face, that is self-life, must
die;³
What a death were it then to see God die?
It made his own lieutenant, Nature, shrink;
²⁰ It made his footstool crack, and the sun w
ink. ⁴**

**Could I behold those hands which span the
poles, And tune 5 all spheres at once, pierce
d with those holes?**

**Could I behold that endless height which is
Zenith to us, and to 'our antipodes, 6**

**25 Humbled below us? Or that blood which
is These at 0 of all our souls, if not of His,
dwelling place Make dirt of dust, or that flesh wh
ich was worn By God, for his apparel, ragg'd
and torn?**

**If on these things I durst not look, durst I 30
Upon his miserable mother cast mine eye,
Who was God's partner here, and furnishe
d thus Half of that sacrifice which ransom
ed us?**

**Though these things, as I ride, be from 0 mine
eye, *away from* They 'represent yet unto my m
emory,**

**35 For that look towards them; and thou
look'st towards me, 0 Saviour, as thou hang'
st upon the tree.**

1 turn my back to thee but to receive

**Corrections, till thy mercies bid thee leave
. 0 *cease* 8. The Friday before Easter, observed as the anni-2.
With a pun on *Son*.**

versary of Christ's death.

3. God told Moses: "Thou canst not see my face:

9. I.e., just as an angel was believed to govern the
for there shall no man see me and live" (Exodus
movements of each of the nine concentric celestial
33.20).

spheres, so "devotion" is or should be the guiding

4. A quaking of the earth (God's "footstool,"

principle for the movements of humans.

according to Isaiah 66.1) and a solar eclipse

1. I.e., just as spheres are deflected from their true marked Christ's Crucifixion (Matthew 27.45, 51).

orbits by outside influences, so our souls are

5. The motion of the celestial spheres was

diverted by "pleasure or business." According to

believed to produce music; some manuscripts have

Ptolemaic astronomy, each sphere, in addition to

"turn," which accords with the notion that God

its own motion, was influenced by the motions of

was the "first mover."

those outside it ("foreign motions," line 4), the out-

6. The zenith is that part of the heavens directly

ermost being known as the *primum mobile*, or "first

above any point on Earth; the antipodes are that

mover" (line 8).

part of Earth diametrically opposite such a point.

3 1 8 / J O H N D O N N E

O t h i n k m e w o r t h t h i n e a n g e r ; p u n i s h m e ;

4 0 B u r n o f f m y r u s t s a n d m y d e f o r m i t y ;

R e s t o r e t h i n e i m a g e s o m u c h , b y t h y g r a c e ,

T h a t t h o u m a y s t k n o w m e , a n d I ' l l t u r n m y f a c e .

1 6 3 3

*From Holy Sonnets*7

I

T h o u h a s t m a d e m e , a n d s h a l l t h y w o r k d e c a y ?

Repair me now, for now mine end doth haste;
 I run to death, and death meets me as fast,
 And all my pleasures are like yesterday.
 5 I dare not move my dim eyes any way,
 Despair behind, and death before doth cast
 Such terror, and my feeble flesh doth waste
 By sin in it, which it towards hell doth weigh.
 Only thou art above, and when towards thee
 io By thy leave I can look, I rise again;
 But our old subtle foe so tempteth me *Satan*
 That not one hour myself I can sustain.
 Thy grace may wing me to prevent his art, *give*
wings to /forestall And thou like a adamant draw mine
 iron heart. *obdurate* 1635

5
 I am a little world made cunningly
 Of elements, and an angelike sprite; matter
 /spirit But black sin hath betrayed to endless
 night My world's both parts, and O, both parts must die.
 5 You which beyond that heaven which was most high
 Have found new spheres, and of new
 worlds can write,¹
 Pour new seas in mine eyes, that so I might
 Drown my world with my weeping earnestly,
 Or wash it if it must be drowned no more.²
 io But O, it must be burnt!³ Alas, the fire
 Of lust and envy have burnt it heretofore,

7. Donne's religious poetry is collectively known

9. The individual as microcosm of the world was as the *Divine Poems*, of which the nineteen *Holy*

a common Renaissance notion.

Sonnets form the largest group. Although Donne

1. Copernican astronomy (which placed the sun probably began writing them around 1609, at least at the center of our system, unlike Ptolemaic a decade after leaving the Catholic Church, the astronomy, which placed Earth at the center) had sonnets display an interest in the formal meditative changed people's ideas about the universe just as exercise of the Jesuits. Our selections are numerous recent terrestrial exploration had changed people's ideas according to Sir Herbert Grierson's influential ideas about the world.

ential edition of 1912, which included several

2. God promised Noah that he would never again sonnets not published until the the nineteenth cover Earth with a flood (Genesis 9.11).

century. No one knows what ordering Donne

3. At the end of the world, "the elements shall might have intended for the *Holy Sonnets*.

melt with fervent heat, the earth also and the works

8. Lodestone, a magnetic stone; or adamantine that are therein shall be burned up" (2 Peter 3.10). rock, a proverbially hard stone.

H O L Y S O N N E T S : 9 / 3 1 9

A n d m a d e i t f o u l e r ; l e t t h e i r f l a m e s r e t i r e ,

A n d b u r n m e , O L o r d , w i t h a f i e r y z e a l

**O f t h e e ‘ a n d t h y h o u s e , w h i c h d o t h i n e a t i n g
h e a l . 4**

1 6 3 5

7

**A t t h e r o u n d e a r t h ’ s i m a g i n e d c o r n e r s , b l o w
Y o u r t r u m p e t s , a n g e l s ; 5 a n d a r i s e , a r i s e**

F r o m d e a t h , y o u n u m b e r l e s s i n f i n i t i e s

**O f s o u l s , a n d t o y o u r s c a t t e r e d b o d i e s g o ; 5
A l l w h o m t h e f l o o d d i d , a n d f i r e s h a l l , 6 o ’ e r t h r o w ,**

**A l l w h o m w a r , d e a r t h , 0 a g e , a g u e s , 0 t y r a n n i e s ,
famine /fevers D e s p a i r , l a w , c h a n c e , h a t h s l a i n , a n d
d y o u w h o s e e y e s S h a l l b e h o l d G o d , a n d n e v e r
r a s t e d e a t h ’ s w o e . 7**

**B u t l e t t h e m s l e e p , L o r d , a n d m e m o u r n a s p a c e
; 10 F o r , i f a b o v e a l l t h e s e , m y s i n s a b o u n d ,**

‘ T i s l a t e t o a s k a b u n d a n c e o f t h y g r a c e

W h e n w e a r e t h e r e . H e r e o n t h i s l o w l y g r o u n d ,

T e a c h m e h o w t o r e p e n t ; f o r t h a t ’ s a s g o o d

**A s i f t h o u ‘ h a d s t s e a l e d m y p a r d o n w i t h t h y
b l o o d .**

1 6 3 3

9

I f p o i s o n o u s m i n e r a l s , a n d i f t h a t t r e e

**W h o s e f r u i t t h r e w d e a t h o n e l s e 0 i m m o r t a l
u s , *otherwise* I f l e c h e r o u s g o a t s , i f s e r p e n t s e n v i
o u s**

C a n n o t b e d a m n e d , 8 a l a s , w h y s h o u l d I b e ?

5 W h y s h o u l d i n t e n t o r r e a s o n , b o r n i n m e ,

M a k e s i n s , e l s e e q u a l , i n m e m o r e h e i n o u s ?

A n d m e r c y b e i n g e a s y a n d g l o r i o u s

T o G o d , i n h i s s t e r n w r a t h w h y t h r e a t e n s h e ?

**B u t w h o a m I , t h a t d a r e d i s p u t e w i t h t h e e ,
10 O G o d ? O h ! o f t h i n e o n l y w o r t h y b l o o d ,
A n d m y t e a r s , m a k e a h e a v e n l y L e t h e a n 9 f l o o d ,
A n d d r o w n i n i t m y s i n s ' b l a c k m e m o r y .
T h a t t h o u r e m e m b e r t h e m , s o m e c l a i m a s
d e b t ; I t h i n k i t m e r c y i f t h o u w i l t f o r g e t . 1**

1 6 3 3

4. "The zeal of thine house hath eaten me up"
the kingdom of God" (Christ's words to his disci-
(Psalms 59.9); probably also a reference to the
ples, Luke 9.27). According to 1 Thessalonians
Christian rite of Communion, in which Christ's
4.17, believers who are alive at the time of Christ's
blood and body (his "house") are eaten.

Second Coming will not die but will be taken

5. The first eight lines of the poem recount the
directly to heaven.

events of the end of the world and the Second

8. I.e., only creatures with the ability to reason can
Coming of Christ; Donne alludes specifically to
be damned. The tree is the tree of knowledge of
Revelation 7.1: "I saw four angels standing on the
good and evil, the fruit of which Adam and Eve
four corners of the earth, holding the four winds
were forbidden to eat or touch (Genesis 2).

of the earth."

9. Lethe was a river in the classical underworld;

6. See note 3, p. 319.

drinking its waters caused one to forget the past.

7. “But I tell you of a truth, there be some standing

1. Cf. Jeremiah 31.34: “I will forgive their iniquity, here, which shall not taste of death, till they see and I will remember their sins no more.”

320 / JOHN DONNE

10

D e a t h , b e n o t p r o u d , t h o u g h s o m e h a v e c a l l e d t h e e M i g h t y a n d d r e a d f u l , f o r t h o u a r e n o t s o ;

F o r t h o s e w h o m t h o u t h i n k ' s t t h o u d o s t o v e r t h r o w D i e n o t , p o o r D e a t h , n o r y e t c a n s t t h o u k i l l m e .

5 F r o m r e s t a n d s l e e p , w h i c h b u t t h y p i c t u r e s b e , M u c h p l e a s u r e ; t h e n f r o m t h e m u c h m o r e m u s t f l o w , A n d s o o n e s t o u r b e s t m e n w i t h t h e e d o g o ,

R e s t o f 0 t h e i r b o n e s , a n d s o u l ' s d e l i v e r y . *for*

T h o u ' a r t s l a v e t o f a t e , c h a n c e , k i n g s , a n d d e s p e r a t e m e n , i o A n d d o s t w i t h p o i s o n , w a r , a n d s i c k n e s s d w e l l ,

A n d p o p p y ' o r 0 c h a r m s c a n m a k e u s s l e e p a s w e l l *Opium or* A n d b e t t e r t h a n t h y s t r o k e ; w h y s w e l l ' s t 0 t h o u t h e n ? *puff with pride* O n e s h o r t s l e e p p a s t , w e w a k e e t e r n a l l y ,

A n d d e a t h s h a l l b e n o m o r e ; D e a t h , t h o u s h a l t d i e . 2

1633

14

B a t t e r m y h e a r t , t h r e e - p e r s o n e d G o d ; 3 f o r Y o u

A s y e t b u t k n o c k , b r e a t h e , s h i n e , a n d s e e k t o m e n d ; T h a t I m a y r i s e a n d s t a n d , o ' e r t h r o w m e , ' a n d b e n d

Your force to break, blow, burn, and make me new.

I, like an usurped town, to 'another due,

Labor to 'admit You, but O, to no end;

Reason, Your viceroy⁴ in me, me should defend,

But is captived, and proves weak or untrue.

**Yet dearly 'I love you, 'and would be loved fain,⁰
gladly io **But am betrothed unto your enemy.****

Divorce me, 'untie or break that knot again;

Take me to you, imprison me, for I,

Except you 'enthral⁵ me, never shall be free,

Nor ever chaste, except you ravish me.

1633

18

Show me, dear Christ, thy spouse⁶ so bright and clear.

What! is it she which on the othershore

**Goes richly painted? or which, robbed and
tore, Laments and mourns in Germany and
here?**

2. Cf. Corinthians 15.26: "The last enemy that
of Solomon 5.2: "Open to me, my sister, my love,
shall be destroyed is death."

my dove, my undefiled"). Lines 2—4 ask whether

3. The Trinity: Father, Son, and Holy Spirit.

God's spouse is the Roman Catholic Church (in

4. One who acts in the name and by the authority
power in Continental countries such as France,
of the supreme ruler.

Spain, and Italy, i.e., lands on the “other shore”)

5. Unless you make a prisoner of.

or the Protestant Church “here,” i.e., in England.

6. The true Church, “the bride of Christ” (cf. Song

A HYMN TO GOD THE FATHER / 3 2 1

**5 Sleeps she a thousand, then peeps upon e
year?**

**Isshe self-truth, and errs? now new, now ‘ou
t wore?**

**Doth she, ‘and did she, and shall she ever mo
re On one, on seven, or on no hill appear? 7**

**Dwell she with us, or like adventuring knig
hts 10 First travel 8 we to seek, and then make lov
e?**

**Betray, 0 kind husband, thy spouse to ours
ights, *reveal* And let mine amorous soul cour
t thy mild dove, 9**

**Who is most true and pleasing to thee then
When she ‘se embraced and open to most me
n. 1**

1 6 1 5 ? 1 8 9 4

A Hymn to God the Father 2

**Wilt thou forgive that sin where I begun, W
hich is my sin, though it were done before?
3**

**Wilt thou forgive that sin through which I
run, And do run still, though still I do deplore
?**

**5 When thou hast done, 4 thou hast not done
, For I have more.**

**Wilt thou forgive that sin by which I have w
on Other to sin? and made my sin their door
?**

**Wilt thou forgive that sin which I did shun
A year or two, but wallowed in a score?**

**When thou has done, thou hast not done,
For I have more.**

I have a sin of fear, that when I have spun

**My last thread, I shall perish on the shore;
15 Swear by thyself, that at my death thy Son
Shall shine as he shines now and heretofore;
And, having done that, thou hast done,
I fear no more.**

1623? 1633

7. The church on “no hill” could be either the

2. This hymn was sung by the entire congregation

Presbyterian church of Geneva or the Episcopal

during the Anglican service. Donne wrote it during

Church of England, based in Canterbury. The

his illness of 1623, had it set to music, and liked

church of “one” hill is an unclear reference, but

to hear it performed by the choir of St. Paul’s

perhaps it is Mt. Moriah (site of Solomon’s tem-

Cathedral.

ple). The church of “seven” hills is that of Rome.

3. I.e., he inherits the original sin of Adam and

8. Formerly, “labor” as well as “journey.”

Eve.

9. The dove was a symbol of the Holy Spirit.

4. Donne puns on his own name and may, in the

1. I.e., universal, without division. An echo of the

next line, pun on his wife’s maiden name, Ann

Song of Solomon (5.2), which was frequently
More.

interpreted as the song of love between Christ and

5. In some manuscripts, “have.”
the Church.

3 3 2 2 / J O H N D O N N E

Hymn to God My God, in My Sickness

S i n c e I a m c o m i n g t o t h a t h o l y r o o m

W h e r e , w i t h t h y c h o i r o f s a i n t s f o r e v e r m o r e , I s h a l l b e m a d e t h y m u s i c ; a s I c o m e

I t u n e t h e i n s t r u m e n t h e r e a t t h e d o o r ,

5 A n d w h a t I m u s t d o t h e n , t h i n k h e r e b e f o r e .

W h i l s t m y p h y s i c i a n s b y t h e i r l o v e a r e g r o w n C o s m o g r a p h e r s , 6 a n d I t h e i r m a p , w h o l i e

F l a t o n t h i s b e d , t h a t b y t h e m m a y b e s h o w n T h a t t h i s i s m y s o u t h w e s t d i s c o v e r y

10 *Per fretum febris*, 7 by these straits to die,

I j o y , t h a t i n t h e s e s t r a i t s , I s e e m y W e s t ; 8

F o r , t h o u g h t h e i r c u r r e n t s y i e l d r e t u r n t o n o n e , W h a t s h a l l m y W e s t h u r t m e ? A s W e s t a n d E a s t I n a l l f l a t m a p s (a n d I a m o n e) a r e o n e , 9

15 S o d e a t h d o t h t o u c h t h e r e s u r r e c t i o n .

I s t h e P a c i f i c S e a m y h o m e ? O r a r e

T h e E a s t e r n r i c h e s ? I s J e r u s a l e m ?

A n y a n , 0 a n d M a g e l l a n , a n d G i b r a l t a r , 1 *Bering Straits* A l l s t r a i t s , a n d n o n e b u t s t r a i t s , a r e w a y s t o t h e m , 2 0 W h e t h e r w h e r e J a p h e t d w e l t , o r C h a m , o r S h e m . 2

W e t h i n k t h a t P a r a d i s e a n d C a l v a r y ,

Christ's cross, and Adam's tree, stood in one place; Look, Lord, and find both Adams 3 me time;

As the first Adam's sweat surrounds my face, 25 May the last Adam's blood my soul embrace.

So, in his purple wrapped, receive me, Lord; By these his thorns give me his other crown; And, as to others' souls I preached Thy word, Be this my text, my sermon to mine own:

30 Therefore that they may raise the Lord throw down. 5

1623?1635

6. Ones who map the general features of the are all one.”

celestial and terrestrial worlds.

1. Behind these locations lie many ancient spec-

7. Through the straits of fever (Latin). Donne
ulations about the location of paradise, which is
puns on the word “strait” as both a passageway
analogous to heaven, as the various straits are to
between two bodies of water and a situation of dis-
death.

ress. Cf. Christ's words in Matthew 7.4: “Because

2. The three sons of Noah (Genesis 10), who were
strait is the gate and narrow is the way, which lead-
thought to have settled in Europe, Africa, and Asia,
eth unto life, and few there be that find it.” Magel-
respectively, after the Flood.

lan had discovered the straits that bear his name

3. I.e., Adam and Christ. *Adam's tree*: the tree of
in 1520. They lie at the southern tip of South
the knowledge of good and evil in the Garden of
America and are hence southwest from England.
Eden (Genesis 2). *In one place*: in the same region.

8. Where the sun sets; hence, where life ends.

4. I.e., in the purple of Christ's blood or his purple

9. In one of his sermons (no. 55 in the collection
robe (Mark 15.17).

LXXX Sermons), Donne noted that when a flat map

5. Adapted from Psalms 146.8: "the Lord raiseth
is "pasted" on a round body, "then West and East
them that are bowed down."

3 2 3

B E N J O N S O N

1572-1637

To the Reader¹

Pray t h e e , take care, that tak'st my b o o k in h a n d ,

To read it well: that is, to u n d e r s t a n d .

1616

On My First Daughter

H e r e lies, to e a c h h e r parents' ruth,^o sorrow

Mary, t h e d a u g h t e r o f their y o u t h ;

Yet all h e a v e n ' s gifts b e i n g h e a v e n ' s d u e ,

It m a k e s t h e f a t h e r l e s s to rue.

5 At six m o n t h s ' e n d s h e parted l e n c e

W i t h safety o f h e r i n n o c e n c e ;

Whose soul heaven's queen, whose name she
bears, In comfort of her mother's tears,
Hath placed amongst her virgin-train:²
io Where, while that severed doth remain,³
This grave partakes the fleshly birth;
Which cover lightly, gentle earth!

1616

On My First Son

Farewell, thou child of my right hand, ⁴ and joy;
My sin was too much hope of thee, loved boy:
Seven years thou wert lent to me, and I thee
pay, Exacted by thy fate, on the just day.^s
⁵ O could I lose all father now! ⁶ for why
Will man lament the state he should envy,
To have so soon 'scaped world's and flesh's rage,
And, if no other misery, yet age?

1. From the book of epigrams that Jon son published along with a collection of poems called *The* or dispraise.”

Forrest in his *First Folio* of 1616. He seems initially

2. I.e., among those attending the Virgin Mary.

to have planned another book of epigrams, but his

3. I.e., while her soul remains separate from her

later examples of the genre—in his collection of

body (the soul and body will reunite at Resurrec-

poems *The Underwood*—were not published until

tion).

after his death, in the *Second Folio* of 1640. Mod-

4. A literal translation of the Hebrew *Benjamin*,
elected on poems by the Roman poet Martial (ca. 40—
the boy's name.

ca. 103), epigrams were terse and pointed, often

5. Jonson's son died on his seventh birthday, in
ending with a witty turn of thought. Jonson's
1603.

teacher, the historian William Camden, described

6. I.e., let go all fatherly thoughts and sorrow.

3 2 4 / B E N J O N S O N

**R e s t i n s o f t p e a c e , a n d a s k e d , s a y , " H e r e d o t h l i e
10 B e n J o n s o n h i s b e s t p i e c e o f p o e t r y . "**

**F o r w h o s e s a k e h e n c e f o r t h a l l h i s ⁷ v o w s b e s u c
h**

A s w h a t h e l o v e s m a y n e v e r l i k e t o o m u c h .

1616

On Spies

**S p i e s , y o u a r e l i g h t s i n s t a t e , ⁸ b u t o f b a s e s t u f f ,
W h o , w h e n y o u ' v e b u r n t y o u r s e l v e s d o w n
t o t h e s n u f f , ⁰ c a n d l e e n d S t i n k a n d a r e t h r o w n
a w a y . E n d f a i r e n o u g h .**

1616

To Fool or Knave

T h y p r a i s e o r d i s p r a i s e i s t o m e a l i k e :

O n e d o t h n o t s t r o k e m e , n o r t h e o t h e r s t r i k e .

1616

To Sir Henry Cary⁹

**T h a t n e i t h e r f a m e n o r l o v e m i g h t w a n t i n g b
e T o g r e a t n e s s , C a r y , I s i n g t h a t a n d t h e e ;**

W h o s e h o u s e , I f i t n o o t h e r h o n o r h a d ,

I n o n l y t h e e m i g h t b e b o t h g r e a t a n d g l a d ;

**5 W h o , t o u p b r a i d t h e s l o t h o f t h i s o u r t i m e ,
chastise D u r s t v a l o r m a k e a l m o s t , b u t n o t , a
crime;2**

**W h i c h d e e d I k n o w n o t , w h e t h e r w e r e m o r e
h i g h , O r t h o u m o r e h a p p y , i t t o j u s t i f y**

A g a i n s t t h y f o r t u n e : w h e n n o f o e , t h a t d a y ,

**i o C o u l d c o n q u e r t h e e b u t c h a n c e , w h o d i d
betray.**

L o v e t h y g r e a t l o s s , w h i c h a r e n o w n h a t h w o n ,

**T o l i v e w h e n B r o i c k n o t s t a n d s , n o r R u h r d o t h
run.3**

L o v e h o n o r s , w h i c h o f b e s t e x a m p l e b e

**W h e n t h e y c o s t d e a r e s t a n d a r e d o n e m o s t
free; 15 T h o u g h e v e r y f o r t i t u d e d e s e r v e s a p p l
a u s e , 7. I. e. , B e n J o n s o n t h e f a t h e r ' s .**

writing.

8. Condition or form; with a likely pun on “state”

2. In October 1605, Cary was with a group of
as government.

English and Dutch soldiers who fled from a smaller

9. Henry Cary (ca. 1576-1633) became Viscount

Italian force—hence Cary, who tried to stop the

Falkland in 1620 and was the father of Jonson’s

rout and was captured, almost made “valor” a

friend Lucius Cary (1609 or 1610-1643).

crime in English eyes.

1. Family line, but also household, which in Cary’s

3. “The castle and river near where he was taken”

case was well known to include not “only” a hus-

[Jonson's note], Cary was captured near the con-
band but also a wife—Elizabeth Cary (ca. 1587 -
fluence of the Rhur and the Rhine rivers.

1639)—who aspired to public “honor” through her

ONE ENGLISH MONSIEUR / 325

It may be much or little in the cause.

**He 's valiant'st that dares fight, and not for
pay; That virtuous is, when the reward's away.**

1616

On Playwright

**Playwright, convict⁰ of public wrongs to
men, *convicted* Takes private beatings and be-
gins again.**

Two kinds of valor he doth show at once:

**Active in 's^o brain, and passive in his bones.
his 1616**

To Elizabeth, Countess of Rutland⁴

That poets are far rarer births than kings

**Your noblest father proved; like whom befo-
re, Or then, or since, about our Muses 's pri-
ngs, Came not that soul exhausted so their
store.⁵**

**5 Hence was it that the destinies decreed (S
ave that most masculine issue of his brain)
6**

No male unto him; who could so exceed

**Nature, they thought, in all that he would fa-
in.⁰ *make* At which she, happily⁷ displeas-
d, made you, io On whom, if he were living now
to look,**

**He should those rare and absolute numbers
8 view, As he would burn or better far his bo**

o k .

1616

On English Monsieur⁹

**W o u l d y o u b e l i e v e , w h e n y o u t h i s m o n s i e u
r s e e , T h a t h i s w h o l e b o d y s h o u l d s p e a k F r e
n c h , n o t h e ?**

**T h a t s o m u c h s c a r f o f F r a n c e , a n d h a t , a n d f
e a t h e r , A n d s h o e , a n d t i e , a n d g a r t e r s h o u l d c
o m e h e t h e r , ⁰ h i t h e r ⁵ A n d l a n d o n o n e w h o s e f
a c e d u r s t n e v e r b e T o w a r d t h e s e a f a r t h e r t
h a n H a l f - W a y T r e e ? ¹**

4. Daughter (1584-1612) of the poet Sir Philip

7. I.e., by good fortune.

Sidney (1554-1586; see pp. 208-20), she married

8. Metrical feet, hence lines or verses; perhaps

Roger Manners, fifth earl of Rutland.

also, “proportions.”

5. I.e., no one before or since Sidney has so well

9. Sir, Mr. (French); pronounced *mes ’-yer*; but used up the supply (“store”) of poetic inspiration often spelled *monser* in Jonson’s time, suggesting symbolized by the “springs” of the “Muses” (nine an Anglicized pronunciation.

sister goddesses in Greek mythology).

1. Perhaps a landmark between London and

6. I.e., his books.

Dover, where a traveler would embark for France.

3 2 6 / B E N J O N S O N

**T h a t h e , u n t r a v e l e d , s h o u l d b e F r e n c h s o
m u c h A s F r e n c h m e n i n h i s c o m p a n y s h o u l d**

seem Dutch?

Or had his father, when he did him get,

10 The French disease, 2 with which he labors
yet?

Or hangs some monsieur's picture on the
wall, By which his dam conceived him, clothes
s and all?

Or is it some French statue? No: To do that move, it
And stoop, and cringe. O then, it needs must
prove 15 The new French tailor's motion, 0 mo-
nethly made, puppet Daily to turn in Paul's, 3 and he
elp the trade.

1616

To John Donne

Who shall doubt, Donne, where 0 I a poet be,
whether When I dare send my epigrams 4 to thee
?

That so alone canst judge, so 'alone dost make;
And, in thy censures, evenly dost take

5 As free simplicity to disavow

As thou hast best authority t' allow.

Read all I send, and if I find but one

Marked by thy hand, and with the better stone,
5

My title's sealed. 6 Those that for claps 0 do write,
applause 10 Let pui'nies', 7 porters', players' 0 praise
delight, *actors*

And, till they burst, their backs like asses load: 8

A man should seek great glory, and not broad. 0
widespread, unrefined 1616

Inviting a Friend to Supper 9

To night, grave sir, both my poor house, and I

**D o e q u a l l y d e s i r e y o u r c o m p a n y ;
N o t t h a t w e t h i n k u s w o r t h y s u c h a g u e s t ,
B u t t h a t y o u r w o r t h w i l l d i g n i f y o u r f e a s t
5 W i t h t h o s e t h a t c o m e , w h o s e g r a c e m a y m a k e
t h a t s e e m S o m e t h i n g , w h i c h e l s e c o u l d h o p e
f o r n o e s t e e m .**

**I t i s t h e f a i r a c c e p t a n c e , s i r , c r e a t e s
T h e e n t e r t a i n m e n t p e r f e c t , n o t t h e c a t e s .
0 f o o d 2 . I . e . , s y p h i l i s .**

6. I.e., as a poet.

3. St. Paul's Cathedral, in London. In the seven-

7. Puisnies (pronounced like *punies*), insignificant
teenth century, St. Paul's was a popular gathering
persons.

place; merchants hired men to walk up and down

8. I.e., probably: let the praises made by insignif-
in the yard advertising their wares.

icant persons load the backs of those who write for

4. On epigrams, see note 1, p. 323.

applause until their backs break ("burst"). *Asses*:

5. The allusion may be to the Thracian custom of
beasts of burden, with a probable pun on "ass" as
recording the good or evil fortunes of each day by
an ignorant person.

placing a stone counter of corresponding color in

9. The versified invitation to share a meal was a
an urn. Jonson refers elsewhere to the description
popular type of classical and Renaissance verse
of this custom in Pliny's *Natural History* 7.40.

epistle.

INVITING A FRIEND TO SUPPER / 327

Yet shall you have, to rectify your palate,
10 An olive, capers, or some better salad
Ushering the mutton; with a short-legged hen,
If we can get her, full of eggs, and then
Lemons, and wine for sauce; to these a cony⁰ *rabbit*
Is not to be despaired of, for our money;
15 And, though fowl now be scarce, yet there are clerks,
The sky not falling, think we may have larks.¹
I'll tell you of more, and lie, so you will come:
Of partridge, pheasant, woodcock, of which some
May yet be there, and godwit, if we can;
20 Knot, rail, and ruff too.² Howsoe'er, my man⁰ *servant*
Shall read a piece of Virgil, Tacitus,
Livy,³ or of some better book to us,
Of which we'll speak our minds, amidst our meat;
And I'll profess⁰ no verses to repeat. *promise*
25 To⁰ this, if aught appear which I not know of, *add to*
That will the pastry, not my paper, show of.⁴
Digestive⁰ cheese and fruit there sure will be; *aiding digestion*
But that which most doth take my Muse⁵ and me,
Is a pure cup of rich Canary wine,
30 Which is the Mermaid's⁶ now, but shall be mine;
Of which had Horace, or Anacreon⁷ tasted,
Their lives, as do their lines, till now had lasted.
Tobacco, nectar, or the Thespian spring,⁸
Are all but Luther's beer⁹ to this I sing.

35 Of this we will sup free, but moderately,
And we will have no Pooley, or Parrot¹ by,
Nor shall our cups make any guilty men;
But, at our parting we will be as when
We innocently met. No simple word
40 That shall be uttered at our mirthful board,
Shall make us sad next morning or affright
The liberty that we'll enjoy tonight.

1616

1. Cf. the old proverb *When the sky falls we shall*

6. London's Mermaid Tavern, a favorite haunt of
have larks. *Clerks*: i.e., scholars (pronounced
Jonson's. Canary is a light, sweet wine.
clarks).

7. The Greek poet Anacreon of Teos (ca. 582—ca.

2. The godwit, knot, rail, and ruff are all wading
485 B.C.E.) and the Roman poet Horace (65-68
birds related to the curlew or sandpiper. They were
B.C.E.) both wrote many poems praising wine.
formerly regarded as delicacies.

8. Associated with the Muses. Smoking was often

3. Roman historian (59 B.C.E.— 17 C.E.). Virgil
called "drinking tobacco." *Nectar*: the drink of the
(70—19 B.C.E.), Roman poet. Cornelius Tacitus (ca.
classical gods.

56-ca. 120), Roman historian.

9. German beer, considered inferior.

4. I.e., if papers appear, they will be only under

1. Robert Pooly and (probably) Henry Parrot were pies (“pastry”; to keep them from sticking to the government spies; Pooly was present when the pans).

poet Christopher Marlowe (1564-1593; see

5. Source of inspiration. In Greek mythology, the pp. 238-56) was killed, in a tavern brawl. With a Muses were nine sister goddesses who presided pun on the chattering of parrots (Polly, a name for over poetry, song, and the arts and sciences.

a parrot).

3 2 8 / B E N J O N S O N

On Gut

Gut eats all day and lechers all the night;
So all his meat he tasteth² over twice;
And, striving so to double his delight,
He makes himself a thoroughfare of vice.

5 Thus in his belly can he change a sin:
Lust it comes out, that gluttony went in.

Epitaph on Elizabeth, L. H.³

Wouldst thou hear what man can say
In a little? Reader, stay.

Underneath this stone doth lie

As much beauty as could die;

5 Which in life did harbor give
To more virtue than doth live.

If at all she had a fault,

Leave it buried in this vault.

One name was Elizabeth;
io Th' other, let it sleep with death:
Fitter, where it died, to tell,
Than that it lived at all. Farewell. , , ,

1 6 1 6

To Penshurst⁴

Thou art not, Penshurst, built to envious show,
Of touch⁵ or marble; nor canst boast a row
Of polished pillars, or a roof of gold;
Thou hast no lantern,⁶ whereof tales are told,
5 Or stair, or courts; but stand'st an ancient pile,
And, these grudged at, art revered the while.⁷
Thou joy'st in better marks, of soil, of air,
Of wood, of water; therein thou art fair.

Thou hast thy walks for health, as well as sport;

io Thy mount,⁸ to which the dryads⁰ do resort, *wood, nymphs*

Where Pan and Bacchus⁹ their high feasts have made,

2. Also meaning "to know carnally."

basalt.

3. The subject of this epitaph (a poem written as

6. A glassed or open structure raised above the
if it were inscribed on a tombstone) has not been
roof of a house.

identified, although it is likely that the "L" stood

7. I.e., while other buildings are envied, Penshurst
for "Lady."

is admired.

4. The country estate of the Sidney family, in

8. Some high ground on the estate.

Kent. An important early example of the “country

9. Greek god of wine and revelry. *Pan*: Greek god
house” poem in English, this poem was imitated
of shepherds and hunters; half goat, half man, he
by Jonson’s contemporaries; cf. Aemilia Lanyer’s
was raised by Bacchus and was associated with lust
“The Description of Cooke-ham” (p. 288).
and music.

5. Touchstone: a fine, black, costly variety of

T o P E N S H U R S T / 3 2 9

Beneath the broad beech and the chestnut shade;

That taller tree, which of a nut was set

At his great birth where all the Muses¹ met.

15 There in the writhed bark are cut the names

Of many a sylvan, taken with his flames;²

And thence the ruddy satyrs oft provoke

T h e lighter fauns to reach thy Lady’s Oak.

Thy copse too, n a m e d of Gamage,³ thou hast there,

20 That never fails to serve thee seasoned deer

W h e n thou wouldst feast or exercise thy friends.

T h e lower land, that to the river bends,

Thy sheep, thy bullocks, kine,⁰ and calves do feed; *cows*

T h e middle grounds thy mares and horses breed.

25 Each bank doth yield thee conies;⁰ and the tops,⁰ *rabbits / hills*

Fertile of wood, Ashore and Sidney’s copse,⁴

To crown thy open table, doth provide

T h e purpled pheasant with the speckled side;
T h e painted partridge lies in every field,
30 And for thy mess^o is willing to be killed. *meal*
And if the high-swollen Medway^o fail thy dish, *local river*
Thou hast thy ponds, that pay thee tribute fish,
Fat aged carps that run into thy net,
And pikes, now weary their own kind to eat,
35 As loath the second draught⁵ or cast to stay,^o *await*
Officiously^o at first themselves betray; *dutifully*
Bright eels that emulate them, and leap on land
Before the fisher, or into his hand.
T h e n hath thy orchard fruit, thy garden flowers,
40 Fresh as the air, and new as are the hours.
T h e early cherry, with the later plum,
Fig, grape, and quince, each in his time doth come;
T h e blushing apricot and woolly peach
H a n g on thy walls, that every child may reach.
45 And though thy walls be of the country stone,
They're reared with no man's ruin, no man's groan;
There's none that dwell about them wish t h e m down;
But all come in, the farmer and the clown,^o *countryman*
And no one empty-handed, to salute
50 Thy lord and lady, though they have no suit.^o *request to*
make
Some bring a capon,⁶ some a rural cake,
Some nuts, some apples; some that think they make
T h e better cheeses bring them, or else send
By their ripe daughters, whom they would c o m m e n d

1. The nine Greek sister goddesses believed to be as less wild than the satyrs) to race to the tree sources of inspiration for the arts. At *his great birth*: named after a Lady Leicester, who is said to have 1.e., the poet Sir Philip Sidney's birth (on November 30, 1554; for his poetry, see pp. 208-20), when
3. Barbara Gamage, wife of Sir Robert Sidney an oak was planted to commemorate the day. (Philip's younger brother and the current owner of
2. I.e., the fires of love; perhaps the woodsman Penshurst). ("sylvan") is in love because of reading Sidney's
4. Two groves on the estate. poems. In the next lines, the "ruddy satyrs" (wood-
5. The drawing in of a net. land gods associated with lust and drinking) chal-
6. A castrated rooster, especially one fattened for length the "lighter fauns" (woodland gods described eating.

330 / BENJONSON

This way to husbands, and whose baskets bear
An emblem of themselves in plum or pear.
But what can this (more than express their love)
Add to thy free provisions, far above
The need of such? whose liberal board⁰ doth flow *table*
With all that hospitality doth know;
Where comes no guest but is allowed to eat,
Without his fear, and of thy lord's own meat;
Where the same beer and bread, and selfsame wine,
That is his lordship's shall be also mine,
And I not fain⁰ to sit (as some this day *obliged*
At great men's tables), and yet dine away.⁷
Here no man tells⁰ my cups; nor, standing by, *counts*
A waiter doth my gluttony envy,
But gives me what I call, and lets me eat;
He knows below⁰ he shall find plenty of meat. *in servants'*
quarters
Thy tables hoard not up for the next day;
Nor, when I take my lodging, need I pray
For fire, or lights, or livery;⁰ all is there, *provisions*
As if thou then wert mine, or I reigned here:
There's nothing I can wish, for which I stay.⁰ *wait*
That found King James when, hunting late this way
With his brave son, the prince,⁸ they saw thy fires
Shine bright on every hearth, as the desires
Of thy Penates⁰ had been set on flame *Roman household gods*
To entertain them; or the country came

With all their zeal to warm their welcome here.
What (great I will not say, but) sudden cheer
Didst thou then make 'em! and what praise was heaped
On thy good lady then, who therein reaped
The just reward of her high housewifery;
To have her linen, plate, and all things nigh,
When she was far; and not a room but dressed
As if it had expected such a guest!
These, Penshurst, are thy praise, and yet not all.
Thy lady's noble, fruitful, chaste withal.
His children thy great lord may call his own,
A fortune in this age but rarely known.
They are, and have been, taught religion; thence
Their gentler spirits have sucked innocence.
Each morn and even they are taught to pray,
With the whole household, and may, every day,
Read in their virtuous parents' noble parts
The mysteries of manners, arms, and arts.
Now, Penshurst, they that will proportion⁰ thee *compare*
With other edifices, when they see
Those proud, ambitious heaps, and nothing else,
May say their lords have built, but thy lord dwells.

1616

7. I.e., to be insufficiently fed at "great men's host, and so to dine elsewhere to finish, tables," because the best food was reserved for the 8. Prince Henry (d. 1612), the heir apparent.

SONG : T O C E L I A (I I) / 3 3 1

Song: To Celia (I)⁹

Come, my Celia, let us prove,⁰ *experience*

While we can, the sports of love;
Time will not be ours forever;
He at length our good will sever.
5 Spend not then his gifts in vain.
Suns that set may rise again;
But if once we lose this light,
'Tis with us perpetual night.
Why should we defer our joys?
10 Fame and rumor are but toys.
Cannot we delude the eyes
Of a few poor household spies,
Or his easier ears beguile,
So removed by our wile?
15 'Tis no sin love's fruit to steal;
But the sweet thefts to reveal,
To be taken, to be seen,
These have crimes accounted been.

1606 1616

Song: To Celia (II)¹

Drink to me only with thine eyes,
And I will pledge² with mine;
Or leave a kiss but in the cup,
And I'll not look for wine.
5 The thirst that from the soul doth rise,
Doth ask a drink divine:
But might I of Jove's nectar sup,
I would not change for thine.³
I sent thee late a rosy wreath,

io Not so much honoring thee,
As giving it a hope, that there
It could not withered be.
But thou thereon did'st only breathe,
And sent'st it back to me;
15 Since when it grows and smells, I swear,
Not of itself, but thee.

1616

9. From Jonson's play *Volpone* 3.7 (1606). The
245).

lecherous Volpone attempts to seduce Celia, the
2. Vow, with the added meaning "drink a toast."
virtuous wife of Corvino, whom Volpone has got-
3. Although the lines are ambiguous, the speaker
ten out of the way by a stratagem (line 14). The
seems to be saying that "even if I might taste
poem draws on Catullus 5, translated by a number
("sup") Jove's nectar (i.e., the drink of the gods of
of English poets in this period. Cf. Thomas Cam-
classical mythology—hence belonging to Jove,
pion, "My Sweetest Lesbia" (p. 278).

king of the gods), I would not take it in exchange

1. Based on five separate passages in the *Epistles*
for thine."

of the Greek rhetorician Philostratus (ca. 170—ca.

332 / BENJONSON

A Fit of Rhyme against Rhyme⁴

Rhyme, the rack⁰ of finest wits, *instrument of torture*

That expresseth but by fits
True conceit,
Spoiling senses of their treasure,
5 Cozening judgment with a measure,
But false weight;⁵
Wresting words from their true calling;
Propping verse for fear of falling
To the ground;
10 Jointing syllables,⁶ drowning letters,
Fastening vowels, as with fetters
They were bound!
Soon as lazy thou wert known,
All good poetry hence was flown,
15 And art banished:
For a thousand years together,⁷
All Parnassus' ⁸ green did wither,
And wit vanish'd!
Pegasus⁹ did fly away,
20 At the wells no M u s e did stay,
But bewailed,
So to see the fountain dry,
And Apollo's music die,
All light failed!
25 Starveling rhymes did fill the stage,
Not a poet in an age
Worthy crowning.
Not a work deserving bays,¹
Nor a line deserving praise,

30 Pallas² frowning:

Greek was free from rhyme's infection,

Happy Greek, by this protection,

Was not spoiled.

4. The issue of rhyme was hotly debated by many

6. Syllables; i.e., making a rhyme by breaking a sixteenth- and seventeenth-century poets, including John Milton and John Dryden; some who denigrate rhyme in theory used it effectively in their poems).

7. Classical Latin poetry did not use rhyme, but poetic practice. In 1587, Christopher Marlowe

beginning in the third and fourth centuries C.E.,

attacked the "jigging veins of rhyming mother-wits"

Christian poets rhymed in Latin. Jonson's view that in the prologue to *Tamburlaine the Great*, part 1,

true poetry's "banishment" lasted a thousand years and in 1602, Thomas Campion published a treatise

implies that the Italian humanists of the fourteenth century rescued poetry from the "wrongs" of

titative meters" to English rhyming verse. In 1603,

(line 35) of rhyme. One of those humanist scholars, Samuel Daniel published his *Defense of Rhyme*;

ars, Petrarch, used rhyme masterfully. Jonson entered the fray with a witty poem he

8. Mt. Parnassus, in central Greece, was consid-

8. Mt. Parnassus, in central Greece, was consid-

8. Mt. Parnassus, in central Greece, was consid-

8. Mt. Parnassus, in central Greece, was consid-

described to a friend as written “both against Cam-
ered sacred to the Muses, goddesses of the arts and
pion and Daniel.” “Fit” is an old term for a part of
sciences, and to Phoebus (Apollo), god of sunlight,
a poem, a canto; Jonson also plays (e.g., in line 2)
prophecy, music, and poetry.

on the term’s meaning of “convulsion.”

9. The winged horse Pegasus made the Hippo-

5. Punning on “measure” as a unit of poetical or
crene spring (“wells,” line 20) for the Muses by
musical rhythm and as a standard amount of a
striking his hoof on the ground.

commodity, the line suggests that the rhyming poet

1. I.e., the evergreen garland symbolizing a poet’s
cheats the buyer-reader by failing to “weigh”
superiority.

sounds properly, i.e., according to the system used

2. Pallas Athena, goddess of wisdom.

in Latin prosody.

A H Y M N T O G O D T H E F A T H E R / 3 3 3

Whilst the Latin, queen of tongues,

35 Is not yet free from rhyme’s wrongs,

But rests foiled.

Scarce the hill again doth flourish,

Scarce the world a wit doth nourish,

To restore

40 Phoebus to his crown again;

And the Muses to their brain;

As before.

Vulgar³ languages that want
Words, and sweetness, and be scant

45 Of true measure,

Tyrant rhyme hath so abused,

That they long since have refused,

Other cesure.⁰ *caesura*

He that first invented thee,

50 May his joints tormented be,

Cramp'd for ever;

Still may syllabes jar with time,

Still may reason war with rhyme,

Resting never!

55 May his sense when it would meet

The cold tumor in his feet,

Grow unsouder;

And his title be long fool,⁴

That in rearing such a school

60 Was the founder!

1 6 1 6 ? 1 6 4 0 - 4 1

A Hymn to God the Father⁵

Hear me, O God!

A broken heart,

Is my best part;

Use still thy rod,⁶

5 That I may prove⁰ *experience*

Therein thy love.

If thou hadst not

Been stern to me,
But left me free,
so I had forgot
Myself and thee.
For sin's so sweet,
As0 minds ill bent *that*

3. Vernacular, as opposed to Latin.

5. Cf. John Donne's poem with the same title

4. A play on the Latin saying *ars longa, vita brevis*
(p. 321).

(art is long, life short).

6. I.e., punishment.

334 / BENJONSON

Rarely repent,
15 Until they meet
Their punishment.
Who more can crave
Than thou hast done,
That gav'st a Son,⁷
20 To free a slave?
First made of naught,
With all since bought.⁸
Sin, Death, and Hell,
His glorious Name
25 Quite overcame,
Yet I rebel,
And slight the same.
But I'll come in

Before my loss
30 Me farther toss,
As sure to win
Under his Cross.

1 6 4 0 - 4 1

Her Triumph⁹

See the chariot at hand here of Love,
Wherein my lady rideth!

Each that draws is a swan or a dove,¹
And well the care Love guideth.

5 As she goes, all hearts do duty
Unto her beauty;

And, enamored, do wish, so they might
But enjoy such a sight,

That they still⁰ were to run by her side, *always*

io Through² swords, through seas, whither⁰ she would ride,
wherever

Do but look on her eyes; they do light
All that Love's world compriseth!

Do but look on her hair; it is bright
As Love's star³ when it riseth!

7. I.e., who could crave more than what God
ites. "Charis" is also related to the Latin term for
("thou") has already done, in giving his "Son"
love, *caritas*, and is an obsolete form of "cherish."
(Christ).

Triumph: following Petrarch, many Renaissance

8. I.e., redeemed by Christ.

poets used the image of the triumphal procession
9. Published after Jonson's death, in "A Celebration of Charis in Ten Lyric Pieces"; although Jon-
time, etc.).

son may have arranged these lyrics as they stand,

1. Venus ("Love"), goddess of love and beauty,
they were (probably) not composed as a unit. The
drove a chariot drawn by swans or doves.

Greek word *charis* means "grace" or "loveliness"; 2. Here
pronounced as two syllables (often spelled
the three Graces, sister goddesses in Greek
"thorough").

mythology who gave charm and beauty, are *Char-*

3. I.e., Venus.

A N E L E G Y / 3 3 5

15 Do but mark, her forehead's smoother

Than words that soothe her!

And from her arched brows, such a grace

Sheds itself through the face,

As alone there triumphs to the life

20 All the gain, all the good, of the elements' strife.⁴

Have you seen but a bright lily grow,

Before rude hands have touched it?

Ha' you marked but the fall o' the snow

Before the soil hath smutched⁰ it? *smudged*

25 Ha' you felt the wool o' the beaver?

Or swan's down ever?

Or have smelt o' the bud o' the brier?
Or the nard⁵ in the fire?
Or have tasted the bag⁰ o' the bee? *sack of honey*
30 O so white, O so soft, O so sweet is she!

1 6 4 0 - 4 1

An Elegy⁶

Though beauty be the mark of praise,
And yours of whom I sing be such
As not the world can praise too much,
Yet is't your virtue now I raise.
5 A virtue, like alloy,⁰ so gone *alloy*
Throughout your form, as, though that⁷ move
And draw and conquer all men's love,
This⁸ subjects you to love of one.
Wherein you triumph yet; because
io 'Tis of yourself, and that you use
The noblest freedom, not to choose
Against or faith or honor's laws.
But who should less expect from you,
In whom alone Love⁹ lives again?
15 By whom he is restored to men,
And kept, and bred,¹ and brought up true.
His falling temples you have reared,
The withered garlands ta'en away;
4. The four elements (earth, water, air, and fire)
elegiac meter; in English tradition, an elegy dealt
were thought to be constantly at war; according to
either with love or (increasingly from the seven-

Platonic theory, heavenly harmony reconciles the
teenth century on) with grief for a dead person.

skirmishing elements.

7. I.e., your beauty.

5. Spikenard, an aromatic plant used in preparing

8. I.e., your virtue.

incense (as here) and perfumes.

9. I.e., Cupid, Roman god of erotic love.

6. Originally, the term meant a poem written in

1. Educated, or properly trained.

3 3 6 / B E N J O N S O N

His altars kept from the decay

20 That envy wished, and nature feared;

And on them burn so chaste a flame,

With so much loyalties' expense,

As Love, t' acquit² such excellence,

Is gone himself into your name.³

25 And you are he; the deity

To whom all lovers are designed

That would their better objects find;

Among which faithful troop am I.

Who, as an offspring⁴ at your shrine,

BO Have sung this hymn, and here entreat

One spark of your diviner heat

To light upon a love of mine.

Which, if it kindle not, but scant

Appear, and that to shortest view,

35 Yet give me leave t' adore in you

What I in her am grieved to want.

1 6 4 0 - 4 1

An Ode to Himself⁵

Where dost thou careless lie

Buried in ease and sloth?

Knowledge that sleeps doth die;

And this security,⁰ *overconfidence*

⁵ It is the common moth

That eats on wits and arts, and oft destroys them both.

Are all th' Aonian springs

Dried up? Lies Thespia waste?⁶

Doth Clarius' harp⁷ want strings,

io That not a nymph⁸ now sings;

Or droop they as disgraced,

To see their seats and bowers by chattering pies⁹ defaced?

If hence thy silence be,

As 'tis too just a cause,

15 Let this thought quicken thee:

2. I.e., to reward.

arts. Thespia, a town near Helicon, was the center

3. I.e., the lady's name includes the letters of

of the cult of the Muses.

"love." Based on this hint, some scholars have sug-

7. The lyre of Apollo, god of music and poetry

gested Lady Covell as the person addressed.

(from his temple at Clarus, on the Ionian coast.)

4. Possibly a misprint for *offering*.

8. A minor nature goddess.

5. A Horatian ode (see “Versification,” p. 2048).
9. The Muses changed the nine daughters of King
6. Aonia was the region in Greece near Mt. Heli-
Pierus into magpies for challenging their suprem-
con, home of the nine Muses, Greek sister god-
acy in poetry.

desses believed to be sources of inspiration for the

**T o T H E I M M O R T A L M E M O R Y A N D F R I E
N D S H I P / 3 3 7**

Minds that are great and free
Should not on fortune pause;
‘Tis crown enough to virtue still, her own applause.
What though the greedy fry¹
20 Be taken with false baits
Of worded balladry,
And think it poesy?⁰ *poetry*
They die with their conceits,
And only piteous scorn upon their folly waits.
25 Then take in hand thy lyre,
Strike in thy proper strain,
With Japhet’s line,² aspire
Sol’s chariot³ for new fire
To give the world again;
30 Who aided him will thee, the issue of Jove’s brain.⁴
And since our dainty age
Cannot endure reproof,
Make not thyself a page
To that strumpet the stage,

35 But sing high and aloof,
Safe from the wolve's black jaw, and the dull ass's hoof.

1 6 4 0

To the Immortal Memory and Friendship of That Noble Pair,
Sir Lucius Cary and Sir Henry Morison⁵

*The Turn*⁶

Brave infant of Saguntum,⁷ clear⁰ *explain or describe*

Thy coming forth in that great year,
When the prodigious Hannibal did crown
His rage with razing your immortal town.

5 Thou, looking then about,
Ere thou wert half got out,

1. Youth, with a pun on "fry" as young fishes.

Pindar's odes are typically arranged in groups of

2. Prometheus, the son of Iapetus, stole fire from
three stanzas (strophe, antistrophe, and epode)
the gods for the benefit of humankind.

designed to be sung by a chorus; the chorus moved

3. I.e., ascend to the sun (Sol being the Roman
in one direction while chanting the strophe,
god of the sun).

reversed direction for the antistrophe, and stood

4. Minerva (Greek Athena), goddess of wisdom,
still for the epode. Jonson's "turn," "counterturn,"
who was said to have sprung fully grown from the
and "stand" (more or less translated from the
head of her father, Jove.

Greek terms) imitate Pindar's pattern. As in Pin-

5. Morison (ca. 1608—1629) was knighted in
dar, the metrical pattern of the turn is repeated in
1627; he died of smallpox. His and Jonson's good
the counterturn, then varied in the stand. The pat-
friend Lucius Cary (1609 or 1610-1643), who
tern of these first three stanzas is then repeated
married Morison's sister in 1630, was killed at the
exactly in the remaining sets of stanzas.

battle of Newbury in September 1643, fighting for

7. A town sacked by Hannibal in 219 **B.C.E.** The
the Royalist cause.

Roman naturalist Pliny the Elder (23 - 79 c.E.) rec-

6. Unlike other "odes" by Jonson modeled on Hor-
ords the story of a "brave infant," who returned to
ace's *Odes* (see, e.g., "An Ode to Himself," above),
his mother's womb upon witnessing the city's
this one is modeled on a poetic structure used by
destruction.

the Greek poet Pindar (ca. 522-ca. 438 **B.C.E.**).

338 / BEN JONSON

Wise child, didst hastily return,
And mad'st thy mother's womb thine urn.⁸
How summed a circle⁹ didst thou leave mankind
10 Of deepest lore, could we the center find!

The Counterturn

Did wiser Nature draw thee back
From out the horror of that sack,
Where shame, faith, honor, and regard of right

Lay trampled on; the deeds of death and night
15 Urged, hurried forth, and hurled
Upon th' affrighted world;
Sword, fire, and famine, with fell fury met,
And all on utmost ruin set,
As, could they but life's miseries foresee,
20 No doubt all infants would return like thee?

The Stand

For what is life, if measured by the space,¹
Not by the act?
Or masked man, if valued by his face
Above his fact? ⁰ deed
25 Here's one outlived his peers
And told forth fourscore years;
He vexed time and busied the whole state,
Troubled both foes and friends;
But ever to no ends:
30 What did this stirrer but die late?
How well at twenty had he fall'n or stood!
For three of his fourscore he did no good.

The Turn

He² entered well, by virtuous parts,
Got up and thrived with honest arts;
35 He purchased friends, and fame, and honors then,
And had his noble name advanced with men;
But weary of that flight
He stooped in all men's sight
To sordid flatteries, acts of strife,

40 And sunk in that dead sea of life
So deep, as he did then death's waters sup,^o *taste*
But that the cork of title buoyed him up.

The Counterturn

Alas, but Morison fell young;
He never fell, thou fall'st,³ my tongue.

8. I.e., tomb.

2. I.e., another man, a separate example.

9. Emblem of perfection. *Summed*: complete.

3. Slip, with a possible pun on the Latin *fallere* (to

1. I.e., by the length of time.

make a mistake).

**T O T H E I M M O R T A L M E M O R Y A N D F R I E
N D S H I P / 3 3 9**

45 He stood, a soldier to the last right end,
A perfect patriot, and a noble friend,
But most a virtuous son.

All offices^o were done

duties in life

By him so ample, full, and round,

50 In weight, in measure, number, sound,

As, though his age imperfect^o might appear,

incomplete

His life was of humanity the sphere.⁴

The Stand

Go now, and tell out days summed up with fears,
And make them years;

55 Produce thy mass of miseries on the stage

To swell thine age;
Repeat of things a throng,
To show thou hast been long,
Not lived; for life doth her great actions spell

tell over

60 By what was done and wrought
In season, and so brought
To light: her measures are, how well
Each syllabe answered, and was formed how fair;

syllable

These make the lines of life, and that's her air.

The Turn

65 It is not growing like a tree
In bulk doth make man better be;
Or standing long an oak, three hundred year,
To fall a log at last, dry, bald, and sere:

A lily of a day

70 Is fairer far in May;
Although it fall and die that night,
It was the plant and flower of light.
In small proportions we just beauties see,
And in short measures life may perfect be.

The Counterturn

75 Call, noble Lucius, then for wine,
And let thy looks with gladness shine;
Accept this garland, plant it on thy head,
And think, nay know, thy Morison's not dead.
He leaped the present age,

so Possessed with holy rage
To see that bright eternal day;
Of which we priests and poets say
Such truths as we expect for happy men,
And there he lives with memory, and Ben

4. I.e., the perfect model. and the standards by which it is
judged. *Air*: mel-5. I.e., life's "measures" are its metrical
patterns ody, song.

340 / BEN JONSON

The Stand

85 Jonson! who sung this of him, ere he went
Himself to rest,

Or taste a part of that full joy he meant

To have expressed

In this bright asterism; 0 *constellation*

90 Where it were friendship's schism

(Were not this Lucius long with us to tarry) To
separate these twin lights, the Dioscuri, 6

And keep the one half from his Harry.

95 But fate doth so alternate the design,

Whilst that in heaven, this light on earth must
shine.

The Turn

And shine as you exalted are,

Two names of friendship, but one star:

Of hearts the union. And those not by chance
IOO Made, or indenture, 0 or leased out 'adva
nce *contracted for* The profits for a time.

No pleasures vain did chime

Of frimes, or riots, at your feasts,

Orgies of drink, or feigned protests,
protestations 105 But simple love of greatness and
of good;

That knits brave minds and manners more than
a blood.

The Counterturn

This made you first to know the why

You liked, then after to apply

That liking, and approach soon to the other,
other no Till either grew a portion of the other:

Each styled by his end

The copy of his friend.

You lived to be the great surnames

And titles by which all made claims

115 Unto the virtue. Nothing perfect done,

But as a Cary, or a Morison.

The Stand

And such a force the fair example had,

As they that saw

The good, and durst not practice it, were glad

120 That such a law

Was left yet to mankind;

6. Or Castor and Pollux, in Greek mythology the
brother; henceforward each lived half the time on
twin sons of Zeus, famous for brotherly devotion.

Earth and half in heaven. Their constellation is

When Castor was killed, Zeus granted Pollux's
Gemini, the Twins.

prayer that he be allowed to share his life with his

**THOUGH I AM YOUNG AND CANNOT TELL
L / 3 4 1**

Where they might read and find
Friendship, indeed, was written, not in words;
And with the heart, not pen,
125 Of two so early⁰ m e n , *young*
Whose lines her rolls were, and records,
Who, ere the first down bloomed on the chin,⁷
Had sowed these fruits, and got the harvest in.

1 6 4 0

Still to Be Neat⁸
Still to be neat, still to be dressed,
As you were going to a feast;
Still to be powdered, still perfumed;
Lady, it is to be presumed,
5 Though art's hid causes are not found,
All is not sweet, all is not sound.
Give me a look, give me a face
That makes simplicity a grace;
Robes loosely flowing, hair as free;
10 Such sweet neglect more taketh me
Then all th' adulteries of art.
They strike mine eyes, but not my heart.

1 6 0 9 1 6 4 0 - 4 1

Though I Am Young and Cannot Tell⁹
Though I am young, and cannot tell
Either what Death or Love is well,
Yet I have heard they both bear darts,

And both do aim at human hearts.
5 And then again, I have been told
Love wounds with heat, as Death with cold;
So that I fear they do but bring
Extremes to touch, and mean one thing.

As in a ruin we it call
10 One thing to be blown up, or fall;
Or to our end like way may have
By a flash of lightning, or a wave;
7. I.e., before they had grown beards.

ymous Latin poem in the *Anthologia latina* (six-
8. From Jonson's play *Epicoene, the Silent Woman*
teenth century).

1.1 (1609). Sung by a servant upon Clerimont's
9. From Jonson's play *The Sad Shepherd* 1.5
request; Clerimont is irritated with the Lady
(1640). The monosyllables of the poem echo the
Haughty, who, he says, overdoes the art of
pastoral simplicity of the character Karalin, who
makeup. The lyric perhaps derives from an anon-
sings it.

3 4 2 / B E N J O N S O N

S o L o v e ' s i n f l a m e d s h a f t o r b r a n d
M a y k i l l a s s o o n a s D e a t h ' s c o l d h a n d ;
15 E x c e p t L o v e ' s f i r e s t h e v i r t u e h a v e
T o f r i g h t t h e f r o s t o u t o f t h e g r a v e .

1 6 4 0 - 4 1

To the Memory of My Beloved,

the Author Mr. William Shakespeare

And What He Hath Left Us I

To draw no envy, Shakespeare, on thy name,
Am I thus ample to thy book and fame,
While I confess thy writings to be such
As neither man nor Muse³ can praise too much.

5 'Tis true, and all men's suffrage. 0 But these
ways *consent* Were not the paths I meant untot
hy praise: For silliest 0 ignorance on these m
ay light, *simplest* Which, when it sounds at best
, but echoes right; Or blind affection, 0 whic
h doth ne'er advance *feeling* io The truth, but gr
opes, and urges all by chance; Or crafty mali
ce might pretend this praise, And think to rui
n where it seemed to raise.

These are as ° some infamous bawd or whore a
sif Should praise a matron. 4 What could hurt
her more?

15 But thou art proof against them, and, inde
ed, Above th' ill fortune of them, or the need.

It therefore will begin. Soul of the age!

The applause! delight! the wonder of our sta
ge!

My Shakespeare, rise; I will not lodge thee by
20 Chaucer or Spenser, or bid Beaumont lie⁵

A little further to make thee a room:

Thou art a monument without a tomb,

And art alive still while thy book doth live,

And we have wit to read and praise to give.

25 That I not mix thee so, my brain excuses, I
mean with great, but disproportioned Muse
s; 6

For, if I thought my judgment were of years,
7

I should commit to the surely with thy peers,
unite, connect And tell how far thou didst our Lyly outshine,

30 Or sporting Kyd, or Marlowe's mighty line.
8

And though thou hadst small Latin and less Greek,
9

1. Prefixed to the first collected edition—the First Folio—of Shakespeare's plays, 1623.

parable (“disproportioned”) with your poetry.

2. Copious, i.e., in this relatively long poem.

7. I.e., over an extended period of time.

3. Source of inspiration.

8. John Lyly (1554-1606), Thomas Kyd (1558-

4. A married woman with moral and social dignity.

1594), and Christopher Marlowe (1564-1593), all

5. All three authors—Geoffrey Chaucer (ca.

Elizabethan dramatists; with “sporting” as “play-

1340-1400), Edmund Spenser (ca. 1552-1599),

ing,” activating the pun in Kyd's name (*kid*, baby

Francis Beaumont (1584—1616)—are buried in

goat).

Westminster Abbey, London. Shakespeare is bur-

9. By modern standards, Shakespeare had an ade-

quate command of Latin (as well as French and

(see “Avon,” line 71).

Italian), but he lacked Jonson's knowledge of classical literature. I.e., that I do not place you with the other

T o T H E M E M O R Y O F M Y B E L O V E D / 3 4 3

From thence to honor thee I would not seek *0 lack*
For names, but call forth thund'ring Aeschylus,
Euripides, and Sophocles to us,
35 Pacuvius, Accius, him of Cordova dead,
To life again, to hear thy buskin² tread
And shake a stage; or, when thy socks were on,
Leave thee alone for the comparison
Of all that insolent Greece or haughty Rome
40 Sent forth, or since did from their ashes come.
Triumph, my Britain; thou hast one to show
To whom all scenes⁰ of Europe homage owe. *stages*
He was not of an age, but for all time!
And all the Muses still were in their prime
45 When like Apollo he came forth to warm
Our ears, or like a Mercury³ to charm.
Nature herself was proud of his designs,
And joyed to wear the dressing of his lines,
Which were so richly spun, and woven so fit,
50 As, since, she will vouchsafe no other wit:
The merry Greek, tart Aristophanes,
Neat Terence, witty Plautus⁴ now not please,
But antiquated and deserted lie,
As they were not of Nature's family.
55 Yet must I not give Nature all; thy Art,

My gentle Shakespeare, must enjoy a part.
 For though the poet's matter Nature be,
 His Art doth give the fashion;⁰ and that he *form, style*
 Who casts⁰ to write a living line must sweat *undertakes*
 60 (Such as thine are) and strike the second heat
 Upon the Muses' anvil; turn the same,
 And himself with it, that he thinks to frame,
 Or for the laurel⁵ he may gain a scorn;
 For a good poet's made as well as born.
 65 And such wert thou! Look how the father's face
 Lives in his issue, even so the race
 Of Shakespeare's mind and manners brightly shines
 In his well-turned and true-filed⁰ lines, *well-polished*
 In each of which he seems to shake a lance,⁶
 70 As brandished at the eyes of ignorance.
 Sweet swan of Avon, what a sight it were
 To see thee in our waters yet appear,
 And make those flights upon the banks of Thames
 That so did take Eliza and our James!⁷
 75 But stay; I see thee in the hemisphere
 Advanced and made a constellation there!

1. I.e., Seneca, Roman tragedian of the first cen-
 enchantment. *Apollo*: the classical god of sunlight,
 tury **C.E.**; Marcus Pacuvius and Lucius Accius
 prophecy, music, and poetry.

were Roman tragedians of the second century

4. Aristophanes (Greek) and Terence and Plautus

B.C.E. Aeschylus (5 2 5 - 4 5 6 **B.C.E.**), Euripides (ca.

(Roman) were comic writers of the fourth to second centuries B.C.E.), and Sophocles (ca. 496 - 406 B.C.E.).

B.C.E.) were all Greek dramatists.

5. As in the crowns of laurel that honored ancient

2. The high-heeled boot worn by Greek tragic Greek poets.

actors; the “sock” (line 37), or light shoe, was worn

6. With a pun on *Shake-speare* (also see line 37).

in comedies.

7. I.e., to travel on the river banks as did Queen

3. Roman god associated with good luck and Elizabeth and King James.

344 / BEN JONSON

Shine forth, thou star of poets, and with rage

Or influence⁸ chide or cheer the drooping stage,

Which, since thy flight from hence, hath mourned like night,

so And despairs day, but for thy volume’s light.

16231640 - 41

A Sonnet to the Noble Lady, the Lady Mary Wroth⁹

I that have been a lover, and could show it,

Though not in these,¹ in rithmes not wholly dumb,

Since I exscribe⁰ your sonnets, am become *copy out*

A better lover, and much better poet.

5 Nor is my Muse² or I ashamed to owe it

To those true numerous graces, whereof some

But charm the senses, others overcome

Both brains and hearts; and mine now best do know it:

For in your verse all Cupid's³ armory,
io His flames, his shafts, his quiver, and his bow,
His very eyes are yours to overthrow.

But then his mother's sweets you so apply,
Her joys, her smiles, her loves, as readers take
For Venus' ceston⁰ every line you make. *girdle*

1 6 4 0 - 4 1

Slow, Slow, Fresh Fount⁴

Slow, slow, fresh fount, keep time with my salt tears;

Yet slower, yet, O faintly, gentle springs!

List to the heavy part the music bears,

Woe weeps out her division,⁵ when she sings.

⁵ Droop herbs and flowers;

Fall grief in showers;

Our beauties are not ours.

O, I could still,

Like melting snow upon some craggy hill,

io Drop, drop, drop, drop,

Since nature's pride is now a withered daffodil.

1600

8. "Rage" and "influence" describe a supposed
Wroth's accomplishments in her sonnet sequence,
emanation of power from the stars, affecting
Pamphilia to Amphilanthus.)

Earth's events. "Rage" also implies poetic inspira-

2. Source of poetic inspiration.

tion.

3. Roman god of erotic love; son of Venus, god-

9. English poet (1587?-1651 ?; see pp. 347-53),
dess of love and beauty.

to whom Jonson dedicated his play *The Alchemist*

4. From Jonson's play *Cynthia's Revels* 5.6 (1600).

(1610). As the niece of Sir Philip Sidney and of

Inspired by classical mythology, the play deals

Mary Sidney, Wroth was a potential patron for Jon-

satirically with the sin of self-love; this song is sung

son, who also wrote a flattering poem to her hus-

by Echo for Narcissus, who fell in love with his own

band, Sir Robert Wroth.

reflection and was changed into the flower that

1. I.e., the sonnet form, typically used for love

bears his name. The daffodil (line 11) is a species

poetry but not by Jonson. (This is his only sonnet;

of narcissus. *Fount*: spring.

by using the form here, he pays homage to Mary

5. Part in a song, as well as grief at parting.

T A K E , O H , T A K E T H O S E L I P S A W A Y / 3 4 5

Queen and Huntress⁶

Queen and huntress, chaste and fair,

Now the sun is laid to sleep,

Seated in thy silver chair,

State in wonted manner keep;

5 Hesperus entreats thy light,

Goddess excellently bright.

Earth, let not thy envious shade

Dare itself to interpose;⁷

Cynthia's shining orb was made
10 Heaven to clear, when day did close.
Bless us then with wished sight,
Goddess excellently bright.
Lay thy bow of pearl apart,
And thy crystal-shining quiver;
15 Give unto the flying hart⁸
Space to breathe, how short soever.
Thou that mak'st a day of night,
Goddess excellently bright.

1600

J O H N F L E T C H E R

1579-1625

Take, Oh, Take Those Lips Away¹
Take, oh, take those lips away
That so sweetly were forsworn
And those eyes, like break of day,
Lights that do mislead the morn;
5 But my kisses bring again,
Seals of love, though sealed in vain.
Hide, oh, hide those hills of snow,
Which thy frozen bosom bears,
On whose tops the pinks that grow
10 Are of those that April wears;
But first set my poor heart free,
Bound in those icy chains by thee.

1 6 3 9

6. From *Cynthia's Revels* 5.6 (1600). This lyric is

7. Eclipses were seen as evil portents.

sung by Hesperus, the evening star, to Cynthia

8. A pun on “hart” (as deer) and *heart*.

(also known as Diana), goddess of the moon and

1. The first stanza of this song appears as a com-

of the hunt. Cynthia was often identified with

plete poem in Shakespeare’s play *Measure for*

Queen Elizabeth (1533-1603; see pp. 142-43) by

Measure (1604-05), from which Fletcher likely

poets of this period.

appropriated it.

3 4 6

EDWARD HERBERT

1582-1648

Sonnet of Black Beauty

Black beauty, which above that common light,

Whose power can no colors here renew

But those which darkness can again subdue,

Do’st still remain unvary’d to the sight,

5 And like an object equal to the view,

Art neither chang’d with day, nor hid with night;

When all these colors which the world call bright,

And which old poetry doth so persue,

Are with the night to perished and gone,

io That of their being there remains no mark,

Thou still abidest so entirely one,

That we may know thy blackness is a spark

Of light inaccessible, and alone

Our darkness which can make us think it dark.1

1 6 2 0 1 6 6 5

Another Sonnet to Black Itself

Thou Black, wherein all colors are composed,
And unto which they all at last return,
Thou color of the sun where it doth burn,
And shadow, where it cools, in thee is clos'd
5 Whatever nature can, or hath dispos'd
In any other hue: from thee do rise
Those tempers and complexions, which disclos'd,
As parts of thee, do work as mysteries,
Of that thy hidden power; when thou dost reign
io The characters of fate shine in the skies,
And tell us what the heavens do ordain,2
But when earth's common light shines to our eyes,
Thou so retir'st thy self, that thy disdain
All revelation unto man denies.3

1 6 2 0 1 6 6 5

1. I.e., it is only our moral blindness that can make to foretell the future.

us think things are dark. 3. I.e., in the bright light of day, the stars cannot be read. 2. I.e., the stars, "characters of fate," can be read, and the future is not revealed.

3 4 7

MARY W R O T H

1587-1651?

*From Pamphilia to Amphilanthus*1

I

When night's black mantle could most darkness prove,

And sleep death's image did my senses hire⁰ *engage*
From knowledge of my self, then thoughts did move
Swifter than those most swiftness need require:
5 In sleep, a chariot drawn by wing'd desire
I saw: where sat bright Venus, queen of love,²
And at her feet her son,³ still adding fire
To burning hearts which she did hold above;
But one heart flaming more than all the rest
io The goddess held, and put it to my breast;
“Dear son, now shut,”⁴ said she: “thus must we win”;
He her obeyed, and martyred my poor heart;
I, waking, hoped as dreams it⁵ would depart;
Yet since—O me—a lover I have been.

3

Yet is there hope: then Love⁰ but play thy part; *Cupid*
Remember well thy self, and think on me;
Shine in those eyes which conquered have my heart;
And see if mine be slack⁶ to answer thee:
5 Lodge in that breast, and pity moving see,
For flames which in mine burn in truest smart,⁷
Exiling thoughts that touch inconstancy,
Or those which waste not in the constant art;⁸

1. Mary Wroth wrote the first work of prose fiction
ordering of the 1621 print version of the *Urania*,
by an Englishwoman, her long but unfinished *The*
as reproduced and discussed in Josephine A. Rob-
Countess of Montgomery's Urania. Including a
erts's edition of Wroth's poems.

number of poems and modeled on her uncle Sir

2. Traditionally, Venus, Roman goddess of love

Philip Sidney's romance, *Arcadia* (ca. 1580),

and beauty, was represented in a chariot drawn by

Wroth's text covertly alludes to various personages

doves.

and scandals of the Jacobean court, and was met

3. Cupid, god of erotic love.

with a storm of criticism when part 1 was pub-

4. I.e., enclose the flaming heart in Pamphilia's

lished in 1621. Appended to *Urania* is *Pamphilia*

breast; by implication, her breast is also being cru-

to Amphilanthus, a sonnet sequence (the only one

elly opened, with a love wound like Amoret's in the

by an Englishwoman of her time) consisting of

climactic episode of Spenser's *Faerie Queene*

eighty-three sonnets and twenty songs. Pamphilia

3.12.2-21.

(Latin, "All-loving") is the protagonist of *Urania*;

5. I.e., the vision of Venus and Cupid.

Amphilanthus (Latin, "Lover of two") is her

6. Lacking in energy or diligence.

unfaithful beloved. Their names reflect the main

7. I.e., house yourself in my beloved's breast, and

theme of both the romance and the appended son-

see him moved by pity for the flames that burn in

net sequence—constancy in the face of unfaith-

my breast with truest pain.

fulness. *Pamphilia to Amphilanthus* is divided into
8. I.e., exile [also] those thoughts that do not
several separately numbered series (the first of
waste away in the art (discipline, pursuit) of con-
which includes forty-eight sonnets, with songs
stancy.

inserted after every sixth sonnet). We follow the

348 / MARY WROTH

Watch but my sleep, if I take any rest
10 For thoughts of you, my spirit so distressed,
As pale, and famished, I for mercy cry;
Will you your servant leave? Think but on this:
Who wears love's crown,⁹ must not do so amiss,
But seek their good, who on thy force do lie.⁰ *rely*

11

You endless torments that my rest oppress,
How long will you delight in my sad pain?
Will never love your favor more express?¹
Shall I still live, and ever feel disdain?
5 Alas now stay,⁰ and let my grief obtain *refrain from acting*
Some end; feed not my heart with sharp distress:
Let me once see my cruel fortune's gain
At least release, and long felt woes redress;
Let not the blame of cruelty disgrace
io The honored title of your Godhead,⁰ Love:⁰ *deity / Cupid*
Give not just cause for me to say a place
Is found for rage alone on me to move;²
O quickly end, and do not long debate

My needful aid, lest help do come too late. *lest*

22

Like to the Indians, scorched with the sun,³

The sun which they do as their God adore,

So am I used by love, for ever more

I worship him, less favors have I won;⁴

5 Better are they who thus to blackness run,

And so can only whiteness' want deplore⁵

Than I who pale, and white am with griefs' store,

Nor can have hope, but to see hopes undone;⁶

9. The "crown" of love, a sign of Cupid's power as rage is the only emotion I can feel or that I am the an absolute ruler, recurs in many later poems in only "place" where rage moves or acts.

Wroth's sequence and provides the key formal

3. Some early modern thinkers attributed Native Americans' and Africans' skin colors to the tanning with which *Pamphilia to Amphilanthus* closes.

power of the tropical sun.

1. Ambiguous syntax: "your" could refer to the ini-

4. I.e., as I worship love more, I receive less in tial addressee, "torments," i.e., will love not make terms of love's benefits.

you (endless torments) show more favor to me;

5. I.e., can only deplore the lack of whiteness alternatively, "your" could refer to "love," with the (though there may also be a sense, if "want" is

implied addressee shifting so that the poet is now taken to mean “desire” rather than “lack,” that the asking a personified love to express his “favor” to desire for whiteness is being deplored).

the speaker more than he has in the past.

6. I.e., I cannot have any hope except the (para-

2. I.e., do not give me just cause to say either that doxical) one of seeing my hopes undone.

**P A M P H I L I A T O A M P H I L A N T H U S : 3 7 / 3 4
9**

Besides their sacrifice received's in sight

io Of their chose⁰ saint, mine hid as worthless rite;⁷ *chosen*

Grant me to see where I my off rings give,

Then let me wear the mark of Cupid's might

In heart as they in skin of Phoebus' light,⁸

Not ceasing off' rings to love while I live.

2 5

Poor eyes be blind, the light behold no more

Since that is gone which is your dear delight,

Ravished from you by greater pow'r, and might,

Making your loss a gain to others' store;

5 O'erflow, and drown, till sight to you restore

That blessed star,⁹ and as in hateful spite

Send forth your tears in floods, to kill all sight,

And looks, that lost,¹ wherein you joyed before.

Bury these beams, which in some⁰ kindled fires, *some people*

io And conquered have their love-burnt-hearts' desires,

Losing, and yet no gain by you esteemed,

Till that bright star do once again appear
Brighter than Mars when he doth shine most clear;
See not: then by his might, be you redeemed.

37

Night, welcome art thou to my mind distressed
Dark, heavy, sad, yet not more sad than I;
Never could'st thou find fitter company
For thine own humor than I thus oppressed.
5 If thou beest dark, my wrongs still unredressed⁰ *unremedied*
Saw never light, nor smallest bliss can spy;
If heavy, joy from me too fast doth hie⁰ *hurry away*
And care outgoes my hope of quiet rest,
Then now in friendship join with hapless me,
io Who am as sad, and dark as thou canst be
Hating all pleasure, or delight of life;

7. I.e., besides, their sacrifice is received in sight
power in her heart as the Indians have the sign of
of their chosen saint, whereas my sacrifice is hid-
the sun's power on their skin.

den as a ritual (but also a "right") considered

9. Here and in line 12, the speaker refers to her
worthless.

beloved as a star and thus substitutes him for the

8. The light of the sun (Phoebus being Apollo, the
planet Venus, traditionally linked to the planet
classical god of sunlight); the speaker prays to be
Mars because Venus was the lover of the Roman
allowed to see the object of her worship (as the

god of war, Mars.

Indians do) and to have the mark or sign of Cupid's

1. I.e., since that is lost (or, that being lost).

350 / MARY WROTH

Silence, and grief, with thee I best do love

And from you three, I know I can not move,

Then let us live companions without strife.

39

If I were giv'n to mirth, 'twould be more cross *it would*

Thus to be robbed of my chiefest joy;

But silently I bear my greatest loss;

Who's used to sorrow, grief will not destroy;

5 Nor can I as those pleasant wits enjoy *like*

My own framed words, which I account the dross

Of purer thoughts, or reckon them as moss

While they (wit-sick) themselves to breath employ;

Alas, think I, your plenty shows your want,

10 For where most feeling is, words are more scant,

Yet pardon me, live, and your pleasure take,

Grudge not, if I, neglected, envy show;

'Tis not to you² that I dislike do owe,

But crossed myself, wish some like me to make.

74

SONG

Love a child is ever crying,³

Please him, and he straight is flying,

Give him, he the more is craving⁴

Never satisfied with having;

5 His desires have no measure,
 Endless folly is his treasure,
 What he promiseth he breaketh
 Trust not one word that he speaketh;
 He vows nothing but false matter,
 10 And to cozen you he'll flatter,⁵
 Let him gain the hand⁰ he'll leave you, *upper hand*
 And still glory to deceive you;
 He will triumph in your wailing,
 And yet cause be of your failing,
 15 These his virtues are, and slighter
 Are his gifts, his favors lighter,

2. I.e., the writer's own words (though possibly the image to explore Pamphilia's frustration in person who inspired the poem).

love.

3. Although depicting love as Cupid was a Renais-

4. I.e., the more he is given, the more he craves.

sance commonplace, a "crying" Cupid is unusual;

5. I.e., to deceive or cheat ("cozen") you, he'll flat-
 in this section of her sonnet sequence, Wroth uses
 ter you.

P A M P H I L I A T O A M P H I L A N T H U S : 7 8 / 3 5 1

Feathers are as firm in staying
 Wolves no fiercer in their praying.
 As a child then leave him crying
 20 Nor seek him⁰ so given to flying.⁰ *he who is / leaving*
 From *A Crown of Sonnets Dedicated to Love*⁶

77

In this strange labyrinth how shall I turn?
Ways⁰ are on all sides, while the way I miss: *paths*
If to the right hand, there in love I burn;
Let me⁷ go forward, therein danger is;
5 If to the left, suspicion hinders bliss,
Let me turn back, shame cries I ought return,
Nor faint,⁸ though crosses⁰ with my fortunes
troubles, adversity
kiss;
Stand still is harder, although sure to^o mourn.
to make me
Thus let me take the right, or left hand way,
io Go forward, or stand still, or back retire:
I must these doubts endure without allay⁰ *alleviation*
Or help, but travail find for my best hire.⁹
Yet that which most my troubled sense doth move,
Is to leave all and take the thread of Love.¹

78

Is to leave all and take the thread of Love,
Which line straight leads unto the soul's content,
Where choice delights with pleasure's wings do move,
And idle fant'sy never room had lent.²

6. The "crown" is a complex poetic form, in which whose true service ennobles lovers. The crown the last line of each poem serves as the first line of includes sonnets 77—90 of the original sequence the next poem, until a circle is completed by the

as numbered in the only manuscript in Wroth's last line of the final poem, which is the same as hand, which is now in the Folger Shakespeare the first line of the sequence. It was originally an Library, Washington, D.C.

Italian form that could be used to praise or con-
7. I.e., if 1.

demn (and is often known by its Italian name,

8. Lose heart; Wroth occasionally uses "nor" with-
corona)-, various kinds of poems could be used for
out including other negatives.

the sequence, with the number of poems ranging

9. I.e., I find hard labor (or suffering) to be the
from seven to fourteen (as in Wroth's crown of
reward for my best efforts. Instead of "traveile"
fourteen sonnets).

(Folger Library manuscript), the 1621 edition
Sir Philip Sidney, Wroth's uncle, included one
prints "travell."

of the first examples of the crown in English in the

1. An allusion to the Greek myth in which Ari-
first version of his prose romance, known as the
adne, defying her father, gave Theseus a thread to
Old Arcadia; her father, Sir Robert Sidney, wrote
unwind behind him in the labyrinth at Crete. After
an incomplete crown thought to be in praise of a
killing the Minotaur, he was able to find his way
specific lady. Wroth, however, dedicates her crown

out by following the thread; shortly thereafter, he more generally to “Love”; in a temporary recanted-abandoned Ariadne.

tion of the harsh judgment of love depicted in the 2. I.e., where room or space had never been preceding part of the *Pamphilia to Amphilanthus* loaned to idle fantasy.

sequence, Love is here portrayed as a monarch

3 5 2 / M A R Y W R O T H

5 When chaste thoughts guide us, then our minds are bent

To take that good which ill from us remove:

Light of true love brings fruit which none repent;

But constant lovers seek and wish to prove.⁰ *try*

Love is the shining star of blessing's light,

10 The fervent fire of zeal, the root of peace,

The lasting lamp, fed with the oil of right,

Image of faith, and womb for joy's increase.⁰ *children*

Love is true virtue, and his end's delight,

His flames are joys, his bands true lover's might.³

82

He⁴ may our prophet, and our tutor prove,

In whom alone we do this power find,

To join two hearts as in one frame to move;

Two bodies, but one soul to rule the mind.⁵

5 Eyes which must care to one dear object bind,

Ears to each others' speech as if above

All else, they sweet, and learned were; this kind

Content of lovers witnesseth true love.

It doth enrich the wits, and make you see
io That in your self which you knew not before,
Forcing you to admire such gifts should be
Hid from your knowledge, yet in you the store.
Millions of these adorn the throne of Love,
How blest are they then, who his favors prove.⁰ *experience*

85

But where they may return with honor's grace
Where⁰ Venus' follies can no harbor win, *there*
But chased are as worthless of the face
Or style of love who hath lascivious been.⁶
5 Our hearts are subject to her son; where sin
Never did dwell, or rest one minute's space;⁷
What faults he hath, in her, did still begin,
And from her breast he sucked his fleeting pace;
3. I.e., Love's bands are the strength of true lovers,
"follies" (lusts); they are unworthy of the true
and not their shackles.

"face" or "style" of love. In describing such lovers

4. I.e., love personified.

as "worthless," Wroth may pun on her name; in

5. Two hearts joined in one body, or two bodies
her play *Love's Victory*, an undesirable suitor, who
joined in one soul; common Renaissance meta-
resembles Wroth's historical husband, Robert
phors for true love.

Wroth, is repeatedly called "worthless."

6. In an extended analogy between sea voyaging

7. Wroth follows a tradition of distinguishing and different kinds of love, this stanza contrasts between Venus as a figure for lust and her son, those who love honorably with those who love lasciviously. The latter are “chased” from the safe harbor of virtue because they represent Venus’s

U R A N I A / 3 5 3

If lust be counted love, ‘tis falsely named
10 By wickedness, a fairer gloss to set
Upon that vice,⁸ which else makes men ashamed,
In the⁰ own phrase to warrant but beget *its*
This child for love, who ought like monster born
Be from the court of Love, and reason torn.⁹

From Urania

Song 1

Love what art thou? A vain thought
In our minds by phant’⁰ wrought, *fancy*
Idle smiles did thee beget
While fond wishes made the net
5 Which so many fools have caught;
Love what art thou? light, and fair,
Fresh as morning, clear as th’air,
But too soon thy evening change
Makes thy worth with coldness range;
io Still thy joy is mixed with care.
Love what art thou? A sweet flow’r

Once full blown, dead in an hour,
Dust in wind as staid⁰ remains
steadfast

As thy pleasure, or our gains
15 If thy humor change to lour.⁰
gloomy

Love what art thou? childish, vain,
Firm as bubbles made by rain;
Wantonness thy greatest pride,
These foul faults thy virtues hide,
20 But babes can no staidness gain.

Love what art thou? causeless curse,
Yet alas these not the worst,
Much more of thee may be said
But thy law I once obeyed
25 Therefore say no more at first.

1621

8. I.e., wickedness falsely renames lust as love to
“court” of Love, and from that of reason too, if the
put a “fairer gloss” on the vice.

latter is separate from love, as the comma between

9. The syntax of lines 11—14 is difficult, and we
them suggests. (Wroth had two illegitimate sons
have not attempted to clarify it by supplying mod-
with her cousin William Herbert, the historical
ern punctuation marks; the phrase “the own,”
inspiration for the character Amphilanthus in the
often used to denote “its own” in early modern

Urania.)

English, seems to refer to “that vice” of lust which
1. Sung at the end of book 1 by a “delicate Mayd”
attempts to legitimize (“warrant,” legally name as
with a sweet voice who seems to have “falne out
its own) an illegitimate son who should rightfully
with Love”; on Wroth’s long prose romance, see
be seen as monstrous and hence banished from the
note 1, p. 347.

3 5 4

R O B E R T H E R R I C K

1591-1674

The Argument of His Book1

I sing of brooks, of blossoms, birds, and bowers,
Of April, May, of June, and July flowers.

I sing of Maypoles, hock carts, wassails, wakes,2
Of bridegrooms, brides, and of their bridal cakes.

5 I write of youth, of love, and have access
By these to sing of cleanly wantonness.

I sing of dews, of rains, and, piece by piece,
Of balm, of oil, of spice, and ambergris.3

I sing of times trans-shifting, and I write
10 How roses first came red and lilies white.

I write of groves, of twilights, and I sing
The court of Mab4 and of the fairy king.

I write of hell; I sing (and ever shall)
Of heaven, and hope to have it after all.

The Vine

I dreamed this mortal part of mine
 Was metamorphosed to a vine,
 Which crawling one and every way
 Enthralled⁰ my dainty Lucia.⁵ *imprisoned*
 5 Methought her long small⁰ legs and thighs *slender*
 I with my tendrils did surprise;
 Her belly, buttocks, and her waist
 By my soft nervelets⁰ were embraced. *tendrils*
 About her head I writhing hung,
 10 And with rich clusters (hid among
 The leaves) her temples I behung,
 So that my Lucia seemed to me
 Young Bacchus ravished by his tree.⁶
 My curls about her neck did crawl,
 15 And arms and hands they did enthrall,

1. The “argument” is the subject matter, and the
 2. Vigils on the eves of festivals or of funerals.
 “book” is a thick volume containing all of Herrick’s
Hock carts: vehicles for carrying in the last load of
 poems—over fourteen hundred—divided into a
 the harvest. *Wassails*: drinking to the health of oth-
 religious set, titled *Noble Numbers*, and a secular
 ers.

set, titled *Hesperides*. In classical mythology, the
 3. A waxlike substance used in making perfumes,
 Hesperides, daughters of Atlas and Hesperis (or,
 i.e., something rare and pleasing.
 in another tradition, of Night), guarded a tree of

4. In English mythology, queen of the fairies.

golden apples in a far-western garden that Herrick

5. For the sake of rhyme and meter, the name has often likens to his home in the western county of three syllables here but two in line 12.

Devon.

6. Bacchus was the Roman god of wine and rev-

Since all of Herrick's poems were published in elry; his "tree" is the grapevine.

1648, we do not repeat the date for each poem.

DELIGHT IN DISORDER / 355

So that she could not freely stir

(All parts there made one prisoner).

But when I crept with leaves to hide

Those parts which maids keep unespied,

20 Such fleeting pleasures there I took

That with the fancy I awoke;

And found (ah me!) this flesh of mine

More like a stock⁰ than like a vine. *hardened stem*

To the Sour Reader

If thou dislik'st the piece thou light'st on first,

Think that of all that I have writ the worst;

But if thou read'st my book unto the end,

And still dost this and that verse reprehend,

5 O perverse man! If all disgustful be,

The extreme scab⁷ take thee and thine, for me.

Delight in Disorder⁸

A sweet disorder in the dress

Kindles in clothes a wantonness.
A lawn^o about the shoulders thrown *fine linen scarf*
Into a fine distraction;
5 An erring lace, which here and there
Enthralls the crimson stomacher;⁹
A cuff neglectful, and thereby
Ribbons to flow confusedly;
A winning wave, deserving note,
io In the tempestuous petticoat;
A careless shoestring, in whose tie
I see a wild civility;
Do more bewitch me than when art
Is too precise in every part.

7. The mange. “The extreme scab” is a borrowing
mind, / Once say I’m ignorant... .”

from Horace’s *Art of Poetry* (lines 416—18), in

8. Cf. Ben Jonson, “Still to Be Neat” (p. 341).

which an unpracticed dabbler in poetry is repre-

9. An ornamental piece worn under the open (and
sented as saying, in the translation of Herrick’s
often laced) front of a bodice; the “erring” (“wan-
admired master, Ben Jonson (1572—1637; see
dering,” with an overtone of moral straying) lace
pp. 323—44), “I make / An admirable verse: the
thus “enthalls” (literally, makes a slave of) the
great scab take / Him that is last, I scorn to come
stomacher.

behind / Or, of the things that ne’er came in my

356 / ROBERT HERRICK

Corinna's Going A-Maying

Get up! get up for shame! the blooming morn

Upon her wings presents the god unshorn.¹

See how Aurora² throws her fair

Fresh-quilted colors through the air:

5 Get up, sweet slug-a-bed, and see

The dew bespangling herb and tree.

Each flower has wept and bowed toward the east

Above an hour since, yet you not dressed;

Nay, not so much as out of bed?

10 When all the birds have matins⁰ said, *morning prayers*

And sung their thankful hymns, 'tis sin,

Nay, profanation to keep in,

Whenas a thousand virgins on this day

Spring, sooner than the lark, to fetch in May.³

15 Rise, and put on your foliage, and be seen

To come forth, like the springtime, fresh and green,

And sweet as Flora.⁴ Take no care

For jewels for your gown or hair;

Fear not; the leaves will strew

20 Gems in abundance upon you;

Besides, the childhood of the day has kept,

Against⁰ you come, some orient pearls⁵ unwept; *until*

Come and receive them while the light

Hangs on the dew-locks of the night,

25 And Titan⁰ on the eastern hill *the sun*

Retires himself, or else stands still

Till you come forth. Wash, dress, be brief in praying:
 Few beads⁶ are best when once we go a-Maying.
 Come, my Corinna, come; and, coming mark
 30 How each field turns⁰ a street, each street a park *turns into*
 Made green and trimmed with trees; see how
 Devotion gives each house a bough
 Or branch: each porch, each door ere this,
 An ark, a tabernacle is,⁷
 35 Made up of whitethorn neatly interwove,
 As if here were those cooler shades of love.
 Can such delights be in the street
 And open fields, and we not see't?
 Come, we'll abroad; and let's obey
 1. Apollo, the Greek and Roman sun god, whose
 5. I.e., lustrous and glowing ones; also, "Eastern,"
 hair (the rays of the sun) is never cut.
 as pearls come from the "Orient."
 2. Roman goddess of the dawn, here tossing her
 6. I.e., prayers (with overtones of the rosary of
 blankets aside and spreading over Earth a newly
 Catholicism).
 made coverlet of light.
 7. I.e., the doorways are like the Hebrew "ark" of
 3. Boughs of white hawthorn, traditionally gath-
 the Covenant, or the sanctuary ("tabernacle") that
 ered to decorate streets and houses on May Day.
 housed it; i.e., May sprigs are the central mystery
 Larks sing at sunrise.

of the religion of nature.

4. Roman goddess of flowers.

**T o THE VIRGINS , T O M A K E M U C H O F T I M
E / 3 5 7**

40 The proclamation made for May,8

And sin no more, as we have done, by staying;

But, my Corinna, come, let's go a-Maying.

There's not a budding boy or girl this day

But is got up and gone to bring in May;

45 A deal of youth, ere this, is come

Back, and with whitethorn laden home.

Some have dispatched their cakes and cream

Before that we have left to dream;

And some have wept, and wooed, and plighted troth,

50 And chose their priest, ere we can cast off sloth.

Many a green-gown has been given,9

Many a kiss, both odd and even,1

Many a glance, too, has been sent

From out the eye, love's firmament;0 *sky*

55 Many a jest told of the keys betraying

This night, and locks picked; yet we're not a-Maying.

Come, let us go while we are in our prime,

And take the harmless folly of the time.

We shall grow old apace,0 and die *quickly*

60 Before we know our liberty.

Our life is short, and our days run

As fast away as does the sun;

And, as a vapor or a drop of rain

Once lost, can ne'er be found again;
65 So when or you or I are made
A fable, song, or fleeting shade,
All love, all liking, all delight
Lies drowned with us in endless night.
Then while time serves, and we are but decaying,
70 Come, my Corinna, come, let's go a-Maying.
To the Virgins, to Make Much of Time
Gather ye rosebuds while ye may,
Old time is still a-flying;
And this same flower that smiles today
Tomorrow will be dying.

5 The glorious lamp of heaven, the sun,
The higher he's a-getting,
The sooner will his race be run,
And nearer he's to setting.

8. Probably refers to King James's declaration con- 9. I.e., by rolling in the grass.

cerning lawful sports, published in 1618 and reissued by King Charles I in 1633. 1. Kisses are odd and even in kissing games.

sued by King Charles I in 1633.

358 / ROBERT HERRICK

That age is best which is the first,
10 When youth and blood are warmer;
But being spent, the worse, and worst
Times still succeed the former.
Then be not coy, but use your time,
And, while ye may, go marry;
15 For, having lost but once your prime,

You may forever tarry.

Upon Julia's Breasts

Display thy breasts, my Julia, there let me

Behold that circummortal² purity;

Between whose glories, there my lips I'll lay,

Ravished in that fair *Via Lactea*

Upon a Child That Died

Here she lies, a pretty bud,

Lately made of flesh and blood,

Who as soon fell fast asleep

As her little eyes did peep.^o

5 Give her strewings,⁴ but not stir

The earth that lightly covers her.

His Prayer to Ben Jonson⁵

When I a verse shall make,

Know I have prayed thee,

For old religion's sake,

Saint Ben, to aid me.⁶

5 Make the way smooth for me,

When I, thy Herrick,

Honoring thee, on my knee

Offer my lyric.

2. A coinage by Herrick, literally "around or of England, plays on the fact that Jonson was for encompassing what is mortal"; therefore, perhaps, a while a Catholic (of the "old religion"), as well as beyond or more than mortal.

a saint in the mock religion of poetry. The Puritans

3. Milky Way (Latin); with reference to the color
(who came to power in the civil war, which began
white and to the constellation; also, figuratively, a
in 1642) were hostile to the invocation of saints
way brilliant in appearance and leading to heaven.
and, especially, of secular “saints” such as Jonson;
4. I.e., flowers scattered on her grave.

Herrick was dispossessed by the Puritans in 1647,
5. Herrick’s admired master (1 5 7 2 - 1 6 3 7 ; see
shortly before his poems were published. “Reli-
pp. 3 2 3 - 4 4) .

gion” may also mean the sacredness of an oath, i.e.,
6. Herrick, who had been ordained in the Church
the vows of friendship.

U P O N J U L I A ‘ S C L O T H E S / 3 5 9

Candles I’ll give to thee,
10 And a new altar;
And thou, Saint Ben, shalt be
Writ in my psalter.⁷
The Night Piece, to Julia
Her eyes the glowworm lend thee;⁸
The shooting stars attend thee;
And the elves also,
Whose little eyes glow
5 Like the sparks of fire, befriend thee.
No will-o’-the-wisp⁹ mislight thee;
Nor snake or slowworm⁰ bite thee; *adder*
But on, on thy way,

Not making a stay,
 10 Since ghost there's none to affright thee.
 Let not the dark thee cumber; *0 trouble*
 What though the moon does slumber?
 The stars of the night
 Will lend thee their light,
 15 Like tapers clear without number.
 Then, Julia, let me woo thee,
 Thus, thus to come unto me;
 And when I shall meet
 Thy silvery feet,
 20 My soul I'll pour into thee.
 Upon Julia's Clothes
 Whenas in silks my Julia goes,
 Then, then, methinks, how sweetly flows
 That liquefaction *0* of her clothes. *liquefying*
 Next, when I cast mine eyes, and see
 5 That brave *0* vibration, each way free, *glorious, splendid*
 O, how that glittering taketh me!
 7. A collection of sacred poems called Psalms;
 men) lend her eyes to thee.
 also, the Book of Psalms, one of the books of the
 9. The will-o'-the-wisp was said to draw travelers
 Hebrew Scriptures, composed of such poems.
 astray by holding a false light before them; the phe-
 8. I.e., may the glowworm (an insect, the female
 nomenon of nocturnal light is caused by the com-
 of which emits a shining green light from the abdo-

bustion of marsh gas.

360 / ROBERT HERRICK

Upon Prue, His Maid

In this little urn is laid

Prudence Baldwin, once my maid,

From whose happy spark here let

Spring the purple violet.

Upon Ben Jonson¹

Here lies Jonson with the rest

Of the poets; but the best.

Reader, would'st thou more have known?

Ask his story, not this stone.

5 That will speak what this can't tell

Of his glory. So farewell.

An Ode for Him

Ah, Ben!

Say how or when

Shall we, thy guests,

Meet at those lyric feasts

5 Made at the Sun,

The Dog, the Triple Tun,²

Where we such clusters⁰ had *wine*

As made us nobly wild, not mad;

And yet each verse of thine

io Outdid the meat, outdid the frolic wine.

My Ben!

Or come again,

Or send to us

Thy wit's great overplus;
15 But teach us yet
Wisely to husband it, *manage thriftily, prudently*
Lest we that talent spend,
And having once brought to an end
That precious stock, the store
20 Of such a wit the world should have no more.

1. See note 5, p. 358.

2. The names of taverns.

T o H i s C O N S C I E N C E / 3 6 1

The Pillar of Fame³

Fame's pillar here at last we set,
Out-during^o marble, brass or jet;⁴ *outlasting*
Charmed and enchanted so
As to withstand the blow
5 O f o v e r t h r o w ;
Nor shall the seas,
O r o u t r a g e s
Of storms, o'erbear
W h a t w e u p r e a r ;
10 Tho' kingdoms fall,
This pillar never shall
Decline or waste at all;
But stand for ever by his own
Firm and well-fixed foundation.
Neutrality Loathsome⁵
God will have all or none; serve Him, or fall
Down before Baal, Bel, or Belial.⁶

Either be hot or cold: God doth despise,
Abhor, and spew out all neutralities.⁷

To His Conscience

Can I not sin, but thou wilt be

My private protonotary? *0 law court's chief
recorder*

Can I not woo thee to pass by

A short and sweet iniquity?

5 I'll cast a mist and cloud upon

My delicate transgression,

So utter dark, as that no eye

Shall see the hugged *0 impiety. cherished*

Gifts blind the wise,⁸ and bribes do please,

io And wind *0 all other witnesses; pervert*

And wilt not thou, with gold, be tied

To lay thy pen and ink aside?

3. This poem is “shaped” to resemble a pillar; cf.
hence false gods in general.

George Herbert, “The Altar” (p. 367).

7. Cf. Revelation 3.16:”... because thou art luke-

4. Black marble or a hard form of lignite.

warm, and neither cold nor hot, I will spew thee

5. This and the following poems are from *Noble*
out of my mouth.”

Numbers, the collection of religious poems in Her-

8. Cf. Deuteronomy 16.19: ” ... a gift doth blind
rick's 1648 volume.

the eyes of the wise, and pervert the words of the

6. Baal (or Bel) and Belial were pagan divinities;
righteous.”

362 / ROBERT HERRICK

That in the murk^o and tongueless night, *murky*

Wanton I may, and thou not write?

15 It will not be; and therefore now,

For times to come, I'll make this vow:

From aberrations to live free;

So I'll not fear the judge⁹ or thee.

To Find God¹

Weigh me the fire; or canst thou find

A way to measure out the wind?

Distinguish⁰ all those floods that are *separate*

Mixed in that wat'ry theater,²

5 And taste thou them as saltless there,

As in their channel first they were.

Tell^P me the people that do keep *count*

Within the kingdoms of the deep;

Or fetch me back that cloud again,

io Beshivered⁰ into seeds of rain. *shattered*

Tell me the motes, dust, sands, and spears

Of corn, when summer shakes his ears;

Show me that world of stars, and whence

They noiseless spill their influence.

15 This if thou canst;³ then show me Him

That rides the glorious cherubim.⁴

The White Island, or Place of the Blest

In this world, the isle of dreams,

While we sit by sorrow's streams,

Tears and terrors are our themes

Reciting:

5 But when once from hence we fly,
More and more approaching nigh
Unto young eternity,

Uniting:

9. I.e., God on Judgment Day.

dwelling are there in the heart of the sea, or how

1. The “impossibility” theme was much used by many streams at the source of the deep, or how seventeenth-century poets such as John Donne many ways above the firmament ...” (4.5—7).

(see “Go and Catch a Falling Star,” p. 294) and

2. I.e., the ocean.

Andrew Marvell (see “To His Coy Mistress,”

3. Perhaps an echo of Ecclesiasticus 1.2—3: “The p. 478); Herrick emphasizes the challenge issued sand of the seas, and the drops of rain, and the by the concluding line: if you can do these things, days of eternity—who can count them? The height then show me the supreme sight, a vision of God.

of the heavens, and the breadth of the earth, and

This poem alludes to an Apocryphal book of the the deep, and wisdom—who can track them out?”

Bible, 2 Esdras: “Weigh me the weight of fire, or

4. One of the nine orders of angels; cf. Psalms measure me the day that is past... . How many

18.10: “he [the Lord] rode upon a cherub.”

**EXEQUY TO HIS MATCHLESS, NEVER - T
O - BE - FORGOTTEN FRIEND / 3 6 3**

In that whiter island, where

10 Things are evermore sincere;

Candor⁰ here and luster there *whiteness, truthfulness*

Delighting:

There no monstrous fancies shall

Out of hell an horror call,

15 To create, or cause at all,

Affrighting.

There, in calm and cooling sleep

We our eyes shall never steep,

But eternal watch shall keep,

20 Attending

Pleasures, such as shall pursue

Me immortalized, and you;

And fresh joys, as never too

Have ending.

1 6 4 8

H E N R Y K I N G

1592-1669

An Exequy to His Matchless, Never-to-Be-Forgotten Friend¹

Accept, thou shrine of my dead saint,

Instead of dirges, this complaint;²

And for sweet flowers to crown thy hearse,

Receive a strew⁰ of weeping verse *scattering*

5 From thy grieved friend, whom thou might'st see

Quite melted into tears for thee,

Dear loss! since thy untimely fate
My task hath been to meditate
On thee, on thee; thou art the book,
io The library whereon I look,
Though almost blind. For thee, loved clay,^o *mortal*
I languish out, not live, the day,
Using no other exercise
But what I practice with mine eyes;
15 By which wet glasses I find out
How lazily time creeps about

1. Written for his wife, Anne King, who died in funeral ceremony.

1623 (after eight years of marriage). *Exequy*: a 2. Instead of mourning songs, this plaintive poem.

3 6 4 / H E N R Y K I N G

To one that mourns: this, only this,
My exercise and business is.
So I compute the weary hours
20 With sighs dissolved into showers.
Nor wonder if my time go thus
Backward and most preposterous;³
Thou hast benighted me, thy set⁴
This eve of blackness did beget,
25 Who wast my day, though overcast
Before thou hadst thy noontide passed;
And I remember must in tears,
Thou scarce hadst seen so many years
As day tells⁰ hours. By thy clear sun *counts*
30 My love and fortune first did run;

But thou wilt never more appear
Folded within my hemisphere,
Since both thy light and motion
Like a fled star is fallen and gone;
35 And 'twixt me and my soul's dear wish
An earth now interposed is,
Which such a strange eclipse doth make
As ne'er was read in almanac.
I could allow thee for a time
40 To darken me and my sad clime;⁰ *climate, part of Earth*
Were it a month, a year, or ten,
I would thy exile live till then,
And all that space my mirth adjourn,
So thou wouldst promise to return;
45 And putting off thy ashy shroud,
At length disperse this sorrow's cloud.
But woe is me! the longest⁰ date
most distant
Too narrow⁰ is to calculate
short
These empty hopes; never shall I
50 Be so much blest as to descry⁰
discern
A glimpse of thee, till that day come
Which shall the earth to cinders doom,
And a fierce fever must calcine⁰
reduce to dust by heat
The body of this world—like thine,

55 My little world! That fit of fire
Once off, our bodies shall aspire
To our souls' bliss; then we shall rise
And view ourselves with clearer eyes
In that calm region where no night
60 Can hide us from each other's sight.

3. In reverse order, monstrous, foolish.

4. I.e., placed me in darkness, thy setting (death).

**EXEQUY TO HIS MATCHLESS, NEVER - T
O - BE - FORGOTTEN FRIEND / 365**

Meantime, thou hast her, earth: much good
May my harm⁵ do thee. Since it stood⁰
agreed

With heaven's will I might not call
Her longer mine, I give thee all
65 My short-lived right and interest
In her whom living I loved best;
With a most free and bounteous grief
I give thee what I could not keep.

Be kind to her, and prithee look
70 Thou write into thy doomsday⁰ book

Judgment Day

Each parcel of this rarity
Which in thy casket shrined doth lie.
See that thou make thy reckoning straight,
And yield her back again by weight;
75 For thou must audit on thy trust
Each grain and atom of this dust,

As thou wilt answer him that lent,
Not gave thee, my dear monument.
So close the ground, and 'bout her shade
so Black curtains draw; my bride is laid.
Sleep on, my love, in thy cold bed,
Never to be disquieted!
My last good-night! Thou wilt not wake
Till I thy fate shall overtake;
85 Till age, or grief, or sickness must
Marry my body to that dust
It so much loves; and fill the room
My heart keeps empty in thy tomb.
Stay for me there; I will not fail
90 To meet thee in that hollow vale.
And think not much of my delay;
I am already on the way,
And follow thee with all the speed
Desire can make, or sorrows breed.
95 Each minute is a short degree,
And every hour a step towards thee.
At night when I betake⁰ to rest,
Next morn I rise nearer my west
Of life, almost by eight hours' sail,
100 Than when sleep breathed his drowsy gale.
Thus from the sun my bottom⁰ steers, *vessel*
And my day's compass⁰ downward bears; *limit*
Nor labor I to stem the tide
Through which to thee I swiftly glide.

5. I.e., her death that harms me so much.

3 6 6 / H E N R Y K I N G

105 'Tis true, with shame and grief I yield,
Thou like the van^o first took'st the field, *vanguard*.

And gotten hast the victory

In thus adventuring to die

Before me, whose more years might crave

110 A just precedence in the grave.

But hark! my pulse like a soft drum

Beats my approach, tells thee I come;

And slow howe'er my marches be,

I shall at last sit down by thee.

115 The thought of this bids me go on,

And wait my dissolution.

With hope and comfort. Dear (forgive

The crime), I am content to live

Divided, with but half a heart,

120 Till we shall meet, and never part.

1 6 5 7

The Boy's Answer to the Blackmoor⁶

Black maid, complain not that I fly,

When Fate commands antipathy:

Prodigious⁷ might that union prove,

Where Night and Day together move,

5 And the conjunction of our lips

Not kisses make, but an eclipse,

In which the mixed black and white

Portends more terror than delight.

Yet if my shadow thou wilt be,
io Enjoy thy dearest wish. But see
Thou take my shadow's property,
That hastes away when I come nigh.⁸
Else stay till death hath blinded me,
And then I will bequeath myself to thee.

c a . 1 6 1 2 - 2 4 1 6 5 7

6. This poem replies to “A Blackmore Maid Woo-
tradition of debating the cause and value of black-
ing a Fair Boy,” which King’s friend Henry Rain-
ness; cf. Thomas Campion, “Follow Thy Fair Sun”
olds had translated from a Latin poem by George
(p. 279); Mary Wroth’s *Pamphilia to Amphilanthus*
Herbert (1593—1633; for Herbert’s English poems,
22 (p. 348); Edward Herbert’s sonnets about
see pp. 367—85). That poem’s speaker, modeled in
blackness (p. 346); and John Milton’s “II Pense-
part on the “black but comely” female speaker in
roso,” lines 17 - 20 (p. 406).

the biblical Song of Solomon (1.5), argues that

7. Causing wonder or amazement; but also, omi-
“Love does in dark shades delight.” King’s “boy,”
nous or unnatural.

unlike the biblical lover, scorns the wooing

8. See [that] you adopt my shadow’s characteristic
maiden. The poem participates in a Renaissance
of hastening away when I come near.

3 6 7

GEORGE HERBERT

1593-1633

**FROM THE TEMPLE: SACRED POEMS AND
PRIVATE EJACULATIONS**¹

The Altar²

A broken **A L T A R**, Lord, thy servant rears,

Made of a heart, and cemented with tears:

Whose parts are as thy hand did frame;

No workman's tool hath touched the same.³

5 **A H E A R T** alone

Is such a stone,

As nothing but

Thy power doth cut.

Wherefore each part

io Of my hard heart

Meets in this frame,

To praise thy Name:

That, if I chance to hold my peace,

These stones to praise thee may not cease.⁴

15 Oh let thy blessed **S A C R I F I C E** be mine,

And sanctify this **A L T A R** to be thine.

Redemption⁵

Having been tenant long to a rich lord,

Not thriving, I resolved to be bold,

And make a suit unto him, to afford⁰ *grant*

A new small-rented lease, and cancel th' old.⁶

1. Posthumously published in 1633, *The Temple* evoked by its title. Its placement suggests that all

includes 160 poems, which Herbert carefully of the following poems are offered as “sacrifices” arranged to dramatize the central Christian concept of the believer’s body as the “temple of the

3. A reference to the altar of uncut stone Holy Ghost” (Paul’s First Epistle to the Corinthians, 6.19). Designed to illustrate the myriad links between the human “temple” and the Church of

4. I.e., whether the poem is read or spoken, and England that Herbert served—its doctrines, its rituals, even the physical construction of its words to praise God. Here, as so often in Herbert’s churches—Herbert’s book begins with the poem “The Church Porch” and proceeds to a long section called “The Church,” from which the following poems are taken.

diately cry out.”

Since all of Herbert’s poems were published in 1633, we do not print the date for each one.

Christ’s death redeemed human beings from the

2. The first poem in the section of *The Temple* consequences of their sin.

called “The Church,” this poem, like “Easter

6. I.e., to ask for a new lease, with a smaller rent, Wings” below, is shaped to resemble the object and to cancel the old lease.

3 6 8 / G E O R G E H E R B E R T

5 In heaven at his manor I him sought;

They told me there that he was lately gone

About some land, which he had dearly bought

Long since on earth, to take possession.

I straight⁰ returned, and knowing his great birth, *straightaway*

10 Sought him accordingly in great resorts;⁰ *gatherings,*
crowds

In cities, theaters, gardens, parks, and courts;

At length I heard a ragged noise and mirth

Of thieves and murderers; there I him espied,

Who straight, *Your suit is granted*, said, and died.

Easter Wings⁷

Lord, who createdst man in wealth and store,⁰ *abundance*

Though foolishly he lost the same,⁸

Decaying more and more

Till he became

5 Most poor:

With thee

O let me rise

As larks,⁹ harmoniously,

And sing this day thy victories:

10 Then shall the fall further the flight in me.¹

My tender age in sorrow did begin;

And still with sicknesses and shame

Thou didst so punish sin,

That I became

15 Most thin.

With thee

Let me combine,

And feel this day thy victory;

For, if I imp² my wing on thine,

20 Affliction shall advance the flight in me.

7. The shape of this “pattern poem” represents greater because the Fall from Eden occurred.

some part of the subject. Following this version,

The words “this day,” which are superfluous in

we reproduce the poem almost as it was first pub-

the metrical scheme of the poem, were perhaps

lished. The stanzas were printed on two pages and

included in the early editions to emphasize the

arranged to suggest two birds flying upward, wings

occasion, Easter. They are omitted, however, in the

outspread.

only surviving manuscript book of Herbert’s

8. I.e., in the Fall from Eden.

poems.

9. Larks sing at sunrise.

2. A term from falconry: additional feathers were

1. I.e., paradoxically, the joy of Easter and

“imped,” or grafted, onto the wing of a hawk to redemption from sin (the “flight” to heaven) is improve its power of flight.

AFFLICTION (I) / 369

Easter Wings

- * £

3 ^ g ? t & ^ £

H Q-

H t r

Q

sr j;

7] ” ^ S, ST c

w = !T § ? 3’

«-»

i—i cL

» sr

» P ^ 8 9- 3- R4 ? s - ” ^ s o r <

e-

cr

o

PT*

n

s

ft

3

<•» ST. 2 c

g

r

»
pi
£» 3- 2. ^ s g. - -
O
3-
3
o 3.
3 ‘
3
3
P 5. ft
^^^ O o M
<w <
o s? to
» 3 ^ < I 3 s 1 3
*r**
3
tr
o
»
o 3 f
^ tt * O 3
•1
3
Et> *rf*
sr
a
r»

n

<0 A> s » r. 3 2

(T O *

3* • •

sr

3

«-»

o

•

ST f ^

9

g

tjs. sr io

3g

3

o a 5-3

3

9

Sin (I)3

Lord, with what care hast thou begirt⁰ us round! *girdled*

Parents first season us: then schoolmasters

Deliver us to laws; they send us bound

To rules of reason, holy messengers,

5 Pulpits and Sundays, sorrow dogging sin,

Afflictions sorted, anguish of all sizes,

Fine nets and stratagems to catch us in,

Bibles laid open, millions of surprises,

Blessings beforehand, ties of gratefulness,

io The sound of glory ringing in our ears:
Without, our shame; within, our consciences;
Angels and grace, eternal hopes and fears.
Yet all these fences and their whole array
One cunning bosom-sin⁴ blows quite away.

Affliction (I)

When first thou didst entice to thee my heart,
I thought the service brave:⁰ *splendid*
So many joys I writ down for my part,

3. Herbert frequently used the same title for sev- them by
adding numbers,

eral different poems; editors differentiate between 4. I.e., a sin
within the heart.

3 7 0 / G E O R G E H E R B E R T

Besides what I might have

5 Out of my stock of natural delights,
Augmented with thy gracious benefits.

I looked on thy furniture so fine,

And made it fine to me;

Thy glorious household stuff did me entwine,

10 And tice⁰ me unto thee. *entice*

Such stars I counted mine: both heaven and earth

Paid me my wages in a world of mirth.

What pleasures could I want,⁰ whose king I served, *lack*

Where joys my fellows were?

15 Thus argued into hopes, my thoughts reserved

No place for grief or fear;

Therefore my sudden soul caught at the place,

And made her youth and fierceness seek thy face:

At first thou gav'st me milk and sweetnesses;
 20 I had my wish and way:
 My days were strawed⁰ with flowers and happiness; *strewed*
 There was no month but May.
 But with my years sorrow did twist and grow.
 And made a party unawares for woe.
 25 My flesh began unto my soul in pain,
 "Sicknesses cleave my bones;
 Consuming agues⁰ dwell in every vein, *fevers*
 And tune my breath to groans."
 Sorrow was all my soul; I scarce believed,
 30 Till grief did tell me roundly,⁰ that I lived. *bluntly*
 When I got health, thou took'st away my life,
 And more; for my friends die:
 My mirth and edge was lost: a blunted knife
 Was of more use than I.
 35 Thus thin and lean without a fence or friend,
 I was blown through with ev'ry storm and wind.
 Whereas my birth and spirit rather took
 The way that takes the town,⁵
 Thou didst betray me to a lingering book,
 40 And wrap me in a gown.⁰ *theology's garb*
 I was entangled in the world of strife,
 Before I had the power to change my life.
 5. An allusion to the career at court that Herbert
Orders." Many poems of *The Temple* were com-
 had sought until 1625; his hopes for advancement
 posed after Herbert was ordained a deacon in

disappointed, he “betook himself to a Retreat from 1626—a period during which he suffered from London” and resolved to “enter into *Sacred* ill-health.

P R A Y E R (I) / 3 7 1

Yet, for I t h r e a t e n e d o f t t h e s i e g e t o r a i s e ,

N o t s i m p e r i n g a l l m i n e a g e ,

45 T h o u o f t e n d i d s t w i t h a c a d e m i c p r a i s e

M e l t a n d d i s s o l v e m y r a g e .

I t o o k t h y s w e e t e n e d p i l l , t i l l I c a m e w h e r e

I c o u l d n o t g o a w a y , n o r p e r s e v e r e .

Y e t l e s t p e r c h a n c e I s h o u l d t o o h a p p y b e

50 I n m y u n h a p p i n e s s ,

**T u r n i n g m y p u r g e 0 t o f o o d , t h o u t h r o w e s t
m e *purgatio* I n t o m o r e s i c k n e s s e s .**

**T h u s d o t h t h y p o w e r c r o s s - b i a s 6 m e , n o t m a
k i n g T h i n e o w n g i f t g o o d , y e t m e f r o m m y w a y
s t a k i n g .**

55 N o w I a m h e r e , w h a t t h o u w i l t d o w i t h m e

N o n e o f m y b o o k s w i l l s h o w :

I r e a d , a n d s i g h , a n d w i s h I w e r e a t r e e ,

F o r s u r e t h e n I s h o u l d g r o w

T o f r u i t o r s h a d e ; a t l e a s t , s o m e b i r d w o u l d t r u s t

60 H e r h o u s e h o l d t o m e , a n d I s h o u l d b e j u s t .

**Y e t , t h o u g h t h o u t r o u b l e s t m e , I m u s t b e m e e
k ; I n w e a k n e s s m u s t b e s t o u t : 7**

W e l l , I w i l l c h a n g e t h e s e r v i c e , a n d g o s e e k

S o m e o t h e r m a s t e r o u t .

65 A h , m y d e a r G o d ! t h o u g h I a m c l e a n f o r g o t ,

Let me not love thee, if I love thee not.

Prayer (I)

Prayer, the church's banquet, angels' age,⁸

God's breath in man returning to his birth,

The soul in paraphrase, heart in pilgrimage,

**The Christian plummet⁹ sounding heav'n
and earth; 5 Engine against th' Almighty,
sinner's tower,**

**Reversed thunder, Christ-side-piercing
spear, The six-days' world transposing in an
hour,**

**A kind of tune, which all things hear and fear;
Softness, and peace, and joy, and love, and
bliss, io Exalted manna, 2 gladness of the best,**

6. A term from the game of bowls: to alter the nat-

Paraphrase: usually a fuller, simpler version of a
ural path of the ball. I.e., thy power frustrates.

text.

7. Cf. Malachi 3.13: "Your words have been stout

1. A musical term: shifting pitch or key. The "six
against me, saith the Lord."

day's world" alludes to God's creation of the world

8. Prayer acquaints humans with the timeless
in six days (Genesis 1).

existence of the "angels' age" (in contrast to finite

2. Spiritual nourishment, or food divinely sup-
h u m a n life).

plied. M a n n a was the substance miraculously sup-

9. A plummet is a piece of metal attached to a line,
plied as food to the Israelites during their time in

used for sounding or measuring a vertical distance.

the wilderness (Exodus 16).

372 / G E O R G E H E R B E R T

H e a v e n i n o r d i n a r y , 3 m a n w e l l d r e s s e d ,

T h e M i l k y W a y , t h e b i r d o f P a r a d i s e , 4

C h u r c h b e l l s b e y o n d t h e s t a r s h e a r d , t h e s o u l ' s b l o o d ,
T h e l a n d o f s p i c e s ; s o m e t h i n g u n d e r s t o o d .

The Temper (I)

H o w s h o u l d I p r a i s e t h e e , L o r d ! h o w s h o u l d m y
r h y m e s G l a d l y e n g r a v e t h y l o v e i n s t e e l ,

I f w h a t m y s o u l d o t h f e e l s o m e t i m e s ,

M y s o u l m i g h t e v e r 0 f e e l ! *always*

5 A l t h o u g h t h e r e w e r e s o m e f o r t y h e a v e n s ,
o r m o r e , S o m e t i m e s I p e e r a b o v e t h e m a l l ;

S o m e t i m e s I h a r d l y r e a c h a s c o r e ;

S o m e t i m e s t o h e l l I f a l l .

O r a c k m e n o t t o s u c h a v a s t e x t e n t ;

10 T h o s e d i s t a n c e s b e l o n g t o t h e e :

T h e w o r l d ' s t o o l i t t l e f o r t h y t e n t ,

A g r a v e t o o b i g f o r m e .

W i l t t h o u m e e t a r m s w i t h m a n , t h a t t h o u d o s t
t s t r e t c h A c r u m b o f d u s t f r o m h e a v e n t o h e l l ?

15 W i l l g r e a t G o d m e a s u r e w i t h a w r e t c h ?

S h a l l h e t h y s t a t u r e s p e l l ?

O l e t m e , w h e n t h y r o o f m y s o u l h a t h i d ,

O l e t m e r o o s t a n d n e s t l e t h e r e ;

T h e n o f a s i n n e r t h o u a r t r i d ,

20 A n d I o f h o p e a n d f e a r .

Y e t t a k e t h y w a y ; f o r , s u r e , t h y w a y i s b e s t :

Stretch or contract me, thy poor debtor:

This is but tuning of my breast,

To make the music better.

25 Whether I fly with angels, fall with dust,

Thy hands made both, and I am there.

Thy power and love, my love and trust,

Make one place everywhere.

3. In the everyday course of things. More specific- divine service.

cally, “ordinary” also meant a daily allowance of 4. Perhaps chosen for its name, or for its brilliant food or an established order or form, as of the coloring.

THE WINDOWS / 373

Jordan (I)5

Who says that fictions only and false hair

Become a verse? Is there in truth no beauty?

Is all good structure in a winding stair?

May no lines pass, except they do their duty

5 Not to a true, but painted chair?6

Is it no verse, except enchanted groves

**And sudden arbors shadow coarse-spun
lines?7**

**Must purling0 streams refresh a lover's loves?
swirling Must all be veiled while he that reads,
divines,**

10 Catching the sense at two removes?

Shepherds are honest people; let them sing:

Riddle who list,0 for me, and pull for prime:8 *likes*

I envy no man 's nightingale or spring;

Nor let them punish me with loss of rhyme,

15 Who plainly say, *My God, My King.*

The Windows

Lord, how can man preach thy eternal word?

He is a brittle crazy⁰ glass; *flawed, distorting*

Yet in thy temple thou dost him afford

This glorious and transcendent place,

5 To be a window, through thy grace.

But when thou dost anneal in glass⁹ thy story,

Making thy life to shine within

The holy preachers, then the light and glory

More reverend grows, and more doth win;

io Which else shows waterish, bleak, and thin.

Doctrine and life, colors and light, in one

When they combine and mingle, bring

A strong regard and awe; but speech alone

Doth vanish like a flaring thing,

15 And in the ear, not conscience, ring.¹

5. The only river of ancient Palestine; the Israel-

8. To draw a lucky card in the game of primero.

ites crossed it to enter the Promised Land, and

Lines 11 — 12 have been variously interpreted; their

Christ was baptized in it. The title may also allude

ambiguity and syntactical density work to compli-

to the many windings of the Jordan.

cate the contrast Herbert seems to be drawing

6. It was customary to bow or “do one’s duty” to

between a “plain” style (exemplified by the shep-

the king’s chair of state even when unoccupied;

herds) and the artificial, worldly style described in also, alludes to the false imitation critiqued by line 12. *For me*: as far as I'm concerned.

Plato in *The Republic*, book 10.

9. Fix the colors in stained glass, after painting, by

7. I.e., is it not true poetry unless enchanted heating.

groves and suddenly appearing trees (effects

1. The last stanza seems to challenge the Puritan

sought by landscape architects) shade (but also

belief in the efficacy of the spoken word.

overshadow) humble lines?

3 7 4 / G E O R G E H E R B E R T

Denial

W h e n m y d e v o t i o n s c o u l d n o t p i e r c e

T h y s i l e n t e a r s ,

T h e n w a s m y h e a r t b r o k e n , a s w a s m y v e r s e ;

M y b r e a s t w a s f u l l o f f e a r s

A n d d i s o r d e r .

M y b e n t t h o u g h t s , l i k e a b r i t t l e b o w ,

D i d f l y a s u n d e r :

E a c h t o o k h i s w a y ; s o m e w o u l d t o p l e a s u r e s
g o , S o m e t o t h e w a r s a n d t h u n d e r

O f a l a r m s .

“A s g o o d g o a n y w h e r e , ” t h e y s a y ,

“A s t o b e n u m b

B o t h k n e e s a n d h e a r t , i n c r y i n g n i g h t a n d d a y ,

Come, come, my God, O come!

B u t n o hearing.”

O t h a t t h o u s h o u l d s t g i v e d u s t a t o n g u e

T o c r y t o t h e e ,

A n d t h e n n o t h e a r i t c r y i n g ! A l l d a y l o n g

M y h e a r t w a s i n m y k n e e , 2

B u t n o hearing.

T h e r e f o r e m y s o u l l a y o u t o f s i g h t ,

U n t u n e d , u n s t r u n g :

M y f e e b l e s p i r i t , u n a b l e t o l o o k r i g h t ,

L i k e a n i p p e d b l o s s o m , h u n g

D i s c o n t e n t e d .

O c h e e r a n d t u n e m y h e a r t l e s s b r e a s t ,

D e f e r n o t i m e ;

T h a t s o t h y f a v o r s g r a n t i n g m y r e q u e s t ,

**T h e y a n d m y m i n d m a y c h i m e , 0 r i n g t o g e t h e r ,
a g r e e A n d m e n d m y r h y m e .**

Vanity (I)

T h e f l e e t a s t r o n o m e r c a n b o r e 0 - p i e r c e

A n d t h r e a d t h e s p h e r e s 3 w i t h h i s q u i c k - p i e r c i n g m i n d : H e v i e w s t h e i r s t a t i o n s , w a l k s f r o m d o o r t o d o o r , S u r v e y s , a s i f h e h a d d e s i g n e d

2. I.e., my heart was bowed and bent in reverence, heavenly bodies, according to Ptolemaic astron-like my knee. omy; they were thought to produce angelic music

3. Concentric transparent shells containing the as they turned.

V I R T U E / 3 7 5

5 T o m a k e a p u r c h a s e t h e r e ; h e s e e s t h e i r d a n c e s ,

A n d k n o w e t h l o n g b e f o r e

Both their full-eyed aspects, 4 and secret glances.

The nimble diver with his side⁵

Cuts through the working waves, that he may fetch¹⁰ His dearly-earned pearl, which God did hide On purpose from the venturous wretch;

That he might save his life, and also hers

Who with excessive pride

Her own destruction and his danger wears.

¹⁵ The subtle chymic⁰ can divest *chemist*

And strip the creature naked, till he find

The callow⁰ principles within their nest: *bald, immature* There he imparts to them his mind,

Admitted to their bed-chamber, ⁶ before

²⁰ They appear trim and dressed

To ordinary suitors at the door.

What hath not man sought out and found,

But his dear God? who yet his glorious law

Embosoms in us, mellowing the ground

²⁵ With showers and frosts, with love and awe,

So that we need not say, "Where's this command?"

Poor man, thou searchest round

To find out death, but missest life a hand.

Virtue

Sweet day, so cool, so calm, so bright,

The bridal of the earth and sky:

The dew shall weep thy fall tonight;

For thou must die.

5 Sweet rose, whose hue, angry and brave,⁷

Bids the rash gazer wipe his eye:

Thy root is ever in its grave,

And thou must die.

Sweet spring, full of sweet days and roses,

io A box where sweets compacted lie; *perfumes*

My music shows ye have your closes, ⁸

And all must die.

4. The relative positions of the heavenly bodies as is forming them according to his own intellect they appear to an observer on Earth at a given time, (“imparts to them his mind”) rather than discovering their supposed influence on earthly matters. ering their God-given reality.

5. I.e., swimming on his side.

7. Splendid. *Angry*: i.e., red, the color of anger.

6. Herbert implies that the chemist examining

8. A close is a cadence, the conclusion of a musical strain. creatures’ inner natures in an overly intimate way

376 / GEORGE HERBERT

Only a sweet and virtuous soul,

Like seasoned timber, never gives;

15 But though the whole world turn to coal, ⁹

Then chiefly lives.

Man

My God, I heard this day

That none doth build a stately habitation,

B u t h e t h a t m e a n s t o d w e l l t h e r e i n .

W h a t h o u s e m o r e s t a t e l y h a t h t h e r e b e e n ,

**5 O r c a n b e , t h a n i s M a n ? t o 0 w h o s e c r e a t i o n
*compared to All t h i n g s a r e i n d e c a y .***

F o r M a n i s e v e r y t h i n g ,

A n d m o r e : h e i s a t r e e , y e t b e a r s m o r e f r u i t ; 1

A b e a s t , y e t i s o r s h o u l d b e m o r e :

i o R e a s o n a n d s p e e c h w e o n l y b r i n g .

P a r r o t s m a y t h a n k u s , i f t h e y a r e n o t m u t e ,

T h e y g o u p o n t h e s c o r e . 2

M a n i s a l l s y m m e t r y ,

F u l l o f p r o p o r t i o n s , o n e l i m b t o a n o t h e r ,

15 A n d a l l t o a l l t h e w o r l d b e s i d e s : 3

E a c h p a r t m a y c a l l t h e f u r t h e s t , b r o t h e r ;

**F o r h e a d w i t h f o o t h a t h p r i v a t e a m i t y , 0 *friendship* A
n d b o t h w i t h m o o n s a n d t i d e s . 4**

N o t h i n g h a t h g o t s o f a r ,

20 B u t m a n h a t h c a u g h t a n d k e p t i t , a s h i s p r e y .

**H i s e y e s d i s m o u n t 0 t h e h i g h e s t s t a r : *bring
down to Earth* H e i s i n l i t t l e a l l t h e s p h e r e . 0 *universe***

**H e r b s g l a d l y c u r e o u r f l e s h , b e c a u s e t h a t t h e y
F i n d t h e i r a c q u a i n t a n c e t h e r e .**

25 F o r u s t h e w i n d s d o b l o w ,

**T h e e a r t h d o t h r e s t , h e a v e n m o v e , a n d f o u n t
a i n s f l o w .**

N o t h i n g w e s e e b u t m e a n s o u r g o o d ,

A s o u r d e l i g h t o r a s o u r t r e a s u r e :

**T h e w h o l e i s e i t h e r o u r c u p b o a r d o f f o o d ,
30 O r c a b i n e t o f p l e a s u r e .**

9. An allusion to Judgment Day, when the world

God's hidden will—with the tree's natural cycle of will end in a great fire (2 Peter 3.10).

growth.

1. This line presents a serious textual problem,
2. "Man" is the only creature with "reason and since all early printed versions of the poem have speech"; the parrot may seem to be an exception, "no" instead of "more" "fruit." We follow the read-but it talks on credit ("upon the score"), i.e., ing of the one surviving manuscript, which Herbert because humans taught it how. saw, but the alternate reading has strong claims.
3. I.e., humanity is also symmetrical to—a micro- See, for instance, "Affliction (I)," lines 57—60 cosm of—the world. (p. 371), where Herbert contrasts the uncertainty
4. Refers to the notion that parts of the body are of h u m a n "fruitfulness"—dependent partly on affected by the motions of the moon and stars.

L I F E / 3 7 7

T h e s t a r s h a v e u s t o b e d ;

**N i g h t d r a w s t h e c u r t a i n , w h i c h t h e s u n w i t h
d r a w s ; M u s i c a n d l i g h t a t t e n d o u r h e a d .**

A l l t h i n g s u n t o o u r f l e s h a r e k i n d 0 *kin*

35 I n t h e i r d e s c e n t a n d b e i n g ; t o o u r m i n d

I n t h e i r a s c e n t a n d c a u s e .

E a c h t h i n g i s f u l l o f d u t y : 5

W a t e r s u n i t e d a r e o u r n a v i g a t i o n ;

D i s t i n g u i s h e d , o u r h a b i t a t i o n ;

40 Below, our drink; above, our meat;
Both are our cleanliness. Hath one such beauty?

Then how are all things neat? 6

More servants wait on Man

Than he'll take notice of: in every path

45 He treads down that which doth befriend him 7

When sickness makes him pale and wan.

O mighty love! Man is one world, and hath

Another to attend him.

Since then, my God, thou hast

50 So brave a palace built, O dwell in it,

That it may dwell with thee at last!

Till then, afford us so much wit,

That, as the world serves us, we may serve thee,

And both thy servants be.

Life

I made a posy,^o while the day ran by:

bouquet; poem

“Here will I smell my remnant out, and tie

remaining time

My life within this band.”

But Time did beckon to the flowers, and they
5 By noon most cunningly did steal away,

And withered in my hand.

My hand was next to them, and then my heart;

I took, without more thinking, in good part

Time's gentle admonition;

**io Who did so sweetly death's sad taste convey,
Making my mind to smell my fatal day,
Yet sug'ring the suspicion.**

5. I.e., all the elements serve God and humans.

or dew) is food.

Lines 38 - 40 : oceans ("waters united") are valuable

6. I.e., if one element can serve so abundantly,
for navigation; the dividing of the waters ("disting-
how wonderful ("neat") is the sum of all things.
guished") during the Creation allowed humans to

7. I.e., he treads down the herb that cures ill-
live on Earth (Genesis 1.6). Water on Earth pro-
cesses.

vides drink, while water from "above" (i.e., manna

378 / GEORGE HERBERT

**Farewell dear flowers, sweetly your time
yespent, Fit, while ye lived, for smell or ornament,
nt,**

15 And after death for cures. 8

Ifollow straight without complaints or grief,

Since, if my scent be good, I care not if

It be as short as yours.

Artillery

As I one evening sat before my cell,

**Me thought a star did shoot into my lap. *it*
seemed to me I rose and shook my clothes, as know-
wing well**

**That from small fires comes oft no small mishap;
5 When suddenly I heard one say,**

"Do as thousest, disobey,

Expel good motions from thy breast,
Which have the face of fire, but end in rest.“9
I, who had heard of music in the spheres, 1
10

But not of speech in stars, began to muse;
But turning to my God, whose ministers
The stars and all things are: “If I refuse,
Dread Lord,” said I, “so oft my good,
Then I refuse not ev’n with blood
15

To wash away my stubborn thought;
For I will do or suffer what I ought.
“But I have also stars and shooters too,
Born where thy servants both artilleries use.
My tears and prayers night and day do woo
20 And work up to thee; yet thou dost refuse.
Not but I am (I must say still)

Much more obliged to do thy will
Than thou to grant mine; but because
Thy promise now hath ev’n set thee thy laws.
25” Then we are shooters both, and thou dost
deign 0

condescend

To enter combat with us, and contest
With thine own clay. But I would parley fain:2
Shun not my arrows, and behold my breast.
Yet if thou shunnest, I am thine:
BO I must be so, if I am mine.

T h e r e i s n o a r t i c l i n g 0 w i t h t h e e :

negotiating

I a m b u t f i n i t e , y e t t h i n e i n f i n i t e l y . ”

8. Flowers were sometimes used as an ingredient

1. The spheres of Ptolemaic astronomy, concentric transparent shells containing the heavenly

9. I.e., divine impulses, like falling stars, may have

bodies, were thought to produce angelic music as

the appearance of dangerous fires, but ultimately

they turned.

end quietly.

2. Gladly speak. *Clay*: i.e., flesh.

T H E P U L L E Y / 3 7 9

The Collar³

**I s t r u c k t h e b o a r d 0 a n d c r i e d , ” N o m o r e ; t a b l e I
w i l l a b r o a d !**

W h a t ? s h a l l I e v e r s i g h a n d p i n e ?

M y l i n e s a n d l i f e a r e f r e e , f r e e a s t h e r o a d ,

L o o s e a s t h e w i n d , a s l a r g e a s s t o r e . a b u n d a n c e

S h a l l I b e s t i l l i n s u i t ? 4

H a v e I n o h a r v e s t b u t a t h o r n

T o l e t m e b l o o d , a n d n o t r e s t o r e

W h a t I h a v e l o s t w i t h c o r d i a l 0 f r u i t ? l i f e - g i v i n g

S u r e t h e r e w a s w i n e

B e f o r e m y s i g h s d i d d r y i t ; t h e r e w a s c o r n

B e f o r e m y t e a r s d i d d r o w n i t .

I s t h e y e a r o n l y l o s t t o m e ?

**H a v e I n o b a y s s t o c r o w n i t ,
N o f l o w e r s , n o g a r l a n d s g a y ? A l l b l a s t e d ?
A l l w a s t e d ?
N o t s o , m y h e a r t ; b u t t h e r e i s f r u i t ,
A n d t h o u h a s t h a n d s .
R e c o v e r a l l t h y s i g h - b l o w n a g e
O n d o u b l e p l e a s u r e s : l e a v e t h y c o l d d i s p u t e
O f w h a t i s f i t a n d n o t . F o r s a k e t h y c a g e ,
T h y r o p e o f s a n d s , 6
W h i c h p e t t y t h o u g h t s h a v e m a d e , a n d m a d e
e t o t h e e G o o d c a b l e , t o e n f o r c e a n d d r a w ,
A n d b e t h y l a w ,
W h i l e t h o u d i d s t w i n k ° a n d w o u l d s t n o t s e e .
shut your eyes A w a y ! t a k e h e e d ;
I w i l l a b r o a d .
C a l l i n t h y d e a t h ' s - h e a d 7 t h e r e ; t i e u p t h y f e a r s .
H e t h a t f o r b e a r s
T o s u i t a n d s e r v e h i s n e e d ,
D e s e r v e s h i s l o a d .”
B u t a s I r a v e d a n d g r e w m o r e f i e r c e a n d w i l d
A t e v e r y w o r d ,
M e t h o u g h t I h e a r d o n e c a l l i n g , *Child*
A n d I r e p l i e d , *My Lord* .**

The Pulley⁸

**W h e n G o d a t f i r s t m a d e m a n ,
H a v i n g a g l a s s o f b l e s s i n g s s t a n d i n g b y ,**

3. A band of metal fixed round a prisoner's neck;

“petty thoughts” have made into “good” (or strong)

also, something worn about the neck as a badge of

cable.

servitude, as a priest wears a collar to show his

7. A memento mori, or representation of a human service to God. Also, perhaps, a pun on *cholera*, skull intended to serve as a reminder that all anger.

humans must die.

4. I.e., in attendance upon someone for a favor.

8. A simple mechanical device, made of a rope, a

5. A laurel garland symbolizing poetic fame.

wheel, and sometimes a block, used for changing

6. I.e., the restrictions on behavior, which the the direction of a pulling force to lift weights.

380 / GEORGE HERBERT

“Let us,” said he, “pour on him all we can.

Let the world’s riches, which dispersed lie,

5 Contract into a span.”⁹

So strength first made a way;

**Then beauty flowed, then wisdom, honor,
pleasure.**

When almost all was out, God made a stay,

Perceiving that, alone of all his treasure,

10 Rest in the bottom lay. *remainder; repose*

“For if I should,” said he,

” Bestow this jewel also on my creature,

He would adore my gifts instead of me,

And rest in Nature, not the God of Nature;

15 So both should losers be.

“Yet let him keep the rest,
But keep them with repining restlessness.
Let him be rich and weary, that at least,
If goodness lead him not, yet weariness
20 May toss him to my breast.”

The Flower

How fresh, oh Lord, how sweet and clean
Are thy returns! even as the flowers in spring;
To which, besides their own demean, 1
The late-past frosts tributes of pleasure bring.

5 Grief melts away

Like snow in May,

As if there were no such cold thing.

Who would have thought my shriveled heart

Could have recovered greenness? It was gone
to Quite underground; as flowers depart

To see their mother-root, when they have blown,
0 *bloomed* Where they together

All the hard weather,

Dead to the world, keep house unknown.

15 These are thy wonders, Lord of power,

Killing and quickening, 0 bringing down to
hell *reviving* And up to heaven in an hour;

Making a chiming of a passing-bell. 2

We say a miss

20 This or that is:

Thy word is all, if we could spell.

9. A small space; the distance from the end of the
the estate of one's own beauty or pleasure.

thumb to the end of the little finger of a spread

2. A monotone bell tolled to announce a death; a hand.

chiming offers a pleasing variety.

1. Demeanor or bearing; also *demesne*, estate, i.e.,

THE FORERUNNERS / 381

O h that I o n c e p a s t c h a n g i n g w e r e ,

F a s t i n t h y P a r a d i s e , w h e r e n o f l o w e r c a n w i t h e r !

M a n y a s p r i n g I s h o o t u p f a i r ,

25 O f f e r i n g 0 a t h e a v e n , g r o w i n g a n d g r o a n i n g t h i t h e r ; a i m i n g N o r d o t h m y f l o w e r

W a n t 0 a s p r i n g s h o w e r , l a c k ; d e s i r e

M y s i n s a n d I j o i n i n g t o g e t h e r . 3

B u t w h i l e I g r o w i n a s t r a i g h t l i n e ,

B O S t i l l u p w a r d s b e n t , a s i f h e a v e n w e r e m i n e o w n , T h y a n g e r c o m e s , a n d I d e c l i n e :

W h a t f r o s t t o t h a t ? w h a t p o l e i s n o t t h e z o n e

W h e r e a l l t h i n g s b u r n ,

W h e n t h o u d o s t t u r n ,

35 A n d t h e l e a s t f r o w n o f t h i n e i s s h o w n ? 4

A n d n o w i n a g e I b u d a g a i n ,

A f t e r s o m a n y d e a t h s I l i v e a n d w r i t e ;

I o n c e m o r e s m e l l t h e d e w a n d r a i n ,

A n d r e l i s h v e r s i n g . O h , m y o n l y l i g h t ,

40 I t c a n n o t b e

T h a t I a m h e

O n w h o m t h y t e m p e s t s f e l l a l l n i g h t .

T h e s e a r e t h y w o n d e r s , L o r d o f l o v e ,

T o m a k e u s s e e w e a r e b u t f l o w e r s t h a t g l i d e ; 0

pass away silently

4 5 Which when we once can find and prove,0

experience

Thou hast a garden for us where to bide;

Who would be more,

Swelling through store,0

possessions

Forfeit their Paradise by their pride.

The Forerunners

The harbingers⁵ are come. See, see their mark:

White is their color, and behold my head. 6

**But must they have my brain? Must they
dispark⁷**

**Those sparkling notions, which therein were
bred?**

5 Must dullness turn me to a clod?

Yet have they left me, *Thou art still my God.*⁸

Good men ye be, to leave me my best room,

Ev'n all my heart, and what is lodged there:

3. I.e., the tears of contrition caused by the “join-

6. I.e., the poet has been marked by the appear-
ing” together of the poet’s sins and his conscience.

ance of white hairs, a sign that all of his “sparkling

4. I.e., what cold compares to God’s anger? What

notions” (line 4) must be dispossessed, to make

chill would not seem like the heat of the equator,

room for his coming Lord.

compared to God’s wrath?

7. I.e., *dis-park*, to turn out, as deer from a park;

5. The advance agents of the king and his party there may also be a play on *dis-spark*.

on a royal progress, or tour. They marked with

8. Echoes Psalm 31.14: "But I trusted in thee, O chalk the doors of those dwellings where the court Lord: I said, Thou art my God." See also Christ's would be accommodated.

lament to God in Matthew 27.46 and Mark 15.34.

382 / G E O R G E H E R B E R T

I p a s s n o t , 9 I , w h a t o f t h e r e s t b e c o m e ,

10 S o *Thou art still my God* be out of fear.

H e w i l l b e p l e a s e d w i t h t h a t d i t t y ;

A n d i f I p l e a s e h i m , I w r i t e f i n e a n d w i t t y .

F a r e w e l l s w e e t p h r a s e s , l o v e l y m e t a p h o r s .

B u t w i l l y e l e a v e m e t h u s ? W h e n y e b e f o r e

15 O f s t e w s a n d b r o t h e l s o n l y k n e w t h e d o o r s ,

T h e n d i d I w a s h y o u w i t h m y t e a r s , a n d m o r e ,

B r o u g h t y o u t o c h u r c h w e l l d r e s s e d a n d c l a d :

M y G o d m u s t h a v e m y b e s t , e v ' n a l l I h a d .

L o v e l y e n c h a n t i n g l a n g u a g e , s u g a r - c a n e ,
20 H o n e y o f r o s e s , w i t h e r w i l t t h o u f l y ?

H a t h s o m e f o n d l o v e r ' t i c e d t h e e t o t h y b a n e ? 1

A n d w i l t t h o u l e a v e t h e c h u r c h a n d l o v e a s t y ? 2

F i e , t h o u w i l t s o i l t h y b r o i d e r e d c o a t ,

A n d h u r t t h y s e l f , a n d h i m t h a t s i n g s t h e n o t e .

25 L e t f o o l i s h l o v e r s , i f t h e y w i l l l o v e d u n g ,

W i t h c a n v a s , n o t w i t h a r r a s , * c l o t h e t h e i r s h a m e : L e t f o l l y s p e a k i n h e r o w n n a t i v e t o n g u e .

T r u e b e a u t y d w e l l s o n h i g h : o u r s i s a f l a m e

B u t b o r r o w e d t h e n c e t o l i g h t u s t h i t h e r .

**B O B e a u t y a n d b e a u t e o u s w o r d s s h o u l d g o
t o g e t h e r .**

Y e t i f y o u g o , I p a s s n o t ; t a k e y o u r w a y :

F o r *Thou art still my God* i s a l l t h a t y e

P e r h a p s w i t h m o r e e m b e l l i s h m e n t c a n s a y .

G o , b i r d s o f s p r i n g : l e t w i n t e r h a v e h i s f e e ;

35 L e t a b l e a k p a l e n e s s c h a l k t h e d o o r ,

S o a l l w i t h i n b e l i v e l i e r t h a n b e f o r e .

Discipline

T h r o w a w a y t h y r o d ,^o *punishment*

T h r o w a w a y t h y w r a t h :

O m y G o d ,

T a k e t h e g e n t l e p a t h .

5 F o r m y h e a r t ' s d e s i r e

U n t o t h i n e i s b e n t :

I a s p i r e

T o a f u l l c o n s e n t .

N o t a w o r d o r l o o k

i o I a f f e c t t o o w n ,

9. I care not. I.e., all the other thoughts in the
art still my God.”

house (my mind, my soul) can be turned out of

1. Destruction. *Ticed*: enticed.

doors, as long as you leave my heart (“my best

2. Pigsty; also, a place of moral contamination.

room”) and its one inhabitant, the thought “Thou

3. I.e., with coarse cloth, not with tapestry.

THE ELIXIR / 383

B u t b y b o o k ,

A n d t h y b o o k 4 a l o n e .

T h o u g h I f a i l , I w e e p :

T h o u g h I h a l t i n p a c e ,

15 Y e t I c r e e p

T o t h e t h r o n e o f g r a c e .

T h e n l e t w r a t h r e m o v e ;

L o v e w i l l d o t h e d e e d :

F o r w i t h l o v e

20 S t o n y h e a r t s w i l l b l e e d .

L o v e i s s w i f t o f f o o t ;

L o v e ' s a m a n o f w a r , 5

A n d c a n s h o o t ,

A n d c a n h i t f r o m f a r .

25 W h o c a n ' s c a p e h i s b o w ?

T h a t w h i c h w r o u g h t o n t h e e ,

B r o u g h t t h e e l o w ,

N e e d s m u s t w o r k o n m e .

T h r o w a w a y t h y r o d ;

30 T h o u g h m a n f r a i l t i e s h a t h ,

T h o u a r t G o d :

T h r o w a w a y t h y w r a t h .

The Elixir⁶

T e a c h m e , m y G o d a n d K i n g ,

I n a l l t h i n g s t h e e t o s e e ,

A n d w h a t I d o i n a n y t h i n g ,

T o d o i t a s f o r t h e e .

**N o t rudely, as a b e a s t ,
T o r u n i n t o a n a c t i o n ;
B u t s t i l l t o m a k e t h e e p r e p o s s e s t , 7
A n d g i v e i t h i s ° p e r f e c t i o n . *its*
A m a n t h a t l o o k s o n g l a s s ,
i o O n i t m a y s t a y h i s e y e ,
O r , i f h e p l e a s e t h , t h r o u g h i t p a s s ,
A n d t h e n t h e h e a v e n e s p y .**

4. I.e., the Bible. *By book*: i.e., as an actor follows long life indefinitely; here, it is identified with the a playbook.

“famous stone” (line 21) believed by the alchemists

5. A song by Moses in Exodus 15 calls the Lord a to turn other metals to gold. Figuratively, the quin- “man of war”; also, a possible reference to the clas- tessence or soul of a thing.

sical image of the god Cupid and his arrow.

7. I.e., always to give thee a prior claim.

6. An elixir is a drug or essence supposed to pro-

384 / G E O R G E H E R B E R T

All m a y o f t h e e p a r t a k e :

N o t h i n g c a n b e s o m e a n

15 W h i c h w i t h h i s t i n c t u r e (for thy sake)

W i l l n o t g r o w b r i g h t a n d c l e a n . 8

A s e r v a n t w i t h t h i s c l a u s e

M a k e s d r u d g e r y d i v i n e :

W h o s w e e p s a r o o m a s f o r t h y l a w s ,

20 M a k e s t h a t a n d t h ’ a c t i o n f i n e .

T h i s i s t h e f a m o u s s t o n e

T h a t t u r n e t h a l l t o g o l d ;

F o r t h a t w h i c h G o d d o t h t o u c h 9 a n d o w n

C a n n o t f o r l e s s b e t o l d .^o *measured*

D e a t h

**D e a t h , t h o u w a s t o n c e a n u n c o u t h h i d e o u s
t h i n g , N o t h i n g b u t b o n e s ,**

T h e s a d e f f e c t o f s a d d e r g r o a n s :

**T h y m o u t h w a s o p e n , b u t t h o u c o u l d s t n o t
s i n g .**

5 F o r w e c o n s i d e r e d t h e e a s a t s o m e s i x

O r t e n y e a r s h e n c e ,

A f t e r t h e l o s s o f l i f e a n d s e n s e ,

F l e s h b e i n g t u r n e d t o d u s t , a n d b o n e s t o s t i c k s .

W e l o o k e d o n t h i s s i d e o f t h e e , s h o o t i n g s h o r t ;

10 W h e r e w e d i d f i n d

T h e s h e l l s o f f l e d g e s o u l s l e f t b e h i n d ,

**D r y d u s t , w h i c h s h e d s n o t e a r s , b u t m a y
e x t o r t .¹**

**B u t s i n c e o u r S a v i o r ' s d e a t h d i d p u t s o m e b l o o
d I n t o t h y f a c e ,**

15 T h o u a r t g r o w n f a i r a n d f u l l o f g r a c e ,

M u c h i n r e q u e s t , m u c h s o u g h t f o r a s a g o o d .

F o r w e d o n o w b e h o l d t h e e g a y a n d g l a d ,

A s a t D o o m s d a y ; 0 *Judgment Day*

W h e n s o u l s s h a l l w e a r t h e i r n e w a r r a y ,

20 A n d a l l t h y b o n e s w i t h b e a u t y s h a l l b e c l a d .

8. I.e., nothing is so insignificant (“mean”) that it
touchstone.

can't grow bright and clean for thy sake by means
1. "Fledge souls" that have left the body and gone
of its tincture (an immaterial principle that trans-
to heaven are like fledgling chicks that have left
formed substances, according to alchemical the-
the shell behind. The shell (i.e., the corpse) can
ory).

draw ("extort") tears from survivors, although it
9. To test (gold) for purity by rubbing it with a
cannot shed them itself.

A S O N G / 3 8 5

T h e r e f o r e w e c a n g o d i e a s s l e e p , a n d t r u s t
H a l f t h a t w e h a v e
U n t o a n h o n e s t f a i t h f u l g r a v e ;
M a k i n g o u r p i l l o w s e i t h e r d o w n , o r d u s t .

Love (III)2

L o v e b a d e m e w e l c o m e : y e t m y s o u l d r e w
back,

G u i l t y o f d u s t a n d s i n .

B u t q u i c k - e y e d L o v e , o b s e r v i n g m e g r o w
slack"*

F r o m m y f i r s t e n t r a n c e i n ,

5 D r e w n e a r e r t o m e , s w e e t l y q u e s t i o n i n g
I f I l a c k e d a n y t h i n g .

"A g u e s t , " I a n s w e r e d , " w o r t h y t o b e h e r e " :

L o v e s a i d , " Y o u s h a l l b e h e . "

" I , t h e u n k i n d , u n g r a t e f u l ? A h , m y d e a r ,

10 I c a n n o t l o o k o n t h e e . "

L o v e t o o k m y h a n d , a n d s m i l i n g d i d r e p l y ,

” W h o m a d e t h e e y e s b u t I ? ”

“Truth, Lord; b u t I h a v e m a r r e d t h e m ; l e t m y s h a m e G o w h e r e i t d o t h d e s e r v e . ”

15 “A n d k n o w y o u n o t , ” s a y s L o v e , “ w h o b o r e t h e b l a m e ? ” 4

“My d e a r , t h e n I w i l l s e r v e . ”

“Y o u m u s t s i t d o w n , ” s a y s L o v e , “ a n d t a s t e m y m e a t . ” 5

S o I d i d s i t a n d e a t .

T H O M A S C A R E W

ca. 1595-1640

A S o n g

A s k m e n o m o r e w h e r e J o v e l b e s t o w s ,

W h e n J u n e i s p a s t , t h e f a d i n g r o s e ;

F o r i n y o u r b e a u t y ’ s o r i e n t d e e p ,

T h e s e f l o w e r s , a s i n t h e i r c a u s e s , 2 s l e e p .

2. This is the last lyric in “The Church” both in a reference to the final Communion in heaven, the early Williams manuscript and in the 1633 edition of *The Temple*; some critics have therefore interpreted the poem as describing the soul’s reception into heaven.

reception into heaven.

1. The ruling god of Roman mythology.

3. I.e., become hesitant because of misgivings.

2. Aristotelian philosophy regarded that from

4. I.e., Christ, who took on the “blame” for h u m a n

which a thing is made or comes into being as the beings' original sin.

“material cause” of the thing. The lady here is a

5. A reference to the sacrament of C o m m u n i o n summation of the previous summer and a cause of (according to Anglicans, the ritual taking of bread the next one. *Orient*: lustrous, but also “from the and wine in remembrance of Christ’s body); also, East.”

386 / T H O M A S C A R E W

5 A s k m e n o m o r e w h i t h e r d o t h s t r a y

T h e g o l d e n a t o m s o f t h e d a y ;

F o r i n p u r e l o v e h e a v e n d i d p r e p a r e

T h o s e p o w d e r s t o e n r i c h y o u r h a i r .

A s k m e n o m o r e w h i t h e r d o t h h a s t e

10 T h e n i g h t i n g a l e w h e n M a y i s p a s t ;

F o r i n y o u r s w e e t d i v i d i n g ^ t h r o a t

S h e w i n t e r s , a n d k e e p s w a r m h e r n o t e .

A s k m e n o m o r e w h e r e t h o s e s t a r s l i g h t ,

T h a t d o w n w a r d s f a l l i n d e a d o f n i g h t ;

15 F o r i n y o u r e y e s t h e y s i t , a n d t h e r e

F i x e d b e c o m e , a s i n t h e i r s p h e r e .

A s k m e n o m o r e i f e a s t o r w e s t

T h e p h o e n i x ⁴ b u i l d s h e r s p i c y n e s t ;

F o r u n t o y o u a t l a s t s h e f l i e s ,

20 A n d i n y o u r f r a g r a n t b o s o m d i e s .

1640

The Spring

Now that the winter's gone, the earth hath lost
 Her snow-white robes, and now no more the
 frost Candies the grass, or casts an icy cream
 ices Upon the silver lake or crystal stream;
 5 But the warm sun thaws the benumbed earth
 And makes it tender, gives a sacred birth
 To the dead swallow, 5 wakes in hollow tree
 The drowsy cuckoo and the humble bee.
 Now do a choir of chirping minstrels bring
 io In triumph to the world the youthful spring.
 The valleys, hills, and woods in rich array
 Welcome the coming of the longed-for May.
 Now all things smile: only my love doth lour,^o frown
 Nor hath the scalding noonday sun the power
 15 To melt that marble ice which still doth hold
 Her heart congealed, and makes her pity
 cold.

The ox, which lately did for shelter fly
 Into the stall, doth now securely lie
 In open fields; and love no more is made
 20 By the fireside, but in the cooler shade:
 A myntasnowdoth with his Chloris 6 sleep

3. Harmonious (from *division*, an embellished
 spicy shrubs.

musical phrase).

5. Swallows were sacred to the Roman household

4. A legendary bird, the only one of its kind, rep-
 gods.

resented as living five hundred years in the Arabian

6. Conventional names for a shepherd and shep-

desert, being consumed in fire, then rising anew
herdess.

from its own ashes. Also said to build its nest from

**SONG . T o M Y I N C O N S T A N T M I S T R E S S /
3 8 7**

**U n d e r a s y c a m o r e , a n d a l l t h i n g s k e e p
T i m e w i t h t h e s e a s o n . O n l y s h e d o t h c a r r y
J u n e i n h e r e y e s , i n h e r h e a r t J a n u a r y .**

1 6 4 0

Mediocrity⁷ in Love Rejected

G i v e m e m o r e l o v e , o r m o r e d i s d a i n ;

T h e t o r r i d o r t h e f r o z e n z o n e

B r i n g e q u a l e a s e u n t o m y p a i n ;

T h e t e m p e r a t e a f f o r d s m e n o n e :

5 E i t h e r e x t r e m e , o f l o v e o r h a t e ,

I s s w e e t e r t h a n a c a l m e s t a t e . 0 *condition*

G i v e m e a s t o r m ; i f i t b e l o v e ,

L i k e D a n a e i n t h a t g o l d e n s h o w e r , 8

I s w i m i n p l e a s u r e ; i f i t p r o v e

i o D i s d a i n , t h a t t o r r e n t w i l l d e v o u r

M y v u l t u r e h o p e s ; a n d h e ' s p o s s e s s e d

O f h e a v e n t h a t ' s b u t f r o m h e l l r e l e a s e d .

T h e n c r o w n m y j o y s , o r c u r e m y p a i n ;

G i v e m e m o r e l o v e , o r m o r e d i s d a i n .

1 6 4 0

Song. To My Inconstant Mistress

W h e n t h o u , p o o r e x c o m m u n i c a t e

F r o m a l l t h e j o y s o f l o v e , s h a l t s e e

**T h e full reward a n d g l o r i o u s fate
W h i c h m y s t r o n g faith shall p u r c h a s e m e ,
5 T h e n c u r s e t h i n e o w n i n c o n s t a n c y .
A fairer h a n d t h a n t h i n e shall c u r e
T h a t heart w h i c h thy false o a t h s did w o u n d ,
A n d to my soul a s o u l m o r e pure
T h a n t h i n e shall b y Love's h a n d b e b o u n d ,
10 A n d b o t h with equal glory c r o w n e d .
T h e n shalt t h o u w e e p , e n t r e a t , c o m p l a i n
T o Love, as I did o n c e to t h e e ;
W h e n all thy tears shall be as v a i n**

7. Temperance, moderation.

pretation. Danae was the daughter of the king of

8. Jove, the ruling god in Roman mythology, frequently left Juno, his sister and wife, to pursue other women; whether his actions constituted to her in the form of a shower of gold, and as a seduction or rape often depends on the particular result gave birth to Perseus.

account of a common myth, as well as on inter-

388 / T H O M A S C A R E W

**A s m i n e w e r e t h e n , f o r t h o u shalt b e
15 D a m n e d f o r t h y false a p o s t a s y . 9
1 6 4 0**

An Elegy upon the Death of the Dean of Paul's,
Dr. John Donne1

Can we not force from widowed poetry,
Now thou art dead, great Donne, one elegy
To crown thy hearse? Why yet did we not trust,
Though with unknaded dough-baked prose,
thy dust, 5 Such as the unscissored lect'ner
3 from the flower Of fading rhetoric, short-lived as
his hour,

Dry as the sand that measures it, 4 should lay
Upon the ashes on the funeral day?

Have we no fortune, nor voice? Didst thou dis-
pense 5

io Through all our language both the words
and sense?

'Tis a sad truth. The pulpit may her plain

And sober Christian precepts still retain;

Doctrines it may, and wholesome uses, frame,
Grave homilies 0 and lectures; but the fl-
ame *sermons* 15 Of thy brave soul, that shot such heat
and light

As burnt our earth and made our darkness
bright, Committed holy rapes 6 upon our will,

Did through the eye the melting heart distill,
And the deep knowledge of dark truths so teach
h 20 As sense might judge what fancy could not
reach, 7

Must be desired forever. So the fire

That fills with spirit and heat the Delphic
choir, 8

Which, kindled first by thy Promethean 9
breath, Glowed here awhile, lies quenched now
win thy death.

25 The Muses' 1 garden, with pedantic weeds
O'erspread, was purged by thee; the lazy see

d s

O f servile imitation thrown away,

A n d f r e s h i n v e n t i o n p l a n t e d ; t h o u d i d s t p a y

T h e d e b t s o f o u r p e n u r i o u s o b a n k r u p t a g e ;
poverty-stricken **30 L i c e n t i o u s t h e f t s , t h a t m a k e p**
o e t i c r a g e

A m i m i c f u r y , w h e n o u r s o u l s m u s t b e

9. Abandonment of one's allegiance, often to a
doubts about various religious claims to truth in
religious faith or god.

"Satire III" (p. 314) and other writings.

1. English poet (1 5 7 2 - 1 6 3 1 ; see pp. 2 9 3 - 3 2 2) .

4. I.e., the sand in an hourglass.

2. I.e., badly finished, flat.

5. Use up or lay out.

3. I.e., lecturer with uncut hair; in the first edi-

6. Forcible seizures. For Donne's use of the meta-
tion, Carew wrote "church-man" instead of
phor of a religious "rape," see Holy Sonnet 14
"lect'rer," and thus signalled an aim to distinguish
(p. 320).

this figure from Roman Catholic priests, whose

7. I.e., so that things too intangible and elevated
hair was cut (tonsured) when they entered the
even to be imagined might be made plain to sense.

Church. The line seems to have been altered to

8. I.e., the choir of poets. Delphi was the site of
soften the critique of Protestant clergymen—
an oracle of Apollo, the classical god of poetry.

implicit in the evocation of a “dry,” inadequate

9. In Greek mythology, Prometheus stole fire from the gods for the benefit of mortals.

Although Donne was born a Catholic, he later

1. In Greek mythology, nine sister goddesses who became a famous Anglican preacher; he expressed were sources of inspiration.

A N E L E G Y U P O N T H E D E A T H O F T H E D E A N O F P A U L ‘ S / 3 8 9

Possessed, or with Anacreon’s ecstasy,
Or Pindar’s,² not their own; the subtle cheat
Of sly exchanges, and the juggling feat
35 Of two-edged words, or whatsoever wrong
By ours was done the Greek or Latin tongue,
Thou hast redeemed, and opened us a mine
Of rich and pregnant fancy, drawn a line
Of masculine expression, which had good
40 Old Orpheus³ seen, or all the ancient brood
Our superstitious fools admire, and hold
Their lead more precious than thy burnished gold,
Thou hadst been their exchequer,⁰ and no more *treasury*
They in each other’s dung had searched for ore.
45 Thou shalt yield no precedence, but of time
And the blind fate of language, whose tuned chime
More charms the outward sense; yet thou mayest claim
From so great disadvantage greater fame,
Since to the awe of thy imperious wit

50 O u r troublesome language bends, made only fit
With her tough thick-ribbed hoops, to gird about
Thy giant fancy, which had proved too stout
For their soft melting phrases.⁴ As in time
They had the start, so did they cull the prime
55 Buds of invention many a hundred year,
And left the rifled fields, besides the fear
To touch their harvest; yet from those bare lands
Of what is only thine, thy only hands
(And that their smallest work) have gleaned more
60 Than all those times and tongues could reap before.
But thou art gone, and thy strict laws will be
Too hard for libertines in poetry.
They will recall the goodly exiled train
Of gods and goddesses, which in thy just reign
65 Were banished⁰ nobler poems; now with these *banished*
from
The silenced tales i' th' *Metamorphoses*⁵
Shall stuff their lines and swell the windy page,
Till verse, refined by thee in this last age,
Turn ballad-rhyme, or those old idols be
70 Adored again with new apostasy.⁶
O pardon me, that break with untuned verse
The reverend silence that attends thy hearse,
Whose solemn awful⁰ murmurs were to thee, *awestruck*
More than these faint lines, a loud elegy,
75 That did proclaim in a dumb eloquence
The death of all the arts, whose influence,

Grown feeble, in these panting numbers lies
Gasping short-winded accents, and so dies:

2. Anacreon (ca. 582—ca. 485 **B.C.E.**) and Pindar
“wine” of his genius.

(ca. 522—ca. 438 **B.C.E.**) were famous Greek poets.

5. Earlier poets had drawn heavily on the stories

3. In Greek mythology, the son of one of the
in Ovid’s *Metamorphoses* for the materials of their
Muses and the greatest of poets and musicians.

poetry.

4. I.e., a metaphor describing Donne’s wit as a

6. Abandonment of one’s allegiance, especially to
barrel maker bending hoops of metal around the
a religious faith or a god.

390 / JAMES SHIRLEY

**So doth the swiftly turning wheel not stand
so In th’ instant we withdraw the moving hand,
But some small time retain a faint weak course
By virtue of the first impulsive force;
And so whilst I cast on thy funeral pile
Thy crown of bays,⁷ oh, let it crack awhile
85 And spit disdain, till the devouring flashes
Suck all the moisture up; then turn to ashes.
I will not draw thee envy to engross⁸
All thy perfections, or weep all the loss;
Those are too numerous for one elegy,
90 And this too great to be expressed by me.
Let others carve the rest; it shall suffice**

I on thy grave this epitaph incise:

Here lies a king, that ruled as he thought fit

The universal monarchy of wit;

95 Here lie two flamens,^o and both those the best: priests

Apollo's⁹ first, at last the true God's priest.

1 6 3 3 , 1 6 4 0

J A M E S S H I R L E Y

1596-1666

FROM AJAX

Dirge¹

T h e glories of our blood and state

A r e s h a d o w s , n o t substantial things;

T h e r e is no armor against fate;

D e a t h lays his icy h a n d on kings.

5 S c e p t e r and c r o w n

M u s t t u m b l e d o w n

A n d in the dust be equal m a d e

W i t h the poor c r o o k e d scythe and spade.

S o m e m e n with swords m a y reap the f i e l d

io A n d plant fresh laurels² where they kill,

B u t their strong nerves at last m u s t yield;

T h e y t a m e but o n e a n o t h e r still.

Early or late

7. A crown of bays, or laurel, was the traditional
tention of Ajax and Ulysses for the Armor of Achilles,
reward of the victor in a poetic competition.

which retells a story from Ovid's *Metamorphoses*.

8. Write, copy out, with a pun on the word's eco-

2. The laurel's evergreen leaves, and also its flow-
nomic meanings: to buy up, monopolize.

ers (cf. "garlands," line 17), symbolized military

9. I.e., the god of poetry's.

victory or success in poetic competitions.

1. This poem concludes Shirley's play *The Con-*

P S A L M 5 8 / 3 9 1

T h e y s t o o p t o f a t e

15 A n d m u s t g i v e u p t h e i r m u r m u r i n g b r e a t h ,

W h e n t h e y , p a l e c a p t i v e s , c r e e p t o d e a t h .

T h e g a r l a n d s w i t h e r o n y o u r b r o w ,

T h e n b o a s t n o m o r e y o u r m i g h t y d e e d s ;

U p o n d e a t h ' s p u r p l e a l t a r n o w

20 S e e w h e r e t h e v i c t o r - v i c t i m b l e e d s .

Y o u r h e a d s m u s t c o m e

T o t h e c o l d t o m b ;

O n l y t h e a c t i o n s o f t h e j u s t

S m e l l s w e e t a n d b l o s s o m i n t h e i r d u s t .

1 6 5 9

T H E M A S S A C H U S E T T S B A Y P S A L M B O O K *

P s a l m 5 8 1

i

D o y e , o c o n g r e g a t i o n ,

i n d e e d s p e a k r i g h t e o u s n e s s ?

a n d o y e s o n s o f e a r t h l y m e n ,

d o y e j u d g e u n r i g h t n e s s ?

2

5 Y e a y o u i n h e a r t w i l l w o r k i n g b e

**i n j u r i o u s - w i c k e d n e s s ;
a n d i n t h e l a n d y o u w i l l w e i g h o u t
y o u r h a n d s ‘ v i o l e n c e .**

3

**T h e w i c k e d a r e e s t r a n g e d f r o m
i o t h e w o m b , t h e y g o a s t r a y
a s s o o n a s e v e r t h e y a r e b o r n e ;
u t t e r i n g l i e s a r e t h e y .**

4

**T h e i r p o i s o n ‘ s l i k e s e r p e n t ’ s p o i s o n ;
t h e y l i k e d e a f a s p , 0 h e r e a r *small poisonous snake*
15 t h a t s t o p s . T h o u g h c h a r m e r w i s e l y c h a r m
,
h i s v o i c e s h e w i l l n o t h e a r .**

*The first book published in the new colony of
Psalter was one of the two most commonly owned
Massachusetts, compiled by twelve Puritan cler-
books in New England (the other being *The New*
gymen who sought (as John Cotton explained in
England Primer).

his preface) a plainer, more literal rendering of the
1. Cf. the translations of this Psalm and the next
Hebrew than occurs in other Protestant transla-
one by Mary Sidney (pp. 225—26), Isaac Watts
tions of the Psalms. Often reprinted, in England
(pp. 592-94), and Christopher Smart (pp. 684 -
and Scotland as well as in North America, this
86).

**392 / THE MASSACHUSETTS BAY PSALM
BOOK**

5

**Within their mouth do thou their teeth
break out, O God most strong,
do thou Jehovah, the great teeth
20 break of the lion's young.**

6

**As waters let them melt away,
that run continually:
and when he bends his shafts, let them
as cut asunder be.**

7

**25 Like to a snail that melts, so let
each of them pass away;
like to a woman's untimely birth
see sun that never they may.**

8

**Before your pots can feel the thorns,
30 take them away shall he,
as with a whirlwind both living,
and in his jealousy.**

9

**The righteous will rejoice when as
the vengeance he doth see;
35 his feet wash shall he in the blood
of them that wicked be.**

i o

**So that a man shall say, surely
for righteous, there is fruit:
sure there's a God that in the earth
40 judgement doth execute.**

Psalm 114

**When Israel did depart th'Egyptians from among,
and Jacob's house from a people that were of a strange
tongue,**

Judah his holy place, Israel's dominion was.

The sea it saw and fled; Jordan² was forced back to pass.

**5 The mountains they did leap upwards like unto rams;
the little hills also they did leap up like unto lambs.**

Thou sea what made thee fly? thou Jordan, back to go?

**Ye mountains that ye skipped like rams, like lambs ye hills
also?**

2. River in Palestine that empties into the Dead Sea.

O F T H E L A S T V E R S E S I N T H E B O O K / 3 9 3

**E a r t h a t G o d ' s p r e s e n c e d r e a d ; a t J a c o b ' s G o d ' s p r e
s e n c e ; 3**

**10 T h e r o c k w h o t u r n s t o w a t e r s l a k e , s p r i n g s h e f r
o m f l i n t s e n d s t h e n c e . 4**

1 6 4 0

E D M U N D W A L L E R

1606-1687

Song

G o , l o v e l y r o s e !

T e l l h e r t h a t w a s t e s h e r t i m e a n d m e

T h a t n o w s h e k n o w s ,

W h e n I r e s e m b l e 0 h e r t o t h e e , *liken*

5 H o w s w e e t a n d f a i r s h e s e e m s t o b e .
T e l l h e r t h a t ' s y o u n g ,
A n d s h u n s t o h a v e h e r g r a c e s s p i e d ,
T h a t h a d s t t h o u s p r u n g
I n d e s e r t s , w h e r e n o m e n a b i d e ,
10 T h o u m u s t h a v e u n c o m m e n d e d d i e d .
S m a l l i s t h e w o r t h
O f b e a u t y f r o m t h e l i g h t r e t i r e d ;
B i d h e r c o m e f o r t h ,
S u f f e r h e r s e l f t o b e d e s i r e d ,
15 A n d n o t b l u s h s o t o b e a d m i r e d .
T h e n d i e ! t h a t s h e
T h e c o m m o n f a t e o f a l l t h i n g s r a r e
M a y r e a d i n t h e e ;
H o w s m a l l a p a r t o f t i m e t h e y s h a r e
20 T h a t a r e s o w o n d r o u s s w e e t a n d f a i r !
1 6 4 5

Of the Last Verses in the Book 1

W h e n w e f o r a g e c o u l d n e i t h e r r e a d n o r w r i t e ,
T h e s u b j e c t m a d e u s a b l e t o i n d i t e ; 0 u t t e r ; d i c t a t e
T h e s o u l , w i t h n o b l e r r e s o l u t i o n s d e c k e d ,
T h e b o d y s t o o p i n g , d o e s h e r s e l f e r e c t .

5 N o m o r t a l p a r t s a r e r e q u i s i t e t o r a i s e

H e r t h a t , u n b o d i e d , c a n h e r M a k e r p r a i s e .

3. I.e., Earth, dread God's presence, dread the and who sends springs from flint.

presence of Jacob's God. 1. I.e., his book *Divine Poems*, first published in 4. I.e., he who turns the rock to standing water 1686.

394/JOHN MILTON

These seas are quiet when the winds give o'er;
So calm are we when passions are no more!
For then we know how vain it was to boast
10 Of fleeting things, so certain to be lost.

Clouds of affection⁰ from our younger eyes
s emotion Conceal that emptiness which age de-
cries.⁰ *discerns* The soul's dark cottage, batter-
ed and decayed, Let sin new light through ch-
inks that time has made; 15 Stronger by weak-
ness, wiser men become, As they draw near to
their eternal home.

Leaving the old, both worlds at once they
view, That stand upon the threshold of the new.

—*Miratur Limen Olympi*

Vergil²

1686

JOHN MILTON*

1608-1674

On the Morning of Christ's Nativity¹

i

This is the month, and this the happy morn,
Wherein the Son of Heaven's Eternal King,
Of wedded maid and virgin mother born,
Our great redemption from above did bring;
5 For so the holy sages² once did sing,
That he our deadly forfeit³ should release,
And with his Father work us a perpetual peace.

2

**T h a t g l o r i o u s f o r m , t h a t l i g h t u n s u f f e r a b l e ,
A n d t h a t f a r - b e a m i n g b l a z e o f m a j e s t y ,**

**i o W h e r e w i t h h e w o n t 0 a t H e a v e n ' s h i g h c o u n
c i l - t a b l e *was accustomed* T o s i t t h e m i d s t o f T r i n a l
U n i t y , 4**

H e l a i d a s i d e , a n d , h e r e w i t h u s t o b e ,

F o r s o o k t h e c o u r t s o f e v e r l a s t i n g d a y ,

**A n d c h o s e w i t h u s a d a r k s o m e h o u s e o f
m o r t a l c l a y . 5**

2. From a sentence in Virgil's Fifth Eclogue that order of Milton's 1673 volume.

reads, in translation, "Arrayed in dazzling white, he

1. This poem celebrates Christ's birth and Milton stands enraptured at heaven's unfamiliar thresh-

ton's symbolic birth as a Christian poet bending

old." Through this Latin quotation, Waller gives

classical forms such as the ode to new religious

the last words in his poem about his "divine poems"

purposes. Milton portrays the triumph of the

to a pagan author. Many Christian writers, most

infant Christ over pagan gods, a theme of interest

notably Dante, viewed Virgil as a precursor of

to both Catholics and Protestants of the early sev-

Christianity, one who stood on its threshold with-

enteenth century.

out being able to enter.

2. I.e., the Hebrew prophets.

*We have placed Milton's early works in the order

3. The penalty of death, occasioned by the sin of

of his *Poems* (1645), a carefully arranged collection
Adam.

that included poetry in English, Latin, and Italian

4. The Trinity: Father, Son, and Holy Ghost.

and represented a key statement about his “career”

5. I.e., a h u m a n body.

to that point. For his later works, we follow the

ON THE MORNING OF CHRIST'S NATIVITY / 395

3

**15 Say, Heavenly Muse,⁶ shall not thy sacred vein
Afford a present to the Infant God?**

**Hast thou no verse, no hymn, or solemn strain,
To welcome him to this his new abode,**

Now while the heaven, by the Sun's team untrod,⁷

20 Hath took no print of the approaching light,

**And all the spangled host⁸ keep watch in squadrons
bright?**

4

See how from far upon the eastern road

The star-led wizards⁹ haste with odors sweet!

Oh run, prevent⁰ them with thy humble ode,¹ *go before*

25 And lay it lowly at his blessed feet;

Have thou the honor first thy Lord to greet,

And join thy voice unto the angel choir

From out his secret altar touched with hallowed fire.²

The Hymn

i

It was the winter wild,

30 While the heaven-born child
All meanly wrapt in the rude manger lies;
Nature, in awe to him,
Had doffed⁰ her gaudy trim, *taken off*
With her great Master so to sympathize:
35 It was no season then for her
To wanton with the Sun, her lusty paramour.⁰ *beloved,*
lover
 2
Only with speeches fair
She woos the gentle air
To hide her guilty front with innocent snow,
40 And on her naked shame,
Pollute with sinful blame,
The saintly veil of maiden white to throw;
Confounded, that her Maker's eyes
Should look so near upon her foul deformities.³

6. Perhaps a reference to Urania, the Muse of ("odors sweet").

astronomy, later identified in Milton's epic poem

1. A rhymed lyric, generally dignified or lofty in *Paradise Lost* (line 6; see p. 421) with divine wisdom subject and style.

dom and treated by Milton as the source of creative

2. Cf. Isaiah 6.6—7, in which a seraph touches a prophet's lips with a burning coal from the altar.

nine sister goddesses believed to be sources of

3. Personifying Nature as a woman “polluted” by inspiration for the arts.

the Fall, Milton also portrays her as a hypocrite

7. A reference to Apollo, Greek god of the sun, covering her foulness with a “saintly” white veil; he who drove the chariot of the sun behind mighty

draws on Spenser's depiction of the witch Duessa
steeds (the "Sun's team").

stripped "naked" in "shame" (*Faerie Queene*

8. An armed multitude (i.e., the angels).

1.8.46—48) and on the Bible's whore of Babylon

9. The "wise men from the east" (Matthew 2.1),

(Revelation 17.6). See also the portrait of "foul" sin

who brought gifts of gold, myrrh, and frankincense

in *Paradise Lost* 2. 650 - 51 .

396 / JOHN MILTON

3

45 B u t h e , h e r f e a r s t o c e a s e ,

S e n t d o w n t h e m e e k - e y e d P e a c e :

S h e , c r o w n e d w i t h o l i v e g r e e n , c a m e s o f t l y
s l i d i n g D o w n t h r o u g h t h e t u r n i n g s p h e r e , 4

H i s r e a d y h a r b i n g e r ,

50 W i t h t u r t l e 5 w i n g t h e a m o r o u s c l o u d s
d i v i d i n g ;

A n d , w a v i n g w i d e h e r m y r t l e w a n d ,

S h e s t r i k e s a u n i v e r s a l p e a c e t h r o u g h s e a a n d
l a n d .

4

N o w a r , o r b a t t l e ' s s o u n d ,

W a s h e a r d t h e w o r l d a r o u n d ;

55 T h e i d l e s p e a r a n d s h i e l d w e r e h i g h u p h u n g
; T h e h o o k e d c h a r i o t 6 s t o o d ,

U n s t a i n e d w i t h h o s t i l e b l o o d ;

T h e t r u m p e t s p a k e n o t t o t h e a r m e d t h r o n g ;

A n d k i n g s s a t s t i l l w i t h a w f u l e y e , 7

60 As if they surely knew their sovran Lord was by.

5

But peaceful was the night

Wherein the Prince of Light

His reign of peace upon the earth began.

The winds, with wonder whist, ⁰ *hushed*

65 Smoothly the waters kissed,

Whispering new joys to the mild Ocean,

Who now hath quite forgot to rave,

While birds of calm ⁸ sit brooding on the charmed wave.

6

The stars, with deep amaze, ⁰ *amazement*

70 Stand fixed in steadfast gaze,

Bending oneway their precious influence, ⁹

And will not take their flight,

For all the morning light,

Or Lucifer¹ that often warned them thence;

75 But in their glimmering orbs² did glow,

Until their Lord himself bespoke, and bid them go.

7

And, though the shady gloom

Had given day her room,

4. According to Ptolemaic astronomy, the heavens about the time of the winter solstice, and to calm only spheres revolving around Earth.

the waves during the incubation of their young.

5. Turtledove; an emblem of Venus, Roman god-

9. Medieval astrologers believed that stars emitted
dew of love and beauty, as the olive crown is an
an ethereal liquid (“influence”) that had the power
emblem of Peace. *Harbinger*: one who prepares the
to nourish or otherwise affect all things on Earth.
way, or makes an announcement.

1. Light-bearer (Latin); a name for the morning

6. War chariots were sometimes armed with
star and also for Satan.

sicklelike hooks projecting from the hubs of the

2. The concentric crystalline spheres of Ptolemaic
wheels.

astronomy; each sphere was supposed to contain

7. I.e., with a look full of awe and reverence.

one or more of the heavenly bodies in its surface

8. Halcyons, or kingfishers, which in ancient

and to revolve about Earth, creating beautiful

times were believed to build floating nests at sea

music.

ON THE MORNING OF CHRIST'S NATIVITY / 397

**The Sun himself withheld his wonted speed,
usual And hid his head for shame,**

As if his inferior flame as if

**The new-enlightened world no more should
need: He saw a greater Sun appear**

**Than his bright throne or burning axle-tree
could bear.**

85 The shepherds on the lawn, *0 meadow*

Or ere the point of dawn,

Sat simply chatting in a rustic row;

Full little thought they than *0 then*

That the mighty Pan *4*

90 Was kindly come to live with them below:

Perhaps their loves, or else their sheep,

Was all that did their silly *0* thoughts so busy keep
. simple 9

When such music sweet

Their hearts and ears did greet

95 As never was by mortal finger strook, *0 struck*

Divinely-warbled voice

Answering the stringed noise,

As all their souls in blissful rapture took:

The air, such pleasure loth to lose,

100 With thousand echoes still prolongs each he
avenly close. *0 cadence 10*

Nature, that hears such sound

Beneath the hollow round

Of Cynthia's seat *5* the airy region thrilling,

Now was almost won

105 To think her part was done,

And that her reign had here its last fulfilling:

She knew such harmony alone

Could hold all Heaven and Earth in happier u
nion.

ii

At last surrounds their sight

no A g l o b e of circular light,
T h a t w i t h l o n g b e a m s t h e s h a m e f a c e d N i g h
t arrayed; T h e h e l m e d c h e r u b i m
A n d s w o r d e d s e r a p h i m 6
A r e s e e n i n g l i t t e r i n g r a n k s w i t h w i n g s d i s p l a y e d ,
115 H a r p i n g l o u d a n d s o l e m n q u i r e , 0 *choir*
W i t h u n e x p r e s s i v e 0 n o t e s , t o H e a v e n ' s n e
w - b o r n H e i r . *inexpressible* 3. I.e., the sun's chariot. "Sun"
includes the famil-5. I.e., beneath the sphere of the moon.
iar *Son/sun* pun.

6. Seraphim and cherubim (both are plural forms)
4. The Greek god of shepherds, whose name
are the two highest of the nine orders of angels in
means "all," was often associated with Christ in
the medieval classification.

Renaissance poetry.

398

/ J O H N M I L T O N

S u c h m u s i c (a s ' t i s s a i d)
B e f o r e w a s n e v e r m a d e ,
B u t w h e n o f o l d t h e s o n s o f m o r n i n g s u n g , 7
120 W h i l e t h e C r e a t o r g r e a t
H i s c o n s t e l l a t i o n s s e t ,
A n d t h e w e l l - b a l a n c e d w o r l d o n h i n g e s 0 h u
n g , *the two poles* A n d c a s t t h e d a r k f o u n d a t i o n s d
e e p ,
A n d b i d t h e w e l t e r i n g w a v e s t h e i r o o z y c h a n n e
l k e e p .

13

125 R i n g o u t ? y e c r y s t a l s p h e r e s , 8

O n c e b l e s s o u r h u m a n e a r s ,
I f y e h a v e p o w e r t o t o u c h o u r s e n s e s s o ;
A n d l e t y o u r s i l v e r c h i m e
M o v e i n m e l o d i o u s t i m e ;
130 A n d l e t t h e b a s s o f h e a v e n ' s d e e p o r g a n b l o
w ; A n d w i t h y o u r n i n e f o l d h a r m o n y
M a k e u p f u l l c o n s o r t t o t h ' a n g e l i c s y m p h o n
y . a c c o r d ; m a t e 14
F o r , i f s u c h h o l y s o n g
E n w r a p o u r f a n c y l o n g ,
135 T i m e w i l l r u n b a c k a n d f e t c h t h e a g e o f
g o l d ; 9
A n d s p e c k l e d v a n i t y
W i l l s i c k e n s o o n a n d d i e ;
A n d l e p r o u s s i n w i l l m e l t f r o m e a r t h l y m o l d ; 1
A n d H e l l i t s e l f w i l l p a s s a w a y ,
140 A n d l e a v e h e r d o l o r o u s m a n s i o n s t o t h e p e
e r i n g d a y .
15
Y e a , T r u t h a n d J u s t i c e t h e n
W i l l d o w n r e t u r n t o m e n ,
O r b e d i n a r a i n b o w ; a n d , l i k e g l o r i e s w e a r i n g ,
similar **M e r c y w i l l s i t b e t w e e n ,**
145 T h r o n e d i n c e l e s t i a l s h e e n , 2
W i t h r a d i a n t f e e t t h e t i s s u e d 3 c l o u d s d o w n
s t e e r i n g ; A n d H e a v e n , a s a t s o m e f e s t i v a l ,
W i l l o p e n w i d e t h e g a t e s o f h e r h i g h p a l a c e
- h a l l .

7. Job speaks of the creation of the universe as the
 by Virgil (*Eclogues* 4) in a passage many Christians

time “when the morning stars sang together, and read as an allegorical prophecy of Christ’s birth all the sons of God shouted for joy” (Job 38.7).
from the Virgin Mary.

8. A reference to the Pythagorean idea that the

1. I.e., Earth; also, mortal humans. *Leprous sin*: music of the spheres would be audible only to sin-
1.e., sin that is like the loathsome disease leprosy.
less humans (see note 2 above).

2. This allegorical scene recalls Psalm 85.10—11

9. According to Roman mythology, Saturn, after (“Mercy and Truth are met together; righteousness his dethronement by Jupiter, fled to Italy and there and peace have kissed each other”), which was part brought in the Golden Age, a time of perfect peace of the Christmas liturgy. Milton may also allude to and happiness. The idea of a “return” to the depictions of the “four daughters of God” (among Golden Age, here and in line 142, alludes to the whom was Peace, who descends in lines 45—52) in myth of Astraea, goddess of justice, who fled morality plays, paintings, and masques.

“unjust” Earth but came back as a virgin celebrated

3. I.e., like a cloth woven with silver and gold.

ON THE MORNING OF CHRIST’S NATIVITY / 399

B u t w i s e s t F a t e s a y s n o ,

150 T h i s m u s t n o t y e t b e s o ;

The Babelies yet in smiling infancy

That on the bitter cross

Must redeem our loss,

So both himself and us to glorify:

155 Yet first, to those chained in sleep, 4

**The wakeful trumpet of doom must thunder
through *awakening* the deep,**

***7**

With such a horrid clang

As on Mount Sinai rang, 5

**While the red fire and smoldering clouds
outbrake: 160 The aged Earth, aghast,**

With terror of that blast,

**Shall from the surface to the center shake, W
hen, at the world's last session,**

**The dreadful Judge in middle air shall spread
his throne.**

18

165 And then at last our bliss

Full and perfect is,

But now begins; for from this happy day

The 'old Dragon 0 underground, *Satan*

In straiter limits bound,

170 Not half so far casts his usurped sway,

And, wroth to see his kingdom fail,

Swinges 0 the scaly horror of his folded tail. *lashes*

***9**

The Oracles are dumb; 6

No voice or hideous hum

**175 R u n s t h r o u g h t h e a r c h e d r o o f i n w o r d s d e
c e i v i n g .**

A p o l l o f r o m h i s s h r i n e

C a n n o m o r e d i v i n e ,

**W i t h h o l l o w s h r i e k t h e s t e e p o f D e l p h o s
l e a v i n g .**

N o n i g h t l y t r a n c e , o r b r e a t h e d s p e l l ,

**i s o I n s p i r e s t h e p a l e - e y e d p r i e s t f r o m t h e p r o p h e t i c
c e l l .**

20

T h e l o n e l y m o u n t a i n s o ' e r ,

A n d t h e r e s o u n d i n g s h o r e ,

A v o i c e o f w e e p i n g h e a r d a n d l o u d l a m e n t ;

F r o m h a u n t e d s p r i n g , a n d d a l e

185 E d g e d w i t h p o p l a r p a l e ,

4. I.e., death. *Ychained*: an archaic form recalling

... and the voice of the trumpet exceeding loud”

Chaucer and Spenser. Lines 155—64 allude to the

(Exodus 19.16).

Apocalypse as described in Revelation.

6. According to one ancient belief, pagan oracles

5. Moses received the Ten C o m m a n d m e n t s on

ended with Christ's birth; according to another,

Mount Sinai: “there were thunders and lightnings

the pagan gods became fallen angels.

4 0 0 / J O H N M I L T O N

T h e p a r t i n g g e n i u s 0 i s w i t h s i g h i n g s e n t ;

local spirit **W i t h f l o w e r - i n w o v e n t r e s s e s t o r n**

**T h e N y m p h s 7 i n t w i l i g h t s h a d e o f t a n g l e d t h
i c k e t s m o u r n .**

21

Inconsecratedearth,

190 Andontheholyhearth,

TheLarsandLemures8moanwithmidnight
plaint;Inurnsandaltarsround,

Adrearandyingsound

Affrightstheflamens0attheirservicequaint;
0priests / elaborate 195 Andthechillmarbleseems
tosweat,

Whileeachpeculiarpowerforgoeshiswont
ed0seat. usual 22

Peor9andBaalim

Forsaketheirtemplesdim,

Withthatwice-batteredGodofPalestine;
1

200 AndmoonedaShtaroth, 2

Heaven'squeenandmotherboth,

Nowsitsnotgirt0withtapers'0hollyshine:
encircled / candles'

TheLibycHammon3shrinkshishorn;

InvaintheTyrianmaidstheirwoundedTha
mmuzmourn. 4

23

205 AndsullenMoloch, 5 fled,

Hathleftinshadowsdread

Hisburningidolallofblackesthue;

Invainwithcymbals'ring

Theycallthegrislyking,

210 Indismaldanceaboutthefurnaceblue;T
hebrutishgodsofNileasfast,

Isis, and Orus, and the dog Anubis, haste. 6

24

Nor is Osiris seen

In Memphis a grove or green,

215 Trampling the unshowered grass
7 with low wings loud; Nor can he be at rest

Within his sacred chest;

Nought but profoundest Hell can be his shroud; 7. Mythological female spirits inhabiting a particular place, object, or natural phenomenon.

ular place, object, or natural phenomenon.

4. The death of the god Thammuz, Ashtaroth's

8. Hostile spirits of the unburied dead. *Lars*: tutelary gods or spirits of the ancient Romans, associated with particular places.

annual ceremony.

9. Baal, or Baal-Peor, the highest Canaanite god,

5. A Phoenician fire god to whom children were sacrificed. Their cries were drowned out by the form) were lesser gods related to him.

clang of cymbals.

1. Dagon, god of the Philistines, whose statue

6. The Egyptian goddess Isis was represented as a twice fell to the ground before the ark of the Lord
cow, the gods Orus and Anubis as a hawk and a
(1 Samuel 5.1-4).

dog (hence “brutish”). Osiris (line 213) the creator,

2. Astarte, a Phoenician fertility goddess identified with the moon, who had a shrine at Memphis, was represented as

a bull. *As fast*: i.e., hasten away as fast as Moloch

3. The Egyptian god Ammon, represented as a

horned ram. He had a famous temple and oracle

7. I.e., the rainless Egyptian landscape.

O N S H A K E S P E A R E / 4 0 1

In vain, with timbrelled anthems dark, *tambourine-backed*

220 The sable-stoled sorcerers bear his worshipped ark.

25

He feels from Juda’s land

The dreaded Infant’s hand;8

The rays of Bethlehem blind his dusky eyn;°

eyes

Nor all the gods beside

225 Longer dare abide,

Not Typhon9 huge ending in snaky twine:

Our Babe, to show his Godhead true,

Can in his swaddling0 bands control the damned crew

binding

26

So, when the sun in bed,

230 Curtained with cloudy red,

Pillows his chin upon an orient0 wave, *Eastern; bright*

The flocking shadows pale

Troop to th' infernal¹ jail;
Each fettered ghost slips to his several⁰ grave, *separate*
235 And the yellow-skirted fays⁰ *fairies*
Fly after the night-steeds, leaving their moon-loved maze.²
27

But see! the Virgin blest
Hath laid her Babe to rest.
Time is our tedious song should here have ending:
240 Heaven's youngest-teemed star³
Hath fixed her polished car,
Her sleeping Lord with handmaid lamp attending;
And all about the courtly stable
Bright-harnessed⁴ angels sit in order serviceable.

1 6 2 9 1 6 4 5

On Shakespeare⁵

What needs my Shakespeare for his honored bones
The labor of an age in piled stones?
Or that his hallowed reliques should be hid
Under a star-ypointing⁶ pyramid?

5 Dear son of Memory,⁷ great heir of Fame,

8. I.e., the hand of Christ, who was descended

4. I.e., clad in bright armor. *Courtly*: i.e., because
from the tribe of Judah. Perhaps an allusion to
it houses Christ, the king.

Matthew 2.6, referring to Micah 5.2, on the power

5. Milton's first published poem, printed in the
resident in Bethlehem, in the land of Judah.

Second Folio of Shakespeare's plays (1632) as "An

9. In Greek mythology, a hundred-headed monster destroyed by Zeus.
Epitaph on the Admirable Dramatic Poet W.

Shakespear.”

1. Of the realm of the dead; i.e., hell(ish).

6. An archaic form recalling Chaucer and Spenser.

2. Labyrinth, i.e., the woods where the fairies dance.

7. In Greek mythology, Memory (Mnemosyne)

3. I.e., newest-born star, the star that guided the
was the mother of the Muses, the nine sister goddesses believed to be sources of inspiration for the
or chariot over the manger.

arts.

402 / JOHN MILTON

**What need'st thou such weak witness of thy
name?**

Thou in our wonder and astonishment

Hast built thyself a live long monument.

**For whilst, to th' shame of slow-endavoring
art,**

**10 Thy easynumbers flow, and that each
heart *verses* Hath from the leaves of thy unvalued
book *invaluable* Those Delphic lines with
h deep impression took, Then thou, our fancy
y of itself bereaving,**

**Dost make us marble with too much conceiving,
15 And so sepulchred in such pomp dost**

t lie

T h a t k i n g s f o r s u c h a t o m b w o u l d w i s h t o d i e .

1 6 3 0 1 6 4 5

L'Allegro⁵

H e n c e l o a t h e d M e l a n c h o l y ¹

O f C e r b e r u s ² a n d b l a c k e s t m i d n i g h t b o r n ,

I n S t y g i a n ³ c a v e f o r l o r n

M o n g s t h o r r i d s h a p e s , a n d s h r i e k s , a n d s i g h t s u n h o l y
F i n d o u t s o m e u n c o u t h ⁴ c e l l ,

W h e r e b r o o d i n g D a r k n e s s s p r e a d s h i s j e a l o u s w i n g s ,
A n d t h e n i g h t - r a v e n s i n g s ;

T h e r e u n d e r e b o n ⁰ s h a d e s , a n d l o w - b r o w e d r o c k s ,
black

A s r a g g e d a s t h y l o c k s ,

I n d a r k C i m m e r i a n ⁵ d e s e r t e v e r d w e l l .

B u t c o m e t h o u g o d d e s s f a i r a n d f r e e ,

I n H e a v e n y c l e p t ⁰ E u p h r o s y n e , ⁶
called

A n d b y m e n , h e a r t - e a s i n g M i r t h ,

W h o m l o v e l y V e n u s ⁰ a t a b i r t h

goddess of love and beauty

W i t h t w o s i s t e r G r a c e s ⁰ m o r e

Aglaia and Thalia

T o i v y - c r o w n e d B a c c h u s ⁰ b o r e ;

god of wine

O r w h e t h e r (a s s o m e s a g e r s i n g) ⁷

T h e f r o l i c w i n d t h a t b r e a t h e s t h e s p r i n g ,

Z e p h y r w i t h A u r o r a p l a y i n g ,

A s h e m e t h e r o n c e a - M a y i n g ,

T h e r e o n b e d s o f v i o l e t s b l u e ,
A n d f r e s h - b l o w n o r o s e s w a s h e d i n d e w ,
newly bloomed

Filled h e r w i t h t h e e a d a u g h t e r f a i r ,
S o b u x o m , o b l i t h e , a n d d e b o n a i r . o
merry / pleasant

8. Pertaining to Apollo, god of poetry, who had an
guarded the gates of hell.

oracle at Delphi.

3. Pertaining to the Styx, one of the rivers of the

9. “L’Allegro” (Italian, “the happy man”) is a com-
classical underworld.

panion poem to “II Penseroso” (“the pensive

4. Unknown and dreadful.

man”). Probably written late in Milton’s years at

5. According to Homer’s *Odyssey*, the Cimmerians
Cambridge, the poems influenced many later poets
lived in a mysterious land somewhere across the
and were illustrated by William Blake (1757—
ocean, where the sun never shone.

1827).

6. One of the three Graces, Greek sister goddesses

1. Thought to arise from an excess of black bile,
believed to bring joy to humans. Her name means
melancholy was a physiological condition that
“mirth.”

could lead to depression and madness. *Hence*: a

7. The following mythical account of Euphros-

command to depart.

yne's birth seems to be Milton's invention. Zephyr

2. In Greek mythology, the three-headed dog that is the west wind; Aurora, the dawn.

L ' A L L E G R O / 4 0 3

H a s t e t h e e n y m p h , 0 a n d b r i n g w i t h t h e e
nature goddess

J e s t a n d y o u t h f u l J o l l i t y ,

Q u i p s a n d C r a n k s , 0 a n d w a n t o n W i l e s ,
jests

N o d s , a n d B e c k s , 0 a n d w r e a t h e d S m i l e s ,
beckonings

S u c h a s h a n g o n H e b e ' s 8 c h e e k ,

A n d l o v e t o l i v e i n d i m p l e s l e e k ;

S p o r t t h a t w r i n k l e d C a r e d e r i d e s ,

A n d L a u g h t e r , h o l d i n g b o t h h i s s i d e s .

C o m e , a n d t r i p 0 i t a s y e g o

dance

O n t h e l i g h t f a n t a s t i c t o e ,

A n d i n t h y r i g h t h a n d l e a d w i t h t h e e ,

T h e m o u n t a i n n y m p h , s w e e t L i b e r t y ;

A n d i f I g i v e t h e e h o n o r d u e ,

M i r t h , a d m i t m e o f t h y c r e w

T o l i v e w i t h h e r a n d l i v e w i t h t h e e ,

I n u n r e p r o v e d 0 p l e a s u r e s f r e e ;

unblamed

T o h e a r t h e l a r k 9 b e g i n h i s f l i g h t ,

A n d , s i n g i n g , s t a r t l e t h e d u l l n i g h t ,

F r o m h i s w a t c h - t o w e r i n t h e s k i e s ,

T i l l t h e d a p p l e d d a w n d o t h r i s e ;

T h e n t o c o m e i n s p i t e o f s o r r o w ,

contempt

A n d a t m y w i n d o w b i d g o o d m o r r o w ,

T h r o u g h t h e s w e e t b r i a r , o r t h e v i n e ,

O r t h e t w i s t e d e g l a n t i n e . 1

W h i l e t h e c o c k w i t h l i v e l y d i n ,

S c a t t e r s t h e r e a r o f d a r k n e s s t h i n ,

A n d t o t h e s t a c k , o r t h e b a r n d o o r ,

S t o u t l y s t r u t s h i s d a m e s b e f o r e ;

O f t l i s t e n i n g h o w t h e h o u n d s a n d h o r n

C h e e r l y r o u s e t h e s l u m b e r i n g m o r n ,

F r o m t h e s i d e o f s o m e h o a r 2 h i l l ,

T h r o u g h t h e h i g h w o o d e c h o i n g s h r i l l .

S o m e t i m e w a l k i n g n o t u n s e e n

B y h e d g e r o w e l m s , o n h i l l o c k s g r e e n ,

R i g h t a g a i n s t t h e e a s t e r n g a t e ,

W h e r e t h e g r e a t s u n b e g i n s h i s s t a t e , 0

progress

R o b e d i n f l a m e s , a n d a m b e r l i g h t ,

T h e c l o u d s i n t h o u s a n d l i v e r i e s d i g h t ; 0

dressed

W h i l e t h e p l o w m a n n e a r a t h a n d ,

W h i s t l e s o ' e r t h e f u r r o w e d l a n d ,

A n d t h e m i l k m a i d s i n g e t h b l i t h e ,

A n d t h e m o w e r w h e t s h i s s c y t h e ,

A n d e v e r y s h e p h e r d t e l l s h i s t a l e ,

U n d e r t h e h a w t h o r n i n t h e d a l e .

S t r a i g h t m i n e e y e h a t h c a u g h t n e w p l e a s u r e s

W h i l s t t h e l a n d s c a p e r o u n d i t m e a s u r e s ,

R u s s e t 0 l a w n s a n d f a l l o w s 0 g r a y ,

reddish brown / plowed land

W h e r e t h e n i b b l i n g f l o c k s d o s t r a y ,

M o u n t a i n s o n w h o s e b a r r e n b r e a s t

8. Zeus's cupbearer and goddess of youth. honeysuckle.

9. Larks sing at sunrise. 2. Grayish white, perhaps because of a morning

1. The sweetbriar, possibly used here to mean the frost.

4 0 4 / J O H N M I L T O N

T h e l a b o r i n g c l o u d s d o o f t e n r e s t ;

75 M e a d o w s t r i m w i t h d a i s i e s p i e d , 0 v a r i e g a t e d

S h a l l o w b r o o k s , a n d r i v e r s w i d e .

T o w e r s a n d b a t t l e m e n t s i t s e e s

B o s o m e d h i g h i n t u f t e d t r e e s ,

W h e r e p e r h a p s s o m e b e a u t y l i e s ,

so **T h e c y n o s u r e 3 o f n e i g h b o r i n g e y e s .**

H a r d b y , a c o t t a g e c h i m n e y s m o k e s ,

F r o m b e t w i x t t w o a g e d o a k s ,

W h e r e C o r y d o n a n d T h y r s i s 4 m e t ,

A r e a t t h e i r s a v o r y d i n n e r s e t

85 O f h e r b s , a n d o t h e r c o u n t r y m e s s e s , 0

dishes **W h i c h t h e n e a t - h a n d e d 0 P h y l l i s d r e s s e s ; 0 d e x t e r o u s / - p r e p a r e s** **A n d t h e n i n h a s t e h e r b o w e r s h e l e a v e s ,**

W i t h T h e s t y l i s t o b i n d t h e s h e a v e s ;

O r i f t h e e a r l i e r s e a s o n l e a d

90 T o t h e t a n n e d h a y c o c k i n t h e m e a d . 5

Sometimes with secure delight *carefree* The
upland hamlets will invite,

When the merry bells ring round

And the jocund rebekes sound *merry*

95 To many a youth and many a maid,

Dancing in the checkered shade;

And young and old come forth to play

On a sunshine holiday,

Till the live long daylight fail;

100 Then to the spicy nut-brown ale,

With stories told of many a feat,

How fairy Mab the junkets eat;⁷

She was pinched and pulled, she said,

And he, by Friar's lantern⁸ led,

105 Tells how the drudging goblin sweat

To earn his cream-bowl, duly set,

When in one night, ere glimpse of morn,

His shadowy flail hath threshed the corn

That ten day-laborers could not end;

110 Then lies him down the lubber⁹ fiend, *loutish*

And, stretched out all the chimney's length
h, *fireplace's* Basks at the fire his hairy strength;

And crop-full out of doors he flings

Ere the first cock his matins rings. *morning*

115 Thus done the tales, to bed they creep,

By whispering winds soon lulled asleep.

Towered cities please us then,

And the busy hum of men,

3. The North Star, or anything that attracts atten-

rustic lore.

tion.

8. The will-o'-the-wisp, which was said to draw

4. Conventional male names in pastoral poetry, travelers astray by holding a false light before them; like Thestylis (line 88); Phyllis (line 86) is a conventional female pastoral name.

the combustion of marsh gas.

5. I.e., the sun-dried, conical heap of hay in the

9. A hobgoblin, also known as Robin Goodfellow field.

or Puck, was a small supernatural creature popular

6. Small, three-stringed fiddles.

in northern-European folk traditions. He is an

7. I.e., Mab, queen of the fairies, ate the delicacies important character in Shakespeare's *A Midsummer Night's Dream*, a play that "L'Allegro" frequently echoes.

I L P E N S E R O S O / 4 0 5

W h e r e throngs of knights and barons bold,

In weeds⁰ of p e a c e high triumphs⁰ hold,

garments / pageants

With store⁰ of ladies, whose bright eyes

plenty

Rain influence,¹ and j u d g e the prize

Of wit, or arms, while both contend
To win her grace, w h o m a l l c o m m e n d .
There let H y m e n 0 oft appear
god of marriage
In saffron0 robe, with taper0 clear,
orange-yellow / torch
And p o m p , and feast, and revelry,
With m a s q u e , and antique2 pageantry;
S u c h sights as youthful poets d r e a m
On s u m m e r eves by h a u n t e d stream.
T h e n to the well-trod stage anon,
If Jonson's learned sock3 be on,
Or sweetest S h a k e s p e a r e , fancy's child,
Warble his native wood-notes wild.
And ever against eating cares
L a p me in soft Lydian airs4
Married to immortal verse
S u c h as the meeting soul may pierce
In notes, with m a n y a winding bout0
Of linked sweetness long drawn out,
With wanton heed, and giddy cunning,
T h e melting voice through mazes running;
Untwisting all the chains that tie
T h e hidden soul of harmony;
T h a t O r p h e u s ' self5 may heave his head
F r o m golden slumber on a bed
Of h e a p e d Elysian0 flowers, and hear
glorious

**S u c h strains as would have won the ear
Of Pluto, to have quite set free
His half-regained Eurydice.**

**T h e s e delights if thou canst give,
Mirth, with thee I m e a n to live.⁶**

ca. 1 6 3 1

1 6 4 5

II Penseroso⁷

**H e n c e 8 vain deluding Joys,
T h e brood of Folly without father bred.**

1. The ladies' eyes are compared to stars, alluding mythology, whose wife, Eurydice, died on their wedding day. He won permission from Pluto, god of the underworld, to lead her back to the land of affect human lives.

the living, but only on the condition that he not

2. Ancient; also, antic. *Masque*: an elaborate form of court entertainment, in which aristocrats persist a backward glance, he lost her forever.

formed in a dignified play, usually allegorical and

6. Lines 151—52 echo Christopher Marlowe, "The mythological, that ended in a formal dance.

Passionate Shepherd to His Love," lines 23—24

3. The light shoe worn by Greek comic actors, (see p. 256).

here standing for the comedies of Ben Jonson

7. See "L'Allegro," note 9 (p. 402). Here, the Pen-
(1572-1637).

sive Man celebrates a melancholy that produces

4. Lydian music was noted for its voluptuous
not depression and madness but the scholarly tem-
sweetness.

perament, ruled by the Roman god Saturn.

5. The great poet and musician of classical

8. A command to depart.

406 / JOHN MILTON

H o w little you bestead,0 *profit*

Or fill the fixed mind with all your toys;0 *trifles*

Dwell in s o m e idle brain,

And fancies fond0 with gaudy shapes p o s s e s s , *foolish*

As thick and n u m b e r l e s s

As the gay m o t e s 0 that people the s u n b e a m s ,

Or likest hovering dreams,

T h e fickle pensioners0 of Morpheus'9 train.

attendants

But hail thou G o d d e s s , sage and holy,

Hail, divinest Melancholy,

W h o s e saintly visage is too bright

To hit0 the sense of h u m a n sight;

affect

And therefore to our weaker view,

O'erlaid with black, staid W i s d o m ' s hue.

Black, but such as in esteem,

Prince Memnon's sister¹ might besee me,
Or that starred Ethiop queen² that strove
To set her beauty's praise above
The sea nymphs, and their powers offended.
Yet thou art higher far descended;
Thee bright-haired Vesta long of yore
To solitary Saturn bore;³
His daughter she (in Saturn's reign
Such mixture was not held a stain).
Of t in glimmering bowers and glades
He met her, and in secret shades
Of woody Ida's inmost grove,
While yet there was no fear of Jove.⁴
Come pensive nun, devout and pure,
Sober, steadfast, and demure,
All in a robe of darkest grain,⁰
color
Flowing with majestic train,
And sable⁰ stole of cypress lawn⁵
black
Over thy decent shoulders drawn.
Come, but keep thy wonted⁰ state, *usual; wanted*
With even step and musing gait,
And looks commencing with the skies,
Thy rapt soul sitting in thine eyes:
There held in holy passion still,
Forget thyself to marble, till
With a sad⁰ leaden downward cast, *serious*

**T h o u fix them on the earth as fast.
And join with thee c a l m P e a c e and Q u i e t ,
S p a r e Fast, that oft with gods doth diet,
And hears the M u s e s 6 in a ring**

9. Greek god of sleep.

ciated with melancholy because of the supposedly

1. Memnon, an Ethiopian prince, was called the
“saturnine” influence of the planet that bears his
handsomest of men (Homer’s *Odyssey*, book 11).

name. His daughter Vesta was the goddess of
His sister was Hemera, whose name means “day.”
purity.

2. Cassiopeia, who boasted that her beauty (or her

4. The most powerful god of Roman mythology.
daughter’s, in some accounts) surpassed that of the

5. A gauzy, crepelike material, usually dyed black
daughters of the sea god Nereus. “Starred” refers
and used for mourning garments; *cypress*: Cyprus,
to the fact that a constellation bears her name.

where the material was originally made.

3. The parentage here attributed to Melancholy is

6. The nine sister goddesses believed to be sources
Milton’s invention. Saturn, who ruled on Mt. Ida
of inspiration for the arts; at the foot of Mt. Heli-
before being overthrown by his son Jove, was asso-
con, they danced about the altar of Jove.

I L P E N S E R O S O / 4 0 7

Aye^o round about Jove’s altar sing. *continually*

And add to these retired Leisure,
50 T h a t in trim gardens takes his pleasure;
But first, and chiefest, with thee bring,
H i m that yon soars on golden wing,
G u i d i n g the fiery-wheeled throne,
T h e c h e r u b Contemplation;⁷
55 An d the m u t e Silenc e hist^o alon g *beckon*
'Less Philomel⁸ will deign a song,
In her sweetest, saddest plight,
S m o o t h i n g the rugged brow of night,
While Cynthia⁹ checks her dragon yoke
60 Gently o'er th' a c c u s t o m e d oak;
Sweet bird that shunn'st the noise of folly,
M o s t musical, most melancholy!
T h e e chantress oft the woods a m o n g ,
I woo to hear thy evensong;¹
65 And missing thee, I walk u n s e e n
On the dry smooth-shaven green,
To behold the wandering m o o n ,
Riding near her highest noon,
Like one that had been led astray
70 T h r o u g h the Heaven's wide pathless way;
And oft as if her head she bowed,
S t o o p i n g through a fleecy cloud.
Oft on a plat^o of rising ground, *plot*
I hear the far-off curfew sound,²
75 Over s o m e wide-watered shore,
Swinging slow with sullen roar;

**Or if the air will not permit,
 S o m e still removed place will fit,
 W h e r e glowing e m b e r s through the room
 so T e a c h light to counterfeit a gloom
 Far from all resort of mirth,
 Save the cricket on the hearth,
 Or the bellman's⁰ drowsy charm, *night watchman's*
 To bless the doors from nightly harm;
 85 Or let my lamp at midnight hour
 Be seen in s o m e high lonely tower,
 W h e r e I may oft outwatch the Bear,³
 With thrice great H e r m e s , or unsphere⁴**

7. A reference to the vision of the four cherubim
 tered monks and nuns (here, a "chantress"). Cf.
 (a high order of angels) stationed beside four
 "L' Allegro," line 114, where a cock announces
 wheels of fire under the throne of the Lord (Ezekiel
 "matins," the morning liturgy.

1 and 10).

2. The customary ringing of a bell at a fixed hour

8. I.e., or else Philomel will condescend to sing a
 in the evening.

song. Philomel, the nightingale, who sings a

3. The Great Bear, or Big Dipper, which in north-
 mournful song in the springtime: according to
 ern latitudes never sets.

Ovid's version of this popular myth, Philomela was

4. To call Plato back, by magic, from whatever

raped by her brother-in-law, Tereus, who then tore
sphere of the universe he inhabits now, or, in prac-
out her tongue so that she could not speak. She
tical terms, to read his books. “Thrice great Her-
wove the story in a tapestry and sent it to her sister,
mes” refers to an ancient Egyptian philosopher
who rescued her. She was later changed into a
(Hermes Trismegistus) often identified with
nightingale while in flight from Tereus.

Thoth, Egyptian god of wisdom, and alleged to
9. Goddess of the moon, sometimes represented
have written many books on astrological, alchem-
as driving a team of dragons.
ical, and other subjects.

1. The evening liturgy traditionally sung by clois-

4 0 8 / J O H N M I L T O N

T h e spirit of Plato to unfold

90 W h a t worlds, or what vast regions hold

T h e immortal mind that hath forsook

H e r m a n s i o n in this fleshly nook;

And of those d e m o n s 5 that are f o u n d

In fire, air, flood, or underground,

95 W h o s e power hath a true consent 0 *correspondence*

With planet, or with element.

S o m e time let gorgeous Tragedy

In scepter'd 0 palP c o m e sweeping by, *royal / robe*

Presenting T h e b e s , or Pelops' line,

100 Or the tale of Troy divine.6

Or what (though rare) of later age
 E n n o b l e d hath the buskined stage.⁷
 But, O sad virgin, that thy power
 Might raise M u s a e u s ⁸ from his bower,
 io5 Or bid the soul of O r p h e u s sing
 S u c h notes as, warbled to the string,
 Drew iron tears down Pluto's cheek,
 And m a d e Hell grant what Love did seek.
 Or call up him⁹ that left half told
 110 T h e story of C a m b u s c a n bold,
 Of C a m b a l l , and of Algarsife,
 And who h a d C a n a c e e to wife,
 T h a t owned the virtuous⁰ ring and glass,⁰ *potent / mirror*
 And of the w o n d r o u s horse of brass,
 115 On which the Tartar king did ride;
 And if aught else great bards beside
 In sage and solemn tunes have sung,
 Of tourneys and of trophies hung,
 Of forests and e n c h a n t m e n t s drear,
 120 W h e r e m o r e i s m e a n t than meet s the ear.
 T h u s , Night, oft see me in thy pale career,
 Till civil-suited morn¹ appear,
 N o t tricked⁰ a n d f r o u n c e d ⁰ as she was *adorned /*
curled W O n t , ° *accustomed to be*
 With the Attic boy to hunt,
 125 But kerchiefed in a comely cloudly
 While rocking winds are piping loud,
 Or ushered with a shower still,⁰ *gentle; yet*

W h e n the gust hath blown his fill,

E n d i n g on the rustling leaves,

130 With minute-drops from off the eaves.

5. Supernatural beings inhabiting each of the four

9. Chaucer, whose “Squire’s Tale” leaves unfinished the story of the Tartar king Cambuscan, his “elements”: fire, air, water, and earth.

ished the story of the Tartar king Cambuscan, his

6. The city of Thebes, the descendants of Pelops, two sons, Camball and Algarsife, and his daughter,

and the Trojan War afforded the subjects of most

Canacee. At a banquet celebrating Cambuscan’s

Greek tragedies.

reign, a mysterious guest offered several magical

7. The buskin was the high boot worn by Greek gifts to the king.

tragic actors.

1. Aurora, goddess of the dawn, soberly dressed

8. A legendary Greek poet, contemporary of (“civil-suited”); she loved Cephalus (“the Attic Orpheus (line 105); for the story of Orpheus, see boy,” line 124).

“L’Allegro,” note 5 (p. 405).

I L P E N S E R O S O / 4 0 9

And when the sun begins to fling

His flaring beams, me, Goddess, bring

To arched walks of twilight groves,

And shadows brown that Sylvan loves

Of pine or monument oak,

W h e r e the rude ax with heaved stroke,
W a s never heard the nymphs³ to daunt,
Or fright them from their hallowed haunt.

There in close covert⁰ by s o m e brook, *hidden place*
140

W h e r e no profaner eye m a y look,
Hide me f r o m day's garish eye,
While the b e e with honeyed thigh,
That at her flowery work doth sing,
And the waters m u r m u r i n g

145

With such consort⁰ as they keep, *harmony*
Entice the dewy-feathered sleep;
And let s o m e strange mysterious dream,
Wave at his wings in airy stream,
Of lively portraiture displayed,

150

Softly on my eyelids laid.

And as I wake, sweet m u s i c breathe
Above, about, or underneath,
Sent by s o m e spirit to mortals good,
Or th' unseen genius⁰ of the wood. *indwelling spirit*

155

But let my due feet never fail

To walk the studious cloister's pale,⁰ *enclosure*

And love the high e m b o w e d roof,

With antic^o pillars m a s s y proof, *fancifully decorated;*
antique And storied windows⁴ richly dight,⁰ *dressed*

160

C a s t i n g a dim religious light.
There let the pealing organ blow,
To the full-voiced choir below,
In service high, and a n t h e m s clear,
As may with sweetness, through mine ear,

165

Dissolve me into ecstasies,
And bring all heaven before mine eyes.
And may at last my weary age
Find out the p e a c e f u l hermitage,
T h e hairy gown and m o s s y cell,

170

W h e r e I m a y sit and rightly spell⁰ *speculate*
Of every star that Heaven doth show,
A n d every herb that sips the dew
Till old experience do attain
To s o m e t h i n g like prophetic strain.

175

T h e s e pleasures, Melancholy, give,
And I with thee will choose to live.⁵

ca. 1 6 3 1

2. Sylvanus, Roman god of forests.

ries. *Massy proof*: massive solidity.

3. Mythological female spirits inhabiting a partic-

5. Cf. "L' Allegro," lines 151-52 and note 6

ular place, object, or natural phenomenon.

(p. 405).

4. Stained-glass windows depicting biblical sto-

410 / JOHN MILTON

How Soon Hath Time⁶

H o w soon hath T i m e , the subtle thief of youth,

Stoln on his wing my three and twentieth year!

My hasting days fly on with full career,

But my late spring no b u d or b l o s s o m shew'th.⁰

showeth

P e r h a p s my s e m b l a n c e ⁰ might deceive the truth,

appearance **T h a t I to m a n h o o d am arrived so near,**

And inward ripeness doth m u c h less appear,

T h a t s o m e more timely-happy spirits endu'th.⁰

endoweth

Yet be it^o less or more, or soon or slow, *inner "ripeness"*

It shall be still in strictest m e a s u r e even⁰ *equal;*

adequate **To that s a m e lot, however m e a n or high,**

Toward which T i m e leads me, and the will of Heaven;

All is, if I have grace to use it so,

As ever in my great Taskmaster's eye.⁷

1631

1645

Lycidas

In This Monody the Author Bemoans a Learned Friend,⁸

Unfortunately

Drowned in His Passage from Chester on the Irish Seas, 1637.

And by

Occasion Foretells the Ruin of Our Corrupted Clergy, Then in

Their

Height.

Yet once more, O ye laurels⁹ and once more

Ye myrtles brown,0 with ivy never sere,0

dark / withered

I c o m e to pluck your berries harsh and crude,0

unripe

And with forced fingers rude,0

unskilled

Shatter your leaves before the mellowing year.

Bitter constraint, and sad occasion dear,0

heartfelt, dire

C o m p e l s me to disturb your season due;

For Lycidas is dead, dead ere his prime,

Y o u n g Lycidas, and hath not left his peer.

W h o would not sing for Lycidas? He knew

H i m s e l f to sing, and build the lofty rhyme.

He m u s t not float upon his watery bier¹

Unwept, and welter⁰ to the parching wind,

roll about

Without the m e e d ⁰ of s o m e melodious tear.⁰

tribute / elegy

Begin then, sisters of the sacred well

6. Milton's twenty-third birthday was on December 9, 1631. He enclosed a copy of this poem in a letter to a friend who, according to Milton, had published with some elegies by King's friends at Cambridge in 1638 after King's ship mysteriously foundered on a clear day in August 1637. His body

arms of a studious retirement.”

was not recovered. Milton added this headnote

7. The metaphor of God as Taskmaster alludes to when he published the elegy in his 1645 *Poems*.

two parables in which God appears to be harsh to *Monody*: an elegy or dirge sung by a single voice.

his servants: the parable of the talents (Matthew

9. Laurel, myrtle, and ivy were all traditional

25.14—30) and the parable of the vineyard (Mat-

materials for garlands bestowed on poets.

thew 20.1-10).

1. A stand on which a corpse is carried to the

8. Edward King, a young scholar, poet, and clergy-grave.

man at Cambridge with Milton. This poem, which

LYCIDAS / 411

That from beneath the seat of Jove doth spring,

Begin, and somewhat loudly sweep the string.²

Hence with denial vain, and coy excuse;

So may some gentle⁰ Muse^o kindly /poet

20 With lucky words favor my destined urn,³

And as he passes turn,

And bid fair peace be to my sable⁰ shroud. *black*

For we were nursed upon the selfsame hill,

Fed the same flock, by fountain, shade, and rill.^o *brook*

25 Together both, ere the high lawns⁰ appeared *pastures*

Under the opening eyelids of the morn,

We drove afield, and both together heard

What time the grayfly winds her sultry horn,⁴
Battening⁰ our flocks with the fresh dews of night, *fattening*
30 Oft till the star that rose at evening bright⁵
Toward Heaven's descent had sloped his westering wheel.
Meanwhile the rural ditties were not mute,
Tempered to th' oaten flute,⁶
Rough satyrs danced, and fauns with cloven heel⁷
35 From the glad sound would not be absent long,
And old Damoetas⁸ loved to hear our song.
But O the heavy change, now thou art gone,
Now thou art gone, and never must return!
Thee, shepherd,⁹ thee the woods and desert caves,
40 With wild thyme and the gadding⁰ vine o'ergrown,
wandering
And all their echoes mourn.
The willows and the hazel copses⁰ green *groves*
Shall now no more be seen,
Fanning their joyous leaves to thy soft lays.⁰ *songs*
45 As killing as the canker⁰ to the rose, *cankerworm*
Or taint-worm to the weanling herds that graze,
Or frost to flowers that their gay wardrobe wear,
When first the white thorn blows;⁰ *blooms*
Such, Lycidas, thy loss to shepherd's ear.
50 Where were ye, nymphs,¹ when the remorseless deep
Closed o'er the head of your loved Lycidas?
For neither were ye playing on the steep,
Where your old Bards, the famous Druids lie,
Nor on the shaggy top of Mona high,

55 Nor yet where Deva spreads her wizard stream:2

Ay me! I fondly0 dream— *foolishly*

2. I.e., play your music. *Sisters of the sacred well:*

(although the fauns were sometimes described as the Muses, nine Greek sister goddesses believed to be less wild than the satyrs).

be sources of inspiration for the arts and goddesses

8. A conventional pastoral name, here perhaps of song; the well sacred to them was Aganippe, at referring to one of the tutors at Cambridge.

the foot of Mt. Helicon, where they danced about

9. I.e., Lycidas.

the altar of Jove (Greek Zeus), the supreme god.

1. Mythological female spirits inhabiting a partic-

3. I.e., place of burial.

ular place, object, or natural phenomenon.

4. I.e., the insect hum of midday, as the grayfly

2. The “steep” is probably the mountain Kerig-y-blows (“winds’) her horn in the (“sultry”) heat of Druidion, a burial ground in northern Wales for day.

the Druids, priestly poet-kings of Celtic Britain.

5. I.e., Hesperus, the evening star.

Mona is the Isle of Anglesey, Deva the river Dee,

6. Panpipes, traditionally played by shepherds in called “wizard” because its changes of course were pastoral.

supposed to foretell the country’s fortune. All three

7. In Roman mythology, the half-goat, half-man places are just south of that part of the Irish Sea woodland gods associated with lust and drinking where King drowned.

412 / JOHN MILTON

H a d y e b e e n t h e r e — f o r w h a t c o u l d t h a t h a v e d o n e ?

W h a t c o u l d t h e M u s e ³ h e r s e l f t h a t O r p h e u s b o r e,

T h e M u s e h e r s e l f, f o r h e r i n c h a n t i n g s o n

60 W h o m u n i v e r s a l N a t u r e d i d l a m e n t,

W h e n b y t h e r o u t t h a t m a d e t h e h i d e o u s r o a r,

H i s g o r y v i s a g e ⁰ d o w n t h e s t r e a m w a s s e n t, *face*

D o w n t h e s w i f t H e b r u s t o t h e L e s b i a n s h o r e ?

A l a s ! W h a t b o o t s ⁰ i t w i t h u n c e s s a n t c a r e *profits*

65 T o t e n d t h e h o m e l y s l i g h t e d s h e p h e r d ' s t r a d e,

A n d s t r i c t l y m e d i t a t e t h e t h a n k l e s s M u s e ? ⁴

W e r e i t n o t b e t t e r d o n e a s o t h e r s u s e,

T o s p o r t w i t h A m a r y l l i s ⁵ i n t h e s h a d e,

O r w i t h t h e t a n g l e s o f N e a e r a ' s h a i r ?

70 F a m e i s t h e s p u r t h a t t h e c l e a r s p i r i t d o t h r a i s e

(T h a t l a s t i n f i r m i t y o f n o b l e m i n d)

T o s c o r n d e l i g h t s, a n d l i v e l a b o r i o u s d a y s ; ⁶

B u t t h e f a i r g u e r d o n ⁰ w h e n w e h o p e t o f i n d, *reward*

A n d t h i n k t o b u r s t o u t i n t o s u d d e n b l a z e,

75 C o m e s t h e b l i n d F u r y ⁷ w i t h t h ' a b h o r r e d s h e a r s,

A n d s l i t s t h e t h i n s p u n l i f e . ” B u t n o t t h e p r a i s e , ”

P h o e b u s ⁸ r e p l i e d, a n d t o u c h e d m y t r e m b l i n g e a r s ;

” F a m e i s n o p l a n t t h a t g r o w s o n m o r t a l s o i l,

N o r i n t h e g l i s t e r i n g f o i l ⁹

so Set off to th' world, nor in broad rumor lies,
But lives and spreads aloft by those pure eyes,
And perfect witness of all-judging Jove;
As he pronounces lastly on each deed,
Of so much fame in Heaven expect thy meed." 0
reward 85 O fountain Arethuse,¹ and thou honored flood,
Smooth-sliding Mincius, crowned with vocal reeds,
That strain I heard was of a higher mood.

But now my oar^o proceeds, *oaten pipe; song*

And listens to the herald of the sea

90 That came in Neptune's plea.²

He asked the waves, and asked the felon winds, *savage*

"What hard mishap hath doomed this gentle
swain?" 0 *rustic fellow* And questioned every gust of
rugged wings *stormy*

That blows from off each beaked promontory;

95 They knew not of his story,

And sage Hippotades³ their answer brings,

That not a blast was from his dungeon strayed,

3. Calliope, the Muse of epic poetry. Her son,
by her sisters.

Orpheus, the greatest of all poets and musicians,

8. Phoebus Apollo, god of poetic inspiration, who
was torn limb from limb by a band of Thracian

plucked Virgil's ears as a warning against impatient
Maenads, who flung his head into the river
ambition (see Virgil's *Eclogues* 6.3—4).

Hebrus, whence it drifted across the Aegean to the

9. The setting for a gem, especially one that

island of Lesbos.

enhances the appearance of an inferior or false

4. I.e., do a poet's work.

stone.

5. A conventional pastoral name for a woman, like

1. A fountain in Sicily, associated with the pas-

Neaera in the next line.

toral poems of the Greek poet Theocritus (ca. 310—

6. I.e., fame is an incentive to virtue and hard

250 B.C.E). The Mincius (next line) is a river in

work.

Italy described in one of Virgil's pastorals.

7. Atropos, the third of the three classical god-

2. The merman Triton comes to plead that his

deesses called the Fates; she cut the thread of a

master, Neptune, is innocent of Lycidas's death.

person's life after it had been spun and measured

3. Aeolus, son of Hippotas and god of the winds.

L Y C I D A S / 4 1 3

The air was calm, and on the level brine,⁴

Sleek Panope⁵ with all her sisters played.

100 It was that fatal and perfidious bark⁶

Built in th' eclipse, and rigged with curses dark,⁷

That sunk so low that sacred head of thine.

Next Camus,⁸ reverend sire, went footing slow,

His mantle hairy, and his bonnet sedge,

105 Inwrought with figures dim, and on the edge

Like to that sanguine flower inscribed with woe.

“Ah! who hath reft,” quoth he, “my dearest pledge?”⁰ *child*
 Last came and last did go
 The pilot of the Galilean lake,⁹
 110 Two massy keys he bore of metals twain⁰ *two*
 (The golden opes,^o the iron shuts amain).⁰ *opens /vehemently*
 He shook his mitered locks, and stern bespake:
 “How¹ well could I have spared⁰ for thee, young swain, *given*
up
 Enow” of such as for their bellies’ sake, *enough*
 115 Creep and intrude, and climb into the fold!
 Of other care they little reckoning make,
 Than how to scramble at the shearers’ feast,
 And shove away the worthy bidden guest.
 Blind mouths! That scarce themselves know how to hold
 120 A sheep-hook, or have learned aught else the least
 That to the faithful herdsman’s art belongs!
 What recks it them?² What need they? They are sped;³
 And when they list,⁰ their lean and flashy⁰ songs *choose /*
insipid
 Grate on their scannel⁰ pipes of wretched straw. *meager*
 125 The hungry sheep look up, and are not fed,
 But swoln with wind, and the rank mist they draw,⁰ *inhale*
 Rot inwardly, and foul contagion spread,
 Besides what the grim wolf with privy paw⁴
 Daily devours apace,⁰ and nothing said. *quickly*
 130 But that two-handed engine at the door
 Stands ready to smite once, and smite no more.“⁵
 Return, Alpheus,⁶ the dread voice is past,
 That shrunk thy streams; return, Sicilian muse,

And call the vales, and bid them hither cast

4. I.e., the surface; *brine*: saltwater.

described in the argument. Camus uses the com-

5. One of the Nereids, daughters of Nereus, the
mon metaphor of the shepherd as the pastor (*pas-*
Old Man of the Sea.

tor is Latin for shepherd) and the sheep as the

6. I.e., the ship.

congregation.

7. Eclipses were considered evil omens.

2. I.e., what does it matter to them?

8. The god of the river Cam, representing Cam-

3. I.e., they have prospered.

bridge University, personified as wearing an aca-

4. I.e., anti-Protestant forces, either Roman Cath-
demic robe (“mantle” and “bonnet”) with colors
olic or Anglican; *privy*: furtive, sly.

like the dark reeds (“sedge”) on its banks, but

5. A satisfactory explanation of these two lines has

relieved by the crimson hyacinth (“sanguine

yet to be made, although many have been

flower”). Certain markings on the hyacinth—

attempted. Most have taken the “two-handed

created by Apollo from the blood of the youth Hya-

engine” as an instrument of retribution against

cinthus, whom he had killed by accident with a

those clergy who neglect their responsibilities; pos-

discus—are supposed to be the letters AIAI (“Alas,

sibilities include the ax of reformation, the two-
alas!”), inscribed by Apollo.

handed sword of the archangel Michael, the two

9. St. Peter, the Galilean fisherman, to whom

houses of Parliament, or death and damnation.

Christ promised the keys of the kingdom of heaven

6. A river god who fell in love with the nymph Are-

(Matthew 16.19). He wears the bishop’s miter (line

thusa. W h e n she fled to Sicily, he pursued her by

112) as the first head of Christ’s Church.

diving under the sea and emerging on the island.

1. Here begins the speech condemning the “cor-

There she was turned into a fountain (see line 85),

rupted clergy” and foretelling their “ruin” as

and their waters mingled.

4 1 4 / J O H N M I L T O N

Their bells and flowerets of a t h o u s a n d hues.

Ye valleys low where the mild whispers use,^o

frequent

Of s h a d e s ^o and wanton winds, and gushing brooks,

shadows

On w h o s e fresh lap the swart star⁷ sparely looks,

T h r o w hither all your quaint e n a m e l e d eyes,

T h a t on the green turf s u c k the honeyed showers,

And purple all the ground with vernal^o flowers.⁸

springtime

Bring the rathe^o primrose that forsaken dies,

early

T h e tufted crow-toe, and pale j e s s a m i n e , 9
T h e white pink, and the p a n s y freaked⁰ with jet,
mottled

T h e glowing violet,
T h e musk-rose, and the well attired woodbine.⁰
honeysuckle

With cowslips wan^o that h a n g the pensive head,
pale

And every flower that sad embroidery wears:
Bid a m a r a n t h u s 1 all his beauty shed,
And daffadillies fill their c u p s with tears,
To strew the laureate⁰ hearse⁰ where Lycid lies.
laurel-decked / bier

For so to interpose a little ease,
Let our frail thoughts dally with false surmise.⁰
conjecture

Ay me! Whilst thee the shores and sounding seas
W a s h far away, where'er thy b o n e s are hurled,
Whether beyond the stormy Hebrides,²
W h e r e thou perhaps under the whelming⁰ tide
overwhelming

Visit'st the bottom of the m o n s t r o u s 0 world;
monster-filled; huge

Or whether thou, to our moist vows³ denied,
Sleep'st by the fable of Bellerus old,⁴

W h e r e the great vision of the guarded m o u n t
Looks toward N a m a n c o s and Bayona's hold;
L o o k h o m e w a r d angel now, and melt with ruth:^o

pity

And, O ye dolphins, waft⁰ the hapless youth.⁵

transport

W e e p no more, woeful shepherds, weep no more,

For Lycidas your sorrow is not dead,

S u n k though he be beneath the watery floor,

So sinks the day-star⁰ in the ocean bed,

And yet anon[”] repairs his drooping head,

And tricks⁰ his b e a m s , and with new-spangled ore,⁰

dresses / gold

F l a m e s in the forehead of the morning sky:

So Lycidas sunk low, but m o u n t e d high,

T h r o u g h the dear might of him that walked the waves

W h e r e other groves, and other streams along,

With nectar pure his oozy^o locks he laves,⁰

slimy / bathes

And hears the unexpressive⁰ nuptial song,⁷

inexpressible

In the blest kingdoms m e e k of joy and love.

7. Sirius, the Dog Star, thought to have a swart, St. Michael's Mount, at the tip of Land's End, or malignant, influence (perhaps because this star "guarded" by the archangel Michael, who gazes is in the zenith in late summer, when vegetation southward toward Nemancos and the stronghold often withers).

of Bayona, in northwestern Spain.

8. Here begins a catalog of flowers, a traditional

5. According to Greek mythology, Palaemon, a
element of pastoral elegy.

boy, drowned near Corinth; a dolphin carried his

9. Jasmine, fragrant white flowers. *Craw-toe*: a
body to shore, and a temple was built to commem-
name for various plants, either wild hyacinth or
orate him. Milton may also be alluding to the
buttercups.

myths of Arion and of Icadus, youths saved by dol-

1. A legendary flower, supposed never to fade.

phins from drowning.

2. The islands that lie west of Scotland's coast.

6. I.e., Christ (Matthew 14.26).

3. I.e., tearful prayers.

7. Perhaps a reference to the "marriage supper of

4. A legendary figure supposedly buried at Land's
the lamb" (i.e., Christ), as described by St. John in
End, in Cornwall. The "mount" of the next line is
the Apocalypse (Revelation 19.9).

C O M U S / 4 1 5

There entertain him all the saints above,

In solemn troops and sweet societies

iso That sing, a n d singing in their glory move,

And wipe the tears forever from his eyes.

Now, Lycidas, the shepherds weep no more;

H e n c e f o r t h thou art the genius of the shore,8

In thy large r e c o m p e n s e , and shalt be good

185 To all that wander in that perilous flood.

**T h u s a n g t h e u n c o u t h 0 swain to th' oaks and rills,
unlettered While the still m o r n went out with sandals
gray;**

He t o u c h e d the tender stops of various quills,⁹

With eager thought warbling his Doric¹ lay:

190 And now the sun had stretched out all the hills,

And now was dropped into the western bay;

At last he rose, and twitched his mantle⁰ blue: *cloak*

T o m o r r o w to fresh woods, and pastures new.

1 6 3 7 1 6 4 5

From Comus²

Song³

Sweet Echo, sweetest nymph, that liv'st u n s e e n

Within thy airy shell,⁴

By slow Meander's margent green,⁵

And in the violet-embroider'd vale,

5 W h e r e the love-lorn nightingale⁶

Nightly to thee her sad song m o u r n e t h well;

C a n s t thou not tell me of a gentle pair

That likest thy N a r c i s s u s are?

O, if thou have

io Hid them in s o m e flowery cave,

Tell me but where,

8. The local divinity who protects navigators on she resists and is rescued by her brothers with help the Irish Sea ("flood").

from the river nymph, Sabrina.

9. The individual reeds in a set of panpipes.

3. Lost in the forest, the Lady calls on the nymph

1. Pastoral, because Doric was the dialect of the Echo for assistance.

ancient Greek pastoral writers Theocritus, Bion,

4. The sphere of air around Earth; Echo, in love and Moschus.

with the handsome youth Narcissus, who spurned

2. The last English work in Milton's 1645 *Poems*, her love, pined away until only her voice remained the poetic drama commonly called *Comus* was (see Ovid, *Metamorphosis* 3.359—401).

originally titled simply "A Mask Presented at Lud-

5. Meander is a river in Phrygia with a very wind- low Castle." It was produced in collaboration with ing (thus "slow") course. *Margent*: margin, i.e., the English composer Henry Lawes (1569—1662), bank.

who wrote music for these songs. Masques, pop-

6. The nightingale is known for its sweet, noctur- ular in the seventeenth century, were court enter- nal song; there are many classical myths about this tainments that included dance, song, drama, and bird. The Ovidian story of Philomela seems a likely spectacle; they usually celebrated an occasion—in subtext for the Lady's song because Philomela, like this case, the earl of Bridgewater's assuming the Echo, loses her full powers of speech. Philomela, presidency of Wales and the Marches. In the however, was "love-lorn" only in the ironic sense

action of this masque, the Lady (played by the
of being victimized by another's passion; she was
earl's daughter, Alice) is separated from her two
raped by her brother-in-law, Tereus, who then tore
younger brothers in a wood and accosted by
out her tongue so that she could not speak. She
Comus (a classical god of feast and revelry) and his
wove the story into a tapestry and sent it to her
band of revelers. Comus attempts to persuade the
sister, who rescued her. She was later changed into
chaste and virtuous Lady to join their revelry, but
a nightingale while in flight from Tereus.

4 1 6

/ J O H N M I L T O N

Sweet q u e e n of parley,⁰ daughter of the sphere!⁷ *speech*

So mayst thou be translated to the skies,

And give resounding grace to all heav'n's harmonies.⁸

Song⁹

Sabrina fair,

Listen where thou art sitting

U n d e r the glassy, cool, translucent wave,

In twisted braids of lilies knitting

5 T h e loose train of thy amber-dropping hair;¹

Listen for dear honor's sake,

G o d d e s s of the silver lake,

Listen and save.

Sabrina rises, attended by water-nymphs, and sings.

By the rushy-fringed bank,

10 W h e r e grows the willow and the osier² dank,

My sliding chariot stays,⁰ *halts*

Thick set with agate, and the azure sheen³

Of turkis⁰ blue, and emerald green, *turquoise*

That in the channel strays;

15 Whilst from off the waters fleet,

T h u s I set my printless feet

O'er the cowslip's⁰ velvet head, *a wildjlcnver's*

That b e n d s not as I tread;

Gentle Swain,⁴ at thy request

20 I am here.

1 6 3 4 1 6 4 5

To Mr. H. Lawes, On His Airs⁵

Harry, whose tuneful and well-measured song

First taught our English m u s i c how to span⁰ *measure*

Words with just note and accent, not to scan

7. Echo was, according to some accounts, the stepmother, who was angry at the illicit liaison that daughter of Air and Earth. Before her encounter resulted in Sabrina's birth. Milton adds to the legend with Narcissus, she distracted Hera, queen of the end Sabrina's magical powers and her special congenods, by chattering while Hera's husband, Zeus, cern for virgins. In the text of the masque that consorted with other nymphs and mortal women. Milton published in 1645, the Spirit speaks Hera punished Echo by depriving her of the ability twenty-one lines of poetry between the first and

to speak, except to repeat the words of others.

second segments of this song.

8. In myth, a traditional method of bestowing

1. Amber may refer to the color of her hair, i.e., immortality is transformation into a star or con-blond, through which water drips; or perhaps her stellation; thus “translated to the skies,” Echo will hair is wet with amber-colored water; or amber is provide, with her echoes, a resonance to “heav’n’s a perfume (from ambergris, a product of the harmonies,” perhaps the songs of the angels or the whale), and thus her hair is shedding perfume.

music of the spheres—a music, according to

2. A species of willow.

Pythagorean tradition, caused by the motion of the

3. Deep blue luster. *Agate*: a precious stone.

planetary spheres.

4. Shepherd; the attendant Spirit is dressed as a

9. The attendant Spirit, who has aided the broth-shepherd.

ers’ search for the Lady, calls on Sabrina for help.

5. Melodies. The composer Henry Lawes (see Sabrina was the goddess of the Severn; according note 2, p. 415) had written the music for Milton’s to a story retold by Spenser, among others, she was masque *Comus* (and printed the masque without a mortal girl thrown into the river by her vengeful Milton’s name in 1637).

**T o T H E L O R D G E N E R A L C R O M W E L L / 4 1
7**

With Midas' ears,⁶ committing⁰ short and long, *misjoining*

5 Th y worth an d skill exempts thee f r o m the throng,

With praise e n o u g h for Envy to look wan;⁰ *pale*

To after-age thou shalt be writ the m a n

**T h a t with s m o o t h air couldst h u m o r best our
tongue.**

T h o u honor'st Verse, and Verse m u s t lend her wing

10 To honor thee, the priest of Phoebus' choir,

T h a t tun'st their happiest lines in hymn or story.⁷

D a n t e shall give F a m e leave to set thee higher

T h a n his Casella,⁸ w h o m he wooed to sing,

M e t in the milder shades of Purgatory.

1645 1648

I Did but Prompt the Age

I did but p r o m p t the age to quit their clogs⁹

By the known rules of ancient liberty,

W h e n straight a barbarous noise environs me

Of owls a n d cuckoos, asses, apes, and dogs;¹

5 As when those hinds that were transformed to frogs

Railed at Latona's twin-born progeny,²

W h i c h after held the sun a n d m o o n in fee.⁰ *possession*

B u t this is got by casting pearl to hogs,³

T h a t bawl for f r e e d o m in their senseless m o o d ,

io And still revolt when truth would set t h e m free.⁴

L i c e n s e they m e a n w h e n they cry liberty;

For who loves that m u s t first be wise and good:

B u t f r o m that mark how far they rove we see,

For all this waste of wealth and loss of blood.

1645/6 1673

To the Lord General Cromwell⁵

Cromwell, our chief of m e n , who through a cloud,

N o t of war only, but detractions rude,

G u i d e d by faith and matchless fortitude,

6. In Greek mythology, King Midas was given ass's

2. Apollo and Diana, afterwards deities of the sun

ears for preferring the music of Pan, god of pas-

and moon, respectively. Their mother, Latona, was

tures, flocks, and shepherds, to that of Phoebus

refused a drink by Lycian peasants ("hinds"),

Apollo, god of music and poetry.

whom she then transformed into frogs.

7. Perhaps a reference to "The Story," a poem by

3. I.e., I receive this response because I gave

William Cartwright (1 6 1 1 - 1 6 4 3) that Lawes set to

something valuable to those who could not appre-

music.

ciate its value. Cf. Matthew 7.6: "Give not that

8. In *The Divine Comedy*, Dante represents him-

which is holy unto the dogs, neither cast your

self, on the threshold of Purgatory, as meeting the

pearls before swine, lest they trample them under

shade of his musician friend Casella, who sings a

their feet, and turn again and rend you."

ballad to him.

4. Cf. John 8.32: "And ye shall know the truth and

9. Heavy objects tied to prisoners' feet to impede the truth shall make you free."

motion.

5. Oliver Cromwell (1599-1655), successor to Sir

1. Milton had been attacked for advocating liber-

Thomas Fairfax as commander in chief of the Par-

alized divorce laws. "Known rules of ancient lib-

liamentary armies. Because of its subject, this

erty" (line 2) refers to the law of divorce set forth

poem could not be published in Milton's 1673

in Deuteronomy 24.1 and also to the natural law

Poems.

of reason.

4 1 8 / J O H N M I L T O N

To p e a c e and truth thy glorious way hast ploughed,6

5 A n d on the neck7 of crowne d F o r t u n e prou d

H a s t reared God's trophies, a n d His work pursued,

While D a r w e n stream, with blood of Scots imbrued,0
stained

And D u n b a r field, resounds thy praises loud,

And Worcester's laureate wreath:8 yet m u c h remains

10 To c o n q u e r still; p e a c e hath her victories

No less renowned than war: new foes arise,

T h r e a t e n i n g to bind our souls with secular chains.9

H e l p us to save free c o n s c i e n c e from the p a w

Of hireling wolves, whose gospel is their maw.1

1 6 5 2 1 6 9 4

When I Consider How My Light Is Spent2

**W h e n I consider how my light is spent
E r e half my days, in this dark world and wide,
A n d that one talent which is death to hide³
L o d g e d with me useless,⁴ though my soul m o r e bent
5 To serve therewith my Maker, and present
My true account, lest he returning chide;
” D o t h G o d exact day-labor, light denied?“⁵
I fondly⁰ ask; but Patience to prevent *foolishly*
T h a t m u r m u r , soon replies, ” G o d doth not need
io Either man’s work or his own gifts; who best
B e a r his mild yoke, they serve him best. His state
Is kingly. T h o u s a n d s at his bidding speed
And post o’er land and o c e a n without rest:
They also serve who only stand and wait.”**

ca. 1 6 5 2 1 6 7 3

On the Late Massacre in Piedmont⁶

**Avenge, O Lord, thy slaughtered saints, whose bones
Lie scattered on the Alpine mountains cold,
Even t h e m who kept thy truth so pure of old**

6. In 1651, Parliament issued a coin bearing the
3. An allusion to the parable of the talents, in
words “Truth and Peace,” to express confidence in
which the servant who buried the single talent his
the results of Cromwell’s victories over the Scots
lord had given him, instead of investing it, was
at Preston on the banks of the Darwen (line 7) and
deprived of all he had and cast “into outer dark-
at Dunbar (line 8) and Worcester (line 9).

ness” at the lord’s return (Matthew 25.14—30).

7. King Charles I was beheaded in 1649.

4. With a pun on *usury*, or interest.

8. I.e., as in the garlands of laurels bestowed on

5. Alludes to the parable of the vineyard (Matthew victors in ancient Greece.

20.1—10) and to John 9.4, Jesus’ statement before

9. A possible reference to the clergy who in 1652 curing a blind man: “I must work the works of him asked Parliament to establish the English Church that sent me, while it is day: the night cometh, on broad Protestant principles but with a State-when no man can work.”

salaried and State-controlled ministry.

6. Some seventeen hundred members of the Prot-

1. Indicating a voracious appetite; see Christ’s estant Waldensian sect in the Piedmont in north-warning to “beware of false prophets, which come western Italy died as a result of a treacherous to you in sheep’s clothing, but inwardly they are attack by the duke of Savoy’s forces on Easter Day, ravens wolves” (Matthew 7.15).

1655.

2. Milton had become totally blind in 1652.

M E T H O U G H T I S A W / 4 1 9

W h e n all our fathers worshipped stocks and stones,⁷

5 Forget not: in thy boo k record their groans

W h o were thy sheep a n d in their ancient fold

Slain by the bloody P i e d m o n t e s e that rolled
M o t h e r with infant down the rocks. Their m o a n s
T h e vales redoubled to the hills, and they
10 To Heaven . Thei r martyred blood an d ashe s sow
O'er all th' Italian fields where still doth sway
T h e triple tyrant:8 that f r o m these may grow
A hundredfold, who having learnt thy way
Early may fly the Babylonian woe.9

1 6 5 5 1 6 7 3

Cyriack,1 Whose Grandsire

Cyriack, w h o s e grandsire on the royal b e n c h
Of British T h e m i s , 2 with no m e a n applause,
P r o n o u n c e d , and in his volumes taught, our laws,
W h i c h others at their bar so often wrench,
5 T o d a y deep thoughts resolve with me to drench
In mirth that after no repenting draws;
Let Euclid rest, and Archimedes p a u s e , 3
And what the S w e d e intend, and what the French.4
To m e a s u r e life learn thou betimes,0 and know *early*
10 Toward solid good what leads the nearest way;
For other things mild H e a v e n a time ordains,
And disapproves that care, though wise in show,
That with superfluous burden loads the day,
And, w h e n G o d sends a cheerful hour, refrains.

ca. 1 6 5 5 1 6 7 3

Methought I Saw

M e t h o u g h t I saw my late e s p o u s e d saint5
B r o u g h t to me like Alcestis6 f r o m the grave,

7. In Milton's time, Protestants thought the Waldensian sect dated from early Christian times

2. The Greek goddess of justice.

rather than (as historians now think) from the

3. Euclid and Archimedes (both third century

twelfth century. "Stocks and stones" echoes the

B.C.E.), Greek mathematicians; Skinner's interest

prophet Jeremiah's denunciation of the Israelites'

in Greek mathematics may have begun when he

worship of idols made of wood and stone (Jeremiah

was a pupil in Milton's school on Aldersgate Street.

3.9); Milton's phrase could encompass both pagan

4. In 1655, King Charles X of Sweden was leading

and Catholic forms of idolatry, and is appropriate

military campaigns against the Poles; Cardinal

in a lament for members of a heretical sect known

Mazarin was leading French policy.

for rejecting materialist tendencies in the Catholic

5. The "saint," or soul in heaven, is probably Mil-

Church.

ton's second wife, Katherine Woodcock, to whom

8. The pope, whose tiara has three crowns.

he had been married less than two years (hence

9. Babylon, as a city of luxury and vice, was often

"late espoused") when she died, in 1658; since Mil-

linked with the Papal Court by Protestants, who

ton had become blind in 1652, he almost certainly

took the destruction of the city described in Revelation 18 as an allegory of the fate in store for the Roman Church.

reference to Mary Powell, Milton's first wife, who

1. Cyriack Skinner, a pupil of Milton and grand-died in childbirth in 1652.

son of Sir Edward Coke, the great jurist who

6. The wife brought back from the dead to her had been chief justice of the King's Bench under husband, Admetus, by the hero Hercules ("Jove's

4 2 0 /

J O H N M I L T O N

**W h o m J o v e ' s g r e a t s o n t o h e r g l a d h u s b a n d g a v e ,
R e s c u e d f r o m D e a t h b y f o r c e , t h o u g h p a l e a n d
f a i n t .**

**5 M i n e , a s w h o m t h e w a s h e d f r o m s p o t o f c h i l d - b e d
t a i n t o n e w h o m P u r i f i c a t i o n i n t h e O l d L a w d i d s a v e ,⁷**

A n d s u c h , a s y e t o n c e m o r e I t r u s t t o h a v e

F u l l s i g h t o f h e r i n h e a v e n w i t h o u t r e s t r a i n t ,

C a m e v e s t e d a l l i n w h i t e , p u r e a s h e r m i n d .

10 H e r f a c e w a s v e i l e d ; y e t t o m y f a n c i e d s i g h t

L o v e , s w e e t n e s s , g o o d n e s s , i n h e r p e r s o n s h i n e d

S o c l e a r a s i n n o f a c e w i t h m o r e d e l i g h t .

B u t O , a s t o e m b r a c e m e s h e i n c l i n e d ,

I w a k e d , s h e f l e d , a n d d a y b r o u g h t b a c k m y n i g h t .

ca. 1 6 5 8 1 6 7 3

FROM PARADISE LOST 1

The Verse²

T h e m e a s u r e is English heroic verse without rhyme, as that of **H o m e r** in Greek, a n d of **Virgil** in Latin;³ rhyme being no necessary adjunct or true great son,") in Euripides' *Alcestis*. She is veiled and

to the garden to pronounce punishment upon the
must remain silent until ritually cleansed.

humans, and Sin and Death create a broad high-

7. Hebrew law (Leviticus 12) prescribed certain

way between hell and Earth (Book 10). Finally,

sacrificial rituals for the purification of women

God sends the angel Michael to expel Adam and

after childbirth.

Eve from the garden, but first Michael shows

1. Milton wrote this epic poem to "justify the ways

Adam the history of the world up through the com-

of God to men," as he asserts in the opening of

ing of Christ, relating God's promise to redeem the

Book 1. Although he eschews the traditional sub-

h u m a n race through the sacrifice of his Son (Books

ject matter of epic poetry—"fabled knights / In

11 and 12). Adam and Eve, heartened by this

battles feigned" (9 . 3 0 - 3 1) — h e follows many con-

promise, depart the garden "hand in hand with

ventions of the epic form, including the beginning

wand'ring steps and slow" (12.648). Although Mil-

in medias res ("in the middle of things"), the invo-

ton draws on biblical accounts of the events he

cation of a muse (a request for divine aid in the

narrates, he both embellishes these accounts and writing of the poem), the division of the poem into adds entire events of his own devising (such as the twelve books, the use of epic similes (extended and war in heaven, modeled on classical stories of bat-elaborately detailed comparisons that temporarily tles among gods).

draw the reader's attention from the subject at While there are many ways of approaching this hand), and the epic catalog (as of ships in Homer's poem, any approach will benefit from a careful *Iliad* and fallen angels in *Paradise Lost*). While Mil-consideration of Milton's language and the formal ton establishes that his poem is part of an epic tra-features of his poetry. Milton is a master of pros-oddy, and he frequently varies the meter of his blank Virgil's *Aeneid*, he questions some assumptions of verse in ways that enhance or complicate the that tradition (he introduces, for example, a differ-meaning of the words. His wordplay and the ent concept of heroism) and incorporates other ambiguous syntax of his long, complexly subordi-generic elements such as pastoral and drama. nated sentences allow the reader the experience, The poem begins in hell, where Satan and his in small, of the freedom to choose within a pre-fallen angels plot their revenge against God

determined structure, an experience not unlike through the destruction of his newest creation, the that of the characters in his poem.

human race (Books 1 and 2). In Book 3, the scene shifts to heaven, where God predicts the disobedience of Adam and Eve, and Christ volunteers to undertake their redemption. In Book 4, Satan had “procured” the note to satisfy many readers enters Eden and attempts to enter Eve’s mind in a curious about why “the poem rhymes not.” Milledram. God sends the angel Raphael to warn Adamton’s decision to add the note may have been influenced by a debate between the poet John Dryden Raphael narrates to Adam the story of the war in heaven between Satan and his followers, and God, (1626—1698). Dryden’s *Essay on Dramatic Verse* Christ, and the angels loyal to God. Raphael goes (1668) records the controversy, in which Dryden on to relate the creation of the world and its inhabitants by God (Book 7). Adam, in Book 8, tells blank verse.

Raphael what he remembers of his own creation

3. English heroic verse was the iambic line of five feet, or ten syllables; heroic verse in Greek and Latin poetry was the hexameter.

P A R A D I S E L O S T : B O O K 1 / 4 2 1

o r n a m e n t of p o e m or good verse, in longer works especially, but the invention of a barbarous age, to set off wretched matter and l a m e meter; graced indeed since by the u s e of s o m e f a m o u s m o d e r n poets, carried away by c u s t o m , but m u c h to their own vexation, hindrance, and constraint, to express m a n y things otherwise, a n d for the m o s t part worse, than else they would have expressed them. N o t without cause, therefore, s o m e both Italian and S p a n i s h poets of prime note have rejected rhyme both in longer and shorter works, as have also, long since, our best English tragedies, as a thing of itself, to all judicious ears, trivial and of no true musical delight; which consists only in apt n u m b e r s , fit quantity of syllables, a n d the sense variously drawn out f r o m one verse into another, not in the jingling s o u n d of like endings, a fault avoided by the learned ancients both in poetry and all good oratory. This neglect then of rhyme, so little is to be taken for a defect, though it may s e e m so perhaps to vulgar readers, that it rather is to be e s t e e m e d an example set, the first in English, of ancient liberty recovered to heroic p o e m f r o m the troublesome and m o d e r n b o n d a g e of rhyming.

Book 1

*[The Invocation]*⁴

Of man's first disobedience, and the fruit
Of that forbidden tree⁵ whose mortal taste *deadly*
Brought death into the world, and all our woe,
With loss of Eden, till one greater Man⁶
Restore us, and regain the blissful seat,
Sing, Heavenly Muse,⁷ that, on the secret top
Of Oreb, or of Sinai, didst inspire
That shepherd who first taught the chosen seed
In the beginning how the Heavens and Earth
io Rose out of Chaos: or, if Sion hill
Delight thee more, and Siloa's brook that flowed
Faster by the oracle of God, I thence
Invoke thy aid to my adventurous song,
That with no middle flight intends to soar
15 Above th' Aonian mount, while it pursues
Things unattempted yet in prose or rhyme.⁸
And chiefly thou, O Spirit, that dost prefer

4. In these opening lines, Milton follows long-
Horeb (also called Sinai) and commanded him to
established epic tradition by stating his subject and
lead Israel ("the chosen seed") out of Egypt. God's
invoking divine aid in the treatment of it.

Spirit might also be found at Jerusalem in the Tem-

5. In Genesis 2.17, God commands that Adam

ple of Mount Sion (“the oracle of God,” line 12)
and Eve not eat from the fruit of one tree.

overlooking the stream Siloam, here contrasted
6. Christ, the second Adam.

with such haunts of the pagan Muses as “th’ Aon-

7. The invocation of the muse is an epic conven-
ian mount” (Helicon, in Greece, line 15). Milton

tion. In the invocation to Book 7, Milton specifi-
asks this Spirit not only for inspiration but for

cally calls upon Urania, the patroness of astronomy
instruction, since God alone was present “from the

and one of the nine Muses of Greek tradition, to
first” (line 19) and knows the whole truth of the

assist him in telling the story of Creation. But he
events Milton is about to relate.

insists that it is the “meaning, not the Name I call”

8. Ironically, Milton’s claim of originality in this
(7.5), suggesting that the non-Christian name is

line translates a boast made by Ariosto in his
inadequate to his true intentions.

Orlando Furioso (1.2). In *Paradise Lost*, Book 9,

Here, the muse seems to represent the Spirit of

lines 27—47 (see p. 426), Milton criticizes the kind

God, the same Spirit that spoke to Moses (“That

of chivalric epic written by Ariosto and by Edmund
shepherd,” line 8) out of the burning bush on Mt.

Spenser.

B e f o r e all temples th' upright heart and pure,
I n s t r u c t me, for thou know'st; thou f r o m the first
20 W a s t present, and, with mighty wings outspread ,
D o v e l i k e sat'st brooding on the vast abyss,
A n d m a d ' s t it pregnant: what in me is dark
I l l u m i n e; what is low, raise and support;
T h a t , to the height of this great argument,⁰ *theme*
25 I m a y assert Eternal Providence,
A n d j u s t i f y the ways of G o d to men.

From Book 49

O for that warning voice, which he who saw
T h ' A p o c a l y p s e, heard cry in heaven aloud,
T h e n w h e n the Dragon, put to s e c o n d rout,⁰
defeat

C a m e furious down to be revenged on men,
" W o e to the inhabitants on earth!"¹ that now,
W h i l e t i m e was,² our first parents had been warned
T h e c o m i n g of their secret foe, and scaped⁰
escaped

H a p l y so scaped his mortal snare;"* for now
S a t a n , now first inflamed with rage, c a m e down,
T h e t e m p t e r ere⁰ th' a c c u s e r of mankind,
before being

T o w r e c k⁰ on innocent frail m a n his loss⁴
avenge, wreak

O f t h a t first battle, and his flight to Hell:
Y e t n o t rejoicing in his speed, though bold,
F a r o f f and fearless, nor with c a u s e to boast,

**Begins his dire attempt, which nigh the birth
N o w rolling,0 boils in his t u m u l t u o u s breast,
moving on
And like a devilish engine5 b a c k recoils
U p o n himself; horror a n d doubt distract
His troubled thoughts, and f r o m the bottom stir
T h e Hell within him, for within him Hell
He brings, and round about him, nor f r o m Hell
O n e step no more than f r o m himself can fly
By c h a n g e of place: now c o n s c i e n c e wakes despair
That slumbered, wakes the bitter m e m o r y
Of what he was, what is, and what m u s t be**

9. Book 4 opens on the newly created Earth, and sun (with a punning allusion to the Son of God, specifically in the garden of Eden, which Satan is who, we later learn, has driven Satan from heaven) approaching as the “foe” of “our first parents” recalls the opening soliloquy of Shakespeare’s (lines 7—8), Adam and Eve. Satan is a “secret” *Richard III*, in which Richard, in the “winter of our enemy because Adam and Eve do not yet know of discontent,” also depicts his rival as a son/sun.

his fall and vengeful decision to continue his battle
1. John of Patmos, in Revelation 12.7—12, hears against God by attacking God’s new, h u m a n crea- such a cry during a second war in heaven between tures. The narrator opens the book by expressing a the dragon and the angels, at the end of time.

desire to warn Adam and Eve of the danger they

2. While there was still time.

face “now” (line 8), in the epic’s re-creation of a

3. His deadly (and, in this case, death-creating)
paradisaal present time. Before seeing Eden, the
trap. *Haply*: i.e., perhaps; also, with a play on *hap-*
reader sees and “hears” Satan, speaking in solilo-
pily.

quy. This speech was, according to Milton’s

4. I.e., Satan’s, for which he seeks to “wreck”—
nephew Edward Phillips, the first part of the epic
take revenge—on “man” as a substitute for God
Milton wrote, when he was still contemplating
and Christ.

treating the Genesis story as a drama (to be called

5. I.e., the cannon that Satan invents in Book 6;
Adam Unparadized). Satan’s hostile address to the
but also a play on engine as “plot.”

P A R A D I S E L O S T : B O O K 1 / 4 2 3

Worse; of worse deeds worse sufferings must ensue.

Sometimes towards Eden which now in his view

Lay pleasant, his grieved look he fixes sad,

Sometimes towards Heav’n and the full-blazing sun,

30 Which now sat high in his meridian tow’r:6

Then much revolving,0 thus in sighs began. *pondering*

“O thou that with surpassing glory crowned,

Look’st from thy sole dominion like the god

Of this new world: at whose sight all the stars

35 Hide their diminished heads; to thee I call,
But with no friendly voice, and add thy name
0 sun, to tell thee how I hate thy beams
That bring to my remembrance from what state
1 fell, how glorious once above thy sphere;
40 Till pride and worse ambition threw me down
Warring in Heav'n against Heav'n's matchless King:
Ah wherefore! he deserved no such return
From me, whom he created what I was
In that bright eminence, and with his good
45 Upbraided none,⁷ nor was his service hard.
What could be less than to afford him praise,
The easiest recompense, and pay him thanks,
How due! yet all his good proved ill in me,
And wrought but malice; lifted up so high
50 I 'sdained⁰ subjection, and thought one step higher
disdained
Would set me highest, and in a moment quit⁰ *repay*
The debt immense of endless gratitude,
So burthensome still⁰ paying, still to owe; *always*
Forgetful what from him I still received,
55 And understood not that a grateful mind
By owing owes not, but still pays, at once
Indebted and discharged; what burden then?
O had his powerful destiny ordained
Me some inferior angel, I had stood
60 Then happy; no unbounded hope had raised
Ambition. Yet why not? some other Power⁰ *angel*

As great might have aspired, and me though mean⁰ *inferior*,
low

Drawn to his part; but other Powers as great

Fell not, but stand unshaken, from within

65 Or from without, to all temptations armed.

Hadst thou⁸ the same free will and power to stand?

Thou hadst: whom hast thou then or what to accuse,

But Heav'n's free love dealt equally to all?

Be then his love accursed, since love or hate,

70 To me alike, it deals eternal woe.

Nay cursed be thou; since against his thy will

Chose freely what it now so justly rues.⁰ *regrets*

Me miserable!⁹ which way shall I fly

6. Midday, the height of noon.

8. Satan addresses himself.

7. Demanded no return for his benefits. Cf. James

9. This phrase recalls the common Latin con-

struction describing the self as an object, in the
1.5: "If any of you lack wisdom, let him ask of God
... and upbraideth not... ."

"accusative" case: *me miserum!*

4 2 4 / J O H N M I L T O N

Infinite wrath, and infinite despair?¹

75 W h i c h way I fly is Hell; myself am Hell;

And in the lowest deep a lower deep

Still threat'ning to devour me opens wide,

To which the Hell I suffer seems a Heav'n.

O then at last relent! is there no place

so L e f t for repentance , n o n e for pardo n left?
N o n e left but by submission; and that word
Disdain forbids me, a n d my dread of s h a m e
A m o n g the Spirits beneath, w h o m I s e d u c e d
With other promises and other vaunts⁰ *boasts*
85 T h a n to submit, boasting I could s u b d u e
Th' O m n i p o t e n t . A y m e , they little know
H o w dearly I abide⁰ that boast so vain, *pay the penalty for*
U n d e r what torments inwardly I groan:
While they adore me on the throne of Hell,
90 With d i a d e m ⁰ and scepter high advanced *crown*
T h e lower still I fall, only s u p r e m e
In misery; s u c h joy ambition finds.
But say I could repent and could obtain
By act of grace² my former state; how soon
95 W o u l d h i g h t recall high thoughts, how soo n unsa y
W h a t feigned submission swore: ease would recant³
Vows m a d e in pain, as violent⁰ and void. *forced*
For never can true reconcilment grow
W h e r e w o u n d s of deadly hate have pierced so deep:
100 W h i c h would but lead me to a worse relapse,
And heavier fall: so should I p u r c h a s e dear
Short intermission bought with double smart.⁰ *sting*
This knows my punisher; therefore as far
F r o m granting he, as I f r o m begging peace:
105 All h o p e excluded thus, behold instead
Of us outcast, exiled, his new delight,
M a n k i n d created, and for him this world.

**So farewell hope, and with hope farewell fear,
Farewell remorse: all good to me is lost;
110 Evil be thou my good; by thee at least
Divided empire with Heav'n's King I hold
By thee, and more than half perhaps will reign;⁴
As man ere long, and this new world shall know.”**

1. Compressed syntax: whichever way I fly, I shall
rogated by official authorities). Satan is ironically
find... .

suggesting that a condition of “ease” acquired

2. By a favor, not a right; the term was often used
through submission would lead him to change the
in political contexts to describe a formal pardon.

vows of “repentance” made in his present condi-

3. Literally, sing again; the verb was often used to
tion of pain.

describe formal renunciations of religious views

4. Spelled *raign* in the original text, the verb is
that the state deemed erroneous (e.g., Catholics
transitive and means “rule over.”

might “recant” their views when arrested and inter-

P A R A D I S E L O S T : B O O K 1 / 4 2 5

Book 9

*The Argument*⁵

Satan, having c o m p a s s e d the Earth, with meditated guile returns as a mist by night into Paradise; enters into the S e r p e n t sleeping. A d a m and Eve in the morning go forth to their labors, which Eve proposes to divide in several places, each laboring apart: A d a m c o n s e n t s not, alleging the danger lest that e n e m y of w h o m they were forewarned should attempt her f o u n d alone. Eve, loth to be thought not c i r c u m s p e c t or firm enough, urges her going apart, the rather desirous to m a k e trial of her strength; A d a m at last yields. T h e S e r p e n t finds her alone: his subtle approach, first gazing, then speaking, with m u c h flattery extolling Eve above all other creatures. Eve, wondering to hear the Serpent speak, asks how he attained to h u m a n speech and s u c h understanding not till now; the S e r p e n t answers that by tasting of a certain tree in the G a r d e n he attained both to speech and reason, till then void of both.

Eve requires him to bring her to that tree, and finds it to be the Tree of Knowledge forbidden; the Serpent, now grown bolder, with many wiles and

a r g u m e n t s induces her at length to eat. She, pleased with the taste, deliberates a while whether to impart thereof to A d a m or not; at last brings him of the fruit; relates what p e r s u a d e d her to eat thereof. A d a m , at first amazed, but perceiving her lost, resolves, through v e h e m e n c e of love, to perish with her, and, extenuating the trespass, eats also of the fruit. T h e effects thereof in t h e m both; they seek to cover their nakedness; then fall to variance and a c c u s a t i o n of one another.

No more of talk where G o d or angel guest⁶

With man, as with his friend, familiar used

**To sit indulgent, and with him partake
 Rural repast, permitting him the while
 5 Venial⁰ discourse unblamed. I now m u s t c h a n g e
 allowable T h o s e notes to tragic—foul distrust, and
 breach
 Disloyal, on the part of man, revolt
 And disobedience; on the part of Heaven,
 N o w alienated, distance and distaste,
 io Anger an d j u s t rebuke, an d j u d g m e n t given,
 T h a t brought into this world a world of woe,
 Sin and her shadow Death, and Misery,
 Death's harbinger. S a d task, yet a r g u m e n t
 N o t less but more heroic than the wrath
 15 Of stern Achilles on his f o e p u r s u e d
 Thrice fugitive about Troy wall; or rage
 Of T u r n u s for Lavinia disespoused;
 Or N e p t u n e ' s ire, or Juno's, that so long
 Perplexed the Greek, a n d Cytherea's son:7**

5. The Argument is a prose summary of the action on the verse, in a 1668 reissue of the first edition of the book. *Paradise Lost* was originally published

6. Adam has just concluded a conversation with without Arguments, but the printer asked Milton the angel Raphael (at the end of Book 8).

to provide them because many readers found the
 7. Important moments in important epics. Achil-
 poem difficult. They first appeared, with the note
 les, whose “wrath” is the epic subject announced

20 If answerable 0 style I can obtain *suitable, fitting*
Of my celestial Patroness,⁸ who deigns⁰ *condescends to grant*
Her nightly visitation unimplored,
And dictates to me slumbering, or inspires
Easy my unpremeditated verse,
25 Since first this subject for heroic song
Pleased me, long choosing and beginning late,
Not sedulous⁰ by nature to indite⁰ *diligent / write about*
Wars, hitherto the only argument⁰ *subject*
Heroic deemed, chief mastery to dissect
30 With long and tedious havoc fabled knights
In battles feigned (the better fortitude
Of patience and heroic martyrdom
Unsung), or to describe races and games,
Or tilting furniture,⁹ emblazoned shields,
35 Impress quaint, caparison and steeds,
Bases and tinsel trappings, gorgeous knights
At joust and tournament; then marshaled feast
Served up in hall with sewers⁰ and seneschals:⁰ *waiters / stewards*
The skill of artifice⁰ or officeman; ⁰ *applied art / low* 40 Not that which justly gives heroic name
To person or to poem. Me, of these
Nor⁰ skilled nor studious, higher argument *neither*
Remains,¹ sufficient of itself to raise
That name, ² unless an age too late, or cold
45 Climate, or years, damp my intended wing
Depressed; and much they may if all be mine,
Not hers who brings it nightly to my ear.³

T h e sun was sunk, and after him the star
Of H e s p e r u s , 0 w h o s e office is to bring *the evening*
***star* 50 Twiligh t u p o n the Earth, short arbiter**
‘Twixt day and night, and now f r o m end to end
Night’s h e m i s p h e r e had veiled the horizon round,
W h e n Satan, who late fled before the threats
Of Gabriel out of Eden, now improved⁰ *made worse*
55 In meditate d frau d an d malice, bent
On man’s destruction, m a u g r e 0 what might hap⁰
***despite / happen* Of heavier⁴ on himself, fearless returned.**
By night he fled, and at midnight returned
F r o m c o m p a s s i n g the E a r t h — c a u t i o u s of
day

in the first line of the *Iliad*, pursued Hector three
 mented coverings spread over the saddles or har-
 times around the walls of Troy before slaying him.
 nesses of horses. *Bases*: skirtlike coverings,
 Turnus (in the *Aeneid*) fought with Aeneas for the
 sometimes of armor, intended to decorate and pro-
 hand of Lavinia. Neptune hindered Odysseus (“the
 tect warhorses.

Greek”) in his attempts to return home after the
 1. I.e., to me, not skilled or learned in these
 Trojan War, and Juno, hostile to Venus (“Cythe-
 things, remains a more important subject.
 rea”), made difficulties for Venus’s son Aeneas.

2. I.e., “heroic name” (from line 40).

8. Urania, the “Heavenly Muse” whose aid Milton

3. I.e., these things, “an age too late” (the age of

had invoked in Book 1, line 6 (but see also note 7, the world), “cold Climate,” or “years” (the poet’s p. 421).

age), might indeed “damp” or b e n u m b his intent if

9. The equipment used in a tilt, or tournament, the effort of writing the poem were all his instead examples of which follow. *Impreses*: heraldic of “hers,” i.e., that of his “celestial Patroness.” emblems displayed on shields. *Caparisons*: orna-
4. *Of heavier*: worse.

P A R A D I S E L O S T : B O O K 1 / 4 2 7

**60 Since Uriel, regent of the sun, descried
His entrance, a n d forewarned the C h e r u b i m 5
That kept their watch. T h e n c e , full of anguish, driven,
T h e s p a c e of seven continued nights he rode
With darkness; thrice the equinoctial line
65 He circled, four times crossed the car of Night
F r o m pole to pole, traversing e a c h colure;6
On the eighth returned, and on the coast0 averse0 *side /
turned away* F r o m entrance or cherubic watch by stealth
F o u n d u n s u s p e c t e d way. There was a place
70 (N o w not, though Sin, not Time, first wrought the
change)
W h e r e Tigris, at the foot of Paradise,
Into a gulf shot under ground, till part
R o s e up a fountain by the Tree of Life.
In with the river s u n k a n d with it rose
75 Satan , involved in rising mist; then sough t
W h e r e to lie hid. S e a he had s e a r c h e d and land,**

F r o m E d e n over Pontus,⁷ and the pool
Maeotis, up beyond the river Ob;
D o w n w a r d as far antarctic; and, in length,
80 W e s t f r o m Orontes to the o c e a n barred
At Darien, thence to the land where flows
G a n g e s a n d Indus. **T h u s** the orb he r o a m e d
With narrow search, a n d with inspection deep
C o n s i d e r e d every creature, which of all
85 M o s t opportune might serve his wiles, and f o u n d
T h e serpent subtlest beast of all the field.⁸
Him, after long debate, irresolute
Of thoughts revolved, his final sentence⁰ chose *judgment*
Fit vessel, fittest imp^o of fraud, in w h o m *offshoot, child*
90 To enter, a n d his dark suggestions hide
F r o m sharpest sight; for in the wily snake
Whatever sleights⁰ none would suspicious mark, *artifices*
As from his wit and native subtlety
Proceeding, which, in other beasts observed,
95 D o u b t ⁰ might beget of diabolic power *suspicion*
Active within beyond the s e n s e of brute.
T h u s he resolved, but first f r o m inward grief
His bursting passion into plaints thus poured:
“O Earth, how like to Heaven, if not preferred
100 M o r e justly, seat worthier of G o d s , as built

5. An order of angels. In medieval astronomy, space of seven days, first along the equator and each of the concentric crystalline spheres contain- then over the poles, always timing his flight so as

ing one of the heavenly bodies was supposed to be to remain hidden on the dark side.

inhabited by an angel, its “intelligence,” who gov-
7. In lines 77—82, Satan’s search extends from the earned its motion; Uriel is one of the four great Black Sea (Pontus) to the connecting Sea of Azov archangels of the Jewish tradition, along with (the pool Maeotis) and northward beyond the river Raphael, Gabriel, and Michael.

Ob in Siberia: southward to the antarctic; and
6. The “equinoctial line” is the equator. The “car westward from the Orontes River in Syria to the of Night” is Earth’s shadow, depicted as the chariot isthmus of Panama (Darien) and on around the of the goddess Night. The colures are two of the world to India.

great circles that pass through the celestial poles,
8. Milton here follows Genesis 3.1: “Now the ser- one intersecting the ecliptic at the equinoxes, the pent was more subtle than any beast of the field other at the solstices. Satan circles Earth for the which the Lord God had made.”

428 / JOHN MILTON

**With second thoughts, reforming what was old!
For what God, after better, worse would build?
Terrestrial Heaven, danced round by other Heavens,
That shine, yet bear their bright officious⁰ lamps, *helpful*
Light above light, for thee alone, as seems,**

In thee concentrating all their precious beams
Of sacred influence!9 As God in Heaven
Is center, yet extends to all, so thou
Centring receiv'st from all those orbs; in thee,
Not in themselves, all their known virtue appears,
Productive in herb, plant, and nobler birth
Of creatures animate with gradual life
Of growth, sense, reason, all summed up in man.1
With what delight could I have walked thee round,
If I could joy in aught; sweet interchange
Of hill and valley, rivers, woods, and plains,
Now land, now sea, and shores with forest crowned,
Rocks, dens, and caves! But I in none of these
Find place or refuge; and, the more I see
Pleasures about me, so much more I feel
Torment within me, as from the hateful siege
Of contraries; all good to me becomes
Bane,° and in Heaven much worse would be my state.
poison, evil

But neither here seek I, no, nor in Heaven,
To dwell, unless by mastering Heaven's Supreme;
Nor hope to be myself less miserable
By what I seek, but others to make such
As I, though thereby worse to me redound.0 *return*
For only in destroying I find ease
To my relentless thoughts; and him° destroyed, *Adam*
Or won to what may work his utter loss,
For whom all this was made, all this2 will soon

Follow, as to him linked in weaP or woe: *happiness*
 In woe then, that destruction wide may range!
 To me shall be the glory sole among
 The infernal Powers, in one day to have marred
 What he, Almighty stiled, six nights and days
 Continued making, and who knows how long
 Before had been contriving; though perhaps
 Not longer than since I in one night freed
 From servitude inglorious well nigh half
 The angelic name,³ and thinner left the throng
 Of his adorers. He, to be avenged,
 And to repair his numbers thus impaired—
 Whether such virtue,⁰ spent of old, now failed *power,*
energy
 More angels to create (if they at least
 Are his created),⁴ or to spite us more—

9. Satan seems to describe here a Ptolemaic system of the universe, in which Earth is the center

harmed, as Satan predicts, at 9 . 7 8 2 - 8 4 (p. 442).

3. I.e., half the angels. Satan alludes to the revolt around which many heavenly bodies turn.

he led against God, the consequence of which was

1. Earth is populated with forms of life on a graduated scale ranging from plants, which merely gerates here) were cast out of heaven into hell.

grow; to animals, which both grow and feel; to

4. Only once (at the beginning of Book 4, line 43)

humans, who grow, feel, and think.

does Satan speak of the angels as created by God,

2. I.e., Earth (and specifically Eden), which is instead of self-created (as he implies here).

P A R A D I S E L O S T : B O O K 1 / 4 2 9

Determined to advance into our room

A creature formed of earth,⁵ and him endow,

150 Exalted from so base original,

With Heavenly spoils, our spoils. What he decreed

He effected; Man he made, and for him built

Magnificent this World, and Earth his seat,

Him Lord pronounced, and, O indignity!

155 Subjected to his service angel-wings

And flaming ministers, to watch and tend

Their earthy charge. Of these the vigilance

I dread, and to elude, thus wrapped in mist

Of midnight vapor, glide obscure, and pry

i60 In every bush and brake, where hap^o may find *luck*

The serpent sleeping, in whose mazy folds

To hide me, and the dark intent I bring.

O foul descent! that I, who erst contended

With Gods to sit the highest, am now constrained

165 Into a beast, and, mixed with bestial slime,

This essence to incarnate and imbrute,⁶

That to the height of deity aspired!

But what will not ambition and revenge

Descend to? Who aspires must down as low

170 As high he soared, obnoxious,⁰ first or last, *exposed*.

To basest things. Revenge, at first though sweet,
 Bitter ere long back on itself recoils.
 Let it; I reckon not, so it light well aimed, *care*
 Since higher I fall short, on him who next
 175 Provokes my envy, this new favorite
 Of Heaven, this man of clay, son of despite,⁰ *spite, scorn*
 Whom, us the more to spite, his Maker raised
 From dust: spite then with spite is best repaid.”
 So saying, through each thicket, dank or dry,
 180 Like a black mist low-creeping, he held on
 His midnight search, where soonest he might find
 The serpent. Him fast sleeping soon he found,
 In labyrinth of many a round self-rolled,
 His head the midst, well stored with subtle wiles:
 185 Not yet in horrid shade or dismal den,
 Nor nocent⁰ yet, but on the grassy herb, *harmful*
 Fearless, unfeared, he slept. In at his mouth
 The Devil entered, and his brutal⁰ sense, *animal*
 In heart or head, possessing soon inspired
 190 With act intelligential; but his sleep
 Disturbed not, waiting close⁰ the approach of morn. *hidden*
 Now, whenas sacred light began to dawn
 In Eden on the humid flowers, that breathed
 Their morning incense, when all things that breathe
 195 From th’ Earth’s great altar send up silent praise
 To the Creator, and his nostrils fill

5. Milton explains in Book 7 (lines 524-26) that
 dust of the ground, and breathed into his nostrils

Adam is made from earth: “he form’d thee, Adam,
the breath of life.”

thee O man / Dust of the ground, and in thy nos-
6. Satan’s incarnation in the body of the serpent
trils breath’d / The breath of Life,” following Gen-
esis 2.7: “And the Lord God formed man of the
h u m a n form.

430 / JOHN MILTON

With grateful smell, forth came the human pair,
And joined their vocal worship to the choir
Of creatures wanting0 voice; that done, partake
200 The season, prime0 for sweetest scents and airs;
best

Then commune how that day they best may ply
Their growing work; for much their work outgrew
The hands’ dispatch of two gardening so wide:
And Eve first to her husband thus began:
205 “Adam, well may we labor still0 to dress
continually

This garden, still to tend plant, herb, and flower,
Our pleasant task enjoined; but, till more hands
Aid us, the work under our labor grows,
Luxurious0 by restraint: what we by day
luxuriant

210 Lop overgrown, or prune, or prop, or bind,
One night or two with wanton growth derides,
Tending to wild. Thou, therefore, now advise,

Or hear what to my mind first thoughts present.
Let us divide our labors; thou where choice
215 Leads thee, or where most needs, whether to wind
The woodbine⁷ round this arbor, or direct
The clasping ivy where to climb; while I
In yonder spring⁰ of roses intermixed
growth

With myrtle⁸ find what to redress⁰ till noon.
set upright

220 For, while so near each other thus all day
Our task we choose, what wonder if so near
Looks intervene and smiles, or object new
Casual discourse draw on, which intermits
Our day's work, brought to little, though begun
225 Early, and the hour of supper comes unearned!"

To whom mild answer Adam thus returned:
"Sole Eve, associate sole,⁹ to me beyond
Compare above all living creatures dear!
Well hast thou motioned,⁰ well thy thoughts employed
suggested.

230 How we might best fulfil the work which here
God hath assigned us, nor of me shalt pass
Unpraised; for nothing lovelier can be found
In woman than to study household good,
And good works in her husband to promote.

235 Yet not so strictly hath our Lord imposed
Labor as to debar us when we need
Refreshment, whether food, or talk between,

Food of the mind, or this sweet intercourse
Of looks and smiles; for smiles from reason flow,
240 To brute denied, and are of love the food;
Love, not the lowest end of human life.
For not to irksome toil, but to delight,
He made us, and delight to reason joined.
These paths and bowers⁰ doubt not but our joint hands *arbors*
245 Will keep from wilderness with ease, as wide
As we need walk, till younger hands ere long
7. A name for various climbing plants. Venus, and thus an
emblem of love.
8. The myrtle tree, having shiny green leaves and 9. With a
pun: “unrivaled” and “only.”

white flowers; associated with the Roman goddess

P A R A D I S E L O S T : B O O K 1 / 4 3 1

Assist us. But, if much converse perhaps
Thee satiate, to short absence I could yield;
For solitude sometimes is best society,
250 And short retirement urges sweet return.
But other doubt possesses me, lest harm
Befall thee, severed from me; for thou know'st
What hath been warned us—what malicious foe,
Envyng our happiness, and of his own
255 Despairing, seeks to work us woe and shame
By sly assault, and somewhere nigh at hand
Watches, no doubt, with greedy hope to find
His wish and best advantage, us asunder,
Hopeless to circumvent⁰ us joined, where each *outwit*
260 To other speedy aid might lend at need.

Whether his first design be to withdraw
Our fealty from God, or to disturb
Conjugal love—than which perhaps no bliss
Enjoyed by us excites his envy more—
265 Or° this, or worse, leave not the faithful side *whether*
That gave thee being,¹ still shades thee and protects.
The wife, where danger or dishonor lurks,
Safest and seemliest by her husband stays,
Who guards her, or with her the worst endures.”
270 To whom the virgin⁰ majesty of Eve, *innocent*
As one who loves, and some unkindness meets,
With sweet austere composure thus replied:
“Offspring of Heaven and Earth, and all Earth’s lord!
That such an enemy we have, who seeks
275 Our ruin, both by thee informed I learn,
And from the parting angel overheard,
As in a shady nook I stood behind,
Just then returned at shut of evening flowers.
But that thou shouldst my firmness therefore doubt
280 To God or thee, because we have a foe
May tempt it, I expected not to hear.
His violence thou fear’st not, being such
As we, not capable of death or pain,
Can either not receive, or can repel.
285 His fraud is, then, thy fear; which plain infers
Thy equal fear that my firm faith and love
Can by his fraud be shaken or seduced:
Thoughts, which how found they harbor in thy breast,

Adam, misthought oP her to thee so dear?" *about*
290 To whom, with healing words, Adam replied:
"Daughter of God and Man, immortal Eve!
For such thou art, from sin and blame entire⁰ *wholly free*
Not diffident⁰ of thee do I dissuade *mistrustful*
Thy absence from my sight, but to avoid
295 Th' attempt itself, intended by our foe.

For he who tempts, though in vain, at least asperses²

1. In Book 8 (lines 465—71), Adam describes the Lord God had taken from man, made he a God's creation of Eve out of a rib taken from his woman, and brought her unto the man."

side, following Genesis 2.22: "And the rib, which 2. Maligns (literally, sprinkles).

432 / JOHN MILTON

The tempted with dishonor foul, supposed
Not incorruptible of faith, not proof
Against temptation. Thou thyself with scorn
And anger wouldst resent the offered wrong,
Though ineffectual found; misdeem not, then,
If such affront I labor to avert
From thee alone, which on us both at once
The enemy, though bold, will hardly dare;
Or, daring, first on me th' assault shall light.
Nor thou his malice and false guile contemn⁰— *regard*
scornfully
Subtle he needs must be who could seduce
Angels—nor think superfluous others' aid.
I from the influence of thy looks receive
Access⁰ in every virtue—in thy sight *increase*

More wise, more watchful, stronger, if need were
Of outward strength; while shame, thou looking on,
Shame to be overcome or overreached,⁰ *outwitted*
Would utmost vigor raise, and raised unite.
Why shouldst not thou like sense within thee feel
When I am present, and thy trial choose
With me, best witness of thy virtue tried?”
So spake domestic Adam in his care
And matrimonial love; but Eve, who thought
Less⁰ attributed to her faith sincere, *too little*
Thus her reply with accent sweet renewed:
“If this be our condition, thus to dwell
In narrow circuit straitened⁰ by a foe, *constrained, limited*
Subtle or violent, we not endued⁰ *endowed*
Single with like defense wherever met,
How are we happy, still⁰ in fear of harm? *continually*
But harm precedes not sin: only our foe
Tempting affronts us with his foul esteem
Of our integrity: his foul esteem
Sticks no dishonor on our front,⁰ but turns *brow*
Foul on himself; then wherefore shunned or feared
By us, who rather double honor gain
From his surmise proved false, find peace within,
Favor from Heaven, our witness, from the event?⁰ *outcome*
And what is faith, love, virtue, unassayed⁰ *untested*
Alone, without exterior help sustained?
Let us not then suspect our happy state
Left so imperfect by the Maker wise

As not secure to single or combined.
Frail is our happiness, if this be so;
And Eden were no Eden, thus exposed.”
To whom thus Adam fervently replied:
“O woman, best are all things as the will
Of God ordained them; his creating hand
Nothing imperfect or deficient left
Of all that he created, much less man,
Or aught that might his happy state secure,
Secure from outward force. Within himself
P A R A D I S E L O S T : B O O K 1 / 4 3 3

The danger lies, yet lies within his power;
350 Against his will he can receive no harm.
But God left free the will; for what obeys
Reason is free; and reason he made right,
But bid her³ well beware, and still erect,⁰ *alert*
Lest, by some fair appearing good surprised,
355 She dictate false, and misinform the will
To do what God expressly hath forbid.

Not then mistrust, but tender love, enjoins
That I should mind^o thee oft; and mind thou me. *remind; pay
heed to*

Firm we subsist,⁰ yet possible to swerve, *stand; exist*
360 Since reason not impossibly may meet
Some specious⁰ object by the foe suborned,⁴ *fair-appearing*
And fall into deception unaware,
Not keeping strictest watch, as she was warned.
Seek not temptation, then, which to avoid

365 Were better, and most likely if from me
Thou sever not: trial will come unsought.
Wouldst thou approve⁰ thy constancy, approve *prove*
First thy obedience; the other who can know,
Not seeing thee attempted, who attest?
370 But, if thou think trial unsought may find
Us both securer⁵ than thus warned thou seem'st,
Go; for thy stay, not free, absents thee more.
Go in thy native innocence; rely
On what thou hast of virtue; summon all;
375 For God towards thee hath done his part: do thine.”
So spake the patriarch of mankind; but Eve
Persisted; yet submiss,⁰ though last, replied: *submissive*
“With thy permission, then, and thus forewarned,
Chiefly by what thy own last reasoning words
380 Touched only, that our trial, when least sought,
May find us both perhaps far less prepared,
The willinger I go, nor much expect
A foe so proud will first the weaker seek;
So bent, the more shall shame him his repulse.”
385 Thus saying, from her husband's hand her hand
Soft she withdrew, and like a wood nymph light,
Oread or dryad, or of Delia's train,⁶
Betook her to the groves, but Delia's self
In gait surpassed and goddesslike deport,
390 Though not as she with bow and quiver armed,
But with such gardening tools as art yet rude,^o *primitive*
Guiltless of fire had formed,⁷ or angels brought.

To Pales, or Pomona, thus adorned,

3. I.e., Reason. Right reason, originally a classical accompanied Delia, or Diana (born at Delos), god-concept, is the God-given ability to recognize truth
ness of the hunt. *Oread or dryad*: mountain nymph and moral law.

or wood nymph; neither class of nymphs was

4. Procured by corrupt means and with a sinister immortal; the dryads died with their trees.

motive.

7. There was no need of fire in Eden; the associ-

5. Milton may be playing on both senses of the
ation of guilt with fire suggests the myth of Pro-
Latin word *securus*, which means both “safe” or
metheus, who stole fire from the gods to give to
“free from care” and “careless” or “negligent.”
humans.

6. Band of nymphs (minor nature divinities) who

434 / JOHN MILTON

Likest she seemed, Pomona when she fled

395 Vertumnus, or to Ceres in her prime,

Yet virgin of Proserpina from Jove.⁸

Her long with ardent look his eye pursued

Delighted, but desiring more her stay.

Oft he to her his charge of quick return

400 Repeated; she to him as oft engaged

To be returned by noon amid the bower,

And all things in best order to invite

Noontide repast, or afternoon's repose.
O much deceived, much failing, hapless Eve,
405 Of thy presumed return! Event perverse!
Thou never from that hour in Paradise
Found'st either sweet repast, or sound repose;
Such ambush hid among sweet flowers and shades
Waited with hellish rancor imminent
410 To intercept thy way, or send thee back
Despoiled of innocence, of faith, of bliss.
For now, and since first break of dawn, the fiend,
Mere serpent in appearance, forth was come,
And on his quest, where likeliest he might find
415 The only two of mankind, but in them
The whole included race, his purposed prey.
In bower and field he sought, where any tuft
Of grove or garden-plot more pleasant lay,
Their tendance⁰ or plantation for delight; *object of care*
420 By fountain or by shady rivulet
He sought them both, but wished his hap^o might find *luck*
Eve separate; he wished, but not with hope
Of what so seldom chanced; when to his wish,
Beyond his hope, Eve separate he spies,
425 Veiled in a cloud of fragrance, where she stood,
Half spied, so thick the roses bushing round
About her glowed, oft stooping to support
Each flower of slender stalk, whose head though gay
Carnation, purple, azure, or specked with gold,
430 Hung drooping unsustained, them she upstays

Gently with myrtle band, mindless⁰ the while
heedless

Herself, though fairest unsupported flower,
From her best prop so far, and storm so nigh.
Nearer he drew, and many a walk traversed
435 Of stateliest covert, cedar, pine, or palm;
Then voluble⁰ and bold, now hid, now seen
undulating

Among thick-woven arborets⁰ and flowers
shrubs

Embordered on each bank, the hand⁰ of Eve:
handiwork

Spot more delicious than those gardens feigned⁹
8. In Roman mythology, the supreme god, who
(below), the youth Adonis was nursed by Venus
impregnated Ceres, the supreme agricultural god-
after having been killed by a boar, then revived; the
dess, with Proserpina. Pales was the goddess of
second was visited by Odysseus (“Laertes’ son”),
flocks and pastures. Pomona, goddess of fruit
who found springtime and harvest time both con-
trees, was long pursued by Vertumnus, god of the
tinuous there. The third garden mentioned—the
seasons; disguised as a reaper, he awakened
garden of Solomon (“the sapient king”) and his
“answering passion” in Pomona, according to
bride, the pharaoh’s daughter—Milton regards as
Ovid’s *Metamorphoses*.

historical, not “mystic,” or mythical.

9. Mythical or legendary gardens. In the first

P A R A D I S E L O S T : B O O K 1 / 4 3 5

Or of revived Adonis, or renowned

Alcinous, host of old Laertes’ son,

Or that, not mystic, where the sapient king

Held dalliance with his fair Egyptian spouse.

Much he° the place admired, the person more. *Satan*

As one who long in populous city pent,

Where houses thick and sewers annoy0 the air, *pollute*

Forth issuing on a summer’s morn to breathe

Among the pleasant villages and farms

Adjoined, from each thing met conceives delight,

The smell of grain, or teded1 grass, or kine,° *cattle*

Or dairy, each rural sight, each rural sound:

If chance with nymphlike step fair virgin pass,

What pleasing seemed, for° her now pleases more, *because of*

She most, and in her look sums all delight.

Such pleasure took the serpent to behold

This flowery plat,° the sweet recess0 of Eve *plot / retreat*

Thus early, thus alone; her heavenly form

Angelic, but more soft, and feminine,

Her graceful innocence, her every air° *manner*

Of gesture or least action overawed

His malice, and with rapine2 sweet bereaved

His fierceness of the fierce intent it brought:

That space the evil one abstracted0 stood *withdrawn*

From his own evil, and for the time remained

Stupidly good, of enmity disarmed,
 Of guile, of hate, of envy, of revenge.³
 But the hot Hell that always in him burns,
 Though in mid Heaven, soon ended his delight,
 And tortures him now more, the more he sees
 Of pleasure not for him ordained: then soon
 Fierce hate he recollects, and all his thoughts
 Of mischief, gratulating,⁰ thus excites: *exulting*
 “Thoughts, whither have ye led me? with what sweet
 Compulsion thus transported to forget
 What hither brought us? hate, not love, nor hope
 Of Paradise for Hell, hope here to taste
 Of pleasure, but all pleasure to destroy,
 Save what is in destroying; other joy
 To me is lost. Then let me not let pass
 Occasion which now smiles; behold alone
 The woman, opportune⁰ to all attempts, *open*
 Her husband, for I view far round, not nigh,
 Whose higher intellectual⁰ more I shun, *intellect*
 And strength, of courage haughty, and of limb
 Heroic built, though of terrestrial⁰ mold;⁰ *earthly /*
composition
 Foe not formidable, exempt from wound,
 I not; so much hath Hell debased, and pain
 Enfeebled me, to what I was in Heaven.

1. Spread out to dry to make hay.
3. Amazed by Eve’s beauty, Satan is momentarily
2. Robbery; from *rapere*, Latin for “to seize,” the

stunned into inaction and, while thus incapacitated, is insensibly good.

temporarily ravished.

436 / JOHN MILTON

She fair, divinely fair, fit love for gods,
Not terrible, though terror be in love *exciting fear*
And beauty, not approached by stronger hate, *unless*
Hate stronger, under show of love well feigned,
The way which to her ruin now I tend.”

So spake the enemy of mankind, enclosed
In serpent, inmate bad, and toward Eve
Addressed his way, not with indented wave, *zigzag*
Prone on the ground, as since, but on his rear,
Circular base of rising folds, that towered
Fold above fold a surging maze; his head
Crested aloft, and carbuncle his eyes; *ruby-colored*
With burnished neck of verdant gold, erect
Amidst his circling spires, that on the grass *coils*
Floated redundant. Pleasing was his shape, *waving; excessive*
And lovely; never since of serpent kind
Lovelier, not those that in Illyria changed
Hermione and Cadmus, or the god
In Epidaurus; nor to which transformed
Ammonian Jove, or Capitoline was seen,
He with Olympias, this with her who bore
Scipio, the height of Rome.⁴ With tract oblique *course*
At first, as one who sought access, but feared

To interrupt, sidelong he works his way.
 As when a ship by skillful steersman wrought
 Nigh river's mouth or foreland, where the wind
 Veers oft, as oft so steers, and shifts her sail:
 So varied he, and of his tortuous train
 Curled many a wanton wreath in sight of Eve, *unrestrained;*
lewd
 To lure her eye: she busied heard the sound
 Of rustling leaves, but minded not, as used
 To such disport before her through the field,
 From every beast, more duteous at her call,
 Than at Circean call the herd disguised.⁵
 He bolder now, uncalled before her stood:
 But as in gaze admiring; oft he bowed
 His turret crest, and sleek enameled neck, *multicolored*
 Fawning, and licked the ground whereon she trod.
 His gentle dumb expression turned at length
 The eye of Eve to mark his play: he, glad
 Of her attention gained, with serpent tongue
 Organic, or impulse of vocal air,⁶
 His fraudulent temptation thus began.
 "Wonder not, sovereign mistress, if perhaps
 Thou canst, who art sole wonder; much less am
 4. Cadmus, king of Thebes, and his wife, Har-
 born of the first union, and the Roman leader
 monia ("Hermione"), were transformed into ser-
 Scipio Africanus was born of the second.
 pents after their retirement to Illyria. The "god in

5. In the *Odyssey*, book 10, the enchantress Circe
Epidaurus” is Aesculapius, god of healing, whose
changes men into swine, who then dutifully follow
art included the use of serpents and who some-
her about.

times appeared in the form of a serpent at his tem-

6. I.e., Satan speaks through the serpent either

ple in Epidaurus. Jove (here called Ammonian and

using the serpent’s own tongue or by directly

Capitoline after temples associated with him) was

impelling the air to make it seem voicelike; there

said to have coupled with Olympias and Sempronia

is a pun on “impulse,” which means both “motion”

in the form of a serpent. Alexander the Great was

and “strong suggestion from a spirit.”

P A R A D I S E L O S T : B O O K 1 / 4 3 7

Thy looks, the heaven of mildness, with disdain,

535 Displeas'd that I approach thee thus, and gaze

Insatiate, I thus single, nor have feared

Thy awful⁰ brow, more awful thus retired. *awe-inspiring*

Fairest resemblance of thy Maker fair,

Thee all things living gaze on, all things thine

540 By gift, and thy celestial beauty adore

With ravishment⁰ beheld, there best beheld *rapture, ecstasy*

Where universally admired: but here

In this enclosure wild, these beasts among,

Beholders rude, and shallow to discern

545 Half what in thee is fair, one man except,

Who sees thee? (and what is one?) who shouldst be seen
A goddess among gods, adored and served
By angels numberless, thy daily train.”

So glozed⁰ the tempter, and his proem⁰ tuned; *flattered / prelude*

550 Into the heart of Eve his words made way,
Though at the voice much marveling: at length,
Not unamazed, she thus in answer spake.

“What may this mean? Language of man pronounced
By tongue of brute, and human sense expressed?

555 The first at least of these I thought denied
To beasts, whom God on their creation-day
Created mute to all articulate sound;

The latter I demur,⁰ for in their looks
hesitate about

Much reason, and in their actions oft appears.

560 Thee, serpent, subtlest beast of all the field
I knew, but not with human voice endued:⁰
endowed

Redouble then this miracle, and say,
How cam'st thou speakable⁰ of mute, and how
able to speak

To me so friendly grown above the rest

565 Of brutal kind, that daily are in sight?
Say, for such wonder claims attention due.”

To whom the guileful tempter thus replied:

“Empress of this fair world, resplendent Eve!

Easy to me it is to tell thee all

570 What thou command'st and right thou shouldst be obeyed:

I was at first as other beasts that graze

The trodden herb, of abject thoughts and low,

As was my food, nor aught but food discerned

Or sex, and apprehended nothing high:

575 Till on a day, roving the field, I chanced

A goodly tree far distant to behold

Loaden with fruit of fairest colors mixed,

Ruddy and gold; I nearer drew to gaze;

When from the boughs a savory odor blown,

580 Grateful to appetite, more pleased my sense

Than smell of sweetest fennel, or the teats

Of ewe or goat dropping with milk at even,

Unsucked of lamb or kid,⁷ that tend their play.

7. It was popularly believed that snakes were especially fond of the herb fennel and that they stole milk from sheep and goats.

438 / J O H N M I L T O N

To satisfy the sharp desire I had

Of tasting those fair apples, I resolved

Not to defer: hunger and thirst at once,

Powerful persuaders, quickened at the scent

Of that alluring fruit, urged me so keen.

About the mossy trunk I wound me soon,

For, high from ground, the branches would require

Thy utmost reach, or Adam's: round the tree

All other beasts that saw, with like desire

Longing and envying stood, but could not reach.

Amid the tree now got, where plenty hung

Tempting so nigh, to pluck and eat my fill
I spared not; for such pleasure till that hour
At feed or fountain never had I found.
Sated at length, ere long I might perceive
Strange alteration in me, to degree
Of reason in my inward powers, and speech
Wanted⁰ not long, though to this shape retained. *lacked*
Thenceforth to speculations high or deep
I turned my thoughts, and with capacious⁰ mind *wide,*
spacious
Considered all things visible in Heaven,
Or Earth, or middle,⁰ all things fair and good: *regions between*
But all that fair and good in thy divine
Semblance, and in thy beauty's heavenly ray
United I beheld: no fair⁰ to⁰ thine *beauty / compared to*
Equivalent or second, which compelled
Me thus, though importune⁰ perhaps, to come *inopportunately*
And gaze, and worship thee of right declared
Sovereign of creatures, universal dame.”
So talked the spirited⁰ sly snake: and Eve *spirit-possessed*
Yet more amazed, unwary thus replied:
“Serpent, thy overpraising leaves in doubt
The virtue⁰ of that fruit, in thee first proved.⁰ *power I*
experienced
But say, where grows the tree, from hence how far?
For many are the trees of God that grow
In Paradise, and various, yet unknown
To us; in such abundance lies our choice,
As leaves a greater store of fruit untouched,

Still hanging incorruptible, till men
Grow up to their provision, and more hands
Help to disburden Nature of her birth.“8
To whom the wily adder, blithe and glad:
“Empress, the way is ready, and not long,
Beyond a row of myrtles, on a flat,⁰ *plot*
Fast by a fountain, one small thicket past
Of blowing⁰ myrrh and balm: if thou accept *blooming*
My conduct,⁰ I can bring thee thither soon.” *guidance*
8. I.e., what Nature bears. *Till men ... provision*: i.e., until
enough humans exist to eat all the food on Earth.

P A R A D I S E L O S T : B O O K 1 / 4 3 9

“Lead then/” said Eve. He leading swiftly rolled
In tangles, and made intricate seem straight,
To mischief swift. Hope elevates, and joy
Brightens his crest; as when a wandering fire
635 Compact of unctuous vapor,⁹ which the night
Condenses, and the cold environs round,
Kindled through agitation to a flame
(Which oft, they say, some evil spirit attends),
Hovering and blazing with delusive light,
640 Misleads th’ amazed night-wanderer from his way
To bogs and mires, and oft through pond or pool,
There swallowed up and lost, from succor⁰ far: *help*
So glistered the dire snake, and into fraud
Led Eve our credulous mother, to the tree
645 Of prohibition,¹ root of all our woe:
Which when she saw, thus to her guide she spake:

“Serpent, we might have spared our coming hither,
Fruitless to me, though fruit be here to excess,
The credit of whose virtue rest with thee;²
650 Wondrous indeed, if cause of such effects!
But of this tree we may not taste nor touch:
God so commanded, and left that command
Sole daughter of his voice; the rest,³ we live
Law to ourselves; our reason is our law.”
65 5 To whom the Tempter guilefully replied:
“Indeed? Hath God then said that of the fruit
Of all these garden trees ye shall not eat,
Yet lords declared of all in Earth or air?”
To whom thus Eve, yet sinless: “Of the fruit
660 Of each tree in the garden we may eat,
But of the fruit of this fair tree amidst
The garden, God hath said, ‘Ye shall not eat
Thereof, nor shall ye touch it, lest ye die.’ ”
She scarce had said, though brief, when now more bold,
665 The tempter, but with show of zeal and love
To man, and indignation at his wrong,
New part puts on, and as to passion moved, *as if*
Fluctuates disturbed, yet comely,⁰ and in act⁰ *attractive /*
hearing
Raised, as of some great matter to begin.
670 As when of old some orator renowned
In Athens or free Rome, where eloquence
Flourished, since mute, to some great cause addressed,
Stood in himself collected, while each part,

Motion, each act, won audience ere the tongue,
 675 Sometimes in height began, as no delay
 Of preface brooking, through his zeal of right.⁴
 9. Composed of oily vapor. The allusion is to the
 2. I.e., my belief in the effects of the fruit must
 will-o'-the-wisp (*ignis fatuus*), which was said to
 continue to depend solely on your testimony.
 draw travelers astray by holding a false light before
 3. I.e., in everything else.
 them; the phenomenon of nocturnal light is caused
 4. I.e., the orator, convinced of the Tightness of
 by the combustion of marsh gas.
 his cause, bursts directly into his argument, impa-
 1. I.e., the prohibited tree.
 tient of the "delay" of an introduction.

440 / JOHN MILTON

So standing, moving, or to height upgrown
 The tempter all impassioned thus began:
 "O sacred, wise, and wisdom-giving plant,
 Mother of science!⁰ now I feel thy power *knowledge*
 Within me clear, not only to discern
 Things in their causes, but to trace the ways
 Of highest agents, deemed however wise.
 Queen of this universe! do not believe
 Those rigid threats of death. Ye shall not die;
 How should ye? By the fruit? it gives you life
 To⁰ knowledge; by the Threatener? look On me, *in addition to*
 Me who have touched and tasted, yet both live,

And life more perfect have attained than Fate
Meant me, by venturing higher than my lot.
Shall that be shut to man, which to the beast
Is open? Or will God incense his ire
For such a petty trespass, and not praise
Rather your dauntless virtue,⁰ whom the pain
courage
Of death denounced,⁰ whatever thing death be,
threatened
Deterred not from achieving what might lead
To happier life, knowledge of good and evil?
Of good, how just!⁵ Of evil, if what is evil
Be real, why not known, since easier shunned?
God therefore cannot hurt ye, and be just;
Not just, not God; not feared then, nor obeyed:
Your fear itself of death removes the fear.
Why then was this forbid? Why but to awe,
Why but to keep ye low and ignorant,
His worshippers? He knows that in the day
Ye eat thereof, your eyes that seem so clear,
Yet are but dim, shall perfectly be then
Opened and cleared, and ye shall be as gods,
Knowing both good and evil, as they know.
That ye should be as gods, since I as man,
Internal⁰ man, is but proportion meet, *internally*
I, of brute, human; ye, of human, gods.
So ye shall die perhaps, by putting off
Human, to put on gods: death to be wished,

Though threatened, which no worse than this can bring.
And what are gods that man may not become
As they, participating⁰ godlike food? *sharing*
The gods are first, and that advantage use
On our belief, that all from them proceeds.
I question it; for this fair Earth I see,
Warmed by the sun, producing every kind,
Them nothing: If they all things,⁶ who enclosed
Knowledge of good and evil in this tree,
That whoso eats thereof forthwith attains
Wisdom without their leave? And wherein lies
5. I.e., how just, to deny the knowledge of good! 6. The verb
here, “produce,” is understood.

(Satan is being ironic.)

P A R A D I S E L O S T : B O O K 1 / 4 4 1

Th’ offense, that man should thus attain to know?
What can your knowledge hurt him, or this tree
Impart against his will if all be his?
Or is it envy, and can envy dwell
In heavenly breasts? These, these, and many more
Causes import⁰ your need of this fair fruit. *imply, indicate*
Goddess humane,⁷ reach then, and freely taste!”
He ended, and his words, replete with guile,
Into her heart too easy entrance won:
Fixed on the fruit she gazed, which to behold
Might tempt alone, and in her ears the sound
Yet rung of his persuasive words, impregn⁰ *impregnated*
With reason, to her seeming, and with truth;

Meanwhile the hour of noon drew on, and waked
An eager appetite, raised by the smell
So savory of that fruit, which with desire,
Inclinable now grown to touch or taste,
Solicited her longing eye;⁸ yet first
Pausing a while, thus to herself she mused:
“Great are thy virtues,⁰ doubtless, best of fruits, *powers*
Though kept from man, and worthy to be admired,
Whose taste, too long forborn, at first essay⁰ *testing*
Gave elocution to the mute, and taught
The tongue not made for speech to speak thy praise:
Thy praise he also who forbids thy use,
Conceals not from us, naming thee the Tree
Of Knowledge, knowledge both of good and evil;
Forbids us then to taste; but his forbidding
Commends thee more, while it infers the good
By thee communicated, and our want:⁰ *lack*
For good unknown, sure is not had, or had
And yet unknown, is as not had at all.
In plain⁰ then, what forbids he but to know? *plain words*
Forbids us good, forbids us to be wise!
Such prohibitions bind not. But if Death
Bind us with after-bands, what profits then
Our inward freedom? In the day we eat
Of this fair fruit, our doom is, we shall die.
How dies the serpent? He hath eaten and lives,
And knows, and speaks, and reasons, and discerns,
Irrational till then. For us alone

Was death invented? Or to us denied
This intellectual food, for beasts reserved?
For beasts it seems: yet that one beast which first
Hath tasted, envies not, but brings with joy
The good befallen him, author unsuspect,⁹
Friendly to man, far from deceit or guile.

What fear I then, rather what know to fear
7. “Humane” probably means “kindly” or “gra-
8. All five of Eve’s senses—sight, hearing, smell,
cious,” but also suggests the oxymoron “human
taste, and touch—are involved in her temptation.
Goddess,” expressing Satan’s prediction of what
9. I.e., authority whose testimony does not arouse
Eve will become if she eats the fruit.

suspicion.

442 / JOHN MILTON

Under this ignorance of good and evil,
775 Of God or death, of law or penalty?
Here grows the cure of all, this fruit divine,
Fair to the eye, inviting to the taste,
Of virtue⁰ to make wise: what hinders then
power
To reach, and feed at once both body and mind?”
780 So saying, her rash hand in evil hour,
Forth reaching to the fruit, she plucked, she eat.⁰ *ate*
Earth felt the wound, and Nature from her seat
Sighing through all her works gave signs of woe,
That all was lost. Back to the thicket slunk

785 The guilty serpent, and well might, for Eve
Intent now wholly on her taste, naught else
Regarded; such delight till then, as seemed,
In fruit she never tasted, whether true
Or fancied so, through expectation high
790 Of knowledge; nor was godhead from her thought.¹
Greedily she engorged without restraint,
And knew not eating death:² satiate at length,
And heightened as with wine, jocund and boon,⁰ *jovial*
Thus to herself she pleasingly began:
795 “O sovereign, virtuous, precious of all trees
In Paradise! of operation blest
To sapience,³ hitherto obscured, infamed,⁰ *defamed*.
And thy fair fruit let hang, as to no end
Created; but henceforth my early care,
800 Not without song each morning, and due praise
Shall tend thee, and the fertile burden ease
Of thy full branches offered free to all;
Till dieted by thee I grow mature
In knowledge, as the gods who all things know;
805 Though others⁴ envy what they cannot give:
For had the gift been theirs, it had not here
Thus grown. Experience, next to thee I owe,
Best guide; not following thee I had remained
In ignorance; thou open’st Wisdom’s way,
810 And giv’st access, though secret⁰ she retire. *hidden*
And I perhaps am secret;⁰ Heaven is high, *unseen*
High and remote to see from thence distinct

Each thing on Earth; and other care perhaps
May have diverted from continual watch
815 Our great Forbidder, safe with all his spies
About him. But to Adam in what sort0 *guise*
Shall I appear? Shall I to him make known
As yet my change, and give him to partake
Full happiness with me, or rather not,
820 But keep the odds of knowledge in my power
1. I.e., she also expected to achieve godhead.
from the Latin *sapere*, “to be wise,” which has its
2. I.e., she was eating death and did not know it;
roots in the verb “to taste.”
also, she was unaware while she ate death.
4. I.e., the other gods; Eve here echoes the lesson
3. Wisdom, of the wise and those with good taste;
taught her by the serpent.

P A R A D I S E L O S T : B O O K 1 / 4 4 3

Without copartner? so to add what wants0 *lacks*
In female sex, the more to draw his love,
And render me more equal, and perhaps,
A thing not undesirable, sometime
825 Superior: for, inferior, who is free?
This may be well: but what if God have seen
And death ensue? Then I shall be no more,
And Adam, wedded to another Eve,
Shall live with her enjoying, I extinct;
830 A death to think. Confirmed then I resolve,
Adam shall share with me in bliss or woe:

So dear I love him, that with him all deaths
I could endure, without him live no life.”
So saying, from the tree her step she turned,
835 But first low reverence done, as to the power
That dwelt within, whose presence had infused
Into the plant scientaP sap, derived *knowledge-giving*
From nectar, drink of gods. Adam the while
Waiting desirous her return, had wove
840 Of choicest flowers a garland to adorn
Her tresses, and her rural labors crown,
As reapers oft are wont0 their harvest queen. *accustomed to do*
[to]
Great joy he promised to his thoughts, and new
Solace in her return, so long delayed:
845 Yet oft his heart, divine0 of something ill, *apprehensive*
Mishap gave him; he the faltering measure5 felt;
And forth to meet her went, the way she took
That morn when first they parted. By the Tree
Of Knowledge he must pass; there he her met,
850 Scarce from the tree returning; in her hand
A bough of fairest fruit that downy smiled,
New gathered, and ambrosial smell diffused.
To him she hastened, in her face excuse
Came prologue, and apology to prompt,6
855 Which with bland0 words at will she thus addressed: *mild;*
coaxing
“Hast thou not wondered, Adam, at my stay?
Thee I have missed, and thought it long, deprived
Thy presence, agony of love till now

Not felt, nor shall be twice; for never more
 860 Mean I to try, what rash untried I sought,
 The pain of absence from thy sight. But strange
 Hath been the cause, and wonderful to hear:
 This tree is not as we are told, a tree
 Of danger tasted,⁰ nor to evil unknown *if tasted*
 865 Opening the way, but of divine effect
 To open eyes, and make them gods who taste;
 And hath been tasted such. The serpent wise,
 Or⁰ not restrained as we, or not obeying, *either*
 5. I.e., the irregular beat (of his heart). logue to her “apology,”
 or formal defense of her 6. Her excuse, apparent in her
 expression, is a pro- actions.

4 4 4 / J O H N M I L T O N

Hath eaten of the fruit, and is become,
 Not dead, as we are threatened, but thenceforth
 Endued with human voice and human sense,
 Reasoning to⁰ admiration, and with me *so as to produce*
 Persuasively hath so prevailed, that I
 Have also tasted, and have also found
 Th’ effects to correspond—opener mine eyes,
 Dim erst,⁰ dilated spirits, ampler heart, *previously*
 And growing up to godhead; which for thee
 Chiefly I sought, without thee can despise.
 For bliss, as thou hast part, to me is bliss,
 Tedious, unshared with thee, and odious soon.
 Thou therefore also taste, that equal lot
 May join us, equal joy, as equal love;
 Lest, thou not tasting, different degree⁷

Disjoin us, and I then too late renounce
Deity for thee, when Fate will not permit.”
Thus Eve with countenance blithe her story told;
But in her cheek distemper⁰ flushing glowed. *intoxicated*
On th’ other side, Adam, soon as he heard
The fatal trespass done by Eve, amazed,
Astonied⁸ stood and blank, while horror chill
Ran through his veins, and all his joints relaxed;
From his slack hand the garland wreathed for Eve
Down dropped, and all the faded roses shed.
Speechless he stood and pale, till thus at length
First to himself he inward silence broke:
“O fairest of creation, last and best
Of all God’s works, creature in whom excelled
Whatever can to sight or thought be formed,
Holy, divine, good, amiable, or sweet!
How art thou lost, how on a sudden lost,
Defaced, deflowered, and now to death devote⁰ *doomed*
Rather how hast thou yielded to transgress
The strict forbiddance, how to violate
The sacred fruit forbidden! Some cursed fraud
Of enemy hath beguiled thee, yet unknown,
And me with thee hath ruined, for with thee
Certain my resolution is to die.
How can I live without thee, how forgo
Thy sweet converse and love so dearly joined,
To live again in these wild woods forlorn?
Should God create another Eve, and I

Another rib afford, yet loss of thee
Would never from my heart; no, no! I feel
The link of nature draw me: flesh of flesh,
Bone of my bone thou art, and from thy state
Mine never shall be parted, bliss or woe.”

So having said, as one from sad dismay

7. I.e., different rank, since she, as she believes, 8. Stunned,
with a likely pun: turned to stone, has grown “up to godhead”
while he has not.

P A R A D I S E L O S T : B O O K 1 / 4 4 5

Recomforted, and after thoughts disturbed

Submitting to what seemed remediless,

920 Thus in calm mood his words to Eve he turned:

“Bold deed thou hast presumed, adventurous Eve

And peril great provoked, who thus hast dared

Had it been only coveting to eye

That sacred fruit, sacred to abstinence, *dedicated*

925 Much more to taste it, under ban to touch.

But past who can recall, or done undo?

Not God omnipotent, nor Fate! Yet so

Perhaps thou shalt not die, perhaps the fact *deed*

Is not so heinous now, foretasted fruit,

930 Profaned first by the serpent, by him first

Made common and unhallowed ere our taste,

Nor yet on him found deadly; he yet lives,

Lives, as thou saidst, and gains to live as man

Higher degree of life: inducement strong

935 To us, as likely, tasting, to attain

Proportional ascent, which cannot be

But to be gods, or angels, demigods.
Nor can I think that God, Creator wise,
Though threatening, will in earnest so destroy
940 Us his prime creatures, dignified so high,
Set over all his works, which in our fall,
For us created, needs with us must fail,
Dependent made; so God shall uncreate,
Be frustrate, do, undo, and labor lose;
945 Not well conceived of God, who, though his power
Creation could repeat, yet would be loath
Us to abolish, lest the adversary
Triumph and say: Tickle their state whom God
Most favors; who can please him long? Me first
950 He ruined, now mankind; whom will he next?
Matter of scorn, not to be given the foe.
However, I with thee have fixed my lot,
Certain⁰ to undergo like doom: if death *resolved*
Consort⁰ with thee, death is to me as life; *keep company*
955 So forcible within my heart I feel
The bond of nature draw me to my own,
My own in thee, for what thou art is mine;
Our state cannot be severed; we are one,
One flesh; to lose thee were to lose myself.”
960 So Adam, and thus Eve to him replied:
“O glorious trial of exceeding love,
Illustrious evidence, example high!
Engaging me to emulate; but short
Of thy perfection, how shall I attain,

965 Adam? from whose dear side I boast me sprung,
And gladly of our union hear thee speak,
One heart, one soul in both; whereof good proof
This day affords, declaring thee resolved,
Rather than death or aught than death more dread
4 4 6 / J O H N M I L T O N
Shall separate us, linked in love so dear,
To undergo with me one guilt, one crime,
If any be, of tasting this fair fruit;
Whose virtue (for of good still good proceeds,
Direct, or by occasion) hath presented *indirection*
This happy trial of thy love, which else
So eminently never had been known.
Were it I thought death menaced would ensue
This my attempt, I would sustain alone
The worst, and not persuade thee, rather die
Deserted, than oblige thee with a fact *involve in guilt / deed*
Pernicious to thy peace, chiefly assured
Remarkably so late of thy so true,
So faithful love unequalled; but I feel
Far otherwise th' event—*not death, but life outcome*
Augmented, opened eyes, new hopes, new joys,
Taste so divine, that what of sweet before
Hath touched my sense, flat seems to this, and harsh.
On my experience, Adam, freely taste,
And fear of death deliver to the winds.”
So saying, she embraced him, and for joy
Tenderly wept, much won that he his love

Had so ennobled, as of choice to incur
Divine displeasure for her sake, or death.
In recompense (for such compliance bad
Such recompense best merits), from the bough
She gave him of that fair enticing fruit
With liberal hand; he scrupled not to eat,
Against his better knowledge, not deceived,⁹
But fondly⁰ overcome with female charm. *foolishly*
Earth trembled from her entrails, as again
In pangs, and Nature gave a second groan,
Sky lowered, and muttering thunder, some sad drops
Wept at completing of the mortal sin
Original; while Adam took no thought,
Eating his fill, nor Eve to iterate
Her former trespass feared, the more to soothe
Him with her loved society; that now
As with new wine intoxicated both,
They swim in mirth, and fancy that they feel
Divinity within them breeding wings
Wherewith to scorn the Earth. But that false fruit
Far other operation first displayed,
Carnal desire inflaming; he on Eve
Began to cast lascivious eyes, she him
As wantonly repaid; in lust they burn,
Till Adam thus ‘gan Eve to dalliance move:
“Eve, now I see thou art exact⁰ of taste, *discriminating*
And elegant, of sapience¹ no small part,
9. Cf. 1 Timothy 2.14: “And Adam was not transgression.”

deceived, but the woman being deceived was in the 1. See note 3, p. 442.

P A R A D I S E L O S T : B O O K 1 / 4 4 7

Since to each meaning savor we apply,

1020 And palate call judicious. I the praise

Yield thee, so well this day thou hast purveyed.⁰ *provisioned*
us

Much pleasure we have lost, while we abstained

From this delightful fruit, nor known till now

True relish, tasting; if such pleasure be

1025 In things to us forbidden, it might be wished,

For this one tree had been forbidden ten.

But come; so well refreshed, now let us play,

As meet⁰ is, after such delicious fare; *appropriate*

For never did thy beauty, since the day

1030 I saw thee first and wedded thee, adorned

With all perfections, so enflame my sense

With ardor to enjoy thee, fairer now

Than ever, bounty of this virtuous tree.”

So said he, and forbore not glance or toy^o *caress*

1035 Of amorous intent, well understood

OP Eve, whose eye darted contagious fire. *by*

Her hand he seized, and to a shady bank,

Thick overhead with verdant roof embowered

He led her, nothing loath; flowers were the couch,

1040 Pansies, and violets, and asphodel,²

And hyacinth—Earth’s freshest, softest lap.

There they their fill of love and love’s disport

Took largely, of their mutual guilt the seal,

The solace of their sin, till dewy sleep
 1045 Oppressed them, wearied with their amorous play.
 Soon as the force of that fallacious fruit,
 That with exhilarating vapor bland⁰ *pleasing*
 About their spirits had played, and inmost powers
 Made err, was now exhaled, and grosser sleep
 1050 Bred of unkindly⁰ fumes,⁰ with conscious dreams
unnatural / vapors
 Encumbered, now had left them, up they rose
 As from unrest, and each the other viewing,
 Soon found their eyes how opened, and their minds
 How darkened. Innocence, that as a veil
 1055 Had shadowed them from knowing ill, was gone;
 Just confidence, and native righteousness,
 And honor from about them, naked left
 To guilty Shame; he^o covered,⁰ but his robe *Shame / [them]*
 Uncovered more. So rose the Danite strong,
 1060 Herculean Samson, from the harlot-lap
 Of Philistean Dalilah, and waked
 Shorn of his strength;³ they destitute and bare
 Of all their virtue. Silent, and in face
 Confounded, long they sat, as stricken mute;
 1065 Till Adam, though not less than Eve abashed,
 At length gave utterance to these words constrained:
 2. A flower conventionally held to be immortal
 hair, the source of his strength, while he slept.
 and said to cover the Elysian meadows.
 Their story is told in Judges 16 and retold in Mil-

3. The Philistine Dalilah betrayed her husband,
ton's "Samson Agonistes."

Samson (of the tribe of Dan), by cutting off his

448 / JOHN MILTON

"O Eve, in evil⁴ hour thou didst give ear
To that false worm,⁰ of whomsoever taught *serpent*
To counterfeit man's voice, true in our fall,
False in our promised rising; since our eyes
Opened we find indeed, and find we know
Both good and evil, good lost, and evil got:
Bad fruit of knowledge, if this be to know,
Which leaves us naked thus, of honor void,
Of innocence, of faith, of purity,
Our wonted⁰ ornaments now soiled and stained, *customary*
And in our faces evident the signs
Of foul concupiscence;⁰ whence evil store, *lust*
Even shame, the last of evils; of the first
Be sure then. How shall I behold the face
Henceforth of God or angel, erst with joy
And rapture so oft beheld? Those heavenly shapes
Will dazzle now this earthly⁰ with their blaze *earthly nature*
Insufferably bright. O might I here
In solitude live savage, in some glade
Obscured, where highest woods, impenetrable
To star or sunlight, spread their umbrage⁰ broad, *shade*
And brown as evening! Cover me, ye pines,
Ye cedars, with innumerable boughs
Hide me, where I may never see them more!

But let us now, as in bad plight, devise
 What best may for the present serve to hide
 The parts of each from other, that seem most
 To shame obnoxious,⁰ and unseemliest seen; *liable*
 Some tree whose broad smooth leaves together sewed,
 And girded on our loins, may cover round
 Those middle parts, that this newcomer, Shame,
 There sit not, and reproach us as unclean.”
 So counseled he, and both together went
 Into the thickest wood; there soon they chose
 The figtree, not that kind for fruit renowned,
 But such as at this day, to Indians known,
 In Malabar or Deccan⁵ spreads her arms
 Branching so broad and long, that in the ground
 The bended twigs take root, and daughters grow
 About the mother tree, a pillared shade
 High overarched, and echoing walks between;
 There oft the Indian herdsman, shunning heat,
 Shelters in cool, and tends his pasturing herds
 At loopholes cut through thickest shade. Those leaves
 They gathered, broad as Amazonian targe,⁶
 And with what skill they had, together sewed,
 To gird their waist; vain covering, if to hide

4. Here punning bitterly on Eve’s name, Adam will 5. Sections of southern India.

reaffirm its etymology—from *hava*, Hebrew for 6. The Amazons, mythical female warriors, carried

“life”—in 11.159—61. large, crescent-shaped shields called “targes.”

P A R A D I S E L O S T : B O O K 1 / 4 4 9

Their guilt and dreaded shame! O how unlike

1115 To that first naked glory! Such of late

Columbus found th' American, so girt

With feathered cincture,⁰ naked else and wild *belt*

Among the trees on isles and woody shores.

Thus fenced, and, as they thought, their shame in part

1120 Covered, but not at rest or ease of mind,

They sat them down to weep; nor only tears

Rained at their eyes, but high winds worse within

Began to rise, high passions, anger, hate,

Mistrust, suspicion, discord, and shook sore

ii25 Their inward state of mind, calm region once

And full of peace, now tossed and turbulent:

For Understanding ruled not, and the Will

Heard not her lore, both in subjection now

To sensual Appetite, who, from beneath

1130 Usurping over sovereign Reason, claimed

Superior sway.⁷ From thus distempered breast,

Adam, estranged in look and altered style,

Speech intermitted thus to Eve renewed:

“Would thou hadst hearkened to my words, and stayed

1135 With me, as I besought thee, when that strange

Desire of wandering, this unhappy morn,

I know not whence possessed thee! we had then

Remained still happy, not as now, despoiled

Of all our good, shamed, naked, miserable.

1140 Let none henceforth seek needless cause to approve⁰
prove

The faith they owe;^o when earnestly they seek own
Such proof, conclude, they then begin to fail.”

To whom, soon moved with touch of blame, thus Eve:

“What words have passed thy lips, Adam severe?

1145 Imput’st thou that to my default, or will

Of wandering, as thou call’st it, which who knows

But might as ill have happened, thou being by,

Or to thyself perhaps? Hadst thou been there,

Or here th’ attempt, thou couldst not have discerned

ii50 Fraud in the serpent, speaking as he spake;

No ground of enmity between us known,

Why he should mean me ill, or seek to harm?

Was I to have never parted from thy side?

As good have grown there still a lifeless rib.

ii55 Being as I am, why didst not thou, the head,⁸

Command me absolutely not to go,

Going into such danger, as thou saidst?

Too facile⁰ then, thou didst not much gainsay, *easy, mild*

Nay, didst permit, approve, and fair dismiss.

7. As a result of the Fall, the higher faculties, rea-

8. Cf. Corinthians 11.3: “the head of the woman

son and understanding, are subjected to appetite

is the man.”

and the physical senses.

4 5 0 / J O H N M I L T O N

1160 Hadst thou been firm and fixed in thy dissent,

Neither had I transgressed, nor thou with me.”
To whom, then first incensed, Adam replied:
Ts this the love, is this the recompense
Of mine to thee, ingrateful Eve, expressed⁰ *revealed*
ii65 Immutable when thou were lost, not I,
Who might have lived and joyed immortal bliss,
Yet willingly chose rather death with thee?
And am I now upbraided as the cause
Of thy transgressing? not enough severe,
ii70 It seems, in thy restraint! What could I more?
I warned thee, I admonished thee, foretold
The danger, and the lurking enemy
That lay in wait: beyond this had been force,
And force upon free will hath here no place.
1175 But confidence then bore thee on, secure
Either to meet no danger, or to find
Matter of glorious trial; and perhaps
I also erred in overmuch admiring
What seemed in thee so perfect, that I thought
ii80 No evil durst attempt thee! but I rue
That error now, which is become my crime,
And thou th’ accuser. Thus it shall befall
Him who, to worth in women overtrusting,
Lets her will rule; restraint she will not brook,⁰ *tolerate*
ii85 And, left to herself, if evil thence ensue,
She first his weak indulgence will accuse.”
Thus they in mutual accusation spent
The fruitless hours, but neither self-condemning;

And of their vain contest appeared no end.

1 6 6 0 - 6 5 1 6 6 7 , 1 6 7 4

*From Samson Agonistes*⁹

60 But peace, I must not quarrel with the will

Of highest dispensation,¹ which herein

Haply⁰ had ends above my reach to know: *perhaps*

Suffices that to me strength is my bane,²

And proves the source of all my miseries,

65 So many, and so huge, that each apart,

Would ask^o a life to wail; but chief of all, *need*

9. This dramatic poem tells the story of the biblical Samson (Judges 13—16) from the time of his work as a slave. In these lines, Samson laments his captivity to his death. Samson was given great fate.

strength by God to deliver his people from their

1. I.e., God; dispensation refers to the ordering of longtime enemies, the Philistines. The source of events by divine providence.

his strength was his long hair. His Philistine wife,

2. I.e., it is sufficient that (I know?) my strength Dalila, badgered him into revealing the secret of is the cause of my downfall.

his strength, then cut his hair and betrayed him to

SAMSON AGONISTES / 451

O loss of sight, of thee I most complain!

Blind among enemies, O worse than chains,

Dungeon, or beggary, or decrepit age!
70 Light the prime work of God to me is extinct,
And all her various objects of delight
Annull'd, which might in part my grief have eased,
Inferior to the vilest now become
Of man or worm; the vilest here excel me,
75 They creep, yet see; I dark in light exposed
To daily fraud, contempt, abuse, and wrong.
Within doors, or without, still⁰ as a fool *always*
In power of others, never in my own;
Scarce half I seem to live, dead more than half,
so O dark, dark, dark, amid the blaze of noon,
Irrecoverably dark, total eclipse
Without all hope of day!
O first created beam, and thou great word,
Let there be light, and light was over all;³
85 Why am I thus bereaved⁰ thy prime decree? *robbed of*
The sun to me is dark
And silent as the moon,
When she deserts the night
Hid in her vacant interlunar cave.⁴
90 Since light so necessary is to life,
And almost life itself, if it be true
That light is in the soul,
She⁵ all in every part; why was the sight
To such a tender ball as th' eye confined,
95 So obvious⁰ and so easy to be quench'd, *exposed*
And not, as feeling, through all parts diffused,

**That she might look at will through every pore?
 Then had I not been thus exiled from light,
 As in the land of darkness yet in light,
 100 To live a life half dead, a living death,
 And buried; but O yet more miserable!
 Myself my sepulchre, a moving grave,
 Buried, yet not exempt
 By privilege of death and burial
 105 From worst of other evils, pains, and wrongs,
 But made hereby obnoxious⁰ more *exposed*
 To all the miseries of life,
 Life in captivity
 Among inhuman foes.**

1 6 4 7 - 7 0 ? 1 6 7 1

3. Genesis 1.3: “And God said, Let there be light: moon was called the interlunar time (*interlunii*); and there was light”; this is God’s “prime work” during this time, according to myth, the moon (line 70) and his “prime decree” (line 85) because retired to a cave somewhere beneath the earth; it was his first (and perhaps most important) creation. “vacant,” from the Latin *vacare*, to be at leisure,

i.e., resting.

4. The Romans called the moon, when it was in
 5. I.e., the soul; according to Augustine (*De Trinitate* 5.6), the soul is whole in every part of the

“silent” means “not shining.” This phase of the body.

452

SIR JOHN SUCKLING

1609-1642

Song 1

Why so pale and wan, fond lover? *foolish*

Prith ee, why so pale? *pray thee*

Will, when looking well can't move her,

Looking ill prevail?

Prith ee, why so pale?

Why so dull and mute, young sinner?

Prith ee, why so mute?

Will, when speaking well can't win her,

Saying nothing do 't?

Prith ee, why so mute?

Quit, quit, for shame; this will not move, *0*
***persuade* This cannot take her.**

If of herself she will not love,

Nothing can make her:

The devil take her!

1638

Sonnet II 2

Of thee, kind boy, I ask no red and white, 3

To make up my delight;

No odd becoming graces,

Black eyes, or little know-not-whats in faces
; 5 Make me but mad enough, give me good
store

Of love for her I count ;
I ask no more ,
‘Tis love in love that makes the sport.
There’s no such thing as that we beauty call,
io It is mere cozenage all; *fraud*
For though some, long ago,
Liked certain colors mingled so and so,
That doth not tie men now from choosing new
; If I a fancy take
15 To black and blue ,
That fancy doth hit beauty make .

1. First printed in Suckling’s play *Aglaure* 4.2
the first performance of the play, in 1637.

(1638). Orsames, a friend to the prince (Thersa-

2. The term “sonnet” was formerly applied to any
mes), sings it upon request, and then claims it is
short love lyric.

“a little foolish counsell (Madam) I gave a friend

3. The colors conventionally used to depict female
of mine foure or five yeares agoe.” It was evidently
beauty in love poetry (in the Petrarchan tradition).

popular, occurring in at least five musical settings,
Kind boy: Cupid, as god of love.

with the first probably written by Henry Lawes for

4. I.e., the “red and white” of line 1.

U P O N M Y L A D Y C A R L I S L E ’ S W A L K I N G / 4 5 3

‘Tis not the meat, but ‘tis the appetite
Make eating a delight ;

A n d i f I l i k e o n e d i s h

20 M o r e t h a n a n o t h e r , t h a t a p h e a s a n t i s ;

W h a t i n o u r w a t c h e s , t h a t i n u s i s f o u n d : S o
t o t h e h e i g h t a n d n i c k ° *critical point*

W e u p b e w o u n d ,

N o m a t t e r b y w h a t h a n d o r t r i c k .

1 6 4 6

Upon My Lady Carlisle's Walking in Hampton Court Garden

DIALOGUE 5

T.C. J.S.

Thom.

D i d s t t h o u n o t f i n d t h e p l a c e i n s p i r e d ,

A n d f l o w e r s , a s i f t h e y h a d d e s i r e d

N o o t h e r s u n , s t a r t f r o m t h e i r b e d s ,

A n d f o r a s i g h t s t e a l o u t t h e i r h e a d s ?

5 H e a r d s t t h o u n o t m u s i c w h e n s h e t a l k e d ?

A n d d i d s t n o t f i n d t h a t a s s h e w a l k e d

S h e t h r e w r a r e p e r f u m e s a l l a b o u t ,

S u c h a s b e a n - b l o s s o m s n e w l y o u t ,

O r c h a f e d 0 s p i c e s g i v e ? — *warmed*

J.S.

i o I m u s t c o n f e s s t h o s e p e r f u m e s , T o m ,

I d i d n o t s m e l l ; n o r f o u n d t h a t f r o m

H e r p a s s i n g b y o u g h t s p r u n g u p n e w .

T h e f l o w e r s h a d a l l t h e i r b i r t h f r o m y o u ;

F o r I p a s s e d o ' e r t h e s e l f - s a m e w a l k

15 A n d d i d n o t f i n d o n e s i n g l e s t a l k

O f a n y t h i n g t h a t w a s t o b r i n g

T h i s u n k n o w n a f t e r - a f t e r - s p r i n g .

Thom.

D u l l a n d i n s e n s i b l e , c o u l d s t s e e

A t h i n g s o n e a r a d e i t y

2 0 M o v e u p a n d d o w n , a n d f e e l n o c h a n g e ?

5. Lucy Hay, countess of Carlisle (1599-1660),

1595-1640; see pp. 385-90), who wrote two

was a patron of many poets. The “T.C.” or “Thom.”

poems to Hay; “J.S.” is John Suckling.

of this dialogue is the poet Thomas Carew (ca.

4 5 4 / S I R J O H N S U C K L I N G

J.S.

None, and so great, were alike strange;

I had my thoughts, but not your way.

All are not born, sir, to the bay.⁶

Alas! Tom, I am flesh and blood,

25 And was consulting how I could

In spite of masks and hoods descry⁰ *reveal*

The parts denied unto the eye.

I was undoing all she wore,

And had she walked but one turn more,

30 Eve in her first state had not been

More naked or more plainly seen.

Thom.

‘Twas well for thee she left the place;

There is great danger in that face.

But hadst thou viewed her leg and thigh,

35 And upon that discovery

**Searched after parts that are more dear
(As fancy seldom stops so near),
No time or age had ever seen
So lost a thing as thou hadst been.**

1 6 4 6

A Ballad upon a Wedding⁷

**I tell thee, Dick,⁸ where I have been,
Where I the rarest things have seen,
Oh, things without compare!
Such sights again cannot be found
5 In any place on English ground,
Be it at wake^o or fair. *parish festival*
At Charing Cross,⁹ hard by the way
Where we (thou know'st) do sell our hay,
There is a house with stairs;
io And there did I see coming down**

6. A crown of bay (or laurel) leaves was the traditional recognition of poetic achievement.

1552—1599) published perhaps the most well-

7. This poem parodies the epithalamion, a poem known instance of the form in 1595 (see p. 195).

written to celebrate a marriage, the Greek name of

8. As a short form of the name Richard, a generic which conveys that it was sung on the threshold of name for a man. The names used below (in lines the bridal chamber. The genre, as practiced by the 22—24) are all conventional or type names for men.

Latin poets, characteristically includes the invocation to the Muses (sources of artistic inspiration), the bringing home of the bride, the singing

9. A busy center in London located near the Haymarket; originally the site of a stone cross erected by King Edward I (1239—1307) in memory of his example was written by Sir Philip Sidney (1554—queen, Eleanor.

A B A L L A D U P O N A W E D D I N G / 4 5 5

Such folk as are not in our town,

Forty, at least, in pairs.

Amongst the rest, one pest'lent⁰ fine

exceptionally

(His beard no bigger, though, than thine)

15 Walked on before the rest.

Our landlord looks like nothing to him;

The king (God bless him!), 'twould undo him

Should he go still⁰ so dressed.

always

At course-a-park,¹ without all doubt,

20 He should have first been taken out

By all the maids i' th' town,

Though lusty Roger there had been,

Or little George upon the Green,

Or Vincent of the Crown.

25 But wot^o you what? the youth was going
know

To make an end of all his wooing;

The parson for him stayed.

Yet by his leave, for all his haste,

He did not so much wish all past,

30 Perchance, as did the maid.

The maid (and thereby hangs a tale),

For such a maid no Whitsun-ale²

Could ever yet produce;

No grape, that's kindly ripe,³ could be

35 So round, so plump, so soft as she,

Nor half so full of juice.

Her finger was so small the ring

Would not stay on, which they did bring;

It was too wide a peck:⁴

40 And to say truth (for out it must),

It looked like the great collar (just)

About our young colt's neck.

Her feet beneath her petticoat,

Like little mice, stole in and out,

45 As if they feared the light;

But oh, she dances such a way,

No sun upon an Easter day

Is half so fine a sight!

He would have kissed her once or twice,

50 But she would not, she was so nice,^o

demure

She would not do 't in sight;

1. A rural game in which a girl chooses a boy to
enth Sunday after Easter).

chase her.

3. Naturally ripe; i.e., vine-ripened.

2. A church festival, or "ale," at which much ale

4. A measure of capacity; i.e., much too large.

was drunk; held at Whitsuntide (or Pentecost, sev-

4 5 6 / SIR JOHNSUCKLING

And then she looked as who should say,

"I will do what I list⁰ today; *desire*

And you shall do't at night."

Her cheeks so rare a white was on,

No daisy makes comparison

(Who sees them is undone),

For streaks of red were mingled there,

Such as are on a Catherine pear⁵

(The side that's next the sun).

Her lips were red, and one was thin

Compared to that was next her chin

(Some bee had stung it newly);

But, Dick, her eyes so guard her face

I durst no more upon them gaze

Than on the sun in July.

Her mouth so small, when she does speak,

Thou 'dst swear her teeth her words did break,

That they might passage get;

70 But she so handled still the matter,
They came as good as ours, or better,
And are not spent⁰ a^o whit.^o *used up /one /bit*
If wishing should be any sin,
The parson himself had guilty been
75 (She looked that day so purely);
And did the youth so oft the feat
At night, as some did in conceit,⁰ *imagination*
It would have spoiled him, surely.
Passion o' me, how I run on!⁶
so There's that that would be thought upon,
I trow,^o besides the bride. *suppose*
The business of the kitchen's great,
For it is fit that man should eat,
Nor was it there denied.
85 Just in the nick the cook knocked thrice,
And all the waiters in a trice
His summons did obey;
Each serving-man, with dish in hand,
Marched boldly up, like our trained band,⁰ *militia*
90 Presented, and away.
When all the meat was on the table,
What man of knife or teeth was able

5. A small variety of pear. lines following the last three, appears after line 96.

6. In the 1646 edition of Suckling's collection The order here is that of the 1648 and subsequent *Fragmenta Aurea*, this stanza, with the first three editions.

A B A L L A D U P O N A W E D D I N G / 4 5 7

To stay to be entreated?7

And this the very reason was,

95 Before the parson could say grace,

The company was seated.

Now hats fly off, and you t h s carouse;

Healths 0 first go round, and then t h e h o u s e ;

toasts

The bride's c a m e thick a n d thick:

100 And when 'twas n a m e d another's health,

Perhaps he m a d e it hers by stealth;

And w h o c o u l d h e l p it, Dick?

O' th' s u d d e n up they rise and d a n c e ;

Then sit again a n d sigh and glance;

105 Then d a n c e again and kiss.

Thus several ways t h e t i m e did pass,

Till every w o m a n w i s h e d her place,

And every m a n w i s h e d his!

By this t i m e all w e r e stolen aside

110 To c o u n s e l and undress the bride,

But that he m u s t not know;

But yet 'twas t h o u g h t he g u e s s e d her mind,

And did not m e a n to stay b e h i n d

A b o v e an h o u r or so.

115 W h e n in he c a m e , Dick, there s h e lay

Like n e w - f a l l e n s n o w m e l t i n g away

('Twas time, I trow,° to part);

believe

Kisses w e r e n o w t h e only stay,

Which soon she gave, as who would say,
120 “God b’ w’ ye,⁸ with all my heart.”

But just as heaven would have, to cross it,

In came the bridesmaids with the posset.⁹

The bridegroom ate in spite,

For had he left the women to ‘t,

125 It would have cost two hours to do ‘t,

Which were too much that night.

At length the candle’s out, and now

All that they had not done, they do.

What that is, who can tell?

130 But I believe it was no more

Than thou and I have done before

With Bridget and with Nell.

ca. 1641

1646

7. I.e., what man able to eat could wait to be asked

9. A hot drink of spiced milk curdled with ale or
to sit down?

wine, traditionally given to a groom on his wedding

8. A contraction for *God be with ye*, pronounced
night.

in two syllables.

458 / ANNE BRADSTREET

Out upon It!

O u t u p o n i t! I have loved

T h r e e w h o l e d a y s t o g e t h e r;

A n d a m l i k e t o l o v e t h r e e m o r e,

If it prove fair weather.
5 T i m e shall molt away his wings,
Ere he shall discover
I n t h e w h o l e w i d e world again
S u c h a c o n s t a n t lover.
B u t t h e spite o n ' t is, n o praise
10 I s d u e at all to m e ;
L o v e w i t h m e h a d m a d e n o stays¹
H a d it any b e e n b u t she.
H a d it any b e e n but she,
A n d that very face,²
15 T h e r e h a d b e e n at least ere this
A d o z e n d o z e n in her place.

1 6 5 9

A N N E B R A D S T R E E T

ca. 1612-1672

In Honor of that High and Mighty Princess,
Queen Elizabeth, of Most Happy Memory¹

*The Proem*²

A l t h o u g h , g r e a t Q u e e n , t h o u n o w i n s i l e n c e
lie, Yet thy l o u d h e r a l d⁰ f a m e d o t h t o t h e s k y

royal crier

T h y w o n d r o u s w o r t h p r o c l a i m i n e v e r y c l i m e ,⁰
climate, region

A n d s o h a s v o w e d , w h i l s t t h e r e i s w o r l d , o r t i m e ;

S o g r e a t ' s t h y g l o r y , a n d t h i n e e x c e l l e n c e ,

T h e s o u n d t h e r e o f r a p s⁰ e v e r y h u m a n e s e n s e ;

enraptures

**T h a t m e n a c c o u n t i t n o impiety,
To say, t h o u w e r t a f l e s h l y 0 d e i t y . 0**

earthly / goddess

T h o u s a n d s b r i n g o f f ' r i n g s , (t h o u g h o u t o f d a t e)

T h y w o r l d o f h o n o r s t o a c c u m u l a t e ,

' M o n g s t h u n d r e d h e c a t o m b s o f r o a r i n g 3 v e r s e ,

1. I.e., found no support.

2. Brief introductory verse.

2. In other versions, this line reads "That very very

3. Loud. *Hecatombs*: a great number of things pre-
face."

sented as an offering (originally from the Greek,

1. Q u e e n Elizabeth I (1 5 3 3 - 1 6 0 3 ; see pp. 1 4 2 -
the sacrifice of one hundred oxen).

43), who ruled England for forty-four years.

**I N H O N O R O F T H A T H I G H A N D M I G H T Y P R
I N C E S S / 4 5 9**

M i n e b l e a t i n g 4 s t a n d s b e f o r e t h y r o y a l h e a r s e : 0 g r a v e

T h o u n e v e r d i d s t , n o r c a n s t t h o u n o w d i s d a i n ,

T ' a c c e p t t h e t r i b u t e o f a l o y a l b r a i n ;

**1 5 T h y c l e m e n c y d i d y e r s t 0 e s t e e m a s m u c h
formerly T h e a c c l a m a t i o n s o f t h e p o o r , a s r i c h ;**

**W h i c h m a k e s m e d e e m , 0 m y r u d e n e s s i s n o
w r o n g , t h i n k T h o u g h I r e s o u n d t h y g r e a t n e s s
' m o n g s t t h e t h r o n g .**

The Poem

N o 0 p h o e n i x p e n , n o r S p e n s e r ' s p o e t r y , n e i t h e r

2 0 N o S p e e d ' s , n o r C a m d e n ' s l e a r n e d h i s t o r y , 5

E l i z a ' s 0 w o r k s , w a r s , p r a i s e , c a n e ' r e E l i z a b e t h ' s

c o m p a c t , 0 *summarize*

T h e world's t h e theater w h e r e s h e did act;

N o m e m o r i e s , n o r v o l u m e s c a n c o n t a i n ,

T h e n i n e O l i m p ' a d e s ⁶ of her happy reign,

25 W h o w a s s o g o o d , s o j u s t , s o l e a r n e d , s o w i s e ,

F r o m a l l t h e k i n g s o n e a r t h s h e w o n t h e p r i z e ;

N o r s a y I m o r e t h a n d u l y i s h e r d u e ,

M i l l i o n s w i l l t e s t i f y t h a t t h i s i s t r u e ;

S h e h a t h w i p e d o f f t h ' a s p e r s i o n o f h e r s e x ,

BO T h a t w o m e n w i s d o m l a c k t o p l a y t h e R e x ; ⁰ King

S p a i n ' s m o n a r c h s a y s n o t s o ; n o r y e t h i s h o s t , ⁰
followers

S h e t a u g h t t h e m b e t t e r m a n n e r s t o t h e i r c o s t . ⁷

T h e S a l i q u e l a w ⁸ h a d n o t i n f o r c e n o w b e e n ,

I f F r a n c e h a d e v e r h o p e d f o r s u c h a Q u e e n ;

35 B u t c a n y o u D o c t o r s ⁹ n o w t h i s p o i n t d i s p u t e ,

S h e ' s a r g u m e n t e n o u g h t o m a k e y o u m u t e ;

S i n c e f i r s t t h e s u n d i d r u n , h i s n e ' e r ⁰ r u n n e d ⁰
r a c e , n e v e r / f i n i s h e d A n d e a r t h h a d t w i c e a y e a r , a n e w
- o l d f a c e ; ¹

S i n c e t i m e w a s t i m e , a n d m a n u n m a n l y m a n , ²

40 C o m e s h o w m e s u c h a p h o e n i x ³ i f y o u c a n ;

W a s e v e r p e o p l e b e t t e r r u l e d t h a n h e r s ?

W a s e v e r l a n d m o r e h a p p y , f r e e d f r o m s t i r s ? ⁰ public
disturbances 4. Crying of a sheep, goat, or calf, used contemp-
beth's forty-four-year reign, while the meaning of

tuously for a h u m a n utterance.

nine is unclear.

5. William C a m d e n (1551 — 1623) wrote *Annals or*

7. Spain's monarch was Philip II (1527-1598);

The History of the Most Renowned and Victorious
his great naval fleet, the Spanish Armada, was
Princess Elizabeth (translated from the Latin by R.
defeated by the British naval forces in 1588.

Norton, 1630). The phoenix is a legendary bird, the
8. A much-debated law excluding females from
only one of its kind. It is represented as living five
succession to the French crown.

hundred years in the Arabian desert before setting
9. Learned men or, more specifically, men profi-
itself on fire, then rising anew from its own ashes;
cient in the knowledge of law.

the “phoenix” here refers to Sir Philip Sidney

1. A reference to the seasonal changes of spring
(1 5 5 4 - 1 5 8 6 ; see pp. 2 0 8 - 2 0) . Edmund Spenser
and fall, at which times Earth dons a “new” face,
(1 5 5 2 - 1 5 9 9 ; see pp. 159-205) wrote *The Faerie*
though “old” because recurring annually.

Queene (1590, 1596), the title of which refers to

2. Time became measurable with the creation of
Q u e e n Elizabeth. John Speed (1552—1629) wrote
day and night, and distinct from eternity when God
History of Great Britain under the Conquests of the
made humans mortal as punishment for the sin of
Romans, Saxons, Danes and Normans from fulius
Adam and Eve; as a result of the Fall, Adam lost
Caesar to Our Most Gracious Sovereign King fames
his true manly nature, thus becoming “unmanly

(1611).

man.”

6. Olympiads: periods of four years reckoned from

3. The Phoenix was an emblem used to represent

one celebration of the Olympics to the next, by

Queen Elizabeth (who was often called the “Virgin

which the ancient Greeks computed time. The ver-

Queen”) because of its associations with the Virgin

sion of this poem published in 1678 has ” ‘leven”

Mary (the bird is both virginal and unique).

in place of “nine”; eleven corresponds to Eliza-

4 6 0 / A N N E B R A D S T R E E T

Did ever wealth in England so abound?

Her victories in foreign coasts resound?

Ships more invincible than Spain’s, her foe

She racked, she sacked, she sunk his Armadoe;⁰ *Armada*

Her stately troops advanced to Lisbon’s wall,

Don Anthony in’s right for to install;⁴

She frankly helped Franks’ (brave) distressed King,⁵

The states united now her fame do sing;⁶

She their protectrix was, they well do know,

Unto our dread virago,⁷ what they owe;

Her nobles sacrificed their noble blood,

Nor men, nor coin she spared, to do them good;

The rude untamed Irish she did quell,

And Tiron⁸ bound, before her picture fell.

Had ever Prince such counsellors as she?

Her self Minerva,⁹ caused them so to be;

Such soldiers, and such captains never seen,
As were the subjects of our (Pallas) Queen;
Her sea-men through all straits¹ the world did round,
Terra incognitae² might know her sound;
Her Drake came laded home with Spanish gold,³
Her Essex took Cades, their Herculean hold.⁴
But time would fail me, so my wit would too,
To tell of half she did, or she could do;
Semiramis⁵ to her is but obscure,
More infamy than fame she did procure;
She placed her glory but on Babel's walls,
World's wonder for a time, but yet it falls;
Fierce Tomris⁶ (Cyrus' heads-man, Sythians' Queen)
Had put her harness off, had she but seen
Our Amazon i'th' camp at Tilberry:⁷

4. Don Antonio of Crato (1531-1595), a claimant

2. Unknown lands (Latin).

to the throne of Portugal, was used by Elizabeth to

3. In his expedition of 1577—80, Sir Francis Drake
cause trouble for Philip II. In 1589, he went to

(1540 or 1543—1596) plundered spoils of immense
coastal Portugal and Spain with Sir Francis Drake
value from Spanish settlements along the coast of
(1546-1596) and Sir John Norris (1547-1597),

Chile and Peru.

their intention being to provoke rebellion in Por-

4. Robert Devereux (1566—1601), second earl of
tugal against the rule of Philip. Their expedition

Essex, captured Cadiz, a Spanish port, in 1596.
was a failure.

Hercules was a mythological hero with superhu-
5. From 1589 to 1590, Elizabeth sent troops and
man strength; thus “Herculean” suggests the port
£300,000 to Henry IV, the Huguenot king of
was very strong or well fortified.

France (the “Franks”), first against the Catholic
5. Late ninth-century queen of Assyria famed for
League, which raised a puppet king against him,
her beauty, military prowess, and promiscuity; she
and later against Spain.

ruled after the death of her husband Ninus (in
6. A reference to the provinces of the Low Coun-
whose murder she may have had a hand); she
tries (the representative assembly of the Nether-
reputedly built Babylon.

lands was called the States General). Elizabeth
6. First-century queen of the Massagetae, a Scyth-
aided the Protestant Netherlands in their wars
ian tribe, defeated Cyrus the Great of Persia; she
against Spain.

had his head cut off and thrown into a pot of blood,

7. A vigorous, heroic woman; a female warrior.
because, she said, he thirsted for it.

8. Hugh O’Neill (ca. 1540-1616), second earl of

7. A fortification on the north bank of the river
Tyrone and an Irish chieftain, intrigued with both

Thames, near London. In August 1588, the English army was assembled there, in readiness to defeat the Spanish and the Scots against England. He was defeated by Lord Mountjoy and the English forces repulse an expected Spanish invasion. Queen Elizabeth in 1601.

Elizabeth reviewed the troops and gave a celebrated address, reportedly wearing a silver breastplate the arts, and justice; also called Pallas Athena over her white dress and carrying a truncheon. The (Greek).

Amazons were a legendary tribe of women warriors. 1. Straits: narrow waterways connecting two large bodies of water; may also mean difficulties.

IN HONOR OF THAT HIGH AND MIGHTY PRINCESS / 461

(Judging all valor, and all majesty)

Within that Princess to have residence,

And prostrate yielded to her excellence:

Dido⁸ first foundress of proud Carthage walls,

(Who living consummates her funerals)

A great Eliza,⁹ but compared with ours,

How vanisheth her glory, wealth, and powers;

Proud profuse Cleopatra,¹ whose wrong name,

Instead of glory proved her country's shame:

Of her what worth in story's to be seen,

But that she was a rich Egyptian Queen;
Zenobia,² potent empress of the East,
And of all these without compare the best;
(Whom none but great Aurelius could quell)
Yet for our Queen is no fit parallel:
She was a phoenix Queen, so shall she be,
Her ashes not revived more phoenix she;
Her personal perfections, who would tell,
Must dip his pen i'th' Heliconian well;³
Which I may not, my pride doth but aspire,
To read what others write, and then admire.
Now say, have women worth, or have they none?
Or had they some, but with our Queen is't gone?
Nay Masculines, you have thus taxed⁰ us long, *accused*
But she though dead, will vindicate our wrong.
Let such, as say our sex is void of reason,
Know 'tis a slander now, but once was treason.
But happy England, which had such a Queen,
O happy, happy, had those days still been,
But happiness lies in a higher sphere;
Then wonder not, Eliza moves not here.
Full fraught with honor, riches, and with days,
She set, she set, like Titan⁰ in his rays. *the sun*
No more shall rise or set such glorious sun
Until the heavens' great revolution:⁴
If then new things, their old form must retain,
Eliza shall rule Albion⁰ once again. *England*

8. Legendary founder and queen of Carthage, who

evidently takes Cleopatra's name as referring by
burned herself on a funeral pyre, either to escape
metaphorical extension to her "fatherland."

marriage to Iarbas, a local king, or, according to
2. Queen of Palmyra, a city-state in ancient Syria.

Virgil, because she had been abandoned by

After the death of her husband, Odaenathus,

Aeneas, who left her before founding Rome.

whom she may have murdered, she embarked on

9. According to some authors, Dido's true name
was of expansion and called herself "Augusta" and

was Elyssa; when depicted as a chaste queen, she

the "Empress of the East"; she distinguished her-

was an appropriate figure for England's "Eliza,"

self in warfare but was finally defeated by the

though less great, Bradstreet insists.

Roman emperor Aurelian in 273.

1. First-century Egyptian queen and mistress of

3. The Hippocrene Spring, on Mt. Helicon, was

Julius Caesar, she married Marc Antony and the

the haunt of the Muses, the nine Greek sister god-

two were defeated by Octavius at the battle of

desse believed to be the sources of inspiration for

Actium; she killed herself rather than be paraded

the arts.

in triumph by Octavius. Her story is told in Shake-

4. A reference to the Apocalypse, after which a

speare's tragedy *Antony and Cleopatra*. "Cleopatra"

“new heaven and a new earth” (Revelation 21.1),
means “glory to the father” in Greek; Bradstreet
eternal and idyllic, will be established.

4 6 2 / A N N E B R A D S T R E E T

Her Epitaph

Here sleeps the Queen, this is the royal bed.

O th’ damask Rose, sprung from the white and red,5

Whose sweet perfume fills the all-filling air,

This Rose is withered, once so lovely fair,

115 *On neither tree did grow such Rose before,*

The greater was our gain, our loss the more.

Another

Here lies the pride of Queens, pattern of Kings,

So blaze0 it fame, here’s feathers for thy wings, announce

Here lies the envied, yet unparalleled Prince

120 *Whose living virtues speak (though dead long since)*

If many worlds, as that fantastic framed,6

In every one, be her great glory famed.

1 6 4 3 1 6 5 0

The Prologue7

i

To sing of wars, of captains, and of kings,

Of cities founded, common-wealths begun,

For my mean0 pen, are too superior things, inferior

And how they all, or each, their dates have run

5 Let poets, and historians set these forth,

My obscure verse shall not so dim their worth.

2

**But when my wond'ring eyes, and envious heart,
Great Bartas'8 sugared lines do but read o'er,
Fool, I do grudge the Musesy did not part⁰ divide
io 'Twixt him and me that over-fluent store;
A Bartas can do what a Bartas will,
But simple I, according to my skill.**

5. Queen Elizabeth I was the daughter of Henry VIII, whose father was Henry VII, of the House of Lancaster, and whose mother was Elizabeth, English, “Of Many Worlds in This World” (p. 500).

daughter of Edward IV, of the house of York. These

7. This poem appeared at the beginning of Bradstreet's first volume of poetry, *The Tenth Muse Lately Sprung Up in America* (1650), which was other for many years. The “Damask Rose,” a pink evidently published without Bradstreet's knowl- or variegated red-and-white rose, is here used to edge.

represent the merging of the two houses in the per-

8. Guillaume du Bartas (1544-1590), French son of Elizabeth.

poet and author of *La Semaine* (1578), an epic

6. I.e., if there are many worlds, as that visionary poem on Christian history; his works greatly influ-

or fantastical person surmised; in fact, a number
enced Bradstreet.

of Bradstreet's contemporaries, influenced by

9. The nine Greek sister goddesses believed to be
Copernicus's revolutionary theory of a heliocentric
the source of inspiration for the arts.

THE PROLOGUE / 463

3

From school-boys tongue, no rhetoric¹ we expect,

**Nor yet a sweet consort,⁰ from broken strings, *concert,*
*harmony***

15 Nor perfect beauty, where's a main defect;

My foolish, broken, blemished Muse so sings;

And this to mend, alas, no art is able,

'Cause nature made it so irreparable.

4

Nor can I, like that fluent sweet-tongued Greek

20 Who lisped at first,² speak afterwards more plain.

By art, he gladly found what he did seek,

A full requital of his striving pain:

Art can do much, but this maxim's most sure.

A weak or wounded brain admits no cure.

5

25 I am obnoxious⁰ to each carping tongue, *vulnerable*

Who says my hand a needle better fits;

A poet's pen all scorn I should thus wrong;

For such despite⁰ they cast on female wits: *scorn*

If what I do prove well, it won't advance,⁰ *be recognized*

BO They'll say it's stolen, or else it was by chance.

6

**But sure the antick³ Greeks were far more mild,
Else of our sex, why feigned⁰ they those nine,⁴ *invented*
And poesy made Calliope's owne child?⁵
So 'mongst the rest, they placed the arts divine:
35 But this weak knot⁶ they will full soon untie,
The Greeks did nought, but play the fool and lie.**

7

**Let Greeks be Greeks, and women what they are,
Men have precedency,⁷ and still excel;
It is but vain, unjustly to wage war;
40 Men can do best, and women know it well;
Preeminence in each and all is yours,
Yet grant some small acknowledgement of ours.**

1. Skill in using eloquent and persuasive language; “they” refers to those who disapprove of women writing poetry; the last line of the stanza

2. The Greek orator Demosthenes (384—322

is what “they” might say to refute the argument B.C.E.), was said to have overcome a speech defect made by the speaker in the first four lines of the

3. Ancient; but also absurd, bizarre. stanza.

4. I.e., the nine Muses.

7. Superiority in rank or estimation; also, priority

5. Calliope was the Muse of heroic poetry.

in time or succession.

6. I.e., this argument for women's right to com-

464 / ANNE BRADSTREET

8

A n d oh, ye h i g h flown quills⁸ that soar the skies,

A n d ever w i t h your prey, still c a t c h your praise,

**45 If e'er you deign⁰ t h e s e lowly lines your eyes, *think, fit*
for Give w h o l e s o m e parsley wreath, I ask no bays:⁹**

T h i s m e a n and u n r e f i n e d stuff o f m i n e ,

Will m a k e your glistering gold but m o r e to shine.

1650

Before the Birth of One of Her Children

All things w i t h i n this fading world h a t h e n d ,

Adversity d o t h still our joys attend;

No ties so strong, no friends so dear and sweet,

B u t w i t h death's parting b l o w is sure to m e e t .

5 T h e s e n t e n c e past is m o s t irrevocable,¹

A c o m m o n thing, yet oh inevitable;

H o w soon, m y dear,² d e a t h m a y m y steps attend,

H o w soon't m a y be thy lot to lose thy friend;

W e b o t h are ignorant, yet love bids m e

io T h e s e farewell lines to r e c o m m e n d to thee,

T h a t w h e n that knot's untied³ that m a d e u s o n e ,

I may s e e m thine, w h o i n e f f e c t a m n o n e .

A n d if I s e e not half my days that's due,⁴

W h a t nature w o u l d , G o d grant to yours and you;

15 T h e m a n y faults that well y o u k n o w I have,

Let be interr'd in my oblivion's⁵ grave;

**If any w o r t h or virtue w e r e in m e ,
Let that live freshly in thy m e m o r y ,
A n d w h e n t h o u feel'st no grief, as I no harms,
20 Yet love thy dead, w h o l o n g lay in t h i n e arms:
A n d w h e n thy loss shall be repaid with gains,
Look to my little babes, my dear remains.
A n d if t h o u love thy self, or loved'st m e ,
T h e s e O protect from step-dame's injury.
25 A n d if c h a n c e to t h i n e eyes shall bring this verse,
W i t h s o m e sad sighs h o n o r my absent Hearse;
corpse
A n d kiss this paper for thy love's dear sake,
W h o w i t h salt tears this last farewell did take.**

1 6 7 8

8. Feathers, poetic for wings; also, pens.

complications in childbirth was common at this

9. Leaves of the bay tree, woven into a wreath to time.

reward a poet; hence the fame or repute gained by

3. I.e., the “knot” of marriage, “untied” by death.

poetic achievement.

4. I.e., she fears she may die before age thirty-five,

1. The sin of Adam and Eve brought the “sen-
half of the seventy years traditionally seen as
tence” of death to humans.

humankind's allotment.

2. The poet addresses her husband; death due to

5. Some editors emend to “oblivious.”

THE AUTHOR TO HER BOOK / 465

To My Dear and Loving Husband

If ever two were one, then surely we.

If ever man were loved by wife, then thee;

If ever wife was happy in a man,

Compare with me yewomen if you can.

5 I prize thy love more than whole mines of gold,

Or all the riches that the East doth hold.

My love is such that rivers cannot quench,

Nor ought but love from thee give recompense

.

Thy love is such I can no way repay;

10 The heavens reward thee manifold, I pray.

Then while we live, in love let's so persevere,

That when we live no more we may live ever.

1678

The Author to Her Book6

Thou ill-formed offspring of my feeble brain,

Who after birth didst by my side remain,

Till snatched from thence by friends, less wise
than true, Who thee abroad, exposed to public view,

5 Made thee in rags, halting to th' press to trudge,

Where errors were not lessened (all may judge).

At thy return my blushing was not small,

My rambling brat (in print) should mother call,

I cast thee by as one unfit for light,

io The visage was so irksome in my sight;

Yet being mine own, at length affection would
ld Thy blemishes amend, if so I could.

I w a s h e d thy face, but m o r e d e f e c t s I saw,
A n d rubbing off a spot still m a d e a flaw.
15 I s t r e t c h e d thy joints to m a k e t h e e e v e n feet,⁷
Yet still t h o u run'st m o r e h o b b l i n g t h a n is meet;⁰
appropriate In better dress to trim t h e e w a s my mind,
But n o u g h t save h o m e s p u n c l o t h i' th' h o u s e I
find.

In this array m o n g s t vulgars⁰ may'st t h o u roam.
common people 20 In critic's h a n d s beware t h o u dost
not c o m e ,

A n d take thy way w h e r e yet t h o u art not k n o w n ;
If for thy father asked, say t h o u hadst n o n e ;

A n d for thy m o t h e r , s h e alas is poor,

W h i c h c a u s e d her thus t o s e n d t h e e o u t o f door.

1 6 7 8

6. Bradstreet is thought to have written this poem (see note 7, p. 462) was contemplated, in 1666, when a second edition of *The Tenth Muse* 7. I.e., metrical feet; to smooth out the lines.

4 6 6 / A N N E B R A D S T R E E T

A Letter to Her Husband, Absent upon

Public Employment⁸

My head, my heart, m i n e eyes, my life, nay, more,

My joy, my m a g a z i n e ⁰ of earthly store, *storehouse*

If t w o b e o n e , as surely t h o u and I,

H o w stayest t h o u there, whilst I at Ipswich⁹ lie?

5 So m a n y steps, head¹ from the heart to sever,

If but a neck, s o o n s h o u l d we be together.

I, like t h e Earth this s e a s o n , m o u r n in black,

My S u n is g o n e so far in's zodiac,

W h o m whilst I 'joyed, nor storms, nor frost I felt,

10 H i s w a r m t h s u c h frigid colds did c a u s e to melt.
M y chilled limbs n o w n u m b e d lie forlorn;
Return; return, s w e e t Sol, f r o m Capricorn;2
In this dead time, alas, w h a t c a n I m o r e
T h a n v i e w t h o s e fruits w h i c h t h r o u g h thy heat
I bore?

15 W h i c h s w e e t c o n t e n t m e n t yield me for a
space,

True living pictures of their father's face.

0 strange effect! n o w t h o u a r t s o u t h w a r d g o n e ,

1 weary grow the t e d i o u s day so long;

But w h e n t h o u northward t o m e shalt return,

20 I w i s h my S u n may never set, but burn

W i t h i n the C a n c e r 3 of my g l o w i n g breast,

T h e w e l c o m e h o u s e o f h i m m y dearest guest.

W h e r e ever, ever stay, and go n o t t h e n c e ,

Till nature's sad d e c r e e shall call t h e e h e n c e ;

25 F l e s h of thy flesh, b o n e of thy b o n e , 4

I here, t h o u there, yet b o t h but o n e .

1 6 7 8

Here Follows Some Verses upon the Burning

of Our House July 10th, 1666

Copied Out of a Loose Paper

In silent night w h e n rest I took

For sorrow near I did n o t look

I w a k e n e d w a s w i t h thund'ring n o i s e

A n d p i t e o u s shrieks of dreadful voice.

5 T h a t fearful s o u n d of "Fire!" and "Fire!"

Let n o m a n k n o w is my desire.5

8. Simon Bradstreet was in Boston as a member
 2. Tenth sign of the zodiac; represents winter. *Sol*:
 of the General Court, which was working to com-
 sun.
 bine several individual colonies into the United
 3. Fourth sign of the zodiac; represents summer.
 Colonies of New England.
 4. After God created Eve from Adam's rib, Adam
 9. Town in Massachusetts, north of Boston.
 said, "This is now bone of my bones, and flesh of
 1. Perhaps including an allusion to the biblical
 my flesh" (Genesis 2.23).
 idea that "the head of the woman is the man" (1
 5. I.e., I desire that no man know that "fearful
 Corinthians 11.3).
 sound."

HEREFOLLOWSSOMEVERSES / 4 6 7

I, starting up, the light did spy,
 And to my God my heart did cry
 To strengthen me in my distress
 10 And not to leave me succorless.⁰
without aid
 Then, coming out, beheld a^o space⁰
for a / time
 The flame consume my dwelling place.
 And when I could no longer look,
 I blest His name that gave and took,⁶
 15 That laid my goods now in the dust.

Yea, so it was, and so 'twas just.

It was His own, it was not mine,

Far be it that I should repine;0

complain

He might of all justly bereft

20 But yet sufficient for us left.

When by the ruins oft I past

My sorrowing eyes aside did cast,

And here and there the places spy

Where oft I sat and long did lie:

25 Here stood that trunk, and there that chest,

There lay that store I counted best.

My pleasant things in ashes lie,

And them behold no more shall I.

Under thy roof no guest shall sit,

30 Nor at thy table eat a bit.

No pleasant tale shall e'er be told,

Nor things recounted done of old.

No candle e'er shall shine in thee,

Nor bridegroom's voice e'er heard shall be.

35 In silence ever shall thou lie,

Adieu, Adieu, all's vanity.0

empty, worthless

Then straight I 'gin my heart to chide,

And did thy wealth on earth abide?

Didst fix thy hope on mold'ring dust?

40 The arm of flesh didst make thy trust?

Raise up thy thoughts above the sky

That dunghill mists away may fly.
Thou hast an house on high erect,
Framed by that mighty Architect,
45 With glory richly furnished,
Stands permanent though this be fled.
It's purchased and paid for too
By Him⁷ who hath enough to do.
A price so vast as is unknown
50 Yet by His gift is made thine own;
There's wealth enough, I need no more,
Farewell, my pelf,⁸ farewell my store.
The world no longer let me love,
My hope and treasure lies above.

1867

6. "The Lord gave, and the Lord hath taken away;
sins of Adam and Eve.

blessed be the name of the Lord" (Job 1.21).

8. Possessions, usually falsely gained.

7. I.e., Christ, whose death is said to pay for the

4 6 8

R I C H A R D C R A S H A W

1613-1649

On the Baptized Ethiopian¹

Let it no longer be a forlorn hope

To wash² an Ethiope;

He's washed, his gloomy skin a peaceful shade

For his white soul is made,

5 And now, I doubt not, the Eternal Dove³

A black-faced house will love.

1 6 4 6

To the Infant Martyrs⁴

**Go, smiling souls, your new-built cages⁵ break,
In heaven you'll learn to sing, ere here to speak,⁶
Nor let the milky fonts⁷ that bathe your thirst
Be your delay;**

**5 The place that calls you hence is, at the worst,
Milk all the way.⁸**

1 6 4 6

Upon the Infant Martyrs

**To see both blended in one flood,
The mothers' milk, the children's blood,
Make me doubt⁰ if heaven will gather *wonder*
Roses hence, or lilies rather.**

1 6 4 6

The Tear

What bright soft thing is this?

Sweet Mary, thy fair eyes' expense?⁹

1. Acts 8.26—39 tells how an Ethiopian eunuch of
i.e., Jesus (Matthew 2.16).

great authority under Queen Candace was con-

5. I.e., their bodies, which confined them to an
verted and baptized by Philip the Evangelist.

earthly existence.

2. I.e., baptize. An allusion to the phrase *washing*

6. "Infant" derives from *infans*, Latin for "unable
an Ethiope white, used as an expression for an

to speak.”

impossible task.

7. “Fonts” are receptacles used in the sacrament

3. I.e., the Holy Spirit; the spirit of God descends of baptism; i.e., a reference both to baptism and to “like a dove” during Christ’s baptism (Matthew mother’s milk.

3.16).

8. I.e., at worst, the Milky Way will replace their

4. The Holy Innocents, all the children of Beth-mothers’ milk; at best, they will be even higher in lehem of two years and under, who were slain by the heavens.

Herod in an effort to destroy the one who, accord-

9. I.e., is this the product of your fair eyes, Mary? ing to prophecy, would become the ruler of Israel,

THE TEAR / 469

A m o i s t spark it is,

A wat’ry d i a m o n d ; from w h e n c e

5 T h e very term, I think, w a s f o u n d

T h e water¹ of a d i a m o n d .

O ‘tis not a tear,

'Tis a star about to drop
From thine eye its sphere;
10 The sun will stoop and take it up.
Proud will his sister be to wear
This thine eyes' jewel in her ear.
O 'tis a tear
Too true a tear; for no sad eyne,^o eyes
15 How sad so e're,^o ever
Rain so true a teare as thine;
Each drop leaving a place so dear,
Weeps for itself, is its own tear.
Such a pearl as this is,
20 (Slipped from Aurora's^o dewy breast) *the dawn's*
The rose bud's sweet lip kisses;
And such the rose itself, when vexed
With gentle flames, does shed,
Sweating in too warm a bed.
25 Such the maiden gem,
By the wanton spring put on,
Peeps from her parents' tem,
And blushes on the manly sun:
This wat'ry blossom of thy eyne,
30 Ripe, will make the richer wine.
Faire drop, why quak'st thou so?
'Cause thou straight^o must lay thy head *immediately*
In the dust? o no;
The dust shall never be thy bed:
35 A pillow for thee will I bring,

S t u f f e d w i t h d o w n o f a n g e l s ' w i n g .
T h u s c a r r i e d u p o n h i g h ,
(F o r t o H e a v e n t h o u m u s t g o)
S w e e t l y s h a l t t h o u l i e
40 A n d i n s o f t s l u m b e r s b a t h e t h y w o e ;
T i l l t h e s i n g i n g o r b s ³ a w a k e t h e e ,
A n d o n e o f t h e i r b r i g h t c h o r u s m a k e t h e e .
T h e r e t h y s e l f s h a l t b e
A n e y e , b u t n o t a w e e p i n g o n e ,

1. The term for the transparency and luster of a talline spheres that contained one or more of the diamond.

heavenly bodies and revolved about Earth, creating

2. The moon.

beautiful music.

3. In Ptolemaic astronomy, the concentric crys-

470 / A B R A H A M C O W L E Y

45 Y e t I d o u b t o f t h e e ,

W h e t h e r t h ' h a d s t r a t h e r t h e r e h a v e s h o n e

A n e y e o f H e a v e n ; o r s t i l l s h i n e h e r e ,

I n t h ' H e a v e n o f M a r y ' s e y e , a t e a r .

1646

A B R A H A M C O W L E Y

1618-1667

The Wish

W e l l t h e n ; I n o w d o p l a i n l y s e e ,

T h i s b u s y w o r l d a n d I s h a l l n e ' e r a g r e e ;

T h e v e r y h o n e y o f a l l e a r t h l y j o y

**D o e s of all meats the soonest cloy;1
5 And they, methinks, deserve my pity
W h o for it can endure the stings,
T h e crowd, and buzz, and murmurings
Of this great hive, the city.
Ah, yet, ere I d e s c e n d to the grave
io May I a small h o u s e and large garden have!
And a f e w friends, and many books, both true,
Both wise, and both delightful too!
And since love ne'er will from me flee,
A mistress moderately fair,
15 And good as guardian angels are,
Only beloved, and loving me!
O fountains, w h e n in you shall I
Myself, eased of unpeaceful thoughts, espy?
O fields! O woods! w h e n , w h e n shall I be made
20 T h e happy tenant of your shade?
Here's the spring-head of pleasure's flood,
Here's wealthy Nature's treasury,
W h e r e all the riches lie that she
Has coined and stamped for good.
25 Pride and ambition here
Only in farfetched metaphors appear;
Here naught but winds can hurtful murmurs scatter,
And naught but Echo² flatter.
T h e gods, w h e n they descended, hither
30 From heaven did always c h o o s e their way;
And therefore we may boldly say**

That 'tis the way, too, thither.³

1. Overfeed to the point of loathing.

3. I.e., since the gods always come here when they

2. In Greek mythology, a nymph, who misused her
descend from heaven, we can say that the way to
power of speech and was therefore condemned to
heaven (“thither”) is from here.

repeat others' words.

PLATONIC LOVE / 471

How happy here should I

And one dear she live and, embracing, die!

35 She who is all the world, and can exclude

In deserts, solitude.

I should have then this only fear,

Lest men, when they my pleasures see,

Should hither throng to live like me,

40 And so make a city here.

1647

Platonic Love⁴

i

Indeed I must confess,

When souls mix 'tis an happiness,

But not complete till bodies too do join,

And both our wholes into one whole combine;

5 But half of heaven the souls in glory taste

Till by love in heaven at last

Their bodies too are placed.

2

In thy immortal part

Man, as well as I, thou art.⁵

**io But something 'tis that differs thee and me,
*distinguishes***

And we must one even in that difference be.

I thee both as a man and woman prize,⁶

For a perfect love implies

Love in all capacities.

3

15 Can that for true love pass

When a fair woman courts her glass?⁰ *mirror*

Something unlike must in love's likeness be:

His⁰ wonder is one and variety. *love's*

For he whose soul nought but a soul can move

20 Does a new Narcissus prove,⁷

And his own image love.

4

That souls do beauty know

'Tis to the body's help they owe;

If when they know't they straight abuse that trust

25 And shut the body from't, 'tis as unjust

4. Based on the ideas of the ancient Greek phi-

5. I.e., in your soul, you are equal to man.

losopher Plato, the concept of Platonic love (as it

6. I.e., I value you both as my equal (as a "man")

was expressed by many Renaissance writers) held

and as a lover (as a "woman").

that physical beauty is the outer sign of a moral

7. I.e., prove to be a new Narcissus: in Greek and spiritual beauty of the soul; the proper Plamythology, a youth who fell in love with his own tonic lover adores the beloved's physical beauty reflection in a pool of water, then drowned in an only as a manifestation of spirit.

attempt to embrace the reflection.

472 / RICHARD LOVELACE

As if I brought my dearest friend to see

My mistress and at th' instant he

Should steal her quite from me.

1656

RICHARD LOVELACE *

1618-1658

To Althea, from Prison

When Love with unconfined wings¹

Hovers within my gates,

And my divine Althea brings

To whisper at the grates;

5 When I lie tangled in her hair

And fettered to her eye,

The gods² that wanton in the air

Know no such liberty.

When flowing cups run swiftly round,

io With no allaying Thames, ³

Our careless heads with roses bound,

Our hearts with loyal flames;

When thirsty grief in wine we steep,

W h e n h e a l t h s 0 and draughts go free, *toasts*

15 F i s h e s , t h a t t i p p l e 0 i n t h e d e e p , *drink*

K n o w n o s u c h l i b e r t y .

W h e n , l i k e c o m m i t t e d 0 l i n n e t s , 0 I *caged /finches*

W i t h s h r i l l e r t h r o a t s h a l l s i n g

T h e s w e e t n e s s , m e r c y , m a j e s t y ,

20 A n d g l o r i e s o f m y K i n g ;

W h e n I s h a l l v o i c e a l o u d h o w g o o d

H e i s , h o w g r e a t s h o u l d b e ,

E n l a r g e d w i n d s , t h a t c u r l t h e f l o o d ,

K n o w n o s u c h l i b e r t y .

25 S t o n e w a l l s d o n o t a p r i s o n m a k e ,

N o r i r o n b a r s a c a g e ;

M i n d s i n n o c e n t a n d q u i e t t a k e

T h a t f o r a n h e r m i t a g e .

I f I h a v e f r e e d o m i n m y l o v e ,

* Since all the poems here are from Lovelace's vol-

2. Some seventeenth-century versions read

ume *Lucasta* (1649), we do not repeat the publi-

“birds.”

cation date for each.

3. I.e., with no mixture of water in the wine (the

1. I.e., Cupid, the winged god of erotic love in

river Thames flows through London).

Roman mythology.

**T o A M A R A N T H A , T H A T S H E W O U L D D I S H E V E L H
E R H A I R / 4 7 3**

30 A n d i n m y s o u l a m f r e e ,

**A n g e l s alone, that soar above,
Enjoy s u c h liberty.**

To Lucasta, Going to the Wars

Tell me not, sweet, I am unkind,

T h a t from the n u n n e r y

Of thy c h a s t e breast and quiet mind,

To war and arms I fly.

5 True, a n e w mistress n o w I c h a s e ,

T h e f i r s t f o e i n t h e f i e l d ;

A n d w i t h a stronger faith e m b r a c e

A sword, a horse, a shield.

Yet this i n c o n s t a n c y is s u c h

io As y o u t o o shall adore;

I c o u l d not love thee, dear, so m u c h ,

Loved I n o t h o n o r more.

To Amarantha, That She Would Dishevel Her Hair

A m a r a n t h a s w e e t and fair,

Ah, braid no m o r e that s h i n i n g hair!

As my c u r i o u s h a n d or eye,

H o v e r i n g r o u n d t h e e , let it fly.

5 Let it fly as u n c o n f i n e d

As its c a l m ravisher, t h e wind,

W h o hath left his darling, th' East,

To w a n t o n o'er that spicy nest.

Every tress m u s t be c o n f e s s e d 4

io But neatly tangled at the best,

Like a c l u e 0 of g o l d e n thread, *ball*

M o s t excellently raveled.

D o n o t t h e n w i n d u p t h a t l i g h t
I n r i b a n d s , 0 a n d o ' e r c l o u d i n n i g h t ; r i b b o n s
15 L i k e t h e s u n i n ' s e a r l y r a y ,
B u t s h a k e y o u r h e a d a n d s c a t t e r d a y .
S e e , ' t i s b r o k e ! 5 W i t h i n t h i s g r o v e ,
T h e b o w e r a n d t h e w a l k s o f l o v e ,

4. I.e., said to be. speaker compares Amarantha's hair to the sun, and

5. I.e., the morning has broken, or started (a con- encourages her to shake it free, as the sun scatters tinuation of the previous stanza, in which the its light and begins day).

474 / R I C H A R D L O V E L A C E

W e a r y l i e w e d o w n a n d r e s t
20 A n d f a n e a c h o t h e r ' s p a n t i n g b r e a s t .
H e r e w e ' l l s t r i p a n d c o o l o u r f i r e
I n c r e a m b e l o w , i n m i l k - b a t h s h i g h e r ;
A n d w h e n a l l w e l l s a r e d r a w n d r y ,
I ' l l d r i n k a t e a r o u t o f t h i n e e y e .
25 W h i c h o u r v e r y j o y s s h a l l l e a v e ,
T h a t s o r r o w s t h u s w e c a n d e c e i v e ;
O r o u r v e r y s o r r o w s w e e p ,
T h a t j o y s s o r i p e s o l i t t l e k e e p .

The Grasshopper⁶

*To My Noble Friend, Mr. Charles Cotton*⁷

O t h o u t h a t s w i n g ' s t u p o n t h e w a v i n g h a i r
O f s o m e w e l l - f i l l e d o a t e n b e a r d , 8
D r u n k e v e r y n i g h t w i t h a d e l i c i o u s t e a r 0 d e w , w a t e r
D r o p p e d t h e e f r o m h e a v e n , w h e r e n o w t h ' o a r t r e a r e d ; y o u
5 T h e j o y s o f e a r t h a n d a i r a r e t h i n e e n t i r e ,

That with thy feet and wings dost hop and fly;
And, when thy poppy⁰ works, thou dost retire *sleeping*
potion
To thy carved acorn-bed to lie.
Up with the day, the sun thou welcom'st then,
io Sport'st in the gilt-plats⁰ of his beams, *golden braids*
And all these merry days mak'st merry men,
Thyself, and melancholy streams.⁹
But ah, the sickle! Golden ears are cropped;
Ceres and Bacchus' bid good night;
15 Sharp, frosty fingers all your flowers have topped,
And what scythes spared, winds shave off quite.
Poor verdant⁰ fool, and now green ice! thy joys, *green*
Large and as lasting as thy perch of grass,
Bid us lay in² 'gainst winter rain, and poise⁰ *balance*
20 Their floods with an o'erflowing glass.
Thou best of men and friends! we will create
A genuine summer in each other's breast,

6. This poem, a translation of an ancient Greek

8. I.e., grain.

lyric thought to be by Anacreon, embellishes the

9. "Men," "thyself" and "melancholy streams" are traditional ant and grasshopper fable, in which the

all possible objects of "mak'st merry."

ant dutifully prepares for the coming winter, while

1. The grain and the grape, from Ceres, Roman

the grasshopper plays instead of working. The cir-

goddess of the harvest, and Bacchus, Roman god

cumstances are evidently those of the Interreg-

of wine.

num, a winter of Puritanism for Royalists such as

2. Prepare for by storing food and drink

Lovelace.

(“o’erflowing glass,” line 20). *Now green ice*: i.e.,

7. A poet and fellow Royalist.

the grasshopper has frozen.

THE CORONET / 475

A n d s p i t e o f t h i s c o l d t i m e a n d f r o z e n f a t e ,

T h a w u s a w a r m s e a t t o o u r r e s t .

25 O u r s a c r e d h e a r t h s s h a l l b u r n e t e r n a l l y ,

A s v e s t a l f l a m e s ; ³ t h e N o r t h W i n d , h e

S h a l l s t r i k e h i s f r o s t - s t r e t c h e d w i n g s , d i s s o l v e , a n d f l y

T h i s E t n a i n e p i t o m e . ⁴

D r o p p i n g D e c e m b e r s h a l l c o m e w e e p i n g i n ,

30 B e w a i l t h ’ u s u r p i n g o f h i s r e i g n :

B u t w h e n i n s h o w e r s o f o l d G r e e k w e b e g i n ,

S h a l l c r y h e h a t h h i s c r o w n a g a i n ! ⁵

N i g h t , a s c l e a r H e s p e r , ⁶ s h a l l o u r t a p e r s w h i p

F r o m t h e l i g h t c a s e m e n t s w h e r e w e p l a y ,

35 A n d t h e d a r k h a g f r o m h e r b l a c k m a n t l e s t r i p , ⁷

A n d s t i c k t h e r e e v e r l a s t i n g d a y .

T h u s r i c h e r t h a n u n t e m p t e d k i n g s ⁸ a r e w e ,

T h a t , a s k i n g n o t h i n g , n o t h i n g n e e d :

T h o u g h l o r d o f a l l w h a t s e a s e m b r a c e , y e t h e

40 T h a t w a n t s h i m s e l f i s p o o r i n d e e d . ⁹

1649

ANDREW MARVELL *

1621-1678

The Coronet¹

**W h e n for the thorns with w h i c h I long, too long,
W i t h m a n y a piercing w o u n d ,
M y Savior's h e a d have c r o w n e d ,
I s e e k w i t h garlands² to redress that wrong;
5 T h r o u g h every garden, every m e a d , 0 meadow
I gather flowers (my fruits are only flowers)
D i s m a n t l i n g all the fragrant towers⁰ *high headdresses*
That o n c e adorned m y shepherdess's head.**

3. The vestal virgins, consecrated to Vesta, Roman goddess of the hearth, kept a sacred fire burning perpetually on her altar.

from Hecate ("the dark hag"), a Greek goddess

4. I.e., Boreas, the north wind, strikes (or folds up) his wings and flees from the underground warmth associated with night.

his wings and flees from the underground warmth

8. I.e., kings who have everything.

of Etna, a Sicilian volcano, whose flame serves as

9. I.e., even one who is lord of all and can embrace an emblem (or "epitome") of the flame of friendship; the sea is poor, if he "wants" himself (does not have self-knowledge).

have self-knowledge).

5. Greek wine was favored in the classical world,

* Since all of Marvell's poems were first published

and drinkers often wore festive crowns; December (posthumously) in 1681, we do not print the date “crowns” or terminates the year; also, may allude for each selection.

to the crown worn by “King Christmas” at festivi-

1. A wreath of flowers; also, a small crown; here, ties banned by Puritans and to the crown Cavaliers the devotional poem itself. See also note 5 above. hoped Charles II would regain.

2. Wreaths; also, since garlands were a symbol of

6. Hesperus, the evening star.

poetic achievement, poems of praise.

4 7 6 / A N D R E W M A R V E L L

A n d n o w w h e n I h a v e s u m m e d u p a l l m y s t o r e ,

10 T h i n k i n g (s o I m y s e l f d e c e i v e)

S o r i c h a c h a p l e t o t h e n c e t o w e a v e g a r l a n d

A s n e v e r y e t t h e k i n g o f g l o r y ³ w o r e ;

A l a s I f i n d t h e s e r p e n t o l d ⁴

T h a t , t w i n i n g i n h i s s p e c k l e d b r e a s t ,

15 A b o u t t h e f l o w e r s d i s g u i s e d d o e s f o l d ,

W i t h w r e a t h s o f f a m e a n d i n t e r e s t . ⁵ c o i l s

A h , f o o l i s h m a n , t h a t w o u l d s t d e b a s e w i t h t h e m , A n d m o r t a l g l o r y , h e a v e n ' s d i a d e m ! ⁶ c r o w n

B u t T h o u ⁶ w h o o n l y c o u l d s t t h e s e r p e n t t a m e ,

20 E i t h e r h i s s l i p p e r y k n o t s a t o n c e u n t i e ,

A n d d i s e n t a n g l e a l l h i s w i n d i n g s n a r e ;

O r s h a t t e r t o o w i t h h i m m y c u r i o u s o f r a m e , o e l a b o r a t e / s t r u c t u r e A n d l e t t h e s e o w i t h e r , s o t h a t h e m

a y die, *poetic flowers* T h o u g h set w i t h skill and c h o s
e n out w i t h care,

25 That they, w h i l e T h o u on both their spoils dost
tread,

M a y c r o w n T h y feet, that c o u l d not c r o w n T h y
head.⁷

Bermudas

W h e r e t h e r e m o t e B e r m u d a s ride,⁰ *float*

In th' ocean's b o s o m u n e s p i e d ,

From a small boat that r o w e d along,

T h e listening w i n d s received this song:

5 "What s h o u l d we do but sing H i s praise,

That led us t h r o u g h t h e watery m a z e

U n t o a n i s l e s o l o n g u n k n o w n ,

A n d yet far kinder t h a n our own?

W h e r e H e t h e h u g e sea m o n s t e r s wracks,⁰ *casts*
ashore i o That lift t h e d e e p u p o n their backs;

He lands us on a grassy stage,

S a f e from t h e storms, and prelate's rage.⁸

He gave us this eternal spring

W h i c h here e n a m e l s everything,

15 A n d s e n d s the f o w l s to us in care,

On daily visits t h r o u g h t h e air;

He h a n g s in s h a d e s t h e orange bright,

Like g o l d e n l a m p s in a g r e e n night,

A n d d o e s i n t h e p o m e g r a n a t e s c l o s e

20 J e w e l s m o r e rich t h a n O r m u s ⁹ shows;

H e m a k e s t h e f i g s our m o u t h s t o m e e t ,

A n d t h r o w s t h e m e l o n s at our feet;

But apples⁰ p l a n t s of s u c h a price, pineapples

3. I.e., Christ.

“And I will put enmity between thee and the

4. A reference to the serpent who tempted Eve

woman, and between thy seed and her seed; it shall

and thus brought about humanity’s Fall from par-

bruisse thy head, and thou shalt bruise his heel.”

adise (Genesis 3).

8. Storms at sea are here associated with bishops

5. I.e., self-glorification and self-advancement.

(thus indicating a Puritan stance by Marvell).

6. I.e., Christ.

9. Hormuz, a Persian Gulf island from which

7. Cf. God’s curse on Satan, from Genesis 3.15:

gems were exported.

**A D I A L O G U E B E T W E E N T H E S O U L A N D
B O D Y / 4 7 7**

No tree could ever bear them twice;

25 With cedars, chosen by His hand,

From Lebanon,¹ He stores the land;

And makes the hollow seas, that roar,

Proclaim the ambergris² on shore;

He cast (of which we rather⁰ boast) *more properly*

30 The Gospel’s pearl upon our coast,³

And in these rocks for us did frame

A temple, where to sound His name.

O! let our voice His praise exalt,

Till it arrive at heaven’s vault,

**35 Which, thence (perhaps) rebounding, may
Echo beyond the Mexique Bay.⁴**

Thus sung they in the English boat,

An holy and a cheerful note;

And all the way, to guide their chime,

40 With falling oars they kept the time.

A Dialogue between the Soul and Body⁵

Soul

Oh, who shall from this dungeon raise

A soul enslaved so many ways?⁶

With bolts of bones that fettered stands

In feet, and manacled in hands;

5 Here blinded with an eye, and there

Deaf with the drumming of an ear;

A soul hung up, as 'twere, in chains

Of nerves and arteries and veins;

Tortured, besides each other part,

io In a vain head and double⁰ heart. *deceitful*

Body

Oh, who shall me deliver whole

From bonds of this tyrannic soul?

Which stretched upright, impales me so

That mine own precipice⁷¹ go,

15 And warms and moves this needless frame⁸—

A fever could but do the same—

And, wanting where⁹ its spite to try,

1. The tree called the cedar of Lebanon from its

6. Cf. St. Paul's Epistle to the Romans, 7.24: "O

most famous early locality.

wretched man that I am! who shall deliver me from

2. The roaring seas announce (“proclaim”) their
the body of this death?”

bounty. *Ambergris*: a soapy secretion of the sperm

7. Humans walk “upright” instead of prowling like
whale, gathered on beaches and used in perfumes.

animals because they possess souls; however, pos-

3. In Matthew 13.45—46, the kingdom of heaven
session of a soul is also the reason they can fall and
is compared to a “pearl of great price.”

be damned, so the soul is an internal “precipice.”

4. I.e., the Gulf of Mexico.

8. I.e., this frame, which does not need the soul.

5. Deriving from the medieval “debat,” a literary

9. I.e., lacking an object.

form wherein two speakers dispute a topic.

478 / A N D R E W M A R V E L L

H a s m a d e m e l i v e t o l e t m e d i e :

A b o d y t h a t c o u l d n e v e r r e s t ,

20 S i n c e t h i s i l l s p i r i t i t p o s s e s s e d .

Soul

W h a t m a g i c c o u l d m e t h u s c o n f i n e

W i t h i n a n o t h e r ’ s g r i e f t o p i n e ?

W h e r e w h a t s o e v e r i t c o m p l a i n ,

I f e e l , t h a t c a n n o t f e e l , t h e p a i n ,

25 A n d a l l m y c a r e i t s e l f e m p l o y s ,

T h a t t o p r e s e r v e w h i c h m e d e s t r o y s ,

**C o n s t r a i n e d n o t o n l y t o e n d u r e
D i s e a s e s , b u t , w h a t ' s w o r s e , t h e c u r e ;
A n d r e a d y o f t t h e p o r t ² t o g a i n ,
B O A n d s h i p w r e c k e d i n t o h e a l t h a g a i n .**

Body

**B u t p h y s i c ⁰ y e t c o u l d n e v e r r e a c h *medicine*
T h e m a l a d i e s t h o u m e d o s t t e a c h :
W h o m f i r s t t h e c r a m p o f h o p e d o e s t e a r ,
A n d t h e n t h e p a l s y s h a k e s o f f e a r ;
35 T h e p e s t i l e n c e o f l o v e d o e s h e a t ,
O r h a t r e d ' s h i d d e n u l c e r e a t ;
J o y ' s c h e e r f u l m a d n e s s d o e s p e r p l e x ,
O r s o r r o w ' s o t h e r m a d n e s s v e x ;
W h i c h k n o w l e d g e f o r c e s m e t o k n o w ,
40 A n d m e m o r y w i l l n o t f o r g o .**

**W h a t b u t a s o u l c o u l d h a v e t h e w i t
T o b u i l d m e u p f o r s i n s o f i t ?
S o a r c h i t e c t s d o s q u a r e a n d h e w
G r e e n t r e e s t h a t i n t h e f o r e s t g r e w .**

To His Coy³ Mistress

**H a d w e b u t w o r l d e n o u g h , a n d t i m e ,
T h i s c o y n e s s , l a d y , w e r e n o c r i m e .
W e w o u l d s i t d o w n , a n d t h i n k w h i c h w a y
T o w a l k , a n d p a s s o u r l o n g l o v e ' s d a y .
5 T h o u b y t h e I n d i a n G a n g e s ' ⁰ s i d e *Ganges River*
S h o u d s t r u b i e s ⁴ f i n d ; I b y t h e t i d e
O f H u m b e r w o u l d c o m p l a i n . 5 I w o u l d**

1. I.e., the soul can sympathize even though it has

4. Rubies were thought to help preserve virginity.

no power of physical sensation.

5. The Humber River flows through Marvell's

2. I.e., death.

native town of Hull (i.e., on the other side of the

3. In the seventeenth century, "coy" could mean

world from the Ganges); "complain" implies plain-

"shy" or "quiet" as well as "coquettish," the comitive lyrics of unavailing love.

mon modern meaning.

T o H i s C O Y M I S T R E S S / 4 7 9

Love you ten years before the flood,

And you should, if you please, refuse

10 Till the conversion of the Jews.⁶

My vegetable⁷ love should grow

Vaster than empires and more slow;

An hundred years should go to praise

Thine eyes, and on thy forehead gaze;

15 Two hundred to adore each breast,

But thirty thousand to the rest;

An age at least to every part,

And the last age should show your heart.

For, lady, you deserve this state,⁰ *dignity*

20 Nor would I love at lower rate.⁸

But at my back I always hear

Time's winged chariot hurrying near;

And yonder all before us lie

Deserts of vast eternity.

25 Thy beauty shall no more be found;
Nor, in thy marble vault, shall sound
My echoing song; then worms shall try
That long-preserved virginity,
And your quaint⁹ honor turn to dust,
30 And into ashes all my lust:
The grave's a fine and private place,
But none, I think, do there embrace.
Now therefore, while the youthful hue
Sits on thy skin like morning dew,¹
35 And while thy willing soul transpires⁰ *breathes out*
At every pore with instant fires,
Now let us sport us while we may,
And now, like amorous birds of prey,
Rather at once our time devour
40 Than languish in his slow-chapped^o power. *slowly*
devouring
Let us roll all our strength and all
Our sweetness up into one ball,
And tear our pleasures with rough strife
Through the iron gates² of life:
45 Thus, though we cannot make our sun
Stand still,³ yet we will make him run.

6. To occur, as Christian tradition had it, at the scholar argues for retaining “glew” on the grounds end of recorded history.

that the term had a specific meaning in alchemical

7. I.e., characterized by growth; in context,

processes of distillation and that Marvell was increasing without conscious nurturing.

deeply interested in alchemy.

8. I.e., at any smaller amounts of time (“lower

2. The obscure “iron gates” suggests that the “ball” rate”) than what I’ve just mentioned.

of line 42 has become a missile from a siege gun,

9. Has several meanings, including fine, elegant,

battering its way into a citadel. One manuscript

fastidious, oversubtle, and out of date; also, with a

has “iron grates.”

pun on the Middle English noun *queynte*, or

3. An allusion to the power of Zeus, the chief female genitals.

Greek god, who, to prolong his night with the mor-

1. In the 1681 text, line 34 ends with the word

tal Alcmena, ordered the sun not to shine; also, see

“glew,” rhyming with *hew*. Some modern editors

Joshua 10.12-13.

emend to “glow” rather than “dew.” O n e recent

4 8 0 / A N D R E W M A R V E L L

The Fair Singer⁴

To m a k e a f i n a l c o n q u e s t o f a l l m e ,

L o v e d i d c o m p o s e s o s w e e t a n e n e m y ,

I n w h o m b o t h b e a u t i e s t o m y d e a t h a g r e e ,

J o i n i n g t h e m s e l v e s i n f a t a l h a r m o n y ;

5 T h a t w h i l e s h e w i t h h e r e y e s m y h e a r t d o e s b i n d ,

S h e w i t h h e r v o i c e m i g h t c a p t i v a t e m y m i n d .
I c o u l d h a v e f l e d f r o m o n e b u t s i n g l y f a i r :
M y d i s e n t a n g l e d s o u l i t s e l f m i g h t s a v e ,
B r e a k i n g t h e c u r l e d t r a m m e l s o f h e r h a i r . *fine nets;*
braids 10 B u t h o w s h o u l d I a v o i d t o b e h e r s l a v e ,
W h o s e s u b t l e a r t i n v i s i b l y c a n w r e a t h e
M y f e t t e r s o f t h e v e r y a i r I b r e a t h e ?
I t h a d b e e n e a s y f i g h t i n g i n s o m e p l a i n ,
W h e r e v i c t o r y m i g h t h a n g i n e q u a l c h o i c e ,
15 B u t a l l r e s i s t a n c e a g a i n s t h e r i s v a i n ,
W h o h a s t h ' a d v a n t a g e b o t h o f e y e s a n d v o i c e ,
A n d a l l m y f o r c e s n e e d s m u s t b e u n d o n e ,
S h e h a v i n g g a i n e d b o t h t h e w i n d a n d s u n . 5

The Definition of Love⁶

M y L o v e i s o f a b i r t h a s r a r e
A s ' t i s , f o r o b j e c t , s t r a n g e a n d h i g h ; 7
I t w a s b e g o t t e n b y D e s p a i r
U p o n I m p o s s i b i l i t y .
5 M a g n a n i m o u s D e s p a i r a l o n e
C o u l d s h o w m e s o d i v i n e a t h i n g ,
W h e r e f e e b l e H o p e c o u l d n e ' e r h a v e f l o w n
B u t v a i n l y f l a p p e d i t s t i n s e l 8 w i n g .
A n d y e t I q u i c k l y m i g h t a r r i v e
i o W h e r e m y e x t e n d e d s o u l i s f i x e d ; 9
B u t F a t e d o e s i r o n w e d g e s d r i v e ,
A n d a l w a y s c r o w d s i t s e l f b e t w i x t .
F o r F a t e w i t h j e a l o u s e y e d o e s s e e
T w o p e r f e c t l o v e s , n o r l e t s t h e m c l o s e ; 0 *unite*

4. A poem in the genre of the courtly compliment
ley, “Platonic Love” (p. 471).

paid to a lady to commend her skill in music or

7. I.e., my love’s lineage is as rare as my love itself
dancing.

is strange and high.

5. In earlier warfare (especially at sea), the force

8. Glittering; also, flashy, with little or no intrinsic
with the wind and sun behind it had distinct
worth.

advantages.

9. The speaker describes his soul as having gone

6. This poem plays upon a Platonic definition of
out of his body (“extended”) and attached (“fixed”)
love as an unfulfilled longing. Cf. Abraham Cow-
itself to his mistress.

THE PICTURE OF LITTLE T. C. IN A PROSP
ECT OF FLOWERS / 481

15 Their union would her ruin be,

And her tyrannic power depose.¹

And therefore her decrees of steel

Us as the distant poles have placed

(Though Love’s whole world on us doth wheel),²

20 Not by themselves to be embraced,

Unless the giddy heaven fall,

And earth some new convulsion tear,

And, us to join, the world should all

Be cramped into a planisphere.³

**25 As lines, so loves oblique may well
Themselves in every angle greet;⁴
But ours, so truly parallel,
Though infinite, can never meet.
Therefore the love which us doth bind,
30 But Fate so enviously debars,
Is the conjunction of the mind,
And opposition of the stars.⁵**

The Picture of Little T. C. in a Prospect⁶ of Flowers
**See with what simplicity
This nymph⁷ begins her golden days!
In the green grass she loves to lie,
And there with her fair aspect tames
5 The wilder flowers, and gives them names;
But only with the roses plays,
And them does tell
What color best becomes them, and what smell.
What¹⁰ can foretell for what high cause
10 This darling of the gods was born?
Yet this is she whose chaster laws
The wanton Love⁸ shall one day fear,**

1. A reference to the idea that an even mixture of stars determining their destinies are entirely hospitable (literally in “opposition,” or 180 degrees apart).
pound, able to withstand any sudden change, and
6. A background scene, or representation of a
hence, in context, defying fate.

view. T. C.: a little girl; possibly Theophila

2. Though by decree of fate the lovers are as far
Cornwall, who was baptized on September 26,
apart as Earth's two poles, the relationship (liter-
1644, the second daughter of that name in the
ally, the line) between them forms the axis on
family. The first Theophila had died two days after
which love's world turns.

birth.

3. A chart formed by the projection of a sphere on
7. A young, beautiful female; in Greek mythology,
a plane; the two poles could come together only if
nymphs inhabited a particular place or natural
the charted world were collapsed.

phenomenon.

4. I.e., the lines may converge at any angle.

8. I.e., Cupid, Roman god of erotic love. The
"Oblique" lovers, in one sense, might deviate from
speaker predicts that "T. C." will follow "chaster
accepted behavior or thought.

laws," with a likely allusion to those laws followed

5. In this astronomical image, the minds of the
by Diana, the mythological goddess of chastity and
lovers are in accord (literally in "conjunction," or
hunting.

occupying the same celestial longitude), but the

482 / A N D R E W M A R V E L L

And, u n d e r h e r c o m m a n d s e v e r e,

See his bow broke and ensigns torn.

15 Happy who can

Appease this virtuous enemy of man!⁹

Then let me in time compound ⁰ *bargain*

And parley¹ with those conquering eyes,

Ere they have tried their force to wound;

20 Ere with their glancing wheels they drive

In triumph over hearts that strive,

And them that yield but more despise:

Let me be laid

Where I may see thy glories from some shade.

25 Meantime, whilst every verdant⁰ thing *green*

Itself does at thy beauty charm,²

Reform the errors of the spring;

Make that the tulips may have share

Of sweetness, seeing they are fair;

30 And roses of their thorns disarm;

But most procure

That violets may a longer age endure.

But, O young beauty of the woods,

Whom nature courts with fruits and flowers,

35 Gather the flowers, but spare the buds,

Lest Flora, angry at thy crime

To kill her infants³ in their prime,

Do quickly make the example yours;

And ere we see,

40 Nip in the blossom all our hopes and thee.

The Mower against Gardens⁴

Luxurious man, to bring his vice in use,⁵
Did after him the world seduce,
And from the fields the flowers and plants allure,
Where Nature was most plain and pure.
5 He first enclosed within the gardens square
A dead and standing pool of air,
And a more luscious earth for them did knead,
Which stupefied them while it fed.
The pink grew then as double as his mind;⁶
io Then nutriment did change the kind.

9. By doing battle with Cupid, breaking his bow
 ferent aspects of rural life. *Mower*: one who cuts
 and tearing his flags (“ensigns”), she (“T. C.”) will
 grass with a scythe.

be a “virtuous enemy” to man (i.e., one whose

5. I.e., to establish his vice as custom. *Luxurious*:
 chaste virtue causes her to be the foe of love).

lustful; voluptuous.

1. Speak; also, hold a conference with the enemy.

6. The double pink carnation is produced by a

2. Enchants itself at thy beauty.

hypocritical (“double”) mind, i.e., one who coun-

3. I.e., the buds. *Flora*: Roman goddess of flowers.

terfeits the natural color.

4. One of four “mower” poems that examine dif-

THE MOWER TO THE GLOWWORMS / 483

With strange perfumes he did the roses taint;
And flowers themselves were taught to paint.

**T h e tulip w h i t e did for c o m p l e x i o n seek,
A n d learned to interline its cheek;
15 I t s o n i o n root they t h e n s o h i g h did hold,
T h a t o n e w a s for a m e a d o w sold:7
A n o t h e r world w a s s e a r c h e d t h r o u g h o c e a n
s n e w , To find t h e Marvel of Peru;8
A n d yet t h e s e rarities m i g h t be allowed
20 T o m a n , that sovereign thing and proud,
H a d he not dealt b e t w e e n t h e bark and tree,9
Forbidden mixtures there to see.
N o plant n o w k n e w t h e stock f r o m w h i c h i t c a m e
e ; H e grafts u p o n the wild the t a m e ,
25 T h a t t h e u n c e r t a i n and adulterate⁰ fruit
counterfeit M i g h t p u t the palate in dispute.1
H i s g r e e n seraglio has its e u n u c h s too,
Lest any tyrant h i m outdo;2
A n d in the cherry he does N a t u r e vex,
30 T o procreate w i t h o u t a sex.3
'Tis all e n f o r c e d , t h e f o u n t a i n a n d the grot,4
W h i l e t h e s w e e t fields do lie forgot,
W h e r e willing N a t u r e d o e s to all d i s p e n s e
A wild and fragrant i n n o c e n c e ;
35 A n d fauns⁵ a n d fairies do the m e a d o w s till
M o r e by their p r e s e n c e than their skill.
T h e i r statues p o l i s h e d by s o m e a n c i e n t hand,
M a y to adorn t h e gardens stand;
But, h o w s o e ' e r t h e figures do excel,
40 T h e G o d s t h e m s e l v e s w i t h u s do dwell.
The Mower to the Glowworms⁶**

**Ye living lamps, by whose dear light
The nightingale does sit so late,
And studying all the summer night,
Her matchless songs does meditate;**⁷

7. A tulip fad in the 1630s brought extremely high woodland gods associated with lust and drinking prices for rare varieties. *Onion root*: bulb.

(often described as less wild than satyrs).

8. A tuliplike flower (*mirabilis jalapa*) that opens

6. Insects, the females of which emit a shining late in the afternoon.

green light from the abdomen. *Mower*: see note 4,

9. I.e., by grafting; proverbial for interfering. p. 482.

1. I.e., the result of which grafting confuses the

7. The nightingale is known for its sweet and sad palate as to what it tastes.

song, which has perhaps given rise to one tradition

2. *Seraglio*: harem in a sultan's palace, hence a that the bird's song laments the tragic result of place of confinement. I.e., his garden ("green serawrongful love. Another tale of the nightingale, as glio") has its castrated slaves ("eunuchs"; here, the told by Ovid, has the mournful song refer to the grafted plants, some of which could not reproduce) violence committed on Philomela, who was raped just like any tyrant.

by her brother-in-law, Tereus, who then tore out

3. Cherries are often propagated by budding on her tongue so that she could not speak. She wove the stocks of sturdier but less productive varieties.

the story in a tapestry and sent it to her sister, who

4. Grotto, a picturesque structure made to imitate rescued her. She was later changed into a night-a cave, serving as a cool retreat.

ingale while in flight from Tereus, after seeking

5. In classical mythology, half-goat, half-man revenge on him.

4 8 4 / A N D R E W M A R V E L L

5 Ye c o u n t r y c o m e t s , t h a t p o r t e n d

N o w a r n o r p r i n c e ' s f u n e r a l , ⁸

S h i n i n g u n t o n o h i g h e r e n d

T h a n t o p r e s a g e ⁰ t h e g r a s s ' s f a l l ; *foretell*

Y e g l o w w o r m s , w h o s e o f f i c i o u s ⁰ f l a m e
dutiful **10 T o w a n d e r i n g m o w e r s s h o w s t h e w a y ,**

T h a t i n t h e n i g h t h a v e l o s t t h e i r a i m ,

A n d a f t e r f o o l i s h f i r e s ⁹ d o s t r a y ;

Y o u r c o u r t e o u s l i g h t s i n v a i n y o u w a s t e ,

S i n c e J u l i a n a h e r e i s c o m e ,

15 F o r s h e m y m i n d h a t h s o d i s p l a c e d

T h a t I s h a l l n e v e r f i n d m y h o m e .

The Garden

H o w v a i n l y m e n t h e m s e l v e s a m a z e ⁰ *perplex*

T o w i n t h e p a l m , t h e o a k , o r b a y s , ¹

A n d t h e i r i n c e s s a n t ⁰ l a b o r s s e e *unceasing*

C r o w n e d f r o m s o m e s i n g l e h e r b , o r t r e e ,

5 **W h o s e** short and narrow-verged **2 s h a d e**
D o e s prudently their toils upbraid;
W h i l e all flowers and all trees do **c l o s e** *0 join*
To w e a v e t h e garlands of repose!
Fair Q u i e t , have I **f o u n d** t h e e here,
i o A n d I n n o c e n c e , thy sister dear?
M i s t a k e n long, I **s o u g h t** y o u t h e n
I n b u s y c o m p a n i e s of m e n .
Your sacred plants, *0 if here b e l o w , cuttings*
O n l y a m o n g t h e plants will grow;
15 S o c i e t y is all but *0 rude° merely / barbarous*
To° this d e l i c i o u s solitude. *compared to*
N o w h i t e nor red **3 w a s** ever s e e n
So a m o r o u s as this lovely green.
F o n d ° lovers, cruel as their flame, *foolish*
20 C u t in t h e s e trees their mistress' **n a m e** : 4
Little, alas, t h e y k n o w or h e e d
H o w far t h e s e b e a u t i e s hers exceed!
Fair trees, w h e r e s o e ' e r your barks I **w o u n d** ,
N o n a m e shall but your **o w n b e f o u n d** .

8. Comets were sometimes believed to be portents
 civic, and poetic accomplishments.

of approaching disasters.

2. Confined, not spreading luxuriantly like the liv-

9. *Ignis fatuus* (Latin), also known as the will-o'-
 ing branch.

the-wisp; said to draw travelers astray by holding a

3. The colors conventionally used to depict female

false light before them; the phenomenon of nocturnal light is caused by the combustion of marsh gas.

his beloved's name in a tree (as Petrarch did with Laura's).

THE GARDEN / 485

25 When we have run our passion's heat,^o *course*

Love hither makes his best retreat.

The gods, that mortal beauty chase,

Still in a tree did end their race:⁵

Apollo hunted Daphne so,

30 Only that she might laurel grow;

And Pan did after Syrinx speed,

Not as a nymph, but for a reed.

What wondrous life is this I lead!

Ripe apples drop about my head;

35 The luscious clusters of the vine

Upon my mouth do crush their wine;

The nectarine and curious^o peach *exquisite*

Into my hands themselves do reach;

Stumbling on melons,⁶ as I pass,

40 Insnared with flowers, I fall on grass.

Meanwhile the mind, from pleasure less,⁷

Withdraws into its happiness;

The mind, that ocean where each kind

Does straight⁰ its own resemblance find;⁸ *immediately*
45 Yet it creates, transcending these,
Far other worlds and other seas,
Annihilating all that's made
To a green thought in a green shade.
Here at the fountain's sliding foot,
50 Or at some fruit tree's mossy root,
Casting the body's vest⁹ aside,
My soul into the boughs does glide:
There, like a bird, it sits and sings,
Then whets⁰ and combs its silver wings, *preens*
55 And, till prepared for longer flight,
Waves in its plumes the various⁰ light. *iridescent*
Such was that happy garden-state,
While man there walked without a mate:
After a place so pure and sweet,
60 What other help could yet be meet!¹
But 'twas beyond a mortal's share
To wander solitary there:
Two paradises 'twere in one
To live in paradise alone.²

5. I.e., even the gods who chase after their desired
that led to the Fall (or "stumbling") of humankind.
nymphs (events described in the following lines)

7. "Less" may modify either "pleasure" or "mind."
succeed only in achieving a garden prize. Accord-

8. As every land creature was thought to have its
ing to Ovid's versions of these two myths, the

counterpart sea creature, so also in the ocean of nymphs (Daphne and Syrinx) both elude the the mind (in Neoplatonic philosophy).

unwanted sexual advances of their pursuers

9. Garment; i.e., the body itself.

(Apollo and Pan, respectively) by being meta-

1. Fit, suitable; also, God created Eve because “for morphosed into a laurel tree (Daphne) and reeds Adam there was not found an help meet for him” (Syrinx) through the intervention of sympathetic (Genesis 2.20).

deities.

2. I.e., it would be twice as wonderful to be alone

6. “Melon” has an etymological root in the Greek in paradise (i.e., before Eve).

word for apple; perhaps an allusion to the apple

4 8 6 / A N D R E W M A R V E L L

65 H o w well the skillful gardener drew

Of flowers and herbs this dial³ n e w ,

W h e r e , f r o m above, the milder s u n

D o e s t h r o u g h a fragrant zodiac run;

A n d as it works, th’ industrious b e e

70 C o m p u t e s its t i m e 4 as well as we!

H o w c o u l d s u c h s w e e t and w h o l e s o m e h o u r s

Be r e c k o n e d but w i t h herbs and flowers?

An Horatian Ode⁵

*Upon Cromwell’s Return from Ireland*⁶

**T h e forward0 y o u t h t h a t w o u l d a p p e a r *eager,*
ambitious M u s t n o w f o r s a k e h i s M u s e s 7 d e a r,**

N o r i n t h e s h a d o w s s i n g

H i s n u m b e r s 0 l a n g u i s h i n g: *poems*

5 ‘T i s t i m e t o l e a v e t h e b o o k s i n d u s t,

A n d o i l t h e u n u s e d a r m o r ’ s r u s t,

R e m o v i n g f r o m t h e w a l l

T h e c o r s l e t o f t h e h a l l.8

S o r e s t l e s s C r o m w e l l c o u l d n o t c e a s e 0 *rest*

i o I n t h e i n g l o r i o u s a r t s o f p e a c e ,

B u t t h r o u g h a d v e n t u r o u s w a r

U r g e d h i s a c t i v e s t a r;

A n d l i k e t h e t h r e e - f o r k e d l i g h t n i n g , f i r s t

B r e a k i n g t h e c l o u d s w h e r e i t w a s n u r s e d,

15 D i d t h o r o u g h 0 h i s o w n s i d e *through*

H i s f i e r y w a y d i v i d e.9

F o r ‘ t i s a l l o n e t o c o u r a g e h i g h,

T h e e m u l o u s l o r e n e m y ;

A n d w i t h s u c h t o i n c l o s e

20 I s m o r e t h a n t o o p p o s e . 2

3. Flowers planted to form a dial face, through
from conquering Ireland in May 1650, about eight-
which the sun follows its course; it is “milder”
teen months after the execution of King Charles I.
because its intense rays are tempered by the flow-
His victory over the Irish was sometimes taken as
ers through which they filter.

a sign that God approved of Charles’s beheading.

4. With a pun on *thyme*.

7. The nine Greek sister goddesses believed to be

5. Originally a classical form, an ode is a serious sources of inspiration for the arts.

lyric poem, dignified by its theme, occasion, or sub-

8. The suit of armor belonging to the household.

ject. In contrast to the odes of the Greek poet Pin-

9. Cromwell had begun as a Presbyterian, but

dar (ca. 522-ca. 438 **B.C.E.**), which typically

became the leader of the more radical group

praised or glorified someone, a Horatian ode,

known as the Independents, or the Rump. The

derived from the work of the Roman poet Horace

comparison to the “three-forked lightning” links

(65—8 **B.C.E.**), promises a poem of cool and bal-

him to Zeus, the chief classical god, whose daugh-

anced judgment. Balanced judgments of Oliver

ter Athena sprang fully formed from Zeus’s head.

Cromwell (see note 6 below) were not politic in

1. One who is greedy for praise or power; also, one

the Restoration, and the poem was canceled from

who imitates or rivals.

all but two known copies of the 1681 edition of

2. Possible paraphrase of stanza: It challenges

Miscellaneous Poems.

high courage as much to deal with competitors as

6. Oliver Cromwell (1599-1658), English general

to deal with the enemy; and to make common

and statesman, lord protector of England, returned
cause with men like the sectarians of the Parlia-

A N H O R A T I A N O D E / 4 8 7

Then burning through the air he went,
And palaces and temples rent;⁰ *tore*
And Caesar's head at last
Did through his laurels blast.³

25 Tis madness to resist or blame
The force of angry heaven's flame;⁴
And if we would speak true,
Much to the man is due,
Who, from his private gardens, where
30 He lived reserved and austere
(As if his highest plot
To plant the bergamot),⁵
Could by industrious valor climb
To ruin the great work of time,
35 And cast the kingdom old
Into another mold;⁶
Though Justice against Fate complain,
And plead the ancient rights in vain;
But those do hold or break,
40 As men are strong or weak.
Nature, that hateth emptiness,
Allows of penetration less,⁷
And therefore must make room
Where greater spirits come.
45 What field of all the civil wars,

Where his were not the deepest scars?

And Hampton shows what part

He had of wiser art;⁸

Where, twining subtle fears with hope,

50 He wove a net of such a scope

That Charles himself might chase

To Carisbrooke's narrow case,⁹

mentary Party is more of an accomplishment than
early days of private life.

effectually to oppose them. (Marvell's obscurities

6. I.e., a reference to the change from monarchy

may be deliberate and politic.)

to republic.

3. I.e., like lightning, Cromwell beheaded Charles

7. I.e., Nature, which abhors a vacuum, is even

I ("Caesar"). Laurels were used for classical crowns

less willing to let two bodies occupy the same

because they were supposed to protect from light-
space.

ning, which represented the gods' jealousy.

8. Cromwell purportedly let Charles escape from

4. The lightning hurled by Zeus represents divine

Hampton Court to Carisbrooke Castle, on the Isle
judgment.

of Wight, to convince Parliament that the king

5. A variety of pear; its etymology (from the Turk-
could not be trusted and must be executed.

ish, "prince's pear") may hold the insinuation that

9. "Case" may mean either "plight" or "prison."

Cromwell had been plotting for power even in his

488 / ANDREW MARVELL

That t h e n c e the royal actor borne

The tragic scaffold might adorn;

55 **W h i l e round the armed bands**

Did clap their bloody hands.

He1 nothing c o m m o n did or m e a n

U p o n that memorable scene,

But with his keener eye

60 **T h e axe's edge did try;0 test**

Nor called the gods with vulgar spite

To vindicate his helpless right;

But bowed his comely head

D o w n , as upon a bed.

65 **This was that memorable hour**

W h i c h first assured the forced power:

So, w h e n they did design

The Capitol's first line,

A bleeding head, where they begun,

70 **Did fright the architects to run;**

And yet in that the state

Foresaw its happy fate.2

And n o w the Irish are ashamed

To s e e themselves in o n e year tamed;

75 **So such one man can do**

That does both act and know.

They can affirm his praises best,

**And have, though overcome, c o n f e s s e d
H o w good he is, h o w just,
so And fit for highest trust.**

**Nor yet grown stiffer with c o m m a n d ,
But still in the republic's hand—
H o w fit he is to sway
That can so well obey!**

**85 He to the C o m m o n s ' feet presents
A kingdom for his first year's rents;
And, what he may, forbears
His fame to make it theirs;**

1. I.e., Charles.

suaded to believe it meant that Rome would be

2. When foundations were being dug for Jupiter's
"head" of an empire. The temple and the hill on
temple in Rome (according to Livy and Pliny), a
which it stood were thereafter called Capitoline or
bloody head was uncovered. The workers at first
the Capitol (from the Latin *caput*, head).

thought it was an ill omen, but then were per-

A N H O R A T I A N O D E / 4 8 9

And has his sword and spoils ungirt,

90

To lay them at the public's skirt:3

So when the falcon high

Falls heavy from the sky,

She, having killed, no more does search

But on the next green bough to perch;

Where, when he first does lure,
The falconer⁴ has her sure.
What may not, then, our isle presume,
While victory his crests does plume?
What may not others fear,

100

If thus he crown each year?
A Caesar he, ere long, to Gaul
To Italy an Hannibal,⁶
And to all states not free
Shall climacteric⁷ be.

105

The Pict no shelter now shall find
Within his parti-colored mind,⁸
But from this valor sad^o *steadfast*
Shrink underneath the plaid;⁰ *tartan kilts*
Happy if in the tufted brake⁰ *hushes*

110

The English hunter him mistake,
Nor lay his hounds in near
The Caledonian⁰ deer.⁹ *Scottish*
But thou, the war's and fortune's son,
March indefatigably on!
And for the last effect,
Still keep thy sword erect;
Besides the force it has to fright
The spirits of the shady night,¹
The same arts that did gain

A power must it maintain.

1681

3. I.e., at the feet of the Republic, conceived as a

7. I.e., ushering in a new epoch.

Roman senator wearing a toga.

8. The Scots, called *Picti* (“painted men”) by the

4. I.e., when the falconer casts out his lure—a

Romans because they painted their bodies for bat-

bunch of feathers attached to a cord and baited

tle, are stigmatized as factious (with a pun on *party* with meat.

and “parti-colored”). They were in fact torn

5. Of the falcon; also, the plumed helmet of the

between their Calvinism and their loyalty to the warrior.

Catholic or Anglo-Catholic Stuart kings.

6. The Roman general Gaius Julius Caesar (100—

9. I.e., the “Pict” shall be happy if the English

44 **B.C.E.**) conquered Gaul; the Carthaginian gen-

hunter mistakenly misses him and fails to send his

eral Hannibal (247—183 **B.C.E.**) conquered Italy.

hounds in after him.

Cromwell was expected to take action against

1. Swords held upright to suggest a cross were

European Catholic States.

believed to ward off evil spirits.

HENRY VAUGHAN *

1621-1695

Regeneration

A ward, and still in bonds,1 one day

I stole abroad;

It was high spring, and all the way

Primrosed and hung with shade;

5 Yet was it frost within,

And surly winds

Blasted my infant buds, and sin

Like clouds eclipsed my mind.

Stormed thus, I straight perceived my spring

io Mere stage and show,

My walk a monstrous,0 mountained thing, *strange,*
unnatural

Roughcast with rocks and snow;

And as a pilgrim's eye,

Far from relief,

15 Measures the melancholy sky,

Then drops and rains for grief,

So sighed I upwards still;2 at last

'Twixt steps and falls

I reached the pinnacle,0 where placed *summit*

20 I found a pair of scales;

I took them up and laid

In th' one, late pains;

The other smoke and pleasures weighed,

But proved the heavier grains.3

**25 With that some cried, “Away!” Straight I immediately
Obeyed, and led**

Full east, a fair, fresh field could spy;

Some called it Jacob’s bed,

A virgin soil which no

30 Rude feet ere trod,

Where, since he stepped there, only go

Prophets and friends of God.

*The poems printed here are from Vaughan’s book has been variously interpreted. “Ward” may mean *Silex Scintillans* (Latin for “sparkling, or fiery, “prisoner” or “young person under the guardian-flint”)- First published in 1650 and reissued with ship of another,” here, perhaps, God.

additional poems in 1655, the volume dramatizes

2. I.e., as a pilgrim still far from relief looks up at

Vaughan’s experience of religious conversion. Its

the dark sky—but also, albeit perhaps unknow-

title alludes to the poet’s “stony” heart, from which

ingly, up toward God—then cries, so did I keep

God strikes divine, purifying sparks. In the 1650

sighing as I climbed.

edition, the subtitle on the engraved title page

3. I.e., his sins (“smoke and pleasures”), being

acknowledges Vaughan’s indebtedness to George

compared to grains of corn or other seed, weigh

Herbert (1593-1633; see pp. 367-85), who had

more than his recent penance (“late pains”).

used the same subtitle for *The Temple* (1633):

4. I.e., toward the place of rebirth.

“Sacred Poems and Private Ejaculations.”

5. Sleeping in a field, Jacob saw a ladder reaching

1. Literally, the constraints of being below legal
from Earth to heaven, with angels ascending and
age; metaphorically, the bondage of sin; the line
descending on it (Genesis 28.10—12).

REGENERATION / 491

Here I reposed; but scarce^o well set,^o *scarcely / settled*

A grove descried^o *saw*

35 Of stately height, whose branches met

And mixed on every side;

I entered, and once in,

Amazed to see't,

Found all was changed, and a new spring

40 Did all my senses greet.

The unthrif^o sun shot vital gold, *spendthrift*

A thousand pieces,

And heaven its azure did unfold,

Checkered with snowy fleeces;

45 The air was all in spice,

And every bush

A garland wore; thus fed my eyes,

But all the ear lay hush.^o *quiet*

Only a little fountain⁶ lent

50 Some use for ears,

And on the dumb shades language spent^o *expended*

The music of her tears;
I drew her near, and found
The cistern full
55 Of divers stones, some bright and round,
Others ill-shaped and dull.⁷
The first, pray mark, as quick as light
Danced through the flood,⁸
But the last, more heavy than the night,
60 Nailed to the center stood;⁹
I wondered much, but tired
At last with thought,
My restless eye that still desired
As strange an object brought.¹
65 It was a bank of flowers, where I descried
Though 'twas midday,
Some fast asleep, others broad-eyed
And taking in the ray;²
Here, musing long, I heard
70 A rushing wind
Which still increased, but whence it stirred
No where I could not find.

6. Perhaps alluding to a baptismal font, or, per-
of Christian theology. Other interpretations of
haps, to the traditional allegory of Christ as a foun-
“center” include Earth and hell.
tain.

1. I.e., his eye, still desiring to see something,

7. Critics have proposed various interpretations of

brought to his sight an object as strange as the one
the stones, e.g., ideas, images, and souls.
just described.

8. The water. *Pray mark*: i.e., take note.

2. God and Christ were often symbolized by the

9. Probably the “heaviest stone” is the idea of
sun. *Fast asleep*: i.e., spiritually sluggish.

Christ’s Crucifixion, with the cross as the “center”

492 / HENRY VAUGHAN

I turned me round, a n d t o e a c h s h a d e

D i s p a t c h e d a n e y e

75 T o s e e i f a n y l e a f h a d m a d e

L e a s t m o t i o n o r r e p l y ,

B u t w h i l e I l i s t e n i n g s o u g h t

M y m i n d t o e a s e

B y k n o w i n g w h e r e ‘ t w a s , o r w h e r e n o t ,
s o I t w h i s p e r e d , “ W h e r e I p l e a s e . ” 3

“ L o r d , ” t h e n s a i d I , “ o n m e o n e b r e a t h , 4

A n d l e t m e d i e b e f o r e m y d e a t h ! ”

Cant. chap. 5. vex. 175

*Arise O North, and come thou South-wind and blow upon my
garden, that*

the spices thereof may flow out.

1650

The Retreat

H a p p y t h o s e e a r l y d a y s ! w h e n I

S h i n e d i n m y a n g e l i n f a n c y .

B e f o r e I u n d e r s t o o d t h i s p l a c e

A p p o i n t e d for m y s e c o n d race,⁶
5 Or taught my soul to f a n c y aught
But a w h i t e , celestial thought;
W h e n yet I had not walked above
A m i l e or t w o f r o m my first love,⁷
A n d looking back, at that short space,
io C o u l d s e e a glimpse of His bright face;
W h e n o n s o m e gilded c l o u d o r flower
M y gazing soul w o u l d dwell a n hour,
A n d in t h o s e w e a k e r glories spy
S o m e s h a d o w s of eternity;
15 Before I taught my t o n g u e to w o u n d
My c o n s c i e n c e w i t h a sinful s o u n d ,
Or had the black art to d i s p e n s e
A several¹⁰ sin to every s e n s e , separate
But felt t h r o u g h all this fleshly dress⁸
20 Bright s h o o t s of everlastingness.
O, h o w I l o n g to travel back,
A n d tread again that a n c i e n t track!

3. “The wind bloweth where it listeth, and thou

6. “Race” is a traditional Christian metaphor for
 hearest the sound thereof, but canst not tell

“life”; by “second” race Vaughan evidently alludes
 whence it cometh, and whither it goeth: so is every
 to a belief in the soul’s heavenly existence prior to
 one that is born of the Spirit” (John 3.8).

its human life. Such a belief was held by some

4. I.e., blow one of your life-giving (and perhaps

Christian Neoplatonists and Hermetic authors; it also poetry-inspiring) breaths on me.

reappears in Wordsworth's "Ode: Intimations of

5. The poem ends by merging its voice, imaged as Immortality" (see p. 796).

breath, with that of the biblical Song of Solomon

7. I.e., Christ; see Revelation 2.4.

(though from 4.16, not 5.17).

8. I.e., the mortal body.

THE WORLD / 493

That I m i g h t o n c e m o r e r e a c h t h a t p l a i n

W h e r e f i r s t I l e f t m y g l o r i o u s t r a i n,⁹

25 F r o m w h e n c e t h' e n l i g h t e n e d s p i r i t s e e s

T h a t s h a d y c i t y o f p a l m t r e e s.¹

B u t, a h! m y s o u l w i t h t o o m u c h s t a y⁰ d e l a y

I s d r u n k, a n d s t a g g e r s i n t h e w a y.

S o m e m e n a f o r w a r d m o t i o n l o v e;

30 B u t I b y b a c k w a r d s t e p s w o u l d m o v e,

A n d w h e n t h i s d u s t f a l l s t o t h e u r n,²

I n t h a t s t a t e I c a m e, r e t u r n.

1650

The World

I s a w e t e r n i t y t h e o t h e r n i g h t,

L i k e a g r e a t r i n g o f p u r e a n d e n d l e s s l i g h t,

A l l c a l m a s i t w a s b r i g h t;

A n d r o u n d b e n e a t h i t, T i m e, i n h o u r s, d a y s, y e a r s,

5 D r i v e n b y t h e s p h e r e s³

Like a vast shadow moved, in which the world
And all her train were hurled.

The dotting lover in his quaintest strain *most ingenious* Did there complain;

10 Near him, his lute, his fancy, and his flights,
Wit's sour delights,

With gloves and knots, the silly snares of pleasure,
love knots Yet his dear treasure,

All scattered lay, while he his eyes did pour

15 Upon a flower.

The dark some statesman hung with weights
and woe Like a thick midnight fog moved there
so slow

He did nor^o stay nor go;

neither

Condemning thoughts, like sad eclipses, scowl

20 Upon his soul,

And clouds of crying witnesses without

all around

Pursued him with one shout.

Yet digged them mole, and, lest his ways be found,

Worked underground,

25 Where he did clutch his prey. But one did see

That policy:

strategy

Churches and altars fed him; perjuries

Were gnats and flies;

It rained about him blood and tears; but he

30 Drank them as free.⁵

9. I.e., my previous mode of existence, or, possibly, my place in God's angelic entourage.
2. Tomb. *This dust*: my body.
3. The concentric crystalline spheres of Ptolemaic astronomy.
 1. Heaven or the Promised Land, as shown to Moses (Deuteronomy 34.1—4); for its identification with Jericho, see Deuteronomy 34.3.
 4. I.e., the "darksome statesman" of line 16.
 5. I.e., as freely as they rained.

494 / HENRY VAUGHAN

T h e f e a r f u l m i s e r o n a h e a p o f r u s t
S a t p i n i n g a l l h i s l i f e t h e r e , d i d s c a r c e 0 t r u s t
scarcely

H i s o w n h a n d s w i t h t h e d u s t ;
Y e t w o u l d n o t p l a c e 0 o n e p i e c e a b o v e , b u t l i v e s
invest

35 I n f e a r o f t h i e v e s .

T h o u s a n d s t h e r e w e r e a s f r a n t i c a s h i m s e l f ,
A n d h u g g e d e a c h o n e h i s p e l f : 0
T h e d o w n r i g h t e p i c u r e 6 p l a c e d h e a v e n i n s e n
s e , A n d s c o r n e d p r e t e n s e ;
money, riches

40 W h i l e o t h e r s , s l i p p e d i n t o a w i d e e x c e s s ,
S a i d l i t t l e l e s s ;

T h e w e a k e r s o r t s l i g h t , t r i v i a l w a r e s e n s l a v e ,
W h o t h i n k t h e m b r a v e 0

A n d p o o r , d e s p i s e d T r u t h s a t c o u n t i n g b y 7

45 **Their victory.**

fine, showy

Yet some, who all this while did weep and sing,

And sing and weep, soared up into the ring;

But most would use no wing.

“O fools!” said I, “thus to prefer dark night

50 Before true light!

To live in grots⁰ and caves, and hate the day *caverns*

Because it shows the way,

The way which from this dead and dark abode

Leads up to God,

55 A way where you might tread the sun and be

More bright than he!”

But as I did their madness so discuss,

One whispered thus:

“This ring the bridegroom did for none provide,

60 But for his bride.”⁸

John Chap. 2. vex. 16, 17

*All that is in the world, the lust of the flesh, the lust of the eyes,
and the pride of life, is not of the father, hut is of the world.*

*And the world passeth away, and the lusts thereof, hut he that
doth the will of God abideth forever.*

1650

They Are All Gone into the World of Light!

They are all gone into the world of light!

And I alone sit lingering here;

Their very memory is fair and bright,

And my sad thoughts doth clear.

6. One who delights in the experience of the 8. See Revelation 19.7—9 and 21 for the marriage senses. of the Lamb and the bride (Christ and his Church).

7. *Counting by*: recording.

THEY ARE ALL GONE INTO THE WORLD OF
FLIGHT! / 495

5 It⁰ glows and glitters in my cloudy breast *the memory*

Like stars upon some gloomy grove,

Or those faint beams in which this hill is dressed

After the sun's remove.

I see them walking in an air of glory,

10 Whose light doth trample on my days;

My days, which are at best but dull and hoary,⁰ *gray,*
ancient

Mere glimmering and decays.

O holy hope! and high humility,

High as the heavens above!

15 These are your walks, and you have showed them me

To kindle my cold love.

Dear, beautiful death! the jewel of the just,

Shining nowhere but in the dark;

What mysteries do lie beyond thy dust,

20 Could man outlook that mark!⁰ *boundary*

He that hath found some fledged bird's nest may know⁹

At first sight if the bird be flown;

But what fair well⁰ or grove he sings in now, *spring*

That is to him⁰ unknown. *the seeker*

25 And yet, as angels in some brighter dreams

Call to the soul when man doth sleep,

So some strange thoughts transcend our wonted themes,¹
And into glory peep.
If a star were confined into a tomb,²
30 Her captive flames must needs burn there;
But when the hand that locked her up gives room,
She'll shine through all the sphere.
O Father of eternal life, and all
Created glories under Thee!
35 Resume 0 Thy spirit from this world of thrall⁰ *take back*
/slavery
Into true liberty!
Either disperse these mists, which blot and fill
My perspective³ still as they pass;
Or else remove me hence unto that hill
40 Where I shall need no glass.⁴

1655

9. The bird often symbolizes the human soul; cf.

4. Vaughan superimposes the modern image of George Herbert, "Easter Wings" (p. 368). *Fledged*: the magnifying telescope onto the traditional fit to fly.

Christian and Platonic image of life as an experi-

1. I.e., accustomed ideas.

ence of distorted vision or darkness; "for now we

2. Probably a metaphor for the body, with the see through a glass, darkly; but then face to face" "star" as the soul.

(1 Corinthians 13.12). *Hill*: Sion hill; figuratively,

3. Literally, telescope; more generally, ability to
heaven.

see into the distance.

496 / HENRY VAUGHAN

The Waterfall

With what deep murmurs through time's silent stealth

Doth thy transparent, cool, and watery wealth

Here flowing fall,

And chide, and call,

5 As if his liquid, loose retinue⁵ stayed

Lingering, and were of this steep place afraid,

The common pass

Where, clear as glass,

All must descend—

10 Not to an end,

But quickened by this deep and rocky grave,

Rise to a longer course more bright and brave.⁶

Dear stream! dear bank, where often I

Have sat and pleased my pensive eye,

15 Why, since each drop of thy quick⁰ store *living*

Runs thither whence it flowed before,⁷

Should poor souls fear a shade or night,

Who came, sure, from a sea of light?⁸

Or since those drops are all sent back

20 So sure to thee, that none doth lack,

Why should frail flesh doubt any more

That what God takes He'll not restore?

O useful element and clear!

**My sacred wash and cleanser here,
 25 My first consignor⁹ unto those
 Fountains of life where the Lamb goes!
 What sublime truths and wholesome themes
 Lodge in thy mystical deep streams!
 Such as dull man can never find
 BO Unless that Spirit lead his mind
 Which first upon thy face did move,¹
 And hatched all with His quickening love.
 As this loud brook's incessant fall
 In streaming rings restagnates⁰ all, *becomes stagnant*
 35 Which reach by course the bank, and then
 Are no more seen, just so pass men.**

5. Those in service; i.e., the water that has not yet the universe.

flowed over the edge is likened to time's ("his") fol-

8. A Hermetic concept; see "The Retreat," line 4 lowers or "retainers," with a probable bilingual pun (p. 492).

on *retenu*, French for "held back."

9. One who dispatches goods to another, i.e., the

6. I.e., elaborating on the central Christian parabolic baptismal water ("cleanser here") delivers the dox of resurrection, Vaughan imagines death as a speaker to eternal life ("where the Lamb goes"). Cf. quickening in the grave (a movement like that of a Revelation 7.17: "For the Lamb which is in the child in the womb) followed by a rising that defies

midst of the throne shall feed them, and shall lead
the waterfall's apparently natural downward
them unto living fountains of waters: and God shall
"course." *Brave*: splendid; cf. George Herbert, "Vir-
wipe away all tears from their eyes."
tue," line 5 (p. 375).

1. Describes the beginning of Creation (thus
7. A reference to the cyclical movement of water
"hatched all," line 31): "And the Spirit of God
(from river to sea to clouds to rain or snow to rivers
moved upon the face of the waters" (Genesis 1.2).
again), often held to be a sign of God's ordering of

T H E N I G H T / 4 9 7

O my invisible estate,⁰ *condition*

My glorious liberty, still late!²

Thou art the channel my soul seeks,

40 Not this with cataracts⁰ and creeks. -*waterfalls*

1655

The Night

John 3.2

Through that pure virgin shrine,³

That sacred veil drawn o'er Thy glorious noon,⁴

That men might look and live, as glowworms⁵ shine,

And face the moon,

5 Wise Nicodemus saw such light

As made him know his God by night.⁶

Most blest believer he!

Who in that land of darkness and blind eyes

**Thy long-expected healing wings⁷ could see,
io When Thou didst rise!
And, what can never more be done,
Did at midnight speak with the Sun!⁸
O who will tell me where
He found Thee at that dead and silent hour?
15 What hallowed solitary ground did bear
So rare a flower,
Within whose sacred leaves did lie
The fulness of the Deity?
No mercy-seat of gold,
20 No dead and dusty cherub, nor carved stone,
But His own living works did my Lord hold
And lodge alone;⁹**

2. I.e., not yet arrived (i.e., the liberty of eternal

6. Nicodemus, coming to Christ at night, life after death); cf. Romans 8.21: “Because the addressed him as “come from God”; in the same creature itself also shall be delivered from the account, Christ speaks of his coming as “the light” bondage of corruption into the glorious liberty of (John 3.1-21).

the children of God.”

7. A prophecy of Christ’s coming: “But unto you

3. Refers both to Christ’s mortal body and to the that fear my Name shall the Sun of righteousness night sky; indeed, the “virgin shrine” condenses arise with healing in his wings” (Malachi 4.2).

allusions not only to Christ but also to his mother,
8. A reference back to Nicodemus, who spoke
Mary, and probably to Diana, virgin and goddess
with Christ at midnight in a miracle the speaker
of the moon (according to classical myth).

thinks (perhaps erroneously) can never recur.

4. Christ was often figured as the sun. *Sacred veil*:

9. God instructed Moses on how to make the ark

Paul writes of “a new and living way which he

of the Covenant: “And thou shalt make a mercy

[Christ] hath consecrated for us, through the veil,

seat of pure gold... . And thou shalt make two

that is to say, his flesh” (Hebrews 10.20).

cherubims of gold, of beaten work shalt thou make

5. An insect, (the female of) which emits a shining

them, in the two ends of the mercy seat” (Exodus

green light from the abdomen; i.e., perhaps, as the

25.17—18). Vaughan contrasts the physical tem-

glowworms shine by reflecting the moon’s light, so

ples of the Old Testament with the “living works”

humans spiritually shine by reflecting Christ’s

in which Christ lodges.

light.

498 / HENRY VAUGHAN

Where trees and herbs did watch and peep

And wonder, while the Jews did sleep.¹

25 Dear night! this world’s defeat;

The stop to busy fools; care’s check and curb;

The day of spirits; my soul's calm retreat
Which none disturb!
Christ's progress, and His prayer time;²
30 The hours to which high heaven doth chime;
God's silent, searching flight;
When my Lord's head is filled with dew, and all
His locks are wet with the clear drops of night;
His still, soft call;
35 His knocking time;³ the soul's dumb watch,
When spirits their fair kindred catch.
Were all my loud, evil days
Calm and unhaunted as is thy dark tent,
Whose peace but by some angel's wing or voice
40 Is seldom rent,⁰ *torn*
Then I in heaven all the long year
Would keep, and never wander here.
But living where the sun
Doth all things wake, and where all mix and tire
45 Themselves and others, I consent and run
To every mire,
And by this world's ill-guiding light,⁴
Err more than I can do by night.
There is in God, some say,
50 A deep but dazzling darkness, as men here
Say it is late and dusky, because they
See not all clear.
O for that night! where I in Him
Might live invisible and dim!

1655

1. Vaughan imputes to plants an eagerness for
is filled with dew, and my locks with the drops of
Christ's coming lacking in the Jews. Their spiritual
the night" (Song of Solomon 5.2).

lethargy ("sleep") prevents them from recognizing

4. The speaker's own "consent" to error, along
Christ's divinity.

with the "ill-guiding light" of the world, cause him

2. "*Mark, chap. i.35. Luke, chap, xxi.37*"

to run into a spiritual swamp ("mire"). The "ill-

[Vaughan's note]. The cited passages mention

guiding light" may allude to the will-o'-the-wisp,

Christ's praying at night.

which was said to draw travelers astray into bogs

3. "I sleep, but my heart waketh: it is the voice of

by holding a false light before them; the phenom-

my beloved that knocketh, saying, Open to me, my

enon of nocturnal light is caused by the combus-

sister, my love, my dove, my undefiled: for my head

tion of marsh gas.

499

M A R G A R E T C A V E N D I S H

1623-1673

An Apology for Writing So Much upon This Book1

C o n d e m n m e n o t, I m a k e s o m u c h a d o

A b o u t t h i s b o o k; i t i s m y c h i l d, y o u k n o w.

J u s t l i k e a b i r d, w h e n h e r y o u n g a r e i n n e s t,

**G o e s in, a n d out, a n d h o p s , a n d takes n o rest:
5 B u t w h e n their y o u n g are fledg'd, their h e a d s
out-peep, Lord! W h a t a chirping d o e s the old o n e
keep!**

**So I, for fear my strengthless child s h o u l d fall
Against a door, or stool, a l o u d I call;**

Bid have a care of s u c h a d a n g e r o u s place:

io T h u s write I m u c h , to hinder all disgrace.

The Sea Similized to Meadows and Pastures: the Mariners, to
Shepherds: the Mast, to a May-Pole:² the Fish, to Beasts

T h e waves, like ridges of plow'd land, are high;

W h e r e a t the ship oft stumbling, d o w n doth lie.

But, in a c a l m , the sea's like m e a d o w s s e e n

Level; its saltness m a k e s it look as green.

5 W h e n ships thereon a slow soft p a c e do walk;

T h e n mariners, as s h e p h e r d s , sing a n d talk:

S o m e whistle, a n d s o m e on their pipes do play;

A n d thus, with mirth, they p a s s their time away.

A n d every m a s t is like a M a y - p o l e high,

io R o u n d which they d a n c e , t h o u g h not so merrily

As s h e p h e r d s do, w h e n they their lasses bring

G a r l a n d s , to M a y - p o l e s tied with a silk string.

I n s t e a d of garlands, they h a n g on their m a s t

H u g e sails a n d ropes, to tie t h e s e garlands fast.

15 I n s t e a d of lasses, they do d a n c e with D e a t h ;

A n d for their m u s i c , they have B o r e a s 3 breath.

I n s t e a d of wine a n d wassails,⁴ drink salt tears;

A n d for their m e a t , they f e e d on n o u g h t but fears.

F o r flocks of s h e e p , great schools of herrings swim;

20 **T h e w h a l e s , a s r a v e n o u s w o l v e s , d o f e e d o n t h e m .**
A s s p o r t f u l k i d s s k i p o v e r h i l l o c k s g r e e n ,
S o d a n c i n g d o l p h i n s , o n t h e w a v e s a r e s e e n .
T h e p o r p o i s e , l i k e t h e i r w a t c h f u l d o g e s p i e s ,
A n d g i v e s t h e m w a r n i n g w h e n g r e a t w i n d s w i l l r i s e .

1. This poem appeared in slightly different ver-
“The Author to Her Book” (p. 465).

sions at the beginning of all three editions of Mar-

2. A high pole, painted with spiral stripes of dif-
ferent colors, decked with flowers, set up on a
lifetime (in 1653, 1664, and 1668; our selections
green for revelers to dance around at a May Day
festival. *Similized*: compared.

or poem as child, see Sir Philip Sidney, *Astrophil*

3. The north wind’s.

and Stella, sonnet 1 (p. 213) and Anne Bradstreet,

4. The liquor with which healths were drunk.

5 0 0 / J O H N D R Y D E N

25 I n s t e a d o f b a r k i n g , h e h i s h e a d d o t h s h o w
A b o v e t h e w a t e r s , w h e n t h e y r o u g h l y f l o w :
A n d , l i k e a s m e n , i n t i m e o f s h o w ’ r i n g r a i n
A n d w i n d , d o n o t i n o p e n f i e l d s r e m a i n ;
B u t q u i c k l y r u n f o r s h e l t e r t o a t r e e :
30 S o s h i p s a t a n c h o r l i e u p o n t h e s e a .
Of Many Worlds in This World
J u s t l i k e a s i n a n e s t o f b o x e s 5 r o u n d ,

D e g r e e s of sizes in e a c h box are f o u n d :
S o , in this world, m a y m a n y others be
T h i n n e r a n d less, a n d less still by degree:
5 A l t h o u g h they are not subject to our s e n s e ,
A world m a y be no bigger t h a n two-pence.⁶
N a t u r e i s c u r i o u s , 0 a n d s u c h w o r k s m a y s h
a p e , *ingenious, skillful*
W h i c h our dull s e n s e s easily e s c a p e :
F o r c r e a t u r e s , small as a t o m s , 7 m a y be there,
io If every o n e a creature's figure bear.
If a t o m s four, a world c a n m a k e , 8 then see
W h a t several worlds might in an ear-ring be:
For, millions of those a t o m s m a y be in
T h e h e a d of one small, little, single pin.
15 A n d if t h u s small, then ladies m a y well wear
A world of worlds, as p e n d e n t s in e a c h ear.

1668

J O H N D R Y D E N

1631-1700

Song from *The Indian Emperor*¹

Ah, f a d i n g joy, h o w quickly art thou past!

Yet we thy ruin h a s t e .

As if the cares of h u m a n life were few,

W e s e e k out new:

5 A n d follow fate, which would too fast p u r s u e . 2

5. A set of boxes of graduated sizes packed inside
pany in the spring of 1665, focuses on the con-
one another.

quest of Mexico by the Spanish conquistador

6. An English silver coin having the value of two pennies; a very small amount.

an Indian woman to a group of Spaniards reclining

7. Very minute or microscopic objects.

by a fountain (4.3); immediately after the song's

8. In another poem, Cavendish declares that the end, they are captured by Indian forces.

four elements—earth, water, air, and fire—are

2. I.e., which, even if we did not conspire with it, made of four different kinds of atoms: “square would hurry us too quickly to our end. Dryden, in flat,” “round,” “long straight,” and “sharpest,” response to criticism of this metaphor, explained respectively.

that it was borrowed from a line in Virgil's *Aeneid*

1. This play, first performed by the King's Com- (11.695).

A B S A L O M A N D A C H I T O P H E L : A P O E M / 5 0 1

S e e h o w o n e v e r y b o u g h t h e b i r d s e x p r e s s

I n t h e i r s w e e t n o t e s t h e i r h a p p i n e s s .

T h e y a l l e n j o y a n d n o t h i n g s p a r e ;

B u t o n t h e i r m o t h e r n a t u r e l a y t h e i r c a r e .

10 W h y t h e n s h o u l d m a n , t h e l o r d o f a l l b e l o w ,

S u c h t r o u b l e s c h o o s e t o k n o w

A s n o n e o f a l l h i s s u b j e c t s u n d e r g o ?

**Hark, hark, the waters fall, fall, fall,
A n d w i t h a m u r m u r i n g s o u n d
15 D a s h , d a s h u p o n t h e g r o u n d ,
T o g e n t l e s l u m b e r s c a l l .**

1667

Song from *Troilus and Cressida*³

i

**C a n l i f e b e a b l e s s i n g ,
O r w o r t h t h e p o s s e s s i n g ,
C a n l i f e b e a b l e s s i n g , i f l o v e w e r e a w a y ?
A h , n o ! t h o u g h o u r l o v e a l l n i g h t k e e p u s w a k i n g ,
5 A n d t h o u g h h e⁴ t o r m e n t u s w i t h c a r e s a l l t h e d a y ,
Y e t h e s w e e t e n s , h e s w e e t e n s o u r p a i n s i n t h e
t a k i n g ;
T h e r e ' s a n h o u r a t t h e l a s t , t h e r e ' s a n h o u r t o
r e p a y .**

2

**I n e v e r y p o s s e s s i n g
T h e r a v i s h i n g b l e s s i n g ,
i o I n e v e r y p o s s e s s i n g t h e f r u i t o f o u r p a i n ,
P o o r l o v e r s f o r g e t l o n g a g e s o f a n g u i s h ,
W h a t e ' e r t h e y h a v e s u f f e r e d a n d d o n e t o
o b t a i n ;
' T i s a p l e a s u r e , a p l e a s u r e t o s i g h a n d t o
l a n g u i s h ,
W h e n w e h o p e , w h e n w e h o p e t o b e h a p p y a g a i n .**

1679

*From Absalom and Achitophel: A Poem*⁵

I n p i o u s t i m e s , e r e p r i e s t c r a f t d i d b e g i n ,

B e f o r e p o l y g a m y w a s m a d e a s i n ;

3. *Troilus and Cressida, or Truth Found Too Late*

the lovers' door the morning after they have consummated their love, and then instructs a group of musicians to sing this song.

lus and Cressida, separated during the siege of

4. Love is commonly personified as the young boy, Troy, had also been told by Chaucer (see p. 67).

Cupid.

Dryden alters Shakespeare's play considerably;

5. The title names refer the reader to 2 Samuel unlike Shakespeare, Dryden has both title characters

13-18. Absalom there rebels against his father,

actors die, for instance. In both versions, Cressida's

King David; Achitophel advises Absalom to destroy

uncle, Pandarus, is a voyeuristic, lewd character

David at once. Like many other texts from this

who schemes to bring about the physical consum-

period, Dryden's poem uses this biblical story as an

mation of the lovers' desires, but only in Dryden's

analogue for the religious and political crisis of

text does Pandarus use a song to serenade the lov-

1678 that came to be known as the "Popish Plot,"

ers. In this scene (3.2), Pandarus listens outside

and its aftermath of bitter political struggle

When man on many multiplied his kind,
Ere on to one was cursedly confined;
When nature prompted and no law denied
Promiscuous use of concubine and bride;
Then Israel's monarch after Heaven's own
heart, 6

His vigorous warmth did variously impart
To wives and slaves; and, wide as his com-
mand, Scattered his Maker's image throu-
gh the land.

Michal, 7 of royal blood, the crown did wear,
As soil ungrateful to the tiller's scare:

Not so the rest; for several mothers bore
To godlike David several sons before.

But since like slaves his bed they did ascend,
Not true succession could their seed attend.

Of all this numerous progeny was none

So beautiful, so brave, as Absalom:

Whether, inspired by some diviner lust,

His father got^o him with a greater gust,^o
begot / enjoyment

Or that^o his conscious destiny made way,
whether

By manly beauty, to imperial sway. 8

Early in foreign fields she won renown,

With kings and states allied to Israel's crown:
In peace the thought of war he could remove,
And seemed as^o he were only born for
love. *as if*

Whatever he did, was done with some ease,
In him alone 'twas natural to please;

His motions all accompanied with grace;
And paradice was opened in his face.
With secret joy indulgent David viewed
His youthful image in his son renewed:
To all his wishes nothing he denied;
And made the charming Annabel his bride.
What faults she had (for who from faults is free?)
His father could not, or he would not see.

Some warm excesses which the law forbore
, **W**ere construed youth that purged by boiling
ingo'er: between King Charles II and the earl of Shaftes-
while the earl was under arrest, apparently as an
bury: David stands for Charles II and Absalom for
attempt to stir public opinion against him; how-
the duke of Monmouth, Charles's illegitimate son.
ever, the grand jury soon set the earl free (he died
Achitophel represents the earl of Shaftesbury, who
two years later). A second part appeared in 1682,
urged Monmouth to seek the succession to the
although much of this work is attributed to Nahum
throne in an attempt to displace Charles's brother
Tate. After Charles II died in 1685 and James II
James, the duke of York, an openly practicing
succeeded to the throne, Dryden (and his two
Catholic. In 1678, Titus Oates offered sworn tes-
sons) converted to Catholicism in 1686; he
timony of the existence of a Jesuit plot to assassi-
remained a Catholic for the rest of his life.
nate the king, burn London, massacre Protestants,

6. God calls David “a man after mine own heart” and restore the Catholic Church; this testimony, in Acts 13.22.

combined with the discovery of the murder of a

7. David’s childless wife. She stands for Charles’s London justice of the peace, Sir Edmund Berry childless queen, Catherine of Portugal.

Godfrey, who had received a copy of the oath for

8. Although the lines are ambiguous, Dryden safekeeping, prompted fear of a Catholic uprising; seems to be asking whether Absalom gained imperial power (sway) by heredity or by deliberate use try to exclude James from the succession. To what of his “manly beauty.” Dryden alludes here to extent (if any) such a plot really existed is a matter Monmouth’s personal attractiveness and, in the of historical debate. Charles managed to retain his following lines, to his prowess in wars against the brother’s position as heir and charged Shaftesbury Dutch and later the French, and to his marriage with high treason. Dryden anonymously published (arranged by the king) to the Scottish heiress Anne the first part of “Absalom and Achitophel” in 1681 Scott.

ABSALOM AND ACHITOPHEL: A POEM / 503

And Amnon’s murder, 9 by a specious name ,

Was called a just revenge for injured fame.

Thus praised and loved the noble youth remain'd,

While David, undisturbed, in Sion¹ reigned.

But life can never be sincerely⁰ blest;

wholly

Heaven punishes the bad, and proves⁰ the best.

tries

The Jews, ² a headstrong, moody, murmuring
race, As ever tried the extent and stretch of grace;

God's ³ pamper'd people, whom, debauched
with ease, No king could govern, nor no God could
please

(Gods they had tried of every shape and size

That god-smiths could produce, or priests
devise);³

These Adam-wits,⁴ too fortunately free,

Began to dream they wanted⁰ liberty;

lacked

And when no rule, no precedent was found,

Of men by laws less circumscribed and bound
,

They led their wild desires to woods and caves,⁵

And thought that all but savages were slaves.

They who, when Saul was dead, without a blow,

Made foolish Ishboeth the crown forego;⁶

Who banish'd David did from Hebron⁷ bring,

And with a general shout proclaim'd him king:

Those very Jews, who, at their very best,

Their humor⁰ more than loyalty expressed,

caprice

**N o w w o n d e r e d w h y s o l o n g t h e y h a d o b e y e d
A n i d o l m o n a r c h , 8 w h i c h t h e i r h a n d s h a d m a d e ;
T h o u g h t t h e y m i g h t r u i n h i m t h e y c o u l d c r e a t e ,
O r m e l t h i m t o t h a t g o l d e n c a l f , a s t a t e . 9**

**B u t t h e s e w e r e r a n d o m b o l t s ; 0 n o f o r m e d d e s i g n
*shots***

N o r i n t e r e s t m a d e t h e f a c t i o u s c r o w d t o j o i n :

T h e s o b e r p a r t o f I s r a e l , f r e e f r o m s t a i n ,

W e l l k n e w t h e v a l u e o f a p e a c e f u l r e i g n ;

A n d , l o o k i n g b a c k w a r d w i t h a w i s e a f f r i g h t , 0

fear

S a w s e a m s o f w o u n d s , d i s h o n e s t 0 t o t h e s i g h t :

dishonorable

I n c o n t e m p l a t i o n o f w h o s e u g l y s c a r s

T h e y c u r s e d t h e m e m o r y o f c i v i l w a r s . 1

9. Absalom killed his half-brother Amnon, who
him (see Genesis 2.16—17).

had raped Absalom's half-sister, Tamar (2 Samuel

5. Dissenters from the Church of England were
13.28—29). The parallel with Monmouth is vague,
sometimes forced to worship in hiding.

although he had a reputation for violence in his

6. Saul stands for Oliver Cromwell (1599-1658),

youth, and his troopers had recently attacked an

English general and statesman, lord protector of

abusive Parliamentarian, Sir John Coventry. *Con-*

England; Ishbosheth, Saul's son who briefly ruled

strued: interpreted as the result of.

Israel, here represents Richard Cromwell (1626—

1. I.e., London.

1712), who had succeeded his father as lord pro-

2. I.e., the English.

tector before being forced to abdicate in 1659.

3. Perhaps a reference to the novelties in Church

7. David was first crowned king of the tribe of
doctrine and practice that had issued in the dis-

Judah, in Hebron, before becoming king of Israel

establishment of the Anglican Church under the

(2 Samuel 1-5); Charles II was first crowned king

Commonwealth; more generally, the recent

in Scotland, before being restored to the throne in

political and religious controversies that had

England in 1660.

divided England. The Israelites (God's chosen peo-

8. I.e., Oliver Cromwell. Jews were not allowed to

ple) were frequently converted to the worship of

worship idols (Exodus 20.4).

the pagan gods of the tribes and peoples with

9. I.e., that idol, a republic or commonwealth. The

whom they fought and traded.

biblical reference is to the image of a calf, made of

4. The word calls attention to the supposedly

melted golden earrings, which the Israelites wor-

untutored quality of the dissenters from the Angli-

shaped while Moses was on Mt. Sinai (Exodus

can Communion, and also to the biblical Adam's
32.1-4).

rebellion against the single restraint imposed on

1. I.e., such as the religious and political turmoil

504 / JOHN DRYDEN

The moderate sort of men, thus qualified,⁰ *mollified*

Inclined the balance to the better side;

And David's mildness managed it so well,

The bad found no occasion to rebel.

But when to sin our biased nature leans,²

**The careful⁰ Devil is still at hand with means;
*watchful***

And providently pimps for ill desires:³

The Good Old Cause⁴ revived, a plot requires.

Plots, true or false, are necessary things,

To raise up commonwealths and ruin kings.

The inhabitants of old Jerusalem

Were Jebusites;⁵ the town so called from them;

And theirs the native right.

But when the chosen people⁶ grew more strong,

The rightful cause at length became the wrong;

And every loss the men of Jebus bore,

They still were thought God's enemies the more.

Thus worn and weakened, well or ill content,

Submit they must to David's government:

Impoverished and deprived of all command,

Their taxes doubled as they lost their land;

And, what was harder yet to flesh and blood,

**T h e i r g o d s disgraced, a n d burnt like c o m m o n
wood.**

T h i s set the h e a t h e n p r i e s t h o o d ⁷ in a f l a m e ;

F o r priests of all religions are the s a m e :

Of whatsoe'er d e s c e n t their g o d h e a d be,

Stock,⁸ stone, or other h o m e l y pedigree,

In his d e f e n s e his servants are as bold,

As if he h a d b e e n b o r n of b e a t e n gold.

T h e J e w i s h rabbins, t h o u g h their e n e m i e s ,

In this c o n c l u d e t h e m h o n e s t m e n a n d wise:⁹

For 'twas their duty, all the learned think,

**To e s p o u s e his c a u s e , by w h o m they eat a n d
drink.¹**

F r o m h e n c e b e g a n that Plot,² the nation's c u r s e ,

B a d in itself, but r e p r e s e n t e d worse;

R a i s e d in extremes, a n d in extremes decried;

W i t h oaths affirmed, with dying vows d e n i e d ;

N o t w e i g h e d o r w i n n o w e d by the multitude;³

that had led to the beheading of Charles II's father,

see pp. 142-43).

Charles I, in 1649.

8. Block of wood, i.e., of humble descent.

2. *Biased*: prejudiced, or inclined in some direc-

9. I.e., even though the Anglican divines ("Jewish
tion (the *O.E.D.* cites Dryden's line); i.e., when our
rabbins") are "enemies" to Catholics, they consider
human inclination to sin takes over.

Catholics wise in the "bold" defense of their God.

3. I.e., the devil prudently provides the means

1. I.e., Christ, whose body Catholics “eat and (“pimps”) for sinful desires.

drink” in Communion; according to the Catholic

4. A popular phrase referring to the Common-doctrine of transubstantiation, the bread and wine wealth.

actually become the body of Christ during Com-

5. The Jebusites (Judges 1.21) represent Roman munion (whereas Protestant doctrine holds that Catholics; Jerusalem stands for London.

the bread and wine symbolize or represent his

6. The Protestants, some of whom claimed for body).

England a divinely appointed destiny like that of

2. I.e., the Catholic plot described in note 5, the Hebrews.

p. 501.

7. The Catholic clergy, suffering from the recent

3. According to this simile, in which the reports of flare-up of prejudice as well as from the long his-a plot are compared to grain, the populace has not tory of restrictions to which Dryden has just carefully “weighed” and “winnowed” (separated alluded; in particular, many oppressive laws the good from the bad) the grain, but has swal-against Catholics were established under the forty-lowed it whole.

five-year reign of Queen Elizabeth I (1533-1603;

A B S A L O M A N D A C H I T O P H E L : A P O E M /
5 0 5

But swallowed in the mass, unchewed and crude.

Some truth there was, but dashed⁰ and brewed with lies,
mixed

115 To please the fools, and puzzle all the wise.

Succeeding times did equal folly call,

Believing nothing, or believing all.

The Egyptian⁴ rites the Jebusites embraced,

Where gods were recommended by their taste.

120 Such savory deities must needs be good,

As served at once for worship and for food.

By force they could not introduce these gods,

For ten to one in former days was odds;⁵

So fraud was used (the sacrificer's trade):⁶

125 Fools are more hard to conquer than persuade.

Their busy teachers mingled with the Jews,

And raked for converts even the court and s t e w s *b r o t h e l*
s

Which Hebrew priests the more unkindly took,

Because the fleece accompanies the flock.⁷

no Some thought they God's anointed⁸ meant to slay

By guns, invented since full many a day:

Our author swears it not; but who can know

How far the Devil and Jebusites may go?

This Plot, which failed for want of common sense,

135 Had yet a deep and dangerous consequence:

For, as when raging fevers boil the blood,

The standing lake soon floats into a flood,

And every hostile humor, which before
 Slept quiet in its channels, bubbles o'er;
 140 So several factions from this first ferment
 Work up to foam, and threat the government.
 Some by their friends, more by themselves thought wise,
 Opposed the power to which they could not rise.
 Some had in courts been great, and thrown from thence,
 145 Like fiends were hardened in impenitence;⁰ *unrepentance*
 Some, by their monarch's fatal mercy, grown
 From pardoned rebels kinsmen to the throne,
 Were raised in power and public office high;
 Strong bands, if bands ungrateful men could tie.
 150 Of these the false Achitophel⁹ was first;
 A name to all succeeding ages cursed:
 For close⁰ designs, and crooked counsels fit;
secret
 Sagacious, bold, and turbulent of wit;^o
imagination
 Restless, unfixed in principles and place;
 155 In power unpleased, impatient of disgrace:
 A fiery soul, which, working out its way,
 Fretted the pygmy⁰ body to decay, r
overly small
 And o'er-informed the tenement of clay.¹ J
 4. I.e., the French; hence Roman Catholics. The
 ("Hebrew priests") resented any loss of tithes
 allusion is to the Mass, incorporating the doctrine
 ("fleece") paid to the established Church; such loss

of transubstantiation.

was caused by Catholic conversions.

5. I.e., because Protestants outnumbered Catho-

8. The king.

lics (although the difference in numbers was prob-

9. Shaftesbury had been a member of Cromwell's
ably much smaller than Dryden indicates).

council of state; later, he had helped bring back

6. I.e., those who use fraud sacrifice innocent peo-

Charles II and was made a member of the Cabal,

ple.

a powerful committee of the Privy Council.

7. Dryden implies that the Anglican clergy

1. I.e., overanimated his body-

506 / JOHN DRYDEN

A d a r i n g p i l o t i n e x t r e m i t y ;

**i60 P l e a s e d w i t h t h e d a n g e r , w h e n t h e w a v e
s w e n t h i g h , H e s o u g h t t h e s t o r m s ; b u t , f o r
a c a l m u n f i t , W o u l d s t e e r t o o n i g h t t h e s a n d
s , t o b o a s t h i s w i t .**

**G r e a t w i t s ° a r e s u r e t o m a d n e s s n e a r a l l i e
d , g e n i u s e s**

**A n d t h i n p a r t i t i o n s d o t h e i r b o u n d s d i v i d
e ; 165 E l s e w h y s h o u l d h e , w i t h w e a l t h a n d h
o n o r b l e s t , R e f u s e h i s a g e t h e n e e d f u l h o u r
s o f r e s t ?**

P u n i s h a b o d y w h i c h h e c o u l d n o t p l e a s e ,

B a n k r u p t o f l i f e , y e t p r o d i g a l o f e a s e ?

**A n d a l l t o l e a v e w h a t w i t h h i s t o i l h e w o n , 170
T o t h a t u n f e a t h e r e d t w o - l e g g e d t h i n g , 2 a**

son; Got, ° while his soul did huddled 0 not i
ons try; *begotten / confused*

And born a shapeless lump, like anarchy.

In friendship false, implacable in hate, R
esolved to ruin or to rule the state.

175 To compass 0 this the triple bond he bro
ke, 3 *accomplish*

The pillar of the public safety shook, r An
d fitted Israel for a foreign yoke; J

Then seized with fear, yet still affecting fa
me, Usurped a patriot's all-atonin name
.4

i80 So easy still it proves in factious times, W
ith public zeal to cancel private crimes.

How safe is treason, and how sacred ill,

Where none can sin against the people's
will!

Where crowds can wink, and no offense be
known, 185 Since in another's guilt they fi
nd their own!

Yet famed deserved, no enemy can grudge;

The statesman we abhor, but praise the jud
ge.

In Israel's courts ne'ers at an Abbeth dins
With more discerning eyes, or hands more
clean; 190 Unbribed, unsought, the wretch
ed to redress; Swift of dispatch, and easy o
f access.

Oh, had he been content to serve the crown,
With virtues only proper to the gown; °
judiciary

Or had the rankness of the soil been freed
195 From cockle, 0 that oppressed the noble
seed; *weedlike plant*

**David for him his tuneful harp had strung,
And Heaven had wanted one immortal song
. 6**

**But wild Ambition loves to slide, not stand
, And Fortune 'sice prefersto Virtue 's land
d.**

200 Achitophel, grown weary to possess

A lawfull fame, and lazy happiness,

Disdained the golden fruit to gather free,

2. Plato's definition of cloddish man.

sided over the Court of Chancery from 1672 to

3. Shaftesbury helped bring about the war against
1673.

Holland, with France as an ally, in 1672. *Triple*

6. I.e., heaven would have lacked one Psalm of

bond: an alliance (1668) between England, Swe-

David. Many interpretations exist for this difficult

den, and the Dutch Republic against France,

couplet: perhaps it is a reference to Psalm 3, writ-

which was thought to pose the threat of an inva-

ten, as tradition would have it, when David fled

sion (line 177).

from Absalom; other suggestions include Psalm 4

4. The name of "patriot" was "affected" (put on),

and Psalm 109. The application to Charles II is

then and thereafter, by the party out of power.

unclear; some have suggested that it refers to Dry-

5. A rabbinical term for a justice. Shaftesbury pre-

den's poem.

**ABSALOM AND ACHITOPHEL: A POEM /
507**

And lent the crowd his arm to shake the tree.

Now, manifest⁰ oP crimes contrived long since, *detected/in*

205 He stood at bold defiance with his prince;

Held up the buckler⁰ of the people's cause *protector*

Against the crown, and skulked behind the laws.

The wished occasion of the Plot he takes;

Some circumstances finds, but more he makes.

210 By buzzing emissaries fills the ears

Of listening crowds with jealousies⁰ and fears *suspicious*

Of arbitrary counsels brought to light,

And proves the king himself a Jebusite.

Weak arguments! which yet he knew full well

215 Were strong with people easy to rebel.

For, governed by the moon, the giddy Jews

Tread the same track when she the prime renews;

And once in twenty years, their scribes record,⁷

By natural instinct they change their lord.

220 Achitophel still wants a chief, and none

Was found so fit as warlike Absalom:

Not that he wished his greatness to create

(For politicians neither love nor hate),

But, for he knew his title not allowed,

225 Would keep him still depending on the crowd,

That kingly power, thus ebbing out, might be

Drawn to the dregs of a democracy.⁸

Him he attempts with studied arts to please,

And sheds his venom in such words as these:
230 “Auspicious prince, at whose nativity
Some royal planet⁹ ruled the southern sky;
Thy longing country’s darling and desire;
Their cloudy pillar and their guardian fire:
Their second Moses,¹ whose extended wand
235 Divides the seas, and shows the promised land;
Whose dawning day in every distant age
Has exercised the sacred prophet’s rage:
The people’s prayer, the glad diviners’ theme,
The young men’s vision, and the old men’s dream!²
240 Thee, savior, thee, the nation’s vows confess,
And, never satisfied with seeing, bless:
Swift unbespoken⁰ pomps⁰ thy steps proclaim, *voluntary /
celebrations*

And stammering babes are taught to lisp thy name.

How long wilt thou the general joy detain,

7. The phases of the moon fall on the same day of
of fire by night (Exodus 13—14). In reference to
the calendar year at roughly twenty-year intervals.

Christ, Moses said, “A Prophet shall the Lord your
Crises in English politics occurred in 1640 (the
God raise up unto you of your brethren, like unto
rebellion against Charles I), 1660 (the restoration
me”): Christ is sometimes referred to as “the second
of Charles II), and the time of the poem.

Moses” (see Acts 7.37). Here, Achitophel tells

8. I.e., mob rule.

Absalom that he is meant to be a second Moses.

9. A planet whose influence determines that he

2. Cf. the prophecy delivered to Joel: “And it shall
(Absalom) should be king.

come to pass afterward, that I will pour out my

1. I.e., their guide; after their exodus from Egypt
spirit upon all flesh; and your sons and your daugh-
under the leadership of Moses, who separated the
ters shall prophesy, your old men shall dream
waters of the Red Sea long enough to allow them
dreams, your young men shall see visions” (Joel
to escape, the Israelites were led in their forty-year
2 . 2 8) .

wandering by a pillar of clouds by day and a pillar

5 0 8 / J O H N D R Y D E N

245 Starve and defraud the people of thy reign?

Content ingloriously to pass thy days

Like one of Virtue’s fools that feeds on praise;

Till thy fresh glories, which now shine so bright,

Grow stale and tarnish with our daily sight.

250 Believe me, royal youth, thy fruit must be

Or⁰ gathered ripe, or rot upon the tree. *either*

Heaven has to all allotted, soon or late,

Some lucky revolution of their fate;

Whose motions if we watch and guide with skill

255 (For human good depends on human will),

Our Fortune rolls as from a smooth descent,³

And from the first impression takes the bent;

But, if unseized, she glides away like wind,
And leaves repenting Folly far behind.
260 Now, now she meets you with a glorious prize,
And spreads her locks before her as she flies.
Had thus Old David, from whose loins you spring,
Not dared, when Fortune called him, to be king,
At Gath⁴ an exile he might still remain,
265 And heaven's anointing oil⁵ had been in vain.
Let his successful youth your hopes engage;
But shun the example of declining age;
Behold him setting in his western skies,
The shadows lengthening as the vapors rise.⁶
270 He is not now, as when on Jordan's sand⁷
The joyful people thronged to see him land, r
Covering the beach, and blackening all the strand;⁰ *J shore*
But, like the Prince of Angels,⁸ from his height
Comes tumbling downward with diminished light,
275 Betrayed by one poor plot to public scorn
(Our only blessing since his cursed return),⁹
Those heaps of people which one sheaf did bind,
Blown off and scattered by a puff of wind.¹
What strength can he to your designs oppose,
280 Naked of friends, and round beset with foes?
If Pharaoh's² doubtful succor he should use,
A foreign aid would more incense the Jews:
Proud Egypt would dissembled friendship bring;
Foment⁰ the war, but not support the king: *heat, rouse*
285 Nor would the royal party e'er unite

With Pharaoh's arms to assist the Jebusite;
Or if they should, their interest soon would break,
And with such odious aid make David weak.

3. Achitophel stresses the workings of Fortune, or
6. The vapors or humors associated with night.
what emblem books called "Occasion," rather than
7. I.e., at Dover, where Charles II landed at the
divine Providence. He uses traditional images of
time of the Restoration.

Fortune standing on a ball and having to be seized
8. I.e., Lucifer; cf. Luke 10.18: "I beheld Satan as
by a forelock as she approaches, the back of her
lightning fall from heaven."
head being bald.

9. I.e., the crisis of 1678 was the only favorable
4. David escaped Saul by fleeing to Gath (1 Sam-
opportunity for the conspirators since the Resto-
uel 27.1—4); here, a reference to Brussels, where
ration.

Charles spent much of his exile.

1. I.e., the unity and loyalty of the people who had
5. God sent Samuel to anoint David as a token
supported the king are easily dispersed.

that he would finally come to the throne (1 Samuel
2. I.e., King Louis XIV of France.
16.1-13).

All sorts of men by my successful arts,
290 Abhorring kings, estrange their altered hearts
From David's rule: and 'tis the general cry,
'Religion, commonwealth, and liberty.'
If you, as champion of the public good,
Add to their arms a chief of royal blood,
295 What may not Israel hope, and what applause
Might such a general gain by such a cause?
Not barren praise alone, that gaudy flower
Fair only to the sight, but solid power;
And nobler is a limited command,
300 Given by the love of all your native land,
Than a successive title, long and dark,
Drawn from the moldy rolls of Noah's ark.³
What cannot praise effect in mighty minds,
When flattery soothes, and when ambition blinds!
305 Desire of power, on earth a vicious weed,
Yet, sprung from high, is of celestial seed:
In God 'tis glory; and when men aspire,
'Tis but a spark too much of heavenly fire.⁴
The ambitious youth, too covetous of fame,
310 Too full of angel's metal⁵ in his frame,
Unwarily was led from virtue's ways,
Made drunk with honor, and debauched with praise.
Half loath, and half consenting to the ill
(For loyal blood within him struggled still),
315 He thus replied: "And what pretense have I
To take up arms for public liberty?"

My father governs with unquestioned right;
The faith's defender, and mankind's delight,
Good, gracious, just, observant of the laws:
320 And heaven by wonders has espoused his cause.
Whom has he wronged in all his peaceful reign?
Who sues for justice to his throne in vain?
What millions has he pardoned of his foes,
Whom just revenge did to his wrath expose?
325 Mild, easy, humble, studious of our good,
Inclined to mercy, and averse from blood;
If mildness ill with stubborn Israel suit,
His crime is God's beloved attribute.
What could he gain, his people to betray,
330 Or change his right for arbitrary sway?
Let haughty Pharaoh curse with such a reign
His fruitful Nile, and yoke a servile train.⁶
If David's rule Jerusalem displease,
The Dog Star⁷ heats their brains to this disease.
3. Achitophel (Shaftesbury) espouses constitu-
tional monarchy ("a limited command") and par-
6. I.e., if King Louis XIV of France were to help
liamentary as opposed to hereditary determination
Charles II remain in power, he would only be curs-
of the succession.
ing his own country. In Exodus, the Pharaoh's
4. Perhaps including a reference to Prometheus,
refusal to release the enslaved Israelites caused

who angered the gods by stealing fire for the benefit of mortals.

people.

5. A double pun: the gold of which the coin

7. Sirius, the morning and evening star of late

("angel") is made, and the spirit ("mettle") of the summer, associated with crazing heat.

510 / JOHN DRYDEN

Why then should I, encouraging the bad,

Turn rebel and run popularly mad?

Were he a tyrant, who, by lawless might

Oppressed the Jews, and raised the Jebusite,

Well might I mourn; but nature's holy bands

Would curb my spirits and restrain my hands:

The people might assert their liberty,

But what was right in them were crime in me.

His favor leaves me nothing to require,

Prevents my wishes, and outruns desire.

What more can I expect while David lives?

All but his kingly diadem he gives:

**And that" — But there he pauses; then sighing, says
aid —**

"Is justly destined for a worthier head.

For when my father from his toils shall rest

And late augment the number of the blest,⁸

His lawful issue shall the throne ascend,

Or the collateral⁰ line, where that shall end.

brother's

**H i s brother,9 t h o u g h o p p r e s s e d with vulgar spite,
Yet d a u n t l e s s , a n d s e c u r e of native right,
Of every royal virtue s t a n d s p o s s e s s e d ;
Still dear to all the bravest a n d the best.**

H i s c o u r a g e foes,1 his friends his truth proclaim;

H i s loyalty the king, the world his f a m e .

H i s m e r c y even the o f f e n d i n g crowd will find,

F o r sure he c o m e s of a forgiving kind.0

family

W h y s h o u l d I then repine0 at heaven's decree,

complain

W h i c h gives me no p r e t e n s e to royalty?

Yet O that fate, propitiously0 inclined,

favorably

H a d raised my birth, or h a d d e b a s e d my m i n d ;

To my large soul not all her treasure lent,

A n d then betrayed it to a m e a n 0 d e s c e n t !

low

I find, I find my m o u n t i n g spirits bold,

A n d David's part disdains my mother's mold.

W h y am I s c a n t e d by a niggard2 birth?

My soul disclaims the kindred of her earth;3

And, m a d e for e m p i r e , whispers m e within,

'Desire of g r e a t n e s s is a godlike sin.' ”

H i m staggering so w h e n hell's dire agent4 f o u n d ,

**W h i l e fainting Virtue s c a r c e m a i n t a i n e d her g r
o u n d , He p o u r s fresh forces in, a n d thus replies:**

**” T h e e t e r n a l G o d , s u p r e m e l y g o o d a n d w i s e ,
I m p a r t s n o t t h e s e p r o d i g i o u s g i f t s i n v a i n :
W h a t w o n d e r s a r e r e s e r v e d t o b l e s s y o u r r e i g n !
A g a i n s t y o u r w i l l , y o u r a r g u m e n t s h a v e s h o w n ,
S u c h v i r t u e ’ s o n l y g i v e n t o g u i d e a t h r o n e .**

8. I.e., increase the number of souls in heaven.

confer succession to the throne.

9. Although Monmouth and the duke of York were

3. I.e., her body.

able to get along for many years, by 1679 they were

4. I.e., as Absalom (Monmouth) wavers, tempted

opposed to each other, and so it is unlikely that

by the sin of pride to attempt the throne despite

Monmouth would have felt the emotions for his

his own arguments against it, Achitophel (Shaftes-

uncle that Dryden here has him express.

bury), acting as “hell’s agent,” again tries to per-

1. I.e., his foes proclaim his courage.

suade him to rebel.

2. Ungenerous; the birth of a king’s son should

A B S A L O M A N D A C H I T O P H E L : A P O E M / 5 1 1

Not that your father’s mildness I contemn,

But manly force becomes the diadem.

‘Tis true he grants the people all they crave;

And more, perhaps, than subjects ought to have:

385 For lavish grants suppose a monarch tame,

And more his goodness than his wit⁰ proclaim. *intelligence*

But when should people strive their bonds to break,
If not when kings are negligent or weak?
Let him give on till he can give no more,
390 The thrifty Sanhedrins shall keep him poor;
And every shekel which he can receive,
Shall cost a limb of his prerogative.⁶
To ply him with new plots shall be my care;
Or plunge him deep in some expensive war;
395 Which when his treasure can no more supply,
He must, with the remains of kingship, buy.
His faithful friends our jealousies and fears
Call Jebusites, and Pharaoh's pensioners;
Whom when our fury from his aid has torn,

400 He shall be naked left to public scorn.
The next successor, whom I fear and hate,
My arts have made obnoxious to the state;
Turned all his virtues to his overthrow,
And gained our elders⁷ to pronounce a foe.
405 His right, for sums of necessary gold,
Shall first be pawned, and afterward be sold;
Till time shall ever-wanting David draw,
To pass your doubtful title into law:
If not, the people have a right supreme
410 To make their kings; for kings are made for them.
All empire is no more than power in trust,
Which, when resumed, can be no longer just.
Succession, for the general good designed,
In its own wrong a nation cannot bind;
415 If altering that the people can relieve,
Better one suffer than a nation grieve.
The Jews well know their power: ere Saul they chose,
God was their king, and God they durst depose.⁸
Urge now your piety,⁹ your filial name, *dutifulness*
420 A father's right, and fear of future fame;
The public good, that universal call,
To which even heaven submitted, answers all.
Nor let his love enchant your generous mind;
'Tis Nature's trick to propagate her kind.
5. The high council of the Jews; here, the Parlia-
poem, the Parliamentarians who voted to exclude
ment, which provided the crown with its monies.

James from the succession.

The Whigs hoped to limit the powers of the crown

8. The Israelites' demand that a secular king

by refusing to vote money to Charles, but he lived

(Saul, as it happened) replace the theocratic

on French subsidies and refused to summon Par-

Judges was condemned as impious: "And the Lord

liament for the duration of the crisis.

said ... , they have rejected me, that I should not

6. A term used with particular reference to a sov-

reign over them" (1 Samuel 8.7). As Saul replaced

ereign's rights (in theory, subject to no restric-

the Judges, so, in the poem, Oliver Cromwell took

tions).

over authority from the theocrats of the Common-

7. In the Bible, the Jewish magistrates; in the

wealth.

512 / JOHN DRYDEN

425 Our fond begetters, who would never die,

Love but themselves in their posterity.

Or let his kindness by the effects be tried,

Or let him lay his vain pretense aside.

God said he loved your father; could he bring

430 A better proof than to anoint him king?

It surely showed he loved the shepherd⁹ well,

Who gave so fair a flock as Israel.

Would David have you thought his darling son?

What means he then, to alienate¹ the crown?

435 The name of godly he may blush to bear:
‘Tis after God’s own heart to cheat his heir.²
He to his brother gives supreme command;
To you a legacy of barren land,³
Perhaps the old harp, on which he thrums his lays,⁰ *songs*
440 Or some dull Hebrew ballad in your praise.
Then the next heir, a prince severe and wise,
Already looks on you with jealous eyes;
Sees through the thin disguises of your arts,
And marks your progress in the people’s hearts.
445 Though now his mighty soul its grief contains,
He meditates revenge who least complains;
And, like a lion, slumbering in the way,
Or sleep dissembling, while he waits his prey,
His fearless foes within his distance draws,
450 Constrains his roaring, and contracts his paws;
Till at the last, his time for fury found,
He shoots with sudden vengeance from the ground;
The prostrate vulgar⁰ passes o’er and spares, *populace*
But with a lordly rage his hunters tears.
455 Your case no tame expedients will afford:
Resolve on death, or conquest by the sword,
Which for no less a stake than life you draw;
And self-defense is nature’s eldest law.
Leave the warm⁴ people no considering time;
460 For then rebellion may be thought a crime.
Prevail⁰ yourself of what occasion gives, *avail*
But try your title while your father lives;

And that your arms may have a fair pretense,⁰ *pretext*

Proclaim you take them in the king's defense;

465 Whose sacred life each minute would expose

To plots, from seeming friends, and secret foes.

And who can sound the depth of David's soul?

Perhaps his fear his kindness may control.⁵

He fears his brother, though he loves his son,

470 For plighted vows too late to be undone.

If so, by force he wishes to be gained,

9. As a youth, David tended sheep for his father.

see also line 981. Conflicting interpretations exist

1. I.e., transfer title to another (a legal term).

for how these lines apply to Charles II.

2. A reference to the story of Jacob and Esau

3. James had been titled generalissimo (the
(Genesis 27—28). Esau, the older twin, was entitled
supreme commander of combined forces) in 1678;
to the birthright and blessing of his father, but God
Monmouth had been exiled the following year.

chose Jacob to continue the covenant he had made

4. I.e., recently heated or roused in anger.

with Abraham. Jacob tricked Esau out of his birth-

5. I.e., perhaps his fear of James keeps Charles II
right and blessing, apparently with God's approval;
from being kind to you.

**ABSALOMANDACHITOPHEL: A POEM /
513**

Like women's lechery, to seem constrained.⁰ *forced*

Doubt not; but when he most affects the frown,
Commit a pleasing rape⁰ upon the crown. *seizure*
475 Secure his person to secure your cause:
They who possess the prince, possess the laws.”
He said, and this advice above the rest
With Absalom’s mild nature suited best:
Unblamed of life (ambition set aside),⁶
480 Not stained with cruelty, nor puffed with pride,
How happy had he been, if destiny
Had higher placed his birth, or not so high!
His kingly virtues might have claimed a throne,
And blest all other countries but his own.
485 But charming greatness since so few refuse,
‘Tis juster to lament him than accuse.
Strong were his hopes a rival to remove,
With blandishments to gain the public love;
To head the faction while their zeal was hot,
490 And popularly prosecute the Plot.
To further this, Achitophel unites
The malcontents of all the Israelites;⁷
Whose differing parties he could wisely join,
For several ends, to serve the same design:
495 The best (and of the princes some were such),
Who thought the power of monarchy too much;
Mistaken men, and patriots in their hearts;
Not wicked, but seduced by impious arts.
By these the springs of property were bent,
500 And wound so high, they cracked the government.

The next⁸ for interest sought to embroil the state,
 To sell their duty at a dearer rate;
 And make their Jewish markets of the throne,
 Pretending public good, to serve their own.
 505 Others thought kings an useless heavy load,
 Who cost too much, and did too little good.
 These were for laying honest David by,
 On principles of pure good husbandry.⁰ *economy*
 With them joined all the haranguers of the throng,
 510 That thought to get preferment by the tongue.
 Who follow next, a double danger bring,
 Not only hating David, but the king:
 The Solymaeen rout,⁹ well-versed of old
 In godly faction, and in treason bold;
 515 Cowering and quaking at a conqueror's sword,
 But lofty to a lawful prince restored;
 Saw with disdain an ethnic¹ plot begun,
 And scorned by Jebusites to be outdone.
 Hot Levites² headed these; who, pulled before
 6. I.e., not guilty except perhaps for ambition.
 Jerusalem.

7. Lines 492—543 describe the various groups that

1. In the biblical context, gentile; in the historical, Shaftesbury sought to unite against Charles II. Catholic.

8. I.e., those primarily concerned with economic

2. Men of the tribe of Levi conveyed the ark of the gain, namely London merchants.

Covenant when Israel moved camp (Numbers
9. The London populace. Solyma was a name for
4.15); the Presbyterian clergy administered the

514 / JOHN DRYDEN

F r o m the ark, which in the J u d g e s ' days they bore,

R e s u m e d their cant, a n d with a zealous cry

P u r s u e d their old beloved theocracy:

**W h e r e S a n h e d r i n a n d priest e n s l a v e d the
nation,**

A n d justified their spoils by inspiration:

F o r w h o so fit for reign as Aaron's race,³

I f o n c e d o m i n i o n they c o u l d f o u n d i n g r a c e ?

T h e s e led the pack; t h o u g h not of surest scent,

Y e t d e e p e s t - m o u t h e d 0 against the g o v e r n m e n t .

baying loudest

A n u m e r o u s host of d r e a m i n g saints⁴ s u c c e e d ,

O f the true old e n t h u s i a s t i c 0 breed:

fanatic

G a i n s t f o r m a n d order they their power employ,

N o t h i n g to build, a n d all things to destroy.

B u t far m o r e n u m e r o u s w a s the herd of s u c h ,

W h o think too little, a n d w h o talk too m u c h .

T h e s e out of m e r e instinct, they k n e w not why,

A d o r e d their fathers' G o d a n d property;

A n d , by the s a m e blind benefit of fate,

T h e Devil a n d the J e b u s i t e did hate:

B o r n to be saved, even in their own despite,

B e c a u s e they c o u l d not help believing right.⁵

**S u c h were the tools; but a whole Hydra6 m o r e
R e m a i n s , of s p r o u t i n g h e a d s too long to score.0
*record***

**S o m e of their chiefs were princes of the land:
In the first rank of these did Zimri7 stand;
A m a n so various, that he s e e m e d to be
N o t one, but all m a n k i n d ' s e p i t o m e :
Stiff in opinions, always in the wrong;
W a s everything by starts, a n d n o t h i n g long;
But, in the c o u r s e of one revolving m o o n ,
W a s c h e m i s t , f i d d l e r , s t a t e s m a n , a n d b u f f
o o n : T h e n all for w o m e n , painting, rhyming,
drinking,
B e s i d e s t e n t h o u s a n d f r e a k s 0 that died in thinking.
*whims***

**Blest m a d m a n , w h o c o u l d every h o u r employ,
With s o m e t h i n g n e w to wish, or to enjoy!
Railing a n d praising were his u s u a l t h e m e s ;
A n d both (to s h o w his j u d g m e n t) in extremes:
So over-violent, or over-civil,
T h a t every m a n , with him, w a s G o d or Devil.
In s q u a n d e r i n g wealth with his peculiar art:
N o t h i n g went u n r e w a r d e d but desert.0
B e g g a r e d by fools, w h o m still
*worth***

**0 h e f o u n d t o o late ,
He h a d his jest, a n d they h a d his estate.
*always***

H e l a u g h e d himself f r o m court; then s o u g h t relief

**By forming parties, but could ne'er be chief;
For, spite of him, the weight of business fell**
state religion under the Commonwealth (“in the
536) to the commercial origins of many dissenters.
Judges’ days”).

6. Mythical beast with nine heads, each of which

3. The priestly family; (derisively) the theocrati-
was replaced by two heads when it was cut off.
cally disposed dissenters.

7. An Israelite executed for whoredom (Numbers

4. A term used by some dissenters for those
25); a second Zimri was a traitor and regicide (1
elected to salvation.

Kings 26.8—20). Dryden gives the name to George

5. Dryden calls attention to the Calvinist doc-
Villiers, duke of Buckingham, a latecomer to Mon-
trines of predestination and election, and (in line
mouth’s cause (described in lines 492—543).

A B S A L O M A N D A C H I T O P H E L : A P O E M / 5 1 5

On Absalom and wise Achitophel:

Thus, wicked but in will, of means bereft,

He left not faction, but of that was left.⁸

With all these loads of injuries oppressed,

And long revolving in his careful breast

935 The event⁰ of things, at last, his patience tired, *outcome*

Thus from his royal throne, by Heaven inspired,

The godlike David spoke: with awful fear

His train their Maker in their master hear.
“Thus long have I, by native mercy swayed,
940 My wrongs dissembled, my revenge delayed:
So willing to forgive the offending age,
So much the father did the king assuage.
But now so far my clemency they slight,
The offenders question my forgiving right.⁹
945 That one was made for many, they contend;
But ‘tis to rule; for that’s a monarch’s end.
They call my tenderness of blood my fear;
Though manly tempers can the longest bear.
Yet, since they will divert my native course,
950 ‘Tis time to show I am not good by force.
Those heaped affronts that haughty subjects bring,
Are burdens for a camel, not a king:
Kings are the public pillars of the State,
Born to sustain and prop the nation’s weight:
955 If my young Samson will pretend a call
To shake the column, let him share the fall: 1
But, oh, that yet he would repent and live!
How easy ‘tis for parents to forgive!
With how few tears a pardon might be won
960 From nature, pleading for a darling son!
Poor pitied youth, by my paternal care
Raised up to all the height his frame could bear:
Had God ordained his fate for empire born,
He would have given his soul another turn:
8. The passage here omitted has five parts. (1)

the flaws, and buttress up the wall, / Thus far 'tis
 Lines 569—681: A further roll of the rebels or dis-
 duty; but here fix the mark; / For all beyond it is
 senters, including briefly “The well-hung Balaam
 to touch the ark” (lines 795—804; to touch the ark
 and cold Caleb,” “canting Nadab” and “bull-faced
 of the Covenant, which contained the Ten Com-
 Jonas,” and, extensively, Shimei (Slingsby Bethel,
 mandments, is to commit sacrilege). (4) Lines
 a sheriff of London), “whose youth did early prom-
 811—913: A short roll of David’s supporters,
 ise bring / Of zeal to God and hatred to his king,”
 including at length Barzillai (the duke of
 and Corah (Titus Oates), whose “zeal to heaven
 Ormond)—“The court he practiced, not the court-
 made him his prince despise.” (2) Lines 682—752:
 ier’s art: / Large was his wealth, but larger was his
 Absalom’s courting of the people and the devel-
 heart”—and, briefly, Zadoc, Adriel, Jotham,
 opment of the plot against David. (3) Lines 753—
 Hushai, and Amiel. (5) Lines 914-932: A brief
 810: Dryden’s analysis of the issues involved in
 reprise of number 2, Absalom’s courting of the
 conflicts between the people (divinely obligated to
 people, and an indication of the mounting danger
 obedience) and their monarchs (divinely obligated
 of open revolt.
 to just stewardship), culminating thus: “Yet, grant

9. The right of the king to pardon, questioned by our lords the people kings can make, / What prudent members of the opposition.

dent men a settled throne would shake? / For

1. Samson, pulling down the supporting columns whatsoe'er their sufferings were before, / That of a Philistine temple, was destroyed in the ruin change they covet makes them suffer more. ... If (Judges 16.29-30).

ancient fabrics nod, and threat to fall, / To patch

5 1 6 / J O H N D R Y D E N

965 Gulled⁰ with a patriot's name, whose modern sense *deceived*.

Is one that would by law supplant his prince:

The people's brave,² the politician's tool;

Never was patriot yet, but was a fool.

Whence comes it that religion and the laws

970 Should more be Absalom's than David's cause?

His old instructor, ere he lost his place,³

Was never thought indued⁰ with so much grace. *endowed*

Good heavens, how faction can a patriot paint!

My rebel ever proves my people's saint:

975 Would *they* impose an heir upon the throne?

Let Sanhedrins be taught to give their own.

A king's at least a part of government,

And mine as requisite as their consent;

Without my leave a future king to choose,

980 Infers a right the present to depose:

True, they petition me to approve their choice;
But Esau's hands suit ill with Jacob's voice.⁴
My pious subjects for my safety pray,
Which to secure, they take my power away.
985 From plots and treasons Heaven preserve my years,
But save me most from my petitioners.⁵
Unsatiated as the barren womb or grave;
God cannot grant so much as they can crave.
What then is left but with a jealous eye
990 To guard the small remains of royalty?
The law shall still direct my peaceful sway,
And the same law teach rebels to obey:
Votes shall no more established power control—
Such votes as make a part exceed the whole:
995 No groundless clamors shall my friends remove,
Nor crowds have power to punish ere they prove:
For gods and godlike kings their care express,
Still to defend their servants in distress.
O that my power to saving were confined:
1000 Why am I forced, like Heaven, against my mind, F
To make examples of another kind? J
Must I at length the sword of justice draw?
O cursed effects of necessary law!
How ill my fear they by my mercy scan!⁶
1005 Beware the fury of a patient man.
Law they require, let Law then show her face;
They could not be content to look on Grace,
Her hinder parts, but with a daring eye

To tempt the terror of her front and die.⁷

IOIO By their own arts, 'tis righteously decreed,

2. I.e., hero (derisive); show-off. in attempts to force the king to meet the demands 3. Shaftesbury had been dismissed as chancellor of the Parliament in 1681.

in 1673 and as lord president of the Council in 6. I.e., how wrong they are to estimate my fear 1679. (determine that I am afraid) by the mercy I show.

4. Jacob deceived his old, blind father by making 7. Moses, on Mt. Sinai, was forbidden on pain of his hands hairy (like Esau's) with animal fur; but death to look upon God's face, but he was able to he could not mask his voice (Genesis 27). see God's back after God had passed by (Exodus 5. Shaftesbury (and others) made use of petitions 33.20—23).

MACFLECKNOE / 517

Those dire artificers of death shall bleed.

Against themselves their witnesses wills wear, Till viper-like their mother Plot the ytear: And suck for nutriment that bloody gore, 8

1015 Which was their principle of life before.

Their Belial with their Belzebub 9 will fight; Thus on my foes, my foes shall domeright: No doubt the event, 0 for factious crowd engage, *outcome*

In their first onset, all their brutal rage.

1020 Then let 'em take an unresisted course, Retire and traverse, and delude their force: But when they stand all breathless, urge the fight, And rise upon 'em with redoubled might:

For lawful power is still superior found,

1025 When long driven back, at length it stands
the ground.”

He said. The Almighty, nodding, gave consent;
And peals of thunders shook the firmament. 0 *heavens*

Henceforth a series of new time began,

The mighty years in long procession ran:
1030 Once more the godlike David was restored,
And willing nations knew their lawful lord.

1681

Mac Flecknoe 1

All human things are subject to decay,
And when fate summons, monarchs must obey.

This Flecknoe found, who, like Augustus,
young Was called to empire, and had governed long; 2

5 In prose and verse, was owned, without dispute,
Through all the realms of Nonsense, absolute.

This aged prince, now flourishing in peace,
And blest with issue of a large increase, 3

Worn out with business, did at length debate
to settle the succession of the state; 4

8. The simile is based on a common idea that
uscript for a few years before being printed in a
vipers eat their own mothers.

pirated edition in 1682 by an obscure publisher. A

9. I.e., their principal leaders; in Milton's *Paradise*

subtitle, "Or a Satire Upon the True-Blue Protes-

Lost, Belial and Beelzebub, leaders of Satan's host,

tant Poet, T. S.," evoked contemporary political disagree about their course of action (Book 2). controversies by referring to Shadwell's member- 1. Or Thomas Shadwell (1640-1692), a comic ship in the Whig party, the political haven of displaywright who considered himself the dramatic sending Protestants. This subtitle, presumably heir of Ben Jonson and the champion of the type added when the poem was published to stimulate of comedy that Jonson had written, the "comedy of sales, was removed in the 1684 edition and all other humors." Such plays allude to the medical theory ers that Dryden oversaw.

that said a healthy human body was composed of 2. Augustus (Octavian) became the first Roman four humors, kept in careful balance. Characters emperor at thirty-six and reigned from 27 **B.C.E.** to without such a balance have a predominant humor 14 **C.E.**

portrayed as a comic eccentricity. Dryden and 3. Figuratively, children; also, perhaps, a more Shadwell conducted a public argument for years specific reference to Flecknoe's practice of col- on the merits of Jonson's plays. Dryden names lecting pieces from his earlier publications and Shadwell "Mac" (Gaelic for "son of") Flecknoe, publishing them again with a new title. "Increase" making him heir not of Jonson but of the recently

was stressed on the second syllable.

dead Irish priest Richard Flecknoe, a poet Dryden

4. Comic allusion to the serious question of who considered not only prolific but tiresome.

would succeed King Charles II. *Business*: with a “Mac Flecknoe” was probably circulated in man-play on sexual intercourse.

518 / JOHN DRYDEN

And, pondering which of all his sons was fit
To reign, and wage immortal war with wit,⁵
Cried: ” ‘Tis resolved; for Nature pleads that he
Should only rule, who most resembles me.

15 Sh 6 alone my perfect image bears,

Mature in dullness from his tender years:

Sh alone, of all my sons, is he

Who stands confirmed in full stupidity.

The rest to some faint meaning make pretense,

20 But Sh never deviates into sense.

Some beams of wit on other souls may fall,

Strike through, and make a lucid interval;⁷

But Sh ‘s genuine night admits no ray,

His rising fogs prevail upon the day.

25 Besides, his goodly fabric⁸ fills the eye,

And seems designed for thoughtless majesty:

Thoughtless as monarch oaks that shade the plain,

And, spread in solemn state, supinely reign.

Heywood and Shirley⁹ were but types⁰ of thee, *precursors*

30 Thou last great prophet of tautology.¹

Even I, a dunce of more renown than they,
 Was sent before but to prepare thy way;
 And, coarsely clad in Norwich drugget,² came
 To teach the nations in thy greater name.
 35 My warbling lute, the lute I whilom⁰ strung, *formerly*
 When to King John of Portugal I sung,
 Was but the prelude to that glorious day,
 When thou on silver Thames didst cut thy way,⁴
 With well-timed oars before the royal barge,
 40 Swelled with the pride of thy celestial charge;
 And big with hymn, commander of a host,
 The like was ne'er in Epsom blankets tossed.⁵
 Methinks I see the new Arion⁶ sail,
 The lute still trembling underneath thy nail.^o *fingernail*
 45 At thy well-sharpened thumb from shore to shore
 The treble squeaks for fear, the basses roar;
 Echoes from Pissing Alley Sh call,
 And Sh they resound from A Hall.⁷
 About thy boat the little fishes throng,

5. "Wit," here as in other poems of the time, var-

2. A coarse cloth.

iously denotes the intellect, the poetic imagination,

3. Flecknoe, a Catholic priest, visited the king of
and a general sprightliness of mind.

Portugal and claimed him as a patron.

6. A transparent pretense of anonymity for Shad-

4. Dryden alludes here to the royal pageants per-
well. The use of dashes is a common device of the

formed on the river Thames, which flows through period's satire. Also, a scatological suggestion. The London.

name is spelled out in some manuscripts.

5. A simultaneous reference to two of Shadwell's

7. A bright period; also, a medical term referring plays: *The Virtuoso* (1676), in which a character to periods of sanity between attacks of lunacy.

who thinks himself a "wit" is tossed in a blanket in

8. His body; Shadwell was corpulent.

a farcical scene, and *Epsom Wells* (1673).

9. Thomas Heywood (1574?-1641) and James

6. When the semilegendary Greek poet Arion was Shirley (1596—1666), prolific playwrights of an cast into the sea, a dolphin, charmed by his sing- earlier time, now out of fashion. Dryden suggests ing, bore him ashore. Shadwell was proud of his that they prefigure Shadwell as the Hebrew Scrip- own musical accomplishments.

ture prophets and (in lines 31—34) John the Baptist

7. This scatologically named hall, written out as prefigured Christ.

"Aston" in the 1682 edition, has not been located.

1. A repetition of the same point in different Pissing Alley ran between the Strand and the words.

Thames.

MACFLECKNOE / 519

As at the m o r n i n g toast⁸ that floats along.
S o m e t i m e s , as prince of thy h a r m o n i o u s b a n d ,
T h o u wield'st thy p a p e r s in thy t h r e s h i n g h a n d
.9
St. Andre's feet¹ ne'er kept m o r e e q u a l time,
N o t ev'n the feet of thy own *Psyche's* rhyme,
T h o u g h they in n u m b e r 0 as in s e n s e excel: *meter*
S o j u s t , so like tautology, they⁰ fell, *the papers*
T h a t , pale with envy, S i n g l e t o n forswore
T h e lute a n d sword, which he in t r i u m p h bore, [
A n d vowed he ne'er w o u l d act Villerius² more." J
H e r e s t o p p e d the g o o d old sire, a n d wept for joy
I n silent raptures of the h o p e f u l boy.³
A l l a r g u m e n t s , b u t m o s t his plays, p e r s u a d e ,
T h a t for a n o i n t e d dullness⁴ h e w a s m a d e .
C l o s e to the walls which fair A u g u s t a ⁵ bind
(The fair A u g u s t a m u c h to fears inclined),
A n a n c i e n t f a b r i c ⁰ raised to i n f o r m the sight
building
T h e r e stood of yore, a n d B a r b i c a n it h i g h t : ⁰ was
called
A w a t c h t o w e r o n c e ; but now, so fate ordains,
O f all the pile a n e m p t y n a m e r e m a i n s .
F r o m its old ruins brothel h o u s e s rise,
S c e n e s of lewd loves, a n d of polluted joys,
W h e r e their vast courts the m o t h e r - s t r u m p e t s
keep,
A n d , u n d i s t u r b e d by watch, in silence sleep.
N e a r these a N u r s e r y ⁶ erects its head,

W h e r e q u e e n s a r e f o r m e d , a n d f u t u r e h e r o e s
bred; W h e r e u n f l e d g e d a c t o r s l e a r n t o l a u g h a n d
cry,

W h e r e i n f a n t p u n k s ⁰ t h e i r t e n d e r v o i c e s t r y , r
prostitutes

A n d l i t t l e M a x i m i n s ⁷ t h e g o d s d e f y . J

G r e a t F l e t c h e r n e v e r t r e a d s i n b u s k i n s h e r e ,

N o r g r e a t e r J o n s o n d a r e s i n s o c k s a p p e a r ; ⁸

B u t g e n t l e S i m k i n ⁹ j u s t r e c e p t i o n f i n d s

A m i d s t t h i s m o n u m e n t o f v a n i s h e d m i n d s :

P u r e c l i n c h e s ⁰ t h e s u b u r b i a n M u s e l a f f o r
d s , *puns*

A n d P a n t o n ⁰ w a g i n g h a r m l e s s w a r w i t h w o r d s .
a punster

85

H e r e F l e c k n o e , a s a p l a c e t o f a m e w e l l k n o w n ,

8. A comic metaphor for sewage.

nations; i.e., all arguments favor Mac Flecknoe's

9. I.e., his hand beats or strikes as with a flail, with
ascent to the throne of dullness, but most of all his
a pun on the violence of his "beating," or writing,
plays.

and the accents or beats in measured verse. In the

5. I.e., London; an allusion to contemporary fears
following lines, Dryden continues to make fun of
of a Catholic plot to burn down the city (see "*From
the mechanical metrics of the songs in Shadwell's
Absalom and Achitophel: A Poem,*" note 5, p. 501).

opera *Psyche* (1675). Shadwell had apologized for

6. The name of a training school for young actors

his use of rhyme in the preface to the printed text.

built in the Barbican in 1671, against the wishes

1. With a pun on dancing and metrical feet. *St.*

of many residents.

Andre: a French dancing master, choreographer of

7. The bombastic Roman emperor in Dryden's

Shadwell's *Psyche*.

Tyrannic Love (1669).

2. A role in Sir William Davenant's *The Siege of*

8. "Buskins," the high-soled boots worn in Ath-

Rhodes (1656), the first English opera. *Singleton*:

enian tragedy, are opposed to "socks," the low

John Singleton (d. 1686), a musician of the The-

shoes worn in comedy (thus the reference to Ben

atre Royal. Dryden seems to be suggesting (sarcas-

Jonson). *Fletcher*: John Fletcher (1579—1625), a

tically) that Shadwell's art is so skilled that it

playwright.

evokes the admiration of an undistinguished per-

9. A clown; a popular character in farces.

former.

1. The nine Muses were Greek sister goddesses

3. I.e., Mac Flecknoe, or Shadwell (who was in his

believed to be sources of inspiration for the arts;

mid thirties). *Good old sire*: i.e., Flecknoe.

this Muse, unlike the classical ones, is associated

4. The expected phrase is *anointed majesty*, since

with the licentious suburbs of London, where

English kings are anointed with oil at their coronations and theaters were located.

520 / JOHN DRYDEN

Ambitiously designed his Sh 's throne;
For ancient Dekker² prophesied long since,
That in this pile would reign a mighty prince, [
Born for a scourge of wit, and flail of sense;³ J
90 To whom true dullness should some *Psyches* owe,
But worlds of *Misers* from his pen should flow;⁴
Humorists and *Hypocrites* it should produce,
Whole Raymond families, and tribes of Bruce.
Now Empress Fame had published the renown
95 Of Sh 's coronation through the town.
Roused by report of Fame, the nations meet,
From near Bunhill, and distant Watling Street.⁵
No Persian carpets spread the imperial way,
But scattered limbs of mangled poets lay;
100 From dusty shops neglected authors come,
Martyrs of pies, and relics of the bum.⁶
Much Heywood, Shirley, Ogilby⁷ there lay,
But loads of Sh almost choked the way.
Bilked stationers⁸ for yeomen stood prepared,
105 And H was captain of the guard.
The hoary⁰ prince in majesty appeared, *gray, aged*
High on a throne of his own labors reared.
At his right hand our young Ascanius⁹ sate,
Rome's other hope, and pillar of the state.
110 His brows thick fogs, instead of glories, grace,

And lambent dullness played around his face.
As Hannibal did to the altars come,
Sworn by his sire a mortal foe to Rome,¹
So Sh swore, nor should his vow be vain,
115 That he till death true dullness would maintain;
And, in his father's right, and realm's defense,
Ne'er to have peace with wit, nor truce with sense.
The king himself the sacred unction⁰ made, *ointment*
As king by office, and as priest by trade.

120 In his sinister hand, instead of ball,²
He placed a mighty mug of potent ale;
2. Thomas Dekker (ca. 1572-1632), a playwright
by Dryden (and later by Pope); Thomas Heywood
satirized by Ben Jonson in *The Poetaster* (1602).
and James Shirley (see note 9, p. 518).

He probably figures in the line of poets leading
8. Booksellers, impoverished because they had
up to Shadwell because he was a city poet and a
stocked the works of Shadwell and others, stood
proponent of a dramatic realism that Dryden
guard to protect what remained of their interests.
deplored.

Their "captain," Henry Herringman, however,
3. I.e., born to be one who punishes wit and whips
referred to in line 105, had been Dryden's pub-
sense.

lisher as well as Shadwell's.

4. In these lines, Dryden names plays of (and

9. Aeneas's son; hence, like Shadwell, the des-
characters in plays by) Shadwell.

tinued heir. Virgil referred to him as "*spes altera*

5. Victims of the plague (1665—66) were buried in
Romae" ("Rome's other hope," *Aeneid* 12.168); as Bunhill.
Because these locations are both within a

Troy fell, his favor with the gods was marked by a
half-mile of the scene of the supposed coronation
flickering ("lambent") flame that played around his
("the Nursery"), Mac Flecknoe's fame is narrowly
head (*Aeneid* 2.680-84).

circumscribed; furthermore, his subjects live in the

1. Hannibal (247-183 B.C.E.), the Carthaginian
unfashionable commercial center of the city, re-
general who invaded Italy, and whose father
garded as a place of bad taste and vulgarity.

("sire") had dedicated Hannibal to the conquering

6. I.e., unsold books, the paper of which was used
of Rome.

in bakers' shops and in privies (toilets).

2. In British coronations, the monarch holds in his

7. John Ogilby (1600-1676), a translator of Virgil
or her left ("sinister") hand a globe surmounted by
and Homer and a dramatic entrepreneur derided
a cross.

MAC FLECKNOE / 521

Love's Kingdom to his right he did convey,

At once his scepter, and his rule of sway;

Whose righteous lore the prince had practiced young,
125 And from whose loins recorded *Psyche* sprung.
His temples, last, with poppies⁴ were o'erspread,
That nodding seemed to consecrate his head.
Just at that point of time, if fame not lie,
On his left hand twelve reverend owls⁵ did fly.
130 So Romulus, 'tis sung, by Tiber's brook,
Presage of sway from twice six vultures took.⁶
The admiring throng loud acclamations make,
And omens of his future empire take.
The sire then shook the honors⁷ of his head,
135 And from his brows damps⁰ of oblivion shed *vapors*
Full on the filial dullness: long he stood,
Repelling from his breast the raging god; r
At length burst out in this prophetic mood: J
"Heavens bless my son, from Ireland let him reign
140 To far Barbadoes on the western main;⁸
Of his dominion may no end be known,
And greater than his father's be his throne;
Beyond *Love's Kingdom* let him stretch his pen!"
He paused, and all the people cried, "Amen."
145 Then thus continued he: "My son, advance
Still in new imprudence, new ignorance.
Success let others teach, learn thou from me
Pangs without birth, and fruitless industry.
Let *Virtuosos* in five years be writ;
150 Yet not one thought accuse thy toil of wit.⁹
Let gentle George¹ in triumph tread the stage,

Make Dorimant betray, and Loveit rage;
Let Cully, Cockwood, Fopling, charm the pit,
And in their folly show the writer's wit.
155 Yet still thy fools shall stand in thy defense,
And justify their author's want of sense.
Let 'em be all by thy own model made
Of dullness, and desire no foreign aid;
That they to future ages may be known,
160 Not copies drawn, but issue of thy own.
Nay, let thy men of wit too be the same,
All full of thee, and differing but in name.

3. A pastoral tragicomedy by Flecknoe, apparently of Romulus was presaged.

visualized by Dryden as a rolled-up manuscript

7. Locks; in Virgil's *Aeneid*, Jove, ruler of the gods, held like a scepter. Shadwell's *Psyche*, a pastoral shakes his locks. Here and in the following lines, opera, could be described as the child ("from Dryden parodies two epic motifs: the father influencing his son and the Sybil receiving the "raging

4. Connoting both intellectual heaviness and

God" who speaks through her (see *Aeneid* 6.46—Shadwell's addiction to opiates; a parody of the 51).

laurel wreath with which a poet was traditionally

8. I.e., a realm of empty ocean.

crowned as a sign of poetic achievement.

9. I.e., even if Shadwell spent five years writing a

5. Symbols of dullness.

comedy, it would still lack wit.

6. When the site (“Tiber’s brook”) that Romulus

1. Sir George Etherege (ca. 1635-1691), play-

had chosen for Rome was visited by twelve vul-

wright who set the tone for stylish Restoration

tures, or twice as many as had visited the site

comedy; Dryden proceeds to name five of his

picked by his brother Remus, the kingship (“sway”)

characters.

5 2 2 / J O H N D R Y D E N

B u t l e t n o a l i e n s — d l — y 2 i n t e r p o s e ,

T o l a r d w i t h w i t 3 t h y h u n g r y *Epsom* p r o s e .

165 A n d w h e n f a l s e f l o w e r s o f r h e t o r i c t h o u
w o u l d s t c u l l , T r u s t n a t u r e , d o n o t l a b o r t o
b e d u l l ;

B u t w r i t e t h y b e s t , a n d t o p ; a n d , i n e a c h l i n e ,
S i r F o r m a l ‘ s 4 o r a t o r y w i l l b e t h i n e :

S i r F o r m a l , t h o u g h u n s o u g h t , a t t e n d s t h y
q u i l l , 170 A n d d o e s t h y n o t h e r n d e d i c a t i o n s ‘
f i l l .

N o r l e t f a l s e f r i e n d s s e d u c e t h y m i n d t o f a
m e , B y a r r o g a t i n g J o n s o n ‘ s h o s t i l e n a m e .

L e t f a t h e r F l e c k n o e f i r e t h y m i n d w i t h p r a
i s e , A n d u n c l e O g i l b y t h y e n v y r a i s e .

175 T h o u a r t m y b l o o d , w h e r e J o n s o n h a s n o
p a r t : W h a t s h a r e h a v e w e i n n a t u r e , o r i n a r t ?

W h e r e d i d h i s w i t o n l e a r n i n g f i x a b r a n d , A
n d r a i l a t a r t s h e d i d n o t u n d e r s t a n d ? 6

Where made he love in Prince Nicander's vein,
is Or swept the dust in *Psyche's* humblest rain? 7

Where sold he bargains, 8 'whip-stitch, kiss
my arse, '

Promised a play and dwindled to a farce?

When did his Muse from Fletcher scenes purloin,
0 *steal*

As thou whole Eth' redost transfuse to
hine?

185 But so transfused, as oil on water's flow,
His always floats above, thine sinks below

This is thy province, this thy wondrous way,
New humor sto invent for each new play:

This is that boasted bias 9 of thy mind,

190 By which oneway, to dullness, 'tis inclined;
Which makes thy writings lean on ones
ide still, And, in all changes, that way bendst
hy will.

Nor let thy mountain-belly make pretense
Of likeness; thine 'satympany 1 of sense.

195 A tun^o of man in thy large bulk is writ, *big
cask*

But sure thou 'rt but a kilderkin 0 of wit.
little cask

Like mine, thy gentlenumbers 0 feebly creep;
verses

Thy tragic Muse gives smiles, thy comical
leep.

With what 'ergall thou sett'st thyself to
write, 200 Thy inoffensivesatires never bite.

**In thy felonious heart though venom lies, I
does but touch thy Irish pen, and dies.**

Thy genius 2 calls the eno to purchase fame
e 2. Sir Charles Sedley (ca. 1639-1701), Restora-7. Nicander
pays court to the title character, Psy-

tion wit who had contributed a prologue and (Dry-
che, in Shadwell's opera.

den suggests in line 184) a part of the text to

8. A "bargain" is a gross rejoinder to an innocent
Shadwell's *Epsom Wells*.

question. The rest of the line, a kind of bargain,

3. The phrase recalls a sentence in *Anatomy of*
echoes a farcical character in *The Virtuoso*.

Melancholy (1621), by the English clergyman and

9. In bowling, the spin a player puts on the ball to
scholar Robert Burton (1577-1640): "They lard
make it swerve. *Humors*: parodying Shadwell's ded-
their lean books with the fat of others' works."

ication to *The Virtuoso*, in which he claims that

4. Sir Formal Trifle was an inflated orator in *The*
"four of the humours are entirely new."

Virtuoso.

1. A swelling caused by air.

5. I.e., to Shadwell's patron the duke of Newcas-

2. The tutelary spirit allotted to every person at
tle, whose seat was in northern England.

birth to govern his or her fortunes and determine

6. Perhaps an allusion to the satire on experimen-
the individual's character. Dryden terms Shadwell

tal science in *The Virtuoso*.

Irish as an insult.

T o T H E M E M O R Y O F M R . O L D H A M / 5 2 3

I n k e e n i a m b i c s , 3 b u t m i l d a n a g r a m . 4

205 L e a v e w r i t i n g p l a y s , a n d c h o o s e f o r t h y c o m m a n d

S o m e p e a c e f u l p r o v i n c e i n a c r o s t i c l a n d .

T h e r e t h o u m a y ' s t w i n g s d i s p l a y a n d a l t a r s r a i s e ,

A n d t o r t u r e o n e p o o r w o r d t e n t h o u s a n d w a y s .

O r , i f t h o u w o u l d s t t h y d i f f e r e n t t a l e n t s u i t ,

210 S e t t h y o w n s o n g s , a n d s i n g t h e m t o t h y l u t e . ”

H e s a i d : b u t h i s l a s t w o r d s w e r e s c a r c e l y h e a r d

F o r B r u c e a n d L o n g v i l l e h a d a t r a p p r e p a r e d ,

A n d d o w n t h e y s e n t t h e y e t d e c l a i m i n g b a r d . 5

S i n k i n g h e l e f t h i s d r u g g e t 0 r o b e b e h i n d , c o a r s e

215 B o r n e u p w a r d s b y a s u b t e r r a n e a n w i n d .

T h e m a n t l e f e l l t o t h e y o u n g p r o p h e t ' s p a r t , 6

W i t h d o u b l e p o r t i o n o f h i s f a t h e r ' s a r t .

ca. 1 6 7 6 1 6 8 2 , 1 6 8 4

To the Memory of Mr. Oldham⁷

F a r e w e l l , t o o l i t t l e , a n d t o o l a t e l y k n o w n ,

W h o m I b e g a n t o t h i n k a n d c a l l m y o w n :

F o r s u r e o u r s o u l s w e r e n e a r a l l i e d , a n d t h i n e

C a s t i n t h e s a m e p o e t i c m o l d w i t h m i n e . 8

5 O n e c o m m o n n o t e o n e i t h e r l y r e d i d s t r i k e ,

A n d k n a v e s a n d f o o l s w e b o t h a b h o r r e d a l i k e .

T o t h e s a m e g o a l d i d b o t h o u r s t u d i e s 0 d r i v e ; e n d e a v o r s

T h e l a s t s e t o u t t h e s o o n e s t d i d a r r i v e .

T h u s N i s u s 9 fell u p o n the slippery place,
io **W h i l e** his y o u n g friend p e r f o r m e d 0 a n d won
the race. *completed*

O early ripe! to thy a b u n d a n t store

W h a t c o u l d a d v a n c i n g a g e have a d d e d m o r e
?

I t m i g h t (what n a t u r e never gives the young)

H a v e t a u g h t the n u m b e r s 0 of thy native tongue.
metrics

15 B u t satire n e e d s not those, a n d wit will shine

T h r o u g h the harsh c a d e n c e of a r u g g e d line:

A noble error, a n d but s e l d o m m a d e ,

W h e n p o e t s are by too m u c h f o r c e betrayed.

3. The meter of (Greek) satire; hence satire itself.

Flecknoe's "subterranean wind" is a fart, and an

4. The transposition of letters in a word so as to
allusion to the moment in *Paradise Lost* where
make a new word; *mild*: tame, feeble. Dryden

Satan lands on ground seemingly destroyed by "the
scorns this form of ingenuity, and the others that
force / Of subterranean wind" (1.231).

follow, as trivial. An "acrostic" (line 206) is a poem

7. John Oldham (1653-1683), author of *Satires*
in which the first letter of each line, read down-
Upon the Jesuits (1681), was a promising young
ward, makes up the name of the person or thing
poet, harsh (partly by calculation) in metrics and
that is the subject of the poem. "Wings" and
manner, but earnest and vigorous. He died of

“altars” (line 207) refer to poems in the shape of smallpox.

their subjects, such as George Herbert’s “The

8. Dryden cast horoscopes and had the same Altar” (p. 367) and “Easter Wings” (p. 368).

birthday as Oldham.

5. These characters in *The Virtuoso* so trap Sir

9. A footracer in Virgil’s *Aeneid*, he slipped in a Formal Trifle.

pool of blood. His young friend Euryalus came

6. When the prophet Elijah was carried to heaven from behind to reach the goal before him (5.315

in a chariot of fire borne on a whirlwind, his mantle ff.).

fell on Elisha, his successor (2 Kings 2.8—14).

524 / JOHN DRYDEN

**Thy generous fruits, though gathered ere
their prime, 20 Still showed a quickness, 0
and maturing timer sharpness**

**But mellow what we write to the dull sweet
sof rhyme. J**

**Once more, hail and farewell; farewell, th
ou young, But a too short, Marcellus 1 of o
ur tongue; Thy brows with ivy, and with la
urels bound; 25 But fate and gloom night e
n compass the around. 2**

1684

A Song for St. Cecilia’s Day³

i

From harmony, from heavenly harmony

**This universal frame 4 began :
When Nature 5 underneath a heap
Of jarring atoms lay,
5 And could no theave her head,
The tuneful voice was heard from high :
” Arise, ye more than dead.”
Then cold, and hot, and moist, and dry, 6
In order to their stations leap,
10 And Music’s power obey.
From harmony, from heavenly harmony
This universal frame began :
From harmony to harmony
Through all the compass 0 of the notes it ran,
full range
15 The diapason 7 closing full in man .**

2

**What passion cannot Music raise and quell
I!**

**When Jubal 8 struck the corded shell,
His listening brethren stood around,
And, wondering, on their faces fell
20 To worship that celestial sound.**

**Less than a god they thought there could not
td well 1. Roman Emperor Augustus Caesar’s nephew,**

British (German-born) composer George Frideric
who died at twenty after a meteoric military career.

Handel composed a new musical setting for the

2. The Roman elegiac phrase *Hail and farewell!*

poem.

(line 22); the mention of Marcellus (line 23) and

4. The physical universe.

of the classical poet's wreath, a symbol of poetic

5. Created nature as distinguished from chaos.

achievement (line 24); and the echo of Virgil's

6. The four elements: earth, fire, water, and air.

lament for Marcellus (see *Aeneid* 6.866) work to

7. The entire range or scale of tones; representing

Romanize Oldham.

the perfection of God's harmony in his final crea-

3. St. Cecilia, a Roman martyr of the second or

tion, humankind. The just gradation of notes in a

third century, was patron saint of music, custom-

scale is analogous to the equally just gradation in

arily represented at the organ (cf. line 52). Cele-

the ascending scale of created beings according to

brations of her festival day (November 22) in

the idea of the Chain of Being (in which the Cre-

England were usually devoted to music, and from

ation is ordered from inanimate nature up to

about 1683 to 1703 the Musical Society in London

humans, God's best and final work).

annually commemorated it with a religious service

8. "Father of all such as handle the harp and

and a public concert. Dryden's ode was set to

organ" (Genesis 4.21). The "corded" or stringed

music (by the Italian composer Giovanni Battista

tortoise "shell" is a harp or lyre.

Draghi) for this occasion in 1687. In 1739, the

A S O N G F O R S T . C E C I L I A ' S D A Y / 5 2 5

Within the hollow of that shell

That spoke so sweetly and so well.

What passion cannot Music raise and quell!

3

25 The trumpet's loud clangor

Excites us to arms,

With shrill notes of anger,

And mortal alarms.

The double double double beat

30 Of the thundering drum

Cries: "Hark! the foes come;

Charge, charge, 'tis too late to retreat."

4

The soft complaining flute

In dying notes discovers

35 The woes of hopeless lovers,

Whose dirge is whispered by the warbling lute.

5

Sharp violins⁹ proclaim

Their jealous pangs, and desperation,

Fury, frantic indignation,

40 Depth of pains, and height of passion,

For the fair, disdainful dame.

6

But O! what art can teach,

What human voice can reach,

The sacred organ's praise?
45 Notes inspiring holy love,
Notes that wing their heavenly ways
To mend the choirs above.¹

7

Orpheus could lead the savage race;
And trees unrooted left their place,
50 Sequacious of² the lyre;
But bright Cecilia raised the wonder higher:
When to her organ vocal breath³ was given,
An angel heard, and straight appeared,
Mistaking earth for heaven.

9. A reference to the bright tone of the violin,
race") grew tame and followed him, as did even
recently introduced into England. The tone of the
rocks and trees.

old-fashioned viol is much duller.

3. I.e., its ability to sustain notes as the human

1. I.e., to improve the music of the angels.

voice does. According to the legend, however,

2. Following. According to Greek mythology,

Cecilia's piety, not her music, made an angel

Orpheus, son of the Muse Calliope, played so won-
appear.

derfully on the lyre that wild beasts ("the savage

5 2 6 / K A T H E R I N E P H I L I P S

Grand Chorus

55 As from the power of sacred lays

*The spheres began to move,
And sung the great Creator's praise⁴
To all the blest above;
So, when the last and dreadful hour
60 This crumbling pageant⁵ shall devour,
The trumpet⁶ shall be heard on high,
The dead shall live,⁷ the living die,
And Music shall untune the sky.*

1687

KATHERINE PHILIPS

1632-1664

Epitaph

*On Her Son H. P. at St. Syth's Church Where
Her Body Also Lies Interred*

**W H A T O N E A R T H D E S E R V E S O U R T R U S T ?
Y O U T H A N D B E A U T Y B O T H A R E D U S T .
L O N G W E G A T H E R I N G A R E W I T H P A I N ,
W H A T O N E M O M E N T C A L L S A G A I N .
5 S E V E N Y E A R S C H I L D L E S S M A R R I A G E P A S T ,
A S O N , A S O N I S B O R N A T L A S T ;
S O E X A C T L Y L I M B E D L A N D F A I R ,
F U L L O F G O O D S P I R I T S , M I E N , A N D A I R , 2
A S A L O N G L I F E P R O M I S E D ,
i o Y E T , I N L E S S T H A N S I X W E E K S D E A D .
T O O P R O M I S I N G , T O O G R E A T A M I N D
I N S O S M A L L R O O M T O B E C O N F I N E D :
T H E R E F O R E , F I T I N H E A V E N T O D W E L L ,
H E Q U I C K L Y B R O K E T H E P R I S O N S H E L L .**

**15 So the subtle alchemist, 3
Can't with Hermes' seal resist
The powerful spirit's subtler flight,**

4. As it was harmony that ordered the universe, so the Resurrection (in which the “dead shall live”) it was angelic song (“sacred lays”) that put the and the Last Judgement (1 Corinthians 15.52).

celestial bodies (“spheres”) in motion. The har-

7. I.e., the sounding of the last trumpet will end monious chord that results from the music of the the harmony of the spheres.

spheres (in Ptolemaic astronomy, angelic music

1. I.e., having perfect limbs.

produced by the turning of the spheres, concentric

2. Apparent character or disposition. *Mien*:

transparent shells containing the heavenly bodies) appearance or expression.

is a hymn of “praise” sung by created nature to its

3. Alchemy was the science aiming to achieve the “Creator.”

transmutation of baser metals into gold and also to

5. The universe, the stage on which the drama of find a panacea or universal remedy.

human salvation has been acted out. *The last and*

4. Hermetic seal, the airtight closure of a con-
 dreadful hour: Judgment Day.

tainer, named after Hermes, the Greek messenger

6. The sounding of the last trumpet announces

god.

To MR. HENRY LAWES / 527

Butt' will bid him long good night.

So the Sun if it arise

20 Half so glorious as his eyes,

Likethis infant, takes a shroud,

Buried in a morning cloud.

1655 1667

To Mr. Henry Lawes⁵

Nature, which is the vast creation's soul,
That steady curious agent⁶ in the whole, T
heart of Heaven, the order of this frame, Is
only number⁷ in another name.

5 For as some king conqu'ring what was his
own, Hath choice of several titles to his cro
wn; So harmony on this score now, that the
n,

Yet still is all that takes and governs men.⁸

Beauty is but composure, and we find

io Content⁰ is but the concord of the mind,
contentment

Friendship the unison of well-tuned heart
s, Honor the chorus of the noblest parts,⁹

And all the world on which we can reflect M
usic to th' ear, or to the intellect.

15 If then each man a little world must be,¹

How many worlds are copied out in thee,

Who art so richly formed, so complete

T' epitomize all that is good and great;

Whose stars² this brave advantaged idim
part,²⁰ Thy nature's a harmonious a thy

art?

Thoudostabovethepoets'praiselive,Whofetchfromtheeth'eternitytheygive.

5. A friend of Philips, and a well-known musician

8. I.e., just as a king, who has conquered lands and composer, he set to music the words of some that are by rights his, may be called by the title of of the most prominent poets of his day, including any of those lands, so harmony, by natural right, Jonson, Davenant, Waller, Herrick, Carew, Lovemay be credited with being both the force that initiates and preserves the order of the natural world Lawes, *On His Airs*," p. 416).

("that then" refers to this topic, mentioned in the

6. The material cause whereby effects are produced. In the *Timaeus*, Plato gives an account of the world of human society (as Philips demonstrates in the next four lines, thus "on this score the Pythagorean generation of the consonant now").

intervals in music; in the *Somnium Scipionis*, Cicero

9. In these lines, Philips plays on the musical meanings of words. *Composure*: collectedness, but in terms of proportional intervals and tones. Many

also referring to a musical composition. *Concord*: early Christian writers also explained the creation agreement, but also referring to a combination of of the world in Pythagorean terms.

notes that is pleasing to the ear. *Unison*: a sound 7. Music; drawing on Pythagorean ideas, many or note of the same pitch as another. *Chorus*: both classical and Neoplatonic writers believed that to a choir and the song sung by the choir.

understand God, the universe, or humankind, one 1. Perhaps a reference to the Platonic idea that had to understand numbers and their relationships. the soul of humankind and the soul of the universe ships. Music, based on numerical relationships, are similarly harmonious, and therefore music may spatial measurements of intervals, and metrical reveal to the human being (“a little world”) the measurements of time, afforded one access to the divine harmony of the universe, or larger world, in measurements of those things that were intangible which his or her soul shares.

or invisible.

2. Destiny as determined by astrology.

528 / KATHERINE PHILIPS

And a struereason triumphs over sense,

Yet is subjected to intelligence: 3

25 So poet on the lower world look down, But Lawe son them; his height is all his own.

For, like Divinity itself, his lyre
Rewards the wit it did at first inspire. 4
And thus by double right poets allow
30 His and their laurel should adorn his brow. 5

Live then, great soul of nature, to assuage
The savagedulness of this sullen age.

Charmustosense; for though experience fail
Andreason too, 6 thy numbers 0 may prevail. *songs*

35 Then, like those ancients, strike, and so
command All nature to obey thy gen'rous hand. 7

None will resist but such who need will be
More stupid 0 than a stone, a fish, a tree.
senseless

Be it thy care our age to new-create:

40 What built a world may sure repair a state. 8

1667

On the Welsh Language 9

If honor to an ancient name be due,

Or riches challenge it for one that's new,
The British language 1 claims sineither sense
e Both for its age, and for its opulence. 0
wealth

5 But all great things must be from us removed,
To be with higher reverence beloved.

So landskips 0 which in prospects distant lie,
landscapes

With greater wonder draw the pleased eye

.

Is not great Troy to our dark ruin hurled?

io **O n c e t h e f a m ' d s c e n e o f a l l t h e f i g h t i n g w o r l d . 2**

3. According to Aristotle, reason governs the

9. The Welsh language appears here to mean that lesser faculties of the soul—the physical senses language spoken by the earliest settlers of Britain, and the appetites they generate. Both reason and namely the Britons, or Celts. That language was sense are subject to intelligence, which Aristotle thought to have survived in Wales, which was a believed to be the divine element in humans.

stronghold of resistance against the Romans in the 4. I.e., his songs “reward” (by setting to music) the first century and against the Anglo-Saxons in the poetry originally inspired by his art.

fourth and fifth centuries. After the defeat of

5. The laurel was a symbol of poetic achievement.

Wales by King Edward I, in the thirteenth century,

6. According to Aristotle, sense experience gives

Welsh cultural identity began to erode, and in

knowledge of the concrete, while reason acts on

1636, when Wales was officially incorporated into

that knowledge to arrive at an understanding of

England, Welshmen holding positions in Henry

universal or first principles.

VIII's regime were required to speak English. In

7. Perhaps a reference to Orpheus, famed for

the seventeenth century, however, some interest

singing and playing the lyre, and said to have developed among the Welsh in preserving their charmed birds, animals, rocks, and trees with his language. Philips moved with her husband to Carmarthen. Other “ancients” that Philips may have had in mind: Amphion, who with his music caused stones to build the walls of Thebes, and Arion, whose singing won him the love of dolphins. *Strike:*

1. The language spoken by the ancient Britons.
2. Troy was the site of the legendary Trojan War, here, to play a stringed instrument.

in which the Greeks fought with the Trojans to possess Helen. Helen, married to Menelaus, a Greek king, was carried off by Paris, a son of the king of Troy. At the end of the ten-year war, the Greeks defeated the Trojans and destroyed the city. Philips is thought to have had Royalist sympathies; therefore this line, along with the reference to “this sullen age” in line 32, may refer to her dissatisfaction with the British government during the Interregnum (1649-60).

city.

ON THE WELSH LANGUAGE / 529

Where's Athens now, to whom Rome learning owes,
And the safe laurels that adorned her brows?³

A strange reverse of fate she did endure,

Never once greater, than she's now obscure.
15 Even Rome her self can but some footsteps show
Of Scipio's times, or those of Cicero.⁴
And as the Roman and the Grecian state,
The British fell,⁵ the spoil of time and fate.
But though the language hath the beauty lost,
20 Yet she has still some great remains to boast.
For 'twas in that,⁶ the sacred bards of old,
In deathless numbers⁰ did their thoughts unfold. *poetry*
In groves, by rivers, and on fertile plains,
They civilized and taught the listening swains;⁰ *rustics*
25 Whilst with high raptures, and as great success,
Virtue they clothed in music's charming dress.
This Merlin spoke, who in his gloomy cave,
Even Destiny her self seemed to enslave.
For to his sight the future time was known,
30 Much better than to others is their own;
And with such state, predictions from him fell,
As if he did decree, and not foretell.
This spoke King Arthur,⁷ who, if fame be true,
Could have compelled mankind to speak it too.
35 In this once Boadicca⁸ valor taught,
And spoke more nobly than her soldiers fought:
Tell me what hero could be more than she,
Who fell at once for fame and liberty?
Nor could a greater sacrifice belong,
40 Or^o to her children's, or her country's wrong. *either*
This spoke Caractacus,⁹ who was so brave,

That to the Roman fortune check he gave:
And when their yoke he could decline no more,
He it so decently and nobly wore,
45 That Rome her self with blushes did believe,
A Britain⁰ would the law of honor¹ give; *a Briton, British person*

3. Athens was the Greek city that became the cultural, military, and economic center of an extensive empire (during the sixth and fifth centuries **B.C.E.**)
7. A legendary king of Britain, who, according to Geoffrey of Monmouth's *Historia Regum Britannie*, defeated a Roman army but was mortally wounded in battle during a rebellion at home by Romans, who adopted and imitated Greek culture
his nephew, Mordred. Chretien de Troyes added and learning. Laurel wreaths, sometimes worn on the head, were symbols of both poetic and military achievement.
In 86 **B.C.E.**, the city was taken over by the wounded in battle during a rebellion at home by Romans, who adopted and imitated Greek culture his nephew, Mordred. Chretien de Troyes added and learning. Laurel wreaths, sometimes worn on the head, were symbols of both poetic and military achievement.

Darthur, written in the fifteenth century. Merlin,
4. Marcus Tullius Cicero (106-43 **B.C.E.**), a Roman statesman and orator who was executed on both Arthur and his father, Uther Pendragon.
the order of Marc Antony after the assassination
8. A British queen who led a revolt against the

of Julius Caesar. There were two “Scipios”: Scipio
Romans but was finally defeated in 61 c.E.

the Great, or Publius Cornelius Scipio (236—184

9. A king of Silures, in the west of Britain, during

or 183 **B.C.E.**), a Roman general and statesman

the reign of Claudius, Caractacus (or Caraduc)

who distinguished himself in the Punic Wars; and

was defeated by the Romans and taken as a pris-

Aemilianus Numantinus (185 or 184—129 **B.C.E.**),

oner to Rome in 51 c.E. The Roman emperor was

who was represented by Cicero as the ideal of wise

so impressed by his noble spirit that he pardoned

statesmanship.

and released him.

5. A reference to the Roman conquest of the Brit-

1. Perhaps a reference to the agreement between

ish Isles. By 78 c.E, Wales had been brought under

the Roman emperor and Caractacus that the latter,

Roman control, but its language survived.

if pardoned, would not engage in armed resistance

6. I.e., the Welsh language, also the referent of

against the Romans.

“this” in lines 27, 33, 35, and 41.

530 / KATHERINE PHILIPS

A n d h a s t i l y h i s c h a i n s a w a y s h e t h r e w,

L e s t h e r o w n c a p t i v e e l s e s h o u l d h e r s u b d u e .

1667

To My Excellent Lucasia, on Our Friendship²

**I did not live until this time
 C r o w n e d my felicity,
 W h e n I c o u l d say without a crime,³
 I am not thine, but thee.
 5 This c a r c a s s breathed, a n d walked, a n d slept,
 So that the world believed
 T h e r e w a s a soul the m o t i o n s kept;⁴
 B u t they were all deceived.
 F o r as a w a t c h by art⁵ is w o u n d
 io To m o t i o n , s u c h was mine:
 B u t never h a d O r i n d a ⁶ f o u n d
 A soul till she f o u n d thine;
 W h i c h now inspires, c u r e s a n d supplies,
 A n d guides m y d a r k e n e d breast:
 15 F o r thou art all that I c a n prize,
 My joy, my life, my rest.
 N o bridegroom's nor c r o w n - c o n q u e r o r ' s mirth
 T o m i n e c o m p a r e d c a n be:
 T h e y have but p i e c e s of the earth,
 20 I've all the world in thee.
 T h e n let our f l a m e s still light a n d shine,
 A n d no false fear control,
 As innocent as our design,
 I m m o r t a l as our soul.**

1667

2. In her poems on the theme of friendship, Phil-
 addressing a male beloved, Phaon, and mentioning
 ips frequently employs the terminology and

the many women she previously loved “without imagery of love poems. The addressee of this poem crime” (*sine crimine*). Some Renaissance editors is Mrs. Anne Owens, whom Philips calls “Lucasia,” emended Ovid’s line to “not without crime.” Same-name taken from William Cartwright’s play *The sex love was a legally and culturally debated topic Lady Errant* (1636).

in the seventeenth century.

3. This line recalls a famous and disputed phrase

4. I.e., that guided the body’s movements.

in line 19 of Ovid’s *Heroides* 15, a verse letter in

5. I.e., by artificial means.

which Ovid imagines the Greek poet Sappho

6. Philips’s name for herself.

5 3 1

T H O M A S T R A H E R N E *

1637-1674

The Salutation

T h e s e l i t t l e l i m b s ,

T h e s e e y e s a n d h a n d s w h i c h h e r e I f i n d ,

T h e s e r o s y c h e e k s w h e r e w i t h m y l i f e b e g i n s ,

W h e r e h a v e y e b e e n ? b e h i n d

5 W h a t c u r t a i n w e r e y e f r o m m e h i d s o l o n g ?

W h e r e w a s , i n w h a t a b y s s , m y s p e a k i n g t o n g u e ?

W h e n s i l e n t I

S o m a n y t h o u s a n d , t h o u s a n d y e a r s

B e n e a t h t h e d u s t d i d i n a c h a o s l i e ,

io **H o w c o u l d I s m i l e s o r t e a r s ,
Or l i p s o r h a n d s o r e y e s o r e a r s p e r c e i v e ?
W e l c o m e y e t r e a s u r e s w h i c h I n o w r e c e i v e .
I t h a t s o l o n g
W a s n o t h i n g f r o m e t e r n i t y ,
15 D i d l i t t l e t h i n k s u c h j o y s a s e a r o r t o n g u e
T o c e l e b r a t e o r s e e :
S u c h s o u n d s t o h e a r , s u c h h a n d s t o f e e l , s u c h
f e e t , B e n e a t h t h e s k i e s o n s u c h a g r o u n d t o m e e t .
N e w b u r n i s h e d j o y s ,
20 W h i c h y e l l o w g o l d a n d p e a r l s e x c e l !
S u c h s a c r e d t r e a s u r e s a r e t h e l i m b s i n b o y s ,
I n w h i c h a s o u l d o t h d w e l l ;
T h e i r o r g a n i z e d j o i n t s a n d a z u r e v e i n s
M o r e w e a l t h i n c l u d e t h a n a l l t h e w o r l d c o n t a i n s .
25 F r o m d u s t I r i s e ,
A n d o u t o f n o t h i n g n o w a w a k e ;
T h e s e b r i g h t e r r e g i o n s w h i c h s a l u t e m i n e e y e s ,
A g i f t f r o m G o d I t a k e .
T h e e a r t h , t h e s e a s , t h e l i g h t , t h e d a y , t h e s k i e s ,
30 T h e s u n a n d s t a r s a r e m i n e i f t h o s e I p r i z e .
L o n g t i m e b e f o r e
I i n m y m o t h e r ' s w o m b w a s b o r n ,
A G o d , p r e p a r i n g , d i d t h i s g l o r i o u s s t o r e ,
T h e w o r l d , f o r m e a d o r n .
35 I n t o t h i s E d e n s o d i v i n e a n d f a i r ,
S o w i d e a n d b r i g h t , I c o m e H i s s o n a n d h e i r .**

*Traherne's poems were discovered in 1903 by the

lished in his lifetime, an anti-Catholic prose tract scholar Bertram Dobell, who found an anonymous called *Roman Forgeries* (1673). Traherne's poems manuscript and attributed it to Traherne after do not appear to have circulated widely (if at all) comparing it with the one work that Traherne publishing during his lifetime.

532 / T H O M A S T R A H E R N E

A stranger here

Strange things doth meet, strange glories see;
Strange treasures lodged in this fair world appear,
40 Strange all and new to me;
But that they mine should be, who nothing was,
That strangest is of all, yet brought to pass.

ca. 1665 1903

Wonder

How like an angel came I down!
How bright are all things here!
When first among his works I did appear
Oh, how their glory me did crown!
5 The world resembled his eternity,
In which my soul did walk;
And everything that I did see
Did with me talk.

The skies in their magnificence,

10

The lively, lovely air,
Oh, how divine, how soft, how sweet, how fair!

The stars did entertain my sense,
And all the works of God, so bright and pure,
So rich and great did seem,

15

As if they ever must endure
In my esteem.

A native health and innocence

Within my bones did grow;

And while my God did all his glories show,

20 I felt a vigor in my sense

That was all Spirit. I within did flow

With seas of life, like wine;

I nothing in the world did know

But° 'twas divine. *except that*

25

Harsh ragged objects were concealed;

Oppressions, tears, and cries,

Sins, griefs, complaints, dissensions, weeping eyes

Were hid, and only things revealed

Which heavenly spirits and the angels prize.

30

The state of innocence

And bliss, not trades⁰ and poverties, *goods*

Did fill my sense.

The streets were paved with golden stones,

The boys and girls were mine,

35 Oh, how did all their lovely faces shine!

T o T H E S A M E P U R P O S E / 5 3 3

The sons of men were holy ones,
In joy and beauty they appeared to me,
And everything I found,
While like an angel I did see,
40 Adorned the ground.
Rich diamond and pearl and gold
In every place was seen;
Rare splendors, yellow, blue, red, white, and green,
Mine eyes did everywhere behold.
45 Great wonders clothed with glory did appear,
Amazement was my bliss,
That and my wealth met everywhere;
No joy to^o this! *compared to*
Cursed and devised proprieties,
50 With envy, avarice,
And fraud, those fiends that spoil even paradise,
Flew from the splendor of mine eyes;
And so did hedges, ditches, limits, bounds:
I dreamed not aught of those,
55 But wandered over all men's grounds,
And found repose.
Proprieties themselves were mine,
And hedges ornaments;
Walls, boxes, coffers, and their rich contents
60 To make me rich combine.
Clothes, ribbons, jewels, laces, I esteemed
My joys by others worn:
For me they all to wear them seemed

When I was born.

ca. 1665 1903

To the Same Purpose

To the same purpose: he, not long before
Brought home from nurse, going to the door

To do some little thing

He must not do within,

5 With wonder cries,

As in the skies

He saw the moon, "O yonder is the moon,

Newly come after me to town,

That shined at Lugwardin² but yesternight,

io Where I enjoyed the self-same sight."

1. Properties, including both private property and 2. A town in south-central England on the Lugg the self. River.

5 3 4 / T H O M A S T R A H E R N E

As if it had ev'n twenty thousand faces,

It shines at once in many places;

To all the earth so wide

God doth the stars divide,

15 With so much art

The moon impart,

They serve us all; serve wholly every one

As if they served him alone.

While every single person hath such store,

20 'Tis want of sense that makes us poor.

ca. 1665 1910

Shadows in the Water

In unexperienced⁰ infancy *inexperienced*
Many a sweet mistake doth lie:
Mistake though false, intending⁰ true; *directing to*
A seeming somewhat more than view;³
5 That doth instruct the mind
In things that lie behind,
And many secrets to us show
Which afterwards we come to know.
Thus did I by the water's brink
io Another world beneath me think;
And while the lofty spacious skies
Reversed there, abused mine eyes,
I fancied other feet
Came mine to touch or meet;
15 As by some puddle I did play
Another world within it lay.
Beneath the water people drowned,
Yet with another heaven crowned,
In spacious regions seemed to go
20 As freely moving to and fro:
In bright and open space
I saw their very face;
Eyes, hands, and feet they had like mine;
Another sun did with them shine.
25 'Twas strange that people there should walk,
And yet I could not hear them talk:
That through a little watery chink,
Which one dry ox or horse might drink,

We other worlds should see,

30 Yet not admitted be;

3. I.e., an outward appearance (“seeming”) that suggests more than what is visible to the eye.

S H A D O W S I N T H E W A T E R / 5 3 5

A n d o t h e r c o n f i n e s t h e r e b e h o l d

O f l i g h t a n d d a r k n e s s , h e a t a n d c o l d .

I c a l l e d t h e m o f t , b u t c a l l e d i n v a i n ;

N o s p e e c h e s w e c o u l d e n t e r t a i n :

35 **Y e t d i d I t h e r e e x p e c t t o f i n d**

S o m e o t h e r w o r l d , t o p l e a s e m y m i n d .

I p l a i n l y s a w b y t h e s e

A n e w a n t i p o d e s , 4

W h o m , t h o u g h t h e y w e r e s o p l a i n l y s e e n ,

40 **A f i l m k e p t o f f t h a t s t o o d b e t w e e n .**

B y w a l k i n g m e n ‘ s r e v e r s e d f e e t

I c h a n c e d a n o t h e r w o r l d t o m e e t ;

T h o u g h i t d i d n o t t o v i e w e x c e e d

A p h a n t o m , ‘ t i s a w o r l d i n d e e d ,

45 **W h e r e s k i e s b e n e a t h u s s h i n e ,**

A n d e a r t h b y a r t d i v i n e

A n o t h e r f a c e p r e s e n t s b e l o w ,

W h e r e p e o p l e ‘ s f e e t a g a i n s t o u r s g o .

W i t h i n t h e r e g i o n s o f t h e a i r ,

50 **C o m p a s s e d a b o u t w i t h h e a v e n s f a i r ,**

G r e a t t r a c t s o f l a n d t h e r e m a y b e f o u n d

E n r i c h e d w i t h f i e l d s a n d f e r t i l e g r o u n d ;

W h e r e m a n y n u m e r o u s h o s t s

In t h o s e far distant c o a s t s ,
55 F o r other great a n d glorious e n d s
Inhabit, my yet u n k n o w n friends.
O ye that s t a n d u p o n the brink,
W h o m I so near me t h r o u g h the chink
W i t h w o n d e r see: what f a c e s there,
60 W h o s e feet, w h o s e bodies, do ye wear?
I my c o m p a n i o n s s e e
In you, a n o t h e r m e .
T h e y s e e m e d others, but are we;
O u r s e c o n d selves t h e s e s h a d o w s be.
65 L o o k h o w far off those lower skies
E x t e n d themselves! s c a r c e with m i n e eyes
I c a n t h e m reach. O ye my friends,
W h a t secret borders o n those e n d s ?
Are lofty h e a v e n s hurled
70 ‘ B o u t your inferior world?
Are yet the representatives
Of other p e o p l e s ‘ distant lives?
Of all the p l a y m a t e s which I k n e w
T h a t here I do the i m a g e view
75 In other selves, what c a n i t m e a n ?

4. People living at a diametrically opposite point on the globe (literally, “with the feet opposite”).

536 / E D W A R D T A Y L O R

But that below the purling⁰ stream *swirling; murmuring*

Some unknown joys there be

Laid up in store for me;

To which I shall, when that thin skin
so Is broken, be admitted in.

ca. 1665 1910

E D W A R D TAYLOR

ca. 1642-1729

Meditation 81

I kenning² through astronomy divine

The world's bright battlement,⁰ wherein I spy *heavens*

A golden path my pencil cannot line,

From that bright throne unto my threshold lie.

5 And while my puzzled thoughts about it pore

I find the bread of life in it at my door.

When that this bird of paradise³ put in

This wicker cage (my corpse)⁴ to tweedle⁰ praise *sing*

Had pecked the fruit forbad,⁵ and so did fling

io Away its food, and lost its golden days,

It fell into celestial famine sore,

And never could attain a morsel more.

Alas! alas! Poor bird, what wilt thou do?

The creatures' field no food for souls e'er gave.

15 And if thou knock at angels' doors they show

An empty barrel; they no soul bread have.

Alas! Poor bird, the world's white loaf⁶ is done,

And cannot yield thee here the smallest crumb.

In this sad state, God's tender bowels⁷ run

20 Out streams of grace; and he to end all strife

The purest wheat in heaven, his dear, dear son

Grinds, and kneads up into this bread of life.

Which bread of life from heaven down came and stands
Dished on my table up by angels' hands.

1. Based on the words of Christ in John 6.51: "I

3. I.e., the soul.

am the living bread that came down from heaven;

4. In this context, the living body, with an empha-

if any man eat of this bread, he shall live forever;

sis on its mortality.

and the bread that I will give is my flesh, which I

5. A reference to the sin of Adam and Eve, who

will give for the life of the world."

ate the fruit that God had forbidden them (Genesis

2. Here, an adjective describing the speaker as

2.17).

"learning," through divine astronomy, how the uni-

6. A reference to God's gift to the Israelites, the

verse is constructed; as a noun, "kenning" signifies

manna "like coriander seed, white" (Exodus

the distance bounding the range of ordinary vision.

16.31).

A kenning-glass is a small telescope.

7. I.e., God's powers of mercy and compassion.

**U P O N W E D L O C K , A N D D E A T H O F C H I L
D R E N / 5 3 7**

**25 D i d G o d m o u l d u p t h i s b r e a d i n h e a v e n , a n d
b a k e ,**

W h i c h f r o m h i s t a b l e c a m e , a n d t o t h i n e g o e t h ?

D o t h h e b e s p e a k t h e e t h u s : T h i s s o u l b r e a d t a k e ;

C o m e e a t t h y f i l l o f t h i s t h y G o d ' s w h i t e l o a f ?

It's f o o d too fine for angels, yet c o m e , take

30 A n d eat thy fill: it's heaven's s u g a r cake.

W h a t g r a c e is this k n e a d ° in this loaf? This thing
kneaded

S o u l s are but petty things it to a d m i r e .

Ye angels, help. T h i s fill w o u l d to the brim

H e a v e n ' s w h e l m e d - d o w n 8 crystal m e a l bowl,
yea a n d higher, 35 This b r e a d of life d r o p p e d in thy
m o u t h , doth cry:

E a t , eat m e , soul, a n d t h o u shalt never die.

1684 1937

Upon Wedlock, and Death of Children⁹

A c u r i o u s knot¹ G o d m a d e in p a r a d i s e ,

A n d drew it out e n a m e l e d 0 neatly fresh. *variously
colored*

It w a s the true love knot, m o r e sweet than spice

A n d set with all the flowers of grace's dress.

5 Its w e d d i n g knot, that ne'er c a n be untied;

No Alexander's sword c a n it divide.²

T h e slips⁰ here planted, gay a n d glorious grow, *sprigs*

U n l e s s an hellish b r e a t h do singe their p l u m e s .

H e r e primrose, cowslips, roses, lilies blow⁰ *bloom*

io With violets a n d pinks that void⁰ p e r f u m e s : *give
off, exude*

W h o s e b e a u t e o u s leaves o'er laid with honey-dew,

A n d c h a n t i n g birds chirp out sweet m u s i c true.

W h e n in this knot I p l a n t e d was, my stock³

S o o n knotted, a n d a m a n l y flower out brake.

15 A n d after it my b r a n c h a g a i n did knot;

**Brought out another flower its sweet breathe
mate.**

One knot gave one t'other the t'other's place;

**Whence chuckling smiles fought in each
other's face.**

But oh! a glorious hand from glory came

20 Guarded with angels, soon did crop this flower

Which almost tore the root up of the same

8. Turned over upon something so as to cover it.

plants: to bud, to begin to develop fruit.

9. Taylor had fourteen children; this poem

2. In Greek mythology, Gordius, king of Phrygia, appears to allude to his first four children: two daughters who died in childhood and two sons who devised a complicated knot to be undone only by the person who was to rule Asia; Alexander the Great cut the knot with a blow of his sword. Jesus lived to maturity.

Great cut the knot with a blow of his sword. Jesus

1. In this poem, Taylor plays on several meanings said, concerning marriage, "what, therefore, God of the word "knot," including the marriage bond; hath joined together, let not man put asunder" an intricately laid out flower bed; the base of a (Matthew 19.6).

woody branch enclosed in the stem from which it

3. Stem, as in cuttings used for grafting; but also arises; figuratively, something intricate, involved, genealogical tree.

or difficult to trace out or explain; as a verb, of

538 / EDWARD TAYLOR

**At that unlooked for, dolesome, darksome
hour.**

In prayer to Christ perfumed it did ascend,

And angels bright did it to heaven tend.

**25 But pausing on't, this sweet⁴ perfumed my
thought,**

Christ would in glory have a flower, choice, prime,

**And having choice, choose this my branch forth
brought.**

**Lord take't. I thank thee, thou takest aught of mine,
*nothing***

It is my pledge in glory; part of me

BO Is now in it, Lord, glorified with thee.

But praying o'er my branch, my branch did sprout

And bore another manly flower, and gay;

And after that another, sweet, brake out,

The which the former hands soon got^o away. *took*

35 But oh! the tortures, vomit, screechings, groans,

And six weeks fever would pierce hearts like stones.

Grief o'er doth flow, and nature fault would find

Were not thy will, my spell charm, joy, and gem;

That as I said, I say, take, Lord, they're thine.

40 I piece me a lpass to glory bright in them.

I joy, may I sweet flowers for glory breed,

Whether thou getst them green, or let them seed.

ca. 1682

1937

Upon a Spider Catching a Fly

T h o u sorrow, **v e n o m** elf:
I s this thy ploy,
T o spin a **w e b** out of thyself
T o c a t c h a fly?
5 For why?
I s a **w a** pettish⁰ **w a s p** *peevish, petulant*
Fall foul therein,
W h o m yet thy whorl-pins' did not c l a s p
L e s t he s h o u l d fling
i o His sting.
B u t as afraid, r e m o t e
D i d s t s t a n d hereat
A n d with thy little fingers stroke
A n d gently tap
15 His back.

4. I.e., this sweet thought or idea.

the spindle that regulates speed. Here, the spider's

5. Technically, the pin that attaches the spindle legs.

of a spinning wheel to the whorl, the flywheel on

U P O N A S P I D E R C A T C H I N G A F L Y / 5 3 9

Thus gently him didst treat
 Lest he should pet,^o *take offense*
 And in a froppish,⁰ waspish heat *fretful*
 Should greatly fret
20 Thy net.
 Whereas the silly fly,
 Caught by its leg

Thou by the throat tookst hastily
And hind^o the head *behind*
25 Bite dead.
This goes to pot, that not[;]6
Nature doth call.
Strive not above what strength hath got
Lest in the brawl
BO Thou fall.
This fray seems thus to us.
Hell's spider gets
His entrails spun to whip-cords⁷ thus,
And wove to nets
35 And sets.
To tangle Adam's race
In's^o strategems *in his*
To their destructions, spoiled, made base
By venom things,
40 Damned sins.
But mighty, gracious Lord
Communicate
Thy grace to break the cord, afford
Us glory's gate
45 And state.
We'll nightingale sing like
When perched on high
In glory's cage, thy glory, bright,
And thankfully,
50 For joy.

ca. 1680-82 1939

6. An enigmatic statement, especially because the meaning: “this goes to show (‘pot’ as an old form manuscript supplies no punctuation between “not” of ‘put,’ as in put forward for consideration) that and “Nature.” If punctuation is supplied editorially, what is ‘not nature’ (i.e., the hellish spider) com- pally, one can paraphrase, “This (i.e., the fly) dete- pels or calls.”

riorates, that (i.e., the spider) does not, according

7. Strong cord or binding, like that made of hemp to the law (‘call’) of nature.” Another possible or catgut.

540 / A P H R A B E H N

Housewifery

M a k e m e , O L o r d , t h y s p i n n i n g w h e e l c o m p l e t e . 8

T h y h o l y w o r d m y d i s t a f f m a k e f o r m e .

M a k e m i n e a f f e c t i o n s t h y s w i f t f l y e r s n e a t , A n d m a k e m y s o u l t h y h o l y s p o o l t o b e .

5 M y c o n v e r s a t i o n m a k e t o b e t h y r e e l ,

A n d r e e l t h e y a r n t h e r e o n s p u n o n t h y w h e e l .

M a k e m e t h y l o o m t h e n , k n i t t h e r e i n t h i s t w i n e ; A n d m a k e t h y h o l y s p i r i t , L o r d , w i n d q u i l l s . 9

T h e n w e a v e t h e w e b t h y s e l f . T h e y a r n i s f i n e .

10 T h i n e o r d i n a n c e s m a k e m y f u l l i n g m i l l s . 1

**Thendyethesameinheavenlycolorschoic
e, Allpinked0withvarnished0flowersof
ornamented / luminous**

paradise.

**Thenclothetherewithmineunderstandin
g, will, Affections, judgment, conscience
, memory, 15 My words, and actions, thatt
heirshinemayfillMywayswithgloryandt
heglorify.**

**Thenmineapparelshalldisplaybeforeye
ThatIamclothedinholyrobesforglory.**

1682-83 1939

APHRA BEHN

1640?—1689

Song

Love Armed

**Loveinfantastictriumph2sat,
Whilstbleedingheartсарoundhimflowed
, Forwhomfreshpainshedidcreate,
Andstrangetyrannicpowerheshowed;**

8. In the first stanza, parts of the spinning wheel

The song ironically foreshadows the Moor's own
specified are: the "distaff," which holds the mate-
fate of suffering from unrequited love.

rial to be spun; "flyers," which twist the thread as

2. A formal celebration of conquest in which the

it conducts it to and winds it upon the bobbin;

defeated party in a war was, according to Roman

"spool," on which the thread is wound as it is spun;

tradition, paraded through the streets as a trophy

“reel,” which receives the finished thread.

of victory; a popular Renaissance masque (a court

9. “Quills” are the spools of a looming machine.

entertainment that included dancing, song, drama,

1. In the “fulling mills,” the cloth is “fulled,” or

and spectacle) was the Triumph of Cupid, in which

milled, by being pressed between rollers and

the Roman god of erotic love displays his spoils;

cleansed with soap or fuller’s earth.

the scene in this poem is reminiscent of the

1. This lyric, one of Behn’s most popular, was first

masque of Cupid depicted in Edmund Spenser’s

published at the beginning of her play *Abdelazar*,

The Faerie Queene, in which Amoret appears

or the Moor’s Revenge. The song arouses the heroic

carrying her own heart, steeped in blood, “in silver

villain Abdelazar to action and seems initially to

basin layd, / Quite through transfixed with a

describe the emotional condition of the queen who

deadly dart” (3.12.21.2-3). Cf. also Mary Wroth,

illicitly loves him—and whom he secretly scorns.

Pamphilia to Amphilanthus, sonnet 1 (p. 347).

T H E D I S A P P O I N T M E N T / 5 4 1

5 F r o m t h y b r i g h t e y e s h e t o o k h i s f i r e,

W h i c h r o u n d a b o u t, i n s p o r t h e h u r l e d;

B u t ‘t w a s f r o m m i n e h e t o o k d e s i r e,

E n o u g h t o u n d o t h e a m o r o u s w o r l d.

F r o m m e h e t o o k h i s s i g h s a n d t e a r s,

10 F r o m thee his pride a n d cruelty;
F r o m me his l a n g u i s h m e n t s and fears,
A n d every killing dart f r o m thee;
T h u s thou a n d I, the G o d have armed,
A n d set him up a deity;
15 B u t my poor heart alone is h a r m e d ,
W h i l s t thine the victor is, and free.

1677

The Disappointment³

i

O n e day the a m o r o u s Lysander,⁴
By an impatient p a s s i o n swayed,
S u r p r i s e d fair Cloris,⁵ that loved maid,
W h o could d e f e n d her self no longer.
5 A l l things did with his love conspire;
T h e gilded planet of the day,⁶
In his gay chariot drawn by fire,
W a s n o w d e s c e n d i n g to the sea,
A n d left no light to guide the world,
10 B u t what f r o m Cloris' brighter eyes was hurled.

II

In a lone thicket m a d e for love,
Silent as yielding maids' consent,
S h e with a c h a r m i n g l a n g u i s h m e n t ,
Permits his force, yet gently strove;⁰ *struggled*
15 H e r h a n d s his b o s o m softly meet,
B u t not to put him b a c k designed,
Rather to draw em on inclined;

Whilst he lay trembling at her feet,

R e s i s t a n c e ‘tis in vain to show;

20 S h e w a n t s 0 t h e p o w e r t o s a y— Ah ! What d’ye do?7
lacks

3. A free translation of parts of a French poem

4. A conventional name for a male lover in pas-
about impotence by Jean Bénéch de Cantenac (ca.
toral poetry.

1630—1714), Behn’s poem, like others on this

5. A conventional name for a young woman in pas-
topic, harks back to Ovid’s *Amores* 3.7. Her poem
toral poetry.

was originally attributed to John Wilmot, earl of

6. I.e., the sun; according to myth, the god Apollo
Rochester, but her speaker adopts a distinctly dif-
drove his chariot, the sun, across the sky daily.

ferent perspective on impotence than Rochester’s

7. The question of whether an alleged victim of
speaker does in “The Imperfect Enjoyment”
rape had “shown resistance” by crying out was
(p. 551).

important in English trials for rape.

5 4 2 / A P H R A B E H N

ill

Her bright eyes sweet, and yet severe,

Where love and shame confusedly strive,

Fresh vigor to Lysander give;

And breathing faintly in his ear,

25 She cried— *Cease, cease—your vain desire,*
Or I'll call out—What would you do?
My dearer honor ev'n to you
I cannot, must not give—retire,
Or take this life, whose chiefest part
BO *I gave you with the conquest of my heart.*

IV

But he as much unused to fear,
As he was capable of love,
The blessed minutes to improve,⁰ *employ to advantage*
Kisses her mouth, her neck, her hair;
35 Each touch her new desire alarms,
His burning trembling hand he prest
Upon her swelling snowy brest,
While she lay panting in his arms.
All her unguarded beauties lie
40 The spoils and trophies of the enemy.

v

And now without respect or fear,
He seeks the object of his vows,
(His love no modesty allows)
By swift degrees advancing—where
45 His daring hand that altar seized,
Where gods of love do sacrifice:
That awful⁸ throne, that paradise
Where rage is calmed, and anger pleased;
That fountain where delight still flows,
50 And gives the universal world repose.

VI

Her balmy lips encount'ring his,
Their bodies, as their souls, are joined;
Where both in transports unconfined
Extend themselves upon the moss.
55 Cloris half dead and breathless lay;
Her soft eyes cast a humid light,
Such as divides the day and night;
Or falling stars, whose fires decay:
And now no signs of life she shows,
60 But what in short-breathed sighs returns and goes.

8. Awe-inspiring; the word has the sense both of “causing dread” and of “commanding profound respect or reverential fear.”

T H E D I S A P P O I N T M E N T / 5 4 3

He saw how at her length she lay;
He saw her rising bosom bare;
Her loose thin robes, through which appear
A shape designed for love and play;
65 Abandoned by her pride and shame,
She does her softest joys dispense,
Off'ring her virgin-innocence
A victim to love's sacred flame;
While the o'er-ravished shepherd lies
70 Unable to perform the sacrifice.

VIII

Ready to taste a thousand joys,
The too transported hapless swain0 *rustic fellow*
Found the vast pleasure turned to pain;

Pleasure which too much love destroys:

75 The willing garments by he laid,
And heaven all opened to his view,
Mad to possess, himself he threw
On the defenseless lovely maid.
But Oh what envying gods conspire
so To snatch his power, yet leave him the desire!

IX

Nature's support, (without whose aid
She can no human being give)⁹
It self now wants⁰ the art⁰ to live; *lacks / capacity*
Faintness its slackened nerves invade:
85 In vain th' enraged youth essayed⁰ *tried*
To call its fleeting vigor back,
No motion 'twill from motion take;
Excess of love his love betrayed;
In vain he toils, in vain commands;
90 The insensible¹ fell weeping in his hand.

x

In this so amorous cruel strife,
Where love and fate were too severe,
The poor Lysander in despair
Renounced his reason with his life:
95 Now all the brisk and active fire
That should the nobler part inflame,
Served to increase his rage and shame,
And left no spark for new desire:
Not all her naked charms could move

100 Or calm that rage that had debauched his love.

9. I.e., the aid of “Nature’s support,” without any human.

which Nature (“she”) cannot give life (“being”) to 1. Lacking feeling; also, too small to be noticed.

544 / A P H R A B E H N

Cloris returning from the trance

Which love and soft desire had bred,

Her timorous hand she gently laid

(Or⁰ guided by design or chance) *whether*

105 Upon that fabulous Priapus,²

That potent god, as poets feign;

But never did young shepherdess,

Gath’ring of fern upon the plain,

More nimbly draw her fingers back,

110 Finding beneath the verdant leaves a snake;

XII

Than Cloris her fair hand withdrew,

Finding that god of her desires

Disarmed of all his awful fires,

And cold as flowers bathed in the morning dew.

115 Who can the Nymph’s confusion guess?

The blood forsook the hinder place,

And strewed with blushes all her face,

Which both disdain and shame expressed:

And from Lysander’s arms she fled,

120 Leaving him fainting on the gloomy bed.

XIII

Like lightning through the grove she hies,

Or Daphne from the Delphic God,³
No print upon the grassy road
She leaves, t' instruct pursuing eyes.
125 The wind that wantoned in her hair,
And with her ruffled garments played,
Discovered in the flying maid
All that the gods e'er made, if fair.
So Venus, when her love was slain,
130 With fear and haste flew o'er the fatal plain.⁴

XIV

The Nymph's resentments none but I
Can well imagine or condole:
But none can guess Lysander's soul,
But⁰ those who swayed his destiny. *except*
135 His silent griefs swell up to storms,
And not one god his fury spares;

2. A god of fertility often represented with groin from her father, a river god, and was turned into a grotesquely enlarged genitals; here, a euphemism for laurel.

penis.

4. Adonis, the beloved of Venus, goddess of love,

3. The nymph Daphne spurned the advances of Apollo (‘‘the Delphic God’’), whose oracle was at Delphi. Fleeing from him, she begged assistance
was killed by a wild boar during a hunt. Venus
rushed to his side, but was unable to save him.

Delphi. Fleeing from him, she begged assistance

S O N G / 5 4 5

He c u r s e d his birth, his fate, his stars;
B u t m o r e the s h e p h e r d e s s ' s c h a r m s ,
W h o s e s o f t b e w i t c h i n g i n f l u e n c e
140 H a d d a m n ' d him to the hell of i m p o t e n c e .

1680

Song

*On Her Loving Two Equally*⁵

S E T B Y C A P T A I N P A C K 6

I

H o w s t r o n g l y d o e s m y p a s s i o n f l o w ,
D i v i d e d e q u a l l y ' t w i x t t w o ?
D a m o n h a d n e ' e r s u b d u ' d m y h e a r t ,
H a d n o t A l e x i s t o o k h i s p a r t ;
5 N o r c o u ' d A l e x i s p o w ' r f u l p r o v e ,
W i t h o u t m y D a m o n ' s a i d , t o g a i n m y l o v e .

II

W h e n m y A l e x i s p r e s e n t i s ,
T h e n I f o r D a m o n s i g h a n d m o u r n ;
B u t w h e n A l e x i s I d o m i s s ,
i o D a m o n g a i n s n o t h i n g b u t m y s c o r n .
B u t i f i t c h a n c e t h e y b o t h a r e b y ,
F o r b o t h a l i k e I l a n g u i s h , s i g h , a n d d i e .

in

C u r e t h e n , t h o u m i g h t y w i n g e d g o d ,⁷
T h i s r e s t l e s s f e v e r i n m y b l o o d ;
15 O n e g o l d e n - p o i n t e d d a r t t a k e b a c k :
B u t w h i c h , O C u p i d , w i l t t h o u t a k e ?
I f D a m o n ' s , a l l m y h o p e s a r e c r o s t ;

Or that of my Alexis, I am lost.

1684

5. This poem first appeared as “How Strangely

6. Simon Pack (1654—1701), an amateur musician who achieved some fame as a composer of *Count* (1682). This version of the poem was first songs for plays.

printed in Behn’s volume *Poems on Several Occa-*

7. Cupid, Roman god of erotic love.

sions (1684).

5 4 6 / A P H R A B E H N

On the Death of the Late Earl of Rochester⁸

M o u r n , m o u r n , y e M u s e s , 9 a l l y o u r l o s s d e p l o r e ,

T h e y o u n g , t h e n o b l e S t r e p h o n 1 i s n o m o r e .

Y e s , y e s , h e f l e d q u i c k a s d e p a r t i n g l i g h t ,

A n d n e ’ e r s h a l l r i s e f r o m D e a t h ‘ s e t e r n a l n i g h t ,

5 S o r i c h a p r i z e t h e S t y g i a n 2 g o d s n e ’ e r b o r e ,

S u c h w i t , s u c h b e a u t y , n e v e r g r a c e d t h e i r s h o r e .

H e w a s b u t l e n t t h i s d u l l e r w o r l d t ’ i m p r o v e

I n a l l t h e c h a r m s o f p o e t r y , a n d l o v e ;

B o t h w e r e h i s g i f t , w h i c h f r e e l y h e b e s t o w e d ,

10 A n d l i k e a g o d , d e a l t t o t h e w o n d ’ r i n g c r o w d .

S c o r n i n g t h e l i t t l e v a n i t y o f f a m e ,

S p i g h t 0 o f h i m s e l f a t t a i n e d a g l o r i o u s n a m e . *in spite*

B u t o h ! i n v a i n w a s a l l h i s p e e v i s h 3 p r i d e ,

T h e s u n a s s o o n m i g h t h i s v a s t l u s t e r h i d e ,

is As piercing , pointed , a n d m o r e lastin g bright,
 As s u f f e r i n g no vicissitudes⁴ of night.
 M o u r n , m o u r n , ye M u s e s , all your loss deplore,
 T h e young, the noble S t r e p h o n is no m o r e .
 N o w u n i n s p i r e d u p o n your b a n k s ⁵ we lie,
 20 U n l e s s w h e n we w o u l d m o u r n his elegy;⁶
 His n a m e ‘ s a g e n i u s ⁷ that w o u l d w i t d i s p e n s e
 ,
 A n d give the t h e m e a soul, the words a s e n s e .
 B u t all fine t h o u g h t that ravisht⁰ w h e n it spoke,
enraptured
 W i t h the soft youth eternal leave h a s took;
 25 U n c o m m o n wit that did the soul o ‘ e r c o m e ,
 Is buried all in S t r e p h o n ‘ s w o r s h i p p e d t o m b ;
 Satire has lost its art, its sting is gone,
 T h e F o p a n d C u l l y ⁸ n o w m a y b e u n d o n e ;
 T h a t d e a r i n s t r u c t i n g r a g e is n o w a l l a y e d ,
 0 *laid down*
 30 A n d no s h a r p p e n dares tell ‘em h o w they’ve
 strayed;
 Bold as a god w a s ev’ry lash he took,
 B u t kind a n d gentle the chastizing stroke.
 M o u r n , m o u r n , ye youths, w h o m f o r t u n e has
 betrayed, T h e last r e p r o a c h e r of your vice is d e a d .

8. This poem eulogizes John Wilmot, the second
 disparagement expressing the speaker’s feeling
 earl of Rochester (1647-1680; see pp. 549-53), a
 toward, rather than a quality of, the object referred
 lyric poet, satirist, and leading member of the
 to.

“wits” at the court of King Charles II. Rochester

4. Changes, mutations; particularly an alternation lived a fashionable life in London, reputedly had of opposite or contrasting things or conditions.

several mistresses, and, according to Samuel John-

5. According to mythology, the Muses sang on the son, “blazed out his youth and health in lavish banks of the Hippocrene spring, on Mt. Helicon. voluptuousness.”

6. A funeral song or lament; here, a sorrowful

9. The nine Greek sister goddesses believed to be utterance.

the sources of inspiration for the arts.

7. A spirit with the capacity to influence or inspire

1. A conventional name for a pastoral lover.

the character, conduct, or fortunes of a person.

2. Infernal; Styx was one of the rivers of the under-

8. The fool and dupe (one easily taken in); these world, over which Charon ferried the shades of the types were frequent objects of satire in Restoration dead.

literature.

3. Obstinate; “peevisish” can also be an epithet of

ON THE DEATH OF THE LATE EARL OF ROCHESTER / 547

35 Mourn, all ye beauties, put your Cyprus⁹ on,

The truest swain¹ that e’re adored you’s gone;

Think how he loved, and writ, and sighed, and spoke,

Recall his mien,^o his fashion, and his look. *bearing, manner*
By what dear arts the soul he did surprise,
40 Soft as his voice, and charming as his eyes.
Bring garlands all of never-dying flowers,
Bedewed with everlasting falling showers;
Fix your fair eyes upon your victim'd slave,
Sent gay and young to his untimely grave.
45 See where the noble swain extended lies,
Too sad a triumph of your victories;²
Adorned with all the graces Heaven e'er lent,
All that was great, soft, lovely, excellent
You've laid into his early monument. J
50 Mourn, mourn, ye beauties, your sad loss deplore,
The young, the charming Strephon is no more.
Mourn, all ye little gods of love,³ whose darts
Have lost their wonted⁰ power of piercing hearts; *usual*
Lay by the gilded quiver and the bow,
55 The useless toys can do no mischief now,
Those eyes that all your arrows' points inspired,
Those lights⁴ that gave ye fire are now retired,
Cold as his tomb, pale as your mother's doves;⁵
Bewail him then oh all ye little loves,
60 For you the humblest votary⁰ have lost *devoted worshiper*
That ever your divinities could boast;
Upon your hands your weeping heads decline,
And let your wings encompass round his shrine;
In stead of flowers your broken arrows strow,^o *scatter about*
65 And at his feet lay the neglected bow.

Mourn, all ye little gods, your loss deplore,
The soft, the charming Strephon is no more.
Large was his fame, but short his glorious race,
Like young Lucretius⁶ lived and died apace.⁰ *quickly*
70 So early roses fade, so over all
They cast their fragrant scents, then softly fall,
While all the scattered perfumed leaves declare,
How lovely 'twas when whole, how sweet, how fair.
Had he been to the Roman Empire known,

9. A light, transparent material like lawn or crepe,
armed with a quiver and bow. His gold-tipped
originally from Cyprus; but also, perhaps, with ref-
arrows incited his victims to love.

erence to a branch of the cypress tree, regarded as
4. I.e., eyes.

a symbol of mourning.

5. Venus, Cupid's mother and the goddess of love

1. Lover; but also, shepherd, in keeping with the
and beauty, was often depicted attended by doves.
pastoral references in the poem.

6. A Roman poet of the early first century **B.C.E.**,

2. Triumph here refers to the defeated party in a
author of *De Rerum Natura* ("On the Nature of
war, who was, according to Roman tradition,
Things"), the themes of which included the mor-
paraded through the streets as a trophy of victory.
tality of the soul and the pointlessness of the fear

3. Figures of Eros, or Cupid, the god of erotic love,

of death; he was said to have committed suicide.

who was often portrayed as a winged child or boy

548 / A P H R A B E H N

**75 W h e n g r e a t A u g u s t u s ⁷ f i l l e d t h e p e a c e f u l
t h r o n e ;**

H a d h e t h e n o b l e w o n d r o u s p o e t s e e n , ⁸

A n d k n o w n h i s g e n i u s , a n d s u r v e y e d h i s m i e n ,

(W h e n w i t s , a n d h e r o e s g r a c e d d i v i n e a b o d e s)

,

H e h a d i n c r e a s e d t h e n u m b e r o f t h e i r g o d s ;

**s o T h e r o y a l j u d g e ⁹ h a d t e m p l e s r e a r ' d t o ' s ⁰ n a
m e , t o h i s**

A n d m a d e h i m a s i m m o r t a l a s h i s f a m e ;

I n l o v e a n d v e r s e h i s O v i d h e ' a d ¹ o u t - d o n e ,

A n d a l l h i s l a u r e l s , a n d h i s J u l i a ² w o n .

M o u r n , m o u r n , u n h a p p y w o r l d , h i s l o s s d e p l o r e ,

85 T h e g r e a t , t h e c h a r m i n g S t r e p h o n i s n o m o r e

.

1685

To the Fair Clarinda, Who Made Love to Me,

Imagined More Than Woman³

F a i r l o v e l y m a i d , o r i f t h a t t i t l e b e

T o o w e a k , t o o f e m i n i n e f o r n o b l e r t h e e ,

P e r m i t a n a m e t h a t m o r e a p p r o a c h e s t r u t h :

A n d l e t m e c a l l t h e e , l o v e l y c h a r m i n g y o u t h . ⁴

5 T h i s l a s t w i l l j u s t i f y m y s o f t c o m p l a i n t , ⁵

W h i l e t h a t m a y s e r v e t o l e s s e n m y c o n s t r a i n t ;

A n d w i t h o u t b l u s h e s I t h e y o u t h p u r s u e ,

W h e n s o m u c h b e a u t e o u s w o m a n i s i n v i e w .

A g a i n s t t h y c h a r m s w e s t r u g g l e b u t i n v a i n
i o W i t h t h y d e l u d i n g f o r m t h o u g i v ' s t u s p a i n , r
W h i l e t h e b r i g h t n y m p h b e t r a y s u s t o t h e s w a i n . 6 J
I n p i t y t o o u r s e x s u r e t h o u w e r t s e n t ,
T h a t w e m i g h t l o v e , a n d y e t b e i n n o c e n t :
F o r s u r e n o c r i m e w i t h t h e e w e c a n c o m m i t ;
15 O r i f w e s h o u l d — t h y f o r m e x c u s e s i t .
F o r w h o , t h a t g a t h e r s f a i r e s t f l o w e r s b e l i e v e s
A s n a k e l i e s h i d b e n e a t h t h e f r a g r a n t l e a v e s .
T h o u b e a u t e o u s w o n d e r o f a d i f f e r e n t k i n d ,
S o f t C l o r i s w i t h t h e d e a r A l e x i s j o i n e d ; 7

7. The first Roman emperor, Augustus ruled from 27 B.C.E. until his death in 14 c.E., a period marked by relative peace, cultural achievement, and civil improvements. Virgil, Horace, and Ovid were banished from Rome by Augustus; “his laurels” refers to Ovid’s poetic achievement.

3. This final phrase can modify either “Clarinda” among the writers of this period.

or “me,” the speaker. Clarinda is a conventional pastoral name.

8. I.e., if “he,” Augustus, had seen Rochester, “the noble wond’rous poet”;

this line begins an “if ... then” construction: if Augustus had known Rochester, then he (Augustus) would have added the

4. Young man; although “youth” can denote something, it is used here in opposition to

ester, then he (Augustus) would have added the

the title of “maid,” i.e., young woman, in line 1.

English poet to the ranks of the Roman gods, built

5. A lyric poem in which the speaker bewails the temples in his honor, and made him immortal.

misery caused by his or her absent or unresponsive

9. I.e., Augustus.

beloved.

1. He had, i.e., he would have. Ovid is famous for,

6. The nymph and the swain are conventional

among other things, his love poems, including the

characters of pastoral poetry. The nymph is a

Amoves, purportedly based on his own experiences.

young, beautiful woman; the swain is a young,

Ovid was popular during the Restoration for his wit

male shepherd or rustic.

and sensuality.

7. I.e., she combines features of stock male and

2. The daughter of Augustus, thought to have

female pastoral figures.

T H E D I S A B L E D D E B A U C H E E / 5 4 9

20 W h e n e'er the m a n l y part of thee, w o u l d p l e a d

T h o u t e m p t s us with the i m a g e of the m a i d ,

W h i l e we the noblest p a s s i o n s do extend

T h e love to H e r m e s , Aphrodite⁸ the friend.

1688

A Thousand Martyrs⁹

A t h o u s a n d martyrs I have m a d e ,

All sacrificed to my desire;

**A t h o u s a n d b e a u t i e s h a v e b e t r a y e d ,
T h a t l a n g u i s h i n r e s i s t l e s s f i r e .
5 T h e u n t a m e d h e a r t t o h a n d I b r o u g h t ,
A n d f i x e d t h e w i l d a n d w a n d e r i n g t h o u g h t .
I n e v e r v o w e d n o r s i g h e d i n v a i n
B u t b o t h , t h o u g h f a l s e , w e r e w e l l r e c e i v e d .
T h e f a i r a r e p l e a s e d t o g i v e u s p a i n ,
i o A n d w h a t t h e y w i s h i s s o o n b e l i e v e d .
A n d t h o u g h I t a l k e d o f w o u n d s a n d s m a r t ,
L o v e ' s p l e a s u r e s o n l y t o u c h e d m y h e a r t .
A l o n e t h e g l o r y a n d t h e s p o i l
I a l w a y s l a u g h i n g b o r e a w a y ;
15 T h e t r i u m p h s , w i t h o u t p a i n o r t o i l ,
W i t h o u t t h e h e l l , t h e h e a v ' n o f j o y .
A n d w h i l e I t h u s a t r a n d o m r o v e
D e s p i s e t h e f o o l s t h a t w h i n e f o r l o v e .**

1688

J O H N W I L M O T , E A R L O F R O C H E S T E R

1647-1680

The Disabled Debauchee

**A s s o m e b r a v e a d m i r a l , i n f o r m e r w a r
D e p r i v e d o f f o r c e , b u t p r e s s e d w i t h c o u r a g e s t i l l ,
T w o r i v a l f l e e t s a p p e a r i n g f r o m a f a r ,
C r a w l s t o t h e t o p o f a n a d j a c e n t h i l l ;**

8. Hermaphroditus was the son of Hermes (Mer-

9. This lyric is from Behn's *Lycidus: Or the Lover*
cury), the messenger god, and Aphrodite (Venus).

in Fashion, a prose work with verse interspersed

Bathing in the fountain of the nymph Salmacis,
that translates *Le Second Voyage de l'Isle d'Amour*
whose love he spurned, he merged with her and
(1664), by the Abbe Paul Tallemant. This song is
became male and female in one body. Behn was
introduced by the narrator with the line "Take then
described by a contemporary, Daniel Kendricks, as
the history of my heart, which I assure, boasts itself
belonging to a "third" sex: "ah, more than woman,
of the conquests it has made."

more than man she is," he wrote in 1688.

550 / JOHN WILMOT, EARL OF ROCHESTER

5 From whence, with thoughts full of concern, he views
The wise and daring conduct of the fight,
Whilst each bold action to his mind renews
His present glory and his past delight;
From his fierce eyes flashes of fire he throws,
10 As from black clouds when lightning breaks away;
Transported, thinks himself amidst the foes,
And absent, yet enjoys the bloody day;
So, when my days of impotence approach,
And Fm by pox¹ and wine's unlucky chance
15 Forced from the pleasing billows of debauch
On the dull shore of lazy temperance,
My pains at least some respite shall afford
While I behold the battles you maintain
When fleets of glasses sail about the board,⁰ *table*

20 From whose broadsides² volleys of wit shall rain.
 Nor let the sight of honorable scars,
 Which my too forward valor did procure,
 Frighten new-listed⁰ soldiers from the wars: *newly enlisted*
 Past joys have more than paid what I endure.
 25 Should any youth (worth being drunk) prove nice,⁰
reluctant, fastidious
 And from his fair inviter meanly shrink,
 ‘Twill please the ghost of my departed vice
 If, at my counsel, he repent and drink.
 Or should some cold-complexioned sot^o forbid, *fool*
 30 With his dull morals, our bold night-alarms,
 I’ll fire his blood by telling what I did
 When I was strong and able to bear arms.
 I’ll tell of whores attacked, their lords at home;
 Bawds’ quarters beaten up,³ and fortress won;
 35 Windows demolished, watches⁰ overcome; *watchmen*
 And handsome ills by my contrivance done.
 Nor shall our love-fits, Chloris,⁴ be forgot,
 When each the well-looking linkboy⁵ strove t’ enjoy,
 And the best kiss was the deciding lot
 40 Whether the boy fucked you, or I the boy.
 With tales like these I will such thoughts inspire
 As to important mischief shall incline:

1. Venereal disease often left extensive scarring.
4. A conventional poetic name for a young
2. The table’s sides; ship’s artillery; sheets on woman.

which satirical verses were printed.

5. A boy employed to carry a torch to light the way

3. Madams' "houses" aroused, disturbed.

for people in the streets.

THE IMPERFECT ENJOYMENT / 551

I'll make him long some ancient church to fire,

And fear no lewdness he's called to by wine.

45 Thus, statesmanlike, I'll saucily impose,

And safe from action, valiantly advise;

Sheltered in impotence, urge you to blows,

And being good for nothing else, be wise.

1680

The Imperfect Enjoyment⁶

Naked she lay, clasped in my longing arms,

I filled with love, and she all over charms;

Both equally inspired with eager fire,

Melting through kindness, flaming in desire.

5 With arms, legs, lips close clinging to embrace,

She clips⁰ me to her breast, and sucks me to her face. *hugs*

Her nimble tongue, love's lesser lightning, played

Within my mouth, and to my thoughts conveyed

Swift orders that I should prepare to throw

10 The all-dissolving thunderbolt below.

My fluttering soul, sprung with the pointed kiss,

Hangs hovering o'er her balmy brinks of bliss.

But whilst her busy hand would guide that part

Which should convey my soul up to her heart,

15 In liquid raptures I dissolve all o'er,

Melt into sperm, and spend at every pore.
A touch from any part of her had done't:
Her hand, her foot, her very look's a cunt.
Smiling, she chides in a kind murmuring noise,
20 And from her body wipes the clammy joys,
When, with a thousand kisses wandering o'er
My panting bosom, "Is there then no more?"
She cries. "All this to love and rapture's due;
Must we not pay a debt to pleasure too?"
25 But I, the most forlorn, lost man alive,
To show my wished obedience vainly strive:
I sigh, alas! and kiss, but cannot swive.° *screw*
Eager desires confound my first intent,
Succeeding shame does more success prevent,
30 And rage at last confirms me impotent.
Ev'n her fair hand, which might bid heat return
To frozen age, and make cold hermits burn,
Applied to my dead cinder,⁷ warms no more
Than fire to ashes could past flames restore.
35 Trembling, confused, despairing, limber,⁰ dry, *slack, limp*

6. Like Ovid (*Amores* 3.7) and several
scenario that includes a "nymph's" point of view,
seventeenth-century poets, both French and
see Aphra Behn, "The Disappointment" (p. 541).
English, Rochester here explores a scene of erotic
7. Partly burned coal that, unlike ashes, could be
failure from the man's point of view. For a similar
reignited and reused a number of times.

552 / JOHN WILMOT, EARL OF ROCHESTER

A wishing, weak, unmoving lump I lie.

This dart of love, whose piercing point, oft tried,

With virgin blood ten thousand maids has dyed,

Which nature still directed with such art

40 That it through every cun tre a ch e d every h e a r t —

Stiffly resolved, 'twould carelessly invade

W o m a n o r m a n , n o r o u g h t 0 i t s f u r y s t a y e d : 0
anything / kept hack

W h e r e ' e r i t p i e r c e d , a c u n t i t f o u n d o r m a d e —

N o w l a n g u i d l i e s i n t h i s u n h a p p y h o u r ,

45 S h r u n k u p a n d s a p l e s s l i k e a w i t h e r e d f l o w e r .

T h o u t r e a c h e r o u s , b a s e d e s e r t e r o f m y f l a m e
, F a l s e t o m y p a s s i o n , f a t a l t o m y f a m e ,

T h r o u g h w h a t m i s t a k e n m a g i c d o s t t h o u p r o v e

S o t r u e t o l e w d n e s s , s o u n t r u e t o l o v e ?

50 W h a t o y s t e r - c i n d e r - b e g g a r - c o m m o n w
h o r e 8

Didst thou e'er fail in all thy life before?

W h e n v i c e , d i s e a s e , a n d s c a n d a l l e a d t h e w a y ,

W i t h w h a t o f f i c i o u s h a s t e d o e s t t h o u o b e y !

L i k e a r u d e , 0 r o a r i n g h e c t o r 0 i n t h e s t r e e t s *blustery /
bully*

55 W h o s c u f f l e s , c u f f s , a n d j u s t l e s a l l h e m e e
t s , B u t i f h i s k i n g o r c o u n t r y c l a i m h i s a i d ,

T h e r a k e h e l l v i l l a i n s h r i n k s a n d h i d e s h i s h e a d ;

E v ' n s o t h y b r u t a l v a l o r i s d i s p l a y e d ,

**B r e a k s every strew,⁹ does e a c h small whore invade,
 60 B u t w h e n great L o v e the onset does c o m m a n d ,
 B a s e recreant to thy prince, thou dar'st not stand.
 Worst part of m e , a n d h e n c e f o r t h h a t e d m o s t ,
 T h r o u g h all the town a c o m m o n f u c k i n g post,
 O n w h o m e a c h w h o r e relieves her tingling c u n t
 65 A s h o g s on gates do rub t h e m s e l v e s a n d grunt,
 M a y s t thou to ravenous c h a n c r e s ⁰ be a prey,
venereal ulcers
 Or in c o n s u m i n g w e e p i n g s w a s t e away;
 M a y strangury a n d stone¹ they days attend;
 May'st thou never piss, w h o didst r e f u s e to s p e n d
 70 W h e n all my joys did on f a l s e thee d e p e n d .
 A n d m a y t e n t h o u s a n d abler pricks agree
 To do the w r o n g e d C o r i n n a right for thee.**

1680

The Mock Song²

**I swive⁰ as well as others do, *screw*
 I'm young, not yet d e f o r m e d ,
 My tender heart, sincere, a n d true,
 D e s e r v e s not to be s c o r n e d .**

8. I.e., what oyster-woman, cinder-woman,
 nation difficult. *Weepings*: the flow or discharge of
 beggar-woman, or common whore?
 humors from the body.

9. Enters forcefully every brothel.

2. This poem is a burlesque of a song probably

1. Usually fatal diseases in men that rendered uri-

composed by Rochester's enemy Sir Carr Scroope.

A S O N G O F A Y O U N G L A D Y T O H E R A N C I E
N T L O V E R / 5 5 3

5 W h y Phyllis then, why will you swive,

W i t h forty lovers m o r e ?

C a n I (said she) with N a t u r e strive,

Alas I a m , alas I am a whore.

W e r e all my body larded³ o'er,

10 W i t h darts of love, so thick,

T h a t you might find in ev'ry pore,

A well s t u c k s t a n d i n g prick;

Whilst yet my eyes a l o n e w e r e free,

M y heart, w o u l d never d o u b t ,

15 In a m ' r o u s rage, a n d ecstasy,

To wish t h o s e eyes, to wish t h o s e eyes f u c k e d out.

1680

A Song of a Young Lady to Her Ancient Lover

A n c i e n t person, for w h o m I

All the flattering youth defy,

L o n g be it ere thou grow old,

Aching, shaking, crazy, cold;

5 B u t still c o n t i n u e as thou art,

Ancient p e r s o n of my heart.

On thy withered lips a n d dry,

W h i c h like barren furrows lie,

B r o o d i n g kisses I will p o u r

10 Shall thy y o u t h f u l [heat]⁴ restore

(S u c h kind showers in a u t u m n fall,

**A n d a s e c o n d spring recall);
N o r f r o m thee will ever part,
A n c i e n t p e r s o n of my heart.
15 T h y nobler part, w h i c h but to n a m e
I n o u r s e x w o u l d b e c o u n t e d s h a m e ,
B y a g e ' s f r o z e n g r a s p p o s s e s s e d ,
F r o m [his] i c e s h a l l b e r e l e a s e d ,
A n d s o o t h e d b y m y r e v i v i n g h a n d ,
20 I n f o r m e r w a r m t h a n d v i g o r s t a n d .
A l l a l o v e r ' s w i s h c a n r e a c h
F o r t h y j o y m y l o v e s h a l l t e a c h ,
A n d f o r t h e y p l e a s u r e s h a l l i m p r o v e
A l l t h a t a r t c a n a d d t o l o v e .**

**25 Y e t s t i l l I l o v e t h e e w i t h o u t a r t ,
A n c i e n t p e r s o n o f m y h e a r t .**

1 6 9 1

3. Smeared with lard, greased.

4. Modern editorial conjecture; the posthumously printed text reads "heart."

5 5 4

A N N E K I L L I G R E W

1660-1685

Alexandreis1

I sing the man that never equal knew,

Whose mighty arms all Asia did subdue,²

Whose conquests through the spacious world do ring,

That city-raser,³ king-destroying king,
5 Who o'er the warlike Macedons did reign,
And worthily the name of Great did gain.
This is the prince (if fame you will believe,
To ancient story any credit give.)
Who when the globe of Earth he had subdued,
10 With tears the easy victory pursued;
Because that no more worlds there were to win,
No further scene to act his glories in.
Ah that some pitying Muse⁴ would now inspire
My frozen style with a poetic fire,
15 And raptures worthy of his matchless fame,
Whose deeds I sing, whose never fading name
Long as the world shall fresh and deathless last,
No less to future ages, than⁰ the past. *than*
Great my presumption is, I must confess,
20 But if I thrive, my glory's ne'er the less;
Nor will it from his conquests derogate⁰ *detract*
A female pen his acts did celebrate.
If thou O Muse wilt thy assistance give,
Such as made Naso and great Maro⁵ live,
25 With him whom Melas⁶ fertile banks did bear,
Live, though their bodies dust and ashes are;
Whose laurels⁷ were not fresher, than their fame
Is now, and will for ever be the same.
If the like favor thou wilt grant to me,
30 O Queen of Verse,⁸ I'll not ungrateful be,
My choicest hours to thee I'll dedicate,

‘Tis thou shalt rule, ‘tis thou shalt be my fate.

1. This unfinished poem was an early work of the Asia Minor, Persia, and the Punjab), Alexander young poet, who apparently (according to the note, destroyed many kings.

reprinted here, at the end of the poem in the vol-

4. The Muses were nine Greek sister goddesses
ume of collected works published after her death)

believed to be the sources of inspiration for the
felt herself unequal to the task of completing an
arts. The invocation of the Muse, requesting divine
epic poem about Alexander the Great. Alexander
aid in the writing of the poem, is an epic conven-
(356—323 **B.C.E.**), considered one of the greatest
tion.

military leaders of all time, became king of Mace-

5. Publius Vergilius Maro (70-19 **B.C.E.**) is the full
don in 336 **B.C.E.** and succeeded during his short
name of the Roman poet Virgil; Publius Ovidius
life in conquering Egypt and most of Southeast
Naso (43 **B.C.E.**-17? **c.E.**) is the full name of the
Asia.

Roman poet Ovid, author of the *Metamorphoses*.

2. Cf. the beginning of Virgil’s great epic, the

6. The ancient Greek poet Homer, author of the

Aeneid: “Of arms and the man I sing ... ”

Iliad and the *Odyssey*, was said to have been born

3. One who razes, or obliterates, cities. In 335

and lived by the Melas River.

B.C.E., Thebes, a Greek state, revolted. Alexander

7. The laurel was a symbol of poetic achievement.

put down the revolt and destroyed the city. In the

8. I.e., the Muse of epic poetry, Calliope.

course of his conquests (of Phoenicia, Egypt, Tyre,

A L E X A N D R E I S / 5 5 5

But if coy goddess thou shalt this deny,

And from my humble suit disdain^g fly,

35 I'll stoop and beg no more, since I know this,

Writing of him, I cannot write amiss:

His lofty deeds will raise each feeble line,

And god-like acts will make my verse divine.

'Twas at the time the golden sun doth rise,

40 And with his beams enlight^s the azure skies,

When lo a troop in silver arms drew near,

The glorious sun did nere^o so bright appear; *never*

Dire⁹ scarlet plumes adorned their haughty crests,⁰ *helmets*

And crescent shields did shade their shining breasts;

45 Down from their shoulders hung a panther's hide,

A bow and quiver rattled by their side;

Their hands a knotty well tried spear did bear,

Jocund⁰ they seemed, and quite devoid of fear. *merry*

These warlike virgins were, that do reside

50 Near Thermodon's smooth banks¹ and verdant⁰ side, *green*

The plains of Themiscyre² their birth do boast,

Thalestris³ now did head the beauteous host;

She emulating that illustrious dame,

Who to the aid of Troy and Priam came,⁴
55 And her who the Retulian prince did aid,⁵
Though dearly both for their assistance paid.
But fear she scorned, nor the like fate did dread,
Her host she often to the field had led,
As oft in triumph had returned again,
60 Glory she only sought for all her pain.
This martial queen⁶ had heard how loudly fame,
Echoed our conqueror's redoubted⁰ name, *respected; dreaded*
Her soul his conduct and his courage fired,
To see the hero she so much admired;
65 And to Hyrcania for this cause she went,
Where Alexander (wholly then intent
On triumphs⁷ and such military sport)
At truce with war held both his camp and court.
And while before the town she did attend⁰ *await*
70 Her messengers return, she saw ascend
A cloud of dust, that covered all the sky,
And still at every pause there stroke⁰ her eye. *struck*
The interrupted beams of burnished gold,
9. Terrible, in the sense of inspiring terror or fear
the death of the Trojan hero Hector, with the Tro-
in an onlooker.
jans all but defeated. She and a small band of Ama-
1. The Amazons were a tribe of warrior women
zons fight valiantly against the Greeks, killing many
believed to live on the plain of the Thermodon
Greek heroes, before she is killed by Achilles, who

River, which sprang from the Amazonian Moun-
is so impressed by her beauty and valor that he
tains and emptied into the Black Sea.

laments her death and prevents the Greeks from

2. The capital city of the Amazons.

desecrating her body. Priam was the king of Troy.

3. A queen of the Amazons who desired to have a

5. In the *Aeneid*, Virgil records the bravery of the
daughter sired by Alexander. Legend has it that she
warrior queen Camilla, who fought with Turnus,
consorted with him for thirteen days at Hyrcania,
prince of the Rutulians, against Aeneas and the
but died shortly after returning to her own country.

Trojans. She is killed in the battle.

4. Penthesilea, an earlier queen of the Amazons,

6. I.e., Thalestris.

fought in the Trojan War against the Greeks. In

7. Formal celebrations of conquests.

most versions of her story, she arrives in Troy after

5 5 6 / A N N E F I N C H , C O U N T E S S O F W I N C H I
L S E A

As dust the splendor hid, or did unfold;

75 Loud neighings of the steeds, and trumpets' sound

Filled all the air, and echoed from the ground:

The gallant Greeks with a brisk march drew near,

And their great chief did at their head appear.

And now come up to th' Amazonian band,

so They made a halt and a respectful stand:

And both the troops (with like amazement strook⁰) **struck**
Did each on other with deep silence look.

Th'heroic queen (whose high pretence⁰ to war **aspiration**

Cancelled the bashful laws and nicer bar

85 Of modesty,⁸ which did her sex restrain)

First boldly did advance before her train,

And thus she spake. All but a god in name,

And that a debt time owes unto thy fame.

This was the first essay^o of this young lady in attempt

•poetry, hut finding the task she had undertaken

hard, she laid it hy till practice and more time

should make her equal to so great a work.

1686

A N N E F I N C H , C O U N T E S S O F W I N C H I L S E
A

1661-1720

The Introduction¹

Did I, my lines intend for public view,

How many censures, would their faults pursue,

Some would, because such words they do affect,

Cry they're insipid, empty, uncorrect.

5 And many have attained, dull and untaught,

The name of wit only by finding fault.

True judges might condemn their want⁰ of wit, **lack**

And all might say, they're by a woman writ.

Alas! a woman that attempts the pen,

io Such an intruder on the rights of men,

Such a presumptuous creature, is esteemed,

The fault can by no virtue be redeemed.

They tell us we mistake our sex and way;

Good breeding, fashion, dancing, dressing, play

15 Are the accomplishments we should desire;

8. I.e., the queen's martial aims cancel (or super-

indeed, many of her works remained in manuscript

cede) the laws that usually "restrain" women by

at her death, or were first printed anonymously.

requiring them to be bashful and to adhere to the

She did, however, allow a collection of poems to

stricter limits ("nicer bar") of modesty.

be published in 1713. With the exception of "The

1. Most critics think this poem was written early

Introduction," our ordering follows dates of first

in Finch's poetic career, probably as a preface to

printing and, for poems first printed in her 1713

an imagined book of poems. For reasons explained

book, the order given there.

in the text, Finch did not publish this poem;

THE INTRODUCTION / 557

To write, or read, or think, or to inquire

Would cloud our beauty, and exhaust our time,

And interrupt the conquests of our prime;

Whilst the dull manage of a servile house

20 Is held by some our outmost⁰ art, and use. *utmost*

Sure 'twas not ever thus, nor are we told

Fables, of women that excelled of old;

To whom, by the diffusive hand of Heaven

Some share of wit, and poetry was given.
25 On that glad day, on which the Ark returned,²
The holy pledge, for which the land had mourned,
The joyful tribes, attend it on the way,
The Levites do the sacred charge convey,
Whilst various instruments, before it play;
30 Here, holy virgins in the concert join
The louder notes, to soften, and refine,
And with alternate verse³ complete the hymn divine.
Lo! the young Poet,⁴ after God's own heart,
By Him inspired, and taught the Muses' ⁵ art,
35 Returned from conquest, a bright chorus meets,
That sing his slain ten thousand in the streets.
In such loud numbers⁶ they his acts declare,
Proclaim the wonders of his early war,
That Saul upon the vast applause does frown,
40 And feels its mighty thunder shake the crown.
What, can the threatened judgment now prolong?
Half of the kingdom is already gone;
The fairest half, whose influence guides the rest,
Have David's empire o'er their hearts confessed.
45 A woman⁷ here, leads fainting Israel on,
She fights, she wins, she triumphs with a song,
Devout, majestic, for the subject fit,
And far above her arms,⁸ exalts her wit;
Then, to the peaceful, shady palm withdraws,
50 And rules the rescued nation, with her laws.
How are we fall'n, fall'n by mistaken rules?

And education's, more than nature's fools,

Debarred from all improvements of the mind,

2. The ark of the Covenant was captured by the women of the city sang and said, "Saul hath slain

Philistines, but God forced them to return it by his thousands, and David his ten thousands" (1

Samuel 18.7). The prophet Samuel had earlier pre-

not allow the ark to be returned to Jerusalem, dicted Saul's downfall and replacement by "a

because of the transgressions of the Israelites, and neighbor of thine, who is better than thou" (1 Sam-

during its absence "all the house of Israel lamented uel 15.28), and the women's praise initiated Saul's

after the Lord" (1 Samuel 7.2). The ark was jealous rage against David.

returned to Jerusalem twenty years later, during

5. The nine Greek sister goddesses believed to be the reign of David. The Levites (the tribe of priests) sources of inspiration for the arts.

were assigned to convey it to the city, and it was

6. Measures of music and verse.

accompanied by a procession with much singing

7. Deborah, the fourth judge of Israel (before and music (1 Chronicles 15.25—28).

Israel had kings, judges administered the laws

3. A series of couplets. The choir of virgins

given by God; see Judges 4.5). W h e n the Israelites

(Finch's invention) chants every other line, in
were enslaved by the Canaanites, Deborah urged
response, as in some of the Psalms.

her fellow judge, Barak, to wage war against the
4. I.e., David, second king of Israel, who wrote
enslavers and accompanied him to the site of the
many of the Psalms. Before he became king, dur-
battle. After their victory, Deborah and Barak
ing the reign of Saul, David won a great battle over
wrote a song of praise (Judges 5).

the Philistines. Upon returning to Jerusalem, the
8. I.e., her military feats.

5 5 8 / A N N E F I N C H , C O U N T E S S O F W I N C H I
L S E A

A n d t o b e d u l l , e x p e c t e d a n d d e s i g n e d ; 0
appointed, intended 55 **A n d i f s o m e o n e w o u l d s o a r a**
b o v e t h e r e s t ,

W i t h w a r m e r f a n c y , a n d a m b i t i o n p r e s s e d
, S o s t r o n g t h ' o p p o s i n g f a c t i o n s t i l l a p p e a r s ,
T h e h o p e s t o t h r i v e c a n n e ' e r o u t w e i g h t h e
f e a r s ,

B e c a u t i o n e d t h e n m y M u s e , a n d s t i l l 9 r e t i r e d ;
60 N o r b e d e s p i s e d , a i m i n g t o b e a d m i r e d ;

C o n s c i o u s o f w a n t s , s t i l l w i t h c o n t r a c t e d w i
n g , T o s o m e f e w f r i e n d s , a n d t o t h y s o r r o w s
s i n g ; F o r g r o v e s o f l a u r e l 1 t h o u w e r t n e v e r m e a n t
;

B e d a r k e n o u g h t h y s h a d e s , a n d b e t h o u t h e r e
c o n t e n t .

1689? 1903

The Spleen²

*A Pindaric Poem*³

What art thou, Spleen, which ev'ry thing dost
ape?

Thou Proteus⁴ to a abused mankind,
Whom ever yet thy real cause could find,
Or fix thee to remain in one continued shape
.

5 Still varying thy perplexing form,
Now a Dead Sea thou'lt represent,
A calm of Stupid⁰ discontent, *unfeeling,*
unreasoning Then, dashing on the rocks wilt rage in
to a storm.

Tremblings sometimes thou dost appear,
in Dissolved into a panic fear;
On sleep intruding dost thy shadows spread,
Thy gloomy terrors round the silent bed,
And crowd with boding⁰ dreams the melancholy
head; *forboding* Or, when the midnight
hour is told,

15 And drooping lids thou still dost waking hold,
Thy fond delusions cheat⁰ the eyes, *deceive*
Before the mantic⁰ spectres dance, *antique;*
bizarre Unusual fires their pointed heads advance,
ce,

And airy phantoms rise.

20 Such was the monstrous vision seen,
When Brutus⁶ (now beneath his cares
opprest,

9. Here and in line 61, may mean both “always”
“spleen” and was praised by at least one contem-
and “motionless.”

porary physician for this accurate portrayal of the

1. The laurel was a symbol of poetic achievement.
symptoms of the disease.

2. A mysterious illness, believed to be connected

3. The Greek poet Pindar (ca. 522-ca. 438 **B.C.E.**)

with the organ of the same name, the effects of

was an early practitioner of the ode form. An ode

which seemed to be depression, hypochondria, ill-

is a lyric poem, usually with a serious subject and

temper, melancholy, and a variety of other nervous

a dignified style.

disorders. Although considered largely a disease of

4. In Greek mythology, a shape-changing sea god.

women, it sometimes afflicted men. It often

5. The Dead Sea, located on the border between

affected lovers and poets, and other eighteenth-

Israel and Jordan, is a salt lake, called “dead”

century poets examined it, notably Alexander

because it contains no visible plant or animal life.

Pope, in *The Rape of the Lock* (see p. 604), and

6. Before the Battle of Philippi (42 **B.C.E.**), the

Matthew Green, in *The Spleen* (see p. 645). In this

Roman politician Brutus saw the ghost of Caesar,

poem, Finch distinguishes between those who pre-

whom he had assassinated. Brutus was defeated at

tend to be affected by the disorder and those who

Philippi by Marc Anthony and Octavius, Caesar’s

really do suffer from it. Finch suffered from

nephew and eventual successor.

T H E S P L E E N / 5 5 9

And all Rome's fortunes rolling in his breast,

Before Philippi's latest field,

Before his fate did to Octavius lead)

25 Was vanquished by the Spleen.

Falsely, the mortal part we blame

Of our depressed, and pond'rous⁰ frame, *heavy, unwieldy*

Which, till the first degrading sin

Let thee,^o its dull attendant, in, *spleen*

30 Still with the other did comply,⁷

Nor clogged the active soul, disposed to fly,

And range the mansions of its native sky.

Nor, whilst in his own heaven he dwelt,

Whilst Man his paradise possessed,

35 His fertile Garden in the fragrant East,

And all united odors smelled,

No armed sweets,⁸ until thy reign,

Could shock the sense, or in the face

A flushed, unhandsome color place.

40 Now the jonquil⁰ o'ercomes the feeble brain; *daffodil*

We faint beneath the aromatic pain,

Till some offensive scent thy pow'rs appease,

And pleasure we resign⁰ for short and nauseous ease. *give up*

In ev'ry one thou dost possess,

45 New are thy motions,⁰ and thy dress: *effects*

Now in some grove a list'ning friend

Thy false suggestions must attend,

Thy whispered griefs, thy fancied sorrows hear,
 Breathed in a sigh, and witnessed⁰ by a tear; *confirmed*
 50 Whilst in the light and vulgar crowd,⁹
 Thy slaves, more clamorous and loud,
 By laughters unprovoked, thy influence too confess.
 In the imperious wife thou vapors¹ art,
 Which from o'erheated passions rise
 55 In clouds to the attractive² brain,
 Until descending thence again,
 Through the o'er-cast and show'ring eyes,
 Upon her husband's softened heart,
 He the disputed point must yield,
 60 Something resign of the contested field;
 Till lordly Man, born to imperial sway,
 Compounds⁰ for peace, to make that right away, *bargains*
 And Woman, arm'd with Spleen, does servilely obey.

7. I.e., before Adam and Eve's original sin let symptoms of "spleen," such as the two examples spleen into the human body, it (our "frame," denoting that follow: the "imperious wife" of line 53 and the uncorrupted, immortal body) complied "fool" of line 64.

with the soul ("the other"). Finch here revises traditional. A disorder associated with "spleen" and suppositional stories that see the mortal body as a clog posed to be caused by exhalations within the (hindrance) to the soul. organs of the body and characterized by depres-

8. Finch seems to imply that sweet odors bring on
sion, hypochondria, hysteria, and other nervous
the disorder and that foul odors can “appease” or
disorders.

lessen the symptoms.

2. In the medical sense of drawing something (the

9. A description of those (the frivolous and pre-
“passions,” in this case) to itself.

tentious or uncultivated) who counterfeit the

558 / ANNE FINCH, COUNTESS OF WINCHIL
LSEA

The fool, to imitate the wits,

65 Complains of thy pretended fits,

And dullness, born with him, would lay

Upon thy accidental sway;

Because, sometimes, thou dost presume

Into the ablest heads to come:

70 That, often, men of thoughts refined,

Impatient to unequal sense,

**Such slow returns, where they so much dispen
se, Retiring from the crowd, are to thy shades in
clined. 4**

O'er me alas! thou dost too much prevail:

75 I feel thy force, whilst I against thee rail;

**I feel my verse decay, and my cramped numbe
rs fail. *verses, poetry* Through thy black jaundic
e I all objects see, As dark and terrible as thee,**

**My lines decried, and my employment thou
gh t so An useless folly, or presumptuous fault:**

Whilst in the Muses' paths I stray,

W h i l s t i n t h e i r g r o v e s , a n d b y t h e i r s e c r e t s p r i n g s
M y h a n d d e l i g h t s t o t r a c e 0 u n u s u a l t h i n g s ,
w r i t e A n d d e v i a t e s f r o m t h e k n o w n a n d c o m
m o n w a y ; 8 5 N o r w i l l i n f a d i n g s i l k s c o m p o s e
F a i n t l y t h ' i n i m i t a b l e r o s e ,
F i l l u p a n i l l - d r a w n b i r d , o r p a i n t o n g l a s s 6
T h e s o v ' r e i g n ' s b l u r r e d a n d u n d i s t i n g u i s h e d f a
c e , T h e t h r e a t ' n i n g a n g e l , a n d t h e s p e a k i n
g a s s . 7
9 0 P a t r o n t h o u a r t t o e v ' r y g r o s s 0 a b u s e , f l a g r a n t T
h e s u l l e n h u s b a n d ' s f e i g n e d e x c u s e ,
W h e n t h e i l l h u m o r w i t h h i s w i f e h e s p e n d s , 0
e x h a u s t s A n d b e a r s r e c r u i t e d 0 w i t , a n d s p i r i t s 0 t o h
i s s t r e n g t h e n e d / c h e e r f u l n e s s f r i e n d s .
T h e s o n o f B a c c h u s 8 p l e a d s t h y p o w ' r ,
9 5 A s t o t h e g l a s s h e S t i l l 0 r e p a i r s , 0 c o n t i n u a l l y / r e t u r n s t o
P r e t e n d s b u t t o r e m o v e t h y c a r e s ,
S n a t c h f r o m t h y s h a d e s o n e g a y a n d s m i l i n g
h o u r , A n d d r o w n t h y k i n g d o m i n a p u r p l e
s h o w ' r . 9
W h e n t h e C o q u e t t e , 1 w h o m e v ' r y f o o l a d m i r
e s , 1 0 0 W o u l d i n v a r i e t y b e f a i r ,

3. I.e., would blame.

lical story of the prophet Balaam and his ass. Intent

4. According to Robert Burton's *Anatomy of Mel-*
ancholy (1621), love of learning could be a cause
 commands of God until he is rebuked by his ass and
 of "spleen."

threatened by an angel of the Lord (Numbers

5. The nine Greek sister goddesses believed to be

22.21-25).

sources of inspiration for the arts. Originally they

8. Bacchus is the Roman god of wine, sometimes
were nymphs of wells or springs, which inspired
called the “drunken god”; thus “Son of Bacchus”
those who drank from them and near which they
is one who indulges or overindulges in drink.

were worshipped.

9. I.e., in wine or drink.

6. Acceptable artistic pursuits for women were

1. A flirtatious woman who uses arts to gain the
embroidery, painting, and tapestry making. *Inimi-*
admiration and affection of men for the gratifica-
table: surpassing or defying imitation.

tion of vanity or desire for conquest. A type much

7. The subjects of such art (see previous note): the
commented on and satirized during the Restora-
“sov’ reign” at this time would have been William
tion.

of Orange (1650-1702); line 89 refers to the bib-

T H E S P L E E N / 5 6 1

And, changing hastily the scene,

From light, impertinent, and vain,

Assumes a soft, a melancholy air,

And of her eyes rebates⁰ the wand’ring fires, *diminishes*

105 The careless posture, and the head reclined,

The thoughtful, and composed face,

Proclaiming the withdrawn, the absent mind,

Allows the Fop² more liberty to gaze,
Who gently for the tender cause inquires;
no The cause, indeed, is a defect in sense,
Yet is the Spleen alleged,⁰ and still the dull pretence. *blamed*
But these are thy fantastic⁰ harms, *imaginary*
The tricks of thy pernicious stage,
Which do the weaker sort engage;
115 Worse are the dire effects of thy more pow'rful charms.
By thee Religion, all we know,
That should enlighten here below,
Is veiled in darkness, and perplexed
With anxious doubts, with endless scruples⁰ vexed,
uncertainties
120 And some restraint implied from each perverted text.³
Whilst touch not, taste not, what is freely giv'n,
Is but thy niggard⁰ voice, disgracing bounteous heav'n.⁴
miserly
From speech restrained, by thy deceits abused,
To deserts banished, or in cells secluded,
125 Mistaken vot'ries⁰ to the pow'rs divine, *devout*
worshippers
Whilst they a purer sacrifice design,
Do but the Spleen obey, and worship at thy shrine.
In vain to chase thee ev'ry art we try,
In vain all remedies apply,
130 In vain the Indian leaf infuse, *tea*
Or the parched Eastern berry⁰ bruise; *coffee*
Some pass, in vain, those bounds, and nobler liquors use.
Now harmony, in vain, we bring,

Inspire the flute, and touch the string.
 135 From harmony no help is had;
 Music but soothes thee, if too sweetly sad,
 And if too light, but turns thee gaily mad.
 Though the physicians greatest gains,
 Although his growing wealth he sees
 140 Daily increased by ladies' fees,
 Yet dost thou baffle all his studious pains.
 Not skillful Lower⁵ thy source could find,
 Or through the well-dissected body trace
 The secret, the mysterious ways,
 145 By which thou dost surprise, and prey upon the mind.

2. A fool or dandy; one who is foolishly attentive
 to his attentions and manners; another type satir-
 ically harshly repressive.
 rized during the Restoration.

5. Richard Lower (1631 — 1691), an English phy-
 3. I.e, some prohibition (“restraint”) inferred from
 sician noted for his research in anatomy and phys-
 misreadings of biblical texts.
 iology; author of *Treatise on the Heart* (1669).

4. Puritan zeal was considered another manifes-

558 / ANNE FINCH, COUNTESS OF WINCHILSEA

Though in the search, too deep for humane thought,
 With unsuccessful toil he wrought,⁰ *worked*
 ‘Till thinking thee to’ve caught, himself by thee was caught,

Retained thy pris'ner, thy acknowledged slave,
And sunk beneath thy chain to a lamented grave.

1701, 1713

Adam Posed⁶

Could our first father, at his toilsome plow,
Thorns in his path, and labor on his brow,
Clothed only in a rude, unpolished skin,
Could he a vain fantastic nymph⁷ have seen,
⁵ In all her airs, in all her antic⁰ graces, *bizarre*
Her various fashions, and more various faces;
How had it posed that skill, which late assigned
Just appellations to each several kind!⁸
A right idea of the sight to frame;
io T'have guessed from what new element⁹ she came;
T'have hit the wav'ring form,¹ or giv'n this thing a name.

1709, 1713

To Death

O King of terrors, whose unbounded sway
All that have life must certainly obey;
The King, the Priest, the Prophet, all are thine,
Nor would ev'n God (in flesh) thy stroke decline.²
⁵ My name is on thy roll, and sure I must
Increase thy gloomy kingdom in the dust.
My soul at this no apprehension feels,
But trembles at thy swords, thy racks, thy wheels;³
Thy scorching fevers, which distract the sense,
io And snatch us raving, unprepared, from hence;
At thy contagious darts, that wound the heads

Of weeping friends, who wait at dying beds.

Spare these, and let thy time be when it will;

6. Perplexed.

8. According to Genesis 2.19, Adam named

7. “Fantastic” may mean “capricious” or “foppish
 (“assign’d / just appellations to”) all the animals.

in attire,” but may also have the sense of “imagi-

9. I.e., she is not created from one of the four ele-
nary” or “unreal.” “Nymph” is a conventional pas-
ments—earth, air, water, and fire—out of which
toral word for a young woman. The character is a
all things were believed to be composed.

coquette, or flirtatious young woman, a type much

1. I.e., to have accurately identified the nature of
commented on and satirized during the Restora-
her changing form.

tion. Attacks on artificiality and the use of cos-

2. I.e., Christ (God in his h u m a n incarnation) suf-
metics were common during the Renaissance and
fered death on the cross.

still popular during the Restoration.

3. Like “racks,” instruments of torture.

A N O C T U R N A L R E V E R I E / 5 6 3

My bus’ness is to die, and thine to kill.

15 Gently thy fatal scepter on me lay,

And take to thy cold arms, insensibly, thy prey.

1713

Friendship between Ephelia and Ardelia⁴

Eph. What Friendship is, Ardelia show.

Ard. 'Tis to love, as I love you.

Eph. This account, so short (tho' kind)

Suits not my inquiring mind.

Therefore farther now repeat:

What is Friendship when complete?

Ard. 'Tis to share all joy and grief;

'Tis to lend all due relief

From the tongue, the heart, the hand;

'Tis to mortgage house and land;

For a friend be sold a slave;

Tis to die upon a grave,

If a friend therein do lie.

Eph. This indeed, tho' carried high,⁵

This, tho' more than e'er was done

Underneath the rolling sun,

This has all been said before.

Can Ardelia say no more?

Ard. Words indeed no more can show:

But 'tis to love, as I love you.

1713

A Nocturnal Reverie

In such a night,⁶ when every louder wind

Is to its distant cavern safe confined;

And only gentle Zephyr⁷ fans his wings,

And lonely Philomel, still waking,⁸ sings;

⁵ Or from some tree, famed for the owl's delight,

She, hollowing⁰ clear, directs the wand'rer right: *crying out*

In such a night, when passing clouds give place,
Or thinly veil the heav'ns' mysterious face;

4. Ardelia is a conventional poetic name that

7. According to myth, Zephyr, the west wind, is
Finch sometimes used to refer to herself.

warm and mild. The four winds resided in caves.

5. I.e., expressed loudly or in high style; or, per-

8. I.e., ever wakeful; according to myth, Philomela
haps, highly esteemed.

was raped by her brother-in-law, Tereus, who then

6. This phrase, repeated twice below, recalls the
tore out her tongue so that she could not speak.

same repeated phrase in the night scene that opens

She wove the story into a tapestry and sent it to
act 5 of Shakespeare's *Merchant of Venice*. Finch
her sister, who rescued her. She was later changed
also echoes many words from Milton's "Il Pensero-
into a nightingale while in flight from Tereus.
roso" (see p. 405).

558 / ANNE FINCH, COUNTESS OF WINCHILSEA

When in some river, overhung with green,

The waving moon and trembling leaves are seen;

When freshened grass now bears itself upright,

And makes cool banks to pleasing rest invite,

Whence springs the woodbind,⁰ and the bramble -rose,
honeysuckle

And where the sleepy cowslip sheltered grows;

Whilst now a paler hue the foxglove takes,

Yet checkers still with red the dusky brakes⁹
When scatter'd glow-worms,¹ but in twilight fine,
Shew trivial beauties, watch their hour to shine;²
Whilst Salisb'ry stands the test of every light,
In perfect charms, and perfect virtue bright:
When odors, which declined repelling day,³
Through temp'rate air uninterrupted stray;
When darkened groves their softest shadows wear,
And falling waters we distinctly hear;
When through the gloom more venerable⁴ shows
Some ancient fabric, awful⁵ in repose,
While sunburnt hills their swarthy looks conceal,
And swelling haycocks⁶ thicken up the vale:° *valley*
When the loosed horse now, as his pasture leads,
Comes slowly grazing through th' adjoining meads,⁰ *meadows*
Whose stealing pace, and lengthened shade we fear,
Till torn-up forage in his teeth we hear:
When nibbling sheep at large pursue their food,
And unmolested kine° re chew the cud; *cattle*
When curlews⁷ cry beneath the village walls,
And to her straggling brood the partridge calls;
Their shortlived jubilee the creatures keep,
Which but endures, whilst tyrant man does sleep;
When a sedate content the spirit feels,
And no fierce light disturbs, whilst it reveals;
But silent musings urge the mind to seek
Something, too high for syllables to speak;
Till the free soul to a composedness charmed,

Finding the elements of rage disarmed,
 O'er all below a solemn quiet grown,
 Joys in th' inferior world, and thinks it like her own:
 In such a night let me abroad remain,
 Till morning breaks, and all's confused again;
 Our cares, our toils, our clamors are renewed,
 Or pleasures, seldom reached, again pursued.

1713

9. Thickets; tall ferns or bracken. English cowslips

3. I.e., when the aromas (“odors”) of field and
 (line 13) have droopy yellow petals.

wood, which refused to come forth (“declined”)

1. Insects, (the females of) which emit a shining
 under the hot, “repelling” rays of the sun (“day”).
 green light from the abdomen.

4. Impressive or worthy of religious reverence.

2. I.e., show lesser beauties and—unlike the

5. May mean both awe-inspiring and causing fear
 countess of Salisbury, Anne Tufton, of the follow-
 or dread. *Fabric*: structure, i.e., building.

ing line—make the most of their limited opportu-

6. Conical piles of hay.

nities to shine.

7. A kind of shore bird, similar to a sandpiper.

T H E A N S W E R / 5 6 5

The Answer⁸

(To *Pope's* Impromptu)

Disarmed with so genteel an air,

The contest I give o'er;
Yet, Alexander, have a care,
And shock the sex no more.
5 We rule the world our life's whole race,
Men but assume that right;
First slaves to ev'ry tempting face,
Then martyrs to our spite.
You of one Orpheus⁹ sure have read,
10 Who would like you have writ
Had he in London town been bred,
And polished too his wit;
But he poor soul thought all was well,
And great should be his fame,
is When he had left his wife in hell,
And birds and beasts could tame.
Yet venturing then with scoffing rhymes
The women to incense,
Resenting heroines of those times
20 Soon punished his offense.
And as the Hebrus rolled his skull,
And harp besmeared with blood,
They clashing as the waves grew full,
Still harmonized the flood.
25 But you our follies gently treat,
And spin so fine the thread,
You need not fear his awkward fate,
The lock¹ won't cost the head.
Our admiration you command

30 For all that's gone before;
What next we look for at your hand
Can only raise it more.

Yet sooth⁰ the ladies I advise *truly*
(As me too pride has wrought)

35 We're born to wit, but to be wise
By admonitions taught.

1 7 1 7

8. Finch and Alexander Pope engaged in a dispute of hell on condition that he not look back to see over some lines in his *Rape of the Lock* that depicted her following. When they were nearly out of hell, recited female wits (see 4 . 5 9 - 6 2 [p. 616]). He he glanced over his shoulder and she returned to responded to her complaint in a short poem, the ranks of the dead. Inconsolable, Orpheus never "Impromptu," subtitled "To Lady Winchelsea" (see again took pleasure in women, but continued to p. 637), in which he complimented her poetic talent, enchanting even the stones and trees. The ent while slighting the talent of earlier women Maenads, frenzied devotees of the god Dionysus, poets. This poem is her response.

hated Orpheus (perhaps because of his lack of

9. According to Greek mythology, Orpheus, interest in them), and one day they tore him to famed for singing and playing the lyre, was able to pieces, casting his head and lyre into the river

charm birds and animals with his music. W h e n his
Hebros. The severed head continued to sing as it
wife, Eurydice, died, he traveled to the under-
floated down the river.

world, charmed the infernal gods with his singing,

1. I.e., *The Rape of the Lock*; see note 8 above.

and was granted permission to lead Eurydice out

5 6 6 / M A T T H E W P R I O R

On Myself

Good Heav'n, I thank thee, since it was designed

I should be framed, but of the weaker kind,

That yet, my Soul, is rescued from the love

Of all those trifles which their passions move.

5 Pleasures and praise and plenty have with me

But^o their just value. If allowed they be, *only*

Freely, and thankfully as much I taste,

As will not reason or religion waste.

If they're denied, I on my self can live,

10 And slight^o those aids unequal chance does give. *disdain*

When in the sun, my wings can be displayed,

And, in retirement, I can bless the shade.

1903

M A T T H E W P R I O R

1664-1721

A Fable

In /Esop's tales an honest wretch we find,

Whose years and comforts equally declined;

He in two wives had two domestic ills,

For different age they had, and different wills;
5 One plucked his black hairs out, and one his gray,
The man for quietness did both obey,
Till all his parish saw his head quite bare,
And thought he wanted brains as well as hair.

The Moral

The parties, henpecked William,¹ are thy wives,
10 The hairs they pluck are thy prerogatives;²
Tories thy person hate, the Whigs thy power,³
Though much thou yieldest, still they tug for more,
Till this poor man and thou alike are shown,
He without hair, and thou without a crown.

1703

1. King William III (1650-1702), who ruled

3. The Tories and Whigs were the two main polit-
England from 1689 until his death.

ical parties in seventeenth- and eighteenth-century

2. The rights of the king, previously not subject to
England.

parliamentary restriction.

T o A L A D Y / 5 6 7

To a Lady: She Refusing to Continue a Dispute with Me,
and Leaving Me in the Argument

i

Spare, gen'rous victor, spare the slave,

Who did unequal war pursue;

That more than triumph he might have,

In being overcome by you.

2

5 In the dispute whate'er I said,
My heart was by my tongue belied;
And in my looks you might have read,
How much I argued on your side.

3

You, far from danger as from fear,
io Might have sustained an open fight:
For seldom your opinions err;
Your eyes are always in the right.

4

Why, fair one, would you not rely
On reason's force with beauty's joined?
15 Could I their prevalence deny;
I must at once be deaf and blind.

5

Alas! not hoping to subdue,
I only to the fight aspired:
To keep the beauteous foe in view
20 Was all the glory I desired.

6

But she, howe'er of vict'ry sure,
Contemns the wreath too long delayed;
And, armed with more immediate pow'r,
Calls cruel silence to her aid.

7

25 Deeper to wound, she shuns the fight:
She drops her arms, to gain the field:

Secures her conquest by her flight;
And triumphs, when she seems to yield.

8

So when the Parthian⁵ turned his steed,
30 And from the hostile camp withdrew;

4. A wreath of laurel or other leaves was a symbol 5. A people of western Asia, whose cavalry fought of victory. in the manner Prior describes.

5 6 8 / J O N A T H A N S W I F T

W i t h c r u e l s k i l l t h e b a c k w a r d r e e d 0 *arrow*
H e s e n t ; a n d a s h e f l e d , h e s l e w .

1718

An Ode

T h e m e r c h a n t , t o s e c u r e h i s t r e a s u r e ,
C o n v e y s i t i n a b o r r o w e d n a m e ;
E u p h e l i a s e r v e s t o g r a c e m y m e a s u r e , 6
B u t C l o e i s m y r e a l f l a m e .

5 M y s o f t e s t v e r s e , m y d a r l i n g l y r e ,
U p o n E u p h e l i a ' s t o i l e t 0 l a y ; *dressing table*
W h e n C l o e n o t e d h e r d e s i r e
T h a t I s h o u l d s i n g , t h a t I s h o u l d p l a y .

M y l y r e I t u n e , m y v o i c e I r a i s e ,
10 B u t w i t h m y n u m b e r s 0 m i x m y s i g h s ; *songs*
A n d w h i l s t I s i n g E u p h e l i a ' s p r a i s e ,
I f i x m y s o u l o n C l o e ' s e y e s .

F a i r C l o e b l u s h e d ; E u p h e l i a f r o w n e d ;
I s u n g a n d g a z e d ; I p l a y e d a n d t r e m b l e d ;
15 A n d V e n u s t o t h e L o v e s a r o u n d 7
R e m a r k e d h o w i l l w e a l l d i s s e m b l e d .

1718

JONATHAN SWIFT

1667-1745

A Description of the Morning

**N o w h a r d l y h e r e a n d t h e r e a h a c k n e y - c o a c h
1**

**A p p e a r i n g , s h o w e d t h e r u d d y m o r n ' s a p p r o
a c h .**

N o w B e t t y f r o m h e r m a s t e r ' s b e d h a d f l o w n ,

A n d s o f t l y s t o l e t o d i s c o m p o s e h e r o w n ;

5 T h e s l i p - s h o d ' p r e n t i c e f r o m h i s m a s t e r ' s d o o r

**H a d p a r e d t h e d i r t a n d s p r i n k l e d r o u n d t h e f l o
o r .**

N o w M o l l ² h a d w h i r l e d h e r m o p w i t h d e x t r o

**u s a i r s , P r e p a r e d t o s c r u b t h e e n t r y a n d t h e
s t a i r s .**

T h e y o u t h w i t h b r o o m y s t u m p s b e g a n t o

t r a c e 6. I.e., Euphelia adorns or adds grace to my

context, attractive young women.

poetry, or is the name used in my poetry.

1. A horse-drawn carriage, for hire.

7. Venus is the Greek goddess of love and beauty.

2. A diminutive form of Mary; a common name

Her attendant "Loves" are, in mythology, the

for a servant.

Graces, givers of charm and beauty; in the social

A DESCRIPTION OF A CITY SHOWER / 569

**10 T h e k e n n e l - e d g e , 3 w h e r e w h e e l s h a d w o
r n t h e p l a c e .**

The small-coalman⁴ was heard with cadence deep,
Till drowned in shriller notes of chimney-sweep:
Duns⁰ at his lordship's gate began to meet;
bill collectors And brick dust Moll¹⁵ had screamed through half the street.

15 The turnkey⁰ now his flock returning sees,
jailer Duly let out a-night to steal for fees:⁶

The watchful bailiffs⁷ take their silent stands,
And schoolboys lag with satchels in their hands.

1709

A Description of a City Shower

Careful observers may foretell the hour

(By sure prognostics) when to dread a shower:

While rain depends,⁰ the pensive cat gives o'er
impends Her frolics, and pursues her tail no more.

5 Returning home at night, you'll find the sink⁰
sewer Strike your offended sense with double
stink.

If you be wise, then go not far to dine;

You'll spend in coach hire more than save in wine.

A coming shower your shooting corns presage,
^{io} Old aches throb, your hollow tooth will rage.

Sauntering in coffeehouse is Dulman⁰ seen
; *dull man* Hedamns the climate and complain
sof spleen.⁰ *melancholy* Meanwhile the South
,⁰ rising with dabbled⁰ wings, *a wind / spattered*
A sable cloud athwart the welkin⁰ flings, *sky* 15
That will edmore liquor than it could contain,
And, like a drunkard, gives it up again.

Brisk Susan whips her linen from the rope,

While the first drizzling shower is borne aslope
: 0 *slanting* Such is that sprinkling which some care
e less quean 0 *wench* 20 Flirts 0 on you from her mop,
but not so clean: *flicks* You fly, invoke the
gods; then turning, stop

To rail; she singing, still whirls on her mop.

Not yet the dust had shunned the unequal
strife, But, aided by the wind, fought still for
life,

25 And wafted with its foe by violent gust,

'Twas doubtful which was rain and which was
dust.

Ah! where must need y poet seek for aid,

When dust and rain at once his coat invade?

Sole coat, where dust cemented by the rain

30 Erects then a p, 8 and leaves a mingled stain.

Now in contiguous drops the flood comes down,
Threatening with deluge this devoted 0
town. *doomed* 3. Curb of the road. their jailers, who could
charge fees for allowing

4. Seller of charcoal. certain privileges, such as better
accommodations.

5. A woman selling powdered brick (used for 7. I.e., sheriff's
deputies.

cleaning knives). 8. I.e., makes the fibers on the surface of the
fab-

6. Prisoners were allowed out to get money to pay ric stand up
stiffly.

570 / JONATHAN SWIFT

To shops in crowds the dagged 0 females fly,
mud-spattered Pretend to cheapen 0 goods, but
nothing buy. *bargain for* 35 The Templars spruc

e, 9 while every spout's a broach, 0 *running* Stays till
'tis fair, yet seems to call a coach.

The tucked-up sempstress 0 walks with hasty
strides, *seamstress* While streams run down her
oiled umbrella's sides.

Here various kinds, by various fortunes led,

40 Commence acquaintance underneath a
shed.

Triumphant Tories and desponding Whigs
1

Forget their feuds, and join to save their wigs.

Boxed in a chair 0 the beau impatient sits, *sedan
chair* While spouts run clattering o'er the roof by
its, 45 And ever and anon with frightful din

The leather 2 sounds; he trembles from within.

So when Troy chairmen bore the wooden steed,

Pregnant with Greeks impatient to be freed
(Those bully Greeks, who, as the moderns
do,

50 Instead of paying chairmen, run them
through), Laocoon struck the outside with
his spear,

And each imprisoned hero quaked for fear.³

Now from all parts the swelling kennels 0 flow,
gutters And bear their trophies with them as
they go: 55 Filth of all hues and odors seem to tell

What street they sailed from, by their sight and
smell.

They, as each torrent drives with rapid force,

From Smithfield or St. Pulchre's shape their
course, And in huge confluence joined at Sn

ow Hill ridge, 60 Fall from the conduit prone 0 to
Holborn Bridge.4 downward Sweepings from but
chers ' stalls, dung, guts, and blood, Drown
d puppies, stinking sprats,0 all drenched in m
ud, f herring Dead cats, and turnip tops, com e t u m b
ling down the flood. J

1710

Stella's Birthday

March 13, 17275

This day, whatever the fates decree,

Shall still0 be kept with joy by me: *always*

This day then, let us not be told

That you are sick, and I grown old,

5 Nor think on our approaching ills,

And talk of spectacles and pills;

Tomorrow will be time enough

9. The dapper law student.

4. The offal from the Smithfield cattle market

1. The Tories and Whigs were the two main polit-
would be swept toward the Fleet Ditch, spanned
ical parties in seventeenth- and eighteenth-century
by Holborn Bridge, where it would merge with
England; the Tories (Swift's party) had recently
garbage floating down the Snow Hill stream. *St.*
assumed power.

Pulchre's: St. Sepulchre's Church, in Holborn.

2. Leather roof of the sedan chair.

5. The forty-sixth birthday of Swift's devoted com-

3. In Virgil's *Aeneid* 2, Laocoon so struck the side
panion and protegee, Esther Johnson.

of the Trojan horse, frightening the Greeks within.

STELLA 'S BIRTHDAY / 571

To hear such mortifying⁰ stuff. *depressing*

Yet since from reason may be brought

10 A better and more pleasing thought,

Which can in spite of all decays

Support a few remaining days:

From not the gravest of divines,

Accept for once some serious lines.

15 Although we now can form no more

Long schemes of life, as heretofore;

Yet you, while time is running fast,

Can look with joy on what is past.

Were future happiness and pain

20 A mere contrivance of the brain,

As atheists argue, to entice

And fit their proselytes⁰ for vice *converts*

(The only comfort they propose,

To have companions in their woes),

25 Grant this the case, yet sure 'tis hard

That virtue, styled its own reward,

And by all sages understood

To be the chief of human good,

Should acting, die, nor leave behind

30 Some lasting pleasure in the mind,

Which, by remembrance, will assuage

Grief, sickness, poverty, and age;

And strongly shoot a radiant dart,

To shine through life's declining part.
35 Say, Stella, feel you no content,
Reflecting on a life well spent?
Your skillful hand employed to save
Despairing wretches from the grave;
And then supporting from your store
40 Those whom you dragged from death before
(So Providence on mortals waits,
Preserving what it first creates);
Your generous boldness to defend
An innocent and absent friend;
45 That courage which can make you just,
To merit humbled in the dust:
The detestation you express
For vice in all its glittering dress:
That patience under torturing pain,
50 Where stubborn stoics⁶ would complain.
Must these like empty shadows pass,
Or forms reflected from a glass?
Or mere chimeras⁰ in the mind, *wild fancies*
That fly and leave no marks behind?
55 Does not the body thrive and grow
By food of twenty years ago?
And, had it not been still supplied,
It must a thousand times have died.
6. Those who practice repression of emotion, indifference to
pleasure and pain, and patient endurance.

Then how with reason can maintain
60 That no effects of food remain?
And is not virtue in mankind
The nutriment that feeds the mind?
Upheld by each good action past,
And still continued by the last:
65 Then how with reason can pretend
That all effects of virtue end?
Believe me, Stella, when you show
That true contempt for things below,
Nor prize your life for other ends
70 Than merely to oblige your friends,
Your former actions claim their part,
And joint to fortify your heart.
For virtue in her daily race,
Like Janus, 7 bears a double face,
75 Looks back with joy where she has gone,
And therefore goes with courage on.
She at your sickly couch will wait,
And guide you to some better state.
O then, whatever Heaven intends,
so Take pity on your pitying friends;
Nor let your ills affect your mind,
To fancy they can be unkind.
Me, surely me, you ought to spare,
Who gladly would your sufferings share;
85 Or give my scrap of life to you,
And think it far beneath your due;

You, to whose care so oft I owe

That I'm alive to tell you so.

1727

The Lady's Dressing Room

Five hours, (and who can do it less in?)

By haughty Celia⁸ spent in dressing;

The goddess from her chamber issues,

Arrayed in lace, brocades and tissues.⁹

5 Strephon, who found the room was void,

And Betty otherwise employed,

Stole in, and took a strict survey,

Of all the litter as it lay;

Whereof, to make the matter clear,

io An inventory follows here.

And first a dirty smock appeared,

Beneath the armpits well besmeared.

7. The Roman god of doors, with opposed faces, poetic names often used in pastoral poetry.

one looking forward, the other back. 9. Fine, lightweight fabric. *Brocades*: a rich silk 8. Celia and Strephon (line 5) are conventional fabric with raised patterns in gold and silver.

THE LADY'S DRESSING ROOM / 573

Strephon, the rogue, displayed it wide,

And turned it round on every side.

15 On such a point few words are best,

And Strephon bids us guess the rest,

But swear show damnably the men lie,

In calling Celia sweet and cleanly.

Now listen while he next produces

20 The various combs for various uses,
Filled up with dirt so closely fixt,
No brush could force away betwixt.
A paste of composition rare,
Sweat, dandruff, powder, lead¹ and hair;
25 A forehead cloth with oil upon 't
To smooth the wrinkles on her front;⁰ brow
Here alum flower to stop the steams,²
Exhaled from sour unsavory streams,
The renight-gloves made of Tripsy's hide,
30 Bequeathed by Tripsy when she died,
With puppy water,³ beauty's help
Distilled from Tripsy's darling whelp;
Here gallypots⁴ and vials placed,
Some filled with washes, some with paste,
35 Some with pomatum, paints and slops,
And ointments good for scabby chops.⁵
Hard by a filthy basin stands,
Fouled with the scouring of her hands;
The basin takes whatever comes
40 The scrapings of her teeth and gums,
A nasty compound of all hues,
For hereshespits, and hereshespews.
But oh! it turned poor Strephon's bowels,
When he beheld and smelled the towels,
45 Begummed, bemattered, and beslimed
With dirt, and sweat, and earwax grimed.
No object Strephon's eyes escapes,

**H e r e p e t t i c o a t s i n f r o w z y h e a p s ; i l l - s m e l l i n g ,
u n k e m p t N o r b e t h e h a n d k e r c h i e f s f o r g o t**

50 A l l v a r n i s h e d o ' e r w i t h s n u f f a n d s n o t .

T h e s t o c k i n g s w h y s h o u l d I e x p o s e ,

S t a i n e d w i t h t h e m a r k s o f s t i n k i n g t o e s ;

O r g r e a s y c o i f s a n d p i n n e r s r e e k i n g ,

W h i c h C e l i a s l e p t a t l e a s t a w e e k i n ?

55 A p a i r o f t w e e z e r s n e x t h e f o u n d

T o p l u c k h e r b r o w s i n a r c h e s r o u n d ,

O r h a i r s t h a t s i n k t h e f o r e h e a d l o w ,

O r o n h e r c h i n l i k e b r i s t l e s g r o w .

1. Then used to make hair glossy.

5. Painful fissures or cracks in the skin. *Washes:*

2. Vapors or exhalations produced as an excretion liquid cosmetic for the complexion. *Paste:* either

of the body, e.g., hot breath, perspiration, or the

medicinal or cosmetic compound. *Pomatum:*

infectious effluvium of a disease. *Alum flower:*

scented ointment for application to the skin.

powdered mineral salt used in medicine.

Paints: rouges. *Slops:* refuse liquid.

3. The urine of a puppy, used as a cosmetic.

6. Powdered tobacco inhaled through the nostrils.

4. Small ceramic pots, often containers for medi-

7. *Coifs and pinnars:* types of headwear.

cine.

574 / J O N A T H A N S W I F T

T h e v i r t u e s w e m u s t n o t l e t p a s s ,

60 Of Celia's magnifying glass.

When frightened Strepson cast his eye on't

It showed visage of a giant. *face*

A glass that can to sight disclose,

The smallest worm in Celia's nose,

65 And faithfully direct her nail

To squeeze it out from head to tail;

For catch it nicely by the head,

It must come out alive or dead.

Why Strepson will you tell the rest?

70 And must you needs describe the chest? 0

commode That careless wench! no creature w
arner To move it out from yonder corner;

But leave it standing full in sight

For you to exercise your spite.

75 In vain the workman showed his wit

With rings and hinges counterfeit

To make it seem in this disguise

A cabinet to vulgar eyes;

For Strepson ventured to look in,

so Resolved to go through thick and thin;

He lifts the lid, there needs no more,

He smelled it all the time before.

As from within Pandora's box,

When Epimetheus op'd the locks,

85 As sudden universal crew

Of human evils upwards flew;

He still was comforted to find

That Hope at last remained behind;

S o S t r e p h o n l i f t i n g u p t h e l i d ,
90 T o v i e w w h a t i n t h e c h e s t w a s h i d .
T h e v a p o r s f l e w f r o m o u t t h e e v e n t ,
B u t S t r e p h o n c a u t i o u s n e v e r m e a n t
T h e b o t t o m o f t h e p a n o t t o g r o p e , *vessel*
A n d f o u l h i s h a n d s i n s e a r c h o f H o p e .
95 O n e v e r m a y s u c h v i l e m a c h i n e
B e o n c e i n C e l i a ' s c h a m b e r s e e n !
O m a y s h e b e t t e r l e a r n t o k e e p
T h o s e " s e c r e t s o f t h e h o a r y d e e p ! " 9
A s m u t t o n c u t l e t s , p r i m e o f m e a t ,
100 W h i c h t h o u g h w i t h a r t y o u s a l t a n d b e a t
A s l a w s o f c o o k e r y r e q u i r e ,
A n d t o a s t t h e m a t t h e c l e a r e s t f i r e ;
I f f r o m a d o w n t h e h o p e f u l c h o p s
T h e f a t u p o n a c i n d e r d r o p s ,
105 T o s t i n k i n g s m o k e i t t u r n s t h e f l a m e
P o i s ' n i n g t h e f l e s h f r o m w h e n c e i t c a m e , 8 .
 In Greek mythology, brother of Prometheus

9. From Milton's *Paradise Lost* (2.891), a poetic
 and husband of Pandora. Created by the gods as
 reference to the ocean; Swift puns on "hoary,"
 the first h u m a n woman, Pandora brought with her
 which means ancient but may also mean corrupt,
 to Earth a box containing all h u m a n ills, which,
 and perhaps also on *whore* and on the homonym,
 when it was opened, were released into the world,
hory, meaning filthy.

leaving only Hope behind.

A B E A U T I F U L Y O U N G N Y M P H G O I N G T O
B E D / 5 7 5

And up exhales a greasy stench,

For which you curse the careless wench;

So things, which m u s t not be expressed,

110 W h e n p l u m p e d 0 into the reeking chest, *dropped*

S e n d up an excremental smell

To taint the parts from w h e n c e they fell.

T h e petticoats and gown p e r f u m e ,

W h i c h waft a stink round every room,

lis T h u s finishing his grand survey,

Disgusted Strephon stole away

R e p e a t i n g in his a m o r o u s fits,

Oh! Celia, Celia, Celia shits!

But V e n g e a n c e , goddess never sleeping

120 S o o n punishe d Strepho n for his peeping ;

His foul imagination links

E a c h D a m e he sees with all her stinks:

And, if unsavory odors fly,

Conceives a lady standing by:

125 All w o m e n his description fits,

And both ideas j u m p like wits:1

By vicious fancy coupled fast,

And still appearing in contrast.

I pity wretched Strephon blind

iso To all the c h a r m s of f e m a l e kind;

S h o u l d I the q u e e n of love² refuse,

B e c a u s e she rose from stinking ooze?
To him that looks behind the scene,
Satira's but s o m e pocky queen.³
135 W h e n Celia in her glory shows,
If Strephon would but stop his nose
(Who now so impiously b l a s p h e m e s
Her ointments, daubs, and paints and c r e a m s ,
Her w a s h e s , slops, and every clout,^{0 rag}
HO With which he m a k e s so foul a rout⁰)^{fuss}
He soon would learn to think like me,
And bless his ravished sight to see
S u c h order from c o n f u s i o n sprung,
S u c h gaudy tulips raised f r o m dung.
1730

A Beautiful Young Nymph Going to Bed
Corinna, pride of Drury-Lane⁴

For w h o m no shepherd sighs in vain;
Never did Covent G a r d e n ⁵ boast

*1. fumy: match; from the proverbial phrase good
 ably Statira, one of the wives of Alexander the
 wits jump, i.e., great minds think alike.*

Great in Nathaniel Lee's tragedy *Rival Queens*

2. Aphrodite, or Venus, the classical goddess often
 (1677).

depicted as rising out of the sea.

4. A London street notorious for prostitutes.

3. Whore, here infected with pox (usually syphi-

5. A flashy, vulgar district in London.

lis), or marked with pocks or pustules. *Satira*: prob-

5 7 6 / J O N A T H A N S W I F T

So bright a battered, strolling toast;

5 No drunken rake to pick her up,

No cellar where on tick⁰ to sup; *credit*

Returning at the midnight hour;

Four stories climbing to her bow'r;⁰ *room*,

Then, seated on a three-legged chair,⁶

10 Takes off her artificial hair:

Now, picking out a crystal eye,

She wipes it clean, and lays it by.

Her eye-brows from a mouse's hide,

Stuck on with art on either side,

15 Pulls off with care, and first displays 'em,

Then in a play-book smoothly lays 'em.

Now dextrously her plumpers⁷ draws,

That serve to fill her hollow jaws.

Untwists a wire; and from her gums

20 A set of teeth completely comes.

Pulls out the rags contrived to prop

Her flabby dugs⁰ and down they drop. *breasts*

Proceeding on, the lovely goddess

Unlaces next her steel-ribbed bodice;

25 Which by the operator's skill,

Press down the lumps, the hollows fill,

Up goes her hand, and off she slips

The bolsters that supply her hips.

With gentlest touch, she next explores

30 Her shankers,⁸ issues, running sores,
 Effects of many a sad disaster;
 And then to each applies a plaister.⁰ *plaster for face*
 But must, before she goes to bed,
 Rub off the dawbs of white and red;
 35 And smooth the furrows in her front⁰ *forehead*
 With greasy paper stuck upon't.
 She takes a bolus⁹ ere she sleeps;
 And then between two blankets creeps.
 With pains of love tormented lies;
 40 Or if she chance to close her eyes,
 Of Bridewell and the Compter¹ dreams,
 And feels the lash, and faintly screams;
 Or, by a faithless bully⁰ drawn, *pimp*
 At some hedge-tavern⁰ lies in pawn; *poor, squalid inn*
 45 Or to Jamaica seems transported,²
 Alone, and by no planter courted;
 Or, near Fleet-Ditch's³ oozy brinks,
 Surrounded with a hundred stinks,
 Belated, seems on watch to lie,
 50 And snap some cully⁰ passing by; *simpleton*
 6. I.e., one missing a leg.
 1. Pronounced *counter*; a city prison. Bridewell
 7. Small, light balls sometimes carried in the
 was a prison for vagrant women and prostitutes.
 mouth for filling out hollow cheeks.
 2. Some convicts were shipped to Jamaica and
 8. Chancres: ulcers resulting from venereal dis-

other West Indian sites, although the majority
ease.

were transported to the North American colonies.

9. A larger than ordinary pill.

3. An open sewer in London.

VERSES ON THE DEATH OF DR. SWIFT, D.
S. P. D. / 577

Or, struck with fear, her fancy runs

On watchmen, constables and duns,^o *debt collectors*

From whom she meets with frequent rubs;^o *unpleasant
encounters*

But, never from religious clubs;⁴

55 Whose favor she is sure to find,

Because she pays 'em all in kind.

Corinna wakes. A dreadful sight!

Behold the ruins of the night!

A wicked rat her plaster stole,

60 Half eat, and dragged it to his hole.

The crystal eye, alas, was missed;

And puss had on her plumpers pissed.

A pigeon picked her issue-peas;

And Shock⁵ her tresses⁰ filled with fleas. *artificial hair*

65 The nymph, tho' in this mangled plight,

Must ev'ry morn her limbs unite.

But how shall I describe her arts

To recollect the scattered parts?

Or shew the anguish, toil, and pain,

70 Of gath'ring up herself again?

The bashful muse^o will never bear *source of inspiration*

In such a scene to interfere.

Corinna in the morning dizen'd,0 *dressed up*

Who sees, will spew; who smells, be poison'd.

1 7 3 1

Verses on the Death of Dr. Swift, D.S.P.D.6

Occasioned by Reading a Maxim in Rochefoucauld7

*Dans l'adversite de nos meilleurs amis nous trouvons toujours
quelque chose, qui ne nous deplait pas.*

“In the adversity of our best friends, we find something that
does

not displease us.”

As Rochefoucauld his maxims drew

From nature, I believe 'em true:

They argue0 no corrupted mind *suggest*

4. Groups of religious dissenters or enthusiasts
of Swift, most notably Alexander Pope, King man-
who were often suspected of hypocrisy.

aged to offend the author while thinking to do him

5. Shough, the name for a kind of lapdog, became
a favor. “Much dissatisfied” with the censored ver-

“Shock” in Alexander Pope’s *Rape of the Lock*

sion, Swift arranged for the poem and notes to be

1.115 (see p. 607). *Issue-peas*: peas or other small,

printed in Dublin; this version, although much

globular bodies placed in surgical incisions to con-

longer, still had many blanks in lieu of proper

tinue the irritation that made a discharge.

names. Swift correctly foresaw that the poem

6. The initials signify “Dean of St. Patrick’s, Dub-
would prove controversial, both in its attacks on
lin.” Evidently intending this poem to be published
Queen Caroline and her prime minister, Robert
only after his death, Swift allowed some of his
Walpole, and in its praise of leading political oppo-
friends to see the (changing) text in manuscript; he
nents of Walpole such as William Pulteney and
completed explanatory notes for it in 1732. We
Henry St. John, Lord Viscount Bolingbroke, to
have included most of these notes below. They
whom Pope had written his “Essay on Man” (see
were omitted, along with over 150 lines deemed
p. 623) and whom Swift praises in his note to line
potentially offensive, in the version of the poem
196.

that one of Swift’s friends, Dr. William King,

7. Francois de la Rochefoucauld (1613-1680),
arranged to have printed in London in 1739. Edit-
writer of witty, cynical maxims.

ing the poem with the help of other English friends

578 / JONATHAN SWIFT

In him; the fault is in mankind.

5 This maxim more than all the rest

Is thought too base for human breast:

“In all distresses of our friends

We first consult our private ends,

While Nature, kindly bent to ease us,

10 Points out s o m e c i r c u m s t a n c e to please us.”

If this perhaps your patience move,

Let reason and experience prove.⁸

We all behold with envious eyes

O u r equal raised above our size.

15 W h o would not at a crowded show

S t a n d high himself, keep others low?

I love my friend as well as you,

B u t why should he obstruct my view?

T h e n let me have the higher post;

20 S u p p o s e it but an inch at most.

If in a battle you should find

One, w h o m you love of all mankind,

H a d s o m e heroic action done,

A c h a m p i o n killed, or trophy won;

25 Rather than thus be overtopped⁰ *outdone*

W o u l d you not wish his laurels⁹ cropped?

D e a r honest N e d is in the gout,¹

Lies racked with pain, and you without:

H o w patiently you hear him groan!

30 H o w glad the c a s e is not your own!

W h a t poet would not grieve to see

His brethren write as well as he?

But rather than they should excel,

He'd wish his rivals all in hell.

35 Her end when emulation⁰ misses, *imitation*

S h e turns to envy, stings, a n d hisses:

T h e strongest friendship yields to pride,

Unless the odds be on our side.
Vain humankind! fantastic race!
40 Thy various follies who can trace?
Self-love, ambition, envy, pride,
Their empire in our hearts divide.
Give others riches, power, and station;
Tis all on me an usurpation;
45 I have no title to aspire,²
Yet, when you sink, I seem the higher.
In Pope I cannot read a line,
But with a sigh I wish it mine:
When he can in one couplet fix

8. I.e., if this perhaps strains your patience, let
letes, and warriors as a sign of victory or distinc-
reason and experience prove its truth. Rochefou-
tion.

could evidently thought this maxim would tax some

1. A disease characterized by painful inflamma-
readers' patience, because he omitted it from all
tion of the joints. Ned is a generic name for the
editions of his *Reflexions ... et maximes* after the
type of "friend" Rochefoucauld had described.
first edition of 1665.

2. I.e., I don't aim for a title of noble rank; or, I

9. Laurels were traditionally worn by poets, ath-
have no title to announce.

VERSES ON THE DEATH OF DR. SWIFT, D.
S. P. D. / 579

More sense than I can do in six,
It gives me such a jealous fit,
I cry, "Pox take him and his wit!"
I grieve to be outdone by Gay³
In my own humorous biting way.
Arbuthnot⁴ is no more my friend,
Who dares to irony pretend,
Which I was born to introduce,
Refined it first, and showed its use.
St. John, as well as Pulteney,⁵ knows
That I had some repute for prose;
And, till they drove me out of date,
Could maul a minister of state.
If they have mortified my pride,
And made me throw my pen aside;
If with such talents Heaven hath blessed 'em,
Have I not reason to detest 'em?
To all my foes, dear Fortune, send
Thy gifts, but never to my friend:
I tamely can endure the first,
But this with envy makes me burst.
Thus much may serve by way of proem;⁰ *preface*
Proceed we therefore to our poem.
The time is not remote, when I
Must by the course of nature die;
When, I foresee, my special friends
Will try to find their private ends:⁰ *benefits*
Though it is hardly⁰ understood⁰ *hard to / understand*

**Which way my death can do them good;
Yet thus methinks I hear ‘em speak:
“See how the Dean begins to break!0 *weaken*
Poor gentleman! he droops apace! *quickly*
You plainly find it in his face.
That old vertigo0 in his head *dizziness*
Will never leave him till he’s dead.
Besides, his memory decays;
He recollects not what he says;
He cannot call his friends to mind;
Forgets the place where last he dined;
Plies you with stories o’er and o’er;
He told them fifty times before.
How does he fancy we can sit
To hear his out-of-fashion wit?
But he takes up with younger folks,
Who for his wine will bear his jokes.
Faith, he must make his stories shorter,
Or change his comrades once a quarter;**

3. John Gay (1 6 8 5 - 1 7 3 2 ; see pp. 594-96), poet,
latter’s “Epistle to Dr. Arbuthnot” (p. 626).

playwright, author of the *Beggar’s Opera* (1728),

5. For these two politicians, both opposed to
and intimate friend of Swift and Pope.

Prime Minister Walpole, see note 1 above and

4. Dr. John Arbuthnot (1667-1735), physician
Swift’s notes to line 194 and 196.

and wit, friend of Swift, Gay, and Pope. See the

580 / JONATHAN SWIFT

In half the time he talks them round, 6

There must another set be found.

“For poetry, he’s past his prime;

He takes an hour to find a rhyme;

His fire is out, his wit decayed,

His fancy sunk, his Muse a jade. 7

I’d have him throw away his pen —

But there’s no talking to some men.”

And then their tenderness appears

By adding largely to my years:

“He’s older than he would be reckoned,

And well remembers Charles the Second. 8

He hardly drinks a pint of wine;

And that, I doubt, is no good sign. *suspect*

His stomach, too, begins to fail; *appetite*

Last year we thought him strong and hale;^o
healthy But now he’s quite another thing;

I wish he may hold out till spring.”

They hug themselves, and reason thus:

“It is not yet so bad with us.”

In such a case they talk in tropes,^o *figures of speech* And
by their fears express their hopes.

Some great misfortune to portend ^o *predict*

No enemy can match a friend.

With all the kindness they profess,

The merit of a lucky guess

(When daily how-d’ye’s come of course, 9

And servants answer, “Worse and worse!”)

Would please 'em better, than to tell
That God be praised the Dean is well.
Then he who prophesied the best,
Approves his foresight to the rest:
"You know I always feared the worst,
And often told you so at first."
He 'd rather choose that I should die,
Than his prediction prove a lie.
Not one foretells I shall recover,
But all agree to give me over.
Yet, should some neighbor feel a pain
Just in the parts where I complain,
How many a message would he send!
What hearty prayers that I should mend!
Inquire what regimen I kept;
What gave me ease, and how I slept,
And more lament, when I was dead,
Then all the snivelers round my bed.
My good companions, never fear;
For though you may mistake a year,

6. I.e., he tells all his stories once, then starts

8. King of England who died in 1685, when Swift
again.

was eighteen.

7. His Muse, source of inspiration personified as

9. I.e., when it's routinely asked, "How is he?"

a female, is a worn-out horse or a whore.

VERSES ON THE DEATH OF DR. SWIFT, D.
S. P. D. / 581

145 Though your prognostics run too fast,
They must be verified at last.

Behold the fatal day arrive!

”How is the Dean?” — ”He’s just alive.”

Now the departing prayer is read.

150 “He hardly breathes” — ”The Dean is dead.”

Before the passing bell begun, *0 death / begun to ring*
The news through half the town has run.

“Oh! may we all for death prepare!

What has he left? and who’s his heir?”

155 “I know no more than what the news is;

‘Tis all bequeathed to public uses.“¹

“To public use! a perfect whim!

What had the public done for him?

Mere envy, avarice, and pride.

160 He gave it all — but first he died.

And had the Dean in all the nation

Noworthy friend, nor poor relation?

So ready to do strangers good,

Forgetting his own flesh and blood?”

165 Now Grub Street² wits are all employed;

With elegies the town is cloyed;⁰ *overfilled*

Some paragraph in every paper

To curse the Dean, or bless the Drapier.³

The doctors, tender *0* of their fame, *careful* ¹⁷⁰

Wisely on me lay all the blame.

“We must confess his case was nice, ⁴

B u t h e w o u l d n e v e r t a k e a d v i c e .
H a d h e b e e n r u l e d , f o r a u g h t a p p e a r s ,
H e m i g h t h a v e l i v e d t h e s e t w e n t y y e a r s :
175 F o r , w h e n w e o p e n e d h i m , w e f o u n d ,
T h a t a l l h i s v i t a l p a r t s w e r e s o u n d . ”
F r o m D u b l i n s o o n t o L o n d o n s p r e a d ,
‘T i s t o l d a t c o u r t , “T h e D e a n i s d e a d .”
K i n d L a d y S u f f o l k , 5 i n t h e s p l e e n ,
i s o R u n s l a u g h i n g u p t o t e l l t h e Q u e e n .
T h e Q u e e n , s o g r a c i o u s , m i l d a n d g o o d ,
C r i e s , “I s h e g o n e ? ‘t i s t i m e h e s h o u l d .
H e ‘ s d e a d , y o u s a y ; w h y , l e t h i m r o t :
I ‘ m g l a d t h e m e d a l s w e r e f o r g o t . 6

1. I.e., the inheritance is all left to charity.

4. Delicate; thus demanding careful diagnosis and

2. Originally a street in London inhabited largely
treatment.

by hack writers; later, a term applied to all writers

5. Mrs. Howard, later the countess of Suffolk, was
paid to produce (often scandalous) stories for Lon-
the mistress of the Prince of Wales (later crowned
don publishers.

as George II) and the lady of the bed-chamber for

3. “The author imagines, that the scribblers of the
the Princess of Wales (who became Queen Caro-
prevailing [political] party, which he always

line in 1727). She “professed m u c h friendship for
opposed, will libel him after his death; but that oth-

the Dean” [Swift’s note]. *In the spleen*: in low spir-
ers will remember him with gratitude, who con-
its (ironic, as “laughing” in the next line indicates).
sider the service he had done to Ireland, under the
6. According to Swift, the princess commanded
name of M.B. Drapier.” [Swift’s note refers to the
him “a dozen times” to visit her; he finally did so
character that Swift constructed in his *Drapier’s*
on “the advice of friends,” and then, in return, he
Letters (1724—25) to encourage Irish resistance to
“taxed” (asked) the princess for a present worth ten
the imposition of a new coin, called “Wood’s half-
pounds. She promised him some medals, but they
pence.” He believed that this coin would hurt the
were not ready when he returned to Ireland, and
Irish economy. See lines 407—08.]

later, “she forgot them, or thought them too dear”

582 / JONATHAN SWIFT

I promised him, I own; but when?

I only was the Princess then;

But now, as consort of the King,

You know, ‘tis quite a different thing.”

Now Chartres,⁷ at Sir Robert’s levee,

Tells with a sneer the tidings heavy:

“Why, is he dead without his shoes?”⁸

Cries Bob,⁹ “I’m sorry for the news:

Oh, were the wretch but living still,

And in his place my good friend Will!¹

**Or had a miter⁰ on his head, *bishop's hat*
 Provided Bolingbroke² were dead!"**
Now Curll his shop from rubbish drains.³
Three genuine tomes of Swift's remains!
And then, to make them pass⁰ the glibber,⁰ *sell/better*
Revised by Tibbalds, Moore, and Cibber.⁴
He'll treat me as he does my betters,
Publish my will, my life, my letters;
Revive the libels born to die,
Which Pope must bear, as well as I.
Here shift the scene, to represent
How those I love my death lament.
Poor Pope will grieve a month, and Gay
A week, and Arbuthnot a day.
St. John himself will scarce forbear⁰ *refrain*
To bite his pen, and drop a tear.
The rest will give a shrug, and cry,
"I'm sorry—but we all must die!"
Indifference clad in wisdom's guise
All fortitude of mind supplies:

(expensive). Swift's note continues: "The Dean, would see him no more [and Walpole, in turn] being in Ireland, sent Mrs. Howard a piece of would never see him again" [Swift's note].

Indian plaid made in that kingdom [Ireland]:

1. "Mr. William Pulteney, from being Mr. Walpole's intimate friend, detesting his Administra-

wore it herself and sent to the Dean for as much
tion, opposed his measures, and joined with my
as would clothe herself and her children, desiring
Lord Bolingbroke, to represent his [Walpole's]
he would send charge of it. He did the former. It
conduct in an excellent paper, called *Craftsman*,
cost thirty-five pounds, but he said he would have
which is still continued" [Swift's note].

nothing except the medals. He was the summer
2. "Henry St. John, Lord Viscount Bolingbroke,
following in England, was treated as usual, and she
Secretary of State to Queen Anne of blessed mem-
being then Queen, the Dean was promised a set-
ory [i.e., Anne Stuart, who reigned before George
tlement in England, but returned as he went, and,
I]. He is reckoned the most universal genius in
instead of favor or medals, hath been ever since
Europe; Walpole dreading his abilities, treated him
under her Majesty's displeasure."

most injuriously, working with King George, who
7. Francis Charteris was "a most infamous, vile
forgot his promise of restoring the said Lord, upon
scoundrel, grown from a foot-boy, or worse, to a
the restless importunity [pleading] of Walpole"
prodigious fortune" [Swift's note], Charteris was
[Swift's note].

convicted of rape and then pardoned by Robert
3. "Edmund Curll hath been the most infamous

Walpole in 1730 after “sacrificing a great part of bookseller of any age or country: his character in his fortune,” according to Swift. A “levee,” or ris-part may be found in Mr. Pope’s *Dunciad*. He ing, is a morning audience held in an important [Curll] published three volumes all charged on person’s bedroom.

[attributed to] the Dean, who never writ three 8. I.e., did he die in his bed rather than in the pages of them: he hath used many of the Dean’s violent fashion that Swift imagines Walpole pre-friends in almost as vile a manner” [Swift’s note], ferring?

4. “Three stupid verse writers in London, the last 9. “Sir Robert Walpole, Chief Minister of State, to the shame of the court, and the highest disgrace treated the Dean, in 1726, with great distinction, to wit and learning, was made Laureate” [Swift’s invited him to dinner ... with the Dean’s friends note], Lewis Theobald (1688-1744), James Moore chosen on purpose; appointed an hour to talk with Smythe (1702-1734), and Colley Cibber (1 6 7 1 - him of Ireland, to which kingdom and people the 1757) were all men of letters satirized in Pope’s Dean found him no great friend... . The Dean *Dunciad*.

V E R S E S O N T H E D E A T H O F D R . S W I F T , D .
S . P . D . / 5 8 3

215 For how can stony bowels melt
In those who never pity felt?⁵
When *we* are lashed, *they* kiss the rod,⁶
Resigning to the will of God.
The fools, my juniors by a year,
220 Are tortured with suspense and fear;
Who wisely thought my age a screen,
When death approached, to stand between:
The screen removed, their hearts are trembling;
They mourn for me without dissembling.
225 My female friends, whose tender hearts
Have better learned to act their parts,
Receive the news in doleful dumps:
“The Dean is dead (and what is trumps?)
Then, Lord have mercy on his soul!
2BO (Ladies, I’ll venture for the vole.)⁷
Six deans, they say, must bear the pall.
(I wish I knew what king to call.)
Madam, your husband will attend
The funeral of so good a friend?”
235 “No, madam, ‘tis a shocking sight;
And he’s engaged tomorrow night:
My Lady Club would take it ill,
If he should fail her at quadrille.
He loved the Dean—(I lead a heart)
240 But dearest friends; they say, must part.
His time was come; he ran his race;
We hope he’s in a better place.”

Why do we grieve that friends should die?

No loss more easy to supply.

245 One year is past; a different scene!

No further mention of the Dean,

Who now, alas! no more is missed,

Than if he never did exist.

Where's now this favorite of Apollo?⁸

250 Departed—and his works must follow,

Must undergo the common fate;

His kind of wit is out of date.

Some country squire to Lintot⁹ goes,

Inquires for Swift in verse and prose.

255 Says Lintot, "I have heard the name;

He died a year ago."—"The same."

He searches all the shop in vain.

"Sir, you may find them in Duck Lane.¹

I sent them, with a load of books,

260 Last Monday to the pastry-cook's²

5. I.e., how can hard-heartedness dissolve in per-

8. Greek and Roman sun god and patron of poets.

sons who have never felt pity?

9. Bernard Lintot, the London publisher of some

6. Humbly accept chastisement; kissing a mon-

of Pope's and Gay's works.

arch's scepter was a gesture of submission to

1. "A place in London where old [i.e., secondhand
authority.

and remaindered] books are sold" [Swift's note].

7. I.e., the female speaker will bid for all the tricks

2. I.e., to be used as wastepaper for wrapping par-
in the popular card game quadrille.

cels and lining baking dishes.

5 8 4 / J O N A T H A N S W I F T

To fancy they could live a year!

I find you're but a stranger here.

The Dean was famous in his time,

And had a kind of knack at rhyme.

265 His way of writing now is past:

The town has got a better taste.

I keep no antiquated stuff;

But spick and span I have enough.

Pray do but give me leave to show 'em:

270 Here's Colley Cibber's birthday poem.³

This ode you never yet have seen.

By Stephen Duck⁴ upon the Queen.

Then here's a letter finely penned.

Against the *Craftsman* ⁵ and his friend;

275 It clearly shows that all reflection

On ministers is disaffection.

Next, here's Sir Robert's vindication,⁶

And Mr. Henley's last oration.⁷

The hawkers⁰ have not got them yet: *street sellers*

280 Your honor please to buy a set?

"Here's Woolston's tracts,⁸ the twelfth edition;

'Tis read by every politician:

The country members,⁰ when in town, *members of Parliament*

To all their boroughs⁰ send them down; *districts*

285 You never met a thing so smart;

The courtiers have them all by heart,

Those maids of honor (who can read)

Are taught to use them for their creed

The reverend author's good intention

290 Has been rewarded with a pension.

He does an honor to his gown,

By bravely running priestcraft down;

He shows, as sure as God's in Gloucester,⁹

That Jesus was a grand impostor;

295 That all his miracles were cheats,

Performed as jugglers do their feats:

The Church had never such a writer;

A shame he has not got a miter!⁰ *bishop's hat*

Suppose me dead; and then suppose

3. Cibber, appointed poet laureate in 1730 for

ment] in the established Church" of England, set

political rather than artistic reasons, fulfilled the

up a pulpit, or "oratory," of his own, where, "at set

laureate's duty of writing a poem every year for the

times, he delivereth strange speeches, compiled by

monarch's birthday.

himself and his associates... . He is an absolute

4. Agricultural laborer (1705—1756), known as

dunce, but generally reputed crazy" [Swift's note],

the "thresher poet"; his poetry brought him the

8. "Woolston was a clergyman, but for want of

notice and patronage of Queen Caroline. Swift
bread, hath in several treatises, in the most blas-
mocked him in *On Stephen Duck, the Thresher,*
phemous manner, attempted to turn our Savior
and Favorite Poet, A Quibbling Epigram (1730).

and his miracles into ridicule. He is much caressed
5. A periodical written in opposition to Walpole
by many great courtiers, and by all the infidels, and
from 1726 onwards; the title defines Walpole as a
his books read generally by the Court ladies”
man of “craft” in the sense of “deception”; see
[Swift’s note]. Swift is probably referring to
Swift’s note to line 194.

Thomas Woolston (1670—1733), a freethinker
6. “Walpole hires a set of party scribblers, who do
who gained notoriety with his *Discourses on the*
nothing else but write in his defense” [Swift’s
Miracles of our Savior.
note].

9. Before the Reformation, Gloucestershire had
7. The Rev. John Henley (1692-1756), “lacking
been rich in monasteries, and hence was prover-
both merit and luck to get preferment [advance-
bially God’s home.

V E R S E S O N T H E D E A T H O F D R . S W I F T , D .
S . P . D . / 5 8 5

BOO A club assembled at the Rose;1
Where, from discourse of this and that

I grow the subject of their chat.
And while they toss my name about,
With favor some, and some without,
305 One, quite indifferent in the cause,
My character impartial⁰ draws: *impartially, without bias*
“The Dean, if we believe report,
Was never ill received at court.
As for his works in verse and prose,
BIO I own myself no judge of those;
Nor can I tell what critics thought ‘em,
But this I know, all people bought ‘em,
As with a moral view designed
To cure the vices of mankind.
BIS “His vein, ironically grave,
Exposed the fool and lashed the knave,
To steal a hint was never known,
But what he writ was all his own.²
“He never thought an honor done him,
320 Because a duke was proud to own him,
Would rather slip aside and choose
To talk with wits in dirty shoes;
Despised the fools with stars and garters,³
So often seen caressing Chartres.⁴
325 He never courted men in station,
Nor persons held in admiration;
Of no man’s greatness was afraid,
Because he sought for no man’s aid.
Though trusted long in great affairs,

330 He gave himself no haughty airs;
Without regarding private ends,
Spent all his credit for his friends;
And only chose the wise and, good;
No flatterers, no allies in blood;
335 But succored⁰ virtue in distress, *aided*
And seldom failed of good success;
As numbers in their hearts must own⁰ *acknowledge*
Who, but for him, had been unknown.

“With princes kept a due decorum,

340 But never stood in awe before ‘em.⁵

He followed David’s lesson just:

In princes never put thy trust:⁶

1. A fashionable tavern popular with playgoers

4. See the note to line 189.

because it was near the Drury Lane Theater.

5. Two early copies of Swift’s poem insert the fol-

2. An ironic line, since Swift praises his own orig-

lowing lines after line 340, presumably from man-

inality with a line stolen from Sir John Denham’s

uscripts containing some of Swift’s corrections to

elegy for another poet, Abraham Cowley (1618—

the m u c h revised text (see note 6, p. 577): “And to

1667; see pp. 470—72): “To him no author was

her majesty, God bless her, / Would speak as free

unknown / Yet what he wrote was all his own.”

as to her dresser, / She thought it his peculiar

3. Stars and garters were symbols of knighthood

whim, / Nor took it ill as come from him.” The
and other high honor. Garters were worn by the
reference is to Queen Caroline and Lady Suffolk,
members of the chivalric order called the Knights
her “dresser.”

of the Garter, membership in which allowed a man
6. Cf. Psalm 146.3. David, the second king of
to put *Sir* before his name.

Israel, is the biblical Psalmist.

5 8 6 / J O N A T H A N S W I F T

And would you make him truly sour,

Provoke him with a slave in power.

345 **The Irish senate if you named,**

With what impatience he declaimed!

Fair Liberty was all his cry.

For her he stood prepared to die;

For her he boldly stood alone;

350 **For her he oft exposed his own.**

Two kingdoms, just as faction led,

Had set a price upon his head,

But not a traitor could be found,

To sell him for six hundred pound.⁷

355 **“Had he but spared his tongue and pen,**

He might have rose like other men;

But power was never in his thought,

And wealth he valued not a groat:⁸

Ingratitude he often found,

360 **And pitied those who meant the wound;**

But kept the tenor⁰ of his mind, *usual course*
 To merit well of human kind:
 Nor made a sacrifice of those
 Who still⁰ were true, to please his foes. *always*
 365 He labored many a fruitless hour,
 To reconcile his friends in power;
 Saw mischief by a faction brewing,
 While they pursued each other's ruin.
 But finding vain was all his care,
 370 He left the court in mere⁰ despair.⁹ *complete*
 "And, oh! how short are human schemes!
 Here ended all our golden dreams.
 What St. John's skill in state affairs,
 What Ormonde's¹ valor, Oxford's cares,
 375 To save their sinking country lent,
 Was all destroyed by one event.²
 Too soon that precious life was ended,
 On which alone our weal⁰ depended *well-being*
 When up a dangerous faction starts,³

7. Two "proclamations," one from the queen in thereupon returned to his Deanery in Dublin, 1713, one from Lord Carteret, a member of the where for many years he was worried by the new queen's party, in 1724, offered rewards of £300 to people in power" [Swift's note], anyone who could "discover the author" of, respec-
 1. James Butler, duke of Ormonde, who suc-
 tively, *The Public Spirit of the Whigs* and *The Dra-*

ceeded to the command of the English armies on
pier's Fourth Letter [for the latter, see note to line
the Continent when the duke of Marlborough was
168]; in neither case “was the Dean discovered”
stripped of his offices by Anne, in 1711. He went
[Swift's note].

into exile in 1714 and was active in Jacobite polit-
8. English coin from 1351 until 1662; the equiv-
ical intrigues, i.e., efforts to return the Stuart mon-
alent of four pence.

archy to the throne. For Bolingbroke and Oxford,
9. In the last months of Queen Anne's life, her
see previous note.

Tory “Ministry fell to variance [into dispute], ...

2. “In the height of the quarrel between the min-
[Simon] Harcourt the Chancellor, and Lord
isters, the Queen [Anne] died” [Swift's note].

Bolingbroke the Secretary, were discontented with

3. After Anne's death, the opposing party, the
the Treasurer [Robert Harley, earl of] Oxford, for
Whigs, came to power, “which they exercised with
his too much mildness to the Whig Party... . The
the utmost rage and revenge” [Swift's note]. Swift
Dean, who was the only person who endeavored
feared for his own safety and considered emigrat-
to reconcile them, found it impossible, and
ing to one of the Channel Islands.

VERSES ON THE DEATH OF DR. SWIFT, D.
S. P. D. / 5 8 7

380 With wrath and vengeance in their hearts;

By solemn League and Covenant bound,⁴

To ruin, slaughter, and confound;

To turn religion to a fable,

And make the government a Babel;

385 Pervert the laws, disgrace the gown,

Corrupt the senate, rob the crown;

To sacrifice old England's glory,

And make her infamous in story:

When such a tempest shook the land,

390 How could unguarded Virtue stand?

With horror, grief, despair, the Dean

Beheld the dire destructive scene:

His friends in exile, or the Tower,⁵

Himself within the frown of power,

395 Pursued by base envenomed pens,⁶

Far to the land of slaves and fens;⁷

A servile race in folly nursed,

Who truckle⁰ most, when treated worst. *cringe obsequiously*

“By innocence and resolution,

400 He bore continual persecution;

While numbers to preferment rose,

Whose merits were to be his foes;

When even his own familiar friends,

Intent upon their private ends,

405 Like renegades now he feels,

Against him lifting up their heels.⁸
 “The Dean did, by his pen, defeat
 An infamous destructive cheat;⁹
 Taught fools their interest how to know,
 410 And gave them arms to ward⁰ the blow. *ward off*
 Envy has owned it was his doing,
 To save that hapless land from ruin;
 While they who at the steerage¹ stood,
 And reaped the profit, sought his blood.
 415 “To save them from their evil fate,
 In him was held a crime of state.
 A wicked monster on the bench,²
 Whose fury blood could never quench;
 As vile and profligate a villain,

4. A reference to the establishment of Scottish copper halfpence into Ireland in 1723-24. See Presbyterianism, in 1643; as an Anglican, Swift note to line 168.

deplored this development.

1. The helm for steering a ship or, metaphorically,

5. Bolingbroke was in exile; the Whigs sent Oxford public affairs in Ireland.

to the Tower of London, where suspected traitors

2. William Whitshed, lord chief justice of the were imprisoned.

King’s Bench of Ireland. In 1720, when the jury

6. “Upon the Queen’s death, the Dean returned refused to find Swift’s anonymous pamphlet *Pro-*

to live in Dublin... . Numberless libels were writ
posal for the Universal Use of Irish Manufacture
against him England, as a Jacobite; he was insulted
wicked and seditious, Whitshed sent them back
in the street” [Swift’s note],

nine times hoping to force them to another verdict.

7. Ireland; *fens*: wetlands.

Swift further notes that Whitshed “sat as a Judge

8. Cf. Psalm 41.9: “Yea, mine own familiar friend,
afterwards on the trial of the printer of the Dra-
in whom I trusted, which did eat of my bread, hath
pier’s Fourth Letter [by Swift; see note to line 168]
lifted up his heel against me.”

but the Jury, against all he could say or swear,

9. A reference to the scheme to introduce Wood’s
threw out the bill.”

588 / J O N A T H A N S W I F T

420 As modern Scroggs, or old Tresilian;³

Who long all justice had discarded,

Nor feared he God, nor man regarded;⁴

Vowed on the Dean his rage to vent,

And make him of his zeal repent:

425 But Heaven his innocence defends,

The grateful people stand his friends;

Not strains of law, nor judge’s frown,

Nor topics⁰ brought to please the crown, *charges*

Nor witness hired, nor jury picked,

430 Prevail to bring him in convict.

“In exile,⁵ with a steady heart,
He spent his life’s declining part;
Where folly, pride, and faction sway,
Remote from St. John, Pope, and Gay.
435 “His friendships there, to few confined,
Were always of the middling kind;⁶
No fools of rank, a mongrel breed,
Who fain would pass for lords indeed:
Where titles give no right or power,
440 And peerage is a withered flower;⁷
He would have held it a disgrace,
If such a wretch had known his face.
On rural squires, that kingdom’s bane,
He vented oft his wrath in vain;
445 Biennial squires⁸ to market brought:
Who sell their souls, and votes for naught;
The nation stripped, go joyful back,
To rob the church, their tenants rack,⁰ *torture by excessive rent*
Go snacks with rogues and rapparees;⁹
450 And keep the peace¹ to pick up fees;
In every job to have a share,
A jail or barrack to repair;
And turn the tax for public roads,
Commodious to their own abodes.²
455 “Perhaps I may allow the Dean
Had too much satire in his vein;
And seemed determined not to starve it,
3. Sir William “Scroggs was Chief Justice under

7. “The peers of Ireland lost a great part of their King Charles the Second: his judgment always varied jurisdiction by one single Act [of 1720] and tamely yielded in State trials, according to directions from the submitted to this infamous mark of slavery without [royal] Court.” Scroggs was impeached for his misdeeds the least resentment, or remonstrance” [Swift’s demeanors in office in 1680. Sir Robert “Tresilian note],

was a wicked Judge, hanged above three hundred

8. “The Parliament ... in Ireland meet but once years ago [impeached in 1381 and hanged in in two years; and after giving five times more than 1387]” [Swift’s note],

they can afford, return home to reimburse them-

4. Cf. Luke 18.2: “There was in a city a judge, selfish by all country jobs and oppression, of which which feared not God, neither regarded man.”

some few only are here mentioned” [Swift’s note],

5. “In Ireland, which he had reason to call a place

9. “The highwaymen in Ireland are ... usually of exile; to which country nothing could have called rapparees, which was a name given to those driven him, but the Queen’s death, who had deter- Irish soldiers who in small parties used ... to plundered to fix him to England” [Swift’s note],
der the Protestants” [Swift’s note],

6. “The Dean was not acquainted with one single

1. Act as magistrates.

Lord spiritual or temporal. He only conversed with

2. Make the new public turnpike roads more convenient for themselves by having them cross near small number of either” [Swift’s note; not entirely true].

true].

T H E D A Y O F J U D G M E N T / 5 8 9

B e c a u s e n o a g e c o u l d m o r e d e s e r v e i t .

Y e t m a l i c e n e v e r w a s h i s a i m ;

460 H e l a s h e d t h e v i c e , b u t s p a r e d t h e n a m e ; 3

N o i n d i v i d u a l c o u l d r e s e n t ,

W h e r e t h o u s a n d s e q u a l l y w e r e m e a n t ;

H i s s a t i r e p o i n t s a t n o d e f e c t ,

B u t w h a t a l l m o r t a l s m a y c o r r e c t ;

465 F o r h e a b h o r r e d t h a t s e n s e l e s s t r i b e

W h o c a l l i t h u m o r w h e n t h e y g i b e :

H e s p a r e d a h u m p , o r c r o o k e d n o s e ,

W h o s e o w n e r s s e t n o t u p f o r b e a u x .

T r u e g e n u i n e d u l l n e s s m o v e d h i s p i t y ,

470 U n l e s s i t o f f e r e d t o b e w i t t y .

T h o s e w h o t h e i r i g n o r a n c e c o n f e s s e d ,

H e n e ’ e r o f f e n d e d w i t h a j e s t ;

B u t l a u g h e d t o h e a r a n i d i o t q u o t e

A v e r s e f r o m H o r a c e 4 l e a r n e d b y r o t e .

475 ” H e k n e w a n h u n d r e d p l e a s a n t s t o r i e s ,

W i t h a l l t h e t u r n s o f W h i g s a n d T o r i e s :

**W a s cheerful to his dying day;
And friends would let him have his way.
” H e gave the little wealth he h a d
480 To build a h o u s e for fools and mad;5
And showed by one satiric touch,
No nation wanted it so m u c h .
T h a t kingdom he hath left his debtor,
I wish it soon may have a better.”**

1731-32 1739

ISAAC W A T T S

1674-1748

The Day of Judgment

An Ode Attempted in English Sapphic1

**W h e n the fierce north wind with his airy forces
Rears up the Baltic to a f o a m i n g fury,
And the red lightning with a storm of hail c o m e s
R u s h i n g a m a i n 0 down, *violently*
5 H o w the poor sailors stand a m a z e d and tremble,
While the hoarse thunder, like a bloody trumpet,**

3. An ironic disclaimer, as this poem shows.

Hospital.

4. Roman poet and satirist (65—8 B.C.E.).

1. A poetic form consisting of quatrains utilizing

5. Swift's will left a substantial sum for the construction of a mental hospital, the first in Ireland, which was opened in 1757 as St. Patrick's

590 / I S A A C W A T T S

Roars a loud onset⁰ to the gaping waters, *assault*

Quick to devour them!

Such shall the noise be and the wild disorder,

(If things eternal may be like these earthly)

Such the dire terror, when the great Archangel

Shakes the creation,

Tears the strong pillars of the vault of heaven,

Breaks up old marble, the repose of princes;

See the graves open, and the bones arising,

Flames all around 'em!

Hark, the shrill outcries of the guilty wretches!

Lively bright horror and amazing anguish

Stare through their eyelids, while the living worm lies²

Gnawing within them.

Thoughts like old vultures prey upon their heart-strings,

And the smart⁰ twinges,⁰ when the eye beholds the *sharp / pains*

Lofty Judge frowning, and a flood of vengeance

Rolling afore him.

Hopeless immortals! how they scream and shiver,

While devils push them to the pit wide-yawning

Hideous and gloomy, to receive them headlong

Down to the center.³

Stop here, my fancy: (all away ye horrid

Doleful⁰ ideas); come, arise to Jesus; *gloomy*

How He sits God-like! and the saints around him

Throned, yet adoring!

**Oh may I sit there when he comes triumphant
Dooming the nations! then ascend to glory
While our hosannas⁴ all along the passage
Shout the Redeemer.**

1 7 0 6

A Prospect of Heaven Makes Death Easy

**There is a land of pure delight
Where saints immortal reign;
Infinite day excludes the night,
And pleasures banish pain.**

2. In Mark 9.44, Christ describes hell as a place
liovers, casting the unbelievers into hell (“the pit”),
“where their worm dieth not.”

and inviting believers to inherit the kingdom of

3. At the Last Judgment, Christ will judge “all the
heaven (Matthew 25.31-41).

nations,” separating the believers from the unbe-

4. Expressions of great praise.

O U R G O D , O U R H E L P / 5 9 1

5 There everlasting spring abides,

And never-withering flowers;

D e a t h like a narrow sea divides

This heavenly land f r o m ours.

Sweet fields beyond the swelling flood

10 S t a n d dressed in living green:

So to the Jews old C a n a a n stood,

While J o r d a n rolled between.⁵

B u t timorous⁰ mortals start⁰ and shrink *fearful / recoil*

To cross this narrow sea,
15 And linger shivering on the brink,
And fear to l a u n c h away.
Oh could we m a k e our doubts remove, *withdraw*
T h e s e gloomy doubts that rise,
And see the C a n a a n that we love,
20 With u n b e c l o u d e d eyes;
C o u l d we but climb where M o s e s stood
And view the l a n d s c a p e o'er,⁶
Not Jordan's stream, nor death's cold flood,
Should fright us f r o m the shore.

1 7 0 7

Our God, Our Help⁷

O u r G o d , our help in ages past,
O u r hope for years to c o m e ,
O u r shelter f r o m the stormy blast,
And our eternal home:

5 U n d e r the shadow of thy throne
Thy saints have dwelt secure;
Sufficient is thine arm alone,
And our d e f e n s e is sure.

B e f o r e the hills in order stood

io Or earth received her frame,⁰ *shape, structure*

F r o m everlasting thou art G o d ,
To endless years the same.

Thy word c o m m a n d s our flesh to dust,
“Return, ye sons of men”;⁸

5. Canaan was the land, “flowing with milk and

7. Originally titled “Man Frail and God Eternal,”
honey” (Joshua 5.6), promised to the Israelites
this hymn derives from Psalm 90.

after their forty years of wandering in the wilder-

8. From Psalm 90.3; God’s curse after the sin of
ness. To reach it they had to cross the Jordan River.

Adam and Eve: “In the sweat of thy face shalt thou

6. Moses was allowed to ascend Mt. Nebo to see
eat bread, till thou return unto the ground; for out

the promised land, but was not allowed to enter

of it was thou taken: for dust thou art, and unto

Canaan because of his sins (Deuteronomy 34.1—4).

dust shalt thou return” (Genesis 3.19).

592 / I S A A C W A T T S

15 All nations rose from earth at first,

And turn to earth again.

A thousand ages in thy sight

Are like an evening gone;

Short as the watch⁹ that ends the night

20 Before the rising sun.

The busy tribes of flesh and blood,

With all their lives and cares,

Are carried downwards by thy flood,

And lost in following years.

25 Time, like an ever-rolling stream,

Bears all its sons away;

They fly forgotten, as a dream

Dies at the opening day.

**Like flowery fields the nations stand,
30 Pleased with the morning light;
The flowers beneath the mower's hand
Lie withering e'er 'tis night.
Our God, our help in ages past,
Our hope for years to come,
35 Be thou our guard while troubles last,
And our eternal home.**

1719

Psalm 58

Warning to Magistrates¹

**Judges, who rule the world by laws,
Will ye despise the righteous cause,
When th'injur'd poor before you stands?
Dare ye condemn the righteous poor,
5 And let rich sinners 'scape secure,
While gold and greatness bribe your hands?
Have ye forgot or never knew
That God will judge the judges too?
High in the Heavens his justice reigns;
io Yet you invade the rights of God,
And send your bold decrees abroad
To bind the conscience in your chains.**

9. One of the three, four, or five periods into
setts Bay Psalm Book (pp. 391-93), and by Chris-
which the night was divided.

topher Smart (pp. 684—86). All of Watts's versions

1. Cf. the versions of this Psalm and the next one

of the Psalms have short, italicized narrative titles.

by Mary Sidney (pp. 225 - 26) , from *The Massachu-*

P S A L M 1 1 4 / 5 9 3

A poisoned arrow is your tongue,

T h e arrow sharp, the poison strong,

15 And death attends where e'er it wounds:

You hear no counsels, cries or tears;

So the deaf adder stops her ears

Against the power of c h a r m i n g sounds.

B r e a k out their teeth, eternal God,

20 T h o s e teeth of lions dyed in blood;

And c r u s h the serpents in the dust:

As empty chaff,² when whirlwinds rise,

B e f o r e the sweeping tempest flies,

So let their hopes and n a m e s be lost.

25 Th'Almighty thunders f r o m the sky,

Their grandeur melts, their titles die,

As hills of snow dissolve and run,

Or snails that perish in their slime,

Or births that c o m e before their time,

30 Vain births, that never see the sun.

T h u s shall the v e n g e a n c e of the Lord

Safety and joy to saints afford;

And all that hear shall join and say,

” S u r e there's a G o d that rules on high,

35 “A G o d that hears his children cry,

“And will their sufferings well repay.”

1719

Psalm 114

Miracles Attending Israel's Journey

W h e n I s r ' e l , f r e e d f r o m P h a r a o h ' s h a n d ,

L e f t t h e p r o u d t y r a n t a n d h i s l a n d ,³

T h e t r i b e s w i t h c h e e r f u l h o m a g e o w n^o a c k n o w l e d g e

T h e i r k i n g ; a n d J u d a h w a s h i s t h r o n e .⁴

5 A c r o s s t h e d e e p t h e i r j o u r n e y l a y ;

T h e d e e p^o d i v i d e s t o m a k e t h e m w a y . R e d S e a

J o r d a n⁵ b e h e l d t h e i r m a r c h , a n d l e d ,

W i t h b a c k w a r d c u r r e n t , t o h i s h e a d .

T h e m o u n t a i n s s h o o k l i k e f r i g h t e d s h e e p ,

i o L i k e l a m b s t h e l i t t l e h i l l o c k s l e a p ;

2. The husks of the grain separated by threshing southern portion of the Israelites' land.

or winnowing.

5. River in Palestine that empties into the Dead

3. I.e., Egypt.

Sea. For the river's miraculous turning back, see

4. Originally (Genesis 29) the name of the fourth

Joshua 3; for the Red Sea's splitting, see Exodus

son of Jacob and Leah, Judah (which comes from

14.

the Hebrew word for praise) came to designate the

594 / J O H N G A Y

N o t S i n a i⁶ o n h e r b a s e c o u l d s t a n d ,

C o n s c i o u s o f s o v ' r e i g n p o w ' r a t h a n d .

W h a t p o w ' r c o u l d m a k e t h e d e e p d i v i d e ?

M a k e J o r d a n b a c k w a r d r o l l h i s t i d e ?

**15 Why did ye leap, ye little hills?
And whence the fright that Sinai feels?
Let ev'ry mountain, ev'ry flood,
Retire and know th' approaching G o d ,
T h e King of Isr'el: see him here!**

**20 Tremble , thou earth, adore an d fear.
He thunders, and all nature m o u r n s ;
T h e rock to standing pools he turns,
Flints spring with fountains at his word,
A n d fires and seas c o n f e s s the Lord.**

1719

J O H N G A Y

1685-1732

Songs from The Beggar's Opera

Act I, Scene viii, Air X — "Thomas, I Cannot," 2 etc.

**Polly. I like a ship in storms was tossed,
Yet afraid to put into land,
For seized in the port the vessel's lost
W h o s e treasure is contraband.⁰ *smuggled goods*
T h e waves are laid,
My duty's⁰ paid; *tax on imports*
O joy beyond expression!
T h u s safe ashore
I ask no more;
My all is in my possession.**

6. Mt. Sinai, the mountain in a desert region
marries the handsome highwayman, Macheath.
south and west of modern-day Israel from which

Peacham informs against Macheath (both to col-
God, according to Exodus 20.1—20, gave the Ten
lect the reward and to rid himself of an unwanted
Commandments to Moses. For the miraculous
son-in-law). Lucy Lockit, the prison warder's
events associated with Sinai during the Israelites'
daughter, whom Macheath had previously seduced
journey out of Egypt, see Exodus 19.16-20.
and promised to marry, effects his escape.

1. *The Beggar's Opera* (1728) was the first ballad
Macheath is recaptured and sentenced to hang,
opera, a type of play in which the action, usually
but through an absurd twist the play ends happily.
comic, is conveyed in prose interspersed with
Because all the songs from *The Beggar's Opera*
songs set to traditional or contemporary melodies
were published in 1728, we do not print the date
(each set of lyrics here is sung to a preexisting
for each.

tune). This opera is a satire of corrupt government,

2. A popular song, the tune to which these words
and its comic but realistic characters are the
are sung; Polly, having secretly married Macheath,
underclass of London. Polly, the daughter of Pea-
has been first violently chided, then forgiven, by
cham (an informer and receiver of stolen goods),
her parents.

SONGS FROM *THE BEGGAR'S OPERA* / 595

*Act I, Scene ix, Air XI—‘A Soldier and a Sailor’*³

A fox may steal your hens, sir,

A whore your health and pence, 0 sir, *money*

Your daughter rob your chest, sir,

Your wife may steal your rest, sir,

5 A thief your goods and plate.

B u t this is all for p i c k i n g , 0 *pilfering, petty thievery*

With rest, pence, chest and chicken;

It ever was decreed, sir,

If lawyer’s hand is fee’d, sir,

10 He steals your whole estate.

*Act I, Scene xiii, Air XVI—“Over the Hills, and Far Away”*⁴

Mac. Were I laid on Greenland’s coast,

And in my arms embraced my lass,

Warm amidst eternal frost,

Too soon the half-year’s night would pass.

5 Polly. Were I sold on Indian soil,

Soon as the burning day was closed,

I could mock the sultry toil

When on my charmer’s breast reposed.

Mac. And I would love you all the day,

io Polly. Every night would kiss and play,

Mac. If with me you’d fondly stray

Polly. Over the hills, and far away.

*Act II, Scene iv, Air IV—Cotillion*⁵

Youth’s the season made for joys,

Love is then our duty:

She alone who that employs,

**Well deserves her beauty.
Let's be gay
While we may,
Beauty's a flower despised in decay.**

Chorus.

**Youth's the season, etc.
Let us drink and sport to-day,
Ours is not to-morrow:
Love with youth flies swift away,
Age is naught but sorrow.
Dance and sing,
Time's on the wing,
Life never knows the return of spring.**

Chorus.

Let us drink, etc.

3. Sung by Polly's father, Peacham; Polly's parents
penal settlement; here, they sing about their desire
worry that Macheath may have several wives, so
not to be separated.

that if he were to die, her inheritance of his prop-

5. A dance of French origin; Macheath dances
erty would come into dispute.

and sports with a group of women in a tavern.

4. Polly fears that Macheath will be deported to a

596 / ALEXANDER POPE

*Act II, Scene xv, Air XXII—"The Lass of Patie's Mill"*6

**Lucy. I like the fox shall grieve,
Whose mate hath left her side;**

W h o m hounds, from m o r n to eve,

C h a s e o'er the country wide.

5 W h e r e ca n my lover hide?

W h e r e cheat the wary pack?

If love be not his guide,

He never will c o m e back.

Act III, Scene xiii, Air XXVII—"Green Sleeves"7

Since laws were m a d e , for every degree,

To curb vice in others, as well as me,

I wonder we han't better c o m p a n y

U p o n Tyburn tree.8

5 B u t gold fro m law ca n take out the sting;

And if rich m e n , like us, were to swing,

'Twould thin the land, such n u m b e r s to string

U p o n Tyburn tree.

1 7 2 8

A L E X A N D E R P O P E

1688-1744

From An Essay on Criticism

Part II

Of all the causes which conspire to blind
Man's erring judgment, and misguide the mind,
What the weak head with strongest bias rules,
Is pride, the never-failing vice of fools.

205 Whatever Nature has in worth denied,
She gives in large recruits⁰ of needful pride;
supplies

For as in bodies, thus in souls, we find
What wants⁰ in blood and spirits swelled with wind
lacks

Pride, where wit fails, steps in to our defense,
210 And fills up all the mighty void of sense.

If once right reason drives that cloud away,
Truth breaks upon us with resistless day.

Trust not yourself: but your defects to know,
Make use of every friend — and every foe.

6. Lucy has agreed to help Macheath escape, and sits in his jail cell, drinking and singing.

he has promised to send for her when it is safe. 8. The gallows; Tyburn was a place of public execution. 7. Macheath, recaptured and condemned to hang, was kept in Middlesex until 1783.

AN ESSAY ON CRITICISM / 597

215 A little learning is a dangerous thing;
Drink deep, or taste not the Pierian spring.¹
There shallow draughts intoxicate the brain,
And drinking largely sobers us again.

Fired at first sight with what the Muse imparts,
220 In fearless youth we tempt⁰ the heights of arts, *attempt*
While from the bounded level of our mind
Short views we take, nor see the lengths behind;
But more advanced, behold with strange surprise
New distant scenes of endless science rise!
225 So pleased at first the towering Alps we try,
Mount o'er the vales,⁰ and seem to tread the sky, *valleys*
The eternal snows appear already past,
And the first clouds and mountains seem the last;
But, those attained, we tremble to survey
230 The growing labors of the lengthened way,
The increasing prospect tires our wandering eyes,
Hills peep o'er hills, and Alps on Alps arise!
A perfect judge will read each work of wit
With the same spirit that its author writ:
235 Survey the whole, nor seek slight faults to find
Where Nature moves, and rapture warms the mind;
Nor lose, for that malignant dull delight,
The generous pleasure to be charmed with wit.
But in such lays as neither ebb nor flow,
240 Correctly cold, and regularly low,
That, shunning faults, one quiet tenor keep,
We cannot blame indeed—but we may sleep.
In wit, as nature, what affects our hearts
Is not the exactness of peculiar⁰ parts; *particular*
245 'Tis not a lip, or eye, we beauty call,
But the joint force and full result of all.

Thus when we view some well-proportioned dome
(The world's just wonder, and even thine, O Rome!²),
No single parts unequally surprise,
250 All comes united to the admiring eyes:
No monstrous height, or breadth, or length appear;
The whole at once is bold and regular.
Whoever thinks a faultless piece to see,
Thinks what ne'er was, nor is, nor e'er shall be.
255 In every work regard the writer's end,
Since none can compass more than they intend;
And if the means be just, the conduct true,
Applause, in spite of trivial faults, is due.
As men of breeding, sometimes men of wit,
260 To avoid great errors must the less commit,
Neglect the rules each verbal critic lays,
For not to know some trifles is a praise.

1. The spring in Pieria on Mt. Olympus, sacred to
2. Refers either to the dome of St. Peter's, i.e., the
the Muses (in Greek mythology, nine sister god-
wonder *in* (Catholic) Rome; or to the dome of St.
desses who inspired song, poetry, and the arts and
Paul's, in London, i.e., a wonder *to* Rome.
sciences).

598 / A L E X A N D E R P O P E

Most critics, fond of some subservient art,
Still make the whole depend upon a part:
265 They talk of principles, but notions prize,
And all to one loved folly sacrifice.

Once on a time La Mancha's knight,³ they say,
A certain bard encountering on the way,
Discoursed in terms as just, with looks as sage,
270 As e'er could Dennis,⁴ of the Grecian stage;
Concluding all were desperate sots and fools
Who durst depart from Aristotle's rules.⁵
Our author, happy in a judge so nice,⁰ *overrefined*
Produced his play, and begged the knight's advice;
275 Made him observe the subject and the plot,
The manners, passions, unities; what not?
All which exact to rule were brought about,
Were but a combat in the lists⁰ left out. *arena*
"What! leave the combat out?" exclaims the knight.
280 "Yes, or we must renounce the Stagirite."⁶
"Not so, by Heaven!" he answers in a rage,
"Knights, squires, and steeds must enter on the stage."
"So vast a throng the stage can ne'er contain."
"Then build a new, or act it in a plain."
285 Thus critics of less judgment than caprice,
Curious,⁰ not knowing, not exact, but nice, *laboriously careful*
Form short ideas, and offend in arts
(As most in manners), by a love to parts.
Some to conceit⁷ alone their taste confine,
290 And glittering thoughts struck out at every line;
Pleased with a work where nothing's just or fit,
One glaring chaos and wild heap of wit.
Poets, like painters, thus unskilled to trace
The naked nature and the living grace,

295 With gold and jewels cover every part,
 And hide with ornaments their want of art.
 True wit is Nature to advantage dressed,
 What oft was thought, but ne'er so well expressed;
 Something whose truth convinced at sight we find,
 300 That gives us back the image of our mind.
 As shades more sweetly recommend the light,
 So modest plainness sets off sprightly wit;
 For works may have more wit than does them good,
 As bodies perish through excess of blood.
 305 Others for language all their care express,
 And value books, as women men, for dress.
 Their praise is still⁰—the style is excellent; *continually*
 The sense they humbly take upon content.⁰ *mere acquiescence*

3. Don Quixote, hero of Cervantes's novel; but
 6. I.e., Aristotle, a native of Stagira. One of his
 this story comes from a spurious sequel to it, by
 principles was that tragic drama should maintain
 Don Alonzo Fernandez de Avellaneda.

unity of time and place.

4. John Dennis (1657—1734), an English critic.

7. Pointed wit, ingenuity and extravagance, or

5. Refers to the description of the purpose and
 affectation in the use of figures, especially similes
 forms of tragic drama contained in Aristotle's
 and metaphors.

Poetics.

AN ESSAY ON CRITICISM / 599

Words are like leaves; and where they most abound,
310 Much fruit of sense beneath is rarely found.

False eloquence, like the prismatic glass,
Its gaudy colors spreads on every place;
The face of Nature we no more survey,
All glares alike, without distinction gay.

315 But true expression, like the unchanging sun,
Clears and improves whate'er it shines upon; f
It gilds all objects, but it alters none. J

Expression is the dress of thought, and still
Appears more decent as more suitable.

320 A vile conceit in pompous words expressed
Is like a clown⁰ in regal purple dressed: *peasant*
For different styles with different subjects sort,
As several garbs with country, town, and court.

Some by old words to fame have made pretense,
325 Ancients in phrase, mere moderns in their sense.

Such labored nothings, in so strange a style,
Amaze the unlearned, and make the learned smile;
Unlucky as Fungoso⁸ in the play,

These sparks with awkward vanity display f

330 What the fine gentleman wore yesterday; J

And but so mimic ancient wits at best,

As apes our grandsires in their doublets⁹ dressed.

In words as fashions the same rule will hold,

Alike fantastic if too new or old:

335 Be not the first by whom the new are tried,

Nor yet the last to lay the old aside.

But most by numbers⁰ judge a poet's song, *versification*
 And smooth or rough with them is right or wrong.
 In the bright Muse though thousand charms conspire,
 340 Her voice is all these tuneful fools admire,
 Who haunt Parnassus¹ but to please their ear,
 Not mend their minds; as some to church repair, (
 Not for the doctrine, but the music there. J
 These equal syllables alone require,
 345 Though oft the ear the open vowels tire,
 While expletives² their feeble aid do join,
 And ten low words oft creep in one dull line:
 While they ring round the same unvaried chimes,
 With sure returns of still expected rhymes;
 350 Where'er you find "the cooling western breeze,"
 In the next line, it "whispers through the trees";
 If crystal streams "with pleasing murmurs creep,"
 The reader's threatened (not in vain) with "sleep";
 Then, at the last and only couplet fraught
 355 With some unmeaning thing they call a thought,
 A needless Alexandrine³ ends the song
 That, like a wounded snake, drags its slow length along.

8. A character in Ben Jonson's comedy *Every Man*

2. Words added to fill out lines—for example, "do"
out of His Humor (1599).

in this line.

9. Jackets in a style popular in the sixteenth and

3. A line in iambic hexameter—for example, the
 seventeenth centuries.

next line.

1. The mountain in Greece sacred to the Muses.

600 / A L E X A N D E R P O P E

Leave such to tune their own dull rhymes, and know

What's roundly smooth or languishingly slow;

360 And praise the easy vigor of a line

Where Denham's strength and Waller's sweetness join.⁴

True ease in writing comes from art, not chance,

As those move easiest who have learned to dance.

'Tis not enough no harshness gives offense,

365 The sound must seem an echo to the sense.

Soft is the strain when Zephyr⁰ gently blows, *the west wind*

And the smooth stream in smoother numbers flows;

But when loud surges lash the sounding shore,

The hoarse, rough verse should like the torrent roar.

370 When Ajax⁵ strives some rock's vast weight to throw,

The line too labors, and the words move slow;

Not so when swift Camilla scours the plain,

Flies o'er the unbending corn, and skims along the main.

Hear how Timotheus⁶ varied lays surprise,

375 And bid alternate passions fall and rise!

While at each change the son of Libyan Jove⁷

Now burns with glory, and then melts with love;

Now his fierce eyes with sparkling fury glow,

Now sighs steal out, and tears begin to flow:

380 Persians and Greeks like turns of nature⁸ found

And the world's victor stood subdued by sound!

The power of music all our hearts allow,

And what Timotheus was is Dryden now.
 Avoid extremes; and shun the fault of such
 385 Who still are pleased too little or too much.
 At every trifle scorn to take offense:
 That always shows great pride, or little sense.
 Those heads, as stomachs, are not sure the best,
 Which nauseate⁰ all, and nothing can digest. *vomit*
 390 Yet let not each gay turn thy rapture move;
 For fools admire,⁰ but men of sense approve:⁹ *wonder*
 As things seem large which we through mists descry,⁰
perceive
 Dullness is ever apt to magnify.
 Some foreign writers, some our own despise;
 395 The ancients only, or the moderns prize.
 Thus wit, like faith, by each man is applied
 To one small sect, and all are damned beside.
 Meanly they seek the blessing to confine,
 And force that sun but on a part to shine,
 400 Which not alone the southern wit sublimes,⁰ *raises,*
purifies
 But ripens spirits in cold northern climes;
 Which from the first has shone on ages past,
 Enlightens the present, and shall warm the last;
 4. John Dryden (1631-1700; see pp. 500-526),
 of the Greek warriors in the war with Troy. He is
 whom Pope echoes here, considered Sir John Den-
 contrasted with Camilla, a swift-footed messenger
 ham (1 6 1 5 - 1 6 6 9) and Edmund Waller (1 6 0 6 -
 of the moon goddess, Diana.

1687; see pp. 393—94) the principal shapers of the

6. The musician in Dryden's "Alexander's Feast."

closed pentameter couplet. He distinguished

7. *The ... Jove: Alexander the Great.*

between Denham's "strength" and Waller's "sweet-

8. Comparable alternations of feelings.

ness."

9. I.e., only after due deliberation.

5. The strongest, though not the most intelligent,

AN ESSAY ON CRITICISM / 601

Though each may feel increases and decays,

405 And see now clearer and now darker days.

Regard not then if wit be old or new,

But blame the false and value still the true.

Some ne'er advance a judgment of their own,

But catch the spreading notion of the town;

410 They reason and conclude by precedent,

And own" stale nonsense which they ne'er invent. *claim as theirs*

Some judge of authors' names, not works, and then

Nor praise nor blame the writings, but the men.

Of all this servile herd the worst is he

415 That in proud dullness joins with quality,

A constant critic at the great man's board,⁰ *table*

To fetch and carry nonsense for my lord.

What woeful stuff this madrigal would be

In some starved hackney⁰ sonneteer or me! *for-hire*

420 But let a lord once own" the happy lines, *acknowledge as his*

How the wit brightens! how the style refines!
Before his sacred name flies every fault,
And each exalted stanza teems with thought!
The vulgar thus through imitation err;
425 As oft the learn'd by being singular;⁰ *peculiar*
So much they scorn the crowd, that if the throng
By chance go right, they purposely go wrong.
So schismatics¹ the plain believers quit,
And are but damned for having too much wit.
430 Some praise at morning what they blame at night,
But always think the last opinion right.
A Muse by these is like a mistress used,
This hour she's idolized, the next abused;
While their weak heads like towns unfortified,
435 'Twixt sense and nonsense daily change their side.
Ask them the cause; they're wiser still, they say;
And still tomorrow's wiser than today.
We think our fathers fools, so wise we grow;
Our wiser sons, no doubt, will think us so.
440 Once school divines² this zealous isle o'erspread;
Who knew most sentences³ was deepest read.
Faith, Gospel, all seemed made to be disputed,
And none had sense enough to be confuted.
Scotists and Thomists now in peace remain
445 Amidst their kindred cobwebs in Duck Lane.⁴
If faith itself has different dresses worn,
What wonder modes in wit should take their turn?
Oft, leaving what is natural and fit,

The current folly proves the ready wit;
450 And authors think their reputation safe,
Which lives as long as fools are pleased to laugh.

1. Those who divide the church on points of
tioned below.

theology.

3. Alludes to Peter Lombard's *Book of Sentences*,

2. Scholastic philosophers such as the Scotists
a twelfth-century theological work.

and Thomists (followers of the medieval theologi-

4. A place in London where secondhand and
ans Duns Scotus and St. Thomas Aquinas) men-
remaindered books were sold.

6 0 2 / A L E X A N D E R P O P E

Some valuing those of their own side or mind,
Still make themselves the measure of mankind:

Fondly⁰ we think we honor merit then, *foolishly*

455 When we but praise ourselves in other men.

Parties in wit attend on those of state,

And public faction doubles private hate.

Pride, Malice, Folly against Dryden rose,

In various shapes of parsons, critics, beaux;

460 But sense survived, when merry jests were past;

For rising merit will buoy up at last.

Might he return and bless once more our eyes,

New Blackmores and new Milbourns must arise.⁵

Nay, should great Homer lift his awful head,

465 Zoilus⁶ again would start up from the dead.

Envy will merit, as its shade,⁰ pursue, *ghost*
But like a shadow, proves the substance true;
For envied wit, like Sol^o eclipsed, makes known *the sun*
The opposing body's grossness, not its own.

470 When first that sun too powerful beams displays,
It draws up vapors which obscure its rays;
But even those clouds at last adorn its way,
Reflect new glories, and augment the day.

Be thou the first true merit to befriend;
475 His praise is lost who stays till all commend.

Short is the date, alas! of modern rhymes,
And 'tis but just to let them live betimes.⁰ *early*

No longer now that golden age appears,
When patriarch wits survived a thousand years:
480 Now length of fame (our second life) is lost,
And bare threescore is all even that can boast;
Our sons their fathers' failing language see,
And such as Chaucer is shall Dryden be.

So when the faithful pencil has designed
485 Some bright idea of the master's mind,
Where a new world leaps out at his command,
And ready Nature waits upon his hand;
When the ripe colors soften and unite,
And sweetly melt into just shade and light;
490 When mellowing years their full perfection give,
And each bold figure just begins to live,
f The treacherous colors the fair art betray,
And all the bright creation fades away!

Unhappy wit, like most mistaken things, *misunderstood*.

495 Atones not for that envy which it brings.

In youth alone its empty praise we boast,

But soon the short-lived vanity is lost;

Like some fair flower the early spring supplies,

That gaily blooms, but even in blooming dies,

500 What is this wit, which must our cares employ?

5. Sir Richard Blackmore (1650—1729), physician 1720) had attacked his translation of Virgil, and poet, had attacked Dryden for the immorality 6. A Greek critic of the fourth century **B.C.E.**, who of his plays; the Rev. Luke Milbourne (1649— wrote a book of carping criticism of Homer.

AN ESSAY ON CRITICISM / 603

The owner's wife, that other men enjoy;

Then most our trouble still when most admired,

And still the more we give, the more required;

Whose fame with pains we guard, but lose with ease,

505 Sure some to vex, but never all to please;

'Tis what the vicious fear, the virtuous shun,

By fools 'tis hated, and by knaves undone!

If wit so much from ignorance undergo,

Ah, let not learning too commence its foe!

510 Of old those met rewards who could excel,

And such were praised who but endeavored well;

Though triumphs were to generals only due,

Crowns were reserved to grace the soldiers too.

Now they who reach Parnassus' lofty crown

515 Employ their pains to spurn some others down;

And while self-love each jealous writer rules,

Contending wits become the sport of fools;
But still the worst with most regret commend,
For each ill author is as bad a friend.
520 To what base ends, and by what abject ways,
Are morals urged through sacred lust of praise! *accursed*
Ah, ne'er so dire a thirst of glory boast,
Nor in the critic let the man be lost!
Good nature and good sense must ever join;
525 To err is human, to forgive divine.
But if in the noble minds some dregs remain
Nor yet purged off, spleen and sour disdain,
Discharge that rage on more provoking crimes,
Nor fear a dearth in these flagitious times. *shameful, wicked*
530 No pardon vile obscenity should find,
Though wit and art conspire to move your mind;
But dullness with obscenity must prove
As shameful sure as impotence in love.
In the fat age of pleasure, wealth, and ease
535 Sprung the rank weed, and thrived with large increase:
When love was all an easy monarch's care,
Seldom at council, never in a war;
Jilts ruled the state, and statesmen farces writ; *king's mistresses*
Nay, wits had pensions, and young lords had wit;
540 The fair sat panting at a courtier's play,
And not a mask went unimproved away;
The modest fan was lifted up no more,
And virgins smiled at what they blushed before.

The following license of a foreign reign⁹
545 Did all the dregs of bold Socinus¹ drain;
Then unbelieving priests reformed the nation,
And taught more pleasant methods of salvation;
Where Heaven's free subjects might their rights dispute,
7. Charles II, king of England from 1660 to 1685.

9. That of William III, king of England from 1689
The following lines describe the corruption of mor-
to 1702. He was born in Holland.

als and letters under this recently dead monarch.

1. The name of two sixteenth-century Italian the-

8. A woman in a mask, as at a masquerade.

ologians who denied the divinity of Jesus.

604 / A L E X A N D E R P O P E

Lest G o d himself should s e e m too absolute;

550 Pulpits their sacred satire learned to spare,

And Vice admired to find a flatterer there!

E n c o u r a g e d thus, wit's Titans² braved the skies,

And the press groaned with licensed b l a s p h e m i e s .

T h e s e monsters, critics! with your darts engage,

555 H e r e point your thunder, and exhaust your rage!

Yet s h u n their fault, who, scandalously nice,⁰ *overrefined*

Will needs mistake³ an author into vice;

All s e e m s infected that the infected spy,

As all looks yellow to the j a u n d i c e d eye.

1709 1711

The Rape of the Lock

An Heroi-Comical Poem in Five Cantos⁴

*Nolueram, Belinda, tuos violate capillos; sed juvat hoc
precibus me*

*tribuisse tuis.*⁵

MARTIAL

CANTOI

**W h a t d i r e o f f e n s e f r o m a m o r o u s c a u s e s
springs, W h a t m i g h t y c o n t e s t s r i s e f r o m t r i v i a l t h i n g s,**

I s i n g — T h i s v e r s e t o C a r y l l, M u s e ! i s d u e:

T h i s, e v e n B e l i n d a m a y v o u c h s a f e t o v i e w:

5 S l i g h t i s t h e s u b j e c t, b u t n o t s o t h e p r a i s e,

I f s h e i n s p i r e, a n d h e a p p r o v e m y l a y s.⁰ *songs*

S a y w h a t s t r a n g e m o t i v e, G o d d e s s ! c o u l d c o m p e l

A w e l l - b r e d l o r d t o a s s a u l t a g e n t l e b e l l e ?

O h, s a y w h a t s t r a n g e r c a u s e, y e t u n e x p l o r e d,

i o C o u l d m a k e a g e n t l e b e l l e r e j e c t a l o r d ?

I n t a s k s s o b o l d c a n l i t t l e m e n e n g a g e,

A n d i n s o f t b o s o m s d w e l l s s u c h m i g h t y r a g e ?

S o l^o t h r o u g h w h i t e c u r t a i n s s h o t a t i m o r o u s r a y, *the sun*

A n d o p e d t h o s e e y e s t h a t m u s t e c l i p s e t h e d a y.⁶

15 N o w l a p d o g s g i v e t h e m s e l v e s t h e r o u s i n g s h a k e,

A n d s l e e p l e s s l o v e r s j u s t a t t w e l v e a w a k e:

T h r i c e r u n g t h e b e l l, t h e s l i p p e r k n o c k e d t h e g r o u n d,⁷

2. Primordial giants, whose rule over Earth was

ment of the topic, which the poet says he will

broken by the Olympian gods.

“sing” as if in oral recitation, and the request to the

3. I.e., give a wrong meaning to (an author’s writ-

Muse (line 7) to grant him the necessary insight.

ings).

In Greek mythology, the Muses were nine sister
4. Based on an actual incident. A young man,
goddesses who presided over poetry, song, and the
Lord Petre, had sportively cut off a lock of a Miss
arts and sciences.

Arabella Fermor's hair. She and her family were
5. I did not want, Belinda, to violate your locks,
angered by the prank, and Pope's friend John
but it pleases me to have paid this tribute to your
Caryll (line 3), a relative of Lord Petre's, asked the
prayers (Latin); from the ancient Roman poet Mar-
poet to turn the incident into jest, so that good
cus Valerius Martialis. Miss Fermor did not in fact
relations (and possibly negotiations toward a mar-
request the poem.

riage between the principals) might be resumed.

6. The eyes of lovely young women—though
Pope responded by treating the incident in a mock
Belinda is still asleep.

epic, or "heroi-comical poem." The epic conven-

7. These are two ways of summoning servants.

tions first encountered are the immediate state-

T H E R A P E O F T H E L O C K / 6 0 5

And the pressed watch returned a silver sound.⁸

Belinda still her downy pillow pressed,

20 Her guardian Sylph⁹ prolonged the balmy rest:

'Twas he had summoned to her silent bed

The morning dream that hovered o'er her head.

A youth more glittering than a birthnight beau
(That even in slumber caused her cheek to glow)
25 Seemed to her ear his winning lips to lay,
And thus in whispers said, or seemed to say:
“Fairest of mortals, thou distinguished care° *object of care*
Of thousand bright inhabitants of air!
If e’er one vision touched thy infant thought,
30 Of all the nurse and all the priest have taught,
Of airy elves by moonlight shadows seen,
The silver token, and the circled green,²
Or virgins visited by angel powers,
With golden crowns and wreaths of heavenly flowers,
35 Hear and believe! thy own importance know,
Nor bound thy narrow views to things below.
Some secret truths, from learned pride concealed,
To maids alone and children are revealed:
What though no credit doubting wits may give?
40 The fair and innocent shall still believe.
Know, then, unnumbered spirits round thee fly,
The light militia of the lower sky:
These, though unseen, are ever on the wing,
Hang o’er the box, and hover round the Ring.³
45 Think what an equipage thou hast in air,
And view with scorn two pages and a chair.⁰ *sedan chair*
As now your own, our beings were of old,
And once enclosed in woman’s beauteous mold;
Thence, by a soft transition, we repair
50 From earthly vehicles⁴ to these of air.

Think not, when woman's transient breath is fled,
That all her vanities at once are dead:
Succeeding vanities she still regards,
And though she plays no more, o'erlooks the cards.
55 Her joy in gilded chariots,0 when alive, *carriages*
And love of ombre,5 after death survive.
For when the Fair in all their pride expire,
To their first elements their souls retire:6

8. In a darkened bed, one discovered the approx-
note 9, p. 611.

imate time by a watch that chimed the hour and

6. Namely, to fire, water, earth, and air, the four
quarter-hour when the stem was pressed.

elements of the old cosmology and the several hab-

9. Air spirit. He accounts for himself in the lines
itats (in the Rosicrucian myths upon which Pope
below.

embroiders) of four different kinds of "spirit."

1. Courtier dressed for a royal birthday celebra-
Envisaging these spirits as the transmigrated souls
tion.

of different kinds of women, Pope causes terma-

2. The silver token is the coin left by a fairy or elf,
gants (scolds) to become fire spirits, or Salaman-
and the circled green is a ring of bright green grass,
ders (line 60); irresolute women to become water
supposed dancing circle of fairies.

spirits, or Nymphs (line 62); prudes, or women

3. The box is a theater box; the Ring, the circular
who delight in rejection and negation, to become
carriage course in Hyde Park.

earth spirits, or Gnomes (line 63); and coquettes

4. Mediums of existence, with a side glance at the
to become air spirits, or Sylphs (line 65). Since
fondness of young women for riding in carriages.

“nymph” could designate either a water spirit or (in

5. A popular card game, pronounced *omher*. See
literary usage) a young lady, Pope permits his water

606 / ALEXANDER POPE

The sprites of fiery terms agants in flame

60 Mount up, and take a Salamander's name.

Soft yielding minds to water glide away,

And sip, with Nymphs, their elemental tea.

The graver prude sinks down ward to a Gnome,

In search of mischief still on earth to roam.

65 The light coquettes in Sylphs aloft repair,

And sport and flutter in the fields of air.

“Know further yet; whoever fair and chaste

**Rejects mankind, is by some Sylph embrace
d: For spirits, freed from mortal laws, with ease**

**70 Assume what sexes and what shapes they
please. 7**

What guards the purity of melting maids,

**In courtly balls, and midnight masquerades
, Safe from the treacherous friend, the daring
spark, The glance by day, the whisper in the
dark,**

75 When kind occasion prompts their warm
desires,

When music softens, and when dancing
fires?

'Tis but their Sylph, the wise Celestials know,
Though Honor is the word with men below.

"Some nymphs there are, too conscious of
their face, so For life predestined to the Gnomes
'embrace.

These swell their prospects and exalt their pride,
When offers are disdained, and love denied:

Then gay ideas crowd the vacant brain,

While peers, and dukes, and all their sweep-
ing train, 85 And garters, stars, and coronets 8
appear,

And in soft sounds, your Grace's lutes their
ear.

'Tis these that early taint the female soul,

Instruct the eyes of young coquette to roll,
Teach infant cheeks a bidden blush to know,
90 And little hearts to flutter at a beau.

"Oft, when the world 0 imagine women stray,
fashionable people The Sylphs through mystic
mazes guide their way, Through all the giddy circle
they pursue,

And old impertinence 0 expel by new. *trifle*

95 What tender maid but must a victim fall

To one man's treat, but for another's ball?

When Florio speaks what virgin could withstand,
If gentle Damon 9 did not squeeze her hand?

With varying vanities, from every part,

**100 They shift the moving toys
shop of their heart;
Where wigs with wigs, with sword-knots
sword-knots strive,¹**

**Beaux banish beaux, and coaches
coaches drive.**

This erring mortals levity may call;

Oh, blind to truth! the Sylphs contrive it all.

**105 “Of these am I, who thy protection claim,
A watchful sprite, and Ariel is my name.**

**Late, as I ranged the crystal wilds of air,
spirits to claim tea (pronounced *tay*) as their native**

9. Like Florio, a conventional poetic name.

element (line 62) and to keep their former com-

1. Sword knots are ribbons tied to hilts. The verbal
pany at tea parties.

repetition and the tangled syntax recall descrip-

7. Like Milton’s angels (*Paradise Lost* 1.423 ff.).

tions of the throng and press of battle appearing in

8. Insignia of rank and court status.

English translations of classical epic.

THERAPE OF THE LOCK / 607

In the clear mirror of thy ruling star

**I saw, alas! some dread event
impend,**

**no Ere to them again² this morning
sundescend,**

**But Heaven reveals not what, or how,
or where: Warned by the Sylph,
Opious maid, beware!**

This to disclose is all thy guardian can:

Beware of all, but most beware of Man!”

lis He said; when Shock, 3 who thought she
slept too long, Leaped up, and waked his mistress
with his tongue.

'Twas then, Belinda, if report say true,

Thy eyes first opened on a billet-doux; 4

Wounds, charms, and ardors were no sooner
read, 120 But all the vision vanished from thy head.

And now, unveiled, the toilet stands displayed,
Each silver vase in mystic order laid.

First, robed in white, then nymph intent adores,
With head uncovered, the cosmetic powers
s.

125 A heavenly image in the glass 5 appears;

To that she bends, to that her eyes she rears.

The inferior priestess, at her altar's side,

Trembling begins the sacred rites of pride.

Unnumbered treasures ope at once, and here
re 130 The various offerings of the world appear;

From each shenically culls with curious toil,
And decks the goddess with the glittering spoil.

This casket India's glowing gems unlocks,

And all Arabia 6 breathes from yonder box.

135 The tortoise here and elephant unite,

Transformed to combs, the speckled and the
white.

Here files of pins extend their shining rows,

Puffs, powders, patches, Bibles, billet-doux
x.

Now awful 10 Beauty put on all its arms; *awe-*
inspiring 140 The fair each moment rises in her char-
ms,

Repairs her smiles, awakens every grace,
And calls forth all the wonders of her face;
Sees by degrees a purer blush arise,
And keener lightnings quicken in her eyes

145 The busy Sylphs surround their darling care,
These set the head, and those divide the hair,
Some fold the sleeve, whilst to others plait the
gown; And Betty's praised for labors not her own.

CANTO II

Not with more glories, in the etheral plain,^{0 sky}
The sun first rises o'er the purpled main,^{0 sea} Than
han, issuing forth, the rival of his beams⁷

Launched on the bosom of the silver Thames.

2. Broad expanse of land or sea.

tion, the "goddess" named later. Belinda presides

3. A name for lapdogs (like "Poll" for parrots; see
over the appropriate rites. Betty, her maid, is the

4.164 [p. 618]); they looked like little "shocks" of
"inferior priestess."

hair.

6. (Source of) perfumes.

4. A love letter. The affected language of the fash-

7. I.e., Belinda. She is en route to Hampton

ionable love letter is exhibited in the next line.

Court, a royal palace some twelve miles up the

5. The mirror. Her image is the object of venera-
river Thames from London.

5 Fair nymphs and well-dressed youths around her shone,
But every eye was fixed on her alone.

On her white breast a sparkling cross she wore,
Which Jews might kiss, and infidels adore.

Her lively looks a sprightly mind disclose,
10 Quick as her eyes, and as unfixed as those:

Favors to none, to all she smiles extends;
Oft she rejects, but never once offends.

Bright as the sun, her eyes the gazers strike,
And, like the sun, they shine on all alike.

15 Yet graceful ease, and sweetness void of pride,
Might hide her faults, if belles had faults to hide:

If to her share some female errors fall,

Look on her face, and you'll forget 'em all.

This nymph, to the destruction of mankind,

20 Nourished two locks which graceful hung behind

In equal curls, and well conspired to deck

With shining ringlets the smooth ivory neck.

Love in these labyrinths his slaves detains,

And mighty hearts are held in slender chains.

25 With hairy springes⁰ we the birds betray, *snares*

Slight lines of hair surprise the finny prey,

Fair tresses man's imperial race ensnare,

And beauty draws us with a single hair.

The adventurous Baron the bright locks admired,

30 He saw, he wished, and to the prize aspired.

Resolved to win, he meditates the way,

By force to ravish, or by fraud betray;

For when success a lover's toil attends,
Few ask if fraud or force attained his ends.
35 For this, ere Phoebus⁸ rose, he had implored
Propitious Heaven, and every power adored,
But chiefly Love—to Love an altar built,
Of twelve vast French romances, neatly gilt.
There lay three garters, half a pair of gloves,
40 And all the trophies of his former loves.
With tender billet-doux he lights the pyre,
And breathes three amorous sighs to raise the fire.
Then prostrate falls, and begs with ardent eyes
Soon to obtain, and long possess the prize:
45 The powers gave ear, and granted half his prayer,
The rest the winds dispersed in empty air.
But now secure the painted vessel glides,
The sunbeams trembling on the floating tides,
While melting music steals upon the sky,
50 And softened sounds along the waters die.
Smooth flow the waves, the zephyrs⁰ gently play, *west winds*
Belinda smiled, and all the world was gay.
All but the Sylph—with careful thoughts oppressed,
The impending woe sat heavy on his breast.
55 He summons straight his denizens⁰ of air; *inhabitants*

8. Apollo, Greek and Roman god of the sun.

T H E R A P E O F T H E L O C K / 6 0 9

The lucid squadrons round the sails repair:0

assemble

Soft o'er the shrouds aerial whispers breathe

That seemed but zephyrs to the train beneath.
Some to the sun their insect-wings unfold,
Waft on the breeze, or sink in clouds of gold.
Transparent forms too fine for mortal sight,
Their fluid bodies half dissolved in light,
Loose to the wind their airy garments flew,
Thin glittering textures of the filmy dew,⁹
Dipped in the richest tincture of the skies,
Where light disports in ever-mingling dyes,
While every beam new transient colors flings,
Colors that change whene'er they wave their wings.
Amid the circle, on the gilded mast,
Superior by the head was Ariel placed;
His purple pinions opening to the sun,
He raised his azure wand, and thus begun:
"Ye Sylphs and Sylphids, to your chief give ear!
Fays, Fairies, Genii, Elves, and Daemons, hear!
Ye know the spheres and various tasks assigned
By laws eternal to the aerial kind.
Some in the fields of purest ether play,
And bask and whiten in the blaze of day.
Some guide the course of wandering orbs on high,
Or roll the planets through the boundless sky.
Some less refined, beneath the moon's pale light
Pursue the stars that shoot athwart the night,
Or suck the mists in grosser air below,
Or dip their pinions in the painted bow,^o

rainbow

**Or brew fierce tempests on the wintry main,
Or o'er the glebe⁹ distill the kindly rain.**

farmland

**Others on earth o'er human race preside,
Watch all their ways, and all their actions guide:
Of these the chief the care of nations own,
And guard with arms divine the British Throne.**

**“Our humbler province is to tend the Fair,
Not a less pleasing, though less glorious care:
To save the powder from too rude a gale,
Nor let the imprisoned essences exhale;
To draw fresh colors from the vernal flowers;
To steal from rainbows e'er they drop in showers
A brighter wash;¹⁰ to curl their waving hairs,**

cosmetic lotion

**Assist their blushes, and inspire their airs;
Nay oft, in dreams invention we bestow,
To change a flounce, or add a furbelow.¹¹**

ornamental pleat

**“This day black omens threat the brightest fair,
That e'er deserved a watchful spirit's care;
Some dire disaster, or^o by force or slight,**

whether

**But what, or where, the Fates have wrapped in night:
Whether the nymph shall break Diana's law,¹
Or some frail china jar receive a flaw,**

9. The supposed material of spider webs.

1. Diana was the goddess of chastity.

610 / ALEXANDER POPE

Or stain her honor or her new brocade,
Forget her prayers, or miss a masquerade,
Or lose her heart, or necklace, at a ball;

no Or whether Heaven has doomed that Shock
2 must fall.

Haste, then, ye spirits! to your charge repair:

The fluttering fan be Zephyretta's care;

The drops⁰ to thee, Brillante, we consign; *earrings*
And, Momentilla, let the watch be thine;

115 Do thou, Crispissa,³ tend her favorite Lock;

Ariel himself shall be the guard of Shock.

“To fifty chosen Sylphs, of special note, We
trust the important charge, the petticoat;
Of that we know that sevenfold fence to
fail, 120 Though stiff with hoops, and armed with
the ribs of whale.

Form a strong line about the silver bound,

And guard the wide circumference around.

” Whatever spirit, careless of his charge,

His post neglects, or leaves the fair at large,

125 Shall feel sharp vengeance soon o’ertake his
sins,

Bestopped in vials, or transfixed with pins,

Or plunged in lakes of bitter washes lie,

Or wedged whole ages in a bodkin’s⁰ eye;

large needle’s

Gums and pomatums⁴ shall his flight restrain,

130 While clogged he beats his silken wings in
vain, Or alum styptics with contracting power

S h r i n k h i s t h i n e s s e n c e l i k e a r i v e l e d ⁰ f l o w e r :

shriveled

O r , a s I x i o n s f i x e d , t h e w r e t c h s h a l l f e e l

T h e g i d d y m o t i o n o f t h e w h i r l i n g m i l l , ⁰

cocoa mill

135 I n f u m e s o f b u r n i n g c h o c o l a t e s h a l l g l o w ,

A n d t r e m b l e a t t h e s e a t h a t f r o t h s b e l o w ! ”

H e s p o k e ; t h e s p i r i t s f r o m t h e s a i l s d e s c e n d ;

S o m e , o r b i n o r b , a r o u n d t h e n y m p h e x t e n d ;

S o m e t h r e a d t h e m a z y r i n g l e t s o f h e r h a i r ;

140 S o m e h a n g u p o n t h e p e n d a n t s o f h e r e a r :

W i t h b e a t i n g h e a r t s t h e d i r e e v e n t t h e y w a i t ,

A n x i o u s , a n d t r e m b l i n g f o r t h e b i r t h o f F a t e .

C A N T O I I I

C l o s e b y t h o s e m e a d s , ⁰ f o r e v e r c r o w n e d w i t h f l o w e r s , *meadows* W h e r e T h a m e s w i t h p r i d e s u r v e y s h i s r i s i n g t o w e r s ,

T h e r e s t a n d s a s t r u c t u r e o f m a j e s t i c f r a m e , ⁶

W h i c h f r o m t h e n e i g h b o r i n g H a m p t o n t a k e s i t s n a m e .

5 H e r e B r i t a i n ’ s s t a t e s m e n o f t h e f a l l f o r e d o o m

O f f o r e i g n t y r a n t s a n d o f n y m p h s a t h o m e ;

H e r e t h o u , g r e a t A n n a ! ⁷ w h o m t h r e e r e a l m s o b e y , D o s t s o m e t i m e s c o u n s e l t a k e — a n d s o m e t i m e s t e a .

H i t h e r t h e h e r o e s a n d t h e n y m p h s r e s o r t ,

io T o t a s t e a w h i l e t h e p l e a s u r e s o f a c o u r t ;

2. See note to 1.115 (p. 607).

5. In Greek mythology, a king punished by being

3. To “crisp” is to curl (hair).

bound eternally to a turning wheel.

4. Scented, apple-based ointments applied to the

6. Hampton Court (see note 7, p. 607).

face and hair.

7. Anne, then queen of England.

T H E R A P E O F T H E L O C K / 6 1 1

In various talk the instructive hours they passed,

Who gave the ball, or paid the visit last;

One speaks the glory of the British Queen,

And one describes a charming Indian screen;

15 A third interprets motions, looks, and eyes;

At every word a reputation dies.

Snuff,⁸ or the fan, supply each pause of chat,

With singing, laughing, ogling, and all that.

Meanwhile, declining from the noon of day,

20 The sun obliquely shoots his burning ray;

The hungry judges soon the sentence sign,

And wretches hang that jurymen may dine;

The merchant from the Exchange⁰ returns in peace, *stock market*

And the long labors of the toilet cease.

25 Belinda now, whom thirst of fame invites,

Burns to encounter two adventurous knights,

At ombre⁹ singly to decide their doom,

And swells her breast with conquests yet to come.

Straight the three bands prepare in arms⁰ to join, *combat*

30 Each band the number of the sacred nine.

Soon as she spreads her hand, the aerial guard
 Descend, and sit on each important card:
 First Ariel perched upon a Matadore,
 Then each according to the rank they bore;
 35 For Sylphs, yet mindful of their ancient race,
 Are, as when women, wondrous fond of place.
 Behold, four Kings in majesty revered,
 With hoary⁰ whiskers and a forked beard; *gray or white*
 And four fair Queens whose hands sustain a flower,
 40 The expressive emblem of their softer power;
 Four Knaves in garbs succinct,¹ a trusty band,
 Caps on their heads, and halberts² in their hand;
 And parti^o-colored troops, a shining train, *variously*
 Draw forth to combat on the velvet plain.
 45 The skillful nymph reviews her force with care;
 "Let Spades be trumps!" she said, and trumps they were
 Now move to war her sable⁰ Matadores, *black*
 In show like leaders of the swarthy Moors.
 Spadillio first, unconquerable lord!

8. Pulverized tobacco to be inhaled through the
 declared, the Matadors are, in order of value, the
 nostrils, chewed, or placed against the gums.
 ace of spades (Spadille, line 49), the deuce of
 9. This game is like three-handed bridge with
 spades (Manille, line 51), and the ace of clubs
 some features of poker added. From a deck lacking
 (Basto, line 53). The remaining spades fill out the
 8s, 9s, and 10s, nine cards are dealt to each player

trump suit. In the game here described, Belinda (line 30) and the rest put in a central pool on the leads out her high trumps (lines 49—56), but the green velvet cloth (line 44) that provides the play-suit breaks badly (line 54); the Baron retains the ing surface. A declarer, called the Ombre (*hombre*, queen (line 67), with which he presently trumps Spanish for man), commits himself to taking more her king of clubs (line 69). He then leads high dia-tricks than either of his opponents individually; monds until she is on the verge of a set (Codille, hence Belinda’s encountering two knights “singly.” line 92). But she makes her bid at the last trick The declarer, followed by the other players, then (line 94), taking his ace of hearts with her king selects discards and replenishes his hand with (line 95), this being, in ombre, the highest card in cards drawn sight unseen from the pool (line 45). the heart suit.

He proceeds to name his trumps (line 46). The

1. Hemmed up short, not flowing.

three principal trumps, called Matadors (line 47),

2. Weapons combining pike and ax on a single

always include the black aces. W h e n spades are shaft.

6 1 2 / A L E X A N D E R P O P E

50 L e d o f f t w o c a p t i v e t r u m p s , a n d s w e p t t h e board.

As many more Manillio forced to yield,
And marched a victor from the verdant field.
green Him Basto followed, but his fate more
hard

Gained but one trump and one plebeian
card.

55 With his broadsaber next, a chief in years,

The hoary Majesty of Spades appears,

Puts forth one manly leg, to sight revealed,

The rest his many-colored robe concealed.

The rebel Knave, who dares his prince engage
,jack 60 Proves the just victim of his royal rage.

Even mighty Pam, that kings and queens
o'erthrew And mowed down armies in the fights
of flog, Sad chance of war! now destitute of
aid,

Falls undistinguished by the victor Spade.

65 Thus far both armies to Belinda yield;

Now to the Baron fate inclines the field.

His warlike amazon her host invades,

The imperial consort of the crown of Spades.

The Club's black tyrant first the victim died,

70 Spite of his haughty mien^o and barbarous
pride. *expression* What boots the regal circle on his
head,

His giant limbs, in state unwieldy spread?

That long behind he trails his pompous robe.

And of all monarchs only grasps the globe?

75 The Baron now his Diamonds pours apace
;

The embroidered King who shows but half his
face, And his refulgent Queen, with powers
combined Of broken troops an easy conquest
find.

Clubs, Diamonds, Hearts, in wild disorder seen,
so With throngs promiscuous strew the level
green.

Thus when dispersed a routed army runs,

Of Asia's troops, and Afric's sable sons,

With like confusion different nations fly,

Of various habit,⁰ and of various dye,^o *dress / color*

85 The pierced battalions disunited fall

In heaps on heaps; one fate o'erwhelms them
all.

The Knave of Diamonds tries his wily arts,

And wins (oh, shameful chance!) the Queen
of Hearts.

At this, the blood the virgin's cheek forsook,

90 A livid paleness spreads o'er all her look;

She sees, and trembles at the approaching
ill, Just in the jaws of ruin, and Codille,

And now (as oft in some distemp'ered state)

On one nice⁰ trick depends the general fate.

subtle; particular 95 An Ace of Hearts steps forth: the
King unseen

Lurked in her hand, and mourned his captive Queen.

He springs to vengeance with an eager pace,

And falls like thunder on the prostrate Ace.

Then nymph exulting fills with shout the
sky, 100 The walls, the woods, and long canals⁴
reply.

3. The jack of clubs, paramount trump in the 4. Passages
between avenues of trees, game of loo.

THE RAPE OF THE LOCK / 613

O thoughtless mortals! ever blind to fate,
Too soon dejected, and too soon elate:

Sudden these honors shall be snatched away,
And cursed for ever this victorious day.

io? For lo! the board⁰ with cups and spoons is
crowned, *table* The berries crackle, and the
mill turns round; 5

On shining altars of Japan⁶ they raise

The silver lamp; the fiery spirits blaze:

From silver spouts the grateful liquors glide,
e, 110 While China's earthen⁷ receives the sm
oking tide.

At once they gratify their scent and taste,
And frequent cups prolong the rich repast

Straight over round the fair her airy band;

Some, as she sipped, the fuming liquor fan-
ned, 115 Some o'er her lap their careful plum-
es displayed, Trembling, and conscious of
the rich brocade.

Coffee (which makes the politician wise,
And sees through all things with his half-sh-
ut eyes) Sent up in vapor to the Baron's br-
ain

120 New stratagems, the radiant Lock to ga-
in.

Ah, cease, rash youth! desist ere 'tis too late,
Fear the just Gods, and think of Scylla's fate!

8

Changed to a bird, and sent to flit in air,

She dearly pays for Nisus 'injured hair!

125 But when to mischief mortals bend their will,
How soon they find fit instruments of ill!

Just then, Clarissa drew with tempting grace
A two-edged weapon from her shining case:
So ladies in romance assist their knight,
130 Present the spear, and arm him for the fight.

He takes the gift with reverence, and extends
The little engine on his fingers' ends;

This just behind Belinda's neck he spread,
As 'er the fragrant steam she bends her head.

135 Swift to the Lock a thousand sprites
repair, *sprites* A thousand wings, by turns, blow
back the hair, And thrice they twitched the
diamond in her ear, Thrice she looked back,
and thrice the foe drew near.

Just in that instant, anxious Arielsought
140 The closer recesses of the virgin's thought;
As on the nosegay⁰ in her breast reclined,
posy

He watched the ideas rising in her mind,
Sudden he viewed, in spite of all her art,
A earthly lover lurking at her heart.

145 Amazed, confused, he found his power expired,⁹

Resigned to fate, and with a sigh retired.

The Peernow spreads the glittering for
0 wide, *scissors* To enclose the Lock; now join
sit, to divide.

5. As coffee beans are roasted and ground.

Crete, who was besieging Nisus's city. For this she

6. Lacquered tables.

was turned into a seabird relentlessly pursued by

7. Ceramic cups.

an eagle.

8. In Greek mythology, Scylla cut from the head

9. Belinda, being strongly attracted to the baron of her father, Nisus, the lock of hair on which his (line 144), can no longer merely flirt. She hence life depended and gave it to her lover, Minos of passes beyond Ariel's control.

614 / A L E X A N D E R P O P E

Even then, before the fatal engine closed,

150 A wretched Sylph too fondly interposed;

Fate urged the shears, and cut the Sylph in twain

(But airy substance soon unites again):1

The meeting points the sacred hair dissever

From the fair head, forever, and forever!

155 Then flashed the living lightning from her eyes,

And screams of horror rend the affrighted skies.

Not louder shrieks to pitying heaven are cast,

When husbands, or when lapdogs breathe their last;

Or when rich china vessels fallen from high,

160 In glittering dust and painted fragments lie!

“Let wreaths of triumph now my temples twine,”

The victor cried, “the glorious prize is mine!

While fish in streams, or birds delight in air,

Or in a coach and six the British Fair,

165 As long as *Atalantis*2 shall be read,

Or the small pillow grace a lady's bed,
While visits shall be paid on solemn days,
When numerous wax-lights in bright order blaze,³
While nymphs take treats, or assignations give,
i70 So long my honor, name, and praise shall live!
What Time would spare, from Steel receives its date,⁰
termination And monuments, like men, submit to fate!
Steel could the labor of the Gods destroy,
And strike to dust the imperial towers of Troy;⁴
175 Steel could the works of mortal pride confound,
And hew triumphal arches to the ground.
What wonder then, fair nymph! thy hairs should feel,
The conquering force of unresisted Steel?"

C A N T O I V

But anxious cares the pensive nymph oppressed,
And secret passions labored in her breast.
Not youthful kings in battle seized alive,
Not scornful virgins who their charms survive,
5 Not ardent lovers robbed of all their bliss,
Not ancient ladies when refused a kiss,
Not tyrants fierce that unrepenting die,
Not Cynthia when her manteau's⁰ pinned awry, *robe is*
E'er felt such rage, resentment, and despair,
io As thou, sad virgin! for thy ravished hair.
For, that sad moment, when the Sylphs withdrew
And Ariel weeping from Belinda flew,
Umbriel,⁵ a dusky, melancholy sprite⁰ *spirit*

1. Like Milton's angels (*Paradise Lost* 6.329—31);

mythology, was built by the gods Apollo and Poseidon and destroyed by the Greeks at the end of the Trojan War.

2. Delariviere Manley's *New Atalantis* (1709), a set of memoirs that, under thin disguise, recounted actual scandals.

5. Suggesting *umbra*, shadow; and *umber*, brown.

The final *el* of this name is a further reminiscence of Milton's angels: Gabriel, Abdiel, Zophiel. (Cf. previous line.)

1.70 [p. 606] and 3.152 [above].)

4. Ancient city-state that, according to Greek

T H E R A P E O F T H E L O C K / 6 1 5

As ever sullied the fair face of light,

is Down to the central earth, his proper scene,

Repaired to search the gloomy Cave of Spleen.⁶

Swift on his sooty pinions flits the Gnome,

And in a vapor reached the dismal dome.

No cheerful breeze this sullen region knows,

20 The dreaded east is all the wind that blows.

Here in a grotto, sheltered close from air,

And screened in shades from day's detested glare,

She sighs forever on her pensive bed,

Pain at her side, and Megrim⁰ at her head. *migraine*

25 Two handmaids wait⁰ the throne: alike in place, *attend*

But differing far in figure and in face.

Here stood Ill-Nature like an ancient maid,
Her wrinkled form in black and white arrayed;
With store of prayers for mornings, nights, and noons,
30 Her hand is filled; her bosom with lampoons.⁰ *slanders*
There Affectation, with a sickly mien,^o *appearance*
Shows in her cheek the roses of eighteen,
Practiced to lisp, and hang the head aside,
Faints into airs, and languishes with pride,
35 On the rich quilt sinks with becoming woe,
Wrapped in a gown, for sickness and for show.
The fair ones feel such maladies as these,
When each new nightdress gives a new disease.
A constant vapor o'er the palace flies,
40 Strange phantoms rising as the mists arise;
Dreadful as hermit's dreams in haunted shades,
Or bright as visions of expiring maids.
Now glaring fiends, and snakes on rolling spires,⁰ *coils*
Pale specters, gaping tombs, and purple fires;
45 Now lakes of liquid gold, Elysian scenes,
And crystal domes, and angels in machines.⁷
Unnumbered throngs on every side are seen
Of bodies changed to various forms by Spleen.
Here living teapots stand, one arm held out,
50 One bent; the handle this, and that the spout:
A pipkin⁸ there, like Homer's tripod, walks;
Here sighs a jar, and there a goose pie talks;
Men prove with child, as powerful fancy works,
And maids, turned bottles, call aloud for corks.

55 Safe passed the Gnome through this fantastic band,
A branch of healing spleenwort⁹ in his hand.

Then thus addressed the Power: “Hail, wayward Queen!

6. This journey is formally equivalent to Odys-
Finch (p. 558) and Matthew Green (p. 645).

seus’s and Aeneas’s visits to the underworld.

7. These images are 1) the hallucinations of
“Spleen” refers to the h u m a n organ, the supposed
insane melancholy and 2) parodies of stage prop-
seat of melancholy; hence to melancholy itself.
erties and effects.

Believed to be induced by misty weather such as

8. An earthen pot; it walks like the three-legged
the east wind brings (lines 18—20), the condition
stools that Vulcan made for the gods in *Iliad 18*.

was also called the “vapors.” In its severer mani-

9. A kind of fern, purgative of spleen; suggesting
festations, it tended toward madness; in its milder
the golden bough that Aeneas bore as a passport
forms, it issued in peevishness and suspicion. See
to Hades in *Aeneid 6*.

the poems on “spleen” in this anthology by Anne

616 / A L E X A N D E R P O P E

Who rule the sex to fifty from fifteen:

Parent of vapors and of female wit,

Who give the hysteric or poetic fit,

On various tempers act by various ways,

Make some take physic,⁰ others scribble plays;

medicine

**Who cause the proud their visits to delay,
And send the godly in a pet^o to pray.**

fit of anger

**A nymph there is that all thy power disdains,
And thousands more in equal mirth maintains.
But oh! if e'er thy Gnome could spoil a grace,
Or raise a pimple on a beauteous face,
Like citron-waters^o matrons' cheeks inflame,**

lemon brandy

**Or change complexions at a losing game;
If e'er with airy horns I planted heads,¹
Or ruffled petticoats, or tumbled beds,
Or caused suspicion when no soul was rude,
Or discomposed the headdress of a prude,
Or e'er to costive^o lapdog gave disease,**

constipated

**Which not the tears of brightest eyes could ease,
Hear me, and touch Belinda with chagrin:^o**

annoyance

**That single act gives half the world the spleen.”
The Goddess with a discontented air
Seems to reject him though she grants his prayer.
A wondrous bag with both her hands she binds,
Like that where once Ulysses held the winds;²
There she collects the force of female lungs,
Sighs, sobs, and passions, and the war of tongues.
A vial next she fills with fainting fears,**

**Soft sorrows, melting griefs, and flowing tears.
 The Gnome rejoicing bears her gifts away,
 Spreads his black wings, and slowly mounts to day.
 Sunk in Thalestris'3 arms the nymph he found,
 Her eyes dejected and her hair unbound.
 Full o'er their heads the swelling bag he rent,
 And all the Furies issued at the vent.
 Belinda burns with more than mortal ire,
 And fierce Thalestris fans the rising fire.
 "O wretched maid!" she spreads her hands, and cried
 (While Hampton's4 echoes, "Wretched maid!" replied),
 "Was it for this you took such constant care
 The bodkin,0 comb, and essence0 to prepare?
hairpin / perfume
 For this your locks in paper durance bound,
 For this with torturing irons wreathed around?
 For this with fillets0 strained your tender head,
bands
 And bravely bore the double loads of lead?5
 Gods! shall the ravisher display your hair,
 While the fops envy, and the ladies stare!
 Honor forbid! at whose unrivaled shrine**

1. I.e., made men imagine they were being cuck-
bative woman.

olded.

4. Hampton Court's (see note 7, p. 607).

2. Aeolus, the wind god, enabled Odysseus (Ulys-

5. The means by which Belinda's locks were fash-

ses) so to contain all adverse winds in *Odyssey* 10.
ioned into a ringlet: lead strips held her curl papers
3. The name of an Amazon; hence a fierce, com-
in place.

T H E R A P E O F T H E L O C K / 6 1 7

Ease, pleasure, virtue, all, our sex resign.

Methinks already I your tears survey,

Already hear the horrid things they say,

Already see you a degraded toast,

110 And all your honor in a whisper lost!

How shall I, then, your helpless fame defend?

‘Twill then be infamy to seem your friend!

And shall this prize, the inestimable prize,

Exposed through crystal to the gazing eyes,

115 And heightened by the diamond’s circling rays,

On that rapacious hand forever blaze?

Sooner shall grass in Hyde Park Circus⁶ grow,

And wits take lodgings in the sound of Bow;⁷

Sooner let earth, air, sea, to chaos fall,

120 Men, monkeys, lapdogs, parrots, perish all!”

She said; then raging to Sir Plume repairs,

And bids her beau demand the precious hairs

(Sir Plume of amber snuffbox justly vain,

And the nice⁰ conduct⁰ of a clouded cane). *precise / handling*

125 With earnest eyes, and round unthinking face,

He first the snuffbox⁸ opened, then the case,

And thus broke out—“My Lord, why, what the devil!

Zounds! O damn the lock! 'fore Gad, you must be civil! *God's wounds*

Plague on't! 'tis past a jest—nay prithee, pox!

130 Give her the hair"—he spoke, and rapped his box.

"It grieves me much," replied the Peer again,

"Who speaks so well should ever speak in vain.

But by this Lock, this sacred Lock I swear

(Which never more shall join its parted hair;

135 Which never more its honors shall renew,

Clipped from the lovely head where late it grew),

That while my nostrils draw the vital air,

This hand, which won it, shall forever wear."

He spoke, and speaking, in proud triumph spread

140 The long-contended honors⁰ of her head. *ornaments*

But Umbriel, hateful Gnome, forbears not so;

He breaks the vial whence the sorrows flow.

Then see! the nymph in beauteous grief appears,

Her eyes half languishing, half drowned in tears;

145 On her heaved bosom hung her drooping head,

Which with a sigh she raised, and thus she said:

"Forever cursed be this detested day,

Which snatched my best, my favorite curl away!

Happy! ah, ten times happy had I been,

150 If Hampton Court these eyes had never seen!

Yet am not I the first mistaken maid,

By love of courts to numerous ills betrayed.

Oh, had I rather unadmired remained

In some lone isle, or distant northern land;

6. The fashionable carriage course (the “Ring” of Le Bow, in the unfashionable commercial section 1.44). of London.

7. I.e., the sound of the church bells of St. Mary 8. See note 8, p. 611.

618 / ALEXANDER POPE

155 Where the gilt chariot never marks the way,
Where none learn ombre, none e'er taste bohea!
° fine tea There kept my charms conceal'd
From mortal eye, Like roses that in deserts bloom
and die.

What moved my mind with youth full of storm?
O am?

160 Oh, had I stay'd, and said my prayers at home!

'Twas this the morning omens seem'd to tell,
Thrice from my trembling hand the patch-box
fell; The tottering chin shook without wind,
and,

Nay, Poll sat mute, and Shock was most unkind!

165 A Sylph to warn'd me of the threats of fate,
In mystic visions, now believ'd too late!

See the poor remnant of these slighted hairs!
s!

My hands shall rend what e'er thy rapine spares.
res.

These in two sable rings let staught to break,
170 Once given new beauties to the snowy neck;
; The sister lock now sits uncouth, alone,

And in its fellow's fate foresees its own;

Uncurl'd its hands, the fatal shears demands,
And tempt oncemore thy sacrilegious hands.
ds.

175 Oh, hadst thou, cruel! been content to
seize Hairs less insight, or any hairs but these!
”

CANTO v

She said: the pitying audience melt in tears.

But Fate and Jove^o had stopped the Baron's
ears. *chief Roman god* In vain Thalestris with re-
proach sails, For who can move when fair Bel-
inda fails?

5 No half so fixed the Trojan could remain,
While Annabegged and Didoraged in vain. 1

Then grave Clarissa graceful waved her fan;
Silence ensued, and thus the nymph began:

” Say why are beauties praised and honored
most, is the wiseman's passion, and the vain-
man's toast?

Why decked with all that land and sea afford,
Why angels called, and angel-like adored?

Why round our coaches crowd the white-glo-
ved beaux, Why bow the side box² from its in-
most rows?

15 How vain are all these glories, all our pains,
Unless good sense preserve what beauty gains;
That men may say when we the front box gra-
ce,

‘ Behold the first in virtue as in face! ‘

Oh! if to dance all night, and dress all day,

20 Charmed the smallpox, or chased old age a-
way, Who would not scorn what housewife's
ares produce, Or who would learn none earth-
ly thing of use?

To patch, nay ogle, might become a saint,

Nor could it sure be such as in to paint. 0 *apply*
cosmetics 25 But since, alas! frail beauty must de-

c a y ,

9. A box for ornamental patches of court plaster
Italy, though the enamored queen Dido raved and
worn to accent the face.

her sister Anna pleaded with him to stay.

1. Aeneas was determined to leave Carthage for

2. I.e., at the theater.

T H E R A P E O F T H E L O C K / 6 1 9

Curled or uncurled, since locks will turn to gray;

Since painted, or not painted, all shall fade,

And she who scorns a man must die a maid;

What then remains but well our power to use,

30 And keep good humor still whate'er we lose?

And trust me, dear, good humor can prevail

When airs, and flights, and screams, and scolding fail.

Beauties in vain their pretty eyes may roll;

Charms strike the sight, but merit wins the soul.“3

35 So spoke the dame, but no applause ensued;

Belinda frowned, Thalestris called her prude.

”To arms, to arms!” the fierce virago cries,

And swift as lightning to the combat flies.

All side in parties, and begin the attack;

40 Fans clap, silks rustle, and tough whalebones crack;

Heroes' and heroines' shouts confusedly rise,

And bass and treble voices strike the skies.

No common weapons in their hands are found,

Like Gods they fight, nor dread a mortal wound.

45 So when bold Homer makes the Gods engage,

And heavenly breasts with human passions rage;
'Gainst Pallas, Mars; Latona, Hermes arms;⁴
And all Olympus rings with loud alarms:
Jove's thunder roars, heaven trembles all around,
50 Blue Neptune⁵ storms, the bellowing deeps resound:
Earth shakes her nodding towers, the ground gives way,
And the pale ghosts start at the flash of day!
Triumphant Umbriel on a sconce's⁰ height *mounted*
candlestick
Clapped his glad wings, and sat to view the fight:
55 Propped on the bodkin spears, the sprites⁰ survey *spirits*
The growing combat, or assist the fray.
While through the press enraged Thalestris flies,
And scatters death around from both her eyes,
A beau and witling⁰ perished in the throng, *one of little wit*
60 One died in metaphor, and one in song.
"O cruel nymph! a living death I bear,"
Cried Dapperwit, and sunk beside his chair.
A mournful glance Sir Fopling upwards cast,
"Those eyes are made so killing"—was his last.
65 Thus on Maeander's⁶ flowery margin lies
The expiring swan, and as he sings he dies.⁷
When bold Sir Plume had drawn Clarissa down,
Chloe stepped in, and killed him with a frown;
She smiled to see the doughty hero slain,
70 But, at her smile, the beau revived again.
Now Jove suspends his golden scales in air,⁸
3. Clarissa's address parallels—indeed, closely

to mirror the press of battle.

parodies Pope's 1709 translation of—a speech in

5. Neptune is the Roman god of the sea.

Iliad 12, wherein Sarpedon tells Glaucus that, as

6. A river in Asia Minor noted for its wandering
leaders of the army, they must justify their privilege
course.

by extraordinary prowess.

7. The swan was said to sing only before its death.

4. Mars arms against Pallas, and Hermes against

8. He so weighs the fortunes of war in classical
Latona, in *Iliad* 20. The tangled syntax is supposed
epic.

620 / ALEXANDER POPE

Weighs the men's wits against the lady's hair;
The doubtful beam long nods from side to side;
At length the wits mount up, the hairs subside.

75 See, fierce Belinda on the Baron flies,
With more than usual lightning in her eyes;
Nor feared the chief the unequal fight to try,
Who sought no more than on his foe to die.⁹
But this bold lord with manly strength endued,
so She with one finger and a thumb subdued:
Just where the breath of life his nostrils drew,
A charge of snuff the wily virgin threw;
The Gnomes direct, to every atom just,
The pungent grains of titillating dust.

85 Sudden, with starting tears each eye o'erflows,

And the high dome re-echoes to his nose.
“Now meet thy fate,” incensed Belinda cried,
And drew a deadly bodkin¹ from her side.
(The same, his ancient personage to deck,
90 Her great-great-grandsire wore about his neck,
In three seal rings; which after, melted down,
Formed a vast buckle for his widow’s gown:
Her infant grandame’s whistle next it grew,
The bells she jingled, and the whistle blew;
95 Then in a bodkin graced her mother’s hairs,
Which long she wore, and now Belinda wears.)
“Boast not my fall,” he cried, “insulting foe!
Thou by some other shalt be laid as low.
Nor think to die dejects my lofty mind:
100 All that I dread is leaving you behind!
Rather than so, ah, let me still survive,
And burn in Cupid’s flames—but burn alive.”
“Restore the Lock!” she cries; and all around
“Restore the Lock!” the vaulted roofs rebound.
105 Not fierce Othello in so loud a strain
Roared for the handkerchief that caused his pain.²
But see how oft ambitious aims are crossed,
And chiefs contend till all the prize is lost!
The lock, obtained with guilt, and kept with pain,
110 In every place is sought, but sought in vain:
With such a prize no mortal must be blessed,
So Heaven decrees! with Heaven who can contest?
Some thought it mounted to the lunar sphere,

Since all things lost on earth are treasured there.

115 There heroes' wits are kept in ponderous vases,
And beaux' in snuffboxes and tweezer cases.

There broken vows and deathbed alms are found,
And lovers' hearts with ends of riband bound,

The courtier's promises, and sick man's prayers,

120 The smiles of harlots, and the tears of heirs,

9. I.e., to experience sexual bliss. rings" (line 91) are for
impressing seals on letters 1. Here an ornamental hairpin. Its
history sug- and legal documents,

gests that of Agamemnon's scepter in *Iliad* 2. "Seal 2. In
Othello 3.4.

E P I S T L E T O M i s s B L O U N T / 62 1

Cages for gnats, and chains to yoke a flea,

Dried butterflies, and tomes of casuistry.³

But trust the Muse—she saw it upward rise,

Though marked by none but quick, poetic eyes

125 (So Rome's great founder to the heavens withdrew,

To Proculus alone confessed in view);⁴

A sudden star, it shot through liquid⁰ air, *clear*

And drew behind a radiant trail of hair.

Not Berenice's locks first rose so bright,⁵

130 The heavens bespangling with disheveled light.

The Sylphs behold it kindling as it flies,

And pleased pursue its progress through the skies.

This the beau monde shall from the Mall⁶ survey,

And hail with music its propitious ray.

135 This the blest lover shall for Venus⁷ take,

And send up vows from Rosamonda's Lake.

**This Partridge soon shall view in cloudless skies,
When next he looks through Galileo's eyes;⁸
And hence the egregious wizard shall foredoom
140 The fate of Louis, and the fall of Rome.
Then cease, bright nymph! to mourn thy ravished hair,
Which adds new glory to the shining sphere!
Not all the tresses that fair head can boast,
Shall draw such envy as the Lock you lost.
145 For, after all the murders of your eye,
When, after millions slain, yourself shall die:
When those fair suns shall set, as set they must,
And all those tresses shall be laid in dust,
This Lock the Muse shall consecrate to fame,
150 And 'midst the stars inscribe Belinda's name.
1712 1714**

Epistle to Miss Blount⁹

On Her Leaving the Town, after the Coronation

**As some fond virgin, whom her mother's care
Drags from the town to wholesome country air,
Just when she learns to roll a melting eye,
And hear a spark,⁰ yet think no danger nigh; *beau, gallant*
5 From the dear man unwilling she must sever,
Yet takes one kiss before she parts forever:**

3. Books of seemingly solid but false reasoning.

(line 136), was in St. James's Park.

4. According to Livy's *Early History of Rome*, the

7. Greek goddess of love and beauty.

empire's "founder" and first king, Romulus, van-

8. *Galileo's eyes*: the telescope. *Partridge*: John Partridge, a London astrologer who predicted calamities for the enemies of England and Protestants. Some of Pope's contemporaries had satirized Partridge's annually published predictions in 1708.

5. The locks that the ancient Egyptian queen Berenice dedicated to her husband's safe return were

9. Teresa Blount, sister of Pope's lifelong friend Martha Blount. The "coronation" was that of

6. A fashionable walk that, like Rosamonda's Lake George I (1714).

6 2 2 / A L E X A N D E R P O P E

Thus from the world fair Zephalinda¹ flew,

Saw others happy, and with sighs withdrew;
Not that their pleasures caused her discontent;
She sighed not that they stayed, but that she went.

She went to plain-work,^o and to purling² brooks,
needlework

Old-fashioned halls, dull aunts, and croaking rooks:³
She went from opera, park, assembly, play,
To morning walks, and prayers three hours a day;
To part her time 'twixt reading and bohea,^o fine tea

To muse, and spill her solitary tea,
Or o'er cold coffee trifle with the spoon,
Count the slow clock, and dine exact at noon;⁴
Divert her eyes with pictures in the fire,
Hum half a tune, tell stories to the squire;
Up to her godly garret after seven,
There starve and pray, for that's the way to heaven.
Some squire, perhaps, you take delight to rack,⁰ *torture*
Whose game is whist, whose treat a toast in sack;⁰ *wine,*
sherry
Who visits with a gun, presents you birds,
Then gives a smacking buss,^o and cries—"No words!" *kiss*
Or with his hounds comes hollowing from the stable,
Makes love with nods and knees beneath a table;
Whose laughs are hearty, though his jests are coarse,
And loves you best of all things—but his horse.
In some fair evening, on your elbow laid,
You dream of triumphs in the rural shade;
In pensive thought recall the fancied scene,
See coronations rise on every green:
Before you pass the imaginary sights
Of lords and earls and dukes and gartered knights,
While the spread fan o'er shades your closing eyes;
Then gives one flirt,⁵ and all the vision flies.
Thus vanish scepters, coronets, and balls,
And leave you in lone woods, or empty walls!
So when your slave,⁶ at some dear idle time
(Not plagued with headaches or the want of rhyme)
Stands in the streets, abstracted from the crew,

**And while he seems to study, thinks of you;
 Just when his fancy points⁷ your sprightly eyes,
 Or sees the blush of soft Parthenia⁸ rise,
 Gay⁹ pats my shoulder, and you vanish quite;
 Streets, chairs,⁰ and coxcombs¹ rush upon my sight; *sedan
 chairs* Vexed to be still in town, I knit my brow,
 Look sour, and hum a tune—as you may now.**

1 7 1 7

1. A fanciful name adopted by Miss Blount.

6. I.e., the speaker, Pope.

2. Gently rippling.

7. Focuses or zeroes in on.

3. Crowlike birds.

8. Martha Blount.

4. While fashionable Londoners dined at three or

9. The poet John Gay (1685-1732; see pp. 594-
 four o'clock, the old-fashioned and rustic might
 96), Pope's friend.

have dined at noon.

1. Dandies, fops.

5. I.e., suddenly opens and closes her fan.

**A N E S S A Y O N M A N , I N F O U R E P I S T L E S / 6
 2 3**

*From An Essay on Man, in Four Epistles*²

**T O H E N R Y S T . J O H N , L O R D B O L I N G B R O
 K E 3**

**From Epistle 1. Of the Nature and State of Man, with Respect
 to the Universe**

Awake, my St. John! leave all meaner things

To low ambition, and the pride of kings.

Let us (since life can little more supply

Than just to look about us and to die)

5 Expatiate⁰ free o'er all this scene of man;

range; expound

A mighty maze! but not without a plan;

A wild, where weeds and flowers promiscuous shoot,

Or garden, tempting with forbidden fruit.

Together let us beat this ample field,

10 Try what the open, what the covert yield;

The latent⁰ tracts,⁰ the giddy heights, explore

hidden / areas

Of all who blindly creep, or sightless soar;

Eye Nature's walks, shoot folly as it flies,

And catch the manners living as they rise;

15 Laugh where we must, be candid⁰ where we can;

kindly, frank

But vindicate the ways of God to man.

1. Say first, of God above, or man below,

What can we reason, but from what we know?

Of man, what see we but his station here,

20 From which to reason, or to which refer?

Through worlds unnumbered though the God be known,

'Tis ours to trace him only in our own.

He, who through vast immensity can pierce,

See worlds on worlds compose one universe,

25 Observe how system into system runs,

What other planets circle other suns,

**What varied being peoples every star,
May tell why Heaven has made us as we are.
But of this frame the bearings, and the ties,
30 The strong connections, nice dependencies,
Gradations just, has thy pervading soul
Looked through? or can a part contain the whole?**

2. In this ambitious poem (from which we include know what condition and relation it is placed in, the first four parts of epistle 1), Pope employs what and what is the proper end and purpose of its he calls an “epistolary way of writing’ to describe being.” Pope tells the reader that he chooses verse humanity’s place in the “universal system.” Explicitly taking up (and revising) Milton’s ambition to and is more striking and memorable than prose.

“justify the ways of God to men” (*Paradise Lost*

3. English statesman (1678-1751), secretary of 1.26; see p. 422), Pope states in a prefatory address state in the Tory ministry of 1710—14; now out of to the reader that he will initially consider “man in political office. He became close friends with Pope the abstract, his Nature and his State, since, to after settling near him at Dawley farm. St. John prove any moral duty, to enforce any moral pre- was pronounced *sin-jun*—a fact important for cept, or to examine the perfection or imperfection scanning the poem’s first line.

of any creature whatsoever, it is necessary first to

6 2 4 / A L E X A N D E R P O P E

Is the great chain, that draws all to agree,

And drawn supports, upheld by God, or thee?⁴

35 2. Presumptuous man! the reason wouldst thou find,

Why formed so weak, so little, and so blind?

First, if thou canst, the harder reason guess,

Why formed no weaker, blinder, and no less!

Ask of thy mother earth, why oaks are made

40 Taller or stronger than the weeds they shade?

Or ask of yonder argent⁰ fields above, *silvery*

Why Jove's satellites⁵ are less than Jove?

Of systems possible, if 'tis confessed

That Wisdom Infinite must form the best,

45 Where all must full or not coherent be,

And all that rises, rise in due degree;

Then, in the scale of reasoning life, 'tis plain,

There must be, somewhere, such a rank as man:

And all the question (wrangle e'er so long)

50 Is only this, if God has placed him wrong?

Respecting man, whatever wrong we call,

May, must be right, as relative to all.⁶

In human works, though labored on with pain,

A thousand movements scarce one purpose gain;

55 In God's, one single can its end produce;

Yet serves to second too some other use.

So man, who here seems principal alone,

Perhaps acts second to some sphere unknown,

Touches some wheel, or verges to some goal;
60 'Tis but a part we see, and not a whole.
When the proud steed shall know why man restrains
His fiery course, or drives him o'er the plains;
When the dull ox, why now he breaks the clod,^o *earth*
Is now a victim, and now Egypt's god:
65 Then shall man's pride and dullness comprehend
His actions', passions', being's use and end;
Why doing, suffering, checked, impelled; and why
This hour a slave, the next a deity.
Then say not man's imperfect, Heaven in fault;
70 Say rather, man's as perfect as he ought;^o *ought to be*
His knowledge measured to his state and place,
His time a moment, and a point his space.
If to be perfect in a certain sphere,
What matter, soon or late, or here or there?⁷
75 The blest today is as completely so,
As who^o began a thousand years ago. *whoever*

4. The Great Chain of Being is a visual metaphor
other parts of the Chain of Being.
for a divinely inspired hierarchy that ranks all

7. Lines 73-74 are compressed in syntax and in
forms of life from highest to lowest.
thought. A possible paraphrase: If perfection is

5. The planets. Jove (Jupiter) was the chief god of
defined as a condition of completeness measured
Roman mythology.
by specific time and place, then variations of time

6. I.e., what seems wrong in relation to human-
and place do not affect this ideal.

kind may, indeed must, be right relative to the

AN ESSAY ON MAN, IN FOUR EPISTLES / 6
25

3. Heaven from all creatures hides the book of Fate,

All but the page prescribed, their present state:

From brutes what men, from men what spirits know:

so Or who could suffer being here below?

The lamb thy riot dooms to bleed today,

Had he thy reason, would he skip and play?

Pleased to the last, he crops the flowery food,

And licks the hand just raised to shed his blood.

85 O blindness to the future! kindly given,

That each may fill the circle marked by Heaven:

Who sees with equal eye, as God of all,

A hero perish, or a sparrow fall,

Atoms or systems⁰ into ruin hurled. *solar systems*

90 And now a bubble burst, and now a world.

Hope humbly then; with trembling pinions soar;

Wait the great teacher Death, and God adore!

What future bliss, he gives not thee to know,

But gives that hope to be thy blessing now.

95 Hope springs eternal in the human breast:

Man never is, but always to be blest:

The soul, uneasy and confined from home,

Rests and expatiates in a life to come.

Lo! the poor Indian, whose untutored mind

100 Sees God in clouds, or hears him in the wind;
His soul proud Science never taught to stray
Far as the solar walk, or milky way;
Yet simple Nature to his hope has given,
Behind the cloud-topped hill, an humbler heaven;
105 Some safer world in depth of woods embraced,
Some happier island in the watery waste,
Where slaves once more their native land behold,
No fiends torment, no Christians thirst for gold!
To be, contents his natural desire,
no He asks no angel's wing, no seraph's^o fire; *high-ranking*
angel's But thinks, admitted to that equal sky,
His faithful dog shall bear him company.

4. Go, wiser thou! and, in thy scale of sense,
Weigh thy opinion against Providence;
115 Call imperfection what thou fancy'st such,
Say, here he gives too little, there too much;
Destroy all creatures for thy sport or gust,^o *taste*
Yet cry, if man's unhappy, God's unjust;
If man alone engross not Heav'n's high care,
120 Alone made perfect here, immortal there:
Snatch from his hand the balance and the rod,
Rejudge his justice, be the God of God!
In pride, in reasoning pride, our error lies;
All quit their sphere, and rush into the skies.
125 Pride still is aiming at the blest abodes,
Men would be angels, angels would be gods.
Aspiring to be gods, if angels fell,

626 / ALEXANDER POPE

Aspiring to be angels, men rebel:

And who but wishes to invert the laws

130 Of order, sins against the Eternal Cause.

\$\$\$

1733

Epistle to Dr. Arbuthnot⁸

p. Shut, shut the door, good John!⁹ (fatigued, I said),

Tie up the knocker, say I'm sick, I'm dead.

The Dog Star¹ rages! nay 'tis past a doubt

All Bedlam, or Parnassus,² is let out:

Fire in each eye, and papers in each hand,

They rave, recite, and madden round the land.

What walls can guard me, or what shades can hide?

They pierce my thickets, through my grot³ they glide,

By land, by water, they renew the charge,

They stop the chariot,⁰ and they board the barge.⁴

carriage

No place is sacred, not the church is free;

Even Sunday shines no Sabbath day to me:

Then from the Mints walks forth the man of rhyme,

Happy to catch me just at dinner time.

Is there a parson, much bemused in beer,

A maudlin poetess, a rhyming peer,

A clerk foredoomed his father's soul to cross,

Who pens a stanza when he should engross?⁶

Is there who," locked from ink and paper, scrawls

one who

W i t h desperate charcoal round his darkened walls?

All fly to Twit'nam,⁰ and in humble strain

Twickenham

Apply to me to keep t h e m mad or vain.

Arthur,⁷ w h o s e giddy son neglects the laws,

Imputes to me and my damned works the cause:

Poor Cornus⁸ sees his frantic wife elope,

And curses wit, and poetry, and Pope.

Friend to my life (which did not you prolong,

The world had wanted many an idle song)

W h a t drop or nostrum⁰ can this plague remove?

drug

8. John Arbuthnot (1667-1735), former physician to Queen Anne, was Pope's physician, and *Bedlam*: London's Bethlehem Hospital for the friend and literary collaborator of Pope, Swift, and insane.

Gay. (See Swift's "Verses on the Death of Dr.

3. Pope's "grotto," one entrance to the grounds of Swift, D.S.P.D.," esp. lines 53-58 [p. 579].) He his villa at Twickenham.

had asked Pope to moderate his attacks on his per-

4. Pope often traveled from Twickenham to London and literary enemies and was hence a logical person to whom to address an apology for writing

5. A sanctuary for debtors. They emerged on Sun-

satire.

day, being everywhere immune from arrest on that

9. John Serle, Pope's servant.

day.

1. The summer star Sirius, attendant upon crazing

6. Prepare legal documents.

heat. In ancient Rome, late summer was a season

7. Arthur Moore, whose son, the playwright James for public recitations of poetry.

Moore Smythe, had plagiarized some lines from

2. Mt. Parnassus, the haunt of the Muses (in Pope.

Greek mythology, nine sister goddesses who pre-

8. From *cornu*, Latin for horn; hence a cuckold.

EPISTLE TO DR. ARBUTHNOT / 627

Or which must end me, a fool's wrath or love?

A dire dilemma! either way I' m sped,^o *ruined*

If foes, they write, if friends, they read me dead.

Seized and tied down to judge, h o w wretched I!

W h o can't be silent, and w h o will not lie.

To laugh were want^o of goodness and of grace, *a lack*

And to be grave exceeds all power of face.

I sit with sad^o civility, I read *sober*

With honest anguish and an aching head,

And drop at last, but in unwilling ears,

This saving counsel, "Keep your piece nine years."⁹

"Nine years!" cries he, w h o high in Drury Lane,¹

Lulled by soft zephyrs^o through the broken pane, *winds*

Rhymes ere he wakes, and prints before term^o ends, *the publishing season* Obliged by hunger and request of friends:

"The piece, you think, is incorrect? why, take it,

I'm all submission, what you'd have it, make it."

Three things another's modest wishes bound,

My friendship, and a prologue, and ten pound.

Pitholeon² sends to me: “You know his Grace,
 I want a patron; ask him for a place.”
 Pitholeon libeled me—“but here’s a letter
 Informs you, sir, ‘twas w h e n he knew no better.
 Dare you refuse him? Curll³ invites to dine,
 He’ll write a *Journal*, or he’ll turn divine.”⁴
 Bless me! a packet.—” ‘Tis a stranger sues,
 A virgin tragedy, an orphan Muse.”
 If I dislike it, “Furies, death, and rage!”
 If I approve, “Commend it to the stage.”
 There (thank my stars) my whole c o m m i s s i o n ends,
 T h e players and I are, luckily, no friends.
 Fired that the h o u s e⁰ reject him, ” ‘Sdeath, I’ll print it,
playhouse And shame the fools—Your interest, sir, with
 Lintot!“⁵
 Lintot, dull rogue, will think your price too m u c h .
 “Not, sir, if you revise it, and retouch.”
 All my demurs but double his attacks;
 At last he whispers, “Do; and we go snacks.”⁰ *shares*
 Glad of a quarrel, straight I clap the door,
 “Sir, let me see your works and you no more.”
 ‘Tis sung, w h e n Midas’ ears began to spring
 (Midas, a sacred person and a king),
 His very minister w h o spied t h e m first
 (S o m e say his queen) was forced to speak, or burst.⁶

9. Horace, *Ars Poetica* (lines 386-89).

writing.

1. The theater district, where the speaker lives in

5. Bernard Lintot, an early publisher of Pope.

a garret.

6. According to Greek mythology, King Midas,

2. “A foolish poet of Rhodes, who pretended much preferring Pan’s music to Apollo’s, was given ass’s to Greek” [Pope’s note]. He stands for Leonard ears by the affronted god. His barber (in Chaucer’s Welsted, translator of Longinus and an enemy of version of the tale, his wife) discovered the ears Pope’s.

and, fairly bursting with the secret, whispered it

3. Edmund Curll, an unscrupulous publisher, into a hole in the ground. Here, Pope suggests that derided in Pope’s *Dunciad*.

Prime Minister Walpole and Queen Caroline know

4. Referring to attacks on Pope in *The London Journal* and (perhaps) to Welsted’s theological that George II is an ass.

Journal and (perhaps) to Welsted’s theological

6 2 8 / A L E X A N D E R P O P E

And is not mine, my friend, a sorer case,

When every coxcomb perks them in my face?

75 A. Good friend, forbear! you deal in dangerous things.

I’d never name queens, ministers, or kings;

Keep close to ears, and those let asses prick;

‘Tis nothing P. Nothing? if they bite and kick?

Out with it, *Dunciad!* let the secret pass,

so That secret to each fool, that he’s an ass:

The truth once told (and wherefore should we lie?)

The queen of Midas slept, and so may I.

You think this cruel? take it for a rule,
No creature smarts⁰ so little as a fool. *hurts*
85 Let peals of laughter, Codrus!⁷ round thee break,
Thou unconcerned canst hear the mighty crack.
Pit, box, and gallery in convulsions hurled,
Thou stand'st unshook amidst a bursting world.
Who shames a scribbler? break one cobweb through,
90 He spins the slight, self-pleasing thread anew:
Destroy his fib or sophistry,⁸ in vain;
The creature's at his dirty work again,
Throned in the center of his thin designs,
Proud of a vast extent of flimsy lines.
95 Whom have I hurt? has poet yet or peer
Lost the arched eyebrow or Parnassian⁹ sneer?
And has not Colley¹ still his lord and whore?
His butchers Henley? his freemasons Moore?²
Does not one table Bavius still admit?
100 Still to one bishop Philips seem a wit?
Still Sappho A. Hold! for God's sake—you'll offend.
No names—be calm—learn prudence of a friend.
I too could write, and I am twice as tall;
But foes like these! p. One flatterer's worse than all.
105 Of all mad creatures, if the learn'd are right,
It is the slaver⁰ kills, and not the bite. *spittle*
A fool quite angry is quite innocent:
Alas! 'tis ten times worse when they repent.
One dedicates in high heroic prose,
110 And ridicules beyond a hundred foes;

**One from all Grub Street³ will my fame defend,
And, more abusive, calls himself my friend.**

**This prints my letters,⁴ that expects a bribe,
And others roar aloud, “Subscribe, subscribe!”⁵**

**115 There are, who to my person pay their court:
I cough like Horace, and, though lean, am short;**

7. Ancient Roman poet ridiculed by Virgil and referred to by Virgil. The bishop of Armagh Juvenal.

employed Ambrose Philips (line 100; called

8. Seemingly solid but flawed reasoning.

“Namby-Pamby” by the wits) as his secretary.

9. Pertaining to poetry and the Muses.

“Sappho” (line 101) is the poet Lady Mary Wortley

1. Colley Cibber, poet laureate.

Montagu (1689-1762; see pp. 639-45).

2. John Henley (known as “Orator” Henley) was

3. The traditional haunt of hack writers.

an independent preacher with a mass following.

4. As Curll had done without permission.

James Moore Smythe was a member of the

5. Pay for copies in advance of publication.

Masonic order. Bavius (line 99) was a bad poet

EPISTLE TO DR. ARBUTHNOT / 629

Amnon’s great son⁶ one shoulder had too high,

Such Ovid’s nose, and “Sir! you have an eye—”

Go on, obliging creatures, make me see

120 All that disgraced my betters met in me.

Say for my comfort, languishing in bed,
“Just so immortal Maro⁰ held his head”: *Virgil*
And when I die, be sure you let me know
Great Homer died three thousand years ago.
125 Why did I write? what sin to me unknown
Dipped me in ink, my parents’, or my own?
As yet a child, nor yet a fool to fame,
I lisped in numbers,⁰ for the numbers came. *verses*
I left no calling for this idle trade,
130 No duty broke, no father disobeyed.
The Muse but served to ease some friend, not wife,
To help me through this long disease, my life,
To second, Arbuthnot! thy art and care,
And teach the being⁰ you preserved, to bear.⁰ *life / endure*
135 A. But why then publish? **P.** Granville the polite,⁷
And knowing Walsh, would tell me I could write;
Well-natured Garth inflamed with early praise,
And Congreve loved, and Swift endured my lays;
The courtly Talbot, Somers, Sheffield, read;
140 Even mitered Rochester⁸ would nod the head,
And St. John’s⁹ self (great Dryden’s friends before)
With open arms received one poet more.
Happy my studies, when by these approved!
Happier their author, when by these beloved!
145 From these the world will judge of men and books,
Not from the Burnets, Oldmixons, and Cookes.¹
Soft were my numbers; who could take offense
While pure description held the place of sense?

Like gentle Fanny's² was my flowery theme,
 150 A painted mistress, or a purling⁰ stream. *murmuring*
 Yet then did Gildon³ draw his venal quill;
 I wished the man a dinner, and sat still.
 Yet then did Dennis⁴ rave in furious fret;
 I never answered, I was not in debt.
 155 If want⁰ provoked, or madness made the m print, *lack*
 I waged no war with Bedlam or the Mint.⁵
 Did some more sober critic come abroad?
 If wrong, I smiled; if right, I kissed⁰ the rod.⁰ *accepted*
/punishment
 Pains, reading, study are their just pretense,
 6. Alexander the Great was called the son, or
 1. Thomas Burnet, John Oldmixon, and Arthur
 descendant, of the supreme Libyan god, Ammon.
 Cooke had all attacked Pope or his works.
 7. There follow the names of poets and men of
 2. Lord Hervey, satirized as Sporus in lines 305 ff.
 letters, Pope's early friends. They were literary
 3. Charles Gildon, a critic who had, as Pope
 elder statesmen, chiefly, who had befriended John
 believed, written against him "venally," to curry
 Dryden (1631-1700; see pp. 500-526) in his later
 favor with the essayist and poet Joseph Addison.
 years.
 4. John Dennis, who wrote a furious condemna-
 8. The bishop of Rochester (the miter being a
 tion of Pope's *Essay on Criticism*.

bishop's hat).

5. See note 2 to line 4 and note 5 to line 13 above.

9. Pronounced *sm-jin's*.

630 / ALEXANDER POPE

160 And all they want is spirit, taste, and sense.

Commas and points they set exactly right,

And 'twere a sin to rob them of their mite.^o *small coin*

Yet ne'er one sprig of laurel graced these ribalds,

From slashing Bentley down to piddling Tibbalds.⁶

165 Each wight^o who reads not, and but scans and spells,
man

Each word-catcher that lives on syllables,

Even such small critics some regard may claim,

Preserved in Milton's or in Shakespeare's name.

Pretty! in amber to observe the forms

170 Of hairs, or straws, or dirt, or grubs, or worms!

The things, we know, are neither rich nor rare,

But wonder how the devil they got there.

Were others angry? I excused them too;

Well might they rage; I gave them but their due.

175 A man's true merit 'tis not hard to find;

But each man's secret standard in his mind,

That casting weight⁷ pride adds to emptiness,

This, who can gratify? for who can guess?

The bard whom pilfered pastorals renown,

iso Who turns a Persian tale for half a crown,⁸

Just writes to make his barrenness appear,

And strains from hard-bound brains eight lines a year:

He, who still wanting, though he lives on theft,
Steals much, spends little, yet has nothing left;
185 And he who now to sense, now nonsense leaning,
Means not, but blunders round about a meaning:
And he whose fustian's⁰ so sublimely bad, *pretentious*
writing's
It is not poetry, but prose run mad:
All these, my modest satire bade translate,
190 And owned that nine such poets made a Tate.⁹
How did they fume, and stamp, and roar, and chafe!
And swear, not Addison¹ himself was safe.
Peace to all such! but were there one whose fires
True Genius kindles, and fair Fame inspires;
195 Blessed with each talent and each art to please,
And born to write, converse, and live with ease:
Should such a man, too fond to rule alone,
Bear, like the Turk, no brother near the throne;²
View him with scornful, yet with jealous eyes,
200 And hate for arts that caused himself to rise;
Damn with faint praise, assent with civil leer,
And without sneering, teach the rest to sneer;
Willing to wound, and yet afraid to strike,

6. Richard Bentley, a classical scholar, had edited
competed with the youthful Pope as a pastoral
Paradise Lost with undue license on the grounds
poet; author of *Persian Tales*.

that Milton was blind and never saw his text. Lewis

9. Nahum Tate, successor to Dryden as poet lau-

Theobald, no wit but a closer scholar than Pope,
reate. This line adapts the adage that it takes nine
had exposed the faults of Pope's edition of Shake-
tailors to make a man.

speare in a subsequent edition of his own. *Laurel*:

1. Joseph Addison, coauthor of *The Tatler* and *The*
classical symbol of poetic achievement *Ribalds*:

Spectator, and arbiter of polite taste.

rascals.

2. The Ottoman emperors, Europeans believed,

7. Weight tipping the scales.

regularly killed their principal kinsmen upon

8. Ambrose Philips (named in line 100), who had
ascending the throne.

E P I S T L E T O D R . A R B U T H N O T / 6 3 1

Just hint a fault, and hesitate dislike;

205 Alike reserved to blame or to commend,

A timorous foe, and a suspicious friend;

Dreading even fools; by flatterers besieged,

And so obliging that he ne'er obliged;

Like Cato, give his little senate laws,³

210 And sit attentive to his own applause;

While wits and Templars⁰ every sentence raise, *law students*

And wonder with a foolish face of praise—

Who but must laugh, if such a man there be?

Who would not weep, if Atticus⁴ were he?

215 What though my name stood rubric⁰ on the walls? *in red*
letters

Or plastered posts, with claps,⁰ in capitals? *posters*
Or smoking forth, a hundred hawkers' load,
On wings of winds came flying all abroad?
I sought no homage from the race that write;
220 I kept, like Asian monarchs, from their sight:
Poems I heeded (now berhymed so long)
No more than thou, great George!⁵ a birthday song.
I ne'er with wits or witlings⁰ passed my days *ones of little wit*
To spread about the itch of verse and praise;
225 Nor like a puppy daggled⁰ through the town *dragged*
about
To fetch and carry sing-song up and down;
Nor at rehearsals sweat, and mouthed, and cried,
With handkerchief and orange at my side;
But sick of fops, and poetry, and prate,
230 To Bufo left the whole Castalian state.⁶
Proud as Apollo on his forked hill,⁷
Sat full-blown Bufo, puffed by every quill;
Fed with soft dedication all day long,
Horace and he went hand in hand in song.
235 His library (where busts of poets dead
And a true Pindar⁸ stood without a head)
Received of wits an undistinguished race,
Who first his judgment asked, and then a place:
Much they extolled his pictures, much his seat,⁰ *estate*
240 And flattered every day, and some days eat:^o *ate*
Till grown more frugal in his riper days,
He paid some bards with port, and some with praise;

To some a dry rehearsal was assigned, *without performance*
And others (harder still) he paid in kind.⁹

245 Dryden alone (what wonder?) came not nigh;

Dryden alone escaped this judging eye:

But still the great have kindness in reserve;

3. Addison, author of the immensely popular tragedy *Cato* (1713), presided over an admiring comedy of the Muses. *Bubo* (Latin for toad), perhaps a company of political and literary partisans at Button's house opposite Lord Halifax and "Bubo," Bubb Dodington's Coffee House. Pope's prologue to *Cato* includes the line "While Cato gives his little senate laws."

7. The twin peaks of Parnassus, one sacred to

4. A wealthy, wise man of letters (109-32 B.C.E.)

Apollo and the other sacred to Dionysus (Greek god of wine and a friend of Cicero; here, a pseudonym for Addison).

son.

8. Ancient Greek poet famous for his odes and

5. George II.

lyrics.

6. Pope leaves *Bubo* the whole republic of letters,

9. I.e., he read them his poetry in turn.

named from the spring Castalia, which was sacred

632 / A L E X A N D E R P O P E

He helped to bury whom he helped to starve.

May some choice patron bless each gray goose quill!0 *quill*
pen

250 May every Bavius have his Bufo still!1

So when a statesman wants a day's defense,

Or Envy holds a whole week's war with Sense,

Or simple Pride for flattery makes demands,

May dunce by dunce be whistled off my hands!

255 Blessed be the great! for those they take away,

And those they left me—for they left me Gay;2

Left me to see neglected genius bloom,

Neglected die, and tell it on his tomb;

Of all thy blameless life the sole return

260 My verse, and Queensberry weeping o'er thy urn!

Oh, let me live my own, and die so too!

("To live and die is all I have to do")3

Maintain a poet's dignity and ease,

And see what friends, and read what books I please;

265 Above a patron, though I condescend

Some times to call a minister my friend.

I was not born for courts or great affairs;

I pay my debts, believe, and say my prayers,

Can sleep without a poem in my head,

270 Nor know if Dennis be alive or dead.

Why am I asked what next shall see the light?

Heavens! was I born for nothing but to write?

Has life no joys for me? or (to be grave)

Have I no friend to serve, no soul to save?

275 "I found him close with Swift"—"Indeed? no doubt,"

Cries prating Balbus, “something will come out.”

‘Tis all in vain, deny it as I will.

“No, such a genius never can lie still,”

And then for mine obligingly mistakes

280 The first lampoon Sir Will or Bubo⁴ makes.

Poor guiltless I! and can I choose but smile,

When every coxcomb knows me by my style?

Cursed be the verse, how well soe’er it flow,

That tends to make one worthy man my foe,

285 Give Virtue scandal, Innocence a fear,

Or from the soft-eyed virgin steal a tear!

But he who hurts a harmless neighbor’s peace,

Insults fallen worth, or Beauty in distress,

Who loves a lie, lame Slander helps about,

290 Who writes a libel, or who copies out:

That fop whose pride affects a patron’s name,

Yet absent, wounds an author’s honest fame;

Who can your merit selfishly approve,

1. For Bavius, see note 2 to line 98; for Bufo, note

3. Quotation from Denham’s poem “Of Pru-

6 to line 230.

dence.”

2. John Gay (1 6 8 5 - 1 7 3 2 ; s e e p p . 5 9 4 - 9 6) , a u t h
o r

4. Sir William Yonge or Bubb Dodington. Both
of *The Beggar’s Opera*, associate of Pope and Swift;
were Pope’s political adversaries as well as, in some
befriended (line 260) by the duke and duchess of

degree, silly men.

Queensberry.

EPISTLE TO DR. ARBUTHNOT / 633

And show the sense of it without the love;

295 Who has the vanity to call you friend,

Yet wants the honor, injured, to defend;

Who tells whate'er you think, whate'er you say,

And, if he lie not, must at least betray:

Who to the dean and silver bell can swear,

300 And sees at Cannons what was never there:5

Who reads but with a lust to misapply,

Make satire a lampoon, and fiction, lie:

A lash like mine no honest man shall dread,

But all such babbling blockheads in his stead.

305 Let Sporus6 tremble A. What? that thing of silk,

Sporus, that mere white curd of ass's milk?

Satire or sense, alas! can Sporus feel?

Who breaks a butterfly upon a wheel?

p. Yet let me flap this bug with gilded wings,

310 This painted child of dirt, that stinks and stings;

Whose buzz the witty and the fair annoys,

Yet wit ne'er tastes, and beauty ne'er enjoys;

So well-bred spaniels civilly delight

In mumbling of the game they dare not bite.

315 Eternal smiles his emptiness betray,

As shallow streams run dimpling all the way.

Whether in florid impotence he speaks,

And, as the prompter breathes, the puppet squeaks;

Or at the ear of Eve,⁷ familiar toad,
 320 Half froth, half venom, spits himself abroad,
 In puns, or politics, or tales, or lies,
 Or spite, or smut, or rhymes, or blasphemies.
 His wit all seesaw between *that* and *this*,
 Now high, now low, now master up, now miss, [
 325 And he himself one vile antithesis. J
 Amphibious thing! that acting either part,
 The trifling head or the corrupted heart,
 Fop at the toilet, flatterer at the board,
 Now trips⁰ a lady, and now struts a lord. *walks like*
 330 Eve's tempter thus the rabbins⁰ have expressed, *Hebrew*
scholars
 A cherub's face, a reptile all the rest;
 Beauty that shocks you, parts⁰ that none will trust, *talents*
 Wit that can creep, and pride that licks the dust.
 Not Fortune's worshiper, nor Fashion's fool,
335 Not Lucre's⁰ madman, nor Ambition's tool, *Money's*
 Not proud, nor servile, be one poet's praise,
 That if he pleased, he pleased by manly ways:
 That flattery, even to kings, he held a shame,
 And thought a lie in verse or prose the same:

5. In his *Epistle to Burlington*, Pope satirized
 in the poem, Lord Hervey, a foppish and effemi-
 "Timon's Villa," an estate where a silver bell and
 nate courtier who was Pope's personal, political,
 an obsequious dean invite worshipers to an over-
 and literary enemy. He attested his frailty by drink-

stuffed chapel. Mischief-makers had unjustly identifying ass's milk as a tonic.

tified this estate with Cannons, the ostentatious

7. Like Satan in Eden (*Paradise Lost* 4.790 ff.).

home of Pope's well-wisher the duke of Chandos.

Hervey was Queen Caroline's confidant; the word

6. Roman eunuch, object of Nero's sexual desires;

"familiar" suggests a demonic ministrant.

634 / A L E X A N D E R P O P E

340 That not in fancy's maze he wandered long,

But stooped⁸ to truth, and moralized his song:

That not for fame, but Virtue's better end,

He stood the furious foe, the timid friend,

T h e damning critic, half approving wit,

345 T h e coxcomb hit, or fearing to be hit;

Laughed at the loss of friends he never had,

T h e dull, the proud, the wicked, and the mad;

T h e distant threats of v e n g e a n c e on his head,

T h e blow unfelt, the tear he never shed;

350 T h e tale revived, the lie so oft o'erthrown,

T h e imputed trash, and dullness not his own;

The morals blackened w h e n the writings 'scape,

T h e libeled person, and the pictured shape;⁹

Abuse on all he loved, or loved him, spread,

355 A friend in exile, or a father dead;

T h e whisper,¹ that to greatness still too near,

Perhaps yet vibrates on his sovereign's ear—

W e l c o m e for thee, fair Virtue! all the past!

For thee, fair Virtue! w e l c o m e even the last!
 360 A. But why insult the poor, affront the great?
 p. A knave's a knave to me in every state:
 Alike my scorn, if he s u c c e e d or fail,
 Sporus at court, or Japhet² in a jail,
 A hireling scribbler, or a hireling peer,
 365 Knight of the post³ corrupt, or of the shire,
 If on a pillory, or near a throne,
 He gain his prince's ear, or lose his own.
 Yet soft by nature, more a dupe than wit,
 Sappho can tell you h o w this man was bit:0 *deceived*
 370 This dreaded satirist D e n n i s will c o n f e s s
 Foe to his pride, but friend to his distress:4
 So humble, he has knocked at Tibbald's door,
 Has drunk with Cibber, nay, has rhymed for Moore.
 Full ten years slandered, did he o n c e reply?
 375 Three thousand suns w e n t down on Welsted's lie.5
 To please a mistress one⁶ aspersed⁰ his life; *maligned*
 He lashed him not, but let her be his wife.
 Let Budgell charge low Grub Street on his quill,
 And write whate'er he pleased, except his will;7
 380 Let the two Curlls, of town and court,⁸ abuse
 His father, mother, body, soul, and muse.
 Yet why? that father held it for a rule,
 It was a sin to call our neighbor fool;
 That harmless mother thought no wife a whore:

8. Swooped down, perceiving prey (a term from

4. Pope contributed to a benefit performance for

falconry).

the aging Dennis.

9. Cartoons were drawn of Pope's hunched pos-

5. Welsted had accused Pope of causing the death
ture.

of a female admirer.

1. Hervey's whisper to Queen Caroline.

6. The statesman William Windham.

2. Japhet Crook, a forger; his ears were cropped

7. Eustace Budgell (perhaps falsely) attributed to
for his crime (line 367). For Sporus, see note 6 to
Pope a squib in the *Grub-Street journal* charging
line 305.

that Budgell had forged a will.

3. *Knight of the post*: professional witness.

8. The publisher Edmund Curll and Lord Hervey.

THE UNIVERSAL PRAYER / 635

385 Hear this, and spare his family, James Moore!9

Unspotted names, and memorable long,

If there be force in virtue, or in song.

Of gentle blood (part shed in honor's cause,

While yet in Britain honor had applause)

**390 Each parent sprung A. What fortune, pray? p. Their
own,**

And better got than Bestia's1 from the throne.

Born to no pride, inheriting no strife,

Nor marrying discord in a noble wife,

Stranger to civil and religious rage,

395 The good man walked innoxious⁰ through his age.
harmless

No courts he saw, no suits would ever try,

Nor dared an oath, nor hazarded a lie.²

Unlearned, he knew no schoolman's subtle art,

No language but the language of the heart.

400 By nature honest, by experience wise,

Healthy by temperance, and by exercise;

His life, though long, to sickness passed unknown,

His death was instant, and without a groan.

Oh, grant me thus to live, and thus to die!

405 Who sprung from kings shall know less joy than I.

O friend! may each domestic bliss be thine!

Be no unpleasing melancholy mine:

Me, let the tender office long engage,

To rock the cradle of reposing Age,

410 With lenient arts extend a mother's breath,³

Make Languor smile, and smooth the bed of Death,

Explore the thought, explain the asking eye,

And keep a while one parent from the sky!

On cares like these if length of days attend,

415 May Heaven, to bless those days, preserve my friend,

Preserve him social, cheerful, and serene,

And just as rich as when he served a Queen!⁴

A. Whether that blessing be denied or given,

Thus far was right—the rest belongs to Heaven.

1 7 3 5

The Universal Prayer

**15 This, teach me more than Hell to shun,
That, more than Heaven pursue.⁶**

What blessings thy free bounty gives,

Let me not cast away;

For God is paid when man receives,

20 To enjoy is to obey.

Yet not to earth's contracted span,

Thy goodness let me bound,

Or think thee Lord alone of man,

When thousand worlds are round:

25 Let not this weak, unknowing hand

Presume thy bolts⁷ to throw,

And deal damnation round the land,

On each I judge thy foe.

If I am right, thy grace impart,

30 Still in the right to stay;

If I am wrong, oh teach my heart

To find that better way.

Save me alike from foolish pride,

Or impious discontent,

35 At aught thy wisdom has denied,

Or aught thy goodness lent.

Teach me to feel another's woe,

To hide the fault I see;

That mercy I to others show,

40 That mercy show to me.

5. God considered as the first principle, creator of the afterlife.

all creatures, cause of all truth and goodness.

7. The weapons, thunderbolts, of Zeus, chief

6. I.e., teach me to refine my conscience here on
Greek god.

Earth instead of concerning myself overmuch with

I M P R O M P T U / 6 3 7

M e a n though I am, not wholly so

Since quickened by thy breath;

Oh lead me wheresoe'er I go,

Through this day's life or death.

45 This day, be bread and peace⁸ my lot:

All else beneath the sun,

T h o u know'st if best bestowed or not,

And let thy will be done.

To thee, w h o s e temple is all space,

50 W h o s e altar, earth, sea, skies!

O n e chorus let all being raise!

All Nature's i n c e n s e rise!

ca. 1 7 1 5 1 7 3 8

Impromptu

To Lady Winchelsea,

Occasioned by four Satirical Verses on Women Wits,

In The Rape of the Lock⁹

In vain you boast poetic n a m e s of yore,

And cite those Sapphos we admire no more:¹

Fate d o o m e d the fall of every female wit;

But d o o m e d it then, w h e n first Ardelia² writ.

5 Of all examples by the world confessed,

**I knew Ardelia could not quote the best;
 Who, like her mistress on Britannia's throne,
 Fights and subdues in quarrels not her own.³
 To write their praise you but in vain essay;
 io Even while you write, you take that praise away.
 Light to the stars the sun does thus restore,
 But shines himself till they are seen no more.**

ca. 1715 1741

8. Perhaps an allusion to the Lord's Prayer: "Give
 written in 1713, Pope complained that the expe-
 us this day our daily bread ..."

rience of hearing Lady Winchilsea read her poetry

9. Ostensibly written casually, without premedi-
 at a dinner party gave him a headache—an ailment
 tation ("impromptu"), this poem to Anne Finch,
 that in the *Rape* he associates only with women.
 countess of Winchilsea (1661—1720), replies to
 For another view of spleen—an ailment similar to
 some verses she had sent Pope in response to *The*
 depression—see the selection from Matthew
Rape of the Lock 4 . 5 9 - 6 2 (see p. 616). Since these
 Green's poem on that subject (p. 645).

lines, from the "Cave of Spleen" episode, are

1. Applies to all female poets the name of the
 directed specifically against female poets, and
 ancient Greek poet.

Anne Finch wrote a poem titled "The Spleen"

2. The name under which Anne Finch sometimes

(p. 558), she was probably right in reading Pope's wrote.

verses as containing a comic slur directed at her.

3. An allusion to Queen Anne (reigned 1702—14), Her initial response to Pope has not survived, but who involved England in wars (of the Spanish Succession) that Pope viewed as irrelevant to the national interest. her witty "Answer" to this "Impromptu" was printed in 1717 (p. 565). In a letter to a male friend

638 / ALEXANDER POPE

From The Dunciad

*[The Triumph of Dulness]*⁴

In vain, in vain,—the all-composing hour

Resistless⁰ falls: the M u s e obeys the power. *irresistibly*

She⁵ comes! she comes! the sable⁰ throne behold *black*

Of Night primeval, and of Chaos old!⁶

Before her, Fancy's gilded clouds decay,

And all its varying rainbows die away.

Wit shoots in vain its momentary fires,

T h e meteor drops, and in a flash expires.

As o n e by one, at dread Medea's strain,

T h e sickening stars fade off the ethereal plain;⁷

As Argus' eyes by Hermes' wand oppressed,

Closed one by o n e to everlasting rest;⁸

T h u s at her felt approach, and secret might,

Art after Art goes out, and all is night.

See skulking Truth to her old cavern fled,⁹

Mountains of casuistry¹ heaped o'er her head!
Philosophy, that leaned on Heaven before,
Shrinks to her s e c o n d cause,² and is no more.
Physic⁰ of Metaphysic begs defense, *natural science*
And Metaphysic calls for aid on Sense!
See Mystery⁰ to Mathematics fly! *mystical knowledge*
In vain! they gaze, turn giddy, rave, and die.
Religion blushing veils her sacred fires,
And unawares *Morality* expires.
Nor public flame, nor private, dares to shine;
Nor h u m a n spark is left, nor glimpse divine!
Lo! thy dread empire, C h a o s is restored;
Light dies before thy uncreating word:³
Thy hand, great Anarch! lets the curtain fall;
And universal darkness buries all.

1 7 2 1 - 2 5

1 7 4 7

4. *Dunciad* (B) 4.627-56.

then killed him.

5. Dulness, the center of a mock-apocalyptic

9. "Alluding to the saying of Democritus, that vision in which the light of the arts and sciences is Truth lay at the bottom of a deep well" [Pope's extinguished.

note].

6. Milton, in *Paradise Lost* 1.543, describes the

1. Discourse about "cases of conscience"; also, elements separating heaven and hell as "Chaos and

overly complex reasoning.

old Night,” or disorder and darkness, the first

2. In classical philosophy, God is defined as the materials of the cosmos.

first cause of all things. Under the sway of Dulness,

7. In Seneca’s *Medea*, the stars obey the curse of a materialistic explanation (or “second cause”) is Medea, a magician and avenger.

substituted.

8. Hermes, the Greek gods’ messenger, charmed

3. As opposed to God’s first creating words in Genesis, “Let there be light.”

6 3 9

LADY MARY W O R T L E Y M O N T A G U

1689-1762

Saturday

The Small-Pox

FLAVIA1

T h e wretched Flavia, on her c o u c h reclined,

T h u s breathed the anguish of a w o u n d e d mind.

A glass⁰ reversed in her right hand she bore, *mirror*

For n o w she s h u n n e d the face she sought before.

5 “How am I changed! alas! h o w am I grown

A frightful spectre, to myself unknown!

Where’s my complexion? where the radiant bloom,

That promised happiness for years to come?

Then,⁰ with what pleasure I this face surveyed! *in the past*

10 To look o n c e more, my visits oft delayed!
Charmed with the view, a fresher red would rise,
And a n e w life shot sparkling from my eyes!
Ah! faithless glass, my wonted⁰ bloom restore! *accustomed,*
Alas! I rave, that bloom is n o w no more!
15 “The greatest good the gods on m e n bestow,
Ev’n youth itself, to me is useless now.
There was a time (oh! that I could forget!)
W h e n opera-tickets poured before my feet;
And at the Ring² where brightest beauties shine,
20 T h e earliest cherries of the spring were mine.
Witness, O Lillie, and thou, Motteux, tell,
H o w m u c h japan³ these eyes have made you sell.
W i t h what contempt ye saw me oft despise
T h e humble offer of the raffled prize;
25 For at e a c h raffle still the prize I bore,
W i t h scorn rejected, or with triumph wore.
N o w beauty’s fled, and presents are no more.
“For me the patriot has the H o u s e ⁴ forsook,
And left debates to catch a passing look;
30 For me the soldier has soft verses writ;
For me the beau^o has aimed to be a wit. *suitor*
For me the wit to n o n s e n s e was betrayed;
T h e gamester has for me his dun^o delayed *demand for*
payment

1. Eclogues are traditionally sophisticated,
 became a vocal advocate of inoculation when she
 medium-length pastoral poems; see, e.g., Edmund

returned to England in 1718. She wrote various Spenser's "Aprill" (p. 159). In this poem, as in her letters and an essay attacking physicians who other five "town" eclogues, Montagu revises the opposed inoculation and the "fools" who believed genre, satirizing Londoners' manners and morals in them.

through characters given classical (Greek and

2. A fashionable area in Hyde Park.

Roman) names. Here, focusing on "Flavia," Mon-

3. Japanese work with painted and varnished

tagu examines a disease that had killed her brother

design; Charles Lillie and Peter Motteux were men

and ten-year-old nephew; she had suffered from it

of letters who also dealt in Asian goods.

in 1715, but without being badly scarred. She later

4. I.e., the House of Commons, the lower house

had her son inoculated for smallpox in Turkey and

of the English Parliament.

640 / L A D Y M A R Y W O R T L E Y M O N T A G U

And overseen⁰ the card I would have paid.⁵ *overlooked*

35 The bold and haughty by success made vain,

Awed by my eyes, has trembled to complain:

The bashful squire, touched with a wish unknown,

Has dared to speak with spirit not his own:

Fired by one wish, all did alike adore;

40 Now beauty's fled, and lovers are no more.

"As round the room I turn my weeping eyes,

New unaffected scenes of sorrow rise.
Far from my sight that killing picture bear,
The face disfigure, or the canvas tear!⁶
45 That picture, which with pride I used to show,
The lost resemblance but upbraids me now.
And thou, my toilette, where I oft have sat,
While hours unheeded passed in deep debate,
How curls should fall, or where a patch⁷ to place;
50 If blue or scarlet best became my face;
Now on some happier nymph^o your aid bestow; *girl*
On fairer heads, ye useless jewels, glow!
No borrowed lustre can my charms restore,
Beauty is fled, and dress is now no more.
55 “Ye meaner beauties, I permit you shine;
Go, triumph in the hearts that once were mine;
But, midst your triumphs with confusion know,
‘Tis to my ruin all your charms ye owe.
Would pitying heaven restore my wonted^o mien, *usual / appearance*
60 Ye still might move unthought of and unseen:
But oh, how vain, how wretched is the boast
Of beauty faded, and of empire lost!
What now is left but weeping to deplore
My beauty fled, and empire now no more?
65 “Ye cruel chemists,^o what withheld your aid? *druggists*
Could no pomatums⁸ save a trembling maid?
How false and trifling is that art you boast;
No art can give me back my beauty lost!

In tears, surrounded by my friends I lay,
70 Masked o'er, and trembling at the light of day;
Mirmillo⁹ came my fortune to deplore
(A golden-headed cane well carved he bore):
Cordials, he cried, my spirits must restore!
Beauty is fled, and spirit is no more!
75 Galen the grave, officious Squirt was there,
With fruitless grief and unavailing care:
Machaon too, the great Machaon, known
By his red cloak and his superior frown;
And why, he cried, this grief and this despair?

5. I.e., underwritten her next bet.

8. Scented, apple-based ointments applied to the

6. The painting is “killing” to her present sense of face and hair.

self because it shows her face as it used to be,

9. A “Mirmillo,” or mermillo, was a type of Roman unblemished; in anger, she wishes to “disfigure” gladiator typically represented in statues as armed the painting as the disease has disfigured her.

with helmet, oval shield, and a short sword held in

7. A small piece of silk or court plaster worn on front of him. This name, like “Galen,” “Squirt,” and the face to heighten the complexion and attract “Machaon” in the next lines, is a mock-heroic allu-
attention.

sion to a contemporary medical expert.

THE LOVER : A BALLAD / 641

so You shall again be well, again be fair;
Believe my oath (with that an oath he swore);
False was his oath! my beauty is no more.
“Cease, hapless maid, no more thy tale pursue,
Forsake mankind, and bid the world adieu.
85 Monarchs and beauties rule with equal sway,
All strive to serve, and glory to obey:
Alike unpitied w h e n deposed they grow,
M e n mock the idol of their former vow.
“Adieu, ye parks—in s o m e obscure recess,
90 W h e r e gentle streams will w e e p at my distress,
W h e r e no false friend will in my grief take part,
And mourn my ruin with a joyful heart;
There let me live in s o m e deserted place,
There hide in shades this lost inglorious face.
95 Plays, operas, circles,⁰ I no more must view! *tiers of theater seats*
My toilette, patches, all the world, adieu!”

1 7 1 6 1 7 4 7

The Lover: A Ballad

At length, by so m u c h importunity pressed,
Take, Molly,¹ at once, the inside of my breast;
This stupid indifference so often you blame
Is not owing to nature, to fear, or to shame;
I am not as cold as a Virgin in lead,²
Nor is Sunday’s sermon so strong in my head;
I know but too well how time flies along,
That we live but f e w years and yet fewer are young.
But I hate to be cheated, and never will buy

Long years of repentance for moments of joy.
Oh was there a man (but where shall I find
Good sense and good nature so equally joined?)
Would value his pleasure, contribute to mine,
Not meanly would boast, nor would lewdly design,^{0 plot}
Not over severe, yet not stupidly vain,
For I would have the power though not give the pain;
No pedant yet learned, not rakehell^{0 gay like a libertine}
Or laughing because he has nothing to say,
To all my whole sex obliging and free,
Yet never be fond of any but me;
In public preserve the decorum that's just,
And show in his eyes he is true to his trust,

1. Molly Skerrett, a friend of Montagu, was the 2. I.e., an image of the Virgin Mary, either as a mistress of the English statesman Sir Robert Wal- leaden statue or as a stained-glass window framed pole. in lead.

642 / LADY MARY WORTLEY MONTAGU

Then rarely approach, and respectfully bow,
Yet not fulsomely pert, nor yet foppishly low.
25 But when the long hours of public are past
And we meet with champagne and a chicken at last,
May every fond pleasure that hour endear,
Be banished afar both discretion and fear,
Forgetting or scorning the airs of the crowd
30 He may cease to be formal, and I to be proud,
Till lost in the joy we confess that we live,
And he may be rude, and yet I may forgive.
And that my delight may be solidly fixed,

Let the friend and the lover be handsomely mixed,
35 In whose tender bosom my soul might confide,
Whose kindness can sooth me, whose counsel could
guide.

From such a dear lover as here I describe
No danger should fright me, no millions should bribe;
But till this astonishing creature I know,
40 As I long have lived chaste, I will keep myself so.
I never will share with the wanton coquette,
Or be caught by a vain affectation of wit.
The toasters and songsters may try all their art
But never shall enter the pass of my heart.

45 I loathe the lewd rake, the dressed fopling despise;
Before such pursuers the nice⁰ virgin flies; *fastidious*
And as Ovid has sweetly in parables told
We harden like trees, and like rivers are cold.³

ca. 1721 - 25 1747

A Receipt to Cure the Vapors⁴

I

Why will Delia thus retire,
And idly languish life away?
While the sighing crowd admire,
'Tis too soon for hartshorn tea:⁵

II

5 All those dismal looks and fretting
Cannot Damon's life restore;

3. In Ovid's *Metamorphoses*, two nymphs (minor name.) *Receipt*: formula of a remedy for a disease.

nature goddesses) escape from gods: Daphne, fleeing from Apollo, is turned into a laurel; Arethusa, fleeing from Alpheus, becomes a fountain.

terized by depression, hypochondria, hysteria, and other nervous disorders. Synonymous with the malaise of “spleen,” analyzed by Anne Finch (see p. 558) and Matthew Green (p. 645).

Delia. (Damon, line 6, is also a conventional poetic name for a medicinal tea made from ammonia.)

EPISTLE FROM MRS. YONGE TO HER HUSBAND / 643

**Long ago the worms have eat him,
You can never see him more.**

III

**O n c e again consult your toilette,⁶
10 In the glass⁰ your face review: *mirror*
So m u c h weeping soon will spoil it,
And no spring your charms renew.**

IV

**I, like you, was born a woman,
Well I know what vapors mean:
15 T h e disease, alas! is c o m m o n ;
Single, we have all the spleen.⁷**

V

All the morals that they tell us,

Never cured the sorrow yet:

C h u s e , among the pretty fellows,

20 O n e of honor, youth, and wit.

VI

Prithee hear him every morning

At the least an hour or two;

O n c e again at night returning—

I believe the dose will do.

ca. 1730 1748

Epistle from Mrs. Yonge to Her Husband⁸

Think not this paper c o m e s with vain pretense

To move your pity, or to mourn th' offense.

T o o well I know that hard obdurate heart;

No softening mercy there will take my part,

5 Nor can a woman's arguments prevail,

6. I.e., consider your manner of dressing.

sensational affair, it is also a work of imagination.

7. I.e., we alone (i.e., women only) are affected by

Like Alexander Pope's "Eloisa to Abelard"—to

vapors; or, alternatively, women are affected by

which Pope called Montagu's attention—it takes

vapors when they are "single" (i.e., without the

the form of a heroic epistle, the passionate outcry

company of a man).

of an abandoned woman. The poet, entering into

8. In 1724, the notorious libertine William Yonge,

the feelings of Mrs. Yonge, justifies her conduct separated from his wife, Mary, discovered that she with reasons of both the heart and the head. The (like him) had committed adultery. He sued her objects of her attack include the institution of marriage, Colonel Norton, for damages and collected riage, which binds wives in “eternal chains”; the £1,500. Later that year, according to the law of the double standard of morality, which requires chastity, he petitioned the Houses of Parliament for a tity from women but not men; the hypocrisy of divorce. The case was tried in public, Mrs. Yonge’s society, which condemns the very behavior it love letters were read aloud, and two men testified secretly lusts after; and the craven greed and cruelty that they had found her and Norton “together in elty of the husband. But eighteenth-century naked bed.” Yonge was granted the divorce, his women seldom dared speak like this in public, and wife’s dowry, and the greater part of her fortune. the “Epistle” was not published until the 1970s.

Though the “Epistle” is obviously based on this

644 / L A D Y M A R Y W O R T L E Y M O N T A G U

When even your patron’s wise example fails.⁹

But this last privilege I still retain;

Th’ oppressed and injured always may complain.

Too, too severely laws of honor bind

10 The weak submissive sex of womankind.

If sighs have gained or force compelled our hand,
Deceived by art, or urged by stern command,
Whatever motive binds the fatal tie,
The judging world expects our constancy.
15 Just heaven! (for sure in heaven does justice reign,
Though tricks below that sacred name profane)
To you appealing I submit my cause,
Nor fear a judgment from impartial laws.
All bargains but^o conditional^o are made; *only / conditionally*
20 The purchase void, the creditor unpaid;
Defrauded servants are from service free;
A wounded slave regains his liberty.
For wives ill used no remedy remains,
To daily racks condemned, and to eternal chains.
25 From whence is this unjust distinction grown?
Are we not formed with passions like your own?
Nature with equal fire our souls endued,
Our minds as haughty, and as warm our blood;
O'er the wide world your pleasures you pursue,
30 The change is justified by something new;
But we must sigh in silence—and be true.
Our sex's weakness you expose and blame
(Of every prattling fop the common theme),
Yet from this weakness you suppose is due
35 Sublimer virtue than your Cato¹ knew.
Had heaven designed us trials so severe,
It would have formed our tempers then to bear.
And I have borne (oh what have I not borne!)

The pang of jealousy, the insults of scorn.
40 Wearied at length, I from your sight remove,
And place my future hopes in secret love.
In the gay bloom of glowing youth retired,
I quit the woman's joy to be admired,
With that small pension your hard heart allows,
45 Renounce your fortune, and release your vows.
To custom (though unjust) so much is due;
I hide my frailty from the public view.
My conscience clear, yet sensible of shame,
My life I hazard, to preserve my fame.
50 And I prefer this low inglorious state
To vile dependence on the thing I hate— f
But you pursue me to this last retreat. J
Dragged into light, my tender crime is shown
And every circumstance of fondness known.

55 Beneath the shelter of the law you stand,
9. Sir Robert Walpole, Yonge's friend at court, was
ancient Roman statesman Cato had been empha-
rumored to tolerate his own wife's infidelities.
sized in Addison's famous tragedy *Cato* (1713).

1. The asceticism and self-discipline of the

THE SPLEEN / 645

**And urge my ruin with a cruel hand,
While to my fault thus rigidly severe,
Tamely submissive to the man you fear.²
This wretched outcast, this abandoned wife,
60 Has yet this joy to s w e e t e n shameful life:**

By your mean⁰ conduct, infamously loose, *vulgar*
You are at once my accuser and excuse.
Let me be d a m n e d by the censorious prude
(Stupidly dull, or spiritually lewd),
65 My hapless case will surely pity find
From every just and reasonable mind.
W h e n to the final s e n t e n c e I submit,
T h e lips c o n d e m n me, but their souls acquit.
No more my husband, to your pleasures go,
70 T h e sweets of your recovered freedom know.
Go: court the brittle friendship of the great,
Smile at his board,⁰ or at his levee³ wait; *dining table*
And w h e n dismissed, to madam's toilet fly,⁴
More than her chambermaids, or glasses,⁰ lie, *mirrors*
75 Tell her h o w young she looks, h o w heavenly fair,
Admire the lilies and the roses there.
Your high ambition may be gratified,
S o m e c o u s i n of her own be made your bride,
A n d you the father of a glorious race
so Endowed with Ch -l's strength and Low r's face.⁵

1 7 2 4 1 9 7 2

M A T T H E W G R E E N

1696-1737

From The Spleen¹

An Epistle to Mr. Cuthbert Jackson

This motley piece to you I send,
W h o always were a faithful friend;
W h o , if disputes should happen hence,

Can best explain the author's sense;

5 And, anxious for the public weal,

Do, what I sing, so often feel.²

2. I.e., Walpole. Montagu suggests that the whole married the daughter of a baron.

political establishment of England takes sides

1. The effects of "the spleen" were believed to be against Mrs. Yonge.

depression, hypochondria, ill-temper, melancholy,

3. Morning reception of visitors.

and a variety of other nervous disorders. Green

4. It was fashionable for women like Lady Walpole wrote this poem supposedly in reply to a friend who to receive visitors during the last stages of dressing asked him how he coped with this malady.

(their "toilet").

Although he cites causes and treatments for the

5. General Churchill was rumored to have had an disorder, Green uses the subject to write a satire affair with Lady Walpole; Anthony Lowther was a on religion, politics, and contemporary social prac- notorious gallant. The author implies that Yonge's tices. Cf. Anne Finch, "The Spleen" (p. 558).

next wife may be as untrue as his first. Mrs. Yonge

2. Green claims to suffer from "what I sing," i.e., remarried immediately after her divorce; five years "spleen," as a result of his concern for the "public later, Yonge (whose divorce had made him rich)

weal," i.e., the public welfare, a reference to his

646 / MATTHEW GREEN

The want of method pray excuse,

Allowing for a vapored Muse;³

Nor to a narrow path confined,

10 Hedg e in by rules a roving mind.

The child is genuine, you may trace

Throughout the sire's transmitted⁰ face. *inherited*

Nothing is stolen: my Muse, though mean,⁰ *lowly, poor*

Draws from the spring she finds within;

15 Nor vainly⁰ buys what Gildon⁴ sells, *in vain*

Poetic buckets for dry wells.

School-helps I want,⁵ to climb on high,

Where all the ancient treasures lie,

And there unseenc omm it a theft

20 On wealth in Greek exchequers⁰ left. *treasuries*

Then where? from whom? what can I steal,

Who only with the moderns deal?

This were attempting to put on

Raiment from naked bodies won:⁶

25 They safely sing before a thief,

They cannot give who want relief;

Some few excepted, names well known,

And justly laureled⁷ with renown,

Whose stamp of genius marks their ware,

30 And theft detects: of theft beware;

From More so lashed,⁸ example fit,

Shun petty larceny in wit.

**First know, my friend, I do not mean
 To write a treatise on the spleen;
 35 Nor to prescribe when nerves convulse;
 Nor mend th' alarum watch, your pulse.
 If I am right, your question lay,
 What course I take to drive away
 The day-mare⁹ Spleen, by whose false pleas
 40 Men prove mere suicides in ease;¹
 And how I do myself demean⁰ manage
 In stormy world to live serene.**

**When by its magic lantern² Spleen
 With frightful figures spreads life's scene,**

job as a clerk in a Custom House (the office
 Howard's epic poem *British Princes* (1669): "A
 responsible for levying taxes on imported and
 painted vest Prince Vortiger had on, / Which from
 exported goods) in London.

a naked Pict his grandsire won."

3. The Muses were the nine Greek sister god-

7. The laurel was a symbol of poetic achievement.

desses supposed to be the sources of inspiration

8. In *The Dunciad* 2.50, Alexander Pope (1688—
 for the arts. *Vapored*: i.e., afflicted with the vapors,

1744) "lashed," i.e., castigated, the playwright

a disorder supposed to be caused by exhalations

James Moore Smythe (1702-1734) for having pla-

within the organs of the body and characterized by
 giarized.

symptoms similar to those of spleen.

9. Similar to a nightmare, but occurring during

4. Charles Gildon (1665-1724), author of *The wakefulness*; a term coined by Green.

Complete Art of English Poetry.

1. Without hesitation; or, at leisure. *Mere*: unas-

5. Lack; Green claims to not have a classical education, a claim somewhat belied by the many

2. An optical instrument by means of which a

learned allusions in the poem.

magnified image of a picture on glass is thrown

6. Perhaps a reference to two lines from Edward upon a white screen or wall in a darkened room.

T H E S P L E E N / 6 4 7

45 **And threatening prospects⁰ urged my fears, *expectations***

A stranger to the luck of heirs;³

Reason, some quiet to restore,

S h o w e d part was substance, shadow more;

W i t h Spleen's dead weight though heavy grown,

50 In life's rough tide I sunk not down,

But swam, 'till Fortune threw a rope,

Buoyant on bladders⁴ fill'd with hope.

I always c h o o s e the plainest food

To m e n d viscosity⁰ of blood.

glutinousness

55 Hail! water-gruel,⁰ healing power,

thin porridge

Of easy access to the poor;
 Thy help love's confessors implore,
 And doctors secretly adore;
 To thee, I fly, by thee dilute—
 60 Through veins my blood doth quicker shoot,⁵
 And by swift current throws off clean
 Prolific particles of Spleen.
 I never sick by drinking grow,
 N o r keep myself a cup too low,⁰ *sad, gloomy*
 65 And seldom Cloe's lodgings haunt,
 Thrifty of spirits, w h i c h I want.⁶
 Hunting I reckon very good
 To brace the nerves, and stir the blood:
 But after no field-honors⁰ itch, *honors -won in the hunt*
 70 Achieved by leaping hedge and ditch,
 While Spleen lies soft relaxed in bed,
 Or o'er coal fires inclines the head,
 Hygeia's sons⁷ with h o u n d and horn,
 And jovial cry awake the morn.
 To cure the mind's wrong bias, Spleen,
 S o m e r e c o m m e n d the bowling-green;⁸
 Some, hilly walks; all, exercise;
 Fling but a stone, the giant dies;⁹
 Laugh and be well. Monkeys have b e e n
 Extreme good doctors for the Spleen;
 And kitten, if the humor hit,¹
 Has harlequinned⁰ away the fit. *conjured away*
 3. I.e., he has no hope of an inheritance.

7. Healthy men (Hygeia being the Greek goddess
4. Animals' bladders, inflated and used as flotation
of health).

devices.

8. The lawn on which bowls, a popular English

5. "Blood" is the noun acted on by the past parti-
game, is played.

ciple, "dilute": i.e., "blood," diluted by the gruel,

9. The metaphor alludes to 1 Samuel 17, in which
"doth quicker shoot" through the veins.

a young David kills the Philistine giant, Goliath,

6. I.e., economical of liveliness or energy, which I
with a stone from his sling.

lack. *C[h]loe*: a conventional poetic name for a

1. I.e., if it affects the disposition.

young woman.

6 4 8 / M A T T H E W G R E E N

If spleen-fogs rise at close of day,

I clear my evening with a play,

Or to some concert take my way.

T h e company, the shine of lights,

The scenes of humor, music's flights,

Adjust and set the soul to rights.

Life's moving pictures, well-wrought plays,

To others' grief attention raise:

Here, while the tragic fictions glow,

We borrow joy by pitying woe;

There gaily c o m i c scenes delight,

And hold true mirrors to our sight.
Virtue, in charming dress arrayed,
Calling the passions to her aid,
When moral scenes just actions join,
Takes shape, and shows her face divine.
Sometimes I dress, with women sit,
And chat away the gloomy fit;
Quit the stiff garb of serious sense,
And wear a gay impertinence,⁰ *indifference*
Nor think nor speak with any pains,
But lay on fancy's neck the reins;
Talk of unusual swell of waist
In maid of honor² loosely laced,
And beauty borrow Spanish red,³
And loving pair with separate bed,
And jewels pawned for loss of game,
And then redeemed by loss of fame;
Of Kitty (aunt left in the lurch
By grave pretence to go to church)
Perceived in hack⁰ with lover fine, rented carriage
Like Will and Mary on the coin:⁴
And thus in modish⁰ manner we, *fashionable*
In aid of sugar, sweeten tea.
Permit, ye fair,⁰ your idol form, *beautiful woman*
Which even the coldest heart can warm,
May with its beauties grace my line,
While I bow down before its shrine,
And your thronged altars with my lays⁰ songs

Perfume, and get by giving praise.

W i t h speech so sweet, so sweet a mien,^o *appearance*

You e x c o m m u n i c a t e the Spleen.

1 7 3 7

2. An unmarried woman, usually of noble birth,

4. William and Mary were joint rulers of England

who attends upon a queen or princess.

from 1689 until her death, in 1694. During their

3. A cosmetic that added reddish color to the

reign, coins were minted that bore the likenesses

cheeks.

of their two heads in profile.

6 4 9

J A M E S T H O M S O N

1700-1748

From The Seasons

From *Winter*

The keener tempests come: and, fuming dun^o *dark; murky*

From all the livid east or piercing north,

225 Thick clouds ascend, in whose capacious womb

A vapory deluge lies, to snow congealed.

Heavy they roll their fleecy world along,

And the sky saddens with the gathered storm.

Through the hushed air the whitening shower descends,

230 At first thin-wavering; till at last the flakes

Fall broad and wide and fast, dimming the day

With a continual flow. The cherished fields

Put on their winter robe of purest white.

'Tis brightness all; save where the new snow melts
235 Along the mazy current. Low the woods
Bow their hoar^o head; and, ere the languid sun *frozen, icy*
Faint from the west emits his evening ray,
Earth's universal face, deep-hid and chill,
Is one wild dazzling waste that buries wide
240 The works of man. Drooping, the laborer-ox
Stands covered o'er with snow, and then demands
The fruit of all his toil. The fowls of heaven,
Tamed by the cruel season, crowd around
The winnowing store,¹ and claim the little boon
245 Which Providence assigns them. One alone,
The redbreast, sacred to the household gods,
Wisely regardful of the embroiling sky,
In joyless fields and thorny thickets leaves
His shivering mates, and pays to trusted man
250 His annual visit. Half afraid, he first
Against the window beats; then brisk alights
On the warm hearth; then, hopping o'er the floor,
Eyes all the smiling family askance,
And pecks, and starts, and wonders where he is—
255 Till, more familiar grown, the table crumbs
Attract his slender feet. The foodless wilds
Pour forth their brown inhabitants. The hare,
Though timorous of heart, and hard beset
By death in various forms, dark snares, and dogs,
260 And more un pitying men, the garden seeks,
Urged on by fearless want. The bleating kind²

Eye the bleak heaven, and next the glistening earth,
With looks of dumb despair; then, sad-dispersed,
Dig for the withered herb through heaps of snow.

1. Place where the harvest has been threshed.

2. Sheep.

650 / JAMES THOMSON

N o w , shepherds, to your helpless charge be kind;

Baffle the raging year, and fill their pens

W i t h food at will; lodge t h e m below the storm,

And watch them strict, for, from the bellowing east,

In this dire season, oft the whirlwind's wing

Sweeps up the burden of whole wintry plains

In one wide weft,^o and o'er the hapless flocks, *web*

Hid in the hollow of two neighboring hills,

T h e billowy tempest w h e l m s , 0 till, upward urged,
pours **T h e valley to a shining mountain swells,**

Tipped with a wreath high-curling in the sky.

As thus the snows arise, and, foul and fierce,

All Winter drives along the darkened air,

In his own loose-revolving^o fields the swain^o *giddily turning*
/rustic **Disastered stands; sees other hills ascend,**

Of unknown joyless brow, and other scenes,

Of horrid prospect, shag^o the trackless plain; *make shaggy*

Nor finds the river nor the forest, hid

Beneath the formless wild, but wanders on

From hill to dale, still more and more astray,

Impatient flouncing through the drifted heaps,

Stung with the thoughts of h o m e — t h e thoughts of h o
m e

Rush on his nerves and call their vigor forth
In many a vain attempt. How sinks his soul!
What black despair, what horror fills his heart,
When, for the dusky spot which fancy feigned
His tufted⁰ cottage rising through the snow, *tree-*
surrounded
He meets the roughness of the middle waste,
Far from the track and blest abode of man,
While round him night resistless closes fast,
And every tempest, howling o'er his head,
Renders the savage wilderness more wild.
Then throng the busy shapes into his mind
Of covered pits, unfathomably deep,
A dire descent! beyond the power of frost;
Of faithless bogs; of precipices huge,
Smoothed up with snow; and (what is land unknown,
What water) of the still unfrozen spring,
In the loose marsh or solitary lake,
Where the fresh fountain from the bottom boils.
These check his fearful steps; and down he sinks
Beneath the shelter of the shapeless drift,
Thinking o'er all the bitterness of death,
Mixed with the tender anguish nature shoots
Through the wrung bosom of the dying man —
His wife, his children, and his friends unseen.
In vain for him the officious⁰ wife prepares *dutiful*
The fire fair-blazing and the vestment warm;
In vain his little children, peeping out

Into the mingling storm, demand their sire
With tears of artless innocence. Alas!
Nor wife nor children more shall he behold,
THESEASONS / 651
Nor friends, nor sacred home. On every nerve
The deadly winter seizes, shuts up sense,
And, o'er his inmost vitals creeping cold,
Lays him along the snows a stiffened corse,⁰ *corpse*
Stretched out and bleaching in the northern blast.
Ah! little think the gay licentious proud,
Whom pleasure, power, and affluence surround—
They who their thoughtless hours in giddy mirth,
And wanton, often cruel, riot⁰ waste — *revelry*
Ah! little think they, while they dance along,
How many feel, this very moment, death
And all the sad variety of pain;
How many sink in the devouring flood,
Or more devouring flame; how many bleed,
By shameful variance⁰ betwixt man and man; *quarreling*
How many pine in want,⁰ and dungeon glooms, *lack*
Shut from the common air and common use
Of their own limbs; how many drink the cup
Of baleful grief, or eat the bitter bread
Of misery; sore pierced by wintry winds,
How many shrink into the sordid hut
Of cheerless poverty; how many shake
With all the fiercer tortures of the mind,
Unbounded passion, madness, guilt, remorse—

W h e n c e , tumbled headlong from the height of life,
They furnish matter for the Tragic Muse;³
Even in the vale,⁰ where wisdom loves to dwell, *valley*
W i t h friendship, peace, and contemplation joined,
H o w many, racked with honest passions, droop
In deep retired distress; h o w many stand
Around the death-bed of their dearest friends,
And point⁰ the parting anguish! Thought fond man
accentuate
Of these, and all the thousand nameless ills
That one incessant struggle render life,⁴
O n e s c e n e of toil, of suffering, and of fate,
Vice in his high career would stand appalled,
And heedless rambling Impulse learn to think;
T h e conscious⁰ heart of Charity would warm, *sympathetic*
And her wide wish Benevolence dilate⁰ *diffuse*
T h e social tear would rise, the social sigh;
And into clear perfection, gradual⁰ bliss, *progressive*
Refining still, the social passions work.

1 7 2 6

3. Melpomene, Muse of tragedy, one of the nine 4. I.e., if foolish human beings thought of these, sister goddesses in Greek mythology who inspired and of all the thousand nameless ills that render the arts. life one incessant struggle.

6 5 2

C H A R L E S W E S L E Y

1707-1788

HYMNS1

[My God! I Know, I Feel Thee Mine²]

i

**My God! I know, I feel thee mine,
And will not quit my claim
Till all I have is lost in thine,
And all renewed I am.**

2

**5 I hold thee with a trembling hand,
But will not let thee go
Till steadfastly by faith I stand,
And all thy goodness know.**

3

**W h e n shall I see the welcome hour
10 That plants my God in me!
Spirit of health, and life, and power,
And perfect liberty!**

4

**Jesu, thine all-victorious love
Shed in my heart abroad!
is Then shall my feet no longer rove,
Rooted and fixed in God.**

5

**Love only can the conquest win,
The strength of sin subdue
(Mine own unconquerable sin),
20 And form my soul anew.**

6

**Love can bow down the stubborn neck,
The stone to flesh convert;**

1. Many tenets of the Methodist movement, popularize hymn singing in English at worship founded by John Wesley (1703-1791) in 1739, are services. The hymns selected below were first expressed by the hymns of his brother, Charles. printed in different editions of the Wesleys' *Hymns* Some Methodists believed in the assurance of sal-
and Sacred Prayers; we follow the text of the 1780 vation (rejecting the Calvinist doctrine of predes-
Hymnbook.

2. The subtext for this hymn is Romans 4.13: "For methodical study and devotion as a means of

the promise that he should be the heir of the world attaining Christian perfection. Charles Wesley was not to Abraham, or to his seed, through the law, but through the righteousness of faith."

**[C O M E O N , M Y P A R T N E R S I N D I S T R E S S
] / 6 5 3**

Soften, and melt, and pierce, and break

An adamantin⁰ heart. *unyielding, hard*

7

25 Oh, that in me the sacred fire

Might n o w begin to glow,

Burn up the dross of base desire,

And make the mountains flow!

8

**Oh, that it n o w from heaven might fall,
30 And all my sins consume!**

**C o m e , Holy Ghost, for thee I call,
Spirit of burning, come!**

9

**Refining fire, go through my heart,
Illuminate my soul;**

**35 Scatter thy life through every part,
And sanctify the whole.**

1 0

**Sorrow and sin shall then expire,
While, entered into rest,**

I only live my God t'admire—

40 My God forever blest.

11

**No longer then my heart shall mourn,
While purified by grace**

I only for his glory burn,

And always see his face.

12

**45 My steadfast soul, from falling free,
Shall then no longer move;**

But Christ be all the world to me,

And all my heart be love.

1 7 4 0

[Come on, My Partners in Distress]

i

C o m e on, my partners in distress,

My comrades through the wilderness,3

W h o still your bodies feel;

3. Where the Israelites wandered for forty years; also, the place where Christ was tempted, thus a place of suffering, testing, wandering, used here as a metaphor for earthly life.

6 5 4 / C H A R L E S W E S L E Y

Awhile forget your griefs and fears,

5 And look beyond this vale of tears

To that celestial hill.4

2

Beyond the bounds of time and space

Look forward to that heavenly place,

T h e saints' secure abode;

10 On faith's strong eagle pinions rise,

And force your passage to the skies,

And scale the m o u n t of God.

3

W h o suffer with our Master5 here,

We shall before his face appear,

15 And by his side sit down;

To patient faith the prize is sure,

And all that to the end endure

T h e cross, shall wear the crown.6

4

Thrice blessed bliss-inspiring hope!

20 It lifts the fainting spirits up,

It brings to life the dead;

Our conflicts here shall soon be past,

And you and I ascend at last

Triumphant with our head.⁷

5

25 That great mysterious Deity

We soon with open face shall see;

T h e beatific sight⁸

Shall fill heaven's sounding courts with praise,

And wide diffuse the golden blaze

30 Of everlasting light.

6

T h e Father shining on his throne,

T h e glorious, co-eternal Son,

T h e Spirit, one and seven,⁹

Conspire our rapture to complete,

35 And lo! we fall before his feet,

And silence heightens heaven.

4. The heavenly Jerusalem is thought to be located

7. I.e., Christ; "the head of every man is Christ"

on a hill, Mt. Sion. *Vale of tears*: this world,

(1 Corinthians 11.3).

regarded as a place of trouble, sorrow, misery, or

8. A sight of the glories of heaven, especially that

weeping.

first granted to a disembodied spirit.

5. I.e., Christ.

9. The "seven spirits of God" are referred to in

6. The New Testament promises a "crown of life"

Revelation 1.4, 3.1, 4.5, 5.6.

to the faithful Christian (James 1.12).

**PROLOGUE SPOKEN BY MR. GARRICK /
655**

7

**In hope of that ecstatic pause,
Jesu, we n o w sustain the cross,
And at thy footstool fall,
40 Till thou our hidden life reveal,
Till thou our ravished spirits fill,
And God is all in all.**

1749

SAMUEL JOHNSON

1709-1784

Prologue Spoken by Mr. Garrick¹

At the Opening of the Theater Royal, Drury Lane, 1747

**W h e n Learning's triumph o'er her barbarous foes
First reared the stage, immortal Shakespeare rose;
E a c h change of many-colored life he drew,
Exhausted worlds, and then imagined new:
5 Existence saw him spurn her bounded reign,
And panting Time toiled after him in vain.
His powerful strokes presiding Truth impressed,
And unresisted Passion stormed the breast.
T h e n Jonson² came, instructed from the school
io To please in method and invent by rule;
His studious patience and laborious art
By regular approach essayed the heart;
Cold Approbation gave the lingering bays,³
For those w h o durst not censure, scarce could praise.**

**15 A mortal born, he met the general doom,
 But left, like Egypt's kings, a lasting tomb.
 The wits of Charles⁴ found easier ways to fame,
 Nor wished for Jonson's art, or Shakespeare's flame;
 Themselves they studied; as they felt, they writ;
 20 Intrigue was plot, obscenity was wit.
 Vice always found a sympathetic friend;
 They pleased their age, and did not aim to mend.⁰ *amend it*
 Yet bards like these aspired to lasting praise,
 And proudly hoped to pimp⁰ in future days. *bid for reward*
 25 Their cause was general, their supports were strong,
 Their slaves were willing, and their reign was long:
 Till S h a m e regained the post that Sense betrayed,
 And Virtue called Oblivion to her aid.
 Then, crushed by rules, and weakened as refined,
 30 For years the power of Tragedy declined;**

1. David Garrick (1717-1779), English actor and 3. Laurel, given in recognition of poetic achieve-theater manager. ment.
 2. Ben Jonson (1572-1637), poet and playwright. 4. The comic playwrights of the Restoration.

6 5 6 / S A M U E L J O H N S O N

**From bard to bard the frigid caution crept,
 Till Declamation roared while Passion slept;
 Yet still did Virtue deign the stage to tread;
 Philosophy remained though Nature fled;
 35 But forced at length her ancient reign to quit,
 She saw great Faustus⁵ lay the ghost of Wit;
 Exulting Folly hailed the joyous day,
 And P a n t o m i m e and S o n g confirmed her sway.**

But w h o the c o m i n g changes can presage,
40 And mark the future periods of the stage?
Perhaps if skill could distant times explore,
N e w Behns, n e w Durfeys,⁶ yet remain in store;
Perhaps where Lear has raved, and Hamlet died,
On flying cars n e w sorcerers may ride;
45 Perhaps (for w h o can guess the effects of chance?)
Here H u n t may box, or M a h o m e t may dance.⁷
Hard is his lot that, here by fortune placed,
Must watch the wild vicissitudes of taste;
W i t h every meteor of caprice must play,
50 And chase the new-blown bubbles of the day.
Ah! let not censure term our fate our choice,
The stage but e c h o e s back the public voice;
The drama's laws, the drama's patrons give,
For we that live to please, must please to live.
55 T h e n prompt no more the follies you decry,
As tyrants doom their tools of guilt to die;
T i s yours this night to bid the reign c o m m e n c e
Of rescued Nature and reviving Sense;
To chase the charms of Sound, the p o m p of Show,
60 For useful Mirth and salutary W o e ;
Bid scenic Virtue form the rising age,
And Truth diffuse her radiance from the stage.

1747

The Vanity of Human Wishes

*In Imitation of the Tenth Satire of Juvenal*⁸

Let Observation, with extensive view,

**Survey mankind, from China to Peru;
Remark each anxious toil, each eager strife,
And watch the busy scenes of crowded life;
5 Then say how hope and fear, desire and hate
O'erspread with snares the clouded maze of fate,
Where wavering man, betrayed by venturous pride
To tread the dreary paths without a guide,**

5. Magician of German legend, here as treated in wright and poetaster who was a standing joke current farce and pantomime.

among the wits.

6. Playwrights like Aphra Behn (1640?-1689),

7. Referring to two then-popular figures, a pugilist admired by some but also attacked for her racy and a tightrope dancer.

plays, and Thomas D'Urfey (1653-1723), play-

8. Ancient Roman poet and satirist.

THE VANITY OF HUMAN WISHES / 6 5 7

As treacherous phantoms in the mist delude,

10 Shuns fancied ills, or chases airy good;

How rarely Reason guides the stubborn choice,

Rules the bold hand, or prompts the suppliant voice;

How nations sink, by darling schemes oppressed,

When Vengeance listens to the fool's request.⁹

15 Fate wings with every wish the afflictive dart,

Each gift of nature, and each grace of art;¹

With fatal heat impetuous courage glows,

With fatal sweetness elocution flows,

Impeachment stops the speaker's powerful breath,
20 And restless fire precipitates on death.²
But scarce observed, the knowing and the bold
Fall in the general massacre of gold;
Wide-wasting pest! that rages unconfined,
And crowds with crimes the records of mankind;
25 For gold his sword the hireling ruffian draws,
For gold the hireling judge distorts the laws;
Wealth heaped on wealth, nor truth nor safety buys,
The dangers gather as the treasures rise.
Let History tell where rival kings command,
30 And dubious title shakes the madded land,
When statutes glean the refuse of the sword,
How much more safe the vassal than the lord,

Low skulks the hind^o beneath the rage of power, *-peasant*
And leaves the wealthy traitor in the Tower,³
35 Untouched his cottage, and his slumbers sound,
Though Confiscation's vultures hover round.
The needy traveler, serene and gay,
Walks the wild heath, and sings his toil away.
Does envy seize thee? crush the upbraiding joy,
40 Increase his riches and his peace destroy;
New fears in dire vicissitude invade,
The rustling brake^o alarms, and quivering shade, *thicket*
Nor light nor darkness bring his pain relief,
One shows the plunder, and one hides the thief.
45 Yet still one general cry the skies assails,
And gain and grandeur load the tainted gales;
Few know the toiling statesman's fear or care,
The insidious rival and the gaping heir.
Once more, Democritus,⁴ arise on earth,
50 With cheerful wisdom and instructive mirth,
See motley life in modern trappings dressed,
And feed with varied fools the eternal jest:
Thou who couldst laugh where Want enchained Caprice,
Toil crushed Conceit, and man was of a piece;
55 Where Wealth unloved without a mourner died;
9. I.e., when vengeance hangs over a nation, ready
2. Perhaps, i.e., impetuous energy hastens men to
to descend on it if the proposals of political fools
their death.
prevail.

3. Tower of London (a prison).

1. The sense of this couplet is that men can be

4. Greek philosopher of the late fifth century
hurried toward misery by their desires and even by

B.C.E., a fatalist who exalted cheerfulness and
their talents and accomplishments.

derided all immoderate pretensions.

6 5 8 / S A M U E L J O H N S O N

And scarce a sycophant was fed by Pride;

W h e r e ne'er was known the form of mock debate,

Or seen a new-made mayor's unwieldy state;^{0 pomp}

W h e r e change of favorites made no change of laws,

60 And senates heard before they judged a cause;

H o w wouldst thou shake at Britain's modish tribe,

Dart the quick taunt, and edge the piercing gibe?

Attentive truth and nature to descry,

And pierce each scene with philosophic eye,

65 To thee were solemn toys or empty show

T h e robes of pleasures and the veils of woe:

All aid the farce, and all thy mirth maintain,

W h o s e joys are causeless, or w h o s e griefs are vain.

S u c h was the scorn that filled the sage's mind,

70 Renewed at every glance on h u m a n kind;

H o w just that scorn ere yet thy voice declare,

Search every state, and canvass every prayer.

U n n u m b e r e d suppliants crowd Preferment's gate,

Athirst for wealth, and burning to be great;

75 Delusive Fortune hears the incessant call,

They mount, they shine, evaporate, and fall.
On every stage the foes of peace attend,
Hate dogs their flight, and Insult mocks their end.
Love ends with hope, the sinking statesman's door
so Pours in the morning worshiper no more;⁵
For growing n a m e s the weekly scribbler lies,
To growing wealth the dedicator flies;
From every room descends the painted face,
That h u n g the bright palladium⁶ of the place;
85 And smoked in kitchens, or in auctions sold,
To better features yields the frame of gold;
For n o w no more we trace in every line
Heroic worth, benevolence divine:
T h e form distorted justifies the fall,
90 And Detestation rids the indignant wall.
But will not Britain hear the last appeal,
Sign her foes' doom, or guard her favorites' zeal?
Through Freedom's sons no more remonstrance rings,
Degrading nobles and controlling kings;
95 Our supple tribes repress their patriot throats,
And ask no questions but the price of votes,
W i t h weekly libels and septennial ale.⁷
Their wish is full⁰ to riot and to rail. *satisfied*
In full-blown dignity, see Wolsey⁸ stand,
100 Law in his voice, and fortune in his hand:
To him the church, the realm, their powers consign,
Through him the rays of regal bounty shine;
5. Important personages received petitions and

7. I.e., public attacks in the weekly press and ale official calls in the morning.

distributed at the parliamentary elections held

6. An image of Pallas (Athena, Greek goddess of every seventh year.

wisdom) that supposedly preserved Troy from cap-

8. Thomas Cardinal Wolsey (ca. 1475-1530), lord ture as long as it remained in the city; hence a chancellor under Henry VIII.

safeguard.

THE VANITY OF HUMAN WISHES / 659

Turned by his nod the stream of honor flows,

His smile alone security bestows:

105 Still to new heights his restless wishes tower,

Claim leads to claim, and power advances power;

Till conquest unresisted ceased to please,

And rights submitted, left him none to seize.

At length his sovereign frowns—the train of state⁹

110 Mark the keen glance, and watch the sign to hate.

Where'er he turns, he meets a stranger's eye,

His suppliants scorn him, and his followers fly;

At once is lost the pride of awful state,

The golden canopy, the glittering plate,

115 The regal palace, the luxurious board,⁰ *table*

The liveried army, and the menial lord.

With age, with cares, with maladies oppressed,

He seeks the refuge of monastic rest.

Grief aids disease, remembered folly stings,

120 And his last sighs reproach the faith of kings.
Speak thou, whose thoughts at humble peace repine,⁰ *com-plain*

Shall Wolsey's wealth, with Wolsey's end be thine?
Or liv'st thou now, with safer pride content,
The wisest justice on the banks of Trent?¹

125 For why did Wolsey, near the steeps of fate,
On weak foundations raise the enormous weight?
Why but to sink beneath misfortune's blow,
With louder ruin to the gulfs below?

What gave great Villiers² to the assassin's knife,
130 And fixed disease on Harley's closing life?

What murdered Wentworth, and what exiled Hyde,
By kings protected and to kings allied?

What but their wish indulged in courts to shine,
And power too great to keep or to resign?

135 When first the college rolls receive his name,
The young enthusiast quits his ease for fame;
Resistless burns the fever of renown

Caught from the strong contagion of the gown:³

O'er Bodley's dome his future labors spread,

140 And Bacon's mansion trembles o'er his head.⁴

Are these thy views? proceed, illustrious youth,

And Virtue guard thee to the throne of Truth!

Yet should thy soul indulge the generous heat,

Till captive Science yields her last retreat;

9. I.e., followers of the king.

1667.

1. A river flowing through the English Midlands.
3. Academic gown, put on upon entering the uni-
2. George Villiers, duke of Buckingham, court
versity, with allusion to the shirt of Nessus, the
favorite of James I and Charles I; assassinated in
flaming robe that clung to the mythical Greek hero
1628. Robert Harley (line 130), earl of Oxford, a
Hercules and drove him to his death.

member of the Tory ministry under Q u e e n Anne,

4. “There is a tradition, that the study of friar
was subsequently imprisoned and suffered a
Bacon [i.e., the thirteenth-century scientist and
decline. Thomas Wentworth (line 131), earl of
philosopher Roger Bacon], built on an arch over
Strafford, advisor to Charles I, was executed in
the bridge, will fall, when a man greater than
1641, under the Long Parliament. Edward Hyde
Bacon shall pass under it” [Johnson’s note]. *Bod-*
(line 131), earl of Clarendon, who was Charles II’s
ley’s dome: the Bodleian Library, Oxford (Latin for
lord chancellor and whose daughter married into
domus, house).

the royal family, was impeached and exiled in

660 / S A M U E L J O H N S O N

145 Should Reason guide thee with her brightest ray,
And pour on misty Doubt resistless day;
Should no false kindness lure to loose delight,
Nor praise relax, nor difficulty fright;

Should tempting Novelty thy cell refrain,⁰ *-pass by, avoid*

150 And Sloth effuse her opiate fumes in vain;

Should Beauty blunt on fops her fatal dart,

Nor claim the triumph of a lettered heart;

Should no disease thy torpid veins invade,

Nor Melancholy's phantoms haunt thy shade;

155 Yet hope not life from grief or danger free,

Nor think the doom of man reversed for thee:

Deign on the passing world to turn thine eyes,

And pause a while from letters, to be wise;

There mark what ill the scholar's life assail,

160 Toil, envy, want, the patron, and the jail.

See nations slowly wise, and meanly just,

To buried merit raise the tardy bust.

If dreams yet flatter, once again attend,

Hear Lydiat's life, and Galileo's end.⁵

165 Nor deem, when Learning her last prize bestows,

The glittering eminence exempt from foes;

See when the vulgar 'scapes, despised or awed,

Rebellion's vengeful talons seize on Laud.⁶

From meaner minds though smaller fines content,

170 The plundered palace, or sequestered⁷ rent;

Marked out by dangerous parts he meets the shock,

And fatal Learning leads him to the block:

Around his tomb let Art and Genius weep,

But hear his death, ye blockheads, hear and sleep.⁸

175 The festal blazes, the triumphal show,

The ravished standard, and the captive foe,

The senate's thanks, the gazette's⁹ pompous tale,
 With force resistless o'er the brave prevail.
 Such bribes the rapid Greek¹ o'er Asia whirled,
 180 For such the steady Romans shook the world;
 For such in distant lands the Britons shine,
 And stain with blood the Danube or the Rhine;
 This power has praise that virtue scarce can warm,²
 Till fame supplies the universal charm.
 185 Yet Reason frowns on War's unequal game,
 Where wasted nations raise a single name,
 And mortgaged states their grandsires' wreaths regret
 From age to age in everlasting debt;
 Wreaths which at last the dear-bought right convey
 5. Galileo (1564—1642), the Italian astronomer,
 7. Confiscated by the state.
 was imprisoned for heresy by the Inquisition; he
 8. Rest secure, i.e., since you lack Laud's learning
 died blind. Thomas Lydiat (1572-1646), the
 and gifts.
 Oxford mathematician and don, endured lifelong
 9. Newspaper's or official report's.
 poverty because of his Royalist sympathies.
 1. I.e., Alexander the Great.
 6. William Laud (1573-1645), archbishop of
 2. I.e., praise has a power (to activate the brave)
 Canterbury under Charles I; executed in 1645,
 that an abstract love of virtue can scarcely begin
 under the Long Parliament, for his devotion to

to kindle.

episcopacy.

THE VANITY OF HUMAN WISHES / 661

190 To rust on medals, or on stones decay.

On what foundation stands the warrior's pride,

How just his hopes, let Swedish Charles³ decide;

A frame of adamant, a soul of fire,

No dangers fright him, and no labors tire;

195 O'er love, o'er fear, extends his wide domain,

Unconquered lord of pleasure and of pain;

No joys to him pacific scepters yield,

War sounds the trump, he rushes to the field;

Behold surrounding kings their powers combine,

200 And one capitulate, and one resign;⁴

Peace courts his hand, but spreads her charms in vain;

"Think nothing gained," he cries, "till naught remain,

On Moscow's walls till Gothic⁰ standards fly, *Teutonic*

And all be mine beneath the polar sky."

205 The march begins in military state,

And nations on his eye suspended wait;

Stern Famine guards the solitary coast,

And Winter barricades the realms of Frost;

He comes, nor want nor cold his course delay—

210 Hide, blushing Glory, hide Pultowa's day:

The vanquished hero leaves his broken bands,

And shows his miseries in distant lands;

Condemned a needy supplicant to wait,

While ladies interpose, and slaves debate.

215 But did not Chance at length her error mend?
 Did no subverted empire mark his end?
 Did rival monarchs give the fatal wound?
 Or hostile millions press him to the ground?
 His fall was destined to a barren strand,
 220 A petty fortress, and a dubious hand;
 He left the name at which the world grew pale,
 To point a moral, or adorn a tale.
 All times their scenes of pompous woes afford,
 From Persia's tyrant to Bavaria's lord.⁵
 225 In gay hostility, and barbarous pride,
 With half mankind embattled at his side,
 Great Xerxes comes to seize the certain prey,
 And starves exhausted regions in his way;
 Attendant Flattery counts his myriads o'er,
 230 Till counted myriads soothe his pride no more;
 Fresh praise is tried till madness fires his mind,
 The waves he lashes, and enchains the wind;
 New powers are claimed, new powers are still bestowed,
 Till rude resistance lops the spreading god;
 235 The daring Greeks deride the martial show,
 3. King Charles XII (1682-1718) of Sweden.
 throne to Charles in 1704.
 Defeated by the Russians at Pultowa in 1709, and
 5. Charles Albert, elector of Bavaria, who suc-
 cessfully aspired to the crown of the Holy Roman
 sought an alliance with the Turkish Sultan. He was

Empire but was deposed in a few years through the
killed in an attack on “a petty fortress” (line 220),
political skill of Maria Theresa (“fair Austria,” line
Fredrikshald, in Norway.

245). *Persia’s tyrant*: Xerxes, emperor whose forces

4. Frederick IV of Denmark capitulated to Charles
the Greeks defeated by sea at Salamis in 480 **B.C.E.**
in 1700, and Augustus II of Poland resigned his
and later, on land, at Plataea.

6 6 2 / S A M U E L J O H N S O N

And heap their valleys with the gaudy foe;

The insulted sea with humbler thought he gains,

A single skiff to speed his flight remains;

The encumbered oar scarce leaves the dreaded coast

240 Through purple⁰ billows and a floating host. *blood-*
stained

The bold Bavarian, in a luckless hour,

Tries the dread summits of Caesarean⁰ power, *imperial*

With unexpected legions bursts away,

And sees defenseless realms receive his sway;

245 Short sway! fair Austria spreads her mournful charms,

The queen, the beauty, sets the world in arms;

From hill to hill the beacon’s rousing blaze

Spreads wide the hope of plunder and of praise;

The fierce Croatian, and the wild Hussar,⁶

250 With all the sons of ravage crowd the war;

The baffled prince, in honor’s flattering bloom,

Of hasty greatness finds the fatal doom;

His foes' derision, and his subjects' blame,
And steals to death from anguish and from shame.
255 Enlarge my life with multitude of days!
In health, in sickness, thus the suppliant prays;
Hides from himself his state, and shuns to know,
That life protracted is protracted woe.
Time hovers o'er, impatient to destroy,
260 And shuts up all the passages of joy;
In vain their gifts the bounteous seasons pour,
The fruit autumnal, and the vernal flower;
With listless eyes the dotard views the store,
He views, and wonders that they please no more;
265 Now pall the tasteless meats, and joyless wines,
And Luxury with sighs her slave resigns.
Approach, ye minstrels, try the soothing strain,
Diffuse the tuneful lenitives⁰ of pain: *relievers*
No sounds, alas! would touch the impervious ear,
270 Though dancing mountains witnessed Orpheus⁷ near;
Nor lute nor lyre his feeble powers attend,
Nor sweeter music of a virtuous friend,
But everlasting dictates crowd his tongue,
Perversely grave, or positively wrong.
275 The still returning tale, and lingering jest,
Perplex the fawning niece and pampered guest,
While growing hopes scarce awe the gathering sneer,
And scarce a legacy can bribe to hear;
The watchful guests still hint the last offense;
280 The daughter's petulance, the son's expense,

Improve⁰ his heady rage with treacherous skill, *play upon*
And mold his passions till they make his will.

Unnumbered maladies his joints invade,
Lay siege to life and press the dire blockade;
285 But unextinguished avarice still remains,

6. Hungarian cavalryman.

7. In Greek mythology, a poet and musician whose playing
could move even trees and hills.

THE VANITY OF HUMAN WISHES / 6 6 3

And dreaded losses aggravate his pains;
He turns, with anxious heart and crippled hands,
His bonds of debt, and mortgages of lands;
Or views his coffers with suspicious eyes,
290 Unlocks his gold, and counts it till he dies.

But grant, the virtues of a temperate prime
Bless with an age exempt from scorn or crime;
An age that melts with unperceived decay,
And glides in modest innocence away;

295 Whose peaceful day Benevolence endears,
Whose night congratulating Conscience cheers;
The general favorite as the general friend:

Such age there is, and who shall wish its end?

Yet even on this her load Misfortune flings,
300 To press the weary minutes' flagging wings;
New sorrow rises as the day returns,
A sister sickens, or a daughter mourns.

Now kindred Merit fills the sable⁰ bier, *black*

Now lacerated Friendship claims a tear;

305 Year chases year, decay pursues decay,
Still drops some joy from withering life away;
New forms arise, and different views engage,
Superfluous lags the veteran⁸ on the stage,
Till pitying Nature signs the last release,
310 And bids afflicted Worth retire to peace.
But few there are whom hours like these await,
Who set unclouded in the gulfs of Fate.
From Lydia's monarch⁹ should the search descend,
By Solon cautioned to regard his end,
315 In life's last scene what prodigies surprise,
Fears of the brave, and follies of the wise!
From Marlborough's eyes the streams of dotage flow,
And Swift expires a driveler and a show.¹
The teeming mother, anxious for her race,
320 Begs for each birth the fortune of a face:
Yet Vane could tell what ills from beauty spring;
And Sedley² cursed the form that pleased a king.
Ye nymphs of rosy lips and radiant eyes,
Whom Pleasure keeps too busy to be wise,
325 Whom Joys with soft varieties invite,
By day the frolic, and the dance by night;
Who frown with vanity, who smile with art,
And ask the latest fashion of the heart;
What care, what rules your heedless charms shall save,
330 Each nymph your rival, and each youth your slave?
Against your fame with Fondness Hate combines,
The rival batters, and the lover mines.⁰ *undermines*

8. I.e., an aged person.

Marlborough, and the writer Jonathan Swift

9. Croesus (d. ca. 549 **B.C.E.**), a very rich king who (1667 - 1745 ; see pp. 568-89) declined into senility, boasted of his happiness, and who was advised by

the Athenian lawmaker Solon to regard no man as

2. Catherine Sedley, mistress of James II. Anne securely happy. He was later deposed.

Vane, mistress of Frederick, prince of Wales, died

1. Both the military hero John Churchill, duke of at thirty-one.

664 / S A M U E L J O H N S O N

With distant voice neglected Virtue calls,
Less heard and less, the faint remonstrance falls;
335 Tired with contempt, she quits the slippery reign,
And Pride and Prudence take her seat in vain.
In crowd at once, where none the pass defend,
The harmless freedom, and the private friend.
The guardians yield, by force superior plied:
340 To Interest, Prudence; and to Flattery, Pride.
Now Beauty falls betrayed, despised, distressed,
And hissing Infamy proclaims the rest.
Where then shall Hope and Fear their objects find?
Must dull Suspense corrupt the stagnant mind?
345 Must helpless man, in ignorance sedate,
Roll darkling down the torrent of his fate?
Must no dislike alarm, no wishes rise,

No cries invoke the mercies of the skies?
Inquirer, cease; petitions yet remain,
350 Which Heaven may hear, nor deem religion vain.
Still raise for good the supplicating voice,
But leave to Heaven the measure and the choice.
Safe in His power, whose eyes discern afar
The secret ambush of a specious prayer.
355 Implore His aid, in His decisions rest,
Secure, whate'er He gives, He gives the best.
Yet when the sense of sacred presence fires,
And strong devotion to the skies aspires,
Pour forth thy fervors for a healthful mind,
360 Obedient passions, and a will resigned;
For love, which scarce collective man can fill;
For patience sovereign o'er transmuted ill;³
For faith, that panting for a happier seat,
Counts death kind Nature's signal of retreat:
365 These goods for man the laws of Heaven ordain,
These goods He grants, who grants the power to gain;
With these celestial Wisdom calms the mind,
And makes the happiness she does not find.

1749

On the Death of Dr. Robert Levet⁴

Condemned to Hope's delusive mine,
As on we toil from day to day,
By sudden blasts, or slow decline,
Our social comforts drop away.

3. I.e., a capacity for love such that all humankind

4. An unlicensed physician, who practiced among together can hardly engage it fully; and for the poor and who had long lived in Johnson's patience, which, by asserting sovereignty over ills, house. He was uncouth in appearance and stiff in changes their nature.

manner.

ON THE DEATH OF DR. ROBERT LEVET / 66
5

5 Well tried through many a varying year,

See Levett to the grave descend;

Officious, innocent, sincere, *dutiful*

Of every friendless name the friend.

Yet still he fills Affection's eye,

10 Obscurely wise, and coarsely kind;

Nor, lettered Arrogance, deny

Thy praise to merit unrefined.

W h e n fainting Nature called for aid,

And hovering Death prepared the blow,

15 His vigorous remedy displayed

The power of art without the show.

In Misery's darkest cavern known,

His useful care was ever nigh,

W h e r e hopeless Anguish poured his groan,

20 And lonely W a n t retired to die.

No s u m m o n s m o c k e d by chill delay,

No petty gain disdained by pride,

T h e modest wants of every day

The toil of every day supplied.
25 His virtues walked their narrow round,
N o r made a pause, nor left a void;
And sure the Eternal Master found
T h e single talent⁵ well employed.
T h e busy day, the peaceful night,
30 Unfelt, uncounted, glided by;
His frame was firm, his powers were bright,
T h o u g h n o w his eightieth year was nigh.
T h e n with no throbbing fiery pain,
No cold gradations of decay,
35 D e a t h broke at once the vital chain,
And freed his soul the nearest way.

1783

5. An allusion to the parable of the talents, in which Christ suggests that salvation will be granted to those who use well their abilities, however small (Matthew 25.14—30).

666

T H O M A S GRAY

1716-1771

Ode on a Distant Prospect of Eton College

‘ A v B p a m o g - t K a v r) J i p o ^ a a i g e t g t o S v c r - r u
x 8 ^ . 1

— M E N A N D E R

Ye distant spires, ye antique towers,
That crown the watery glade,
W h e r e grateful S c i e n c e ⁰ still adores *learning*
Her Henry’s holy shade;²
5 And ye, that from the stately brow

Of Windsor's heights³ the expanse below
Of grove, of lawn, of mead^o survey, *meadow*
Whose turf, whose shade, whose flowers among
Wanders the hoary^o Thames along *aged*
io His silver-winding way.

Ah happy hills, ah pleasing shade,
Ah fields beloved in vain,
Where once my careless childhood strayed,
A stranger yet to pain!

15 I feel the gales, that from ye blow,
A momentary bliss bestow,
As waving fresh their gladsome wing,
My weary soul they seem to soothe,
And, redolent of joy and youth,
20 To breathe a second spring.

Say, Father Thames, for thou hast seen
Full many a sprightly race
Disporting on thy margent^o green
marginal

The paths of pleasure trace,
25 Who foremost now delight to cleave
With pliant arm thy glassy wave?
The captive linnet which enthrall^o
imprison

What idle progeny succeed⁴
To chase the rolling circle's^o speed,
hoop's

30 Or urge the flying ball?

W h i l e some on earnest business bent
Their murmuring labors ply
'Gainst graver hours, that bring constraint
To sweeten liberty:

35 S o m e bold adventurers disdain
The limits of their little reign,
And unknown regions dare descry:⁰ *discover*

1. I am a man, and that is reason enough for being
3. On the opposite side of the river Thames from
miserable (Greek); from the dramatist Menander
Eton; most of the "height" belongs to the castle.
(342-292 B.C.E.).

4. Follow the example of the preceding genera-
2. Henry VI, founder of Eton.
tion.

**ODE ON A DISTANT PROSPECT OF ETON
COLLEGE / 667**

Still as they run they look behind,
They hear a voice in every wind,
40 And snatch a fearful joy.
Gay hope is theirs by fancy fed,
Less pleasing when possessed;
The tear forgot as soon as shed,
The sunshine of the breast:
45 Theirs buxom⁰ health of rosy hue, *zestful, jolly*
Wild wit, invention ever new,
And lively cheer of vigor born;
The thoughtless day, the easy night,

The spirits pure, the slumbers light,
50 That fly the approach of morn.
Alas, regardless of their doom,
The little victims play!
No sense have they of ills to come,
Nor care beyond today.
55 Yet see how all around 'em wait
The ministers of human fate,
And black Misfortune's baleful train!
Ah, show them where in ambush stand
To seize their prey the murderous band!
60 Ah, tell them they are men!
These shall the fury Passions tear,
The vultures of the mind,
Disdainful Anger, pallid Fear,
And Shame that skulks behind;
65 Or pining Love shall waste their youth,
Or Jealousy with rankling tooth,
That inly gnaws the secret heart,
And Envy wan, and faded Care,
Grim-visaged comfortless Despair,
70 And Sorrow's piercing dart.
Ambition this⁵ shall tempt to rise,
Then whirl the wretch from high,
To bitter Scorn a sacrifice,
And grinning Infamy.
75 The stings of Falsehood those⁶ shall try,
And hard Unkindness' altered eye,

That mocks the tear it forced to flow;
And keen Remorse with blood defiled,
And moody Madness laughing wild
so Amid severest woe.

Lo, in the vale of years beneath⁷

A grisly troop are seen,

5. I.e., one of them.

7. A pointed variation on the common description

6. I.e., others.

of life as a “vale of tears.”

668 / T H O M A S GRAY

The painful family of Death,

More hideous than their queen:

85 This racks the joints, this fires the veins,

That every laboring sinew strains,

Those in the deeper vitals rage:

Lo, Poverty, to fill the band,

That numbs the soul with icy hand,

90 And slow-consuming Age.

To each his sufferings: all are men,

Condemned alike to groan;

The tender for another's pain,

The unfeeling for his own.

95 Yet ah! why should they know their fate?

Since sorrow never comes too late,

And happiness too swiftly flies.

Thought would destroy their paradise.

No more; where ignorance is bliss,

IOO 'Tis folly to be wise.

1742 1747

Ode

On the Death of a Favorite Cat, Drowned in a Tub of Goldfishes

'Twas on a lofty vase's side,

W h e r e China's gayest art had dyed

T h e azure flowers that blow;⁰ *bloom*

Demurest of the tabby kind,

5 T h e pensive Selima reclined,

Gazed on the lake below.

Her conscious tail her joy declared;

T h e fair round face, the snowy beard,

T h e velvet of her paws,

io Her coat, that with the tortoise vies,

Her ears of jet,^o and emerald eyes, *black*

She saw; and purred applause.

Still had she gazed; but 'midst the tide

Two angel forms were seen to glide,

15 T h e genii⁰ of the stream: *guardian spirits*

Their scaly armor's Tyrian hue

Through richest purple to the view

Betrayed a golden gleam.⁸

T h e hapless nymph with wonder saw:

20 A whisker first and then a claw,

8. "Tyrian" and (in classical reference) "purple" cover a considerable spectrum, including crimson. The fish are seen, through red highlights, as golden.

ELEGY WRITTEN IN A COUNTRY CHURCH
HYARD / 669

With many an ardent wish,
She stretched in vain to reach the prize.
What female heart can gold despise?
What cat's averse to fish?
25 Presumptuous maid! with looks intent
Again she stretched, again she bent,
Nor knew the gulf between.
(Malignant Fate sat by and smiled)
The slippery verge her feet beguiled,
30 She tumbled headlong in.
Eight times emerging from the flood
She mewed to every watery god,
Some speedy aid to send.
No dolphin came, no Nereid stirred;
35 Nor cruel Tom, nor Susan heard;
A favorite has no friend!
From hence, ye beauties, undeceived,
Know, one false step is ne'er retrieved,
And be with caution bold.
40 Not all that tempts your wandering eyes
And heedless hearts, is lawful prize;
Nor all that glisters, gold.

1747 1748

Elegy Written in a Country Churchyard

The curfew tolls the knell of parting day, *evening bell*

The lowing herd wind slowly o'er the lea,

The plowman homeward plods his weary way,
And leaves the world to darkness and to me.
5 Now fades the glimmering landscape on the sight,
And all the air a solemn stillness holds,
Save where the beetle wheels his droning flight,
And drowsy tinklings lull the distant folds;
Save that from yonder ivy-mantled tower
10 The moping owl does to the moon complain
Of such, as wandering near her secret bower,
Molest her ancient solitary reign.
Beneath those rugged elms, that yew tree's shade,
Where heaves the turf in many a mouldering heap,
9. In Greek mythology, a dolphin saved the singer and maiden,
are at play in line 19, where the Arion when he was cast
overboard. A Nereid is a "nymph" is the personified cat. Tom
and Susan are sea nymph; both meanings of "nymph," water
spirit conventional names for servants.

670 / T H O M A S GRAY

15 Each in his narrow cell forever laid,
T h e r u d e ° forefathers of the hamlet sleep. *rustic*
The breezy call of incense-breathing morn,
The swallow twittering from the straw-built shed,
The cock's shrill clarion, or the echoing horn, ° *hunting horn*
20 No more shall rouse them from their lowly bed.
For them no more the blazing hearth shall burn,
Or busy housewife ply her evening care;
No children run to lisp their sire's return,
Or climb his knees the envied kiss to share.
25 Oft did the harvest to their sickle yield,

Their furrow oft the stubborn glebe⁰ has broke; *soil*
How jocund did they drive their team afield!
How bowed the woods beneath their sturdy stroke!
Let not Ambition mock their useful toil,
30 Their homely joys, and destiny obscure;
Nor Grandeur hear with a disdainful smile
The short and simple annals of the poor.
The boast of heraldry,¹ the pomp of power,
And all that beauty, all that wealth e'er gave,
35 Awaits alike the inevitable hour.
The paths of glory lead but to the grave.
Nor you, ye proud, impute to these the fault,
If Memory o'er their tomb no trophies² raise,
Where through the long-drawn aisle and fretted⁰ vault
ornamented
40 The pealing anthem swells the note of praise.
Can storied urn³ or animated⁰ bust *lifelike*
Back to its mansion call the fleeting breath?
Can Honor's voice provoke⁰ the silent dust, *call forth*
Or Flattery soothe the dull cold ear of Death?
45 Perhaps in this neglected spot is laid
Some heart once pregnant with celestial fire;
Hands that the rod of empire might have swayed,
Or waked to ecstasy the living lyre.
But Knowledge to their eyes her ample page
50 Rich with the spoils of time did ne'er unroll;
Chill Penury repressed their noble rage,
And froze the genial current of the soul.

Full many a gem of purest ray serene,

The dark unfaulthomed caves of ocean bear:

1. I.e., noble family. representations of arms captured in battle.

2. Memorials to military heroes; typically, statuary 3. Funeral urn with descriptive epitaph.

ELEGY WRITTEN IN A COUNTRY CHURCH
HYARD / 671

55 Full many a flower is born to blush unseen,

And waste its sweetness on the desert air.

Some village Hampden,⁴ that with dauntless breast

The little tyrant of his fields withstood;

Some mute inglorious Milton here may rest,

60 Some Cromwell⁵ guiltless of his country's blood.

The applause of listening senates to command,

The threats of pain and ruin to despise,

To scatter plenty o'er a smiling land,

And read their history in a nation's eyes,

65 Their lot forbade: nor circumscribed alone

Their growing virtues, but their crimes confined;

Forbade to wade through slaughter to a throne,

And shut the gates of mercy on mankind,

The struggling pangs of conscious truth to hide,

70 To queen the blushes of ingenuous shame,

Or heap the shrine of Luxury and Pride

With incense kindled at the Muse's⁶ flame.

Far from the madding⁷ crowd's ignoble strife,

Their sober wishes never learned to stray;

75 Along the cool sequestered vale of life

They kept the noiseless tenor of their way.

**Yet even these bones from insult to protect
Some frail memorial still erected nigh,
Without rhymes and shapeless sculpture
decked,
so Implores the passing tribute of a sigh.
Their name, their years, spelt by the unlettered Muse,
The place of fame and elegy supply:
And many a holy text around she strews,
That teach the rustic moralist to die.**

**85 For who to dumb Forgetfulness a prey,
This pleasing anxious being e'er resigned,
Left the warm precincts of the cheerful day,
Nor cast on e longing lingering look behind?
On some fond breast the parting soul relies,
90 Some pious drops the closing eye requires;
Even from the tomb the voice of Nature cries,
Even in our ashes live their wonted fires. *usual***

4. John Hampden (1594-1643), leader of the
statesman; lord protector of England 1653—58.

opposition to Charles I in the controversy over ship

6. One of the nine Greek sister goddesses who
money; killed in battle in the civil wars.

inspired the arts.

5. Oliver Cromwell (1599—1658), general and

7. I.e., either maddening or acting madly.

672 / T H O M A S G R A Y

**For thee, who mindful of the unhonored dead
Dost in these lines their artless tale relate;**

95 If chance, by lonely contemplation led,
S o m e kindred spirit shall inquire thy fate,
Haply some hoary^o-headed swain⁰ may say, *gray or white / rustic*

“Oft have we seen him at the peep of dawn
Brushing with hasty steps the dews away
100 To m e e t the sun u p o n the upland lawn.

“There at the foot of yonder nodding b e e c h
That wreathes its old fantastic roots so high,
His listless length at noontide would he stretch,
And pore upon the brook that babbles by.

105 “Hard by yon wood, n o w smiling as in scorn,
Muttering his wayward fancies he would rove,
N o w drooping, woeful wan, like one forlorn,
Or crazed with care, or crossed in hopeless love.

“One morn I missed him on the c u s t o m e d hill,
no Along the heath and near his favorite tree;
Another came; nor yet beside the rill,
Nor up the lawn, nor at the w o o d was he;

“The next with dirges due in sad array
Slow through the churchway path we saw him borne.

115 Approach and read (for thou canst read) the lay,^o *song*
Graved on the stone beneath yon aged thorn.”

The Epitaph

Here rests his head upon the lap of Earth

A youth to Fortune and to Fame unknown.

Fair Science⁰ frowned not on his humble birth, learning

120 *And Melancholy marked him for her own.*

*Large was his bounty, and his soul sincere,
Heaven did a recompense as largely send:
He gave to Misery all he had, a tear,
He gained from Heaven ('twas all he wished) a friend.*

125 *No farther seek his merits to disclose,
Or draw his frailties from their dread abode
(There they alike in trembling hope repose),
The bosom of his Father and his God.*

ca. 1742 - 501751

**ODE WRITTEN IN THE BEGINNING OF
THE YEAR 1746/673**

Sonnet

*On the Death of Mr. Richard West*⁸

In vain to me the smiling mornings shine,
And reddening Phoebus⁰ lifts his golden fire;
the sun

The birds in vain their amorous descant join,⁰
harmonize

Or cheerful fields resume their green attire;
These ears, alas! for other notes repine,
A different object do these eyes require;⁰

ask for

My lonely anguish melts no heart but mine,
And in my breast the imperfect joys expire.
Yet morning smiles the busy race to cheer,
And newborn pleasure brings to happier men;
The fields to all their wonted⁰ tribute bear;
usual

To warm their little loves the birds complain:⁹
I fruitless mourn to him that cannot hear,
And weep the more, because I weep in vain.

1742

1775

WILLIAM COLLINS

1721-1759

Ode Written in the Beginning of the Year 1746¹

How sleep the brave who sink to rest
By all their country's wishes blest!
When Spring, with dewy fingers cold,
Returns to deck their hallowed mold,⁰ *earth*
5 She there shall dress a sweeter sod
Than Fancy's feet have ever trod.
By fairy hands their knell is rung,
By forms unseen their dirge is sung;
There Honor comes, a pilgrim gray,
10 To bless the turf that wraps their clay,
And Freedom shall awhile repair,
To dwell a weeping hermit there!

1746

8. A friend of Gray since preparatory school, who
p. 190).

died at twenty-six.

1. This poem celebrates Englishmen who fell

9. I.e., sing of their unfulfilled desire. "Little
resisting the pretender to the throne (Bonnie
loves" puns on its Italian translation, *amoretti*, the

Prince Charlie, the grandson of James II) in 1745.

title of Edmund Spenser's sonnet sequence (see

674 / WILLIAM COLLINS

Ode on the Poetical Character

*Strophe*²

As once, if not with light regard,

I read aright that gifted bard

(Him whose school above the rest

His loveliest Elfin Queen has blest).³

5 One, only one, unrivaled fair,

Might hope the magic girdle⁴ wear,

At solemn tourney⁰ hung on high, *tournament*

The wish of each love-darting eye;

Lo! to each other nymph in turn applied,

10 As if, in air unseen, some hovering hand,

Some chaste and angel-friend to virgin-fame,

With whispered spell had burst the starting band,

It left unblest her loathed dishonored side;

Happier, hopeless fair, if never

15 Her baffled hand with vain endeavor

Had touched that fatal zone to her denied!

Young Fancy thus, to me divinest name,

To whom, prepared and bathed in Heaven

The cest of amplest power is given;

20 To few the godlike gift assigns,

To gird their blest, prophetic loins,

And gaze her visions wild, and feel unmixed her flame!

Epode

**The band, as fairy legends say,
 W a s wove on that creating day,
 W h e n He, w h o called with thought to birth
 Yon tented sky, this laughing earth,
 And dressed with springs, and forests tall,
 And poured the main⁰ engirting all, *sea*
 Long by the loved Enthusiast⁵ wooed,
 Himself in some diviner mood,
 Retiring, sate with her alone,
 And placed her on his sapphire throne;
 T h e whiles, the vaulted shrine around,
 Seraphic⁰ wires were heard to sound, *angelic*
 N o w sublimest triumph⁰ swelling, *trumpet*
 N o w on love and mercy dwelling;
 And she, from out the veiling cloud,
 Breathed her magic notes aloud:
 And thou, thou rich-haired Youth of Morn,⁶**

2. Initial segment of the Greek choral ode, deliv-

4. A belt, “band” (line 12), “zone” (line 16), or
 ered with the chorus in motion; normally followed
 “cest” (line 19) described in *Faerie Queene* 4.5: it
 by the antistrophe, with the chorus in reverse
 “gave the virtue of chaste love and wifehood to all
 motion, and then by the epode, with the chorus
 that did it bear.” “Peerless was she thought” that
 standing still.

wore it.

3. Edmund Spenser (1552-1599; see pp. 159-

5. Literally, one inspired by God; i.e., Fancy.
205), whose followers (“school”) have exalted his
6. Apollo, the sun, Greek and Roman god of
Faerie Queene above his other poems.
poetry.

ODE TO EVENING / 675

40 And all thy subject life was born!
The dangerous Passions kept aloof,
Far from the sainted growing woof;⁷
But near it sate ecstatic Wonder,
Listening the deep applauding thunder;
45 And Truth, in sunny vest arrayed,
By whose the tassel’s⁰ eyes were made; *male falcon’s*
All the shadowy tribes of Mind,
In braided dance their murmurs joined,
And all the bright uncounted Powers
50 Who feed on Heaven’s ambrosial flowers.
Where is the bard, whose soul can now
Its high presuming hopes avow?
Where he who thinks, with rapture blind,
This hallow’d work for him designed?

Antistrophe

55 High on some cliff, to Heaven up-piled,
Of rude access, of prospect wild,
Where, tangled round the jealous steep,
Strange shades o’erbrow the valleys deep,
And holy Genii⁰ guard the rock, *guardian spirits*
60 Its glooms embrown, its springs unlock,

While on its rich ambitious head,
 An Eden, like his^o own, lies spread; *Milton's*
 I view that oak, the fancied glades among,
 By which as Milton lay, his evening ear,
 65 From many a cloud that dropped ethereal dew,
 Nigh sphered in Heaven its native strains could hear;
 On which that ancient trump⁸ he reached was hung;
 Thither oft, his glory greeting,
 From Waller's⁹ myrtle shades retreating,
 70 With many a vow from Hope's aspiring tongue,
 My trembling feet his guiding steps pursue;
 In vain—such bliss to one alone,
 Of all the sons of soul was known,
 And Heaven, and Fancy, kindred powers,
 75 Have now o'erturned the inspiring bowers,¹
 Or curtained close such scene from every future view.

1746

Ode to Evening

If aught of oaten stop,² or pastoral song,
 May hope, chaste Eve, to soothe thy modest ear,
 7. The fabric of the girdle (line 6).
 9. Edmund Waller (1607-1687; see pp. 393-94).
 8. Milton's epic or sublime trumpet. The line
 The myrtle, sacred to Venus, Roman goddess of
 echoes "Il Penseroso," lines 59—60 ("While Cyn-
 love and beauty, is an emblem of love.

thia checks her Dragon yoke, / Gently o'er

1. Leafy coverts or arbors; also, poetically, ideal-

th'accustomed Oke"), and "Ode on the Morning of
ized abodes.

Christ's Nativity," line 1 56 ("The wakefull trump").

2. I.e., if any modulation of a (shepherd's) reed.

6 7 6 / W I L L I A M C O L L I N S

Like thy own solemn springs,

Thy springs and dying gales,

5 O nymph⁰ reserved, while now the bright-haired sun *maiden*

Sits in yon western tent, whose cloudy skirts,

With brede^o ethereal wove, *braid*

O'erhang his wavy bed:

Now air is hushed, save where the weak-eyed bat,

10 With short shrill shriek flits by on leathern wing,

Or where the beetle winds

His small but sullen horn,

As oft he rises 'midst the twilight path,

Against the pilgrim⁰ borne in heedless hum: *wayfarer*

15 Now teach me, maid composed,

To breathe some softened strain,

Whose numbers, stealing through thy darkening vale,³

May not unseemly with its stillness suit,

As, musing slow, I hail

20 Thy genial loved return!

For when thy folding-star⁴ arising shows

His paly^o circlet, at his warning lamp *pale*

The fragrant Hours, and elves

Who slept in flowers the day,

25 And many a nymph who wreaths her brows with sedge,

And sheds the freshening dew, and, lovelier still,
The pensive Pleasures sweet,
Prepare thy shadowy car.^o *carriage*
Then lead, calm votaress,^o where some sheety lake *devotee*
30 Cheers the lone heath, or some time-hallowed pile
Or upland fallows⁵ gray
Reflect its last cool gleam.
But when chill blustering winds, or driving rain,
Forbid my willing feet, be mine the hut
35 That from the mountain's side
Views wilds, and swelling floods,
And hamlets^o brown, and dim-discovered spires, *villages*
And hears their simple bell, and marks o'er all
Thy dewy fingers draw
40 The gradual dusky veil.
While Spring shall pour his showers, as oft he wont,^o *is*
accustomed
And bathe thy breathing tresses, meekest Eve;
While Summer loves to sport
Beneath thy lingering light;
45 While sallow Autumn fills thy lap with leaves;
Or Winter, yelling through the troublous air,
Affrights thy shrinking train,
And rudely rends thy robes;
So long, sure-found beneath the sylvan shed,⁶
50 Shall Fancy, Friendship, Science, rose-lipped Health,
3. Valley. *Numbers*: measures.
5. I.e., ploughed land. Cf. Milton, "L'Allegro," line

4. The evening star, which, when it becomes visible,
71 (p. 403).

ible, tells the shepherd to drive his flock to the

6. I.e., secure beneath the shelter of the forest.

sheepfold.

THE FLOWERS OF THE FOREST / 677

Thy gentlest influence own,

And hymn thy favorite name!

1746, 1748

J E A N E L L I O T

1727-1805

The Flowers of the Forest¹

I've heard the lilting² at our yowe^o-milking,

Lasses a-lilting before the dawn o' day;

But now they are moaning on ilka^o green loaning:³

each

“The Flowers of the Forest are a' wede away.”⁴

5 At buchts,^o in the morning, nae^o blythe lads are

sheepfolds / no

scorning ”

teasing

The lasses are lonely, and dowie,^o and wae;^o *sad /wretched*

N a e daffin',^o n a e gabbin', b u t sighing a n d *foolish playing*

sabbing:^o *sobbing*

Ilk^o ane^o lifts her leglen,^o and hies her away. *each / one / milk pail*

In hairst,^o at the shearing, nae youths now are jeering, *harvest*

10 The bandsters⁵ are lyart,^o and runkled^o and gray; *silvery / rumped*

At fair or at preaching, nae wooing, nae fleeching:⁰ *flattering*

The Flowers of the Forest are a' wede away.

At e'en, in the gloaming,⁰ nae swankies⁶ are roaming

twilight

'Bout stacks⁷ wi' the lasses at bogle⁰ to play,

hide-and-seek

But ilk ane sits drearie, lamenting her dearie:

The Flowers of the Forest are a' wede away.

Dule⁰ and wae⁰ for the order sent our lads to the Border;

grief/woe

The English, for ance,⁰ by guile wan⁰ the day; *once / won*

The Flowers of the Forest, that foucht aye the foremost,

The prime o' our land, are cauld⁰ in the clay.

cold

We'll hear nae mair⁰ liltin' at our yowe-milkin',

more

Women and bairns⁰ are heartless and wae;

children

Sighin' and moanin' on ilka green loanin':

"The Flowers of the Forest are a' wede away."

1769

1. This poem is a ballad on the battle of Flodden,

takes her first and fourth lines; cf. Pete Seeger,

an English victory over the Scots in 1513. James

"Where Have All the Flowers Gone?" (p. 1853).

IV of Scotland, in alliance with France, had

2. Sweet and cheerful singing.

invaded the north of England. At Flodden, in

3. Uncultivated ground used for milking.

Northumberland, James's army occupied a strong

4. Carried off, especially by death.

position and outnumbered the English troops, but

5. Those who bind sheaves behind the reaper.

James proved an incompetent, though brave, gen-

6. Strapping young men.

eral. More than ten thousand Scots were killed at

7. Large piles of dried peat erected outdoors as a

Flodden, James among them. Elliot set the words

fuel store.

of the ballad to an old Scottish air, from which she

6 7 8

C H R I S T O P H E R S M A R T

1722-1771

From Jubilate Agno¹

For I will consider my Cat Jeoffry.

For he is the servant of the Living God, duly and daily serving
him.

For at the first glance of the glory of God in the East he
worships in

his way.

700 For is this done by wreathing his body seven times round
with

elegant quickness.

For then he leaps up to catch the musk,² which is the blessing
of

God upon his prayer.

For he rolls upon plank³ to work it in.

For having done duty and received blessing he begins to consider himself.

For this he performs in ten degrees.

705 For first he looks upon his forepaws to see if they are clean.

For secondly he kicks up behind to clear away there.

For thirdly he works it upon stretch with the forepaws extended.

For fourthly he sharpens his paws by wood.

For fifthly he washes himself.

710 For sixthly he rolls upon wash.

For seventhly he fleas himself, that he may not be interrupted upon

the beat.⁴

For eighthly he rubs himself against a post.

For ninthly he looks up for his instructions.

For tenthly he goes in quest of food.

715 For having considered God and himself he will consider his neighbor.

For if he meets another cat he will kiss her in kindness.

For when he takes his prey he plays with it to give it a chance.

For one mouse in seven escapes by his dallying.

For when his day's work is done his business more properly begins.

720 For he keeps the Lord's watch in the night against the adversary.

For he counteracts the powers of darkness by his electrical skin and

glaring eyes.

For he counteracts the Devil, who is death, by brisking about the
life.

For in his morning orisons he loves the sun and the sun loves him.

For he is of the tribe of Tiger.

725 For the Cherub Cat is a term of the Angel Tiger.⁵

For he has the subtlety and hissing of a serpent, which in goodness
he suppresses.

For he will not do destruction if he is well-fed, neither will he spit
without provocation.

1. Rejoice in the Lamb (Latin); i.e., in Jesus, the

3. I.e., in display or jest.

Lamb of God. Smart wrote this poem while con-

4. Upon his daily round, possibly of hunting.

finned for insanity. Its form derives from the biblical

5. Smart apparently thinks of Jeoffry as an imma-
Psalms.

ture or diminutive phase of a larger creature—

2. His own or another animal's scent, or perhaps
cherubs being by artistic convention small and
a plant odor.

childlike angels.

JUBILATE AGNO / 679

For he purrs in thankfulness when God tells him he's a good
Cat.

For he is an instrument for the children to learn benevolence
upon.

730 For every house is incomplete without him, and a blessing is lacking in the spirit.

For the Lord commanded Moses concerning the cats at the departure of the Children of Israel from Egypt.

For every family had one cat at least in the bag.⁶

For the English Cats are the best in Europe.

For he is the cleanest in the use of his forepaws of any quadruped.

735 For the dexterity of his defense is an instance of the love of God to

him exceedingly.

For he is the quickest to his mark of any creature.

For he is tenacious of his point.

For he is a mixture of gravity and waggery.

For he knows that God is his Saviour.

740 For there is nothing sweeter than his peace when at rest.

For there is nothing brisker than his life when in motion.

For he is of the Lord's poor, and so indeed is he called by benevolence perpetually—Poor Jeoffry! poor Jeoffry! the rat has

bit thy throat.

For I bless the name of the Lord Jesus that Jeoffry is better.

For the divine spirit comes about his body to sustain it in complete

cat.

745 For his tongue is exceeding pure so that it has in purity what it

wants in music.

For he is docile and can learn certain things.

For he can sit up with gravity, which is patience upon approbation.

For he can fetch and carry, which is patience in employment.

For he can jump over a stick, which is patience upon proof positive.

750 For he can spraggle upon waggle⁷ at the word of command.

For he can jump from an eminence into his master's bosom.

For he can catch the cork and toss it again.

For he is hated by the hypocrite and miser.

For the former is afraid of detection.

755 For the latter refuses the charge.

For he camels his back to bear the first notion of business.

For he is good to think on, if a man would express himself neatly.

For he made a great figure in Egypt for his signal services.

For he killed the Icneumon rat, very pernicious by land.⁸

760 For his ears are so acute that they sting again.

For from this proceeds the passing quickness of his attention.

For by stroking of him I have found out electricity.

For I perceived God's light about him both wax and fire.

For the electrical fire is the spiritual substance which God sends

from heaven to sustain the bodies both of man and beast.

765 For God has blessed him in the variety of his movements.

For, though he cannot fly, he is an excellent clamberer.

For his motions upon the face of the earth are more than any other

quadruped.

6. The Israelites took with them silver and gold 7. He can sprawl at the waggle of a finger, ornaments and raiment, as well as flocks and herds 8. The Ichneumon resembles a weasel; the an-

(Exodus 11.2 and 12.32, 35). Smart adds the cats. cient Egyptians venerated and domesticated it.

6 8 0 / C H R I S T O P H E R S M A R T

For he c a n tread to all t h e m e a s u r e s 9 u p o n the m u s i c .

For he c a n s w i m for life.

770 For he c a n creep.

1759-63 1939

*From A Song to David*¹

David the son of Jesse said, and the man who was raised up on high, the anointed of the God of Jacob, and the sweet psalmist of

Israel, said, “The Spirit of the Lord spake by me, and His Word was

in my tongue.”

— 2 *Samuel* 23.1, 2

O T h o u , that sit’st u p o n a throne, [*Invocation*]²

W i t h harp of high majestic tone,

To praise the King of kings;

A n d voice of h e a v ‘ n - a s c e n d i n g swell,

5 W h i c h , w h i l e its d e e p e r n o t e s excel,

Clear, as a clarion,0 rings: *trumpet*

2

To bless e a c h valley, grove and coast,

A n d c h a r m the c h e r u b s 3 to the p o s t

Of gratitude in throngs;

io To k e e p the days on Zion's m o u n t , 4

A n d s e n d the year to his a c c o u n t ,

W i t h d a n c e s and w i t h songs:5

3

O Servant of God's holiest charge,

T h e minister of praise at large,

15 W h i c h t h o u may'st n o w receive;6

From thy b l e s s e d m a n s i o n hail and hear,

F r o m t o p m o s t e m i n e n c e appear

To this the wreath I w e a v e . 7

9. He can dance in a rhythmic or stately manner.

3. One of the nine orders of angels.

1. The second king of Israel. In an advertisement

4. Mt. Zion, one of the hills of Jerusalem; here,

for the first edition (printed in *Poems on Several*

perhaps, the Israelites, the Christian Church, the

Occasions, 1763), Smart called this work "A Poem

heavenly Jerusalem, or a place of worship.

composed in a Spirit of affection and thankfulness

5. David's task, to "keep the days," is both to

to the great Author of the Book of Gratitude, which

observe the religious rites and festivals and to rec-

is the Psalms of David the King." Smart's main

ord the Israelites' history, to "send the year to his

sources for the poem were the Bible and Patrick

[God's] account," i.e., to his reckoning, for his

Delaney's *An Historical Account of the Life and*

sake, or to his credit. (One of Smart's own projects

Reign of David King of Israel (1740).

was to compose a complete cycle of hymns for the

2. In the first edition, Smart prefaced the poem
major occasions in the calendar of the Anglican
with a summary, here reprinted as a series of mar-
Church.)

ginal glosses. The invocation is a poetic convention

6. I.e., David, whose responsibility is praise of
in which the poet requests divine inspiration and
God, will now receive the praise of the poet.

assistance to write his poem. Smart here calls on

7. Smart compares his poem to a wreath; the lau-
David.

rel wreath was a symbol of poetic achievement.

A S O N G T O D A V I D / 6 8 1

Great, valiant, pious, good, and clean, [*The excellence and
luster*

20 Sublime, contemplative, serene, *of David's character in*

Strong, constant, pleasant, wise!8 *t w e l v e P o i n t s ° f v i e w]*

Bright effluence⁰ of exceeding grace; *outflowing*

Best man!—the swiftness and the race,

The peril, and the prize!

5

25 Great—from the luster of his crown, [*proved from the*

From Samuel's horn⁹ and God's renown, *history of his life]*

Which is the people's voice;

From all the host⁰ from rear to van,⁰ *Israelites /front*

Applauded and embraced the man—

30 The man of God's own choice.

6

Valiant—the word, and up he rose—

The fight—he triumphed o'er the foes,

Whom God's just laws abhor;⁰ *hate*

And armed in gallant faith he took

35 Against the boaster,¹ from the brook

The weapons of the war,

7

Pious—magnificent and grand;

'Twas he the famous temple planned:

(The seraph in his soul)²

40 Foremost to give the Lord his dues,

Foremost to bless the welcome news,

And foremost to condole.

8

Good—from Jehudah's genuine vein,

From God's best nature good in grain,³

45 His aspect and his heart;

To pity, to forgive, to save,

Witness En-gedi's conscious cave,⁴

And Shimei's blunted dart.⁵

8. The next twelve stanzas will give an example to do so and that David's son, Solomon, would do from David's life of each of these twelve virtues.

it. "Welcome news" (line 41) is the Davidic Covenant. (In "Jubilate Agno," Smart associates these virtues with God's promise that David's line would be

with the twelve tribes of Israel.)

established kings of Israel.

9. God sent Samuel to B e t h l e h e m to choose

3. In background and substance; David came

David, a t h e n - u n k n o w n shepherd-boy, to be the
from the tribe of J u d a h (of which J e h u d a h is a var-
next king of Israel: “Then Samuel took the horn of
iation).

oil, and anointed him in the midst of his brethren:

4. Before David became king of Israel, Saul, the
and the spirit of the Lord came u p o n David from
reigning king, p u r s u e d him with an army in an
that day forward” (1 Samuel 16.13).

attempt to kill him. O n e day, in the wilderness of

1. T h e Philistine giant, Goliath, w h o m David
Engedi, Saul wandered alone into a cave where
killed using his sling and a stone from a brook.

David and his m e n were hiding. Although his m e n

2. David received the “pattern,” or plan, for the
urged him to kill Saul, David refused (1 Samuel
temple “by the Spirit” (1 Chronicles 28.12); the
24).

“seraph” seems to be Delaney’s invention. David

5. Shimei, a relative of Saul, cursed and threw

wanted to build the temple himself, but the

stones at David, but David refused to kill him (2

prophet N a t h a n said that God would not allow him
Samuel 16, 19).

9

Clean—if perpetual prayer be pure,
50 And love, which could itself inure⁰ *accustom*
To fasting and to fear—
Clean in his gestures, hands, and feet,
To smite the lyre, the dance complete,
To play the sword and spear.

10

55 Sublime—invention ever young,
Of vast conception, towering tongue,
To God the external theme;
Notes from yon exaltations caught,
Unrivalled royalty of thought,
60 O'er meaner strains supreme.

II

Contemplative—on God to fix
His musings, and above the six
The sabbath-day he blessed;
'Twas then his thoughts self-conquest pruned,
65 And heavenly melancholy tuned,
To bless and bear the rest.

12

Serene—to sow the seeds of peace,
Remembering, when he watched the fleece,
How sweetly Kidron⁶ purled⁰— *murmured*
70 To further knowledge, silence vice,
And plant perpetual paradise

When God had calmed the world.

J3

Strong—in the Lord, who could defy

Satan, and all his powers that lie

75 In sempiternal⁰ night; *everlasting*

And hell, and horror, and despair

Were as the lion and the bear⁷

To his undaunted might.

14

Constant—in love to God The Truth,

so Age, manhood, infancy, and youth—

To Jonathan his friend

6. A brook that borders the district of Jerusalem. 7. In 1 Samuel 17, David credits God with helping As a youth, David tended his father's flocks near him kill a lion and a bear that were ravaging his this brook. flock.

A S O N G T O D A V I D / 6 8 3

Constant, beyond the verge of death;

And Ziba, and Mephibosheth

His endless fame attend.⁸

15

85 Pleasant—and various as the year;

Man, soul, and angel, without peer,

Priest, champion, sage and boy;

In armor, or in ephod⁰ clad, *priestly vestment*

His pomp, his piety was glad;

90 Majestic was his joy.

16

Wise—in recovery from his fall,⁹

Whence rose his eminence o'er all,
Of all the most reviled;
The light of Israel in his ways,
95 Wise are his precepts, prayer and praise,
And counsel to his child.¹

17

His muse,² bright angel of his verse, [*He consecrates his*
Gives balm for all the thorns that pierce, *genius for*
consolation

For all the pangs that rage and edification\

100 Blessed light, still gaining on the gloom,
The more than Michal of his bloom,
The Abishag of his age.³

He sung of god—the mighty source [*The subjects he*

Of all things—the stupendous force ” ^ e choice of—

105 Of which all strength depends; *the SuPreme Beinft*⁴

From whose right arm, beneath whose eyes,

All period,⁴ power, and enterprise

Commences, reigns, and ends.

1763 1763

8. During the time that Saul was trying to kill him,
emphasizes David's repentance and insists that his
David b e c a m e fast friends with Saul's son Jona-
greatness rose out of his recovery f r o m sin.

than. David made a covenant with J o n a t h a n , prom-

1. According to 1 Kings 2 and 1 Chronicles 22,
ising to extend his kindness to Jonathan's house,
just before his death David gave advice to Solo-

even after Jonathan's death (1 Samuel 20.15).
mon, his son and successor, counseling him to
David honored this covenant m a n y years later
keep the c o m m a n d m e n t s of God and to build the
w h e n he restored Saul's land to Jonathan's son,
temple. Delaney notes that David left precepts for
M e p h i b o s h e t h , and invited him to eat at David's
his son in the Psalms and Proverbs.

own table (2 Samuel 9). T h e stewardship of the

2. Source of inspiration.

land was awarded to Ziba (a servant of Saul) and

3. Michal was David's first wife; Abishag, a young
his family.

w o m a n w h o nursed him in his old age.

9. David's "fall" resulted from his lust for Bath-

4. Possibly meaning accomplishments, achieve-
sheba and his arranging to have h e r husband,
ments; or, set a m o u n t of time (during which one
Uriah, killed in battle. David repented of his sin
has power).

and asked God's forgiveness (Psalm 51). Delaney

6 8 4 / C H R I S T O P H E R S M A R T

Psalm 58s

Ye congregation of the tribes,⁶

On justice do you set your mind;

And are ye free from guile and bribes

Ye judges of mankind?

5 Nay, ye of frail and mortal mould

Imagine mischief in your heart;
Your suffrages⁷ and selves are sold
Unto the general mart.
Men of unrighteous seed betray
io Perverseness from their mother's womb;⁸
As soon as they can run astray,
Against the truth presume.
They are with foul infection stained,
Ev'n with the serpent's taint impure;
15 Their ears to blest persuasion chained,
And locked against her lure.⁹
Though Christ himself the pipe should tune,
They will not to the measure tread,¹
Nor will they with his grief commune⁰ *sympathize*
20 Though tears of blood he shed.
Lord, humanize their scoff and scorn,
And their malevolence defeat;
Of water and the spirit born²
Let grace their change complete.
25 Let them with pious ardor burn,
And make thy holy church their choice;
To thee with all their passions turn,
And in thy light rejoice.

As quick as lightning to its mark,

30 So let thy gracious angel speed;

5. Cf. the versions of this Psalm and the next one

9. Cf. the King James Bible's image (in Psalm 58)

by Mary Sidney (pp. 225—26), from *The Massachu-*

of an adder that “stoppeth up her ear” so that the *setts Bay Psalm Book* (pp. 391—93), and by Isaac charmer cannot charm her.

Watts (pp. 592-94).

1. “To tread a measure” is to dance in a rhythmic

6. “Congregation,” a common Protestant term for or stately manner.

members of a church, here refers to the collective

2. Jesus uses these terms in the Christian Scrip-
body of the Israelites; there were twelve tribes of
tures: “Except a man be born of water and of the
Israel.

Spirit, he cannot enter the kingdom of God” (John

7. Intercessory prayers; petitions to god; suppli-

3.5); but in the Hebrew Scriptures, God, in form-
cations; also, in the Church of England, various

ing a new covenant with the people of Israel, says,
versicles and their responses in morning and eve-
“Then will I sprinkle clean water upon you, and ye
ning prayer and in the Litany.

shall be clean; from all your filthiness, and from all

8. The doctrine of original sin holds that children
your idols, will I cleanse you. A new heart also will
are born sinful, but Smart seems here to allude to
I give you, and a new spirit will I put within you”
the Calvinist idea that some people are predestined
(Ezekiel 36.25-26).

to damnation.

P S A L M 1 1 4 / 6 8 5

And take their spirits in thine ark³
To their eternal mead.⁰ *reward*
The righteous shall exult the more
As he such powerful mercy sees,
35 Such wrecks and ruins safe on shore,
Such tortured souls at ease.
So that a man shall say, no doubt,
The penitent has his reward;
There is a God to bear him out,
40 And he is Christ our Lord.

1763 1765

Psalm 114

When Israel came from Egypt's coast,
And Goshen's⁴ marshy plains,
And Jacob with his joyful host
From servitude and chains;
5 Then was it seen how much the Jews
Were holy in his sight,
And God did Israel's kingdom choose
To manifest his might.
The sea beheld it, and with dread
io Retreated to make way;
And Jordan⁰ to his fountain head *river in Palestine*
Ran backwards in dismay.
The mountains, like the rams that bound,
Exulted on their base;
15 Like lambs the little hills around

Skipt lightly from their place.
What is the cause, thou mighty sea,
That thou thyself should shun;
And Jordan, what is come to thee,
20 That thou should backward run?
Ye mountains that ye leaped so high
From off the solid rock,
Ye hills that ye should gambols⁰ try, *leaps, dances*
Like firstlings of the flock?

3. The ark of the Covenant contained “the two
guide and protect the Israelites.

tables of stone, which Moses put there at Horeb,

4. T h e Hebrew word refers to the fertile land allot-
w h e n the Lord made a covenant with the children
ted to the Israelites during their exile in Egypt;
of Israel, w h e n they came out of the land of Egypt”
metaphorically, Goshen is a place of plenty and
(1 Kings 8.9); thus it symbolizes God’s promise to
light.

6 8 6 / O L I V E R G O L D S M I T H

Earth, from the center to the sod
His fearful presence hail
The presence of Jeshurun’s⁵ God,
In whom our arms prevail.
Who beds of rocks in pools to stand
Can by his word compel,
And from the veiny flint command
The fountain and the well.

1765

OLIVER GOLDSMITH

ca. 1730-1774

When Lovely Woman Stoops to Folly

When lovely woman stoops to folly,
And finds too late that men betray,
What charm can soothe her melancholy,
What art can wash her guilt away?
5 The only art her guilt to cover,
To hide her shame from every eye,
To give repentance to her love,
And wring his bosom—is to die.

1766

The Deserted Village

Sweet Auburn! 1 loveliest village of the plain,
Where health and plenty cheered the laboring swain,⁰ *rustic*
Where smiling spring its earliest visit paid,
And parting summer's lingering blooms delayed:
5 Dear lovely bowers² of innocence and ease,
Seats of my youth, when every sport could please,
How often have I loitered o'er thy green,
Where humble happiness endeared each scene;
How often have I paused on every charm,
10 The sheltered cot,⁰ the cultivated farm, *cottage*
The never-failing brook, the busy mill,
The decent church that topped the neighboring hill,
The hawthorn bush, with seats beneath the shade,

5. A poetic title for Israel, meaning “the dear much debate about its exact prototype, upright people.” 2. Leafy coverts or arbors; also, poetically, ideal-1. Apparently a fictional, ideal village; there is ized abodes.

THE DESERTED VILLAGE / 687

For talking age and whispering lovers made;
15 How often have I blessed the coming day,^o *holiday*
When toil remitting lent its turn to play,
And all the village train, from labor free,
Led up their sports beneath the spreading tree,
While many a pastime circled in the shade,
20 The young contending as the old surveyed;
And many a gambol frolicked o’er the ground,
And sleights of art and feats of strength went round;
And still as each repeated pleasure tired,
Succeeding sports the mirthful band inspired;
25 The dancing pair that simply sought renown,
By holding out to tire each other down;
The swain mistrustless of his smutted face,
While secret laughter tittered round the place;
The bashful virgin’s sidelong looks of love,
30 The matron’s glance that would those looks reprove:
These were thy charms, sweet village! sports like these,
With sweet succession, taught even toil to please;
These round thy bowers their cheerful influence shed,
These were thy charms—But all these charms are fled.
35 Sweet smiling village, loveliest of the lawn,
Thy sports are fled, and all thy charms withdrawn;
Amidst thy bowers the tyrant’s hand is seen,

And desolation saddens all thy green:
One only master grasps the whole domain,
40 And half a tillage³ stints thy smiling plain;
No more thy glassy brook reflects the day,
But choked with sedges, works its weedy way;
Along thy glades, a solitary guest,
The hollow-sounding bittern⁴ guards its nest;
45 Amidst thy desert walks the lapwing flies,
And tires their echoes with unvaried cries.
Sunk are thy bowers, in shapeless ruin all,
And the long grass o'ertops the moldering wall,
And, trembling, shrinking from the spoiler's hand,
50 Far, far away thy children leave the land.
Ill fares the land, to hastening ills a prey,
Where wealth accumulates, and men decay;⁵
Princes and lords may flourish, or may fade;
A breath can make them, as a breath has made;
55 But a bold peasantry, their country's pride,
When once destroyed, can never be supplied.
A time there was, ere England's griefs began,
When every rood⁶ of ground maintained its man;
For him light labor spread her wholesome store,
60 Just gave what life required, but gave no more:
3. I.e., only half the land is cultivated u n d e r the
5. In the opening dedication to the English
new monopoly; or, the land was being plowed and
painter Sir Joshua Reynolds (1 7 2 3 - 1 7 9 2) , Gold-
was left unfinished w h e n ownership changed. T h e

smith writes, “I . . . continue to think those luxu-
significant landowners were displacing less pros-
perous freeholders and at the same time appropri-
ate introduced, and so many kingdoms have been
ating land formerly held in c o m m o n .
undone.”

4. Marsh bird with a booming call.

6. A measure of land, varying by locality.

6 8 8 / O L I V E R G O L D S M I T H

His best companions, innocence and health;

And his best riches, ignorance of wealth.

But times are altered; Trade’s unfeeling train

Usurp the land and dispossess the swain;

65 Along the lawn, where scattered hamlets rose,

Unwieldy wealth, and cumbrous pomp repose;

And every want to opulence allied,

And every pang that folly pays to pride.

These gentle hours that plenty bade to bloom,

70 Those calm desires that asked but little room,

Those healthful sports that graced the peaceful scene,

Lived in each look, and brightened all the green;

These far departing seek a kinder shore,

And rural mirth and manners are no more.

75 Sweet Auburn! parent of the blissful hour,

Thy glades forlorn confess the tyrant’s power.

Here, as I take my solitary rounds,

Amidst thy tangling walks, and ruined grounds,

And, many a year elapsed, return to view
so Where once the cottage stood, the hawthorn grew,
Remembrance wakes with all her busy train,
Swells at my breast, and turns the past to pain.
In all my wanderings round this world of care,
In all my griefs—and God has given my share—
85 I still had hopes my latest hours to crown,
Amidst these humble bowers to lay me down;
To husband out life's taper⁰ at the close, *candle*
And keep the flame from wasting by repose.
I still had hopes, for pride attends us still,
90 Amidst the swains to show my book-learned skill,
Around my fire an evening group to draw,
And tell of all I felt, and all I saw;
And, as an hare whom hounds and horns pursue,
Pants to the place from whence at first she flew,
95 I still had hopes, my long vexations past,
Here to return—and die at home at last.
O blest retirement, friend to life's decline,
Retreats from care that never must be mine,
How happy he who crowns in shades like these
100 A youth of labor with an age of ease;
Who quits a world where strong temptations try,
And, since 'tis hard to combat, learns to fly!
For him no wretches, born to work and weep,
Explore the mine, or tempt the dangerous deep;
105 No surly porter stands in guilty state
To spurn imploring famine from the gate;

But on he moves to meet his latter end,
Angels around befriending virtue's friend;
Bends to the grave with unperceived decay,
110 While Resignation gently slopes the way;
And, all his prospects brightening to the last,
His Heaven commences ere the world be passed!
THE DESERTED VILLAGE / 689
Sweet was the sound when oft at evening's close,
Up yonder hill the village murmur rose;
There, as I passed with careless steps and slow,
The mingling notes came softened from below;
The swain responsive as the milkmaid sung,
The sober herd that lowed to meet their young,
The noisy geese that gabbled o'er the pool,
The playful children just let loose from school;
The watchdog's voice that bayed the whispering wind,
And the loud laugh that spoke the vacant mind; *carefree*
These all in sweet confusion sought the shade,
And filled each pause the nightingale had made.
But now the sounds of population fail,
No cheerful murmurs fluctuate in the gale,
No busy steps the grass-grown footway tread,
For all the bloomy flush of life is fled.
All but yon widowed, solitary thing
That feebly bends beside the plashy spring; *marshy*
She, wretched matron, forced, in age, for bread,
To strip the brook with mantling cresses spread, *covering*
To pick her wintry faggot from the thorn, *firewood*

To seek her nightly shed, and weep till morn;
She only left of all the harmless train,
The sad historian of the pensive plain.
Near yonder copse,⁰ where once the garden smiled, *grove*
And still where many a garden flower grows wild,
There, where a few torn shrubs the place disclose,
The village preacher's modest mansion⁷ rose.
A man he was, to all the country dear,
And passing rich with forty pounds a year;
Remote from towns he ran his godly race,
Nor e'er had changed, nor wished to change his place;
Unpracticed he to fawn, or seek for power,
By doctrines fashioned to the varying hour;
Far other aims his heart had learned to prize,
More skilled to raise the wretched than to rise.
His house was known to all the vagrant train,
He chid their wanderings, but relieved their pain;
The long-remembered beggar was his guest,
Whose beard descending swept his aged breast;
The ruined spendthrift, now no longer proud,
Claimed kindred there, and had his claims allowed;
The broken soldier, kindly bade to stay,
Sate by his fire, and talked the night away;
Wept o'er his wounds, or tales of sorrow done,
Shouldered his crutch, and showed how fields were won.
Pleased with his guests, the good man learned to glow,
And quite forgot their vices in their woe;
Careless their merits, or their faults to scan,

His pity gave ere charity began.

7. There seem to have been no conventional mansions in Goldsmith's village; see lines 195 and 238, and cf. George Crabbe, "The Parish Register," line 19 (p. 724).

690 / O L I V E R G O L D S M I T H

Thus to relieve the wretched was his pride,

And even his failings leaned to Virtue's side;

165 But in his duty prompt at every call,

He watched and wept, he prayed and felt, for all.

And, as a bird each fond endearment tries,

To tempt its new-fledged offspring to the skies,

He tried each art, reproved each dull delay,

170 Allured to brighter worlds, and led the way.

Beside the bed where parting life was laid,

And sorrow, guilt, and pain, by turns dismayed,

The reverend champion stood. At his control,

Despair and anguish fled the struggling soul;

175 Comfort came down the trembling wretch to raise,

And his last faltering accents whispered praise.

At church, with meek and unaffected grace,

His looks adorned the venerable place;

Truth from his lips prevailed with double sway,

180 And fools, who came to scoff, remained to pray.

The service past, around the pious man,

With steady zeal each honest rustic ran;

Even children followed with endearing wile,

And plucked his gown, to share the good man's smile.

185 His ready smile a parent's warmth expressed,

Their welfare pleased him, and their cares distressed;

To them his heart, his love, his griefs were given,
 But all his serious thoughts had rest in Heaven.
 As some tall cliff that lifts its awful form,
 190 Swells from the vale,^o and midway leaves the storm,
valley
 Though round its breast the rolling clouds are spread,
 Eternal sunshine settles on its head.
 Beside yon straggling fence that skirts the way,
 With blossomed furze^o unprofitably gay, « *wild shrub*
 195 There, in his noisy mansion, skilled to rule,
 The village master taught his little school;
 A man severe he was, and stern to view,
 I knew him well, and every truant knew;
 Well had the boding^o tremblers learned to trace *anxious*
 200 The day's disasters in his morning face;
 Full well they laughed with counterfeited glee,
 At all his jokes, for many a joke had he;
 Full well the busy whisper circling round,
 Conveyed the dismal tidings when he frowned;
 205 Yet he was kind, or if severe in aught,
 The love he bore to learning was in fault;⁸
 The village all declared how much he knew;
 'Twas certain he could write, and cipher too;
 Lands he could measure, terms and tides presage,⁹
 210 And even the story ran that he could gauge.

8. Pronounced like *fought*. church year, and the sea tides.
 "Tides" here liter-s'. He could calculate (for example) when
 rents ally means "times." To "gauge" (line 210) is to cal-
 were due, the dates of feasts and seasons in the culate the fluid
 content of casks and other vessels.

THE DESERTED VILLAGE / 691

In arguing too, the parson owned his skill,¹
For even though vanquished, he could argue still;
While words of learned length, and thundering sound,
Amazed the gazing rustics ranged around;
215 And still they gazed, and still the wonder grew,
That one small head could carry all he knew.
But past is all his fame. The very spot
Where many a time he triumphed, is forgot.
Near yonder thorn, that lifts its head on high,
220 Where once the signpost caught the passing eye,
Low lies that house where nut-brown draughts inspired,²
Where graybeard Mirth and smiling Toil retired,
Where village statesmen talked with looks profound,
And news much older than their ale went round.
225 Imagination fondly stoops to trace
The parlor splendors of that festive place:
The whitewashed wall, the nicely sanded floor,
The varnished clock that clicked behind the door;
The chest contrived a double debt to pay,
2BO A bed by night, a chest of drawers by day;
The pictures placed for ornament and use,
The twelve good rules, the royal game of goose;⁰ « *board
game*
The hearth, except when winter chilled the day,
With aspen boughs, and flowers, and fennel gay,
235 While broken teacups, wisely kept for show,
Ranged o'er the chimney, glistened in a row.

Vain transitory splendors! Could not all
 Reprieve the tottering mansion from its fall!
 Obscure it sinks, nor shall it more impart
 240 An hour's importance to the poor man's heart;
 Thither no more the peasant shall repair
 To sweet oblivion of his daily care;
 No more the farmer's news, the barber's tale,
 No more the woodman's ballad shall prevail;
 245 No more the smith his dusky brow shall clear,
 Relax his ponderous strength, and lean to hear;
 The host himself no longer shall be found
 Careful to see the mantling bliss³ go round;
 Nor the coy maid, half willing to be pressed,
 250 Shall kiss the cup to pass it to the rest.
 Yes! let the rich deride, the proud disdain,
 These simple blessings of the lowly train,
 To me more dear, congenial to my heart,
 One native charm, than all the gloss of art;
 255 Spontaneous joys, where nature has its play,
 The soul adopts, and owns their first-born sway;
 Lightly they frolic o'er the vacant mind,
 1. I.e., admitted his (the schoolmaster's) skill.
 to the cottage of the "industrious swain," and
 2. I.e., the public house where ale inspired the
 which describes the p u b as a place of crime and
 customers. Cf. Crabbe's "The Parish Register,"
 corruption.
 which transfers Goldsmith's "twelve good rules"

3. The ale covering itself with foam.

(line 232), rules of c o n d u c t often posted in taverns,

692 / O L I V E R G O L D S M I T H

Unenvied, unmolested, unconfined.

But the long pomp, the midnight masquerade,

260 With all the freaks of wanton wealth arrayed,

In these, ere triflers half their wish obtain,

The toiling pleasure sickens into pain;

And, even while fashion's brightest arts decoy,

The heart distrusting asks if this be joy.

265 Ye friends to truth, ye statesmen, who survey

The rich man's joys increase, the poor's decay,

'Tis yours to judge how wide the limits stand

Between a splendid and an happy land.

Proud swells the tide with loads of freighted ore,

270 And shouting Folly hails them from her shore;

Hoards, even beyond the miser's wish abound,

And rich men flock from all the world around.

Yet count our gains. This wealth is but a name

That leaves our useful products still the same.

275 Not so the loss. The man of wealth and pride,

Takes up a space that many poor supplied;

Space for his lake, his park's extended bounds,

Space for his horses, equipage, and hounds;

The robe that wraps his limbs in silken sloth

280 Has robbed the neighboring fields of half their growth;

His seat, where solitary sports are seen,

Indignant spurns the cottage from the green;

Around the world each needful product flies,
For all the luxuries the world supplies:
285 While thus the land adorned for pleasure, all
In barren splendor feebly waits the fall.
As some fair female unadorned and plain,
Secure to please while youth confirms her reign,
Slights every borrowed charm that dress supplies,
290 Nor shares with art the triumph of her eyes;
But when those charms are past, for charms are frail,
When time advances, and when lovers fail,
She then shines forth, solicitous to bless,
In all the glaring impotence of dress:
295 Thus fares the land, by luxury betrayed;
In nature's simplest charms at first arrayed;
But verging to decline, its splendors rise,
Its vistas strike, its palaces surprise;
While scourged by famine from the smiling land,
BOO The mournful peasant leads his humble band;
And while he sinks without one arm to save,
The country blooms—a garden, and a grave.
Where then, ah where, shall Poverty reside,
To scape the pressure of contiguous Pride?
305 If to some common's fenceless limits strayed,
He drives his flock to pick the scanty blade,
Those fenceless fields the sons of wealth divide,
And even the bare-worn common is denied.⁴

4. Refers to the enclosure and appropriation of common land.

THE DESERTED VILLAGE / 693

If to the city sped—What waits him there?

BIO To see profusion that he must not share;

To see ten thousand baneful arts combined

To pamper luxury, and thin mankind;

To see those joys the sons of pleasure know,

Extorted from his fellow creature's woe.

315 Here, while the courtier glitters in brocade,

There the pale artist⁰ plies the sickly trade; *artisan*

Here, while the proud their long-drawn pomps display,

There the black gibbet⁰ glooms beside the way. *gallows*

The dome where Pleasure holds her midnight reign,

320 Here, richly decked, admits the gorgeous train;

Tumultuous grandeur crowds the blazing square,

The rattling chariots clash, the torches glare.

Sure scenes like these no troubles e'er annoy!

Sure these denote one universal joy!

325 Are these thy serious thoughts?—Ah, turn thine eyes

Where the poor houseless shivering female lies.

She once, perhaps, in village plenty blest,

Has wept at tales of innocence distressed;

Her modest looks the cottage might adorn,

330 Sweet as the primrose peeps beneath the thorn;

Now lost to all; her friends, her virtue fled,

Near her betrayer's door she lays her head,

And pinched with cold, and shrinking from the shower,

With heavy heart deplores that luckless hour,

335 When idly first, ambitious of the town,

She left her wheel and robes of country brown.
Do thine, sweet Auburn, thine, the loveliest train,
Do thy fair tribes participate her pain?
Even now, perhaps, by cold and hunger led,
340 At proud men's doors they ask a little bread!
Ah, no. To distant climes, a dreary scene,
Where half the convex world intrudes between,
Through torrid tracts with fainting steps they go,
Where wild Altama⁵ murmurs to their woe.
345 Far different there from all that charmed before,
The various terrors of that horrid shore;
Those blazing suns that dart a downward ray,
And fiercely shed intolerable day;
Those matted woods where birds forget to sing,
350 But silent bats in drowsy clusters cling,
Those poisonous fields with rank luxuriance crowned,
Where the dark scorpion gathers death around;
Where at each step the stranger fears to wake
The rattling terrors of the vengeful snake;
355 Where crouching tigers⁰ wait their hapless prey, pumas
And savage men, more murderous still than they;
While oft in whirls the mad tornado flies,
Mingling the ravaged landscape with the skies.
Far different these from every former scene,
5. Altamaha, a river in Georgia (North America).
694 / O L I V E R G O L D S M I T H
The cooling brook, the grassy-vested green,
The breezy covert of the warbling grove,

That only sheltered thefts of harmless love.
Good Heaven! what sorrows gloomed that parting day,
That called them from their native walks away;
When the poor exiles, every pleasure past,
Hung round their bowers, and fondly looked their last,
And took a long farewell, and wished in vain
For seats like these beyond the western main;
And shuddering still to face the distant deep,
Returned and wept, and still returned to weep.
The good old sire the first prepared to go
To new-found worlds, and wept for other's woe;
But for himself, in conscious virtue brave,
He only wished for worlds beyond the grave.
His lovely daughter, lovelier in her tears,
The fond companion of his helpless years,
Silent went next, neglectful of her charms,
And left a lover's for a father's arms.
With louder plaints⁰ the mother spoke her woes, *lamentations*
And blessed the cot where every pleasure rose;
And kissed her thoughtless babes with many a tear,
And clasped them close in sorrow doubly dear;
Whilst her fond husband strove to lend relief
In all the silent manliness of grief.
O luxury! Thou cursed by Heaven's decree,
How ill exchanged are things like these for thee!
How do thy potions, with insidious joy,
Diffuse their pleasures only to destroy!
Kingdoms, by thee, to sickly greatness grown,

Boast of a florid vigor not their own.
At every draught more large and large they grow,
A bloated mass of rank unwieldy woe;
Till sapped their strength, and every part unsound,
Down, down they sink, and spread a ruin round.
Even now the devastation is begun,
And half the business of destruction done;
Even now, methinks, as pondering here I stand,
I see the rural Virtues leave the land.
Down where yon anchoring vessel spreads the sail,
That idly waiting flaps with every gale,
Downward they move, a melancholy band,
Pass from the shore, and darken all the strand.
Contented Toil, and hospitable Care,
And kind connubial Tenderness are there;
And Piety, with wishes placed above,
And steady Loyalty, and faithful Love:
And thou, sweet Poetry, thou loveliest maid,
Still first to fly where sensual joys invade;
Unfit in these degenerate times of shame,
To catch the heart, or strike for honest fame;
Dear charming Nymph, neglected and decried,
O L N E Y H Y M N S / 6 9 5
My shame in crowds, my solitary pride;
Thou source of all my bliss, and all my woe,
That found'st me poor at first, and keep'st me so;
415 Thou guide by which the nobler arts excel,
Thou nurse of every virtue, fare thee well.

Farewell, and O! where'er thy voice be tried,
On Torno's cliffs, or Pambamarca's side,⁶
Whether where equinoctial⁰ fervors glow, *tropical*
420 Or winter wraps the polar world in snow,
Still let thy voice, prevailing over time,
Redress the rigors of the inclement clime;
Aid slighted truth, with thy persuasive strain
Teach erring man to spurn the rage of gain;
425 Teach him that states of native strength possessed,
Though very poor, may still be very blest;
That Trade's proud empire hastes to swift decay,
As ocean sweeps the labored mole^o away; *breakwater*
While self-dependent power can time defy,
430 As rocks resist the billows and the sky.⁷

1770

W I L L I A M C O W P E R

1731-1800

*From Olney Hymns*¹

Light Shining out of Darkness

God moves in a mysterious way,

His wonders to perform;

He plants his footsteps in the sea,

And rides upon the storm.

5 Deep in unfathomable mines

Of never failing skill,

He treasures up his bright designs,

And works his sovereign will.

Ye fearful saints, fresh courage take,

10 The clouds ye so much dread
Are big with mercy, and shall break
In blessings on your head.

Judge not the Lord by feeble sense,
But trust him for his grace;

6. I.e., on the cliffs overlooking the river Tome, in
(1 7 0 9 - 1 7 8 4 ; see pp. 6 5 5 - 6 5) .

Sweden, or the side of Mt. Pambamarca, in Ecua-

1. Cowper lived in Olney, Buckinghamshire, from
dor.

1767 until 1786.

7. The last four lines are by Samuel Johnson

6 9 6 / W I L L I A M C O W P E R

15 Behind a frowning providence,
He hides a smiling face.

His purposes will ripen fast,
Unfolding every hour;

The bud may have a bitter taste,
20 But sweet will be the flower.

Blind unbelief is sure to err,
And scan his work in vain;

God is his own interpreter,
And he will make it plain.

1779

Epitaph on a Hare

Here lies, whom hound did ne'er pursue,

Nor swifter greyhound follow,

Whose foot ne'er tainted morning dew, *left a scent on*

Nor ear heard huntsman's hallo',
5 Old Tiney, surliest of his kind,
Who, nursed with tender care,
And to domestic bounds confined,
Was still a wild jack-hare.
Though duly from my hand he took
10 His pittance every night,
He did it with a jealous look,
And, when he could, would bite.
His diet was of wheaten bread,
And milk, and oats, and straw,
15 Thistles, or lettuces instead,
With sand to scour his maw.
On twigs of hawthorn he regaled,⁰ *feasted*
On pippins⁰ russet peel; *apples*'
And, when his juicy salads failed,
20 Sliced carrot pleased him well.
A Turkey carpet was his lawn,²
Whereon he loved to bound,
To skip and gambol like a fawn,
And swing his rump around.
25 His frisking was at evening hours,
For then he lost his fear;
2. Cowper exercised his hares on his parlor carpet of Turkey
red.

T H E T A S K / 6 9 7

Eight years and five round-rolling moons
30 He thus saw steal away,
Dozing out all his idle noons,
And every night at play.
I kept him for his humor's sake,
For he would oft beguile
35 My heart of thoughts that made it ache,
And force me to a smile.
But now, beneath this walnut-shade
He finds his long, last home,
And waits in snug concealment laid,
40 Till gentler Puss shall come.
He,3 still more aged, feels the shocks
From which no care can save,
And, partner once of Tiney's box,
Must soon partake his grave.

1783 1784

*From The Task*⁴

From Book IV: The Winter Evening

Just when our drawing-rooms begin to blaze
With lights, by clear reflection multiplied
From many a mirror, in which he of Gath,
270 Goliath,⁵ might have seen his giant bulk
Whole without stooping, towering crest and all,
My pleasures too begin. But me perhaps
The glowing hearth may satisfy awhile
With faint illumination, that uplifts
275 The shadow to the ceiling, there by fits

Dancing uncouthly to the quivering flame.
Not undelightful is an hour to me
So spent in parlour twilight; such a gloom
Suits well the thoughtful or unthinking mind,
280 The mind contemplative, with some new theme
Pregnant, or indisposed alike to all.

Laugh ye, who boast your more mercurial powers
That never feel a stupor, know no pause,

3. Puss, the longest-lived of Cowper's three hares.
completed work ran to six books and ranged over
4. So called because, when he complained of the
diverse subjects.

lack of a poetic topic, a friend, Lady Austen, set
5. The giant slain by David (1 Samuel 17. 19 - 51).
him the task of writing about the parlor sofa. The
698 / WILLIAM COWPER

Nor need one; I am conscious, and confess, *conscious of*
285 Fearless, a soul that does not always think.

Me oft has fancy ludicrous and wild
Soothed with a waking dream of houses, towers,
Trees, churches, and stranger visages expressed
In the red cinders, while with poring eye

290 I gazed, myself creating what I saw.⁶

Nor less amused have I quiescent watched
The sooty films that play upon the bars⁰ *fireplace grate*
Pendulous, and foreboding in the view
Of superstition, prophesying still,

295 Though still deceived, some stranger's near approach

'Tis thus the understanding takes repose
In indolent vacuity of thought,
And sleeps and is refreshed. Meanwhile the face
Conceals the mood lethargic with a mask
300 Of deep deliberation, as^o the man *as if*
Were tasked to his full strength, absorbed and lost.
Thus oft reclined at ease, I lose an hour
At evening, till at length the freezing blast
That sweeps the bolted shutter, summons home
305 The recollected powers, and, snapping short
The glassy threads with which the fancy weaves
Her brittle toys, restores me to myself.
How calm is my recess! and how the frost
Raging abroad, and the rough wind, endear
310 The silence and the warmth enjoyed within!
I saw the woods and fields at close of day
A variegated show; the meadows green
Though faded, and the lands, where lately waved
The golden harvest, of a mellow brown,
315 Upturned so lately by the forceful share;^o *plough*
I saw far off the weedy fallows^o smile *dormant land*
With verdure not unprofitable, grazed
By flocks fast feeding, and selecting each
His favorite herb; while all the leafless groves
320 That skirt th' horizon wore a sable^o hue, *black*
Scarce noticed in the kindred dusk of eve.
Tomorrow brings a change, a total change,
Which even now, though silently perform'd

And slowly, and by most unfelt, the face
325 Of universal nature undergoes.
Fast falls a fleecy shower; the downy flakes,
Descending and with never-ceasing lapse⁰ *gentle downward*
glide
Softly alighting upon all below,
Assimilate all objects. Earth receives
330 Gladly the thickening mantle, and the green
And tender blade that feared the chilling blast,
Escapes unhurt beneath so warm a veil.

###

6. Cf. lines 291 - 310 with Coleridge, "Frost at Midnight"
(p. 810).

THE TASK / 699

From *Book VI: The Winter Walk at Noon*

###

The groans of nature in this nether world,
730 Which Heaven has heard for ages, have an end.
Foretold by prophets, and by poets sung,
Whose fire was kindled at the prophets' lamp,
The time of rest, the promised Sabbath, comes.⁷
Six thousand years⁸ of sorrow have well-nigh
735 Fulfilled their tardy and disastrous course
Over a sinful world; and what remains
Of this tempestuous state of human things
Is merely as the working of a sea
Before a calm, that rocks itself to rest:
740 For He, whose car^o the winds are, and the clouds *chariot*
The dust that waits upon his sultry march,

When sin hath moved him, and his wrath is hot,
Shall visit earth in mercy; shall descend,
Propitious, in his chariot paved with love;
745 And what his storms have blasted and defaced
For man's revolt shall with a smile repair.
Sweet is the harp of prophecy; too sweet
Not to be wronged by a mere mortal touch:
Nor can the wonders it records be sung
750 To meaner music, and not suffer loss.
But, when a poet, or when one like me,
Happy to rove among poetic flowers,
Though poor in skill to rear them, lights at last
On some fair theme, some theme divinely fair,
755 Such is the impulse and the spur he feels
To give it praise proportioned to its worth,
That not t' attempt it, arduous as he deems
The labor, were a task more arduous still.
Oh scenes surpassing fable, and yet true,
760 Scenes of accomplished bliss! which who can see,
Though but in distant prospect, and not feel
His soul refreshed with foretaste of the joy?
Rivers of gladness water all the earth,
And clothe all climes with beauty; the reproach
765 Of barrenness is past. The fruitful field
Laughs with abundance; and the land, once lean,
Or fertile only in its own disgrace,
Exults to see its thistly curse repealed.
The various seasons woven into one,

770 And that one season an eternal spring,
The garden fears no blight, and needs no fence,
For there is none to covet, all are full.

The lion, and the libbard,⁰ and the bear *leopard*

7. An allusion to the end of the world and the sec- “promised Sabbath.”

ond coming of Christ, w h e n God will make “a new 8. T h e creation of the world was traditionally heaven and a new earth” (Revelation 21.1). Lines believed to have taken place four thousand years 7 5 9 - 8 1 7 are Cowper’s visionary description of this before the birth of Christ.

7 0 0 / W I L L I A M C O W P E R

Graze with the fearless flocks; all bask at noon

775 Together, or all gambol in the shade

Of the same grove, and drink one common stream.

Antipathies are none. No foe to man

Lurks in the serpent now: the mother sees,

And smiles to see, her infant’s playful hand

780 Stretched forth to dally with the crested worm,⁰ *serpent*

To stroke his azure neck, or to receive

The lambent⁰ homage of his arrowy tongue. *flickering*

All creatures worship man, and all mankind

One Lord, one Father. Error has no place:

785 That creeping pestilence is driven away;

The breath of heaven has chased it. In the heart

No passion touches a discordant string,

But all is harmony and love. Disease

Is not: the pure and uncontaminate blood

790 Holds its due course, nor fears the frost of age.

One song employs all nations; and all cry,

“Worthy the Lamb, for he was slain for us!”

The dwellers in the vales⁰ and on the rocks *valleys*

Shout to each other, and the mountain tops

795 From distant mountains catch the flying joy;

Till, nation after nation taught the strain,

Earth rolls the rapturous hosanna⁹ round.

Behold the measure of the promise filled;

See Salem¹ built, the labor of a God!

800 Bright as a sun the sacred city shines;

All kingdoms and all princes of the earth

Flock to that light; the glory of all lands

Flows into her; unbounded is her joy,

And endless her increase. Thy rams are there,

805 Nebaioth, and the flocks of Kedar there;²

The looms of Ormus, and the mines of Ind,

And Saba’s spicy groves, pay tribute there.³

Praise is in all her gates: upon her walls,

And in her streets, and in her spacious courts,

810 Is heard salvation. Eastern Java there

Kneels with the native of the farthest west;

And Ethiopia spreads abroad the hand,

And worships. Her report has traveled forth

Into all lands. From every clime they come

815 To see thy beauty and to share thy joy,

O Sion!⁴ an assembly such as earth

Saw never, such as heaven stoops down to see.

9. Expression of great praise.

note]. By “the prophetic Scripture here alluded to”

1. Jerusalem; not only the terrestrial city but the
Cowper means Isaiah 60.3—7, in which God prom-
N e w Jerusalem or Holy City, God’s perfect a n d
ises a blessed f u t u r e to Jerusalem: “And the Gen-
eternal order of t h e f u t u r e . See Revelation 31.2:
tiles shall come to thy light... . All the flocks of
“And I J o h n saw the holy city, new Jerusalem, com-
Keder shall be gathered together unto thee, the
ing down f r o m G o d out of heaven.”
rams of Nebaioth shall minister unto thee.”

2. “Nebaioth a n d Kedar, the sons of Ishmael and

3. O r m u s (or Hormuz, an island in the Persian
progenitors of t h e Arabs, in t h e prophetic Scripture
Gulf), India, and Saba (Sheba, a country in Arabia)
here alluded to may be reasonably considered as
were renowned for their wealth.

representatives of t h e Gentiles at large” [Cowper’s

4. O f t e n , as here, equivalent to Jerusalem.

T H E T A S K / 7 0 1

Thus heaven-ward all things tend. For all were once
Perfect, and all must be at length restored.

820 So God has greatly purposed; who would else

In his dishonored works himself endure

Dishonor, and be wronged without redress.

Haste, then, and wheel away a shattered world,

Ye slow-revolving seasons! we would see

825 (A sight to which our eyes are strangers yet)

A world that does not dread and hate his laws,

And suffer for its crime; would learn how fair
The creature is that God pronounces good,
How pleasant in itself what pleases him.
830 Here every drop of honey hides a sting,
Worms wind themselves into our sweetest flowers;
And even the joy that haply⁰ some poor heart *luckily*
Derives from heaven, pure as the fountain is,
Is sullied in the stream, taking a taint
835 From touch of human lips, at best impure.
Oh for a world in principle as chaste
As this is gross and selfish! over which
Custom and prejudice shall bear no sway,
That govern all things here, shouldering aside
840 The meek and modest truth, and forcing her
To seek a refuge from the tongue of strife
In nooks obscure, far from the ways of men;
Where violence shall never lift the sword,
Nor cunning justify the proud man's wrong,
845 Leaving the poor no remedy but tears;
Where he that fills an office shall esteem
Th' occasion it presents of doing good
More than the perquisite;⁰ where law shall speak *profits*
Seldom, and never but as wisdom prompts
850 And equity; not jealous more to guard
A worthless form, than to decide aright;
Where fashion shall not sanctify abuse,
Nor smooth good breeding (supplemental grace)
With lean performance ape the work of love!

855 Come then, and, added to thy many crowns,
Receive yet one, the crown of all the earth,
Thou who alone art worthy! It was thine
By ancient covenant, ere nature's birth;
And thou hast made it thine by purchase since,
860 And overpaid its value with thy blood.
Thy saints proclaim thee king; and in their hearts
Thy title is engraven with a pen
Dipped in the fountain of eternal love.
Thy saints proclaim thee king; and thy delay
865 Gives courage to their foes, who, could they see
The dawn of thy last advent, long desired,
Would creep into the bowels of the hills,
And flee for safety to the falling rocks.
The very spirit of the world is tired

7 0 2 /

W I L L I A M C O W P E R

870 Of its own taunting question, asked so long,
“Where is the promise of your Lord's approach?”
The infidel has shot his bolts⁰ away, *arrows*
Till, his exhausted quiver yielding none,
He gleans the blunted shafts that have recoiled,
875 And aims them at the shield of truth again.
The veil is rent, rent too by priestly hands,
That hides divinity from mortal eyes;
And all the mysteries to faith proposed,
Insulted and traduced, are cast aside,
880 As useless, to the moles and to the bats.

They now are deemed the faithful, and are praised,
Who, constant only in rejecting thee,
Deny thy Godhead with a martyr's zeal,
And quit their office for their error's sake.
885 Blind, and in love with darkness! yet even these
Worthy, compared with sycophants, who knee
Thy name adoring, and then preach thee man!
So fares thy church. But how thy church may fare
The world takes little thought. Who will may preach,
890 And what they will. All pastors are alike
To wandering sheep, resolved to follow none.
Two gods divide them all—Pleasure and Gain:
For these they live, they sacrifice to these,
And in their service wage perpetual war
895 With conscience and with thee. Lust in their hearts,
And mischief in their hands, they roam the earth
To prey upon each other: stubborn, fierce,
High-minded, foaming out their own disgrace.
Thy prophets speak of such; and, noting down
900 The features of the last degenerate times,
Exhibit every lineament of these.
Come then, and, added to thy many crowns,
Receive yet one, as radiant as the rest,
Due to thy last and most effectual work,
905 Thy word fulfilled, the conquest of a world!
1785
The Castaway
Obscurest night involved the sky, *engulfed*

The Atlantic billows roared,
When such a destined wretch as I,
Washed headlong from on board,
5. The veil of the Temple in Jerusalem divided the
death. “And Jesus cried with a loud voice, and gave
inner sanctuary from the rest of the Temple. For
up the ghost. And the veil of the temple was rent
Christians, rending of the veil represented gaining
in twain from the top to the bottom” (Mark 15:37—
direct access to God, notably through Christ’s
8).

THE CASTAWAY / 703

5 Of friends, of hope, of all bereft,
His floating home forever left.
No braver chief could Albion boast
Than he with whom he went,⁶
Nor ever ship left Albion’s coast,
10 With warmer wishes sent.
He loved them both, but both in vain,
Nor him beheld, nor her again.
Not long beneath the whelming brine,
Expert to swim, he lay;
15 Nor soon he felt his strength decline,
Or courage die away;
But waged with death a lasting strife,
Supported by despair of life.
He shouted; nor his friends had failed
20 To check the vessel’s course,

But so the furious blast prevailed,
That, pitiless perforce,
They left their outcast mate behind,
And scudded still before the wind.
25 Some succor yet they could afford;
And, such as storms allow,
The cask, the coop, the floated cord,
Delayed not to bestow.
But he (they knew) nor ship, nor shore,
30 Whate'er they gave, should visit more.
Nor, cruel as it seemed, could he
Their haste himself condemn,
Aware that flight, in such a sea,
Alone could rescue them;
35 Yet bitter felt it still to die
Deserted, and his friends so nigh.
He long survives, who lives an hour
In ocean, self-upheld;
And so long he, with unspent power,
40 His destiny repelled;
And ever, as the minutes flew,
Entreated help, or cried, "Adieu!"
At length, his transient respite past,
His comrades, who before
45 Had heard his voice in every blast,
Could catch the sound no more.

6. Namely, George, Lord Anson (1697—1762), who told the castaway's story in his memoir, *Voyage Round the World* (1748).

704 / WILLIAM COWPER

For then, by toil subdued, he drank
The stifling wave, and then he sank.

No poet wept him; but the page

50 Of narrative sincere,

That tells his name, his worth, his age,

Is wet with Anson's tear.

And tears by bards or heroes shed

Alike immortalize the dead.

55 I therefore purpose not, or dream,

Descanting⁰ on his fate, *singing*

To give the melancholy theme

A more enduring date:

But misery still delights to trace

60 Its semblance in another's case.

No voice divine the storm allayed,

No light propitious shone,

When, snatched from all effectual aid,

We perished, each alone;

65 But I beneath a rougher sea,

And whelmed in deeper gulfs than he.

1799 1803

Lines Written during a Period of Insanity

Hatred and vengeance, my eternal portion,

Scarce can endure delay of execution,

Wait, with impatient readiness, to seize my

Soul in a moment.

5 Damned below Judas: 7 more abhorred than he was,

Who for a few pence sold his holy Master.
Twice betrayed Jesus me, the last delinquent,
Deems the profanest.⁸

Man disavows, and Deity disowns me:
10 Hell might afford my miseries a shelter;
Therefore hell keeps her ever hungry mouths all
Bolted against me.

Hard lot! encompassed with a thousand dangers;
Weary, faint, trembling with a thousand terrors;
15 I'm called, if vanquished, to receive a sentence
Worse than Abiram's.⁹

7. Judas betrayed Jesus to the chief priests for
a n d Aaron, was swallowed up with his fellow dis-
money (Matthew 26 . 14 - 16) .

sidents in a cleft of the earth. They “went down

8. I.e., Jesus, betrayed by me as well as by Judas,
alive into the pit, and the earth closed upon them”
deems me the most profane.

(N u m b e r s 16.33).

9. Abirim, rebelling against the authority of Moses

T H E R I G H T S O F W O M A N / 7 0 5

Him the vindictive rod of angry justice

Sent quick and howling to the center headlong;

I, fed with judgment, in a fleshly tomb, am

20 Buried above ground.

ca. 1774 1816

A N N A L A E T I T I A B A R B A U L D

1743-1825

The Rights of Woman¹

Yes, injured Woman! rise, assert thy right!

Woman! too long degraded, scorned, oppressed;

O born to rule in partial⁰ Law's despite,⁰ *biased /contempt*

Resume thy native empire o'er the breast!

5 Go forth arrayed in panoply² divine;

That angel pureness which admits no stain;

Go, bid proud Man his boasted rule resign,

And kiss the golden scepter of thy reign.

Go, gird thyself with grace; collect thy store

io Of bright artillery glancing⁰ from afar; *gleaming*

Soft melting tones thy thundering cannon's roar,

Blushes and fears thy magazine³ of war.

Thy rights are empire: urge no meaner⁰ claim,— *humbler*

Felt, not defined, and if debated, lost;

15 Like sacred mysteries, which withheld from fame,

Shunning discussion, are revered the most.

Try all that wit and art suggest to bend

Of thy imperial foe the stubborn knee;

Make treacherous Man thy subject, not thy friend;

20 Thou mayst command, but never canst be free.

Awe the licentious, and restrain the rude;

Soften the sullen, clear the cloudy brow:

Be, more than princes' gifts, thy favors sued;⁰— *sought*

She hazards all, who will the least allow.

25 But hope not, courted idol of mankind,

On this proud eminence secure to stay;

Subduing and subdued, thou soon shalt find

Thy coldness soften, and thy pride give way.

1. Until the last two stanzas, a seemingly positive 2. Complete armor; Ephesians 6.11: “Put on the response to Mary Wollstonecraft’s *A Vindication of* whole armor of God, that ye may be able to stand *the Rights of Woman* (1792), a radical look at the against the wiles of the devil.”

place of women in society. 3. Storage place for weapons or ammunition.

706 / ANNALÆTITIA BARBAULD

Then, then, abandon each ambitious thought,

30

Conquest or rule thy heart shall feebly move,
In Nature’s school, by her soft maxims taught,
That separate rights are lost in mutual love.

ca. 1795

1825

To the Poor

Child of distress, who meet’st the bitter scorn
Of fellow-men to happier prospects born,
Doomed Art and Nature’s various stores to see
Flow in full cups of joy—and not for thee;
Who seest the rich, to heaven and fate resigned,
Bear *thy* afflictions with a patient mind;
Whose bursting heart disdains unjust control,
Who feel’st oppression’s iron in thy soul,
Who dragg’st the load of faint and feeble years,

10

Whose bread is anguish, and whose water tears;
Bear, bear thy wrongs—fulfill thy destined hour,
Bend thy meek neck beneath the foot of Power;

But when thou feel'st the great deliverer nigh,
And thy freed spirit mounting seeks the sky,
Let no vain fears thy parting hour molest,

15

No whispered terrors shake thy quiet breast:
Think not their threats can work thy future woe,
Nor deem the Lord above like lords below;—
Safe in the bosom of that love repose
By whom the sun gives light, the ocean flows;

20

Prepare to meet a Father undismayed,
Nor fear the God whom priests and kings have made.

1795

1825

Life

*Animula, vagula, blandula.*⁴

Life! I know not what thou art,
But know that thou and I must part;
And when, or how, or where we met,
I own^o to me's a secret yet. *acknowledge*

5

But this I know, when thou art fled,
Where'er they lay these limbs, this head,
No clod so valueless shall be,
As all that then remains of me.

4. Charming little soul, hastening away (Latin);
deathbed, quoted from Aelius Spartianus, *Life of*
the first line of a poem supposedly composed by

Hadrian 25.

the Roman emperor Hadrian (76—138 C. E.) on his

**INSCRIPTION IN A BEAUTIFUL RETRE
AT CALLED FAIRY BOWER / 707**

O whither, whither dost thou fly,
Where bend unseen thy trackless course,
And in this strange divorce,
Ah tell where I must seek this compound I?
To the vast ocean of empyreal flame, *celestial*
From whence thy essence came,
Dost thou thy flight pursue, when freed
From matter's base encumbering weed?
Or dost thou, hid from sight,
Wait, like some spell-bound knight,
Through blank oblivious years th' appointed hour,
To break thy trance and reassume thy power?
Yet canst thou without thought or feeling be?
O say what art thou, when no more thou art thee?
Life! we've been long together,
Through pleasant and through cloudy weather;
'Tis hard to part when friends are dear;
Perhaps't will cost a sigh, a tear;
Then steal away, give little warning,
Choose thine own time;
Say not Good night, but in some brighter clime
Bid me Good morning.

1825

H A N N A H M O R E

1745-1833

Inscription in a Beautiful Retreat Called Fairy Bower¹

Airy spirits, you who love

Cooling bower, or shady grove;

Streams that murmur as they flow,

Zephyrs² bland that softly blow;

5 Babbling echo,³ or the tale

Of the lovelorn Nightingale;⁴

1. A leafy covert or arbor; also, poetically, an ide-

4. T h e nightingale is known for its sweet, noctur-
alized abode.

nal song; there are several classical myths about

2. Gentle breezes f r o m the west.

nightingales. Ovid tells the story of Philomela: she

3. In Greek mythology, Echo was a nymph whose
was raped by her brother-in-law, Tereus, who then
chatter distracted Hera, the queen of the gods,
tore out her tongue so that she could not speak.

while Zeus, Hera's h u s b a n d , consorted with other

She wove the story into a tapestry and sent it to

nymphs and mortal women. Hera punished her by

her sister, who rescued her. She was later changed

depriving her of speech, save to repeat the words

into a nightingale while in flight from Tereus; Phil-

of others. Later, Echo pined for the youth Narcis-

omela was "lovelorn" only in the ironic sense of

sus, who spurned her love, until nothing was left

being victimized by another's passion.

of her but her voice.

7 0 8 / H A N N A H M O R E

Hither, airy spirits, come,

This is your peculiar⁰ home. *own*

If you love a verdant⁰ glade, *green*

10 If you love a noon-tide shade,

Hither, Sylphs⁵ and Fairies, fly,

Unobserved of earthly eye.

Come, and wander every night,

By the moonbeam's glimmering light;

15 And again at early day

Brush the silver dews away.

Mark where first the daisies blow,⁰ *bloom*.

Where the bluest violets grow;

Where the sweetest linnet⁰ sings, *a songbird*

20 Where the earliest cowslip⁰ springs; *awildflower*

Where the largest acorn lies,

Precious in a Fairy's eyes:

Sylphs, though unconfined to place,

Love to fill an acorn's space.

25 Come, and mark within what bush

Builds the blackbird or the thrush;

Great his joy who first espies,

Greater his who spares the prize.

Come, and watch the hallowed bower,

30 Chase the insect from the flower;

Little offices like these,

Gentle souls and Fairies please.

Mortals! formed of grosser clay,
From our haunts keep far away;
35 Or, if you should dare appear,
See that you from vice are clear.
Folly's minion, 0 Fashion's fool, *darling*
Mad ambition's restless tool!
Slave of passion, slave of power,
40 Fly, ah fly! this tranquil bower!
Son of avarice, 0 soul of frost, *greed*
Wretch! of Heaven abhorred the most,
Learn to pity others' wants, 0 *needs*
Or avoid these hallowed haunts.

5. Spirits supposed to inhabit the air.

T H E S L A V E T R A D E / 7 0 9

45 Eye, unconscious of a tear,
When affliction's train appear;
Heart that never heaved a sigh,
For another, come not nigh.
But, ye darling sons of Heaven,
50 Giving freely what was given,
You, whose liberal hands dispense
The blessings of benevolence:
You, who wipe the tearful eye,
You, who stop the rising sigh;
55 You, whose souls have understood
The luxury of doing good,
Come, ye happy virtuous few,
Open is my bower to you;

You, these mossy banks may press;
60 You, each guardian Fay^o shall bless. *fairy*

1774

From The Slave Trade

Strange power of song!⁶ the strain that warms the heart
Seems the same inspiration to impart;

Touched by the extrinsic^o energy alone, *external*

We think the flame which melts us is our own;

5 Deceived, for genius we mistake delight,

Charmed as we read, we fancy we can write.⁷

Though not to me, sweet Bard, thy powers belong,

The cause I plead shall sanctify my song.

The Muse⁸ awakes no artificial fire,

io For Truth rejects what Fancy would inspire:

Here Art would weave her gayest flowers in vain,

The bright invention Nature would disdain.

For no fictitious ills these numbers^o flow, *verses*

But living anguish, and substantial woe;

15 No individual griefs my bosom melt,

For millions feel what Oronoko felt:

Fired by no single wrongs, the countless host

I mourn, by rapine^o dragged from Afric's coast. *seizure*

Perish the illiberal⁹ thought which would debase

6. The "song" refers to Thomas Southerne's

below.

Oroonoko: A Tragedy (1696), a stage adaptation of

7. I.e., we mistake the pleasure we receive from

Aphra Behn's *Oroonoko, or the Royal Slave*,

reading for genius of our own, leading us to think (1688). Both the novel and the play critiqued some we can write.

aspects of the slave trade. The title character is an 8. One of the nine Greek sister goddesses believed African prince, sold into slavery in Surinam, who to be the source of inspiration for the arts.

leads a slave revolt and is eventually executed.

9. Not generous in respect of the rights or liberties Southerne is the “sweet Bard” referred to in line 7 of others, narrow-minded or bigoted.

7 1 0 / H A N N A H M O R E

20 The native genius of the sable⁰ race! *dark-complexioned*

Perish the proud philosophy, which sought

To rob them of the powers of equal thought! 1

Does then the immortal principle within

Change with the casual color of a skin?

25 Does matter⁰ govern spirit? or is mind *body*

Degraded by the form to which ‘tis joined?

No; they have heads to think, and hearts to feel,

And souls to act, with firm, though erring zeal; 2

For they have keen affections, kind desires,

30 Love strong as death, and active patriot fires;

All the rude energy, the fervid flame,

Of high-souled passion, and ingenuous³ shame:

Strong, but luxuriant virtues boldly shoot

From the wild vigor of a savage root.

35 Nor weak their sense of honor’s proud control,

For pride is virtue in a Pagan soul;
A sense of worth, a conscience⁰ of desert,⁰ *consciousness / worth*
A high, unbroken haughtiness of heart;
That self-same stuff which erst^o proud empires swayed,
formerly
40 Of which the conquerors of the world were made.
Capricious fate of men! that very pride
In Afric scourged, in Rome was deified.
No Muse, O Qua-shi!⁴ shall thy deeds relate,
No statue snatch thee from oblivious fate!
45 For thou wast born where never gentle Muse
On Valor's grave the flowers of Genius strews;
And thou wast born where no recording page
Plucks the fair deed from Time's devouring rage.
Had Fortune placed thee on some happier coast,
50 Where *polished* s Pagans' souls heroic boast,
To thee, who soughtest a voluntary grave,
The uninjured honors of thy name to save,
Whose generous arm thy barbarous Master spared,⁶
Altars had smoked, and temples had been reared.
55 Whenever to Afric's shores I turn my eyes,
Horrors of deepest, deadliest guilt arise;
I see, by more than Fancy's mirror⁷ shewn,
The burning village, and the blazing town:
See the dire victim torn from social life,
60 The shrieking babe, the agonizing wife!
She, wretch forlorn! is dragged by hostile hands,
To distant tyrants sold, in distant lands!

Transmitted8 miseries, and successive chains,

1. Perhaps an allusion to Aristotle's theory (in the
about them.

Politics 1.5) that some are "naturally" b o m a s

6. W h e n his master tried to punish him, Q u a s h i
slaves or inferior persons.

resisted. In the ensuing struggle, Quashi gained

2. Erring because not Christian.

the upper h a n d and drew a knife, but used it to kill

3. Noble, freeborn. The slaves feel s h a m e because
himself rather than the master.

they are "ingenuous."

7. Fictions generated by imagination; perhaps

4. A slave in Bermuda who killed himself rather
referring to Southerne's play or other theatrical or
than undergo p u n i s h m e n t by the master with
literary works.

w h o m he had been brought up as a playfellow.

8. Passed by inheritance.

5. M a d e more refined or elegant by the stories told

T o T H E S H A D E O F B U R N S / 7 1 1

The sole sad heritage her child obtains!

65 Even this last wretched boon0 their foes deny, *request*

To weep together, or together die.

By felon hands, by one relentless stroke,

See the fond links of feeling Nature broke!

The fibers twisting round a parent's heart,

70 Torn from their grasp, and bleeding as they part.

1788

CHARLOTTE SMITH

1749-1806

Written in the Church Yard at Middleton in Sussex

Pressed by the moon, mute arbitress of tides,

While the loud equinox its power combines,

The sea no more its swelling surge confines,

But o'er the shrinking land sublimely rides.

5 The wild blast, rising from the western cave,

Drives the huge billows from their heaving bed,

Tears from their grassy tombs the village dead,

And breaks the silent sabbath of the grave!

With shells and sea-weed mingled, on the shore

io Lo! their bones whiten in the frequent wave;

But vain to them the winds and waters rave;

They hear the warring elements no more:

While I am doomed—by life's long storm oppressed,

To gaze with envy on their gloomy rest.

1789

To the Shade of Burns¹

Mute is thy wild harp, now, O Bard sublime!

Who, amid Scotia's⁰ mountain solitude, *Scotland's*

Great Nature taught to "build the lofty rhyme,"²

And even beneath the daily pressure, rude,^o *harsh*

5 Of laboring Poverty,³ thy generous blood,

Fired with the love of freedom—Not subdued

Wert thou by thy low fortune: But a time

Like this we live in, when the abject chime

Of echoing Parasite is best approved,⁴

1. This sonnet was written upon the death of the
his own health was broken by efforts to earn a liv-
Scottish poet Robert Burns (1 7 5 9 - 1 7 9 6 ; see
ing at farming.

pp. 7 4 7 - 6 0) .

4. I.e., in our time (unlike Burns's), public taste

2. Cf. Milton, "Lycidas," line 11 (p. 410).

favors "low," unoriginal (parasitical) poetry.

3. Burns was the son of an u n s u c c e s s f u l farmer;

7 1 2 / C H A R L O T T E S M I T H

10 Was not for thee—Indignantly is fled

Thy noble Spirit; and no longer moved

By all the ills o'er which thine heart has bled,

Associate worthy of the illustrious dead,

Enjoys with them "the Liberty it loved."⁵

1796 1797

Written near a Port on a Dark Evening

Huge vapors brood above the clifted shore,

Night on the Ocean settles, dark and mute,

Save where is heard the repercussive roar

Of drowsy billows,⁰ on the rugged foot *waves*

5 Of rocks remote; or still more distant tone

Of seamen in the anchored bark^o that tell *ship*

The watch relieved; or one deep voice alone

Singing the hour, and bidding "Strike the bell."

All is black shadow, but the lucid line

10 Marked by the light surf on the level sand,

Or where afar the ship-lights faintly shine
Like wandering fairy fires,⁶ that oft on land
Mislead the Pilgrim—Such the dubious ray
That wavering Reason lends, in life's long darkling way.

1797

Written in October

The blasts of Autumn as they scatter round
The faded foliage of another year,
And muttering many a sad and solemn sound,
Drive the pale fragments o'er the stubble sere,^o *dry; withered*

5 Are well attuned to my dejected mood;
(Ah! better far than airs that breathe of Spring!)

While the high rooks, that hoarsely clamoring
Seek in black phalanx⁷ the half-leafless wood,
I rather hear, than that enraptured lay^o *song*
10 Harmonious, and of Love and Pleasure born,
Which from the golden furze,⁸ or flowering thorn
Awakes the Shepherd in the ides^o of May; *fifteenth*
Nature delights *me* most when most she mourns,
For never more to me the Spring of Hope returns!

1797

5. Cf. Alexander Pope, "Epitaph on Sir William
n o m e n o n of nocturnal light is caused by the com-
Trumbull," lines 11 — 12: "Such this man was, who
bustion of marsh gas.

now, from earth remov'd, / At length enjoys that

7. A flock of rooks (a species of crow that nests in
Liberty he lov'd."

a colony and hence looks like a phalanx).

6. The will-o'-the-wisp was said to draw travelers

8. A spiny evergreen shrub with yellow flowers.

astray by holding a false light before them; the phe-

S T A N Z A S / 7 1 3

Nepenthe⁹

Oh! for imperial Polydamna's art,

Which to bright Helen was in Egypt taught,

To mix with magic power the oblivious draught¹

Of force to staunch the bleeding of the heart,

5 And to Care's wan and hollow cheek impart

| The smile of happy youth, uncursed with thought.

Potent indeed the charm that could appease

Affection's ceaseless anguish, doomed to weep

O'er the cold grave; or yield even transient ease

10 By soothing busy Memory to sleep!

—Around me those who surely must have tried

Some charm of equal power, I daily see,

But still to *me* Oblivion is denied,

There's no Nepenthe, now, on earth for me.

1797

Stanzas

Ah! think'st thou, Laura,² then, that wealth

Should make me thus my youth, and health,

And freedom and repose resign?—

Ah, no!—I toil to gain by stealth

5 One look, one tender glance of thine.

Born where huge hills on hills are piled,

In Caledonia's³ distant wild,
Unbounded Liberty was mine:
But thou upon my hopes hast smiled,
io And bade me be a slave of thine!
Amid these gloomy haunts of gain,
Of weary hours I not complain,
While Hope forbids me to repine,⁰ *complain*
And whispering tells me I obtain
15 Pity from that soft heart of thine.

j

9. A drink or drug supposed to bring forgetfulness learned the art of herbs.

of trouble or grief, used by Helen (in Homer, *Odys-* 1. A
potion or drink producing forgetfulness.

sey 4.219—32) to quell the lament over the appar- 2. This
poem originally appeared in Smith's *The* entirely lost *Odysseus*.
In a note to this poem, Smith *Young Philosopher: A Novel*
(1798), in which it is cites lines from Alexander Pope's
"Odyssey," which written by the character Glenmorris to
Laura, his describes Helen's mixing the potion and her acqui-
future wife.

sition of the drug from "Thone's imperial wife," i.e., 3.
Caledonia is the Roman name for the northern Polydamna, the
Egyptian woman from whom she part of Britain; hence, used
poetically for Scotland.

714 / CHARLOTTE SMITH

Tho' far capricious Fortune flies,
Yet Love will bless the sacrifice,
And all his purer joys combine;
While I my little world comprise
20 In that fair form, and fairer soul of thine.

1798

Ode to Death

Friend of the wretched! wherefore⁰ should the eye *why*
Of blank Despair, whence tears have ceased to flow,
Be turned from thee?—Ah! wherefore fears to die
He, who compelled each poignant grief to know,
5 Drains to its lowest dregs the cup of woe?
Would Cowardice postpone thy calm embrace,
To linger out long years in torturing pain?
Or not prefer thee to the ills that chase
Him, who too much impoverished to obtain
10 From British Themis⁴ *right*, implores her aid in vain!
Sharp goading Indigence⁰ who would not fly, *poverty*
That urges toil the exhausted strength above?
Or shun the *once* fond friend's averted eye?
Or who to *thy* asylum not remove,
15 To lose the wasting pain of unrequited love?
Can then the wounded wretch who must deplore
What most she loved, to thy cold arms consigned,
Who hears the voice that soothed her soul no more,⁵
Fear *thee*, O Death!—Or hug the chains that bind
20 To joyless, cheerless life, her sick, reluctant mind?
Oh! Misery's Cure; who e'er in pale dismay
Has watched the angel form they could not save,
And seen their dearest blessing tore away,
May well the terrors of *thy* triumph brave,
25 Nor pause in fearful dread before the opening grave!

1797, 1800

4. The British judicial system. Smith spent many
5. Smith refers to the death of her daughter, Anna
years embroiled in the legal system, trying to settle
Augusta de Foville, who died while giving birth in
her father-in-law's will in order to allow her chil-
1795.

dren to claim their shares in his estate.

B E A C H Y H E A D / 7 1 5

*From Beachy Head*⁶

On thy stupendous summit, rock sublime!
That o'er the channel reared, half way at sea
The mariner at early morning hails,⁷
I would recline; while Fancy should go forth,
5 And represent the strange and awful hour
Of vast concussion;⁸ when the Omnipotent
Stretched forth his arm, and rent the solid hills,
Bidding the impetuous main flood rush between
The rifted shores, and from the continent
10 Eternally divided this green isle.
Imperial lord of the high southern coast!
From thy projecting head-land I would mark
Far in the east the shades of night disperse,
Melting and thinned, as from the dark blue wave
15 Emerging, brilliant rays of arrowy light
Dart from the horizon; when the glorious sun
Just lifts above it his resplendent orb.
Advances now, with feathery silver touched,
The rippling tide of flood; glisten the sands,

20 While, inmates of the chalky clefts that scar
 Thy sides precipitous, with shrill harsh cry,
 Their white wings glancing in the level beam,
 The terns, and gulls, and tarrocks, seek their food,⁹
 And thy rough hollows echo to the voice
 25 Of the gray choughs,¹ and ever restless daws,
 With clamor, not unlike the chiding hounds,
 While the lone shepherd, and his baying dog,
 Drive to thy turfey crest his bleating flock.
 The high meridian of the day is past,
 30 And Ocean now, reflecting the calm Heaven,
 Is of cerulean hue; and murmurs low
 The tide of ebb, upon the level sands.
 The sloop, her angular canvas shifting still,
 Catches the light and variable airs
 35 That but a little crisp the summer sea,
 Dimpling its tranquil surface.

1807

6. This long poem (732 lines) appeared in Smith's
 countries. Yet the cliffs about Dieppe, resemble
 last volume of poetry, *Beachy Head and Other*
 the chalk cliffs on the southern coast. But Nor-
Poems, published after her death. The notes below
 mandy has no likeness whatever to the part of
 are Smith's, printed originally as endnotes.
 England opposite to it."

7. "In crossing the Channel from the coast of

9. "Terns. *Sterna hirundo*, or Sea Swallow. Gulls.

France, Beachy-Head is the first land made.”

Larus canus. Tarrocks. *Larus tridactylus*.”

8. “Alluding to an idea that this Island was once

1. “Gray choughs. *Corvus Graculus*, Cornish joined to the continent of Europe, and torn from Choughs, or, as these birds are called by the Sussex it by some convulsion of Nature. I confess I never people, Saddle-backed Crows, build in great numbers on this coast.”

716

PHILIP FRENEAU

1752-1832

The Indian Burying Ground

In spite of all the learned have said,

I still my opinion keep;

The posture, that we give the dead,

Points out the soul’s eternal sleep.

5 Not so the ancients of these lands—

The Indian, when from life released,

Again is seated¹ with his friends,

And shares again the joyous feast.

His imaged birds, and painted bowl,

10 And venison, for a journey dressed,²

Bespeak the nature of the soul,

Activity, that knows no rest.

His bow, for action ready bent,

And arrows, with a head of stone,

15 Can only mean that life is spent,
And not the old ideas gone.
Thou, stranger, that shalt come this way,
No fraud upon the dead commit—
Observe the swelling turf, and say
20 They do not lie, but here they sit.
Here still a lofty rock remains,
On which the curious eye may trace
(Now wasted, half, by wearing rains)
The fancies of a ruder race.

25 Here still an aged elm aspires,
Beneath whose far-projecting shade
(And which the shepherd still admires)
The children of the forest played!
There oft a restless Indian queen
30 (Pale Shebah,³ with her braided hair)
And many a barbarous form is seen
To chide the man that lingers there.

1. “The North American Indians bury their dead
note],

in a sitting posture; decorating the corpse with

2. P u n on “dress”: to prepare for cooking as well
w a m p u m , t h e images of birds, quadrupeds, etc.:
as to clothe.

And (if that of a warrior) with bows, arrows, tom-

3. Sheba, the queen who visited Solomon to judge
ahawks and other military weapons” [Freneau’s
his wisdom (1 Kings 10.1 — 13).

T o S I R T O B Y / 7 1 7

By midnight moons, o'er moistening dews;

In habit for the chase arrayed,

35 The hunter still the deer pursues,

The hunter and the deer, a shade! *0 soul*

And long shall timorous fancy see

The painted chief, and pointed spear,

And Reason's self shall bow the knee

40 To shadows and delusions here.

1787 1788

To Sir Toby⁴

*A Sugar Planter in the Interior Parts of Jamaica, Near the
City of*

San Jago De La Vega (Spanish Town), 1784

“The motions of his spirit are black as night,

And his affections dark as Erebus.”

S H A K E S P E A R E 5

If there exists a hell—the case is clear—

Sir Toby's slaves enjoy that portion here:

Here are no blazing brimstone lakes—'tis true;

But kindled rum too often burns as blue;

5 In which some fiend, whom nature must detest,

Steeps Toby's brand, and marks poor Cudjoe's breast.⁶

Here whips on whips excite perpetual fears,

And mingled howlings vibrate on my ears:

Here nature's plagues abound, to fret and tease,

10 Snakes, scorpions, despots, lizards, centipedes—

No art, no care escapes the busy lash;

All have their dues—and all are paid in cash—
The eternal driver keeps a steady eye
On a black herd, who would his vengeance fly,
15 But chained, imprisoned, on a burning soil,
For the mean avarice of a tyrant toil!⁷
The lengthy cart-whip guards this monster's reign—
And cracks, like pistols, from the fields of cane.
Ye powers! who formed these wretched tribes, relate,
20 What had they done, to merit such a fate!
Why were they brought from Eboe's⁸ sultry waste,
To see that plenty which they must not taste—

4. First published in the *Daily Advertiser*, February
slave. “This passage has a reference to the West
1, 1791, titled “The Island Field Negro.” We print
Indian custom (sanctioned by law) of branding a
the 1809 text.

newly imported slave on the breast, with a red hot
5. *The Merchant of Venice* 5.1. Freneau has sub-
iron, as evidence of the purchaser's property” [Fre-
stituted “black” for *dull Erehus*: darkness; in Greek
neau's note].

mythology, part of the underworld through which

7. Lines 13-16 were added in 1809.

the dead passed before entering Hades.

8. “A small Negro kingdom near the river Senegal”

6. Cudge or Cudjoe was a common name for a
[Freneau's note].

718 / PHILIP FRENEAU

Food, which they cannot buy, and dare not steal;
Yams and potatoes—many a scanty meal!—
25 One, with a gibbet⁰ wakes his negro's fears, *gallows*
One to the windmill nails him by the ears;
One keeps his slave in darkened dens, unfed,
One puts the wretch in pickle⁹ ere he's dead:
This, from a tree suspends him by the thumbs,
30 That, from his table grudges even the crumbs!
O'er yond' rough hills a tribe of females go,
Each with her gourd,⁰ her infant, and her hoe; *water cwp*
Scorched by a sun that has no mercy here,
Driven by a devil, whom men call overseer—
35 In chains, twelve wretches to their labors haste;
Twice twelve I saw, with iron collars graced!—
Are such the fruits that spring from vast domains?
Is wealth, thus got, Sir Toby, worth your pains!—
Who would your wealth on terms, like these, possess,
40 Where all we see is pregnant with distress—
Angola's¹ natives scourged by ruffian hands,
And toil's hard product shipped to foreign lands.
Talk not of blossoms, and your endless spring;
What joy, what smile, can scenes of misery bring?—
45 Though Nature, here, has every blessing spread,
Poor is the laborer—and how meanly fed!—
Here Stygian² paintings light and shade renew,
Pictures of hell, that Virgil's³ pencil drew:
Here, surly Charons make their annual trip,
50 And ghosts arrive in every Guinea ship,⁴

To find what beasts these western isles afford,
Plutonian⁵ scourges, and despotic lords:—
Here, they, of stuff determined to be free,
Must climb the rude cliffs of the Liguane;⁶
55 Beyond the clouds, in sculking haste repair,
And hardly safe from brother traitors⁷ there.—

1784 1791, 1809

9. I.e., rubs salt or salt and vinegar on the slave's
Telemaque (1699), a didactic romance concerning
back after a flogging.

the son of the hero Ulysses as he searches for his

1. West African Portuguese colony's.

father.

2. Hellish; alluding to the river Styx, which, in

4. Slave ships from West Africa.

Greek mythology, souls must cross to enter Hades.

5. Hellish; Pluto was the Roman name for the god

They were ferried across to the underworld by
of the underworld.

Charon.

6. "The mountains northward of the kingdom"

3. "See *Aeneid*, Book 6th.—and Fenelon's *Tele-*
[Freneau's note],

machus, Book 18" [Freneau's note]. The Trojan

7. "Alluding to the *Independent* negroes in the

hero Aeneas descends to the underworld in the

blue mountains, who, for a stipulated reward,

sixth book of the epic by the Latin poet Virgil (70—

deliver up every fugitive that falls into their hands,
19 **B.C.E.**). The French theologian Francois de Sal-
to the English Government” [Freneau’s note].

ignac de la Mothe-Fenelon (1651-1715) wrote

7 1 9

P H I L L I S W H E A T L E Y

ca. 1753-1784

A Farewell to America. To Mrs. S. W.1

i

Adieu, New-England’s smiling meads,⁰ *meadows*

Adieu, the flow’ry plain:

I leave thine op’ning charms, O spring,

And tempt the roaring main.⁰ *sea*

II

5 In vain for me the flow’rets rise,

And boast their gaudy pride,

While here beneath the northern skies

I mourn for health denied.²

in

Celestial maid of rosy hue,³

10 O let me feel thy reign!⁰ *influence, dominion*

I languish till thy face I view,

Thy vanished joys regain.

IV

Susannah mourns, nor can I bear

To see the crystal show’r,

i5 Or mark the tender falling tear

At sad departure’s hour;

v

Not unregarding can I see
Her soul with grief opprest;
But let no sighs, no groans for me,
20 Steal from her pensive breast.

VI

In vain the feathered warblers sing,
In vain the garden blooms,
And on the bosom of the spring
Breathes out her sweet perfumes,

VII

25 While for Britannia's distant shore
We sweep the liquid plain,
And with astonished eyes explore
The wide-extended main.

1. Susanna Wheatley (1 7 0 9 - 1 7 7 4) , Wheatley's
2. Wheatley was frail and sickly for m u c h of her
owner and mistress, who had afforded her an excel-
lent education and had encouraged her writing.
health.

Wheatley departed Boston for London in May

3. I.e., N e w England (or America?).

1773.

7 2 0 / P H I L L I S W H E A T L E Y

VIII

Lo! Health appears! celestial dame!
30 Complacent and serene,

With Hebe's mantle o'er her frame,
With soul-delighting mien. *appearance, expression*

IX

To mark the vale where London lies *valley*
With misty vapors crowned,
35 Which cloud Aurora's thousand dyes,
And veil her charms around,

x

Why, Phoebus, moves thy car so slow?
So slow thy rising ray?
Give us the famous town to view,
40 Thou glorious king of day!

XI

For thee, Britannia, I resign
New England's smiling fields;
To view again her charms divine,
What joy the prospect yields!

XII

45 But thou! Temptation hence away,
With all thy fatal train
Nor once seduce my soul away,
By thine enchanting strain.

XIII

Thrice happy they, whose heav'nly shield
50 Secures their souls from harms,
And fell Temptation on the field *destructive*
Of all its pow'r disarms!

Boston, May 7, 1773

On Being Brought from Africa to America⁷

'Twas mercy brought me from my pagan land,

Taught my benighted⁸ soul to understand

That there's a God, that there's a Savior too:

4. Hebe, the Greek goddess of youth, performed who daily drove his chariot ("car"), the sun, across small services for the gods, including cupbearing the sky.

(until replaced by Ganymede); she was considered

7. Wheatley was brought from West Africa to Boston in July 1761, as a child of eight. the personification of youthful beauty. "Health" in

this stanza may refer to Hygieia, the Greek goddess

8. Overtaken by darkness; also, figuratively, in- of health.

involved in intellectual or moral darkness, involved

5. The Greek and Roman goddess of the dawn. in obscurity.

6. Apollo, the Greek and Roman god of the sun,

**To S. M., A YOUNG AFRICAN PAINTER, ON
NSEEING HIS WORKS / 7 2 1**

Once I redemption neither sought nor knew.

5 Some view our sable⁰ race with scornful eye, *black*

"Their color is a diabolic dye."

Remember, Christians, Negros, black as Cain,⁹

May be refined, and join th' angelic train.

1773

To S. M.,¹ a Young African Painter, on Seeing His Works

To show the lab'ring bosom's deep intent,
And thought in living characters to paint,
When first thy pencil did those beauties give,
And breathing figures learnt from thee to live,
s How did those prospects give my soul delight,
A new creation rushing on my sight?
Still,0 wond'rous youth! each noble path pursue, *always*
On deathless glories fix thine ardent view:
Still may the painter's and the poet's fire
10 To aid thy pencil, and thy verse conspire!
And may the charms of each seraphic2 theme
Conduct thy footsteps to immortal fame!
High to the blissful wonders of the skies
Elate thy soul, and raise thy wishful eyes,
is Thrice happy, when exalted to survey
That splendid city, crowned with endless day,
Whose twice six gates on radiant hinges ring:
Celestial Salem3 blooms in endless spring.
Calm and serene thy moments glide along,
20 And may the muse4 inspire each future song!
Still, with the sweets of contemplation blessed,
May peace with balmy wings your soul invest!
But when these shades5 of time are chased away,
And darkness ends in everlasting day,
25 On what seraphic pinions6 shall we move,
And view the landscapes in the realms above?
There shall thy tongue in heav'nly murmurs flow,
And there my muse with heav'nly transport glow:

No more to tell of Damon's⁷ tender sighs,
Or rising radiance of Aurora's⁸ eyes,

9. The son of Adam and Eve, Cain killed his

5. Souls of the dead in the classical underworld.

brother, Abel, and God punished him with this

6. Wings; from the Latin, *pennae*, feathers, and

curse: "When thou tillest the ground, it shall not
therefore with a pun on the associated meaning,

henceforth yield unto thee its strength; a fugitive
pens (originally made from quills).

and a vagabond shalt thou be in the earth" (Gen-

7. According to one version of the Greek legend,
esis 4.12).

Damon was a friend of Pythias, who had been con-

1. Scipio Moorhead, the slave of a Boston clergy-
demned to death by the tyrant Dionysius. Damon
man, John Moorhead.

stood pledge for Pythias as the latter left to settle

2. Resembling a seraph (a member of one of the
his affairs. W h e n Pythias returned, Dionysius was
nine orders of angels) either in beauty or in fervor
so impressed by the actions of both men that he
of exalted devotion.

pardoned Pythias.

3. The heavenly Jerusalem.

8. The Greek and Roman goddess of the dawn's.

4. Imagined source of poetic power.

7 2 2 / P H I L L I S W H E A T L E Y

For nobler themes demand a nobler strain,
And purer language on th' ethereal plain.
Cease, gentle muse! the solemn gloom of night
Now seals the fair creation from my sight.

1773

On Imagination

Thy various works, imperial queen, we see,
How bright their forms! how deck'd with pomp by thee!
Thy wond'rous acts in beauteous order stand,
And all attest how potent is thine hand.

5 From Helicon's⁹ refulgent⁰ heights attend, *bright, shining*

Ye sacred choir, and my attempts befriend:

To tell her glories with a faithful tongue,

Ye blooming Graces,¹ triumph in my song.

Now here, now there, the roving Fancy flies,

io Till some loved object strikes her wand'ring eyes,

Whose silken fetters⁰ all the senses bind, *shackles*

And soft captivity involves the mind.

Imagination! who can sing thy force?

Or who describe the swiftness of thy course?

i5 Soaring through air to find the bright abode,

Th' empyreal⁰ place of the thund'ring God, *heavenly*

We on thy pinions² can surpass the wind,

And leave the rolling universe behind:

From star to star the mental optics rove,

20 Measure the skies, and range the realms above.

There in one view we grasp the mighty whole,

Or with new worlds amaze th' unbounded soul.

Though Winter frowns to Fancy's raptur'd eyes
The fields may flourish, and gay scenes arise;
25 The frozen deeps may break their iron bands,
And bid their waters murmur o'er the sands.
Fair Flora³ may resume her fragrant reign,
And with her flow'ry riches deck the plain;
Sylvanus⁴ may diffuse his honors round,
BO And all the forest may with leaves be crown'd:
Show'rs may descend, and dews their gems disclose,
And nectar sparkle on the blooming rose.

9. A mountain in Greece that was sacred to the
2. Wings; from the Latin, *pennae*, feathers, and
Muses (nine sister goddesses who presided over
therefore with a pun on the associated meaning,
poetry, song, and the arts and sciences) and thus
pens (originally made from quills).

figures poetic inspiration.

3. Roman goddess of flowers.

1. In Greek mythology, three sister goddesses who

4. Roman god of the woods.

gave charm and beauty. *Her*: i.e., imagination's.

THE PARISH REGISTER / 723

Such is thy pow'r, nor are thine orders vain,
O thou the leader of the mental train:
35 In full perfection all thy works are wrought,
And thine the sceptre o'er the realms of thought.
Before thy throne the subject-passions bow,
Of subject-passions sov'reign ruler Thou,

At thy command joy rushes on the heart,
40 And through the glowing veins the spirits dart.
Fancy might now her silken pinions try
To rise from earth, and sweep th' expanse on high;
From Tithon's bed now might Aurora⁵ rise,
Her cheeks all glowing with celestial dyes,^{0 colors}
45 While a pure stream of light o'erflows the skies.
The monarch of the day⁰ I might behold, *sun*
And all the mountains tipt with radiant gold,
But I reluctant leave the pleasing views,
Which Fancy dresses to delight the Muse;
50 Winter austere forbids me to aspire,
And northern tempests damp the rising fire;⁶
They chill the tides of Fancy's flowing sea,
Cease then, my song, cease the unequal lay.⁷

1784

G E O R G E C R A B B E

1754-1832

*From The Parish Register*¹

Part I

BAPTISMS

*Turn porro puer (ut saevis projectus ob undis,
Navita) nudus humi jacet infans indigus omni
Vitali auxilio, ...*

*Vagituque locum lugubri complet, ut sequum est,
Cui tantum in vita restat transire malorum.²*

5. Greek and Roman goddess of the dawn, represented to compete with Milton's epic. She has, however, sented as rising with rosy fingers from the bed of echoed Milton's acknowledgment of his inability to her aged lover, Tithonus.

write without the help of a power greater than

6. Wheatley here alludes to and revises Milton's (unequal to) his own.

famous lines to his Muse (his source of inspiration)

1. Crabbe's poem is modeled on the parish registers in which baptisms, marriages, and deaths were in a time and place too inhospitable to poetry, to recorded. The following section, although titled accomplish his poetic aims; without the Muse's "Baptisms," serves as an introduction to the whole help, "an age too late" or a climate too northern or poem.

"cold" may "damp" (depress) his "intended wing"

2. From Lucretius, *De Rerum Natura* (Latin, *On Paradise Lost* 9.44-45; see p. 426).

the Nature of Things) 5.222-24, 225-27: “Then

7. A “lay” is a short narrative or lyric poem, but the child, like a sailor thrown forth by the cruel the term harks back, specifically, to the late medieval *lais*—tales of magic and romance—written in ing all kinds of vital support ... and he fills the England and Northern France. Wheatley’s adjective “unequal” is ambiguous, referring perhaps given that so much trouble awaits in life.”

(with ironic modesty?) to her short poem’s inability

4 / G E O R G E C R A B B E

The year revolves, and I again explore
The simple Annals of my Parish poor;
What Infant-members in my flock appear,
What Pairs I blessed in the departed year;
5 And who, of Old or Young, or Nymphs or Swains,³
Are lost to Life, its pleasures and its pains.
No Muse I ask, before my view to bring
The humble actions of the swains I sing.—
How passed the youthful, how the old their days;
10 Who sank in sloth, and who aspired to praise;
Their tempers, manners, morals, customs, arts,
What parts they had, and how they employed their parts;
By what elated, soothed, seduced, depressed,

Full well I know—these Records give the rest.

15 Is there a place, save one the poet sees,

A land of love, of liberty and ease;

Where labor wearies not, nor cares suppress

Th' eternal flow of rustic happiness;

Where no proud mansion frowns in awful state,

20 Or keeps the sunshine from the cottage-gate;

Where young and old, intent on pleasure, throng,

And half man's life is holiday and song?

Vain search for scenes like these! no view appears;

By sighs unruffled or unstained by tears;

25 Since vice the world subdued and waters drowned,

Auburn⁴ and Eden can no more be found.

Hence good and evil mixed, but man has skill

And power to part them, when he feels the will!

Toil, care, and patience bless th' abstemious⁰ few, *not self-indulgent*

30 Fear, shame, and want the thoughtless herd pursue.

Behold the Cot!^o where thrives th' industrious swain, *cottage*

Source of his pride, his pleasure, and his gain;

Screened from the winter's wind, the sun's last ray

Smiles on the window and prolongs the day;

35 Projecting thatch the woodbine's branches stop,

And turn their blossoms to the casement's top:

All need requires is in that cot contained,

And much that taste untaught and unrestrained

Surveys delighted; there she loves to trace,

40 In one gay picture, all the royal race;

Around the walls are heroes, lovers, kings;
The print that shows them and the verse that sings.
Here the last Lewis on his throne is seen,
And there he stands imprisoned, and his Queen;⁵
45 To these the mother takes her child, and shows
What grateful duty to his God he owes;
Who gives to him a happy home, where he
Lives and enjoys his freedom with the free;
Poetic diction for “or beautiful young w o m e n
ing section of Crabbe’s p o e m argues explicitly
young m e n . ”

against Goldsmith’s views of village life.

T h e Active village invoked by Oliver Goldsmith
5. Louis XVI and Marie Antoinette of France, who
“The Deserted Village” (see p. 686). The open-
were guillotined in 1793.

T H E P A R I S H R E G I S T E R / 7 2 5

When kings and queens, dethroned, insulted, tried,
50 Are all these blessings of the poor denied.
There is King Charles, and all his Golden Rules,⁶
Who proved Misfortune’s was the best of schools:
And there his Son,⁷ who, tried by years of pain,
Proved that misfortunes may be sent in vain.
55 The Magic-mill that grinds the gran’nam’s young,⁸
Close at the side of kind Godiva hung;⁹
She, of her favorite place the pride and joy,
Of charms at once most lavish and most coy,
By wanton act the purest fame could raise,

60 And give the boldest deed the chastest praise.
There stands the stoutest Ox in England fed;¹
There fights the boldest Jew, Whitechapel bred;²
And here Saint Monday's worthy votaries live,
In all the joys that ale and skittles³ give.
65 Now lo! on Egypt's coast that hostile fleet,
By nations dreaded and by **N E L S O N** beat;⁴
And here shall soon another triumph come,
A deed of glory in a day of gloom;
Distressing glory! grievous boon of fate!
70 The proudest conquest, at the dearest rate.^s
On shelf of deal⁰ beside the cuckoo-clock, *pine or fir wood*.
Of cottage-reading rests the chosen stock;
Learning we lack, not books, but have a kind
For all our wants, a meat for every mind:
75 The tale for wonder and the joke for whim,
The half-sung sermon and the half-groaned hymn.
No need of classing; each within its place,
The feeling finger in the dark can trace;
"First from the corner, farthest from the wall,"
80 Such all the rules, and they suffice for all.
There pious works for Sunday's use are found;
Companions for that Bible newly bound;
That Bible, bought by sixpence weekly saved,
Has choicest prints by famous hands engraved;
85 Has choicest notes by many a famous head,
Such as to doubt, have rustic readers led;
Have made them stop to reason *why?* and *how?*

And, where they once agreed, to cavil now.
Oh! rather give me commentators plain,
90 Who with no deep researches vex the brain;
Who from the dark and doubtful love to run,
And hold their glimmering tapers to the sun;
6. British King Charles I was thought to have
on the citizens.

a u t h o r e d twelve popular maxims shortly before he

1. A Lancashire ox famous for its size.
was executed, in 1649.
2. The boxer Daniel Mendoza.
7. Charles II (reigned 1660 - 85) .
3. An English bowling game. "Saint Monday's ...
8. A popular contemporary print depicting the
votaries" are working people devoted to taking
Guildford Mill, comically imagined to grind old
Monday (as well as Sunday) as "holy days."
w o m e n into young ones.
4. At the Battle of the Nile (1798).
9. An eleventh-century noblewoman reputed to
5. I.e., the Battle of Trafalgar (1805), in which
have ridden naked through the streets of Coventry
Admiral Horatio Nelson died.

to dissuade her h u s b a n d from imposing heavy taxes

7 2 6 / G E O R G E C R A B B E

Who simple truth with nine-fold reasons back,
And guard the point no enemies attack.
95 Bunyan's famed Pilgrim rests that shelf upon,

A genius rare but rude was honest John;6
Not one who, early by the Muse beguiled,
Drank from her well the waters undefiled;7
Not one who slowly gained the hill sublime,8
100 Then often sipped and little at a time;
But one who dabbled in the sacred springs,
And drank them muddy, mixed with baser things.
Here to interpret dreams we read the rules,
Science our own! and never taught in schools;
105 In moles and specks we Fortune's gifts discern,
And Fate's fixed will from Nature's wanderings learn.
Of Hermit Quarll we read, in island rare,9
Far from mankind and seeming far from care;
Safe from all want, and sound in every limb;
110 Yes! there was he, and there was care with him.
Unbound and heaped, these valued tomes beside,
Lay humbler works, the pedlar's pack supplied;
Yet these, long since, have all acquired a name;
The Wandering Jew¹ has found his way to fame;
115 And fame, denied to many a labored song,
Crowns Thumb the Great, and Hickathrift the strong.
There too is he, by wizard-power upheld,
Jack,² by whose arm the giant-brood were quelled:
His shoes of swiftness on his feet he placed;
120 His coat of darkness on his loins he braced;
His sword of sharpness in his hand he took,
And off the heads of doughty⁰ giants stroke: *mighty*
Their glaring eyes beheld no mortal near;

No sound of feet alarmed the drowsy ear;
 125 No English blood their pagan sense could smell,
 But heads dropt headlong, wondering why they fell.
 These are the peasant's joy, when placed at ease,
 Half his delighted offspring mount his knees.
 To every cot^o the lord's indulgent mind *cottage*
BO Has a small space for garden-ground assigned;
 Here—till return of morn dismissed the farm—
 The careful peasant plies the sinewy arm,
 Warmed as he works, and casts his look around
 On every foot of that improving ground:

6. John Bunyan (1628—1688), English preacher
or Unparalleled Sufferings and Surprising Adven-
 and author of *Pilgrim's Progress* (1678).

tures of Philip Quarll tells the story of a Robinson

7. A phrase applied by Spenser (*Faerie Queene*
 Crusoe—like hero. First published in 1727, it was
 5.2.32) to Chaucer, and by Samuel Johnson (in the
 often adapted for children.

preface to his *Dictionary*) to Spenser and others.

1. A proverbial figure condemned to a life of eter-

8. Perhaps Milton, who contrasted his “slow-
 nal wandering as punishment for his cruelty to
 endeavoring art” to Shakespeare’s “easy numbers”
 Christ.

(“On Shakespeare”) and who stressed the idea of

2. Jack the Giant Killer; like Tom T h u m b and Tom
 temperance throughout *Paradise Lost*.

Hickathrift, a folk hero.

9. Attributed to Edward Dorrington, *The Hermit*,

THE PARISH REGISTER / 727

135 It is his own he sees; his master's eye

Peers not about, some secret fault to spy;

Nor voice severe is there, nor censure known;—

Hope, profit, pleasure,—they are all his own.

Here grow the humble cives,^o and, hard by them,

chives

140 The leek with crown globose^o and reedy stem;

globular

High climb his pulse^o in many an even row,

peas, beans

Deep strike the ponderous roots in soil below;

And herbs of potent smell and pungent taste,

Give a warm relish to the night's repast.

145 Apples and cherries grafted by his hand,

And clustered nuts for neighboring market stand.

Nor thus concludes his labor; near the cot,

The reed-fence rises round some favorite spot;

Where rich carnations, pinks with purple eyes,

150 Proud hyacinths, the least some florist's prize,

Tulips tall-stemmed and pounced auriculas^o rise.

primroses

Here on a Sunday-eve, when service ends,

Meet and rejoice a family of friends;

All speak aloud, are happy and are free,

155 And glad they seem, and gaily they agree.

What, though fastidious ears may shun the speech,
Where all are talkers, and where none can teach;
Where still the welcome and the words are old,
And the same stories are for ever told;
160 Yet theirs is joy that, bursting from the heart,
Prompts the glad tongue these nothings to impart;
That forms these tones of gladness we despise,
That lifts their steps, that sparkles in their eyes;
That talks or laughs or runs or shouts or plays,
165 And speaks in all their looks and all their ways.
Fair scenes of peace! ye might detain us long,
But vice and misery now demand the song;
And turn our view from dwellings simply neat,
To this infected row, we term our Street.
170 Here, in cabal,⁰ a disputatious crew *illegal assembly*
Each evening meet; the sot, the cheat, the shrew:
Riots are nightly heard:—the curse, the cries
Of beaten wife, perverse in her replies;
While shrieking children hold each threatening hand,
175 And sometimes life, and sometimes food demand:
Boys, in their first-stolen rags, to swear begin,
And girls, who heed not dress, are skilled in gin:
Snarers⁰ and smugglers here their gains divide; *poachers*
Ensnaring females here their victims hide;
180 And here is one, the Sibyl³ of the Row,
Who knows all secrets, or affects to know.
Seeking their fate, to her the simple run,
To her the guilty, theirs awhile to shun;

3. Name given by the Greeks and Romans to certain women who prophesied and claimed divine inspiration.

728 / GEORGE CRABBE

Mistress of worthless arts, depraved in will,
185 Her care unblest and unrepaid her skill,
Slave to the tribe, to whose command she stoops,
And poorer than the poorest maid she dupes.
Between the road-way and the walls, offence
Invades all eyes and strikes on every sense:
190 There lie, obscene, at every open door,
Heaps from the hearth and sweepings from the floor,
And day by day the mingled masses grow,
As sinks are disembogued⁰ and kennels flow. *drained*
There hungry dogs from hungry children steal;
195 There pigs and chickens quarrel for a meal;
There dropsied infants wail without redress,
And all is want and wo and wretchedness:
Yet should these boys, with bodies bronzed and bare,
High-swollen and hard, outlive that lack of care—
200 Forced on some farm, the unexerted strength,
Though loth to action, is compelled at length,
When warmed by health, as serpents in the spring,
Aside their slough of indolence they fling.
Yet, ere they go, a greater evil comes—
205 See! crowded beds in those contiguous rooms;
Beds but ill parted, by a paltry screen
Of papered lath or curtain dropt between;
Daughters and sons to yon compartments creep,

And parents here beside their children sleep:
210 Ye who have power, these thoughtless people part,
Nor let the ear be first to taint the heart.
Come! search within, nor sight nor smell regard;
The true physician walks the foulest ward.
See! on the floor, what frousy⁰ patches rest! *dirty, messy*
215 What nauseous fragments on yon fractured chest!
What downy dust beneath yon window-seat!
And round these posts that serve this bed for feet;
This bed where all those tattered garments lie,
Worn by each sex, and now perforce thrown by!
220 See! as we gaze, an infant lifts its head,
Left by neglect and burrowed in that bed;
The Mother-gossip has the love suppressed
An infant's cry once wakened in her breast;
And daily prattles, as her round she takes,
225 (With strong resentment) of the want she makes.
Whence all these woes?—From want of virtuous will,
Of honest shame, of time-improving skill;
From want of care t' employ the vacant hour,
And want of ev'ry kind but want of power.
230 Here are no wheels for either wool or flax,
But packs of cards—made up of sundry packs;
Here is no clock, nor will they turn the glass,
And see how swift th' important moments pass;
Here are no books, but ballads on the wall,
THE PARISH REGISTER / 729
235 Are some abusive, and indecent all;

Pistols are here, unpaired; with nets and hooks,
Of every kind, for rivers, ponds, and brooks;
An ample flask, that nightly rovers fill
With recent poison from the Dutchman's still;⁴
240 A box of tools, with wires of various size,
Frocks, wigs, and hats, for night or day disguise,
And bludgeons stout to gain or guard a prize.
To every house belongs a space of ground,
Of equal size, once fenced with paling⁰ round; *pointed
stakes*
245 That paling now by slothful waste destroyed,
Dead gorse and stumps of elder⁵ fill the void;
Save in the center-spot, whose walls of clay
Hide sots and striplings at their drink or play:
Within, a board,⁶ beneath a tiled retreat,
250 Allures the bubble⁰ and maintains the cheat; *dupe*
Where heavy ale in spots like varnish shows,
Where chalky tallies yet remain in rows;
Black pipes and broken jugs the seats defile,
The walls and windows, rhymes and reck'nings vile;
255 Prints of the meanest kind disgrace the door,
And cards, in curses torn, lie fragments on the floor.
Here his poor bird th' inhuman Cocker⁷ brings,
Arms his hard heel and clips his golden wings;
With spicy food th' impatient spirit feeds,
260 And shouts and curses as the battle bleeds.
Struck through the brain, deprived of both his eyes,
The vanquished bird must combat till he dies;

Must faintly peck at his victorious foe,
And reel and stagger at each feeble blow:
265 When fallen, the savage grasps his dabbled plumes,
His blood-stained arms, for other deaths assumes;
And damns the craven-fowl, that lost his stake,
And only bled and perished for his sake.
Such are our Peasants, those to whom we yield
270 Praise with relief,⁰ the fathers of the field; *welfare*
And these who take from our reluctant hands,
What Burn⁸ advises or the Bench⁰ commands. *judiciary*
Our Farmers round, well pleased with constant gain,
Like other farmers, flourish and complain.—
275 These are our groups; our Portraits next appear,
And close our Exhibition for the year.

1807

I.e., with illegally imported alcohol.

8. Richard Burn (1709-1795), English legal

Elderberry; like gorse, a shrub.

scholar who wrote *Justice of the Peace* and *Eccle-*

Probably a gambling table.

siastical Law.

The owner of fighting cocks.

730 / G E O R G E C R A B B E

From The Borough

From Letter XXII, The Poor of The Borough: Peter Grimes

165 Alas! for Peter, not a helping hand,

So was he hated, could he now command.⁹

Alone he rowed his boat, alone he cast

His nets beside, or made his anchor fast;
To hold a rope or hear a curse was none—
170 He toiled and railed, he groaned and swore alone.
Thus by himself compelled to live each day,
To wait for certain hours the tide's delay;
At the same times the same dull views to see,
The bounding marsh-bank and the blighted tree;
175 The water only, when the tides were high,
When low, the mud half-covered and half-dry;
The sun-burnt tar that blisters on the planks,
And bank-side stakes in their uneven ranks;
Heaps of entangled weeds that slowly float,
iso As the tide rolls by the impeded boat.
When tides were neap^o and, in the sultry day, *low*
Through the tall bounding mud-banks made their way,
Which on each side rose swelling, and below
The dark warm flood ran silently and slow;
185 There anchoring, Peter chose from man to hide,
There hang his head, and view the lazy tide r
In its hot slimy channel slowly glide; J
Where the small eels that left the deeper way
For the warm shore within the shallows play;
190 Where gaping mussels, left upon the mud,
Slope their slow passage to the fallen flood.
Here dull and hopeless he'd lie down and trace
How sidelong crabs had scrawled their crooked race,
Or sadly listen to the tuneless cry

195 Of fishing gull or clanging golden-eye;° *species of wild duck*

What time the sea-birds to the marsh would come, 1
And the loud bittern,1 from the bulrush0 home, > *cattail*
Gave from the salt-ditch side the bellowing boom. J
He nursed the feelings these dull scenes produce,
200 And loved to stop beside the opening sluice;
Where the small stream, confined in narrow bound,
Ran with a dull, unvaried, saddening sound;
Where all, presented to the eye or ear,
Oppressed the soul with misery, grief, and fear.
205 Besides these objects, there were places three,
Which Peter seemed with certain dread to see;
When he drew near them he would turn from each,
9. Grimes has fatally exploited three boys provided forbidden
to employ any more, by the workhouses as child laborers and
has been 1. M a r s h bird with a booming call.

T H E B O R O U G H / 7 3 1

And loudly whistle till he passed the reach.2
A change of scene to him brought no relief;
210 In town, 'twas plain, men took him for a thief.
The sailors' wives would stop him in the street,
And say, "Now, Peter, thou'st no boy to beat!"
Infants at play, when they perceived him, ran,
Warning each other—"That's the wicked man!"
215 He growled an oath, and in an angry tone
Cursed the whole place and wished to be alone.
Alone he was, the same dull scenes in view,
And still more gloomy in his sight they grew;

Though man he hated, yet employed alone
220 At bootless labor, he would swear and groan,
Cursing the shoals⁰ that glided by the spot, *schools offish*
And gulls that caught them when his arts could not.
Cold nervous tremblings shook his sturdy frame,
And strange disease—he couldn't say the name;
225 Wild were his dreams, and oft he rose in fright,
Waked by his view of horrors in the night—
Horrors that would the sternest minds amaze,
Horrors that demons might be proud to raise;
And though he felt forsaken, grieved at heart
230 To think he lived from all mankind apart, r
Yet, if a man approached, in terrors he would start. J
A winter passed since Peter saw the town,
And summer lodgers were again come down.
These, idly curious, with their glasses⁰ spied *telescopes*
235 The ships in bay as anchored for the tide—
The river's craft—the bustle of the quay—
And sea-port views, which landmen love to see.
One, up the river, had a man and boat
Seen day by day, now anchored, now afloat;
240 Fisher he seemed, yet used no net nor hook,
Of sea-fowl swimming by no heed he took, f
But on the gliding waves still fixed his lazy look. J
At certain stations he would view the stream,
As if he stood bewildered in a dream,
245 Or that⁰ some power had chained him for a time, *as if*
To feel a curse or meditate on crime.

This known, some curious, some in pity went,
And others questioned—"Wretch, dost thou repent?"
He heard, he trembled, and in fear resigned
250 His boat; new terror filled his restless mind;
Furious he grew, and up on the country ran,
And there they seized him—a distempered man.
Him we received, and to a parish-bed,³
Followed and cursed, the groaning man was led.

*

1810

2. A "reach" is the distance between two points on to the three
dead boys, a river or along its banks. The places correspond 3.
A bed in the charity hospital.

7 3 2

W I L L I A M B L A K E

1757-1827

FROM POETICAL SKETCHES

To the Muses¹

Whether on Ida's² shady brow,
Or in the chambers of the East,
The chambers of the sun, that now
From ancient melody have ceas'd;
5 Whether in Heav'n ye wander fair,
Or the green corners of the earth,
Or the blue regions of the air,
Where the melodious winds have birth;
Whether on chrystal rocks ye rove,
io Beneath the bosom of the sea
Wand'ring in many a coral grove,

Fair Nine, forsaking Poetry!
How have you left the ancient love
That bards of old enjoy'd in you!
15 The languid strings do scarcely move!
The sound is forc'd, the notes are few!

1783

Song

How sweet I roam'd from field to field,
And tasted all the summer's pride,
'Till I the prince of love beheld,
Who in the sunny beams did glide!
5 He shew'd me lilies for my hair,
And blushing roses for my brow;
He led me through his gardens fair,
Where all his golden pleasures grow.
With sweet May dews my wings were wet,
io And Phoebus fir'd my vocal rage;³
He caught me in his silken net,
And shut me in his golden cage.

1. In Greek mythology, nine sister goddesses who
and Parnassus, mountains in Greece sacred to the
presided over the arts and sciences, especially
Muses.

poetry.

3. Impassioned song. P h o e b u s is Apollo, Greek

2. M o u n t a i n in Asia Minor, distant f r o m Helicon
and R o m a n god of poetic inspiration.

SONGS OF INNOCENCE: INTRODUCTION / 733

He loves to sit and hear me sing,
Then, laughing, sports and plays with me;
15 Then stretches out my golden wing,
And mocks my loss of liberty.

1783

To the Evening Star⁴
Thou fair-hair'd angel of the evening,
Now, while the sun rests on the mountains, light
Thy bright torch of love; thy radiant crown
Put on, and smile upon our evening bed!
5 Smile on our loves; and, while thou drawest the
Blue curtains of the sky, scatter thy silver dew
On every flower that shuts its sweet eyes
In timely sleep. Let thy west wind sleep on
The lake; speak silence with thy glimmering eyes,
10 And wash the dusk with silver. Soon, full soon,
Dost thou withdraw; then the wolf rages wide,
And the lion glares thro' the dun forest:
The fleeces of our flocks are cover'd with
Thy sacred dew: protect them with thine influence.⁵

1783

FROM SONGS OF INNOCENCE

Introduction

Piping down the valleys wild

Piping songs of pleasant glee

On a cloud I saw a child,

And he laughing said to me,

5 “Pipe a song about a Lamb”;

So I piped with merry cheer.

“Piper pipe that song again”—

So I piped, he wept to hear.

“Drop thy pipe thy happy pipe

10 Sing thy songs of happy cheer”;

So I sung the same again

While he wept with joy to hear.

4. Venus, R o m a n goddess of love and beauty.

5. In astrology, the effect that heavenly bodies exert on earthly things and creatures.

7 3 4 / W I L L I A M C O W P E R

“Piper sit thee down and write

In a book that all may read”—

15 So he vanish’d from my sight.

And I pluck’d a hollow reed,

And I made a rural pen,

And I stain’d the water clear,

And I wrote my happy songs

20 Every child may joy to hear.

1789

The Lamb

Little Lamb, who made thee?

Dost thou know who made thee?

Gave thee life & bid thee feed,

By the stream & o'er the mead;

5 Gave thee clothing of delight,

Softest clothing wooly bright;

Gave thee such a tender voice,

Making all the vales rejoice!

Little Lamb who made thee?

io Dost thou know who made thee?

Little Lamb I'll tell thee,

Little Lamb I'll tell thee!

He^o is called by thy name, *Christ*

For he calls himself a Lamb:

15 He is meek & he is mild,

He became a little child:

I a child & thou a lamb,

We are called by his name.

Little Lamb God bless thee.

20 Little Lamb God bless thee.

1789

Holy Thursday [I.]

'Twas on a Holy Thursday,⁶ their innocent faces clean,

The children⁷ walking two & two, in red & blue & green,

Gray headed beadles⁸ walkd before with wands as white as snow,

Till into the high dome of Paul's they like Thames⁹ waters flow.

6. Probably Ascension Day (the Thursday forty in St. Paul's Cathedral, London.

days after Easter). 8. Ushers charged with keeping order.

7. The children of charity schools, here depicted 9. The river Thames.

SONGS OF INNOCENCE: THE LITTLE BLACK BOY / 735

5 O what a multitude they seemd, these flowers of London town!

Seated in companies they sit with radiance all their own.

The hum of multitudes was there, but multitudes of lambs,
Thousands of little boys & girls raising their innocent hands.

Now like a mighty wind they raise to heaven the voice of song,

10 Or like harmonious thunderings the seats of heaven among.

Beneath them sit the aged men, wise guardians of the poor;

Then cherish pity, lest you drive an angel from your door.

1789

The Divine Image

To Mercy, Pity, Peace, and Love,

All pray in their distress:

And to these virtues of delight

Return their thankfulness.

5 For Mercy, Pity, Peace, and Love,

Is God, our father dear:

And Mercy, Pity, Peace, and Love,

Is Man, his child and care.

For Mercy has a human heart,

10 Pity, a human face:

And Love, the human form divine,

And Peace, the human dress.
Then every man of every clime,
That prays in his distress,
15 Prays to the human form divine,
Love, Mercy, Pity, Peace.
And all must love the human form,
In heathen, Turk, or Jew.
Where Mercy, Love, & Pity dwell,
20 There God is dwelling too.

1789

The Little Black Boy

My mother bore me in the southern wild,
And I am black, but O! my soul is white;
White as an angel is the English child:
But I am black as if bereav'd of light.
7 3 6 / W I L L I A M B L A K E
5 My mother taught me underneath a tree,
And sitting down before the heat of day,
She took me on her lap and kissed me,
And pointing to the east, began to say:
“Look on the rising sun: there God does live,
10 And gives his light, and gives his heat away;
And flowers and trees and beasts and men receive
Comfort in morning, joy in the noon day.
“And we are put on earth a little space,
That we may learn to bear the beams of love,
15 And these black bodies and this sun-burnt face
Is but a cloud, and like a shady grove.

“For when our souls have learn’d the heat to bear,
The cloud will vanish; we shall hear his voice,
Saying: ‘Come out from the grove, my love & care,
20 And round my golden tent like lambs rejoice.’ ”
Thus did my mother say, and kissed me;
And thus I say to little English boy:
When I from black and he from white cloud free,
And round the tent of God like lambs we joy,
25 I’ll shade him from the heat till he can bear
To lean in joy upon our father’s knee;
And then I’ll stand and stroke his silver hair,
And be like him, and he will then love me.

1789

The Little Boy Lost

“Father, father, where are you going?

O do not walk so fast.

Speak, father, speak to your little boy

Or else I shall be lost.”

5 The night was dark, no father was there,

The child was wet with dew.

The mire was deep, & the child did weep,

And away the vapor flew.

1 7 8 9

T H E B O O K O F T H E L / 7 3 7

The Little Boy Found

The little boy lost in the lonely fen,

Led by the wand’ring light,¹

Began to cry, but God ever nigh

Appeard like his father in white.
5 He kissed the child & by the hand led
And to his mother brought,
Who in sorrow pale, thro' the lonely dale,
Her little boy weeping sought.

1789

T H E B O O K O F T H E L 2

Thel's Motto

Does the Eagle know what is in the pit?
Or wilt thou go ask the Mole?
Can Wisdom be put in a silver rod?
Or Love in a golden bowl?

l

5 The daughters of Mne Seraphim³ led round their sunny
flocks,
All but the youngest; she in paleness sought the secret air,
To fade away like morning beauty from her mortal day;
Down by the river of Adona⁴ her soft voice is heard,
And thus her gentle lamentation falls like morning dew:
10 "O life of this our spring! why fades the lotus of the water?
Why fade these children of the spring? born but to smile &
fall.
Ah! Thel is like a watry bow, and like a parting cloud,
Like a reflection in a glass, like shadows in the water,
Like dreams of infants, like a smile upon an infant's face,
15 Like the dove's voice, like transient day, like music in the
air.
Ah! gentle may I lay me down, and gentle rest my head,
And gentle sleep the sleep of death and gentle hear the voice

Of him that walketh in the garden in the evening time.”

The Lilly of the valley, breathing in the humble grass,

20 Answer'd the lovely maid and said: “I am a watry weed,

And I am very small, and love to dwell in lowly vales;⁵

So weak, the gilded butterfly scarce perches on my head;

1. A will-o'-the-wisp, said to draw travelers astray

3. Angels who guard Jehovah's throne. *Mne*: possibly holding a false light before them; the phenomenon of nocturnal light is caused by the combustion of marsh gas.

4. Probably the river Adonis in Milton's *Paradise*

of *Lost* 1.540-42, associated with rituals of fertility

2. “Thel,” like the other proper names in the

and of death and rebirth.

poem, is Blake's invention, and its meaning can

5. Valleys.

only be inferred.

738 / WILLIAM COWPER

Yet I am visited from heaven, and he that smiles on all

Walks in the valley and each morn over me spreads his hand,

25 Saying: ‘Rejoice, thou humble grass, thou new-born lilly flower,

Thou gentle maid of silent valleys and of modest brooks;

For thou shalt be clothed in light, and fed with morning manna,⁶

Till summer's heat melts thee beside the fountains and the springs

To flourish in eternal vales.’ Then why should Thei complain?

30 Why should the mistress of the vales of Har utter a sigh?"

She ceas'd & smild in tears, then sat down in her silver shrine.

Thei answerd: "O thou little virgin of the peaceful valley,

Giving to those that cannot crave, the voiceless, the o'tired;

Thy breath doth nourish the innocent lamb, he smells thy
milky

garments,

35 He crops thy flowers, while thou sittest smiling in his face,

Wiping his mild and meekin mouth⁷ from all contagious
taints.

Thy wine doth purify the golden honey; thy perfume,

Which thou dost scatter on every little blade of grass that
springs,

Revives the milked w, & tames the fire-breathing steed.

40 But Thei is like a faint cloud kindled at the rising sun:

I vanish from my pearly throne, and who shall find my place?"

"Queen of the vales," the Lilly answered, "ask the tender
cloud, And it shall tell thee why it glitters in the morning sky,

And why it scatters its bright beauty thro' the humid air.

45 Descend, O little cloud, & hover before the eyes of Thei."

The Cloud descended, and the Lilly bowd her modest head,

And went to mind her numerous charge among the verdant
grass.

2

"Oh little Cloud," the virgin said, "I charge thee tell to me,
Why thou complainest not when in one hour thou fade away:

50 Then we shall seek thee but not find; ah, Thei is like to
Thee.

I pass away, yet I complain, and no one hears my voice."

The Cloud then shew'd his golden head & his bright form
emerg'd,

Hovering and glittering on the air before the face of Thei.

“O virgin, know'st thou not our steeds drink of the golden
springs

55 Where Luvah⁸ doth renew his horses? Look'st thou on my
youth,

And fearest thou, because I vanish and am seen no more,

Nothing remains? O maid, I tell thee, when I pass away,

It is to tenfold life, to love, to peace, and raptures holy:

Unseen descending, weigh my light wings upon balmy
flowers,

60 And court the fair eyed dew, to take me to her shining tent;

The weeping virgin trembling kneels before the risen sun,

6. Food (from heaven).

8. In Blake's mythology, a sun god of Love (Love,

7. Perhaps describing a lamb's delicately wrin-

Lover, Luvah).

kl i n g m o u t h .

T H E B O O K O F T H E L / 7 3 9

Till we arise link'd in a golden band, and never part,

But walk united, bearing food to all our tender flowers.”

“Dost thou, O little Cloud? I fear that I am not like thee;

65 For I walk through the vales of Har and smell the sweetest
flowers,

But I feed not the little flowers; I hear the warbling birds,

But I feed not the warbling birds; they fly and seek their food;

But Thel delights in these no more, because I fade away,

And all shall say, ‘Without a use this shining woman liv'd,

70 Or did she only live to be at death the food of worms?’ ”

The Cloud reclind upon his airy throne and answer'd thus:
“Then if thou are the food of worms, O virgin of the skies,
How great thy use, how great thy blessing! Every thing that
lives

Lives not alone, nor for self; fear not, and I will call
75 The weak worm from its lowly bed, and thou shalt hear its
voice.

Come forth, worm of the silent valley, to thy pensive queen.”
The helpless worm arose, and sat upon the Lilly's leaf,
And the bright Cloud saild on, to find his partner in the vale.

3

Then Thel astonish'd view'd the Worm upon its dewy bed.
so “Art thou a Worm? Image of weakness, art thou but a
Worm?

I see thee like an infant wrapped in the Lilly's leaf;
Ah, weep not, little voice, thou can'st not speak, but thou
can'st
weep.

Is this a Worm? I see thee lay helpless & naked, weeping,
And none to answer, none to cherish thee with mother's
smiles.”

85 The Clod of Clay heard the Worm's voice, & raisd her
pitying head;

She bow'd over the weeping infant, and her life exhal'd
In milky fondness; then on Thel she fix'd her humble eyes.

“O beauty of the vales of Har! we live not for ourselves;
Thou seest me the meanest thing, and so I am indeed.

90 My bosom of itself is cold, and of itself is dark;
But he that loves the lowly, pours his oil upon my head,
And kisses me, and binds his nuptial bands around my breast,

And says: T h o u mother of my children, I have loved thee,
And I have given thee a crown that none can take away.’

95 But how this is, sweet maid, I know not, and I cannot
know;

I ponder, and I cannot ponder; yet I live and love.”

The daughter of beauty wip’d her pitying tears with her white
veil,

And said: “Alas! I knew not this, and therefore did I weep.

That God would love a Worm, I knew, and punish the evil foot

100 That, wilful, bruis’d its helpless form; but that he
cherish’d it With milk and oil I never knew; and therefore did I
weep,

7 4 0 / W I L L I A M C O W P E R

And I complaind in the mild air, because I fade away,

And lay me down in thy cold bed, and leave my shining lot.”

“Queen of the vales,” the matron Clay answerd, “I heard thy
sighs, 105 And all thy moans flew o’er my roof, but I have
call’d them down.

Wilt thou, O Queen, enter my house? ‘Tis given thee to enter

And to return; fear nothing, enter thy virgin feet.”

4

The eternal gates’ terrific porter lifted the northern bar:9

Thei enter’d in & saw the secrets of the land unknown.

110 She saw the couches of the dead, & where the fibrous
roots

Of every heart on earth infixes deep its restless twists:

A land of sorrows & of tears where never smile was seen.

She wanderd in the land of clouds thro’ valleys dark, listning

Dolors & lamentations; waiting oft beside a dewy grave,

115 She stood in silence, listning to the voices of the ground,

Till to her own grave plot she came, & there she sat down,
And heard this voice of sorrow breathed from the hollow pit:
“Why cannot the Ear be closed to its own destruction?
Or the glistning Eye to the poison of a smile?
120 Why are Eyelids stord with arrows ready drawn,
Where a thousand fighting men in ambush lie?
Or an Eye of gifts & graces, show’ring fruits & coined gold?
Why a Tongue impress’d with honey from every wind?
Why an Ear, a whirlpool fierce to draw creations in?
125 Why a Nostril wide inhaling terror, trembling, & affright?
Why a tender curb upon the youthful burning boy?
Why a little curtain of flesh on the bed of our desire?”
The Virgin started from her seat, & with a shriek
Fled back unhinderd till she came into the vales of Har.

T H E E N D

1789-91

FROM SONGS OF EXPERIENCE

Introduction

Hear the voice of the Bard!

Who Present, Past, & Future sees,

Whose ears have heard

9. Possibly the gate through which a soul or spirit enters the world of earthly life and death.

SONGS OF EXPERIENCE: HOLY THURSDAY [II.] / 741

The Holy Word

5 That walk'd among the ancient trees; 1

Calling the lapsed Soul

And weeping in the evening dew;

That might controll

The starry pole,

10 And fallen fallen light renew!

“O Earth O Earth return!

Arise from out the dewy grass;

Night is worn,

And the morn

15 Rises from the slumberous mass.

“Turn away no more:

Why wilt thou turn away?

The starry floor

The watry shore

20 Is giv'n thee till the break of day.”

1794

A Divine Image

Cruelty has a Human heart
And Jealousy a Human Face,
Terror, the Human Form Divine,
And Secrecy, the Human Dress.
5 The Human Dress is forged Iron,
The Human Form, a fiery Forge,
The Human Face, a Furnace seal'd,
The Human Heart, its hungry Gorge.⁰ *throat*

1790-91 1921

Holy Thursday [II.]

Is this a holy thing to see,
In a rich and fruitful land,
Babes reduced to misery,
Fed with cold and usurous hand?
5 Is that trembling cry a song?
Can it be a song of joy?

1. "And Adam and Eve heard the voice of the Lord God walking in the garden in the cool of the day"

(Genesis 3.8).

7 4 2 / W I L L I A M B L A K E

And so many children poor?
It is a land of poverty!
And their sun does never shine,
10 And their fields are bleak & bare,
And their ways are fill'd with thorns;
It is eternal winter there.
For where-e'er the sun does shine,
And where-e'er the rain does fall,

15 Babe can never hunger there,
Nor poverty the mind appall.

1794

The Clod & the Pebble

“Love seeketh not Itself to please,
Nor for itself hath any care;
But for another gives its ease,
And builds a Heaven in Hell’s despair.”

5 So sang a little Clod of Clay,
Trodden with the cattle’s feet;
But a Pebble of the brook,
Warbled out these meters meet:⁰ *appropriate*

“Love seeketh only Self to please,
10 To bind another to its delight,
Joys in another’s loss of ease,
And builds a Hell in Heaven’s despite.”

1794

The Sick Rose

O Rose, thou art sick.

The invisible worm

That flies in the night

In the howling storm

5 Has found out thy bed

Of crimson joy,

And his dark secret love

Does thy life destroy.

1 7 9 4

SONGS OF EXPERIENCE: THE TYGER / 7
43

A Poison Tree

I was angry with my friend:
I told my wrath, my wrath did end.
I was angry with my foe:
I told it not, my wrath did grow.
5 And I waterd it in fears,
Night & morning with my tears;
And I sunned it with smiles,
And with soft deceitful wiles.
And it grew both day and night,
10 Till it bore an apple bright.
And my foe beheld it shine,
And he knew that it was mine,
And into my garden stole,
When the night had veild the pole;
i5 In the morning glad I see
My foe outstretchd beneath the tree.

1794

The Tyger

Tyger! Tyger! burning bright
In the forests of the night,
What immortal hand or eye
Could frame thy fearful symmetry?
5 In what distant deeps or skies
Burnt the fire of thine eyes?
On what wings dare he aspire?

What the hand dare seize the fire?
And what shoulder, & what art,
io Could twist the sinews of thy heart?
And when thy heart began to beat,
What dread hand? & what dread feet?
What the hammer? what the chain?
In what furnace was thy brain?
15 What the anvil? what dread grasp
Dare its deadly terrors clasp?
When the stars threw down their spears,
And water'd heaven with their tears,
Did he smile his work to see?
20 Did he who made the Lamb make thee?

7 4 4 / **W I L L I A M W o R D S w O r T H**

Tyger! Tyger! burning bright
In the forests of the night,
What immortal hand or eye
Dare frame thy fearful symmetry?

1794

Ah Sun-flower
Ah Sun-flower! weary of time,
Who countest the steps of the Sun,
Seeking after that sweet golden clime
Where the traveller's journey is done;
5 Where the Youth pined away with desire,
And the pale Virgin shrouded in snow,
Arise from their graves and aspire,
Where my Sun-flower wishes to go.

1794

The Garden of Love

I went to the Garden of Love,
And saw what I never had seen:
A Chapel was built in the midst,
Where I used to play on the green.
5 And the gates of this Chapel were shut,
And “Thou shalt not” writ over the door;
So I turn’d to the Garden of Love,
That so many sweet flowers bore,
And I saw it was filled with graves,
io And tomb-stones where flowers should be:
And Priests in black gowns were walking their rounds,
And binding with briars my joys & desires.

1794

London

I wander thro’ each charter’d street,
Near where the charter’d Thames does flow,
And mark in every face I meet
Marks of weakness, marks of woe.

2. Mapped out, legally defined, constricted.

**MOCKON, MOCKON, VOLTAIRE, ROUS
SEAU / 7 4 5**

5 In every cry of every man,
In every Infant’s cry of fear,
In every voice, in every ban,³
The mind-forg’d manacles I hear.
How the Chimney-sweeper’s cry

10 Every blackning Church appalls;⁰ *horrifies; casts a pall
over*

And the hapless Soldier's sigh

Runs in blood down Palace walls.

But most thro' midnight streets I hear

How the youthful Harlot's curse

15 Blasts the new-born Infant's tear,

And blights with plagues the Marriage hearse.

1794

FROM SONGS AND BALLADS

I Asked a Thief

I asked a thief to steal me a peach,

He turned up his eyes;

I ask'd a lithe lady to lie her down,

Holy & meek she cries.

5 As soon as I went

An angel came.

He wink'd at the thief

And smild at the dame—

And without one word said

io Had a peach from the tree

And still as a maid

Enjoy'd the lady.

1796 1863

Mock on, Mock on, Voltaire, Rousseau

Mock on, Mock on, Voltaire, Rousseau;⁴

Mock on, Mock on, 'tis all in vain.

You throw the sand against the wind,

And the wind blows it back again.

3. A law or notice commanding or forbidding; a “Enlightenment”; critics of the established order, published penalty. here representing thinkers who destroy without

4. Leaders of the pre-Revolutionary French creating.

7 4 6 / W I L L I A M W O R D S W O R T H

5 And every sand becomes a Gem

Reflected in the beams divine;

Blown back, they blind the mocking Eye,

But still in Israel’s paths they shine.

The Atoms of Democritus

10 And Newton’s Particles of light⁵

Are sands upon the Red sea shore,⁶

Where Israel’s tents do shine so bright.

1800-08 1863

Eternity

He who binds to himself a joy

Does the winged life destroy

But he who kisses the joy as it flies

Lives in eternity’s sun rise.

1800-08 1863

A Question Answered

What is it men in women do require?

The lineaments of Gratified Desire.

What is it women do in men require?

The lineaments of Gratified Desire.

1800-08 1863

FROM MILTON

And Did Those Feet

And did those feet in ancient time
Walk upon England's mountains green?

And was the holy Lamb of God
On England's pleasant pastures seen?

5 And did the Countenance Divine
Shine forth upon our clouded hills?

And was Jerusalem builded here,
Among these dark Satanic Mills?7

5. The Greek philosopher Democritus (fifth cen-
Egyptians (Exodus 14).

tury **B.C.E**) and the English physicist Sir Isaac New-

7. The primary meaning is “millstone”—two heavy
ton (1642—1727) are represented as nonsensically
cylindrical stones that grind grain into meal
reducing nature to inanimate matter.

between them; “factory” is an extended meaning.

6. Where God delivered the Israelites from the

GREENGROWTHERASHES / 747

Bring me my Bow of burning gold:

10 Bring me my Arrows of desire:

Bring me my Spear: O clouds unfold!

Bring me my Chariot of fire!

I will not cease from Mental Fight,

Nor shall my Sword sleep in my hand,

15 Till we have built Jerusalem

In England's green & pleasant Land.

1804-10 1804-10

FROM JERUSALEM

England! Awake! Awake! Awake!
England! awake! awake! awake!
Jerusalem thy Sister calls!
Why wilt thou sleep the sleep of death?
And close her from thy ancient walls.
5 Thy hills & valleys felt her feet
Gently upon their bosoms move:
Thy gates beheld sweet Zion's ways;
Then was a time of joy and love.
And now the time returns again:
10 Our souls exult & London's towers,
Receive the Lamb of God to dwell
In England's green & pleasant bowers.

1804-09 1818

R O B E R T B U R N S

1759-1796

Green Grow the Rashes

Green grow the rashes, O; tall grasses or rushes

Green grow the rashes, O;

The sweetest hours that e'er I spend,

Are spent among the lasses, O!

5 There's nought but care on ev'ry han',

In ev'ry hour that passes, O:

What signifies the life o' man,

An'° 'twere na for the lasses, O. *if*

7 4 8 / R O B E R T B U R N S

Green grow the rashes, O; ...

10 The warly° race may riches chase, *worldly*

An' riches still may fly them, O;
An' though at last they catch them fast,
Their hearts can ne'er enjoy them, O.

Green grow the rashes, O; ...

15 But gie me a canny⁰ hour at e'en,
pleasant

My arms about my Dearie, O;
An' warly cares, an' warly men,
May a' gae tapsalteerie,⁰ O!

topsy-turvy

Green grow the rashes, O; ...

20 For you sae douce,⁰ ye sneer at this, *prudent*

Ye're nought but senseless asses, O:

The wisest man¹ the warl' saw,
He dearly loved the lasses, O.

Green grow the rashes, O; ...

25 Auld Nature swears, the lovely Dears

Her noblest work she classes, O:

Her prentice han' she tried on man,

An' then she made the lasses, O.

Green grow the rashes, O; ...

1784 1787

To a Mouse

*On Turning Her up in Her Nest with the Plough, November,
1785*

Wee, sleeket,⁰ cow'rin, tim'rous beastie,
sleek

O, what a panic's in thy breastie!

Thou need na start awa sae hasty,

Wi' bickering⁰ brattle!⁰

hurried / scamper

I wad be laith^o to rin an' chase thee,

loath

Wi' murd'ring pattle!⁰

plowstajf ("paddle")

I'm truly sorry Man's dominion

Has broken Nature's social union,

An' justifies that ill opinion,

Which makes thee startle,

1. Solomon, king of Israel (tenth century **B.C.E.**), who had many wives and was proverbial for his wisdom.

T o A M O U S E / 7 4 9

At me, thy poor, earth-born companion,

An' fellow-mortal!

I doubt na, whiles,⁰ but thou may thieve; *sometimes*

What then? poor beastie, thou maun^o live! *must*

15 A daimen-icker in a thrave²

'S a sma' request:

I'll get a blessin wi' the lave,^o *rest*

An' never miss't!

Thy wee bit housie, too, in ruin!

20 Its silly⁰ wa's the win's are strewin! *frail*

An' naething, now, to big^o a new ane, *build*

O' foggage⁰ green! *mosses*

An' bleak December's winds ensuin,

Baith snell^o an' keen! *bitter*

25 Thou saw the fields laid bare and wast,^o *waste*
An' weary winter comin fast,
An' cozie here, beneath the blast,
Thou thought to dwell,
Till crash! the cruel coulter⁰ past *plowshare*
30 Out thro' thy cell.
That wee bit heap o' leaves an' stibble⁰ *stubble*
Has cost thee mony a weary nibble!
Now thou's turned out, for a' thy trouble,
But⁰ house **Or** hald,^o *without / home ("hold")*
35 To thole⁰ the winter's sleety dribble, *endure*
An' cranreuch⁰ cauld! *hoarfrost*
But, Mousie, thou art no thy-lane,³
In proving foresight may be vain:
The best laid schemes o' mice an' men
40 Gang⁰ aft a-gley.^o *go I astray*
An' lea'e us nought but grief an' pain,
For promised joy!
Still, thou art blest, compared wi' me!
The present only toucheth thee:
45 But och! I backward cast my e'e,
On prospects drear!
An' forward, tho' I canna see,
i
I guess an' fear!
1785
1786

2. A rare ear of corn in a stook/stack of (generally 3. *No thy-lane*: not alone, twelve) sheaves.

750 / R O B E R T B U R N S

Holy Willie's⁴ Prayer

0 Thou that in the heavens does dwell!

Wha, as it pleases best thysel,

Sends ane to heaven and ten to hell,

A' for thy glory!

5 And no for ony guid or ill

They've done before thee.

1 bless and praise thy matchless might,

Whan thousands thou has left in night,

That I am here before thy sight,

10 For gifts and grace

A burning an' a shining light

To a' this place.

What was I, or my generation,

That I should get such exaltation?

15 I, wha deserv'd most just damnation,

For broken laws

Sax thousand years ere my creation,

Thro' Adam's cause!

When from my mother's womb I fell,

20 Thou might hae plunged me deep in hell,

To gnash my gooms, and weep and wail,

In burning lakes,

Where damned devils roar and yell

Chained to their stakes.

25 Yet I am here, a chosen sample,
To show thy grace is great and ample:
I'm here, a pillar o' thy temple,
Strong as a rock,
A guide, a ruler, and example
30 To a' thy flock.
O Lord thou kens what zeal I bear,
When drinkers drink, and swearers swear,
And singin' there, and dancin' here,
Wi' great an' sma';
35 For I am keepet by thy fear,
Free frae them a'.

But yet—O Lord—confess I must—
At times I'm fashed⁰ wi' fleshy lust; *troubled*

4. William Fisher, an elder in the church at
Mauchline, the seat of Burns's farm. He habitually
pected of stealing church funds.

censured other men's behavior and doctrine, but

HOLY W I L L I E ' S P R A Y E R / 7 5 1

And sometimes too, in warldly trust

40 Vile Self gets in;

But thou remembers we are dust,

Defiled wi' sin.

O Lord—yestreen—^o thou kens—wi' Meg-
last night

Thy pardon I sincerely beg!

O may't ne'er be a living plague,

To my dishonor!
And I'll ne'er lift a lawless leg
Again upon her.
Besides, I farther maun" allow,
must
Wi' Lizzie's lass, three times—I trow°—
believe
But Lord, that Friday I was fou°
full (of liquor)
When I cam near her;
Or else, thou kens, thy servant true
Wad never steer0 her.
touch ("stir")
Maybe thou lets this fleshly thorn
Buffet thy servant e'en and morn,
Lest he o'er high and proud should turn,
That he's sae gifted;
If sae, thy hand maun e'en be borne
Until thou lift it.
Lord bless thy Chosen in this place,
For here thou hast a chosen race;
But God, confound their stubborn face,
And blast their name,
65 Wha bring thy elders to disgrace
And open shame.
Lord mind Gaun Hamilton's5 deserts!
He drinks, and swears, and plays at cartes,
Yet has sae mony taking arts

70 Wi' Great an' Sma',
Frae God's ain priest the people's hearts
He steals awa'.

An when we chastened him therefore,
Thou kens how he bred sic a splore0 *row*

75 As set the warld in a roar

O' laughin at us;

Curse thou his basket and his store,

Kail° and potatoes. *cabbage*

5. Gavin Hamilton, a convivial lawyer friend of Burns, was cleared by the Presbytery of Ayr (line 80) with Burns. Accused of Sabbath-breaking and other the help of his counsel, Robert Aiken (line 85).

offenses by the elders of Mauchline Church, he

752 / R O B E R T B U R N S

Lord hear my earnest cry and prayer

so Against that Presbytery of Ayr!

Thy strong right hand, Lord, make it bare

Upon their heads!

Lord visit them, and dinna spare,

For their misdeeds!

85 O Lord my God, that glib-tongued Aiken!

My very heart and flesh are quaking

To think how I sat, sweating, shaking,

And pissed wi' dread,

While Auld, wi' hingin0 lips gaed sneaking *hanging*

90 And hid his head!

Lord, in thy day o' vengeance try him!

Lord visit him that did employ him!

And pass not in thy mercy by them,
Nor hear their prayer;
95 But for thy people's sake destroy them,
And dinna spare!
But Lord, remember me and mine
Wi' mercies temporal and divine!
That I for grace and gear⁰ may shine *wealth*
100 Excelled by nane!
And a' the glory shall be thine!

A M E N , A M E N !

1785 1808

Of A' the Airts⁶
Of a' the airts the wind can blaw,
I dearly like the west,
For there the bonie lassie lives,
The lassie I lo'e best:
5 There's wild woods grow, and rivers row," *flow*
And mony a hill between;
But day and night my fancy's flight
Is ever wi' my Jean.
I see her in the dewy flowers,
io I see her sweet and fair;
I hear her in the tunefu' birds,
I hear her charm the air:
There's not a bonie flower that springs
By fountain, shaw,^o or green, *wood*.

6. Written from Dumfriesshire to Burns's wife, Jean Armour, in Ayrshire, the county to the west. *Airts*: quarters.

A U L D L A N G S Y N E / 7 5 3

**15 There's not a bonie bird that sings,
But minds me o' my Jean.**

1788 1790

*Auld Lang Syne*⁷

**Should auld acquaintance be forgot
And never brought to mind?**

**Should auld acquaintance be forgot,
And auld lang syne!**

5 For auld lang syne, my jo, ° joy

For auld lang syne,

We'll tak a cup o' kindness yet

For auld lang syne.

And surely ye'll be° your pint stowp!° pay for / pint cup

10 And surely I'll be mine!

**And we'll tak a cup o' kindness yet,
For auld lang syne.**

For auld lang syne, my jo, ...

We twa hae run about the braes⁰ slopes

15 And pou'd the gowans⁰ fine; daisies

**But we've wander'd many a weary fitt,
Sin auld lang syne.**

For auld lang syne, my jo, ...

We twa hae paidl'd in the burn⁰ stream

20 Frae morning sun till dine;° dinner, noon

**But seas between us braid⁰ hae roar'd, broad
Sin auld lang syne.**

For auld lang syne, my jo, ...

And there's a hand, my trusty fiere!^o *friend*

25 And gie's a hand o' thine!

And we'll tak a right gude-willie-waught,⁸

For auld lang syne

For auld lang syne, my jo, ...

1788 1796

7. Old long since (Scottish), the days of long ago.

8. Good-will swig.

7 5 4 / R O B E R T B U R N S

John Anderson My Jo

John Anderson my jo,^o John, *joy*

When we were first acquent;

Your locks were like the raven;

Your bonie brow was brent;⁹

5 But now your brow is beld, John,

Your locks are like the snow;

But blessings on your frosty pow,^o *head*.

John Anderson my jo.

John Anderson my jo, John,

10 We clamb^o the hill thegither; *climbed*

And mony a canty⁰ day, John, *merry*

We've had wi' ane anither:

Now we maun totter down, John,

And hand in hand we'll go,

15 And sleep thegither at the foot,

John Anderson my jo.

1789 1790

Tam O'Shanter

Of Brownies and of Bogillies full is this Buke.'

— G a v i n Douglas

**When chapman⁰ billies⁰ leave the street, *peddler /fellows*
And drouthy⁰ neebors neebors meet, *thirsty*
As market-days are wearing late,
An' folk begin to tak the gate;⁰ *road*
5 While we sit bousing at the nappy,⁰ *ale*
An' getting fou^o and unco^o happy, *full/very*
We think na on the lang Scots miles,
The mosses,⁰ waters, slaps,⁰ and styles, *bogs /gaps in walls*
That lie between us and our hame,
io Where sits our sulky sullen dame,
Gathering her brows like gathering storm,
Nursing her wrath to keep it warm.
This truth fand^o honest Tam o' Shanter, *found*
As he frae Ayr ae night did canter,
15 (Auld Ayr, wham ne'er a town surpasses
For honest men and bonie lasses).**

**O Tam! hadst thou but been sae wise,
As ta'en thy ain wife Kate's advice!**

**She tauld thee weel thou was a skellum,⁰ *good-for-nothing*
20 A blethering,⁰ blustering, drunken blellum,⁰ *babbling /*
windbag 9. Straight, steep; not rounding off into a bald**

Aeneid, translated into Scots dialect by Gavin
pate.

Douglas (1474-1522). Brownies are friendly gob-
1. From the prologue to the sixth book of Virgil's
lins; bogles, unfriendly.

TAM O ' S H A N T E R / 7 5 5

**That frae November till October,
Ae market-day thou was nae sober;**

That ilka^o melder,⁰ wi' the miller
every / meal-grinding

Thou sat as lang as thou had siller;⁰
silver

That every naig^o was ca'd^o a shoe on,
horse / driven

**The smith and thee gat roaring fou on;
That at the Lord's house, even on Sunday,
Thou drank wi' Kirkton Jean¹ till Monday.**

**She prophesied that, late or soon,
Thou would be found deep drowned in Doon;
Or caught wi' warlocks⁰ in the mirk,^o**
wizards / dark

By Alloway's auld haunted kirk.²
Ah, gentle dames! it gars⁰ me greet⁰
ikes/weep

**To think how mony counsels sweet,
How mony lengthened sage advices,
The husband frae the wife despises!
But to our tale: Ae market night,
Tam had got planted unco right;
Fast by an ingle,⁰ bleezing⁰ finely,**
fireplace / blazing

Wi' reaming⁰ swats,⁰ that drank divinely;
foaming / ale

And at his elbow, Souter⁰ Johnny,

cobbler

His ancient, trusty, drouthy crony;

Tam lo'ed him like a vera brither;

They had been fou for weeks thegither.

The night drave on wi' sangs and clatter;⁰

talk

And aye the ale was growing better:

The landlady and Tam grew gracious,

Wi' favors, secret, sweet, and precious:

The souter tauld his queerest stories;

The landlord's laugh was ready chorus:

The storm without might rair^o and rustle,

Tam did na mind the storm a whistle.

Care, mad to see a man sae happy,

E'en drowned himsel amang the nappy;

As bees flee hame wi' lades⁰ o' treasure,

loads

The minutes winged their way wi' pleasure;

Kings may be blest, but Tam was glorious,

O'er a' the ills o' life victorious!

But pleasures are like poppies spread,

You seize the flow'r, its bloom is shed;

Or like the snow falls in the river,

A moment white—then melts for ever;

Or like the borealis race,

That flit ere you can point their place;

Or like the rainbow's lovely form

Evanishing amid the storm—

Nae man can tether time nor tide;

The hour approaches Tam maun^o ride;

must

That hour, o' night's black arch the key-stane,^o

keystone

That dreary hour, he mounts his beast in;

1. Mistress of a tavern.

2. The ruins of a church near Burns's home, the object of much superstitious dread.

756 / R O B E R T B U R N S

And sic a night he taks the road in,

As ne'er poor sinner was abroad in.

The wind blew as 'twad^o blawn its last; *it would have*

The rattling show'rs rose on the blast;

75 The speedy gleams the darkness swallowed;

Loud, deep, and lang, the thunder bellowed:

That night, a child might understand,

The Deil^o had business on his hand. *Devil*

Weel mounted on his gray mare, Meg,

80 A better never lifted leg,

Tam skelpit^o on thro' dub^o and mire, *hurried / puddle*

Despising wind, and rain, and fire;

Whiles^o holding fast his guid blue bonnet; *sometimes*

Whiles crooning^o o'er some auld Scots sonnet;^o

humming/song

85 Whiles glow'ring^o round wi' prudent cares, *staring*

Lest bogles catch him unawares.

Kirk-Alloway was drawing nigh,

Whare ghaists⁰ and houlets⁰ nightly cry. *ghosts / owls*
By this time he was cross the ford,
90 Where in the snaw the chapman smoored;⁰ *smothered*
And past the birks^o and meikle⁰ stane,^o *birches / great / stone*
Where drunken Charlie brak's neck-bane;
And thro' the whins,⁰ and by the cairn,
furze
Where hunters fand the murdered bairn;⁰
child
95 And near the thorn, aboon⁰ the well,
above
Where Mungo's mither hanged hersel.
Before him Doon pours all his floods;
The doubling storm roars thro' the woods;
The lightnings flash from pole to pole;
100 Near and more near the thunders roll:
When, glimmering thro' the groaning trees,
Kirk-Alloway seemed in a bleeze;⁰
blaze
Thro' ilka^o bore⁰ the beams were glancing;
every / chink
And loud resounded mirth and dancing.
105 Inspiring bold John Barleycorn!
What dangers thou canst make us scorn!
Wi' tippenny,⁰ we fear nae evil;
twopenny ale
Wi' usquebae⁰ we'll face the devil!
whisky

The swats⁰ sae reamed⁰ in Tammie's noddle
ale / foamed

110 Fair play, he cared na deils a boddle.⁰
farthing

But Maggie stood right sair^o astonished,
sorely

Till, by the heel and hand admonished,
She ventured forward on the light;
And, vow! Tam saw an unco sight!

115 Warlocks and witches in a dance;

Nae cotillon⁰ brent⁰ new frae France, *dance / brand*

But hornpipes, jigs, strathspeys,⁰ and reels, *Highland dances*
Put life and mettle in their heels.

A winnock-bunker⁰ in the east, *window seat*

120 There sat auld Nick, in shape o' beast;

A towzie⁰ tyke,^o black, grim, and large! *tousled/dog*

To gie them music was his charge:

TAM O' SHANTER / 757

He screwed the pipes and gart⁰ them skirl,⁰ *made / shrill*

Till roof and rafters a' did dirl.⁰ *ring*

125 Coffins stood round like open presses,⁰ *closets*

That shawed the dead in their last dresses;

And by some devilish cantraip⁰ slight⁰ *weird / trick*

Each in its cauld hand held a light,

By which heroic Tam was able

130 To note upon the haly table

A murderer's banes in gibbet-airns;⁰ *irons*

Twa span-lang,' wee, unchristened bairns;⁰ *children*

A thief new-cutted frae a rape,⁰ *rope*
Wi' his last gasp his gab⁰ did gape; *mouth*
135 Five tomahawks, wi' blude red-rusted;
Five scymitars, wi' murder crusted;
A garter, which a babe had strangled;
A knife, a father's throat had mangled,
Whom his ain son o' life bereft,
140 The gray hairs yet stack to the heft;
Wi' mair of horrible and awfu',
Which even to name wad be unlawfu'.
As Tammie glowred,⁰ amazed, and curious, *stared*
The mirth and fun grew fast and furious:
145 The piper loud and louder blew;
The dancers quick and quicker flew;
They reeled, they set, they crossed, they
cleekit,⁰ *joined hands*
Till ilka carlin⁰ swat⁰ and reekit,⁰ *old woman / sweated / steamed*
And coost⁰ her duddies⁰ to the wark, *cast off / dress*
iso And linkit⁰ at it in her sark!⁰ *tripped nimbly / shift*
Now Tam, O Tam! had thae been queans,⁰ *girls*
A' plump and strapping in their teens;
Their sarks, instead o' creeshie⁰ flannen,⁰ *greasy/flannel*
Been snaw-white seventeen hunder linen!⁴
155 Thir⁰ breeks o' mine, my only pair, *these*
That ance were plush, o' gude blue hair,
I wad hae gi'en them off my hurdies,⁰ *buttocks*
For ae blink o' the bonie burdies!⁰ *maidens*

But wither'd beldams,0 auld and droll, *old women*
i6o Rigwoodie0 hags wad spean0 a foal, *scrawny / wean*
Louping0 and flinging on a crummock,0 *leaping / staff*
I wonder didna turn thy stomach.

But Tam kend what was what fu' brawlie,0 *well*
There was ae winsome wench and wawlie0 *buxom*
165 That night enlisted in the core,0 *company*

(Lang after kent0 on Carrick shore *known*

For mony a beast to dead she shot,

And perished mony a bonie boat,

And shook baith meikle0 corn and bear,0 *much / barley*

170 And kept the country-side in fear).

Her cutty0 sark, o' Paisley harn,0 *short / coarse cloth*

3. Two spans long (a span is the distance from 4. Fine linen, with seventeen hundred threads to outstretched thumb to pinkie). a width.

758 / R O B E R T B U R N S

That while a lassie she had worn,

In longitude tho' sorely scanty,

It was her best, and she was vauntie.0

proud

Ah! little kend thy reverend grannie

That sark she coft0 for her wee Nannie

bought

Wi' twa pund Scots ('twas a' her riches)

Wad ever graced a dance of witches!

But here my Muse her wing maun cour;0

stoop

Sic flights are far beyond her pow'r—

To sing how Nannie lap0 and flang,
leaped
(A souple jade she was, and Strang),
And how Tam stood, like ane bewitched,
And thought his very een° enriched;
eyes
Even Satan glowr'd, and fided0 fu' fain,0
/ happy
And hotched0 and blew wi' might and main:
hitched (himself)
Till first ae caper, syne0 anither,
then
Tam tint0 his reason a' thegither,
lost
And roars out, "Weel done, Cutty-sark!"
And in an instant all was dark!
And scarcely had he Maggie rallied,
When out the hellish legion sallied.
As bees bizz out wi' angry fyke,0
fuss
When plundering herds0 assail their byke;0
shepherds / hive
As open0 pussie's0 mortal foes,
bay / the hare's
When pop! she starts before their nose;
As eager runs the market-crowd,
When "Catch the thief!" resounds aloud;
So Maggie runs; the witches follow,

Wi' mony an eldritch⁰ skriech and hollow.

unearthly

Ah, Tam! ah, Tam! thou'11 get thy fairin!⁰

punishment

In hell they'll roast thee like a herrin!

In vain thy Kate awaits thy comin!

Kate soon will be a woefu' woman!

Now do thy speedy utmost, Meg,

And win the key-stane o' the brig;⁰

bridge

There at them thou thy tail may toss,

A running stream they dare na cross.

But ere the key-stane she could make,

The fient a tail she had to shake!⁵

For Nannie, far before the rest,

Hard upon noble Maggie prest,

And flew at Tam wi' furious ettle;⁰

purpose

But little wist she Maggie's mettle.

Ae spring brought off her master hale,⁰

whole

But left behind her ain gray tail:

The carlin claught⁰ her by the rump,

clutched

And left poor Maggie scarce a stump.

Now, wha this tale o' truth shall read,

Each man and mother's son, take heed:

Whene'er to drink you are inclined,

Or cutty-sarks run in your mind,
5. I.e., she had no tail left. *Fient a*: devil-a.

A R E D R E D R O S E / 7 5 9

Think! ye may buy the joys o'er dear;
Remember Tam o' Shanter's mare.

1790 1791

The Banks o' Doon

Ye flowery banks o' bonie Doon,
How can ye blume sae fair;
How can ye chant, ye little birds,
And I sae fu' o' care!

5 Thou'll break my heart, thou bonie bird

That sings upon the bough;

Thou minds me o' the happy days

When my fause⁰ luv^e was true. *false*

Thou'll break my heart, thou bonie bird,

10 That sings beside thy mate;

For sae I sat, and sae I sang,

And wist⁰ na o' my fate. *knew*

Aft hae I rov'd by bonie Doon

To see the wood-bine twine,

15 And ilka⁰ bird sang o' its love, *every*

And sae did I o' mine.

Wi' lightsome heart I pu'd a rose

Frae aff its thorny tree,

And my fause luv^er staw⁰ the rose, *stole*

20 But left the thorn wi' me.

Wi' lightsome heart I pu'd a rose,

Upon a morn[^]in June:
And sae I flourish'd on the morn,
And sae was pu'd or noon!

1791 1792

A Red Red Rose
O my luv'e's like a red, red rose,
That's newly sprung in June;
O my luv'e's like the melodie
That's sweetly played in tune.

5 As fair art thou, my bonie lass,
So deep in luv'e am I;

760 / JOANNABAILLIE

And I will luv'e thee still, my dear,
Till a' the seas gang dry.
Till a' the seas gang dry, my dear,
10 And the rocks melt wi' the sun:
O I will love thee still, my dear,
While the sands o' life shall run.
And fare thee weel, my only luv'e!
And fare thee weel a while!
And I will come again, my luv'e,
Tho' it were ten thousand mile!

1796

Oh Wert Thou in the Cauld Blast
Oh wert thou in the cauld blast,
On yonder lea, on yonder lea;
My plaidie to the angry airt,⁰ *quarter (of the -wind)*
I'd shelter thee, I'd shelter thee:

5 Or did misfortune's bitter storms
Around thee blow, around thee blow,
Thy bield⁰ should be my bosom, *shelter*
To share it a', to share it a'.
Or were I in the wildest waste,
io Sae black and bare, sae black and bare,
The desart were a paradise,
If thou wert there, if thou wert there.
Or were I monarch o' the globe,
Wi' thee to reign, wi' thee to reign;
15 The brightest jewel in my crown,
Wad be my queen, wad be my queen.

1796 1800

J O A N N A B A I L L I E

1762-1851

A Mother to Her Waking Infant

Now in thy dazzling⁰ half-oped eye, *dazed*
Thy curled nose and lip awry,
Thy up-hoist arms and noddling⁰ head, *nodding*
And little chin with crystal spread,
5 Poor helpless thing! what do I see,
That I should sing of thee?

A M O T H E R T O H E R W A K I N G I N F A N T / 7 6

1

From thy poor tongue no accents come,
Which can but rub thy toothless gum;
Small understanding boasts thy face,
10 Thy shapeless limbs nor step nor grace;

A few short words thy feats may tell,
And yet I love thee well.

When sudden wakes the bitter shriek,
And redder swells thy little cheek;

15 When rattled keys thy woes beguile,
And through the wet eye gleams the smile,
Still for thy weakly self is spent
Thy little silly plaint.

But when thy friends are in distress,
20 Thou'lt laugh and chuckle ne'er the less;
Nor e'en with sympathy be smitten,
Though all are sad but thee and kitten;
Yet little varlet⁰ that thou art, *rascal*
Thou twitchest at the heart.

25 Thy rosy cheek so soft and warm;
Thy pinky hand and dimpled arm;
Thy silken locks that scanty peep,
With gold-tipped ends, where circles deep
Around thy neck in harmless grace
30 So soft and sleekly hold their place,
Might harder hearts with kindness fill,
And gain our right good will.

Each passing clown bestows his blessing,
Thy mouth is worn with old wives' kissing:
35 E'en lighter looks the gloomy eye
Of surly sense, when thou art by;
And yet I think whoe'er they be,
They love thee not like me.

Perhaps when time shall add a few
40 Short years to thee, thou'lt love me too.
Then wilt thou through life's weary way
Become my sure and cheering stay:
Wilt care for me, and be my hold,
When I am weak and old.
45 Thou'lt listen to my lengthened tale,
And pity me when I am frail—
But see, the sweepy spinning fly
Upon the window takes thine eye.
Go to thy little senseless play—
50 Thou dost not heed my lay.0 *song*

1 7 9 0

7 6 2 / J O A N N A B A I L L I E

Song: Woo'd and Married and A'

The bride she is winsome and bonny,

Her hair it is snooded0 sae sleek,

bound up with a ribbon

And faithfu' and kind is her Johnny,

Yet fast fa' the tears on her cheek.

New pearlins0 are cause of her sorrow,

lace trimmings

New pearlins and plenishing0 too,

furnishings

The bride that has a' to borrow,

Has e'en right mickle0 ado,

much

Woo'd and married and a'!

Woo'd and married and a'!

Is na' she very weel aff

To be woo'd and married at a'?

Her mither then hastily spak,

“The lassie is glaikit wi' pride;

foolish

In my pouch I had never a plack

farthing

On the day when I was a bride.

E'en tak' to your wheel, and be clever,

And draw out your thread in the sun;

The gear that is gifted, it never

goods, wealth / given

Will last like the gear that is won.

earned

Woo'd and married and a'!

Wi' havins and toucher sae sma',

possessions / dowry

I think ye are very weel aff,

To be woo'd and married at a'!”

25 “Toot, toot!” quo' her gray-headed faither,

“She's less o' a bride than a bairn;

child

She's ta'en like a colt frae the heather,

colt

Wi' sense and discretion to learn.

Half husband, I trow, and half daddy,

30 As humor inconstantly leans,

The chieP maun0 be patient and steady,

man / must

That yokes wi' a mate in her teens.

A kerchief sae douce0 and sae neat, *sedate; respectable*

O'er her locks that the winds used to blaw!

35 I'm baith like to laugh and to greet,0

weep

When I think o' her married at a'!"

Then out spak' the wily bridegroom;

Weel waled0 were his wordies, I ween—

chosen

"I'm rich, though my coffer be toom,0

empty

Wi' the blinks o' your bonny blue een.0

eyes

I'm prouder o' thee by my side,

Though thy ruffles or ribbons be few,

Than if Kate o' the Croft were my bride,

Wi' purfles0 and pearlins enow.

embroidered trimmings

Dear and dearest of ony!

EXPOSTULATION AND REPLY / 763

Ye're woo d and buikit1 and a'!"

And do ye think scorn o' your Johnny,

And grieve to be married at a'?"

She turn'd, and she blush'd, and she smiled,

And she looket sae bashfully down;

The pride o' her heart was beguiled,

And she played wi' the sleeves o' her gown;
She twirled the tag o' her lace,
And she nippet her boddice sae blue,
Syne0 blinket sae sweet in his face, *then*
And aff like a maukin0 she flew. *hare*
Woo'd and married and a'!
Wi' Johnny to roose0 her and a'! *praise*
She thinks hersel very weel aff,
To be woo'd and married at a'!

1822

W I L L I A M W O R D S W O R T H

1770-1850

Expostulation and Reply1

“Why, William, on that old gray stone,
Thus for the length of half a day,
Why, William, sit you thus alone,
And dream your time away?
5 “Where are your books?—that light bequeathed
To Beings else forlorn and blind!
Up! up! and drink the spirit breathed
From dead men to their kind.
“You look round on your Mother Earth,
10 As if she for no purpose bore you;
As if you were her first-born birth,
And none had lived before you!”
One morning thus, by Esthwaite lake,
When life was sweet, I knew not why,
15 To me my good friend Matthew spake,

And thus I made reply.

1. “Booked,” i.e., officially registered as engaged friends, who advance somewhat exaggerated arguments about the relative merits of nature and of

1. With the following, companion poem, “Expos-

books.

tulation and Reply” forms a dialogue between two

764 / WILLIAM WORDSWORTH

“The eye—it cannot choose but see;

We cannot bid the ear be still;

Our bodies feel, where'er they be,

20 Against or with our will.

“Nor less I deem that there are Powers

Which of themselves our minds impress;

That we can feed this mind of ours

In a wise passiveness.

25 “Think you, ‘mid all this mighty sum

Of things for ever speaking,

That nothing of itself will come,

But we must still be seeking?

“—Then ask not wherefore, here, alone,

30 Conversing² as I may,

I sit upon this old gray stone,

And dream my time away.”

Spring 1798 1798

The Tables Turned

An Evening Scene on the Same Subject

**Up! up! my Friend, and quit your books;
Or surely you'll grow double:**

**Up! up! my Friend, and clear your looks;
Why all this toil and trouble?**

**5 The sun, above the mountain's head,
A freshening lustre mellow
Through all the long green fields has spread,
His first sweet evening yellow.**

Books! 'tis a dull and endless strife:

10 Come, hear the woodland linnet,⁰ *a songbird*

**How sweet his music! on my life,
There's more of wisdom in it.**

And hark! how blithe the throstle⁰ sings! *song thrush*

He, too, is no mean preacher:

15 Come forth into the light of things,

Let Nature be your Teacher.

She has a world of ready wealth,

Our minds and hearts to bless—

Spontaneous wisdom breathed by health,

20 Truth breathed by cheerfulness.

2. I.e., communing (with the “things for ever speaking”).

L I N E S / 7 6 5

One impulse from a vernal wood

May teach you more of man,

Of moral evil and of good,

Than all the sages can.

25 Sweet is the lore which Nature brings;

Our meddling intellect

Mis-shapes the beauteous forms of things:—

We murder to dissect.

Enough of Science and of Art;

30 Close up those barren leaves;

Come forth, and bring with you a heart

That watches and receives.

1798 1798

Lines

*Composed a Few Miles above Tintern Abbey on Revisiting the
Banks of*

the Wye during a Tour July 13, 1798*

Five years have passed; five summers, with the length

Of five long winters! and again I hear

These waters, rolling from their mountain-springs

With a soft inland murmur. Once again

5 Do I behold these steep and lofty cliffs,

That on a wild secluded scene impress

Thoughts of more deep seclusion; and connect

The landscape with the quiet of the sky.

The day is come when I again repose

10 Here, under this dark sycamore, and view

These plots of cottage ground, these orchard tufts,

Which at this season, with their unripe fruits,

Are clad in one green hue, and lose themselves

‘Mid groves and copses.0 Once again I see *small woods*

15 These hedgerows, hardly hedgerows, little lines

Of sportive wood run wild; these pastoral farms,

Green to the very door; and wreaths of smoke

Sent up, in silence, from among the trees!
With some uncertain notice, as might seem
20 Of vagrant dwellers in the houseless woods,
Or of some Hermit's cave, where by his fire
The Hermit sits alone.

These beauteous forms,
Through a long absence, have not been to me
As is a landscape to a blind man's eye;

25 But oft, in lonely rooms, and 'mid the din

3. I.e., a walking trip (with his sister, Dorothy) through the Wye valley in Monmouthshire, the location of the ruins of a medieval abbey, noted for its scenery.

766 / WILLIAM WORDSWORTH

Of towns and cities, I have owed to them,
In hours of weariness, sensations sweet,
Felt in the blood, and felt along the heart;
And passing even into my purer mind,
30 With tranquil restoration—feelings too
Of unremembered pleasure; such, perhaps,
As have no slight or trivial influence
On that best portion of a good man's life,
His little, nameless, unremembered, acts
35 Of kindness and of love. Nor less, I trust,
To them I may have owed another gift,
Of aspect more sublime; that blessed mood,
In which the burthen⁰ of the mystery, *burden*
In which the heavy and the weary weight
40 Of all this unintelligible world,
Is lightened—that serene and blessed mood,

In which the affections gently lead us on—
Until, the breath of this corporeal frame
And even the motion of our human blood
45 Almost suspended, we are laid asleep
In body, and become a living soul;
While with an eye made quiet by the power
Of harmony, and the deep power of joy,
We see into the life of things.

If this

50 Be but a vain belief, yet, oh! how oft—
In darkness and amid the many shapes
Of joyless daylight; when the fretful stir
Unprofitable, and the fever of the world,
Have hung upon the beatings of my heart—
55 How oft, in spirit, have I turned to thee,
O sylvan⁰ Wye! thou wanderer through the woods, *wooded*
How often has my spirit turned to thee!
And now, with gleams of half-extinguished thought,
With many recognitions dim and faint,
60 And somewhat of a sad perplexity,
The picture of the mind revives again;
While here I stand, not only with the sense
Of present pleasure, but with pleasing thoughts
That in this moment there is life and food
65 For future years. And so I dare to hope,
Though changed, no doubt, from what I was when first
I came among these hills; when like a roe
I bounded o'er the mountains, by the sides

Of the deep rivers, and the lonely streams,
70 Wherever nature led—more like a man
Flying from something that he dreads than one
Who sought the thing he loved. For nature then
(The coarser⁴ pleasures of my boyish days,
4. I.e., primarily physical.

L I N E S / 7 6 7

And their glad animal movements all gone by)
75 To me was all in all.—I cannot paint
What then I was. The sounding cataract⁰ *waterfall*
Haunted me like a passion; the tall rock,
The mountain, and the deep and gloomy wood,
Their colors and their forms, were then to me
so An appetite; a feeling and a love,
That had no need of a remoter charm,
By thought supplied, nor any interest
Unborrowed from the eye.—That time is past,
And all its aching joys are now no more,
85 And all its dizzy raptures. Not for this
Faint⁰ I, nor mourn nor murmur; other gifts *become*
discouraged
Have followed; for such loss, I would believe,
Abundant recompense. For I have learned
To look on nature, not as in the hour
90 Of thoughtless youth; but hearing oftentimes
The still, sad music of humanity,
Nor harsh nor grating, though of ample power
To chasten and subdue. And I have felt

A presence that disturbs me with the joy
95 Of elevated thoughts; a sense sublime
Of something far more deeply interfused,
Whose dwelling is the light of setting suns,
And the round ocean and the living air,
And the blue sky, and in the mind of man:

100 A motion and a spirit, that impels
All thinking things, all objects of all thought,
And rolls through all things. Therefore am I still
A lover of the meadows and the woods,
And mountains; and of all that we behold
105 From this green earth; of all the mighty world
Of eye, and ear—both what they half create,
And what perceive; well pleased to recognize
In nature and the language of the sense
The anchor of my purest thoughts, the nurse,
110 The guide, the guardian of my heart, and soul
Of all my moral being.

Nor perchance,
If I were not thus taught, should I the more
Suffer my genial⁰ spirits⁰ to decay: *creative / powers*
For thou art with me here upon the banks
115 Of this fair river; thou my dearest Friend,⁵
My dear, dear Friend; and in thy voice I catch
The language of my former heart, and read
My former pleasures in the shooting lights
Of thy wild eyes. Oh! yet a little while
120 May I behold in thee what I was once,

My dear, dear Sister! and this prayer I make,
Knowing that Nature never did betray

5. His sister, Dorothy.

768 / WILLIAM WORDSWORTH

The heart that loved her; 'tis her privilege,
Through all the years of this our life, to lead
125 From joy to joy: for she can so inform
The mind that is within us, so impress
With quietness and beauty, and so feed
With lofty thoughts, that neither evil tongues,
Rash judgments, nor the sneers of selfish men,
130 Nor greetings where no kindness is, nor all
The dreary intercourse of daily life,
Shall e'er prevail against us, or disturb
Our cheerful faith, that all which we behold
Is full of blessings. Therefore let the moon
135 Shine on thee in thy solitary walk;
And let the misty mountain winds be free
To blow against thee: and, in after years,
When these wild ecstasies shall be matured
Into a sober pleasure; when thy mind
140 Shall be a mansion for all lovely forms,
Thy memory be as a dwelling place
For all sweet sounds and harmonies; oh! then,
If solitude, or fear, or pain, or grief
Should be thy portion, with what healing thoughts
145 Of tender joy wilt thou remember me,
And these my exhortations! Nor, perchance—

If I should be where I no more can hear
Thy voice, nor catch from thy wild eyes these gleams
Of past existence—wilt thou then forget
150 That on the banks of this delightful stream
We stood together; and that I, so long
A worshiper of Nature, hither came
Unwearied in that service; rather say
With warmer love—oh! with far deeper zeal
155 Of holier love. Nor wilt thou then forget,
That after many wanderings, many years
Of absence, these steep woods and lofty cliffs,
And this green pastoral landscape, were to me
More dear, both for themselves and for thy sake!

1798

The Ruined Cottage⁶

First Part

‘Twas Summer and the sun was mounted high.
Along the south the uplands feebly glared
Through a pale steam, and all the northern downs,
In clearer air ascending, showed far off
5 Their surfaces with shadows dappled o’er
Of deep embattled clouds. Far as the sight

6. A shorter version of a narrative that comprised the first book of *The Excursion* (1814). First published by Jonathan Wordsworth in *The Music of Humanity* (1969).

T H E R U I N E D C O T T A G E / 7 6 9

Could reach those many shadows lay in spots
Determined⁰ and unmoved, with steady beams *exactly fixed*
Of clear and pleasant sunshine interposed—

10 Pleasant to him who on the soft cool grass
Extends his careless limbs beside the root
Of some huge oak whose aged branches make
A twilight of their own, a dewy shade
W h e r e the wren warbles while the dreaming man,
15 Half conscious of that soothing melody,
With sidelong eye looks out upon the scene,
By those impending branches made more soft,
More soft and distant.
O t h e r lot was mine.
Across a bare wide C o m m o n I had toiled
20 With languid feet which by the slippery ground
W e r e baffled still, and when I stretched myself
On the brown earth my limbs from very heat
Could find no rest, nor my weak arm disperse
T h e insect host which gathered round my face
25 And joined their m u r m u r s to the tedious noise
Of seeds of bursting gorse that crackled round.
I rose and turned towards a group of trees
W h i c h midway in that level stood alone;
And thither come at length, beneath a shade
30 Of clustering elms that sprang from the same root
I found a ruined house, four naked walls
That stared upon each other. I looked round
And near the door I saw an aged Man,
Alone and stretched upon the cottage bench,
35 An iron-pointed staff lay at his side.
With instantaneous joy I recognized

That pride of nature and of lowly life,
The venerable Arnytage, a friend
As dear to me as is the setting sun.
Two days before
40 We had been fellow travelers. I knew
That he was in this neighborhood, and now
Delighted found him here in the cool shade.
He lay, his pack of rustic merchandise
Pillowing his head. I guess he had no thought
45 Of his way-wandering life. His eyes were shut,
The shadows of the breezy elms above
Dappled his face. With thirsty heat oppressed
At length I hailed him, glad to see his hat
Bedewed with waterdrops, as if the brim
50 Had newly scooped a running stream. He rose
And pointing to a sunflower, bade me climb
The [] wall where that same gaudy flower
Looked out upon the road.

7. Blank space in the manuscript.

770 / WILLIAM WORDSWORTH

**It was a plot
Of garden ground now wild, its matted weeds
55 Marked with the steps of those whom as they passed,
The gooseberry trees that shot in long lank slips,
Or currants hanging from their leafless stems
In scanty strings, had tempted to o'erleap
The broken wall. Within that cheerless spot,
60 Where two tall hedgerows of thick alder boughs**

Joined in a damp cold nook, I found a well
Half covered up with willow flowers and grass.
I slaked my thirst and to the shady bench
Returned, and while I stood unbonneted
65 To catch the motion of the cooler air,
The old Man said, "I see around me here
Things which you cannot see. We die, my Friend,
Nor we alone, but that which each man loved
And prized in his peculiar nook of earth
70 Dies with him, or is changed, and very soon
Even of the good is no memorial left.
The Poets, in their elegies and songs
Lamenting the departed, call the groves,
They call upon the hills and streams to mourn,
75 And senseless rocks—nor idly, for they speak
In these their invocations with a voice
Obedient to the strong creative power
Of human passion. Sympathies there are
More tranquil, yet perhaps of kindred birth,
so That steal upon the meditative mind
And grow with thought. Beside yon spring I stood,
And eyed its waters till we seemed to feel
One sadness, they and I. For them a bond
Of brotherhood is broken; time has been
85 When every day the touch of human hand
Disturbed their stillness, and they ministered
To human comfort. When I stopped to drink
A spider's web hung to the water's edge,

And on the wet and slimy footstone lay
90 The useless fragment of a wooden bowl.
It moved my very heart.
“The day has been
When I could never pass this road but she
Who lived within these walls, when I appeared,
A daughter’s welcome gave me, and I loved her
95 As my own child. Oh Sir, the good die first,
And they whose hearts are dry as summer dust
Burn to the socket. Many a passenger
Has blessed poor Margaret for her gentle looks
When she upheld the cool refreshment drawn
100 From that forsaken spring, and no one came
But he was welcome, no one went away
But that it seemed she loved him. She is dead,

T H E R U I N E D C O T T A G E / 7 7 1

The worm is on her cheek, and this poor hut,
Stripped of its outward garb of household flowers,
105 Of rose and sweetbriar, offers to the wind
A cold bare wall whose earthy top is tricked
With weeds and the rank spear grass. She is dead,
And nettles rot and adders sun themselves
Where we have sate together while she nursed
110 Her infant at her breast. The unshod colt,
The wandring heifer and the Potter’s ass,
Find shelter now within the chimney wall
Where I have seen her evening hearthstone blaze
And through the window spread upon the road

115 Its cheerful light. You will forgive me, sir,
But often on this cottage do I muse
As on a picture, till my wiser mind
Sinks, yielding to the foolishness of grief.
“She had a husband, an industrious man,
120 Sober and steady. I have heard her say
That he was up and busy at his loom
In summer ere the mower’s scythe had swept
The dewy grass, and in the early spring
Ere the last star had vanished. They who passed
125 At evening, from behind the garden fence
Might hear his busy spade, which he would ply
After his daily work till the daylight
Was gone, and every leaf and flower were lost
In the dark hedges. So they passed their days
130 In peace and comfort, and two pretty babes
Were their best hope next to the God in Heaven.
“You may remember, now some ten years gone,
Two blighting seasons when the fields were left
With half a harvest. It pleased heaven to add
135 A worse affliction in the plague of war,
A happy land was stricken to the heart,
‘Twas a sad time of sorrow and distress.
A wanderer among the cottages,
I with my pack of winter raiment saw
140 The hardships of that season. Many rich
Sunk down as in a dream among the poor,
And of the poor did many cease to be,

And their place knew them not. Meanwhile, abridged
Of daily comforts, gladly reconciled
145 To numerous self-denials, Margaret
Went struggling on through those calamitous years
With cheerful hope. But ere the second autumn
A fever seized her husband. In disease
He lingered long, and when his strength returned
150 He found the little he had stored to meet
The hour of accident, or crippling age,
Was all consumed. As I have said, 'twas now

772 /

WILLIAM WORDSWORTH

A time of trouble: shoals of artisans
Were from their daily labor turned away
155 To hang for bread on parish charity,
They and their wives and children, happier far
Could they have lived as do the little birds
That peck along the hedges, or the kite
That makes her dwelling in the mountain rocks.
160 "111 fared it now with Robert, he who dwelt
In this poor cottage. At his door he stood
And whistled many a snatch of merry tunes
That had no mirth in them, or with his knife
Carved uncouth figures on the heads of sticks.
165 Then idly sought about through every nook
Of house or garden any casual task
Of use or ornament, and with a strange
Amusing but uneasy novelty

He blended where he might the various tasks
170 Of summer, autumn, winter, and of spring.
But this endured not, his good humor soon
Became a weight in which no pleasure was,
And poverty brought on a petted mood *irritable*
And a sore temper. Day by day he drooped.
175 And he would leave his home, and to the town
Without an errand would he turn his steps,
Or wander here and there among the fields.
One while he would speak lightly of his babes
And with a cruel tongue, at other times
iso He played with them wild freaks of merriment.
And 'twas a piteous thing to see the looks
Of the poor innocent children. 'Every smile,'
Said Margaret to me here beneath these trees,
'Made my heart bleed.' ”
At this the old Man paused
185 And looking up to those enormous elms
He said, ” 'Tis now the hour of deepest noon.
At this still season of repose and peace,
This hour when all things which are not at rest
Are cheerful, while this multitude of flies
190 Fills all the air with happy melody,
Why should a tear be in an old man's eye?
Why should we thus with an untoward mind,
And in the weakness of humanity,
From natural wisdom turn our hearts away.
195 To natural comfort shut our eyes and ears.

And, feeding on disquiet, thus disturb
The calm of Nature with our restless thoughts?"

END OF THE FIRST PART

T H E R U I N E D C O T T A G E / 7 7 3

Second Part

He spake with somewhat of a solemn tone,
But when he ended there was in his face
200 Such easy cheerfulness, a look so mild,
That for a little time it stole away
All recollection, and that simple tale
Passed from my mind like a forgotten sound.
A while on trivial things we held discourse
205 To me soon tasteless. In my own despite
I thought of that poor woman as of one
Whom I had known and loved. He had rehearsed
Her homely tale with such familiar power,
With such an active countenance, an eye
210 So busy, that the things of which he spake
Seemed present, and, attention now relaxed,
There was a heartfelt chillness in my veins.
I rose, and turning from that breezy shade
Went out into the open air, and stood
215 To drink the comfort of the warmer sun.
Long time I had not stayed ere, looking round
Upon that tranquil ruin, I returned
And begged of the old man that for my sake
He would resume his story.
He replied,

220 "It were a wantonness, and would demand
Severe reproof, if we were men whose hearts
Could hold vain dalliance with the misery
Even of the dead, contented thence to draw
A momentary pleasure, never marked
225 By reason, barren of all future good.
But we have known that there is often found
In mournful thoughts, and always might be found,
A power to virtue friendly; were't not so
I am a dreamer among men, indeed
230 An idle dreamer. Tis a common tale
By moving accidents⁸ uncharactered,
A tale of silent suffering, hardly clothed
In bodily form, and to the grosser sense
But ill adapted, scarcely palpable
235 To him who does not think. But at your bidding
I will proceed.

"While thus it fared with them
To whom this cottage till that hapless year
Had been a blessed home, it was my chance
To travel in a country far remote;

240 And glad I was when, halting by yon gate
That leads from the green lane, again I saw

8. High adventures. Shakespeare's Othello speaks "of moving accidents by flood and field" (1.3.134).

774 / WILLIAM WORDSWORTH

These lofty elm trees. Long I did not rest:
With many pleasant thoughts I cheered my way

O'er the flat common. At the door arrived,
245 I knocked, and when I entered, with the hope
Of usual greeting, Margaret looked at me
A little while, then turned her head away
Speechless, and sitting down upon a chair
Wept bitterly. I wist not what to do,
250 Or how to speak to her. Poor wretch, at last
She rose from off her seat, and then, oh Sir,
I cannot tell how she pronounced my name.
With fervent love, and with a face of grief
Unutterably helpless, and a look
255 That seemed to cling upon me, she enquired
If I had seen her husband. As she spake
A strange surprise and fear came to my heart,
Nor had I power to answer ere she told
That he had disappeared—just two months gone.
260 He left his house: two wretched days had passed,
And on the third by the first break of light,
Within her casement full in view she saw
A purse of gold.⁹ 'I trembled at the sight,'
Said Margaret, 'for I knew it was his hand
265 That placed it there. And on that very day
By one, a stranger, from my husband sent,
The tidings came that he had joined a troop
Of soldiers going to a distant land.
He left me thus. Poor Man, he had not heart
270 To take farewell of me, and he feared
That I should follow with my babes, and sink

Beneath the misery of a soldier's life.'
"This tale did Margaret tell with many tears,
And when she ended I had little power
275 To give her comfort, and was glad to take
Such words of hope from her own mouth as served
To cheer us both. But long we had not talked
Ere we built up a pile of better thoughts,
And with a brighter eye she looked around,
280 As if she had been shedding tears of joy.
We parted. It was then the early spring:
I left her busy with her garden tools,
And well remember, o'er that fence she looked,
And, while I paced along the footway path,
285 Called out and sent a blessing after me,
With tender cheerfulness, and with a voice
That seemed the very sound of happy thoughts.
"I roved o'er many a hill and many a dale
With this my weary load, in heat and cold,
290 Through many a wood and many an open ground,
9. The payment her husband had received for enlisting.

T H E R U I N E D C O T T A G E / 7 7 5

In sunshine or in shade, in wet or fair,
Now blithe, now drooping, as it might befall;
My best companions now the driving winds
And now the 'trotting brooks' and whispering trees,
295 And now the music of my own sad steps,
With many a short-lived thought that passed between
And disappeared.

“I came this way again
Towards the wane of summer, when the wheat
Was yellow, and the soft and bladed grass
300 Sprang up afresh and o’er the hay field spread
Its tender green. When I had reached the door
I found that she was absent. In the shade,
Where we now sit, I waited her return.
Her cottage in its outward look appeared
305 As cheerful as before, in any show
Of neatness little changed, but that I thought
The honeysuckle crowded round the door,
And from the wall hung down in heavier tufts,
And knots of worthless stonecrop started out
310 Along the window’s edge, and grew like weeds
Against the lower panes. I turned aside
And strolled into her garden. It was changed.
The unprofitable bindweed spread his bells
From side to side, and with unwieldy wreaths
315 Had dragged the rose from its sustaining wall
And bent it down to earth. The border tufts,
Daisy, and thrift, and lowly camomile,
And thyme, had straggled out into the paths
Which they were used to deck.
“Ere this an hour
320 Was wasted. Back I turned my restless steps,
And as I walked before the door it chanced
A stranger passed, and guessing whom I sought,
He said that she was used to ramble far.

The sun was sinking in the west, and now
325 I sate with sad impatience. From within
Her solitary infant cried aloud.

The spot though fair seemed very desolate,
The longer I remained more desolate;
And looking round I saw the cornerstones,
330 Till then unmarked, on either side the door
With dull red stains discolored, and stuck o'er
With tufts and hairs of wool, as if the sheep
That feed upon the commons thither came
Familiarly, and found a couching place
Even at her threshold.

1. Slightly misquoted (“trotting burns”) from Robert Burns’s
“Epistle to William Simpson,” a poem in praise of natural
feelings.

776 / WILLIAM WORDSWORTH

335 “The house clock struck eight:
I turned and saw her distant a few steps.
Her face was pale and thin, her figure too
Was changed. As she unlocked the door she said,
‘It grieves me you have waited here so long,
340 But in good truth I’ve wandered much of late,
And sometimes, to my shame I speak, have need
Of my best prayers to bring me back again.’
While on the board she spread our evening meal,
She told me she had lost her elder child,
345 That he for months had been a serving boy,
Apprenticed by the parish. ‘I perceive
You look at me, and you have cause. Today

I have been traveling far, and many days
About the fields I wander, knowing this
350 Only, that what I seek I cannot find.
And so I waste my time: for I am changed,
And to myself,' she said, 'have done much wrong,
And to this helpless infant. I have slept
Weeping, and weeping I have waked. My tears
355 Have flowed as if my body were not such
As others are, and I could never die.
But I am now in mind and in my heart
More easy, and I hope,' she said, 'that heaven
Will give me patience to endure the things
Which I behold at home.'
360 'It would have grieved
Your very soul to see her. Sir, I feel
The story linger in my heart. I fear
'Tis long and tedious, but my spirit clings
To that poor woman. So familiarly
365 Do I perceive her manner and her look
And presence, and so deeply do I feel
Her goodness, that not seldom in my walks
A momentary trance comes over me,
And to myself I seem to muse on one
370 By sorrow laid asleep or borne away,
A human being destined to awake
To human life, or something very near
To human life, when he shall come again
For whom she suffered. Sir, it would have grieved

375 Your very soul to see her: evermore
Her eyelids drooped, her eyes were downward cast,
And when she at her table gave me food
She did not look at me. Her voice was low,
Her body was subdued. In every act
380 Pertaining to her house affairs appeared
The careless stillness which a thinking mind
Gives to an idle matter. Still she sighed,
But yet no motion of the breast was seen,
No heaving of the heart. While by the fire

T H E R U I N E D C O T T A G E / 7 7 7

385 We sate together, sighs came on my ear,
I knew not how, and hardly whence they came.
I took my staff, and when I kissed her babe
The tears stood in her eyes. I left her then
With the best hope and comfort I could give:
390 She thanked me for my will, but for my hope
It seemed she did not thank me.

“I returned

And took my rounds along this road again
Ere on its sunny bank the primrose flower
Had chronicled the earliest day of spring.
395 I found her sad and drooping. She had learned
No tidings of her husband; if he lived,
She knew not that he lived; if he were dead,
She knew not he was dead. She seemed the same
In person or appearance, but her house
400 Bespoke a sleepy hand of negligence.

The floor was neither dry nor neat, the hearth
Was comfortless,
The windows too were dim, and her few books,
Which one upon the other heretofore
405 Had been piled up against the corner panes
In seemly order, now with straggling leaves
Lay scattered here and there, open or shut,
As they had chanced to fall. Her infant babe
Had from its mother caught the trick of grief,
410 And sighed among its playthings. Once again
I turned towards the garden gate, and saw
More plainly still that poverty and grief
Were now come nearer to her. The earth was hard,
With weeds defaced and knots of withered grass;
415 No ridges there appeared of clear black mold,
No winter greenness. Of her herbs and flowers
It seemed the better part were gnawed away
Or trampled on the earth. A chain of straw,
Which had been twisted round the tender stem
420 Of a young apple tree, lay at its root;
The bark was nibbled round by truant sheep.
Margaret stood near, her infant in her arms,
And, seeing that my eye was on the tree,
She said, 'I fear it will be dead and gone
Ere Robert come again.'
425 "Towards the house
Together we returned, and she enquired
If I had any hope. But for her Babe,

And for her little friendless Boy, she said,
She had no wish to live—that she must die
430 Of sorrow. Yet I saw the idle loom
Still in its place. His Sunday garments hung
Upon the selfsame nail, his very staff
778 / WILLIAM WORDSWORTH
Stood undisturbed behind the door. And when
I passed this way beaten by Autumn winds,
435 She told me that her little babe was dead,
And she was left alone. That very time,
I yet remember, through the miry lane
She walked with me a mile, when the bare trees
Trickled with foggy damps, and in such sort
440 That any heart had ached to hear her, begged
That wheresoe’r I went I still would ask
For him whom she had lost. We parted then,
Our final parting; for from that time forth
Did many seasons pass ere I returned
Into this tract again.
445 “Five tedious years
She lingered in unquiet widowhood,
A wife and widow. Needs must it have been
A sore heart-wasting. I have heard, my friend,
That in that broken arbor she would sit
450 The idle length of half a sabbath day;
There, where you see the toadstool’s lazy head;
And when a dog passed by she still would quit
The shade and look abroad. On this old Bench

For hours she sate, and evermore her eye
455 Was busy in the distance, shaping things
Which made her heart beat quick. Seest thou that path?
The green sward^o now has broken its gray line— *grassy land*
There to and fro she paced through many a day
Of the warm summer, from a belt of flax
460 That girt her waist, spinning the long-drawn thread
With backward steps. Yet ever as there passed
A man whose garments showed the Soldier's red,
Or crippled Mendicant in Sailor's garb,
The little child who sate to turn the wheel
465 Ceased from his toil, and she, with faltering voice,
Expecting still to hear her husband's fate,
Made many a fond enquiry; and when they
Whose presence gave no comfort, were gone by,
Her heart was still more sad. And by yon gate,
470 Which bars the traveler's road, she often stood,
And when a stranger horseman came, the latch
Would lift, and in his face look wistfully,
Most happy if from aught discovered there
Of tender feeling she might dare repeat
The same sad question.
475 "Meanwhile her poor hut
Sunk to decay; for he was gone, whose hand
At the first nippings of October frost
Closed up each chink, and with fresh bands of straw
Chequered the green-grown thatch. And so she lived

480 Through the long winter, reckless⁰ and alone, *not caring
for herself* **T H E R U I N E D C O T T A G E / 7 7 9**

Till this reft^o house, by frost, and thaw, and rain, *emptied*

Was sapped; and when she slept, the nightly damps

Did chill her breast, and in the stormy day

Her tattered clothes were ruffled by the wind

485 Even at the side of her own fire. Yet still

She loved this wretched spot, nor would for worlds

Have parted hence; and still that length of road,

And this rude^o bench, one torturing hope endeared, *roughly
made*

Fast rooted at her heart. And here, my friend,

490 In sickness she remained; and here she died,

Last human tenant of these ruined walls.”

The old Man ceased: he saw that I was moved.

From that low bench rising instinctively,

I turned aside in weakness, nor had power

495 To thank him for the tale which he had told.

I stood, and leaning o’er the garden gate

Reviewed that Woman’s sufferings; and it seemed

To comfort me while with a brother’s love

I blessed her in the impotence of grief.

500 At length towards the cottage I returned

Fondly, and traced with milder interest,

That secret spirit of humanity

Which, ‘mid the calm oblivious tendencies

Of nature, ‘mid her plants, her weeds and flowers,

505 And silent overgrowings, still survived.

The old man seeing this resumed, and said,

“My friend, enough to sorrow have you given,
The purposes of Wisdom ask no more:
Be wise and cheerful, and no longer read
510 The forms of things with an unworthy eye.
She sleeps in the calm earth, and peace is here.
I well remember that those very plumes,
Those weeds, and the high spear grass on that wall,
By mist and silent raindrops silvered o’er,
515 As once I passed, did to my mind convey
So still an image of tranquility,
So calm and still, and looked so beautiful
Amid the uneasy thoughts which filled my mind,
That what we feel of sorrow and despair
520 From ruin and from change, and all the grief
The passing shows of being leave behind,
Appeared an idle dream that could not live
Where meditation was. I turned away,
And walked along my road in happiness.”
525 He ceased. By this the sun declining shot
A slant and mellow radiance, which began
To fall upon us where beneath the trees
We sate on that low bench. And now we felt,
Admonished thus, the sweet hour coming on:
530 A linnet warbled from those lofty elms,
780 / W I L L I A M W O R D S W O R T H
A thrush sang loud, and other melodies
At distance heard, peopled the milder air.
The old man rose and hoisted up his load.

Together casting then a farewell look
535 Upon those silent walls, we left the shade;
And, ere the stars were visible, attained
A rustic inn, our evening resting place.

T H E E N D

1797-98 1969

Anecdote for Fathers

“Retine vim istam, falsa enim dicam, si coges.”

E U S E B I U S . 2

I have a boy of five years old;
His face is fair and fresh to see;
His limbs are cast in beauty's mold,
And dearly he loves me.

5 One morn we strolled on our dry walk,
Our quiet home all full in view,
And held such intermitted talk
As we are wont to do.

My thoughts on former pleasures ran;
10 I thought of Kilve's³ delightful shore,
Our pleasant home when spring began,
A long, long year before.

A day it was when I could bear
Some fond regrets to entertain;
15 With so much happiness to spare,
I could not feel a pain.

The green earth echoed to the feet
Of lambs that bounded through the glade,
From shade to sunshine, and as fleet

20 From sunshine back to shade.
Birds warbled round me—and each trace
Of inward sadness had its charm;
Kilve, thought I, was a favored place,
And so is Liswyn farm.

25 My boy beside me tripped, so slim
And graceful in his rustic dress!

2. Latin translation by Eusebius (*Preparatio Evan-
poetry*) to any who would try to coerce the oracle:
gelica 6.5) of a Greek line from Porphyro that pur-
“Restrain your violence, for I shall lie if you force
ports to be the warning of Apollo (Greek and
me.”

Roman god of sunlight, prophecy, music, and

3. Village on the Bristol Channel.

T H E P R E L U D E / 7 8 1

And, as we talked, I questioned him,
In very idleness.

“Now tell me, had you rather be,”

30 I said, and took him by the arm,

“On Kilve’s smooth shore, by the green sea,
Or here at Liswyn farm?”

In careless mood he looked at me,

While still I held him by the arm,

35 And said, “At Kilve I’d rather be

Than here at Liswyn farm.”

“Now, little Edward, say why so:

My little Edward, tell me why.”—

“I cannot tell, I do not know.”—
40 “Why, this is strange,” said I;
“For, here are woods, hills smooth and warm:
There surely must some reason be
Why you would change sweet Liswyn farm
For Kilve by the green sea.”

45 At this, my boy hung down his head,
He blushed with shame, nor made reply;
And three times to the child I said,
“Why, Edward, tell me why?”

His head he raised—there was in sight,
50 It caught his eye, he saw it plain—
Upon the house-top, glittering bright,
A broad and gilded vane.

Then did the boy his tongue unlock,
And eased his mind with this reply:
55 “At Kilve there was no weather-cock;
And that’s the reason why.”

O dearest, dearest boy! my heart
For better lore would seldom yearn,
Could I but teach the hundredth part
60 Of what from thee I learn.

1798 1798

From The Prelude

From Book I

Fair seedtime had my soul, and I grew up
Fostered alike by beauty and by fear:
Much favored in my birthplace,⁴ and no less

4. Cockermouth, a town in the northern part of the English Lake District.

782 / WILLIAM WORDSWORTH

In that beloved Vale⁵ to which ere long
305 We were transplanted—there were we let loose
For sports of wider range. Ere I had told
Ten birthdays, when among the mountain slopes
Frost, and the breath of frosty wind, had snapped
The last autumnal crocus, 'twas my joy
310 With store of springes⁰ o'er my shoulder hung *snares*
To range the open heights where woodcocks run
Along the smooth green turf. Through half the night,
Scudding away from snare to snare, I plied
That anxious visitation—moon and stars
315 Were shining o'er my head. I was alone,
And seemed to be a trouble to the peace
That dwelt among them. Sometimes it befell
In these night wanderings, that a strong desire
O'erpowered my better reason, and the bird
320 Which was the captive of another's toil
Became my prey; and when the deed was done
I heard among the solitary hills
Low breathings coming after me, and sounds
Of undistinguishable motion, steps
325 Almost as silent as the turf they trod.
Nor less, when spring had warmed the cultured⁰ Vale,
cultivated
Moved we as plunderers where the mother bird
Had in high places built her lodge; though mean

Our object and inglorious, yet the end
330 Was not ignoble. Oh! when I have hung
Above the raven's nest, by knots of grass
And half-inch fissures in the slippery rock
But ill sustained, and almost (so it seemed)
Suspended by the blast that blew amain,⁰ *at full speed*
335 Shouldering the naked crag, oh, at that time
While on the perilous ridge I hung alone,
With what strange utterance did the loud dry wind
Blow through my ear! the sky seemed not a sky
Of earth—and with what motion moved the clouds!
340 Dust as we are, the immortal spirit grows
Like harmony in music; there is a dark
Inscrutable workmanship that reconciles
Discordant elements, makes them cling together
In one society. How strange that all
345 The terrors, pains, and early miseries,
Regrets, vexations, lassitudes interfused
Within my mind, should e'er have borne a part,
And that a needful part, in making up
The calm existence that is mine when I
350 Am worthy of myself! Praise to the end!
Thanks to the means which Nature deigned to employ;
Whether her fearless visitings, or those
5. Esthwaite, also in the Lakes.

THE PRELUDE / 783

That came with soft alarm, like hurtless light
Opening the peaceful clouds; or she may use

355 Severer interventions, ministry
More palpable, as best might suit her aim.
One summer evening (led by her) I found
A little boat tied to a willow tree
Within a rocky cave, its usual home.

360 Straight I unloosed her chain, and stepping in
Pushed from the shore. It was an act of stealth
And troubled pleasure, nor without the voice
Of mountain echoes did my boat move on;
Leaving behind her still, on either side,

365 Small circles glittering idly in the moon,
Until they melted all into one track
Of sparkling light. But now, like one who rows,
Proud of his skill, to reach a chosen point
With an unswerving line, I fixed my view

370 Upon the summit of a craggy ridge,
The horizon's utmost boundary; for above
Was nothing but the stars and the gray sky.
She was an elfin pinnace;0 lustily *small boat*
I dipped my oars into the silent lake,

375 And, as I rose upon the stroke, my boat
Went heaving through the water like a swan;
When, from behind that craggy steep till then
The horizon's bound, a huge peak, black and huge,
As if with voluntary power instinct,

380 Upreared its head. I struck and struck again,
And growing still in stature the grim shape
Towered up between me and the stars, and still,

For so it seemed, with purpose of its own
And measured motion like a living thing,
385 Strode after me. With trembling oars I turned,
And through the silent water stole my way
Back to the covert of the willow tree;
There in her mooring place I left my bark,
And through the meadows homeward went, in grave
390 And serious mood; but after I had seen
That spectacle, for many days, my brain
Worked with a dim and undetermined sense
Of unknown modes of being; o'er my thoughts
There hung a darkness, call it solitude
395 Or blank desertion. No familiar shapes
Remained, no pleasant images of trees,
Of sea or sky, no colors of green fields;
But huge and mighty forms, that do not live
Like living men, moved slowly through the mind
400 By day, and were a trouble to my dreams.
Wisdom and Spirit of the universe!
Thou Soul that art the eternity of thought,
784 / WILLIAM WORDSWORTH
That givest to forms and images a breath
And everlasting motion, not in vain
405 By day or starlight thus from my first dawn
Of childhood didst thou intertwine for me
The passions that build up our human soul;
Not with the mean and vulgar⁰ works of man, *commonplace*
But with high objects, with enduring things—

410 With life and nature—purifying thus
The elements of feeling and of thought,
And sanctifying, by such discipline,
Both pain and fear, until we recognize
A grandeur in the beating of the heart.
415 Nor was this fellowship vouchsafed to me
With stinted kindness. In November days,
When vapors rolling down the valley made
A lonely scene more lonesome, among woods,
At noon and ‘mid the calm of summer nights,
420 When, by the margin of the trembling lake,
Beneath the gloomy hills homeward I went
In solitude, such intercourse was mine;
Mine was it in the fields both day and night,
And by the waters, all the summer long.
425 And in the frosty season, when the sun
Was set, and visible for many a mile
The cottage windows blazed through twilight gloom,
I heeded not their summons: happy time
It was indeed for all of us—for me
430 It was a time of rapture! Clear and loud
The village clock tolled six—I wheeled about,
Proud and exulting like an untired horse
That cares not for his home. All shod with steel,
We hissed along the polished ice in games
435 Confederate, imitative of the chase
And woodland pleasures—the resounding horn,
The pack loud chiming, and the hunted hare.

So through the darkness and the cold we flew,
And not a voice was idle; with the din
440 Smitten, the precipices rang aloud;
The leafless trees and every icy crag
Tinkled like iron; while far distant hills
Into the tumult sent an alien sound
Of melancholy not unnoticed, while the stars
445 Eastward were sparkling clear, and in the west
The orange sky of evening died away.
Not seldom from the uproar I retired
Into a silent bay, or sportively
Glanced sideway, leaving the tumultuous throng,
450 To cut across the reflex⁰ of a star *reflection*
That fled, and, flying still before me, gleamed
Upon the glassy plain; and oftentimes,
When we had given our bodies to the wind,

T H E P R E L U D E / 7 8 5

And all the shadowy banks on either side
455 Came sweeping through the darkness, spinning still
The rapid line of motion, then at once
Have I, reclining back upon my heels,
Stopped short; yet still the solitary cliffs
Wheeled by me—even as if the earth had rolled
460 With visible motion her diurnal⁰ round!
daily
Behind me did they stretch in solemn train,⁰
succession
Feebler and feebler, and I stood and watched

Till all was tranquil as a dreamless sleep.
Ye Presences of Nature in the sky
465 And on the earth! Ye Visions of the hills!
And Souls of lonely places! can I think
A vulgar hope was yours when ye employed
Such ministry, when ye, through many a year
Haunting me thus among my boyish sports,
470 On caves and trees, upon the woods and hills,
Impressed upon all forms the characters⁰ *signs*
Of danger or desire; and thus did make
The surface of the universal earth
With triumph and delight, with hope and fear,
Work⁰ like a sea? *seethe*
475 Not uselessly employed,
Might I pursue this theme through every change
Of exercise and play, to which the year
Did summon us in his delightful round.
We were a noisy crew; the sun in heaven
480 Beheld not vales more beautiful than ours;
Nor saw a band in happiness and joy
Richer, or worthier of the ground they trod.
I could record with no reluctant voice
The woods of autumn, and their hazel bowers
485 With milk-white clusters hung; the rod and line,
True symbol of hope's foolishness, whose strong
And unreproved enchantment led us on
By rocks and pools shut out from every star,
All the green summer, to forlorn cascades

490 Among the windings hid of mountain brooks.

—Unfading recollections! at this hour

The heart is almost mine with which I felt,

From some hill-top on sunny afternoons,

The paper kite high among fleecy clouds

495 Pull at her rein like an impetuous courser;

Or, from the meadows sent on gusty days,

Beheld her breast the wind, then suddenly

Dashed headlong, and rejected by the storm.

Ye lowly cottages wherein we dwelt,

500 A ministration of your own was yours;

Can I forget you, being as you were

786 / WILLIAM WORDSWORTH

So beautiful among the pleasant fields

In which ye stood? or can I here forget

The plain and seemly countenance with which

505 Ye dealt out your plain comforts? Yet had ye

Delights and exultations of your own.

Eager and never weary we pursued

Our home-amusements by the warm peat-fire

At evening, when with pencil, and smooth slate

510 In square divisions parceled out and all

With crosses and with cyphers scribbled o'er,

We schemed and puzzled, head opposed to head

In strife too humble to be named in verse:

Or round the naked table, snow-white deal,⁰ *fine board*

515 Cherry or maple, sate in close array,

And to the combat, Loo or Whist,⁶ led on

A thick-ribbed army; not, as in the world,
Neglected and ungratefully thrown by
Even for the very service they had wrought,
520 But husbanded through many a long campaign.
Uncouth assemblage was it, where no few
Had changed their functions; some, plebeian cards
Which Fate, beyond the promise of their birth,
Had dignified, and called to represent
525 The persons of departed potentates.
Oh, with what echoes on the board they fell!
Ironic diamonds,—clubs, hearts, diamonds, spades,
A congregation piteously akin!
Cheap matter offered they to boyish wit,
530 Those sooty knaves, precipitated down
With scoffs and taunts, like Vulcan⁷ out of heaven:
The paramount ace, a moon in her eclipse,
Queens gleaming through their splendor's last decay,
And monarchs surly at the wrongs sustained
535 By royal visages. Meanwhile abroad
Incessant rain was falling, or the frost
Raged bitterly, with keen and silent tooth;
And, interrupting oft that eager game,
From under Esthwaite's splitting fields of ice
540 The pent-up air, struggling to free itself,
Gave out to meadow grounds and hills a loud
Protracted yelling, like the noise of wolves
Howling in troops along the Bothnic main.⁸
Nor, sedulous⁰ as I have been to trace *diligent*

545 How Nature by extrinsic⁰ passion first *unrelated*

Peopled the mind with forms sublime or fair,

And made me love them, may I here omit

How other pleasures have been mine, and joys

6. Card games resembling poker and bridge; the defaced.

pack of cards described in lines 516—35 through

7. In Roman mythology, the god of fire, or the

long use has been damaged and repaired, with low

smith of the gods (hence “sooty,” line 530); his

(“plebeian,” line 522) cards made into high

father, Jove, once hurled him out of heaven.

(“potentates,” line 525) and others partially

8. A northern gulf of the Baltic Sea.

T H E P R E L U D E / 7 8 7

Of subtler origin; how I have felt,

550 Not seldom even in that tempestuous time,

Those hallowed and pure motions of the sense

Which seem, in their simplicity, to own

An intellectual⁰ charm; that calm delight

spiritual

Which, if I err not, surely must belong

555 To those first-born⁰ affinities that fit

innate

Our new existence to existing things,

And, in our dawn of being, constitute

The bond of union between life and joy.

Yes, I remember when the changeful earth,

560 And twice five summers on my mind had stamped
The faces of the moving year, even then
I held unconscious intercourse with beauty
Old as creation, drinking in a pure
Organic pleasure from the silver wreaths
565 Of curling mist, or from the level plain
Of waters colored by impending clouds. *overhanging*
The sands of Westmoreland, the creeks and bays
Of Cumbria's rocky limits,⁹ they can tell
How, when the Sea threw off his evening shade,
570 And to the shepherd's hut on distant hills
Sent welcome notice of the rising moon,
How I have stood, to fancies such as these
A stranger, linking with the spectacle
No conscious memory of a kindred sight,
575 And bringing with me no peculiar sense
Of quietness or peace; yet have I stood,
Even while mine eye hath moved o'er many a league
Of shining water, gathering as it seemed,
Through every hairbreadth in that field of light,
580 New pleasure like a bee among the flowers.
Thus oft amid those fits of vulgar joy
Which, through all seasons, on a child's pursuits
Are prompt attendants, 'mid that giddy bliss
Which, like a tempest, works along the blood
585 And is forgotten; even then I felt
Gleams like the flashing of a shield—the earth
And common face of Nature spake to me

Rememberable things; sometimes, 'tis true,
By chance collisions and quaint accidents
590 (Like those ill-sorted unions, work supposed
Of evil-minded fairies), yet not vain
Nor profitless, if haply they impressed
Collateral objects and appearances,
Albeit lifeless then, and doomed to sleep
595 Until maturer seasons called them forth
To impregnate and to elevate the mind.
—And if the vulgar joy by its own weight

9. Coastline areas of the Lake District.

788 / WILLIAM WORDSWORTH

**Wearied itself out of the memory,
The scenes which were a witness of that joy
600 Remained in their substantial lineaments
Depicted on the brain, and to the eye
Were visible, a daily sight; and thus
By the impressive discipline of fear,
By pleasure and repeated happiness,
605 So frequently repeated, and by force
Of obscure feelings representative
Of things forgotten, these same scenes so bright,
So beautiful, so majestic in themselves,
Though yet the day was distant, did become
610 Habitually dear, and all their forms
And changeful colors by invisible links
Were fastened to the affections.⁰ *feelings*
I began**

My story early—not misled, I trust,
By an infirmity of love for days
615 Disowned by memory—fancying flowers where none,
Not even the sweetest, do or can survive
For him at least whose dawning day they cheered.
Nor will it seem to thee, O Friend! so prompt
In sympathy, that I have lengthened out
620 With fond and feeble tongue a tedious tale.
Meanwhile, my hope has been, that I might fetch
Invigorating thoughts from former years;
Might fix the wavering balance of my mind,
And haply meet reproaches too, whose power
625 May spur me on, in manhood now mature,
To honorable toil. Yet should these hopes
Prove vain, and thus should neither I be taught
To understand myself, nor thou to know
With better knowledge how the heart was framed
630 Of him thou lovest; need I dread from thee
Harsh judgments, if the song be loth to quit
Those recollected hours that have the charm
Of visionary things, those lovely forms
And sweet sensations that throw back our life,
635 And almost make remotest infancy
A visible scene, on which the sun is shining?
One end at least hath been attained; my mind
Hath been revived, and if this genial⁰ mood *creative*
Desert me not, forthwith shall be brought down
640 Through later years the story of my life.

**The road lies plain before me—'tis a theme
Single and of determined bounds; and hence
I choose it rather at this time, than work
Of ampler or more varied argument,**

645 Where I might be discomfited and lost:

1. Samuel Taylor Coleridge (1772—1834; see pp. 805—31),
the poet and philosopher to whom *The Prelude* was addressed;
Wordsworth's particular friend and collaborator.

T H R E E Y E A R S S H E G R E W / 7 8 9

And certain hopes are with me, that to thee
This labor will be welcome, honored Friend!

1798-1800 1850

She Dwelt among the Untrodden Ways
She dwelt among the untrodden ways
Beside the springs of Dove.²
A Maid whom there were none to praise
And very few to love;
5 A violet by a mossy stone
Half hidden from the eye!
—Fair as a star, when only one
Is shining in the sky.

She lived unknown, and few could know

10 When Lucy ceased to be;
But she is in her grave, and, oh,
The difference to me!

1799 1800

Three Years She Grew
Three years she grew in sun and shower,
Then Nature said, "A lovelier flower

On earth was never sown;
This Child I to myself will take;
5 She shall be mine, and I will make
A Lady of my own.
“Myself will to my darling be
Both law and impulse: and with me
The Girl, in rock and plain,
10 In earth and heaven, in glade and bower,
Shall feel an overseeing power
To kindle or restrain.

“She shall be sportive as the fawn
That wild with glee across the lawn
15 Or up the mountain springs;
And hers shall be the breathing balm,
And hers the silence and the calm
Of mute insensate things.

2. Several rivers in England are named Dove.

790 / WILLIAM WORDSWORTH

“The floating clouds their state shall lend
20 To her; for her the willow bend;
Nor shall she fail to see
Even in the motions of the Storm
Grace that shall mold the Maiden’s form
By silent sympathy.

25 “The stars of midnight shall be dear
To her; and she shall lean her ear
In many a secret place
Where rivulets dance their wayward round,

And beauty born of murmuring sound
30 Shall pass into her face.
“And vital feelings of delight
Shall rear her form to stately height,
Her virgin bosom swell;
Such thoughts to Lucy I will give
35 While she and I together live
Here in this happy dell.”
Thus Nature spake—the work was done—
How soon my Lucy’s race was run!
She died, and left to me
40 This health, this calm, and quiet scene;
The memory of what has been,
And never more will be.

1799 1800

A Slumber Did My Spirit Seal
A slumber did my spirit seal;
I had no human fears:
She seemed a thing that could not feel
The touch of earthly years.
5 No motion has she now, no force;
She neither hears nor sees;
Rolled round in earth’s diurnal⁰ course, *daily*
With rocks, and stones, and trees.

1799 1800

Resolution and Independence

i

There was a roaring in the wind all night;

The rain came heavily and fell in floods;

RESOLUTION AND INDEPENDENCE / 79

1

But now the sun is rising calm and bright;

The birds are singing in the distant woods;

5 Over his own sweet voice the Stock-dove broods;

The Jay makes answer as the Magpie chatters;

And all the air is filled with pleasant noise of waters.

2

All things that love the sun are out of doors;

The sky rejoices in the morning's birth;

10 The grass is bright with rain-drops;—on the moors

The hare is running races in her mirth;

And with her feet she from the plashy earth

Raises a mist; that, glittering in the sun,

Runs with her all the way, wherever she doth run.

3

15 I was a Traveler then upon the moor;

I saw the hare that raced about with joy;

I heard the woods and distant waters roar;

Or heard them not, as happy as a boy:

The pleasant season did my heart employ:

20 My old remembrances went from me wholly;

And all the ways of men, so vain and melancholy.

4

But, as it sometimes chanceth, from the might

Of joy in minds that can no further go,

As high as we have mounted in delight

25 In our dejection do we sink as low;
To me that morning did it happen so;
And fears and fancies thick upon me came;
Dim sadness—and blind thoughts, I knew not, nor could
name.

5

I heard the sky-lark warbling in the sky;
30 And I bethought me of the playful hare:
Even such a happy Child of earth am I;
Even as these blissful creatures do I fare;
Far from the world I walk, and from all care;
But there may come another day to me—
35 Solitude, pain of heart, distress, and poverty.

6

My whole life I have lived in pleasant thought,
As if life's business were a summer mood;
As if all needful things would come unsought
To genial faith, still rich in genial good;
40 But how can He expect that others should
Build for him, sow for him, and at his call
Love him, who for himself will take no heed at all?

7 9 2

/ W I L L I A M W O R D S W O R T H

7

I thought of Chattertoiv the marvelous Boy,
The sleepless Soul that perished in his pride;
45 Of Him4 who walked in glory and in joy
Following his plow, along the mountain-side:

By our own spirits are we deified:
We Poets in our youth begin in gladness;
But thereof come in the end despondency and madness.

8

50 Now, whether it were by peculiar grace,
A leading from above, a something given,
Yet it befell, that, in this lonely place,
When I with these untoward thoughts had striven,
Beside a pool bare to the eye of heaven
55 I saw a Man before me unawares:
The oldest man he seemed that ever wore gray hairs.

9

As a huge stone is sometimes seen to lie
Couched on the bald top of an eminence;
Wonder to all who do the same espy,
60 By what means it could thither come, and whence;
So that it seems a thing endued with sense:
Like a sea-beast crawled forth, that on a shelf
Of rock or sand repositeth, there to sun itself;

10

Such seemed this Man, not all alive nor dead,
65 Nor all asleep—in his extreme old age:
His body was bent double, feet and head
Coming together in life's pilgrimage;
As if some dire constraint of pain, or rage
Of sickness felt by him in times long past,
70 A more than human weight upon his frame had cast.

II

Himself he propped, limbs, body, and pale face,
Upon a long gray staff of shaven wood:
And, still as I drew near with gentle pace,
Upon the margin of that moorish flood
75 Motionless as a cloud the old Man stood,
That heareth not the loud winds when they call;
And moveth all together, if it move at all.

12

At length, himself unsettling, he the pond
Stirred with his staff, and fixedly did look
80

Upon the muddy water, which he coned,⁰ *studied*

3. Thomas Chatterton (1752-1770), a gifted

4. Robert Burns (1759-1796; see pp. 747-60),
young English poet who committed suicide.

who died before achieving his later great renown.

R E S O L U T I O N A N D I N D E P E N D E N C E / 7 9 **3**

As if he had been reading in a book:

And now a stranger's privilege I took;

And, drawing to his side, to him did say,

“This morning gives us promise of a glorious day.”

!3

85 A gentle answer did the old Man make,

In courteous speech which forth he slowly drew:

And him with further words I thus bespake,

“What occupation do you there pursue?

This is a lonesome place for one like you.”

90 Ere he replied, a flash of mild surprise
Broke from the sable orbs of his yet-vivid eyes.

14

His words came feebly, from a feeble chest,
But each in solemn order followed each,
With something of a lofty utterance drest—
95 Choice word and measured phrase, above the reach
Of ordinary men; a stately speech;
Such as grave Livers⁵ do in Scotland use,
Religious men, who give to God and man their dues.

15

He told, that to these waters he had come
100 To gather leeches,⁶ being old and poor:
Employment hazardous and wearisome!
And he had many hardships to endure:
From pond to pond he roamed, from moor to moor;
Housing, with God's good help, by choice or chance;
105 And in this way he gained an honest maintenance.

16

The old Man still stood talking by my side;
But now his voice to me was like a stream
Scarce heard; nor word from word could I divide;
And the whole body of the Man did seem
110 Like one whom I had met with in a dream;
Or like a man from some far region sent,
To give me human strength, by apt admonishment.

!7

My former thoughts returned: the fear that kills;

And hope that is unwilling to be fed;
115 Cold, pain, and labor, and all fleshly ills;
5. Those who live austerely and gravely. See
And an habitual piety, maintained
Wordsworth's "The Excursion," 1.113—17; the ref-
With strictness scarcely known on English
erence is to a Scottish family:
ground.

Pure livers were they all, austere and grave,
6. Aquatic bloodsuckers, once widely used for
And fearing God; the very children taught
medicinal bloodletting.

Stern self-respect, a reverence for God's word,

794

/WILLIAM WORDSWORTH

And mighty Poets in their misery dead.

—Perplexed, and longing to be comforted,

My question eagerly did I renew,

"How is it that you live, and what is it you do?"

18

120 He with a smile did then his words repeat;

And said, that, gathering leeches, far and wide

He traveled; stirring thus about his feet

The waters of the pools where they abide.

"Once I could meet with them on every side;

125 But they have dwindled long by slow decay;

Yet still I persevere, and find them where I may."

!9

While he was talking thus, the lonely place,
The old Man's shape, and speech—all troubled me:
In my mind's eye I seemed to see him pace
130 About the weary moors continually,
Wandering about alone and silently.
While I these thoughts within myself pursued,
He, having made a pause, the same discourse renewed.

20

And soon with this he other matter blended,
135 Cheerfully uttered, with demeanor kind,
But stately in the main; and when he ended,
I could have laughed myself to scorn to find
In that decrepit Man so firm a mind.

“God,” said I, “be my help and stay secure; *support (noun)*
140 I'll think of the Leech-gatherer on the lonely moor!”

1802 1807

It Is a Beauteous Evening⁷

It is a beauteous evening, calm and free,
The holy time is quiet as a Nun
Breathless with adoration; the broad sun
Is sinking down in its tranquility;
5 The gentleness of heaven broods o'er the Sea:
Listen! the mighty Being is awake,
And doth with his eternal motion make
A sound like thunder—everlastingly.
Dear Child! dear Girl! that walkest with me here,
io If thou appear untouched by solemn thought,
Thy nature is not therefore less divine:

7. The “Dear Child” was Caroline (then ten years old), his daughter by Annette Vallon.

COMPOSED UPON WESTMINSTER BRIDGE, SEPTEMBER 3, 1802 / 795

Thou liest in Abraham’s bosom⁸ all the year,
And worship’st at the Temple’s inner shrine, ⁹
God being with thee when we know it not.

1802

1807

London, 1802

Milton! thou shouldst be living at this hour:
England hath need of thee: she is a fen
Of stagnant waters: altar, sword, and pen,
Fireside, the heroic wealth of hall and bower,
5 Have forfeited their ancient English dower
Of inward happiness. We are selfish men;
Oh! raise us up, return to us again;
And give us manners, virtue, freedom, power.
Thy soul was like a Star, and dwelt apart;
IO Thou hadst a voice whose sound was like the sea:
Pure as the naked heavens, majestic, free,
So didst thou travel on life’s common way,
In cheerful godliness; and yet thy heart
The lowliest duties on herself did lay.

1802

1807

Composed upon Westminster Bridge, September 3, 1802

Earth has not anything to show more fair:
Dull would he be of soul who could pass by

A sight so touching in its majesty;
This City now doth, like a garment, wear
5 The beauty of the morning; silent, bare,
Ships, towers, domes, theaters, and temples lie
Open unto the fields, and to the sky;
All bright and glittering in the smokeless air.
Never did sun more beautifully steep
io In his first splendor, valley, rock, or hill;
Ne'er saw I, never felt, a calm so deep!
The river glideth at his own sweet will:
Dear God! the very houses seem asleep;
And all that mighty heart is lying still!

1802

1 8 0 7

8. Where souls in heaven rest (as in Luke 16.22).

9. The holy of holies (as in the ancient temple in Jerusalem);
where God is present.

7 9 6 / W I L L I A M W O R D S W O R T H

Nuns Fret Not at Their Convent's Narrow Room

Nuns fret not at their convent's narrow room;

And hermits are contented with their cells;

And students with their pensive citadels;

Maids at the wheel, the weaver at his loom,

5 Sit blithe and happy; bees that soar for bloom,

High as the highest Peak of Furness-fells,¹

Will murmur by the hour in foxglove bells:

In truth the prison, into which we doom

Ourselves, no prison is: and hence for me,

10 In sundry moods, 'twas pastime to be bound
Within the Sonnet's scanty plot of ground;
Pleased if some Souls (for such there needs must be)
Who have felt the weight of too much liberty,
Should find brief solace there, as I have found.

1802 1807

My Heart Leaps Up

My heart leaps up when I behold

A rainbow in the sky:

So was it when my life began;

So is it now I am a man;

5 So be it when I shall grow old,

Or let me die!

The Child is father of the Man;

And I could wish my days to be

Bound each to each by natural piety.

1802 1807

Ode

*Intimations of Immortality from Recollections of Early
Childhood*

The Child is father of the Man;

And I could wish my days to be

Bound each to each by natural piety.²

I

There was a time when meadow, grove, and stream,

The earth, and every common sight,

To me did seem

Appareled in celestial light,

1. Mountains in the English Lake District.
2. Final lines of Wordsworth's "My Heart Leaps Up" (above).

O D E / 7 9 7

The glory and the freshness of a dream.
It is not now as it hath been of yore—
Turn whereso'er I may,
By night or day,
The things which I have seen I now can see no more.

2

The Rainbow comes and goes,
And lovely is the Rose,
The Moon doth with delight
Look round her when the heavens are bare,
Waters on a starry night
Are beautiful and fair;
The sunshine is a glorious birth;
But yet I know, where'er I go,
That there hath passed away a glory from the earth.

3

Now, while the birds thus sing a joyous song,
And while the young lambs bound
As to the tabor's sound, *small drum's*
To me alone there came a thought of grief:
A timely utterance gave that thought relief,
And I again am strong:
The cataracts blow their trumpets from the steep;
No more shall grief of mine the season wrong;
I hear the Echoes through the mountains throng,

The Winds come to me from the fields of sleep,
And all the earth is gay;
Land and sea
Give themselves up to jollity,
And with the heart of May
Doth every Beast keep holiday—
Thou Child of Joy,
Shout round me, let me hear thy shouts, thou happy Shepherd-
boy!
Ye blessed Creatures, I have heard the call
Ye to each other make; I see
The heavens laugh with you in your jubilee;
My heart is at your festival,
My head hath its coronal,⁰ *circlet of wildflowers*
The fullness of your bliss, I feel—I feel it all.
Oh, evil day! if I were sullen
While Earth herself is adorning,
This sweet May morning,
And the Children are culling
On every side,
In a thousand valleys far and wide,
Fresh flowers; while the sun shines warm,
And the Babe leaps up on his Mother's arm—
798 / WILLIAM WORDSWORTH
50 I hear, I hear, with joy I hear!
—But there's a Tree, of many, one,
A single Field which I have looked upon,
Both of them speak of something that is gone:

The Pansy at my feet

55 Doth the same tale repeat:

Whither is fled the visionary gleam?

Where is it now, the glory and the dream?

5

Our birth is but a sleep and a forgetting:

The Soul that rises with us, our life's Star,

60 Hath had elsewhere its setting,

And cometh from afar:

Not in entire forgetfulness,

And not in utter nakedness,

But trailing clouds of glory do we come

65 From God, who is our home:

Heaven lies about us in our infancy!

Shades of the prison-house begin to close

Upon the growing Boy

But he

70 Beholds the light, and whence it flows,

He sees it in his joy;

The Youth, who daily farther from the east

Must travel, still is Nature's Priest,

And by the vision splendid

75 Is on his way attended;

At length the Man perceives it die away,

And fade into the light of common day.

6

Earth fills her lap with pleasures of her own;

Yearnings she hath in her own natural kind,

so And, even with something of a Mother's mind,
And no unworthy aim,
The homely Nurse doth all she can *simple; kindly*
To make her foster child, her Inmate Man,
Forget the glories he hath known,
85 And that imperial palace whence he came.

7

Behold the Child among his newborn blisses,
A six-years' Darling of a pygmy size!
See, where 'mid work of his own hand he lies,
Fretted by sallies of his mother's kisses, *vexed*
90 With light upon him from his father's eyes!
See, at his feet, some little plan or chart,
Some fragment from his dream of human life,
Shaped by himself with newly-learned art;
A wedding or a festival,

O D E / 7 9 9

95 A mourning or a funeral;
And this hath now his heart,
And unto this he frames his song;
Then will he fit his tongue
To dialogues of business, love, or strife;
100 But it will not be long
Ere this be thrown aside,
And with new joy and pride
The little Actor cons^o another part;
commits to memory
Filling from time to time his "humorous stage"

105 With all the Persons,0 down to palsied Age,
dramatis personae

That Life brings with her in her equipage;0
group of servants

As if his whole vocation
Were endless imitation.

8

Thou, whose exterior semblance doth belie
110 Thy Soul's immensity;

Thou best Philosopher, who yet dost keep
Thy heritage, thou Eye among the blind,
That, deaf and silent, read'st the eternal deep,
Haunted forever by the eternal mind—

115 Mighty Prophet! Seer blest!

On whom those truths do rest,
Which we are toiling all our lives to find,
In darkness lost, the darkness of the grave;
Thou, over whom thy Immortality

120 Broods like the Day, a Master o'er a Slave,
A Presence which is not to be put by;

Thou little Child, yet glorious in the might
Of heaven-born freedom on thy being's height,
Why with such earnest pains dost thou provoke

125 The years to bring the inevitable yoke,
Thus blindly with thy blessedness at strife?

Full soon thy Soul shall have her earthly freight,
And custom lie upon thee with a weight,
Heavy as frost, and deep almost as life!

9

130 O joy! that in our embers
Is something that doth live,
That nature yet remembers
What was so fugitive!
The thought of our past years in me doth breed
135 Perpetual benediction: not indeed
For that which is most worthy to be blest;
Delight and liberty, the simple creed
Of Childhood, whether busy or at rest,
With new-fledged hope still fluttering in his breast—

3. I.e., playing the parts of characters with various tation from line 1 of a sonnet by Samuel Daniel temperaments, called “humors” by Elizabethan (ca. 1562—1619; for some of his sonnets and other poets and playwrights. “Humorous stage” is a quo- poems, see pp. 230—35).

800 / WILLIAM WORDSWORTH

140 Not for these I raise
The song of thanks and praise;
But for those obstinate questionings
Of sense and outward things,
Fallings from us, vanishings;
145 Blank misgivings of a Creature
Moving about in worlds not realized,⁰ *seeming real*
High instincts before which our mortal Nature
Did tremble like a guilty Thing surprised;
But for those first affections,
150 Those shadowy recollections,
Which, be they what they may,

Are yet the fountain light of all our day,
Are yet a master light of all our seeing;
Uphold us, cherish, and have power to make
155 Our noisy years seem moments in the being
Of the eternal Silence: truths that wake,
To perish never;
Which neither listlessness, nor mad endeavor,
Nor Man nor Boy,
160 Nor all that is at enmity with joy,
Can utterly abolish or destroy!
Hence in a season of calm weather
Though inland far we be,
Our Souls have sight of that immortal sea
165 Which brought us hither,
Can in a moment travel thither,
And see the Children sport upon the shore,
And hear the mighty waters rolling evermore.
io
Then sing, ye Birds, sing, sing a joyous song!
170 And let the young Lambs bound
As to the tabor's sound!
We in thought will join your throng,
Ye that pipe and ye that play,
Ye that through your hearts today
175 Feel the gladness of the May!
What though the radiance which was once so bright
Be now forever taken from my sight,
Though nothing can bring back the hour

Of splendor in the grass, of glory in the flower;

180 We will grieve not, rather find

Strength in what remains behind;

In the primal sympathy

Which having been must ever be;

In the soothing thoughts that spring

185 Out of human suffering;

In the faith that looks through death,

In years that bring the philosophic mind.

I W A N D E R E D L O N E L Y A S A C L O U D / 8 0 1

And O, ye Fountains, Meadows, Hills, and Groves,

Forebode not any severing of our loves!

190 Yet in my heart of hearts I feel your might;

I only have relinquished one delight

To live beneath your more habitual sway.

I love the Brooks which down their channels fret,

Even more than when I tripped lightly as they;

195 The innocent brightness of a newborn Day

Is lovely yet;

The clouds that gather round the setting sun

Do take a sober coloring from an eye

That hath kept watch o'er man's mortality;

200 Another race hath been, and other palms⁰ are won.

symbols of victory Thanks to the human heart by which we
live,

Thanks to its tenderness, its joys, and fears,

To me the meanest⁰ flower that blows⁰ can give *most ordinary*
/ blooms

Thoughts that do often lie too deep for tears.

1802-04 1807

I Wandered Lonely as a Cloud

I wandered lonely as a cloud

That floats on high o'er vales and hills,

When all at once I saw a crowd,

A host, of golden daffodils;

5 Beside the lake, beneath the trees,

Fluttering and dancing in the breeze.

Continuous as the stars that shine

And twinkle on the milky way,

They stretched in never-ending line

io Along the margin of a bay:

Ten thousand saw I at a glance,

Tossing their heads in sprightly dance.

The waves beside them danced; but they

Outdid the sparkling waves in glee;

15 A poet could not but be gay,

In such a jocund0 company; *cheerful*

I gazed—and gazed—but little thought

What wealth the show to me had brought:

For oft, when on my couch I lie

20 In vacant or in pensive mood,

They flash upon that inward eye

Which is the bliss of solitude;

And then my heart with pleasure fills,

And dances with the daffodils.

1804

1807

802 / WILLIAM WORDSWORTH

She Was a Phantom of Delight

She was a Phantom⁰ of delight *vivid image*

When first she gleamed upon my sight;

A lovely Apparition, sent

To be a moment's ornament;

5 Her eyes as stars of Twilight fair;

Like Twilight's, too, her dusky hair;

But all things else about her drawn

From May-time and the cheerful Dawn;

A dancing Shape, an Image gay,

10 To haunt, to startle, and way-lay.

I saw her upon nearer view,

A Spirit, yet a Woman too!

Her household motions light and free,

And steps of virgin-liberty;

15 A countenance in which did meet

Sweet records, promises as sweet;

A Creature not too bright or good

For human nature's daily food;

For transient sorrows, simple wiles,

20 Praise, blame, love, kisses, tears, and smiles.

And now I see with eye serene

The very pulse of the machine;⁰ *organism*

A Being breathing thoughtful breath,

A Traveler between life and death;

25 The reason firm, the temperate will,

Endurance, foresight, strength, and skill;

A perfect Woman, nobly planned,
To warn, to comfort, and command;
And yet a Spirit still, and bright
30 With something of angelic light.

1804 1807

The World Is Too Much with Us
The world is too much with us; late and soon,
Getting and spending, we lay waste our powers;
Little we see in Nature that is ours;
We have given our hearts away, a sordid boon!⁰ *gift*
5 This Sea that bares her bosom to the moon,
The winds that will be howling at all hours,
And are up-gathered now like sleeping flowers,
For this, for everything, we are out of tune;
It moves us not.—Great God! I'd rather be
io A Pagan suckled in a creed outworn;

THE SOLITARY REAPER / 8 0 3

So might I, standing on this pleasant lea,^o *open meadow*
Have glimpses that would make me less forlorn;
Have sight of Proteus rising from the sea;
Or hear old Triton blow his wreathed horn.⁴

1802-04 1807

The Solitary Reaper
Behold her, single in the field,
Yon solitary Highland Lass!
Reaping and singing by herself;
Stop here, or gently pass!
5 Alone she cuts and binds the grain,

And sings a melancholy strain;
O listen! for the Vale^o profound *valley*
Is overflowing with the sound.
No Nightingale did ever chaunt
io More welcome notes to weary bands
Of travelers in some shady haunt,
Among Arabian sands;
A voice so thrilling ne'er was heard
In springtime from the Cuckoo bird,
15 Breaking the silence of the seas
Among the farthest Hebrides.
Will no one tell me what she sings?—
Perhaps the plaintive numbers flow
For old, unhappy, far-off things,
20 And battles long ago;
Or is it some more humble lay,
Familiar matter of today?
Some natural sorrow, loss, or pain,
That has been, and may be again?
25 Whate'er the theme, the Maiden sang
As if her song could have no ending;
I saw her singing at her work,
And o'er the sickle bending—
I listened, motionless and still;
30 And, as I mounted up the hill,
The music in my heart I bore,
Long after it was heard no more.

1805 1807

4. In Greek mythology, Proteus, the “Old Man of while he takes many frightening shapes. Triton is the Sea,” rises from the sea at midday and can be the son of the sea god, Neptune; the sound of his forced to read the future by anyone who holds him conch-shell horn calms the waves.

804 / WILLIAM WORDSWORTH

Surprised by Joy

Surprised by Joy—impatient as the Wind

I turned to share the transport—Oh! with whom

But thee,⁵ deep buried in the silent tomb,

That spot which no vicissitude can find?

5 Love, faithful love, recalled thee to my mind—

But how could I forget thee? Through what power,

Even for the least division of an hour,

Have I been so beguiled as to be blind

To my most grievous loss!—That thought’s return

10 Was the worst pang that sorrow ever bore,

Save one, one only, when I stood forlorn,

Knowing my heart’s best treasure was no more;

That neither present time, nor years unborn

Could to my sight that heavenly face restore.

1813-14 1815

Mutability

From low to high doth dissolution climb,

And sink from high to low, along a scale

Of awful notes, whose concord shall not fail;

A musical but melancholy chime,

5 Which they can hear who meddle not with crime,

Nor avarice, nor over-anxious care.

**Truth fails not; but her outward forms that bear
The longest date do melt like frosty rime,^o *thin coating*
That in the morning whitened hill and plain
io And is no more; drop like the tower sublime
Of yesterday, which royally did wear
His crown of weeds, but could not even sustain
Some casual shout that broke the silent air,
Or the unimaginable touch of Time.**

1821 1822

Scorn Not the Sonnet

**Scorn not the sonnet; critic, you have frowned,
Mindless of its just honors; with this key
Shakespeare unlocked his heart; the melody
Of this small lute gave ease to Petrarch's⁶ wound;**

5. The poet's daughter Catharine, who died in his unconsummated love for a woman he called 1812, at age four. "Laura."

6. Italian poet (1304—1374), whose "wound" was

THE AEOLIAN HARP / 805

5 A thousand times this pipe did Tasso⁷ sound;
With it Camoens soothed an exile's grief;⁸
The sonnet glittered a gay myrtle leaf
Amid the cypress with which Dante crowned
His visionary brow; a glow-worm lamp,
10 It cheered mild Spenser, called from Faeryland
To struggle through dark ways; and, when a damp⁰ *dark mist*
Fell round the path of Milton, in his hand
The thing became a trumpet; whence he blew
Soul-animating strains—alas, too few!

1827 1827

S A M U E L T A Y L O R C O L E R I D G E

1772-1834

The Aeolian Harp¹

Composed at Clevedon, Somersetshire

My pensive Sara!² thy soft cheek reclined

Thus on mine arm, most soothing sweet it is

To sit beside our Cot,^o our Cot o'ergrown *cottage*

With white-flowered Jasmin, and the broad-leaved Myrtle,

5 (Meet^o emblems they of Innocence and Love!) *appropriate*

And watch the clouds, that late were rich with light,

Slow saddening round, and mark the star of eve

Serenely brilliant (such should Wisdom be)

Shine opposite! How exquisite the scents

10 Snatched from yon bean-field! and the world *so* hushed!

The stilly murmur of the distant Sea

Tells us of silence.

And that simplest Lute,

Placed length-ways in the clasping casement, hark!

How by the desultory breeze caressed,

15 Like some coy maid half yielding to her lover,

It pours such sweet upbraiding, as must needs

Tempt to repeat the wrong! And now, its strings

Boldlier swept, the long sequacious^o notes *uninterruptedly*
flowing

Over delicious surges sink and rise,

20 Such a soft floating witchery of sound

As twilight Elfins make, when they at eve

Voyage on gentle gales from Fairy-Land,
Where Melodies round honey-dropping flowers,

7. Italian poet (1544 - 1595).

a set of strings that vibrate in response to air cur-

8. Camoens (1524?—1580), Portuguese poet, was
resents. German and English Romantic writers often
banished from the royal court.

presented it as a symbol of the mind.

1. The wind harp (named after Aeolus, Greek god

2. Sara Fricker, whom Coleridge married in 1795.

of the winds) has a sounding board equipped with

He wrote this poem during their honeymoon.

806 / SAMUEL TAYLOR COLERIDGE

Footless and wild, like birds of Paradise,³

25 Nor pause, nor perch, hovering on untamed wing!

O! the one Life within us and abroad,

Which meets all motion and becomes its soul,

A light in sound, a sound-like power in light,

Rhythm in all thought, and joyance everywhere—

30 Methinks, it should have been impossible

Not to love all things in a world so filled;

Where the breeze warbles, and the mute still air

Is Music slumbering on her instrument.

And thus, my Love! as on the midway slope

35 Of yonder hill I stretch my limbs at noon,

Whilst through my half-closed eyelids I behold

The sunbeams dance, like diamonds, on the main,

And tranquil muse upon tranquility:

Full many a thought uncalled and undetained,
40 And many idle flitting phantasies,
Traverse my indolent and passive brain,
As wild and various as the random gales
That swell and flutter on this subject Lute!
And what if all of animated nature
45 Be but organic Harps diversely framed,
That tremble into thought, as o'er them sweeps
Plastic and vast, one intellectual breeze,
At once the Soul of each, and God of all?
But thy more serious eye a mild reproof
50 Darts, O beloved Woman! nor such thoughts
Dim and unhallowed dost thou not reject,
And biddest me walk humbly with my God.
Meek Daughter in the family of Christ!
Well hast thou said and holily dispraised
55 These shapings of the unregenerate mind;
Bubbles that glitter as they rise and break
On vain Philosophy's aye-babbling spring.
For never guiltless may I speak of him,
The Incomprehensible! save when with awe
60 I praise him, and with Faith that inly *feels*-,
Who with his saving mercies healed me,
A sinful and most miserable man,
Wildered and dark, and gave me to possess
Peace, and this Cot, and thee, heart-honored Maid!

1795 1796, 1817

3. Bright-plumaged birds of New Guinea and nearby islands; mistakenly supposed to have no feet and to spend their lives on the wing.

THIS LIME - TREE BOWER MY PRISON / 807

This Lime-Tree Bower My Prison

In the June of 1797, some long-expected Friends paid a visit to the

author's cottage and on the morning of their arrival, he met with

an accident, which disabled him from walking during the whole

time of their stay. One evening, when they had left him for a few

hours he composed the following lines in the garden bower.⁴

Well, they are gone, and here must I remain,

This lime-tree bower my prison! I have lost

Beauties and feelings, such as would have been

Most sweet to my remembrance even when age

5 Had dimmed mine eyes to blindness! They, meanwhile,

Friends, whom I never more may meet again,

On springy⁵ heath, along the hill-top edge,

Wander in gladness, and wind down, perchance,

To that still roaring dell, of which I told;

io The roaring dell, o'erwooded, narrow deep,

And only speckled by the mid-day sun;

Where its slim trunk the ash from rock to rock

Flings arching like a bridge;—that branchless ash,

Unsuned and damp, whose few poor yellow leaves

15 Ne'er tremble in the gale, yet tremble still,

Fanned by the water-fall! and there my friends
 Behold the dark green file of long lank weeds,
 That all at once (a most fantastic sight!)
 Still nod and drip beneath the dripping edge
 20 Of the blue clay-stone.
 Now, my friends emerge
 Beneath the wide wide Heaven—and view again
 The many-steepled tract magnificent
 Of hilly fields and meadows, and the sea,
 With some fair bark, perhaps, whose sails light up
 25 The slip of smooth clear blue betwixt two Isles
 Of purple shadow! Yes! they wander on
 In gladness all; but thou, methinks, most glad,
 My gentle-hearted Charles! for thou hast pined
 And hungered after Nature,⁶ many a year,
 30 In the great City pent, winning thy way
 With sad yet patient soul, through evil and pain
 And strange calamity!⁷ Ah! slowly sink
 Behind the western ridge, thou glorious sun!
 Shine in the slant beams of the sinking orb,

4. In fact, in July 1797, Coleridge's wife, Sara,

5. "*Elastic, I mean*" [Coleridge's note],
 accidentally spilled boiling milk on his foot during

6. In fact, Lamb, a devoted Londoner, considered
 a visit from the poet William Wordsworth (1770—
 nature "dead."

1850; see pp. 763 - 805); Wordsworth's sister,

7. About ten months earlier, Lamb's sister, Mary,

Dorothy; and the essayist and critic Charles Lamb, in a fit of insanity, had stabbed their mother to whom the earliest printed text of this poem was dedicated.

“Addressed.”

808 /

SAMUEL TAYLOR COLERIDGE

35

Ye purple heath-flowers! richlier burn, ye clouds!

Live in the yellow light, ye distant groves!

And kindle, thou blue ocean! So my Friend

Struck with deep joy may stand, as I have stood,

Silent with swimming sense; yea, gazing round

40

On the wide landscape, gaze till all doth seem

Less gross than bodily; and of such hues

As veil the Almighty Spirit, when yet he makes

Spirits perceive his presence.

A delight

Comes sudden on my heart, and I am glad

45

As I myself were there! Nor in this bower,

This little lime-tree bower, have I not marked

Much that has soothed me. Pale beneath the blaze

Hung the transparent foliage; and I watched

Some broad and sunny leaf, and loved to see

50

The shadow of the leaf and stem above

Dappling its sunshine! And that walnut-tree
Was richly tinged, and a deep radiance lay
Full on the ancient ivy, which usurps
Those fronting elms, and now, with blackest mass
55

Makes their dark branches gleam a lighter hue
Through the late twilight: and though now the bat
Wheels silent by, and not a swallow twitters,
Yet still the solitary humble bee
Sings in the bean-flower! Henceforth, I shall know
60

That Nature ne'er deserts the wise and pure;
No plot so narrow, be but Nature there,
No waste so vacant, but may well employ
Each faculty of sense, and keep the heart
Awake to Love and Beauty! and sometimes
'Tis well to be bereft of promised good,
65

That we may lift the Soul, and contemplate
With lively joy the joys we cannot share.
My gentle-hearted Charles! when the last rook
Beat its straight path along the dusky air
Homewards, I blessed it! deeming its black wing
70

(Now a dim speck, now vanishing in light)
Had crossed the mighty orb's dilated glory,
While thou stood'st gazing; or when all was still,
Flew creaking o'er thy head, and had a charm

For thee, my gentle-hearted Charles, to whom

75

No sound is dissonant which tells of Life.

1797

1800

K U B L A K H A N / 8 0 9

Kubla Khan⁸

Or a Vision in a Dream. A Fragment

In Xanadu did Kubla Khan

A stately pleasure dome decree:

Where Alph, the sacred river, ran

Through caverns measureless to man

5 Down to a sunless sea.

So twice five miles of fertile ground

With walls and towers were girdled round:

And there were gardens bright with sinuous⁰ rills,⁰ *curving / streams*

Where blossomed many an incense-bearing tree;

10 And here were forests ancient as the hills,

Enfolding sunny spots of greenery.

But oh! that deep romantic chasm which slanted

Down the green hill athwart a cedarn cover!

A savage place! as holy and enchanted

15 As e'er beneath a waning moon was haunted

By woman wailing for her demon lover!

And from this chasm, with ceaseless turmoil seething,

As if this earth in fast thick pants were breathing,

A mighty fountain momentarily was forced:

20 Amid whose swift half-intermitted burst
Huge fragments vaulted like rebounding hail,
Or chaffy grain beneath the thresher's flail:
And 'mid these dancing rocks at once and ever
It flung up momentarily the sacred river.

25 Five miles meandering with a mazy motion
Through wood and dale the sacred river ran,
Then reached the caverns measureless to man,
And sank in tumult to a lifeless ocean:

And 'mid this tumult Kubla heard from far

30 Ancestral voices prophesying war!

8. The first *khan*, or ruler, of the Mongol dynasty, three hundred lines; if that indeed can be called in thirteenth-century China. The topography and composition in which all the images rose up before place-names are fictitious. In a prefatory note to him as *things*, with a parallel production of the cor- the poem, Coleridge gave the following back- respondent expressions, without any sensation or ground: "In the summer of the year 1797, the consciousness of effort. On awaking he appeared author, then in ill health, had retired to a lonely to himself to have a distinct recollection of the farmhouse between Porlock and Linton, on the whole, and taking his pen, ink, and paper, instantly Exmoor confines of Somerset and Devonshire. In and eagerly wrote down the lines that are here pre- consequence of a slight indisposition, an anodyne

served. At this moment he was unfortunately called had been prescribed, from the effects of which he out by a person on business from Porlock, and fell asleep in his chair at the moment that he was detained by him above an hour, and on his return reading the following sentence, or words of the to his room, found, to his no small surprise and same substance, in *Purchas's Pilgrimage*: 'Here the mortification, that though he still retained some Khan Kubla commanded a palace to be built, and vague and dim recollection of the general purport a stately garden thereunto. And thus ten miles of of the vision, yet, with the exception of some eight fertile ground were inclosed with a wall.' The or ten scattered lines and images, all the rest had author continued for about three hours in a pro- passed away like the images on the surface of a found sleep, at least of the external sense, during stream into which a stone has been cast, but, alas! which time he has the most vivid confidence that without the after restoration of the latter!"

he could not have composed less than from two to

810 / SAMUEL TAYLOR COLERIDGE

The shadow of the dome of pleasure
Floated midway on the waves;
Where was heard the mingled measure
From the fountain and the caves.

35 It was a miracle of rare device,

A sunny pleasure dome with caves of ice!

A damsel with a dulcimer⁹

In a vision once I saw:

It was an Abyssinian maid,

40 And on her dulcimer she played,

Singing of Mount Abora.

Could I revive within me

Her symphony and song,

To such a deep delight 'twould win me,

45 That with music loud and long,

I would build that dome in air,

That sunny dome! those caves of ice!

And all who heard should see them there,

And all should cry, Beware! Beware!

50 His flashing eyes, his floating hair!

Weave a circle round him thrice,

And close your eyes with holy dread,

For he on honey-dew hath fed,

And drunk the milk of Paradise.

1797-98 1816

Frost at Midnight

The Frost performs its secret ministry,

Unhelped by any wind. The owlet's cry

Came loud—and hark, again! loud as before.

The inmates of my cottage, all at rest,

5 Have left me to that solitude, which suits

Abstruser musings: save that at my side

My cradled infant¹ slumbers peacefully.

'Tis calm indeed! so calm, that it disturbs
And vexes meditation with its strange
io And extreme silentness. Sea, hill, and wood,
This populous village! Sea, and hill, and wood,
With all the numberless goings-on of life,
Inaudible as dreams! the thin blue flame
Lies on my low-burnt fire, and quivers not;
15 Only that film,² which fluttered on the grate,
Still flutters there, the sole unquiet thing.

Methinks its motion in this hush of nature

9. A harplike instrument, said to foretell the arrival of
an unexpected guest, 1. Coleridge's eldest son, Hartley, a
nephew called "strangers" (lines 26, 41).

2. Bits of soot fluttering in a fireplace; in folklore,

FROST AT MIDNIGHT / 811

Gives it dim sympathies with me who live,
Making it a companionable form,
20 Whose puny flaps and freaks the idling Spirit
By its own moods interprets, everywhere
Echo or mirror seeking of itself,
And makes a toy of Thought.
But O! how oft,
How oft, at school, with most believing mind,
25 Presageful,⁰ have I gazed upon the bars, *foretelling*
To watch that fluttering *stranger!* and as oft
With unclosed lids, already had I dreamt
Of my sweet birthplace, and the old church tower,
Whose bells, the poor man's only music, rang
30 From morn to evening, all the hot Fair-day,³

So sweetly, that they stirred and haunted me
With a wild pleasure, falling on mine ear
Most like articulate sounds of things to come!
So gazed I, till the soothing things, I dreamt,
35 Lulled me to sleep, and sleep prolonged my dreams!
And so I brooded all the following morn,
Awed by the stern preceptor's⁰ face, mine eye *schoolmaster's*
Fixed with mock study on my swimming book:⁴
Save if the door half opened, and I snatched
40 A hasty glance, and still my heart leaped up,
For still I hoped to see the *stranger's* face,
Townsmen, or aunt, or sister more beloved,
My playmate when we both were clothed alike!⁵
Dear Babe, that sleepest cradled by my side,
45 Whose gentle breathings, heard in this deep calm,
Fill up the interspersed vacancies
And momentary pauses of the thought!
My babe so beautiful! it thrills my heart
With tender gladness, thus to look at thee,
so And think that thou shalt learn far other lore,
And in far other scenes! For I was reared
In the great city, pent 'mid cloisters dim,
And saw nought lovely but the sky and stars.
But *thou*, my babe! shalt wander like a breeze
55 By lakes and sandy shores, beneath the crags
Of ancient mountain, and beneath the clouds,
Which image in their bulk both lakes and shores
And mountain crags: so shalt thou see and hear

The lovely shapes and sounds intelligible
60 Of that eternal language, which thy God
Utters, who from eternity doth teach
Himself in all, and all things in himself.
Great universal Teacher! he shall mold
Thy spirit, and by giving make it ask.

3. M a r k e t day, o f t e n a t i m e of festivities.

5. In early childhood, w h e n boys a n d girls wore

4. I.e., seen unclearly b e c a u s e of e m o t i o n .

t h e s a m e kind of i n f a n t s ' clothing.

8 1 2 / S A M U E L T A Y L O R C O L E R I D G E

65 Therefore all seasons shall be sweet to thee,
Whether the summer clothe the general⁰ earth *generative,*
vernal

With greenness, or the redbreast sit and sing
Betwixt the tufts of snow on the bare branch
Of mossy apple tree, while the nigh thatch
70 Smokes in the sun-thaw; whether the eave-drops fall
Heard only in the trances of the blast,
Or if the secret ministry of frost
Shall hang them up in silent icicles,
Quietly shining to the quiet Moon.

1798 1798

The Rime of the Ancient Mariner

I N S E V E N P A R T S

*Facile credo, flares esse Naturas invisibles quam visibiles in
rerum*

*universitate. Sed horum [sic] omnium familiam quis nobis
enarrabit?*

et gradus et cognationes et discrimina et singulorum munera?

Quid

agunt? quae loca habitant? Harum rerum notitiam semper ambivit

ingenium humanum, nunquam attigit. Juvat, interea, non diffiteor,

quandoque in animo, in tabula, majoris et melioris mundi imaginem

contemplari: ne mens assuefacta hodiernae vitae minutiis se contra-

hat nimis, et tota subsidat in pusillas cogitationes. Sed veritati interea invigilandum est, modusque servandus, ut certa ab incertis, diem a

nocte, distinguamus.

T. BURNET6

Part I

An ancient Mariner

It is an ancient Mariner

meeteth three Gal-

lants bidden to a

And he stoppeth one of three.

wedding feast, and

—“By thy long gray beard and glittering eye,

detaineth one.

Now wherefore stopp’st thou me?

The Bridegroom’s doors are opened wide, 5

And I am next of kin;

The guests are met, the feast is set:

May’st hear the merry din.”

He holds him with his skinny hand,

“There was a ship,” quoth he. io

“Hold off! unhand me, graybeard loon!”

Eftsoons⁰ his hand dropped he. *straightway*

6. Thomas Burnet, seventeenth-century English

do not doubt that sometimes it is well for the soul

theologian, from his *Archaeologiae Philosophiae*: “I

to contemplate as in a picture the image of a larger

can easily believe that there are more invisible than

and better world, lest the mind, habituated to the

visible beings in the universe. But of their families,

small concerns of daily life, limit itself too much degrees, connections, distinctions, and functions, and sink entirely into trivial thinking. But mean-who shall tell us? How do they act? Where are they while we must be on watch for the truth, avoiding found? About such matters the h u m a n mind has extremes, so that we may distinguish certain from always circled without attaining knowledge. Yet I uncertain, day from night.”

**T H E R I M E O F T H E A N C I E N T M A R I N E R /
8 1 3**

The Wedding Guest

He holds him with his glittering eye—

is spellbound by the

eye of the old seafar-

The Wedding Guest stood still,

ing man, and con-

And listens like a three years' child:

strained to hear his

tale.

The Mariner hath his will.

The Wedding Guest sat on a stone:

He cannot choose but hear;

And thus spake on that ancient man,

The bright-eyed Mariner.

“The ship was cheered, the harbor cleared,

Merrily did we drop

Below the kirk,⁰ below the hill,

church

The Mariner tells

Below the lighthouse top.

how the ship sailed

southward with a

good wind and fair

The Sun came up upon the left,

weather, till it

reached the line.

Out of the sea came he!

And he shone bright, and on the right

Went down into the sea.

Higher and higher every day,

Till over the mast at noon—”

The Wedding Guest here beat his breast,

For he heard the loud bassoon.

The Wedding Guest

The bride hath paced into the hall,

heareth the bridal

music; but the Mari-

Red as a rose is she;

ner continueth his

Nodding their heads before her goes

tale.

The merry minstrelsy.

The Wedding Guest he beat his breast,

Yet he cannot choose but hear;

And thus spake on that ancient man,

The bright-eyed Mariner.

The ship driven by a

“And now the STORM-BLAST came, and he

storm toward the

South Pole.

Was tyrannous and strong;

He struck with his o’ertaking wings,

And chased us south along.

With sloping masts and dipping prow, 45

As who pursued with yell and blow

Still treads the shadow of his foe,

And forward bends his head,

The ship drove fast, loud roared the blast,

And southward aye we fled. 50

And now there came both mist and snow,

And it grew wondrous cold:

And ice, mast-high, came floating by,

As green as emerald.

814 / S A M U E L T A Y L O R C O L E R I D G E

The land of ice, and

And through the drifts the snowy eliftsc

cliffs

of fearful sounds

where no living thing Did send a dismal sheen:

was to be seen.

Nor shapes of men nor beasts we ken—

The ice was all between.

The ice was here, the ice was there,

The ice was all around:
It cracked and growled, and roared and howled,
Like noises in a swound!⁰
Till a great sea bird,
At length did cross an Albatross,
called the Albatross,
came through the
Thorough the fog it came;
snow-fog, and was
As if it had been a Christian soul,
received with great
joy and hospitality.
We hailed it in God's name.
It ate the food it ne'er had eat,
And round and round it flew.
The ice did split with a thunder-fit;
The helmsman steered us through!
And lo! the Albatross And a good south wind sprung up
behind;
proveth a bird of good
omen, and followeth The Albatross did follow,
the ship as it returned And every day, for food or play,
northward through
fog and floating ice.
Came to the mariners' hollo!
In mist or cloud, on mast or shroud,⁷
75
It perched for vespers⁰ nine;

evenings

Whiles all the night, through fog-smoke white,
Glimmered the white Moon-shine.”

The ancient Mariner “God save thee, ancient Mariner!

inhospitably killeth

the pious bird of good

From the fiends, that plague thee thus!—

omen.

Why look’st thou so?”—With my crossbow

I shot the **ALBATROSS**.

Part II

The Sun now rose upon the right:

Out of the sea came he,

Still hid in mist, and on the left 85

Went down into the sea.

And the good south wind still blew behind,

But no sweet bird did follow,

Nor any day for food or play

Came to the mariners' hollo! 90

7. Rope supporting a mast.

T H E R I M E O F T H E A N C I E N T M A R I N E R / 8 1 5

His shipmates cry out And I had done a hellish thing,
against the ancient

Mariner, for killing

And it would work 'em woe:

the bird of good luck. For all averred, I had killed the bird

That made the breeze to blow.

Ah wretch! said they, the bird to slay,

That made the breeze to blow!

But when the fog

Nor dim nor red, like God's own head,

cleared off, they jus-

tify the same, and

The glorious Sun uprist:0

thus make themselves Then all averred, I had killed the bird

*accomplices in the
crime.*

That brought the fog and mist.

‘Twas right, said they, such birds to slay,

That bring the fog and mist.

The fair breeze con-

The fair breeze blew, the white foam flew,

tinues; the ship enters

the Pacific Ocean,

The furrow followed free;

and sails northward, We were the first that ever burst

105

even till it reaches

the Line.

Into that silent sea.

0

equator

The ship hath been

Down dropped the breeze, the sails dropped down,

suddenly becalmed.

‘Twas sad as sad could be;

And we did speak only to break

The silence of the sea!

All in a hot and copper sky,

The bloody Sun, at noon,

Right up above the mast did stand,

No bigger than the Moon.

Day after day, day after day,

We stuck, nor breath nor motion;

As idle as a painted ship

Upon a painted ocean.

And the Albatross

Water, water, everywhere,

begins to be avenged. And all the boards did shrink;

Water, water, everywhere,

Nor any drop to drink.

The very deep did rot: O Christ!

That ever this should be!

Yea, slimy things did crawl with legs

Upon the slimy sea.

About, about, in reel and rout

The death-fires⁸ danced at night;

The water, like a witch's oils,

Burnt green, and blue and white.

8. Either St. Elmo's fire—light from atmospheric caused by the decomposition of putrescent matter electricity on a ship's rigging (regarded as a portent in the ocean,

of disaster)—or *ignis fatuus*, “foolish fire” (Latin)

816 / SAMUEL TAYLOR COLERIDGE

And some in dreams assured were

le m r i o n e o f f r e d ° f t h e S P i r i t t h a t p l a g u e d u s s o ;

invisible inhabitants Nine fathom deep he had followed us

of this planet, neither From the land of mist and snow.

departed souls nor

angels; concerning whom the learned few, Josephus, and the Platonic Constantinopolitan, Michael Psellus, may be consulted. They are very numerous, and there is no climate or element without one or more.

And every tongue, through utter drought, 13=
Was withered at the root;
We could not speak, no more than if
We had been choked with soot.

The shipmates, in

Ah! well-a-day! what evil looks

their sore distress,

would fain throw the Had I from old and young!

whole guilt on the

Instead of the cross, the Albatross

ancient Mariner: in

sign whereof they

About my neck was hung.

hang the dead sea

bird round his neck.

Part III

There passed a weary time. Each throat
Was parched, and glazed each eye.
A weary time! a weary time!
How glazed each weary eye,
The ancient Mariner When looking westward, I beheld
beholdeth a sign in
the element afar off.
A something in the sky.
At first it seemed a little speck,
And then it seemed a mist;
It moved and moved, and took at last
A certain shape, I wist.
knew
A speck, a mist, a shape, I wist!
And still it neared and neared:
As if it dodged a water sprite,
It plunged and tacked and veered.
At its nearer
With throats unslaked, with black lips baked,
approach, it seemeth
him to be a ship; and We could nor laugh nor wail;
at a dear ransom he
Through utter drought all dumb we stood!
freeth his speech from
the bonds of thirst.

I bit my arm, I sucked the blood,
And cried, A sail! a sail!
With throats unslaked, with black lips baked,
Agape they heard me call:

A flash of joy;

Gramercy! they for joy did grin,
thank heavens!

And all at once their breath drew in,
165

As they were drinking all.

*And horror follows. See! see! / j c r i e c]) s h e tacks no
more!*

tor can it be a ship

that comes onward Hither to work us weal;
benefit

without wind or tide? Without a breeze, without a tide,
She steadies with upright keel!

T H E R I M E O F T H E A N C I E N T M A R I N E R / 8 1 7

The western wave was all aflame.

The day was well nigh done!

Almost upon the western wave

Rested the broad bright Sun;

When that strange shape drove suddenly 175

Betwixt us and the Sun.

It seemeth him but

And straight the Sun was flecked with bars,

the skeleton of a ship. (Heaven's Mother send us grace!)

As if through a dungeon grate he peered

With broad and burning face.

Alas! (thought I, and my heart beat loud)

And its ribs are seen H q w f a s t ^ n e a r s a n (J n e a r s !

as bars on the face of . . -i l l l c

the setting Sun Are those her sails that glance in the sun,

T. I , I so cobwebs

Like restless gossameres: I

*The Specter-Woman Are those her ribs through which the Sun
and her Deathmate,*

and no other on

Did peer, as through a grate?

hoard the skeleton

And is that Woman all her crew?

ship.

Is that a **DEATH**? and are there two?

Is **DEATH** that woman's mate?

*Like vessel, like crew! [Jer [jps w e r e rec]]ier looks were
free, 190*

Her locks were yellow as gold:

Her skin was as white as leprosy,

The Nightmare **LIFE-IN-DEATH** was she,

Who thickens man's blood with cold.

Death and Life-in-

The naked hulk alongside came,

Death have diced for

the ship's crew and

And the twain were casting dice;

she (the latter) win-

“The game is done! I've won! I've won!”

neth the ancient

Mariner.

Quoth she, and whistles thrice.

No twilight within

The Sun's rim dips; the stars rush out:

the courts of the Sun. At one stride comes the dark;

With far-heard whisper, o'er the sea,

Off shot the specter-bark.

At the rising of the

We listened and looked sideways up!

Moon,

Fear at my heart, as at a cup,

My lifeblood seemed to sip!

The stars were dim, and thick the night,

The steersman's face by his lamp gleamed white;

From the sails the dew did drip—

Till clomb0 above the eastern bar

climbed

The horned Moon, with one bright star

210

Within the nether tip.

*One after another, One a (' t c r o n e ? b y t h e Star-dogged
Moon, Too quick for groan or sigh,*

818 / S A M U E L T A Y L O R C O L E R I D G E

Each turned his face with ghastly pang,

And cursed me with his eye.

215

His shipmates drop

Four times fifty living men,
down dead.

(And I heard nor sigh nor groan)
With heavy thump, a lifeless lump,
They dropped down one by one.

But Life-in-Death

The souls did from their bodies fly—

220

begins her work on

the ancient Mariner. They fled to bliss or woe!

And every soul, it passed me by,

Like the whizz of my cross-bow!

Part IV

The Wedding Guest

“I fear thee, ancient Mariner!

feareth that a Spirit is

talking to him;

I fear thy skinny hand!

225

And thou art long, and lank, and brown,

As is the ribbed sea-sand.

I fear thee and thy glittering eye,

And thy skinny hand, so brown.”—

But the ancient Mar-

Fear not, fear not, thou Wedding Guest!

iner assureth him of

his bodily life, and

This body dropped not down.

proceedeth to relate

his horrible penance. Alone, alone, all, all alone,

Alone on a wide wide sea!

And never a saint took pity on

My soul in agony.

He despiseth the

The many men, so beautiful!

creatures of the calm, And they all dead did lie:

And a thousand thousand slimy things

Lived on; and so did I.

And envieth that they I looked upon the rotting sea,

240

should live, and so

many lie dead.

And drew my eyes away;

I looked upon the rotting deck,

And there the dead men lay.

I looked to heaven, and tried to pray;

But or ever a prayer had gushed,

A wicked whisper came, and made

My heart as dry as dust.

I closed my lids, and kept them close,

And the balls like pulses beat,

For the sky and the sea, and the sea and the sky

Lay like a load on my weary eye,

And the dead were at my feet.

**T H E R I M E O F T H E A N C I E N T M A R I N E R /
8 1 9**

But the curse liveth

The cold sweat melted from their limbs,

for him in the eye of

the dead men.

Nor rot nor reek did they:

The look with which they looked on me

Had never passed away.

An orphan's curse would drag to hell

A spirit from on high;

But oh! more horrible than that
Is the curse in a dead man's eye!
Seven days, seven nights, I saw that curse,
And yet I could not die.

The moving Moon went up the sky,
And nowhere did abide:

In his loneliness and
Softly she was going up,

265

fixedness he yearneth
towards the journey-

And a star or two beside—

ing Moon, and the
stars that still

sojourn, yet still move Her beams bemoaned the sultry main,
onward; and every-

Like April hoar-frost spread;

where the blue sky
belongs to them, and

But where the ship's huge shadow lay,

is their appointed

The charmed water burnt away

270

rest, and their native
country and their

A still and awful red.

own natural homes, which they enter unannounced, as lords
that are certainly expected and yet there is a silent joy at their
arrival.

By the light of the
Beyond the shadow of the ship,
Moon he beholdeth
God's creatures of the I watched the water snakes:
great calm.

They moved in tracks of shining white,
And when they reared, the elfish light
275

Fell off in hoary flakes.

gray or white

Within the shadow of the ship
I watched their rich attire:
Blue, glossy green, and velvet black,
They coiled and swam; and every track
Was a flash of golden fire.

Their beauty and

O happy living things! no tongue
their happiness.

Their beauty might declare:
A spring of love gushed from my heart,

He blesseth them in

And I blessed them unaware:

his heart.

Sure my kind saint took pity on me,
And I blessed them unaware.

The spell begins to

The self-same moment I could pray;
And from my neck so free

The Albatross fell off, and sank
Like lead into the sea.

Part V

Oh sleep! it is a gentle thing,

Beloved from pole to pole!

820 / S A M U E L T A Y L O R C O L E R I D G E

To Mary Queen the praise be given!

She sent the gentle sleep from Heaven, 295

That slid into my soul.

By grace of the holy

The silly buckets on the deck, *lowly; harmless*

Mother, the ancient

Mariner is refreshed

That had so long remained,

with rain.

I dreamt that they were filled with dew;

And when I awoke, it rained. 300

My lips were wet, my throat was cold,

My garments all were dank;

Sure I had drunken in my dreams,

And still my body drank.

I moved, and could not feel my limbs: 305

I was so light—almost

I thought that I had died in sleep,

And was a blessed ghost.

He heareth sounds

And soon I heard a roaring wind:

and seeth strange

sights and commo-

It did not come anear; 310

tions in the sky and

But with its sound it shook the sails,

the element.

That were so thin and sere.⁰ *dry; withered*

The upper air burst into life!

And a hundred fire-flags sheen,⁹

To and fro they were hurried about! 315

And to and fro, and in and out,

The wan stars danced between.

And the coming wind did roar more loud,

And the sails did sigh like sedge;¹

And the rain poured down from one black cloud;

The Moon was at its edge.

The thick black cloud was cleft, and still

The Moon was at its side:

Like waters shot from some high crag,

The lightning fell with never a jag,

A river steep and wide.

The bodies of the

The loud wind never reached the ship,

ship's crew are

inspired, and the

Yet now the ship moved on!

ship moves on;

Beneath the lightning and the Moon

The dead men gave a groan.

They groaned, they stirred, they all uprose,
Nor spake, nor moved their eyes;

9. Shone. The “fire-flags” may be St. Elmo’s fire ning.

(see note 8, p. 815), the Southern Lights, or light- 1. Rushlike
plants bordering streams and lakes.

T H E R I M E O F T H E A N C I E N T M A R I N E R / 8 2 1

It had been strange, even in a dream,
To have seen those dead men rise.
The helmsman steered, the ship moved on; 335
Yet never a breeze up-blew;
The mariners all ‘gan work the ropes,
Where they were wont to do;
They raised their limbs like lifeless tools—
We were a ghastly crew. 340
The body of my brother’s son
Stood by me, knee to knee:
The body and I pulled at one rope,
But he said nought to me.

But not by the souls

“I fear thee, ancient Mariner!” 345

*of the men, nor by
demons of earth or*

Be calm, thou Wedding Guest!

middle air, but by a

‘Twas not those souls that fled in pain,

*blessed troop of
angelic spirits, sent*

Which to their corses⁰ came again, *corpses*

down by the invoca-

But a troop of spirits blest:

tion of the guardian

saint.

For when it dawned—they dropped their arms, 350

And clustered round the mast;

Sweet sounds rose slowly through their mouths,

And from their bodies passed.

Around, around, flew each sweet sound,

Then darted to the Sun; 355

Slowly the sounds came back again,

Now mixed, now one by one.

Sometimes a-dropping from the sky

I heard the sky-lark sing;

Sometimes all little birds that are, 360

How they seemed to fill the sea and air

With their sweet jargoning!0 *warbling*

And now 'twas like all instruments,

Now like a lonely flute;

And now it is an angel's song, 365

That makes the heavens be mute.

It ceased; yet still the sails made on

A pleasant noise till noon,

A noise like of a hidden brook

In the leafy month of June, 370

That to the sleeping woods all night

Singeth a quiet tune.

Till noon we quietly sailed on,

Yet never a breeze did breathe:

8 2 2 / S A M U E L T A Y L O R C O L E R I D G E

Slowly and smoothly went the ship,

Moved onward from beneath.

The lonesome Spirit

Under the keel nine fathom deep,

from the South Pole

carries on the ship as From the land of mist and snow,

far as the Line, in

The spirit slid: and it was he

obedience to the

angelic troop, but

That made the ship to go.

still requireth

The sails at noon left off their tune,

vengeance.

And the ship stood still also.

The Sun, right up above the mast,

Had fixed her to the ocean:

But in a minute she 'gan stir,

With a short uneasy motion—

Backwards and forwards half her length

With a short uneasy motion.

Then like a pawing horse let go,

She made a sudden bound: 390

It flung the blood into my head,

And I fell down in a swoond.

The Polar Spirit's fel-

How long in that same fit I lay,
low demons, the
invisible inhabitants I have not² to declare;
of the element, take
But ere my living life returned,
part in his wrong;
and two of them
I heard and in my soul discerned
relate, one to the
Two voices in the air.
other, that penance
long and heavy for
the ancient Mariner
“Is it he?” quoth one, “Is this the man?
hath been accorded
By him who died on cross,
to the Polar Spirit,
who returneth south-
With his cruel bow he laid full low
ward.
The harmless Albatross.
The spirit who bideth by himself
In the land of mist and snow,
He loved the bird that loved the man
Who shot him with his bow.” 405
The other was a softer voice,
As soft as honey-dew:
Quoth he, “The man hath penance done,

And penance more will do.”

Part VI

FIRST VOICE

“But tell me, tell me! speak again, 410
Thy soft response renewing—
What makes that ship drive on so fast?
What is the ocean doing?”

2. I.e., have not the knowledge.

THE RIME OF THE ANCIENT MARINER / 8 23

SECOND VOICE

“Still as a slave before his lord,
The ocean hath no blast; 415
His great bright eye most silently
Up to the Moon is cast—
If he may know which way to go;
For she guides him smooth or grim.
See, brother, see! how graciously 420
She looketh down on him.”

FIRST VOICE

The Mariner hath

“But why drives on that ship so fast,
been cast into a
trance; for the angelic Without or wave or wind?”
power causeth the
vessel to drive north-
ward faster than

SECOND VOICE

*human life could
endure.*

“The air is cut away before,
And closes from behind.
Fly, brother, fly! more high, more high!
Or we shall be belated:
For slow and slow that ship will go,
When the Mariner’s trance is abated.”

The supernatural

I woke, and we were sailing on
motion is retarded;
the Mariner awakes,
As in a gentle weather:
and his penance
‘Twas night, calm night, the moon was high;
SIMS *anew.*

The dead men stood together.
All stood together on the deck,
For a charnel-dungeon fitter:
All fixed on me their stony eyes,
That in the Moon did glitter.
The pang, the curse, with which they died,
Had never passed away:
I could not draw my eyes from theirs,
Nor turn them up to pray.

The curse is finally

And now this spell was snapped: once more

expiated.

I viewed the ocean green,
And looked far forth, yet little saw
Of what had else been seen—
Like one, that on a lonesome road
Doth walk in fear and dread,
And having once turned round walks on,
And turns no more his head;
Because he knows, a frightful fiend
Doth close behind him tread.

8 2 4 / S A M U E L T A Y L O R C O L E R I D G E

But soon there breathed a wind on me,
Nor sound nor motion made:
Its path was not upon the sea,
In ripple or in shade.

It raised my hair, it fanned my cheek
Like a meadow-gale of spring—
It mingled strangely with my fears,
Yet it felt like a welcoming.

Swiftly, swiftly flew the ship,
Yet she sailed softly too:
Sweetly, sweetly blew the breeze—
On me alone it blew.

And the ancient Mar- Oh! dream of joy! is this indeed
iner beholdeth his
native country.

The lighthouse top I see?
Is this the hill? is this the kirk?

Is this mine own countree?
We drifted o'er the harbor-bar,
And I with sobs did pray—
O let me be awake, my God
Or let me sleep alway.
The harbor-bay was clear as glass,
So smoothly it was strewn!
And on the bay the moonlight lay,
And the shadow of the Moon.
The rock shone bright, the kirk no less,
That stands above the rock:
The moonlight steeped in silentness
The steady weathercock.
And the bay was white with silent light,
Till rising from the same,
The angelic spirits
Full many shapes, that shadows were,
leave the dead bodies, In crimson colors came.
A little distance from the prow
Those crimson shadows were:
And appear in their
I turned my eyes upon the deck—
own forms of light.
Oh, Christ! what saw I there!
Each corse lay flat, lifeless and flat,
And, by the holy rood!
cross of Christ
A man all light, a seraph^o-man,

angel-like

On every corse there stood.

This seraph-band, each waved his hand:

It was a heavenly sight!

**T H E R I M E O F T H E A N C I E N T M A R I N E R /
8 2 5**

They stood as signals to the land,

Each one a lovely light; 495

This seraph-band, each waved his hand,

No voice did they impart—

No voice; but oh! the silence sank

Like music on my heart.

But soon I heard the dash of oars, 500

I heard the Pilot's cheer;

My head was turned perforce away

And I saw a boat appear.

The Pilot and the Pilot's boy,

I heard them coming fast: 505

Dear Lord in Heaven! it was a joy

The dead men could not blast.

I saw a third—I heard his voice:

It is the Hermit good!

He singeth loud his godly hymns 510

That he makes in the wood.

He'll shrieve³ my soul, he'll wash away

The Albatross's blood.

Part VII

The Hermit of the

This Hermit good lives in that wood

Wood

Which slopes down to the sea.

How loudly his sweet voice he rears!

He loves to talk with marineres

That come from a far countree.

He kneels at morn, and noon, and eve—

He hath a cushion plump:

It is the moss that wholly hides

The rotted old oak stump.

The skiff-boat neared: I heard them talk,

“Why, this is strange, I trow!

Where are those lights so many and fair,

That signal made but now?”

Approacheth the ship “Strange, by my faith!” the Hermit said

—

with wonder.

“And they answered not our cheer!

The planks looked warped! and see those sails,

How thin they are and sere!

3. Set free from sin.

826 / S A M U E L T A Y L O R C O L E R I D G E

I never saw aught like to them,

Unless perchance it were

Brown skeletons of leaves that lag
My forest-brook along;
When the ivy tod0 is heavy with snow, *bushy clump*
And the owlet whoops to the wolf below,
That eats the she-wolfs young.”
“Dear Lord! it hath a fiendish look,”
The Pilot made reply,
“I am a-feared”—“Push on, push on!”
Said the Hermit cheerily.
The boat came closer to the ship,
But I nor spake nor stirred;
The boat came close beneath the ship,
And straight a sound was heard.
The ship suddenly
Under the water it rumbled on,
sinketh.
Still louder and more dread:
It reached the ship, it split the bay;
The ship went down like lead.
The ancient Mariner Stunned by that loud and dreadful sound,
is saved in the Pilot’s
boat.
Which sky and ocean smote,
Like one that hath been seven days drowned
My body lay afloat;
But swift as dreams, myself I found
Within the Pilot’s boat.
Upon the whirl, where sank the ship,

The boat spun round and round;
And all was still, save that the hill
Was telling of the sound.

I moved my lips—the Pilot shrieked 560
And fell down in a fit;
The holy Hermit raised his eyes,
And prayed where he did sit.

I took the oars: the Pilot's boy,
Who now doth crazy go, 565
Laughed loud and long, and all the while
His eyes went to and fro.

“Ha! ha!” quoth he, “full plain I see,
The Devil knows how to row.”

And now, all in my own countree, 570
I stood on the firm land!
The Hermit stepped forth from the boat,
And scarcely he could stand.

T H E R I M E O F T H E A N C I E N T M A R I N E R / 8 2 7

The ancient Mariner «**Q** shrieve me, shrieve me, holy man!”
earnestly entreateth . . . , . . .

the Hermit to shrieve **I** ne Hermit crossed⁴ his brow.

him; and the penance “**S**ay quick,” quoth he, “**I** bid thee
say-of life falls on him.

What manner of man art thou?”

Forthwith this frame of mine was wrenched

With a woeful agony,

Which forced me to begin my tale;

And then it left me free.

And ever and anon

Since then, at an uncertain hour,

throughout his future

life an agony con-

That agony returns:

straineth him to

And till my ghastly tale is told,

travel from land to

land;

This heart within me burns.

I pass, like night, from land to land;

I have strange power of speech;

That moment that his face I see,

I know the man that must hear me:

To him my tale I teach.

What loud uproar bursts from that door!

The wedding guests are there:

But in the garden-bower the bride

And bridemaids singing are:

And hark the little vesper bell,

Which biddeth me to prayer!

O Wedding Guest! this soul hath been

Alone on a wide wide sea:

So lonely 'twas, that God himself

Scarce seemed there to be.

O sweeter than the marriage feast,

'Tis sweeter far to me,

To walk together to the kirk

With a goodly company!
To walk together to the kirk,
And all together pray,
While each to his great Father bends,
Old men, and babes, and loving friends
And youths and maidens gay!
And to teach, by his
Farewell, farewell! but this I tell
own example, love
and reverence to all
To thee, thou Wedding Guest!
things that God made]-[e prayeth well, who loveth well
and loveth
Both man and bird and beast.
He prayeth best, who loveth best
All things both great and small;
4. Made the sign of the cross upon.
8 2 8 / S A M U E L T A Y L O R C O L E R I D G E
For the dear God who loveth us,
He made and loveth all.
The Mariner, whose eye is bright,
Whose beard with age is hoar,
Is gone: and now the Wedding Guest 620
Turned from the bridegroom's door.
He went like one that hath been stunned,
And is of sense forlorn:0 *forsaken*
A sadder and a wiser man,
He rose the morrow morn. 625

1797-98 1817

Dejection: An Ode

Late, late yestreen I saw the new Moon,

With the old Moon in her arms;

And I fear, I fear, my master dear!

We shall have a deadly storm.

*Ballad of Sir Patrick Spence*⁵

Well! If the bard was weather-wise, who made

The grand old ballad of Sir Patrick Spence,

This night, so tranquil now, will not go hence

Unroused by winds, that ply a busier trade

5 Than those which mold yon cloud in lazy flakes,

Or the dull sobbing draft, that moans and rakes

Upon the strings of this Aeolian lute,⁶

Which better far were mute.

For lo! the New-moon winter-bright!

io And overspread with phantom light,

(With swimming phantom light o'erspread

But rimmed and circled by a silver thread)

I see the old Moon in her lap, foretelling

The coming-on of rain and squally blast.

15 And oh! that even now the gust were swelling,

And the slant night shower driving loud and fast!

Those sounds which oft have raised me, whilst they awed,

And sent my soul abroad,

Might now perhaps their wonted⁰ impulse give, *usual*

20 Might startle this dull pain, and make it move and live!

A grief without a pang, void, dark, and drear,

A stifled, drowsy, unimpassioned grief,

5. An early modern ballad (see p. 103).

a set of strings that vibrate in response to air cur-

6. The wind harp (named after Aeolus, Greek god

rents.

of the winds) has a sounding board equipped with

DEJECTION: A NODE / 829

Which finds no natural outlet, no relief,

In word, or sigh, or tear—

25 O Lady! in this wan and heartless mood,

To other thoughts by yonder throstle⁰ wooed, *song thrush*

All this long eve, so balmy and serene,

Have I been gazing on the western sky,

And its peculiar tint of yellow green:

30 And still I gaze—and with how blank an eye!

And those thin clouds above, in flakes and bars,

That give away their motion to the stars;

Those stars, that glide behind them or between,

Now sparkling, now bedimmed, but always seen:

35 Yon crescent Moon, as fixed as if it grew

In its own cloudless, starless lake of blue;

I see them all so excellently fair,

I see, not feel, how beautiful they are!

3

My genial⁰ spirits⁰ fail; *creative I energies*

40 And what can these avail

To lift the smothering weight from off my breast?
It were a vain endeavor,
Though I should gaze forever
On that green light that lingers in the west:
45 I may not hope from outward forms to win
The passion and the life, whose fountains are within.

4

O Lady! we receive but what we give,
And in our life alone does Nature live:
Ours is her wedding garment, ours her shroud!
50 And would we aught behold, of higher worth,
Than that inanimate cold world allowed
To the poor loveless ever-anxious crowd,
Ah! from the soul itself must issue forth
A light, a glory, a fair luminous cloud
55 Enveloping the Earth—
And from the soul itself must there be sent
A sweet and potent voice, of its own birth,
Of all sweet sounds the life and element!

5

O pure of heart! thou need'st not ask of me
60 What this strong music in the soul may be!
What, and wherein it doth exist,
This light, this glory, this fair luminous mist,
This beautiful and beauty-making power.
Joy, virtuous Lady! Joy that ne'er was given,
65 Save to the pure, and in their purest hour,
Life, and Life's effluence, cloud at once and shower,

Joy, Lady! is the spirit and the power,

830 / SAMUEL TAYLOR COLERIDGE

Which wedding Nature to us gives in dower

A new Earth and new Heaven,

70 Undreamt of by the sensual and the proud—

Joy is the sweet voice, Joy the luminous cloud—

We in ourselves rejoice!

And thence flows all that charms or ear or sight,

All melodies the echoes of that voice,

75 All colors a suffusion from that light.

6

There was a time when, though my path was rough,

This joy within me dallied with distress,

And all misfortunes were but as the stuff

Whence Fancy made me dreams of happiness:

80 For hope grew round me, like the twining vine,

And fruits, and foliage, not my own, seemed mine.

But now afflictions bow me down to earth:

Nor care I that they rob me of my mirth;

But oh! each visitation

85 Suspends what nature gave me at my birth,

My shaping spirit of Imagination.

For not to think of what I needs must feel,

But to be still and patient, all I can;

And happily by abstruse research to steal

90 From my own nature all the natural man—

This was my sole resource, my only plan:

Till that which suits a part infects the whole,

And now is almost grown the habit of my soul.

7

Hence, viper thoughts, that coil around my mind,

95 Reality's dark dream!

I turn from you, and listen to the wind,

Which long has raved unnoticed. What a scream

Of agony by torture lengthened out

That lute sent forth! Thou Wind, that rav'st without,

100 Bare crag, or mountain tairn,^o or blasted tree, *pool*

Or pine grove whither woodman never clomb,

Or lonely house, long held—the witches' home,

Methinks were fitter instruments for thee,

Mad lutanist! who in this month of showers,

105 Of dark-brown gardens, and of peeping flowers,

Mak'st devils' yule,⁷ with worse than wintry song,

The blossoms, buds, and timorous^o leaves among. *timid*

Thou actor, perfect in all tragic sounds!

Thou mighty poet, e'en to frenzy bold!

110 What tell'st thou now about?

'Tis of the rushing of an host in rout,

With groans, of trampled men, with smarting wounds—

At once they groan with pain, and shudder with the cold!

7. A w i n t e r storm in spring; h e n c e an u n n a t u r a l or
“devils' ” C h r i s t m a s .

R O S E A Y L M E R / 8 3 1

But hush! there is a pause of deepest silence!

And all that noise, as of a rushing crowd,

With groans, and tremulous shudderings—all is over—

**It tells another tale, with sounds less deep and loud!
A tale of less affright,
And tempered with delight,
As Otway's self had framed the tender lay—
'Tis of a little child
Upon a lonesome wild,
Not far from home, but she hath lost her way:
And now moans low in bitter grief and fear,
And now screams loud, and hopes to make her mother
hear.
Tis midnight, but small thoughts have I of sleep:
Full seldom may my friend such vigils keep!
Visit her, gentle Sleep! with wings of healing,
And may this storm be but a mountain birth,
130 May all the stars hang bright above her dwelling,
Silent as though they watched the sleeping Earth!
With light heart may she rise,
Gay fancy, cheerful eyes,
Joy lift her spirit, joy attune her voice;
135 To her may all things live, from pole to pole,
Their life the eddying of her living soul!
O simple spirit, guided from above,
Dear Lady! friend devoutest of my choice,
Thus mayest thou ever, evermore rejoice.**

1802 1802

W A L T E R S A V A G E L A N D O R

1775-1864

Rose Aylmer1

**Ah what avails the sceptered race,
Ah what the form divine!
What every virtue, every grace!
Rose Aylmer, all were thine.
5 Rose Aylmer, whom these wakeful eyes
May weep, but never see,
A night of memories and of sighs
I consecrate to thee.**

1806, 1831, 1846

8. Thomas Otway (1 6 5 2 - 1 6 8 5) , poet and drama-
1. The Honorable Rose Whitworth Aylmer (1 7 7 9 -
1800), whom Landor had known in Wales, died
(1680), a work thought to have influenced Cole-
suddenly, in Calcutta.
ridge.

8 3 2 / W A L T E R S A V A G E L A N D O R

Past Ruined Ilion Helen² Lives

**Past ruined Ilion Helen lives,
Alcestis³ rises from the shades;
Verse calls them forth; 'tis verse that gives
Immortal youth to mortal maids.
5 Soon shall Oblivion's deepening veil
Hide all the peopled hills you see,
The gay, the proud, while lovers hail
In distant ages you and me.
The tear for fading beauty check,
10 For passing glory cease to sigh;**

**One form shall rise above the wreck,
One name, Ianthe,⁴ shall not die.**

1831

Dirce⁵

**Stand close around, ye Stygian set,⁶
With Dirce in one boat conveyed!
Or Charon, seeing may forget
That he is old and she a shade.**

1831, 1846

To Robert Browning⁷

**There is delight in singing, though none hear
Beside the singer; and there is delight
In praising, though the praiser sit alone
And see the praised far off him, far above.**

**5 Shakspeare is not *our* poet, but the world's,
Therefore on him no speech; and short for thee,
Browning! Since Chaucer was alive and hale,
No man hath walked along our roads with step
So active, so inquiring eye, or tongue
io So varied in discourse. But warmer climes**

Give brighter plumage, stronger wing; the breeze

2. Helen of Troy ("Ilion"), whose abduction
Countess de Morlande and with whom he con-
brought about the Trojan War.

duct ed a long-term affair.

3. In Greek mythology, Alcestis sacrificed her life

5. In Greek mythology, the wife of King Lycus,
for her husband, who was stricken with a mortal

killed by being tied to a bull's horns .

illness. She was then brought back from the under-

6. The shades of the dead who were ferried by
world by Hercules .

Charon over the river Styx to Hades .

4. The name given by Landor to Sophia Jane

7. English poet (1812 - 1889 ; see pp. 1009 - 41) .

Swift, an Irish woman who eventually became

WRITTEN AFTERSWIMMINGFROMSE STOSTOABYDOS/833

Of Alpine heights thou playest with, borne on

Beyond Sorrento and Amalfi, where

The Siren waits thee, singing song for song.⁸

1845

Dying Speech of an Old Philosopher

I strove with none, for none was worth my strife:

Nature I loved, and, next to Nature, Art:

I warmed both hands before the fire of Life;

It sinks; and I am ready to depart.

1849

GEORGE GORDON, LORD BYRON

1788-1824

Written after Swimming from Sestos to Abydos¹

i

If, in the month of dark December,

Leander, who was nightly wont^o *accustomed*

(What maid will not the tale remember?)

To cross thy stream, broad Hellespont!

2

**5 If, when the wintry tempest roared,
He sped to Hero, nothing loath,
And thus of old thy current poured,
Fair Venus! how I pity both!**

3

**For *me*, degenerate modern wretch,
io Though in the genial month of May,
My dripping limbs I faintly stretch,
And think I've done a feat today.**

4

**But since he crossed the rapid tide,
According to the doubtful story,**

8. In Greek mythology, the Sirens drowned themselves in despair when Odysseus escaped the lure of their song. *Sorrento and Amalfi*: towns near Naples that Browning visited on his second trip to Italy in 1844 and that figure in some of his early poems.

834 / G E O R G E G O R D O N , L O R D B Y R O N

15 To woo—and—Lord knows what beside,
And swam for Love, as I for Glory;

5

Twere hard to say who fared the best:
Sad mortals! thus the gods still plague you!
He lost his labor, I my jest;
20 For he was drowned, and I've the ague. *0 chills and fever*
1810 1812

She Walks in Beauty

i

She walks in beauty, like the night
Of cloudless climes and starry skies;
And all that's best of dark and bright
Meet in her aspect and her eyes:

5 Thus mellowed to that tender light
Which heaven to gaudy day denies.

2

One shade the more, one ray the less,
Had half impaired the nameless grace
Which waves in every raven tress,
io Or softly lightens o'er her face;
Where thoughts serenely sweet express
How pure, how dear their dwelling place.

3

And on that cheek, and o'er that brow,
So soft, so calm, yet eloquent,
15 The smiles that win, the tints that glow,
But tell of days in goodness spent,
A mind at peace with all below,
A heart whose love is innocent!

1814 1815

The Destruction of Sennacherib²

i

The Assyrian came down like the wolf on the fold,
And his cohorts were gleaming in purple and gold;
And the sheen of their spears was like stars on the sea,
When the blue wave rolls nightly on deep Galilee.

2. Assyrian king, whose armies, while besieging Jerusalem (701 B.C.E.), were attacked by a violent plague (2 Kings 19.35).

W H E N W E T W O P A R T E D / 8 3 5

2

**5 Like the leaves of the forest when summer is green,
That host with their banners at sunset were seen:
Like the leaves of the forest when autumn hath blown,
That host on the morrow lay withered and strown.**

3

**For the Angel of Death spread his wings on the blast,
io And breathed in the face of the foe as he passed;
And the eyes of the sleepers waxed deadly and chill,
And their hearts but once heaved, and forever grew still!**

4

**And there lay the steed with his nostril all wide,
But through it there rolled not the breath of his pride;
15 And the foam of his gasping lay white on the turf,
And cold as the spray of the rock-beating surf.**

5

**And there lay the rider distorted and pale,
With the dew on his brow, and the rust on his mail:
And the tents were all silent, the banners alone,**

20 The lances unlifted, the trumpet unblown.

6

And the widows of Ashur⁰ are loud in their wail, *Assyria*

And the idols are broke in the temple of Baal;s

And the might of the Gentile,⁴ unsmote by the sword,

Hath melted like snow in the glance of the Lord!

1815 1815

When We Two Parted

i

When we two parted

In silence and tears,

Half broken-hearted

To sever for years,

5 Pale grew thy cheek and cold,

Colder thy kiss;

Truly that hour foretold

Sorrow to this.

The dew of the morning

io Sunk chill on my brow—

It felt like the warning

3. Deity of t h e Assyrians. 4. A non-Jewish person; h e r e , S e n n a c h e r i b .

8 3 6 / G E O R G E G O R D O N , L O R D B Y R O N

Of what I feel now.

Thy vows are all broken,

And light is thy fame;

15 I hear thy name spoken,

And share in its shame.

3

They name thee before me,
A knell to mine ear;
A shudder comes o'er me—
20 Why wert thou so dear?
They know not I knew thee,
Who knew thee too well—
Long, long shall I rue thee,
Too deeply to tell.

4

25 In secret we met—
In silence I grieve,
That thy heart could forget,
Thy spirit deceive.
If I should meet thee
30 After long years,
How should I greet thee?—
With silence and tears.

1815 1815

So We'll Go No More A-Roving

i

So we'll go no more a-roving
So late into the night,
Though the heart be still as loving,
And the moon be still as bright.

2

5 For the sword outwears its sheath,
And the soul wears out the breast,

And the heart must pause to breathe,
And Love itself have rest.

3

Though the night was made for loving,
io And the day returns too soon,
Yet we'll go no more a-roving
By the light of the moon.

1817

1830

D O N J U A N / 8 3 7

*From Don Juan*⁵

Fragment on the Back of the Ms. of Canto I

**I would to Heaven that I were so much clay,
As I am blood, bone, marrow, passion, feeling—
Because at least the past were passed away,
And for the future—(but I write this reeling,
5 Having got drunk exceedingly to-day,
So that I seem to stand upon the ceiling)
I say—the future is a serious matter—
And so—for God's sake—hock⁶ and soda-water!**

From Canto the First

i

**I want⁰ a hero: an uncommon want, *lack*
When every year and month sends forth a new one,
Till, after cloying the gazettes⁷ with cant,
The age discovers he is not the true one;
5 Of such as these I should not care to vaunt,
I'll therefore take our ancient friend Don Juan—**

**We all have seen him, in the pantomime,⁸
Sent to the Devil somewhat ere his time.**

2

**Vernon, the butcher Cumberland, Wolfe, Hawke,
io Prince Ferdinand, Granby, Burgoyne, Keppel, Howe,⁹
Evil and good, have had their tithe⁰ of talk, *due tribute*
And filled their sign-posts then, like Wellesley now;
Each in their turn like Banquo's monarchs stalk,
Followers of Fame, "nine farrow" of that sow:¹
15 France, too, had Buonaparte and Dumourier
Recorded in the *Moniteur* and *Courier*.²**

3

**Barnave, Brissot, Condorcet, Mirabeau,
Petion, Cloutz, Danton, Marat, La Fayette³
Were French, and famous people, as we know;**

5. Pronounced in the English fashion, *Don Joo-*
"heroes," such as Wellesley (line 12), the duke of
un. The hero is a legendary Spanish nobleman, a
Wellington, who defeated Napoleon at Waterloo.

notorious seducer of women; in most versions, but

1. Cf. Shakespeare's *Macbeth* 4.1, lines 80 - 81
not Byron's satire, finally carried off to hell. Canto

("Pour in sow's blood that hath eaten / Her nine

I comprises 222 stanzas; stanzas 1—119, given

farrow") and 118—19 ("shall Banquo's issue ever /

here, conclude with the beginning of the romance

Reign in this kingdom?"). The sow, Fame, eats her

between Don Juan and Donna Julia.

offspring—i.e., the heroes just listed.

6. Rhine wine, a supposed remedy for the hang-

2. “Buonaparte” is Napoleon, and Dumourier a
over.

French general, both of whose victories and

7. Official notices or newspapers.

defeats were chronicled in the French newspapers

8. I.e., on the stage, in one or another of many

Gazette Nationale; ou le Moniteur Universel and *le*
adaptations.

Courier Republicain.

9. British military leaders of the eighteenth cen-

3. French generals and politicians connected with

tury, their fame extinguished by more recent

the French Revolution, many of them guillotined.

838 / G E O R G E G O R D O N , L O R D B Y R O N

20 And there were others, scarce forgotten yet,

Joubert, Hoche, Marceau, Lannes, Desaix, Moreau,⁴

With many of the military set,

Exceedingly remarkable at times,

But not at all adapted to my rhymes.

4

25 Nelson⁵ was once Britannia’s god of War,

And still should be so, but the tide is turned;

There’s no more to be said of Trafalgar,

‘Tis with our hero quietly inurned;

Because the army’s grown more popular,

30 At which the naval people are concerned;

Besides, the Prince is all for the land-service,
Forgetting Duncan, Nelson, Howe, and Jervis.⁶

5

Brave men were living before Agamemnon⁷

And since, exceeding valorous and sage,

35 A good deal like him too, though quite the same none;

But then they shone not on the poet's page,

And so have been forgotten:—I condemn none,

But can't find any in the present age

Fit for my poem (that is, for my new one);

40 So, as I said, I'll take my friend Don Juan.

6

Most epic poets plunge "*in medias res*"⁸

(Horace makes this the heroic turnpike road),

And then your hero tells, when'er you please,

What went before—by way of episode,

45 While seated after dinner at his ease,

Beside his mistress in some soft abode,

Palace, or garden, paradise, or cavern,

Which serves the happy couple for a tavern.

7

That is the usual method, but not mine—

50 My way is to begin with the beginning;

The regularity of my design

Forbids all wandering as the worst of sinning,

And therefore I shall open with a line

(Although it cost me half an hour in spinning),

55 Narrating somewhat of Don Juan's father,

And also of his mother, if you'd rather.

4. Other French military men; most of these died

7. Commander of the Greeks at the siege of Troy.
in battle.

8. In *Ars Poetica* 148—49, the Roman poet and sat-

5. British naval hero, fatally wounded at the Battle
irist Horace (65—8 B.C.E.) asserted that the writer
of Trafalgar (1805).

of an epic should rush his readers “into the middle

6. British naval commanders. *The Prince*: the
of the story.”

prince of Wales.

D O N J U A N / 8 3 9

95

In Seville was he born, a pleasant city,

Famous for oranges and women—he

Who has not seen it will be much to pity,

60 So says the proverb—and I quite agree;

Of all the Spanish towns is none more pretty,

Cadiz perhaps—but that you soon may see;

Don Juan's parents lived beside the river,

A noble stream, and called the Guadalquivir.

9

65 His father's name was Jose⁹— Don, of course,—

A true Hidalgo,¹ free from every stain

Of Moor or Hebrew blood, he traced his source

Through the most Gothic gentlemen of Spain;²

A better cavalier ne'er mounted horse,

70 Or, being mounted, e'er got down again,
Than Jose, who begot our hero, who
Begot—but that's to come—Well, to renew:

1 0

His mother was a learned lady, famed
For every branch of every science known—
75 In every Christian language ever named,
With virtues equaled by her wit alone:
She made the cleverest people quite ashamed,
And even the good with inward envy groan,
Finding themselves so very much exceeded,
so In their own way, by all the things that she did.

11

Her memory was a mine: she knew by heart
All Calderon and greater part of Lope,³
So, that if any actor missed his part,
She could have served him for the prompter's copy;
85 For her Feinagle's⁴ were an useless art,
And he himself obliged to shut up shop—he
Could never make a memory so fine as
That which adorned the brain of Donna Inez.

1 2

Her favorite science was the mathematical,
90 Her noblest virtue was her magnanimity,
Her wit (she sometimes tried at wit) was Attic⁵ all,
Her serious sayings darkened to sublimity;

9. The Spanish spelling is *Jose*, but Byron's meter
de Vega (1562—1635), preeminent Spanish dram-

requires *Jose*.

artists.

1. Spanish noble of minor degree.

4. Gregor von Feinagle (1765—1819), originator of

2. Descended from the Visigoths, who conquered
mnemonics, a method of memorization. He lec-
Spain in the fifth century.

tured in England in 1811.

3. Calderon de la Barca (1 6 0 0 - 1 6 8 1) and Lope

5. Athenian; i.e., refined, learned.

8 4 0 / G E O R G E G O R D O N , L O R D B Y R O N

In short, in all things she was fairly what I call

A prodigy—her morning dress was dimity,

95 Her evening silk, or, in the summer, muslin,

And other stuffs, with which I won't stay puzzling.

1 3

She knew the Latin—that is, “the Lord's prayer,”

And Greek—the alphabet—I'm nearly sure;

She read some French romances here and there,

100 Although her mode of speaking was not pure;

For native Spanish she had no great care,

At least her conversation was obscure;

Her thoughts were theorems, her words a problem,

As if she deemed that mystery would ennoble 'em.

1 4

105 She liked the English and the Hebrew tongue,

And said there was analogy between 'em;

She proved it somehow out of sacred song,

But I must leave the proofs of those who've seen 'em;
 But this I heard her say, and can't be wrong,
 110 And all may think which way their judgments lean 'em,
 " 'Tis strange—the Hebrew noun which means 'I am,'⁶
 The English always use to govern d n."⁷
 Some women use their tongues—she *looked* a lecture,
 Each eye a sermon, and her brow a homily,
 115 An all-in-all sufficient self-director,
 Like the lamented late Sir Samuel Romilly,⁸
 The Law's expounder, and the State's corrector,
 Whose suicide was almost an anomaly—
 One sad example more, that "All is vanity"⁹—
 120 (The jury brought their verdict in "Insanity!")
 1 6

In short, she was a walking calculation,
 Miss Edgeworth's novels stepping from their covers,
 Or Mrs. Trimmer's books on education,
 Or "Coelebs' Wife"¹ set out in quest of lovers,
 125 Morality's prim personification,
 In which not Envy's self a flaw discovers;
 To others' share let "female errors fall,"²
 For she had not even one—the worst of all.

6. The name of God, "I am that I am" (Exodus

1. A novel by Hannah More (1745-1833; see 3.14).

pp. 707-11), who like Maria Edgeworth (line 122)

7. English gentlemen traveling on the European

and Sarah Trimmer (line 123) was a writer Byron
continent were sometimes known as "God dams,"

could not take seriously.

from their habitual profanity.

2. Quoted from Alexander Pope, *The Rape of the*

8. Lawyer for Byron's wife in a suit for separation.

Lock 2.17. *Errors*: frailties or foibles.

9. Cf. Ecclesiastes 1.2.

D O N J U A N / 8 4 1

Oh! she was perfect past all parallel—

130 Of any modern female saint's comparison;

So far above the cunning powers of Hell,

Her Guardian Angel had given up his garrison;

Even her minutest motions went as well

As those of the best time-piece made by Harrison;³

135 In virtues nothing earthly could surpass her,

Save thine "incomparable oil," Macassar!⁴

1 8

Perfect she was, but as perfection is

Inspid in this naughty world of ours,

Where our first parents⁵ never learned to kiss

140 Till they were exiled from their earlier bowers,

Where all was peace, and innocence, and bliss,

(I wonder how they got through the twelve hours),

Don Jose, like a lineal son of Eve,

Went plucking various fruit without her leave.

19

145 He was a mortal of the careless kind,
With no great love for learning, or the learned,
Who chose to go where'er he had a mind,
And never dreamed his lady was concerned;
The world, as usual, wickedly inclined
150 To see a kingdom or a house o'erturned,
Whispered he had a mistress, some said *two*.
But for domestic quarrels *one* will do.

20

Now Donna Inez had, with all her merit,
A great opinion of her own good qualities;
155 Neglect, indeed, requires a saint to bear it,
And such, indeed, she was in her moralities;⁰ *moralizing*
But then she had a devil of a spirit,
And sometimes mixed up fancies with realities,
And let few opportunities escape
160 Of getting her liege lord into a scrape.

21

This was an easy matter with a man
Oft in the wrong, and never on his guard;
And even the wisest, do the best they can,
Have moments, hours, and days, so unprepared,
165 That you might "brain them with their lady's fan";⁶
And sometimes ladies hit exceeding hard,

3. John Harrison (1693—1776) improved the 5. I.e., Adam and Eve; see Genesis.

accuracy of watches and chronometers. 6. Modified quotation from Shakespeare, *1 Henry 4*. A much-advertised hairdressing. 7V2.4.19.

842 / GEORGE GORDON, LORD BYRON

And fans turn into falchions⁰ in fair hands, *swords*

And why and wherefore no one understands.

22

‘Tis pity learned virgins ever wed

170 With persons of no sort of education,

Or gentlemen, who, though well born and bred,

Grow tired of scientific conversation:

I don’t choose to say much upon this head,

I’m a plain man, and in a single station,

175 But—Oh! ye lords of ladies intellectual,

Inform us truly, have they not hen-pecked you all?

23

Don Jose and his lady quarrelled— *why*,

Not any of the many could divine,

Though several thousand people chose to try,

iso ‘Twas surely no concern of theirs nor mine;

I loath that low vice—curiosity;

But if there’s anything in which I shine,

‘Tis in arranging all my friends’ affairs,

Not having, of my own, domestic cares.

24

185 And so I interfered, and with the best

Intentions, but their treatment was not kind;

I think the foolish people were possessed,

For neither of them could I ever find,

Although their porter afterwards confessed—

190 But that’s no matter, and the worst’s behind,

For little Juan o'er me threw, down stairs,
A pail of housemaid's water unawares.

25

A little curly-headed, good-for-nothing,
And mischief-making monkey from his birth;
195 His parents ne'er agreed except in doting
Upon the most unquiet imp on earth;
Instead of quarrelling, had they been but both in
Their senses, they'd have sent young master forth
To school, or had him soundly whipped at home,
200 To teach him manners for the time to come.

26

Don Jose and the Donna Inez led
For some time an unhappy sort of life,
Wishing each other, not divorced, but dead;
They lived respectably as man and wife,
205 Their conduct was exceedingly well-bred,
And gave no outward signs of inward strife,

D O N J U A N / 8 4 3

Until at length the smothered fire broke out,
And put the business past all kind of doubt.

27

For Inez called some druggists and physicians,
210 And tried to prove her loving lord was *mad*,
But as he had some lucid intermissions,
She next decided he was only *bad*;
Yet when they asked her for her depositions,
No sort of explanation could be had,

215 Save that her duty both to man and God
Required this conduct—which seemed very odd.

28

She kept a journal, where his faults were noted,
And opened certain trunks of books and letters,
All which might, if occasion served, be quoted;
220 And then she had all Seville for abettors,
Besides her good old grandmother (who doted);
The hearers of her case became repeaters,
Then advocates, inquisitors, and judges,
Some for amusement, others for old grudges.

29

225 And then this best and meekest woman bore
With such serenity her husband's woes,
Just as the Spartan ladies did of yore,
Who saw their spouses killed, and nobly chose
Never to say a word about them more—
230 Calmly she heard each calumny that rose,
And saw *his* agonies with such sublimity,
That all the world exclaimed, "What magnanimity!"

3°

No doubt this patience, when the world is damning us,
Is philosophic in our former friends;
235 Tis also pleasant to be deemed magnanimous,
The more so in obtaining our own ends;
And what the lawyers call a "*malus animus*"⁷
Conduct like this by no means comprehends:
Revenge in person's certainly no virtue,

240 But then 'tis not *my* fault, if *others* hurt you.

31

And if our quarrels should rip up old stories,

And help them with a lie or two additional,

I'm not to blame, as you well know—no more is

Any one else—they were become traditional;

245 Besides, their resurrection aids our glories

By contrast, which is what we just were wishing all:

7. Malicious i n t e n t (Latin).

844 / G E O R G E G O R D O N , L O R D B Y R O N

And Science profits by this resurrection—

Dead scandals form good subjects for dissection.

32

Their friends had tried at reconciliation,

250 Then their relations, who made matters worse.

(‘Twere hard to tell upon a like occasion

To whom it may be best to have recourse—

I can't say much for friend or yet relation):

The lawyers did their utmost for divorce,

255 But scarce a fee was paid on either side

Before, unluckily, Don Jose died.

33

He died: and most unluckily, because,

According to all hints I could collect

From Counsel learned in those kinds of laws,

260 (Although their talk's obscure and circumspect)

His death contrived to spoil a charming cause;0 *legal case*

A thousand pities also with respect

To public feeling, which on this occasion
Was manifested in a great sensation.

34

265 But ah! he died; and buried with him lay
The public feeling and the lawyers' fees:
His house was sold, his servants sent away,
A Jew took one of his two mistresses,
A priest the other—at least so they say:
270 I asked the doctors after his disease—
He died of the slow fever called the tertian,⁸
And left his widow to her own aversion.

35

Yet Jose was an honorable man,
That I must say, who knew him very well;
275 Therefore his frailties I'll no further scan,
Indeed there were not many more to tell:
And if his passions now and then outran
Discretion, and were not so peaceable
As Numa's (who was also named Pompilius),⁹
280 He had been ill brought up, and was born bilious.⁰ *bad
tempered*

36

Whate'er might be his worthlessness or worth,
Poor fellow! he had many things to wound him.
Let's own—since it can do no good on earth—
It was a trying moment that which found him
285 Standing alone beside his desolate hearth,
8. A f o r m of malaria.

9. Ancient Roman king, famed for the comparative peace of his forty-three-year reign.

D O N J U A N / 8 4 5

Where all his household gods lay shivered⁰ round him: *broken*

No choice was left his feelings or his pride,

Save Death or Doctor's Commons⁰ so he died. *divorce courts*

37

Dying intestate,⁰ Juan was sole heir *leaving no will*

290 To a chancery suit,¹ and messuages,⁰ and lands,
household lands

Which, with a long minority² and care,

Promised to turn out well in proper hands:

Inez became sole guardian, which was fair,

And answered but to Nature's just demands;

295 An only son left with an only mother

Is brought up much more wisely than another.

38

Sagest of women, even of widows, she

Resolved that Juan should be quite a paragon,

And worthy of the noblest pedigree,

300 (His Sire was of Castile, his Dam from Aragon):

Then, for accomplishments of chivalry,

In case our Lord the King should go to war again,

He learned the arts of riding, fencing, gunnery,

And how to scale a fortress—or a nunnery.

39

305 But that which Donna Inez most desired,

And saw into herself each day before all

The learned tutors whom for him she hired,

Was, that his breeding should be strictly moral:
Much into all his studies she inquired,
310 And so they were submitted first to her, all,
Arts, sciences—no branch was made a mystery
To Juan's eyes, excepting natural history.

40

The languages, especially the dead,
The sciences, and most of all the abstruse,
315 The arts, at least all such as could be said
To be the most remote from common use,
In all these he was much and deeply read:
But not a page of anything that's loose,
Or hints continuation of the species,
320 Was ever suffered, lest he should grow vicious.

41

His classic studies made a little puzzle,
Because of filthy loves of gods and goddesses,
Who in the earlier ages raised a bustle,
But never put on pantaloons or bodices;
1. Drawn-out legal proceedings over inheritance 2.
Before he should come of age.
of property.

846 / GEORGE GORDON, LORD BYRON

325 His reverend tutors had at times a tussle,
And for their Aeneids, Iliads, and Odysseys,
Were forced to make an odd sort of apology,
For Donna Inez dreaded the Mythology.

42

Ovid's a rake, as half his verses show him,
330 Anacreon's morals are a still worse sample,
Catullus scarcely has a decent poem,
I don't think Sappho's Ode a good example,³
Although Longinus⁴ tells us there is no hymn
Where the Sublime soars forth on wings more ample;
335 But Virgil's songs are pure, except that horrid one
Beginning with "*Formosum Pastor Corydon*. "s

43

Lucretius' irreligion is too strong
For early stomachs, to prove wholesome food;
I can't help thinking Juvenal was wrong,
340 Although no doubt his real intent was good,
For speaking out so plainly in his song,
So much indeed as to be downright rude;
And then what proper person can be partial
To all those nauseous epigrams of Martial?⁶

44

345 Juan was taught from out the best edition,
Expurgated by learned men, who place,
Judiciously, from out the schoolboy's vision,
The grosser parts; but, fearful to deface
Too much their modest bard by this omission,
350 And pitying sore his mutilated case,
They only add them all in an appendix,⁷
Which saves, in fact, the trouble of an index;

45

For there we have them all "at one fell swoop,"⁸

Instead of being scattered through the pages;
 355 They stand forth marshaled in a handsome troop,
 To meet the ingenuous youth of future ages,
 Till some less rigid editor shall stoop
 To call them back into their separate cages,
 Instead of standing staring all together,
 360 Like garden gods⁹—and not so decent either.

3. These lines name Greek and Roman classic and times of obscene satirists.

erotic poets.

7. "Fact! There is, or was, such an edition, with all

4. The presumed author (first century C.E.) of the obnoxious epigrams of Martial placed by the treatise on "the sublime" in literature.

selves at the end" [Byron's note].

5. "Handsome Shepherd Corydon": opening

8. Allusion to Macduff's reaction upon learning of words of Virgil's Second Eclogue (a pastoral the death of his family: "What! All my pretty chick-poe m), concerned with love between young men.

ens and their dam / At one fell swoop?" (Shake-

6. Like Lucretius (line 337) and Juvenal (line speare, *Macbeth* 4.3.219-20).

339), a Roman poet. Lucretius was a philosophic

9. Statues of fertility deities, often phallic.

atheist; Juvenal and Martial were severe and some-

D O N J U A N / 8 4 7

The Missal too (it was the family Missal)
Was ornamented in a sort of way
Which ancient mass-books often are, and this all
Kinds of grotesques illumined; and how they,
365 Who saw those figures on the margin kiss all,
Could turn their optics to the text and pray,
Is more than I know—But Don Juan's mother
Kept this herself, and gave her son another.

47

Sermons he read, and lectures he endured,
370 And homilies, and lives of all the saints;
To Jerome and to Chrysostom¹ inured,
He did not take such studies for restraints;
But how Faith is acquired, and then insured,
So well not one of the aforesaid paints
375 As Saint Augustine² in his fine Confessions,
Which make the reader envy his transgressions.

48

This, too, was a sealed book to little Juan —
I can't but say that his mamma was right,
If such an education was the true one.
380 She scarcely trusted him from out her sight;
Her maids were old, and if she took a new one,
You might be sure she was a perfect fright;
She did this during even her husband's life—
I recommend as much to every wife.

49

385 Young J u a n waxed in goodliness and grace;
At six a charming child, and at eleven
With all the promise of as fine a face
As e'er to man's maturer growth was given:
He studied steadily, and grew apace,
390 And seemed, at least, in the right road to Heaven,
For half his days were passed at church, the other
Between his tutors, confessor,⁰ and mother. *private chaplain*
5°

At six, I said, he was a charming child,
At twelve he was a fine, but quiet boy;
395 Although in infancy a little wild,
They tamed him down amongst them: to destroy
His natural spirit not in vain they toiled,
At least it seemed so; and his mother's joy
Was to declare how sage, and still, and steady,
400 H e r young philosopher was grown already.

1. Saints a n d t e a c h e r s of t h e e a r l y C h u r c h .
biography candidly describes his worldly life b e f o r e 2. A n
o t h e r e a r l y f a t h e r of t h e C h u r c h ; his a u t o -
conversion.

848 / G E O R G E G O R D O N , L O R D B Y R O N

51

I had my doubts, perhaps I have them still,
But what I say is neither here nor there:
I knew his father well, and have some skill
In character—but it would not be fair
405 From sire to son to augur good or ill:
He and his wife were an ill-sorted pair—

But scandal's my aversion—I protest
Against all evil speaking, even in jest.

52

For my part I say nothing—nothing—but
410 *This* I will say—my reasons are my own—
That if I had an only son to put
To school (as God be praised that I have none),
'Tis not with Donna Inez I would shut
Him up to learn his catechism³ alone,
415 No—no—I'd send him out betimes to college,
For there it was I picked up my own knowledge.

53

For there one learns—'tis not for me to boast,
Though I acquired—but I pass over *that*,
As well as all the Greek I since have lost:
420 I say that there's the place—but "*Verhum sat*,"⁴
I think I picked up too, as well as most,
Knowledge of matters—but no matter *what*—
I never married—but, I think, I know
That sons should not be educated so.

54

425 Young Juan now was sixteen years of age,
Tall, handsome, slender, but well knit: he seemed
Active, though not so sprightly, as a page;
And everybody but his mother deemed
Him almost man; but she flew in a rage
430 And bit her lips (for else she might have screamed)
If any said so—for to be precocious

Was in her eyes a thing the most atrocious.

55

Amongst her numerous acquaintance, all

Selected for discretion and devotion,

435 There was the Donna Julia, whom to call

Pretty were but to give a feeble notion

Of many charms in her as natural

As sweetness to the flower, or salt to Ocean,

3. A brief summary of Christian teaching.

4. A word to the wise suffices (Latin).

D O N J U A N / 8 4 9

Her zone to Venus,⁵ or his bow to Cupid,

440 (But this last simile is trite and stupid.)

56

The darkness of her Oriental eye

Accorded with her Moorish origin;

(Her blood was not all Spanish; by the by,

In Spain, you know, this is a sort of sin;)

445 When proud Granada fell, and, forced to fly,

Boabdil⁶ wept: of Donna Julia's kin

Some went to Africa, some stayed in Spain—

Her great great grandmamma chose to remain.

57

She married (I forget the pedigree)

450 With an Hidalgo, who transmitted down

His blood less noble than such blood should be;

At such alliances his sires would frown,

In that point so precise in each degree

That they bred *in and in*, as might be shown,
455 Marrying their cousins—nay, their aunts, and nieces,
Which always spoils the breed, if it increases.

58

This heathenish cross restored the breed again,
Ruined its blood,⁷ but much improved its flesh;
For from a root the ugliest in Old Spain
460 Sprung up a branch as beautiful as fresh;
The sons no more were short, the daughters plain:
But there's a rumor which I fain would hush,
'Tis said that Donna Julia's grandmamma
Produced her Don more heirs at love than law.

59

465 However this might be, the race went on
Improving still through every generation,
Until it centered in an only son,
Who left an only daughter; my narration
May have suggested that this single one
470 Could be but Julia (whom on this occasion
I shall have much to speak about), and she
Was married, charming, chaste, and twenty-three.

60

Her eye (I'm very fond of handsome eyes)
Was large and dark, suppressing half its fire
475 Until she spoke, then through its soft disguise
Flashed an expression more of pride than ire,

5. The magical girdle ("zone") of Venus, Roman

6. The last Moorish king of Granada, a province

goddess of love and beauty, made its wearer sexually attractive.

ally attractive.

7. Bloodline, i.e., pure lineage.

850 / GEORGE GORDON, LORD BYRON

And love than either; and there would arise

A something in them which was not desire,

But would have been, perhaps, but for the soul

480 Which struggled through and chastened down the whole.

61

Her glossy hair was clustered o'er a brow

Bright with intelligence, and fair, and smooth;

Her eyebrow's shape was like the aerial bow,⁰ *rainbow*

Her cheek all purple⁰ with the beam of youth, *rosy*

485 Mounting, at times, to a transparent glow,

As if her veins ran lightning; she, in sooth,

Possessed an air and grace by no means common:

Her stature tall—I hate a dumpy woman.

62

Wedded she was some years, and to a man

490 Of fifty, and such husbands are in plenty;

And yet, I think, instead of such a **ONE**

'Twere better to have **TWO** of five-and-twenty,

Especially in countries near the sun:

And now I think on't, "*mi vien in mente*, "8

495 Ladies even of the most uneasy virtue

Prefer a spouse whose age is short of thirty.

63

'Tis a sad thing, I cannot choose but say,
And all the fault of that indecent sun,
Who cannot leave alone our helpless clay,
500 But will keep baking, broiling, burning on,
That howsoever people fast and pray,
The flesh is frail, and so the soul undone:
What men call gallantry, and gods adultery,
Is much more common where the climate's sultry.

64

505 Happy the nations of the moral North!
Where all is virtue, and the winter season
Sends sin, without a rag on, shivering forth
('Twas snow that brought St. Anthony to reason);⁹
Where juries cast up what a wife is worth,
510 By laying whate'er sum, in mulct,¹ they please on
The lover, who must pay a handsome price,
Because it is a marketable vice.

65

Alfonso was the name of Julia's lord,
A man well looking for his years, and who
Was neither much beloved nor yet abhorred:

8. It comes to my mind (Italian). snow as a remedy
for lust.

9. St. Anthony recommended the application of I. As
a fine.

D O N J U A N / 8 5 1

They lived together as most people do,
Suffering each other's foibles by accord,
And not exactly either *one* or *two*;

Yet he was jealous, though he did not show it,
520 For Jealousy dislikes the world to know it.

66

Julia was—yet I never could see why—
With Donna Inez quite a favorite friend;
Between their tastes there was small sympathy,
For not a line had Julia ever penned:
525 Some people whisper (but, no doubt, they lie,
For Malice still imputes some private end)
That Inez had, ere Don Alfonso's marriage,
Forgot with him her very prudent carriage;⁰ *behavior*

67

And that still keeping up the old connection,
530 Which Time had lately rendered much more chaste,
She took his lady also in affection,
And certainly this course was much the best:
She flattered Julia with her sage protection,
And complimented Don Alfonso's taste;
535 And if she could not (who can?) silence scandal,
At least she left it a more slender handle.

68

I can't tell whether Julia saw the affair
With other people's eyes, or if her own
Discoveries made, but none could be aware
540 Of this, at least no symptom e'er was shown;
Perhaps she did not know, or did not care,
Indifferent from the first, or callous grown:
I'm really puzzled what to think or say,

She kept her counsel in so close a way.

69

545 Juan she saw, and, as a pretty child,
Caressed him often—such a thing might be
Quite innocently done, and harmless styled,
When she had twenty years, and thirteen he;
But I am not so sure I should have smiled
550 When he was sixteen, Julia twenty-three;
These few short years make wondrous alterations,
Particularly amongst sun-burnt nations.

70

Whate'er the cause might be, they had become
Changed; for the dame grew distant, the youth shy,
555 Their looks cast down, their greetings almost dumb,
And much embarrassment in either eye;

852 / G E O R G E G O R D O N , L O R D B Y R O N

There surely will be little doubt with some
That Donna Julia knew the reason why,
But as for Juan, he had no more notion
560 Than he who never saw the sea of Ocean.

71

Yet Julia's very coldness still was kind,
And tremulously gentle her small hand
Withdrew itself from his, but left behind
A little pressure, thrilling, and so bland
565 And slight, so very slight, that to the mind
'Twas but a doubt; but ne'er magician's wand
Wrought change with all Armida's2 fairy art

Like what this light touch left on Juan's heart.

72

And if she met him, though she smiled no more,
570 She looked a sadness sweeter than her smile,
As if her heart had deeper thoughts in store
She must not own, but cherished more the while
For that compression in its burning core;
Even Innocence itself has many a wile,
575 And will not dare to trust itself with truth,
And Love is taught hypocrisy from youth.

73

But Passion most dissembles, yet betrays
Even by its darkness; as the blackest sky
Foretells the heaviest tempest, it displays
580 Its workings through the vainly guarded eye,
And in whatever aspect it arrays
Itself, 'tis still the same hypocrisy;
Coldness or Anger, even Disdain or Hate,
Are masks it often wears, and still too late.

74

585 Then there were sighs, the deeper for suppression,
And stolen glances, sweeter for the theft,
And burning blushes, though for no transgression,
Tremblings when met, and restlessness when left;
All these are little preludes to possession,
590 Of which young Passion cannot be bereft,
And merely tend to show how greatly Love is
Embarrassed at first starting with a novice.

75

Poor Julia's heart was in an awkward state;

She felt it going, and resolved to make

595 The noblest efforts for herself and mate,

2. An enchantr^{ess} whose duces Christian knights in Tasso's epic poem *Jerusalem Delivered* (sixteenth century).

D O N J U A N / 8 5 3

For Honor's, Pride's, Religion's, Virtue's sake:

Her resolutions were most truly great,

And almost might have made a Tarquin³ quake:

She prayed the Virgin Mary for her grace,

600 As being the best judge of a lady's case.

76

She vowed she never would see Juan more,

And next day paid a visit to his mother,

And looked extremely at the opening door,

Which, by the Virgin's grace, let in another;

605 Grateful she was, and yet a little sore—

Again it opens, it can be no other,

'Tis surely Juan now—No! Fm afraid

That night the Virgin was no further prayed.

77

She now determined that a virtuous woman

610 Should rather face and overcome temptation,

That flight was base and dastardly, and no man

Should ever give her heart the least sensation,

That is to say, a thought beyond the common

Preference, that we must feel, upon occasion,

615 For people who are pleasanter than others,
But then they only seem so many brothers.

78

And even if by chance—and who can tell?

The Devil's so very sly—she should discover
That all within was not so very well,

620 And, if still free,⁴ that such or such a lover

Might please perhaps, a virtuous wife can quell

Such thoughts, and be the better when they're over;

And if the man should ask, 'tis but denial:

I recommend young ladies to make trial.

79

625 And, then, there are such things as Love divine,

Bright and immaculate, unmixed and pure,

Such as the angels think so very fine,

And matrons, who would be no less secure,

Platonic, perfect, “just such love as mine;”

630 Thus Julia said—and thought so, to be sure;

And so I'd have her think, were I the man

On whom her reveries celestial ran.

80

Such love is innocent, and may exist

Between young persons without any danger.

3. In Shakespeare's *Rape of Lucrece* (based on woman renowned for her chastity.

Roman legend), the rapist of a Roman noble- 4. I.e., if she were not already married.

854 / G E O R G E G O R D O N , L O R D B Y R O N

635 A hand may first, and then a lip be kissed;

For my part, to such doings I'm a stranger,
But *hear* these freedoms form the utmost list
Of all o'er which such love may be a ranger:
If people go beyond, 'tis quite a crime,
640 But not my fault—I tell them all in time.

8 i

Love, then, but Love within its proper limits,
Was Julia's innocent determination
In young Don Juan's favor, and to him its
Exertion might be useful on occasion;
645 And, lighted at too pure a shrine to dim its
Ethereal luster, with what sweet persuasion
He might be taught, by Love and her together—
I really don't know what, nor Julia either.

82

Fraught with this fine intention, and well fenced
650 In mail of proof—her purity of soul—
She, for the future, of her strength convinced,
And that her honor was a rock, or mole,⁰ *breakwater*
Exceeding sagely from that hour dispensed
With any kind of troublesome control;
655 But whether Julia to the task was equal
Is that which must be mentioned in the sequel.

83

Her plan she deemed both innocent and feasible,
And, surely, with a stripling of sixteen
Not Scandal's fangs could fix on much that's seizable,
660 Or if they did so, satisfied to mean

Nothing but what was good, her breast was peaceable—
A quiet conscience makes one so serene!

Christians have burnt each other, quite persuaded
That all the Apostles would have done as they did.

84

665 And if in the mean time her husband died,
But Heaven forbid that such a thought should cross
Her brain, though in a dream! (and then she sighed)

Never could she survive that common loss;

But just suppose that moment should betide,

670 I only say suppose it— *inter nos:5*

(This should be *entre nous*, for Julia thought

In French, but then the rhyme would go for nought.)

85

I only say, suppose this supposition:

Juan being then grown up to man's estate

5. J u s t b e t w e e n ourselves (Latin).

D O N J U A N / 8 5 5

675 Would fully suit a widow of condition,

Even seven years hence it would not be too late;

And in the interim (to pursue this vision)

The mischief, after all, could not be great,

For he would learn the rudiments of Love,

680 I mean the *seraph0* way of those above. *angelic, pure*

86

So much for Julia! Now we'll turn to Juan.

Poor little fellow! he had no idea

Of his own case, and never hit the true one;

In feelings quick as Ovid's Miss Medea,⁶
685 He puzzled over what he found a new one,
But not as yet imagined it could be a
Thing quite in course, and not at all alarming,
Which, with a little patience, might grow charming.

87

Silent and pensive, idle, restless, slow,
690 His home deserted for the lonely wood,
Tormented with a wound he could not know,
His, like all deep grief, plunged in solitude:

I'm fond myself of solitude or so,

But then, I beg it may be understood,

695 By solitude I mean a Sultan's (not
A Hermit's), with a harem for a grotto.

88

"Oh Love! in such a wilderness as this,
Where Transport and Security entwine,
Here is the Empire of thy perfect bliss,
700 And here thou art a God indeed divine."

The bard⁷ I quote from does not sing amiss,

With the exception of the second line,

For that same twining "Transport and Security"

Are twisted to a phrase of some obscurity.

89

705 The Poet meant, no doubt, and thus appeals

To the good sense and senses of mankind,

The very thing which everybody feels,

As all have found on trial, or may find,

That no one likes to be disturbed at meals
710 Or love—I won't say more about "entwined"
Or "Transport," as we knew all that before,
But beg "Security" will bolt the door.

6. In Ovid's *Metamorphoses*, the young Medea 7. Byron's contemporary, Thomas Campbell, finds herself irresistibly infatuated with the hero whose *Gertrude of Wyoming* is here paraphrased.

Jason.

856 / G E O R G E G O R D O N , L O R D B Y R O N

90

Young Juan wandered by the glassy brooks,
Thinking unutterable things; he threw
715 Himself at length within the leafy nooks
Where the wild branch of the cork forest grew;
There poets find materials for their books,
And every now and then we read them through,
So that their plan and prosody are eligible,
720 Unless, like Wordsworth,⁸ they prove unintelligible.

91

He, Juan (and not Wordsworth), so pursued
His self-communion with his own high soul,
Until his mighty heart, in its great mood,
Had mitigated part, though not the whole
725 Of its disease; he did the best he could
With things not very subject to control,
And turned, without perceiving his condition,
Like Coleridge,⁹ into a metaphysician.

92

He thought about himself, and the whole earth,
730 Of man the wonderful, and of the stars,
And how the deuce they ever could have birth;
And then he thought of earthquakes, and of wars,
How many miles the moon might have in girth,
Of air-balloons, and of the many bars
735 To perfect knowledge of the boundless skies;—
And then he thought of Donna Julia's eyes.

93

In thoughts like these true Wisdom may discern
Longings sublime, and aspirations high,
Which some are born with, but the most part learn
740 To plague themselves withal, they know not why:
'Twas strange that one so young should thus concern
His brain about the action of the sky;
If *you* think 'twas Philosophy that this did,
I can't help thinking puberty assisted.

94

745 He pored upon the leaves, and on the flowers,
And heard a voice in all the winds; and then
He thought of wood-nymphs and immortal bowers,
And how the goddesses came down to men:
He missed the pathway, he forgot the hours,
750 And when he looked upon his watch again,
He found how much old Time had been a w i n n e r -
He also found that he had lost his dinner.

8. William W o r d s w o r t h (1 7 7 0 - 1 8 5 0 ; see 9. S a m u e l Taylor Coleridge (1 7 7 2 - 1 8 3 4 ; see pp. 7 6 3 - 8 0 5) . pp. 8 0 5 - 3 1) .

D O N J U A N / 8 5 7

95

**Sometimes he turned to gaze upon his book,
Boscan, or Garcilasso;1—by the wind
755 Even as the page is rustled while we look,
So by the poesy of his own mind
Over the mystic leaf his soul was shook,
As if 'twere one whereon magicians bind
Their spells, and give them to the passing gale,
760 According to some good old woman's tale.**

96

**Thus would he while his lonely hours away
Dissatisfied, not knowing what he wanted;
Nor glowing reverie, nor poet's lay,
Could yield his spirit that for which it panted,
765 A bosom whereon he his head might lay,
And hear the heart beat with the love it granted,
With—several other things, which I forget,
Or which, at least, I need not mention yet.**

97

**Those lonely walks, and lengthening reveries,
770 Could not escape the gentle Julia's eyes;
She saw that Juan was not at his ease;
But that which chiefly may, and must surprise,
Is, that the Donna Inez did not tease
Her only son with question or surmise;
775 Whether it was she did not see, or would not,
Or, like all very clever people, could not.**

98,

**This may seem strange, but yet 'tis very common;
For instance—gentlemen, whose ladies take
Leave to o'erstep the written rights of Woman,
780 And break the—Which commandment is't they
break?**

**(I have forgot the number, and think no man
Should rashly quote, for fear of a mistake;)
I say, when these same gentlemen are jealous,
They make some blunder, which their ladies tell us.**

99

**785 A real husband always is suspicious,
But still no less suspects in the wrong place,
Jealous of some one who had no such wishes,
Or pandering blindly to his own disgrace,
By harboring some dear friend extremely vicious;
790 The last indeed's infallibly the case:
And when the spouse and friend are gone off wholly,
He wonders at their vice, and not his folly.**

1. Spanish poets of the early sixteenth century.

**858 / G E O R G E G O R D O N , L O R D B Y R O N
100**

**Thus parents also are at times short-sighted:
Though watchful as the lynx, they ne'er discover,
795 The while the wicked world beholds delighted,
Young Hopeful's mistress, or Miss Fanny's lover,
Till some confounded escapade has blighted
The plan of twenty years, and all is over;**

And then the mother cries, the father swears,
800 And wonders why the devil he got heirs.

101

But Inez was so anxious, and so clear
Of sight, that I must think, on this occasion,
She had some other motive much more near
For leaving Juan to this new temptation,
805 But what that motive was, I shan't say here;
Perhaps to finish Juan's education,
Perhaps to open Don Alfonso's eyes,
In case he thought his wife too great a prize.

102

It was upon a day, a summer's day—
810 Summer's indeed a very dangerous season,
And so is spring about the end of May;
The sun, no doubt, is the prevailing reason;
But whatso'er the cause is, one may say,
And stand convicted of more truth than treason,
815 That there are months which nature grows more
merry in,—
March has its hares, and May must have its heroine.

103

'Twas on a summer's day—the sixth of June:
I like to be particular in dates,
Not only of the age, and year, but moon;
820 They are a sort of post-house, where the Fates
Change horses, making History change its tune,
Then spur away o'er empires and o'er states,

Leaving at last not much besides chronology,
Excepting the post-obits² of theology.

104

825 'Twas on the sixth of June, about the hour
Of half-past six—perhaps still nearer seven—
When Julia sate within as pretty a bower
As e'er held houri³ in that heathenish heaven
Described by Mahomet, and Anacreon Moore,⁴
830 To whom the lyre and laurels have been given,

2. Postobit bonds : loans repaid from the estate of

4. Byron's friend, Thomas Moore, author of
a person after his or her death ; probably referring
Oriental tales in his long poem *Lalla Rookh* and
to rewards or punishments in the afterlife.

translator of love poems by the ancient Greek poet

3. A beautiful maiden said to entertain faithful
Anacreon.

Muslims in paradise.

D O N J U A N / 8 5 9

With all the trophies of triumphant song—
He won them well, and may he wear them long!

105

She sate, but not alone; I know not well
How this same interview had taken place,
835 And even if I knew, I should not tell—
People should hold their tongues in any case;
No matter how or why the thing befell,
But there were she and Juan, face to face—

When two such faces are so, 'twould be wise,
840 But very difficult, to shut their eyes.

106

How beautiful she looked! her conscious heart⁵
Glowed in her cheek, and yet she felt no wrong:
Oh Love! how perfect is thy mystic art,
Strengthening the weak, and trampling on the strong!
845 How self-deceitful is the sagest part
Of mortals whom thy lure hath led along!
The precipice she stood on was immense,
So was her creed⁰ in her own innocence. *trust*

107

She thought of her own strength, and Juan's youth,
850 And of the folly of all prudish fears,
Victorious Virtue, and domestic Truth,
And then of Don Alfonso's fifty years:
I wish these last had not occurred, in sooth,
Because that number rarely much endears,
855 And through all climes, the snowy and the sunny,
Sounds ill in love, whate'er it may in money.

108

When people say, "I've told you *fifty* times,"
They mean to scold, and very often do;
When poets say, "I've written *fifty* rhymes,"
860 They make you dread that they'll recite them too;
In gangs *of fifty*, thieves commit their crimes;
At *fifty* love for love is rare, 'tis true,
But then, no doubt, it equally as true is,

A good deal may be bought for *fifty* Louis.⁶

109

865 Julia had honor, virtue, truth, and love

For Don Alfonso; and she inly swore,

By all the vows below to Powers above,

She never would disgrace the ring she wore,

Nor leave a wish which wisdom might reprove;

870 And while she pondered this, besides much more,

5. H e r d e e p e m o t i o n .

6. F r e n c h g o l d c o i n s .

860 / G E O R G E G O R D O N , L O R D B Y R O N

One hand on Juan's carelessly was thrown,

Quite by mistake—she thought it was her own;

n o

Unconsciously she leaned upon the other,

Which played within the tangles of her hair;

875 And to contend with thoughts she could not smother

She seemed by the distraction of her air.

'Twas surely very wrong in Juan's mother

To leave together this imprudent pair,

She who for many years had watched her son so—

880 I'm very certain *mine* would not have done so.

H I

The hand which still held Juan's, by degrees

Gently, but palpably confirmed its grasp,

As if it said, "Detain me, if you please";

Yet there's no doubt she only meant to clasp

885 His fingers with a pure Platonic squeeze;

She would have shrunk as from a toad, or asp,
Had she imagined such a thing could rouse
A feeling dangerous to a prudent spouse.

1 1 2

I cannot know what Juan thought of this,
890 But what he did, is much what you would do;
His young lip thanked it with a grateful kiss,
And then, abashed at its own joy, withdrew
In deep despair, lest he had done amiss—
Love is so very timid when 'tis new:
895 She blushed, and frowned not, but she strove to speak,
And held her tongue, her voice was grown so weak.

“3

The sun set, and up rose the yellow moon:
The Devil's in the moon for mischief; they
Who called her **CHASTE**, methinks, began too soon
900 Their nomenclature; there is not a day,
The longest, not the twenty-first of June,
Sees half the business in a wicked way,
On which three single hours of moonshine smile—
And then she looks so modest all the while!

114

905 There is a dangerous silence in that hour,
A stillness, which leaves room for the full soul
To open all itself, without the power
Of calling wholly back its self-control;
The silver light which, hallowing tree and tower,
910 Sheds beauty and deep softness o'er the whole,

D O N J U A N / 8 6 1

Breathes also to the heart, and o'er it throws
A loving languor, which is not repose.

” 5

And Julia sate with Juan, half embraced
And half retiring from the glowing arm,
915 Which trembled like the bosom where 'twas placed;
Yet still she must have thought there was no harm,
Or else 'twere easy to withdraw her waist;
But then the situation had its charm,
And then—God knows what next—I can't go on;
920 I'm almost sorry that I e'er begun.

116

Oh Plato! Plato! you have paved the way,
With your confounded fantasies, to more
Immoral conduct by the fancied sway
Your system feigns o'er the controlless core
925 Of human hearts, than all the long array
Of poets and romancers:—You're a bore,
A charlatan, a coxcomb—and have been,
At best, no better than a go-between.

” 7

And Julia's voice was lost, except in sighs,
930 Until too late for useful conversation;
The tears were gushing from her gentle eyes,
I wish, indeed, they had not had occasion;
But who, alas! can love, and then be wise?
Not that Remorse did not oppose Temptation;

935 A little still she strove, and much repented,
And whispering “I will ne’er consent”—consented.

118

‘Tis said that Xerxes⁷ offered a reward
To those who could invent him a new pleasure:
Methinks the requisition’s rather hard,
940 And must have cost his Majesty a treasure:
For my part, I’m a moderate-minded bard,
Fond of a little love (which I call leisure);
I care not for new pleasures, as the old
Are quite enough for me, so they but hold.
” 9

945 Oh Pleasure! you’re indeed a pleasant thing,
Although one must be damned for you, no doubt:
I make a resolution every spring
Of reformation, ere the year run out,
But somehow, this my vestal vow takes wing,
950 Yet still, I trust, it may be kept throughout:
7. King of Persia, fifth century B.C.E.

862 / GEORGE GORDON, LORD BYRON

**I’m very sorry, very much ashamed,
And mean, next winter, to be quite reclaimed.**

1818 1819

Stanzas

When a Man Hath No Freedom to Fight for at Home

**When a man hath no freedom to fight for at home,
Let him combat for that of his neighbors;
Let him think of the glories of Greece and of Rome,**

And get knocked on his head for his labors.
s To do good to mankind is the chivalrous plan,
And is always as nobly requited;
Then battle for freedom wherever you can,
And, if not shot or hanged, you'll get knighted.

1820 1830

On This Day I Complete My Thirty-sixth Year

Missolonghi,⁸ January 22, 1824

'Tis time this heart should be unmoved,

Since others it hath ceased to move:

Yet, though I cannot be beloved,

Still let me love!

5 My days are in the yellow leaf;

The flowers and fruits of love are gone;

The worm, the canker,⁰ and the grief *deep infection*

Are mine alone!

The fire that on my bosom preys

is lone as some volcanic isle;

No torch is kindled at its blaze—

A funeral pile.

The hope, the fear, the jealous care,

The exalted portion of the pain

15 And power of love, I cannot share,

But wear the chain.

But 'tis not *thus*—and 'tis not *here*—

Such thoughts should shake my soul, nor *now*,

8. A town in Greece, where Byron had gone to support the Greek war for independence from Turkey, and where he died, April 19, 1824.

T o W O R D S W O R T H / 8 6 3

Where glory decks the hero's bier,
20 Or binds his brow.

The sword, the banner, and the field,
Glory and Greece, around me see!
The Spartan, borne upon his shield,
Was not more free.

25 Awake! (not Greece—she *is* awake!)
Awake, my spirit! Think through *whom*
Thy life-blood tracks its parent lake,
And then strike home!

Tread those reviving passions down,
30 Unworthy manhood!—unto thee
Indifferent should the smile or frown
Of beauty be.

If thou regrett'st thy youth, *why live?*
The land of honorable death
35 Is here:—up to the field, and give
Away thy breath!

Seek out—less often sought than found—
A soldier's grave, for thee the best;
Then look around, and choose thy ground,
40 And take thy rest.

1824 1824

P E R C Y B Y S S H E S H E L L E Y

1792-1822

To Wordsworth¹

Poet of Nature, thou hast wept to know

That things depart which never may return;
Childhood and youth, friendship and love's first glow,
Have fled like sweet dreams, leaving thee to mourn.

5 These common woes I feel. One loss is mine,
Which thou too feel'st, yet I alone deplore;
Thou wert as a lone star whose light did shine
On some frail bark in winter's midnight roar;
Thou hast like to a rock-built refuge stood
io Above the blind and battling multitude;
In honored poverty thy voice did weave
Songs consecrate to truth and liberty;—

1. William Wordsworth (1770 - 1850; see pp. 763 - 805), who had ceased to champion the liberal and revolutionary ideas of his youth and, in Shelley's view, had compromised himself.

864 / PERCY BYSSHE SHELLEY

**Deserting these, thou leavest me to grieve,
Thus having been, that thou shouldst cease to be.**

1814-15

Mutability

i

The flower that smiles today

Tomorrow dies;

All that we wish to stay,

Tempts and then flies.

5 What is this world's delight?

Lightning that mocks the night,

Brief even as bright.

2

**Virtue, how frail it is!
Friendship how rare!
io Love, how it sells poor bliss
For proud despair!
But we, though soon they fall,
Survive their joy and all
Which ours we call.**

3

**15 Whilst skies are blue and bright,
Whilst flowers are gay,
Whilst eyes that change ere night
Make glad the day,
Whilst yet the calm hours creep,
20 Dream thou—and from thy sleep
Then wake to weep.**

1815-16

Hymn to Intellectual Beauty²

i

**The awful shadow of some unseen Power
Floats though unseen among us—visiting
This various world with as inconstant wing
As summer winds that creep from flower to flower—
5 Like moonbeams that behind some piny mountain
shower,
It visits with inconstant glance
Each human heart and countenance;
Like hues and harmonies of evening—**

2. Beauty perceived not by the senses b u t by spir- 3. Used as a verb,

itual illumination.

H Y M N T O I N T E L L E C T U A L B E A U T Y / 8 6
5

Like clouds in starlight widely spread—

10 Like memory of music fled—

Like aught that for its grace may be

Dear, and yet dearer for its mystery.

2

Spirit of BEAUTY, that dost consecrate

With thine own hues all thou dost shine upon

15 Of human thought or form—where art thou gone?

Why dost thou pass away and leave our state,

This dim vast vale of tears, vacant and desolate?

Ask why the sunlight not forever

Weaves rainbows o'er yon mountain river,

20 Why aught should fail and fade that once is shown,

Why fear and dream and death and birth

Cast on the daylight of this earth

Such gloom—why man has such a scope

For love and hate, despondency and hope?

3

25 No voice from some sublimer world hath ever

To sage or poet these responses given—

Therefore the names of Daemon, Ghost, and Heaven,

Remain the records of their vain endeavor,

Frail spells—whose uttered charm might not avail to sever,

BO From all we hear and all we see,

Doubt, chance, and mutability.

Thy light alone—like mist o'er mountains driven,
Or music by the night wind sent
Through strings of some still instrument, *wind harp*
35 Or moonlight on a midnight stream,
Gives grace and truth to life's unquiet dream.
Love, Hope, and Self-esteem, like clouds depart
And come, for some uncertain moments lent.
Man were immortal, and omnipotent,
40 Didst thou, unknown and awful as thou art,
Keep with thy glorious train⁰ firm state within his heart.
company Thou messenger of sympathies,
That wax and wane in lovers' eyes—
Thou—that to human thought art nourishment,
45 Like darkness to a dying flame!
Depart not as thy shadow came,
Depart not—lest the grave should be,
Like life and fear, a dark reality.

5

While yet a boy I sought for ghosts, and sped
50 Through many a listening chamber, cave and ruin,
And starlight wood, with fearful steps pursuing
866 / P E R C Y B Y S S H E S H E L L E Y
Hopes of high talk with the departed dead.
I called on poisonous names⁴ with which our youth is fed;
I was not heard—I saw them not—
55 When musing deeply on the lot
Of life, at that sweet time when winds are wooing
All vital things that wake to bring

News of birds and blossoming—
Sudden, thy shadow fell on me;
60 I shrieked, and clasped my hands in ecstasy!

6

I vowed that I would dedicate my powers
To thee and thine—have I not kept the vow?
With beating heart and streaming eyes, even now
I call the phantoms of a thousand hours
65 Each from his voiceless grave: they have in visioned
bowers
Of studious zeal or love's delight
Outwatched with me the envious night—
They know that never joy illumed my brow
Unlinked with hope that thou wouldst free
70 This world from its dark slavery,
That thou—O awful LOVELINESS,
Wouldst give whate'er these words cannot express.

7

The day becomes more solemn and serene
When noon is past—there is a harmony
75 In autumn, and a luster in its sky,
Which through the summer is not heard or seen,
As if it could not be, as if it had not been!
Thus let thy power, which like the truth
Of nature on my passive youth
so Descended, to my onward life supply
Its calm—to one who worships thee,
And every form containing thee,

**Whom, SPIRIT fair, thy spells did bind
To fear⁵ himself, and love all human kind.**

1 8 1 6 1 8 1 7

Mont Blanc⁶

Lines Written in the Vale of Chamouni

i

The everlasting universe of things

Flows through the mind, and rolls its rapid waves,

4. Possibly alluding to a t t e m p t s to s u m m o n spirits

7. T h r o u g h the C h a m o u n i valley flows the river
of the d e a d by m e a n s of magic rites.

Arve, w h i c h originates in a glacier on the m o u n t a i n

5. P e r h a p s in t h e old sense of “regard with rever-
a n d e m p t i e s into Lake Geneva, f r o m w h i c h flows
e n c e a n d awe.”

the R h o n e , w h i c h r e a c h e s the M e d i t e r r a n e a n .

6. T h e highest of the Alps.

MONTBLANC / 8 6 7

Now dark—now glittering—now reflecting gloom—

Now lending splendor, where from secret springs

5 The source of human thought its tribute brings

Of waters,—with a sound but half its own,

Such as a feeble brook will oft assume

In the wild woods, among the mountains lone,

Where waterfalls around it leap for ever,

10 Where woods and winds contend, and a vast river

Over its rocks ceaselessly bursts and raves.

2

Thus thou, Ravine of Arve—dark, deep Ravine—
Thou many-colored, many voiced vale,
Over whose pines, and crags, and caverns sail
15 Fast cloud-shadows and sunbeams: awful scene, *awesome*
Where Power in likeness of the Arve comes down
From the ice-gulfs that gird his secret throne,
Bursting through these dark mountains like the flame
Of lightning through the tempest;—thou dost lie,
20 Thy giant brood of pines around thee clinging,
Children of elder time, in whose devotion
The chainless winds still come and ever came
To drink their odors, and their mighty swinging
To hear—an old and solemn harmony;
25 Thine earthly rainbows stretched across the sweep
Of the ethereal waterfall, whose veil
Robes some unsculptured image; the strange sleep
Which when the voices of the desert fail
Wraps all in its own deep eternity;—
30 Thy caverns echoing to the Arve's commotion,
A loud, lone sound no other sound can tame;
Thou art pervaded with that ceaseless motion,
Thou art the path of that unresting sound—
Dizzy Ravine! and when I gaze on thee
35 I seem as in a trance sublime and strange
To muse on my own separate fantasy,
My own, my human mind, which passively
Now renders and receives fast influencings,
Holding an unremitting interchange

40 With the clear universe of things around;
One legion of wild thoughts, whose wandering wings
Now float above thy darkness, and now rest
Where that or thou art no unbidden guest,
In the still cave of the witch Poesy,⁸
45 Seeking among the shadows that pass by
Ghosts of all things that are, some shade of thee,
Some phantom, some faint image; till the breast
From which they fled recalls them, thou art there!

8. The power of the imagination.

8 6 8 / PERCY BYSSHE S H E L L E Y

3

Some say that gleams of a remoter world
50 Visit the soul in sleep,—that death is slumber,
And that its shapes the busy thoughts outnumber
Of those who wake and live.—I look on high;
Has some unknown omnipotence unfurled
The veil of life and death? or do I lie
55 In dream, and does the mightier world of sleep
Spread far around and inaccessible
Its circles? For the very spirit fails,
Driven like a homeless cloud from steep to steep
That vanishes among the viewless⁰ gales! *invisible*
60 Far, far above, piercing the infinite sky,
Mont Blanc appears,—still, snowy, and serene—
Its subject mountains their unearthly forms
Pile around it, ice and rock; broad vales⁰ between *valleys*
Of frozen floods, unfathomable deeps,

65 Blue as the overhanging heaven, that spread
And wind among the accumulated steeps;
A desert peopled by the storms alone,
Save when the eagle brings some hunter's bone,
And the wolf tracks her there—how hideously
70 Its shapes are heaped around! rude, bare, and high,
Ghastly, and scarred, and riven.—Is this the scene
Where the old Earthquake-demon⁹ taught her young
Ruin? Were these their toys? or did a sea
Of fire envelop once this silent snow?
75 None can reply—all seems eternal now.
The wilderness has a mysterious tongue
Which teaches awful¹⁰ doubt, or faith **SO** mild, *profoundly*
disturbing
So solemn, so serene, that man may be,
But for such faith, with nature reconciled;¹
so Thou hast a voice, great Mountain, to repeal
Large codes of fraud and woe; not understood
By all, but which the wise, and great, and good
Interpret, or make felt, or deeply feel.

4

The fields, the lakes, the forests, and the streams,
85 Ocean, and all the living things that dwell
Within the daedal² earth; lightning, and rain,
Earthquake, and fiery flood, and hurricane,
The torpor of the year when feeble dreams
Visit the hidden buds, or dreamless sleep
90 Holds every future leaf and flower;—the bound

With which from that detested trance they leap;
The works and ways of man, their death and birth,
And that of him and all that his may be;

9. Personification of geologic forces.

may have “faith” that they are in harmony.

1. A debated passage; perhaps to be paraphrased

2. Intricately made, as by Daedalus, the legendary
as: the “tongue” may teach either that the cosmos
Greek craftsman.

and the human mind are deeply at odds, or that we

MONTBLANC / 869

All things that move and breathe with toil and sound

95 Are born and die; revolve, subside, and swell.

Power dwells apart in its tranquility,

Remote, serene, and inaccessible:

And *this*, the naked countenance of earth,

On which I gaze, even these primeval mountains

100 Teach the adverting mind. The glaciers creep

Like snakes that watch their prey, from their far fountains,

Slow rolling on; there, many a precipice,

Frost and the Sun in scorn of mortal power

Have piled: dome, pyramid, and pinnacle,

105 A city of death, distinct with many a tower

And wall impregnable of beaming ice.

Yet not a city, but a flood of ruin

Is there, that from the boundaries of the sky

Rolls its perpetual stream; vast pines are strewing

110 Its destined path, or in the mangled soil

Branchless and shattered stand; the rocks, drawn down
From yon remotest waste, have overthrown
The limits of the dead and living world,
Never to be reclaimed. The dwelling-place
ii5 Of insects, beasts, and birds, becomes its spoil
Their food and their retreat for ever gone,
So much of life and joy is lost. The race
Of man flies far in dread; his work and dwelling
Vanish, like smoke before the tempest's stream,
120 And their place is not known. Below, vast caves
Shine in the rushing torrents' restless gleam,
Which from those secret chasms in tumult welling
Meet in the vale, and one majestic River,
The breath and blood of distant lands, for ever
125 Rolls its loud waters to the ocean-waves,
Breathes its swift vapors to the circling air.³

5

Mont Blanc yet gleams on high:—the power is there,
The still and solemn power of many sights,
And many sounds, and much of life and death.
BO In the calm darkness of the moonless nights,
In the lone glare of day, the snows descend
Upon that Mountain; none beholds them there,
Nor when the flakes burn in the sinking sun,
Or the star-beams dart through them:—Winds contend
135 Silently there, and heap the snow with breath
Rapid and strong, but silently! Its home
The voiceless lightning in these solitudes

Keeps innocently, and like vapor broods
Over the snow. The secret Strength of things
HO Which governs thought, and to the infinite dome
Of Heaven is as a law, inhabits thee!⁴

3. Cf. Coleridge, "Kubla Khan," lines 12-24 4. I.e., Mont
Blanc,
(p. 809).

870 / P E R C Y B Y S S H E S H E L L E Y

And what were thou, and earth, and stars, and sea,
If to the human mind's imaginings
Silence and solitude were vacancy?

July 23, 1816 1817

Ozymandias⁵

I met a traveler from an antique land
Who said: Two vast and trunkless legs of stone
Stand in the desert ... Near them, on the sand,
Half sunk, a shattered visage lies, whose frown,
5 And wrinkled lip, and sneer of cold command,
Tell that its sculptor well those passions read
Which yet survive, stamped on these lifeless things,
The hand that mocked them, and the heart that fed:
And on the pedestal these words appear:
io "My name is Ozymandias, king of kings:
Look on my works, ye Mighty, and despair!"
Nothing beside remains. Round the decay
Of that colossal wreck, boundless and bare
The lone and level sands stretch far away.

1817 1818

Stanzas Written in Dejection, Near Naples

i

The sun is warm, the sky is clear,
The waves are dancing fast and bright,
Blue isles and snowy mountains wear
The purple noon's transparent might,
5 The breath of the moist earth is light,
Around its unexpanded buds;
Like many a voice of one delight,
The winds, the birds, the ocean floods,
The City's voice itself is soft like Solitude's.

2

io I see the Deep's untrampled floor
With green and purple seaweeds strown;
I see the waves upon the shore,
Like light dissolved in star-showers, thrown:
I sit upon the sands alone—

15 The lightning of the noontide ocean

5. Greek name for the Egyptian monarch Ramses II (thirteenth century **B.C.E.**), who is said to have erected a huge statue of himself.

ENGLAND IN 1819 / 871

Is flashing round me, and a tone
Arises from its measured motion;
How sweet! did any heart now share in my emotion.

3

Alas! I have nor hope nor health,
20 Nor peace within nor calm around,
Nor that content surpassing wealth

The sage in meditation found,
And walked with inward glory crowned—
Nor fame, nor power, nor love, nor leisure.
25 Others I see whom these surround—
Smiling they live, and call life pleasure;
To me that cup has been dealt in another measure.

4

Yet now despair itself is mild,
Even as the winds and waters are;
30 I could lie down like a tired child,
And weep away the life of care
Which I have borne and yet must bear,
Till death like sleep might steal on me,
And I might feel in the warm air
35 My cheek grow cold, and hear the sea
Breathe o'er my dying brain its last monotony.

5

Some might lament that I were cold,
As I, when this sweet day is gone,
Which my lost heart, too soon grown old,
40 Insults with this untimely moan;
They might lament—for I am one
Whom men love not—and yet regret,
Unlike this day, which, when the sun
Shall on its stainless glory set,
45 Will linger, though enjoyed, like joy in memory yet.

1818 1824

England in 1819

An old, mad, blind, despised, and dying king⁶—
Princes, the dregs of their dull race,⁷ who flow
Through public scorn—mud from a muddy spring;

Rulers who neither see, nor feel, nor know,
5 But leechlike to their fainting country cling,
Till they drop, blind in blood, without a blow;

6. George III (1738—1820), who lived for years in regent, later George IV, whom Shelley detested, a state of advanced senility. The “Princes” of line 7. The “Hanoverian” line of English monarchs, 2 are George III’s sons, including the prince- beginning in 1714 with George I.

872 / P E R C Y B Y S S H E S H E L L E Y

A people starved and stabbed in the untitled field—
An army, which liberticide⁸ and prey
Makes as a two-edged sword to all who wield;
10 Golden and sanguine laws⁹ which tempt and slay;
Religion Christless, Godless—a book sealed;
A Senate—Time’s worst statute¹ unrepealed—
Are graves, from which a glorious Phantom² may
Burst, to illumine our tempestuous day.

1819 1839

Ode to the West Wind³

i

O wild West Wind, thou breath of Autumn’s being,
Thou, from whose unseen presence the leaves dead
Are driven, like ghosts from an enchanter fleeing,
Yellow, and black, and pale, and hectic red,
5 Pestilence-stricken multitudes: O thou,
Who chariotest to their dark wintry bed
The winged seeds, where they lie cold and low,
Each like a corpse within its grave, until
Thine azure sister of the Spring shall blow

io Her clarion⁴ o'er the dreaming earth, and fill
(Driving sweet buds like flocks to feed in air)
With living hues and odors plain and hill:
Wild Spirit, which art moving everywhere;
Destroyer and preserver; hear, oh, hear!

2

15 Thou on whose stream, mid the steep sky's commotion,
Loose clouds like earth's decaying leaves are shed,
Shook from the tangled boughs of Heaven and Ocean,
Angels⁵ of rain and lightning: there are spread
On the blue surface of thine aery surge,

20 Like the bright hair uplifted from the head

8. Destruction of liberty. An allusion to the Peterloo Massacre. On August 16, 1819, a cavalry troop on a day when that tempestuous wind, whose temperature is at once mild and animating, was collected a crowd at a peaceful political rally in St. Peter's Field, near Manchester. *Peterloo* ironically conflate St. *Peter* with the Battle of *Waterloo*.

Dante, the fourteenth-century poet whose master-

9. Laws bought with gold and causing bloodshed.

piece, *The Divine Comedy*, originated *terza rima*,

1. Probably the Act of Union (1801), uniting Ireland to England and excluding Roman Catholics
tion," pp. 2040 - 41).

from exercising full citizenship.

4. Trumpet-call.

2. I.e., the spirit of liberty.

5. In Greek derivation, messengers or divine mes-

3. "This poem was conceived and chiefly written
sengers.

in a wood that skirts the Arno, near Florence, and

ODE TO THE WEST WIND / 873

Of some fierce Maenad,⁶ even from the dim verge

Of the horizon to the zenith's height,

The locks of the approaching storm. Thou dirge

Of the dying year, to which this closing night

25 Will be the dome of a vast sepulcher,

Vaulted with all thy congregated might

Of vapors,⁰ from whose solid atmosphere *clouds*

Black rain, and fire, and hail will burst: oh, hear!

3

Thou who didst waken from his summer dreams

30 The blue Mediterranean, where he lay,

Lulled by the coil of his crystalline streams,

Beside a pumice isle in Baiae's bay,⁷

And saw in sleep old palaces and towers

Quivering within the wave's intenser day,

35 All overgrown with azure moss and flowers

So sweet, the sense faints picturing them! Thou

For whose path the Atlantic's level powers

Cleave themselves into chasms, while far below

The sea-blooms and the oozy woods which wear

40 The sapless foliage of the ocean, know
Thy voice, and suddenly grow gray with fear,
And tremble and despoil themselves: oh, hear!8

4

If I were a dead leaf thou mightest bear;
If I were a swift cloud to fly with thee;
45 A wave to pant beneath thy power, and share
The impulse of thy strength, only less free
Than thou, O uncontrollable! If even
I were as in my boyhood, and could be
The comrade of thy wanderings over Heaven,
50 As then, when to outstrip thy skyey speed
Scarce seemed a vision; I would ne'er have striven
As thus with thee in prayer in my sore need.

Oh, lift me as a wave, a leaf, a cloud!

I fall upon the thorns of life! I bleed!

6. Frenzied dancer, worshiper of Dionysus (Greek 8. "The
vegetation at the bottom of the sea ...

god of wine and fertility). sympathizes with that of the land in
the change of 7. Near Naples, Italy. seasons" [Shelley's note].

874 / P E R C Y B Y S S H E S H E L L E Y

55

A heavy weight of hours has chained and bowed
One too like thee: tameless, and swift, and proud.

5

Make me thy lyre, even as the forest is:

What if my leaves are falling like its own!

The tumult of thy mighty harmonies

60 Will take from both a deep, autumnal tone,

Sweet though in sadness. Be thou, Spirit fierce,
My spirit! Be thou me, impetuous one!
Drive my dead thoughts over the universe
Like withered leaves to quicken a new birth!
65 And, by the incantation of this verse,
Scatter, as from an unextinguished hearth
Ashes and sparks, my words among mankind!
Be through my lips to unawakened earth
The trumpet of a prophecy! O Wind,
70 If Winter comes, can Spring be far behind?

1819 1820

The Cloud

I bring fresh showers for the thirsting flowers,
From the seas and the streams;
I bear light shade for the leaves when laid
In their noonday dreams.
5 From my wings are shaken the dews that waken
The sweet buds every one,
When rocked to rest on their mother's breast,
As she dances about the sun.
I wield the flail of the lashing hail,
10 And whiten the green plains under,
And then again I dissolve it in rain,
And laugh as I pass in thunder.
I sift the snow on the mountains below,
And their great pines groan aghast;
15 And all the night 'tis my pillow white,
While I sleep in the arms of the blast.

Sublime on the towers of my skyey bowers,
Lightning my pilot⁹ sits;

In a cavern under is fettered the thunder,

20 It struggles and howls at fits;⁰ *intervals*

9. Electrical energy, here represented as directing the cloud in response to the attraction of opposite charges (“genii,” line 23) under the sea.

T H E C L O U D / 8 7 5

Over earth and ocean, with gentle motion,

This pilot is guiding me,

Lured by the love of the genii that move

In the depths of the purple sea;

25 Over the rills, and the crags, and the hills,

Over the lakes and the plains,

Wherever he dream, under mountain or stream,

The Spirit he loves remains;

And I all the while bask in Heaven’s blue smile,

30 Whilst he is dissolving in rains.

The sanguine Sunrise, with his meteor eyes,

And his burning plumes outspread,

Leaps on the back of my sailing rack,¹

When the morning star shines dead;

35 As on the jag of a mountain crag,

Which an earthquake rocks and swings,

An eagle alit one moment may sit

In the light of its golden wings.

And when Sunset may breathe, from the lit sea beneath,

40 Its ardors of rest and of love,

And the crimson pall of eve may fall

From the depth of Heaven above,
With wings folded I rest, on mine aery nest,
As still as a brooding dove.
45 That orb'd maiden with white fire laden,
Whom mortals call the Moon,
Glides glimmering o'er my fleecelike floor,
By the midnight breezes strewn;
And wherever the beat of her unseen feet,
50 Which only the angels hear,
May have broken the woof of my tent's thin roof, *fabric*
The stars peep behind her and peer;
And I laugh to see them whirl and flee,
Like a swarm of golden bees,
55 When I widen the rent in my wind-built tent,
Till the calm rivers, lakes, and seas,
Like strips of the sky fallen through me on high,
Are each paved with the moon and these.
I bind the Sun's throne with a burning zone, *belt*
60 And the Moon's with a girdle of pearl;
The volcanoes are dim, and the stars reel and swim,
When the whirlwinds my banner unfurl.
From cape to cape, with a bridgelike shape,
Over a torrent sea,
65 Sunbeam-proof, I hang like a roof—
The mountains its columns be.
The triumphal arch through which I march
With hurricane, fire, and snow,
1. Wind-driven clouds.

876 / P E R C Y B Y S S H E S H E L L E Y

When the Powers of the air are chained to my chair,
70 Is the million-colored bow;
The sphere-fire above its soft colors wove,
While the moist Earth was laughing below.
I am the daughter of Earth and Water,
And the nursling of the Sky;
75 I pass through the pores of the ocean and shores;
I change, but I cannot die.
For after the rain when with never a stain
The pavilion of Heaven is bare,
And the winds and sunbeams with their convex gleams
upward-arching
so Build up the blue dome of air,
I silently laugh at my own cenotaph,²
And out of the caverns of rain,
Like a child from the womb, like a ghost from the tomb,
I arise and unbuild it again.
1820 1820
To a Skylark
Hail to thee, blithe Spirit!
Bird thou never wert,
That from Heaven, or near it,
Pourest thy full heart
5 In profuse strains of unpremeditated art.
Higher still and higher
From the earth thou springest
Like a cloud of fire;

The blue deep thou wingest,
io And singing still dost soar, and soaring ever singest.

In the golden lightning
Of the sunken sun,
O'er which clouds are bright'ning,
Thou dost float and run;
15 Like an unbodied joy whose race is just begun.

The pale purple even
Melts around thy flight;
Like a star of Heaven,
In the broad daylight
20 Thou art unseen, but yet I hear thy shrill delight,
Keen as are the arrows
Of that silver sphere,^o *star*

2. M o n u m e n t honoring a person who is buried elsewhere.

T o A S K Y L A R K / 8 7 7

Whose intense lamp narrows
In the white dawn clear
25 Until we hardly see—we feel that it is there.

All the earth and air
With thy voice is loud,
As, when night is bare,
From one lonely cloud
30 The moon rains out her beams, and Heaven is overflowed.
What thou art we know not;
What is most like thee?
From rainbow clouds there flow not
Drops so bright to see

35 As from thy presence showers a rain of melody.
Like a Poet hidden
In the light of thought,
Singing hymns unbidden,
Till the world is wrought
40 To sympathy with hopes and fears it heeded not:
Like a high-born maiden
In a palace tower,
Soothing her love-laden
Soul in secret hour
45 With music sweet as love, which overflows her bower:
Like a glowworm golden
In a dell of dew,
Scattering un beholden
Its aerial hue
50 Among the flowers and grass, which screen it from the
view!
Like a rose embowered
In its own green leaves,
By warm winds deflowered,
Till the scent it gives
55 Makes faint with too much sweet those heavy-winged
thieves:
Sound of vernal showers
On the twinkling grass,
Rain-awakened flowers,
All that ever was
60 Joyous, and clear, and fresh, thy music doth surpass:
Teach us, Sprite⁰ or Bird, *spirit*

What sweet thoughts are thine:
I have never heard
Praise of love or wine
65 That panted forth a flood of rapture so divine.
878 / P E R C Y B Y S S H E S H E L L E Y
Chorus Hymeneal,³
Or triumphal chant,
Matched with thine would be all
But an empty vaunt,
70 A thing wherein we feel there is some hidden want.
What objects are the fountains
Of thy happy strain?
What fields, or waves, or mountains?
What shapes of sky or plain?
75 What love of thine own kind? what ignorance of pain?
With thy clear keen joyance
Languor cannot be:
Shadow of annoyance
Never came near thee:
so Thou lovest—but ne'er knew love's sad satiety.
Waking or asleep,
Thou of death must deem
Things more true and deep
Than we mortals dream,
85 Or how could thy notes flow in such a crystal stream?
We look before and after,
And pine for what is not:
Our sincerest laughter

With some pain is fraught;
90 Our sweetest songs are those that tell of saddest thought.
Yet if we could scorn
Hate, and pride, and fear;
If we were things born
Not to shed a tear,
95 I know not how thy joy we ever should come near.
Better than all measures
Of delightful sound,
Better than all treasures
That in books are found,
100 Thy skill to poet were, thou scorner of the ground!
Teach me half the gladness
That thy brain must know,
Such harmonious madness
From my lips would flow
105 The world should listen then—as I am listening now.

1820 1820

3. As for a wedding (from Hymen, Greek god of marriage).

ADONAIS / 8 7 9

Adonais⁴

*An Elegy on the Death of John Keats, Author of Endymion,
Hyperion,*

*etc.*⁵

OTOTTJP jtpiv **UEV** e/.**AUJREG EVI ‘ COJOLOIV** ewog,
vftv *de davwv* ^anjteig EcrjtEpog ev cjjOinEvoig.⁶

PLATO

1

I weep for Adonais—he is dead!

Oh, weep for Adonais! though our tears
Thaw not the frost which binds so dear a head!
And thou, sad Hour, selected from all years
5 To mourn our loss, rouse thy obscure compeers,⁰ *equals*
And teach them thine own sorrow, say: with me
Died Adonais; till the Future dares
Forget the Past, his fate and fame shall be
An echo and a light unto eternity!

2

io Where wert thou mighty Mother,⁷ when he lay,
When thy Son lay, pierced by the shaft which flies
In darkness? where was IornŪrania *abandoned*
When Adonais died? With veiled eyes,
'Mid listening Echoes, in her Paradise
15 She sate, while one, with soft enamored breath,
Rekindled all the fading melodies,
With which, like flowers that mock the corse⁰ beneath, *corpse*
He had adorned and hid the coming bulk of death.

3

Oh, weep for Adonais—he is dead!
20 Wake, melancholy Mother, wake and weep!
Yet wherefore? Quench within their burning bed
Thy fiery tears, and let thy loud heart keep
Like his, a mute and uncomplaining sleep;
For he is gone, where all things wise and fair
25 Descend:—oh, dream not that the amorous Deep
Will yet restore him to the vital air;
Death feeds on his mute voice, and laughs at our despair.

4. A name derived from *Adonis*, in Greek mythology a young hunter beloved of Aphrodite and killed by a wild boar. The root meaning of his name, "Ere thy fair light had fled— / Now, having died, thou art as Hesperus, giving / New splendor to the dead" [Shelley's translation], Venus is both Hesperus (also *Adon*, is "the lord," and in the form *Adonai* appears in Hebrew scriptures as a synonym for *God*), the evening star, and Lucifer, the morning star.

5. Keats died, in Rome, on February 23, 1821; for

7. Urania, "heavenly one," Venus invoked as the Muse (divine inspirer) of noble poetry. Adonais is his poetry, see pp. 905—41.

Muse (divine inspirer) of noble poetry. Adonais is

6. "Thou wert the morning star among the living, represented as her son.

880 / PERCY BYSSHE SHELLEY

47

Most musical of mourners, weep again!

Lament anew, Urania!—He died,

30 Who was the Sire of an immortal strain,

Blind, old, and lonely, when his country's pride,

The priest, the slave, and the liberticide,⁰ *destroyer of liberty*

Trampled and mocked with many a loathed rite

Of lust and blood; he went, unterrified,

35 Into the gulf of death; but his clear Sprite⁰ *spirit*

Yet reigns o'er earth; the third among the sons of light.⁹

5

Most musical of mourners, weep anew!
Not all to that bright station dared to climb;
And happier they their happiness who knew,
40 Whose tapers yet burn through that night of time
In which suns perished; others more sublime,
Struck by the envious wrath of man or God,
Have sunk, extinct in their refulgent⁰ prime; *shining*
And some yet live, treading the thorny road,
45 Which leads, through toil and hate, to Fame's serene abode.

6

But now, thy youngest, dearest one, has perished,
The nursling of thy widowhood, who grew,
Like a pale flower by some sad maiden cherished,
And fed with true-love tears, instead of dew;
50 Most musical of mourners, weep anew!
Thy extreme⁰ hope, the loveliest and the last, *highest, latest*
The bloom, whose petals nipped before they blew
Died on the promise of the fruit, is waste;
The broken lily lies—the storm is overpast.

7

55 To that high Capital,⁰ where kingly Death *Rome*
Keeps his pale court in beauty and decay,
He came; and bought, with price of purest breath,
A grave among the eternal.—Come away!
Haste, while the vault of blue Italian day
60 Is yet his fitting charnel-roof! while still
He lies, as if in dewy sleep he lay;
Awake him not! surely he takes his fill

Of deep and liquid rest, forgetful of all ill.

8

He will awake no more, oh, never more!—

65 Within the twilight chamber spreads apace

The shadow of white Death, and at the door

Invisible Corruption waits to trace

8. Milton, who also invoked the aid of Urania (see 9. Rivald as a poet by only two predecessors, *Paradise Lost* 1.6—16, p. 421 above). Homer and Dante.

ADONAIIS / 8 8 1

His extreme way to her dim dwelling-place;

The eternal Hunger sits, but pity and awe

70 Soothe her pale rage, nor dares she to deface

So fair a prey, till darkness and the law

Of change, shall o'er his sleep the mortal curtain draw.

9

Oh, weep for Adonais!—The quick0 Dreams, *living*

The passion-winged Ministers of thought,

75 Who were his flocks, whom near the living streams

Of his young spirit he fed, and whom he taught

The love which was its music, wander not—

Wander no more, from kindling brain to brain,

But droop there, whence they sprung; and mourn their lot

so Round the cold heart, where, after their sweet pain,

They ne'er will gather strength, or find a home again.

10

And one with trembling hand clasps his cold head,

And fans him with her moonlight wings, and cries,

“Our love, our hope, our sorrow, is not dead;

85 See, on the silken fringe of his faint eyes,
Like dew upon a sleeping flower, there lies
A tear some Dream has loosened from his brain.”
Lost Angel of a ruined Paradise!
She knew not ‘twas her own; as with no stain
90 She faded, like a cloud which had outwept its rain.

n

One from a lucid⁰ urn of starry dew

luminous

Washed his light limbs as if embalming them;
Another clipped her profuse locks, and threw
The wreath upon him, like an anadem,⁰

garland

95 Which frozen tears instead of pearls begem;
Another in her willful grief would break
Her bow and winged reeds, as if to stem
A greater loss with one which was more weak;
And dull the barbed fire against his frozen cheek
12

IOO Another Splendor on his mouth alit,
That mouth, whence it was wont to draw the breath
Which gave it strength to pierce the guarded wit,¹
And pass into the panting heart beneath
With lightning and with music: the damp death
105 Quenched its caress upon its icy lips;
And, as a dying meteor stains a wreath
Of moonlight vapor, which the cold night clips,⁰ *envelops*
It flushed through his pale limbs, and passed to its eclipse.

1. The defensive analytical mind.

8 8 2

/ PERCY BYSSHE S H E L L E Y

And others came ... Desires and Adorations,
110 Winged Persuasions and veiled Destinies,
Splendors, and Glooms, and glimmering Incarnations
Of hopes and fears, and twilight Phantasies;
And Sorrow, with her family of Sighs,
And Pleasure, blind with tears, led by the gleam
115 Of her own dying smile instead of eyes,
Came in slow pomp;—the moving pomp might seem
Like pageantry of mist on an autumnal stream.

J 4

All he had loved, and molded into thought
From shape, and hue, and odor, and sweet sound,
120 Lamented Adonais. Morning sought
Her eastern watch-tower, and her hair unbound,
Wet with the tears which should adorn the ground,
Dimmed the aerial eyes that kindle day;
Afar the melancholy thunder moaned,
125 Pale Ocean in unquiet slumber lay,
And the wild Winds flew round, sobbing in their dismay.
Lost Echo² sits amid the voiceless mountains,
And feeds her grief with his remembered lay,
And will no more reply to winds or fountains,
no Or amorous birds perched on the young green spray,
Or herdsman's horn, or bell at closing day;
Since she can mimic not his lips, more dear

Than those for whose disdain she pined away
Into a shadow of all sounds:—a drear
135 Murmur, between their songs, is all the woodmen hear.

16

Grief made the young Spring wild, and she threw down
Her kindling buds, as if she Autumn were,
Or they dead leaves; since her delight is flown
For whom should she have waked the sullen year?

140 To Phoebus was not Hyacinth³ so dear,

Nor to himself Narcissus, as to both

Thou, Adonais; wan they stand and sere^o *dry; -withered*

Amid the faint companions of their youth,

With dew all turned to tears; odor, to sighing ruth.^o *pity*

17

145 Thy spirit's sister, the lorn^o nightingale, *lost, abandoned*

Mourns not her mate with such melodious pain;

2. In Greek mythology, a nymph, or minor nature

3. Youth loved by Apollo ("Phoebus," Greek and goddess, who loved Narcissus and who pined away

Roman god of sunlight, prophecy, music, and

into a mere voice when that youth fell in love with poetry), who killed him by accident.

his own reflection in a pool.

ADONAIIS / 8 8 3

Not so the eagle, who like thee could scale

Heaven, and could nourish in the sun's domain

Her mighty youth,⁴ with morning, doth complain,

150 Soaring and screaming round her empty nest,

As Albion⁰ wails for thee: the curse of Cain⁵ *England*
Light on his head⁶ who pierced thy innocent breast,
And scared the angel soul that was its earthly guest!

18

Ah, woe is me! Winter is come and gone,
155 But grief returns with the revolving year;
The airs and streams renew their joyous tone;
The ants, the bees, the swallows reappear;
Fresh leaves and flowers deck the dead Seasons' bier;
The amorous birds now pair in every brake,⁰ *thicket*
160 And build their mossy homes in field and brere;^o *briar*
And the green lizard, and the golden snake,
Like unimprisoned flames, out of their trance awake.

19

Through wood and stream and field and hill and Ocean,
A quickening life from the Earth's heart has burst
165 As it has ever done, with change and motion,
From the great morning of the world when first
God dawned on Chaos; in its stream immersed
The lamps of Heaven flash with a softer light;
All baser things pant with life's sacred thirst;
170 Diffuse themselves; and spend in love's delight,
The beauty and the joy of their renewed might.

20

The leprous corpse touched by this spirit tender
Exhales itself in flowers of gentle breath;
Like incarnations of the stars, when splendor
175 Is changed to fragrance, they illumine death

And mock the merry worm that wakes beneath;
Nought we know, dies. Shall that alone which knows
Be as a sword consumed before the sheath
By sightless lightning?—the intense atom⁷ glows
180 A moment, then is quenched in a most cold repose.

21

Alas! that all we loved of him should be,
But for our grief, as if it had not been.
And grief itself be mortal! Woe is me!
Whence are we, and why are we? of what scene
4. In folklore, an eagle could recapture its youth
6. The anonymous critic whose venomous review
by soaring close to the sun.

of Keats's "Endymion" had hastened, Shelley

5. God's curse upon Cain for having slain his
believed, Keats's death.

brother Abel was that nothing should grow for him

7. Indivisible and indestructible unit of anything
and that he should be homeless (Genesis 3.11-
that exists. *Sightless*: unseeing and unseen.

12).

884 / P E R C Y B Y S S H E S H E L L E Y

185 The actors or spectators? Great and mean
Meet massed in death, who lends what life must borrow.
As long as skies are blue, and fields are green,
Evening must usher night, night urge the morrow,
Month follow month with woe, and year wake year to sorrow.

22

190 *He* will awake no more, oh, never more!
“Wake thou,” cried Misery, “childless Mother, rise
Out of thy sleep, and slake, in thy heart’s core,
A wound more fierce than his with tears and sighs.”
And all the Dreams that watched Urania’s eyes,
195 And all the Echoes whom their sister’s song
Had held in holy silence, cried, “Arise!”
Swift as a Thought by the snake Memory stung,
From her ambrosial rest the fading Splendor *immortal* /
Urania
sprung.

23

She rose like an autumnal Night, that springs
200 Out of the East, and follows wild and drear
The golden Day, which, on eternal wings,
Even as a ghost abandoning a bier,
Has left the Earth a corpse. Sorrow and fear
So struck, so roused, so rapt Urania;
205 So saddened round her like an atmosphere
Of stormy mist; so swept her on her way
Even to the mournful place where Adonais lay.

24

Out of her secret Paradise she sped,
Through camps and cities rough with stone, and steel,
210 And human hearts, which to her aery tread
Yielding not, wounded the invisible
Palms of her tender feet where’er they fell:
And barbed tongues, and thoughts more sharp than they,

Rent the soft Form they never could repel,
215 Whose sacred blood, like the young tears of May,
Paved with eternal flowers that undeserving way.

2 5

In the death-chamber for a moment Death,
Shamed by the presence of that living Might,
Blushed to annihilation, and the breath
220 Revisited those lips, and life's pale light
Flashed through those limbs, so late her dear delight.

“Leave me not wild and drear and comfortless,
As silent lightning leaves the starless night!

Leave me not!” cried Urania: her distress

225 Roused Death: Death rose and smiled, and met her vain
caress.

8. The Echo in line 127.

ADONAIIS / 8 8 5

2 6

“Stay yet awhile! speak to me once again;
Kiss me, so long but as a kiss may live;
And in my heartless breast and burning brain
That word, that kiss, shall all thoughts else survive,
230 With food of saddest memory kept alive,
Now thou art dead, as if it were a part
Of thee, my Adonais! I would give
All that I am to be as thou now art,
But I am chained to Time, and cannot thence depart!

2 7

235 “O gentle child, beautiful as thou wert,

Why didst thou leave the trodden paths of men
Too soon, and with weak hands thoughji mighty heart
Dare the unpastured dragon in his den?
Defenseless as thou wert, oh! where was then
240 Wisdom the mirrored shield, or scorn the spear?⁹
Or hadst thou waited the full cycle, when
Thy spirit should have filled its crescent sphere,
The monsters of life's waste had fled from thee like deer.

28

“The herded wolves, bold only to pursue;
245 The obscene ravens, clamorous o'er the dead;
The vultures, to the conqueror's banner true,
Who feed where Desolation first has fed,
And whose wings rain contagion;—how they¹ fled,
When like Apollo, from his golden bow,
250 The Pythian of the age² one arrow sped
And smiled!—The spoilers tempt no second blow,
They fawn on the proud feet that spurn them lying low.

29

“The sun comes forth, and many reptiles spawn;
He sets, and each ephemeral insect then
255 Is gathered into death without a dawn,
And the immortal stars awake again;
So is it in the world of living men:
A godlike mind soars forth, in its delight
Making earth bare and veiling heaven, and when
260 It sinks, the swarms that dimmed or shared its light
Leave to its kindred lamps the spirit's awful night.”

3°

Thus ceased she: and the mountain shepherds came
Their garlands sere, their magic mantles rent;

9. An allusion to the Greek hero Perseus, who

2. Byron (1788-1824; see pp. 833 - 63), Shelley's
killed the monster Medusa, evading her gaze,
friend, who attacked the critics in *English Bards*
which could turn him into stone, by using his
and Scotch Reviewers (1809); here compared to
shield as a mirror.

Apollo the Pythian, who slew the monster Python

1. Critics, here characterized as beasts and birds
near Delphi.

of prey.

886

/ **PERCY BYSSHE S H E L L E Y**

The Pilgrim of Eternity,³ whose fame

265 Over his living head like Heaven is bent,

An early but enduring monument,

Came, veiling all the lightnings of his song

In sorrow; from her wilds Ierne^o sent *Ireland*

The sweetest lyrist of her saddest wrong,⁴

270 And love taught grief to fall like music from his tongue.

31

Midst others of less note, came one frail Form,⁵

A phantom among men; companionless

As the last cloud of an expiring storm,

Whose thunder is its knell; he, as I guess,

275 Had gazed on Nature's naked loveliness,
Actaeon-like,⁶ and now he fled astray
With feeble steps o'er the world's wilderness,
And his own thoughts, along that rugged way,
Pursued, like raging hounds, their father and their prey.

32

280 A pardlike⁷ Spirit beautiful and swift—
A Love in desolation masked;—a Power
Girt round with weakness;—it can scarce uplift
The weight of the superincumbent⁰ hour; *heavily resting*
It is a dying lamp, a falling shower,
285 A breaking billow;—even whilst we speak
Is it not broken? On the withering flower
The killing sun smiles brightly: on a cheek
The life can burn in blood, even while the heart may break.

33

His head was bound with pansies overblown,
290 And faded violets, white, and pied,⁰ and blue;
multicolored
And a light spear topped with a cypress cone,
Round whose rude shaft dark ivy-tresses grew
Yet dripping with the forest's noonday dew,
Vibrated, as the ever-beating heart
295 Shook the weak hand that grasped it; of that crew
He came the last, neglected and apart;
A herd-abandoned deer, struck by the hunter's dart.

34

All stood aloof, and at his partial moan⁸

Smiled through their tears; well knew that gentle band
300 Who in another's fate now wept his own;

3. Byron, as author of *Childe Harold's Pilgrimage*.

bathing. She transformed him into a stag, and he

4. Thomas Moore (1779-1852), poet, author of
was torn to pieces by his hounds.

Irish Melodies.

7. Leopardlike; the leopard was sacred to Diony-

5. Shelley, as poet-mourner, here wearing
sus.

emblems of Dionysus, Greek god of wine.

8. Expressing a bond of sympathy (partiality)

6. Actaeon, a young hunter, offended Diana, god-
toward Adonais.

dess of the forest, by discovering her while she was

ADONAIIS / 8 8 7

As in the accents of an unknown land,

He sung new sorrow; sad Urania scanned

The Stranger's mien,⁰ and murmured: "Who art thou?"
expressions

He answered not, but with a sudden hand

305 Made bare his branded and ensanguined brow,

Which was like Cain's or Christ's—oh! that it should be so!

What softer voice is hushed over the dead?

Athwart what brow is that dark mantle thrown?

What form leans sadly o'er the white death-bed,

310 In mockery⁰ of monumental stone, *imitation*

The heavy heart heaving without a moan?

If it be He,⁹ who, gentlest of the wise,
Taught, soothed, loved, honored the departed one;
Let me not vex, with inharmonious sighs,
315 The silence of that heart's accepted sacrifice.

36

Our Adonais has drunk poison—oh!
What deaf and viperous murderer could crown
Life's early cup with such a draught of woe?
The nameless worm¹ would now itself disown:
320 It felt, yet could escape the magic tone
Whose prelude held⁰ all envy, hate and wrong, *held, off*
But what was howling in one breast alone,
Silent with expectation of the song,
Whose master's hand is cold, whose silver lyre unstrung.

37

325 Live thou, whose infamy is not thy fame!
Live! fear no heavier chastisement from me,
Thou noteless blot on a remembered name!
But be thyself, and know thyself to be!
And ever at thy season be thou free
330 To spill the venom when thy fangs o'erflow:
Remorse and Self-contempt shall cling to thee;
Hot Shame shall burn upon thy secret brow,
And like a beaten hound tremble thou shalt—as now.

38

Nor let us weep that our delight is fled
335 Far from these carrion⁰ kites⁰ that scream below;
scavenger / hawks

He wakes or sleeps with the enduring dead;
Thou canst not soar where he is sitting now.
Dust to the dust! but the pure spirit shall flow
Back to the burning fountain whence it came,

9. Leigh Hunt (1784—1859), poet and critic, 1. Serpent; the anonymous reviewer (see line friend of Keats and Shelley. 152).

888 / P E R C Y B Y S S H E S H E L L E Y

340 A portion of the Eternal, which must glow
Through time and change, unquenchably the same,
Whilst thy² cold embers choke the sordid hearth of shame.

39

Peace, peace! he is not dead, he doth not sleep—

He hath awakened from the dream of life—

345 ‘Tis we, who lost in stormy visions, keep

With phantoms an unprofitable strife,

And in mad trance strike with our spirit’s knife

Invulnerable nothings.— *We* decay

Like corpses in a charnel; fear and grief

350 Convulse us and consume us day by day,

And cold hopes swarm like worms within our living clay.

4°

He has outsoared the shadow of our night;

Envy and calumny and hate and pain,

And that unrest which men miscall delight,

355 Can touch him not and torture not again;

From the contagion of the world’s slow stain

He is secure, and now can never mourn

A heart grown cold, a head grown gray in vain;

Nor, when the spirit's self has ceased to burn,
360 With sparkless ashes load an unlamented urn.

41

He lives, he wakes—'tis Death is dead, not he;
Mourn not for Adonais.—Thou young Dawn,
Turn all thy dew to splendor, for from thee
The spirit thou lamentest is not gone;
365 Ye caverns and ye forests, cease to moan!
Cease ye faint flowers and fountains, and thou Air,
Which like a morning veil thy scarf hadst thrown
O'er the abandoned Earth, now leave it bare
Even to the joyous stars which smile on its despair!

42

370 He is made one with Nature: there is heard
His voice in all her music, from the moan
Of thunder, to the song of night's sweet bird;³
He is a presence to be felt and known
In darkness and in light, from herb and stone,
375 Spreading itself where'er that Power may move
Which has withdrawn his being to its own;
Which wields the world with never wearied love,
Sustains it from beneath, and kindles it above.

2. The reviewer's.

3. Nightingale; an allusion to Keats's "Ode to a Nightingale"
(see p. 935).

ADONAI S / 8 8 9

4 3

He is a portion of the loveliness

380 Which once he made more lovely: he doth bear
His part, while the one Spirit's plastic⁰ stress *formative*
Sweeps through the dull dense world, compelling there
All new successions to the forms they wear;
Torturing the unwilling dross⁰ that checks its flight *coarse*
matter
385 To its own likeness, as each mass may bear;
And bursting in its beauty and its might
From trees and beasts and men into the Heaven's light.

44

The splendors of the firmament of time
May be eclipsed, but are extinguished not;
390 Like stars to their appointed height they climb,
And death is a low mist which cannot blot
The brightness it may veil. When lofty thought
Lifts a young heart above its mortal lair,
And love and life contend in it, for what
395 Shall be its earthly doom, the dead live there
And move like winds of light on dark and stormy air.

45

The inheritors of unfulfilled renown
Rose from their thrones, built beyond mortal thought,
Far in the Unapparent. Chatterton⁴
400 Rose pale, his solemn agony had not
Yet faded from him; Sidney,⁵ as he fought
And as he fell and as he lived and loved
Sublimely mild, a Spirit without spot,
Arose; and Lucan,⁶ by his death approved:⁰ *vindicated*

405 Oblivion as they rose shrank like a thing reproved

46

And many more, whose names on Earth are dark

But whose transmitted effluence cannot die

So long as fire outlives the parent spark,

Rose, robed in dazzling immortality.

410 “Thou art become as one of us,” they cry,

“It was for thee yon kingless sphere has long

Swung blind in unascended majesty,

Silent alone amid an Heaven of Song.

Assume thy winged throne, thou Vesper of our throng!”

4. Thomas Chatterton (1752-1770), a gifted

6. A young Roman poet (39—65 C.E.), who took
young poet who committed suicide.

his own life rather than die under sentence of the

5. Sir Philip Sidney (1554-1586; see pp. 208-
notorious emperor Nero, against whom he had
20), a poet, critic, courtier, and soldier, fatally
conspired.

wounded in battle.

890 / P E R C Y B Y S S H E S H E L L E Y

47

4i5 Who mourns for Adonais? Oh, come forth,

Fond wretch! and know thyself and him aright.

Clasp with thy panting soul the pendulous⁷ Earth;

As from a center, dart thy spirit's light

Beyond all worlds, until its spacious might

420 Sate the void circumference: then shrink

Even to a point within our day and night;
And keep thy heart light lest it make thee sink
When hope has kindled hope, and lured thee to the brink.

48

Or go to Rome, which is the sepulcher,
425 Oh, not of him, but of our joy: 'tis nought
That ages, empires, and religions there
Lie buried in the ravage they have wrought;
For such as he can lend—they borrow not
Glory from those who made the world their prey;
430 And he is gathered to the kings of thought
Who waged contention with their time's decay,
And of the past are all that cannot pass away.

49

Go thou to Rome,—at once the Paradise,
The grave, the city, and the wilderness;
435 And where its wrecks like shattered mountains rise,
And flowering weeds, and fragrant copses⁰ dress *small woods*
The bones of Desolation's nakedness
Pass, till the Spirit of the spot shall lead
Thy footsteps to a slope of green access
440 Where, like an infant's smile, over the dead
A light of laughing flowers along the grass is spread,

5°

And gray walls moulder round, on which dull Time
Feeds, like slow fire upon a hoary brand;⁰ *burning log*
And one keen pyramid⁸ with wedge sublime,
445 Pavilioning the dust of him who planned

This refuge for his memory, doth stand
Like flame transformed to marble; and beneath,
A field is spread, on which a newer band
Have pitched in Heaven's smile their camp of death,
450 Welcoming him we lose with scarce extinguished breath.

51

Here pause: these graves are all too young as yet
To have outgrown the sorrow which consigned
Its charge to each; and if the seal is set,

7. Floating poised in space. Rome, beside the Protestant cemetery where Keats 8. Tomb of Gaius Cestius, an officer of ancient and Shelley are buried.

A D O N A I S / 8 9 1

**Here, on one fountain of a mourning mind,
455 Break it not thou! too surely shalt thou find
Thine own well full, if thou returnest home,
Of tears and gall. From the world's bitter wind
Seek shelter in the shadow of the tomb.**

What Adonais is, why fear we to become?

52

**460 The One remains, the many change and pass;
Heaven's light forever shines, Earth's shadows fly;
Life, like a dome of many-colored glass,
Stains the white radiance of Eternity,
Until Death tramples it to fragments.—Die,
465 If thou wouldst be with that which thou dost seek!
Follow where all is fled!—Rome's azure sky,
Flowers, ruins, statues, music, words, are weak
The glory they transfuse with fitting truth to speak.**

53

Why linger, why turn back, why shrink, my Heart?

470 Thy hopes are gone before: from all things here

They have departed; thou shouldst now depart!

A light is past from the revolving year,

And man, and woman; and what still is dear

Attracts to crush, repels to make thee wither.

475 The soft sky smiles,—the low wind whispers near:

‘Tis Adonais calls! oh, hasten thither,

No more let life divide what Death can join together.

54

That Light whose smile kindles the Universe,

That Beauty in which all things work and move,

480 That Benediction which the eclipsing Curse

Of birth can quench not, that sustaining Love

Which through the web of being blindly wove

By man and beast and earth and air and sea,

Burns bright or dim, as each are mirrors of

485 The fire for which all thirst; now beams on me,

Consuming the last clouds of cold mortality.

55

The breath whose might I have invoked in song

Descends on me; my spirit's bark⁰ is driven, *small ship*

Far from the shore, far from the trembling throng

490 Whose sails were never to the tempest given;

The massy earth and sphered skies are riven!

I am borne darkly, fearfully, afar;

Whilst burning through the inmost veil of Heaven,

**The soul of Adonais, like a star,
495 Beacons from the abode where the Eternal are.**

1821

1821

892 / P E R C Y B Y S S H E S H E L L E Y

FROM HELLAS

The World's Great Age

The world's great age begins anew,

The golden years return,

The earth doth like a snake¹ renew

Her winter weeds² outworn:

5 Heaven smiles, and faiths and empires gleam,

Like wrecks of a dissolving dream.

A brighter Hellas rears its mountains

From waves serener far;

A new Peneus³ rolls his fountains

10 Against the morning star.

Where fairer Tempes⁴ bloom, there sleep

Young Cyclads⁵ on a sunnier deep.

A loftier Argo⁶ cleaves the main,

Fraught with a later prize;

15 Another Orpheus⁷ sings again,

And loves, and weeps, and dies.

A new Ulysses leaves once more

Calypso⁸ for his native shore.

Oh, write no more the tale of Troy,

20 If earth Death's scroll must be!

Nor mix with Laian rage⁹ the joy

Which dawns upon the free:
Although a subtler Sphinx renew
Riddles of death Thebes never knew.
25 Another Athens shall arise,
And to remoter time
Bequeath, like sunset to the skies,
The splendor of its prime;
And leave, if nought so bright may live,
30 All earth can take or Heaven can give.
Saturn and Love their long repose
Shall burst, more bright and good

9. *Hellas*, an ancient name for Greece, is the title
7. Mythological Greek poet and musician of mag-
of a drama in which Shelley celebrates the contem-
porary Greek struggle for independence, which he
wife, Eurydice, to be released from the realm of
saw as heralding the return of the legendary “Age
the dead on condition that he would not look at
of Saturn” or “Age of Gold,” the first, best period
her until they had reached the upper world. Break-
of h u m a n history.

ing his pledge at the last moment, he lost her for-

1. Shedding its skin after hibernation, a symbol of
ever.

regeneration.

8. Island nymph with whom Ulysses (Odysseus)

2. Clothes, especially mourning garments.

lived for seven years during his return to Ithaca

3. Greek river of legendary beauty.

from the Trojan War.

4. Valley of the Peneus.

9. Ignorant of his own identity, Oedipus in a rage

5. Or Cyclades, islands in the Aegean Sea.

killed King Laius of Thebes (in fact his father).

6. In Greek mythology, the first seagoing vessel,

Oedipus then delivered Thebes from the power of

on which Jason sailed to gain the “prize” (line 14)

a sphinx by answering her riddles and won Jocasta

of the Golden Fleece.

(in fact his mother) as his wife and queen.

B A D G E R / 8 9 3

Than all who fell, than One who rose,

Than many unsubdued:1

35 Not gold, not blood, their altar dowers,

But votive tears and symbol flowers.

Oh, cease! must hate and death return?

Cease! must men kill and die?

Cease! drain not to its dregs the urn

40 Of bitter prophecy.

The world is weary of the past,

Oh, might it die or rest at last!

1821 1822

J O H N C L A R E

1793-1864

Badger

When midnight comes a host of dogs and men
Go out and track the badger to his den,
And put a sack within the hole, and lie
Till the old grunting badger passes by.
5 He comes and hears—they let the strongest loose.
The old fox hears the noise and drops the goose.
The poacher shoots and hurries from the cry,
And the old hare half wounded buzzes by.
They get a forked stick to bear him down
io And clap the dogs and take him to the town,
And bait him all the day with many dogs,
And laugh and shout and fright the scampering hogs.
He runs along and bites at all he meets:
They shout and hollo down the noisy streets.
15 He turns about to face the loud uproar
And drives the rebels to their very door.
The frequent stone is hurled where'er they go;
When badgers fight, then everyone's a foe.
The dogs are clapped and urged to join the fray;
20 The badger turns and drives them all away.
Though scarcely half as big, demure and small,
He fights with dogs for hours and beats them all.
The heavy mastiff, savage in the fray,
Lies down and licks his feet and turns away.
25 The bulldog knows his match and waxes cold,
1. Saturn and Love are the restored deities of the “many
unsubdued” are idols still worshiped

“world's great age”; “all who fell” are the deities throughout
the world, who “fell” when Christ arose from the dead; the

894 / JOHN CLARE

The badger grins and never leaves his hold.
He drives the crowd and follows at their heels
And bites them through—the drunkard swears and reels.
The frightened women take the boys away,
30 The blackguard laughs and hurries on the fray.
He tries to reach the woods, an awkward race,
But sticks and cudgels quickly stop the chase.
He turns again and drives the noisy crowd
And beats the many dogs in noises loud.
35 He drives away and beats them every one,
And then they loose them all and set them on.
He falls as dead and kicked by boys and men,
Then starts and grins and drives the crowd again;
Till kicked and torn and beaten out he lies
40 And leaves his hold and crackles, groans, and dies.

1835-37 1920

Gypsies

The snow falls deep; the forest lies alone;
The boy goes hasty for his load of brakes,⁰ *brushwood*
Then thinks upon the fire and hurries back;
The gypsy knocks his hands and tucks them up,
5 And seeks his squalid camp, half hid in snow,
Beneath the oak which breaks away the wind,
And bushes close in snow like hovel warm;
There tainted mutton wastes upon the coals,
And the half-wasted dog squats close and rubs,
10 Then feels the heat too strong, and goes aloof;

He watches well, but none a bit can spare,
And vainly waits the morsel thrown away.
Tis thus they live—a picture to the place,
A quiet, pilfering, unprotected race.

1837-41 1920

Song: Love Lives beyond the Tomb

Love lives beyond
The tomb, the earth, which fades like dew—
I love the fond,
The faithful, and the true.
Love lives in sleep,
Tis happiness of healthy dreams,
Eve's dews may weep,
But love delightful seems.

F I R S T L O V E / 8 9 5

'Tis seen in flowers,
10 And in the even's pearly dew
On earth's green hours,
And in the heaven's eternal blue.
'Tis heard in spring
When light and sunbeams, warm and kind,
15 On angel's wing
Brings love and music to the wind.
And where's the voice
So young, so beautiful, and sweet
As nature's choice,
20 Where spring and lovers meet?
Love lives beyond

The tomb, the earth, the flowers, and dew.

I love the fond,

The faithful, young, and true.

1842-64 1873

First Love

I ne'er was struck before that hour

With love so sudden and so sweet,

Her face it bloomed like a sweet flower

And stole my heart away complete.

5 My face turned pale as deadly pale.

My legs refused to walk away,

And when she looked, what could I ail?

My life and all seemed turned to clay.

And then my blood rushed to my face

io And took my eyesight quite away,

The trees and bushes round the place

Seemed midnight at noonday.

I could not see a single thing,

Words from my eyes did start—

15 They spoke as chords do from the string,

And blood burnt round my heart.

Are flowers the winter's choice?

Is love's bed always snow?

She seemed to hear my silent voice,

20 Not love's appeals to know.

I never saw so sweet a face

As that I stood before.

My heart has left its dwelling-place

And can return no more.

1842-64

1920

8 9 6 / JOHN CLARE

Farewell

Farewell to the bushy clump close to the river

And the flags where the butter-bump¹ hides in forever;

Farewell to the weedy nook, hemmed in by waters;

Farewell to the miller's brook and his three bonny daughters;

5 Farewell to them all while in prison I lie—

In the prison a thrall⁰ sees naught but the sky. *servant slave*

Shut out are the green fields and birds in the bushes;

In the prison yard nothing builds, blackbirds or thrushes.

Farewell to the old mill and dash of the waters,

10 To the miller and, dearer still, to his three bonny daughters.

In the nook, the larger burdock² grows near the green willow;

In the flood, round the moor-cock dashes under the billow;³

To the old mill farewell, to the lock, pens, and waters,

To the miller himsel', and his three bonny daughters.

1842-64

1920

I Am

I am: yet what I am none cares or knows

My friends forsake me like a memory lost,

I am the self-consumer of my woes—

They rise and vanish in oblivious host,
5 Like shadows in love's frenzied, stifled throes—
And yet I am, and live—like vapors tossed
Into the nothingness of scorn and noise,
Into the living sea of waking dreams,
Where there is neither sense of life or joys,
10 But the vast shipwreck of my life's esteems;
Even the dearest, that I love the best,
Are strange—nay, rather stranger than the rest.
I long for scenes, where man hath never trod,
A place where woman never smiled or wept—
15 There to abide with my Creator, God,
And sleep as I in childhood sweetly slept,
Untroubling, and untroubled where I lie,
The grass below—above the vaulted sky.

1842-64

1865

1. Bittern, a marsh bird with a booming call. *Flags*:
2. Type of coarse weed.
irises (tall plants).
3. Wave, water. *Moor-cock*: type of waterfowl.

897

FELICIADOROTHEAHEMANS

1793-1835

England's Dead

Son of the ocean isle!

Where sleep your mighty dead?

Show me what high and stately pile

Is reared o'er Glory's bed.

5 Go, stranger! track the deep,

Free, free the white sail spread!

Wave may not foam, nor wild wind sweep,

Where rest not England's dead.

On Egypt's burning plains,

io By the pyramid o'erswayed,

With fearful power the noonday reigns,

And the palm trees yield no shade.¹

But let the angry sun

From heaven look fiercely red,

15 Unfelt by those whose task is done!—

There slumber England's dead.

The hurricane hath might

Along the Indian shore,

And far by Ganges' banks at night,

20 Is heard the tiger's roar.

But let the sound roll on!

It hath no tone of dread,

For those that from their toils are gone;—

There slumber England's dead.

25 Loud rush the torrent floods

The western wilds among,

And free, in green Columbia's woods,

The hunter's bow is strung.

But let the floods rush on!

30 Let the arrow's flight be sped!

Why should *they* reckon whose task is done?— *care*

There slumber England's dead!

The mountain storms rise high

In the snowy Pyrenees,

1. This specific reference—to the defeat of nineteenth-century battles in India (lines 17—24), French forces by the British at Alexandria in the America (lines 25-32), Spain (lines 33-40), and spring of 1801—is followed by more general military references: to eighteenth-century and early

2. This specific reference—to the defeat of nineteenth-century battles in India (lines 17—24), French forces by the British at Alexandria in the America (lines 25-32), Spain (lines 33-40), and spring of 1801—is followed by more general military references: to eighteenth-century and early

898 / FELICIA DOROTHEA HEMANS

35 And toss the pine boughs through the sky,

Like rose leaves on the breeze.

But let the storm rage on!

Let the fresh wreaths be shed!

For the Roncesvalles' field² is won,—

40 *There* slumber England's dead.

On the frozen deep's repose

'Tis a dark and dreadful hour,

When round the ship the ice-fields close,

And the northern night clouds lower.⁰ *look threatening*

45 But let the ice drift on!

Let the cold-blue desert spread!

Their course with mast and flag is done,—

Even there sleep England's dead.

The warlike of the isles,

50 The men of field and wave!

Are not the rocks their funeral piles,

The seas and shores their grave?
Go, stranger! track the deep,
Free, free the white sail spread!
55 Wave may not foam, nor wild wind sweep,
Where rest not England's dead.

1822

The Landing of the Pilgrim Fathers in New England
Look n o w a b r o a d — a n o t h e r race has fill'd
T h o s e p o p u l o u s b o r d e r s — w i d e the wood
recedes,
A n d towns shoot up, a n d fertile realms are till'd;
T h e land is full of harvests a n d green meads.

BRYANT3

The breaking waves dashed high
On a stern and rock-bound coast,
And the woods against a stormy sky
Their giant branches tossed;
5 And the heavy night hung dark,
The hills and waters o'er,
When a band of exiles moored their bark^o *ship*
On the wild New England shore.

2. During the Peninsular War (1808—14) between separating France and Spain).

France and Great Britain, fighting occurred in 3. William Cullen Bryant (1794-1878; see Roncesvalles, a pass in the Pyrenees (mountains pp. 902—05), *The Ages*, lines 280—83.

CASABIANCA / 899

Not as the conqueror comes,
10 They, the true-hearted, came;

Not with the roll of the stirring drums,
And the trumpet that sings of fame;
Not as the flying come,
In silence and in fear;—
15 They shook the depths of the desert gloom
With their hymns of lofty cheer.
Amidst the storm they sang,
And the stars heard and the sea;
And the sounding aisles of the dim woods rang
20 To the anthem of the free!
The ocean eagle soared
From his nest by the white wave's foam;
And the rocking pines of the forest roared—
This was their welcome home!
25 There were men with hoary hair
Amidst that pilgrim band;—
Why had *they* come to wither there,
Away from their childhood's land?
There was woman's fearless eye,
30 Lit by her deep love's truth;
There was manhood's brow serenely high,
And the fiery heart of youth.
What sought they thus afar?
Bright jewels of the mine?
35 The wealth of seas, the spoils of war?—
They sought a faith's pure shrine!
Aye, call it holy ground,
The soil where first they trod.

They have left unstained what there they found—
40 Freedom to worship God.

1826

Casabianca⁴

The boy stood on the burning deck

Whence all but he had fled;

4. “Young Casabianca, a boy about thirteen years
when the flames had reached the powder”

old, son to the Admiral of the *Orient*, remained at
[Hemans’s note]. In the Battle of the Nile (August
his post (in the Battle of the Nile) after the ship
1, 1798), British admiral Horatio Nelson captured
had taken fire, and all the guns had been aban-
and destroyed the French fleet in Aboukir Bay. Cf.
doned; and perished in the explosion of the vessel,
Elizabeth Bishop, “Casabianca” (p. 1515).

900 / FELICIA D O R O T H E A H E M A N S

The flame that lit the battle’s wreck

Shone round him o’er the dead.

5 Yet beautiful and bright he stood,

As born to rule the storm;

A creature of heroic blood,

A proud, though childlike form.

The flames roll’d on—he would not go

10 Without his father’s word;

That father, faint in death below,

His voice no longer heard.

He call’d aloud:—“Say, Father, say

If yet my task is done?"
15 He knew not that the chieftain lay
Unconscious of his son.
"Speak, Father!" once again he cried,
"If I may yet be gone!"
And but the booming shots replied,
20 And fast the flames roll'd on.
Upon his brow he felt their breath,
And in his waving hair,
And look'd from that lone post of death
In still, yet brave despair.
25 And shouted but once more aloud,
"My Father! must I stay?"
While o'er him fast, through sail and shroud,
The wreathing fires made way.
They wrapt the ship in splendor wild,
30 They caught the flag on high,
And stream'd above the gallant child,
Like banners in the sky.
There came a burst of thunder sound—
The boy—oh! where was he?
35 Ask of the winds that far around
With fragments strew'd the sea!—
With mast, and helm, and pennon⁰ fair, *long narrow flag*
That well had borne their part,
But the noblest thing which perish'd there
40 Was that young faithful heart!

INDIAN WOMAN'S DEATH-SONG / 901

Indian Woman's Death-Song⁵

An Indian woman, driven to despair by her husband's desertion of her for another wife, entered a canoe with her children, and rowed it down the Mississippi towards a cataract.⁶ Her voice was

heard from the shore singing a mournful death-song, until over-

powered by the sound of the waters in which she perished. The tale is related in Long's "Expedition to the Source of St. Peter's River."

"Non, je ne puis vivre avec un coeur brise. Il faut que je retrouve la

joie, et que je m'unisse aux esprits libres de l'air."

—*Bride of Messina*—Translated by MADAME DE STAEL⁷

"Let not my child be a girl, for very sad is the life of a woman."

*The Prairie*⁸

Down a broad river of the western wilds,
Piercing thick forest-glooms, a light canoe
Swept with the current: fearful was the speed
Of the frail bark, as by a tempest's wing
Borne leaf-like on to where the mist of spray
Rose with the cataract's thunder. Yet within,
Proudly, and dauntlessly, and all alone,
Save that a babe lay sleeping at her breast,
A woman stood! Upon her Indian brow
Sat a strange gladness, and her dark hair waved
As if triumphantly. She pressed her child,
In its bright slumber, to her beating heart,

And lifted her sweet voice, that rose awhile
Above the sound of waters, high and clear,
15 Wafting a wild proud strain—a song of death.
“Roll swiftly to the spirit’s land, thou mighty stream and free!
Father of ancient waters, roll! and bear our lives with thee!
The weary bird that storms have tossed would seek the
sunshine’s
calm,
And the deer that hath the arrow’s hurt flies to the woods of
balm.
20 “Roll on!—my warrior’s eye hath looked upon another’s
face,
And mine hath faded from his soul, as fades a moonbeam’s
trace:
My shadow comes not o’er his path, my whisper to his dream,
He flings away the broken reed. Roll swifter yet, thou stream!
“The voice that spoke of other days is hushed within *his*
breast, 25 But *mine* its lonely music haunts, and will not let me
rest;
It sings a low and mournful song of gladness that is gone—
I cannot live without that light. Father of waves! roll on!
5. From Hemans’s *Records of Women* (1828).
dramatist Friedrich von Schiller (1759-1805),
6. Waterfall.
translated by the French writer Madame Anne-
7. No, I can’t live with a broken heart. I must
Louise-Germaine de Stael (1766—1817).
retrieve my happiness, and be reunited with the
8. An 1827 novel by the American writer James
spirits of the air (French). From *The Bride of*

Fenimore Cooper (1789-1851).

Messina (1803), a play by the German poet and

9 6 6 / W I L L I A M C U L L E N B R Y A N T

“Will he not miss the bounding step that met him from the chase?

The heart of love that made his home an ever-sunny place?

The hand that spread the hunter’s board, and decked his couch of

yore?

He will not! Roll, dark foaming stream, on to the better shore!

“Some blessed fount amidst the woods of that bright land must flow,

Whose waters from my soul may lave the memory of this woe;

Some gentle wind must whisper there, whose breath may waft away

The burden of the heavy night, the sadness of the day.

“And thou, my babe! though born, like me, for woman’s weary lot,

Smile!—to that wasting of the heart, my own! I leave thee not;

Too bright a thing art *thou* to pine in aching love away—

Thy mother bears thee far, young fawn! from sorrow and decay.

“She bears thee to the glorious bowers where none are heard to weep,

And where the unkind one hath no power again to trouble sleep;

And where the soul shall find its youth, as wakening from a dream:

One moment, and that realm is ours. On, on, dark rolling stream!”

1828

WILLIAM CULLEN BRYANT

1794-1878

To a Waterfowl

Whither, 'midst falling dew,

While glow the heavens with the last steps of day,

Far, through their rosy depths, dost thou pursue

Thy solitary way?

5 Vainly t h e fowler's0 eye *bird hunter's*

Might mark thy distant flight, to do thee wrong,

As, darkly seen against the crimson sky,

Thy figure floats along.

Seek'st thou the plashy0 brink *splashy*

io Of weedy lake, or marge0 of river wide, *margin, bank*

Or where the rocking billows rise and sink

On the chafed ocean side?

There is a Power, whose care

Teaches thy way along that pathless coast,—

15 The desert and illimitable air,

Lone wandering, but not lost,

T H A N A T O P S I S / 9 0 3

All day thy wings have fanned,

At that far height, the cold thin atmosphere;

Yet stoop not, weary, to the welcome land,

20 Though the dark night is near.

And soon that toil shall end,

Soon shalt thou find a summer home, and rest,

And scream among thy fellows; reeds shall bend,

Soon, o'er thy sheltered nest.

25 Thou'rt gone, the abyss of heaven
Hath swallowed up thy form, yet, on my heart
Deeply hath sunk the lesson thou hast given,
And shall not soon depart.

He, who, from zone to zone,
30 Guides through the boundless sky thy certain flight,
In the long way that I must trace alone,
Will lead my steps aright.

1815 1818,1821

Thanatopsis 1

To him who in the love of Nature holds
Communion with her visible forms, she speaks
A various language; for his gayer hours
She has a voice of gladness, and a smile
5 And eloquence of beauty, and she glides
Into his darker musings, with a mild
And healing sympathy, that steals away
Their sharpness ere he is aware. When thoughts
Of the last bitter hour come like a blight
io Over thy spirit, and sad images
Of the stern agony, and shroud, and pall,
And breathless darkness, and the narrow house,
Make thee to shudder, and grow sick at heart;—
Go forth, under the open sky, and list
15 To Nature's teachings, while from all around—
Earth and her waters, and the depths of air,—
Comes a still voice—Yet a few days, and thee
The all-beholding sun shall see no more

In all his course; nor yet in the cold ground,
20 Where thy pale form was laid, with many tears.
Nor in the embrace of ocean, shall exist
Thy image. Earth, that nourished thee, shall claim
Thy growth, to be resolved to earth again,
And, lost each human trace, surrendering up
25 Thine individual being, shalt thou go

1. Meditation on death (Greek).

9 0 4 / WILLIAM C U L L E N BRYANT

To mix for ever with the elements,
To be a brother to the insensible rock
And to the sluggish clod,^o which the rude swain *soil /farmer*
Turns with his share,^o and treads upon. The oak *plowshare*
30 Shall send his roots abroad, and pierce thy mold.
Yet not to thine eternal resting-place
Shall thou retire alone,—nor couldst thou wish
Couch^o more magnificent. Thou shalt lie down *hed*
With patriarchs of the infant^o world—with kings, *early*
35 The powerful of the earth—the wise, the good,
Fair forms, and hoary seers of ages past,
All in one mighty sepulchre. The hills
Rock-ribbed and ancient as the sun; the vales^o *valleys*
Stretching in pensive quietness between;
40 The venerable woods; rivers that move
In majesty, and the complaining brooks
That make the meadows green; and, poured round all,
Old ocean's gray and melancholy waste,—
Are but the solemn decorations all

45 Of the great tomb of man. The golden sun,
The planets, all the infinite host of heaven,
Are shining on the sad abodes of death,
Through the still lapse of ages. All that tread
The globe are but a handful to the tribes
50 That slumber in its bosom.—Take the wings
Of morning,² traverse Barca^V desert sands,
Or lose thyself in the continuous woods
Where rolls the Oregon,⁴ and hears no sound,
Save his own dashings—yet—the dead are there:
55 And millions in those solitudes, since first
The flight of years began, have laid them down
In their last sleep—the dead reign there alone.
So shalt thou rest, and what if thou withdraw
In silence from the living, and no friend
60 Take note of thy departure? All that breathe
Will share thy destiny. The gay will laugh
When thou art gone, the solemn brood of care
Plod on, and each one as before will chase
His favorite phantom; yet all these shall leave
65 Their mirth and their employments, and shall come,
And make their bed with thee. As the long train
Of ages glide away, the sons of men,
The youth in life's green spring, and he who goes
In the full strength of years, matron, and maid,
70 And the sweet babe, and the gray-headed man,—
Shall one by one be gathered to thy side,
By those, who in their turn shall follow them.

2. Cf. Psalm 139.9-10: "If I take the wings of 3. Desert in northeast Libya.

morning, and dwell in the uttermost parts of the 4. Initial name of the Columbia River in Oregon.

sea; even there shall thy hand lead me ..."

**ON SITTING D O W N TO READ *KING LEAR* O N C E
A G A I N / 9 0 5**

So live, that when they summons comes to join

The innumerable caravan, which moves

75 To that mysterious realm, where each shall take

His chamber in the silent halls of death,

Thou go not, like the quarry-slave at night,

Scourged to his dungeon, but, sustained and soothed

By an unfaltering trust, approach thy grave

so Like one who wraps the drapery of his couch⁵

About him, and lies down to pleasant dreams.

ca. 1814 1821

J O H N KEATS

1795-1821

On First Looking into Chapman's Homer¹

Much have I traveled in the realms of gold,

And many goodly states and kingdoms seen;

Round many western islands have I been

Which bards in fealty⁰ to Apollo² hold. *allegiance*

5 Oft of one wide expanse had I been told

That deep-browed Homer ruled as his demesne;⁰ *domain*

Yet did I never breathe its pure serene *atmosphere*

Till I heard Chapman speak out loud and bold:

Then felt I like some watcher of the skies

**io When a new planet swims into his ken;
Or like stout Cortez³ when with eagle eyes
He stared at the Pacific—and all his men
Looked at each other with a wild surmise—
Silent, upon a peak in Darien.**

1816 1816

On Sitting Down to Read *King Lear* Once Again
**O golden-tongued Romance with serene lute!
Fair plumed Siren!⁰ Queen of far away! *enchantress*
Leave melodizing on this wintry day,
Shut up thine olden pages, and be mute:
**5 Adieu! for once again the fierce dispute
Betwixt damnation and impassioned clay
Must I burn through; once more humbly assay⁰ *test*
The bitter-sweet of this Shakespearean fruit.
Chief Poet! and ye clouds of Albion,⁴****

5. I.e., wraps his bedclothes.

3. Spanish conqueror of Mexico; in fact, Balboa,

1. Translations from Homer's *Odyssey*, in particular book 5, by George Chapman, a contemporary of Shakespeare, from Darien, in Panama.

of Shakespeare.

4. Ancient name for England, especially referring

2. Greek and Roman god of poetic inspiration.

to pre-Roman Britain, the era of King Lear.

9 0 6 / JOHN KEATS

10 Begetters of our deep eternal theme,

**When through the old oak forest I am gone,
Let me not wander in a barren dream,
But when I am consumed in the fire,
Give me new Phoenix” wings to fly at my desire.**

1818 1838

When I Have Fears

**When I have fears that I may cease to be
Before my pen has gleaned my teeming brain,
Before high-piled books, in charact’ry,⁰ *written symbols*
Hold like rich garnerers the full-ripened grain;
5 When I behold, upon the night’s starred face,
Huge cloudy symbols of a high romance,
And think that I may never live to trace
Their shadows, with the magic hand of chance;
And when I feel, fair creature of an hour,
io That I shall never look upon thee more,
Never have relish in the faery⁰ power *magical*
Of unreflecting love!—then on the shore
Of the wide world I stand alone, and think
Till Love and Fame to nothingness do sink.**

1818 1848

To Homer⁶

**Standing aloof in giant ignorance,⁷
Of thee I hear and of the Cyclades,⁸
As one who sits ashore and longs perchance
To visit dolphin-coral in deep seas.
5 So thou wast blind!—but then the veil was rent;
For Jove⁹ uncurtain’d Heaven to let thee live,**

And Neptune made for thee a spumy tent,
And Pan made sing for thee his forest-hive;
Aye, on the shores of darkness there is light,
io And precipices show untrodden green;
There is a budding morrow in midnight;
There is a triple sight in blindness keen;
Such seeing hadst thou, as it once befel
To Dian,¹ Queen of Earth, and Heaven, and Hell.

1818?

1848

5. Fabled Arabian bird that, after living for cen-

8. Islands near the Greek coast.

turies, consumes itself in fire and is reborn.

9. Jove, Neptune (line 7), and Pan (line 8):

6. By tradition, blind; here, a symbol of poetic illu-
Homer's gods of heaven, sea, and land.
mination.

1. The "three-formed" goddess presiding in the

7. Keats could not read Homer's Greek.

moon, forests, and the underworld.

T H E E V E O F S T. A G N E S / 9 0 7

The Eve of St. Agnes²

i

St. Agnes' Eve—Ah, bitter chill it was!

The owl, for all his feathers, was a-cold;

The hare limped trembling through the frozen grass,

And silent was the flock in woolly fold:

5 N u m b were the Beadsman's fingers, while he told

His rosary,³ and while his frosted breath,
Like pious incense from a censer old,
Seemed taking flight for heaven, without a death,
Past the sweet Virgin's picture, while his prayer he saith.

2

io His prayer he saith, this patient, holy man;
Then takes his lamp, and riseth from his knees,
And back returneth, meager, barefoot, wan,
Along the chapel aisle by slow degrees:
The sculptured dead, on each side, seem to freeze,
15 Imprisoned in black, purgatorial rails:
Knights, ladies, praying in dumb⁰ orat'ries,^o *silent / chapels*
He passeth by; and his weak spirit fails
To think⁴ how they may ache in icy hoods and mails.

3

Northward he turneth through a little door,
20 And scarce three steps, ere Music's golden tongue
Flattered⁰ to tears this aged man and **poor; beguiled**
But no—already had his deathbell rung:
The joys of all his life were said and sung:
His was harsh penance on St. Agnes' Eve:
25 Another way he went, and soon among
Rough ashes sat he for his soul's reprieve,
And all night kept awake, for sinner's sake to grieve.

4

That ancient Beadsman heard the prelude soft;
And so it chanced, for many a door was wide,
30 From hurry to and fro. Soon, up aloft,

The silver, snarling trumpets 'gan to chide:
The level chambers, ready with their pride,⁰ *ostentation*
Were glowing to receive a thousand guests:
The carved angels, ever eager-eyed,
35 Stared, where upon their heads the cornice rests,
With hair blown back, and wings put crosswise on their
breasts.

2. January 20, proverbially the coldest winter

3. A string of beads on which a series of short
night. St. Agnes, martyred in the fourth century at
prayers are counted (“told”). *Beadsman*: from Mid-
age thirteen, is patroness of virgins. Traditionally,
dle English *bede*, prayer; a needy dependent, paid
a maiden who observes the ritual of St. Agnes’s Eve
a small stipend to pray regularly for his benefactor.
will see a vision of her husband-to-be.

4. I.e., when he thinks.

14

908 / JOHN KEATS

At length burst in the argent⁰ revelry,⁰ *brightly dressed /*
revelers

With plume, tiara, and all rich array,
Numerous as shadows haunting faerily
40 The brain, new stuffed, in youth, with triumphs gay
Of old romance. These let us wish away,
And turn, sole-thoughted, to one Lady there,
Whose heart had brooded, all that wintry day,
On love, and winged St. Agnes’ saintly care,
45 As she had heard old dames full many times declare.

6

They told her how, upon St. Agnes' Eve,
Young virgins might have visions of delight,
And soft adorings from their loves receive
Upon the honeyed middle of the night,
50 If ceremonies due they did aright;
As, supperless to bed they must retire,
And couch supine their beauties, lily white;
Nor look behind, nor sideways, but require
Of Heaven with upward eyes for all that they desire.

7

55 Full of this whim was thoughtful Madeline:
The music, yearning like a God in pain,
She scarcely heard: her maiden eyes divine,
Fixed on the floor, saw many a sweeping train
Pass by—she heeded not at all: in vain
60 Came many a tiptoe, amorous cavalier,
And back retired; not cooled by high disdain;
But she saw not: her heart was elsewhere:
She sighed for Agnes' dreams, the sweetest of the year.

8

She danced along with vague, regardless eyes,
65 Anxious her lips, her breathing quick and short:
The hallowed hour was near at hand: she sighs
Amid the timbrels,⁰ and the thronged resort *hand drums*
Of whisperers in anger, or in sport;
'Mid looks of love, defiance, hate, and scorn,
70 Hoodwinked with faery fancy; all amort,⁵

Save to St. Agnes and her lambs unshorn,⁶
And all the bliss to be before tomorrow morn.

9

So, purposing each moment to retire,
She lingered still. Meantime, across the moors,
75 Had come young Porphyro, with heart on fire

5. Dead; i.e., oblivious. was later spun and woven by the nuns
(lines 115—

6. Symbolically associated with St. Agnes; new 17).
wool offered at the Mass commemorating the saint

T H E E V E O F S T. A G N E S / 9 0 9

For Madeline. Beside the portal doors,
Buttressed from moonlight,⁷ stands he, and implores
All saints to give him sight of Madeline,
But for one moment in the tedious hours,
80 That he might gaze and worship all unseen;
Perchance speak, kneel, touch, kiss—in sooth such things have
been.

10

He ventures in: let no buzzed whisper tell:
All eyes be muffled, or a hundred swords
Will storm his heart, Love's fev'rous citadel:
85 For him, those chambers held barbarian hordes,
Hyena foemen, and hot-blooded lords,
Whose very dogs would execrations howl
Against his lineage: not one breast affords
Him any mercy, in that mansion foul,
90 Save one old beldame,⁰ weak in body and in soul. *old*
woman

11

Ah, happy chance! the aged creature came,
Shuffling along with ivory-headed wand,
To where he stood, hid from the torch's flame,
Behind a broad hall-pillar, far beyond
95 The sound of merriment and chorus bland:0 *soft*
He startled her; but soon she knew his face,
And grasped his fingers in her palsied hand,
Saying, "Mercy, Porphyro! hie thee from this place;
They are all here tonight, the whole bloodthirsty race!

12

100 "Get hence! get hence! there's dwarfish Hildebrand;
He had a fever late, and in the fit
He cursed thee and thine, both house and land:
Then there's that old Lord Maurice, not a whit
More tame for his gray hairs—Alas me! flit!
105 Flit like a ghost away."—"Ah, Gossip8 dear,
We're safe enough; here in this armchair sit,
And tell me how"—"Good Saints! not here, not here;
Follow me, child, or else these stones will be thy bier."
He followed through a lowly arched way,
no Brushing the cobwebs with his lofty plume,
And as she muttered "Well-a—well-a-day!"
He found him in a little moonlight room,
Pale, latticed, chill, and silent as a tomb.
"Now tell me where is Madeline," said he,
ii5 "O tell me, Angela, by the holy loom
Which none but secret sisterhood may see,

When they St. Agnes' wool are weaving piously."

7. I.e., concealed in dark shadows. 8. Old kinswoman or household retainer.

910 / JOHN KEATS

14

"St. Agnes! Ah! it is St. Agnes' Eve—

Yet men will murder upon holy days:

120 Thou must hold water in a witch's sieve,

And be liege lord of all the Elves and Fays,⁹

To venture so: it fills me with amaze

To see thee, Porphyro!—St. Agnes' Eve!

God's help! my lady fair the conjuror plays!

125 This very night: good angels her deceive!

But let me laugh awhile, I've mickle⁰ time to grieve. *much*

15

Feebly she laugheth in the languid moon,

While Porphyro upon her face doth look,

Like puzzled urchin on an aged crone

130 Who keepeth closed a wondrous riddle-book,

As spectacled she sits in chimney nook.

But soon his eyes grew brilliant, when she told

His lady's purpose; and he scarce could brook⁰ *check*

Tears, at the thought of those enchantments cold,

135 And Madeline asleep in lap of legends old.

16

Sudden a thought came like a full-blown rose,

Flushing his brow, and in his pained heart

Made purple riot: then doth he propose

A stratagem, that makes the beldame start:

140 “A cruel man and impious thou art:

Sweet lady, let her pray, and sleep, and dream

Alone with her good angels, far apart

From wicked men like thee. Go, go!—I deem

Thou canst not surely be the same that thou didst seem.”

17

145 “I will not harm her, by all saints I swear,”

Quoth Porphyro: “O may I ne’er find grace

When my weak voice shall whisper its last prayer,

If one of her soft ringlets I displace,

Or look with ruffian passion in her face:

150 Good Angela, believe me by these tears;

Or I will, even in a moment’s space,

Awake, with horrid shout, my foemen’s ears,

And beard⁰ them, though they be more fanged than wolves
confront

and bears.”

18

“Ah! why wilt thou affright a feeble soul?

155 A poor, weak, palsy-stricken, churchyard thing,²

Whose passing bell³ may ere the midnight toll;

9. I.e., to hold water in a sieve and to command 1. I.e., is trying magic spells, elves and fairies (“Fays”), Porphyro would have to 2. I.e., soon to die.

be a magician. 3. Tolloed when a person died (“passed away”).

T H E E V E O F S T. A G N E S / 9 1 1

Whose prayers for thee, each morn and evening,

Were never missed.”—Thus plaining,⁰ doth she bring
complaining

A gentler speech from burning Porphyro;
i60 So woeful and of such deep sorrowing,
That Angela gives promise she will do
Whatever he shall wish, betide her weal or woe.

J 9

Which was, to lead him, in close secrecy,
Even to Madeline’s chamber, and there hide
165 Him in a closet, of such privacy
That he might see her beauty unespied,
And win perhaps that night a peerless bride,
While legioned faeries paced the coverlet,
And pale enchantment held her sleepy-eyed.
170 Never on such a night have lovers met,
Since Merlin paid his Demon all the monstrous debt.⁴

20

“It shall be as thou wishest,” said the Dame:
“All cates^o and dainties shall be stored there *delicacies*
Quickly on this feast⁵ night: by the tambour frame⁶
175 Her own lute thou wilt see: no time to spare,
For I am slow and feeble, and scarce dare
On such a catering trust my dizzy head.
Wait here, my child, with patience; kneel in prayer
The while: Ah! thou must needs the lady wed,
i80 Or may I never leave my grave among the dead.”

21

So saying, she hobbled off with busy fear.

The lover's endless minutes slowly passed:
The dame returned, and whispered in his ear
To follow her; with aged eyes aghast
185 From fright of dim espial. Safe at last,
Through many a dusky gallery, they gain
The maiden's chamber, silken, hushed, and chaste;
Where Porphyro took covert, pleased amain.0 *greatly*
His poor guide hurried back with agues0 in her brain. *fevers*
22

190 Her falt'ring hand upon the balustrade,
Old Angela was feeling for the stair,
When Madeline, St. Agnes' charmed maid,
Rose, like a missioned spirit, unaware:
With silver taper's light, and pious care,
195 She turned, and down the aged gossip led
To a safe level matting. Now prepare,

4. Possibly alluding to the tale in the Arthurian her love.

legends in which Merlin, a great wizard, lies bound 5. The
festival, or Mass, honoring St. Agnes, for ages by a spell he
gave to an evil woman to buy 6. A circular embroidery frame.

9 1 2 / JOHN KEATS

Young Porphyro, for gazing on that bed;
She comes, she comes again, like ringdove frayed0 and fled,
frightened

2 3

Out went the taper as she hurried in;
200 Its little smoke, in pallid moonshine, died:
She closed the door, she panted, all akin
To spirits of the air, and visions wide:

No uttered syllable, or, woe betide!
But to her heart, her heart was voluble,
205 Paining with eloquence her balmy side;
As though a tongueless nightingale should swell
Her throat in vain, and die, heart-stifled, in her dell.

24

A casement high and triple-arched there was,
All garlanded with carven imag'ries
210 Of fruits, and flowers, and bunches of knot-grass,
And diamonded with panes of quaint device,
Innumerable of stains and splendid dyes,
As are the tiger-moth's deep-damasked wings;
And in the midst, 'mong thousand heraldries,
215 And twilight saints, and dim emblazonings,
A shielded scutcheon blushed with blood of queens and
kings.⁷

25

Full on this casement shone the wintry moon,
And threw warm gules⁸ on Madeline's fair breast,
As down she knelt for heaven's grace and boon;⁰ *gift*
220 Rose-bloom fell on her hands, together pressed,
And on her silver cross soft amethyst,
And on her hair a glory,⁰ like a saint: *halo*
She seemed a splendid angel, newly dressed,
Save wings, for heaven—Porphyro grew faint:
225 She knelt, so pure a thing, so free from mortal taint.

26

Anon his heart revives: her vespers done,

Of all its wreathed pearls her hair she frees;
Unclasps her warmed jewels one by one;
Loosens her fragrant bodice; by degrees
230 Her rich attire creeps rustling to her knees:
Half-hidden, like a mermaid in sea-weed,
Pensive awhile she dreams awake, and sees,
In fancy, fair St. Agnes in her bed,
But dares not look behind, or all the charm is fled.

7. A shield representing a coat of arms (“scutch-eating royal ancestry.

eon”) showed the red pigments (“blushed”) indi- 8. Heraldic red; here, in stained glass.

36

T H E E V E O F S T. A G N E S / 9 1 3

235 Soon, trembling in her soft and chilly nest,
In sort of wakeful swoon, perplexed she lay,
Until the popped warmth of sleep oppressed
Her soothed limbs, and soul fatigued away;
Flown, like a thought, until the morrow-day;
240 Blissfully havened both from joy and pain;
Clasped like a missal where swart Paynims⁹ pray;
Blinded alike from sunshine and from rain,
As though a rose should shut, and be a bud again.

28

Stol’n to this paradise, and so entranced,
245 Porphyro gazed upon her empty dress,
And listened to her breathing, if it chanced
To wake into a slumberous tenderness;
Which when he heard, that minute did he bless,

And breathed himself: then from the closet crept,
250 Noiseless as fear in a wide wilderness,
And over the hushed carpet, silent, stepped,
And 'tween the curtains peeped, where, lo!—how fast she
slept.

29

Then by the bedside, where the faded moon
Made a dim, silver twilight, soft he set
255 A table, and, half anguished, threw thereon
A cloth of woven crimson, gold, and jet—
O for some drowsy Morphean amulet! 1
The boisterous, midnight, festive clarion, 0 *high-pitched*
trumpet

The kettledrum, and far-heard clarinet,
260 Affray his ears, though but in dying tone—
The hall door shuts again, and all the noise is gone.

3°

And still she slept an azure-lidded sleep,
In blanched linen, smooth, and lavendered,
While he from forth the closet brought a heap
265 Of candied apple, quince, and plum, and gourd;
With jellies soother than the creamy curd,
And lucent 0 syrups, tinct° with cinnamon; *clear / tinctured*
Manna and dates, in argosy transferred
From Fez;° and spiced dainties, every one, *Morocco*
270 From silken Samarcand to cedared Lebanon. 2

31

These delicates he heaped with glowing hand
On golden dishes and in baskets bright

Of wreathed silver: sumptuous they stand

9. Dark pagans. *Missal*: Christian prayer book.

2. Places associated with ancient luxury and

1. An object, such as an engraved stone, exerting wealth.

the power of Morpheus, Greek god of dreams.

9 1 4

/ JOHN KEATS

In the retired quiet of the night,

275 Filling the chilly room with perfume light.—

“And now, my love, my seraph⁰ fair, awake!

angel

Thou art my heaven, and I thine eremite:⁰

hermit; devotee

Open thine eyes, for meek St. Agnes' sake,

Or I shall drowse beside thee, so my soul doth ache.”

32

280 Thus whispering, his warm, unnerved arm

Sank in her pillow. Shaded was her dream

By the dusk curtains: ‘twas a midnight charm

Impossible to melt as iced stream:

The lustrous salvers⁰ in the moonlight gleam;

serving dishes

285 Broad golden fringe upon the carpet lies:

It seemed he never, never could redeem

From such a steadfast spell his lady's eyes;

So mused awhile, entailed in woofed⁰ fantasies.

enwoven

33

Awakening up, he took her hollow lute—
290 Tumultuous—and, in chords that tenderest be,
He played an ancient ditty, long since mute,
In Provence called "*La belle dame sans merci*"³
Close to her ear touching the melody;
Wherewith disturbed, she uttered a soft moan:
295 He ceased—she panted quick—and suddenly
Her blue affrayed eyes wide open shone:
Upon his knees he sank, pale as smooth-sculptured stone.

34

Her eyes were open, but she still beheld,
Now wide awake, the vision of her sleep:
300 There was a painful change, that night expelled
The blisses of her dream so pure and deep,
At which fair Madeline began to weep,
And moan forth witless words with many a sigh;
While still her gaze on Porphyro would keep,
305 Who knelt, with joined hands and piteous eye,
Fearing to move or speak, she looked so dreamingly.

35

"Ah, Porphyro!" said she, "but even now
Thy voice was at sweet tremble in mine ear,
Made tunable with every sweetest vow;
310 And those sad eyes were spiritual and clear:
How changed thou art! how pallid, chill, and drear!
Give me that voice again, my Porphyro,
Those looks immortal, those complainings dear!

Oh leave me not in this eternal woe,

315 For if thou diest, my Love, I know not where to go.”

3. The lovely but merciless lady (French). Keats adopted this title, of a poem by Alain Chartier(1380/90-ca.

1430), for one of his own (see p. 917).

T H E E V E O F S T. A G N E S / 9 1 5

3 6

Beyond a mortal man impassioned far

At these voluptuous accents, he arose,

Ethereal, flushed, and like a throbbing star

Seen mid the sapphire heaven’s deep repose;

320 Into her dream he melted, as the rose

Blendeth its odor with the violet—

Solution sweet: meantime the frost-wind blows

Like Love’s alarm⁰ pattering the sharp sleet *signal, call to arms*

Against the windowpanes; St. Agnes’ moon hath set.

37

325 ‘Tis dark: quick pattereth the flaw-blown⁰ sleet: *gust-blown*

“This is no dream, my bride, my Madeline!”

‘Tis dark: the iced gusts still rave and beat:

“No dream, alas! alas! and woe is mine!

Porphyro will leave me here to fade and pine.—

330 Cruel! what traitor could thee hither bring?

I curse not, for my heart is lost in thine,

Though thou forsakest a deceived thing—

A dove forlorn and lost with sick unpruned⁴ wing.”

38

“My Madeline! sweet dreamer! lovely bride!

335 Say, may I be for aye thy vassal blest?

Thy beauty’s shield, heart-shaped and vermeil⁰ dyed?

vermilion

Ah, silver shrine, here will I take my rest

After so many hours of toil and quest,

A famished pilgrim—saved by miracle.

340 Though I have found, I will not rob thy nest

Saving of thy sweet self; if thou think’st well

To trust, fair Madeline, to no rude infidel.

39

“Hark! ‘tis an elfin-storm from faery land,

Of haggard⁰ seeming, but a boon indeed: *wild, ugly*

345 Arise—arise! the morning is at hand—

The bloated wassailers⁰ will never heed— *drunken revelers*

Let us away, my love, with happy speed;

There are no ears to hear, or eyes to see—

Drowned all in Rhenish and the sleepy mead:⁵

350 Awake! arise! my love, and fearless be,

For o’er the southern moors I have a home for thee.”

40

She hurried at his words, beset with fears,

For there were sleeping dragons all around,

At glaring watch, perhaps, with ready spears—

355 Down the wide stairs a darkling way⁶ they found.—

In all the house was heard no human sound.

4. Unpreened; i.e., disarranged, ruffled. fermented honey and water.

5. Rhine wine and a sleep-inducing drink made of 6. A way in the dark.

9 1 6 / JOHN KEATS

A chain-dropped lamp was flickering by each door;
The arras, rich with horseman, hawk, and hound,
Fluttered in the besieging wind's uproar;
360 And the long carpets rose along the gusty floor.

4 1

They glide, like phantoms, into the wide hall;
Like phantoms, to the iron porch, they glide;
Where lay the Porter, in uneasy sprawl,
With a huge empty flagon by his side:
365 The wakeful bloodhound rose, and shook his hide,
But his sagacious eye an inmate owns:0 *recognizes*
By one, and one, the bolts full easy slide:
The chains lie silent on the footworn stones;
The key turns, and the door upon its hinges groans.

42

370 And they are gone: aye, ages long ago
These lovers fled away into the storm.
That night the Baron dreamt of many a woe,
And all his warrior-guests, with shade and form
Of witch, and demon, and large coffin-worm,
375 Were long be-nightmared. Angela the old
Died palsy-twitched, with meager face deform;
The Beadsman, after thousand aves⁷ told,
For aye⁰ unsought for slept among his ashes cold. *ever*

1819 1820

On the Sonnet

If by dull rhymes our English must be chained,
And, like Andromeda,⁸ the Sonnet sweet
Fettered, in spite of pained loveliness;
Let us find out, if we must be constrained,
5 Sandals more interwoven and complete
To fit the naked foot of poesy;
Let us inspect the lyre, and weigh the stress
Of every chord, and see what may be gained
By ear industrious, and attention meet;
10 Misers of sound and syllable, no less
Than Midas⁹ of his coinage, let us be
Jealous⁰ of dead leaves in the bay-wreath crown; *intolerant*

7. As in *Ave Maria* (“Hail Mary”), a salutation to

9. According to legend, a fabulously wealthy king
the Virgin.

who wished to turn all that he touched into gold;

8. In Greek mythology, a beautiful princess
granted his wish by the gods, he quickly repented
chained naked to a rock as a sacrifice to a sea mon-
it.

ster, but rescued by the hero Perseus.

1. Awarded as prize to a true poet.

LA B E L L E D A M E S A N S M E R C I / 9 1 7

So, if we may not let the Muse² be free,

She will be bound with garlands of her own.

1819 1848

La Belle Dame sans Merci³

0 what can ail thee, Knight at arms,
Alone and palely loitering?

The sedge has withered from the Lake
And no birds sing!

5 O what can ail thee, Knight at arms,
So haggard, and so woebegone?

The squirrel's granary is full
And the harvest's done.

1 I see a lily on thy brow

10 With anguish moist and fever dew,
And on thy cheeks a fading rose
Fast withereth too.

"I met a Lady in the Meads,^{0 meadows}
Full beautiful, a faery's child,

15 Her hair was long, her foot was light
And her eyes were wild.

"I made a Garland for her head,
And bracelets too, and fragrant Zone;^{0 girdle}

She looked at me as she did love
20 And made sweet moan.

"I set her on my pacing steed
And nothing else saw all day long,
For sidelong would she bend and sing
A faery's song.

25 "She found me roots of relish sweet,
And honey wild, and manna^{0 dew, food (from heaven)}

And sure in language strange she said
'I love thee true.'

“She took me to her elfin grotto *grotto*

30 And there she wept and sighed full sore,

And there I shut her wild wild eyes

With kisses four.

2. Source of poetic inspiration. an earlier (and widely preferred) version of a poem 3. The lovely but merciless lady (French). This is first published in 1820.

9 1 8 / JOHN KEATS

“And there she lulled me asleep,

And there I dreamed, Ah Woe betide!

35 The latest dream I ever dreamt *last*

On the cold hill side.

“I saw pale Kings, and Princes too,

Pale warriors, death-pale were they all;

They cried, ‘La belle dame sans merci

40 Hath thee in thrall!’

“I saw their starved lips in the gloam

With horrid warning gaped wide,

And I awoke, and found me here

On the cold hill’s side.

45 “And this is why I sojourn here,

Alone and palely loitering;

Though the sedge is withered from the Lake

And no birds sing.”

April 1819 1888

Lamia4

Part 1

Upon a time, before the faery broods
Drove Nymph and Satyr⁵ from the prosperous woods,
Before King Oberon's bright diadem,⁶
Sceptre, and mantle, clasp'd with dewy gem,
5 Frighted away the Dryads and the Fauns
From rushes green, and brakes, and cowslip'd⁷ lawns,
The ever-smitten Hermes⁸ empty left
His golden throne, bent warm on amorous theft:
From high Olympus had he stolen light,
io On this side of Jove's clouds, to escape the sight
Of his great summoner, and made retreat
Into a forest on the shores of Crete.
For somewhere in that sacred island dwelt
A nymph, to whom all hoofed Satyrs knelt;
15 At whose white feet the languid Tritons⁹ poured
Pearls, while on land they wither'd and adored.
Fast by the springs where she to bathe was wont,⁰
accustomed
And in those meads⁰ where sometime she might haunt,
meadows
Were strewn rich gifts, unknown to any Muse,¹

4. In Greek mythology, a female demon who
Brakes: thickets.

preyed on humans.

8. Or Mercury, the gods' messenger, especially at

5. Like dryads and fauns (line 5), nymphs and

the service of Jove (or Jupiter, Zeus), the chief god.
satyrs were minor classical deities.

9. Minor sea gods.

6. Crown of Oberon, king of the fairies (post-

1. One of the nine sister goddesses who presided
classical supernatural beings).

over song, poetry, and the arts and sciences.

7. Covered with cowslips (a species of wildflower).

LAMIA / 9 1 9

20 Though Fancy's casket were unlock'd to choose.

Ah, what a world of love was at her feet!

So Hermes thought, and a celestial heat

Burnt from his winged heels to either ear,

That from a whiteness, as the lily clear,

25 Blush'd into roses 'mid his golden hair,

Fallen in jealous curls about his shoulders bare.

From vale to vale, from wood to wood, he flew, *valley*

Breathing upon the flowers his passion new,

And wound with many a river to its head,

**30 To find where this sweet nymph prepar'd her secret
bed:**

In vain; the sweet nymph might nowhere be found,

And so he rested on the lonely ground,

Pensive, and full of painful jealousies

Of the Wood-Gods, and even the very trees.

35 There as he stood, he heard a mournful voice,

Such as once heard, in gentle heart, destroys

All pain but pity: thus the lone voice spake:

**“When from this wreathed tomb shall I awake!
When move in a sweet body fit for life,
40 And love, and pleasure, and the ruddy strife
Of hearts and lips! Ah, miserable me!”**

**The God, dove-footed,² glided silently
Round bush and tree, soft-brushing, in his speed,
The taller grasses and full-flowering weed,
45 Until he found a palpitating snake,
Bright, and cirque-couchant³ in a dusky brake.
She was a gordian⁴ shape of dazzling hue,
Vermilion-spotted, golden, green, and blue;
Striped like a zebra, freckled like a pard,⁰ *leopard*
50 Eyed like a peacock,⁵ and all crimson barr’d;
And full of silver moons, that, as she breathed,
Dissolv’d, or brighter shone, or interwreathed,
Their lustres with the gloomier tapestries—
So rainbow-sided, touch’d with miseries,
55 She seem’d, at once, some penanced lady elf,
Some demon’s mistress, or the demon’s self.
Upon her crest she wore a wannish⁰ fire *dark*
Sprinkled with stars, like Ariadne’s tiar:⁶
Her head was serpent, but ah, bitter-sweet!
60 She had a woman’s mouth with all its pearls⁷ complete:
And for her eyes: what could such eyes do there
But weep, and weep, that they were born so fair?
As Proserpine still weeps for her Sicilian air.⁸**

2. I.e., gently as a dove.

artist Titian, Ariadne, a Greek mythological figure

3. Lying in a circular coil.

who was transformed into a constellation, wears a

4. Intricately twisted, seemingly impossible to
crown of stars.

undo, like the knot tied by Gordius, legendary

7. A common Elizabethan metaphor for teeth.

Phrygian king.

8. The goddess Proserpina (Persephone) was

5. With multicolored spots (like the “eyes” in a
taken from the field of Enna, in Sicily, to Hades by
peacock’s tail).

the god Pluto.

6. Tiara. In a painting by the Italian Renaissance

9 2 0 / JOHN KEATS

Her throat was serpent, but the words she spake

65 Came, as through bubbling honey, for Love’s sake,

And thus; while Hermes on his pinions⁰ lay, *-wings*

Like a stoop’d⁰ falcon ere he takes his prey. *plunging*

“Fair Hermes, crown’d with feathers, fluttering light,

I had a splendid dream of thee last night:

70 I saw thee sitting, on a throne of gold,

Among the Gods, upon Olympus old,

The only sad one; for thou didst not hear

The soft, lute-finger’d Muses chaunting clear,

Nor even Apollo⁹ when he sang alone,

75 Deaf to his throbbing throat’s long, long melodious moan.

I dreamt I saw thee, robed in purple flakes,

Break amorous through the clouds, as morning breaks,

And, swiftly as a bright Phoebian dart,⁰ *ray*
Strike for the Cretan isle; and here thou art!
so Too gentle Hermes, hast thou found the maid?"
Whereat the star of Lethel not delay'd
His rosy eloquence, and thus inquired:
"Thou smooth-lipp'd serpent, surely high inspired!
Thou beauteous wreath, with melancholy eyes,
85 Possess whatever bliss thou canst devise,
Telling me only where my nymph is fled,—
Where she doth breathe!" "Bright planet, thou hast said,"
Return'd the snake, "but seal with oaths, fair God!"
"I swear," said Hermes, "by my serpent rod,
90 And by thine eyes, and by thy starry crown!"
Light flew his earnest words, among the blossoms blown.
Then thus again the brilliance feminine:
"Too frail of heart! for this lost nymph of thine,
Free as the air, invisibly, she strays
95 About these thornless wilds; her pleasant days
She tastes unseen; unseen her nimble feet
Leave traces in the grass and flowers sweet;
From weary tendrils, and bow'd branches green,
She plucks the fruit unseen, she bathes unseen:
100 And by my power is her beauty veil'd
To keep it unaffronted, unassail'd
By the love-glances of unlovely eyes,
Of Satyrs, Fauns, and blear'd Silenus'2 sighs.
Pale grew her immortality, for woe
105 Of all these lovers, and she grieved so

I took compassion on her, bade her steep
Her hair in weird⁰ syrops,⁰ that would keep *magical / potions*
Her loveliness invisible, yet free
To wander as she loves, in liberty.

110 Thou shalt behold her, Hermes, thou alone,
If thou wilt, as thou swearest, grant my boon!”

9. Phoebus Apollo, the sun god. 2. Satyr, tutor of Bacchus
(Dionysus, god of wine).

1. Hermes, who appeared like a star on the dark *Blear'd*:
drunk,
banks of the river Lethe, in Hades.

LAMIA / 9 2 1

Then, once-again, the charmed God began
An oath, and through the serpent's ears it ran
Warm, tremulous, devout, psalterian.³

115 Ravish'd, she lifted her Circean head,
Blush'd a live damask,⁴ and swift-lisping said,
“I was a woman, let me have once more
A woman's shape, and charming as before.

I love a youth of Corinth—O the bliss!

120 Give me my woman's form, and place me where he is.
Stoop, Hermes, let me breathe upon thy brow,
And thou shalt see thy sweet nymph even now.”

The God on half-shut feathers sank serene,

She breath'd upon his eyes, and swift was seen

125 Of both the guarded nymph near-smiling on the green.

It was no dream; or say a dream it was,

Real are the dreams of Gods, and smoothly pass

Their pleasures in a long immortal dream.

One warm, flush'd moment, hovering, it might seem
no Dash'd by the wood-nymph's beauty, so he burn'd;
Then, lighting on the printless verdure, turn'd
To the swoon'd serpent, and with languid arm,
Delicate, put to proof the lythe Caducean charm.⁵

So done, upon the nymph his eyes he bent
135 Full of adoring tears and blandishment,
And towards her stept: she, like a moon in wane,
Faded before him, cower'd, nor could restrain
Her fearful sobs, self-folding like a flower
That faints into itself at evening hour:

HO But the God fostering her chilled hand,
She felt the warmth, her eyelids open'd bland,⁰ *softly*
And, like new flowers at morning song of bees,
Bloom'd, and gave up her honey to the lees.⁰ *dregs*
Into the green-recessed woods they flew;
145 Nor grew they pale, as mortal lovers do.

Left to herself, the serpent now began
To change; her elfin blood in madness ran,
Her mouth foam'd, and the grass, therewith besprent,⁰
sprinkled

Wither'd at dew so sweet and virulent;
150 Her eyes in torture fix'd, and anguish drear,
Hot, glaz'd, and wide, with lid-lashes all sear,
Flash'd phosphor and sharp sparks, without one cooling tear.
The colors all inflam'd throughout her train,
She writh'd about, convuls'd with scarlet pain:
155 A deep volcanian yellow took the place

Of all her milder-mooned body's grace;⁶
And, as the lava ravishes the mead,
Spoilt all her silver mail, and golden brede;⁰ *embroidery*

3. Like a psalm or like the sound of a psaltery (an

5. I.e., tested the magic of Hermes' flexible staff
ancient stringed instrument).

(called Caduceus).

4. Turned the pink color of a damask rose.

6. I.e., sulfurous yellow (as though from a volcanic

Circean: resembling Circe, enchantress in the
eruption) replaced her silvery moon color.

Odyssey.

9 2 2

/ JOHN KEATS

Made gloom of all her frecklings, streaks and bars,
i60 Eclips'd her crescents, and lick'd up her stars:

So that, in moments few, she was undrest

Of all her sapphires, greens, and amethyst,

And rubious-argent:⁰ of all these bereft,

silvery red

Nothing but pain and ugliness were left.

165 Still shone her crown; that vanish'd, also she

Melted and disappear'd as suddenly;

And in the air, her new voice luting soft,

Cried, "Lycius! gentle Lycius!"—Borne aloft

With the bright mists about the mountains hoar⁰

gray with age

170 These words dissolv'd: Crete's forests heard no more

Whither fled Lamia, now a lady bright,
A full-born beauty new and exquisite?
She fled into that valley they pass o'er
Who go to Corinth from Cenchreas' shore;⁷
175 And rested at the foot of those wild hills,
The rugged founts of the Peaeran rills,⁸
And of that other ridge whose barren back
Stretches, with all its mist and cloudy rack,
South-westward to Cleone. There she stood
180 About a young bird's flutter from a wood,
Fair, on a sloping green of mossy tread,
By a clear pool, wherein she passioned⁹
To see herself escap'd from so sore ills,
While her robes flaunted with the daffodils.
185 Ah, happy Lycius!—for she was a maid
More beautiful than ever twisted braid,
Or sigh'd, or blush'd, or on spring-flowered lea⁰

meadow

Spread a green kirtle⁰ to the minstrelsy:

gown

A virgin purest lipp'd yet in the lore
190 Of love deep learned to the red heart's core:
Not one hour old, yet of scintial⁰ brain
To unperplex⁰ bliss from its neighbor pain;

disentangle

Define their pettish⁰ limits, and estrange

quarreled-over

Their points of contact, and swift counterchange;¹

195 Intrigue with the specious chaos,² and dispart

Its most ambiguous atoms with sure art;

As though in Cupid's college she had spent

Sweet days a lovely graduate, still unshent,⁰

unspoiled

And kept his rosy terms³ in idle languishment.

200 Why this fair creature chose so fairly

By the wayside to linger, we shall see;

But first 'tis fit to tell how she could muse

And dream, when in the serpent prison-house,

7. I.e., Cenchrea, a Corinthian harbor, in south- 1. Change of condition into its opposite. *Estrange*: em Greece. separate out.

8. Streams flowing from the Pierian Spring (on 2. I.e., use the illusory ("specious") chaos.

Mt. Olympus, in Greece), sacred to the Muses. 3. Terms spent "in Cupid's college."

9. Felt intense excitement.

LAMIA / 9 2 3

Of all she list,⁰ strange or magnificent: > *wished*

205 How, ever, where she will'd, her spirit went;

Whether to faint Elysium, or where

Down through tress-lifting waves the Nereids fair

Wind into Thetis' ⁴ bower by many a pearly stair;

Or where God Bacchus drains his cups divine,

2 i o Stretch'd out, at ease, beneath a glutinous⁰ pine; *gummy*

Or where in Pluto's gardens palatine⁰ *palatial*

Mulciber's columns gleam in far piazzian line.⁵

And sometimes into cities she would send

Her dream, with feast and rioting to blend;

215 And once, while among mortals dreaming thus,
She saw the young Corinthian Lycius
Charioting foremost in the envious race,
Like a young Jove with calm uneager face,
And fell into a swooning love of him.
220 Now on the moth-time of that evening dim
He would return that way, as well she knew,
To Corinth from the shore; for freshly blew
The eastern soft wind, and his galley now
Grated the quaystones with her brazen prow
225 In port Cenchreas, from Egina isle
Fresh anchor'd; whither he had been awhile
To sacrifice to Jove, whose temple there
Waits with high marble doors for blood and incense rare.
Jove heard his vows, and better'd his desire;
230 For by some freakful chance he made retire
From his companions, and set forth to walk,
Perhaps grown wearied of their Corinth talk:
Over the solitary hills he fared,
Thoughtless at first, but ere eve's star appeared
235 His phantasy was lost, where reason fades,
In the calm'd twilight of Platonic shades.⁶
Lamia beheld him coming, near, more near—
Close to her passing, in indifference drear,
His silent sandals swept the mossy green;
240 So neighbour'd to him, and yet so unseen
She stood: he pass'd, shut up in mysteries,
His mind wrapp'd like his mantle, while her eyes

Follow'd his steps, and her neck regal white
Turn'd—syllabbling thus, “Ah, Lycius bright,
245 And will you leave me on the hills alone?
Lycius, look back! and be some pity shown.”
He did; not with cold wonder fearingly,
But Orpheus-like at an Eurydice;⁷
For so delicious were the words she sung,
250 It seem'd he had lov'd them a whole summer long:
And soon his eyes had drunk her beauty up,

4. One of the Nereids, or sea nymphs.

7. Pluto allowed Orpheus to lead Eurydice,

5. In long lines around piazzas, or open courts.

Orpheus's wife, back to Earth from Hades on the
Mulciber: or Vulcan, god of fire and metalworking.

condition that Orpheus not look back at her. When

6. I.e., while he pondered difficult questions
he could not resist looking, he lost her.

raised by Plato's philosophy.

9 2 4 / J O H N K E A T S

Leaving no drop in the bewildering cup,
And still the cup was full,—while he, afraid
Lest she should vanish ere his lip had paid
255 Due adoration, thus began to adore;
Her soft look growing coy, she saw his chain so sure:
“Leave thee alone! Look back! Ah, Goddess, see
Whether my eyes can ever turn from thee!
For pity do not this sad heart belie0— *be false to*
260 Even as thou vanishest so I shall die.

Stay! though a Naiad of the rivers, stay!
To thy far wishes will thy streams obey:
Stay! though the greenest woods be thy domain,
Alone they can drink up the morning rain:
265 Though a descended Pleiad,⁸ will not one
Of thine harmonious sisters keep in tune
Thy spheres, and as thy silver proxy shine?
So sweetly to these ravish'd ears of mine
Came thy sweet greeting, that if thou shouldst fade
270 Thy memory will waste me to a shade:—
For pity do not melt!”—“If I should stay,”
Said Lamia, “here, upon this floor of clay,
And pain my steps upon these flowers too rough,
What canst thou say or do of charm enough
275 To dull the nice⁹ remembrance of my home?
Thou canst not ask me with thee here too roam
Over these hills and vales, where no joy is,—
Empty of immortality and bliss!
Thou art a scholar, Lycius, and must know
280 That finer spirits cannot breathe below
In human climes, and live: Alas! poor youth,
What taste of purer air hast thou to soothe
My essence? What serener palaces,
Where I may all my many senses please,
285 And by mysterious sleights a hundred thirsts appease?
It cannot be—Adieu!” So said, she rose
Tiptoe with white arms spread. He, sick to lose
The amorous promise of her lone complain,

Swoon'd, murmuring of love, and pale with pain.

290 The cruel lady, without any show

Of sorrow for her tender favorite's woe,

But rather, if her eyes could brighter be,

With brighter eyes and slow amenity,

Put her new lips to his, and gave afresh

295 The life she had so tangled in her mesh:

And as he from one trance was wakening

Into another, she began to sing,

Happy in beauty, life, and love, and every thing,

A song of love, too sweet for earthly lyres,

300 While, like held breath, the stars drew in their panting
fires.

And then she whisper'd in such trembling tone,

8. One of the seven sisters that form the constel-

9. Detailed, minutely accurate.

lation Pleiades.

LAMIA / 9 2 5

As those who, safe together met alone

For the first time through many anguish'd days,

Use other speech than looks; bidding him raise

305 His drooping head, and clear his soul of doubt,

For that she was a woman, and without

Any more subtle fluid in her veins

Than throbbing blood, and that the self-same pains

Inhabited her frail-strung heart as his.

310 And next she wonder'd how his eyes could miss

Her face so long in Corinth, where, she said,

She dwelt but half retir'd, and there had led
Days happy as the gold coin could invent
Without the aid of love; yet in content
315 Till she saw him, as once she pass'd him by,
Where 'gainst a column he leant thoughtfully
At Venus' temple porch, 'mid baskets heap'd
Of amorous herbs and flowers, newly reap'd
Late on that eve, as 'twas the night before
320 The Adonian feast;¹ whereof she saw no more,
But wept alone those days, for why should she adore?
Lycius from death awoke into amaze,
To see her still, and singing so sweet lays;⁰ *songs*
Then from amaze into delight he fell
325 To hear her whisper woman's lore so well;
And every word she spake entic'd him on
To unperplex'd delight² and pleasure known.
Let the mad poets say whate'er they please
Of the sweets of Fairies, Peris,³ Goddesses,
330 There is not such a treat among them all,
Haunters of cavern, lake, and waterfall,
As a real woman, lineal indeed
From Pyrrha's pebbles⁴ or old Adam's seed.
Thus gentle Lamia judg'd, and judg'd aright,
335 That Lycius could not love in half a fright,
So threw the goddess off, and won his heart
More pleasantly by playing woman's part,
With no more awe than what her beauty gave,
That, while it smote, still guaranteed to save.

340 Lycius to all made eloquent reply,
 Marrying to every word a twinborn sigh;
 And last, pointing to Corinth, ask'd her sweet,
 If 'twas too far that night for her soft feet.
 The way was short, for Lamia's eagerness
 345 Made, by a spell, the triple league decrease
 To a few paces; not at all surmised
 By blinded Lycius, so in her comprized.⁰ *bound up, absorbed*
 They pass'd the city gates, he knew not how,
 So noiseless, and he never thought to know.

1. Feast of Adonis, a youth loved by Venus (Aph-
 3. Fairylike creatures in Persian mythology.
 rodite), goddess of love.

4. Descended from the pebbles with which, in
 2. I.e., unmixed with its neighbor, pain; cf. line
 Greek mythology, Pyrrha and Deucalion repopu-
 192.

lated Earth after a great flood.

9 2 6 / J O H N K E A T S

350 As men talk in a dream, so Corinth all,
 Throughout her palaces imperial,
 And all her populous streets and temples lewd,⁵
 Mutter'd, like tempest in the distance brew'd,
 To the wide-spreaded night above her towers.
 355 Men, women, rich and poor, in the cool hours,
 Shuffled their sandals o'er the pavement white,
 Companion'd or alone; while many a light
 Flared, here and there, from wealthy festivals,

And threw their moving shadows on the walls,
360 Or found them cluster'd in the corniced shade
Of some arch'd temple door, or dusky colonnade.
Muffling his face, of greeting friends in fear,
Her fingers he press'd hard, as one came near
With curl'd gray beard, sharp eyes, and smooth bald crown,
365 Slow-stepp'd, and robed in philosophic gown:
Lycius shrank closer, as they met and past,
Into his mantle, adding wings to haste,
While hurried Lamia trembled: "Ah," said he,
"Why do you shudder, love, so ruefully?
370 Why does your tender palm dissolve in dew?"—
"I'm wearied," said fair Lamia: "tell me who
Is that old man? I cannot bring to mind
His features:—Lycius! wherefore did you blind
Yourself from his quick eyes?" Lycius replied,
375 " 'Tis Apollonius sage, my trusty guide
And good instructor; but to-night he seems
The ghost of folly haunting my sweet dreams."
While yet he spake they had arrived before
A pillar'd porch, with lofty portal door,
380 Where hung a silver lamp, whose phosphor glow
Reflected in the slabbed steps below,
Mild as a star in water; for so new,
And so unsullied was the marble hue,
So through the crystal polish, liquid fine,
385 Ran the dark veins, that none but feet divine
Could e'er have touch'd there. Sounds T^olian⁶

Breath'd from the hinges, as the ample span
Of the wide doors disclos'd a place unknown
Some time to any, but those two alone,
390 And a few Persian mutes, who that same year
Were seen about the markets: none knew where
They could inhabit; the most curious
Were foil'd, who watch'd to trace them to their house:
And but the flutter-winged verse must tell,
395 For truth's sake, what woe afterwards befel,
5. Temples of Venus, whose worship sometimes
after Aeolus, god of winds), a stringed instrument
involved sexual activity.

that responds to air currents.

6. Sounds like those of the wind harp (named

LAMIA / 9 2 7

'T would humor many a heart to leave them thus,
Shut from the busy world of more incredulous.

Part 2

Love in a hut, with water and a crust,
Is—Love, forgive us!—cinders, ashes, dust;
Love in a palace is perhaps at last
More grievous torment than a hermit's fast:—
5 That is a doubtful tale from faery land,
Hard for the non-elect to understand.
Had Lycius liv'd to hand his story down,
He might have given the moral a fresh frown,
Or clench'd it quite: but too short was their bliss
io To breed distrust and hate, that make the soft voice hiss.
Besides, there, nightly, with terrific glare,
Love, jealous grown of so complete a pair,
Hover'd and buzz'd his wings, with fearful roar,
Above the lintel of their chamber door,
15 And down the passage cast a glow upon the floor.
For all this came a ruin: side by side
They were enthroned, in the even tide,
Upon a couch, near to a curtaining
Whose airy texture, from a golden string,
20 Floated into the room, and let appear
Unveil'd the summer heaven, blue and clear,
Betwixt two marble shafts:—there they reposed,
Where use had made it sweet, with eyelids closed,
Saving a tythe⁷ which love still open kept,
25 That they might see each other while they almost slept;

When from the slope side of a suburb hill,
Deafening the swallow's twitter, came a thrill
Of trumpets—Lycius started—the sounds fled,
But left a thought, a buzzing in his head.

30 For the first time, since first he harbor'd in
That purple-lined palace of sweet sin,
His spirit pass'd beyond its golden bourn
Into the noisy world almost forsworn.

The lady, ever watchful, penetrant,
35 Saw this with pain, so arguing a want

lack

Of something more, more than her empery

empire

Of joys; and she began to moan and sigh
Because he mused beyond her, knowing well

That but a moment's thought is passion's passing
bell. *death*
/ knell

40 "Why do you sigh, fair creature?" whisper'd he:

"Why do you think?" return'd she tenderly:

"You have deserted me;—where am I now?

Not in your heart while care weighs on your brow:

No, no, you have dismiss'd me; and I go

7. Except for a slit. *Tythe* (more commonly *tithe*): a small—
literally, a tenth—part.

9 2 8 / JOHN KEATS

45 From your breast houseless: ay, it must be so."

He answer'd, bending to her open eyes,

Where he was mirror'd small in paradise,

"My silver planet, both of eve and morn!8

Why will you plead yourself so sad forlorn,
50 While I am striving how to fill my heart
With deeper crimson, and a double smart?0 *pain*
How to entangle, trammel up9 and snare
Your soul in mine, and labyrinth you there
Like the hid scent in an unbudded rose?
55 Ay, a sweet kiss—you see your mighty woes.1
My thoughts! shall I unveil them? Listen then!
What mortal hath a prize, that other men
May be confounded and abash'd withal,
But lets it sometimes pace abroad majestic,
60 And triumph, as in thee I should rejoice
Amid the hoarse alarm of Corinth's voice.
Let my foes choke, and my friends shout afar,
While through the thronged streets your bridal car0 *chariot*
Wheels round its dazzling spokes."—The lady's cheek
65 Trembled; she nothing said, but, pale and meek,
Arose and knelt before him, wept a rain
Of sorrows at his words; at last with pain
Beseeching him, the while his hand she wrung,
To change his purpose. He thereat was stung,
70 Perverse, with stronger fancy to reclaim
Her wild and timid nature to his aim:
Besides, for all his love, in self despite,
Against his better self, he took delight
Luxurious in her sorrows, soft and new.
75 His passion, cruel grown, took on a hue
Fierce and sanguineous0 as 'twas possible *bloodred*

In one whose brow had no dark veins to swell.
Fine was the mitigated fury, like
Apollo's presence when in act to strike
so The serpent—Ha, the serpent! certes, she *certainly*
Was none. She burnt, she lov'd the tyranny,
And, all subdued, consented to the hour
When to the bridal he should lead his paramour.
Whispering in midnight silence, said the youth,
85 "Sure some sweet name thou hast, though, by my truth,
I have not ask'd it, ever thinking thee
Not mortal, but of heavenly progeny,
As still I do. Hast any mortal name,
Fit appellation for this dazzling frame?
90 Or friends or kinsfolk on the citted earth,
To share our marriage feast and nuptial mirth?
"I have no friends," said Lamia, "no, not one;
My presence in wide Corinth hardly known:
8. The planet Venus is both the morning star and
1. I.e., she teases him about exaggerating his trou-

bles.

9. Catch in a net.

L A M I A / 9 2 9

My parents' bones are in their dusty urns
95 Sepulchred, where no kindled incense burns,
Seeing all their luckless race are dead, save me,
And I neglect the holy rite for thee.
Even as you list invite your many guests;

But if, as now it seems, your vision rests
100 With any pleasure on me, do not bid
Old Apollonius—from him keep me hid.”
Lycius, perplex’d at words so blind and blank,
Made close inquiry; from whose touch she shrank,
Feigning a sleep; and he to the dull shade
105 Of deep sleep in a moment was betray’d.
It was the custom then to bring away,
The bride from home at blushing shut of day,
Veil’d, in a chariot, heralded along
By strewn flowers, torches, and a marriage song,
no With other pageants: but this fair unknown
Had not a friend. So being left alone,
(Lycius was gone to summon all his kin)
And knowing surely she could never win
His foolish heart from its mad pompousness,
115 She set herself, high-thoughted, how to dress
The misery in fit magnificence.
She did so, but ‘tis doubtful how and whence
Came, and who were her subtle servitors.0 *male servants*
About the halls, and to and from the doors,
120 There was a noise of wings, till in short space
The glowing banquet-room shone with wide-arched grace.
A haunting music, sole perhaps and lone
Supportress of the faery-roof, made moan
Throughout, as fearful the whole charm might fade.
125 Fresh carved cedar, mimicking a glade
Of palm and plantain, met from either side,

High in the midst, in honor of the bride:
Two palms and then two plantains, and so on,
From either side their stems branch'd one to one
130 All down the aisled place; and beneath all
There ran a stream of lamps straight on from wall to wall.
So canopied, lay an untasted feast
Teeming with odors. Lamia, regal drest,
Silently paced about, and as she went,
135 In pale contented sort of discontent,
Mission'd her viewless servants to enrich
The fretted² splendor of each nook and niche.
Between the tree-stems, marbled plain at first,
Came jasper pannels; then, anon, there burst
140 Forth creeping imagery of slighter trees,
And with the larger wove in small intricacies.
Approving all, she faded at self-will,
And shut the chamber up, close, hush'd and still,
2. Decorated with fretwork.

930 / J O H N K E A T S

Complete and ready for the revels rude,^o *uncouth*
145 When dreadful^o guests would come to spoil her solitude.
terrifying
The day appear'd, and all the gossip rout.
O senseless Lycius! Madman! wherefore flout
The silent-blessing fate, warm cloister'd hours,
And show to common eyes these secret bowers?
150 The herd approach'd; each guest, with busy brain,
Arriving at the portal, gaz'd amain,^o

intently

And enter'd marveling: for they knew the street,
Remember'd it from childhood all complete
Without a gap, yet ne'er before had seen
155 That royal porch, that high-built fair demesne;⁰
So in they hurried all, maz'd, curious and keen:
Save one, who look'd thereon with eye severe,
And with calm-planted steps walk'd in austere;
'Twas Apollonius: something too he laugh'd,
i60 As though some knotty problem, that had daft⁰

baffled

His patient thought, had now begun to thaw,
And solve and melt:—'twas just as he foresaw.
He met within the murmurous vestibule
His young disciple. ” 'Tis no common rule,
165 Lycius,” said he, “for uninvited guest
To force himself upon you, and infest
With an unbidden presence the bright throng
Of younger friends; yet must I do this wrong,
And you forgive me.” Lycius blush'd, and led
170 The old man through the inner doors broad-spread;
With reconciling words and courteous mien⁰ *demeanor*
Turning into sweet milk the sophist's spleen.³
Of wealthy lustre was the banquet-room,
Fill'd with pervading brilliance and perfume:
175 Before each lucid pannel fuming stood
A censer fed with myrrh and spiced wood,
Each by a sacred tripod held aloft,

Whose slender feet wide-swerv'd upon the soft
Wool-woofed° carpets: fifty wreaths of smoke
-woven

180 From fifty censers their light voyage took
To the high roof, still mimick'd as they rose
Along the mirror'd walls by twin-clouds odorous
Twelve sphered tables, by silk seats insphered,0
encircled

High as the level of a man's breast rear'd
185 On libbard's0 paws, upheld the heavy gold
leopard's

Of cups and goblets, and the store0 thrice told
story

Of Ceres' horn,4 and, in huge vessels, wine
Come from the gloomy tun0 with merry shine.
cask

Thus loaded with a feast the tables stood,
190 Each shrining in the midst the image of a God.

3. Here, the melancholy of one whose reasoning 4. Horn of
plenty, filled with grain (Ceres is the seems solid b u t is
flawed. goddess of grain).

L A M I A / 9 3 1

When in an antichamber every guest
Had felt the cold full sponge to pleasure press'd,
By minist'ring slaves, upon his hands and feet,
And fragrant oils with ceremony meet
195 Pour'd on his hair, they all mov'd to the feast
In white robes, and themselves in order placed
Around the silken couches, wondering

Whence all this mighty cost and blaze of wealth could spring.
Soft went the music the soft air along,
200 While fluent Greek a vowel'd undersong
Kept up among the guests, discoursing low
At first, for scarcely was the wine at flow;
But when the happy vintage touch'd their brains,
Louder they talk, and louder come the strains
205 Of powerful instruments:—the gorgeous dyes,
The space, the splendor of the draperies,
The roof of awful richness, nectarous cheer,
Beautiful slaves, and Lamia's self, appear,
Now, when the wine has done its rosy deed,
210 And every soul from human trammels freed,
No more so strange; for merry wine, sweet wine,
Will make Elysian shades⁵ not too fair, too divine.
Soon was God Bacchus at meridian⁰ height; *full*
Flush'd were their cheeks, and bright eyes double bright:
215 Garlands of every green, and every scent
From vales⁰ deflower'd, or forest-trees branch-rent, *valleys*
In baskets of bright osier'd⁶ gold were brought
High as the handles heap'd, to suit the thought
Of every guest; that each, as he did please,
220 Might fancy-fit his brows, silk-pillow'd at his ease.
What wreath for Lamia? What for Lycius?
What for the sage, old Apollonius?
Upon her aching forehead be there hung
The leaves of willow and of adder's tongue;⁷
225 And for the youth, quick, let us strip for him

The thyrsus,⁸ that his watching eyes may swim
Into forgetfulness; and, for the sage,
Let spear-grass and the spiteful thistle wage
War on his temples. Do not all charms fly
230 At the mere touch of cold philosophy?⁹

There was an awful⁰ rainbow once in heaven: *awe-inspiring*
We know her woof, her texture; she is given
In the dull catalogue of common things.

Philosophy will clip an Angel's wings,
235 Conquer all mysteries by rule and line,
5. Spirits in Elysium, abode of the blessed after
tongues.
death.

8. Bacchus's vine-covered staff, used to signal
6. Plaited, as with the strips of willow used to
drunkenness.
weave baskets.

9. Natural philosophy, i.e., science.

7. Fern with spikes that resemble serpents'

9 3 2 / J O H N K E A T S

Empty the haunted air, and gnomed⁰ mine—
gnome-guarded

Unweave a rainbow, as it erewhile made
The tender-person'd Lamia melt into a shade.
By her glad Lycius sitting, in chief place,
240 Scarce saw in all the room another face,
Till, checking his love trance, a cup he took
Full brimm'd, and opposite sent forth a look

‘Cross the broad table, to beseech a glance
From his old teacher’s wrinkled countenance,
245 And pledge⁰ him. The bald-head philosopher
drink a toast to
Had fix’d his eye, without a twinkle or stir
Full on the alarmed beauty of the bride,
Brow-beating her fair form, and troubling her sweet pride.
Lycius then press’d her hand, with devout touch,
250 As pale it lay upon the rosy couch:
‘Twas icy, and the cold ran through his veins;
Then sudden it grew hot, and all the pains
Of an unnatural heat shot to his heart.
“Lamia, what means this? Wherefore dost thou start?
255 Know’st thou that man?” Poor Lamia answer’d not.
He gaz’d into her eyes, and not a jot
Own’d⁰ they the lovelorn piteous appeal: *acknowledged*
More, more he gaz’d: his human senses reel:
Some hungry spell that loveliness absorbs;
260 There was no recognition in those orbs.
“Lamia!” he cried—and no soft-toned reply.
The many heard, and the loud revelry
Grew hush; the stately music no more breathes;
The myrtle¹ sicken’d in a thousand wreaths.
265 By faint degrees, voice, lute, and pleasure ceased;
A deadly silence step by step increased,
Until it seem’d a horrid presence there,
And not a man but felt the terror in his hair.
“Lamia!” he shriek’d; and nothing but the shriek

270 With its sad echo did the silence break.
 “Begone, foul dream!” he cried, gazing again
 In the bride’s face, where now no azure vein
 Wander’d on fair-spaced temples; no soft bloom
 Misted the cheek; no passion to illumine
 275 The deep-recessed vision:—all was blight;
 Lamia, no longer fair, there sat a deadly white.
 “Shut, shut those juggling² eyes, thou ruthless man!
 Turn them aside, wretch! or the righteous ban
 Of all the Gods, whose dreadful images
 280 Here represent their shadowy presences,
 May pierce them on the sudden with the thorn
 Of painful blindness; leaving thee forlorn,
 In trembling dotage to the feeblest fright
 Of conscience, for their long offended might,
 285 For all thine impious proud-heart sophistries,
 1. An emblem of love, because sacred to Venus.

2. Deceiving.

ODE TO PSYCHE / 933

U n l a w f u l m a g i c , a n d e n t i c i n g l i e s .

**C o r i n t h i a n s ! l o o k u p o n t h a t g r a y - b e a r d w
 r e t c h !**

**M a r k h o w , p o s s e s s ‘ d , h i s l a s h l e s s e y e l i d s
 s t r e t c h A r o u n d h i s d e m o n e y e s ! C o r i n t h i a
 n s , s e e !**

**290 M y s w e e t b r i d e w i t h e r s a t t h e i r p o t e n c y
 .”**

**“Fool!” said the sophist, in an under-tone Gr
 uff with contempt; which a death-nighing
 moan From Lycius answer’d, as heart-str**

uck and lost, He sank supine beside the ach-
ing ghost.

295 "Fool! Fool!" repeated he, while his eyes still
Relented not, nor mov'd; "from every ill Of
life have I preserv'd thee to this day,

And shall I see thee made a serpent's prey?"

Then Lamia breath'd death breath; the so-
phist's eye, 300 Like a sharp spear, went th-
rough her utterly, Keen, cruel, perçant, 0 st-
inging: she, as well *piercing*

As her weak hand could any meaning tell,

Motion'd him to be silent; vainly so,

He look'd and look'd again a level—No!

305 "A Serpent!" echoed he; no sooner said,
Than with a frightful scream she vanished
: And Lycius' arms were empty of delight,

As were his limbs of life, from that same night.

On the high couch he lay!—his friends scam-
eround—

310 Supported him—no pulse, or breath th-
ey found, And, in its marriage robe, the hea-
vy body wound.

July - August 1819 1820

Ode to Psyche³

0 Goddess! hear these tuneless numbers, 0
wring *verses*

By sweet enforcement and remembrance d-
ear, And pardon that thy secrets should be
sung Even into thine own soft-conched^o
ear; *shell-like*

5 Surely I dreamt today, or did I see

The winged Psyche with awakened eyes?

1 w a n d e r e d i n a f o r e s t t h o u g h t l e s s l y ,
A n d , o n t h e s u d d e n , f a i n t i n g w i t h s u r p r i s e ,
S a w t w o f a i r c r e a t u r e s , c o u c h e d s i d e b y s i
d e i o I n d e e p e s t g r a s s , b e n e a t h t h e w h i s p ‘ r i n
g r o o f O f l e a v e s a n d t r e m b l e d b l o s s o m s , w h e
r e t h e r e r a n A b r o o k l e t , s c a r c e e s p i e d :
‘ M i d h u s h e d , c o o l - r o o t e d f l o w e r s , f r a g r a
n t - e y e d , B l u e , s i l v e r - w h i t e , a n d b u d d e d T
y r i a n , 4

15 T h e y l a y c a l m - b r e a t h i n g o n t h e b e d d e d
g r a s s ; T h e i r a r m s e m b r a c e d , a n d t h e i r p i n i o
n s 0 t o o ; *wings*

3. In Greek mythology, Psyche (a mortal woman,
with Cupid in immortality.

whose n a m e m e a n s “soul”) was loved in secret and

4. Purple or red, as in the “royal” dye made in
in darkness by Cupid, the “winged” son of the god-
ancient Tyre.

dess Venus. After many trials, Psyche was united

9 3 4 / J O H N K E A T S

Their lips touched not, but had not bade adieu,

As if disjoined by soft-handed slumber,

And ready still past kisses to outnumber

2 0 A t t e n d e r e y e - d a w n o f a u r o r e a n 0 l o v e : *dawning*

The winged boy I knew;

But who wast thou, O happy, happy dove?

His Psyche true!

O latest born and loveliest vision far

25 Of all Olympus’ faded hierarchy!5

Fairer than Phoebe’s0 sapphire-regioned star, *the moon’s*

Or Vesper; 0 amorous glowworm⁶ of the sky; *the evening star*

Fairer than these, though temple thou hast none,

Nor altar heaped with flowers;

30 Nor virgin choir to make delicious moan

Upon the midnight hours;

No voice, no lute, no pipe, no incense sweet

From chain-swung censer teeming;

No shrine, no grove, no oracle, no heat

35 Of pale-mouthed prophet dreaming.

0 brightest! though too late for antique vows,

Too, too late for the fond believing lyre,

When holy were the haunted forest boughs,

Holy the air, the water, and the fire;

40 Yet even in these days so far retired

From happy pieties, thy lucent fans, 0 *wings*

Fluttering among the faint Olympians,

I see, and sing, by my own eyes inspired.

So let me be thy choir, and make a moan

45 Upon the midnight hours;

Thy voice, thy lute, thy pipe, thy incense sweet

From swung censer teeming;

Thy shrine, thy grove, thy oracle, thy heat

Of pale-mouthed prophet dreaming.

50 Yes, I will be thy priest, and build a fane^o *temple*

In some untrodden region of my mind,

Where branched thoughts, new grown with pleasant pain,

Instead of pines shall murmur in the wind:

Far, far around shall those dark-clustered trees

55 Fledge the wild-ridged mountains steep by steep;
And there by zephyrs,⁰ streams, and birds, and bees, *breezes*
The moss-lain Dryads⁰ shall be lulled to sleep; *tree nymphs*
And in the midst of this wide quietness
A rosy sanctuary will I dress

60 With the wreathed trellis of a working brain,
With buds, and bells, and stars without a name,
With all the gardener Fancy e'er could feign,
Who breeding flowers, will never breed the same:

5. Lines 24 - 25 : last of the deities to be added to

6. Wingless, female firefly that emits light from
the company of the Greek Olympian gods.

the a b d o m e n .

ODE TO A NIGHTINGALE / 935

And there shall be for thee all soft delight

65 That shadowy thought can win,

A bright torch, and a casement ope at night,

To let the warm Love⁷ in!

1819 1820

Ode to a Nightingale

i

My heart aches, and a drowsy numbness pains

My sense, as though of hemlock⁸ I had drunk,

Or emptied some dull opiate to the drains

One minute past, and Lethe-wards⁹ had sunk:

5 'Tis not through envy of thy happy lot,

But being too happy in thine happiness—

That thou, light-winged Dryad⁰ of the trees, *nymph*

In some melodious plot
Of beechen green, and shadows numberless,
io Singest of summer in full-throated ease.
2
O, for a draught of vintage! that hath been
Cooled a long age in the deep-delved earth,
Tasting of Flora¹ and the country green,
Dance, and Provençal song,² and sunburnt mirth!
15 O for a beaker full of the warm South,
Full of the true, the blushful Hippocrene,³
With beaded bubbles winking at the brim,
And purple-stained mouth;
That I might drink, and leave the world unseen,
20 And with thee fade away into the forest dim:
3
Fade far away, dissolve, and quite forget
What thou among the leaves hast never known,
The weariness, the fever, and the fret
Here, where men sit and hear each other groan;
25 Where palsy shakes a few, sad, last gray hairs,
Where youth grows pale, and specter-thin, and dies,
Where but to think is to be full of sorrow
And leaden-eyed despairs,
Where Beauty cannot keep her lustrous eyes,
30 Or new Love pine at them beyond tomorrow.

7. I.e., Cupid.

2. Of the late medieval troubadours of Provence,

8. Opiate made from a poisonous herb.

in southern France.

9. Towards the river Lethe, whose waters in Hades

3. The fountain of the Muses (goddesses of poetry bring the dead forgetfulness.

and the arts) on Mt. Helicon, in Greece; its waters

1. Roman goddess of springtime and flowers.

induce poetic inspiration.

936 / JOHN KEATS

4

Away! away! for I will fly to thee,

Not charioted by Bacchus and his pards,⁴

But on the viewless⁰ wings of Poesy, *invisible*

Though the dull brain perplexes and retards:

35 **Already with thee! tender is the night,**

And haply the Queen-Moon is on her throne,

Clustered around by all her starry Fays;^o *fairies*

But here there is no light,

Save what from heaven is with the breezes blown

40 **Through verdurous⁰ glooms and winding mossy ways.**
green-leaved

5

I cannot see what flowers are at my feet,

Nor what soft incense hangs upon the boughs,

But, in embalmed⁰ darkness, guess each sweet *perfumed*

Wherewith the seasonable month endows

45 **The grass, the thicket, and the fruit tree wild;**

White hawthorn, and the pastoral eglantine;⁵

Fast fading violets covered up in leaves;

And mid-May's eldest child,
The coming musk-rose, full of dewy wine,
50 The murmurous haunt of flies on summer eves.

6

Darkling⁰ I listen; and for many a time *in darkness*
I have been half in love with easeful Death,
Called him soft names in many a mused rhyme,
To take into the air my quiet breath;
55 Now more than ever seems it rich to die,
To cease upon the midnight with no pain,
While thou art pouring forth thy soul abroad
In such an ecstasy!
Still wouldst thou sing, and I have ears in vain—
60 To thy high requiem become a sod.

7

Thou wast not born for death, immortal Bird!
No hungry generations tread thee down;
The voice I hear this passing night was heard
In ancient days by emperor and clown:
65 Perhaps the selfsame song that found a path
Through the sad heart of Ruth,⁶ when, sick for home,
She stood in tears amid the alien corn;
The same that ofttimes hath
Charmed magic casements, opening on the foam
70 Of perilous seas, in faery lands forlorn.

4. Leopards, drawing the chariot of Bacchus, god
of wine and modesty who, as a stranger in Judah, won
of wine.

a h u s b a n d while gleaning in the barley fields (“the

5. Sweetbrier; wood roses.

alien corn,” line 67).

6. In the H e b r e w Scriptures, a w o m a n of great loy-

O D E O N M E L A N C H O L Y / 9 3 7

8

Forlorn! the very word is like a bell

To toll me back from thee to my sole self!

Adieu! the fancy cannot cheat so well

As she is famed to do, deceiving elf.

75 Adieu! adieu! thy plaintive anthem fades

Past the near meadows, over the still stream,

Up the hill side; and now ‘tis buried deep

In the next valley-glades:

Was it a vision, or a waking dream?

so Fled is that music:—Do I wake or sleep?

May 1819 1820

Ode on Melancholy

i

No, no, go not to Lethe,⁷ neither twist

Wolfsbane, tight-rooted, for its poisonous wine;

Nor suffer thy pale forehead to be kissed

By nightshade, ruby grape of Proserpine;⁸

5 Make not your rosary of yew-berries,⁹

Nor let the beetle, nor the death-moth be

Your mournful Psyche, nor the downy owl¹

A partner in your sorrow’s mysteries;

For shade to shade will come too drowsily,

io **And drown the wakeful anguish of the soul.**

2

But when the melancholy fit shall fall

Sudden from heaven like a weeping cloud,

That fosters the droop-headed flowers all,

And hides the green hill in an April shroud;

15 Then glut thy sorrow on a morning rose,

Or on the rainbow of the salt sand-wave,

Or on the wealth of globed peonies;

Or if thy mistress some rich anger shows,

Imprison her soft hand, and let her rave,

20 And feed deep, deep upon her peerless eyes.

3

She² dwells with Beauty—Beauty that must die;

And Joy, whose hand is ever at his lips

Bidding adieu; and aching Pleasure nigh,

7. River in Hades, the waters of which bring for-

1. Beetles, moths, and owls traditionally have
getfulness to the dead.

been associated with darkness, death, and burial;

8. Q u e e n of Hades. “Nightshade” and “wolfsbane”

Psyche (the soul) sometimes has been symbolized

(line 2) are poisonous herbs from which sedatives

by a m o t h that escapes the m o u t h in sleep or at

and opiates were extracted.

death.

9. Symbols of mourning; often growing in ceme-

2. T h e goddess Melancholy.

teries.

938 / JOHN KEATS

**Turning to Poison while the bee-mouth
sips: 25 Aye, in the very temple of Delight**

**Veiled Melancholy has her sov' reign shrine,
Though seen of none save him whose str
enuous tongue Can burst Joy's grape agains
this palate fine; 0 *sensitive***

**His soul shall taste the sadness of her might,
And beam on her cloudy trophies hung**

.

May 1819 1820

Ode on a Grecian Urn

i

**Thou still unravished bride of quietness,
Thou foster-child of silence and slow time,
Sylvan 0 historian, who canst thus express
*rustic***

**A flowery tale more sweetly than our rhyme
: 5 What leaf-fringed legend haunts about
thy shape Of deities or mortals, or of both,
In Tempe or the dales of Arcady? 4**

What men or gods are these? What maidens loath?

What mad pursuit? What struggle to escape?

io What pipes and timbrels? What wild ecstasy?

2

**Heard melodies are sweet, but those unheard
Are sweeter; therefore, ye soft pipes, play on;
Not to the sensual ear, but, more endeared,
Pipe to the spirit ditties of no tone:**

15 Fair youth, beneath the trees, thou canst
not leave Thy song, nor ever canst those tree
s be bare; Bold Lover, never, never canst thou
u kiss,

Though winning near the goal — yet, do not
grieve; She cannot fade, though thou hast no
t thy bliss, 20 Forever wilt thou love, and she
be fair!

3

Ah, happy, happy boughs! that cannot shed
Your leaves, nor ever bid the Spring die
u; And, happy melodist, unwearied,

Forever piping songs forever new;

25 More happy love! more happy, happy love
!

Forever warm and still to be enjoyed,

Forever panting, and forever young;

All breathing human passion far above,

That leaves a heart high-sorrowful and cloyed, 30
A burning forehead, and a parching
g tongue.

3. Symbols of victory, such as banners, hung in 4. Temple
and Arcady (or Arcadia), in Greece, are religious shrines.
traditional symbols of perfect pastoral landscapes.

To AUTUMN / 939

4

Who are these coming to the sacrifice?

To what green altar, O mysterious priest,

Lead'st thou that heifer lowing at the skies,

And all her silken flanks with garlands dressed?

35 What little town by river or sea shore,

Or mountain-built with peaceful citadel,

Is emptied of this folk, this pious morn?
And, little town, thy streets forevermore
Will silent be; and not a soul to tell
40 Why thou art desolate, can e'er return.

5

O Attic⁵ shape! Fair attitude! with brede^o *woven pattern*
Of marble men and maidens overwrought,
With forest branches and the trodden weed;
Thou, silent form, dost tease us out of thought
45 As doth eternity: Cold Pastoral!

When old age shall this generation waste,
Thou shalt remain, in midst of other woe
Than ours, a friend to man, to whom thou say'st,
"Beauty is truth, truth beauty,"⁶—that is all
50 Ye know on earth, and all ye need to know.

May 1819 1820

To Autumn

i

Season of mists and mellow fruitfulness,
Close bosom-friend of the maturing sun;
Conspiring with him how to load and bless
With fruit the vines that round the thatch-eaves run;
5 To bend with apples the mossed cottage-trees,
And fill all fruit with ripeness to the core;
To swell the gourd, and plump the hazel shells
With a sweet kernel; to set budding more,
And still more, later flowers for the bees,
io Until they think warm days will never cease,

For Summer has o'er-brimmed their clammy cells.

2

Who hath not seen thee oft amid thy store?

Sometimes whoever seeks abroad may find

Thee sitting careless on a granary floor,

15 Thy hair soft-lifted by the winnowing⁷ wind;

5. Greek, especially Athenian.

to ascribe only this phrase to the voice of the urn;

6. The quotation marks around this phrase are

others ascribe to the urn the whole of the two con-

absent from some other versions also having good

cluding lines.

authority. This discrepancy has led some readers

7. Blowing the grain clear of the lighter chaff.

9 4 0 /

J O H N K E A T S

Or on a half-reaped furrow sound asleep,

Drowsed with the fume of poppies, while thy hook⁸

Spares the next swath and all its twined flowers:

And sometimes like a gleaner⁹ thou dost keep

20 Steady thy laden head across a brook;

Or by a cider-press, with patient look,

Thou watchest the last ooziings hours by hours.

3

Where are the songs of Spring? Aye, where are they?

Think not of them, thou hast thy music too—

25 While barred clouds bloom the soft-dying day,

And touch the stubble-plains with rosy hue;

Then in a wailful choir the small gnats mourn
Among the river shallows,⁰ borne aloft *low-growing willows*
Or sinking as the light wind lives or dies;
30 And full-grown lambs loud bleat from hilly bourn;⁰
field
Hedge crickets sing; and now with treble soft
The redbreast whistles from a garden-croft;¹
And gathering swallows twitter in the skies.

September 19, 1819 1820

Bright Star

Bright star, would I were steadfast as thou art—
Not in lone splendor hung aloft the night
And watching, with eternal lids apart,
Like nature's patient, sleepless Eremite,⁰ *hermit; devotee*
5 The moving waters at their priestlike task
Of pure ablution² round earth's human shores,
Or gazing on the new soft fallen mask
Of snow upon the mountains and the moors—
No—yet still steadfast, still unchangeable,
io Pillowed upon my fair love's ripening breast,
To feel forever its soft fall and swell,
Awake forever in a sweet unrest,
Still, still to hear her tender-taken breath,
And so live ever—or else swoon to death.

1819 1838

This Living Hand³

This living hand, now warm and capable
Of earnest grasping, would, if it were cold

8. Small, curved blade for cutting grain; sickle.
house.

9. Someone who gathers up ears of corn after

2. **W a s h i n g** as part of a religious ritual.
reapers have passed.

3. Written on a manuscript page of Keats's unfin-

1. Small field, as for a vegetable garden, near a
ished poem, "The **C a p** and Bells."

T H E R H O D O R A / 9 4 1

And in the icy silence of the tomb,

So haunt thy days and chill thy dreaming nights

5 That thou wouldst wish thine own heart dry of blood

So in my veins red life might stream again,

And thou be conscience-calmed—see here it is—

I hold it towards you.

1819? 1898

R A L P H W A L D O E M E R S O N

1803-1882

Concord Hymn

Sung at the Completion of the Battle Monument July 4, 1837

By the rude^o bridge that arched the flood, *roughly made*

Their flag to April's breeze unfurled,

Here once the embattled farmers stood

And fired the shot heard round the world.

5 The foe long since in silence slept;

Alike the conqueror silent sleeps;

And Time the ruined bridge has swept

Down the dark stream which seaward creeps.

**On this green bank, by this soft stream,
io We set to-day a votive⁰ stone; *offered in gratitude*
That memory may their deed redeem,
When, like our sires, our sons are gone.
Spirit, that made those heroes dare
To die, and leave their children free,
15 Bid Time and Nature gently spare
The shaft we raise to them and thee.
1837, 1876**

The Rhodora²

On Being Asked, Whence Is the Flower?

**In May, when sea-winds pierced our solitudes,
I found the fresh Rhodora in the woods,
Spreading its leafless blooms in a damp nook,
To please the desert and the sluggish brook.
5 The purple petals, fallen in the pool,
Made the black water with their beauty gay;**

1. C o m m e m o r a t i n g the battles of Lexington and 2. An azalea native to the northeastern United Concord, April 19, 1775. States.

9 4 2 / R A L P H W A L D O E M E R S O N

Here might the red-bird come his plumes to cool,
And court the flower that cheapens his array.

Rhodora! if the sages ask thee why

10 This charm is wasted on the earth and sky,
Tell them, dear, that if eyes were made for seeing,
Then Beauty is its own excuse for being:
Why thou wert there, O rival of the rose!
I never thought to ask, I never knew;

15 But, in my simple ignorance, suppose
The self-same Power that brought me there brought you.

1834 1839, 1847

The Snow-Storm

Announced by all the trumpets of the sky,
Arrives the snow, and, driving o'er the fields,
Seems nowhere to alight: the whited air
Hides hills and woods, the river, and the heaven,
5 And veils the farmhouse at the garden's end.

The sled and traveler stopped, the courier's feet
Delayed, all friends shut out, the housemates sit
Around the radiant fireplace, enclosed
In a tumultuous privacy of storm.

io Come see the north wind's masonry.

Out of an unseen quarry evermore

Furnished with tile, the fierce artificer

Curves his white bastions with projected roof

Round every windward stake, or tree, or door.

15 Speeding, the myriad-handed, his wild work

So fanciful, so savage, nought cares he

For number or proportion. Mockingly,

On coop or kennel he hangs Parian³ wreaths;

A swan-like form invests the hidden thorn;

20 Fills up the farmer's lane from wall to wall,

Maugre⁰ the farmer's sighs; and, at the gate, *in spite of*

A tapering turret overtops the work.

And when his hours are numbered, and the world

Is all his own, retiring, as he were not,

25 Leaves, when the sun appears, astonished Art
To mimic in slow structures, stone by stone,
Built in an age, the mad wind's night-work,
The frolic architecture of the snow.

1841, 1847

3. I.e., like the fine white marble from the Greek island of
Paros.

O D E / 9 4 3

Ode

*Inscribed to W. H. Channing*⁴

Though loath to grieve
The evil time's sole patriot,
I cannot leave

My honied thought

5 For the priest's cant,
Or statesman's rant.

If I refuse

My study for their politique,
Which at the best is trick,

10 The **a n g r y** Muse^o *source of inspiration*

Puts confusion in my brain.

But who is he that prates
Of the culture of mankind,
Of better arts and life?

15 Go, blindworm, go,

Behold the famous States
Harrying Mexico

With rifle and with knife!⁵

Or who, with accent bolder,
20 Dare praise the freedom-loving mountaineer?
 I found by thee, O rushing Contoocook!⁶
 And in thy valleys, Agiochook!⁷
 The jackals of the negro-holder.
 The God who made New Hampshire
25 Taunted the lofty land
 With little men;—
 Small bat and wren
 House in the oak:—
 If earth-fire cleave
30 The upheaved land, and bury the folk,
 The southern crocodile would grieve.
 Virtue palter;⁰ Right is hence; *hesitates, equivocates*
 Freedom praised, but hid;
 Funeral eloquence
35 Rattles the coffin-lid.

4. William H e n r y C h a n n i n g (1 8 1 0 - 1 8 8 4) , Amer-
 among those Americans who believed the United
 ican clergyman and abolitionist, who urged Emer-
 States was engaged in an immoral, imperialist
 son to involve himself more actively in the
 enterprise that would extend slaveholding territory.
 antislavery movement.

6. Part of the Merrimack River in N e w H a m p -
 5. A reference to the war between the United
 shire.

States and Mexico (1 8 4 6 - 4 8) , chiefly over the

7. The White Mountains of New Hampshire.

question of the boundaries of Texas. Emerson was

944 / R A L P H W A L D O E M E R S O N

What boots thy zeal, *profits*

O glowing friend,

That would indignant rend

The northland from the south?

40 Wherefore? to what good end?

Boston Bay and Bunker Hill⁸

Would serve things still;—

Things are of the snake.

The horseman serves the horse,

45 The neatherd⁰ serves the neat,^o *cowherd / cow*

The merchant serves the purse,

The eater serves his meat;

‘Tis the day of the chattel,

Web to weave, and corn to grind;

50 Things are in the saddle,

And ride mankind.

There are two laws discrete,

Not reconciled,—

Law for man, and law for things;

55 The last builds town and fleet,

But it runs wild,

And doth the man unking.

‘Tis fit the forest fall,

The steep be graded,

60 The mountain tunnelled,

The sand shaded,
The orchard planted,
The glebe tilled, *plot of land*
The prairie granted,
65 The steamer built.
Let man serve law for man;
Live for friendship, live for love,
For truth's and harmony's behoof; *benefit*
The state may follow how it can,
70 As Olympus follows Jove.⁹

Yet do not I implore
The wrinkled shopman to my surrounding woods,
Nor bid the unwilling senator
Ask votes of thrushes in the solitudes.

75 Every one to his chosen work;—
Foolish hands may mix and mar;

8. Hill in Charlestown, Massachusetts, site of the
that helped provoke the Revolutionary War.

first major battle of the American Revolutionary

9. Or Jupiter, chief of the Roman gods (Greek

War, on June 17, 1775. *Boston Bay*: site of the Bos-
Zeus), who lived on Mt. Olympus.

ton Tea Party, on December 16, 1773, an incident

B R A H M A / 9 4 5

Wise and sure the issues are.

Round they roll till dark is light,

Sex to sex, and even to odd;—

so The over-god

**Who marries Right to Might,
Who peoples, unpeoples,—
He who exterminates
Races by stronger races,
85 Black by white faces,—
Knows to bring honey
Out of the lion;1
Grafts gentlest scion
On pirate and Turk.
90 The Cossack eats Poland,2
Like stolen fruit;
Her last noble is ruined,
Her last poet mute:
Straight, into double band
95 The victors divide;
Half for freedom strike and stand;—
The astonished Muse finds thousands at her side.**

1847

Intellect³

**Rule which by obeying grows
Knowledge not its fountain knows
Wave removing whom it bears
From the shores which he compares
5 Adding wings thro^o things to range *through*
Makes him to his own blood strange**

1851 1903

Brahma⁴

If the red slayer think he slays,

**Or if the slain think he is slain,
They know not well the subtle ways
I keep, and pass, and turn again.**

1. Lines 83—87 allude to Samson, who killed a lion (96) in 1846.

and returned later to find the carcass filled with

3. An untitled notebook entry of Emerson's; the honey G u ^ g e s 1 4 . 5 - 1 0) .

title was added posthumously in 1903.

2. Russian military despotism, established in

4. The supreme god of H i n d u mythology; in later Poland after the popular insurrections of 1830—31, theological developments, the divine reality, once was challenged by a new Polish uprising (lines 94—thought to comprehend the entire universe.

9 4 6 / R A L P H W A L D O E M E R S O N

5 Far or forgot to me is near;
Shadow and sunlight are the same;
The vanished gods to me appear;
And one to me are shame and fame.
They reckon ill who leave me out;
10 When me they fly, I am the wings;
I am the doubter and the doubt,
And I the hymn the Brahmin sings.
The strong gods pine for my abode,
And pine in vain the sacred Seven,⁵
15 But thou, meek lover of the good!
Find me, and turn thy back on heaven.

1856 1 8 5 7 , 1 8 6 7

Days

Daughters of Time, the hypocritic Days,
Muffled and dumb like barefoot dervishes,⁰ *whirling dancers*
And marching single in an endless file,
Bring diadems and fagots⁶ in their hands.
5 To each they offer gifts after his will,
Bread, kingdom, stars, and sky that holds them all.
I, in my pleached⁷ garden, watched the pomp,
Forgot my morning wishes, hastily
Took a few herbs and apples, and the Day
io Turned and departed silent. I, too late,
Under her solemn fillet⁰ saw the scorn. *hair hand*

1857, 1867

Fate

Her planted eye to-day controls,
Is in the morrow most at home,
And sternly calls to being souls
That curse her when they come.

1867

5. Perhaps the seven saints high in the Brahman 6. Bundles of sticks. *Diadems*: crowns, hierarchy but lesser than Brahma. 7. Entwined or plaited.

9 4 7

ELIZABETH BARRETT BROWNING

1 8 0 6 - 1 8 6 1

From Sonnets from the Portuguese¹

I

I thought once how Theocritus had sung²

Of the sweet years, the dear and wished-for years,
Who each one in a gracious hand appears
To bear a gift for mortals, old or young:
5 And, as I mused it in his antique tongue,
I saw, in gradual vision through my tears,
The sweet, sad years, the melancholy years,
Those of my own life, who by turns had flung
A shadow across me. Straightway I was ware,
10 So weeping, how a mystic Shape did move
Behind me, and drew me backward by the hair;³
And a voice said in mastery, while I strove,—
“Guess now who holds thee?”—“Death,” I said. But, there,
The silver answer rang,—“Not Death, but Love.”

43

How do I love thee? Let me count the ways.
I love thee to the depth and breadth and height
My soul can reach, when feeling out of sight
For the ends of Being and ideal Grace.
5 I love thee to the level of everyday's
Most quiet need, by sun and candle-light.
I love thee freely, as men strive for Right;
I love thee purely, as they turn from Praise.
I love thee with the passion put to use
10 In my old griefs, and with my childhood's faith.
I love thee with a love I seemed to lose
With my lost saints—I love thee with the breath,
Smiles, tears, of all my life!—and, if God choose,
I shall but love thee better after death.

1845-46 1850

1. The “Sonnets from the Portuguese” were written by Elizabeth Barrett Browning, who has brought Adonis back from the underworld, who have brought Adonis back from the ten between 1845, when Elizabeth Barrett met Robert Browning (1812 - 1889 ; see pp. 1009 - 41), slowest of all the Blessed Ones; but their coming and 1846, when they were married. An earlier poem, “Catrina to Camoens,” in which Barrett had all men.”

assumed the persona of the girl who was loved by

3. In book 1 of the Iliad, just as Achilles is drawing the sixteenth-century Portuguese poet Camoens, his sword to raise it against his leader, Agamemnon, the goddess Athena, standing behind him and suggested the lightly disguising title when the sonnets were published in 1850.

hence invisible to the others, catches him by his

2. In Idyll 15 of Theocritus, the Greek pastoral hair to warn him.

poet of the third century B.C.E., a singer describes

948 / ELIZABETH BARRETT BROWNING

From Aurora Leigh

From Book 5

[POETS AND THE PRESENT AGE]

* * *

The critics say that epics have died out

140 With Agamemnon and the goat-nursed gods;⁴
I'll not believe it. I could never deem,
As Payne Knight⁵ did (the mythic mountaineer
Who travelled higher than he was born to live,
And showed sometimes the goitre⁶ in his throat
145 Discoursing of an image seen through fog),
That Homer's heroes measured twelve feet high.
They were but men:—his Helen's⁷ hair turned gray
Like any plain Miss Smith's who wears a front;⁸
And Hector's infant whimpered at a plume⁹
150 As yours last Friday at a turkey-cock.
All actual heroes are essential men,
And all men possible heroes: every age,
Heroic in proportions, double-faced,
Looks backward and before, expects a morn
155 And claims an epos.⁰ *epic poem-*
Ay, but every age
Appears to souls who live i n ' t (ask Carlyle)¹
Most unheroic. Ours, for instance, ours:
The thinkers scout it, and the poets abound
Who scorn to touch it with a finger-tip:
160 A pewter age,²—mixed metal, silver-washed;
An age of scum, spooned off the richer past,
An age of patches for old gabardines,³
An age of mere transition,⁴ meaning nought
Except that what succeeds must shame it quite
165 If God please. That's wrong thinking, to my mind,
And wrong thoughts make poor poems.

Every age,
Through being beheld too close, is ill-discerned
By those who have not lived past it. We'll suppose
4. References to Greek mythological figures: Zeus,
ened by the crest on his father's helmet that he
king of the gods, had been nursed by a goat; Aga-
clings to his nurse and cries.

memnon, a chieftain, returned from the Trojan

1. In *On Heroes, Hero-Worship, and the Heroic in War* and was murdered by his wife, Clytemnestra.

History (1841), the Scottish historian and essayist

5. Richard Payne Knight (1750-1824), a classical
Thomas Carlyle (1795-1881) called for a renewed
philologist, argued that not all of the Elgin Mar-
interest in heroism.

bles—sculptures and architectural details brought

2. I.e., a debased time; refers to the practice, ini-
to England from the Parthenon by Lord Elgin—
tiated by the Greek poet Hesiod (first century
were Greek.

B.C.E.), of assigning the names of increasingly less

6. An enlargement of the thyroid gland, sympto-
valuable metals to increasingly less elevated peri-
matic of a disease often caught in mountainous
ods in history, such as the Golden Age, the Silver
regions and due to a lack of iodine in the water
Age, and the Bronze Age.

supply.

3. Coats or other garments made of gabardine;

7. Helen of Troy, the legendary beauty whose
also, the smocks of English laborers.

abduction led to the Trojan War.

4. "An age of transition" is a quotation from *The*

8. A hairpiece worn by women over the forehead.

Spirit of the Age (1831), by the English philosopher

9. In book 6 of the *Iliad*, when the warrior Hector
and economist John Stuart Mill (1806-1873).

attempts to hold his infant son, the boy is so fright-

A U R O R A L E I G H / 9 4 9

Mount Athos carved, as Alexander schemed,

170 To some colossal statue of a man.⁵

The peasants, gathering brushwood in his ear,

Had guessed as little as the browsing goats

Of form or feature of humanity

Up there,—in fact, had traveled five miles off

175 Or ere the giant image broke on them,

Full human profile, nose and chin distinct,

Mouth, muttering rhythms of silence up the sky

And fed at evening with the blood of suns;

Grand torso,—hand, that flung perpetually

iso The largesse⁰ of a silver river down *bounty*

To all the country pastures. Tis even thus

With times we live in,—evermore too great

To be apprehended near.

But poets should

Exert a double vision; should have eyes

i85 To see near things as comprehensively
As if afar they took their point of sight,
And distant things as intimately deep
As if they touched them. Let us strive for this.
I do distrust the poet who discerns
190 No character or glory in his times,
And trundles back his soul five hundred years,
Past moat and drawbridge, into a castle-court,
To sing—oh, not of lizard or of toad
Alive i' the ditch there,—'twere excusable,
195 But of some black chief, half knight, half sheep-lifter,
Some beauteous dame, half chattel and half queen,
As dead as must be, for the greater part,
The poems made on their chivalric bones;
And that's no wonder: death inherits death.
200 Nay, if there's room for poets in this world
A little overgrown (I think there is),
Their sole work is to represent the age,
Their age, not Charlemagne's,⁶—this live, throbbing age,
That brawls, cheats, maddens, calculates, aspires,
205 And spends more passion, more heroic heat,
Betwixt the mirrors of its drawing-rooms,
Than Roland⁷ with his knights at Roncesvalles.
To flinch from modern varnish, coat or flounce,
Cry out for togas and the picturesque,
210 Is fatal,—foolish too. King Arthur's self
Was commonplace to Lady Guenever;
And Camelot to minstrels seemed as flat

As Fleet Street⁸ to our poets.

5. According to legend, Alexander the Great con-

6. Charles the Great, or Charles I (742-814), a
sidered a proposal by the sculptor Dionocrates to
Frankish king and the ruler of a European empire.

carve Mt. Athos into the statue of a conqueror. In

7. Hero of the medieval French epic *Chanson de*
his left hand this massive figure would have held a
Roland.

city, while in his right hand he would have held a

8. Street in London, center of the London news-
basin to catch the waters of the region and to irri-
paper- and book-publishing district.

gate the pastures below.

9 5 0 / E L I Z A B E T H B A R R E T T B R O W N I N G

Never flinch,

But still, unscrupulously epic, catch

215 Upon the burning lava of a song

The full-veined, heaving, double-breasted Age:

That, when the next shall come, the men of that

May touch the impress with reverent hand, and say

“Behold,—behold the paps^o we all have sucked! *breasts*

220 This bosom seems to beat still, or at least

It sets ours beating: this is living art,

Which thus presents and thus records true life.”

* * *

1853-56 1857

A Musical Instrument

What was he doing, the great god Pan,⁹
Down in the reeds by the river?
Spreading ruin and scattering ban,^o *baleful influence*
Splashing and paddling with hoofs of a goat,
5 And breaking the golden lilies afloat
With the dragonfly on the river.
He tore out a reed, the great god Pan,
From the deep cool bed of the river;
The limpid water turbidly ran,
io And the broken lilies a-dying lay,
And the dragonfly had fled away,
Ere he brought it out of the river.
High on the shore sat the great god Pan
While turbidly flowed the river;
15 And hacked and hewed as a great god can,
With his hard bleak steel at the patient reed,
Till there was not a sign of the leaf indeed
To prove it fresh from the river.
He cut it short, did the great god Pan
20 (How tall it stood in the river!),
Then drew the pith, like the heart of a man,
Steadily from the outside ring,
And notched the poor dry empty thing
In holes, as he sat by the river.

9. In Greek mythology, god of pastures, flocks,
was the nymph, or minor nature goddess, Syrinx,
and shepherds, in shape half goat and half h u m a n .
who tried to escape him and sought help from the

He played the reed flute, and later pastoral poets
river nymphs. They turned her into a reed bed, and
made him the patron of their art. O n e of his loves
from a reed Pan made his flute.

E V A N G E L I N E / 9 5 1

**25 “This is the way,” laughed the great god Pan
(Laughed while he sat by the river),**

**“The only way, since gods began
To make sweet music, they could succeed.”**

Then, dropping his mouth to a hole in the reed,

30 He blew in power by the river.

Sweet, sweet, sweet, O Pan!

Piercing sweet by the river!

Blinding sweet, O great god Pan!

The sun on the hill forgot to die,

35 And the lilies revived, and the dragonfly

Came back to dream on the river.

Yet half a beast is the great god Pan,

To laugh as he sits by the river,

Making a poet out of a man;

40 The true gods sigh for the cost and pain—

For the reed which grows nevermore again

As a reed with the reeds in the river.

1860 1862

H E N R Y W A D S W O R T H L O N G F E L L O W

1807-1882

*From Evangeline*1

This is the forest primeval. The murmuring pines and the hemlocks,

Bearded with moss, and in garments green, indistinct in the twilight,

Stand like Druids of eld,² with voices sad and prophetic,

Stand like harpers hoar,³ with beards that rest on their bosoms.

5 Loud from its rocky caverns, the deep-voiced neighbouring ocean

Speaks, and in accents disconsolate answers the wail of the forest.

This is the forest primeval; but where are the hearts that beneath it

Leaped like the roe, when he hears in the woodland the voice of the

hunter?

Where is the thatch-roofed village, the home of Acadian farmers,—

io Men whose lives glided on like rivers that water the woodlands,

1. Some introductory verses to a long poem, a tale of French inhabitants who refused to take an oath of allegiance were shipped off; about three thousand were deported in 1755, like those of the village of Grand Pre. The poem is credited with having pro-

visited), a region often called Acadia or Acadie,

2. Old. *Druids*: members of a prophetic priesthood which France ceded to Great Britain in 1713.

in ancient Gaul, Britain, and Ireland.

When the French and Indian War broke out, the

3. Ancient harpists.

952 / HENRY WADSWORTH LONGFELLOW

Darkened by shadows of earth, but reflecting an image of heaven?

Waste are those pleasant farms, and the farmers forever departed!

Scattered like dust and leaves, when the mighty blasts of October

Seize them, and whirl them aloft, and sprinkle them far o'er the

ocean.

15 Naught but tradition remains of the beautiful village of Grand-Pre.

1847

The Jewish Cemetery at Newport⁴

How strange it seems! These Hebrews in their graves,

Close by the street of this fair seaport town,

Silent beside the never-silent waves,

At rest in all this moving up and down!

5 The trees are white with dust, that o'er their sleep

Wave their broad curtains in the southwind's breath,

While underneath these leafy tents they keep

The long, mysterious Exodus⁵ of Death.

And these sepulchral stones, so old and brown,

io That pave with level flags their burial-place,

Seem like the tablets of the Law, thrown down
 And broken by Moses at the mountain's base.⁶
 The very names recorded here are strange,
 Of foreign accent, and of different climes;
 15 Alvares and Rivera⁷ interchange
 With Abraham and Jacob of old times.
 "Blessed be God! for he created Death!"
 The mourners said, "and Death is rest and peace;"
 Then added, in the certainty of faith,
 20 "And giveth Life that nevermore shall cease."
 Closed are the portals of their Synagogue,
 No Psalms of David now the silence break,
 No Rabbi reads the ancient Decalogue⁸ *Ten Commandments*
 In the grand dialect the Prophets spake.
 25 Gone are the living, but the dead remain,
 And not neglected; for a hand unseen,
 Scattering its bounty, like a summer rain,
 Still keeps their graves and their remembrance green.
 4. T h e oldest synagogue in the United States is in
 elites, broke the tablets of the law that God had
 Newport, Rhode Island.
 given t h e m (see Exodus 32.19).
 5. T h e flight of Moses and the Israelites from
 7. Many of the early Jewish families in New
 Egypt.
 England were from Spain and Portugal.
 6. Moses, angered by the disobedience of the Isra-

THE JEWISH CEMETERY AT NEWPORT / 9
53

How came they here? What burst of Christian hate,
30 What persecution, merciless and blind,
Drove o'er the sea—that desert desolate—
These Ishmaels and Hagers of mankind?⁸
They lived in narrow streets and lanes obscure,
Ghetto and Judenstrass,⁹ in mirk and mire;
35 Taught in the school of patience to endure
The life of anguish and the death of fire.
All their lives long, with the unleavened bread
And bitter herbs of exile and its fears,
The wasting famine of the heart they fed,
40 And slaked its thirst with marah¹ of their tears.
Anathema maranatha!² was the cry
That rang from town to town, from street to street;
At every gate the accursed Mordecai³
Was mocked and jeered, and spurned by Christian feet.
45 Pride and humiliation hand in hand
Walked with them through the world where'er they went;
Trampled and beaten were they as the sand,
And yet unshaken as the continent.
For in the background figures vague and vast
50 Of patriarchs and of prophets rose sublime,
And all the great traditions of the Past
They saw reflected in the coming time.
And thus forever with reverted look
The mystic volume of the world they read,

55 Spelling it backward, like a Hebrew book,⁴
Till life became a Legend of the Dead.

But ah! what once has been shall be no more!

The groaning earth in travail and in pain
Brings forth its races, but does not restore,
60 And the dead nations never rise again.

1852 1 8 5 4 , 1 8 5 8

8. Hagar, concubine of Abraham, wandered in the
the Exodus.

desert with Ishmael, her son by Abraham, after she

2. A Greek-Aramaic phrase signifying a terrible
was sent away by Abraham and Sarah (see Genesis
curse, applied to those who “love not the Lord
21.9—21). In many countries, Jews faced legal
Jesus Christ” (1 Corinthians 16.22), and later spe-
restrictions as well as prejudice.

cifically to the Jews.

9. Street of Jews (German). *Ghetto*: originally, the

3. W h e n Haman, the favored advisor of Ahasu-
section of a city in which Jews were forced to live.

erus (Xerxes), king of Persia, sought to destroy

1. The Hebrew word for “bitter” or “bitterness,”

Mordecai and the rest of the Jews, Mordecai stood

and the name of a bitter spring the fleeing Israel-

at the king’s gate crying out against the persecution

ites found (Exodus 15.23). Salt water (symbolizing

(see Esther 3 - 4) .

tears), unleavened bread, and bitter herbs are all

4. Hebrew is read from right to left.

part of the Passover meal, which commemorates

954 / HENRY WADSWORTH LONGFELLOW

*From The Song of Hiawatha*⁵

From III. Hiawatha's Childhood

By the shores of Gitche Gumee, 6

65 By the shining Big-Sea-Water,

Stood the wigwam of Nokomis, 7

Daughter of the Moon, Nokomis.

Dark behind it rose the forest,

Rose the black and gloomy pine-trees,

70 Rose the firs with cones upon them;

Bright before it beat the water,

Beat the clear and sunny water,

Beat the shining Big-Sea-Water.

There the wrinkled old Nokomis

75 Nursed the little Hiawatha,

Rocked him in his linden cradle,

Bedded soft in moss and rushes,

Safely bound with reindeerskins;

Stilled his fretful wail by saying,

so "Hush! the Naked Bear⁸ will hear thee!"

Lulled him into slumber, singing,

"Ewa-yea!⁹ my little owl! *lullaby*

Who is this, that lights the wigwam?

With his great eyes lights the wigwam?

85 Ewa-yea! my little owl!"

**Many things Nokomis taught him
 Of the stars that shine in heaven;
 Showed him Ishkoodah, O the comet, *fire*
 Ishkoodah, with fiery tresses;
 90 Showed the Death-Dance of the spirits,
 Warriors with their plumes and war-club
 s, Flaring far away to northward
 In the frosty nights of Winter;
 Showed the broad white road in heaven,
 95 Pathway of the ghosts, the shadows,
 Running straight across the heavens,
 Crowded with the ghosts, the shadows.
 At the door on summer evenings
 Sat the little Hiawatha;
 100 Heard the whispering of the pine-trees
 , Heard the lapping of the waters,
 Sounds of music, words of wonder;
 "Minne-wawa!" said the pine-trees,
 "Mudway-aushka!" said the water.**

5. He Makes Rivers (Ojibwa); a Native American
 Nanabozho. Phenomenally popular during Long-
 cultural hero (fl. ca. 1440 or ca. 1550), perhaps a
 fellow's lifetime, *Hiawatha* employs the trochaic
 chief of the Mohawk tribe or the Onondaga tribe;
 tetrameter of the Finnish epic *Kalevala*.

he might also be a composite of several people.

6. Big Sea Water (Ojibwa); Lake Superior.

Longfellow added to the confusion about Hia-

7. Hiawatha's grandmother, who raises him upon

watha's identity by giving the name to the title
the death of his mother, Wenonah.

character of this long poem, which actually

8. In Native American legend, equivalent to the
recounts the legend of the Algonquian mythic hero
bogyman (or boogeyman).

THE SONG OF HIA WATHA / 955

io5 Saw the fire-fly, Wah-wah-taysee,

Flitting through the dusk of evening,

With the twinkle of its candle

Lighting up the brakes and bushes,

And he sang the song of children,

110 Sang the song Nokomis taught him:

“Wah-wah-taysee, little fire-fly,

Little, flitting, white-fire insect,

Little, dancing, white-fire creature,

Light me with your little candle,

ii5 Ere upon my bed I lay me,

Ere in sleep I close my eyelids!”

Saw the moon rise from the water

Rippling, rounding from the water,

Saw the flecks and shadows on it,

120 Whispered, “What is that, Nokomis?”

And the good Nokomis answered:

“Once a warrior, very angry,

Seized his grandmother, and threw her

Up into the sky at midnight;

125 Right against the moon he threw her;

‘Tis her body that you see there.”
Saw the rainbow in the heaven,
In the eastern sky, the rainbow,
Whispered, “What is that, Nokomis?”
130 And the good Nokomis answered:
” ‘T is the heaven of flowers you see there
All the wild-flowers of the forest,
All the lilies of the prairie,
When on earth they fade and perish,
135 Blossom in that heaven above us.”
When he heard the owls at midnight,
Hooting, laughing in the forest,
“What is that?” he cried in terror,
“What is that,” he said, “Nokomis?”
140 And the good Nokomis answered:
“That is but the owl and owlet,
Talking in their native language,
Talking, scolding at each other.”
Then the little Hiawatha
145 Learned of every bird its language,
Learned their names and all their secrets
How they built their nests in Summer,
Where they hid themselves in Winter,
Talked with them whene’er he met them,
150 Called them “Hiawatha’s Chickens.”
Of all beasts he learned the language,
Learned their names and all their secrets,
How the beavers built their lodges,

Where the squirrels hid their acorns,
155 How the reindeer ran so swiftly,
Why the rabbit was so timid,

9 5 6 / H E N R Y W A D S W O R T H L O N G F E L L O
W

**Talked with them whene'er he met them,
Called them "Hiawatha's Brothers."**

\$

1855

Snow-Flakes

**Out of the bosom of the Air,
Out of the cloud-folds of her garments shaken,
Over the woodlands brown and bare,
Over the harvest-fields forsaken,
5 Silent, and soft, and slow
Descends the snow.**

**Even as our cloudy fancies take
Suddenly shape in some divine expression,
Even as the troubled heart doth make
io In the white countenance confession,
The troubled sky reveals
The grief it feels.**

**This is the poem of the air,
Slowly in silent syllables recorded;
15 This is the secret of despair,
Long in its cloudy bosom hoarded,
Now whispered and revealed
To wood and field.**

1863

The Cross of Snow⁹

**In the long, sleepless watches of the night,
A gentle face—the face of one long dead—
Looks at me from the wall, where round its head
The night-lamp casts a halo of pale light.
5 Here in this room she died; and soul more white
Never through martyrdom of fire was led
To its repose; nor can in books be read
The legend of a life more benedight.⁰ *blessed*
There is a mountain in the distant West
io That, sun-defying, in its deep ravines
Displays a cross of snow upon its side.
Such is the cross I wear upon my breast**

9. Longfellow's second wife, Fanny, died in 1861 when her dress caught fire; he too was burned trying to save her. The poem was found in his portfolio after his death.

TELLING THE BEES / 957

**These eighteen years, through all the changing
scenes And seasons, changeless since the
day she died.**

1879 1886

JOHN GREENLEAF WHITTIER

1807-1892

Telling the Bees¹

**Here is the place; right over the hill
Runs the path I took;
You can see the gap in the old wall still,
And the stepping-stones in the shallow
brook.**

5 There is the house, with the gate red-barred,
And the poplars tall;
And the barn's brown length, and the cattle-yard,
And the white hornstossing above the wall.
There are the beehives ranged in the sun;
io And down by the brink
Of the brook are her poor flowers, weed-o'er
run, Pansy and daffodil, rose and pink.

A year has gone, as the tortoise goes,
Heavy and slow;

15 And the same rose blows, and the same sun
glows, And the same brook sings of a year ago.

There's the same sweet clover-smell in the
breeze; And the June sun warm

Tangles his wings of fire in the trees,

20 Setting, as then, over Fernside farm.

I mind me how with a lover's care

From my Sunday coat

I brushed off the burrs, and smoothed my hair,

And cooked at the brookside my brow and
throat.

25 Since we parted, a month had passed, —

To love, a year;

Down through the beeches I looked at last

On the little red gate and the well-sweep near.

1. Whittier's note explains the former custom in mourning
to prevent them from leaving the rural New England of
informing the bees of the hives for a new home,

death of a family member and dressing their hives

958 / JOHN GREENLEAF WHITTIER

I can see it all now,—the slantwise rain
30 Of light through the leaves,
The sundown's blaze on her window-pane,
The bloom of her roses under the eaves.
Just the same as a month before,—
The house and the trees,
35 The barn's brown gable, the vine by the door,—
Nothing changed but the hives of bees.
Before them, under the garden wall,
Forward and back,
Went drearily singing the chore-girl small,
40 Draping each hive with a shred of black.
Trembling, I listened: the summer sun
Had the chill of snow;
For I knew she was telling the bees of one
Gone on the journey we all must go!
45 Then I said to myself, "My Mary weeps
For the dead to-day:
Haply her blind old grandsire sleeps
The fret and the pain of his age away."
But her dog whined low; on the doorway sill,
50 With his cane to his chin,
The old man sat; and the chore-girl still
Sang to the bees stealing out and in.
And the song she was singing ever since
In my ear sounds on:—
55 "Stay at home, pretty bees, fly not hence!
Mistress Mary is dead and gone!"

1858

From Snowbound: A Winter Idyl

155 Shut in from all the world without

We sat the clean-winged hearth about,

Content to let the north-wind roar

In baffled rage at pane and door,

While the red logs before us beat

160 The frost-line back with tropic heat;

And ever, when a louder blast

Shook beam and rafter as it passed,

The merrier up its roaring draught

The great throat of the chimney laughed,

165 The house-dog on his paws outspread

S N O W B O U N D : A W I N T E R I D Y L / 9 5 9

L a i d t o t h e f i r e h i s d r o w s y h e a d ,

T h e c a t ' s d a r k s i l h o u e t t e o n t h e w a l l

A c o u c h a n t 2 t i g e r ' s s e e m e d t o f a l l ;

A n d , f o r t h e w i n t e r f i r e s i d e m e e t ,

170 B e t w e e n t h e a n d i r o n s ' s t r a d d l i n g f e e t ,

T h e m u g o f c i d e r s s i m m e r e d s l o w ,

T h e a p p l e s s p u t t e r e d i n a r o w ,

A n d , c l o s e a t h a n d , t h e b a s k e t s t o o d

W i t h n u t s f r o m b r o w n O c t o b e r ' s w o o d .

175 W h a t m a t t e r h o w t h e n i g h t b e h a v e d ?

W h a t m a t t e r h o w t h e n o r t h - w i n d r a v e d ?

B l o w h i g h , b l o w l o w , n o t a l l i t s s n o w

**C o u l d q u e n c h o u r h e a r t h - f i r e ' s r u d d y g l o
w .**

O T i m e a n d C h a n g e ! — w i t h h a i r a s g r a y

iso As w a s my sire's that w i n t e r day,
H o w s t r a n g e i t s e e m s , w i t h s o m u c h g o n e
O f l i f e a n d l o v e , t o s t i l l l i v e o n !
A h , b r o t h e r ! o n l y I a n d t h o u
A r e l e f t o f a l l t h a t c i r c l e n o w , —
185 T h e d e a r h o m e f a c e s w h e r e u p o n
T h a t f i t f u l f i r e l i g h t p a l e d a n d s h o n e .
H e n c e f o r w a r d , l i s t e n a s w e w i l l ,
T h e v o i c e s o f t h a t t h e a r t h a r e s t i l l ;
L o o k w h e r e w e m a y , t h e w i d e e a r t h o ' e r ,
190 T h o s e l i g h t e d f a c e s s m i l e n o m o r e .
W e t r e a d t h e p a t h s t h e i r f e e t h a v e w o r n ,
W e s i t b e n e a t h t h e i r o r c h a r d t r e e s ,
W e h e a r , l i k e t h e m , t h e h u m o f b e e s
A n d r u s t l e o f t h e b l a d e d c o r n ;
195 W e t u r n t h e p a g e s t h a t t h e y r e a d ,
T h e i r w r i t t e n w o r d s w e l i n g e r o ' e r ,
B u t i n t h e s u n t h e y c a s t n o s h a d e ,
N o v o i c e i s h e a r d , n o s i g n i s m a d e ,
N o s t e p i s o n t h e c o n s c i o u s f l o o r !
200 Y e t L o v e w i l l d r e a m , a n d f a i t h w i l l t r u s t , (
S i n c e H e w h o k n o w s o u r n e e d i s j u s t ,)
T h a t s o m e h o w , s o m e w h e r e , m e e t w e m u s t .
A l a s f o r h i m w h o n e v e r s e e s
T h e s t a r s s h i n e t h r o u g h h i s c y p r e s s - t r e e s !
205 W h o , h o p e l e s s , l a y s h i s d e a d a w a y ,
N o r l o o k s t o s e e t h e b r e a k i n g d a y
A c r o s s t h e m o u r n f u l m a r b l e s o p l a y !
gravestones

**Who hath not learned, in hours of faith,
The truth to flesh and sense unknown,
210 That Life is ever lord of Death,
And Love can never lose its own!
We sped the time with stories old,
Wrought puzzles out, and riddle told,
Or stammered from our school-book lore**

2. Lying down (term from heraldry).

960 / JOHN GREENLEAF WHITTIER

215 "The Chief of Gambia's golden shore."³

How often since, when all the land
Was clay in Slavery's shaping hand,
As if a trumpet called, I've heard
Dame Mercy Warren's rousing word:
220 "*Does not the voice of reason cry,
Claim the first right which Nature gave,
From the red scourge of bondage fly,
Nor deign to live a burdened slave!*"

Our father rode again his ride
225 On Memphremagog's⁴ wooded side;
Sat down again to moose and samp⁰ *mush*
In trapper's hut and Indian camp;
Lived o'er the old idyllic ease
Beneath St. Francois'⁵ hemlock-trees;
230 Again for him the moonlight shone
On Norman cap and bodiced zone;⁶
Again he heard the violin play
Which led the village dance away,

And mingled in its merry whirl
235 The grandam and the laughing girl.
Or, nearer home, our steps he led
Where Salisbury's⁷ level marshes spread
Mile-wide as flies the laden bee;
Where merry mowers, hale and strong,
240 Swept, scythe on scythe, their swaths along
The low green prairies of the sea.
We shared the fishing off Boar's Head,
And round the rocky Isles of Shoals⁸
The hake-broil on the drift-wood coals;
245 The chowder on the sand-beach made,
Dipped by the hungry, steaming hot,
With spoons of clam-shell from the pot.
We heard the tales of witchcraft old,
And dream and sign and marvel told
250 To sleepy listeners as they lay
Stretched idly on the salted hay,
Adrift along the winding shores,
When favoring breezes deigned to blow
The square sail of the gundelow⁰ *flat-bottomed boat*
255 And idle lay the useless oars.

1866

3. From the poem "The African Chief," by the
magog.

American abolitionist Sarah W e n t w o r t h Morton

6. I.e., the clothes of women in French Canadian

(1 7 5 9 - 1 8 4 6) . Whittier mistakenly attributes the

settlements: caps like those worn in Normandy and
poem to the American historian Mercy Otis War-
bodices that draw in the waist, or “zone.”
ren (1 7 2 8 - 1 8 1 4) .

7. Town in northeastern Massachusetts.

4. Lake between Vermont and Q u e b e c .

8. Like Roar’s Head, off the New H a m p s h i r e

5. Rural municipality north of Lake M e m p h r e -
coast.

9 6 1

E D W A R D F I T Z G E R A L D

1809-1883

The Rubaiyat of Omar Khayyam of Naishapur1

i

**W a k e ! F o r t h e S u n , w h o s c a t t e r e d i n t o f l i g h t
T h e S t a r s b e f o r e h i m f r o m t h e F i e l d o f N i g h t ,
D r i v e s N i g h t a l o n g w i t h t h e m f r o m H e a v ‘ n , a
n d s t r i k e s T h e S u l t a n ’ s T u r r e t w i t h a S h a f t o f L i g h t .**

2

**5 B e f o r e t h e p h a n t o m o f F a l s e m o r n i n g 2
d i e d , M e t h o u g h t a V o i c e w i t h i n t h e T a v e r n
c r i e d ,**

**” W h e n a l l t h e T e m p l e i s p r e p a r e d w i t h i n ,
“ W h y n o d s t h e d r o w s y W o r s h i p p e r o u t s i d e ? ”**

3

**A n d , a s t h e C o c k c r e w , t h o s e w h o s t o o d b e f
o r e i o T h e T a v e r n s h o u t e d — ” O p e n t h e n t h e
D o o r !**

“ Y o u k n o w h o w l i t t l e w h i l e w e h a v e t o s t a y ,

“ A n d , o n c e d e p a r t e d , m a y r e t u r n n o m o r e . ”

4

**N o w t h e N e w Y e a r ³ r e v i v i n g o l d D e s i r e s ,
T h e t h o u g h t f u l S o u l t o S o l i t u d e r e t i r e s ,
15 W h e r e t h e W H I T E H A N D O F M O S E S o n t h e B o
u g h
P u t s o u t , a n d J e s u s f r o m t h e G r o u n d s u s p i r
e s . 4**

5

**I r a m ⁵ i n d e e d i s g o n e w i t h a l l h i s R o s e ,
A n d J a m s h y d ' s S e v ' n - r i n g e d C u p ⁶ w h e r e n o o n
e k n o w s ; B u t s t i l l a R u b y k i n d l e s i n t h e V i n e ,
20 A n d m a n y a G a r d e n b y t h e W a t e r b l o w s .**

6

**A n d D a v i d ' s l i p s a r e l o c k t ; b u t i n d i v i n e
H i g h - p i p i n g P e h l e v i , ⁷ w i t h " W i n e ! W i n e ! W
i n e !**

1. Omar Khayyam (ca. 1050-1132?), Persian
whiteness of Moses' hand as it is described in Exo-
poet, mathematician, and astronomer, lived at Ni-
dus 4.6, and the sweetness of flowers to the healing
shapur, in the province of Khurasan. FitzGerald
sweetness of Jesus' breath.

translated his epigrammatic quatrains (*Rubaiyat*,

5. "A royal Garden now sunk somewhere in the
plural of *ruba'i*, quatrain), which he first published
Sands of Arabia" [FitzGerald's note].

in 1859; in three subsequent editions (the fourth

6. In Persian mythology, Jamshyd was a king of
edition is printed here), FitzGerald made many

the peris (celestial beings), who, because he had alterations of detail, arrangement, and number of boasted of his immortality, was compelled to live stanzas.

on Earth in human form for seven hundred years,

2. “A transient Light on the Horizon about an becoming one of the kings of Persia. His cup, the hour before the ... True Dawn” [FitzGerald’s invention of Kai-Kosru (line 38), another Persian note].

king, great-grandson of Kai-Kobad (line 36), was

3. “Beginning with the Vernal Equinox [i.e., decorated with signs enabling its possessor to fore-spring], it must be remembered” [FitzGerald’s tell the future. note].

7. The ancient literary language of Persia.

4. The blossoming of trees is compared to the

9 6 2 / E D W A R D F I T Z G E R A L D

“Red Wine!”—the Nightingale cries to the Rose

That sallow cheek of hers to incarnadine.0 *redde*n

7

25 Come, fill the Cup, and in the fire of Spring

Your Winter-garment of Repentance fling:

The Bird of Time has but a little way

To flutter—and the Bird is on the Wing.

8

Whether at Naishapur or Babylon,

**30 Whether the Cup with sweet or bitter run,
The Wine of Life keeps oozing drop by drop,
The Leaves of Life keep falling one by one.**

9

**Each Morn a thousand Roses brings, you say;
Yes, but where leaves the Rose of Yesterday?**

**35 And this first Summer month that brings the Rose
Shall take Jamshyd and Kaikobad away.**

10

**Well, let it take them! What have we to do
With Kaikobad the Great, or Kaikhosru?
Let Zal and Rustum⁸ bluster as they will,
40 Or Hatim⁹ call to Supper—heed not you.**

11

**With me along the strip of Herbage strown
That just divides the desert from the sown,
Where name of Slave and Sultan is forgot—
And Peace to Mahmud¹ on his golden Throne!**

12

**45 A Book of Verses underneath the Bough,
A Jug of Wine, a Loaf of Bread—and Thou
Beside me singing in the Wilderness—
Oh, Wilderness were Paradise enow!**

***3**

**Some for the Glories of This World; and some
50 Sigh for the Prophet's² Paradise to come;
Ah, take the Cash, and let the Credit go,
Nor heed the rumble of a distant Drum!**

14

Look to the blowing Rose about us—“Lo,
“Laughing,” she says, “into the world I blow,

8. “The ‘Hercules’ of Persia, and Zal his Father”

1. Sultan M a h m u d (9 7 1 - 1 0 3 1) of Ghazni, in
[FitzGerald’s note].

Afghanistan, renowned both as ruler and as the

9. H a t i m Tai: a Persian chieftain and an archetype
conqueror of India.

of Eastern hospitality.

2. I.e., M o h a m m e d ‘ s .

T H E R U B A I Y A T O F O M A R K H A Y Y A M O F N
A I S H A P I J R / 9 6 3

55 “At once the silken tassel of my Purse

“Tear, and its Treasure on the Garden throw.”

15

And those who husbanded the Golden grain,

And those who flung it to the winds like Rain,

Alike to no such aureate⁰ Earth are turned *brilliant*

60 As, buried once, Men want dug up again.

16

The Worldly Hope men set their Hearts upon

Turns Ashes—or it prospers; and anon,

Like Snow upon the Desert’s dusty Face,

Lighting a little hour or two—is gone.

17

65 Think, in this battered Caravanserai⁰ *inn*

Whose Portals are alternate Night and Day,

**How Sultan after Sultan with his Pomp
Abode his destined Hour, and went his way.**

18

**They say the Lion and the Lizard keep
70 The Courts where Jamshyd gloried and drank deep:
And Bahram,³ that great Hunter—the Wild Ass
Stamps o'er his Head, but cannot break his Sleep.**

!9

**I sometimes think that never blows so red
The Rose as where some buried Caesar bled;
75 That every Hyacinth the Garden wears
Dropt in her Lap from some once lovely Head.**

20

**And this reviving Herb whose tender Green
Fledges the river-lip on which we lean—
Ah, lean upon it lightly! for who knows
so From what once lovely Lip it springs unseen!**

21

**Ah, my Beloved, fill the Cup that clears
TODAY of past Regrets and future Fears:
Tomorrow! —Why, Tomorrow I may be
Myself with Yesterday's Sev'n thousand Years.**

22

**85 For some we loved, the loveliest and the best
That from his Vintage rolling Time hath prest,
Have drunk their Cup a Round or two before,
And one by one crept silently to rest.**

3. A Sassanian king who, according to legend, met his death while hunting a wild ass.

9 6 4 / E D W A R D F I T Z G E R A L D

87

And we, that make merry in the Room

90 They left, and Summer dresses in new bloom,

Ourselves must we beneath the Couch of Earth

Descend—ourselves to make a Couch—for whom?

24

Ah, make the most of what we yet may spend,

Before we too into the Dust descend;

95 Dust into Dust, and under Dust to lie,

Sans Wine, sans Song, sans Singer, and sans End!

25

Alike for those who for **TODAY** prepare,

And those that after some **TOMORROW** stare,

A Muezzin⁴ from the Tower of Darkness cries,

100 “Fools! your Reward is neither Here nor There.”

26

Why, all the Saints and Sages who discussed

Of the Two Worlds so wisely—they are thrust

Like foolish Prophets forth; their Words to Scorn

Are scattered, and their Mouths are stopt with Dust.

27

105 Myself when young did eagerly frequent

Doctor and Saint, and heard great argument

About it and about: but evermore

Came out by the same door where in I went.

28

With them the seed of Wisdom did I sow,
110 And with mine own hand wrought to make it grow;
And this was all the Harvest that I reaped—
“I came like Water, and like Wind I go.”

29

Into this Universe, and *Why* not knowing
Nor *Whence*, like Water willy-nilly flowing;
115 And out of it, as Wind along the Waste,
I know not *Whither*, willy-nilly blowing.

3°

What, without asking, hither hurried *Whence*?
And, without asking, *Whither* hurried hence!
Oh, many a Cup of this forbidden Wine⁵
120 Must drown the memory of that insolence!

4. The crier who calls the hours of prayer from the 5. Alcohol
is forbidden to strict Muslims, tower of a mosque.

T H E R U B A I Y A T O F O M A R K H A Y Y A M O F N
A I S H A P I J R / 9 6 5

31

**Up from Earth’s Center through the Seventh Gate
I rose, and on the Throne of Saturn⁶ sate,
And many a Knot unraveled by the Road;
But not the Master-knot of Human Fate.**

32

**125 There was the Door to which I found no Key;
There was the Veil through which I might not see:
Some little talk awhile of M E and T H E E
There was—and then no more of T H E E and M E .**

33

Earth could not answer; nor the Seas that mourn
130 In flowing Purple, of their Lord forlorn;
Nor rolling Heaven, with all his Signs revealed
And hidden by the sleeve of Night and Morn.

34

Then of the T H E E I N M E who works behind
The Veil, I lifted up my hands to find
135 A lamp amid the Darkness; and I heard,
As from Without—"THE M E WITHIN T H E E BLIND!"

35

Then to the Lip of this poor earthen Urn
I leaned, the Secret of my Life to learn:
And Lip to Lip it murmured—"While you live,
140 "Drink! for, once dead, you never shall return."

36

I think the Vessel, that with fugitive
Articulation answered, once did live,
And drink; and Ah! the passive Lip I kissed,
How many Kisses might it take—and give!

37

145 For I remember stopping by the way
To watch a Potter thumping his wet Clay:
And with its all-obliterated Tongue
It murmured—"Gently, Brother, gently, pray!"

38

And has not such a Story from of Old
150 Down Man's successive generations rolled

Of such a clod of saturated Earth

Cast by the Maker into Human mold?

6. “Lord of the Seventh Heaven” [FitzGerald’s note]. In ancient astronomy, Saturn was the most remote of the seven known planets; hence Omar had reached the bounds of astronomical knowledge.

966 / EDWARD FITZGERALD

39

**And not a drop that from our Cups we throw
For Earth to drink of, but may steal below**

**155 To quench the fire of Anguish in some Eye
There hidden—far beneath, and long ago**

.

40

**As then the Tulip for her mornings up
Of Heav’nly Vintage from the soil looks up,
Do you devoutly do the like, till Heav’n**

160 To Earth invert you—like an empty Cup

.

41

**Perplex no more with Human or Divine,
Tomorrow’s tangle to the winds resign,
And lose your fingers in the tresses of
The Cypress-slender Minister of Wine. 7**

42

**165 And if the Wine you drink, the Lip you press,
End in what All begins and ends in—Yes;
Think then you are TODAY what YESTERDAY
You were—TOMORROW you shall not be less.**

43

So when that Angel of the darker Drink

170 At last shall find you by the river-brink,
And, offering his Cup, invite your Soul
Forth to your Lipstoquaff—-you shall not
shrink.

44

Why, if the Soul can fling the Dust aside, A
nd naked on the Air of Heaven ride,

175 Were 't not a Shame—were 't not a Sham
e for him In this clay carcass crippled to ab
ide?

45

Tis but a Tent where he takes his one day's rest
A Sultanto the realm of Death addrest;

The Sultan rises, and the dark Ferrash

180 Strikes, and prepares it for another Gu
est.

46

And fear not lest Existence closing your A
ccount, and mine, should know the like no m
ore; The Eternal Sakf^o from that Bowl has po
ured *cupbearer*

Millions of Bubbles like us, and will pour.

7. The maidservant who pours the wine.

8. The servant charged with setting up and striking the tent.

THE RUBAIYAT OF OMAR KHAYYAM OF N
AISHAPIJR/967

47

185 When You and I behind the Veil are past,

Oh, but the long, long while the World shall last,

Which of our Coming and Departure heeds

As the Sea's self should heed a pebble-cast.

48

A Moment's Halt—a momentary taste

190 Of B E I N G from the Well amid the Waste—

And Lo!—the phantom Caravan has reached

The NOTHING it set out from—Oh, make haste!

49

Would you that spangle of Existence spend

About THE SECRET—quick about it, Friend!

195 A Hair perhaps divides the False and True—

And upon what, prithee, may life depend?

5°

A Hair perhaps divides the False and True;

Yes; and a single Alif⁹ were the clue—

Could you but find it—to the Treasure-house,

200 And peradventure to T H E M A S T E R too;

51

Whose secret Presence, through Creation's veins

Running Quicksilver-like eludes your pains;

Taking all shapes from Mah to Mahi;¹ and

They change and perish all—but He remains;

52

205 A moment guessed—then back behind the Fold

Immerst of Darkness round the Drama rolled

Which, for the Pastime of Eternity,

He doth Himself contrive, enact, behold.

53

But if in vain, down on the stubborn floor

210 Of Earth, and up to Heav'n's unopening Door,

**You gaze TODAY, while You are You—how then
T O M O R R O W , Y O U when shall be You no more?**

54

Waste not your Hour, nor in the vain pursuit

Of This and That endeavor and dispute;

215 Better be jocund⁰ with the fruitful Grape *mirthful*

Than sadden after none, or bitter, Fruit.

9. First letter of the Arabic alphabet, consisting of 1. From lowest to highest, a single vertical stroke.

9 6 8 / E D W A R D F I T Z G E R A L D

87

You know, my Friends, with what a brave Carouse

I made a Second Marriage in my house;

Divorced old barren Reason from my Bed,

220 And took the Daughter of the Vine to Spouse.

56

For “Is” and “IS-NOT” though with Rule and Line

And “UP-AND-DOWN” by Logic I define,

Of all that one should care to fathom, I

Was never deep in anything but—Wine.

57

225 Ah, but my Computations, People say,

Reduced the Year to better reckoning?²—Nay,

Tw^{as} only striking from the Calendar

Unborn Tomorrow, and dead Yesterday.

58

And lately, by the Tavern Door agape,

230 Came shining through the Dusk an Angel Shape

**Bearing a Vessel on his Shoulder; and
He bid me taste of it; and 'twas—the Grape!**

59

**The Grape that can with Logic absolute
The Two-and-Seventy jarring Sects³ confute:**

**235 The sovereign Alchemist that in a trice
Life's leaden metal into Gold transmute:**

60

**The mighty Mahmud, Allah-breathing Lord,⁴
That all the misbelieving and black Horde
Of Fears and Sorrows that infest the Soul
240 Scatters before him with his whirlwind Sword.**

61

**Why, be this Juice the growth of God, who dare
Blaspheme the twisted tendril as a Snare?
A Blessing, we should use it, should we not?
And if a Curse—why, then, Who set it there?**

62

**245 I must abjure the Balm of Life, I must,
Scared by some After-reckoning ta'en on trust,
Or lured with Hope of some Diviner Drink,
To fill the Cup—when crumbled into Dust!**

2. Omar was one of the learned men who had
split" [FitzGerald's note],

been charged with reforming the calendar.

4. "This alludes to Mahmud's Conquest of India

3. "The 72 sects into which Islamism so soon
and its swarthy Idolators" [FitzGerald's note].

63

**Oh threats of Hell and Hopes of Paradise!
One thing at least is certain— *This* Life flies;
One thing is certain and the rest is Lies;
The Flower that once has blown for ever dies.**

64

**Strange, is it not? that of the myriads who
Before us passed the door of Darkness through,
Not one returns to tell us of the Road,
Which to discover we must travel too.**

65

**The Revelations of Devout and Learned
Who rose before us, and as Prophets burned,⁵
Are all but Stories, which, awoke from Sleep
They told their comrades, and to Sleep returned.**

66

**I sent my Soul through the Invisible,
Some letter of that Afterlife to spell:
And by and by my Soul returned to me,
And answered "I Myself am Heav'n and Hell:"**

67

**Heav'n but the Vision of fulfilled Desire,
And Hell the Shadow from a Soul on fire,
Cast on the Darkness into which Ourselves,
So late emerged from, shall so soon expire.
We are no other than a moving row**

**Of Magic Shadow-shapes that come and go
Round with the Sun-illuminated Lantern held
In Midnight by the Master of the Show;**

69

**But helpless Pieces of the Game He plays
Upon his Checkerboard of Nights and Days;
Hither and thither moves, and checks, and slays,
And one by one back in the Closet lays.**

70

**The Ball no question makes of Ayes and Noes,
But Here or There as strikes the Player⁰ goes; *polo player*
And He that tossed you down into the Field,
*He knows about it all—HE knows—HE knows!***

5. I.e., felt inspired to spread their prophecies.

970 / E D W A R D F I T Z G E R A L D

71

**The Moving Finger writes; and, having writ,
Moves on: nor all your Piety nor Wit
Shall lure it back to cancel half a Line,
Nor all your Tears wash out a Word of it.**

72

**285 And that inverted Bowl they call the Sky,
Whereunder crawling cooped we live and die,
Lift not your hands to *It* for help—for *It*
As impotently moves as you or I.**

73

**With Earth's first Clay They did the Last Man knead,
290 And there of the Last Harvest sowed the Seed:**

**And the first Morning of Creation wrote
What the Last Dawn of Reckoning shall read.**

74

**YESTERDAY *This* Day's Madness did prepare;
T O M O R R O W ' S Silence, Triumph, or Despair:
295 Drink! for you know not whence you came, nor why:
Drink! for you know not why you go, nor where.**

75

**I tell you this—When, started from the Goal,
Over the flaming shoulders of the Foal⁶
Of Heav'n, Parwfn and Mushtarf they flung,
300 In my predestined Plot of Dust and Soul.⁷**

76

**The Vine had struck a fiber: which about
If clings my Being—let the Dervish⁸ flout;
Of my Base metal may be filed a Key,
That shall unlock the Door he howls without.**

77

**305 And this I know: whether the one True Light
Kindle to Love, or Wrath consume me quite,
One Flash of It within the Tavern caught
Better than in the Temple lost outright.**

78

**What! out of senseless Nothing to provoke
310 A conscious Something to resent the yoke
Of unpermitted Pleasure, under pain
Of Everlasting Penalties, if broke!**

6. The constellation known as the Colt (*Equuleus*)

and Mushtarf. “The Pleiads and Jupiter” [FitzGer-
or Foal.

ald’s note].

7. Omar ascribes his fate to the position of the

8. Member of any of several Muslim orders taking
stars and planets at the time of his birth. *Parwin*
vows of austerity and poverty.

THERUBAIYATOFOMARKHAYYAMOFN
AISHAPIJR/971

79

**What! from his helpless Creature be repaid
Pure Gold for what he lent him dross—allayed—
Bi5 Sue for a Debt he never did contract,
And cannot answer—Oh the sorry trade!**

80

**Oh Thou, who didst with pitfall and with gin0 trap
Beset the Road I was to wander in,
Thou wilt not with Predestined Evil round
320 Enmesh, and then impute my Fall to Sin!**

81

**Oh Thou, who Man of baser Earth didst make,
And ev’n with Paradise devise the Snake:
For all the Sin wherewith the Face of Man
Is blackened—Man’s forgiveness give—and take!**

82

**325 As under cover of departing Day
Slunk hunger-stricken Ramazan9 away,
Once more within the Potter’s house alone**

I stood, surrounded by the Shapes of Clay.

83

**Shapes of all Sorts and Sizes, great and small,
330 That stood along the floor and by the wall;
And some loquacious Vessels were; and some
Listened perhaps, but never talked at all.**

84

**Said one among them—“Surely not in vain
“My substance of the common Earth was ta’en
335 “And to this Figure molded, to be broke,
“Or trampled back to shapeless Earth again.”
Then said a Second—“Ne’er a peevish Boy
“Would break the Bowl from which he drank in joy;
“And He that with his hand the Vessel made
340 “Will surely not in after Wrath destroy.”**

86

**After a momentary silence spake
Some Vessel of a more ungainly Make;
“They sneer at me for leaning all awry:
“What! did the Hand then of the Potter shake?”**

9. Muslims’ annual thirty-day fast, during which no food is eaten from dawn to sunset.

972 / EDWARD FITZGERALD

87

**345 Whereat some one of the loquacious Lot—
I think a Sufi⁰ pipkin⁰—waxing hot— *mystic/ small pot*
“All this of Pot and Potter—Tell me then,
“Who is the Potter, pray, and who the Pot?”**

88

“Why,” said another, “Some there are who tell
350 “Of one who threatens he will toss to Hell
“The luckless Pots he marred in making—Pish!
“He’s a Good Fellow, and ‘twill all be well.”

89

“Well,” murmured one, “Let whoso make or buy,
“My Clay with long Oblivion is gone dry:
355 “But fill me with the old familiar Juice,
“Methinks I might recover by and by.”

90

So while the Vessels one by one were speaking,
The little Moon¹ looked in that all were seeking:
And then they jogged each other, “Brother! Brother!
360 “Now for the Porter’s shoulder-knot² a-creaking!”

91

Ah, with the Grape my fading Life provide,
And wash the Body whence the Life has died,
And lay men shrouded in the living Leaf,
By some not unfrequented Garden-side.

92

365 That ev’n my buried Ashes such a snare
Of Vintage shall fling up into the Air
As not a True-believer passing by
But shall be overtaken unaware.

93

Indeed the Idols I have loved so long
370 Have done my credit in this World much wrong:

Have drowned my Glory in a shallow Cup,
And sold my Reputation for a Song.

94

Indeed, indeed, Repentance oft before

I swore—but was I sober when I swore?

375 And then and then came Spring, and Rose-in-hand

My threadbare Penitence apieces tore.

1. The new moon, which signaled the end of 2. The knot on
the porter's shoulder strap from Ramazan. which the wine jars
were hung.

THERUBAIYATOFOMARKHAYYAMOFN
AISHAPIJR/973

95

And much as Wine has played the Infidel,

And robbed me of my Robe of Honor—Well,

I wonder often what the Vintners buy

380 One half so precious as the stuff they sell.

96

Yet Ah, that Spring should vanish with the Rose!

That Youth's sweet-scented manuscript should close!

The Nightingale that in the branches sang,

Ah whence, and whither flown again, who knows!

97

385 Would but the Desert of the Fountain yield

One glimpse—if dimly, yet indeed, revealed,

To which the fainting Traveler might spring,

As springs the trampled herbage of the field!

98

Would but some winged Angel ere too late

390 Arrest the yet unfolded Roll of Fate,
And make the stern Recorder otherwise
Enregister, or quite obliterate!

99

Ah Love! could you and I with Him conspire
To grasp this sorry Scheme of Things entire,
395 Would not we shatter it to bits—and then
Remold it nearer to the Heart's Desire!

Yon rising Moon that looks for us again—
How oft hereafter will she wax and wane;
How oft hereafter rising look for us

400 Through this same Garden—and for *one* in vain!

101

And when like her, oh Saki, you shall pass
Among the Guests Star-scattered on the Grass,
And in your joyous errand reach the spot
Where I made One—turn down an empty Glass!

TAM A M 3

1857 1 8 5 9 , 1 8 7 9

3. It is ended (Persian).

9 7 4

O L I V E R W E N D E L L H O L M E S

1809-1894

The Chambered Nautilus¹

**T h i s i s t h e s h i p o f p e a r l , w h i c h , p o e t s f e i g n
, S a i l s t h e u n s h a d o w e d m a i n , 0 s e a**

T h e v e n t u r o u s b a r k t h a t f l i n g s

**O n t h e s w e e t s u m m e r w i n d i t s p u r p l e d w i n g
s 5 I n g u l f s e n c h a n t e d , w h e r e t h e S i r e n 2 s i n**

gs, And coral reefs lie bare,
Where the cold sea-maids rise to sun their streaming hair.

Its webs of living gauze no more unfurl;

Wrecked is the ship of pearl!

io And every chambered cell,

Where its dim dreaming life was wont to dwell,
accustomed

As the frail tenant shaped his growing shell,
Before the elies revealed,

Its irised o' ceiling rent, its sunless crypt unsealed!
iridescent

15 Year after year he beheld the silent toil

That spread his lustrous coil;

Still, as the spiral grew,

He left the past year's dwelling for the new,
Sole with soft step its shining archway through,
20 Built up its idle door,

Stretched in his last-found home, and knew
w the old no more.

Thanks for the heavenly message brought
by thee, Child of the wandering sea,

Cast from her lap, forlorn!

25 From the dead lips a clearer note is born

Than ever Triton blew from wreathed horn!

While on mine ear it rings,

Through the deep caves of thought I hear a
voicethatsings: Build the more stately
mansions, 4 O my soul, 30 As the swift seasons
roll!

Leave thy low-vaulted past!

**L e t e a c h n e w t e m p l e , n o b l e r t h a n t h e l a s t ,
S h u t t h e e f r o m h e a v e n w i t h a d o m e m o r e v a
s t , T i l l t h o u a t l e n g t h a r t f r e e ,
35 L e a v i n g t h i n e o u t g r o w n s h e l l b y l i f e ' s u n r
e s t i n g s e a !**

1858

1. A small mollusk with an external spiral shell,
on the reef of her island.

pearly on the inside (lines 1, 9), that grows as

3. Greek demigod of the ocean, who blew on a sea
chambers are added; the webbed membranes on
conch. Cf. William Wordsworth, "The World Is
its back were once thought to function as sails.

Too Much with Us," line 14 (p. 802).

2. In Greek mythology, a female creature whose

4. Cf. John 14.2: "In my Father's house are many
magically sweet song drew sailors to their deaths
mansions."

9 7 5

E D G A R A L L A N P O E

1809-1849

Sonnet—To Science

Science! true daughter of Old Time thou art!

Who alterest all things with thy peering eyes.

Why preyest thou thus upon the poet's heart,

Vulture, whose wings are dull realities?

5 How should he love thee? or how deem thee wise?

Who wouldst not leave him in his wandering

To seek for treasure in the jeweled skies,

Albeit he soared with an undaunted wing?
Hast thou not dragged Diana¹ from her car?
io And driven the Hamadryad² from the wood
To seek a shelter in some happier star?
Hast thou not torn the Naiad⁰ from her flood, *nymph*
The Elfin from the green grass, and from me
The summer dream beneath the tamarind tree?³

1829 1 8 2 9 , 1 8 4 5

To Helen⁴

Helen, thy beauty is to me
Like those Nicean barkss of yore,
That gently, o'er a perfumed sea,
The weary, way-worn wanderer bore
5 To his own native shore.
On desperate seas long wont⁰ to roam, *accustomed.*
Thy hyacinth hair,⁶ thy classic face,
Thy Naiad⁰ airs have brought me home *nymphlike*
To the glory that was Greece
io And the grandeur that was Rome.
Lo! in yon brilliant window-niche
How statue-like I see thee stand,
The agate lamp within thy hand!

1. Roman goddess of the hunt, revered for her

5. Boats, perhaps from some Mediterranean loca-
chastity; her "car" is the moon.

tion; variously interpreted by Poe scholars.

2. W o o d nymph in Greek and Roman mythology,

6. In his story "Ligeia" (1838), Poe calls "the

said to live and die with the tree she inhabits.

raven-black, the glossy, the luxuriant and naturally

3. An Asian tree, the fruit of which is used for curling tresses ... 'hyacinthine.' ” In Greek medicine and for food.

mythology, the blood of the slain youth Hyacin-

4. Helen of Troy, whose beauty was renowned and thus, w h o m the god Apollo loved, was changed into whose abduction led to the Trojan War.

a purple flower.

9 7 6 /

EDGAR ALLAN POE

Ah! Psyche,⁷ from the regions which

15 Are Holy Land!

1823 1 8 3 1 , 1 8 4 5

The City in the Sea

Lo! Death has reared himself a throne

In a strange city lying alone

Far down within the dim West,⁸

Where the good and the bad and the worst and the best

5 Have gone to their eternal rest.

There shrines and palaces and towers

(Time-eaten towers that tremble not!)

Resemble nothing that is ours.

Around, by lifting winds forgot,

io Resignedly beneath the sky

The melancholy waters lie.

No rays from the holy heaven come down

On the long night-time of that town;
But light from out the lurid sea
Streams up the turrets silently—
Gleams up the pinnacles far and free—
Up domes—up spires—up kingly halls—
Up f a n e s 0 — u p Babylon-like⁹ walls— *temples, churches*
Up shadowy long-forgotten bowers
Of sculptured ivy and stone flowers—
Up many and many a marvelous shrine
Whose wreathed friezes intertwine
The viol, the violet, and the vine.
Resignedly beneath the sky
The melancholy waters lie.
So blend the turrets and shadows there
That all seem pendulous in air,
While from a proud tower in the town
Death looks gigantically down.
There open fanes and gaping graves
Yawn level with the luminous waves;
But not the riches there that lie
In each idol's diamond eye—

7. In classical mythology, a beautiful princess, punitive task set by Venus was that Psyche bring whose n a m e means “soul” in Greek. Having lost her a portion of the beauty of Proserpina, queen her lover, Cupid, (Roman) god of erotic love, of the underworld.

because she disobeyed his order not to look at him

8. To “go west” is to die.

(he awakened w h e n a drop of hot oil from her lamp

9. Rabyron traditionally symbolizes the wicked city

fell on him), Psyche appealed for help to his

doomed (see, e.g., Isaiah 14.4—23 and Revelation

mother, Venus, goddess of love and beauty. O n e

1 6 . 1 8 - 1 9) .

T H E R A V E N / 9 7 7

Not the gaily-jeweled dead

35 Tempt the waters from their bed;

For no ripples curl, alas!

Along that wilderness of glass—

No swellings tell that winds may be

Upon some far-off happier sea—

40 No heavings hint that winds have been

On seas less hideously serene.

But lo, a stir is in the air!

The wave—there is a movement there!

As if the towers had thrust aside,

45 In slightly sinking, the dull tide—

As if their tops had feebly given

A void within the filmy Heaven.

The waves have now a redder glow—

The hours are breathing faint and low—

50 And when, amid no earthly moans,

Down, down that town shall settle hence,

Hell, rising from a thousand thrones,

Shall do it reverence.

1831, 1845

The Raven¹

Once upon a midnight dreary, while I pondered, weak and weary,

Over many a quaint and curious volume of forgotten lore—

While I nodded, nearly napping, suddenly there came a tapping,

As of some one gently rapping, rapping at my chamber door.

5 ” ‘Tis some visiter,” I muttered, “tapping at my chamber door—

Only this and nothing more.”

Ah, distinctly I remember it was in the bleak December;

And each separate dying ember wrought its ghost upon the floor.

Eagerly I wished the morrow;—vainly I had sought to borrow

io From my books surcease of sorrow—sorrow for the lost Lenore—

For the rare and radiant maiden whom the angels name Lenore
—

Nameless *here* for evermore.

And the silken, sad, uncertain rustling of each purple curtain

Thrilled me—filled me with fantastic terrors never felt before;

15 So that now, to still the beating of my heart, I stood repeating

” ‘Tis some visiter entreating entrance at my chamber door—

Some late visiter entreating entrance at my chamber door;—

This it is and nothing more.”

1. Many slightly different texts of this poem exist; reprinted here is the version published in *The Raven and Other Poems*.

9 7 8 / E D G A R A L L A N P O E

Presently my soul grew stronger; hesitating then no longer,

20 “Sir,” said I, “or Madam, truly your forgiveness I
implore; But the fact is I was napping, and so gently you
came rapping,

And so faintly you came tapping, tapping at my chamber
door,

That I scarce was sure I heard you”—here I opened wide
the door;—

Darkness there and nothing more.

25 Deep into that darkness peering, long I stood there
wondering, fearing, Doubting, dreaming dreams no mortal
ever dared to dream before;

But the silence was unbroken, and the stillness gave no
token,

And the only word there spoken was the whispered word,
“Lenore?”

This I whispered, and an echo murmured back the word,
“Lenore!”

30 Merely this and nothing more.

Back into the chamber turning, all my soul within me
burning,

Soon again I heard a tapping somewhat louder than
before.

“Surely,” said I, “surely that is something at my window
lattice; Let me see, then, what thereat is, and this mystery
explore—

35 Let my heart be still a moment and this mystery
explore;—

‘Tis the wind and nothing more!”

Open here I flung the shutter, when, with many a flirt and
flutter,

In there stepped a stately Raven of the saintly days of yore;

Not the least obeisance made he; not a minute stopped or
stayed he;

40 But, with mien of lord or lady, perched above my
chamber door—

Perched upon a bust of Pallas² just above my chamber
door—

Perched, and sat, and nothing more.

Then this ebony bird beguiling my sad fancy into smiling,
By the grave and stern decorum of the countenance it
wore,

45 “Though thy crest be shorn and shaven, thou,” I said,
“art sure no craven,

Ghastly grim and ancient Raven wandering from the
Nightly shore—

Tell me what thy lordly name is on the Night’s Plutonian³
shore!”

Quoth the Raven “Nevermore.”

Much I marvelled this ungainly fowl to hear discourse so
plainly,

50 Though its answer little meaning—little relevancy bore;
For we cannot help agreeing that no living human being
Ever yet was blessed with seeing bird above his chamber
door—

Bird or beast upon the sculptured bust above his chamber
door,

With such name as “Nevermore.”

55 But the Raven, sitting lonely on the placid bust, spoke
only

That one word, as if his soul in that one word he did
outpour.

Nothing farther then he uttered—not a feather then he
fluttered—

**Till I scarcely more than muttered “Other friends have
flown before—**

**On the morrow *he* will leave me, as my Hopes have flown
before.”**

60 Then the bird said “Nevermore.”

2. Athena, Greek goddess of wisdom and the arts.

3. Black; Pluto was the Greek god of the underworld.

T H E R A V E N / 9 7 9

**Startled at the stillness broken by reply so aptly spoken,
“Doubtless,” said I, “what it utters is its only stock and
store Caught from some unhappy master whom
unmerciful Disaster**

**Followed fast and followed faster till his songs one burden
bore—**

**Till the dirges of his Hope that melancholy burden bore
Of ‘Never—nevermore.’ ”**

**But the Raven still beguiling my sad fancy into smiling,
Straight I wheeled a cushioned seat in front of bird, and
bust and
door;**

**Then, upon the velvet sinking, I betook myself to linking
Fancy unto fancy, thinking what this ominous bird of yore
—**

**What this grim, ungainly, ghastly, gaunt, and ominous bird
of yore**

Meant in croaking “Nevermore.”

**This I sat engaged in guessing, but no syllable expressing
To the fowl whose fiery eyes now burned into my bosom’s
core;**

**This and more I sat divining, with my head at ease
reclining**

On the cushion's velvet lining that the lamp-light gloated
o'er,

But whose velvet-violet lining with the lamp-light gloating
o'er,

She shall press, ah, nevermore!

Then, methought, the air grew denser, perfumed from an
unseen

censer

Swung by seraphim⁴ whose foot-falls tinkled on the tufted
floor.

"Wretch," I cried, "thy God hath lent thee—by these
angels he hath sent thee

Respite—respite and nepenthe⁵ from thy memories of
Lenore;

Quaff, oh quaff this kind nepenthe and forget this lost
Lenore!"

Quoth the Raven "Nevermore."

"Prophet!" said I, "thing of evil!—prophet still, if bird or
devil!—

Whether Tempter sent, or whether tempest tossed thee
here ashore,

Desolate yet all undaunted, on this desert land enchanted
—

On this home by Horror haunted—tell me truly, I implore
—

Is there— *is* there balm in Gilead?⁶—tell me—tell me, I
implore!"

Quoth the Raven "Nevermore."

"Prophet!" said I, "thing of evil!—prophet still, if bird or
devil!

By that Heaven that bends above us—by that God we both
adore—

**Tell this soul with sorrow laden if, within the distant
Aidenn,⁷**

**It shall clasp a sainted maiden whom the angels name
Lenore—**

**Clasp a rare and radiant maiden whom the angels name
Lenore.”**

Quoth the Raven “Nevermore.”

Angels of the highest order.

ing in Gilead, a m o u n t a i n o u s area east of the
Oblivion-inducing drug.

Jordan River, were tapped for medicinal resins.

As in J e r e m i a h 8.22: “Is there no balm in Gil-

7. Invented place-name, suggestive of Eden.

; is there no physician there?” Evergreens grow-

9 8 0 / E D G A R A L L A N P O E

**“Be that word our sign of parting, bird or fiend!” I
shrieked,**

upstarting—

**“Get thee back into the tempest and the Night’s Plutonian
shore!**

**Leave no black plume as a token of that lie thy soul hath
spoken!**

**100 Leave my loneliness unbroken!—quit the bust above
my door!**

**Take thy beak from out my heart, and take thy form from
off my door!”**

Quoth the Raven “Nevermore.”

**And the Raven, never flitting, still is sitting, *still* is sitting
On the pallid bust of Pallas just above my chamber door;**

**105 And his eyes have all the seeming of a demon’s that is
dreaming,**

And the lamp-light o'er him streaming throws his shadow
on the floor;

And my soul from out that shadow that lies floating on the
floor

Shall be lifted—nevermore!

1845

Eldorado⁸

Gaily bedight,⁰ *equipped*

A gallant knight,

In sunshine and in shadow,

Had journeyed long,

5 Singing a song,

In search of Eldorado.

But he grew old—

This knight so bold—

And o'er his heart a shadow

10 Fell as he found

No spot of ground

That looked like Eldorado.

And, as his strength

Failed him at length,

15 He met a pilgrim shadow—

“Shadow,” said he,

“Where can it be—

This land of Eldorado?”

“Over the Mountains

20 Of the Moon,

Down the Valley of the Shadow,

Ride, boldly ride,”

The shade replied,—

“If you seek for Eldorado!”

1849

8. *The gilded one* (Spanish). *The name* of a mythical South American land of gold and vast wealth, sought by European explorers beginning in the sixteenth century; more generally, any such place.

ANNABELLEE / 981

Annabel Lee

It was many and many a year ago,

In a kingdom by the sea,

That a maiden there lived whom you may know

By the name of Annabel Lee;

5 And this maiden she lived with no other thought

Than to love and be loved by me.

She was a child and I was a child,

In this kingdom by the sea,

But we loved with a love that was more than love—

10 I and my Annabel Lee—

With a love that the winged seraphs⁹ of Heaven

Coveted her and me.

And this was the reason that, long ago,

In this kingdom by the sea,

15 A wind blew out of a cloud by night

Chilling my Annabel Lee;

So that her highborn kinsmen came

And bore her away from me,

To shut her up in a sepulchre

20 In this kingdom by the sea.

The angels, not half so happy in Heaven,
Went envying her and me:
Yes! that was the reason (as all men know,
In this kingdom by the sea)
25 That the wind came out of the cloud, chilling
And killing my Annabel Lee.
But our love it was stronger by far than the love
Of those who were older than we—
Of many far wiser than we—
30 And neither the angels in Heaven above
Nor the demons down under the sea,
Can ever dissever my soul from the soul
Of the beautiful Annabel Lee:
For the moon never beams without bringing me dreams
35 Of the beautiful Annabel Lee;
And the stars never rise but I see the bright eyes
Of the beautiful Annabel Lee;
And so, all the night-tide, I lie down by the side
Of my darling, my darling, my life and my bride,
40 In her sepulchre there by the sea—
In her tomb by the side of the sea.

1849, 1850

9. Angels of the highest order.

9 8 2

ALFRED, LORD TENNYSON

1809-1892

Mariana

”Mariana in the moated grange.”

—*Measure for Measure*

With blackest moss the flower-plots
Were thickly crusted, one and all;
The rusted nails fell from the knots
That held the pear to the gable-wall.
5 The broken sheds looked sad and strange:
Unlifted was the clinking latch;
Weeded and worn the ancient thatch
Upon the lonely moated grange.
She only said, "My life is dreary,
io He cometh not," she said;
She said, "I am aweary, aweary,
I would that I were dead!"
Her tears fell with the dews at even;
Her tears fell ere the dews were dried;
15 She could not look on the sweet heaven,
Either at morn or eventide.
After the flitting of the bats,
When thickest dark did trance the sky,
She drew her casement-curtain by,
20 And glanced athwart the glooming flats.
She only said, "The night is dreary,
He cometh not," she said;
She said, "I am aweary, aweary,
I would that I were dead!"
25 Upon the middle of the night,
Waking she heard the night-fowl crow;
The cock sung out an hour ere light;

From the dark fen the oxen's low
Came to her: without hope of change,
30 In sleep she seemed to walk forlorn,
Till cold winds woke the gray-eyed morn
About the lonely moated grange.

She only said, "The day is dreary,
He cometh not," she said;

35 She said, "I am aweary, aweary,
I would that I were dead!"

About a stone-cast from the wall

A sluice with blackened waters slept,

1. Cf. Shakespeare, *Measure for Measure* 3.1.254, where the duke notes that Mariana waits in a grange, or country house, for the lover who has rejected her.

M A R I A N A / 9 8 3

And o'er it many, round and small,

40 The clustered marish^o-mosses crept. *marsh-*

Hard by a poplar shook alway,

All silver-green with gnarled bark:

For leagues no other tree did mark

The level waste, the rounding gray.

45 She only said, "My life is dreary,
He cometh not," she said;

She said, "I am aweary, aweary,
I would that I were dead!"

And ever when the moon was low,

And the shrill winds were up and away,

In the white curtain, to and fro,

She saw the gusty shadow sway.

But when the moon was very low,
And wild winds bound within their cell,²
The shadow of the poplar fell
Upon her bed, across her brow.
She only said, "The night is dreary,
He cometh not," she said;
She said, "I am aweary, aweary,
I would that I were dead!"
All day within the dreamy house,
The doors upon their hinges creaked;
The blue fly sung in the pane; the mouse
Behind the moldering wainscot shrieked,
65 Or from the crevice peered about.
Old faces glimmered through the doors,
Old footsteps trod the upper floors,
Old voices called her from without.
She only said, "My life is dreary,
70 He cometh not," she said;
She said, "I am aweary, aweary,
I would that I were dead!"
The sparrow's chirrup on the roof,
The slow clock ticking, and the sound
75 Which to the wooing wind aloof
The poplar made, did all confound
Her sense; but most she loathed the hour
When the thick-moted sunbeam lay
Athwart the chambers, and the day
so Was sloping toward his western bower.

Then, said she, "I am very dreary,
He will not come," she said;
She wept, "I am weary, weary,
Oh God, that I were dead!"

1830

2. Virgil relates that Aeolus, god of winds, kept them in a cave
(*Aeneid* 1.50—59).

9 8 4 / A L F R E D , L O R D T E N N Y S O N

The Kraken³

Below the thunders of the upper deep;
Far, far beneath in the abysmal sea,
His ancient, dreamless, uninvaded sleep
The Kraken sleepeth: faintest sunlights flee
5 About his shadowy sides: above him swell
Huge sponges of millennial growth and height;
And far away into the sickly light,
From many a wondrous grot and secret cell
Unnumbered and enormous polypi⁴
10 Winnow with giant fins the slumbering green.
There hath he lain for ages and will lie
Battening upon huge seaworms in his sleep,
Until the latter fire shall heat the deep;^s
Then once by men and angels to be seen,
15 In roaring he shall rise and on the surface die.

1830

The Lady of Shalott

Part I

On either side the river lie
Long fields of barley and of rye,
That clothe the wold⁰ and meet the sky; *rolling plain*
And through the field the road runs by
5 To many towered Camelot;⁶
And up and down the people go,
Gazing where the lilies blow⁰ *bloom*
Round an island there below,
The island of Shalott.
10 Willows whiten, aspens quiver,
Little breezes dusk and shiver
Through the wave that runs for ever
By the island in the river
Flowing down to Camelot.
15 Four gray walls, and four gray towers,
Overlook a space of flowers,
And the silent isle imbowers
The Lady of Shalott.

3. A mythical sea monster, called in an eighth-century *Natural History of Norway* “the largest and most surprising of all the animal creation” sounded, and as it were a great mountain burning (O.E.D.).

with fire was cast into the sea: and the third part

4. Octopuslike creatures.

of the sea became blood; and there died the third

5. At the end of the world, “the elements shall
part of the creatures which were in the sea.”

melt with fervent heat, the earth also and the works

6. The legendary King Arthur’s castle.

THE LADY OF SHALOTT / 985

By the margin, willow-veiled,

Slide the heavy barges trailed

By slow horses; and unhailed

The shallop⁰ flitteth silken-sailed *light open boat*

Skimming down to Camelot:

But who hath seen her wave her hand?

Or at the casement seen her stand?

Or is she known in all the land,

The Lady of Shalott?

Only reapers, reaping early

In among the bearded barley,

Hear a song that echoes cheerly

From the river winding clearly,

Down to towered Camelot:

And by the moon the reaper weary,

Piling sheaves in uplands airy,

Listening, whispers ” ‘Tis the fairy

Lady of Shalott.”

Part II

There she weaves by night and day
A magic web with colors gay.
She has heard a whisper say,
A curse is on her if she stay
To look down to Camelot.
She knows not what the curse may be,
And so she weaveth steadily,
And little other care hath she,
The Lady of Shalott.
And moving through a mirror clear⁷
That hangs before her all the year,
Shadows of the world appear.
There she sees the highway near
Winding down to Camelot:
There the river eddy whirls,
And there the surly village-churls,
And the red cloaks of market girls,
Pass onward from Shalott.
Sometimes a troop of damsels glad,
An abbot on an ambling pad,^o *easy-paced horse*
Sometimes a curly shepherd-lad,
Or long-haired page in crimson clad,
Goes by to towered Camelot;
And sometimes through the mirror blue
The knights come riding two and two:

7. Weavers placed mirrors facing their looms to see the progress of their work.

9 8 6 / A L F R E D , L O R D T E N N Y S O N

She hath no loyal knight and true,

The Lady of Shalott.

But in her web she still delights

65 To weave the mirror's magic sights,

For often through the silent nights

A funeral, with plumes and lights

And music, went to Camelot:

Or when the moon was overhead.

70 Came two young lovers lately wed;

"I am half sick of shadows," said

The Lady of Shalott.

Part III

A bow-shot from her bower-eaves,
He rode between the barley-sheaves,
75 The sun came dazzling through the leaves,
And flamed upon the brazen greaves⁸
Of bold Sir Lancelot.

A red-cross knight for ever kneeled⁹
To a lady in his shield,
so That sparkled on the yellow field,
Beside remote Shalott.

The gemmy bridle glittered free,
Like to some branch of stars we see
Hung in the golden Galaxy.

85 The bridle bells rang merrily
As he rode down to Camelot:
And from his blazoned baldric⁰ slung *shoulder belt*
A mighty silver bugle hung,
And as he rode his armor rung,
90 Beside remote Shalott.

All in the blue unclouded weather
Thick-jewelled shone the saddle-leather,
The helmet and the helmet-feather
Burned like one burning flame together,
95 As he rode down to Camelot.
As often through the purple night,
Below the starry clusters bright,

Some bearded meteor, trailing light,
Moves over still Shalott.
100 His broad clear brow in sunlight glowed;
On burnished hooves his war-horse trode;
From underneath his helmet flowed
His coal-black curls as on he rode,
As he rode down to Camelot.

8. Armor for the shins.

9. Cf. Edmund Spenser, *The Faerie Queene* 1 and 3.2.17—25.

THE LADY OF SHALOTT / 987

105 From the bank and from the river

He flashed into the crystal mirror,

“Tirra lirra,” by the river

Sang Sir Lancelot.

She left the web, she left the loom,

no She made three paces through the room,

She saw the water-lily bloom,

She saw the helmet and the plume,

She looked down to Camelot.

Out flew the web and floated wide;

115 The mirror cracked from side to side;

“The curse is come upon me,” cried

The Lady of Shalott.

Part IV

In the stormy east-wind straining,
The pale yellow woods were waning,
120 The broad stream in his banks complaining.

Heavily the low sky raining

Over towered Camelot;

Down she came and found a boat

Beneath a willow left afloat,

125 And round about the prow she wrote

The Lady of Shalott.

And down the river's dim expanse

Like some bold seer in a trance,

Seeing all his own mischance—

130 With a glassy countenance

Did she look to Camelot.

And at the closing of the day

She loosed the chain, and down she lay;

The broad stream bore her far away,

135 The Lady of Shalott.

Lying, robed in snowy white

That loosely flew to left and right—

The leaves upon her falling light—

Through the noises of the night

140 She floated down to Camelot:

And as the boat-head wound along

The willowy hills and fields among,

**They heard her singing her last song,
The Lady of Shalott.**

**145 Heard a carol, mournful, holy,
Chanted loudly, chanted lowly,
Till her blood was frozen slowly,
And her eyes were darkened wholly,
Turned to towered Camelot.**

988 / ALFRED, LORD TENNYSON

**150 For ere she reached upon the tide
The first house by the water-side,
Singing in her song she died,
The Lady of Shalott.**

**Under tower and balcony,
155 By garden-wall and gallery,
A gleaming shape she floated by,
Dead-pale between the houses high,
Silent into Camelot.**

**Out upon the wharfs they came,
160 Knight and burgher, lord and dame,
And round the prow they read her name,
*The Lady of Shalott.***

**Who is this? and what is here?
And in the lighted palace near
165 Died the sound of royal cheer;
And they crossed themselves for fear,
All the knights at Camelot:
But Lancelot mused a little space;
He said, "She has a lovely face;**

170 God in his mercy lend her grace,
The Lady of Shalott."

1831-32 1832, 1842

The Lotos-Eaters¹

"Courage!" he said, and pointed toward the
land,

"This mounting wave will roll us shoreward so
on."

In the afternoon they came unto a land

In which it seemed a day as if it were a year.

5 All round the coast the languid air did swoon,
Breathing like one that hath a weary dream.

Full-faced above the valley stood the moon;
And, like a downward smoke, the slender
stream along the cliff to fall and pause and
fall did seem.

10 A land of streams! some, like a downward
smoke, slow-dropping veils of thinnest
lawn,² did go; and some through waver-
ing lights and shadows broke, rolling a
slumberous sheet of foam below.

They saw the gleaming river seaward flow

15 From the innerland: far off three mount-
ain-tops, three silent pinnacles of aged
snow,

Stood sunset-flushed; and, dewed with
shower-drops, up-clomb the shadowy
pine above the wovencopse. 0 forest

1. In Greek mythology, a people who ate the fruit scribes the visit of Odysseus ("he," line 1) and his of the lotos, the effect of which was to induce men to their island in the *Odyssey* 9. 82-97.

drowsy languor and forgetfulness. Homer de- 2. Sheer cotton fabric.

T H E L O T O S - E A T E R S / 9 8 9

**The charmed sunset lingered low adown
20 In the red West; through mountain clefts the dale
Was seen far inland, and the yellow down
Bordered with palm, and many a winding vale
And meadow, set with slender galingale;³
A land where all things always seemed the same!
25 And round about the keel with faces pale,
Dark faces pale against that rosy flame,
The mild-eyed melancholy Lotos-eaters came.
Branches they bore of that enchanted stem,
Laden with flower and fruit, whereof they gave
30 To each, but whoso did receive of them
And taste, to him the gushing of the wave
Far far away did seem to mourn and rave
On alien shores; and if his fellow spake,
His voice was thin, as voices from the grave;
35 And deep-asleep he seemed, yet all awake,
And music in his ears his beating heart did make.
They sat them down upon the yellow sand,
Between the sun and moon upon the shore;
And sweet it was to dream of Fatherland,
40 Of child, and wife, and slave; but evermore
Most weary seemed the sea, weary the oar,
Weary the wandering fields of barren foam.
Then some one said, “We will return no more;”**

**And all at once they sang, "Our island home
45 Is far beyond the wave; we will no longer roam."**

Choric Song

1

**There is sweet music here that softer falls
Than petals from blown roses on the grass,
Or night-dews on still waters between walls
Of shadowy granite, in a gleaming pass;
50 Music that gentler on the spirit lies,
Than tired eyelids upon tired eyes;
Music that brings sweet sleep down from the blissful skies.
Here are cool mosses deep,
And through the moss the ivies creep,
55 And in the stream the long-leaved flowers weep,
And from the craggy ledge the poppy hangs in sleep.**

2

**Why are we weighed upon with heaviness,
And utterly consumed with sharp distress,
While all things else have rest from weariness?
60 All things have rest: why should we toil alone,
We only toil, who are the first of things,**

3. A reedlike plant, a species of marsh grass.

990 / ALFRED, LORD TENNYSON

**And make perpetual moan,
Still from one sorrow to another thrown;
Nor ever fold our wings,
65 And cease from wanderings,
Nor steep our brows in slumber's holy balm;**

Nor harken what the inner spirit sings,

“There is no joy but calm!”

Why should we only toil, the roof and crown of things?

3

70 Lo! in the middle of the wood,

The folded leaf is wooed from out the bud

With winds upon the branch, and there

Grows green and broad, and takes no care,

Sun-steeped at noon, and in the moon

75 Nightly dew-fed; and turning yellow

Falls, and floats adown the air.

Lo! sweetened with the summer light,

The full-juiced apple, waxing over-mellow,

Drops in a silent autumn night.

80 All its allotted length of days,

The flower ripens in its place,

Ripens and fades, and falls, and hath no toil,

Fast-rooted in the fruitful soil.

4

Hateful is the dark-blue sky,

85 Vaulted o'er the dark-blue sea.

Death is the end of life; ah, why

Should life all labor be?

Let us alone. Time driveth onward fast

And in a little while our lips are dumb.

90 Let us alone. What is it that will last?

All things are taken from us, and become

Portions and parcels of the dreadful Past.

Let us alone. What pleasure can we have
To war with evil? Is there any peace
95 In ever climbing up the climbing wave?
All things have rest, and ripen toward the grave
In silence; ripen, fall, and cease:
Give us long rest or death, dark death, or dreamful ease.

5

How sweet it were, hearing the downward stream,
100 With half-shut eyes ever to seem
Falling asleep in a half-dream!
To dream and dream, like yonder amber light,
Which will not leave the myrrh-bush on the height;
To hear each other's whispered speech;
105 Eating the Lotos day by day,
To watch the crisping ripples on the beach, *curling*
THE LOTOS - EATERS / 991
And tender curving lines of creamy spray;
To lend our hearts and spirits wholly
To the influence of mild-minded melancholy;
110 To muse and brood and live again in memory,
With those old faces of our infancy
Heaped over with a mound of grass,
Two handfuls of white dust, shut in an urn of brass!

6

Dear is the memory of our wedded lives,
115 And dear the last embraces of our wives
And their warm tears: but all hath suffered change:
For surely now our household hearths are cold:

Our sons inherit us: our looks are strange:
And we should come like ghosts to trouble joy.

120 Or else the island princes⁴ over-bold
Have eat our substance, and the minstrel sings
Before them of the ten years' war in Troy,
And our great deeds, as half-forgotten things.

Is there confusion in the little isle?

125 Let what is broken so remain.

The Gods are hard to reconcile:

'Tis hard to settle order once again.

There is confusion worse than death,

Trouble on trouble, pain on pain,

130 Long labor unto aged breath,

Sore tasks to hearts worn out by many wars

And eyes grown dim with gazing on the pilot-stars.

7

But, propt on beds of amaranth and moly,⁵

How sweet (while warm airs lull us, blowing lowly)

135 With half-dropt eyelid still,

Beneath a heaven dark and holy,

To watch the long bright river drawing slowly

His waters from the purple hill—

To hear the dewy echoes calling

140 From cave to cave through the thick-twined vine—

To watch the emerald-colored water falling

Through many a woven acanthus-wreath divine!

Only to hear and see the far-off sparkling brine,

Only to hear were sweet, stretched out beneath the pine.

145 The Lotos blooms below the barren peak,
 The Lotos blows by every winding creek;
 All day the wind breathes low with mellower tone;
 Through every hollow cave and alley lone
 Round and round the spicy downs the yellow Lotos-dust is
 blown.

4. The princes who had remained behind in Ith- 5. An herb with magical properties. *Amaranth*: a aca ("the little isle," line 124) while Odysseus was legendary flower, reputed not to fade, at Troy.

992 / ALFRED, LORD TENNYSON

150 We have had enough of action, and of motion we,
 Rolled to starboard, rolled to larboard, when the surge was
 seething

free,

Where the wallowing monster spouted his foam-fountains in
 the sea.

Let us swear an oath, and keep it with an equal mind,

In the hollow Lotos-land to live and lie reclined

155 On the hills like Gods together, careless of mankind.

For they lie beside their nectar, and the bolts are hurled

Far below them in the valleys, and the clouds are lightly curled

Round their golden houses, girdled with the gleaming world:

Where they smile in secret, looking over wasted lands,

160 Blight and famine, plague and earthquake, roaring deeps
 and fiery

sands,

Clanging fights, and flaming towns, and sinking ships, and
 praying

hands.

But they smile, they find a music centered in a doleful song
Steaming up, a lamentation and an ancient tale of wrong,
Like a tale of little meaning though the words are strong;
165 Chanted from an ill-used race of men that cleave the soil,
Sow the seed, and reap the harvest with enduring toil,
Storing yearly little dues of wheat, and wine and oil;
Till they perish and they suffer—some, 'tis whispered—down
in hell

Suffer endless anguish, others in Elysian valleys dwell,
170 Resting weary limbs at last on beds of asphodel.⁶
Surely, surely, slumber is more sweet than toil, the shore
Than labor in the deep mid-ocean, wind and wave and oar;
O, rest ye, brother mariners, we will not wander more.

1832, 1842

Ulysses⁷

It little profits that an idle king,
By this still hearth, among these barren crags,
Matched with an aged wife, I mete and dole
Unequal laws unto a savage race,
5 That hoard, and sleep, and feed, and know not me.
I cannot rest from travel: I will drink
Life to the lees: all times I have enjoyed
Greatly, have suffered greatly, both with those
That loved me, and alone; on shore, and when
io Through scudding drifts the rainy Hyades⁸
Vext the dim sea: I am become a name;
For always roaming with a hungry heart

6. A plant of the lily family supposed to grow in
resembles the figure of Ulysses presented by Dante
the Elysian valleys.

(Inferno 26).

7. Tennyson's Ulysses (Odysseus), restless after

8. A group of stars in the constellation Taurus,
his return to Ithaca, eager to renew the *life* of great
believed to foretell the coming of rain when they
deeds he had known during the Trojan War and
rose with the sun.

the adventures of his ten-year journey home,

U L Y S S E S / 9 9 3

Much have I seen and known; cities of men

And manners, climates, councils, governments,

15 Myself not least, but honored of them all;

And drunk delight of battle with my peers,

Far on the ringing plains of windy Troy.

I am a part of all that I have met;

Yet all experience is an arch wherethrough

20 Gleams that untraveled world whose margin fades

For ever and for ever when I move.

How dull it is to pause, to make an end,

To rust unburnished, not to shine in use!

As though to breathe were life! Life piled on life

25 Were all too little, and of one to me

Little remains: but every hour is saved

From that eternal silence, something more,

A bringer of new things; and vile it were

For some three suns to store and hoard myself,
30 And this gray spirit yearning in desire
To follow knowledge like a sinking star,
Beyond the utmost bound of human thought.
This is my son, mine own Telemachus,
To whom I leave the scepter and the isle—
35 Well-loved of me, discerning to fulfill
This labor, by slow prudence to make mild
A rugged people, and through soft degrees
Subdue them to the useful and the good.
Most blameless is he, centered in the sphere
40 Of common duties, decent not to fail
In offices of tenderness, and pay
Meet adoration to my household gods,
When I am gone. He works his work, I mine.
There lies the port; the vessel puffs her sail:
45 There gloom the dark, broad seas. My mariners,
Souls that have toiled, and wrought, and thought with me—
That ever with a frolic welcome took
The thunder and the sunshine, and opposed
Free hearts, free foreheads—you and I are old;
50 Old age hath yet his honor and his toil;
Death closes all: but something ere the end,
Some work of noble note, may yet be done,
Not unbecoming men that strove with Gods.
The lights begin to twinkle from the rocks:
55 The long day wanes: the slow moon climbs: the deep
Moans round with many voices. Come, my friends,

'Tis not too late to seek a newer world.
Push off, and sitting well in order smite
The sounding furrows; for my purpose holds
60 To sail beyond the sunset, and the baths
Of all the western stars, until I die.
It may be that the gulfs will wash us down:

994 / ALFRED, LORD TENNYSON

**It may be we shall touch the Happy Isles, 9
And see the great Achilles, whom we knew.
65 Though much mistaken, much abides; and
though We are not now that strength which
in old days Moved earth and heaven; that
which we are, we are, One equal temper of heroic
hearts,
Made weak by time and fate, but strong in will
70 To strive, to seek, to find, and not to yield.**

1833 1842

Break, Break, Break
Break, break, break,
On thy cold gray stones, O Sea!
And I would that my tongue could utter
The thoughts that arise in me.
5 O well for the fisherman's boy,
That he shouts with his sister at play!
O well for the sailor lad,
That he sings in his boat on the bay!
And the stately ships go on
10 To their haven under the hill;
But O for the touch of a vanished hand,
And the sound of a voice that is still!

**B r e a k , b r e a k , b r e a k ,
A t t h e f o o t o f t h y c r a g s , O S e a !
15 B u t t h e t e n d e r g r a c e o f a d a y t h a t i s d e a d
W i l l n e v e r c o m e b a c k t o m e .**

1834 1842

Songs from *The Princess*

The Splendor Falls

**T h e s p l e n d o r f a l l s o n c a s t l e w a l l s
A n d s n o w y s u m m i t s o l d i n s t o r y :
T h e l o n g l i g h t s h a k e s a c r o s s t h e l a k e s ,
A n d t h e w i l d c a t a r a c t 0 l e a p s i n g l o r y . *waterfall*
5 B l o w , b u g l e , b l o w , s e t t h e w i l d e c h o e s f l y
i n g , B l o w , b u g l e ; a n s w e r , e c h o e s , d y i n g , d
y i n g , d y i n g .**

9. The Islands of the Blessed, or Elysium, the
the known world.

abode after death of those favored by the gods,

1. A long narrative poem in blank verse, except for
especially heroes and patriots; supposed, in earlier
songs such as those printed here.

myth, to be located beyond the western limits of

S O N G S F R O M *THE PRINCESS* / 9 9 5

**O h a r k , O h e a r ! h o w t h i n a n d c l e a r ,
A n d t h i n n e r , c l e a r e r , f a r t h e r g o i n g !
O s w e e t a n d f a r f r o m c l i f f a n d s c a r 2
10 T h e h o r n s o f E l f l a n d f a i n t l y b l o w i n g !
B l o w , l e t u s h e a r t h e p u r p l e g l e n s r e p l y i n g :
B l o w , b u g l e ; a n s w e r , e c h o e s , d y i n g , d y i n g ,
d y i n g .**

O love, t h e y die in y o n rich sky,

T h e y faint on hill or field or river:

15 O u r e c h o e s roll f r o m s o u l t o s o u l ,

A n d g r o w for ever a n d for ever.

B l o w , b u g l e , b l o w , set t h e w i l d e c h o e s flying,
A n d a n s w e r , e c h o e s , a n s w e r , dying, dying,
dying.

1850

Tears, Idle Tears

Tears, idle tears, I k n o w n o t w h a t t h e y m e a n ,

T e a r s f r o m t h e d e p t h o f s o m e d i v i n e d e s p a i r

Rise i n t h e h e a r t , a n d g a t h e r t o t h e e y e s ,

I n l o o k i n g o n t h e h a p p y A u t u m n - f i e l d s ,

5 A n d t h i n k i n g o f t h e d a y s t h a t a r e n o m o r e .

F r e s h a s t h e f i r s t b e a m g l i t t e r i n g o n a s a i l ,

T h a t b r i n g s o u r f r i e n d s u p f r o m t h e u n d e r w o r l d ,
S a d a s t h e l a s t w h i c h r e d d e n s o v e r o n e

T h a t s i n k s w i t h a l l w e l o v e b e l o w t h e v e r g e ;

io S o s a d , s o f r e s h , t h e d a y s t h a t a r e n o m o r e .

A h , s a d a n d s t r a n g e a s i n d a r k s u m m e r d a w n s

T h e e a r l i e s t p i p e o f h a l f - a w a k e n e d b i r d s

T o d y i n g e a r s , w h e n u n t o d y i n g e y e s

T h e c a s e m e n t s l o w l y g r o w s a g l i m m e r i n g
square;

15 S o s a d , s o s t r a n g e , t h e d a y s t h a t a r e n o m o r e .

D e a r a s r e m e m b e r e d k i s s e s a f t e r d e a t h ,

A n d s w e e t a s t h o s e b y h o p e l e s s f a n c y f e i g n
e d O n l i p s t h a t a r e f o r o t h e r s ; d e e p a s l o v e ,

D e e p a s f i r s t l o v e , a n d w i l d w i t h a l l r e g r e t ;

20 O D e a t h i n L i f e , t h e d a y s t h a t a r e n o m o r e !

1847

Now Sleeps the Crimson Petal

Now sleeps the crimson petal, now the white;
Nor waves the cypress in the palace walk;
Nor winks the goldfinch in the porphyry font:³
The firefly wakens: waken thou with me.

2. Isolated rock, or rocky height.

3. Basin. Porphyry is a type of hard rock.

996 / ALFRED, LORD TENNYSON

5 Now droops the milk white peacock like a ghost,
And like a ghost she glimmers on to me.

Now lies the Earth all Danae⁴ to the stars,

And all thy heart lies open unto me.

Now slides the silent meteoron, and leaves

10 A shining furrow, as thy thoughts in me.

Now folds the lily all her sweetness up,

And slips into the bosom of the lake:

So fold thyself, my dearest, thou, and slip

In to my bosom and be lost in me.

1847

*From In Memoriam A.H.H.*⁵

OBIIT. MDCCCXXXIII⁶

I

I held it truth, with him whoseings

To one clear harp in divers tones,⁷

That men may rise on stepping-stones

Of their dead selves to higher things.

5 But who shall so forecast the years

And find in loss a gain to match?

**Or reach a hand through time to catch
The far-off interest of tears?
Let Love clasp Grief lest both be drowned,
io Let darkness keep her raven gloss:
Ah, sweeter to be drunk with loss,
To dance with death, to beat the ground,
Than that the victor Hours should scorn
The long result of love, and boast,
15 " Behold them a man that loved and lost,
But all he was is overworn."**

4. A princess in ancient Greece whose father, associates at Cambridge, Hallam had seemed to warned by an oracle that she would bear a son who give the most brilliant promise of greatness. In the would kill him, shut her up in a bronze chamber, summer of 1833, when he had been traveling on where she was visited by Zeus, the supreme god, the Continent with his father, Hallam died, of a in a shower of gold.
stroke, in Vienna.

5. Arthur Henry Hallam (1811-1833) had been

6. Died 1833.

Tennyson's close friend at Cambridge, they had

7. According to Tennyson, the German poet traveled together in France and Germany, and Hal-
Johann Wolfgang von Goethe (1749-1832).

lam had been engaged to the poet's sister. To his

IN MEMORIA M.A.H.H. / 997

67

Old Yew, which graspest at the stones
That nameth the under-lying dead,
Thy fibers net the dreamless head,
Thy roots are wrapt about the bones.
5 These seasons bring the flowers again,
And bring the firstling to the flock;
And in the dusk of thee, the clock
Beats out the little lives of men.
O not for thee the glow, the bloom,
10 Who changest not in any gale,
Nor brandings summers suns avail
To touch thy thousand years of gloom:
And gazing on thee, sullen tree,
Sick for thy stubborn hardihood,
15 I seem to fail from out my blood
And grow incorporate into thee.

7

Dark house, by which once more I stand
Here in the long unlovely street, 8
Doors, where my heart was used to beat
So quickly, waiting for a hand,
5 A hand that can be clasped no more —
Behold me, for I cannot sleep,
And like a guilty thing I creep
At earliest morning to the door.
He is not there; but far away
10 The noise of life begins again,

**And ghastly through the drizzling rain
On the bald street breaks the blank day.**

11

**Calmisthemornwithoutasound,
Calmasitosuitacalmergrief,
Andonlythroughthefadedleaf
Thechestnutpatteringtotheground:
5 Calmanddeeppeaceonthishighwold,
0 upland plain
Andonthesedewsthatdrenchthefurze,
*0 a shrub***

**Andallthesilverygossamers
Thattwinkleintogreenandgold:**

8. I.e., Wimpole St., where Hallam had been living after he left Cambridge.

998 / ALFRED, LORD TENNYSON

**Calmandstilllightonyongreatplain
10 Thatsweepswithallitsautumnbowers,
Andcrowdedfarmsandleseningtowers,
Tominglewiththeboundingmain:
Calmanddeeppeaceinthiswideair,
Theseleaves that reddentothefall;**

15 And in my heart, if calm at all,

If any calm, a calm despair:

**Calmontheseas,andsilversleep,
Andwaves that sway themselves in rest,
And dead calm in the noble breast
20 Which heaves but with the heaving deep.**

19

The Danube to the Severn gave
The darkened heart that beat no more; 9
They laid him by the pleasant shore,
And in the hearing of the wave.

5 There twice a day the Severn fills;
The salt sea-water passes by,
And hushes half the babbling Wye, 1
And makes a silence in the hills.

The Wye is hushed nor moved along,
io And hushed my deepest grief of all,
When filled with tears that cannot fall,
I brim with sorrow drowningsong.

The tide flows down, the wave again
Is vocal in its wooded walls;

15 My deeper anguish also falls,
And I can speak a little then.

50

Beneath me when my light is low,
When the blood creeps, and the nerves prick
And tingle; and the heart is sick,
And all the wheels of Being slow.

5 Beneath me when the sensuous frame
Is racked with pangs that conquer trust;
And Time, a maniac scattering dust,
And Life, a Fury slinging flame.

9. Vienna, where Hallam died, is on the Danube;
into the Bristol Channel; the incoming tide deep-
the Severn empties into the Bristol Channel near

ens the river and makes it quiet, but as the tide
Clevedon, Somersetshire, Hallam's burial place.
ebbs the Wye once more becomes "vocal" (line 14).

1. The Wye, a tributary of the Severn, also runs

IN MEMORIA M. A. H. H. / 1999

**Benearme when my faith is dry,
10 And men the flies of flatters bring,
That lay their eggs, and sting and sing
And weave their petty cells and die.
Benearme when I fade away,
Topoint the term of human strife,
15 And on the low dark verge of life
The twilight of eternal day.**

54

**Ohyetwetrust that somehow good
Will be the final goal of all,
Topangsof nature, sins of will,
Defectsofdoubt, and taintsofblood;
5 That nothing walkswith aimless feet;
That not onelife shall be destroyed,
Or cast as rubbish to the void,
When God hath made the pile complete;
That not a worm is cloven in vain;
10 That not a moth with vain desire
Is shriveled in a fruitless fire,
Or but subserves another's gain.
Behold, we know not anything;
I can but trust that good shall fall**

15 At last — far off — at last, to all,
And every winter change to spring.
So runs my dream: but what am I?
An infant crying in the night:
An infant crying for the light:
20 And with no language but a cry.

55

The wish, that of the living whole
No life may fail beyond the grave,
Derives it not from what we have
The likest God within the soul?
5 Are God and Nature then at strife,
That Nature lends such evil dreams?
So careful of the type she seems, *species*
So careless of the single life;
That I, considering everywhere
10 Her secret meaning in her deeds,
1000 / ALFRED, LORD TENNYSON
And finding that of fifty seeds
She often brings but one to bear,
If alter where I firmly trod,
And falling with my weight of cares
15 Upon the great world's altar-stairs
That slopeth through darkness up to God,
I stretch lame hands of faith, and grope, A
nd gather dust and chaff, and call
To what I feel is Lord of all,
20 And faintly trust the larger hope.

“So careful of the type?” but no.

From scarped cliff and quarried stone

She cries, “A thousand types are gone; I can
 reform nothing, all shall go.

5” Thou makest thine appeal to me:

I bring to life, I bring to death:

The spirit does but mean the breath:

I know no more.” And he, shall he,

Man, her last work, whose seem'd so fair,

10 Such splendid purpose in his eyes,

Who rol'd the psalm to wintry skies,

Who built him fanes of fruitless prayer,
temples, churches

Who trusted God was love indeed

And love Creation's final law —

15 Though Nature, red in tooth and claw

With ravine, shrieked against his creed
 — *seizing prey*

Who loved, who suffered countless ills,

Who battled for the True, the Just,

Be blown about the desert dust,

20 Or sealed within their iron hills?

No more? A monster then, a dream,

A discord. Dragons of the prime,

That tare each other in their slime, *tore*
(archaic)

Were mellow music matched with him.

25 O life as futile, then, as frail!

O f o r t h y v o i c e t o s o o t h e a n d b l e s s !

W h a t h o p e o f a n s w e r , o r r e d r e s s ?

B e h i n d t h e v e i l , b e h i n d t h e v e i l .

2. Cut down vertically, thus displaying the strata 3. I.e.,
Nature,

of geologic growth and the fossils they contain.

I N M E M O R I A M A . H . H . / 1 0 0 1

6 7

When on my bed the moonlight falls,

I know that in thy place of rest

By that broad water of the west

There comes a glory on the walls;4

5 Thy marble bright in dark appears,

As slowly steals a silver flame

Along the letters of thy name,

And o'er the number of thy years.

The mystic glory swims away;

io From off my bed the moonlight dies;

And closing eaves of wearied eyes

I sleep till dusk is dipt in gray:

And then I know the mist is drawn

A lucid veil from coast to coast,

15 And in the dark church like a ghost

Thy tablet glimmers to the dawn.

8 8

Wild bird, whose warble, liquid sweet,

Rings Eden through the budded quicks,5

O tell me where the senses mix,

O tell me where the passions meet,
5 Whence radiate: fierce extremes employ
Thy spirits in the darkening leaf,
And in the midmost heart of grief
Thy passion clasps a secret joy:
And I—my harp would prelude woe—
io I cannot all command the strings;
The glory of the sum of things
Will flash along the chords and go.

95

By night we lingered on the lawn,
For underfoot the herb was dry;
And genial warmth; and o'er the sky
The silvery haze of summer drawn;
5 And calm that let the tapers burn
Unwavering: not a cricket chirred;
4. Hallam's tomb is inside Clevedon Church, just looking the
Bristol Channel, south of Clevedon, Somersetshire, on a hill
over- 5. Hawthorn hedges.

1 0 0 2 / A L F R E D , L O R D T E N N Y S O N

T h e brook alone far-off was heard,
And on the board the fluttering urn:6
And bats went round in fragrant skies,
10 And wheeled or lit the filmy shapes7
That haunt the dusk, with ermine capes
And woolly breasts and beaded eyes;
While now we sang old songs that pealed
From knoll to knoll, where, couched at ease,
15 The white kine⁰ glimmered, and the trees *cattle*

Laid their dark arms about the field.
But when those others, one by one,
Withdrew themselves from me and night,
And in the house light after light
20 W e n t out, and I was all alone,
A hunger seized my heart; I read
Of that glad year which once had been,
In those fallen leaves which kept their green,
The noble letters of the dead:
25 And strangely on the silence broke
The silent-speaking words, and strange
Was love's d u m b cry defying change
To test his worth; and strangely spoke
T h e faith, the vigor, bold to dwell
30 On doubts that drive the coward back,
And keen through wordy snares to track
Suggestion to her inmost cell.
So word by word, and line by line,
T h e dead m a n touched me from the past,
35 And all at once it seemed at last
The living soul was flashed on mine,
And mine in this was wound, and whirled
About empyreal heights of thought,
And came on that which is, and caught
40 T h e deep pulsations of the world,
/ E o n i a n music⁸ measuring out
The steps of Time—the shocks of C h a n c e —
T h e blows of Death. At length my trance

Was cancelled, stricken through with doubt.

6. I.e., on the table an urn for making tea or coffee, heated by a fluttering flame beneath.

7. White-winged night moths called ermine for eons.

8. I.e., the rhythm of the universe; it has persisted

7. White-winged night moths called ermine for eons.

I N M E M O R I A M A . H . H . / 1 0 0 3

45 Vague words! but ah, how hard to frame

In matter-molded forms of speech,

Or even for intellect to reach

Through memory that which I became:

Till now the doubtful dusk revealed

50 The knolls once more where, couched at ease,

The white kine glimmered, and the trees

Laid their dark arms about the field:

And sucked from out the distant gloom

A breeze began to tremble o'er

55 The large leaves of the sycamore,

And fluctuate all the still perfume,

And gathering fresher overhead,

Rocked the full-foliaged elms, and swung

The heavy-folded rose, and flung

60 The lilies to and fro, and said

“The dawn, the dawn,” and died away;

And East and West, without a breath,

Mixt their dim lights, like life and death,

To broaden into boundless day.

119

Doors, where my heart was used to beat
So quickly, not as one that weeps
I come once more; the city sleeps;
I smell the meadow in the street;
5 I hear a chirp of birds; I see
Betwixt the black fronts long-withdrawn
A light-blue lane of early dawn,
And think of early days and thee,
And bless thee, for thy lips are bland,
io And bright the friendship of thine eye;
And in my thoughts with scarce a sigh
I take the pressure of thine hand.

121

S a d H e s p e r 0 o' e r t h e b u r i e d s u n *evening star*
And ready, thou, to die with him,
Thou watchest all things ever dim
And dimmer, and a glory done:
5 The team is loosened from the wain,0

•*wagon*

The boat is drawn upon the shore;
1 0 0 4 / A L F R E D , L O R D T E N N Y S O N
Thou listenest to the closing door,
And life is darkened in the brain.
Bright Phosphor,0 fresher for the night, *morning star*
10 By thee the world's great work is heard
Beginning, and the wakeful bird;
Behind thee comes the greater light:

The market boat is on the stream,
And voices hail it from the brink;
15 Thou hear'st the village hammer clink,
And see'st the moving of the team.
Sweet Hesper-Phosphor, double name⁹
For what is one, the first, the last,
Thou, like my present and my past,
20 Thy place is changed; thou art the same.

130

Thy voice is on the rolling air;
I hear thee where the waters run;
Thou standest in the rising sun,
And in the setting thou art fair.
5 What are thou then? I cannot guess;
But though I seem in star and flower
To feel thee some diffusive power,
I do not therefore love thee less:
My love involves the love before;
io My love is vaster passion now;
Though mixed with God and Nature thou,
I seem to love thee more and more.
Far off thou art, but ever nigh;
I have thee still, and I rejoice;
15 I prosper, circled with thy voice;
I shall not lose thee though I die.

1833-50 1850

The Eagle

Fragment

He clasps the crag with crooked hands;
Close to the sun in lonely lands,
Ringed with the azure world, he stands.

9. Hesper and Phosphor are both the planet Venus.

fe;.

**THE CHARGE OF THE LIGHT BRIGADE /
1 0 0 5**

The wrinkled sea beneath him crawls;
5 He watches from his mountain walls,
And like a thunderbolt he falls.

1851

The Charge of the Light Brigade 1

i

Half a league, half a league,
Half a league onward,
All in the valley of Death
Rode the six hundred.

5 “Forward, the Light Brigade!
Charge for the guns!” he said:
Into the valley of Death
Rode the six hundred.

2

“Forward, the Light Brigade!”
io Was there a man dismayed?
Not though the soldier knew
Some one had blundered:
Theirs not to make reply,
Theirs not to reason why,

15 Theirs but to do and die:

Into the valley of Death

Rode the six hundred.

3

Cannon to right of them,

Cannon to left of them,

20 Cannon in front of them

Volleyed and thundered;

Stormed at with shot and shell,

Boldly they rode and well,

Into the jaws of Death,

25 Into the mouth of Hell

Rode the six hundred.

4

Flashed all their sabers⁰ bare, *curved swords*

Flashed as they turned in air

Sabring the gunners there,

30 Charging an army, while

All the world wondered:

Plunged in the battery-smoke

1. Written after Tennyson had read an account in of a British cavalry unit were cut down by a battery the London *Times* of an incident in the Crimean of Russian artillery they had charged with reckless War when, due to confused orders, three-quarters courage.

1 0 0 6 / A L F R E D , L O R D T E N N Y S O N

R i g h t t h r o u g h t h e l i n e t h e y b r o k e ;

C o s s a c k a n d R u s s i a n

35 R e e l e d f r o m t h e s a b e r - s t r o k e

Shattered and sundered.
Then they rode back, but not
Not the six hundred.

5

Cannon to right of them,
40 Cannon to left of them,
Cannon behind them
Volleyed and thundered;
Stormed at with shot and shell,
While horse and hero fell,
45 They that had fought so well
Came through the jaws of Death,
Back from the mouth of Hell,
All that was left of them,
Left of six hundred.

6

50 When can their glory fade?
O the wild charge they made!
All the world wondered.
Honor the charge they made!
Honor the Light Brigade,
55 Noble six hundred!

1854 1855

Tithonus2

The woods decay, the woods decay and fall,
The vapors sweep their burthen to the ground
, Man comes and tills the field and lies beneath,
And after many a summer dies the swan.

5 Me only cruel immortality

Consumes: I withers slowly in thine arms,
Here at the quiet limit of the world,
A white-haired shadow roaming like a dream
The ever-silent spaces of the East,
i o Far-folded mists, and gleaming halls of m
orn.

Alas! for this gray shadow, once a man —
So glorious in his beauty and thy choice,
Whom made st him thy chosen, that he seemed
To his great heart none other than a God!

15 I asked thee, "Give me immortality."

Then didst thou grant mine asking with a smile,
2. A Trojan prince beloved by Aurora, Roman goddess of the dawn, who took him as her spouse. She begged Jupiter, the supreme god, to grant him eternal life, but forgot to ask also for the gift of eternal youth.

TITHONUS / 1007

Like wealthy men who care not how they give.

But thy strong Hours indignant worked their wills,

And beat me down and marred and wasted me,

20 And though they could not end me, left me maimed

To dwell in presence of immortal youth.

Immortal age beside immortal youth,

And all I was, in ashes. Can thy love,

Thy beauty, make amends, though even now,

25 Close over us, the silver star,³ thy guide,

Shines in those tremulous eyes that fill with tears

To hear me? Let me go: take back thy gift:

Why should a man desire in any way

To vary from the kindly race of men,

BO Or pass beyond the goal of ordinance⁴
Where all should pause, as is most meet for all?
A soft air fans the cloud apart; there comes
A glimpse of that dark world where I was born.
Once more the old mysterious glimmer steals
35 From thy pure brows, and from thy shoulders pure,
And bosom beating with a heart renewed.
Thy cheek begins to redden through the gloom,
Thy sweet eyes brighten slowly close to mine,
Ere yet they blind the stars, and the wild team⁵
40 Which love thee, yearning for thy yoke, arise,
And shake the darkness from their loosened manes,
And beat the twilight into flakes of fire.
Lo! ever thus thou growest beautiful
In silence, then before thine answer given
45 Departest, and thy tears are on my cheek.
Why wilt thou ever scare me with thy tears,
And make me tremble lest a saying learnt,
In days far-off, on that dark earth, be true?
“The Gods themselves cannot recall their gifts.”
50 Ay me! ay me! with what another heart
In days far-off, and with what other eyes
I used to watch—if I be he that watched—
The lucid outline forming round thee; saw
The dim curls kindle into sunny rings;
55 Changed with thy mystic change, and felt my blood
Glow with the glow that slowly crimsoned all
Thy presence and thy portals, while I lay,

Mouth, forehead, eyelids, growing dewy-warm
With kisses balmier than half-opening buds
60 Of April, and could hear the lips that kissed
Whispering I knew not what of wild and sweet,
Like that strange song I heard Apollo⁰ sing, *god of music*
While Ilion like a mist rose into towers.⁶

3. I.e., the morning star.

6. According to legend, the walls and towers of

4. What is ordained as human destiny.

Ilion (Troy) were raised by the sound of Apollo's

5. The horses that draw Aurora's chariot into the
song, as related by Ovid, *Heroides* 16.179.

sky at dawn.

1 0 0 8 /

A L F R E D , L O R D T E N N Y S O N

Yet hold me not for ever in thine East:

65 How can my nature longer mix with thine?

Coldly thy rosy shadows bathe me, cold

Are all thy lights, and cold my wrinkled feet

Upon thy glimmering thresholds, when the steam

Floats up from those dim fields about the homes

70 Of happy men that have the power to die,

And grassy barrows⁰ of the happier dead. *grave mounds*

Release me, and restore me to the ground;

Thou seest all things, thou wilt see my grave:

Thou wilt renew thy beauty morn by morn;

75 I earth in earth forget these empty courts,

And thee returning on thy silver wheels.

1 8 3 3 , 1 8 5 9 1860

“Frater Ave atque Vale”⁷

Row us out from Desenzano, to your Sirmione row!

**So they rowed, and there we landed—“O venusta
Sirmio!”⁸**

**There to me through all the groves of olive in the summer
glow,**

**There beneath the Roman ruin where the purple flowers
grow,**

5 Came that “Ave atque Vale” of the Poet’s hopeless woe,

Tenderest of Roman poets nineteen-hundred years ago,

“Frater Ave atque Vale”—as we wandered to and fro

Gazing at the Lydian laughter of the Garda Lake below⁹

Sweet Catullus’s all-but-island, olive-silvery Sirmio!

1880 1885

Crossing the Bar

Sunset and evening star,

And one clear call for me!

And may there be no moaning of the bar,¹

When I put out to sea,

5 But such a tide as moving seems asleep,

Too full for sound and foam,

When that which drew from out the boundless deep

Turns again home.

7. The title (Latin: “Brother, hail and farewell”) is
pleasure in returning to Sirmio after a long
the concluding phrase of Catullus’s poem number
absence.

101, in which the poet records the journey to visit

8. O lovely Sirmio (Latin).

his brother's tomb, in Asia Minor. Tennyson's

9. Catullus's line "And rejoice, O Lydian waves of
poem, written on a visit to the little peninsula of
the lake" (31.13) alludes to the old belief that the
Sirmio (on Lake Garda, in northern Italy), shortly
Etruscans of the Garda region had originated in
after his own brother had died, echoes phrases
Lydia, in Asia Minor.

from poem 31, in which Catullus describes his

1. Mournful sound of waves beating on a sandbar.

P O R P H Y R I A ' S L O V E R / 1 0 0 9

Twilight and evening bell,

10 And after that the dark!

And may there be no sadness of farewell,

When I embark;

For though from out our bourne⁰ of Time and Place *boundary*

The flood may bear me far,

15 I hope to see my Pilot face to face

When I have crost the bar.

1889 1889

R O B E R T B R O W N I N G

1812-1889

Porphyria s Lover¹

The rain set early in tonight,

The sullen wind was soon awake,

It tore the elm-tops down for spite,

And did its worst to vex the lake:

5 I listened with heart fit to break.
When glided in Porphyria; straight
She shut the cold out and the storm,
And kneeled and made the cheerless grate
Blaze up, and all the cottage warm;
10 Which done, she rose, and from her form
Withdrew the dripping cloak and shawl,
And laid her soiled gloves by, untied
Her hat and let the damp hair fall,
And, last, she sat down by my side
15 And called me. When no voice replied,
She put my arm about her waist,
And made her smooth white shoulder bare,
And all her yellow hair displaced,
And, stooping, made my cheek lie there,
20 And spread, o'er all, her yellow hair,
Murmuring how she loved me—she
Too weak, for all her heart's endeavor,
To set its struggling passion free
From pride, and vainer ties dissever,
25 And give herself to me forever.
But passion sometimes would prevail,
Nor could tonight's gay feast restrain
A sudden thought of one so pale
For love of her, and all in vain:
30 So, she was come through wind and rain.

1. Originally published with another monologue under the title *Madhouse Cells*, which indicated the speaker's abnormal state of mind.

1010 / ROBERT BROWNING

Be sure I looked up at her eyes
Happy and proud; at last I knew
Porphyria worshiped me: surprise
Made my heart swell, and still it grew
35 While I debated what to do.
That moment she was mine, mine, fair,
Perfectly pure and good: I found
A thing to do, and all her hair
In one long yellow string I wound
40 Three times her little throat around,
And strangled her. No pain felt she;
I am quite sure she felt no pain.
As a shut bud that holds a bee,
I warily oped her lids: again
45 Laughed the blue eyes without a stain.
And I untightened next the tress
About her neck; her cheek once more
Blushed bright beneath my burning kiss:
I propped her head up as before,
50 Only, this time my shoulder bore
Her head, which droops upon it still:
The smiling rosy little head,
So glad it has its utmost will,
That all it scorned at once is fled,
55 And I, its love, am gained instead!
Porphyria's love: she guessed not how
Her darling one wish would be heard.

And thus we sit together now,
And all night long we have not stirred,
60 And yet God has not said a word!

1834 1836, 1842

Soliloquy of the Spanish Cloister

i

Gr-r-r—there go, my heart’s abhorrence!
Water your damned flower-pots, do!
If hate killed men, Brother Lawrence,
God’s blood, would not mine kill you!
5 What? your myrtle-bush wants trimming?
Oh, that rose has prior claims—
Needs its leaden vase filled brimming?
Hell dry you up with its flames!

2

At the meal we sit together:
*io Salve tibi!*² I must hear
Wise talk of the kind of weather,
Sort of season, time of year:
2. Hail to thee! (Latin).

**S O L I L O Q U Y O F T H E S P A N I S H C L O I S T E
R / 1 0 1 1**

Not a plenteous cork-crop: scarcely

Dare we hope oak-galls,³ I doubt:

15 *What’s the Latin name for “parsley”?*

What’s the Greek name for Swine’s Snout?⁴

3

Whew! We’ll have our platter burnished,

Laid with care on our own shelf!
With a fire-new spoon we're furnished,
20 And a goblet for ourself,
Rinsed like something sacrificial
Ere 'tis fit to touch our chaps—
Marked with L for our initial!
(He-he! There his lily snaps!)

4

25 *Saint*, forsooth! While brown Dolores
Squats outside the Convent bank
With Sanchicha, telling stories,
Steeping tresses in the tank,
Blue-black, lustrous, thick like horsehairs,
BO —Can't I see his dead eye glow,
Bright as 'twere a Barbary corsair's?5
(That is, if he'd let it show!)

5

When he finishes refection,0 *dinner*
Knife and fork he never lays
35 Cross-wise, to my recollection,
As do I, in Jesu's praise.
I the Trinity illustrate,
Drinking watered orange-pulp—
In three sips the Arian6 frustrate;
40 While he drains his at one gulp.

6

Oh, those melons? If he's able
We're to have a feast! so nice!

One goes to the Abbot's table,
All of us get each a slice.
45 How go on your flowers? None double?
Not one fruit-sort can you spy?
Strange! And I, too, at such trouble,
Keep them close-nipped on the sly!

7

There's a great text in Galatians,⁷
50 Once you trip on it, entails
3. Growths produced on oak leaves by gallflies.
heretic who denied the doctrine of the Trinity.
4. Nineteenth-century name for dandelion.
7. The line has sometimes been taken as referring
5. *Barbary corsair*: pirate from the Berber coun-
to Galatians 3.10; but see Galatians 5.14—15, with
tries on the north coast of Africa.
its ironic applicability to the spirit of the mono-
6. Follower of Arius, a fourth-century Alexandrian
logue, and also 5.16—24.

1 0 1 2 / R O B E R T B R O W N I N G

**Twenty-nine distinct damnations,
One sure, if another fails:
If I trip him just a-dying,
Sure of heaven as sure can be,
55 Spin him around and send him flying
Off to hell, a Manichee?⁸**

8

Or, my scrofulous⁰ French novel *morally corrupt*

On gray paper with blunt type!
Simply glance at it, you grovel
60 Hand and foot in Belial's⁹ gripe:
If I double down its pages
At the woeful sixteenth print,
When he gathers his greengages,⁰ *greenish plums*
Ope a sieve and slip it in't?

9

65 Or, there's Satan! one might venture
Pledge one's soul to him, yet leave
Such a flaw in the indenture
As he'd miss till, past retrieve,
Blasted lay that rose-acacia
70 We're so proud of!¹ *Hy, TLy, Hine*² ...
'St, there's vespers! *Plena gratia*
*Ave, Virgo!*³ Gr-r-r—you swine!

ca. 1839 1842

My Last Duchess⁴

Ferrara

That's my last duchess painted on the wall,
Looking as if she were alive. I call
That piece a wonder, now: Fra Pandolf's hands
Worked busily a day, and there she stands.

5 Will't please you sit and look at her? I said
"Fra Pandolf" by design, for never read

8. The Manichean heresy, which the speaker
mixes up the opening words of the *Ave Maria*: "Ave,
hopes to lure Brother Lawrence into accepting,

Maria, gratia plena.”

claimed that the world was divided between forces

4. The events of Browning’s poem parallel historical events, but its emphasis is rather on truth to

9. Hebrew personification of lawlessness, hence

Renaissance attitudes than on historic specificity.

one of the names for the Devil.

Alfonso II d’Este, duke of Ferrara (born 1533), in

1. The speaker seems to say that, if all else fails,

Northern Italy, had married his first wife, daughter

he might secure Brother Lawrence’s damnation by

of Cosimo I de’ Medici, duke of Florence, in 1558,

pledging his own soul to the Devil in return—but

when she was fourteen; she died on April 21, 1561,

being careful to leave a flaw in the contract that

under suspicious circumstances, and soon after he

would invalidate it.

opened negotiations for the hand of the niece of

2. Possibly an incantation used in calling up the

the count of Tyrol, the seat of whose court was at

Devil.

Innsbruck, in Austria. “Fra Pandolf” and “Claus of

3. Full of grace, Hail, Virgin! (Latin). The speaker

Innsbruck” are types rather than specific artists.

MY LAST DUCHESS / 1013

Strangers like you that pictured countenance,

The depth and passion of its earnest glance,

But to myself they turned (since none puts by
10 The curtain I have drawn for you, but I)
And seemed as they would ask me, if they durst,
How such a glance came there; so, not the first
Are you to turn and ask thus. Sir, 'twas not
Her husband's presence only, called that spot
15 Of joy into the Duchess' cheek: perhaps
Fra Pandolf chanced to say "Her mantle laps
Over my lady's wrist too much," or "Paint
Must never hope to reproduce the faint
Half-flush that dies along her throat": such stuff
20 Was courtesy, she thought, and cause enough
For calling up that spot of joy. She had
A heart—how shall I say?—too soon made glad,
Too easily impressed; she liked whate'er
She looked on, and her looks went everywhere.
25 Sir, 'twas all one! My favor at her breast,
The dropping of the daylight in the West,
The bough of cherries some officious fool
Broke in the orchard for her, the white mule
She rode with round the terrace—all and each
BO Would draw from her alike the approving speech,
Or blush, at least. She thanked men—good! but thanked
Somehow—I know not how—as if she ranked
My gift of a nine-hundred-years-old name
With anybody's gift. Who'd stoop to blame
35 This sort of trifling? Even had you skill
In speech—which I have not—to make your will

Quite clear to such an one, and say, “Just this
Or that in you disgusts me; here you miss,
Or there exceed the mark”—and if she let
40 Herself be lessoned so, nor plainly set
Her wits to yours, forsooth, and made excuse,
—E’en then would be some stooping; and I choose
Never to stoop. Oh sir, she smiled, no doubt,
Whene’er I passed her; but who passed without
45 Much the same smile? This grew; I gave commands;
Then all smiles stopped together. There she stands
As if alive. Will’t please you rise? We’ll meet
The company below, then. I repeat,
The Count your master’s known munificence
50 Is ample warrant that no just pretense
Of mine for dowry will be disallowed;
Though his fair daughter’s self, as I avowed
At starting, is my object. Nay, we’ll go
Together down, sir. Notice Neptune, though,
55 Taming a sea-horse, thought a rarity,
Which Claus of Innsbruck cast in bronze for me!

1842 1842

1 0 1 4 / R O B E R T B R O W N I N G

The Bishop Orders His Tomb at Saint Praxed’s Church⁵

Rome, 15—

Vanity, saith the preacher, vanity!⁶

Draw round my bed: is Anselm keeping back?

Nephews—sons mine ... ah God, I know not! Well—

She, men would have to be your mother once,

5 Old Gandolf envied me, so fair she was!
What's done is done, and she is dead beside,
Dead long ago, and I am Bishop since,
And as she died so must we die ourselves,
And thence ye may perceive the world's a dream,
io Life, how and what is it? As here I lie
In this state-chamber, dying by degrees,
Hours and long hours in the dead night, I ask
“Do I live, am I dead?” Peace, peace seems all.
Saint Praxed's ever was the church for peace;
15 And so, about this tomb of mine. I fought
With tooth and nail to save my niche, ye know:
—Old Gandolf cozened⁰ me, despite my care; *cheated*
Shrewd was that snatch from out the corner south
He graced his carrion with, God curse the same!
20 Yet still my niche is not so cramped but thence
One sees the pulpit o' the epistle-side,⁷
And somewhat of the choir, those silent seats,
And up into the aery dome where live
The angels, and a sunbeam's sure to lurk:
25 And I shall fill my slab of basalt there,
And 'neath my tabernacle⁸ take my rest,
With those nine columns round me, two and two,
The odd one at my feet where Anselm stands:
Peach-blossom marble all, the rare, the ripe
30 As fresh-poured red wine of a mighty pulse.
—Old Gandolf with his paltry onion-stone,
Put me where I may look at him! True peach,

Rosy and flawless: how I earned the prize!
 Draw close: that conflagration of my church
 35 —What then? So much was saved if aught were missed!
 My sons, ye would not be my death? Go dig
 The white-grape vineyard where the oil-press stood,
 Drop water gently till the surface sink,
 And if ye find ... Ah God, I know not, I! ...
 40 Bedded in store of rotten fig-leaves soft,
 And corded up in a tight olive-frail,⁰ *olive basket*
 5. The church of Santa Prassede, in Rome, dedi-
 6. An echo of Ecclesiastes 1.2: “Vanity of vanities,
 cated to a Roman virgin, dates from the fifth cen-
 saith the Preacher, vanity of vanities; all is vanity.”
 tury but was rebuilt early in the ninth and restored
 7. The right-hand side as one faces the altar, the
 at later times. The sixteenth-century bishop who
 side from which the Epistles of the New Testament
 speaks here is a fictional figure, as is his predeces-
 were read.
 sor, Gandolf,
 8. Canopy over his tomb.

**THE BISHOP ORDERS HIS TOMB AT SAIN
 NTPRAXED ‘SCHURCH / 1015**

Some lump, ah God, of *lapis lazuli*,⁹
 Big as a Jew’s head cut off at the nape,
 Blue as a vein o’er the Madonna’s breast ...
 45 Sons, all have I bequeathed you, villas, all,
 That brave Frascati¹ villa with its bath,

So, let the blue lump poise between my knees,
Like God the Father's globe on both his hands
Ye worship in the Jesu Church² so gay,
50 For Gandolf shall not choose but see and burst!
Swift as a weaver's shuttle fleet our years:³
Man goeth to the grave, and where is he?
Did I say basalt for my slab, sons? Black—
'Twas ever antique-black I meant! How else
55 Shall ye contrast my frieze to come beneath?
The bas-relief in bronze ye promised me,
Those Pans and Nymphs ye wot of, and perchance
Some tripod, thyrsus,⁴ with a vase or so,
The Saviour at his sermon on the mount,
60 Saint Praxed in a glory,⁵ and one Pan
Ready to twitch the Nymph's last garment off,
And Moses with the tables⁰ ... but I know *tablets*
Ye mark me not! What do they whisper thee,
Child of my bowels, Anselm? Ah, ye hope
65 To revel down my villas while I gasp
Bricked o'er with beggar's moldy travertine⁶
Which Gandolf from his tomb-top chuckles at!
Nay, boys, ye love me—all of jasper,⁷ then!
'T is jasper ye stand pledged to, lest I grieve
70 My bath must needs be left behind, alas!
One block, pure green as a pistachio-nut,
There's plenty jasper somewhere in the world—
And have I not Saint Praxed's ear to pray
Horses for ye, and brown Greek manuscripts,

75 And mistresses with great smooth marbly limbs?
—That's if ye carve my epitaph aright,
Choice Latin, picked phrase, Tully's⁸ every word,
No gaudy ware like Gandolf's second line—
Tully, my masters? Ulpian⁹ serves his need!
so And then how I shall lie through centuries,
And hear the blessed mutter of the mass,
And see God made and eaten all day long,¹
And feel the steady candle-flame, and taste
Good strong thick stupefying incense-smoke!

9. A vivid blue stone, one of the so-called hard
and revelry.

stones, used for ornament.

5. Rays of gold, signifying sanctity, around the

1. A resort town in the mountains.

head or body of the saint portrayed.

2. The baroque Jesuit church 11 Gesu, in Rome.

6. Ordinary limestone used in building.

The sculptured group of the Trinity includes a ter-

7. A variety of quartz.

restrial globe carved from the largest known block

8. Familiar name for Cicero (Marcus Tullius Cic-
of lapis lazuli.

ero).

3. See Job 7.6: "My days are swifter than a

9. His Latin would be stylistically inferior to that
weaver's shuttle, and are spent without hope."

of Cicero.

4. A staff ornamented with ivy or vine leaves, carried by followers of Bacchus, Roman god of wine

1016 / ROBERT BROWNING

85 For as I lie here, hours of the dead night,
Dying in state and by such slow degrees,
I fold my arms as if they clasped a crook,²
And stretch my feet forth straight as stone can point,
And let the bedclothes, for a mortcloth,³ drop
90 Into great laps and folds of sculptor's-work:
And as yon tapers dwindle, and strange thoughts
Grow, with a certain humming in my ears,
About the life before I lived this life,
And this life too, popes, cardinals and priests,
95 Saint Praxed at his sermon on the mount,⁴
Your tall pale mother with her talking eyes,
And new-found agate urns as fresh as day,
And marble's language, Latin pure, discreet,
—Aha, ELUCESCEBAT⁵ quoth our friend?
100 No Tully, said I, Ulpian at the best!
Evil and brief hath been my pilgrimage.
All *lapis*, all, son! Else I give the Pope
My villas! Will ye ever eat my heart?
Ever your eyes were as a lizard's quick,
105 They glitter like your mother's for my soul,
Or ye would heighten my impoverished frieze,
Piece out its starved design, and fill my vase
With grapes, and add a vizor and a Term,⁶

And to the tripod ye would tie a lynx
 110 That in his struggle throws the thyrsus down,
 To comfort me on my entablature
 Whereon I am to lie till I must ask
 “Do I live, am I dead?” There, leave me, there!
 For ye have stabbed me with ingratitude
 115 To death—ye wish it—God, ye wish it! Stone—
 Gritstone, a-crumble! Clammy squares which sweat
 As if the corpse they keep were oozing through—
 And no more *lapis* to delight the world!
 Well, go! I bless ye. Fewer tapers there,
 120 But in a row: and, going, turn your backs
 —Ay, like departing altar-ministrants,
 And leave me in my church, the church for peace,
 That I may watch at leisure if he leers—
 Old Gandolf, at me, from his onion-stone,
 125 As still he envied me, so fair she was!

1844 1845, 1849

2. I.e., the bishop’s crozier, with its emblematic claims that this form is inferior to *elucebat*, which resembles to a shepherd’s crook.

Cicero would have used.

3. The pall with which a coffin is draped.

6. A pillar adorned with a bust of Terminus,

4. As the bishop’s mind wanders, he attributes Roman god of boundaries. *Vizor*: face mask on a Christ’s Sermon on the Mount to Santa Prassede. helmet. Both are motifs of classical sculpture imi-

5. A word from Gandolf's epitaph (a form of the
tated by the Renaissance.

Latin verb meaning "to shine forth"); the bishop

A T O C C A T A O F G A L U P P I ' S / 1 0 1 7

Home-Thoughts, from Abroad

i

Oh, to be in England

Now that April's there,

And whoever wakes in England

Sees, some morning, unaware,

5 That the lowest boughs and the brushwood sheaf

Round the elm-tree bole are in tiny leaf,

While the chaffinch sings on the orchard bough

In England—now!

And after April, when May follows,

10 And the whitethroat builds, and all the swallows!

Hark, where my blossomed pear-tree in the hedge

Leans to the field and scatters on the clover

Blossoms and dewdrops—at the bent spray's edge—

That's the wise thrush; he sings each song twice over,

15 Lest you should think he never could recapture

The first fine careless rapture!

And though the fields look rough with hoary dew

All will be gay when noontide wakes anew

The buttercups, the little children's dower

20 —Far brighter than this gaudy melon-flower!

ca. 1845 1845

A Toccata of Galuppi's⁷

Oh Galuppi, Baldassare, this is very sad to find!

I can hardly misconceive you; it would prove me deaf and blind;

But although I take your meaning, 'tis with such a heavy mind!

2

Here you come with your old music, and here's all the good it brings.

5 What, they lived once thus at Venice where the merchants were the

kings,

Where Saint Mark's is, where the Doges used to wed the sea with

rings?8

7. This poem presents the reflections of a nine-often having the character of “showy improvisa-teenth-century Englishman as he plays a toccata tion” [Grove’s *Dictionary of Music and Musicians*].

by the eighteenth-century Venetian composer Bal-

8. Each year the doge, chief magistrate of the dassare Galuppi. (A toccata is a “touch-piece,” the Venetian republic, threw a ring into the sea with word derived from the Italian verb *toccare*, “to the ceremonial words “We wed thee, O sea, in sign touch”: “a composition intended to exhibit the of true and everlasting dominion.”

touch and execution of the performer,” and hence

1 0 1 8 / R O B E R T B R O W N I N G

3

Ay, because the sea's the street there; and 'tis arched by ...
what you

call

... Shylock's bridge⁹ with houses on it, where they kept the
carnival:

I was never out of England—it's as if I saw it all.

4

io Did young people take their pleasure when the sea was
warm in May?

Balls and masks¹ begun at midnight, burning ever to mid-day,
When they made up fresh adventures for the morrow, do you
say?

5

Was a lady such a lady, cheeks so round and lips so red—
On her neck the small face buoyant, like a bellflower on its
bed,

15 O'er the breast's superb abundance where a man might
base his head?

6

Well, and it was graceful of them—they'd break talk off and
afford

—She, to bite her mask's black velvet—he, to finger on his
sword,

While you sat and played Toccatas, stately at the clavichord?²

7

What? Those lesser thirds so plaintive, sixths diminished, sigh
on sigh,

20 Told them something? Those suspensions, those solutions
—“Must we
die?”

Those commiserating sevenths³—“Life might last! we can but try!”

8

“Were you happy?” “Yes.” “And are you still as happy?” “Yes. And you?”

“Then, more kisses!” “Did I stop them, when a million seemed so few?”

Hark, the dominant’s persistence till it must be answered to!

9

25 So, an octave struck the answer. Oh, they praised you, I dare say!

“Brave Galuppi! that was music! good alike at grave and gay!

“I can always leave off talking when I hear a master play!”

10

Then they left you for their pleasure: till in due time, one by one,

Some with lives that came to nothing, some with deeds as well undone,

30 Death stepped tacitly and took them where they never see the sun.

9. The Rialto, a bridge over the Grand Canal.

3. This term and others in these lines refer to the

1. Masquerades.

technical devices Galuppi used to produce alter-

2. A keyboard instrument, similar to a piano but

nating moods in his music, conflict in each case

sounding more like a harpsichord. In stanzas 7—9,

being resolved into harmony. Thus the “dominant”

the quoted words represent the thoughts, feelings,

(the fifth note of the scale), after being persistently

or casual remarks of Galuppi's Venetian audience,
sounded, is answered by a resolving chord (lines
now dispersed by death.

24 - 25) .

MEMORABILIA / 1019

**But when I sit down to reason, think to take my stand nor
swerve,**

**While I triumph o'er a secret wrung from nature's close
reserve,**

**In you come with your cold music⁴ till I creep through
every nerve.**

12

**Yes, you, like a ghostly cricket, creaking where a house was
burned:**

**35 "Dust and ashes, dead and done with, Venice spent what
Venice**

earned.

**"The soul, doubtless, is immortal—where a soul can be
discerned.**

!3

**"Yours for instance: you know physics, something of
geology,**

**"Mathematics are your pastime; souls shall rise in their
degree;**

**"Butterflies may dread extinction—you'll not die, it cannot
be!**

14

**40 "As for Venice and her people, merely born to bloom
and drop,**

**"Here on earth they bore their fruitage, mirth and folly
were the crop:**

“What of soul was left, I wonder, when the kissing had to stop?

15

“Dust and ashes!” So you creak it, and I want the heart to scold, *lack*

Dear dead women, with such hair, too—what’s become of all the

gold

45 Used to hang and brush their bosoms? I feel chilly and grown old.

ca. 1847 1855

Memorabilia⁵

1

Ah, did you once see Shelley plain,

And did he stop and speak to you

And did you speak to him again?

How strange it seems and new!

2

5 But you were living before that,

And also you are living after;

And the memory I started at—

My starting moves your laughter.

3

I crossed a moor, with a name of its own

10 And a certain use in the world no doubt,

4. In stanzas 12-15, the quoted words are what poet Percy Bysshe Shelley (1792—1822; see pp. the speaker imagines Galuppi is saying to him.

8 6 3 - 9 3).

5. Memorable things. Line 1 refers to the English

1 0 2 0 / R O B E R T B R O W N I N G

Yet a hand's-breadth of it shines alone

'Mid the blank miles round about:

4

For there I picked up on the heather

And there I put inside my breast

15 A moulted feather, an eagle-feather!

Well, I forget the rest.

ca. 1851 1855

"Childe Roland to the Dark Tower Came"

*(See Edgar's Song in "Lear")*⁶

i

My first thought was, he lied in every word,

That hoary cripple, with malicious eye

Askance⁰ to watch the working of his lie *squinting sideways*

On mine, and mouth scarce able to afford

5 Suppression of the glee, that pursed and scored

Its edge, at one more victim gained thereby.

2

What else should he be set for, with his staff?

What, save to waylay with his lies, ensnare

All travelers who might find him posted there,

io And ask the road? I guessed what skull-like laugh

Would break, what crutch 'gin write my epitaph

For pastime in the dusty thoroughfare,

3

If at his counsel I should turn aside

**Into that ominous tract which, all agree,
15 Hides the Dark Tower. Yet acquiescingly
I did turn as he pointed: neither pride
Nor hope rekindling at the end descried,
So much as gladness that some end might be.**

4

**For, what with my whole world-wide wandering,
20 What with my search drawn out through years, my
hope
Dwindled into a ghost not fit to cope
With that obstreperous joy success would bring,— *unruly*
I hardly tried now to rebuke the spring
My heart made, finding failure in its scope.**

6. In Shakespeare's *King Lear* 6.4, Edgar,
tower came, / His word was still—Fie, foh, and
Gloucester's son, disguised as a madman, meets
fum, / I smell the blood of a British man.' ” *Childe:*
Lear in the midst of a storm; at the end of the
medieval title applied to a youth awaiting knight-
scene, Edgar sings: “Child Rowland to the dark
hood.

**” CHILDROLANDTOTHE DARKTOWER
RCAME ” / 1021**

5

**25 As when a sick man very near to death
Seems dead indeed, and feels begin and end
The tears, and takes the farewell of each friend,
And hears one bid the other go, draw breath
Freelier outside, (“since all is o'er,” he saith,**

30 “And the blow fallen no grieving can amend;”)

6

While some discuss if near the other graves
Be room enough for this, and when a day
Suits best for carrying the corpse away,
With care about the banners, scarves and staves:
35 And still the man hears all, and only craves
He may not shame such tender love and stay.

7

Thus, I had so long suffered in this quest,
Heard failure prophesied so oft, been writ
So many times among “The Band”—to wit,
40 The knights who to the Dark Tower’s search addressed
Their steps—that just to fail as they, seemed best,
And all the doubt was now—should I be fit?

8

So, quiet as despair, I turned from him,
That hateful cripple, out of his highway
45 Into the path he pointed. All the day
Had been a dreary one at best, and dim
Was settling to its close, yet shot one grim
Red leer to see the plain catch its estray.⁷

9

For mark! no sooner was I fairly found
50 Pledged to the plain, after a pace or two,
Than, pausing to throw backward a last view
O’er the safe road, ‘twas gone; gray plain all round:
Nothing but plain to the horizon’s bound.

I might go on; naught else remained to do.

i o

55 So, on I went. I think I never saw
Such starved ignoble nature; nothing throve:
For flowers—as well expect a cedar grove!
But cockle, spurge,⁸ according to their law
Might propagate their kind, with none to awe,
60 You'd think: a burr had been a treasure trove.

7. A stray or unclaimed domestic animal.

8. Cockle is a weed that bears burrs (line 60), prickly seed-heads; spurge, a bitter-tasting weed.

1022 / ROBERT BROWNING

No! penury, inertness and grimace,
In some strange sort, were the land's portion. "See
Or shut your eyes," said Nature peevishly,
"It nothing skills:⁹ I cannot help my case:
65 'Tis the Last Judgment's fire must cure this place,
Calcine⁰ its clods and set my prisoners free." *burn to powder*
12

If there pushed any ragged thistle-stalk
Above its mates, the head was chopped; the bents⁰
reeds, rushes
Were jealous else. What made those holes and rents
70 In the dock's¹ harsh swarth⁰ leaves, bruised as to balk
dark

All hope of greenness? 'tis a brute must walk
Pashing⁰ their life out, with a brute's intents.
crushing

As for the grass, it grew as scant as hair
In leprosy; thin dry blades pricked the mud
75 Which underneath looked kneaded up with blood.

One stiff blind horse, his every bone a-stare,
Stood stupefied, however he came there:
Thrust out past service from the devil's stud!

14

Alive? he might be dead for aught I know,
so With that red gaunt coloped neck a-strain, *chafed, ridged*
And shut eyes underneath the rusty mane;
Seldom went such grotesqueness with such woe;
I never saw a brute I hated so;
He must be wicked to deserve such pain.

! 5

85

I shut my eyes and turned them on my heart.
As a man calls for wine before he fights,
I asked one draught of earlier, happier sights,
Ere fitly I could hope to play my part.
Think first, fight afterwards—the soldier's art:

90

One taste of the old time sets all to rights.

16

Not it! I fancied Cuthbert's reddening face
Beneath its garniture of curly gold, *trimming*
Dear fellow, till I almost felt him fold
An arm in mine to fix me to the place,
95 That way he used. Alas, one night's disgrace!

Out went my heart's new fire and left it cold.

9. I.e., it is useless. 1. Coarse, weedy plant's.

**"CHILDEROLAND TO THE DARK TOWER
RCAME" / 1023**

17

Giles then, the soul of h o n o r — t h e r e he stands

Frank as ten years ago when knighted first.

W h a t honest m a n should dare (he said) he durst.

100 G o o d — b u t the scene shifts—faugh! what h a n g m a
n hands

Pin to his breast a parchment? His own bands

Read it. Poor traitor, spit upon and curst!

18

Better this present than a past like that;

Back therefore to my darkening path again!

105 No sound, no sight as far as eye could strain.

Will the night send a howlet⁰ or a bat? *owl*

I asked: w h e n something on the dismal flat

C a m e to arrest my thoughts and change their train.

19

A sudden little river crossed my path

110 As unexpected as a serpent comes.

No sluggish tide congenial to the glooms;

This, as it frothed by, might have been a bath

For the fiend's glowing h o o f — t o see the wrath

Of its black eddy bespate⁰ with flakes and spumes. *spattered*

20

115 So petty yet so spiteful! All along,

Low scrubby alders kneeled down over it;

D r e n c h e d willows flung them headlong in a fit
Of m u t e despair, a suicidal throng:
T h e river which had done them all the wrong,
120 W h a t e ' e r that was, rolled by, deterred no whit.

21

Which, while I forded,—good saints, how I feared
To set my foot upon a dead man's cheek,
Each step, or feel the spear I thrust to seek
For hollows, tangled in his hair or beard!

125 —It may have been a water-rat I speared,
But, ugh! it sounded like a baby's shriek.

22

Glad was I w h e n I reached the other bank.
Now for a better country. Vain presage!
W h o were the strugglers, what war did they wage,
130 Whose savage trample thus could pad the dank
Soil to a splash? Toads in a poisoned tank, *puddle*
Or wild cats in a red-hot iron cage—

23

T h e fight must so have seemed in that fell cirque.²
W h a t p e n n e d them there, with all the plain to choose?

2. Dreadful hollow encircled by heights.

1 0 2 4 / R O B E R T B R O W N I N G

135 No footprint leading to that horrid mews,^o *stabling area*

None out of it. Mad brewage set to work

Their brains, no doubt, like galley-slaves the Turk

Pits for his pastime, Christians against Jews.

24

And more than that—a furlong on—why, there!

140 What bad use was that engine⁰ for, that wheel,
mechanism

Or brake,³ not wheel—that harrow fit to reel

Men's bodies out like silk? with all the air

Of Tophet's⁰ tool, on earth left unaware, *Hell's*

Or brought to sharpen its rusty teeth of steel.

25

145 Then came a bit of stubbed ground, once a wood,

Next a marsh, it would seem, and now mere earth

Desperate and done with; (so a fool finds mirth,

Makes a thing and then mars it, till his mood

Changes and off he goes!) within a rood⁴—

150 Bog, clay and rubble, sand and stark black dearth.

26

Now blotches rankling,⁰ colored gay and grim, *festering*

Now patches where some leanness of the soil's

Broke into moss or substances like boils;

Then came some palsied oak, a cleft in him

155 Like a distorted mouth that splits its rim

Gaping at death, and dies while it recoils.

27

And just as far as ever from the end!

Nought in the distance but the evening, nought

To point my footstep further! At the thought,

160 A great black bird, Apollyon's⁵ bosom-friend,

Sailed past, nor beat his wide wing dragon-penned⁶

That brushed my cap—perchance the guide I sought.

28

For, looking up, aware I somehow grew,

‘Spite of the dusk, the plain had given place

165 All round to mountains—with such name to grace

Mere ugly heights and heaps now stolen in view.

How thus they had surprised me,—solve it, you!

How to get from them was no clearer case.

3. A toothed machine for breaking up flax or

5. “The angel of the bottomless pit, whose name

hemp, to separate the fiber; here, an instrument of

in the Hebrew tongue is Abaddon, but in the Greek

torture.

tongue ... Apollyon” (Revelation 9.11).

4. Quarter acre of land.

6. With pinions, wings, like a dragon’s.

**” CHILDEROLAND TO THE DARK TOWER
RCAME ” / 1 0 2 5**

29

Yet half I seemed to recognize some trick

170 Of mischief happened to me, God knows when—

In a bad dream perhaps. Here ended, then,

Progress this way. When, in the very nick

Of giving up, one time more, came a click

As when a trap shuts—you’re inside the den!

3°

175 Burningly it came on me all at once,

This was the place! those two hills on the right,

Crouched like two bulls locked horn in horn in fight;
While to the left, a tall scalped mountain ... Duncce,
Dotard, a-dozing at the very nonce,0 *moment*
180 After a life spent training for the sight!

31

What in the midst lay but the Tower itself?
The round squat turret, blind as the fool's heart,
Built of brown stone, without a counterpart
In the whole world. The tempest's mocking elf
185 Points to the shipman thus the unseen shelf
He strikes on, only when the timbers start.

32

Not see? because of night perhaps?—why, day
Came back again for that! before it left,
The dying sunset kindled through a cleft:
190 The hills, like giants at a hunting, lay,
Chin upon hand, to see the game at bay,—
“Now stab and end the creature—to the heft!”7

33

Not hear? when noise was everywhere! it tolled
Increasing like a bell. Names in my ears
195 Of all the lost adventurers my peers,—
How such a one was strong, and such was bold,
And such was fortunate, yet each of old
Lost, lost! one moment knelled the woe of years.

34

There they stood, ranged along the hillsides, met
200 To view the last of me, a living frame

For one more picture! in a sheet of flame
I saw them and I knew them all. And yet
Dauntless the slug-horn⁸ to my lips I set,
And blew. "*Childe Roland to the Dark Tower came.*"

1852 1855

7. Handle of a dagger or sword.

8. Here, a kind of trumpet. Literally, a Scottish term for a clan's war cry.

1 0 2 6 / R O B E R T B R O W N I N G

Fra Lippo Lippi⁹

I am poor brother Lippo, by your leave!
You need not clap your torches to my face.
Zooks,¹ what's to blame? you think you see a monk!
What, 'tis pas midnight, and you go the rounds,
5 And here you catch me at an alley's end
Where sportive ladies leave their doors ajar?
T h e Carmine's my cloister:² hunt it up,
Do—harry out, if you must show your zeal,
Whatever rat, there, haps on his wrong hole,
10 And nip each softling of a wee white mouse,
Weke, weke, that's crept to keep him company!
Aha, you know your betters! Then, you'll take
Your hand away that's fiddling on my throat,
And please to know me likewise. W h o am I?
15 Why, one, sir, who is lodging with a friend
Three streets off—he's a certain ... how d'ye call?
Master—a ... Cosimo of the Medici,³
I' the house that caps the corner. Boh! you were best!

Remember and tell me, the day you're hanged,
20 How you affected such a gullet's-gripe!⁴
But you, sir, it concerns you that your knaves
Pick up a m a n n e r nor discredit you:
Zooks, are we pilchards,⁰ that they sweep the streets *fish*
And count fair prize what comes into their net?
25 He's Judas to a tittle, that man is!⁵
Just such a face! Why, sir, you make amends.
Lord, I'm not angry! Bid your hangdogs go
Drink out this quarter-florin to the health
Of the munificent House that harbors me
30 (And many more beside, lads! more beside!)
And all's come square again. I'd like his face—
His, elbowing on his comrade in the door
With the pike and lantern—for the slave that holds
John Baptist's head a-dangle by the hair
35 With one hand ("Look you, now," as who should say)
And his weapon in the other, yet unwiped!
It's not your chance to have a bit of chalk,
A wood-coal or the like? or you should see!
Yes, I'm the painter, since you style me so.
40 What, brother Lippo's doings, up and down,
You know them and they take you? like enough!
I saw the proper twinkle in your eye—
9. Florentine painter (ca. 1406—1469), whose life
up monastic vows in 1421, but was clothed by the
Browning knew from Giorgio Vasari's *Lives of the*
monastery until 1431 and was called "Fra Filippo"

Most Eminent Painters, Sculptors, and Architects

in documents until his death.

and from other sources, and whose paintings he

3. Cosimo de' Medici (1389-1464), Fra Lippo's
had studied during his years in Florence.

wealthy patron and an important political power in

1. Short for *Gadzooks*, a mild oath (perhaps orig-
Florence.

inally *God's truth*).

4. I.e., grip on my throat.

2. Fra Lippo had entered the Carmelite cloister

5. He says one of the watchmen who have arrested
Santa Maria del Carmine while still a boy. He gave
him looks exactly like Judas.

S-.

F R A L I P P O L I P P I / 1 0 2 7

'Tell you, I liked your looks at very first.

Let's sit a n d set things straight n o w , hip to h a u n c h .

**45 Here's spring c o m e , a n d t h e nights o n e m a k e s
up b a n d s T o r o a m t h e t o w n a n d sing out carnival,**

**A n d I've b e e n three w e e k s s h u t w i t h i n m y m e w
, 6**

A-painting for the great m a n , saints a n d saints

A n d saints again. I c o u l d not paint all n i g h t —

50 Ouf! I l e a n e d out of w i n d o w for fresh air.

T h e r e c a m e a hurry of f e e t a n d little feet,

A s w e e p of lute-strings, laughs, and w h i f t s of s o n g
—

Flower o' the broom,

Take away love, and our earth is a tomb!

55 Flower o' the quince,

I let Lisa go, and what good in life since?

Flower o' the thyme—and so on. R o u n d t h e y w e n t .

S c a r c e h a d t h e y t u r n e d t h e c o r n e r w h e n a t i t t e r

**L i k e t h e s k i p p i n g o f r a b b i t s b y m o o n l i g h t — t h r e e
s l i m s h a p e s , 60 A n d a f a c e t h a t l o o k e d u p ... z o o k s ,
s i r , f l e s h a n d b l o o d , T h a t ' s a l l I ' m m a d e o f ! I n t o s h r e d s
i t w e n t ,**

C u r t a i n a n d c o u n t e r p a n e a n d c o v e r l e t ,

A l l t h e b e d - f u r n i t u r e — a d o z e n k n o t s ,

T h e r e w a s a l a d d e r ! D o w n I l e t m y s e l f ,

**65 H a n d s a n d f e e t , s c r a m b l i n g s o m e h o w , a n d s o
d r o p p e d ,**

A n d a f t e r t h e m . I c a m e u p w i t h t h e f u n

H a r d b y S a i n t L a u r e n c e , 7 h a i l f e l l o w , w e l l m e t —

Flower o' the rose,

If I've been merry, what matter who knows?

70 A n d s o a s I w a s s t e a l i n g b a c k a g a i n

T o g e t t o b e d a n d h a v e a b i t o f s l e e p

E r e I r i s e u p t o - m o r r o w a n d g o w o r k

O n J e r o m e k n o c k i n g a t h i s p o o r o l d b r e a s t 8

W i t h h i s g r e a t r o u n d s t o n e t o s u b d u e t h e f l e s h ,

75 Y o u s n a p m e o f t h e s u d d e n . A h , I s e e !

**T h o u g h y o u r e y e t w i n k l e s s t i l l , y o u s h a k e y o u r h e a d
—**

**M i n e ' s s h a v e d — a m o n k , y o u s a y — t h e s t i n g ' s i n
t h a t !**

I f M a s t e r C o s i m o a n n o u n c e d h i m s e l f ,

M u m ' s t h e w o r d n a t u r a l l y ; b u t a m o n k !

so **C o m e , w h a t a m I a b e a s t f o r ? t e l l u s , n o w !**

I w a s a b a b y w h e n m y m o t h e r d i e d

A n d f a t h e r d i e d a n d l e f t m e i n t h e s t r e e t .

I s t a r v e d t h e r e , G o d k n o w s h o w , a y e a r o r t w o

O n f i g - s k i n s , m e l o n - p a r i n g s , r i n d s a n d s h u c k s ,

85 R e f u s e a n d r u b b i s h . O n e f i n e f r o s t y d a y ,

M y s t o m a c h b e i n g e m p t y a s y o u r h a t ,

T h e w i n d d o u b l e d m e u p a n d d o w n I w e n t .

O l d A u n t L a p a c c i a t r u s s e d m e w i t h o n e h a n d ,

(I t s f e l l o w w a s a s t i n g e r a s I k n e w)

90 A n d s o a l o n g t h e w a l l , o v e r t h e b r i d g e ,

B y t h e s t r a i g h t c u t t o t h e c o n v e n t . S i x w o r d s t h e r e ,

6. I.e., within the confines of my quarters (in the

Medici palace.

Medici palace).

8. I.e., on a painting of St. Jerome in the Desert.

7. The church of San Lorenzo, not far from the

1 0 2 8 / R O B E R T B R O W N I N G

While I stood munching my first bread that month:

“So, boy, you’re minded,” quoth the good fat father

Wiping his own mouth, ‘t was refection-time⁰— *mealttime*

95 “To quit this very miserable world?

“Will you renounce” ... “the mouthful of bread?” thought I;

By no means! Brief, they made a monk of me;

I did renounce the world, its pride and greed,

Palace, farm, villa, shop and banking-house,

100 Trash, such as these poor devils of Medici

Have given their hearts to—all at eight years old.

Well, sir, I found in time, you may be sure,
‘T was not for nothing—the good bellyful,
The warm serge and the rope that goes all round,
105 And day-long blessed idleness beside!
“Let’s see what the urchin’s fit for”—that came next.
Not overmuch their way, I must confess.
Such a to-do! They tried me with their books:
Lord, they’d have taught me Latin in pure waste!
110 Flower o’ the clove,
All the Latin I construe is, “amo” I love!
But, mind you, when a boy starves in the streets
Eight years together, as my fortune was,
Watching folk’s faces to know who will fling
115 The bit of half-stripped grape-bunch he desires,
And who will curse or kick him for his pains—
Which gentleman processional and fine,
Holding a candle to the Sacrament,
Will wink and let him lift a plate and catch
120 The droppings of the wax to sell again,
Or holla for the Eight⁹ and have him whipped—
How say I? nay, which dog bites, which lets drop
His bone from the heap of offal in the street—
Why, soul and sense of him grow sharp alike,
125 He learns the look of things, and none the less
For admonition from the hunger-pinch.
I had a store of such remarks, be sure,
Which, after I found leisure, turned to use.
I drew men’s faces on my copy-books,

130 Scrawled them within the antiphony's¹ marge,
 Joined legs and arms to the long music-notes,
 Found eyes and nose and chin for A's and B's,
 And made a string of pictures of the world
 Betwixt the ins and outs of verb and noun,
 135 On the wall, the bench, the door. The monks looked black.
 "Nay," quoth the Prior, "turn him out, d'ye say?"
 "In no wise. Lose a crow and catch a lark.
 "What if at last we get our man of parts,
 "We Carmelites, like those Camaldolese

140 "And Preaching Friars,² to do our church up fine

9. The Florentine magistrates. 2. I.e., members of a Dominican religious order.

1. The book containing the antiphons, or re- *Camaldolese*: members of a Benedictine religious spones chanted in the liturgy. order at Camaldoli, in the Apennines.

FRA L I P P O L I P P I / 1 0 2 9

"And put the front on it that ought to be!"

And here upon he bad medauba way.

Thank you! my head being crammed, the walls a blank, Never was such prompt disem burdening.

145 First, every sort of monk, the black and white, I drew them, fat and lean: then, folk at church, From good old gossip waiting to confess Their cribs⁰ of barrel-droppings, candle-ends — *minor thefts*

**To the breathless fellow at the altar-foot,
 150 Fresh from his murder, safe and sitting there
 With the little children round him in a row**

**O f admiration, half for his beard and half
F or that white anger of his victim 's son**

**S haking a fist at him with one fierce arm,
155 S igning 3 himself with the other because
e of Christ (Whose sad face on the cross see
s only this A fter the passion 0 of a thousand
y ears) *suffering***

**Till some poor girl, her apron o'er her head,
(Which the intense eyes looked through) c
a me a eve i 60 O n tiptoe, said a word, droppe
d in a loaf, H er pair of earrings and a bunch
o f flowers (The brut e took growling), pra
y ed, and so was gone.**

**I painted all, then cried " 'Tis ask and have;
" Choose, for more 's ready!" — laid the lad
d er flat, 165 A nd showed my covered bit of cloi
s ter - wall.**

**T he monks closed in a circle and praised lo
u d Till checked, taught what to see and not t
o see, B eings simple bodies — " That 's the
v ery man!**

**" Look at the boy who stoop stop at the dog!
170 " That woman 's like the Prior's niece who c
o mes**

" To care about this asthma : it's the life!"

**B ut the my triumph 's straw - fire flared
a nd funk ed ; 4**

**T heir better took their turn to see and say:
T he P rior and the learned pulled a face**

**175 A nd stopped all that in no time . " How ? w
h at 's here ?**

**" Quite from the mark of painting, bless us
a ll!**

" Faces, arms, legs and bodies like the true

“As much as pe a a n d p e a ! it’s devil’s - g a m e !
“Your business is not to catch men with show
, iso ” With hom a g e t o t h e p e r i s h a b l e c l a y ,
“But lift t h e m o v e r i t , i g n o r e i t a l l ,
” M a k e t h e m f o r g e t t h e r e ‘ s s u c h a t h i n g a s f
l e s h .
“Your business is to paint the souls of men —
” M a n ‘ s s o u l , a n d i t ‘ s a f i r e , s m o k e ... n o , i t ‘ s n o
t ...

185 “It’s v a p o r d o n e u p l i k e a n e w - b o r n b a b e —
“(In that shape when you die it leaves your m
o u t h)
“It’s ... w e l l , w h a t m a t t e r s t a l k i n g , i t ‘ s t h e s o
u l !

“Give us no more of body than shows soul!
” H e r e ‘ s G i o t t o , 5 w i t h h i s S a i n t a - p r a i s i n
g G o d , 3. Making the sign of the cross with one hand, 5. The
great Florentine painter Giotto di Bondone because of the
image of Christ on the altar. (1267—1337).

4. Expired in smoke.

1030 / ROBERT BROWNING

190 “That sets us praising—why not stop with him?
“Why put all thoughts of praise out of our head
“With wonder at lines, colors, and what not?
“Paint the soul, never mind the legs and arms!
“Rub all out, try at it a second time.
195 “Oh, that white smallish female with the breasts,
“She’s just my niece ... Herodias,⁶ I would say—
“Who went and danced and got men’s heads cut off!
“Have it all out!” Now, is this sense, I ask?

A fine way to paint soul, by painting body
200 So ill, the eye can't stop there, must go further
And can't fare worse! Thus, yellow does for white
When what you put for yellow's simply black,
And any sort of meaning looks intense
When all beside itself means and looks nought.
205 Why can't a painter lift each foot in turn,
Left foot and right foot, go a double step,
Make his flesh liker and his soul more like,
Both in their order? Take the prettiest face,
The Prior's niece ... patron-saint—is it so pretty
210 You can't discover if it means hope, fear,
Sorrow or joy? won't beauty go with these?
Suppose I've made her eyes all right and blue,
Can't I take breath and try to add life's flash,
And then add soul and heighten them threefold?
215 Or say there's beauty with no soul at all—
(I never saw it—put the case the same—)
If you get simple beauty and nought else,
You get about the best thing God invents:
That's somewhat: and you'll find the soul you have missed,
220 Within yourself, when you return him thanks.
“Rub all out!” Well, well, there's my life, in short,
And so the thing has gone on ever since.
I'm grown a man no doubt, I've broken bounds:
You should not take a fellow eight years old
225 And make him swear to never kiss the girls.
I'm my own master, paint now as I please—

Having a friend, you see, in the Corner-house!⁷
Lord, it's fast holding by the rings in front—
Those great rings serve more purposes than just
230 To plant a flag in, or tie up a horse!
And yet the old schooling sticks, the old grave eyes
Are peeping o'er my shoulder as I work,
The heads shake still—"It's art's decline, my son!
"You're not of the true painters, great and old;
235 "Brother Angelico's the man, you'll find;
"Brother Lorenzo⁸ stands his single peer:

6. Also called Salome; her mother (whose name of John the Baptist on a platter (Matthew 14.1-12) was Herodias as well), sister-in-law of the tetrarch

Herod, had demanded that John the Baptist be
7. I.e., the Medici palace.

imprisoned. When Salome so pleased the king with

8. Fra Angelico (1387-1455) and Fra Lorenzo
her dancing that he promised her anything she
Monaco (1370-1425).

asked, Herodias instructed her to ask for the head

I

FRALIPPOLIPPI / 1031

"Fag^o on at flesh, you'll never make the third!" *toil*

Flower o' the fine,

You keep your mistr ... manners, and I'll stick to mine!

240 I'm not the third, then: bless us, they must know!

Don't you think they're the likeliest to know,

They with their Latin? So, I swallow my rage,
Clench my teeth, suck my lips in tight, and paint
To please them—sometimes do and sometimes don't;
245 For, doing most, there's pretty sure to come
A turn, some warm eve finds me at my saints—
A laugh, a cry, the business of the world—

(Flower o' the peach,

Death for us all, and his own life for each!)

250 And my whole soul revolves, the cup runs over,
The world and life's too big to pass for a dream,
And I do these wild things in sheer despite,
And play the fooleries you catch me at,

In pure rage! The old mill-horse, out at grass

255 After hard years, throws up his stiff heels so,
Although the miller does not preach to him
The only good of grass is to make chaff.

What would men have? Do they like grass or no—

May they or mayn't they? all I want's the thing

260 Settled for ever one way. As it is,

You tell too many lies and hurt yourself:

You don't like what you only like too much,

You do like what, if given you at your word,

You find abundantly detestable.

265 For me, I think I speak as I was taught;

I always see the garden and God there

A-making man's wife: and, my lesson learned,

The value and significance of flesh,

I can't unlearn ten minutes afterwards.

270 You understand me: I'm a beast, I know.
But see, now—why, I see as certainly
As that the morning-star's about to shine,
What will hap some day. We've a youngster here
Comes to our convent, studies what do,
275 Slouches and stares and lets no atom drop:
His name is Guidi—he'll not mind the monks—
They call him Hulking Tom,⁹ he lets them talk—
He picks my practice up—he'll paint apace,
I hope so—though I never live so long,
280 I know what's sure to follow. You be judge!
You speak no Latin more than I, belike;
However, you're my man, you've seen the world
—The beauty and the wonder and the power,
9. The painter Tommaso Guidi (1401-1428),
painting, was completed by Fra Lippo's son, Filip-
known as Masaccio (from *Tomasaccio*, meaning
pino Lippi, and it is in fact more likely that Fra
“Big Tom” or “Hulking Tom”). The series of fres-
Lippo learned from Masaccio than that he saw him
coes that he painted in Santa Maria del Carmine,
as a promising newcomer.

of key importance in the history of Florentine

1 0 3 2 / R O B E R T B R O W N I N G

The shapes of things, their colors, lights and shades,
285 Changes, surprises—and God made it all!
—For what? Do you feel thankful, ay or no,
For this fair town's face, yonder river's line,

The mountain round it and the sky above,
Much more the figures of man, woman, child,
290 These are the frame to? What's it all about?
To be passed over, despised? or dwelt upon,
Wondered at? oh, this last of course!—you say.
But why not do as well as say, paint these
Just as they are, careless what comes of it?
295 God's works—paint anyone, and count it crime
To let a truth slip. Don't object, "His works
"Are here already; nature is complete:
"Suppose you reproduce her (which you can't)
"There's no advantage! you must beat her, then."
300 For, don't you mark? we're made so that we love
First when we see them painted, things we have passed
Perhaps a hundred times nor cared to see;
And so they are better, painted—better to us,
Which is the same thing. Art was given for that;
305 God uses us to help each other so,
Lending our minds out. Have you noticed, now,
Your cullion's^o hanging face? A bit of chalk, *rascal's*
And trust me but you should, though! How much more,
If I drew higher things with the same truth!
310 That were to take the Prior's pulpit-place,
Interpret God to all of you! Oh, oh,
It makes me mad to see what men shall do
And we in our graves! This world's no blot for us,
Nor blank; it means intensely, and means good:
315 To find its meaning is my meat and drink.

“Ay, but you don’t so instigate to prayer!”
 Strikes in the Prior: “when your meaning’s plain
 “It does not say to folk—remember matins,⁰ *morning prayers*
 “Or, mind you fast next Friday!” Why, for this
 320 What need of art at all? A skull and bones,
 Two bits of stick nailed crosswise, or, what’s best,
 A bell to chime the hour with, does as well.
 I painted a Saint Laurence six months since
 At Prato,¹ splashed the fresco in fine style:
 325 “How looks my painting, now the scaffold’s down?”
 I ask a brother: “Hugely,” he returns—
 “Already not one phiz^o of your three slaves *face*
 “Who turn the Deacon off his toasted side,²
 “But’s scratched and prodded to our heart’s content,
 330 “The pious people have so eased their own
 “With coming to say prayers there in a rage:
 “We get on fast to see the bricks beneath.
 1. Smaller town near Florence, where Fra Lippo
 on a gridiron; according to legend, he urged his
 painted some of his most important pictures.
 executioners to turn him over, saying that he was
 2. Saint Lawrence was martyred by being roasted
 done on one side.

FRA LIPPO LIPPI / 1 0 3 3

“Expect another job this time next year,
 “For pity and religion grow i’ the crowd—
 335 “Your painting serves its purpose!” Hang the fools!
 —That is—you’ll not mistake an idle word

Spoke in a huff by a poor monk, God wot,^o *knows*
Tasting the air this spicy night which turns
The unaccustomed head like Chianti wine!
340 Oh, the church knows! don't misreport me, now!
It's natural a poor monk out of bounds
Should have his apt word to excuse himself:
And hearken how I plot to make amends.
I have bethought me: I shall paint a piece
345 ... There's for you! Give me six months, then go, see
Something in Sant' Ambrogio's!³ Bless the nuns!
They want a cast^o o' my office.^o I shall paint *sample / work*
God in the midst, Madonna and her babe,
Ringed by a bowery flowery angel-brood,
350 Lilies and vestments and white faces, sweet
As puff on puff of grated orris-root⁴
When ladies crowd to Church at midsummer.
And then i' the front, of course a saint or t w o -
Saint John, because he saves the Florentines,⁵
355 Saint Ambrose, who puts down in black and white
The convent's friends and gives them a long day,
And Job, I must have him there past mistake,
The man of Uz (and Us without the z,
Painters who need his patience). Well, all these
360 Secured at their devotion, up shall come
Out of a corner when you least expect,
As one by a dark stair into a great light,
Music and talking, who but Lippo! I!
Mazed, motionless and moonstruck—I'm the man!

365 Back I shrink—what is this I see and hear?
 I, caught up with my monk's-things by mistake,
 My old serge gown and rope that goes all round,
 I, in this presence, this pure company!
 Where's a hole, where's a corner for escape?
 370 Then steps a sweet angelic slip of a thing
 Forward, puts out a soft palm—"Not so fast!"
 —Addresses the celestial presence, "nay—
 "He made you and devised you, after all,
 "Though he's none of you! Could Saint John there draw—
 375 "His camel-hair⁶ make up a painting-brush?
 "We come to brother Lippo for all that,
 "*Iste perfecit opus!*"⁷ So, all smile—

3. Fra Lippo painted the *Coronation of the Virgin*,
 Mark 1.6.

here described, for the high altar of Sant' Ambrogio

7. This man made the work! (Latin); possibly a ref-
 in 1447.

erence to the commissioning of the painting. The

4. Talcumlike powder made from flower roots.

figure that Browning took to be that of the painter

5. San Giovanni is the patron saint of Florence.

may be that of the patron, the Very Reverend Fran-

6. John the Baptist is often portrayed wearing

cesco Marengi, who ordered the painting in

a rough robe of camel's hair, in accord with

1441.

1 0 3 4

/ R O B E R T B R O W N I N G

I shuffle sideways with my blushing face
Under the cover of a hundred wings
380 Thrown like a spread of kirtles⁸ when you re gay *cheerful*
And play hot cockles,⁹ all the doors being shut,
Till, wholly unexpected, in there pops
The hothead husband! Thus I scuttle off
To some safe bench behind, not letting go
385 The palm of her, the little lily thing
That spoke the good word for me in the nick,
Like the Prior's niece ... Saint Lucy, I would say.
And so all's saved for me, and for the church
A pretty picture gained. Go, six months hence!
390 Your hand, sir, and good-bye: no lights, no lights!
The street's hushed, and I know my own way back,
Don't fear me! there's the gray beginning. Zooks!
ca. 1853 1855

Andrea del Sarto¹

Called "The Faultless Painter"

But do not let us quarrel any more,
No, my Lucrezia; bear with me for once:
Sit down and all shall happen as you wish.
You turn your face, but does it bring your heart?
5 I'll work then for your friend's friend, never fear,
Treat his own subject after his own way,
Fix his own time, accept too his own price,
And shut the money into this small hand
When next it takes mine. Will it? tenderly?

io Oh, I'll content him—but tomorrow, Love!

I often am much wearier than you think,
This evening more than usual, and it seems
As if—forgive now—should you let me sit
Here by the window with your hand in mine
15 And look a half-hour forth on Fiesole,²
Both of one mind, as married people use,
Quietly, quietly the evening through
I might get up tomorrow to my work
Cheerful and fresh as ever. Let us try.

20 Tomorrow, how you shall be glad for this!

Your soft hand is a woman of itself,

8. Women's gowns or skirts.

he had been paid. But he did not return, and he

9. A game in which a blindfolded player must
spent money that the king had given him to pur-
guess who has struck him or her.

chase works of art in Italy on a house in Florence

1. The Florentine painter Andrea del Sarto

for him and Lucrezia. These and other facts

(1486-1530) spent his entire life in Florence

Browning derived from Giorgio Vasari's *Lives of the*

except for a year's sojourn at the court of the

Most Eminent Painters, Sculptors, and Architects.

French king, Francis I, at Fontainebleau, 1518—

But the poem also depends on Browning's own

19. He had been married since 1517 to Lucrezia

response to Andrea's art.

del Fede, a widow, and in response to her pleading
2. A small town on the crown of a hill above Flor-
he left Fontainebleau, with the understanding that
ence.

he would soon return to complete work for which

A N D R E A D E L S A R T O / 1 0 3 5

And mine the man's bared breast she curls inside.

Don't count the time lost, neither; you must serve

For each of the five pictures we require:

25 It saves a model. So! keep looking so—

My serpentine beauty, rounds on rounds!3

—How could you ever prick those perfect ears,

Even to put the pearl there! oh, so sweet—

My face, my moon, my everybody's moon,

30 Which everybody looks on and calls his,

And, I suppose, is looked on by in turn,

While she looks—no one's: very dear, no less.4

You smile? why, there's my picture ready made,

There's what we painters call our harmony!

35 A common grayness silvers everything,

All in a twilight, you and I alike

—You, at the point of your first pride in me

(That's gone you know)—but I, at every point;

My youth, my hope, my art, being all toned down

40 To yonder sober pleasant Fiesole.

There's the bell clinking from the chapel-top;

That length of convent-wall across the way

Holds the trees safer, huddled more inside;

The last monk leaves the garden; days decrease,
45 And autumn grows, autumn in everything.
Eh? the whole seems to fall into a shape
As if I saw alike my work and self
And all that I was born to be and do,
A twilight-piece. Love, we are in God's hand.
50 How strange now, looks the life he makes us lead;
So free we seem, so fettered fast we are!
I feel he laid the fetter: let it lie!
This chamber for example—turn your head—
All that's behind us! You don't understand
55 Nor care to understand about my art,
But you can hear at least when people speak:
And that cartoon,⁵ the second from the door
—It is the thing, Love! so such things should be—
Behold Madonna! I am bold to say.
60 I can do with my pencil what I know,
What I see, what at bottom of my heart
I wish for, if I ever wish so deep—
Do easily, too—when I say, perfectly,
I do not boast, perhaps: yourself are judge,
65 Who listened to the Legate's⁶ talk last week,
And just as much they used to say in France.
At any rate 'tis easy, all of it!
No sketches first, no studies, that's long past:
I do what many dream of, all their lives,
3. Coils of hair like a serpent's coils.
5. A preparatory drawing, on heavy paper, of the

4. Her affections are focused on no one person,
same size as the painting to be executed from it in
not even on her husband, yet she is very dear to
oil or fresco.
him.

6. The pope's representative's.

1036 / ROBERT BROWNING

**70 — D r e a m ? s t r i v e t o d o , a n d a g o n i z e t o d o ,
A n d f a i l i n d o i n g . I c o u l d c o u n t t w e n t y s u c h
O n t w i c e y o u r f i n g e r s , a n d n o t l e a v e t h i s t o w n ,
W h o s t r i v e — y o u d o n ' t k n o w h o w t h e o t h e r s
s t r i v e T o p a i n t a l i t t l e t h i n g l i k e t h a t y o u s m e a r e d
75 C a r e l e s s l y p a s s i n g w i t h y o u r r o b e s a f l o
a t —**

**Y e t d o m u c h l e s s , s o m u c h l e s s , S o m e o n e s a y s ,
(I k n o w h i s n a m e , n o m a t t e r) — s o m u c h l e s s !**

W e l l , l e s s i s m o r e , L u c r e z i a : I a m j u d g e d .

**T h e r e b u r n s a t r u e r l i g h t o f G o d i n t h e m ,
s o I n t h e i r v e x e d b e a t i n g s t u f f e d a n d s t o p p e
d - u p b r a i n , H e a r t , o r w h a t e ' e r e l s e , t h a n g o e
s o n t o p r o m p t T h i s l o w - p u l s e d f o r t h r i g h t c r a f
t s m a n ' s h a n d o f m i n e .**

**T h e i r w o r k s d r o p g r o u n d w a r d , b u t t h e m s e l
v e s , I k n o w , R e a c h m a n y a t i m e a h e a v e n
t h a t ' s s h u t t o m e ,**

**85 E n t e r a n d t a k e t h e i r p l a c e t h e r e s u r e e n o u g h
, T h o u g h t h e y c o m e b a c k a n d c a n n o t t e l l t h e
w o r l d .**

M y w o r k s a r e n e a r e r h e a v e n , b u t I s i t h e r e .

**T h e s u d d e n b l o o d o f t h e s e m e n ! a t a w o r d —
P r a i s e t h e m , i t b o i l s , o r b l a m e t h e m , i t b o i l s t o o .**

90 I, painting from myself and to myself,
Know what I do, am unmoved by men's blame
e

Or their praise either. Somebody remarks

Morello's⁷ outline there is wrongly traced,
His hue mistaken; what of that? or else,

95 Rightly traced and well ordered; what of that?

Speak as they please, what does themount
ain care?

Ah, but a man's reach should exceed his
grasp, Or what's a heaven for? All is silver-gray

Placid and perfect with my art: the worse!

100 I know both what I want and what might
gain, And yet how profitless to know, to sigh

"Had I been two, another and myself,

Our head would have o'erlooked the world!" No
doubt.

Yonder's a work now, of that famous youth

105 The Urbinate⁸ who died five years ago.

('Tis copied, George Vasari⁹ sent it me.)

Well, I can fancy how he did it all,

Pouring his soul, with kings and pope to see,

Reaching, that heaven might sore replenish
him, 110 Above and through his art — for it gives
way;

That arm is wrongly put — and there again
—

A fault to pardon in the drawing's lines,

Its body, so to speak: its soul is right,

He means right — that, a child may understand.

**115 Still, w h a t an arm! a n d I c o u l d alter it:
B u t all t h e play, t h e i n s i g h t a n d t h e s t r e t c h —
O u t o f m e , o u t o f m e ! A n d w h e r e f o r e o u t ?
H a d y o u e n j o i n e d t h e m o n m e , g i v e n m e s o u l ,
W e m i g h t h a v e r i s e n t o R a f a e l , I a n d y o u !**

7. Monte Morello is a mountain lying a little to because he was born at Urbino.

the northwest of Florence in the Apennines. 9. Giorgio Vasari, the biographer, was a painter 8. The painter Raphael (1483-1520), so called and an architect and had been Andrea's pupil.

A N D R E A D E L S A R T O / 1 0 3 7

**120 Nay, Love, you did give all I asked, I think—
More than I merit, yes, by many times.**

**But had you—oh, with the same perfect brow,
And perfect eyes, and more than perfect mouth,
And the low voice my soul hears, as a bird**

125 The fowler's⁰ pipe, and follows to the snare— *bird-catcher's*

**Had you, with these the same, but brought a mind!
Some women do so. Had the mouth there urged
“God and the glory! never care for gain.**

The present by the future, what is that?

BO Live for fame, side by side with Agnolo!1

“Rafael is waiting: up fcb God, all three!”

I might have done it for you. So it seems:

Perhaps not. All is as God over-rules.

Beside, incentives come from the soul's self;

135 The rest avail not. Why do I need you?

What wife had Rafael, or has Agnolo?

In this world, who can do a thing, will not;
And who would do it, cannot, I perceive:
Yet the will's somewhat—somewhat, too, the power—
HO And thus we half-men struggle. At the end,
God, I conclude, compensates, punishes.
'Tis safer for me, if the award be strict,
That I am something underrated here,
Poor this long while, despised, to speak the truth.
145 I dared not, do you know, leave home all day,
For fear of chancing on the Paris lords.
The best is when they pass and look aside;
But they speak sometimes; I must bear it all.
Well may they speak! That Francis, that first time,
150 And that long festal year at Fontainebleau!²
I surely then could sometimes leave the ground,
Put on the glory, Rafael's daily wear,
In that humane great monarch's golden look—
One finger in his beard or twisted curl
155 Over his mouth's good mark that made the smile,
One arm about my shoulder, round my neck,
The jingle of his gold chain in my ear,
I painting proudly with his breath on me,
All his court round him, seeing with his eyes,
160 Such frank French eyes, and such a fire of souls
Profuse, my hand kept plying by those hearts—
And, best of all, this, this, this face beyond,
This in the background, waiting on my work,
To crown the issue with a last reward!

165 A good time, was it not, my kingly days?
And had you not grown restless ... but I know—
'Tis done and past; 'twas right, my instinct said;
Too live the life grew, golden and not gray,
And I'm the weak-eyed bat no sun should tempt

1. I.e., Michelangelo (1475-1564).

2. The village southwest of Paris where Francis I built the royal palace.

1038 / ROBERT BROWNING

170 Out of the grange whose four walls make
his world, *country house*

How could it end in any other way?

You called me, and I came home to your heart.

The triumph was — to reach and stay there; since
I reached it ere the triumph, what is lost?

175 Let my hands frame your face in your
hair's gold, You beautiful Lucrezia that are
mine!

"Rafael did this, Andrea painted that;

"The Roman's is the better when you pray,

"But still the other's Virgin was his wife —"

iso Men will excuse me. I am glad to judge

Both pictures in your presence; clearer grows
My better fortune, I resolve to think.

For, do you know, Lucrezia, as God lives,

Said one day Agnolo, his very self,

185 To Rafael ... I have known it all these years

...

(When the young man was flaming out his
thoughts Upon a palace-wall for Rome to see,
e,

To lifted up in heart because of it)

“Friend, there’s a certain sorry little scrub

190 Goes up and down our Florence, none care
reshow, Who, were he set to plan and execute

As you are, pricked on by your popes and kings,
Would bring the sweat into that brow of
yours!”

To Rafael’s! And indeed the arm is wrong.

195 I hardly dare ... yet, only you to see,

Give the chalk here—quick, thus the lines
hold go!

Ay, but the soul! he’s Rafael! rub it out!

Still, all I care for, if he spoke the truth,

(What he? why, who but Michel Agnolo?

200 Do you forget already words like those?)
If really there was such a chance, so lost,

Is, whether you’re—not grateful—but more
repleased.

Well, let me think so. And you smile indeed!

This hour has been an hour! Another smile
?

205 If you would sit thus by me every night

I should work better, do you comprehend?

I mean that I should earn more, give you more.

See, it is settled dusk now; there’s a star;

Morello’s gone, the watch-light show the
wall, 210 The cue-owls speak the name we c

a l l t h e m b y.

**C o m e f r o m t h e w i n d o w , l o v e — c o m e i n , a t
l a s t ,**

I n s i d e t h e m e l a n c h o l y l i t t l e h o u s e

W e b u i l t t o b e s o g a y w i t h . G o d i s j u s t .

**K i n g F r a n c i s m a y f o r g i v e m e : o f t a t n i g h t s
215 W h e n I l o o k u p f r o m p a i n t i n g , e y e s t i r e
d o u t , T h e w a l l s b e c o m e i l l u m i n e d , b r i c k f
r o m b r i c k D i s t i n c t , i n s t e a d o f m o r t a r , f i e
r c e b r i g h t g o l d , T h a t g o l d o f h i s I d i d c e m e
n t t h e m w i t h !**

L e t u s b u t l o v e e a c h o t h e r . M u s t y o u g o ?

**220 T h a t C o u s i n h e r e a g a i n ? h e w a i t s o u t s i
d e ?**

3. Refers to Raphael, who worked in Rome for the 4. A
Mediterranean owl whose name derives from last twelve years
of his life. its cry, *ki-ou*.

A N D R E A D E L S A R T O / 1 1 0 3

Must see you—you, and not with me? Those loans?

More gaming debts to pay? you smiled for that?

Well, let smiles buy me! have you more to spend?

While hand and eye and something of a heart

225 Are left me, work's my ware, and what's it worth?

I'll pay my fancy. Only let me sit

The gray remainder of the evening out,

Idle, you call it, and muse perfectly

How I could paint, were I but back in France,

230 One picture, just one more—the Virgin's face,

Not yours this time! I want you at my side

To hear them—that is, Michel Agnolo—

Judge all I do and tell you of its worth.

Will you? Tomorrow, satisfy your friend.
235 I take the subjects for his corridor,
Finish the portrait out of hand—there, there,
And throw him in another thing or two
If he demurs; the whole should prove enough
To pay for this same Cousin's freak. Beside,
240 What's better and what's all I care about,
Get you the thirteen scudi⁵ for the ruff!
Love, does that please you? Ah, but what does he,
The Cousin! what does he to please you more?
I am grown peaceful as old age tonight.
245 I regret little, I would change still less.
Since there my past life lies, why alter it?
The very wrong to Francis! it is true
I took his coin, was tempted and complied,
And built this house and sinned, and all is said.
250 My father and my mother died of want.
Well, had I riches of my own? you see
How one gets rich! Let each one bear his lot.
They were born poor, lived poor, and poor they died:
And I have labored somewhat in my time
255 And not been paid profusely. Some good son
Paint my two hundred pictures—let him try!
No doubt, there's something strikes a balance. Yes,
You loved me quite enough, it seems tonight.
This must suffice me here. What would one have?
260 In heaven, perhaps, new chances, one more chance—
Four great walls in the New Jerusalem,⁶

Meted on each side by the angel's reed,
For Leonard,⁷ Rafael, Agnolo and me
To cover—the three first without a wife,
265 While I have mine! So—still they overcome
Because there's still Lucrezia—as I choose.
Again the Cousin's whistle! Go, my Love.

. 1853

Shields (Italian); silver coins bearing a shield. 7. I.e., Leonardo da Vinci (1452—1519).

Cf. Revelation 21 . 10 - 21 .

1040 / ROBERT BROWNING

Two in the Campagna⁸

i

I wonder do you feel today
As I have felt since, hand in hand,
We sat down on the grass, to stray
In spirit better through the land,
5 This morn of Rome and May?

2

For me, I touched a thought, I know,
Has tantalized me many times,
(Like turns of thread the spiders throw
Mocking across our path) for rhymes
io To catch at and let go.

3

Help me to hold it! First it left
The yellowing fennel,⁹ run to seed
There, branching from the brickworks cleft,

Some old tomb's ruin: yonder weed

15 Took up the floating weft,⁰ *spider web*

4

Where one small orange cup amassed

Five beetles—blind and green they grope

Among the honey-meal: and last,

Everywhere on the grassy slope

20 I traced it. Hold it fast!

5

The champaign¹ with its endless fleece

Of feathery grasses everywhere!

Silence and passion, joy and peace,

An everlasting wash of air—

25 Rome's ghost since her decease.

6

Such life here, through such lengths of hours,

Such miracles performed in play,

Such primal naked forms of flowers,

Such letting nature have her way

30 While heaven looks from its towers!

7

How say you? Let us, O my dove,

Let us be unashamed of soul,

8. The grassy, rolling countryside around Rome. are used as a
condiment.

9. A yellow-flowered plant, whose aromatic seeds 1. I.e.,
grassland—here, the Campagna.

T H E R E W A S A N O L D M A N W I T H A B E A R D
/ 1 0 4 1

As earth lies bare to heaven above!

How is it under our control

35 To love or not to love?

8

I would that you were all to me,

You that are just so much, no more.

Nor yours nor mine, nor slave nor free!

Where does the fault lie? What the core

40 O' the wound, since wound must be?

9

I would I could adopt your will,

See with your eyes, and set my heart

Beating by yours, and drink my fill

At your soul's springs—your part my part

45 In life, for good and ill.

10

No. I yearn upward, touch you close,

Then stand away. I kiss your cheek,

Catch your soul's warmth—I pluck the rose

And love it more than tongue can speak—

50 Then the good minute goes.

II

Already how am I so far

Out of that minute? Must I go

Still like the thistle-ball, no bar,

Onward, whenever light winds blow,

55 Fixed by no friendly star?

12

Just when I seemed about to learn!
Where is the thread now? Off again!
The old trick! Only I discern—
Infinite passion, and the pain
60 Of finite hearts that yearn.

1854 1855

EDWARD LEAR

1812 - 1888

There Was an Old Man with a Beard
There was an Old Man with a beard,
Who said, "It is just as I feared!—

1042 / EDWARD LEAR

Two Owls and a Hen, four Larks and a Wren,
Have all built their nests in my beard!"

1846

There Was an Old Man in a Tree
There was an Old Man in a tree,
Who was horribly bored by a Bee;
When they said, "Does it buzz?" he replied, "Yes, it does!"
"It's a regular brute of a Bee!"

1846

There Was an Old Man Who Supposed
There was an Old Man who supposed,
That the street door was partially closed;
But some very large rats, ate his coats and his hats,
While that futile old gentleman dozed.

1846

The Owl and the Pussy-Cat

i

The Owl and the Pussy-cat went to sea
In a beautiful pea-green boat,
They took some honey, and plenty of money,
Wrapped up in a five-pound note.

5 The Owl looked up to the stars above,
And sang to a small guitar,

“O lovely Pussy! O Pussy, my love,
What a beautiful Pussy you are,
You are,

io You are!

What a beautiful Pussy you are!”

2

Pussy said to the Owl, “You elegant fowl!
How charmingly sweet you sing!

O let us be married! too long we have tarried:

15 But what shall we do for a ring?”

They sailed away, for a year and a day,

To the land where the Bong-tree grows

And there in a wood a Piggy-wig stood

With a ring at the end of his nose,

**H o w P L E A S A N T T O K N O W M R . L E A R / 1 0
4 3**

20 His nose,

His nose,

With a ring at the end of his nose.

3

“Dear Pig, are you willing to sell for one shilling

Your ring?" Said the Piggy, "I will."

25 So they took it away, and were married next day

By the Turkey who lives on the hill.

They dined on mince, and slices of quince,

Which they ate with a runcible spoon;

And hand in hand, on the edge of the sand,

30 They danced by the light of the moon,

The moon,

The moon,

They danced by the light of the moon.

1871

How Pleasant to Know Mr. Lear

How pleasant to know Mr. Lear!

Who has written such volumes of stuff!

Some think him ill-tempered and queer,

But a few think him pleasant enough.

5 His mind is concrete and fastidious,

His nose is remarkably big;

His visage is more or less hideous,

His beard it resembles a wig.

He has ears, and two eyes, and ten fingers,

io Leastways if you reckon two thumbs;

Long ago he was one of the singers,

But now he is one of the dumbs.

He sits in a beautiful parlor,

With hundreds of books on the wall;

15 He drinks a great deal of Marsala,²

But never gets tipsy at all.

He has many friends, laymen and clerical;

Old Foss is the name of his cat;

His body is perfectly spherical,

20 He weareth a runcible hat.³

1. Fork with three broad, curved prongs and 2. A dark, sweet Spanish wine,

sharpened edge. Lear coined the word “runcible” 3. On “runcible,” see note 1 above, and used it often in his nonsense verse.

1 0 4 4 / J O N E S V E R Y

When he walks in a waterproof³ white, *raincoat*

The children run after him so!

Calling out, “He’s come out in his night-

Gown, that crazy old Englishman, oh!”

25 He weeps by the side of the ocean,

He weeps on the top of the hill;

He purchases pancakes and lotion,

And chocolate shrimps from the mill.

He reads but he cannot speak Spanish,

30 He cannot abide ginger-beer:

Ere the days of his pilgrimage vanish,

How pleasant to know Mr. Lear!

1871

J O N E S V E R Y

1813-1880

The Dead¹

I see them crowd on crowd they walk the earth

Dry, leafless trees no Autumn wind laid bare;

And in their nakedness find cause for mirth,

And all unclad would winter's rudeness dare; *harshness*
5 No sap doth through their clattering branches flow,
Whence springing leaves and blossoms bright appear;
Their hearts the living God have ceased to know,
Who gives the spring time to th' expectant year;
They mimic life, as if from him to steal
io His glow of health to paint the livid cheek; *pale*
They borrow words for thoughts they cannot feel,
That with a seeming heart their tongue may speak;
And in their show of life more dead they live
Than those that to the earth with many tears they give.

1838 1839

The Lost

The fairest day that ever yet has shone,
Will be when thou the day within shalt see;
The fairest rose that ever yet has blown,

1. In September 1838, Very, a tutor of Greek at
employment at Harvard was terminated, and he
Harvard, had a mystical experience; he told his stu-
was sent briefly to an asylum, though many con-
dents that the Holy Spirit was speaking through
sidered him sane. Both of these poems date from
him and that the end of the world was at hand. His
his visionary period.

**I A M A P A R C E L O F V A I N S T R I V I N G S T I E
D / 1 0 4 5**

When thou the flower thou lookest on shalt be.

5 But thou art far away among Time's toys;

Thyself the day thou lookest for in them,
Thyself the flower that now thine eye enjoys,
But wilted now thou hang'st upon thy stem.
The bird thou hearest on the budding tree,
10 Thou hast made sing with thy forgotten voice;
But when it swells again to melody,
The song is thine in which thou wilt rejoice;
And thou new risen 'midst these wonders live,
That now to them dost all thy substance give.

1838-40 1883

HENRY DAVID THOREAU

1817-1862

I Am a Parcel of Vain Strivings Tied
I am a parcel of vain strivings tied
By a chance bond together,
Dangling this way and that, their links
Were made so loose and wide,
5 Methinks,
For milder weather.
A bunch of violets without their roots,
And sorrel intermixed,
Encircled by a wisp of straw
io Once coiled about their shoots,
The law
By which I'm fixed.
A nosegay which Time clutched from out
Those fair Elysian fields,¹
15 With weeds and broken stems, in haste,

Doth make the rabble rout
That waste
The day he yields.
And here I bloom for a short hour unseen,
20 Drinking my juices up,
With no root in the land
To keep my branches green,
But stand
In a bare cup.

1841

1. In Greek and Roman mythology, the home of the blessed in the afterlife.

1 0 4 6 / E M I L Y B R O N T E

Smoke

**Light-winged Smoke, Icarian bird,²
Melting thy pinions in thy upward flight;
Lark without song, and messenger of dawn,
Circling above the hamlets as thy nest;
5 Or else, departing dream, and shadowy form
Of midnight vision, gathering up thy skirts;
By night star-veiling, and by day
Darkening the light and blotting out the sun;
Go thou my incense upward from this hearth,
10 And ask the gods to pardon this clear flame.**

1 8 4 3 , 1 8 5 4

E M I L Y B R O N T E

1818-1848

[Long Neglect Has Worn Away]

Long neglect has worn away
Half the sweet enchanting smile;
Time has turned the bloom to gray;
Mold and damp the face defile.
5 But that lock of silky hair,
Still beneath the picture twined,
Tells what once those features were,
Paints their image on the mind.
Fair the hand that traced that line,
io “Dearest, ever deem me true”;
Swiftly flew the fingers fine
When the pen that motto drew.

1837 1923

Hope

Hope was but a timid friend—
She sat without^o my grated den *outside*
Watching how my fate would tend
Even as selfish-hearted men.

2. According to Greek mythology, Icarus and his father, Daedalus, escaped from Crete by flying with wings of wax and feathers. W h e n Icarus flew too near the sun, his wings melted.

R E M E M B R A N C E / 1 0 4 7

5 She was cruel in her fear.
Through the bars, one dreary day,
I looked out to see her there
And she turned her face away!
Like a false guard false watch keeping
10 Still in strife she whispered peace;

She would sing while I was weeping,
If I listened, she would cease.
False she was, and unrelenting.
When my last joys strewed the ground
15 Even Sorrow saw repenting
Those sad relics scattered round;
Hope—whose whisper would have given
Balm to all that frenzied pain—
Stretched her wings and soared to heaven;
20 Went—and ne'er returned again!

1843 **1843**

Remembrance I

Cold in the earth—and the deep snow piled above thee,
Far, far removed, cold in the dreary grave!
Have I forgot, my only Love, to love thee,
Severed at last by Time's all-severing wave?
5 Now, when alone, do my thoughts no longer hover
Over the mountains, on that northern shore,
Resting their wings where heath and fern leaves cover
Thy noble heart forever, ever more?
Cold in the earth—and fifteen wild Decembers,
10 From those brown hills, have melted into spring;
Faithful, indeed, is the spirit that remembers
After such years of change and suffering!
Sweet Love of youth, forgive, if I forget thee,
While the world's tide is bearing me along;
15 Other desires and other hopes beset me,
Hopes which obscure, but cannot do thee wrong!

No later light has lightened up my heaven,

No second morn has ever shone for me;

1. One of the Gondal poems. As children, Emily and Anne Brontë in the North Pacific, and Emily, at least, and Anne Brontë had written poems and stories continued to write Gondal poems throughout her about the inhabitants of Gondal, an imaginary life.

1 0 4 8 / E M I L Y B R O N T E

All my life's bliss from thy dear life was given,

20 All my life's bliss is in the grave with thee.

**But, when the days of golden dream had perished,
And even Despair was powerless to destroy,**

**Then did I learn how existence could be cherished,
Strengthened, and fed without the aid of joy.**

25 Then did I check the tears of useless passion —

**Weaned my young soul from yearning after thine;
Sternly denied its burning wish to hasten**

Down to that tomb already more than mine.

And, even yet, I dare not let it languish,

**30 Dare not indulge in memory 's rapturous pain;
Once drinking deep of that divinest anguish,**

How could I seek the empty world again?

1845 1846

The Prisoner. A Fragment²

In the dungeon-crypts, idly did I stray,

Reckless of the lives wasting there away;

“Draw the ponderous bars! open, Warden stern!”

He da red no t say me n a y — t h e h i n g e s h a r s h l y
turn.

5 “Our g u e s t s a r e d a r k l y l o d g e d ,” I w h i s p e r ’ d , g a z i n g
t h r o u g h T h e v a u l t , w h o s e g r a t e d e y e s h o w e d
h e a v e n m o r e g r a y t h a n b l u e ; (T h i s w a s w h e n
g l a d s p r i n g l a u g h e d i n a w a k i n g p r i d e ;)

“Aye, darkly l o d g e d e n o u g h ! ” r e t u r n e d m y s u
l l e n g u i d e .

T h e n , G o d f o r g i v e m y y o u t h ; f o r g i v e m y c a r e l e s
s t o n g u e ; i o I s c o f f e d , a s t h e c h i l l c h a i n s o n t h e
d a m p f l a g - s t o n e s r u n g :

” C o n f i n e d i n t r i p l e w a l l s , a r t t h o u s o m u c h t o f e a r ,
T h a t w e m u s t b i n d t h e e d o w n a n d c l e n c h t h y
f e t t e r s h e r e ? ”

T h e c a p t i v e r a i s e d h e r f a c e , i t w a s a s s o f t a n d
m i l d A s s c u l p t u r e d m a r b l e s a i n t , o r s l u m b e r
i n g u n w e a n ‘ d c h i l d ; 15 I t w a s s o s o f t a n d m i l d , i t
w a s s o s w e e t a n d f a i r , P a i n c o u l d n o t t r a c e a l i n e ,
n o r g r i e f a s h a d o w t h e r e !

T h e c a p t i v e r a i s e d h e r h a n d a n d p r e s s e d i t t o
h e r b r o w ;

“I h a v e b e e n s t r u c k ,” s h e s a i d , “a n d I a m s u f f e r i n g
n o w ; Y e t t h e s e a r e l i t t l e w o r t h , y o u r b o l t s a n d
i r o n s s t r o n g , 2 0 A n d , w e r e t h e y f o r g e d i n s t e e l , t
h e y c o u l d n o t h o l d m e l o n g .”

2. Taken from a poem in the Bronte sisters’ *Gon-* not found in
the story. The speaker is visiting a dal manuscript (see note 1
above), *Julian M. and* dungeon in his father’s castle.

A.G. Rochelle, this excerpt describes an episode

T H E P R I S O N E R . A F R A G M E N T / 1 0 4 9

Hoarse laughed the jailor grim: “Shall I be won to hear;
Dost think, fond, dreaming wretch, that I shall grant thy
prayer?

Or, better still, wilt melt my master’s heart with groans?

Ah! sooner might the sun thaw down these granite stones.

25 “My master’s voice is low, his aspect bland and kind,

But hard as hardest flint, the soul that lurks behind;

And I am rough and rude, yet not more rough to see

Than is the hidden ghost that has its home in me.”

About her lips there played a smile of almost scorn,

30 “My friend,” she gently said, “you have not heard me

mourn; When you my kindred’s lives, *my* lost life, can
restore,

Then may I weep and sue,—but never, friend, before!

Still, let my tyrants know, I am not doomed to wear

Year after year in gloom, and desolate despair;

35 A messenger of Hope, comes every night to me,

And offers for short life, eternal liberty.

He comes with western winds, with evening’s wandering
airs,

With that clear dusk of heaven that brings the thickest
stars.

Winds take a pensive tone, and stars a tender fire,

40 And visions rise, and change, that kill me with desire.

Desire for nothing known in my maturer years,

When Joy grew mad with awe, at counting future tears.

When, if my spirit’s sky was full of flashes warm,

I knew not whence they came, from sun, or thunder storm.

45 But, first, a hush of peace—a soundless calm descends;

The struggle of distress, and fierce impatience ends.

Mute music soothes my breast, unuttered harmony,

That I could never dream, till Earth was lost to me.

Then dawns the Invisible; the Unseen its truth reveals;

**50 My outward sense is gone, my inward essence feels:
Its wings are almost free—its home, its harbor found,
Measuring the gulph, it stoops, and dares the final bound.
Oh, dreadful is the check—intense the agony—
When the ear begins to hear, and the eye begins to see;
55 When the pulse begins to throb, the brain to think
again,
The soul to feel the flesh, and the flesh to feel the chain.
Yet I would lose no sting, would wish no torture less,
The more that anguish racks, the earlier it will bless;
And robed in fires of hell, or bright with heavenly shine,
60 If it but herald death, the vision is divine!“3**

3. Cf. the dying words of Catherine in Emily’s
escape into that glorious world, and to be always
Wuthering Heights (1847): “The thing that irks me
there. ... I shall be incomparably beyond and
most is this shattered prison [my body], ... I’m
above you all.”

tired, tired of being enclosed here. I’m wearying to

1 0 5 0 / E M I L Y B R O N T E

**She ceased to speak, and we, unanswering, turned to go—
We had no further power to work the captive woe:
Her cheek, her gleaming eye, declared that man had given
A sentence, unapproved, and overruled by Heaven.**

1845 1846

No Coward Soul Is Mine

No coward soul is mine,

No trembler in the world’s storm-troubled sphere!

I see Heaven's glories shine,
And Faith shines equal, arming me from Fear.
5 O God within my breast,
Almighty ever-present Deity!
Life, that in me hast rest
As I, undying Life, have power in thee!
Vain are the thousand creeds
io That move men's hearts, unutterably vain;
Worthless as withered weeds,
Or idlest froth, amid the boundless main
To waken doubt in one
Holding so fast by thy infinity,
15 So surely anchored on
The steadfast rock of Immortality.
With wide-embracing love
Thy spirit animates eternal years,
Pervades and broods above,
20 Changes, sustains, dissolves, creates and rears.
Though earth and moon were gone,
And suns and universes ceased to be,
And thou were left alone,
Every Existence would exist in thee.
25 There is not room for Death,
Nor atom that his might could render void
Since thou art Being and Breath,
And what thou art may never be destroyed.

1846

1850

1 0 5 1

ARTHUR H U G H C L O U G H

1819-1861

From Amours de Voyage

From Canto I

*Over the great windy waters, and over the clear crested
summits,*

Unto the sun and the sky, and unto the perfecter earth,

*Come, let us go,—to a land wherein gods of the old time
wandered,*

Where every hreath even now changes to ether] divine.

*5 Come, let us go; though withal a voice whisper, “The world
that we live in,*

Whithersoever we turn, still is the same narrow crih;

*‘Tis hut to prove limitation, and measure a cord, that we
travel;*

Let who would ‘scape and he free go to his chamber and think;

‘Tis but to change idle fancies for memories wilfully falser;

*io Tis but to go and have been. “—Come, little bark!° **small
boat***

let us go.

I. CLAUDE TO EUSTACE

Dear Eustatio, I write that you may write me an answer,

Or at the least to put us again en rapport² with each other.

**Rome disappoints me much,—St. Peter’s, perhaps, in
especial;**

**Only the Arch of Titus and view from the Lateran please
me:**

**15 This, however, perhaps, is the weather, which truly is
horrid.**

Greece must be better, surely; and yet I am feeling so spiteful,

That I could travel to Athens, to Delphi, and Troy, and Mount Sinai,

Though but to see with my eyes that these are vanity also.

Rome disappoints me much; I hardly as yet understand, but

20 Rubbishy **seems the word that most exactly would suit it.**

All the foolish destructions, and all the sillier savings,

All the incongruous things of past incompatible ages,

Seem to be treasured up here to make fools of present and future.

Would to Heaven the old Goths³ had made a cleaner sweep of it!

25 Would to Heaven some new ones would come and destroy these

churches!

However, one can live in Rome as also in London.

Rome is better than London, because it is other than London.

**It is a blessing, no doubt, to be rid, at least for a time, of
All one's friends and relations,—yourself (forgive me!)
included,—**

**30 All the *assujettissement*⁴ of having been what one has
been, What one thinks one is, or thinks that others suppose
one;**

Yet, in despite of all, we turn like fools to the English.

**Vernon has been my fate; who is here the same that you
knew him,—**

**Making the tour, it seems, with friends of the name of
Trevellyn.**

1. The clear upper air, or a heavenly material not
3. One of the barbarian tribes that sacked ancient
matter.

Rome.

2. In sympathy (French).

4. Constraint (French).

1 0 5 2 / A R T H U R H U G H C L O U G H

II. C L A U D E T O E U S T A C E

35 Rome disappoints me still; but I shrink and adapt myself to
it.

Somehow a tyrannous sense of a superincumbent⁰ oppression
overlying

Still, wherever I go, accompanies ever, and makes me

Feel like a tree (shall I say?) buried under a ruin of brickwork.

Rome, believe me, my friend, is like its own Monte Testaceo,

40 Merely a marvellous mass of broken and castaway wine-pots.

Ye gods! what do I want with this rubbish of ages departed,
Things that Nature abhors, the experiments that she has failed
in?

What do I find in the Forum? An archway and two or three
pillars.

Well, but St. Peter's? Alas, Bernini⁵ has filled it with
sculpture!

45 No one can cavil, I grant, at the size of the great Coliseum.

Doubtless the notion of grand and capacious and massive
amusement,

This the old Romans had; but tell me, is this an idea?

Yet of solidity much, but of splendor little is extant:

“Brickwork I found thee, and marble I left thee!” their
Emperor

vaunted;

50 “Marble I thought thee, and brickwork I find thee!” the
Tourist may answer.

III. GEORGINA TREVELYNTOLUISA

At last, dearest Louisa, I take up my pen to address you.

Here we are, you see, with the seven-and-seventy boxes,
Courier, Papa and Mamma, the children, and Mary and Susan:

Here we all are at Rome, and delighted of course with St.
Peter's,

55 And very pleasantly lodged in the famous Piazza di
Spagna.

Rome is a wonderful place, but Mary shall tell you about it;

Not very gay, however; the English are mostly at Naples;

There are the A.s, we hear, and most of the W. party.

George, however, is come; did I tell you about his mustachios?

60 Dear, I must really stop, for the carriage, they tell me, is waiting.

Mary will finish; and Susan is writing, they say, to Sophia.

Adieu, dearest Louise,—evermore your faithful Georgina.

Who can a Mr. Claude be whom George has taken to be with?

Very stupid, I think, but George says so *very* clever.

1858

The Latest Decalogue⁶

Thou shalt have one God only; who

Would be at the expense of two?

No graven images may be

Worshipped, except the currency:

5. Giovanni Lorenzo Bernini (1598—1680), Italian 6. The Latest Ten Commandments, sculptor.

**SAY NOT THE STRUGGLE NOUGHT A VAIN
ILETH / 1053**

5 Swear not at all; for for thy curse

Thine enemy is none the worse:

At church on Sunday to attend

Will serve to keep the world thy friend:

Honor thy parents; that is, all

10 From whom advancement may befall:

Thou shalt not kill; but needst not strive

Officiously to keep alive:

Do not adultery commit;

Advantage rarely comes of it:

15 Thou shalt not steal; an empty feat,

When it's so lucrative to cheat:

Bear not false witness; let the lie
Have time on its own wings to fly:
Thou shalt not covet; but tradition
20 Approves all forms of competition.
The sum of all is, thou shalt love,
If any body, God above:
At any rate shall never labor
More than thyself to love thy neighbor.

1862

Say Not the Struggle Nought Availeth
Say not the struggle nought availeth,
The labor and the wounds are vain,
The enemy faints not, nor faileth,
And as things have been, things remain.
5 If hopes were dupes, fears may be liars;
It may be, in yon smoke concealed,
Your comrades chase e'en now the fliers,
And, but for you, possess the field.
For while the tired waves, vainly breaking,
io Seem here no painful inch to gain,
Far back through creeks and inlets making
Came, silent, flooding in, the main,0 *sea*
And not by eastern windows only,
When daylight comes, comes in the light,
15 In front the sun climbs slow, how slowly,
But westward, look, the land is bright.

1849

1862

1 0 5 4

JULIA WARD HOWE

1819-1910

Battle-Hymn of the Republic 1

Mine eyes have seen the glory of the coming of the Lord:

He is trampling out the vintage where the grapes of wrath are stored;

He hath loosed the fateful lightning of his terrible swift sword:

His truth is marching on.

5 I have seen Him in the watch-fires of a hundred circling camps;

They have builded Him an altar in the evening dews and damps;

I can read His righteous sentence by the dim and flaring lamps.

His day is marching on.

I have read a fiery gospel, writ in burnished rows of steel:

io “As ye deal with my contemners, so with you my grace shall deal;

Let the Hero, born of woman, crush the serpent with his heel,
Since God is marching on.”

He has sounded forth the trumpet that shall never call retreat;

He is sifting out the hearts of men before his judgment-seat:

15 Oh! be swift, my soul, to answer Him! be jubilant, my feet!

Our God is marching on.

In the beauty of the lilies Christ was born across the sea,

With a glory in his bosom that transfigures you and me:

As he died to make men holy, let us die to make men free,

20 While God is marching on.

1861 1866

HERMAN MELVILLE

1819-1891

The Portent

Hanging from the beam,
Slowly swaying (such the law),
Gaunt the shadow on your green,
Shenandoah!¹

5 The cut is on the crown

1. When Howe saw Union troops camped along
tune. Howe here compares the reckoning that will
the roadside in Washington, D.C., she joined
come at the end of the war with the Day of Jeho-
friends in singing the popular Civil War song that
vah; see especially Isaiah 63.

begins “John Brown’s body lies a-mouldering in the

1. Valley in northern Virginia; the scene of famous
grave.” That night, she responded to someone’s
Civil War battles between 1862 and 1864.

suggestion that she write new verses to the same

THE MALDIVESHARK / 1055

(Lo, John Brown),²

And the stabs shall heal no more.

Hidden in the cap

Is the anguish none can draw;

10 So your future veils its face,

Shenandoah!

But the streaming beard is shown

(Weird John Brown),

The meteor of the war.

1859 1866

Shiloh³

A Requiem (April 1862)

Skimming lightly, wheeling still,
The swallows fly low
Over the field in clouded days,
The forest-field of Shiloh—
Over the field where April rain
Solaced the parched one stretched in pain
Through the pause of night
That followed the Sunday fight
Around the church of Shiloh—
The church so lone, the log-built one,
That echoed to many a parting groan
And natural prayer
Of dying foemen mingled there—
Foemen at morn, but friends at eve—
Fame or country least their care:
(What like a bullet can undeceive!)
But now they lie low,
While over them the swallows skim,
And all is hushed at Shiloh.

1866

The Maldivian⁴ Shark

About the Shark, phlegmatical one,
Pale sot^o of the Maldivian sea, *drinker*
The sleek little pilot-fish, azure and slim,

How alert in attendance be.

5 From his saw-pit of mouth, from his charnel of maw,

2. American abolitionist (1800-1859), who was

April 6 and 7, 1862, was one of the bloodiest of

hanged for leading a raid on the United States

the Civil War; close to twenty-four thousand men

armory at Harpers Ferry, West Virginia, near the

died.

Shenandoah Valley.

4. I.e., of the area around the Maldives, a group

3. The battle at Shiloh Church, in Tennessee, on

of islands in the Indian Ocean.

1 0 5 6

H

/ E R M A N M E L V I L L E

They have nothing of harm to dread,

But liquidly glide on his ghastly flank

Or before his Gorgonian⁵ head;

Or lurk in the port of serrated teeth

In white triple tiers of glittering gates,

And there find a haven when peril's abroad,

An asylum in jaws of the Fates!

They are friends; and friendly they guide him to prey,

Yet never partake of the treat—

Eyes and brains to the dotard lethargic and dull,

Pale ravener of horrible meat.

1888

The Berg

A Dream

I saw a Ship of martial build
(Her standards set, her brave apparel on)
Directed as by madness mere
Against a stolid iceberg steer,
5 Nor budge it, though the infatuate⁰ Ship went down. *foolish*
The impact made huge ice-cubes fall
Sullen, in tons that crashed the deck;
But that one avalanche was all—
No other movement save the foundering wreck.
10 Along the spurs of ridges pale,
Not any slenderest shaft and frail,
A prism over glass-green gorges lone,
Toppled; nor lace of trceries fine,
Nor pendant drops in grot or mine
15 Were jarred, when the stunned Ship went down.
Nor sole the gulls in cloud that wheeled
Circling one snow-flanked peak afar,
But nearer fowl the floes that skimmed
And crystal beaches, felt no jar.
20 No thrill transmitted stirred the lock
Of jack-straw needle-ice at base;
Towers undermined by waves—the block
A tilt impending—kept their place.
Seals, dozing sleek on sliddery ledges
25 Slipt never, when by loftier edges,
Through very inertia overthrown,
The impetuous ship in bafflement went down.

5. In Greek mythology, the Gorgons were three sisters with terrifying faces and serpent hair; whoever looked at them turned to stone.

G o D O W N , M O S E S / 1 0 5 7

Hard Berg (methought), so cold, so vast,
With mortal damps self-overcast;
30 Exhaling still thy dankish breath—
Adrift dissolving, bound for death;
Though lumpish thou, a lumbering one—
A lumbering lubbard loitering slow,
Impingers rue thee and go down,
35 Sounding thy precipice below,
Nor stir the slimy slug that sprawls
Along thy dead indifference of walls.⁶

1888

Monody⁷

To have known him, to have loved him
After loneness long;
And then to be estranged in life,
And neither in the wrong;
5 And now for death to set his seal—
Ease me, a little ease, my song!
By wintry hills his hermit-mound
The sheeted snow-drifts drape,
And houseless there the snow-bird flits
io Beneath the fir-trees' crape:
Glazed now with ice the cloistral vine
That hid the shyest grape.

1891

SPIRITUALS

Go Down, Moses¹

Go down, Moses,

Way down in Egyptland

Tell old Pharaoh

To let my people go.

6. Manuscript version of Melville's final line. In

1. Hebrew lawgiver; according to the Hebrew his first published edition of the poem, the final Scriptures, he led his people out of bondage in line reads "Along thy dense stolidity of walls."

Egypt to the edge of Canaan. Cf. Exodus 5: "After-

7. Lament; originally, a Greek ode sung by a single ward Moses ... went to Pharaoh and said, 'Thus voice, as in a tragedy. Some critics have surmised says the Lord, the God of Israel, "Let my people that Melville may have been writing about a cooled go, that they may hold a feast to me in the wilder- friendship with the American writer Nathaniel ness." ' "

Hawthorne (1804-1864).

1058 / SPIRITUALS

5 When Israel was in Egyptland

Let my people go

Oppressed so hard they could not stand

Let my people go.

Go down, Moses,

10 Way down in Egyptland

Tell old Pharaoh

“Let my people go.”

“Thus saith the Lord,” bold Moses said,

“Let my people go;

15 If not I’ll smite your first-born dead²

Let my people go.

“No more shall they in bondage toil,

Let my people go;

Let them come out with Egypt’s spoil,

20 Let my people go.”

The Lord told Moses what to do

Let my people go;

To lead the children of Israel through,

Let my people go.

25 Go down, Moses,

Way down in Egyptland,

Tell old Pharaoh,

“Let my people go!”

Steal Away to Jesus

Steal away, steal away, steal away to Jesus,

Steal away, steal away home,

I ain’t got long to stay here.

My Lord, He calls me,

5 He calls me by the thunder,

The trumpet sounds within-a my soul,

I ain’t got long to stay here.

Steal away, steal away, steal away to Jesus,

Steal away, steal away home,

io I ain't got long to stay here.

Green trees a-bending,

Po' sinner stands a-trembling,

2. After Pharaoh refused to free the Israelites, the Lord: About midnight I will go forth in the God sent a series of miracles, plagues, and punish- midst of Egypt; and all the first-born in the land of ments. Cf. Exodus 11: "And Moses said, 'Thus says Egypt shall die.' "

E Z E K I E L S A W T H E W H E E L / 1 0 5 9

The trumpet sounds within-a my soul,

I ain't got long to stay here.

15 Steal away, steal away, steal away to Jesus,

Steal away, steal away home,

I ain't got long to stay here.

Ezekiel Saw the Wheel³

Ezek'el saw the wheel

'Way up in the middle o' the air,

Ezek'el saw the wheel

'Way up in the middle o' the air.

5 The big wheel moved by Faith,

The little wheel moved by the Grace of God,

A wheel in a wheel,

'Way up in the middle o' the air.

Jes' let me tell you what a hypocrite'll do,

io 'Way up in the middle o' the air,

He'll talk about me an' he'll talk about you!

'Way up in the middle o' the air.

Ezek'el saw the wheel

'Way up in the middle o' the air,

15 Ezek'el saw the wheel
'Way up in the middle o' the air.
The big wheel moved by Faith,
The little wheel moved by the Grace of God,
A wheel in a wheel,

20 'Way up in the middle o' the air.
Watch out my sister how you walk on the cross,
'Way up in the middle o' the air,
Your foot might slip and your soul get lost!
'Way up in the middle o' the air.

25 Ezek'el saw the wheel
'Way up in the middle o' the air,
Ezek'el saw the wheel
'Way up in the middle o' the air.

3. Hebrew Scripture prophecy. Cf. Ezekiel 15:
went beside them; and when the living creatures
“Now as I looked at the living creatures, I saw a
rose from the earth, the wheels rose. Wherever the
wheel upon the earth beside the living creatures,
spirit would go, they went, and the wheels rose
one for each of the four of them ... their construc-
along with them; for the spirit of the living crea-
tion being as it were a wheel within a wheel... .
tures was in the wheels.”

And when the living creatures went, the wheels

1 0 6 0 / W A L T W H I T M A N

The big wheel moved by Faith,
30 The little wheel moved by the Grace of God,

A wheel in a wheel,
'Way up in the middle o' the air.
You say the Lord has set you free,
'Way up in the middle o' the air,
35 Why don't you let your neighbors be!
'Way up in the middle o' the air.
Ezek'el saw the wheel
'Way up in the middle o' the air,
Ezek'el saw the wheel
40 'Way up in the middle o' the air.
The big wheel moved by Faith,
The little wheel moved by the Grace of God,
A wheel in a wheel,
'Way up in the middle o' the air.

W A L T W H I T M A N

1819-1892

*From Song of Myself*¹

I

I celebrate myself, and sing myself,
And what I assume you shall assume,
For every atom belonging to me as good belongs to you.
I loafe and invite my soul,
5 I lean and loafe at my ease observing a spear of summer
grass.
My tongue, every atom of my blood, form'd from this soil,
this air,
Born here of parents born here from parents the same, and
their
parents the same,

I, now thirty-seven years old in perfect health begin,
Hoping to cease not till death.
io Creeds and schools in abeyance,
Retiring back a while sufficed at what they are, but never
forgotten,
I harbor for good or bad, I permit to speak at every hazard,
Nature without check with original energy.

1. The title Whitman gave in 1881 to the poem
“Song of Myself” was both untitled and unsec-
tioned in its first appearance. This version is based
originally published in 1855. The book, radical in
on the 2002 Norton Critical Edition by Michael
both form and content (particularly in its explicit
Moon, itself based on the Blodgett and Bradley
treatment of sexual themes), was years in the mak-
1973 Norton Critical Edition of *Leaves of Grass*,
ing and underwent many, though often slight, revi-
which was based on Whitman’s 1891—92 text.
sions.

S O N G O F M Y S E L F / 1 0 6 1

5

I believe in you my soul, the other I am must not abase itself to
you,

And you must not be abased to the other.

Loafe with me on the grass, loose the stop from your throat,

85 Not words, not music or rhyme I want, not custom or
lecture, not

even the best,

Only the lull I like, the hum of your valved voice.
I mind how once we lay such a transparent summer morning,
How you settled your head athwart my hips and gently turn'd
over
upon me,
And parted the shirt from my bosom-bone, and plunged your
tongue
to my bare-stript heart,
90 And reach'd till you felt my beard, and reach'd till you held
my feet.
Swiftly arose and spread around me the peace and knowledge
that
pass all the argument of the earth,
And I know that the hand of God is the promise of my own,
And I know that the spirit of God is the brother of my own,
And that all the men ever born are also my brothers, and the
women
my sisters and lovers,
95 And that a kelson² of the creation is love,
And limitless are leaves stiff or drooping in the fields,
And brown ants in the little wells beneath them,
And mossy scabs of the worm fence, heap'd stones, elder,
mullein
and poke-weed.³

6

A child said *What is the grass?* fetching it to me with full
hands;
100 How could I answer the child? I do not know what it is
any more
than he.

I guess it must be the flag of my disposition, out of hopeful
green
stuff woven.

Or I guess it is the handkerchief of the Lord,
A scented gift and remembrancer designedly dropt,
Bearing the owner's name someway in the corners, that we
may see
and remark, and say *Whose?*

105 Or I guess the grass is itself a child, the produced babe of
the
vegetation.

Or I guess it is a uniform hieroglyphic,
And it means, Sprouting alike in broad zones and narrow
zones,
Growing among black folks as among white,
Kanuck, Tuckahoe, Congressman, Cuff,⁴ I give them the
same, I
receive them the same.

2. Line of timber inside a ship that joins the bot- 4. Slang for
an African American. *Kanuck*: a torn structure (keel) and the
floorboards; i.e., a French Canadian. *Tuckahoe*: an inhabitant
of the source of stability. lowlands of Virginia.

3. A shrub, an herb, and a weed, respectively.

1062 / W A L T W H I T M A N

110 And now it seems to me the beautiful uncut hair of graves.
Tenderly will I use you curling grass,
It may be you transpire from the breasts of young men,
It may be if I had known them I would have loved them,
It may be you are from old people, or from offspring taken
soon out
of their mothers' laps,

115 And here you are the mothers' laps.

This grass is very dark to be from the white heads of old mothers,

Darker than the colorless beards of old men,

Dark to come from under the faint red roofs of mouths.

O I perceive after all so many uttering tongues,

120 And I perceive they do not come from the roofs of mouths for

nothing.

I wish I could translate the hints about the dead young men and

women,

And the hints about old men and mothers, and the offspring taken

soon out of their laps.

What do you think has become of the young and old men?

And what do you think has become of the women and children?

125 They are alive and well somewhere,

The smallest sprout shows there is really no death,

And if ever there was it led forward life, and does not wait at the

end to arrest it,

And ceas'd the moment life appear'd.

All goes onward and outward, nothing collapses,

130 And to die is different from what any one supposed, and luckier.

II

Twenty-eight young men bathe by the shore,

200 Twenty-eight young men and *all* so friendly;

Twenty-eight years of womanly life and all so lonesome.
She owns the fine house by the rise of the bank,
She hides handsome and richly drest aft the blinds of the
window.

Which of the young men does she like the best?

205 Ah the homeliest of them is beautiful to her.

Where are you off to, lady? for I see you,
You splash in the water there, yet stay stock still in your room.
Dancing and laughing along the beach came the twenty-ninth
bather,
The rest did not see her, but she saw them and loved them.

S O N G O F M Y S E L F / 1 0 6 3

210 The beards of the young men glisten'd with wet, it ran
from their

long hair,

Little streams, pass'd all over their bodies.

An unseen hand also pass'd over their bodies,

It descended tremblingly from their temples and ribs.

The young men float on their backs, their white bellies bulge
to the

sun, they do not ask who seizes fast to them,

215 They do not know who puffs and declines with pendant
and bending

arch,

They do not think whom they souse with spray.

13

The negro holds firmly the reins of his four horses, the block
swags

underneath on its tied-over chain,

The negro that drives the long dray of the stone-yard, steady
and tall
he stands pois'd on one leg on the string-piece,⁵
His blue shirt exposes his ample neck and breast and loosens
over
his hip-band,
His glance is calm and commanding, he tosses the slouch of
his hat
away from his forehead,
The sun falls on his crispy hair and mustache, falls on the
black of
his polish'd and perfect limbs.
I behold the picturesque giant and love him, and I do not stop
there,
I go with the team also.
In me the caresser of life wherever moving, backward as well
as
forward sluing,⁰ *turning*
To niches aside and junior⁰ bending, not a person or object
smaller
missing,
Absorbing all to myself and for this song.
Oxen that rattle the yoke and chain or halt in the leafy shade,
what
is that you express in your eyes?
It seems to me more than all the print I have read in my life.
My tread scares the wood-drake and wood-duck on my distant
and
day-long ramble,
They rise together, they slowly circle around.
I believe in those wing'd purposes,

And acknowledge red, yellow, white, playing within me,
And consider green and violet and the tufted crown
intentional,

And do not call the tortoise unworthy because she is not
something

else,

And the jay in the woods never studied the gamut,⁰ yet
musical scale

trills pretty well to me,

And the look of the bay mare shames silliness out of me.

5. Long, heavy, squared timber used to secure a load, a pier, or
some construction.

1 0 6 4 / W A L T W H I T M A N

24

Walt Whitman, a kosmos, of Manhattan the son,

Turbulent, fleshy, sensual, eating, drinking and breeding,

No sentimentalist, no stander above men and women or apart
from

them,

500 No more modest than immodest.

Unscrew the locks from the doors!

Unscrew the doors themselves from their jambs!

Whoever degrades another degrades me,

And whatever is done or said returns at last to me.

505 Through me the afflatus⁰ surging and surging, through
inspiration

me the current and index.

I speak the pass-word primeval, I give the sign of democracy,

By God! I will accept nothing which all cannot have their
counterpart of on the same terms.

Through me many long dumb voices,
Voices of the interminable generations of prisoners and slaves,
Voices of the diseas'd and despairing and of thieves and
dwarfs,
Voices of cycles of preparation and accretion,
And of the threads that connect the stars, and of wombs and of
the
father-stuff,
And of the rights of them the others are down upon,
Of the deform'd, trivial, flat, foolish, despised,
Fog in the air, beetles rolling balls of dung.
Through me forbidden voices,
Voices of sexes and lusts, voices veil'd and I remove the veil,
Voices indecent by me clarified and transfigur'd.
I do not press my fingers across my mouth,
520 I keep as delicate around the bowels as around the head
and heart,
Copulation is no more rank to me than death is.
I believe in the flesh and the appetites,
Seeing, hearing, feeling, are miracles, and each part and tag of
me is
a miracle.
Divine am I inside and out, and I make holy whatever I touch
or am
touch'd from,
525 The scent of these arm-pits aroma finer than prayer,
This head more than churches, bibles, and all the creeds.
If I worship one thing more than another it shall be the spread
of
my own body, or any part of it,

Translucent mould of me it shall be you!

Shaded ledges and rests it shall be you!

S O N G O F M Y S E L F / 1 0 6 5

530 Firm masculine colter⁶ it shall be you!

Whatever goes to the tilth⁷ of me it shall be you!

You my rich blood! your milky stream pale strippings of my
life!

Breast that presses against other breasts it shall be you!

My brain it shall be your occult convolutions!

535 Root of wash'd sweet-flag! timorous pond-snipe! nest of
guarded

duplicate eggs! it shall be you!

Mix'd tussled hay of head, beard, brawn, it shall be you!

Trickling sap of maple, fibre of manly wheat, it shall be you!

Sun so generous it shall be you!

Vapors lighting and shading my face it shall be you!

540 You sweaty brooks and dews it shall be you!

Winds whose soft-tickling genitals rub against me it shall be
you!

Broad muscular fields, branches of live oak, loving loungee in
my

winding paths, it shall be you!

Hands I have taken, face I have kiss'd, mortal I have ever
touch'd, it

shall be you.

I dote on myself, there is that lot of me and all so luscious,

545 Each moment and whatever happens thrills me with joy,

I cannot tell how my ankles bend, nor whence the cause of my
faintest wish,

Nor the cause of the friendship I emit, nor the cause of the

friendship I take again.

That I walk up my stoop, I pause to consider if it really be,
A morning-glory at my window satisfies me more than the
metaphysics of books.

550 To behold the day-break!

The little light fades the immense and diaphanous shadows,
The air tastes good to my palate.

Hefts of the moving world at innocent gambols silently rising,
freshly exuding,

Scooting obliquely high and low.

555 Something I cannot see puts upward libidinous prongs,
Seas of bright juice suffuse heaven.

The earth by the sky staid with, the daily close of their
junction,

The heav'd challenge from the east that moment over my
head,

The mocking taunt, See then whether you shall be master!

52

The spotted hawk swoops by and accuses me, he complains of
my

gab and my loitering.

6. A cutting edge fastened to a plow ahead of the

7. Land under cultivation; also, the act of culti-
plowshare.

vating soil.

1 0 6 6 / W A L T W H I T M A N

I too am not a bit tamed, I too am untranslatable,

I sound my barbaric yawp over the roofs of the world.

The last scud of day holds back for me,

1335 It flings my likeness after the rest and true as any on the
shadow'd

wilds,

It coaxes me to the vapor and the dusk.

I depart as air, I shake my white locks at the runaway sun,

I effuse my flesh in eddies, and drift it in lacy jags.

I bequeath myself to the dirt to grow from the grass I love,

1340 If you want me again look for me under your boot-soles.

You will hardly know who I am or what I mean,

But I shall be good health to you nevertheless,

And filter and fibre your blood.

Failing to fetch me at first keep encouraged,

1345 Missing me one place search another,

I stop somewhere waiting for you.

1855,1881

Crossing Brooklyn Ferry

I

Flood-tide below me! I see you face to face!

Clouds of the west—sun there half an hour high—I see you
also

face to face.

Crowds of men and women attired in the usual costumes, how
curious you are to me!

On the ferry-boats the hundreds and hundreds that cross,
returning

home, are more curious to me than you suppose,

5 And you that shall cross from shore to shore years hence are
more

to me, and more in my meditations, than you might suppose.

2

The impalpable sustenance of me from all things at all hours
of the

day,

The simple, compact, well-join'd scheme, myself
disintegrated, every

one disintegrated yet part of the scheme,

The similitudes of the past and those of the future,

The glories strung like beads on my smallest sights and
hearings, on

the walk in the street and the passage over the river,

io The current rushing so swiftly and swimming with me far
away,

The others that are to follow me, the ties between me and
them,

The certainty of others, the life, love, sight, hearing of others.

8. Wind-driven clouds.

CROSSING BROOKLYN FERRY / 1067

Others will enter the gates of the ferry and cross from shore to
shore,

Others will watch the run of the flood-tide,

Others will see the shipping of Manhattan north and west, and
the

heights of Brooklyn to the south and east,

Others will see the islands large and small;

Fifty years hence, others will see them as they cross, the sun
half an

hour high,

A hundred years hence, or ever so many hundred years hence,
oth-

ers will see them,

Will enjoy the sunset, the pouring-in of the flood-tide, the
falling-

back to the sea of the ebb-tide.

3

It avails not, time nor place—distance avails not,

I am with you, you men and women of a generation, or ever so
many

generations hence,

Just as you feel when you look on the river and sky, so I felt,

Just as any of you is one of a living crowd, I was one of a
crowd,

Just as you are refresh'd by the gladness of the river and the
bright

flow, I was refresh'd,

Just as you stand and lean on the rail, yet hurry with the swift
current, I stood yet was hurried,

Just as you look on the numberless masts of ships and the
thick-stemm'd pipes of steamboats, I look'd.

I too many and many a time cross'd the river of old,

Watched the Twelfth-month⁰ sea-gulls, saw them high in
December

the air floating with motionless wings, oscillating their
bodies,

Saw how the glistening yellow lit up parts of their bodies and
left

the rest in strong shadow,

Saw the slow-wheeling circles and the gradual edging toward
the

south,

Saw the reflection of the summer sky in the water,
Had my eyes dazzled by the shimmering track of beams,
Look'd at the fine centrifugal spokes of light round the shape
of my
head in the sunlit water,
Look'd on the haze on the hills southward and south-
westward,
Look'd on the vapor as it flew in fleeces tinged with violet,
Look'd toward the lower bay to notice the vessels arriving,
Saw their approach, saw aboard those that were near me,
Saw the white sails of schooners and sloops, saw the ships at
anchor,
The sailors at work in the rigging or out astride the spars,
The round masts, the swinging motion of the hulls, the slender
serpentine pennants,
The large and small steamers in motion, the pilots in their
pilot-
houses,
The white wake left by the passage, the quick tremulous whirl
of the
wheels,
The flags of all nations, the falling of them at sunset,

1 0 6 8 / W A L T W H I T M A N

The scallop-edged waves in the twilight, the ladled cups, the
frolic-
some crests and glistening,
45 The stretch afar growing dimmer and dimmer, the gray
walls of the
granite storehouses by the docks,

On the river the shadowy group, the big steam-tug closely
flank'd on
each side by the barges, the hay-boat, the belated lighter,⁹
On the neighboring shore the fires from the foundry chimneys
burning high and glaringly into the night,
Casting their flicker of black contrasted with wild red and
yellow
light over the tops of houses, and down into the clefts of
streets.

4

These and all else were to me the same as they are to you,
50 I loved well those cities, loved well the stately and rapid
river,
The men and women I saw were all near to me,
Others the same—others who look back on me because I
look'd
forward to them,
(The time will come, though I stop⁰ here to-day and to-night.)
stay

5

What is it then between us?
55 What is the count of the scores or hundreds of years
between us?
Whatever it is, it avails not—distance avails not, and place
avails
not,
I too lived, Brooklyn of ample hills was mine,
I too walk'd the streets of Manhattan island, and bathed in the
waters around it,
I too felt the curious abrupt questionings stir within me,

60 In the day among crowds of people sometimes they came
upon me,
In my walks home late at night or as I lay in my bed they came
upon
me,
I too had been struck from the float forever held in solution,
I too had receiv'd identity by my body,
That I was I knew was of my body, and what I should be I
knew I
should be of my body.

6

65 It is not upon you alone the dark patches fall,
The dark threw its patches down upon me also,
The best I had done seem'd to me blank and suspicious,
My great thoughts as I supposed them, were they not in reality
meagre?
Nor is it you alone who know what it is to be evil,
70 I am he who knew what it was to be evil,
I too knitted the old knot of contrariety,
9. Barge used for loading and unloading ships.

CROSSING BROOKLYN FERRY / 1069

Blabb'd, blush'd, resented, lied, stole, grudg'd,
Had guile, anger, lust, hot wishes I dared not speak,
Was wayward, vain, greedy, shallow, sly, cowardly, malignant,
75 The wolf, the snake, the hog, not wanting in me,
The cheating look, the frivolous word, the adulterous wish, not
wanting,
Refusals, hates, postponements, meanness, laziness, none of
these

wanting,
Was one with the rest, the days and haps¹ of the rest,
Was call'd by my nighest name by clear loud voices of young
men as
they saw me approaching or passing,
so Felt their arms on my neck as I stood, or the negligent
leaning of
their flesh against me as I sat,
Saw many I loved in the street or ferry-boat or public
assembly, yet
never told them a word,
Lived the same life with the rest, the same old laughing,
gnawing,
sleeping,
Play'd the part that still looks back on the actor or actress,
The same old role, the role that is what we make it, as great as
we
like,
85 Or as small as we like, or both great and small.

7

Closer yet I approach you,
What thought you have of me now, I had as much of you—I
laid in
my stores in advance,
I consider'd long and seriously of you before you were born.
Who was to know what should come home to me?
90 Who knows but I am enjoying this?
Who knows, for all the distance, but I am as good as looking at
you
now, for all you cannot see me?

8

Ah, what can ever be more stately and admirable to me than
mast-

hemm'd Manhattan?

River and sunset and scallop-edg'd waves of flood-tide?

The sea-gulls oscillating their bodies, the hay-boat in the
twilight,

and the belated lighter?

95 What gods can exceed these that clasp me by the hand, and
with

voices I love call me promptly and loudly by my nighest name
as I approach?

What is more subtle than this which ties me to the woman or
man

that looks in my face?

Which fuses me into you now, and pours my meaning into
you?

We understand then do we not?

What I promis'd without mentioning it, have you not
accepted?

1. Chance occurrences.

1 0 7 0 / W A L T W H I T M A N

**100 What the study could not teach—what the preaching
could not**

accomplish is accomplish'd, is it not?

9

**Flow on, river! flow with the flood-tide, and ebb with the
ebb-tide!**

Frolic on, crested and scallop-edg'd waves!

**Gorgeous clouds of the sunset! drench with your splendor
me, or**

the men and women generations after me!

Cross from shore to shore, countless crowds of passengers!

**105 Stand up, tall masts of Mannahatta! 2 stand up,
beautiful hills of**

Brooklyn!

**Throb, baffled and curious brain! throw out questions and
answers!**

Suspend here and everywhere, eternal float of solution!

**Gaze, loving and thirsting eyes, in the house or street or
public**

assembly!

**Sound out, voices of young men! loudly and musically call
me by my**

nighest name!

**110 Live, old life! play the part that looks back on the actor
or actress!**

**Play the old role, the role that is great or small according
as one**

makes it!

**Consider, you who peruse me, whether I may not in
unknown ways**

be looking upon you;

**Be firm, rail over the river, to support those who lean idly,
yet haste**

with the hasting current;

**Fly on, sea birds! fly sideways, or wheel in large circles
high in the**

air;

**115 Receive the summer sky, you water, and faithfully hold
it till all**

downcast eyes have time to take it from you!

**Diverge, fine spokes of light, from the shape of my head, or
any**

one's head, in the sunlit water!

**Come on, ships from the lower bay! pass up or down,
white-sail'd**

schooners, sloops, lighters!

Flaunt away, flags of all nations! be duly lower'd at sunset!

**Burn high your fires, foundry chimneys! cast black
shadows at**

**nightfall! cast red and yellow light over the tops of the
houses!**

**120 Appearances, now or henceforth, indicate what you
are,**

You necessary film, continue to envelop the soul,

**About my body for me, and your body for you, be hung
our divinest**

aromas,

**Thrive, cities—bring your freight, bring your shows,
ample and**

sufficient rivers,

**Expand, being than which none else is perhaps more
spiritual,**

**125 Keep your places, objects than which none else is more
lasting.**

**You have waited, you always wait, you dumb, beautiful
ministers,**

**We receive you with free sense at last, and are insatiate³
henceforward,**

**Not you any more shall be able to foil us, or withhold
yourselves**

from us,

2. Variant for the Native American word normally 3.
Insatiable,
spelled Manhattan.

VIGIL STRANGE I KEPT ON THE FIELD ONE NIGHT / 1071

We use you, and do not cast you aside—we plant you
permanently

within us,

130 We fathom you not—we love you—there is perfection in
you also,

You furnish your parts toward eternity,

Great or small, you furnish your parts toward the soul.

1856 1881

When I Heard the Learn'd Astronomer

When I heard the learn'd astronomer,

When the proofs, the figures, were ranged in columns before
me,

When I was shown the charts and diagrams, to add, divide,
and

measure them,

When I sitting heard the astronomer where he lectured with
much

applause in the lecture-room,

5 How soon unaccountable I became tired and sick,

Till rising and gliding out I wander'd off by myself,

In the mystical moist night-air, and from time to time,

Look'd up in perfect silence at the stars.

1865 1865

Vigil Strange I Kept on the Field One Night

Vigil strange I kept on the field one night;

When you my son and my comrade dropt at my side that day,
One look I but gave which your dear eyes return'd with a look
I shall

never forget,

One touch of your hand to mine O boy, reach'd up as you lay
on the

ground,

5 Then onward I sped in the battle, the even-contested battle,

Till late in the night reliev'd to the place at last again I made
my

way,

Found you in death so cold dear comrade, found your body
son of

responding kisses, (never again on earth responding,)

Bared your face in the starlight, curious the scene, cool blew
the

moderate night-wind,

Long there and then in vigil I stood, dimly around me the

battle-field spreading,

io Vigil wondrous and vigil sweet there in the fragrant silent
night,

But not a tear fell, not even a long-drawn sigh, long I gazed,

Then on the earth partially reclining sat by your side leaning
my

chin in my hands,

Passing sweet hours, immortal and mystic hours with you
dearest

comrade—not a tear, not a word,

Vigil of silence, love and death, vigil for you my son and my
soldier,

15 As onward silently stars aloft, eastward new ones upward
stole,

1 0 7 2 / W A L T W H I T M A N

Vigil final for you brave boy, (I could not save you, swift was
your

death,

I faithfully loved you and cared for you living, I think we shall
surely

meet again,)

Till at latest lingering of the night, indeed just as the dawn
appear'd,

My comrade I wrapt in his blanket, envelop'd well his form,

20 Folded the blanket well, tucking it carefully over head and
carefully

under feet,

And there and then and bathed by the rising sun, my son in his
grave, in his rude-dug grave I deposited,

Ending my vigil strange with that, vigil of night and battle-
field dim,

Vigil for boy of responding kisses, (never again on earth
responding,)

Vigil for comrade swiftly slain, vigil I never forget, how as
day

brighten'd,

25 I rose from the chill ground and folded my soldier well in
his blanket,

And buried him where he fell.

1865 1867

Beat! Beat! Drums!

Beat! beat! drums!—blow! bugles! blow!

Through the windows—through doors—burst like a ruthless
force,
Into the solemn church, and scatter the congregation,
Into the school where the scholar is studying;
5 Leave not the bridegroom quiet—no happiness must he have
now
with his bride,
Nor the peaceful farmer any peace, ploughing his field or
gathering
his grain,
So fierce you whirr and pound you drums—so shrill you
bugles
blow.
Beat! beat! drums!—blow! bugles! blow!
Over the traffic of cities—over the rumble of wheels in the
streets;
io Are beds prepared for sleepers at night in the houses? no
sleepers
must sleep in those beds,
No bargainers' bargains by day—no brokers or speculators—
would
they continue?
Would the talkers be talking? would the singer attempt to sing?
Would the lawyer rise in the court to state his case before the
judge?
Then rattle quicker, heavier drums—you bugles wilder blow.
15 Beat! beat! drums!—blow! bugles! blow!
Make no parley⁴—stop for no expostulation,
Mind not the timid—mind not the weeper or prayer,
Mind not the old man beseeching the young man,

Let not the child's voice be heard, nor the mother's entreaties,

4. Conference with an enemy.

OUT OF THE CRADLE ENDLESSLY ROCKING / 1073

20 Make even the trestles to shake the dead where they lie
awaiting the

hearses,

So strong you thump O terrible drums—so loud you bugles
blow.

1861 1867

Cavalry Crossing a Ford

A line in long array where they wind betwixt green islands,

They take a serpentine course, their arms flash in the sun—
hark to

the musical clank,

Behold the silvery river, in it the splashing horses loitering
stop to

drink,

Behold the brown-faced men, each group, each person a
picture, the

negligent rest on the saddles,

5 Some emerge on the opposite bank, others are just entering
the ford—

while,

Scarlet and blue and snowy white,

The guidon⁵ flags flutter gayly in the wind.

1865 1871

Out of the Cradle Endlessly Rocking

Out of the cradle endlessly rocking,

Out of the mocking-bird's throat, the musical shuttle,

Out of the Ninth-month⁶ midnight,
Over the sterile sands and the fields beyond, where the child
leaving
his bed wander'd alone, bareheaded, barefoot,
5 Down from the shower'd halo,
Up from the mystic play of shadows twining and twisting as if
they
were alive,
Out from the patches of briars and blackberries,
From the memories of the bird that chanted to me,
From your memories sad brother, from the fitful risings and
fallings
I heard,
io From under that yellow half-moon late-risen and swollen as
if with
tears,
From those beginning notes of yearning and love there in the
mist,
From the thousand responses of my heart never to cease,
From the myriad thence-arous'd words,
From the word stronger and more delicious than any,
15 From such as now they start the scene revisiting,
As a flock, twittering, rising, or overhead passing,
Borne hither, ere all eludes me, hurriedly,
A man, yet by these tears a little boy again,

5. Small flag or banner used by a military unit as here also
suggest the h u m a n cycle of fertility and a signal or guide.
birth, in contrast with “sterile sands” in the next 6. The Quaker
designation for September may line.

1 0 7 4 / W A L T W H I T M A N

Throwing myself on the sand, confronting the waves,
20 I, chanter of pains and joys, uniter of here and hereafter,
Taking all hints to use them, but swiftly leaping beyond them,
A reminiscence sing.

Once Paumanok,⁷

When the lilac-scent was in the air and Fifth-month grass was
growing,

25 Up this seashore in some briers,

Two feather'd guests from Alabama, two together,

And their nest, and four light-green eggs spotted with brown,

And every day the he-bird to and fro near at hand,

And every day the she-bird crouch'd on her nest, silent, with
bright

eyes,

BO And every day I, a curious boy, never too close, never
disturbing

them,

Cautiously peering, absorbing, translating.

Shine! shine! shine!

Pour down your warmth, great sun!

While we hash, we two together.

35 *Two together!*

Winds blow south, or winds blow north,

Day come white, or night come black,

Home, or rivers and mountains from home,

Singing all time, minding no time,

40 *While we two keep together.*

Till of a sudden,

May-be kill'd, unknown to her mate,

One forenoon the she-bird crouch'd not on the nest,
Nor return'd that afternoon, nor the next,
45 Nor ever appear'd again.
And thenceforward all summer in the sound of the sea,
And at night under the full of the moon in calmer weather,
Over the hoarse surging of the sea,
Or flitting from brier to brier by day,
50 I saw, I heard at intervals the remaining one, the he-bird,
The solitary guest from Alabama.

Blow! blow! blow!

Blow up sea-winds along Paumanok's shore;

I wait and I wait till you blow my mate to me.

55 Yes, when the stars glisten'd,
All night long on the prong of a moss-scallop'd stake,
Down almost amid the slapping waves,
Sat the lone singer wonderful causing tears.

7. The Native American name for Long Island.

OUT OF THE CRADLE ENDLESSLY ROCKING / 1075

He call'd on his mate,
He pour'd forth the meanings which I of all men know.
Yes my brother I know,
The rest might not, but I have treasur'd every note,
For more than once dimly down to the beach gliding,
Silent, avoiding the moonbeams, blending myself with the shadows,
Recalling now the obscure shapes, the echoes, the sounds and sights
after their sorts,

The white arms out in the breakers tirelessly tossing,
I, with bare feet, a child, the wind wafting my hair,
Listen'd long and long.

Listen'd to keep, to sing, now translating the notes,
Following you my brother.

Soothe! soothe! soothe!

Close on its wave soothes the wave behind,

*And again another behind embracing and lapping, every one
close,*

But my love soothes not me, not me.

Low hangs the moon, it rose late,

It is lagging—O I think it is heavy with love, with love.

O madly the sea pushes upon the land,

With love, with love.

*O night! do I not see my love fluttering out among the
breakers?*

What is that little black thing I see there in the white?

Loud! loud! loud!

Loud I call to you, my love!

High and clear I shoot my voice over the waves,

Surely you must know who is here, is here,

You must know who I am, my love.

Low-hanging moon!

What is that dusky spot in your brown yellow?

O it is the shape, the shape of my mate!

O moon do not keep her from me any longer.

Land! land! O land!

*Whichever way I turn, O I think you could give me my mate
back*

again if you only would,

For I am almost sure I see her dimly whichever way I look.

O rising stars!

*Perhaps the one I want so much will rise, will rise with some
of you.*

O throat! O trembling throat!

Sound clearer through the atmosphere!

1076 / W A L T W H I T M A N

Pierce the woods, the earth,

Somewhere listening to catch you must he the one I want.

Shake out carols!

100 Solitary here, the night's carols!

Carols of lonesome love! death's carols!

Carols under that lagging, yellow, waning moon!

*O under that moon where she droops almost down into the
sea!*

O reckless despairing carols.

105 But soft! sink low!

Soft! let me just murmur,

And do you wait a moment you husky-nois'd sea,

For somewhere I believe I heard my mate responding to me,

So faint, I must be still, be still to listen,

*110 But not altogether still, for then she might not come
immediately to me.*

Hither my love!

Here I am! here!

With this just-sustain'd note I announce myself to you,

This gentle call is for you my love, for you.

115 Do not be decoy'd elsewhere,

That is the whistle of the wind, it is not my voice,

That is the fluttering, the fluttering of the spray,

Those are the shadows of leaves.

O darkness! O in vain!

120 O I am very sick and sorrowful.

O brown halo in the sky near the moon, drooping upon the sea!

O troubled reflection in the sea!

O throat! O throbbing heart!

And I singing uselessly, uselessly all the night.

125 O past! O happy life! O songs of joy!

In the air, in the woods, over fields,

Loved! loved! loved! loved! loved!

But my mate no more, no more with me!

We two together no more.

BO The aria sinking,

All else continuing, the stars shining,

The winds blowing, the notes of the bird continuous echoing,

With angry moans the fierce old mother incessantly moaning,

On the sands of Paumanok's shore gray and rustling,

135 The yellow half-moon enlarged, sagging down, drooping,
the face of

the sea almost touching,

The boy ecstatic, with his bare feet the waves, with his hair the
atmosphere dallying,

OUT OF THE CRADLE ENDLESSLY ROCKING / 1077

The love in the heart long pent, now loose, now at last
tumultuously

bursting,

The aria's meaning, the ears, the soul, swiftly depositing,

The strange tears down the cheeks coursing,

140 The colloquy⁰ there, the trio, each uttering, *conference*

The undertone, the savage old mother incessantly crying,

To the boy's soul's questions sullenly timing, some drown'd
secret

hissing,

To the outsetting bard.

Demon or bird! (said the boy's soul,)

145 Is it indeed toward your mate you sing? or is it really to
me?

For I, that was a child, my tongue's use sleeping, now I have
heard

you,

Now in a moment I know what I am for, I awake,

And already a thousand singers, a thousand songs, clearer,
louder

and more sorrowful than yours,

A thousand warbling echoes have started to life within me,
never to

die.

150 O you singer solitary, singing by yourself, projecting me,

O solitary me listening, never more shall I cease perpetuating
you,

Never more shall I escape, never more the reverberations,

Never more the cries of unsatisfied love be absent from me,

Never again leave me to be the peaceful child I was before
what

there in the night,

155 By the sea under the yellow and sagging moon,
The messenger there arous'd, the fire, the sweet hell within,
The unknown want, the destiny of me.

O give me the clew! (it lurks in the night here somewhere,)
O if I am to have so much, let me have more!

160 A word then, (for I will conquer it,)
The word final, superior to all,
Subtle, sent up—what is it?—I listen;
Are you whispering it, and have been all the time, you sea-
waves?

Is that it from your liquid rims and wet sands?

165 Whereto answering, the sea,
Delaying not, hurrying not,
Whisper'd me through the night, and very plainly before
daybreak,

Lisp'd to me the low and delicious word death,
And again death, death, death, death,

170 Hissing melodious, neither like the bird nor like my
arous'd child's

heart,

But edging near as privately for me rustling at my feet,
Creeping thence steadily up to my ears and laving me softly all
over,

Death, death, death, death, death.

Which I do not forget,

175 But fuse the song of my dusky demon and brother,

1 0 7 8 / W A L T W H I T M A N

**That he sang to me in the moonlight on Paumanok's gray
beach,**

With the thousand responsive songs at random,

**My own songs awaked from that hour,
And with them the key, the word up from the waves,
iso The word of the sweetest song and all songs,
That strong and delicious word which, creeping to my feet,
(Or like some old crone rocking the cradle, swathed in
sweet
garments, bending aside,)
The sea whisper'd me.**

1859 1881

The Dalliance of the Eagles

**Skirting the river road, (my forenoon walk, my rest,)
Skyward in air a sudden muffled sound, the dalliance of
the eagles,
The rushing amorous contact high in space together,
The clinching interlocking claws, a living, fierce, gyrating
wheel,
5 Four beating wings, two beaks, a swirling mass tight
grappling,
In tumbling turning clustering loops, straight downward
falling,
Till o'er the river pois'd, the twain yet one, a moment's
lull,
A motionless still balance in the air, then parting, talons
loosing,
Upward again on slow-firm pinions slanting, their separate
diverse
flight,
io She hers, he his, pursuing.**

1880 1881

Reconciliation

**Word over all, beautiful as the sky,
Beautiful that war and all its deeds of carnage must in time
be
utterly lost,
That the hands of the sisters Death and Night incessantly
softly
wash again, and ever again, this soil'd world;
For my enemy is dead, a man divine as myself is dead,
5 I look where he lies white-faced and still in the coffin—I
draw near,
Bend down and touch lightly with my lips the white face in
the coffin.**

1865-66 1881

When Lilacs Last in the Dooryard Bloom'd⁸

I

**When lilacs last in the dooryard bloom'd,
And the great star early droop'd in the western sky in the
night,
I mourn'd, and yet shall mourn with ever-returning
spring.**

8. Composed immediately after the assassination of President Abraham Lincoln, April 14, 1865. Venus ("the great star," line 2), low in the western sky at this time, becomes associated with Lincoln.

**WHEN LILACS LAST IN THE DOORYARD
BLOOM'D / 1079**

Ever-returning spring, trinity sure to me you bring,
Lilac blooming perennial and drooping star in the west,
And thought of him I love.

2

O powerful western fallen star!

O shades of night—O moody, tearful night!
O great star disappear'd—O the black murk that hides the star!
O cruel hands that hold me powerless—O helpless soul of me!
O harsh surrounding cloud that will not free my soul.

3

In the dooryard fronting an old farm-house near the white-
wash'd
palings,
Stands the lilac-bush tall-growing with heart-shaped leaves of
rich
green,
With many a pointed blossom rising delicate, with the perfume
strong
I love,
With every leaf a miracle—and from this bush in the dooryard,
With delicate-color'd blossoms and heart-shaped leaves of rich
green,
A sprig with its flower I break.

4

In the swamp in secluded recesses,
A shy and hidden bird is warbling a song.
Solitary the thrush,
The hermit withdrawn to himself, avoiding the settlements,
Sings by himself a song.
Song of the bleeding throat,
Death's outlet song of life, (for well dear brother I know,
If thou wast not granted to sing thou would'st surely die.)

5

Over the breast of the spring, the land, amid cities,

Amid lanes and through old woods, where lately the violets
peep'd
from the ground, spotting the gray debris,
Amid the grass in the fields each side of the lanes, passing the
endless grass,
Passing the yellow-spear'd wheat, every grain from its shroud
in the
dark-brown fields uprisen,
Passing the apple-tree blows of white and pink in the orchards,
Carrying a corpse to where it shall rest in the grave,
Night and day journeys a coffin.

1080 / W A L T W H I T M A N

24

Coffin that passes through lanes and streets,⁹
Through day and night with the great cloud darkening the
land,
35 With the pomp of the inloop'd flags with the cities draped
in black,
With the show of the States themselves as of crape-veil'd
women
standing,
With processions long and winding and the flambeaus⁰ of the
torches
night,
With the countless torches lit, with the silent sea of faces and
the
unbared heads,
With the waiting depot, the arriving coffin, and the sombre
faces,
40 With dirges through the night, with the thousand voices
rising strong

and solemn,

With all the mournful voices of the dirges pour'd around the coffin,

The dim-lit churches and the shuddering organs—where amid these

you journey,

With the tolling tolling bells' perpetual clang,

Here, coffin that slowly passes,

45 I give you my sprig of lilac.

7

(Nor for you, for one alone,

Blossoms and branches green to coffins all I bring,

For fresh as the morning, thus would I chant a song for you O sane

and sacred death.

All over bouquets of roses,

50 O death, I cover you over with roses and early lilies,

But mostly and now the lilac that blooms the first,

Copious I break, I break the sprigs from the bushes,

With loaded arms I come, pouring for you,

For you and the coffins all of you O death.)

8

55 O western orb sailing the heaven,

Now I know what you must have meant as a month since I walk'd,

As I walk'd in silence the transparent shadowy night,

As I saw you had something to tell as you bent to me night after

night,

As you droop'd from the sky low down as if to my side, (while
the

other stars all look'd on,)

60 As we wander'd together the solemn night, (for something
I know not

what kept me from sleep,)

As the night advanced, and I saw on the rim of the west how
full you

were of woe,

As I stood on the rising ground in the breeze in the cool
transparent

night,

9. Lincoln's funeral procession traveled from Washington,
D.C., to Springfield, Illinois, stopping at cities and towns all
along the way for the people to honor the murdered president.

**WHEN LILAC SLAST IN THE DOORYARD
BLOOM'D / 1081**

**As I watch'd where you pass'd and was lost in the
netherward black of**

the night,

**As my soul in its trouble dissatisfied sank, as where you
sad orb,**

Concluded, dropt in the night, and was gone.

9

Sing on there in the swamp,

**0 singer bashful and tender, I hear your notes, I hear your
call,**

1 hear, I come presently, I understand you,

**But a moment I linger, for the lustrous star has detain'd
me,**

The star my departing comrade holds and detains me.

10

O how shall I warble myself for the dead one there I loved?

**And how shall I deck my song for the large sweet soul that
has gone?**

And what shall my perfume be for the grave of him I love?

Sea-winds blown from east and west,

**Blown from the Eastern sea and blown from the Western
sea, till**

there on the prairies meeting,

These and with these and the breath of my chant,

I'll perfume the grave of him I love.

11

O what shall I hang on the chamber walls?

And what shall the pictures be that I hang on the walls,

To adorn the burial-house of him I love?

Pictures of growing spring and farms and homes,

**With the Fourth-month⁰ eve at sundown, and the gray
smoke *April***

lucid and bright,

**With floods of the yellow gold of the gorgeous, indolent,
sinking sun,**

burning, expanding the air,

**With the fresh sweet herbage under foot, and the pale
green leaves of**

the trees prolific,

**In the distance the flowing glaze, the breast of the river,
with a wind-**

dapple here and there,

**With ranging hills on the banks, with many a line against
the sky, and**

shadows,

**And the city at hand with dwellings so dense, and stacks of
chimneys,**

**And all the scenes of life and the workshops, and the
workmen home-**

ward returning.

12

Lo, body and soul—this land,

**My own Manhattan with spires, and the sparkling and
hurrying tides,**

and the ships,

1 0 8 2 / W A L T W H I T M A N

The varied and ample land, the South and the North in the
light,

Ohio's shores and flashing Missouri,

And ever the far-spreading prairies cover'd with grass and
corn.

Lo, the most excellent sun so calm and haughty,

The violet and purple morn with just-felt breezes,

95 The gentle soft-born measureless light,

The miracle spreading bathing all, the fulfill'd noon,

The coming eve delicious, the welcome night and the stars,

Over my cities shining all, enveloping man and land.

13

Sing on, sing on you gray-brown bird,

100 Sing from the swamps, the recesses, pour your chant
from the

bushes,

Limitless out of the dusk, out of the cedars and pines.

Sing on dearest brother, warble your reedy song,

Loud human song, with voice of uttermost woe.

O liquid and free and tender!

105 O wild and loose to my soul—O wondrous singer!

You only I hear—yet the star holds me, (but will soon depart,)

Yet the lilac with mastering odor holds me.

14

Now while I sat in the day and look'd forth,

In the close of the day with its light and the fields of spring,
and the

farmers preparing their crops,

110

In the large unconscious scenery of my land with its lakes and
forests,

In the heavenly aerial beauty, (after the perturb'd winds and
the

storms,)

Under the arching heavens of the afternoon swift passing, and
the

voices of children and women,

The many-moving sea-tides, and I saw the ships how they
sail'd,

And the summer approaching with richness, and the fields all
busy

with labor,

115

And the infinite separate houses, how they all went on, each
with its

meals and minutia of daily usages,

And the streets how their throbbings throb'd, and the cities
pent—

lo, then and there,

Falling upon them all and among them all, enveloping me with
the

rest,

Appear'd the cloud, appear'd the long black trail,

And I knew death, its thought, and the sacred knowledge of
death.

120 Then with the knowledge of death as walking one side of
me,

And the thought of death close-walking the other side of me,

**WHEN LILACS LAST IN THE DOORYARD
BLOOM'D / 1083**

And I in the middle as with companions, and as holding the
hands of

companions,

I fled forth to the hiding receiving night that talks not,

Down to the shores of the water, the path by the swamp in the
dimness,

125 To the solemn shadowy cedars and ghostly pines so still.

And the singer so shy to the rest receiv'd me,

The gray-brown bird I know receiv'd us comrades three,

And he sang the carol of death, and a verse for him I love.

From deep secluded recesses,

130 From the fragrant cedars and the ghostly pines so still,

Came the carol of the bird.

And the charm of the carol rapt me,

As I held as if by their hands my comrades in the night,

And the voice of my spirit tallied the song of the bird.

135 *Come lovely and soothing death,*

Undulate round the world, serenely arriving, arriving,

In the day, in the night, to all, to each,

Sooner or later delicate death.

Prais'd be the fathomless universe,

140 For life and joy, and for objects and knowledge curious,

And for love, sweet love—but praise! praise! praise!

For the sure-enwinding arms of cool-enfolding death.

Dark mother always gliding near with soft feet,

Have none chanted for thee a chant of fullest welcome?

145 Then I chant it for thee, I glorify thee above all,

*I bring thee a song that when thou must indeed come, come
unflinchingly.*

Approach strong deliveress,

*When it is so, when thou hast taken them I joyously sing the
dead,*

Lost in the loving floating ocean of thee,

150 Laved in the flood of thy bliss O death.

From me to thee glad serenades,

*Dances for thee I propose saluting thee, adornments and
feastings for*

thee,

*And the sights of the open landscape and the high-spread sky
are*

fitting,

And life and the fields, and the huge and thoughtful night.

155 The night in silence under many a star,

*The ocean shore and the husky whispering wave whose voice I
know,*

And the soul turning to thee O vast and well-veil'd death,

And the body gratefully nestling close to thee.

1 0 8 4 / W A L T W H I T M A N

Over the tree-tops I float thee a song,

*i60 Over the rising and sinking waves, over the myriad fields
and the*

prairies wide,

*Over the dense-pack'd cities all and the teeming wharves and
ways,*

I float this carol with joy, with joy to thee O death.

15

To the tally of my soul,

Loud and strong kept up the gray-brown bird,

165 With pure deliberate notes spreading filling the night.

Loud in the pines and cedars dim,

Clear in the freshness moist and the swamp-perfume,

And I with my comrades there in the night.

While my sight that was bound in my eyes unclosed,

170 As to long panoramas of visions.

And I saw askant the armies,

I saw as in noiseless dreams hundreds of battle-flags,

Borne through the smoke of the battles and pierc'd with
missiles I

saw them,

And carried hither and yon through the smoke, and torn and
bloody,

175 And at last but a few shreds left on the staffs, (and all in
silence,)

And the staffs all splinter'd and broken.

I saw battle-corpses, myriads of them,

And the white skeletons of young men, I saw them,

I saw the debris and debris of all the slain soldiers of the war,

iso But I saw they were not as was thought,
They themselves were fully at rest, they suffer'd not,
The living remain'd and suffer'd, the mother suffer'd,
And the wife and the child and the musing comrade suffer'd,
And the armies that remain'd suffer'd.

16

185 Passing the visions, passing the night,
Passing, unloosing the hold of my comrades' hands,
Passing the song of the hermit bird and the tallying song of my
soul,
Victorious song, death's outlet song, yet varying ever-altering
song,
As low and wailing, yet clear the notes, rising and falling,
flooding the
night,

190 Sadly sinking and fainting, as warning and warning, and
yet again

bursting with joy,

Covering the earth and filling the spread of the heaven,
As that powerful psalm in the night I heard from recesses,
Passing, I leave thee lilac with heart-shaped leaves,
I leave thee there in the door-yard, blooming, returning with
spring.

T o A L O C O M O T I V E I N W I N T E R / 1 0 8 5

195 I cease from my song for thee,
From my gaze on thee in the west, fronting the west,
communing
with thee,
O comrade lustrous with silver face in the night.
Yet each to keep and all, retrievements out of the night,

The song, the wondrous chant of the gray-brown bird,
200 And the tallying chant, the echo arous'd in my soul,
With the lustrous and drooping star with the countenance full
of
woe,
With the holders holding my hand nearing the call of the bird,
Comrades mine and I in the midst, and their memory ever to
keep,
for the dead I loved so well,
For the sweetest, wisest soul of all my days and lands—and
this for
his dear sake,
205 Lilac and star and bird twined with the chant of my soul,
There in the fragrant pines and the cedars dusk and dim.

1865-66 1881

A Noiseless Patient Spider

A noiseless patient spider,

I mark'd where on a little promontory it stood isolated,

Mark'd how to explore the vacant vast surrounding,

It launch'd forth filament, filament, filament, out of itself,

5 Ever unreeling them, ever tirelessly speeding them.

And you O my soul where you stand,

Surrounded, detached, in measureless oceans of space,

Ceaselessly musing, venturing, throwing, seeking the spheres
to

connect them,

Till the bridge you will need be form'd, till the ductile anchor
hold,

io Till the gossamer thread you fling catch somewhere, O my
soul.

1868 1881

To a Locomotive in Winter

Thee for my recitative,

Thee in the driving storm even as now, the snow, the winter-day

declining,

Thee in thy panoply,¹ thy measur'd dual throbbing and thy beat

convulsive,

Thy black cylindric body, golden brass and silvery steel,

5 Thy ponderous side-bars, parallel and connecting rods, gyrating,

shuttling at thy sides,

1. Protective covering or magnificent display.

**1 0 8 6 / F R E D E R I C K G O D D A R D T U C K E R
M A N**

Thy metrical, now swelling pant and roar, now tapering in the distance,

Thy great protruding head-light fix'd in front,

Thy long, pale, floating vapor-pennants, tinged with delicate purple,

The dense and murky clouds out-belching from thy smoke-stack,

10 Thy knitted frame, thy springs and valves, the tremulous twinkle of

thy wheels,

Thy train of cars behind, obedient, merrily following,

Through gale or calm, now swift, now slack, yet steadily careering;

Type of the modern—emblem of motion and power—pulse of the

continent,

For once come serve the Muse² and merge in verse, even as
here I

see thee,

15 With storm and buffeting gusts of wind and falling snow,

By day thy warning ringing bell to sound its notes,

By night thy silent signal lamps to swing.

Fierce-throated beauty!

Roll through my chant with all thy lawless music, thy
swinging

lamps at night,

20 Thy madly-whistled laughter, echoing, rumbling like an
earthquake,

rousing all,

Law of thyself complete, thine own track firmly holding,

(No sweetness debonair of tearful harp or glib piano thine,)

Thy trills of shrieks by rocks and hills return'd,

Launch'd o'er the prairies wide, across the lakes,

25 To the free skies unpent and glad and strong.

1876 1881

F R E D E R I C K G O D D A R D T U C K E R M A N

1821-1873

*From Sonnets, Third Series*¹

/V

Thin little leaves of wood fern, ribbed and toothed,

Long curved sail needles of the green pitch pine,

With common sandgrass, skirt the horizon line,

And over these the incorruptible blue!

5 Here let me gently lie and softly view

All world asperities,0 lightly touched and smoothed
roughnesses

As by his gracious hand, the great Bestower.

What though the year be late? some colors run

Yet through the dry, some links of melody,

io Still let me be, by such, assuaged and soothed

And happier made, as when, our schoolday done,

2. Source of poetic inspiration.

1. Tuckerman wrote five series of sonnets; some, including the third, were published posthumously.

SHAKESPEARE / 1087

We hunted on from flower to frosty flower,

Tattered and dim, the last red butterfly,

Or the old grasshopper molasses-mouthed.

V

How well do I recall that walk in state

Across the Common, by the paths we knew:

Myself in silver badge and riband0 blue, *ribbon*

My little sister with her book and slate;

5 The elm tree by the Pond, the fence of wood,

The burial place that at the corner stood

Where once we crossed, through the forbidden grate,

The stones that grudg'd us way, the graveside weed,

The ominous wind that turned us half about.

10 Smit° by the flying drops, at what a speed *hit*

Across the paths, unblessed and unforgiven

We hurried homeward when the day was late

And heard, with awe that left no place for doubt,

God's anger mutter in the darkened heaven.

VI

I looked across the rollers of the deep,
Long land-swells, ropes of weed, and riding foam,
With bitter angry heart: did I not roam
Ever like these? And what availeth sleep?
5 Or wakefulness? or pain? And still the sea
Rustled and sang, "Alike! and one to me!"
Ay! once I trod these shores too happily,
Murmuring my gladness to the rocks and ground
And, while the wave broke loud on ledge and reef,
io Whispered it in the pause, like one who tells
His heart's dream and delight! And still the sea
Went back and forth upon its bar of shells,
Washed and withdrew, with a soft shaling sound,
As though the wet were dry and joy were grief.

1860-72 1931

M A T T H E W A R N O L D

1 8 2 2 - 1 8 8 8

Shakespeare

Others abide our question. Thou art free.
We ask and ask—Thou smilest and art still,
Out-topping knowledge. For the loftiest hill,
Who to the stars uncrowns his majesty,

1 0 8 8 / M A T T H E W A R N O L D

5 Planting his steadfast footsteps in the sea,
Making the heaven of heavens his dwelling-place,
Spare but the cloudy border of his base
To the foiled searching of mortality;

And thou, who didst the stars and sunbeams know,
10 Self-schooled, self-scanned, self-honored, self-secure,
Didst tread on earth unguessed at—better so!
All pains the immortal spirit must endure,
All weakness which impairs, all griefs which bow,
Find their sole speech in that victorious brow.

1849

To Marguerite

Yes! in the sea of life enisled,
With echoing straits between us thrown,
Dotting the shoreless watery wild,
We mortal millions live *alone*.
5 The islands feel the enclaspings flow,
And then their endless bounds they know.
But when the moon their hollows lights,
And they are swept by balms of spring,
And in their glens, on starry nights,
10 The nightingales divinely sing;
And lovely notes, from shore to shore,
Across the sounds and channels pour—
Oh! then a longing like despair
Is to their farthest caverns sent;
15 For surely once, they feel, we were
Parts of a single continent!
Now round us spreads the watery plain—
Oh might our margins meet again! *margins*
Who ordered, that their longing's fire
20 Should be, as soon as kindled, cooled?

Who renders vain their deep desire?—

A God, a God their severance ruled!

And bade betwixt their shores to be

The unplumbed, salt, estranging sea.

1852

THE SCHOLAR - GYPSY / 1089

The Scholar-Gypsy¹

Go, for they call you, shepherd, from the hill;

Go, shepherd, and untie the wattled cotes!²

No longer leave thy wistful flock unfed,

Nor let thy bawling fellows rack their throats,

5 Nor the cropped herbage shoot another head.

But when the fields are still,

And the tired men and dogs all gone to rest,

And only the white sheep are sometimes seen

Cross and recross the strips of moon-blanch'd green,

10 Come, shepherd, and again begin the quest!

Here, where the reaper was at work of late—

In this high field's dark corner, where he leaves

His coat, his basket, and his earthen cruse,⁰ *vessel*

And in the sun all morning binds the sheaves,

15 Then here, at noon, comes back his stores to use—

Here will I sit and wait,

While to my ear from uplands far away

The bleating of the folded⁰ flocks is borne, *penned up*

With distant cries of reapers in the corn⁰— *grain*

20 All the live murmur of a summer's day.

Screened is this nook o'er the high, half-reaped field,

And here till sundown, shepherd! will I be.
Through the thick corn the scarlet poppies peep,
And round green roots and yellowing stalks I see
25 Pale pink convolvulus in tendrils creep;
And air-swept lindens yield
Their scent, and rustle down their perfumed showers
Of bloom on the bent grass where I am laid,
And bower me from the August sun with shade;
BO And the eye travels down to Oxford's towers.
And near me on the grass lies Glanvil's book—
Come, let me read the oft-read tale again!
The story of the Oxford scholar poor,
Of pregnant parts³ and quick inventive brain,
35 Who, tired of knocking at preferment's door,
One summer-morn forsook

1. ” “There was very lately a lad in the University life, and told them that the people he went with of Oxford, who was by his poverty forced to leave were not such impostors as they were taken for, his studies there; and at last to join himself to a but that they had a traditional kind of learning company of vagabond gypsies. Among these extrav- among them, and could do wonders by the power agant people, by the insinuating subtlety of his car- of imagination, their fancy binding that of others: riage, he quickly got so much of their love and that himself had learned much of their art, and esteem as that they discovered to him their mys-

when he had compassed the whole secret, he
tery. After he had been a pretty while well exercised
intended, he said, to leave their company, and give
in the trade, there chanced to ride by a couple of
the world an account of what he had learned.’—
scholars, who had formerly been of his acquaint-
Glanvil’s *Vanity of Dogmatizing*, 1661” [Arnold’s
tance. They quickly spied out their old friend
note].

among the gypsies; and he gave them an account
2. Sheepfolds made of woven boughs (wattles).
of the necessity which drove him to that kind of
3. I.e., of intellectual abilities.

1 0 9 0 / M A T T H E W A R N O L D

His friends, and went to learn the gypsy-lore,
And roamed the world with that wild brotherhood,
And came, as most men deemed, to little good,
40 But came to Oxford and his friends no more.
But once, years after, in the country-lanes,
Two scholars, whom at college erst he knew,
Met him, and of his way of life enquired;
Whereat he answered, that the gypsy-crew,
45 His mates, had arts to rule as they desired
The workings of men’s brains,
And they can bind them to what thoughts they will.
“And I,” he said, “the secret of their art,
When fully learned, will to the world impart;
50 But it needs heaven-sent moments for this skill.”

This said, he left them, and returned no more.—
But rumors hung about the country-side,
That the lost Scholar long was seen to stray,
Seen by rare glimpses, pensive and tongue-tied,
55 In hat of antique shape, and cloak of gray.
The same the gypsies wore.
Shepherds had met him on the Hurst⁴ in spring;
At some lone alehouse in the Berkshire moors,
On the warm ingle^o-bench, the smock-frocked *fireside*
boors^o *rustics*
60 Had found him seated at their entering,
But, 'mid their drink and clatter, he would fly.
And I myself seem half to know thy looks,
And put the shepherds, wanderer! on thy trace;
And boys who in lone wheatfields scare the rooks⁵
65 I ask if thou hast passed their quiet place;
Or in my boat I lie
Moored to the cool bank in the summer-heats,
'Mid wide grass meadows which the sunshine fills,
And watch the warm, green-muffled Cumner hills,
70 And wonder if thou haunt'st their shy retreats.
For most, I know, thou lov'st retired ground!
Thee at the ferry Oxford riders blithe,
Returning home on summer-nights, have met
Crossing the stripling Thames⁶ at Bab-lock-hithe,
75 Trailing in the cool stream thy fingers wet,
As the punt's rope chops round;⁷
And leaning backward in a pensive dream,

And fostering in thy lap a heap of flowers

4. A hill near Oxford. (All place-names in the away from eating wheat grains.

poem, with the obvious exception of the Mediter-

6. The narrow upper reaches of the river before it ranean localities of the last two stanzas, refer to broadens out to its full width.

the countryside around Oxford.)

7. I.e., as the rope tying the small boat to the bank

5. The boys have been hired to frighten crows shifts around.

THE SCHOLAR - GYPSY / 1091

Plucked in shy fields and distant Wychwood bowers,

And thine eyes resting on the moonlit stream.

And then they land, and thou art seen no more!

Maidens, who from the distant hamlets come

To dance around the Fyfield elm in May,

Oft through the darkening fields have seen thee roam,

Or cross a stile into the public way.

Oft thou hast given them store

Of flowers—the frail-leafed, white anemone,

Dark bluebells drenched with dew of summer eves,

And purple orchises with spotted leaves—

But none hath words she can report of thee.

And, above Godstow Bridge, when hay-time's here

In June, and many a scythe in sunshine flames,

Men who through those wide fields of breezy grass

Where black-winged swallows haunt the glittering Thames,

To bathe in the abandoned lasher⁸ pass,
Have often passed thee near
Sitting upon the river bank o'ergrown;
Marked thine outlandish garb, thy figure spare,
Thy dark vague eyes, and soft abstracted air—
But, when they came from bathing, thou wast gone!
At some lone homestead in the Cumner hills,
Where at her open door the housewife darns,
Thou hast been seen, or hanging on a gate
To watch the threshers in the mossy barns.
Children, who early range these slopes and late
For cresses from the rills,⁰ *streams*
Have known thee eying, all an April-day,
The springing pastures and the feeding kine;^o *cattle*
And marked thee, when the stars come out and shine,
Through the long dewy grass move slow away.
In autumn, on the skirts of Bagley Wood—
Where most the gypsies by the turf-edged way
Pitch their smoked tents, and every bush you see
With scarlet patches tagged and shreds of gray,
Above the forest-ground called Thessaly—
The blackbird, picking food,
Sees thee, nor stops his meal, nor fears at all;
So often has he known thee past him stray,
Rapt, twirling in thy hand a withered spray,
And waiting for the spark from heaven to fall.
And once, in winter, on the causeway chill
Where home through flooded fields foot-travelers go,

Have I not passed thee on the wooden bridge,
8. Slack water above a weir, or dam.

1 0 9 2 / M A T T H E W A R N O L D

Wrapt in thy cloak and battling with the snow,
125 Thy face tow'rd Hinksey and its wintry ridge?
And thou hast climbed the hill,
And gained the white brow of the Cumner range;
Turned once to watch, while thick the snowflakes fall,
The line of festal light in Christ Church hall—
iBo Then sought thy straw in some sequestered grange.⁹
But what—I dream! Two hundred years are flown
Since first thy story ran through Oxford halls,
And the grave Glanvil did the tale inscribe
That thou wert wandered from the studious walls
135 To learn strange arts, and join a gypsy-tribe;
And thou from earth art gone
Long since, and in some quiet churchyard laid—
Some country-nook, where o'er thy unknown grave
Tall grasses and white flowering nettles wave,
140 Under a dark, red-fruited yew-tree's shade.
—No, no, thou hast not felt the lapse of hours!
For what wears out the life of mortal men?
'Tis that from change to change their being rolls;
'Tis that repeated shocks, again, again,
145 Exhaust the energy of strongest souls
And numb the elastic powers.
Till having used our nerves with bliss and teen,^o *vexation*
And tired upon a thousand schemes our wit,

To the just-pausing Genius¹ we remit
 150 Our worn-out life, and are—what we have been.
 Thou hast not lived, why should'st thou perish, so?
 Thou hadst *one* aim, *one* business, *one* desire;
 Else wert thou long since numbered with the dead!
 Else hadst thou spent, like other men, thy fire!
 155 The generations of thy peers are fled.
 And we ourselves shall go;
 But thou possessest an immortal lot,
 And we imagine thee exempt from age
 And living as thou liv'st on Glanvil's page,
 160 Because thou hadst—what we, alas! have not.
 For early didst thou leave the world, with powers
 Fresh, undiverted to the world without,
 Firm to their mark, not spent on other things;
 Free from the sick fatigue, the languid doubt,
 165 Which much to have tried, in much been baffled, brings.
 O life unlike to ours!
 Who fluctuate idly without term or scope,
 9. Country house. *Christ Church hall*: dining hall
 assigned to each being to see it through the world
 of an Oxford college.
 and finally to usher it out.

1. In classical mythology, the protecting spirit

T H E S C H O L A R - G Y P S Y / 1 0 9 3

Of whom each strives, nor knows for what he strives,
 And each half² lives a hundred different lives;
 170 Who wait like thee, but not, like thee, in hope.

Thou waitest for the spark from heaven! and we,
Light half-believers of our casual creeds,
Who never deeply felt, nor clearly willed,
Whose insight never has borne fruit in deeds,
175 Whose vague resolves never have been fulfilled;
For whom each year we see
Breeds new beginnings, disappointments new;
Who hesitate and falter life away,
And lose tomorrow the ground won today—
180 Ah! do not we, wanderer! await it too?
Yes, we await it! but it still delays,
And then we suffer! and amongst us one,³
Who most has suffered, takes dejectedly
His seat upon the intellectual throne;
185 And all his store of sad experience he
Lays bare of wretched days;
Tells us his misery's birth and growth and signs,
And how the dying spark of hope was fed,
And how the breast was soothed, and how the head,
190 And all his hourly varied anodynes.
This for our wisest! and we others pine,
And wish the long unhappy dream would end,
And waive all claim to bliss, and try to bear;
With close-lipped patience for our only friend,
195 Sad patience, too near neighbor to despair—
But none has hope like thine!
Thou through the fields and through the woods dost stray,
Roaming the countryside, a truant boy,

Nursing thy project in unclouded joy,
200 And every doubt long blown by time away.
O born in days when wits were fresh and clear,
And life ran gaily as the sparkling Thames;
Before this strange disease of modern life,
With its sick hurry, its divided aims,
205 Its head o'ertaxed, its palsied hearts, was rife—
Fly hence, our contact fear!
Still fly, plunge deeper in the bowering wood!
Averse, as Dido did with gesture stern
From her false friend's approach in Hades turn,⁴
210 Wave us away, and keep thy solitude!

2. I.e., half-heartedly.

Carthage, had been deserted by Aeneas after giving
3. Possibly the German poet Johann Wolfgang
her love to him. Aeneas later encountered her in
von Goethe (1749-1832) or the English poet
the underworld, among the shades of those who
Alfred, Lord Tennyson (1809-1892; see pp. 982 -
had died of unhappy love, but when he greeted her
1009).

she turned her back on him.

4. According to Virgil's *Aeneid*, Dido, queen of

1094 / MATTHEW ARNOLD

Still nursing the unconquerable hope,
Still clutching the inviolable shade,
With a free, onward impulse brushing through,
By night, the silvered branches of the glade—

215 Far on the forest-skirts, where none pursue,
On some mild pastoral slope
Emerge, and resting on the moonlit pales⁰ *fences*
Freshen thy flowers as in former years
With dew, or listen with enchanted ears,
220 From the dark dingles,⁰ to the nightingales! *valleys*
But fly our paths, our feverish contact fly!
For strong the infection of our mental strife,
Which, though it gives no bliss, yet spoils for rest;
And we should win thee from thy own fair life,
225 Like us distracted, and like us unblest.
Soon, soon thy cheer would die,
Thy hopes grow timorous, and unfixed thy powers,
And thy clear aims be cross and shifting made;
And then thy glad perennial youth would fade,
230 Bo Fade, and grow old at last, and die like ours.
Then fly our greetings, fly our speech and smiles!
—As some grave Tynan⁵ trader, from the sea,
Descried at sunrise an emerging prow
Lifting the cool-haired creepers stealthily,
235 The fringes of a southward-facing brow
Among the Aegean isles;
And saw the merry Grecian coaster come,
Freighted with amber grapes, and Chian⁶ wine,
Green, bursting figs, and tunnies⁰ steeped in brine— *tuna*
240 And knew the intruders on his ancient home,
The young light-hearted masters of the waves—
And snatched his rudder, he shook out more sail;

And day and night held on indignantly
O'er the blue Midland waters with the gale,
245 Betwixt the Syrtes⁷ and soft Sicily,
To where the Atlantic raves
Outside the western straits;⁸ and unbent sails
There, where down cloudy cliffs, through sheets of foam,
Shy traffickers, the dark Iberians⁹ come;
250 And on the beach undid his corded bales.

1853

5. A native of the ancient Phoenician city of Tyre,
Cyrenaica, the other off Tunisia.
in the eastern Mediterranean.

8. I.e., the Straits of Gibraltar.

6. From the island of Chios, famous for its wine.

9. Ancient name for the inhabitants of Spain.

7. Two gulfs on the North African coast, one off

THYRSIS / 1 0 9 5

Thyrsis

*A Monody, to Commemorate the Author's Friend, Arthur Hugh
Clough,*

Who Died at Florence, 1861

How changed is here each spot man makes or fills!
In the two Hinkseys² nothing keeps the same;
The village street its haunted mansion lacks,
And from the sign is gone Sibylla's name,³
5 And from the roofs the twisted chimney-stacks—
Are ye too changed, ye hills?
See, 'tis no foot of unfamiliar men

Tonight from Oxford up your pathway strays!
Here came I often, often, in old days—
io Thyrsis and I; we still had Thyrsis then.
Runs it not here, the track by Childsworth Farm,
Past the high wood, to where the elm-tree crowns
The hill behind whose ridge the sunset flames?
The signal-elm, that looks on Ilsley Downs,
15 The Vale, the three lone weirs,⁰ the youthful Thames?
dams
This winter-eve is warm,
Humid the air! leafless, yet soft as spring,
The tender purple spray on copse⁰ and briers! *small wood*
And that sweet city with her dreaming spires,
20 She needs not June for beauty's heightening,
Lovely all times she lies, lovely tonight!
Only, methinks, some loss of habit's power
Befalls me wandering through this upland dim.
Once passed I blindfold here, at any hour;
25 Now seldom come I, since I came with him.
That single elm-tree bright
Against the west—I miss it! is it gone?
We prized it dearly; while it stood, we said,
Our friend, the Gypsy-Scholar, was not dead;
30 While the tree lived, he in these fields lived on.
Too rare, too rare, grow now my visits here.
But once I knew each field, each flower, each stick;
And with the country-folk acquaintance made
1. The friendship between Arnold and the English

above.) As in his use of the names Thyrsis (for poet Clough (1819-1861; see pp. 1051-53) had Clough) and Corydon (line 80, for himself), both been at its closest while they were at Oxford, and traditional designations for shepherd-poets, Arnold chooses as the framework for this poem a visit to Oxford—at least in reminiscence—and pastoral elegy for his monody, or poem in which a more specifically to a hill above the town crowned single mourner laments.

by the “signal-elm.” They connected the tree with 2. North and South Hinksey, two villages near the continuing symbolic presence in the country-Oxford.

side of the Scholar-Gypsy and his lonely faithful- 3. Sibylla Kerr, a tavern keeper when Arnold and ness to an ideal of truth-seeking. (See Arnold’s Clough were students.

poem “The Scholar-Gypsy” and his note to it,

1 0 9 6 / M A T T H E W A R N O L D

By barn in threshing-time, by new-built rick.

Here, too, our shepherd-pipes we first assayed.

Ah me! this many a year

My pipe is lost, my shepherd’s holiday!

Needs must I lose them, needs with heavy heart

Into the world and wave of men depart;

But Thyrsis of his own will went away.⁴

It irked him to be here, he could not rest.
He loved each simple joy the country yields,
He loved his mates; but yet he could not keep, *stay*
For that a shadow loomed on the fields,
Here with the shepherds and the silly sheep. *innocent*
Some life of men unblest
He knew, which made him droop; and filled his head.
He went; his piping took a troubled sound
Of storms that rage outside our happy ground;
He could not wait their passing, he is dead.
So, some tempestuous morn in early June,
When the year's primal burst of bloom is o'er,
Before the roses and the longest day—
When garden-walks and all the grassy floor
With blossoms red and white of fallen May
And chestnut-flowers are strewn—
So have I heard the cuckoo's parting cry,
From the wet field, through the next garden-trees,
Come with the volleying rain and tossing breeze:
The bloom is gone, and with the bloom go I!
Too quick despairer, wherefore wilt thou go?
Soon will the high Midsummer pomps come on,
Soon will the musk carnations break and swell,
Soon shall we have gold-dusted snapdragon,
Sweet-William with his homely cottage-smell,
And stocks in fragrant blow;
Roses that down the alleys shine afar,
And open, jasmine-muffled lattices,

And groups under the dreaming garden-trees,
And the full moon, and the white evening-star.
He hearkens not! light comer, he is flown!
What matters it? next year he will return,
And we shall have him in the sweet spring-days,
With whitening hedges, and uncrumpling fern,
And bluebells trembling by the forest-ways,
And scent of hay new-mown.

But Thyrsis never more we swains shall see;
See him come back, and cut a smoother reed,

4. Arnold left Oxford in 1847 to earn a living, first rather than
subscribe to the Thirty-nine Articles of as a minor diplomat,
then as inspector of schools. the Anglican Church.

Clough resigned his Oxford fellowship in 1848, 5. Religious
and political controversies.

THYRSIS / 1 0 9 7

And blow a strain the world at last shall heed—
so For Time, not Corydon, hath conquered thee!
Alack, for Corydon no rival now!

But when Sicilian shepherds lost a mate,
Some good survivor with his flute would go,
Piping a ditty sad for Bion's fate;⁶

85 And cross the unpermitted ferry's flow,⁷
And relax Pluto's brow,

And make leap up with joy the beauteous head
Of Proserpine, among whose crowned hair
Are flowers first opened on Sicilian air,

90 And flute his friend, like Orpheus,⁸ from the dead.

0 easy access to the hearer's grace

When Dorian⁹ shepherds sang to Proserpine!
 For she herself had trod Sicilian fields,
 She knew the Dorian water's gush divine,
 95 She knew each lily white which Enna yields,
 Each rose with blushing face;
 She loved the Dorian pipe, the Dorian strain.
 But ah, of our poor Thames she never heard!
 Her foot the Cumner cowslips⁰ never stirred; *wildflowers*
 100 And we should tease her with our plaint in vain!
 Well! wind-dispersed and vain the words will be,
 Yet, Thyrsis, let me give my grief its hour
 In the old haunt, and find our tree-topped hill!
 Who, if not I, for questing here hath power?
 105 I know the wood which hides the daffodil,
 I know the Fyfield tree,
 I know what white, what purple fritillaries¹
 The grassy harvest of the river-fields,
 Above by Ensham, down by Sandford, yields,
 110 And what sedged brooks are Thames's tributaries;
 I know these slopes; who knows them if not I?
 But many a dingle⁰ on the loved hillside, *valley*
 With thorns once studded, old, white-blossomed trees,
 Where thick the cowslips grew, and far descried
 ii5 High towered the spikes of purple orchises,
 Hath since our day put by
 The coronals of that forgotten time;²
 Down each green bank hath gone the ploughboy's team,
 6. Refers to a Greek pastoral poet of the first cen-

each year in the underworld and half on Earth.

ture **B.C.E.** who lived in Sicily and was mourned in

8. Who, because of the power and charm of his

“Lament for Bion,” sometimes ascribed to his pupil

music, had been permitted to attempt to lead his

Moschus.

wife, Eurydice, back from the dead.

7. The ferry across the river Styx to Hades, ruled

9. One of the ancient Greek lyrical modes, char-

acterized by simplicity and nobility.

acterized by simplicity and nobility.

had abducted while she was gathering flowers in

1. Flowers commonly found in moist meadows.

the fields near Enna, in Sicily. She spent half of

2. I.e., the flowers that once crowned them.

1 0 9 8 / M A T T H E W A R N O L D

And only in the hidden brookside gleam

120 Primroses, orphans of the flowery prime.

W h e r e is the girl, who by the boatman’s door,

Above the locks, above the boating throng,

Unmoored our skiff when through the Wytham flats,

Red loosestrife and blond meadow-sweet³ among

125 And darting swallows and light water-gnats,

We tracked the shy T h a m e s shore?

W h e r e are the mowers, who, as the tiny swell

Of our boat passing heaved the river-grass,

Stood with suspended scythe to see us pass?

130 They all are gone, and thou art gone as well!

Yes, thou art gone! and round me too the night
In ever-nearing circle weaves her shade.
I see her veil draw soft across the day,
I feel her slowly chilling breath invade
135 T h e cheek grown thin, the brown hair sprent⁰ with gray;
sprinkled
I feel her finger light
Laid pausefully upon life's headlong train;
T h e foot less prompt to meet the morning dew,
T h e heart less b o u n d i n g at emotion new,
140 And hope, once crushed, less quick to spring again.
And long the way appears, which seemed so short
To the less practiced eye of sanguine⁰ youth; *confident*
And high the mountain-tops, in cloudy air,
T h e mountain-tops where is the throne of Truth,
145 Tops in life's morning-sun so bright and bare!
Unbreachable the fort
Of the long-battered world uplifts its wall;
And strange and vain the earthly turmoil grows,
And near and real the charm of thy repose,
150 And night as welcome as a friend would fall.
But hush! the upland hath a sudden loss
Of quiet!—Look, adown the dusk hillside,
A troop of Oxford hunters going home,
As in old days, jovial and talking, ride!
155 From hunting with the Berkshire hounds they come.
Quick! let me fly, and cross
Into yon farther field!—'Tis done; and see,

Backed by the sunset, which doth glorify
The orange and pale violet evening-sky,
160 Bare on its lonely ridge, the Tree! the Tree!
I take the omen! Eve lets down her veil,
The white fog creeps from bush to bush about,
The west unflushes, the high stars grow bright,
And in the scattered farms the lights come out.

3. Like loosestrife, flowers that grow in moist meadows and
near streams.

THYRSIS / 1099

165 I cannot reach the signal-tree to-night,
Yet, happy omen, hail!
Hear it from thy broad lucent Arno-vale⁴
(For there thine earth-forgetting eyelids keep
The morningless and unawakening sleep
170 Under the flowery oleanders pale),
Hear it, O Thyrsis, still our tree is there!
Ah, vain! These English fields, this upland dim,
These brambles pale with mist engarlanded,
That lone, sky-pointing tree, are not for him;
175 To a boon southern country he is fled,
And now in happier air,
Wandering with the great Mother's train divine⁵
(And purer or more subtle soul than thee,
I trow, the mighty Mother doth not see)
iso Within a folding of the Apennine,⁶
Thou hearest the immortal chants⁷ of old!
Putting his sickle to the perilous grain

In the hot cornfield of the Phrygian king,
For thee the Lityerses-song again
185 Young Daphnis with his silver voice doth sing;⁸
Sings his Sicilian fold,
His sheep, his hapless love, his blinded eyes—
And how a call celestial round him rang,
And heavenward from the fountain-brink he sprang,
190 And all the marvel of the golden skies.
T h e r e thou art gone, and me thou leavest here
Sole in these fields! yet will I not despair.
Despair I will not, while I yet descry
N e a t h the mild canopy of English air
195 That lonely tree against the western sky.
Still, still these slopes, 'tis clear,
O u r Gypsy-Scholar haunts, outliving thee!
Fields where soft sheep from cages pull the hay,
Woods with anemonies in flower till May,
200 Know him a wanderer still; then why not me?
4. Clough is buried in the Protestant cemetery in
took upon himself the reaping-contest with
Florence, which is situated in the valley of the Arno
Lityerses, overcame him, and slew him. The
River.
Lityerses-song connected with this tradition was,
5. Devotees of Demeter (whose name may mean
like the Linus-song, one of the early plaintive
Earth Mother), goddess of agriculture.
strains of Greek popular poetry, and used to be

6. The Apennines are a mountain range in Italy.

sung by corn-reapers. Other traditions represented

7. Sung in Demeter's honor.

Daphnis as beloved by a nymph who exacted from

8. "Daphnis, the ideal Sicilian shepherd of Greek

him an oath to love no one else. He fell in love with

pastoral poetry, was said to have followed into

a princess, and was struck blind by the jealous

Phrygia his mistress Piplea, who had been carried

nymph. Mercury, who was his father, raised him

off by robbers, and to have found her in the power

to heaven, and made a fountain spring up in the

of the king of Phrygia, Lityerses. Lityerses used to

place from which he ascended. At this fountain the

make strangers try a contest with him in reaping

Sicilians offered yearly sacrifices.—See Servius,

corn, and to put them to death if he overcame

Comment, in Virgil. Bucol., v.20 and viii.68"

them. Hercules arrived in time to save Daphnis,

[Arnold's note].

1 1 0 0 / M A T T H E W A R N O L D

A fugitive and gracious light he seeks,

Shy to illumine; and I seek it too.

This does not come with houses or with gold,

With place, with honor, and a flattering crew;

205 Tis not in the world's market bought and sold—

But the smooth-slipping weeks

Drop by, and leave its seeker still untired;

Out of the heed of mortals he is gone,
He wends unfollowed, he must house alone;
210 Yet on he fares, by his own heart inspired.
Thou too, O Thyrsis, on like quest wast bound;
Thou wanderest with me for a little hour!
Men gave thee nothing; but this happy quest,
If men esteemed thee feeble, gave thee power,
215 If men procured thee trouble, gave thee rest.
And this rude Cumner ground,
Its fir-topped Hurst,⁰ its farms, its quiet fields, *a hill*
Here cam'st thou in thy jocund youthful time,
Here was thine height of strength, thy golden prime!
220 And still the haunt beloved a virtue yields.
What though the music of thy rustic flute
Kept not for long its happy, country tone;
Lost it too soon, and learnt a stormy note
Of men contention-tost, of men who groan,
225 Which tasked thy pipe too sore, and tired thy throat—
It failed, and thou wast mute!
Yet hadst thou always visions of our light,
And long with men of care thou couldst not stay,
And soon thy foot resumed its wandering way,
230 Left human haunt, and on alone till night.
Too rare, too rare, grow now my visits here!
'Mid city-noise, not, as with thee of yore,
Thyrsis! in reach of sheep-bells is my home.
—Then through the great town's harsh, heart-wearying roar,
235 Let in thy voice a whisper often come,

To chase fatigue and fear:

Why faintest thou? I wandered till I died.

Roam on! The light we sought is shining still.

Dost thou ask proof? Our tree yet crowns the hill,

240 *Our Scholar travels yet the loved hillside.*

1852

D O V E R B E A C H / 1 1 0 1

Dover Beach

The sea is calm tonight.

The tide is full, the moon lies fair

Upon the straits; on the French coast the light

Gleams and is gone; the cliffs of England stand,

5 Glimmering and vast, out in the tranquil bay.

Come to the window, sweet is the night-air!

Only, from the long line of spray

Where the sea meets the moon-blanchèd land,

Listen! you hear the grating roar

10 Of pebbles which the waves draw back, and fling,

At their return, up the high strand,

Begin, and cease, and then again begin,

With tremulous cadence slow, and bring

The eternal note of sadness in.

15 Sophocles long ago

Heard it on the Aegean, and it brought

Into his mind the turbid ebb and flow

Of human misery;9 we

Find also in the sound a thought,

20 Hearing it by this distant northern sea.

The Sea of Faith

Was once, too, at the full, and round earth's shore
Lay like the folds of a bright girdle furled.

But now I only hear

25 Its melancholy, long withdrawing roar,

Retreating, to the breath

Of the night-wind, down the vast edges drear

And naked shingles¹ of the world.

Ah, love, let us be true

BO To one another! for the world, which seems

To lie before us like a land of dreams,

So various, so beautiful, so new,

Hath really neither joy, nor love, nor light,

Nor certitude, nor peace, nor help for pain;

35 And we are here as on a darkling plain

Swept with confused alarms of struggle and flight,

Where ignorant armies clash by night.

1867

9. A reference to a chorus in Sophocles' play

gusts of Thracian wind; it rolls the dark sand from

Antigone, lines 583—92: "Happy are they whose life

the depths, and the beaches, beaten by the waves

has not tasted evils. But for those whose house has

and wind, groan and roar."

been shaken by God, no mass of ruin fails to creep

1. Beaches covered with water-worn small stones

upon their families. It is like the sea-swell ...

and pebbles.

when an undersea darkness drives upon it with

1 1 0 2

DANTE GABRIEL ROSSETTI

1828-1882

The Blessed Damozel

The blessed damozel leaned out

From the gold bar of Heaven;

Her eyes were deeper than the depth

Of waters stilled at even;

5 She had three lilies in her hand,

And the stars in her hair were seven.

Her robe, ungirt from clasp to hem,

No wrought flowers did adorn,

But a white rose of Mary's gift,

io For service meetly worn; *properly*

Her hair that lay along her back

Was yellow like ripe corn. *wheat, grain*

Herseemed she scarce had been a day *it seemed to her*

One of God's choristers;

15 The wonder was not yet quite gone

From that still look of hers;

Albeit, to them she left, her day

Had counted as ten years.

(To one, it is ten years of years.

20 ... Yet now, and in this place,

Surely she leaned o'er me—her hair

Fell all about my face... .

Nothing: the autumn fall of leaves.

The whole year sets apace.)
25 It was the rampart of God's house
That she was standing on;
By God built over the sheer depth
The which is Space begun;
So high, that looking downward thence
30 She scarce could see the sun.
It lies in Heaven, across the flood
Of ether, as a bridge.
Beneath, the tides of day and night
With flame and darkness ridge
35 The void, as low as where this earth
Spins like a fretful midge.⁰ *gnatlike insect*
Around her, lovers, newly met
In joy no sorrow claims,

1. Older form of *damsel*, meaning "young unmarried lady," preferred by Romantic and later writers because it avoids the simpler, homelier associations of *damsel*.

T H E B L E S S E D D A M O Z E L / 1 1 0 3

Spoke evermore among themselves
40 Their rapturous new names;
And the souls mounting up to God
Went by her like thin flames.
And still she bowed herself and stooped
Out of the circling charm;
45 Until her bosom must have made
The bar she leaned on warm,
And the lilies lay as if asleep
Along her bended arm.

From the fixed place of Heaven she saw
50 Time like a pulse shake fierce
Through all the worlds. Her gaze still strove
Within the gulf to pierce
Its path; and now she spoke as when
The stars sang in their spheres.
55 The sun was gone now; the curled moon
Was like a little feather
Fluttering far down the gulf; and now
She spoke through the still weather.
Her voice was like the voice the stars
60 Had when they sang together.
(Ah sweet! Even now, in that bird's song,
Strove not her accents there,
Fain to be hearkened? When those bells
Possessed the midday air,
65 Strove not her steps to reach my side
Down all the echoing stair?)
"I wish that he were come to me,
For he will come," she said.
"Have I not prayed in Heaven?—on earth,
70 Lord, Lord, has he not prayed?
Are not two prayers a perfect strength?
And shall I feel afraid?
"When round his head the aureole⁰ clings, *radiant light*
And he is clothed in white,
75 I'll take his hand and go with him
To the deep wells of light;

We will step down as to a stream,
And bathe there in God's sight.
"We two will stand beside that shrine,
so Occult, withheld, untrod,
Whose lamps are stirred continually
With prayer sent up to God;
And see our old prayers, granted, melt
Each like a little cloud.

1104 / DANTE GABRIEL ROSSETTI

85 "We two will lie i' the shadow of
That living mystic tree
Within whose secret growth the Dove
Is sometimes felt to be,
While every leaf that His plumes touch
90 Saith His Name audibly.
"And I myself will teach to him,
I myself, lying so,
The songs I sing here; which his voice
Shall pause in, hushed and slow,
95 And find some knowledge at each pause,
Of some new thing to know."
(Alas! We two, we two, thou say'st!
Yea, one wast thou with me
That once of old. But shall God lift
100 To endless unity
The soul whose likeness with thy soul
Was but its love for thee?)
"We two," she said, "will seek the groves

Where the lady Mary is,
105 With her five handmaidens, whose names
Are five sweet symphonies,
Cecily, Gertrude, Magdalen,
Margaret and Rosalys.

“Circlewise sit they, with bound locks
110 And foreheads garlanded;
Into the fine cloth white like flame
Weaving the golden thread,
To fashion the birth-ropes for them
Who are just born, being dead.

115 “He shall fear, haply, and be dumb:
Then will I lay my cheek
To his, and tell about our love,
Not once abashed or weak:
And the dear Mother will approve

120 My pride, and let me speak.
“Herself shall bring us, hand in hand,
To Him round whom all souls
Kneel, the clear-ranged unnumbered heads
Bowed with their aureoles:

125 And angels meeting us shall sing
To their citherns and citoles.²

2. The cithern is a seventeenth-century guitarlike instrument with wire strings; the citole, a stringed instrument dating from the thirteenth to the fifteenth century.

T H E W O O D S P U R G E / 1 1 0 5

“There will I ask of Christ the Lord
Thus much for him and me:—

Only to live as once on earth
130 With Love—only to be,
As then awhile, forever now
Together, I and he.”
She gazed and listened and then said,
Less sad of speech than mild,
135 “All this is when he comes.” She ceased.
The light thrilled towards her, filled
With angels in strong level flight.
Her eyes prayed, and she smiled.
(I saw her smile.) But soon their path
140 Was vague in distant spheres:
And then she cast her arms along
The golden barriers,
And laid her face between her hands,
And wept. (I heard her tears.)

1846 1850

Sudden Light
I have been here before,
But when or how I cannot tell:
I know the grass beyond the door,
The sweet keen smell,
5 The sighing sound, the lights around the shore.
You have been mine before,
How long ago I may not know:
But just when at that swallow’s soar
Your neck turned so,
io Some veil did fall—I knew it all of yore.

Has this been thus before?
And shall not thus time's eddying flight
Still with our lives our love restore
In death's despite,
15 And day and night yield one delight once more?

1854 1863

The Woodspurge

The wind flapped loose, the wind was still,
Shaken out dead from tree and hill:

1 1 0 6 / D A N T E G A B R I E L R O S S E T T I

I had walked on at the wind's will—

I sat now, for the wind was still.

5 Between my knees my forehead was—

My lips, drawn in, said not Alas!

My hair was over in the grass,

My naked ears heard the day pass.

My eyes, wide open, had the run

10 Of some ten weeds to fix upon;

Among those few, out of the sun,

The woodspurge flowered, three cups in one.

From perfect grief there need not be

Wisdom or even memory:

15 One thing then learnt remains to me—

The woodspurge has a cup of three.

1856 1870

From The House of Life

A Sonnet

A Sonnet is a moment's monument,—

Memorial from the Soul's eternity
To one dead deathless hour. Look that it be,
Whether for lustral¹⁰ rite or dire portent, *purificatory*
5 Of its own arduous fullness reverent:
Carve it in ivory or in ebony,
As Day or Night may rule; and let Time see
Its flowering crest impearled and orient.
A Sonnet is a coin: its face reveals
10 The soul—its converse, to what Power 'tis due:
Whether for tribute to the august appeals
Of Life, or dower in Love's high retinue,
It serve; or, 'mid the dark wharf's cavernous breath,
In Charon's³ palm it pay the toll to Death.

19. Silent Noon

Your hands lie open in the long fresh grass—
The finger-points look through like rosy blooms:
Your eyes smile peace. The pasture gleams and glooms
'Neath billowing skies that scatter and amass.
5 All round our nest, far as the eye can pass,
Are golden kingcup-fields with silver edge
Where the cow-parsley skirts the hawthorn-hedge.
'Tis visible silence, still as the hour-glass.

3. In Greek mythology, Charon received a coin, an *obolus*, for ferrying the shades of the newly dead across the river Styx to Hades.

M O D E R N L O V E / 1 1 0 7

Deep in the sun-searched growths the dragonfly
10 Hangs like a blue thread loosened from the sky:
So this winged hour is dropt to us from above.

Oh! clasp we to our hearts, for deathless dower,⁰ *gift*
This close-companioned inarticulate hour
When twofold silence was the song of love.

70. *The Hill Summit*

This feast-day of the sun, his altar there
In the broad west has blazed for vesper^o-song;
evening

And I have loitered in the vale⁰ too long
valley

And gaze now a belated worshipper.
5 Yet may I not forget that I was 'ware,⁰
So journeying, of his face at intervals

aware

Transfigured where the fringed horizon falls,
A fiery bush with coruscating⁰ hair.

glittering

And now that I have climbed and won this height,
io I must tread downward through the sloping shade
And travel the bewildered tracks till night.
Yet for this hour I still may here be stayed
And see the gold air and the silver fade
And the last bird fly into the last light.

1 8 4 7 - 8 0 1870, 1881

G E O R G E M E R E D I T H

1828-1909

From Modern Love 1

I

By this he knew she wept with waking eyes:

That, at his hand's light quiver by her head,
The strange low sobs that shook their common bed
Were called into her with a sharp surprise,
5 And strangled mute, like little gaping snakes,
Dreadfully venomous to him. She lay
Stone-still, and the long darkness flowed away
With muffled pulses. Then, as midnight makes
Her giant heart of Memory and Tears
io Drink the pale drug of silence, and so beat
Sleep's heavy measure, they from head to feet
Were moveless, looking through their dead black years,
By vain regret scrawled over the blank wall.

Like sculptured effigies they might be seen

1. A sequence of fifty sixteen-line sonnets, a kind
speaker, but the opening and closing sections are
of novel in verse about the breakup of a marriage.
told in the third person.

For most of the sequence the husband is the

1108 / G E O R G E M E R E D I T H

15 Upon their marriage-tomb,² the sword between;
Each wishing for the sword that severs all.

17

At dinner, she is hostess, I am host.

Went the feast ever cheerfuller? She keeps

The Topic over intellectual deeps

In buoyancy afloat. They see no ghost.

5 With sparkling surface-eyes we ply the ball:

It is in truth a most contagious game:

H I D I N G T H E S K E L E T O N , shall be its name.

Such play as this the devils might appall!

But here's the greater wonder; in that we,

io Enamored of an acting naught can tire,

Each other, like true hypocrites, admire;

Warm-lighted looks, Love's ephemerioe,⁰ *short-lived,*
creatures

Shoot gaily o'er the dishes and the wine.

We waken envy of our happy lot.

15 Fast, sweet, and golden, shows the marriage-knot.

Dear guests, you now have seen Love's corpse-light³ shine.

30

What are we first? First, animals; and next

Intelligences at a leap; on whom

Pale lies the distant shadow of the tomb,

And all that draweth on the tomb for text.

5 Into which state comes Love, the crowning sun:

Beneath whose light the shadow loses form.

We are the lords of life, and life is warm.

Intelligence and instinct now are one.

But nature says: "My children most they seem

io When they least know me: therefore I decree

That they shall suffer." Swift doth young Love flee,

And we stand wakened, shivering from our dream.

Then if we study Nature we are wise.

Thus do the few who live but with the day:

15 The scientific animals are they—

Lady, this is my sonnet to your eyes.⁴

Their sense is with their senses all mixed in,
 Destroyed by subtleties these women are!⁵
 More brain, O Lord, more brain! or we shall mar
 Utterly this fair garden we might win.

2. I.e., as motionless as sculptured stone statues
 ment of his theory of evolution.

on a tomb. In medieval legend, a naked sword

5. Earlier, the couple had at last talked together
 between lovers symbolized chastity.

about the wife's affair with another man and had

3. Flame seen in a churchyard and believed to be
 become reconciled. But when the husband tells
 an omen of death.

her of his own recent passing affair with his "lost

4. A poetic convention of love sonnets was the
 Lady" (line 9), she resolves to give him up to his
 praise of one of the lady's features, such as her
 mistress. Her resolve is a noble one but, in his view,
 eyes. Meredith uses it as an ironic close to a state-
 without "sense" or "brain."

M O D E R N L O V E / 1 1 0 9

5 Behold! I looked for peace, and thought it near.

Our inmost hearts had opened, each to each.

We drank the pure daylight of honest speech.

Alas! that was the fatal draught, I fear.

For when of my lost Lady came the word,

io This woman, O this agony of flesh!

Jealous devotion bade her break the mesh,
That I might seek that other like a bird.
I do adore the nobleness! despise
The act! She has gone forth, I know not where.
15 Will the hard world my sentence of her share?
I feel the truth; so let the world surmise.

49

He found her by the ocean's moaning verge,
Nor any wicked change in her discerned;
And she believed his old love had returned,
Which was her exultation, and her scourge.
5 She took his hand, and walked with him, and seemed
The wife he sought, though shadow-like and dry.
She had one terror, lest her heart should sigh,
And tell her loudly she no longer dreamed.
She dared not say, "This is my breast: look in."
10 But there's a strength to help the desperate weak.
That night he learned how silence best can speak
The awful things when Pity pleads for Sin.
About the middle of the night her call
Was heard, and he came wondering to the bed.
15 "Now kiss me, dear! it may be, now!" she said.
Lethe⁶ had passed those lips, and he knew all.

50

Thus piteously Love closed what he begat:
The union of this ever-diverse pair!
These two were rapid falcons in a snare,
Condemned to do the flitting of the bat.

5 Lovers beneath the singing sky of May,
They wandered once; clear as the dew on flowers
But they fed not on the advancing hours:
Their hearts held cravings for the buried day.
Then each applied to each that fatal knife,
io Deep questioning, which probes to endless dole.0

sorrow

Ah, what a dusty answer gets the soul
When hot for certainties in this our life!—
In tragic hints here see what evermore
Moves dark as yonder midnight ocean's force,
15 Thundering like ramping0 hosts of warrior horse,

rearing

To throw that faint thin line upon the shore!

1862

6. River of forgetfulness in Hades, the mythological Greek underworld.

1 1 1 0 / E M I L Y D I C K I N S O N

Lucifer in Starlight

On a starred night Prince Lucifer uprose.
Tired of his dark dominion, swung the fiend
Above the rolling ball, in cloud part screened,
Where sinners hugged their specter of repose.
5 Poor prey to his hot fit of pride were those.
And now upon his western wing he leaned,
Now his huge bulk o'er Afric's sands careened,
Now the black planet shadowed Arctic snows.
Soaring through wider zones that pricked his scars

10 With memory of the old revolt from Awe,⁷
He reached a middle height, and at the stars,
Which are the brain of heaven, he looked, and sank.
Around the ancient track marched, rank on rank,
The army of unalterable law.

1883

EMILY D I C K I N S O N *

1830-1886

39 (49)

I never lost as much but twice -

And that was in the sod.

Twice have I stood a beggar

Before the door of God!

5 Angels - twice descending

Reimbursed my store -

Burglar! Banker - Father!

I am poor once more!

1858 1890

68 (89)

Some things that fly there be -

Birds - Hours - the Bumblebee -

Of these no Elegy.

7. I.e., God. Satan is reminded of the wounds he

(She often misused the apostrophe, especially in

suffered when his revolt against God was crushed

the possessive of *it*, which she wrote as *it's*, and she

and he was hurled from heaven into hell.

also commonly misspelled words, such as *opon* for

*R. W. Franklin's 1998 edition of Emily Dickinson.) Franklin has also renumbered the poems son's poems built on and has now supplanted the after considering their likely chronology. Date on editions by Thomas Johnson (1955 and following) left, often approximate, refers to first known manuscript; date on right, to first book publication. Each poem here is identified by Franklin number, then by Johnson number in parentheses.

reflect as closely as possible Dickinson's choices.

1 2 4 (2 1 6) , F I R S T V E R S I O N / 1 1 1 1

Some things that stay there be -

5 Grief - Hills - Eternity -

Nor this behooveth me.1

There are that resting, rise.

Can I expound the skies?

How still the Riddle lies!

1859 1890

112 (67)

Success is counted sweetest

By those who ne'er succeed.

To comprehend a nectar

Requires sorest need.

5 Not one of all the purple Host0 *army*

Who took the Flag today

Can tell the definition
So clear of Victory
As he defeated - dying -
io On whose forbidden ear
The distant strains of triumph
Burst agonized and clear!

1859 1890

124 (216), first version²
Safe in their Alabaster³ Chambers -
Untouched by morning
And untouched by noon -
Sleep the meek members of the Resurrection -
5 Rafter of satin,
And Roof of stone.
Light laughs the breeze
In her Castle above them -
Babbles the Bee in a stolid Ear,
io Pipe the sweet Birds in ignorant cadence -
Ah, what sagacity perished here!

1859

1862

1. I.e., nor do I need to write about these.
lished (in a magazine). In correspondence in 1862
2. This poem is one of many that exist in varying
with Thomas W. Higginson, the literary critic who
versions and illustrate wholesale revision. Dickin-
would help publish her poems posthumously,
son sent the 1859 version to her sister-in-law, Sue

Dickinson sent a modified version, the basis of the Dickinson, whose suggestions prompted substantial changes. The first version here, the earliest second version here.

3. Translucent white material.

extant, was one of the few poems Dickinson pub-

1112 / EMILY DICKINSON

124 (216), second version

Safe in their Alabaster Chambers -

Untouched by Morning -

And untouched by noon -

Sleep the meek members of the Resurrection,

5 Rafter of Satin and Roof of Stone -

Grand go the Years,

In the Crescent above them -

Worlds scoop their Arcs -

And Firmaments - row -

io Diadems⁰ - drop - *crowns*

And Doges⁴ - surrender -

Soundless as Dots,

On a Disc of Snow.

1862 1890

145 (59)

A little East of Jordan,

Evangelists record,s

A Gymnast and an Angel

Did wrestle long and hard -

5 Till morning touching mountain

And Jacob, waxing strong,
The Angel begged permission
To Breakfast - to return!
Not so, said cunning Jacob!
io "I will not let thee go
Except thou bless me" - Stranger!
The which acceded to -
Light swung the silver fleeces⁶
"Peniel" Hills beyond,
15 And the bewildered Gymnast
Found he had worsted God!

1860 1914

4. Chief magistrates in the republics of Venice
have seen God face to face, and my life is pre-
and Genoa from the eleventh through the six-
served."

teenth centuries.

6. Clouds; also, a possible allusion to the Golden

5. The story actually occurs in Genesis 32.24—30.

Fleece that, in Greek mythology, Jason long trav-

Jacob wrestled with the angel for a blessing; having
eled to find.

succeeded, "Jacob called the place Peniel: for I

2 6 0 (2 8 8) / 1 1 1 3

202 (185)

Faith" is a fine invention

For Gentlemen who *see!*

But Microscopes are prudent

In an Emergency!

1861

1891

259 (287)

A Clock stopped -

Not the Mantel's -

Geneva's farthest skill⁷

Cant put the puppet bowing -

5 That just now dangled still -

An awe came on the Trinket!

The Figures hunched - with pain -

Then quivered out of Decimals -

Into Degreeless noon -

io It will not stir for Doctor's -

This Pendulum of snow -

The Shopman importunes it -

While cool- concernless No -

Nods from the Gilded pointers -

15 Nods from the Seconds slim -

Decades of Arrogance between

The Dial life -

And Him -

1861

1896

260 (288)

I'm Nobody! Who are you?

Are you - Nobody - too?

Then there's a pair of us!

Dont tell! they'd advertise - you know!

5 How dreary - to be - Somebody!

How public - like a Frog -

To tell one's name - the livelong June -

To an admiring Bog!

1861

1 8 9 1

7. Geneva, Switzerland, is famous for clock- and watchmaking.

1 1 1 4 / E M I L Y D I C K I N S O N

269 (249)

Wild nights - Wild nights!

Were I with thee

Wild nights should be

Our luxury!

5 Futile - the winds -

To a Heart in port -

Done with the Compass -

Done with the Chart!

Rowing in Eden -

io Ah - the Sea!

Might I but moor - tonight -

In thee!

1861 1891

314 (254)

“Hope” is the thing with feathers -

That perches in the soul -

And sings the tune without the words -

And never stops - at all -
5 And sweetest - in the Gale - is heard -
And sore must be the storm -
That could abash the little Bird
That kept so many warm -
I've heard it in the chillest land -
io And on the strangest Sea -
Yet - never - in Extremity,
It asked a crumb - of me.

1862 1891

320 (258)

There's a certain Slant of light,
Winter Afternoons -
That oppresses, like the Heft
Of Cathedral Tunes -
5 Heavenly Hurt, it gives us -
We can find no scar,
3 4 0 (2 8 0) / 1 1 1 5
B u t i n t e r n a l d i f f e r e n c e -
W h e r e t h e M e a n i n g s , a r e -
N o n e m a y t e a c h i t - A n y -
io 'Tis t h e S e a l D e s p a i r -
An imperial affliction
S e n t u s o f t h e A i r -
W h e n i t c o m e s , t h e L a n d s c a p e l i s t e n s -
S h a d o w s - h o l d t h e i r b r e a t h -
15 W h e n i t g o e s , ' t i s l i k e t h e D i s t a n c e
O n t h e l o o k o f D e a t h -

1862 1890

339 (241)

I like a look of Agony,
Because I know it's true -
Mendonotsham Convulsion,
Nor simulate, a Throe -
5 The eyes glaze once - and that is Death -
Impossible to feign
The Beads upon the Forehead
By homely Anguish strung.

1862 1890

340 (280)

I felt a Funeral, in my Brain,
And Mournersto and fro
Kept treading - treading - till it seemed
That Sense was breaking through -
5 And when they all were seated,
A Service, like a Drum -
Kept beating - beating - till I thought
My mind was going numb -
And then I heard them lift a Box
io And creak across my Soul
With those same Boots of Lead, again,
Then Space - began to toll,
As all the Heavens were a Bell,
And Being, but an Ear,
1116 / EMILY DICKINSON
15 And I, and Silence, some strange Race

Wrecked, solitary, here -
And then a Plank in Reason, broke,
And I dropped down, and down -
And hit a World, at every plunge,
20 And Finished knowing - then -
1862 1896

348 (505)

I would not paint - a picture -
I'd rather be the One
It's bright impossibility
To dwell - delicious - on -
5 And wonder how the fingers feel
Whose rare - celestial - stir -
Evokes so sweet a torment -
Such sumptuous - Despair -
I would not talk, like Cornets -
io I'd rather be the One
Raised softly to the Ceilings -
And out, and easy on -
Through Villages of Ether -
Myself ended 0 Balloon *endowed*
15 By but a lip of Metal -
The pier to my Pontoon 0 - *boat*
Nor would I be a Poet -
It's finer - Own the Ear -
Enamored - impotent - content -
20 The License to revere,
A privilege so awful 0 *awesome*

What would the Dowry be, *dowry, gift*
Had I the Art to stun myself
With Bolts - of Melody!

1862 1945

359 (328)

A Bird, came down the Walk -

He did not know I saw -

He bit an Angle Worm in halves

And ate the fellow, raw,

383 (585) / 1117

5 And then, he drank a Dew

From a convenient Grass -

And then hopped sidewise to the Wall

To let a Beetle pass -

He glanced with rapid eyes,

io That hurried all abroad -

They looked like frightened Beads, I thought
, He stirred his Velvet Head. -

Like one in danger, Cautious,

I offered him a Crumb,

15 And he unrolled his feathers,

And rowed him softer Home -

Than Oars divide the Ocean,

To o silver for a seam,

Or Butterflies, off Banks of Noon,

20 Leap, splashless 0 as they swim. *s-plashless*

1862 1891

372 (341)

After great pain, a formal feeling comes -
The Nerves sit ceremonious, like Tombs -
The stiff Heart questions "was it He, that bore
, And "Yesterday, or Centuries before":¹
5 The Feet, mechanical, go round -
A Wooden way
Of Ground, or Air, or Ought 0 - *nothing, anything*
Regardless grown,
A Quartz contentment, like a stone -
io This is the Hour of Lead -
Remembered, if outlived,

As Freezing persons, recollect the Snow -
First - Chill - then Stupor - then the letting go -
1862 1929

383 (585)

I like to see it lap the Miles -

And lick the Valleys up -

And stop to feed itself at Tanks -

And then - prodigious step

1118 / EMILY DICKINSON

5 Around a Pile of Mountains -

And supercilious peer

In Shanties - by the sides of Roads -

And then a Quarry pare

To fit its sides

10 And crawl between

Complaining all the while

In horrid - hooting stanza -

Then chase itself down Hill -

And neigh like Boanerges 8 -

15 Then - prompter than a Star

Stop - docile and omnipotent

At its own stable door -

1862 1891

409 (303)

The Soul selects her own Society -

Then - shuts the Door -

To her divine Majority -

Present no more -

5 Unmoved - she notes the Chariots - pausing

-

At the low Gate -

Unmoved - an Emperor be kneeling

Upon her Mat -

I've known her - from an amputation -

to Choose One -

Then - close the Valves of her attention -

Like Stone -

1862 1890

411 (528)

Mine - by the Right of the White Election!

Mine - by the Royal Seal!

Mine - by the sign in the Scarlet prison -

Bars - cannot conceal!

5 Mine - here - in Vision - and in Veto!

Mine - by the Grave's Repeal -

8. Like thunder. Cf. Mark 3.17: "And James the son of Zebedee, and John the brother of James; and he surnamed them Boanerges, which is, The sons of thunder."

479 (712) / 1 1 19

Titled - Confirmed -

Delirious Charter!

Mine - long as Ages steal!

1862 1890

445 (613)

They shut me up in Prose -

As when a little Girl

They put me in the Closet -

Because they liked me "still" -
5 Still! Could themselves have peeped -
And seen my Brain - go round -
They might as wise have lodged a Bird
For Treason - in the Pound -
Himself has but to will
io And easy as a Star
Look down upon Captivity -
And laugh - No more have I -
1862 1935

479 (712)

Because I could not stop for Death -
He kindly stopped for me -
The Carriage held but just Ourselves -
And Immortality.
5 We slowly drove - He knew no haste
And I had put away
My labor and my leisure too,
For His Civility -
We passed the School, where Children strove
io At Recess - in the Ring -
We passed the Fields of Gazing Grain -
We passed the Setting Sun -
Or rather - He passed Us -
The Dews drew quivering and Chill -
15 For only Gossamer, my Gown -
My Tippet - only Tulle⁹ -
9. Sheer silk net. *Tippet*: shoulder cape.

1120/EMILYDICKINSON

WepausedbeforeaHousehatseemed

ASwellingoftheGround-

TheRoofwasscarcelyvisible-

20TheCornice0-intheGround-*crowning point*

Sincethen-'tisCenturies-andyet

FeelsshorterthantheDay

IfirstsurmisedtheHorses'Heads

WeretowardEternity-

1862 1890

533 (569)

Ireckon-WhenIcountatall-

First-Poets-ThentheSun-

ThenSummer-ThentheHeavenofGod-

Andthen-theListisdone-

5But,lookingback-theFirstsoseems

ToComprehendtheWhole-

TheOtherslookaneedlessShow-

SoIwrite-Poets-All-

TheirSummer-lastsasolidYear-

ioTheycanaffordtheSun

TheEast-woulddeemextravagant-

AndiftheFurtherHeaven-

BeBeautifulastheyprepare

ForThosewhoworshipThem-

15ItistoodifficultaGrace-

ToJustifytheDream-

1863 1929

588 (536)

The Heart asks Pleasure - first -
And then - excuse from Pain -
And then - those little Anodynes
That deadens suffering -
5 And then - to go to sleep -
And then - if it should be
The will of it's Inquisitor
The privilege to die -

1863

1890

740 (789) / 1121

591 (465)

I heard a Fly buzz - when I died -
The Stillness in the Room
Was like the Stillness in the Air -
Between the Heaves of Storm -
5 The Eyes around - had wrung them dry -
And Breaths were gathering firm
For that last Onset - when the King
Be witnessed - in the Room -
I willed my Keepsakes - Signed away
io What portion of me be
Assignable - and then it was
There interposed a Fly -
With Blue - uncertain - stumbling Buzz -
Between the light - and me -
15 And then the Windows failed - and then

I c o u l d n o t see to see -

1863 1896

620 (435)

M u c h M a d n e s s is divinest S e n s e -

T o a d i s c e r n i n g E y e -

M u c h S e n s e - t h e s t a r k e s t M a d n e s s -

‘T i s t h e M a j o r i t y

5 I n t h i s , a s a l l , p r e v a i l -

A s s e n t - a n d y o u a r e s a n e -

D e m u r - y o u ’ r e s t r a i g h t w a y d a n g e r o u s -

A n d h a n d l e d w i t h a C h a i n -

1863 1890

740 (789)

O n a C o l u m n a r S e l f -

H o w a m p l e t o r e l y

I n T u m u l t - o r E x t r e m i t y -

H o w g o o d t h e C e r t a i n t y

5 T h a t L e v e r c a n n o t p r y -

A n d W e d g e c a n n o t d i v i d e

C o n v i c t i o n - T h a t G r a n i t i c B a s e -

T h o u g h n o n e b e o n o u r s i d e -

1 1 2 2 / E M I L Y D I C K I N S O N

S u f f i c e U s - f o r a C r o w d -

1 0 O u r s e l f - a n d R e c t i t u d e -

A n d t h a t A s s e m b l y - n o t f a r o f f

F r o m f u r t h e s t S p i r i t - G o d -

1863 1929

764 (754)

My Life had stood - a Loaded Gun -
In Corners - till a Day
The Owner passed - identified -
And carried Me away -
5 And now We roam in Sovereign Woods -
And now We hunt the Doe -
And every time I speak for Him
The Mountains straight reply -
And do I smile, such cordial light
is Opon the Valley glow -
It is as a Vesuvian face
Had let its pleasure through -
And when at Night - Our good Day done -
I guard My Master's Head -
15 'Tis better than the Eider Duck's
Deep Pillow² - to have shared -
To foe of His - I'm deadly foe -
None stir the second time -
On whom I lay a Yellow Eye -
20 Or an emphatic Thumb -
Thought I than He - may longer live
He longer must - than I -
For I have but the power to kill,
Without - the power to die -
1863 1929
781 (744)
Remorse - is Memory - awake -
Her Parties all astir -

A P r e s e n c e o f D e p a r t e d A c t s -

A t w i n d o w - a n d a t D o o r -

1. Capable of erupting, like Mt. Vesuvius, the vol- 2. I.e.,
pillow stuffed with feathers or down, cano near Naples.

788 (709) / 1 123

5 I t ' s P a s t - s e t d o w n b e f o r e t h e S o u l

A n d l i g h t e d w i t h a m a t c h -

P e r u s a l - t o f a c i l i t a t e -

A n d h e l p B e l i e f t o s t r e t c h -

R e m o r s e i s c u r e l e s s - t h e D i s e a s e

i o N o t e v e n G o d - c a n h e a l -

F o r ' t i s H i s i n s t i t u t i o n - a n d

T h e A d e q u a t e o f H e l l -

1863 1891

782 (745)

R e n u n c i a t i o n - i s a p i e r c i n g V i r t u e -

T h e l e t t i n g g o

A P r e s e n c e - f o r a n E x p e c t a t i o n -

N o t n o w -

5 T h e p u t t i n g o u t o f E y e s -

J u s t S u n r i s e -

L e s t D a y -

D a y ' s G r e a t P r o g e n i t o r -

O u t v i e

i o R e n u n c i a t i o n - i s t h e C h o o s i n g

A g a i n s t i t s e l f -

I t s e l f t o j u s t i f y

U n t o i t s e l f -

When larger function -
15 Make that appear -
Smaller - that Covered Vision - Here -
1863 1929
788 (709)
Publication - is the Auction
Of the Mind of Man -
Poverty - be justifying
For so foul a thing
5 Possibly - but We - would rather
From Our Garret go
White - unto the White Creator -
Than invest - Ours now -
Thought belong to Him who gave it -
io Then - to Him Who bear
It's Corporeal illustration - sell
The Royal Air -

1124 / EMILY DICKINSON

In the Parcel - Be the Merchant
Of the Heavenly Grace -
15 But reduce no Human Spirit
To Disgrace of Price -
1863 1929
895 (1068)
Further in Summer than the Birds -
Pathetic from the Grass -
A minor Nation³ celebrates
It's unobtrusive Mass.

5 No Ordinance⁰ be seen - *prescribed usage*
So gradual the Grace
A gentle Custom it becomes -
Enlarging Loneliness -
Antiquest felt at Noon -
io When August burning low
Arise this spectral Canticle⁰ *liturgical song*
Repose to typify -
Remit as yet no Grace -
No furrow on the Glow,
15 But a Druidic⁴ Difference
Enhances Nature now -
1865, 1883 1891
905 (861)
Split the Lark - and you'll find the Music -
Bulb after Bulb, in Silver rolled -
Scantily dealt to the Summer Morning
Saved for your Ear, when Lutes be old -
5 Loose the Flood - you shall find it patent⁰ - *open*
Gush after Gush, reserved for you -
Scarlet Experiment! Sceptic Thomas!⁵
Now, do you doubt that your Bird was true?
1865 1896

3. I.e., insects.

Christ's divinity until he had seen the print of the

4. Pertaining to the ancient sacred lore of the
nails in Jesus' hands and thrust a hand into Jesus'
Celtic priest-magicians.

side (John 20.25).

5. Doubting Thomas, who would not believe

1096 (986) / 1 125

935 (1540)

As imperceptibly as Grief

The Summer lapsed away -

Too imperceptible at last

To seem like Perfidy⁰ - *treachery*

5 A Quietness distilled

As Twilight long begun,

Or Nature spending with herself

Sequestered Afternoon -

The Dusk drew earlier in -

io The Morning foreign shone -

A courteous, yet harrowing Grace,

As Guest, that would be gone -

And thus, without a Wing

Or service of a Keel

15 Our Summer made her light escape

Into the Beautiful -

1865 1891

1096 (986)

A narrow Fellow in the Grass

Occasionally rides -

You may have met him? Did you not

His notice instant is -

5 The Grass divides as with a Comb -

A spotted Shaft is seen,

And then it closes at your Feet
And opens further on -
He likes a Boggy Acre -
io A Floor too cool for Corn -
But when a Boy and Barefoot
I more than once at Noon
Have passed I thought a Whip Lash
Unbraiding in the Sun
15 When stooping to secure it
It wrinkled And was gone -
Several of Nature's People
I know and they know me
I feel for them a transport
20 Of Cordiality

1 1 2 6 / E M I L Y D I C K I N S O N

But never met this Fellow
Attended or alone
Without a tighter Breathing
And Zero at the Bone.

1865 1891

1108 (1078)

The Bustle in a House
The Morning after Death
Is solemnest of industries
Enacted upon Earth -
5 The Sweeping up the Heart
And putting Love away
We shall not want to use again

Until Eternity -

1865 1890

1263 (1129)

Tell all the truth but tell it slant -

Success in Circuit lies

Too bright for our infirm Delight

The Truth's superb surprise

5 As Lightning to the Children eased

With explanation kind

The Truth must dazzle gradually

Or every man be blind -

1872 1945

1489 (1463)

A Route of Evanescence,

With a revolving Wheel -

A Resonance of Emerald

A Rush of Cochineal⁰ - *red dye*

5 And every Blossom on the Bush

Adjusts it's tumbled Head -

The Mail from Tunis⁶ - probably,

An easy Morning's Ride -

1879 1891

6. City on the northern coast of Africa.

1788 (1763) / 1 127

1577 (1545)

The Bible is an antique Volume -

Written by faded Men

At the suggestion of Holy Spectres -

Subjects - Bethlehem -
5 Eden - the ancient Homestead -
Satan - the Brigadier -
Judas - the Great Defaulter -
David - the Troubadour -
Sin - a distinguished Precipice
io Others must resist -
Boys that "believe" are very lonesome -
Other Boys are "lost" -
Had but the Tale a warbling Teller -
All the Boys would come -
15 Orpheu's7 Sermon captivated -
It did not condemn -
1882 1924
1793 (1732)
My life closed twice before it's close;
It yet remains to see
If Immortality unveil
A third event to me,
5 So huge, so hopeless to conceive
As these that twice befell.
Parting is all we know of heaven,
And all we need of hell.
1896
1788 (1763)
Fame is a bee.
It has a song -
It has a sting -

Ah, too, it has a wing.

1955

7. *Orpheu's*: i.e., that of Orpheus, the Greek mythological figure whose music attracted and controlled beasts, rocks, and trees.

1 1128

CHRISTINAROSSETTI

1830-1894

Song

When I am dead, my dearest,

Sing no sad songs for me;

Plant thou no roses at my head,

Nor shady cypress tree:

5 Be the green grass above me

With showers and dewdrops wet;

And if thou wilt, remember,

And if thou wilt, forget.

I shall not see the shadows,

io I shall not feel the rain;

I shall not hear the nightingale

Sing on, as if in pain:

And dreaming through the twilight

That doth not rise nor set,

is Haply I may remember,

And haply may forget.

1848 1862

Remember

Remember me when I am gone away,

Gone far away into the silent land;

When you can no more hold me by the hand,
Nor I half turn to go yet turning stay.
5 Remember me when no more day by day
You tell me of our future that you planned:
Only remember me; you understand
It will be late to counsel then or pray.
Yet if you should forget me for a while
io And afterwards remember, do not grieve:
For if the darkness and corruption leave
A vestige of the thoughts that once I had,
Better by far you should forget and smile
Than that you should remember and be sad.

1849 1862

Echo

Come to me in the silence of the night;
Come in the speaking silence of a dream;
UP - H I L L / 1 1 2 9
Come with soft rounded cheeks and eyes as bright
As sunlight on a stream;
5 Come back in tears,
O memory, hope, love of finished years.
Oh dream how sweet, too sweet, too bitter sweet,
Whose wakening should have been in Paradise,
Where souls brimful of love abide and meet;
10 Where thirsting longing eyes
Watch the slow door
That opening, letting in, lets out no more.
Yet come to me in dreams, that I may live

My very life again tho' cold in death:

15 Come back to me in dreams, that I may give

Pulse for pulse, breath for breath:

Speak low, lean low,

As long ago, my love, how long ago.

1854 1862

In an Artist's Studio

One face looks out from all his canvases,

One selfsame figure sits or walks or leans:

We found her hidden just behind those screens,

That mirror gave back all her loveliness.

5 A queen in opal or in ruby dress,

A nameless girl in freshest summer-greens,

A saint, an angel—every canvas means

The same one meaning, neither more nor less.

He feeds upon her face by day and night,

io And she with true kind eyes looks back on him,

Fair as the moon and joyful as the light:

Not wan with waiting, not with sorrow dim;

Not as she is, but was when hope shone bright;

Not as she is, but as she fills his dream.

1856 1896

Up-Hill

Does the road wind up-hill all the way?

Yes, to the very end.

Will the day's journey take the whole long day?

From morn to night, my friend.

1 1 3 0 / C H R I S T I N A R O S S E T T I

5 But is there for the night a resting-place?
A roof for when the slow dark hours begin.
May not the darkness hide it from my face?
You cannot miss that inn.
Shall I meet other wayfarers at night?
10 Those who have gone before.
Then must I knock, or call when just in sight?
They will not keep you standing at that door.
Shall I find comfort, travel-sore and weak?
Of labor you shall find the sum.
is Will there be beds for me and all who seek?
Yea, beds for all who come.

1858 1862

The Convent Threshold

There's blood between us, love, my love,
There's father's blood, there's brother's blood;
And blood's a bar I cannot pass:
I choose the stairs that mount above,
5 Stair after golden skyward stair,
To city and to sea of glass.
My lily feet are soiled with mud,
With scarlet mud which tells a tale
Of hope that was, of guilt that was,
io Of love that shall not yet avail;
Alas, my heart, if I could bare
My heart, this selfsame stain is there:
I seek the sea of glass and fire
To wash the spot, to burn the snare;

15 Lo, stairs are meant to lift us higher:
Mount with me, mount the kindled stair.
Your eyes look earthward, mine look up.
I see the far-off city grand,
Beyond the hills a watered land,
20 Beyond the gulf a gleaming strand
Of mansions where the righteous sup;
Who sleep at ease among their trees,
Or wake to sing a cadenced hymn
With Cherubim and Seraphim;¹
25 They bore the Cross, they drained the cup,
Racked, roasted, crushed, wrenched limb from limb,
They the offscouring² of the world:

1. Plurals (Hebrew, biblical) of, respectively, 2. What is
“scoured off,” hence refuse, that which *cherub* and *seraph*;
seraphim are the highest order is rejected, of angels, just above
the cherubim.

THE CONVENT THRESHOLD / 1 1 3 1

The heaven of starry heavens unfurled,
The sun before their face is dim.
30 You looking earthward, what see you?
Milk-white, wine-flushed among the vines,
Up and down leaping, to and fro,
Most glad, most full, made strong with wines,
Blooming as peaches pearled with dew,
35 Their golden windy hair afloat,
Love-music warbling in their throat,
Young men and women come and go.
You linger, yet the time is short:

Flee for your life, gird up your strength
40 To flee; the shadows stretched at length
Show that day wanes, that night draws nigh;
Flee to the mountain, tarry not.
Is this a time for smile and sigh,
For songs among the secret trees
45 Where sudden blue birds nest and sport?
The time is short and yet you stay:
Today while it is called today
Kneel, wrestle, knock, do violence, pray;
Today is short, tomorrow nigh:
50 Why will you die? why will you die?
You sinned with me a pleasant sin:
Repent with me, for I repent.
Woe's me the lore I must unlearn!
Woe's me that easy way we went,
55 So rugged when I would return!
How long until my sleep begin,
How long shall stretch these nights and days?
Surely, clean Angels cry, she prays;
She laves her soul with tedious tears:
60 How long must stretch these years and years?
I turn from you my cheeks and eyes,
My hair which you shall see no more—
Alas for joy that went before,
For joy that dies, for love that dies.
65 Only my lips still turn to you,
My livid lips that cry, Repent.

Oh weary life, Oh weary Lent,³
Oh weary time whose stars are few.

How should I rest in Paradise,
70 Or sit on steps of heaven alone?

If Saints and Angels spoke of love
Should I not answer from my throne:

3. Period in the Christian calendar from Ash Wednesday to
Easter Eve, devoted to fasting and penitence in
commemoration of Christ's fasting in the wilderness.

1 1 3 2 / C H R I S T I N A R O S S E T T I

Have pity upon me, ye my friends,
For I have heard the sound thereof:

75

Should I not turn with yearning eyes,
Turn earthwards with a pitiful pang?

Oh save me from a pang in heaven.

By all the gifts we took and gave,
Repent, repent, and be forgiven:

80

This life is long, but yet it ends;
Repent and purge your soul and save:

No gladder song the morning stars
Upon their birthday morning sang
Than Angels sing when one repents.

85

I tell you what I dreamed last night:

A spirit with transfigured face

Fire-footed clomb⁰ an infinite space. *climbed.*

I heard his hundred pinions⁰ clang, *feathered wings*

Heaven-bells rejoicing rang and rang,

90

Heaven-air was thrilled with subtle scents,

Worlds spun upon their rushing cars:

He mounted shrieking: "Give me light."

Still light was poured on him, more light;

Angels, Archangels he outstripped

95

Exultant in exceeding might,

And trod the skirts of Cherubim.

Still "Give me light," he shrieked; and dipped

His thirsty face, and drank a sea,

Athirst with thirst it could not slake.

100

I saw him, drunk with knowledge, take

From aching brows the aureole crown—

His locks writhed like a cloven snake—

He left his throne to grovel down

And lick the dust of Seraphs' feet:

105

For what is knowledge duly weighed?

Knowledge is strong, but love is sweet;

Yea all the progress he had made

Was but to learn that all is small

Save love, for love is all in all.

110

I tell you what I dreamed last night:

It was not dark, it was not light,

Cold dews had drenched my plenteous hair
Thro' clay; you came to seek me there.
And "Do you dream of me?" you said.

115

My heart was dust that used to leap
To you; I answered half asleep:
"My pillow is damp, my sheets are red,
There's a leaden tester⁰ to my bed: *canopy*
Find you a warmer playfellow,
A warmer pillow for your head,
A kinder love to love than mine."

4. Golden crown or halo.

PASSING AWAY, SAITH THE WORLD, PAS
SING AWAY / 1133

**Y o u w r u n g y o u r h a n d s ; w h i l e I l i k e l e a d
C r u s h e d d o w n w a r d s t h r o ' t h e s o d d e n e a r t h :
Y o u s m o t e y o u r h a n d s b u t n o t i n m i r t h ,
125 A n d r e e l e d b u t w e r e n o t d r u n k w i t h w i n
e .**

**F o r a l l n i g h t l o n g I d r e a m e d o f y o u :
I w o k e a n d p r a y e d a g a i n s t m y w i l l ,
T h e n s l e p t t o d r e a m o f y o u a g a i n .
A t l e n g t h I r o s e a n d k n e l t a n d p r a y e d :
iBo I c a n n o t w r i t e t h e w o r d s I s a i d ,
M y w o r d s w e r e s l o w , m y t e a r s w e r e f e w ;
B u t t h r o ' t h e d a r k m y s i l e n c e s p o k e
L i k e t h u n d e r . W h e n t h i s m o r n i n g b r o k e ,
M y f a c e w a s p i n c h e d , m y h a i r w a s g r a y ,
135 A n d f r o z e n b l o o d w a s o n t h e s i l l**

Where stifling in my struggle I lay.
If now you saw me you would say:
Where is the face I used to love?
And I would answer: Gone before;
140 It tarries veiled in paradise.
When once the morning star shall rise,
When earth with shadow flees away
And west stands a few within the door,
Then you shall lift the veil thereof.
145 Look up, rise up: for far above
Our palms are grown, our place is set;
There we shall meet as once we met
And love with old familiar love.

1858 1862

Passing Away, Saith the World, Passing Away

Passing away, saith the World, passing away:

Chances, beauty and youth sapped day by
day: Thy life never continue thine stay.

Is the eye waxen dim, is the dark hair changing
to gray? 5 That hath won neither laurel nor bay?

I shall clothe myself in Spring and bud in May:

Thou, root-stricken, shalt not rebuild thy decay
On my bosom for aye.

Then I answered: Yea.

io Passing away, saith my Soul, passing away:

With its burden of fear and hope, of labor and
play; Harken what the past doth witness and
say:

5. In ancient Greece, victors in the Pythian games
on the winners of academic or poetic honors. "Bay"

were crowned with a wreath made from the leaves
is synonymous with laurel.

of the laurel, and later such wreaths were bestowed

1 1 3 4 / C H R I S T I N A R O S S E T T I

Rust in thy gold, a moth is in thine array,

A canker is in thy bud, thy leaf must decay.

15 At midnight, at cockcrow, at morning, one certain day

Lo the bridegroom shall come and shall not delay:

Watch thou and pray.

Then I answered: Yea.

Passing away, saith my God, passing away:

20 Winter passeth after the long delay:

New grapes on the vine, new figs on the tender spray,

Turtle calleth turtle in Heaven's May.

Tho' I tarry, wait for Me, trust Me, watch and pray.

Arise, come away, night is past and lo it is day,

25 My love, My sister, My spouse, thou shalt hear Me say.

Then I answered: Yea.

1860 1862

Amor Mundi⁶

“Oh where are you going with your love-locks flowing

On the west wind blowing along this valley track?”

“The downhill path is easy, come with me an^o it please ye, *if*

We shall escape the uphill by never turning back.”

5 So they two went together in glowing August weather,

The honey-breathing heather lay to their left and right;

And dear she was to dote on, her swift feet seemed to float on

The air like soft twin pigeons too sportive to alight.

“Oh what is that in heaven where gray cloud-flakes are seven,
io Where blackest clouds hang riven just at the rainy skirt?”

Oh that’s a meteor sent us, a message dumb, portentous,
An undeciphered solemn signal of help or hurt.”

“Oh what is that glides quickly where velvet flowers grow
thickly,

Their scent comes rich and sickly?”—“A scaled and hooded
worm.”

15 “Oh what’s that in the hollow, so pale I quake to follow?”

“Oh that’s a thin dead body which waits the eternal term.”

“Turn again, O my sweetest,—turn again, false and fleetest:

This beaten way thou beatest I fear is hell’s own track.”

“Nay, too steep for hill-mounting; nay, too late for cost-
counting:

20 This downhill path is easy, but there’s no turning back.”

1865 1875

6. Love of the world (Latin).

1 1 1 3 5

LEWIS CARROLL

(CHARLES LUTWIDGEDODGSON)

1832-1898

Jabberwocky¹

There was a book lying near Alice on the table, and while she
sat watching

the White King (for she was still a little anxious about him,
and had the ink all ready to throw over him, in case he fainted
again), she turned over the

leaves, to find some part that she could read, “—for it’s all in
some language I don’t know,” she said to herself. It was like
this:

89VOL ydlite adl bn s <gillhd ZBWT'

:adfw adl ni aldrnig bns 9T(g biG

?89vo§oiod adl aiaw yzmim 11A

.adfiigluo zdlBi amom adl bnA

She puzzled over this for some time, but at last a bright thought struck

her. "Why, it's a Looking-glass book, of course! And, if I hold it up to a glass, the words will all go the right way again."

This was the poem that Alice read:

Jabberwocky

'Twas brillig, and the slithy toves

Did gyre and gimble in the wabe:

All mimsy were the borogoves,

And the mome raths outgrabe.

5 "Beware the Jabberwock, my son!

The jaws that bite, the claws that catch!

Beware the Jubjub bird, and shun

The frumious Bandersnatch!"

He took his vorpal sword in hand:

io Long time the manxome foe he sought—

So rested he by the Tumtum tree,

And stood awhile in thought.

And, as in uffish thought he stood,

The Jabberwock, with eyes of flame,

15 Came whiffing through the tulgey wood,

And burbled as it came!

1. From *Through the Looking-Glass*, chapter 1.

1 1 3 6 / L E W I S C A R R O L L (C H A R L E S L U T W
I D G E D O D G S O N) One, two! One, two! And through

and through

The vorpal blade went snicker-snack!

He left it dead, and with its head

20 He went galumphing back.

“And hast thou slain the Jabberwock?

Come to my arms, my beamish boy!

O frabjous day! Callooh! Callay!”

He chortled in his joy.

25 Twas brillig, and the slithy toves

Did gyre and gimble in the wabe:

All mimsy were the borogoves,

And the mome raths outgrabe.

[Humpty Dumpty’s Explication of *Jabberwocky*]²

“You seem very clever at explaining words, Sir,” said Alice.

“Would you kindly tell me the meaning of the poem *Jabberwocky*?”

“Let’s hear it,” said Humpty Dumpty. “I can explain all the poems that ever were invented—and a good many that haven’t been invented just yet.”

This sounded very hopeful, so Alice repeated the first verse:

” Twas brillig, and the slithy toves

Did gyre and gimble in the wabe;

All mimsy were the borogoves,

And the mome raths outgrabe.”

“That’s enough to begin with,” Humpty Dumpty interrupted:

“there are plenty of hard words there. ‘Brillig’ means four o’clock in the afternoon—

the time when you begin *broiling* things for dinner.”

“That’ll do very well,” said Alice: “and ‘slithy’?”³

“Well, ‘slithy’ means ‘lithe and slimy.’ ‘Lithe’ is the same as ‘active.’ You see it’s like a portmanteau—there are two meanings packed up into one word.”

“I see it now,” Alice remarked thoughtfully: “and what are ‘toves’?”

“Well, ‘toves’ are something like badgers—they’re something like lizards—

and they’re something like corkscrews.”

“They must be very curious creatures.”

“They are that,” said Humpty Dumpty: “also they make their nests under sundials—also they live on cheese.”

“And what’s to ‘gyre’ and to ‘gimble’?”

“To ‘gyre’ is to go round and round like a gyroscope. To ‘gimble’ is to make holes like a gimlet.”

“And the ‘wabe’ is the grass plot round a sundial, I suppose?” said Alice, surprised at her own ingenuity.

2. From *Through the Looking-Glass*, chapter 6.

with ‘groves.’ Again, the first ‘o’ in ‘borogoves’ is

3. Concerning the pronunciation of these words, pronounced like the ‘o’ in ‘borrow.’ I have heard Carroll later said: “The ‘i’ in ‘slithy’ is long, as in people try to give it the sound of the ‘o’ in ‘worry.’ ‘writhe’; and ‘toves’ is pronounced so as to rhyme Such is Human Perversity.”

THE WHITE KNIGHT ‘SSONG / 1137

“Of course it is. It’s called ‘wabe,’ you know, because it goes a long way before it, and a long way behind it—”

“And a long way beyond it on each side,” Alice added.

“Exactly so. Well then, ‘mimsy’ is ‘flimsy and miserable’ (there’s another portmanteau for you). And a ‘borogove’ is a

thin shabby-looking bird with its feathers sticking out all round—something like a live mop.”

“And then ‘mome raths’?” said Alice. “If I’m not giving you too much trouble.”

“Well, a ‘rath’ is a sort of green pig: but ‘mome’ I’m not certain about. I think it’s short for ‘from home’—meaning that they’d lost their way, you know.”

“And what does ‘outgrabe’ mean?”

“Well, ‘outgribing’ is something between bellowing and whistling, with a kind of sneeze in the middle: however, you’ll hear it done, maybe—down in

the wood yonder—and when you’ve once heard it you’ll be *quite* content.

Who’s been repeating all that hard stuff to you?”

“I read it in a book,” said Alice.

1 8 7 1

The White Knight’s Song⁴

Haddock’s Eyes or *The Aged Aged Man* or

Ways and Means or *A-Sitting on a Gate*

I’ll tell thee everything I can;

There’s little to relate.

I saw an aged, aged man,

A-sitting on a gate.

5 “Who are you, aged man?” I said.

“And how is it you live?”

And his answer trickled through my head

Like water through a sieve.

He said “I look for butterflies

10

That sleep among the wheat;
I make them into mutton-pies,
And sell them in the street.
I sell them unto men," he said,
"Who sail on stormy seas;
15
And that's the way I get my bread—
A trifle, if you please."
But I was thinking of a plan
To dye one's whiskers green,
And always use so large a fan
20 That it could not be seen.

So, having no reply to give

4. From *Through the Looking-Glass*, chapter 8; the song is in part a parody of Wordsworth's "Resolution and Independence" (see p. 790).

1 1 3 8 / L E W I S C A R R O L L (C H A R L E S L U T W
I D G E D O D G S O N) To what the old man said,

I cried, "Come, tell me how you live!"

And thumped him on the head.

25 His accents mild took up the tale;

He said, "I go my ways,

And when I find a mountain-rill,^o *-stream*

I set it in a blaze;

And thence they make a stuff they call

bo Rowland's Macassar Oil⁵—

Yet twopence-halfpenny is all

They give me for my toil."

But I was thinking of a way

To feed oneself on batter,
35 And so go on from day to day
Getting a little fatter.
I shook him well from side to side,
Until his face was blue;
“Come, tell me how you live,” I cried
40 “And what it is you do!”
He said, “I hunt for haddocks’ eyes
Among the heather bright,
And work them into waistcoat-buttons
In the silent night.
45 And these I do not sell for gold
Or coin of silvery shine,
But for a copper halfpenny,
And that will purchase nine.
“I sometimes dig for buttered rolls,
50 Or set limed twigs for crabs;
I sometimes search the grassy knolls
For wheels of hansom-cabs.
And that’s the way” (he gave a wink)
“By which I get my wealth—
55 And very gladly will I drink
Your Honor’s noble health.”
I heard him then, for I had just
Completed my design
To keep the Menai bridge⁶ from rust
60 By boiling it in wine.
I thanked him much for telling me

The way he got his wealth,
But chiefly for his wish that he
Might drink my noble health.

65 And now, if e'er by chance I put
My fingers into glue,

5. A patented hairdressing. 6. Railway bridge in Wales.

THE HAYSTACK IN THE FLOODS / 1 1 3 9

Or madly squeeze a right-hand foot
Into a left-hand shoe,

Or if I drop upon my toe

70 A very heavy weight,

I weep, for it reminds me so

Of that old man I used to know—

Whose look was mild, whose speech was slow,

Whose hair was whiter than the snow,

75 Whose face was very like a crow,

With eyes, like cinders, all aglow,

Who seemed distracted with his woe,

Who rocked his body to and fro,

And muttered mumblingly and low,

so As if his mouth were full of dough,

Who snorted like a buffalo—

That summer evening long ago

A-sitting on a gate.

1 8 7 1

WILLIAM MORRIS

1834-1896

The Haystack in the Floods1

Had she come all the way for this,
To part at last without a kiss?
Yea, had she borne the dirt and rain
That her own eyes might see him slain
5 Beside the haystack in the floods?
Along the dripping leafless woods,
The stirrup touching either shoe,
She rode astride as troopers do;
With kirtle⁰ kilted to her knee, *long skirt*
io To which the mud splashed wretchedly;
And the wet dripped from every tree
Upon her head and heavy hair,
And on her eyelids broad and fair;
The tears and rain ran down her face.
15 By fits and starts they rode apace,
And very often was his place
Far off from her; he had to ride
Ahead, to see what might betide
When the roads crossed; and sometimes, when
20 There rose a murmuring from his men,

1. The events of the poem take place immediately Sir Robert de Marny, and his mistress, Jehane, are after the Battle of Poitiers (1356), in which the attempting to escape the French by reaching Gas-English defeated the French. An English knight, cony, held by the English.

1 1 4 0 / W I L L I A M M O R R I S

Had to turn back with promises;
Ah me! she had but little ease;
And often for pure doubt and dread

She sobbed, made giddy in the head
25 By the swift riding; while, for cold,
Her slender fingers scarce could hold
The wet reins; yea, and scarcely, too,
She felt the foot within her shoe
Against the stirrup: all for this,
bo To part at last without a kiss
Beside the haystack in the floods.
For when they neared that old soaked hay,
They saw across the only way
That Judas, Godmar, and the three
35 Red running lions dismally
Grinned from his pennon,^o under which, *banner*
In one straight line along the ditch,
They counted thirty heads.
So then,
While Robert turned round to his men,
40 She saw at once the wretched end,
And, stooping down, tried hard to rend
Her coif the wrong way from her head,
And hid her eyes; while Robert said:
“Nay, love, ‘tis scarcely two to one,
45 At Poitiers where we made them run
So fast—why, sweet my love, good cheer.
The Gascon frontier is so near,
Nought after this.”
But, “O,” she said,
“My God! my God! I have to tread

50 The long way back without you; then
The court at Paris; those six men;²
The gratings of the Chatelet;
The swift Seine³ on some rainy day
Like this, and people standing by,
55 And laughing, while my weak hands try
To recollect how strong men swim,⁴
All this, or else a life with him,
For which I should be damned at last,
Would God that this next hour were past!”
60 He answered not, but cried his cry,
“St. George for Marny!” cheerily;
And laid his hand upon her rein.

2. I.e., the judges.

she sinks, she will be presumed innocent and will

3. The river that runs through Paris. Le Chatelet
be rescued, but if she swims, this will be assumed
is a prison in the city.

to be by virtue of her powers as a witch, and she

4. When captured, she will have to undergo trial
will be burned at the stake.

by water to determine whether she is a witch: if

THE HAYSTACK IN THE FLOODS / 1141

Alas! no man of all his train⁰ following

Gave back that cheery cry again;

65 And, while for rage his thumb beat fast

Upon his sword-hilts, someone cast

About his neck a kerchief long,

A n d b o u n d h i m .

T h e n t h e y w e n t a l o n g

T o G o d m a r ; w h o s a i d : “ N o w , J e h a n e ,

70 Y o u r l o v e r ’ s l i f e i s o n t h e w a n e

S o f a s t , t h a t , i f t h i s v e r y h o u r

Y o u y i e l d n o t a s m y p a r a m o u r ,

H e w i l l n o t s e e t h e r a i n l e a v e o f f —

N a y , k e e p y o u r t o n g u e f r o m g i b e a n d s c o f f ,

75 S i r R o b e r t , o r I s l a y y o u n o w . ”

S h e l a i d h e r h a n d u p o n h e r b r o w ,

T h e n g a z e d u p o n t h e p a l m , a s t h o u g h

S h e t h o u g h t h e r f o r e h e a d b l e d , a n d — ” N o , ”

S h e s a i d , a n d t u r n e d h e r h e a d a w a y ,

s o A s t h e r e w e r e n o t h i n g e l s e t o s a y ,

A n d e v e r y t h i n g w a s s e t t l e d : r e d

G r e w G o d m a r ’ s f a c e f r o m c h i n t o h e a d :

“ J e h a n e , o n y o n d e r h i l l t h e r e s t a n d s

M y c a s t l e , g u a r d i n g w e l l m y l a n d s :

85 W h a t h i n d e r s m e f r o m t a k i n g y o u ,

A n d d o i n g t h a t I l i s t t o d o

T o y o u r f a i r w i l l f u l b o d y , w h i l e

Y o u r k n i g h t l i e s d e a d ? ”

A w i c k e d s m i l e

W r i n k l e d h e r f a c e , h e r l i p s g r e w t h i n ,

90 A l o n g w a y o u t s h e t h r u s t h e r c h i n :

“ Y o u k n o w t h a t I s h o u l d s t r a n g l e y o u

W h i l e y o u w e r e s l e e p i n g ; o r b i t e t h r o u g h

Y o u r t h r o a t , b y G o d ’ s h e l p — a h ! ” s h e s a i d ,

“Lord J e s u s , pity your poor maid!
95 For in s u c h w i s e they h e m me in,
I c a n n o t c h o o s e b u t sin and sin,
W h a t e v e r h a p p e n s : yet I think
T h e y c o u l d n o t m a k e me eat or drink,
A n d s o s h o u l d I just reach my rest.”
100 “Nay, if you do not my behest,
O J e h a n e ! t h o u g h I love you well,”
S a i d G o d m a r , “would I fail to tell
A l l t h a t I know.” “Foul lies,” s h e said.
“Eh? lies my J e h a n e ? by God’s head,
105 A t P a r i s f o l k s w o u l d d e e m t h e m true!
D o y o u k n o w , J e h a n e , they cry for you,
‘Jehane the brown! J e h a n e the brown!
G i v e u s J e h a n e t o b u r n o r d r o w n !’—

E h — g a g m e R o b e r t ! — s w e e t m y friend,

110 T h i s w e r e i n d e e d a p i t e o u s e n d

1142 / W I L L I A M M O R R I S

F o r t h o s e l o n g f i n g e r s , a n d l o n g f e e t ,
A n d l o n g n e c k , a n d s m o o t h s h o u l d e r s s w e e
t ; A n e n d t h a t f e w m e n w o u l d f o r g e t

T h a t s a w i t — s o , a n h o u r y e t :

115 C o n s i d e r , J e h a n e , w h i c h t o t a k e
O f l i f e o r d e a t h ! ”

S o , s c a r c e a w a k e ,

D i s m o u n t i n g , d i d s h e l e a v e t h a t p l a c e ,

A n d t o t t e r s o m e y a r d s : w i t h h e r f a c e

T u r n e d u p w a r d t o t h e s k y s h e l a y ,

120 H e r h e a d o n a w e t h e a p o f h a y,
A n d f e l l a s l e e p : a n d w h i l e s h e s l e p t ,
A n d d i d n o t d r e a m , t h e m i n u t e s c r e p t
R o u n d t o t h e t w e l v e a g a i n ; b u t s h e ,
B e i n g w a k e d a t l a s t , s i g h e d q u i e t l y ,
125 A n d s t r a n g e l y c h i l d l i k e c a m e , a n d s a i d :
“ I w i l l n o t . ” S t r a i g h t w a y G o d m a r ‘ s h e a d , A s t
h o u g h i t h u n g o n s t r o n g w i r e s , t u r n e d
M o s t s h a r p l y r o u n d , a n d h i s f a c e b u r n e d .
F o r R o b e r t — b o t h h i s e y e s w e r e d r y ,
n o H e c o u l d n o t w e e p , b u t g l o o m i l y
H e s e e m e d t o w a t c h t h e r a i n ; y e a , t o o ,
H i s l i p s w e r e f i r m ; h e t r i e d o n c e m o r e
T o t o u c h h e r l i p s ; s h e r e a c h e d o u t , s o r e
A n d v a i n d e s i r e s o t o r t u r e d t h e m ,
135 T h e p o o r g r a y l i p s , a n d n o w t h e h e m
O f h i s s l e e v e b r u s h e d t h e m .
W i t h a s t a r t
U p G o d m a r r o s e , t h r u s t t h e m a p a r t ;
F r o m R o b e r t ‘ s t h r o a t h e l o o s e d t h e b a n d s
O f s i l k a n d m a i l ; w i t h e m p t y h a n d s
h o H e l d o u t , s h e s t o o d a n d g a z e d , a n d s a w ,
T h e l o n g b r i g h t b l a d e w i t h o u t a f l a w
G l i d e o u t f r o m G o d m a r ‘ s s h e a t h , h i s h a n d
I n R o b e r t ‘ s h a i r ; s h e s a w h i m b e n d
B a c k R o b e r t ‘ s h e a d ; s h e s a w h i m s e n d
145 T h e t h i n s t e e l d o w n ; t h e b l o w t o l d w e l l ,
R i g h t b a c k w a r d t h e k n i g h t R o b e r t f e l l ,

**A n d m o a n e d a s d o g s d o, b e i n g h a l f d e a d,
U n w i t t i n g, a s I d e e m: s o t h e n
G o d m a r t u r n e d g r i n n i n g t o h i s m e n,
150 W h o r a n, s o m e f i v e o r s i x, a n d b e a t
H i s h e a d t o p i e c e s a t t h e i r f e e t.**

**T h e n G o d m a r t u r n e d a g a i n, a n d s a i d:
“S o, J e h a n e, t h e f i r s t f i t t e⁵ i s r e a d!**

**T a k e n o t e, m y l a d y, t h a t y o u r w a y
155 L i e s b a c k w a r d t o t h e C h a t e l e t!”
S h e s h o o k h e r h e a d a n d g a z e d a w h i l e**

5. Division of a song, poem, or tale.

T H E E A R T H L Y P A R A D I S E / 1 1 4 3

**A t h e r c o l d h a n d s w i t h a r u e f u l s m i l e,
A s t h o u g h t h i s t h i n g h a d m a d e h e r m a d.
T h i s w a s t h e p a r t i n g t h a t t h e y h a d
160 B e s i d e t h e h a y s t a c k i n t h e f l o o d s.
1858**

The Earthly Paradise⁶

**O f h e a v e n o r h e l l I h a v e n o p o w e r t o s i n g,
I c a n n o t e a s e t h e b u r d e n o f y o u r f e a r s,
O r m a k e q u i c k - c o m i n g d e a t h a l i t t l e t h i n g,
O r b r i n g a g a i n t h e p l e a s u r e o f p a s t y e a r s,
5 N o r f o r m y w o r d s s h a l l y e f o r g e t y o u r t e a r s,
O r h o p e a g a i n f o r a u g h t t h a t I c a n s a y,
T h e i d l e s i n g e r o f a n e m p t y d a y.
B u t r a t h e r, w h e n, a w e a r y o f y o u r m i r t h,
F r o m f u l l h e a r t s s t i l l u n s a t i s f i e d y e s i g h,
i o A n d, f e e l i n g k i n d l y u n t o a l l t h e e a r t h,**

**G r u d g e every m i n u t e as it p a s s e s by,
M a d e t h e m o r e m i n d f u l t h a t t h e s w e e t d a y s d
i e —**

**R e m e m b e r m e a l i t t l e t h e n I p r a y,
T h e i d l e s i n g e r o f a n e m p t y d a y.**

**15 T h e h e a v y t r o u b l e, t h e b e w i l d e r i n g c a r e
T h a t w e i g h s u s d o w n w h o l i v e a n d e a r n o u r
b r e a d,**

**T h e s e i d l e v e r s e s h a v e n o p o w e r t o b e a r;
S o l e t m e s i n g o f n a m e s r e m e m b e r e d,
B e c a u s e t h e y, l i v i n g n o t, c a n n e ' e r b e d e a d,**

**20 O r l o n g t i m e t a k e t h e i r m e m o r y q u i t e a w a y
F r o m u s p o o r s i n g e r s o f a n e m p t y d a y.**

**D r e a m e r o f d r e a m s, b o r n o u t o f m y d u e t i m e,
W h y s h o u l d I s t r i v e t o s e t t h e c r o o k e d s t r a i g h t?**

**L e t i t s u f f i c e m e t h a t m y m u r m u r i n g r h y m e
25 B e a t s w i t h l i g h t w i n g a g a i n s t t h e i v o r y g a t e, 7**

**T e l l i n g a t a l e n o t t o o i m p o r t u n a t e
T o t h o s e w h o i n t h e s l e e p y r e g i o n s t a y,
L u l l e d b y t h e s i n g e r o f a n e m p t y d a y.**

F o l k s a y, a w i z a r d t o a n o r t h e r n k i n g

**30 A t C h r i s t m a s - t i d e s u c h w o n d r o u s t h i n g
s d i d s h o w, T h a t t h r o u g h o n e w i n d o w m e n b e
h e l d t h e s p r i n g, A n d t h r o u g h a n o t h e r s a w t h e
s u m m e r g l o w, A n d t h r o u g h a t h i r d t h e f r u i t e
d v i n e s a - r o w,**

6. The dedicatory stanzas to Morris's poem *The*

7. In Homer, dreams came through one or the

Earthly Paradise (1868—70), consisting of a pro-

other of two gates: through the gates of ivory, those

logue and twenty-four tales on classical and medi-
that were untrue; through the gates of horn, those
eval—especially Norse—subjects.

that were true.

1 1 4 4 / W . S . G I L B E R T

While still, unheard, but in its wonted way, *usual*

35 Piped the drear wind of that December day.

So with this Earthly Paradise it is,

If ye will read aright, and pardon me,

Who strive to build a shadowy isle of bliss

Midmost the beating of the steely sea,

40 Where tossed about all hearts of men must be;

Whose ravening monsters mighty men shall slay,

Not the poor singer of an empty day.

1 8 6 8 - 7 0

W. S. G I L B E R T

1836-1911

I Am the Very Model of a Modern Major-General¹

I am the very model of a modern Major-General,

I've information vegetable, animal, and mineral,

I know the kings of England, and I quote the fights historical,

From Marathon to Waterloo, in order categorical;²

5 I'm very well acquainted too with matters mathematical,

I understand equations, both the simple and quadratical,

About binomial theorem I'm teeming with a lot o' news—

With many cheerful facts about the square of the hypotenuse.³

ALL With many cheerful facts, etc.

io GEN. I'm very good at integral and differential calculus,

I know the scientific names of beings animalculous;4
In short, in matters vegetable, animal, and mineral,
I am the very model of a modern Major-General.

ALL In short, in matters vegetable, animal, and mineral,
15 He is the very model of a modern Major-General.

GEN. I know our mythic history, King Arthur's and Sir
Caradoc's,

I answer hard acrostics, I've a pretty taste for paradox,
I quote in elegiacs all the crimes of Heliogabalus,
In conics I can floor peculiarities parabolous.5

1. Sung by the Major-General on his entrance in
bits of knowledge: Sir Caradoc was a legendary fig-
act 1 of *The Pirates of Penzance*.

ure in British history, supposedly one of King

2. The Greeks defeated the Persians in a famous
Arthur's knights; acrostics are word puzzles (fore-
battle at Marathon in 490 **B.C.E.**; the duke of Wel-
runners of crossword puzzles); elegiacs were a clas-
lington won his decisive victory over Napoleon at
sical verse form of praise, quite unsuitable to
Waterloo in 1815.

describe the life of the most depraved Roman

3. All these are mathematical terms.

emperor; conics is the study of three-dimensional

4. Microscopic organisms.

figures, of which the parabola is one.

5. More examples of the Major-General's abstruse

I A M T H E V E R Y M O D E L O F A M O D E R N M A J
O R - G E N E R A L / 1 1 4 5

20 I can tell undoubted Raphaels from Gerard Dows and
Zoffanies,
I know the croaking chorus from the *Frogs* of Aristophanes,
Then I can hum a fugue of which I've heard the music's
dinafore,
And whistle all the airs from that infernal nonsense *Pinafore*.⁶
ALL And whistle all the airs, etc.

25 GEN. Then I can write a washing bill in Babylonian
cuneiform,
And tell you every detail of Caractacus's uniform;⁷
In short, in matters vegetable, animal, and mineral,
I am the very model of a modern Major-General.

ALL In short, in matters vegetable, animal, and mineral,
BO He is the very model of a modern Major-General.

GEN. In fact, when I know what is meant by "mamelon" and
"ravelin,"

When I can tell at sight a chassepot rifle from a javelin,
When such affairs as sorties and surprises I'm more wary at,
And when I know precisely what is meant by "commissariat,"
35 When I have learnt what progress has been made in modern
gunnery,

When I know more of tactics than a novice in a nunnery:
In short, when I've a smattering of elemental strategy,
You'll say a better Major-General has never *sat* a gee—⁸

ALL You'll say a better, etc.

40 GEN. For my military knowledge, though I'm plucky and
adventury,
Has only been brought down to the beginning of the century;
But still in matters vegetable, animal, and mineral,

I am the very model of a modern Major-General.

ALL But still in matters vegetable, animal, and mineral,

45 He is the very model of a modern Major-General.

1879

6. Raphael was one of the great painters of the pressing a stick into clay) practiced in ancient Bab-early Italian Renaissance, as opposed to Gerhard ylonia; Caractacus is an alternate form of *Caradoc*. Dou and Johann Zoffany, undistinguished seven-8. Horse (usually a work horse). The Major-teenth- and eighteenth-century painters; in *The General* has just listed his “smattering” of military *Frogs*, by Aristophanes, the great classical comic terms: a mamelon is a fortified mound, while a rav-playwright, a chorus of frogs chants “Brekke-ko-ax, elin is a detached outwork also used in fortifica-ko-ax, ko-ax”; a fugue is a learned (and, inciden-tion; the chassepot rifle was a bolt-action, tally, multivoiced) musical composition; the last breech-loading rifle, very recently invented in Gil-line of the verse is Gilbert’s sly dig at the immense bert’s time, while a javelin is a light spear that has popularity of the previous Gilbert and Sullivan been used in warfare for centuries; sorties and sur-operetta, *H.M.S. Pinafore* (1878).

prises are sudden military attacks; a commissariat

7. Cuneiform was a form of writing (made by is the system for supplying an army with food.

1 2 1 0 / A L G E R N O N C H A R L E S S W I N B U R N
E

Titwillow9

On a tree by a river a little tom-tit

Sang “Willow, titwillow, titwillow!”

And I said to him, “Dicky-bird, why do you sit

Singing ‘Willow, titwillow, titwillow’?”

5 “Is it weakness of intellect, birdie?” I cried,

“Or a rather tough worm in your little inside?”

With a shake of his poor little head, he replied,

“Oh, willow, titwillow, titwillow!”

He slapped at his chest, as he sat on that bough,

10 Singing “Willow, titwillow, titwillow!”

And a cold perspiration bespangled his brow,

Oh, willow, titwillow, titwillow!

He sobbed and he sighed, and a gurgle he gave,

Then he plunged himself into the billowy wave,

15 And an echo arose from the suicide’s grave—

“Oh, willow, titwillow, titwillow!”

Now I feel just as sure as I’m sure that my name

Isn’t Willow, titwillow, titwillow,

That ‘twas blighted affection that made him exclaim

20 “Oh, willow, titwillow, titwillow!”

And if you remain callous and obdurate, I

Shall perish as he did, and you will know why,

Though I probably shall not exclaim as I die,

“Oh, willow, titwillow, titwillow!”

A L G E R N O N C H A R L E S S W I N B U R N E

1837-1909

Chorus from *Atalanta in Calydon*

When the Hounds of Spring Are on Winter's Traces

When the hounds of spring are on winter's traces,

The mother of months¹ in meadow or plain

Fills the shadows and windy places

With lisp of leaves and ripple of rain;

5 And the brown bright nightingale amorous

Sung by Ko-Ko in act 2 of *The Mikado*.

months" because in Greek mythology she is

This chorus, with which Swinburne's tragedy

moon goddess.

jins, is addressed to Artemis, called "mother of

CHORUS FROM *ATALANTA IN CALYDON* / 1 1 4 7

Is half assuaged for Itylus,²

For the Thracian ships and the foreign faces,

The tongueless vigil, and all the pain.

Come with bows bent and with emptying of quivers,

10 Maiden most perfect, lady of light,

With a noise of winds and many rivers,

With a clamor of waters, and with might;

Bind on thy sandals, O thou most fleet,

Over the splendor and speed of thy feet;

15 For the faint east quickens, the wan west shivers,

Round the feet of the day and the feet of the night.

Where shall we find her, how shall we sing to her,

Fold our hands round her knees, and cling?

O that man's heart were as fire and could spring to her,

20 Fire, or the strength of the streams that spring!
For the stars and the winds are unto her
As raiment, as songs of the harp-player;
For the risen stars and the fallen cling to her,
And the southwest wind and the west wind sing.
25 For winter's rains and ruins are over,
And all the season of snows and sins;
The days dividing lover and lover,
The light that loses, the night that wins;
And time remembered is grief forgotten,
30 And frosts are slain and flowers begotten,
And in green underwood and cover
Blossom by blossom the spring begins.
The full streams feed on flower of rushes,
Ripe grasses trammel a traveling foot,
35 The faint fresh flame of the young year flushes
From leaf to flower and flower to fruit;
And fruit and leaf are as gold and fire,
And the oar² is heard above the lyre, *musical* pipe
And the hooped heel of a satyr³ crushes
40 The chestnut-husk at the chestnut-root.
And Pan by noon and Bacchus by night,⁴
Fleeter of foot than the fleet-foot kid,
Follows with dancing and fills with delight
The Maenad and the Bassarid;
45 And soft as lips that laugh and hide
The laughing leaves of the trees divide,
2. Tereus, king of Thrace, raped his sister-in-law,

Philomela into a nightingale.

Philomela, and cut out her tongue to ensure her

3. A woodland god, half man, half beast.

silence. But Philomela wove the story of his deed

4. Pan was the Greek god of flocks and shepherds;

into a tapestry, and in revenge her sister, Procne,

Racchus, or Dionysus, god of wine, was accom-

panied in his revels (Racchanalia) by a train of

son Itys (or Itylus), at a banquet. The sisters, flee-

devotees that included Maenads and Bassarids

ing from Tereus, were changed into birds before

(line 44).

he could overtake them, Procne into a swallow,

1 1 4 8 / A L G E R N O N C H A R L E S S W I N B U R N

E

And screen from seeing and leave in sight

The god pursuing, the maiden hid.

The ivy falls with the Bacchanal's hair

50 Over her eyebrows hiding her eyes;

The wild vine slipping down leaves bare

Her bright breast shortening into sighs;

The wild vine slips with the weight of its leaves,

But the berried ivy catches and cleaves

55 To the limbs that glitter, the feet that scare

The wolf that follows, the fawn that flies.

1865

The Garden of Proserpine5

Here, where the world is quiet;
Here, where all trouble seems
Dead winds' and spent waves' riot
In doubtful dreams of dreams;
5 I watch the green field growing
For reaping folk and sowing,
For harvest-time and mowing,
A sleepy world of streams.
I am tired of tears and laughter,
10 And men that laugh and weep;
Of what may come hereafter
For men that sow to reap:
I am weary of days and hours,
Blown buds of barren flowers,
15 Desires and dreams and powers
And everything but sleep.
Here life has death for neighbor,
And far from eye or ear
Wan waves and wet winds labor,
20 Weak ships and spirits steer;
They drive adrift, and whither
They wot⁰ not who make thither; *know*
But no such winds blow hither,
And no such things grow here.
25 No growth of moor or coppice,⁰ *forest*
No heather-flower or vine,
But bloomless buds of poppies,
Green grapes of Proserpine,

5. Persephone, in Roman mythology Proserpine, underworld (over which she ruled with him the daughter of Zeus and Demeter, had been thereafter as his queen and as goddess of death and abducted by Hades (the Roman Pluto), god of the eternal sleep).

THE GARDEN OF PROSERPINE / 1149

Pale beds of blowing rushes

30 Where no leaf blooms or blushes

Save this whereout she crushes

For dead men deadly wine.

Pale, without name or number,

In fruitless fields of corn, *0 wheat*

35 They bow themselves and slumber

All night till light is born;

And like a soul belated,

In hell and heaven unmated,

By cloud and mist abated

40 Comes out of darkness morn.

Though one were strong as seven,

He too with death shall dwell,

Nor wake with wings in heaven,

Nor weep for pains in hell;

45 Though one were fair as roses,

His beauty clouds and closes;

And well though love reposes,

In the end it is not well.

Pale, beyond porch and portal,

50 Crowned with calm leaves, she stands

Who gathers all things mortal

With cold immortal hands;
Her languid lips are sweeter
Than love's who fears to greet her
55 To men that mix and meet her
From many times and lands.
She waits for each and other,
She waits for all men born;
Forgets the earth her mother,
60 The life of fruits and corn;
And spring and seed and swallow
Take wing for her and follow
Where summer song rings hollow
And flowers are put to scorn.
65 There go the loves that wither,
The old loves with wearier wings;
And all dead years draw thither,
And all disastrous things;
Dead dreams of days forsaken,
70 Blind buds that snows have shaken,
Wild leaves that winds have taken,
Red strays of ruined springs.
We are not sure of sorrow,
And joy was never sure;
1 1 5 0 / A L G E R N O N C H A R L E S S W I N B U R N
E
75 Today will die tomorrow;
Time stoops to no man's lure;
And love, grown faint and fretful,

With lips but half regretful
Sighs, and with eyes forgetful
so Weeps that no love endure.
From too much love of living,
From hope and fear set free,
We thank with brief thanksgiving
Whatever gods may be
85 That no life lives for ever;
That dead men rise up never;
That even the weariest river
Winds somewhere safe to sea.
Then star nor sun shall waken,
90 Nor any change of light:
Nor sound of waters shaken,
Nor any sound or sight:
Nor wintry leaves nor vernal,⁰ *of spring*
Nor days nor things diurnal;⁰ *daily*
95 Only the sleep eternal
In an eternal night.

1866

A Forsaken Garden

In a coign⁰ of the cliff between lowland and highland, *corner*
At the sea-down's edge between windward and lee,
Walled round with rocks as an inland island,
The ghost of a garden fronts the sea.
5 A girdle of brushwood and thorn encloses
The steep square slope of the blossomless bed
Where the weeds that grew green from the graves of its roses

Now lie dead.

The fields fall southward, abrupt and broken,

io To the low last edge of the long lone land.

If a step should sound or a word be spoken,

Would a ghost not rise at the strange guest's hand?

So long have the grey bare walks lain guestless,

Through branches and briars if a man make way,

15 He shall find no life but the sea-wind's, restless

Night and day.

6. In falconry, a device used to recall the hawk to the falconer's wrist.

A F O R S A K E N G A R D E N / 1 1 5 1

The dense hard passage is blind and stifled

That crawls by a track none turn to climb

To the strait waste place that the years have rifled

20 Of all but the thorns that are touched not of time.

The thorns he spares when the rose is taken;

The rocks are left when he wastes the plain.

The wind that wanders, the weeds wind-shaken,

These remain.

25 Not a flower to be pressed of the foot that falls not;

As the heart of a dead man the seed-plots are dry;

From the thicket of thorns whence the nightingale calls not,

Could she call, there were never a rose to reply.

Over the meadows that blossom and wither

30 Rings but the note of a sea-bird's song;

Only the sun and the rain come hither

All year long.

The sun burns sere⁰ and the rain dishevels *dry*

One gaunt bleak blossom of scentless breath.

35 Only the wind here hovers and revels

In a round where life seems barren as death.

Here there was laughing of old, there was weeping,

Haply, of lovers none ever will know,

Whose eyes went seaward a hundred sleeping

40 Years ago.

Heart handfast in heart as they stood, “Look thither,”

Did he whisper? “look forth from the flowers to the sea,

For the foam-flowers endure when the rose-blossoms wither,

And men that love lightly may die—but we?”

45 And the same wind sang and the same waves whitened,

And or ever the garden’s last petals were shed,

In the lips that had whispered, the eyes that had lightened,

Love was dead.

Or they loved their life through, and then went whither?

50 And were one to the end—but what end who knows?

Love deep as the sea as a rose must wither,

As the rose-red seaweed that mocks the rose.

Shall the dead take thought for the dead to love them?

What love was ever as deep as a grave?

55 They are loveless now as the grass above them

Or the wave.

All are at one now, roses and lovers,

Not known of the cliffs and the fields and the sea.

Not a breath of the time that has been hovers

60 In the air now soft with a summer to be.

Not a breath shall there sweeten the seasons hereafter
Of the flowers or the lovers that laugh now or weep,
When as they that are free now of weeping and laughter
We shall sleep.

1 1 5 2 / T H O M A S H A R D Y

65 Here death may deal not again for ever;
Here change may come not till all change end.
From the graves they have made they shall rise up never,
Who have left nought living to ravage and rend.
Earth, stones, and thorns of the wild ground growing,
70 While the sun and the rain live, these shall be;
Till a last wind's breath upon all these blowing
Roll the sea.

Till the slow sea rise and the sheer cliff crumble,
Till terrace and meadow the deep gulfs drink,
75 Till the strength of the waves of the high tides humble
The fields that lessen, the rocks that shrink,
Here now in his triumph where all things falter,
Stretched out on the spoils that his own hand spread,
As a god self-slain on his own strange altar,
so Death lies dead.

1 8 7 6 1 8 7 8

T H O M A S H A R D Y

1840-1928

Hap1

If but some vengeful god would call to me
From up the sky, and laugh: "Thou suffering thing,
Know that thy sorrow is my ecstasy,

That thy love's loss is my hate's profiting!"
5 Then would I bear it, clench myself, and die,
Steeled by the sense of ire unmerited;
Half-eased in that a Powerfuller than I
Had willed and meted me the tears I shed.
But not so. How arrives it joy lies slain,
io And why unblooms the best hope ever sown?
—Crass Casualty obstructs the sun and rain,
And dicing Time for gladness casts a moan... .
These purblind Doomsters had as readily strown
Blisses about my pilgrimage as pain.

1 8 6 6 1 8 9 8

1. I.e., chance (as also "Casualty," line 11).

I L O O K I N T O M Y G L A S S / 1 1 5 3

Neutral Tones

We stood by a pond that winter day,
And the sun was white, as though chidden⁰ oP God,
rebuked./by
And a few leaves lay on the starving sod;^o *turf*
—They had fallen from an ash, and were grey.
5 Your eyes on me were as eyes that rove
Over tedious riddles of years ago;
And some words played between us to and fro
On which lost the more by our love.
The smile on your mouth was the deadest thing
10 Alive enough to have strength to die;
And a grin of bitterness swept thereby
Like an ominous bird a-wing ...

Since then, keen lessons that love deceives,
And wrings with wrong, have shaped to me
15 Your face, and the God-curst sun, and a tree,
And a pond edged with greyish leaves.

1867 1898

I Look into My Glass²

I look into my glass,
And view my wasting skin,
And say, "Would God it came to pass
My heart had shrunk as thin!"

5 For then, I, undistrest

By hearts grown cold to me,
Could lonely wait my endless rest
With equanimity.

But Time, to make me grieve,
io Part steals, lets part abide;
And shakes this fragile frame at eve
With throbbings of noontide.

1898

2. Mirror.

1 1 5 4 / T H O M A S H A R D Y

Drummer Hodge³

i

They throw in Drummer Hodge, to rest
Uncoffined—just as found:

His landmark is a kopje-crest⁴

That breaks the veldt around;

5 And foreign constellations wests

Each night above his mound.

2

Young Hodge the Drummer never knew—

Fresh from his Wessex home—

The meaning of the broad Karoo,

io The Bush,⁶ the dusty loam,

And why uprose to nightly view

Strange stars amid the gloam.

3

Yet portion of that unknown plain

Will Hodge forever be;

15 His homely Northern breast and brain

Grow to some Southern tree,

And strange-eyed constellations reign

His stars eternally.

1 8 9 9 1 9 0 2

A Broken Appointment

You did not come,

And marching Time drew on, and wore me numb.

Yet less for loss of your dear presence there

Than that I thus found lacking in your make

5 That high compassion which can overbear

Reluctance for pure lovingkindness' sake

Grieved I, when, as the hope-hour stroked its sum,

You did not come.

You love not me,

io And love alone can lend you loyalty;

—I know and knew it. But, unto the store

Of human deeds divine in all but name,

3. The poem presents an incident from the Roer

4. Crest of a small hill (South African Dutch). The

War (1899-1902) and when first published bore

veldt (line 4) is open country, unenclosed pasture

this note: "One of the Drummers killed was a

land; the Karoo (line 9), barren tracts of plateau-

native of a village near Casterbridge," i.e., Dorch-

land.

ester, the principal city of the region of southern

5. Set. *Foreign*: i.e., to an English soldier.

England to which, in his novels and poems, Hardy

6. Uncleared area of land (British colonial word).

gave its medieval name, Wessex.

T H E D A R K L I N G T H R U S H / 1 1 5 5

Was it not worth a little hour or more

To add yet this: Once you, a woman, came

To soothe a time-torn man; even though it be

You love not me?

1902

The Darkling Thrush

I leant upon a coppice gate⁷

When Frost was spectre-grey,

And Winter's dregs made desolate

The weakening eye of day.

5 The tangled bine-stems⁸ scored the sky

Like strings of broken lyres,

And all mankind that haunted nigh

Had sought their household fires.

The land's sharp features seemed to be

10

The Century's corpse outleant,⁹

His crypt the cloudy canopy,

The wind his death-lament.

The ancient pulse of germ and birth

Was shrunken hard and dry,

15

And every spirit upon earth

Seemed fervourless as I.

At once a voice arose among

The bleak twigs overhead

In a full-hearted evensong

20 Of joy illimited;

An aged thrush, frail, gaunt, and small,

In blast-beruffled plume,

Had chosen thus to fling his soul

Upon the growing gloom.

25

So little cause for carolings

Of such ecstatic sound

Was written on terrestrial things

Afar or nigh around,

That I could think there trembled through

30

His happy good-night air

Some blessed Hope, whereof he knew

And I was unaware.

December 31, 1900 1902

7. Gate leading to a small wood.

9. Leaning out (i.e., of its coffin); note the poem's

8. Shoots or stems of a climbing plant.

composition date.

1 1 5 6 / T H O M A S H A R D Y

The Ruined Maid

“O’Melia, my dear, this does everything crown!

Who could have supposed I should meet you in Town?

And whence such fair garments, such prosperi-ty?”

“O didn’t you know I’d been ruined?” said she.

5 “You left us in tatters, without shoes or socks,

Tired of digging potatoes, and spudding up docks;1

And now you’ve gay bracelets and bright feathers three!”

“Yes: that’s how we dress when we’re ruined,” said she.

“At home in the barton0 you said ‘thee’ and ‘thou,’ *farm*

10 And ‘thik oon,’ and ‘theas oon,’ and ‘t’other’; but now

Your talking quite fits ‘ee for high compa-ny!”

“Some polish is gained with one’s ruin,” said she.

“Your hands were like paws then, your face blue and bleak

But now I’m bewitched by your delicate cheek,

15 And your little gloves fit as on any la-dy!”

“We never do work when we’re ruined,” said she.

“You used to call home-life a hag-ridden dream,

And you’d sigh, and you’d sock;0 but at present you seem *sigh*

To know not of megrims0 or melancho-ly!” *low spirits*

20 “True. One’s pretty lively when ruined,” said she.

“I wish I had feathers, a fine sweeping gown,
And a delicate face, and could strut about Town!”
“My dear—a raw country girl, such as you be,
Cannot quite expect that. You ain’t ruined,” said she.

1866

1902

The Convergence of the Twain

*Lines on the Loss of the Titanic*²

i

In a solitude of the sea
Deep from human vanity,
And the Pride of Life that planned her, stilly couches she.

2

Steel chambers, late the pyres
Of her salamandrine fires,³
Cold currents thrid,⁰ and turn to rhythmic tidal lyres.

thread

1. Digging up weedy herbs.

3. The ship’s fires, which burn though immersed

2. The White Star liner R.M.S. *Titanic* was sunk,
in water, are compared to the salamander, a lizard-
with great loss of life, as the result of collision with
like creature that according to fable could live in
an iceberg on its maiden voyage from Southamp-
the midst of fire.

ton to New York on April 15, 1912. *Twain*: two.

CHANNEL FIRING / 1157

11221

Over the mirrors meant

To glass the opulent

The sea-worm crawls—grotesque, slimed, dumb, indifferent.

4

io Jewels in joy designed

To ravish the sensuous mind

Lie lightless, all their sparkles bleared and black and blind.

5

Dim moon-eyed fishes near

Gaze at the gilded gear

15 And query: “What does this vaingloriousness down here?”

6

Well: while was fashioning

This creature of cleaving wing,

The Immanent Will⁴ that stirs and urges everything

7

Prepared a sinister mate

20 For her—so gaily great—

A Shape of Ice, for the time far and dissociate.

8

And as the smart ship grew

In stature, grace, and hue,

In shadowy silent distance grew the Iceberg too.

9

25 Alien they seemed to be:

No mortal eye could see

The intimate welding of their later history,

10

Or sign that they were bent

By paths coincident

30 On being anon⁰ twin halves of one august⁰ event, *soon / important*

n

Till the Spinner of the Years

Said “Now!” And each one hears,

And consummation comes, and jars two hemispheres.

1 9 1 2

Channel Firing⁵

That night your great guns, unawares,

Shook all our coffins as we lay,

4. The blind force (in Hardy’s belief system, not

Four months after Hardy wrote this poem, World

identified with any deity) that drives the world.

War I began.

5. I.e., gunnery practice in the English Channel.

1 1 5 8 / T H O M A S H A R D Y

And broke the chancel⁶ window-squares,

We thought it was the Judgment-day

5 And sat upright. While drearisome

Arose the howl of wakened hounds:

The mouse let fall the altar-crumb,

The worms drew back into the mounds,

The glebe cow⁷ drooled. Till God called, “No;

10 It’s gunnery practice out at sea

Just as before you went below;

The world is as it used to be:

“All nations striving strong to make
Red war yet redder. Mad as hatters
15 They do no more for Christes sake
Than you who are helpless in such matters.

“That this is not the judgment-hour
For some of them’s a blessed thing,
For if it were they’d have to scour
20 Hell’s floor for so much threatening... .

“Ha, ha. It will be warmer when
I blow the trumpet (if indeed
I ever do; for you are men,
And rest eternal sorely need).”

25 So down we lay again. “I wonder,
Will the world ever saner be,”
Said one, “than when He sent us under
In our indifferent century!”

And many a skeleton shook his head.

30 “Instead of preaching forty year,”
My neighbour Parson Thirdly said,
“I wish I had stuck to pipes and beer.”

Again the guns disturbed the hour,
Roaring their readiness to avenge,

35 As far inland as Stourton Tower,
And Camelot, and starlit Stonehenge.⁸

April 1914 1914

6. Part of a church nearest the altar.

the legendary King Arthur’s court, has been vari-

7. Cow pastured on the glebe, a piece of land

ously associated with Winchester and with certain
attached to a vicarage or rectory.

places in Somersetshire. Stonehenge is a circular

8. Stourton Tower, built in 1772, and locally
grouping of megalithic monuments on Salisbury
known as “Alfred’s Tower,” stands on the highest
Plain, Wiltshire, dating back to the late Neolithic
point of the estate of Stourhead, in Wiltshire, close
or early Bronze Age.

to the Somersetshire border. Camelot, the seat of

UNDER THE WATERFALL / 1159

Under the Waterfall

“Whenever I plunge my arm, like this,

In a basin of water, I never miss

The sweet sharp sense of a fugitive day

Fetched back from its thickening shroud of grey.

5 Hence the only prime

And real love-rhyme

That I know by heart,

And that leaves no smart,

Is the purl⁹ of a little valley fall

10 About three spans wide and two spans tall

Over a table of solid rock

And into a scoop of the self-same block;

The purl of a runlet that never ceases

In stir of kingdoms, in wars, in peaces;

15 With a hollow boiling voice it speaks

And has spoken since hills were turfless peaks.”

“And why gives this the only prime
Idea to you of a real love-rhyme?
And why does plunging your arm in a bowl
20 Full of spring water, bring throbs to your soul?”

“Well, under the fall, in a crease of the stone,
Though where precisely none ever has known,
Jammed darkly, nothing to show how prized,
And by now with its smoothness opalized,
25 Is a drinking-glass:

For, down that pass

My lover and I

Walked under a sky

Of blue with a leaf-wove awning of green,

30 In the burn of August, to paint the scene,

And we placed our basket of fruit and wine

By the runlet’s rim, where we sat to dine;

And when we had drunk from the glass together,

Arched by the oak-copse⁰ from the weather,

-thicket

35 I held the vessel to rinse in the fall,

Where it slipped, and sank, and was past recall,

Though we stooped and plumbed the little abyss

With long bared arms. There the glass still is.

And, as said, if I thrust my arm below

40 Cold water in basin or bowl, a thro^e

violent -pang

From the past awakens a sense of that time,

And the glass we used, and the cascade’s rhyme.

The basin seems the pool, and its edge
The hard smooth face of the brook-side ledge,
9. Flow with a murmuring sound.
1 1 6 0 / T H O M A S H A R D Y
45 And the leafy pattern of china-ware
The hanging plants that were bathing there.
“By night, by day, when it shines or lours,⁰ *darkens*
There lies intact that chalice of ours,
And its presence adds to the rhyme of love
50 Persistently sung by the fall above.
No lip has touched it since his and mine
In turns therefrom sipped lovers’ wine.”
1914

The Voice

Woman much missed, how you call to me, call to me,
Saying that now you are not as you were
When you had changed from the one who was all to me,
But as at first, when our day was fair.
5 Can it be you that I hear? Let me view you, then,
Standing as when I drew near to the town
Where you would wait for me: yes, as I knew you then,
Even to the original air-blue gown!
Or is it only the breeze, in its listlessness
io Travelling across the wet mead⁰ to me here,
meadow
You being ever dissolved to wan wistlessness,⁰
heedlessness
Heard no more again far or near?

Thus I; faltering forward,
Leaves around me falling,
15 Wind oozing thin through the thorn from norward,
northward

And the woman calling.

December 1912 1914

During Wind and Rain

They sing their dearest songs—

He, she, all of them—yea,

Treble and tenor and bass,

And one to play;

5 With the candles mooning⁰ each face... . *lighting*

Ah, no; the years O!

How the sick leaves reel down in throngs!

They clear the creeping moss—

Elders and juniors—aye,

IN TIME OF "THE BREAKING OF NATIONS"
" / 1 1 6 1

Making the pathways neat

And the garden gay;

And they build a shady seat... .

Ah, no; the years, the years;

See, the white storm-birds wing across.

They are blithely⁰ breakfasting all— *cheerfully*

Men and maidens—yea,

Under the summer tree,

With a glimpse of the bay,

While pet fowl come to the knee... .

Ah, no; the years O!

And the rotten rose is ript from the wall.
They change to a high new house,
He, she, all of them—aye,
Clocks and carpets and chairs
On the lawn all day,
And brightest things that are theirs... .
Ah, no; the years, the years
Down their carved names the rain-drop ploughs.

1 9 1 7

In Time of “The Breaking of Nations”¹

i

Only a man harrowing⁰ clods⁰ *cultivating / earth*

In a slow silent walk

With an old horse that stumbles and nods

Half asleep as they stalk.

5 Only thin smoke without flame

From the heaps of couch-grass;

Yet this will go onward the same

Though Dynasties pass.

3

Yonder a maid and her wight⁰ *man*

io Come whispering by:

War’s annals will cloud into night

Ere their story die.

1 9 1 5 1 9 1 6

1. Cf. Jeremiah 51.20: “Thou art my battle ax and weapons of war: for with thee will I break in pieces the nations, and with thee will I destroy kingdoms.”

1 1 6 2 / S I D N E Y L A N I E R

Afterwards

When the Present has latched its postern⁰ behind my *back gate*

tremulous stay

And the May month flaps its glad green leaves like wings,

Delicate-filmed as new-spun silk, will the neighbours say,

“He was a man who used to notice such things”?

5 If it be in the dusk when, like an eyelid’s soundless blink,

The dewfall-hawk comes crossing the shades to alight

Upon the wind-warped upland thorn, a gazer may think,

“To him this must have been a familiar sight.”

If I pass during some nocturnal blackness, mothy and warm,

10 When the hedgehog travels furtively over the lawn,

One may say, “He strove that such innocent creatures should come to

no harm,

But he could do little for them; and now he is gone.”

If, when hearing that I have been stilled at last, they stand at the door,

Watching the full-starred heavens that winter sees,

15 Will this thought rise on those who will meet my face no more,

“He was one who had an eye for such mysteries”?

And will any say when my bell of quittance is heard in the gloom,

And a crossing breeze cuts a pause in its outrollings,

Till they rise again, as they were a new bell’s boom,

20 “He hears it not now, but used to notice such things”?

1 9 1 7

SIDNEY LANIER

1842-1881

From the Flats¹

What heartache—ne'er a hill!

Inexorable, vapid, vague, and chill

The drear sand-levels drain my spirit low.

With one poor word they tell me all they know;

5 Whereat their stupid tongues, to tease my pain,

Do drawl it o'er again and o'er again.

They hurt my heart with griefs I cannot name:

Always the same, the same.

1. Written in Tampa, Florida; Lanier was from Georgia.

THE MARSHES OF GLYNN / 1163

Nature hath no surprise,

10 No ambushade⁰ of beauty 'gainst mine eyes

ambush

From brake or lurking dell or deep defile;⁰

narrow pass

No humors, frolic forms—this mile, that mile;

No rich reserves or happy-valley hopes

Beyond the bends of roads, the distant slopes.

15 Her fancy fails, her wild is all run tame:

Ever the same, the same.

Oh, might I through these tears

But glimpse some hill my Georgia high uprears,

Where white the quartz and pink the pebble shine,

20 The hickory heavenward strives, the muscadine⁰ *grapevine*

Swings o'er the slope, the oak's far-falling shade

Darkens the dogwood in the bottom glade,

And down the hollow from a ferny nook

Bright leaps a living brook!

1 8 7 7

The Marshes of Glynn²

Glooms of the live-oaks,³ beautiful-braided and woven

With intricate shades of the vines that myriad-cloven

Clamber the forks of the multiform boughs,—

Emerald twilights,—

5 Virginal shy lights,

Wrought of the leaves to allure to the whisper of vows,

When lovers pace timidly down through the green colonnades

Of the dim sweet woods, of the dear dark woods,

Of the heavenly woods and glades,

io That run to the radiant marginal sand-beach within

The wide sea-marshes of Glynn;—

Beautiful glooms, soft dusks in the noon-day fire,—

Wildwood privacies, closets of lone desire,

Chamber from chamber parted with wavering arras⁰ of
tapestry

leaves,—

15 Cells for the passionate pleasure of prayer to the soul that
grieves,

Pure with a sense of the passing of saints through the wood,

Cool for the dutiful weighing of ill with good;—

O braided dusks of the oak and woven shades of the vine,

While the riotous noon-day sun of the June-day long did shine,

20 Ye held me fast in your heart and I held you fast in mine;

But now when the noon is no more, and riot is rest,

And the sun is a-wait at the ponderous gate of the West,

And the slant yellow beam down the wood-aisle doth seem

2. Glynn County, Georgia.

3. Evergreen oaks, indigenous to the American South.

1164 / SIDNEY LANIER

Like a lane into heaven that leads from a dream,—

**25 Ay, now, when my soul all day hath drunken the soul of
the oak,**

**And my heart is at ease from men, and the wearisome
sound of the**

stroke

Of the scythe of time and the trowel of trade is low,

And belief overmasters doubt, and I know that I know,

And my spirit is grown to a lordly great compass within,

**30 That the length arid the breadth and the sweep of the
marshes of**

Glynn

**Will work me no fear like the fear they have wrought me of
yore**

**When length was fatigue, and when breadth was but
bitterness**

sore,

**And when terror and shrinking and dreary unnamable
pain**

Drew over me out of the merciless miles of the plain,—

35 Oh, now, unafraid, I am fain⁴ to face

The vast sweet visage of space.

To the edge of the wood I am drawn, I am drawn,

**Where the gray beach glimmering runs, as a belt of the
dawn,**

For a mete⁰ and a mark *measure*

40 To the forest-dark:—

So:

Affable live-oak, leaning low,—

**Thus—with your favor—soft, with a reverent hand,
(Not lightly touching your person, Lord of the land!)**

45 Bending your beauty aside, with a step I stand

On the firm-packed sand,

Free

By a world of marsh that borders a world of sea.

**Sinuuous southward and sinuuous northward the
shimmering band**

**50 Of the sand-beach fastens the fringe of the marsh to the
folds of the**

land.

**Inward and outward to northward and southward the
beachlines linger**

and curl

**As a silver-wrought garment that clings to and follows the
firm sweet**

limbs of a girl.

Vanishing, swerving, evermore curving again into sight,

**Softly the sand-beach wavers away to a dim gray looping
of light.**

**55 And what if behind me to westward the wall of the
woods stands**

high?

**The world lies east: how ample, the marsh and the sea and
the**

sky!

**A league⁵ and a league of marsh-grass, waist-high, broad
in the**

blade,

**Green, and all of a height, and unflecked with a light or a
shade,**

Stretch leisurely off, in a pleasant plain,

60 To the terminal blue of the main.0 sea

Oh, what is abroad in the marsh and the terminal sea?

Somehow my soul seems suddenly free

From the weighing of fate and the sad discussion of sin,

**By the length and the breadth and the sweep of the
marshes of**

Glynn.

4. I would like.

5. An English unit of about three miles.

THE MARSHES OF GLYNN / 1 1 6 5

Ye marshes, how candid and simple and nothing-withholding
and free

Ye publish yourselves to the sky and offer yourselves to the
sea!

Tolerant plains, that suffer the sea and the rains and the sun,

Ye spread and span like the catholic⁶ man who hath mightily
won

God out of knowledge and good out of infinite pain

And sight out of blindness and purity out of a stain.

As the marsh-hen secretly builds on the watery sod,

Behold I will build me a nest on the greatness of God:

I will fly in the greatness of God as the marsh-hen flies

In the freedom that fills all the space 'twixt the marsh and the
skies:

By so many roots as the marsh-grass sends in the sod
I will heartily lay me a-hold on the greatness of God:
Oh, like to the greatness of God is the greatness within
The range of the marshes, the liberal marshes of Glynn.
And the sea lends large, as the marsh: lo, out of his plenty the
sea
Pours fast: full soon the time of the flood-tide must be:
Look how the grace of the sea doth go
About and about through the intricate channels that flow
Here and there,
Everywhere,
Till his waters have flooded the uttermost creeks and the low-
lying
lanes,
And the marsh is meshed with a million veins,
That like as with rosy and silvery essences flow
In the rose-and-silver evening glow.
Farewell, my lord Sun!
The creeks overflow: a thousand rivulets run
'Twixt the roots of the sod; the blades of the marsh-grass stir;
Passeth a hurrying sound of wings that westward whirr;
Passeth, and all is still; and the currents cease to run;
And the sea and the marsh are one.
How still the plains of the waters be!
The tide is in his ecstasy.
The tide is at his highest height:
And it is night.
And now from the Vast of the Lord will the waters of sleep
Roll in on the souls of men,

But who will reveal to our waking ken *range of vision*

The forms that swim and the shapes that creep

Under the waters of sleep?

And I would I could know what swimmeth below when the
tide

comes in

105 On the length and the breadth of the marvellous marshes
of

Glynn.

1 8 7 8

Broad-minded.

1 1 6 6

GERARD MANLEY H O P K I N S

1844-1889

God's Grandeur

The world is charged with the grandeur of God.

It will flame out, like shining from shook foil;¹

It gathers to a greatness, like the ooze of oil

Crushed.² Why do men then now not reckon his rod?

5 Generations have trod, have trod, have trod;

And all is seared with trade; bleared, smeared with toil;

And wears man's smudge and shares man's smell: the soil

Is bare now, nor can foot feel, being shod.

And for⁰ all this, nature is never spent; *despite*

io There lives the dearest freshness deep down things;

And though the last lights off the black West went

Oh, morning, at the brown brink eastward, springs—

Because the Holy Ghost over the bent

World broods with warm breast and with ah! bright wings.

1 8 7 7 1 8 9 5

The Windhover³

To Christ Our Lord

I caught this morning morning's minion,⁰ king- *darling*,
favorite

dom of daylight's dauphin,⁴ dapple-dawn-drawn Falcon, in his
riding

Of the rolling level underneath him steady air, and striding

High there, how he rung upon⁵ the rein of a wimpling⁰ wing
rippling

⁵ In his ecstasy! then off, off forth on swing,

As a skate's heel sweeps smooth on a bow-bend: the hurl and
gliding

Rebuffed the big wind. My heart in hiding

Stirred for a bird,—the achieve of, the mastery of the thing!

Brute beauty and valour and act, oh, air, pride, plume, here

io Buckle!⁶ AND the fire that breaks from thee then, a billion

Times told lovelier, more dangerous, O my chevalier!⁷

1. In a letter of 1883, Hopkins writes: "I mean foil

5. Circled at the end of.

in its sense of leaf or tinsel, and no other word

6. "Buckle" brings to a focus the elements of line
whatever will give the effect I want. Shaken gold-

9, both in their literal sense, as descriptive of a

foil gives off broad glares like sheet lightning and

single, sudden movement of the airborne bird, and

also, and this is true of nothing else, owing to its

in their symbolic sense as descriptive of Christ and

zigzag dints and crossings and network of small

with further reference to the poet and the lesson
many cornered facets, a sort of fork lightning too.”

he draws from his observation. It may be read as

2. I.e., as when olives are crushed for their oil.

either indicative or imperative, and in one or

3. The kestrel, a small hawk, that hovers with its

another of its possible meanings: “to fasten,” “to

head to the wind.

join closely,” “to equip for battle,” “to grapple with,

4. The eldest son of the king of France was called

engage,” but also “to cause to bend, give way,

the *dauphin*: hence the word here means “heir to
crumple.”

a splendid, kingly condition.”

7. Knight, nobleman, champion.

[A s K I N G F I S H E R S C A T C H F I R E , D R A G O
N F L I E S D R A W F L A M E] / 1 1 6 7

No wonder of it: sheer plod makes plough down sillion⁸

Shine, and blue-bleak embers, ah my dear,

Fall, gall^o themselves, and gash gold-vermilion. *break the
surface of*

1877 1918

Pied⁹ Beauty

Glory be to God for dappled things—

For skies of couple-colour as a brinded^o cow; *brindled*

For rose-moles all in stipple upon trout that swim;

Fresh-firecoal chestnut-falls;¹ finches’ wings;

5 Landscape plotted and pieced—fold, fallow, and plough;²

And all trades, their gear and tackle and trim.^o *equipment*

All things counter,0 original, spare,0 strange; *contrary / rare*
Whatever is fickle, freckled (who knows how?)
With swift, slow; sweet, sour; adazzle, dim;
io He fathers-forth whose beauty is past change:
Praise him.

1877 1918

[As Kingfishers Catch Fire, Dragonflies Draw Flame]3

As kingfishers catch fire, dragonflies draw flame;
As tumbled over rim in roundy wells
Stones ring; like each tucked0 string tells, each hung *touched,*
plucked
bell's

Bow swung finds tongue to fling out broad its name;
5 Each mortal thing does one thing and the same:
Deals out that being indoors each one dwells;4
Selves5—goes itself; *myself* it speaks and spells,
Crying *What I do is me: for that I came.*

I say more: the just man justices;
io Keeps grace: that keeps all his goings graces;
Acts in God's eye what in God's eye he is—
Christ. For Christ plays in ten thousand places,
Lovely in limbs, and lovely in eyes not his
To the Father through the features of men's faces.

1877 1918

8. Ridge between two furrows of a plowed field.
by reason of its several uses, as for pasture, or being
9. Having two or more colors, in patches or
left fallow for a season, or being plowed and sown.

blotches.

3. I.e., as their bright colors flash in the light.

1. In his *Journals*, Hopkins writes of “chestnuts as

4. I.e., gives utterance to the essential nature that
bright as coals or spots of vermilion.”

dwells within (“indoors”) each individual being.

2. The land makes a pattern of varicolored patches

5. I.e., gives being to its own individuality.

1 1 6 8 / G E R A R D M A N L E Y H O P K I N S

Felix Randal

Felix Randal the farrier,⁰ O is he dead then? my duty all
blacksmith

ended,

Who have watched his mould of man, big-boned and hardy-
handsome

Pining, pining, till time when reason rambled in it and some
Fatal four disorders, fleshed there, all contended?

5 Sickness broke him. Impatient, he cursed at first, but mended
Being anointed⁶ and all; though a heavenlier heart began some
Months earlier, since I had our sweet reprieve and ransom
Tendered to him.⁷ Ah well, God rest him all road ever he
offended!⁸

This seeing the sick endears them to us, us too it endears.

10 My tongue had taught thee comfort, touch had quenched
thy tears,

Thy tears that touched my heart, child, Felix, poor Felix
Randal;

How far from then forethought of, all thy more boisterous
years,

When thou at the random⁹ grim forge, powerful amidst peers,

Didst fettle¹ for the great grey drayhorse his bright and
battering sandal!

1 8 8 0 1 9 1 8

Spring and Fall

To a Young Child

Margaret, are you grieving

Over Goldengrove unleaving?

Leaves, like the things of man, you

With your fresh thoughts care for, can you?

5 Ah! as the heart grows older

It will come to such sights colder

By and by, nor spare a sigh

Though worlds of wanwood leafmeal² lie;

And yet you *will* weep and know why.

io Now no matter, child, the name:

Sorrow's springs are the same.

Nor mouth had, no nor mind, expressed

What heart heard of, ghost⁰ guessed: *spirit, soul*

It is the blight man was born for,

15 It is Margaret you mourn for.

1880

1 8 9 3

6. Having received the sacrament for the dying.

1. To prepare (the horse's shoe).

7. I.e., since I had a priest visit him to hear his

2. Coined by Hopkins by analogy with *-piecemeal*
confession and give absolution.

and meaning "leaf by leaf" or "leaf mold"—in the

8. I.e., for any way in which he may have offended.

first sense, the foliage lies about the grove, having

9. Ramshackle, as applied to the forge itself; but

fallen leaf by leaf; in the second, foliage gradually

also meaning that the man's life as a blacksmith

decays to leaf mold. *Wanwood*: "pale" or "dim"—

was merely one casual earthly life as opposed to

the groves are pale because of their light-colored

the sure way of Christian salvation.

autumn foliage, or dim because of the filtered light.

[N O W O R S T , T H E R E I S N O N E . P I T C H E D P A
S T P I T C H O F G R I E F] / 1 1 6 9

[Carrion Comfort]

Not, I'll not, carrion³ comfort, Despair, not feast on thee;

Not untwist—slack they may be—these last strands of man

In me or, most weary, cry *I can no more*. I can;

Can something, hope, wish day come, not choose not to be.

5 But ah, but O thou terrible, why wouldst thou rude^o on me
roughly

Thy wring-world right foot⁴ rock? lay a lionlimb against me?
scan

With darksome devouring eyes my bruised bones? and fan,

O in turns of tempest, me heaped there; me frantic to avoid
thee

and flee?

Why? That my chaff might fly; my grain lie, sheer and clear,

io Nay in all that toil, that coil,^o since (seems) I kissed the rod,
tumult Hand⁵ rather, my heart lo! lapped strength, stole joy,
would

laugh, cheer.

Cheer whom though? The hero whose heaven-handling flung
me,

foot trod

Me? or me that fought him? O which one? is it each one? That
night, that year

Of now done darkness I wretch lay wrestling with (my God!)
my God.

1885

1918

[No Worst, There Is None. Pitched Past Pitch of Grief]

No worst, there is none. Pitched past pitch of grief,

More pangs will, schooled at forepangs, wilder wring.

Comforter, where, where is your comforting?

Mary, mother of us, where is your relief?

5 My cries heave, herds-long; huddle in a main, a chief-
woe, world-sorrow; on an age-old anvil wince and sing—

Then lull, then leave off. Fury had shrieked “No ling-
ering! Let me be fell:0 force0 I must be brief”. *fierce / perforce*
O the mind, mind has mountains; cliffs of fall

io Frightful, sheer, no-man-fathomed. Hold them cheap

May who ne'er hung there. Nor does long our small

Durance0 deal with that steep or deep. Here! creep, *endurance*

Wretch, under a comfort serves in a whirlwind: all

Life death does end and each day dies with sleep.

1885

1 9 1 8

3. Dead and putrefying flesh.

writhe or twist.

4. I.e., the foot capable of causing the world to

5. I.e., the hand that wields the rod.

1 1 7 0 / G E R A R D M A N L E Y H O P K I N S

[I Wake and Feel the Fell of Dark, Not Day]

I wake and feel the fell⁶ of dark, not day.

What hours, O what black hours we have spent

This night! what sights you, heart, saw; ways you went!

And more must, in yet longer light's delay.

5

With witness I speak this. But where I say

Hours I mean years, mean life. And my lament

Is cries countless, cries like dead^o letters sent *undelivered*

To dearest him that lives alas! away.

I am gall, I am heartburn. God's most deep decree

10

Bitter would have me taste: my taste was me;

Bones built in me, flesh filled, blood brimmed the curse.

Selfyeast of spirit a dull dough sours. I see

The lost are like this, and their scourge to be

As I am mine, their sweating selves, but worse.

1 8 8 5

1 9 1 8

[My Own Heart Let Me More Have Pity On]

My own heart let me more have pity on; let

Me live to my sad self hereafter kind,

Charitable; not live this tormented mind

With this tormented mind tormenting yet.

5

I cast for comfort I can no more get

By groping round my comfortless, than blind

Eyes in their dark can day or thirst can find

Thirst's all-in-all in all a world of wet.⁷

Soul, self; come, poor Jackself,⁸ I do advise

10

You, jaded, let be; call off thoughts awhile

Elsewhere; leave comfort root-room;⁹ let joy size^o *grow*

6. Can be read in a number of senses: as “the hide though they are surrounded by “wet.” “World” is or hairy skin of a beast,” or, in an obsolete or rare common to all three instances: the speaker’s “comfortless” world, the blind eyes’ “dark” world, the cor” [O.E.D.], or possibly as the adjective *fell*—“world of wet” in which the shipwrecked are adrift. fierce, savage, cruel—used as a noun.

8. The humble self—“Jack” used in a pitying, deprecating sense (as in “jack-of-all-trades”).

7. I.e., as shipwrecked persons adrift without drinking water cannot quench their thirst, even

9. Room for its roots to grow.

9. Room for its roots to grow.

THAT NATURE IS A HERACLITEAN FIRE /
1171

At God knows when to God knows what;¹ whose smile

's not wrung,² see you; unforeseen times rather—as skies

Between pie mountains³—lights a lovely mile.

1885 1918

That Nature is a Heraclitean Fire⁴ and

of the comfort of the Resurrection

Cloud-puffball, torn tufts, tossed pillows | flaunt forth, then

chevy^o on an air- *race, scamper*

built thoroughfare: heaven-roysterers, in gay-gangs⁵ | they
throng;

they glitter in marches.

Down roughcast,⁶ down dazzling whitewash, | wherever an
elm arches,

Shivelights and shadowtackle⁷ in long | lashes lace, lance, and
pair.

⁵ Delightfully the bright wind boisterous | ropes, wrestles,
beats earth bare Of yestertempest's creases; | in pool and
rutpeel parches⁸

Squandering ooze to squeezed | dough, crust, dust; stanches,
starches

Squadroned masks and manmarks | treadmire toil there

Footfretted in it. Million-fueled, | nature's bonfire burns on.

io But quench her bonniest, dearest | to her, her clearest-selved
spark

Man, how fast his firedint,⁹ | his mark on mind, is gone!

Both are in an unfathomable, all is in an enormous dark

Drowned. O pity and indig | nation! Manshape, that shone

Sheer off, disseveral,^o a star, | death blots black out; *separate*
nor mark

¹⁵ Is any of him at all so stark

But vastness blurs and time | beats level. Enough! the
Resurrection,

A heart's-clarion!^o Away grief's gasping, | joyless days, -
trumpet

dejection.

Across my foundering deck shone

A beacon, an eternal beam. | Flesh fade, and mortal trash
20 Fall to the residuary worm; | world's wildfire, leave but ash:
In a flash, at a trumpet crash,
I am at once what Christ is, | since he was what I am, and
This Jack,¹ joke, poor potsherd, | patch, matchwood, immortal
diamond,
Is immortal diamond.

1888 1918

1. I.e., at unpredictable times until it reaches an

6. A mixture of lime and gravel used to coat walls.

unpredictable condition.

7. Shadows in complicated shapes, as of ship's

2. Cannot be forced, but must come as it will.

ropes, tackle, gear. *Shivelights*: light in splinters,

3. The brightness of skies, seen between moun-
fragments.

tains, makes a variegated patterning of light and

8. I.e., in pool and rutpeel [ruts described as

dark. *Betweenpie*: verb coined by Hopkins based
peeled places] the bright wind parches.

on the adjective *pied* (see "Pied Beauty," above).

9. Hopkins's compound, meaning the mark made

4. Heraclitus (ca. 540-ca. 480 **B.C.E.**), founder of

by the flame of humanity's spirit, the spirit's power
an important school of pre-Socratic philosophy,
to make its mark.

taught that all is in flux and that the world had its

1. Common mortal (like "poor Jackself" in "My

origin in fire and will end in fire.

Own Heart Let Me More Have Pity On,” above).

5. Sky-swaggerers, in carefree groups.

1 1 7 2 / E M M A L A Z A R U S

[Thou Art Indeed Just, Lord ...]

*Justus quidem tu es, Domine, si disputem tecum: verumtamen
justa loquar ad te: Quare via impiorum prosperatur? & c.2*

Thou art indeed just, Lord, if I contend

With thee; but, sir, so what I plead is just.

Why do sinners' ways prosper? and why must

Disappointment all I endeavour end?

5 Wert thou my enemy, O thou my friend,

How wouldst thou worse, I wonder, than thou dost

Defeat, thwart me? Oh, the sots and thralls of lust

Do in spare hours more thrive than I that spend,

Sir, life upon thy cause. See, banks and brakes⁰ *thickets*

10 Now, leaved how thick! laced they are again

With fretty chervil,³ look, and fresh wind shakes

Them; birds build—but not I build; no, but strain,

Time's eunuch, and not breed one work that wakes.

Mine, O thou lord of life, send my roots rain.

1 8 8 9 1 8 9 3

EMMA LAZARUS

1849-1887

The New Colossus¹

Not like the brazen giant of Greek fame,

With conquering limbs astride from land to land;

Here at our sea-washed, sunset gates shall stand

A mighty woman with a torch, whose flame
5 Is the imprisoned lightning, and her name
Mother of Exiles. From her beacon-hand
Glow world-wide welcome; her mild eyes command
The air-bridged harbor that twin cities frame.

“Keep, ancient lands, your storied pomp!” cries she
io With silent lips. “Give me your tired, your poor,
Your huddled masses yearning to breathe free,
The wretched refuse of your teeming shore.

2. The Latin epigraph, Hopkins’s original title, is
tion; later its final lines were engraved on the ped-
from the Vulgate version of Jeremiah 12.1; the first
estal. Lazarus contrasts the Statue of Liberty with
three lines of the poem translate it. The “& c” indi-
the Colossus of Rhodes, one of the Seven Wonders
cates that the whole of Jeremiah 12 is relevant to
of the World, a statue to the sun god, Helios, that
the poem, which, while it does not continue to
stood in the harbor at Rhodes, Greece. Contrary
translate it directly, parallels it frequently.

to legend that dates from the Middle Ages, the
3. An herb of the carrot or parsley family, with
statue could not have straddled the harbor
curled leaves.

entrance (line 2).

1. Written as part of a fundraising campaign for

2. The splendors of your history. *Twin cities*: New
the Statue of Liberty, in New York harbor. The

York City and Jersey City, New Jersey.

poem was recited in 1866 at the statue's dedica-

R E V E I L L E / 1 1 7 3

Send these, the homeless, tempest-tost^o to me, *-tossed*

I lift my lamp beside the golden door!"

1883 1888

A. E. H O U S M A N

1859-1936

Loveliest of Trees, the Cherry Now

Loveliest of trees, the cherry now

Is hung with bloom along the bough,

And stands about the woodland ride

Wearing white for Eastertide.

5 Now, of my threescore years and ten,

Twenty will not come again,

And take from seventy springs a score,

It only leaves me fifty more.

And since to look at things in bloom

io Fifty springs are little room,

About the woodlands I will go

To see the cherry hung with snow.

1 8 9 6

Reveille

Wake: the silver dusk returning

Up the beach of darkness brims,

And the ship of sunrise burning

Strands upon the eastern rims.

5 Wake: the vaulted shadow shatters,

Trampled to the floor it spanned,
And the tent of night in tatters
Straws⁰ the sky-pavilioned land. *strews*
Up, lad, up, 'tis late for lying:
io Hear the drums of morning play;
Hark, the empty highways crying
“Who'll beyond the hills away?”
Towns and countries woo together,
Forelands beacon, belfries call;
1 1 7 4 / A . E . H O U S M A N
15 Never lad that trod on leather
Lived to feast his heart with all.
Up, lad; thews⁰ that lie and cumber *limbs*
Sunlit pallets never thrive;
Morns abed and daylight slumber
20 Were not meant for man alive.
Clay lies still, but blood's a rover;
Breath's a ware that will not keep.
Up, lad: when the journey's over
There'll be time enough to sleep.
1 8 9 6

When I Watch the Living Meet
When I watch the living meet,
And the moving pageant file
Warm and breathing through the street
Where I lodge a little while,
5 If the heats of hate and lust
In the house of flesh are strong,

Let me mind the house of dust
Where my sojourn shall be long.
In the nation that is not
io Nothing stands that stood before;
There revenges are forgot,
And the hater hates no more;
Lovers lying two and two
Ask not whom they sleep beside,
15 And the bridegroom all night through
Never turns him to the bride.

1 8 9 6

To an Athlete Dying Young
The time you won your town the race
We chaired you through the market-place;
Man and boy stood cheering by,
And home we brought you shoulder-high.

5 Today, the road all runners come,
Shoulder-high we bring you home,

I s M Y T E A M P L O U G H I N G / 1 1 7 5

A n d s e t y o u a t y o u r t h r e s h o l d d o w n ,

T o w n s m a n o f a s t i l l e r t o w n .

S m a r t l a d , t o s l i p b e t i m e s a w a y

10 F r o m f i e l d s w h e r e g l o r y d o e s n o t s t a y

A n d e a r l y t h o u g h t t h e l a u r e l g r o w s

I t w i t h e r s q u i c k e r t h a n t h e r o s e .

E y e s t h e s h a d y n i g h t h a s s h u t

C a n n o t s e e t h e r e c o r d c u t , ° b r o k e n

15 A n d s i l e n c e s o u n d s n o w o r s e t h a n c h e e r s

After earth has s t o p p e d the ears:
N o w you will not swell the rout^o *crowd*
Of lads that w o r e their h o n o u r s out,
Runners w h o m r e n o w n outran
20 A n d the n a m e died before t h e m a n .
So set, before its e c h o e s fade,
T h e fleet foot on the sill of shade,
A n d hold to the low lintel up
T h e still-defended c h a l l e n g e - c u p .
25 A n d round that early-laurelled¹ h e a d
Will flock to gaze the strengthless dead,
And find u n w i t h e r e d on its curls
T h e garland briefer than a girl's.

1 8 9 6

Is My Team Ploughing

“Is my t e a m p l o u g h i n g ,
T h a t I was u s e d to drive
A n d hear t h e h a r n e s s jingle
W h e n I w a s m a n alive?”
5 Ay, t h e horses trample,
T h e harness jingles now;
N o c h a n g e t h o u g h you lie u n d e r
T h e land y o u u s e d to plough.

“Is football playing
io A l o n g t h e river shore,
W i t h lads to c h a s e t h e leather,
N o w I stand up no more?”
Ay, the ball is flying,

T h e l a d s p l a y h e a r t a n d s o u l ;

1. In ancient Greece and Rome, victorious athletes wore laurel wreaths as crowns.

1 1 7 6 / A . E . H O U S M A N

15 T h e g o a l s t a n d s u p , t h e k e e p e r

S t a n d s u p t o k e e p t h e g o a l .

“I s m y g i r l h a p p y ,

T h a t I t h o u g h t h a r d t o l e a v e ,

A n d h a s s h e t i r e d o f w e e p i n g

20 A s s h e l i e s d o w n a t e v e ? ”

A y , s h e l i e s d o w n l i g h t l y ,

S h e l i e s n o t d o w n t o w e e p :

Y o u r g i r l i s w e l l c o n t e n t e d .

B e s t i l l , m y l a d , a n d s l e e p .

25 “I s m y f r i e n d h e a r t y ,

N o w I a m t h i n a n d p i n e ,

A n d h a s h e f o u n d t o s l e e p i n

A b e t t e r b e d t h a n m i n e ? ”

Y e s , l a d , I l i e e a s y ,

30 I l i e a s l a d s w o u l d c h o o s e ;

I c h e e r a d e a d m a n ‘ s s w e e t h e a r t ,

N e v e r a s k m e w h o s e .

1 8 9 6

On Wenlock Edge² the Wood's in Trouble

O n W e n l o c k E d g e t h e w o o d ‘ s i n t r o u b l e ;

H i s f o r e s t f l e e c e t h e W r e k i n ³ h e a v e s ;

T h e g a l e , i t p l i e s t h e s a p l i n g s d o u b l e ,

A n d t h i c k o n S e v e r n ⁴ s n o w t h e l e a v e s .

**5 'T w o u l d b l o w l i k e t h i s t h r o u g h h o l t a n d h a n
g e r 5**

W h e n U r i c o n 6 t h e c i t y s t o o d :

'T i s t h e o l d w i n d i n t h e o l d a n g e r ,

B u t t h e n i t t h r e s h e d a n o t h e r w o o d .

T h e n , ' t w a s b e f o r e m y t i m e , t h e R o m a n

i o A t y o n d e r h e a v i n g h i l l w o u l d s t a r e :

T h e b l o o d t h a t w a r m s a n E n g l i s h y e o m a n ,

T h e t h o u g h t s t h a t h u r t h i m , t h e y w e r e t h e r e .

T h e r e , l i k e t h e w i n d t h r o u g h w o o d s i n r i o t ,

T h r o u g h h i m t h e g a l e o f l i f e b l e w h i g h ;

15 T h e t r e e o f m a n w a s n e v e r q u i e t :

T h e n ' t w a s t h e R o m a n , n o w ' t i s I .

2. A range of hills in Shropshire.

5. A holt is a wood or wooded hill; a hanger is a

3. A prominent, isolated hill in Shropshire.

steep wooded slope.

4. The Severn River, which flows past the Wrekin

6. The Roman town Uriconium, on the site of the

and into Wales.

modern town of Wroxeter, Shropshire.

” T E R E N C E , T H I S I S S T U P I D S T U F F ... ” /

1 1 7 7

The gale, it plies the saplings double,

It blows so hard, 'twill soon be gone:

To-day the Roman and his trouble

Are ashes under Uricon.

1 8 9 6

From Far, from Eve and Morning

From far, from eve and morning
And yon twelve-winded sky,⁷
The stuff of life to knit me
Blew hither: here am I.
5 Now—for a breath I tarry
Nor yet disperse apart—
Take my hand quick and tell me,
What have you in your heart.
Speak now, and I will answer;
io How shall I help you, say;
Ere to the wind's twelve quarters
I take my endless way.

1 8 9 6

With Rue My Heart Is Laden
With rue my heart is laden
For golden friends I had,
For many a rose-lipt maiden
And many a lightfoot lad.
5 By brooks too broad for leaping
The lightfoot boys are laid;
The rose-lipt girls are sleeping
In fields where roses fade.

1 8 9 6

“Terence,⁸ This Is Stupid Stuff. .

“Terence, this is stupid stuff:

You eat your victuals fast enough;

7. I.e., winds blowing from the twelve compass ume in which
this poem appeared *The Poems of points. Terence Hearsay.*

8. Housman had at first planned to call the vol-

1 1 7 8 / A . E . H O U S M A N

There can't be much amiss, 'tis clear,

To see the rate you drink your beer.

5 But oh, good Lord, the verse you make,

It gives a chap the belly-ache.

The cow, the old cow, she is dead;

It sleeps well, the horned head:

We poor lads, 'tis our turn now

io To hear such tunes as killed the cow.

Pretty friendship 'tis to rhyme

Your friends to death before their time

Moping melancholy mad:

Come, pipe a tune to dance to, lad.”

15 Why, if 'tis dancing you would be,

There's brisker pipes than poetry.

Say, for what were hop-yards meant,

Or why was Burton built on Trent?⁹

Oh many a peer of England brews

20 Livelier liquor than the Muse,¹

And malt does more than Milton can

To justify God's ways to man.²

Ale, man, ale's the stuff to drink

For fellows whom it hurts to think:

25 Look into the pewter pot

To see the world as the world's not.

And faith, 'tis pleasant till 'tis past:

The mischief is that 'twill not last.

Oh I have been to Ludlow³ fair
30 And left my necktie God knows where,
And carried halfway home, or near,
Pints and quarts of Ludlow beer:
Then the world seemed none so bad,
And I myself a sterling lad;
35 And down in lovely muck I've lain,
Happy till I woke again.

Then I saw the morning sky:
Heigho, the tale was all a lie;
The world, it was the old world yet,
40 I was I, my things were wet,
And nothing now remained to do
But begin the game anew.

Therefore, since the world has still
Much good, but much less good than ill,
45 And while the sun and moon endure
Luck's a chance, but trouble's sure,
I'd face it as a wise man would,

9. The principal industry of Burton-on-Trent, a
over (inspired) epic poetry.

town in Staffordshire, is the brewing of ale. Some

2. An echo of Milton's epic, *Paradise Lost* (1.25-

of the town's nineteenth-century brewery mag-

26): "I may assert Eternal Providence, / And justify

nates were raised to the peerage.

the ways of God to men."

1. In Greek mythology, Calliope, one of the nine

3. A market town in Shropshire.

sister goddesses known as the Muses, presided

A S T R O N O M Y / 1 1 7 9

And train for ill and not for good.

Tis true, the stuff I bring for sale

50 Is not so brisk a brew as ale:

Out of a stem that scored⁰ the hand *cut*

I wrung it in a weary land.

But take it: if the smack is sour,

The better for the embittered hour;

55 It should do good to heart and head

When your soul is in my soul's stead;

And I will friend you, if I may,

In the dark and cloudy day.

There was a king reigned in the East:

60 There, when kings will sit to feast,

They get their fill before they think

With poisoned meat and poisoned drink.

He gathered all that springs to birth

From the many-venomed earth;

65 First a little, thence to more,

He sampled all her killing store;

And easy, smiling, seasoned sound,

Sate the king when healths went round.

They put arsenic in his meat

70 And stared aghast to watch him eat;

They poured strychnine in his cup

And shook to see him drink it up:

They shook, they stared as white's their shirt:

Them it was their poison hurt.

75 —I tell the tale that I heard told.

Mithridates, he died old.⁴

1 8 9 6

Astronomy

The Wains upon the northern steep

Descends and lifts away.

Oh I will sit me down and weep

For bones in Africa.⁶

5 For pay and medals, name and rank,

Things that he has not found,

He hove the Cross⁷ to heaven and sank

The pole-star underground.

And now he does not even see

io Signs of the nadir⁰ roll *lowest point*

4. Mithridates VI, king of Pontus (in Asia Minor)

6. Housman's brother Herbert died fighting in the
in the first century **B.C.E.**, made himself immune
Boer War in 1901.

to certain poisons by taking small, gradual doses.

7. The Southern Cross, a constellation visible

5. The constellation Ursa Minor.

from the southern hemisphere.

1 1 8 0 / A . E . H O U S M A N

At night over the ground where he

Is buried with the pole.

1 9 2 2

Epitaph on an Army of Mercenaries⁸

These, in the day when heaven was falling,
The hour when earth's foundations fled,
Followed their mercenary calling
And took their wages and are dead.

5 Their shoulders held the sky suspended;
They stood, and earth's foundations stay;
What God abandoned, these defended,
And saved the sum of things for pay.

1 9 1 5

1 9 2 2

Crossing Alone the Nighted Ferry

Crossing alone the nighted ferry
With the one coin for fee,⁹
Whom, on the wharf of Lethe waiting,
Count you to find? Not me.

5 The brisk fond lackey to fetch and carry,
The true, sick-hearted slave,
Expect him not in the just city
And free land of the grave.

1 9 3 6

Here Dead Lie We Because We Did Not Choose
Here dead lie we because we did not choose
To live and shame the land from which we sprung.
Life, to be sure, is nothing much to lose;
But young men think it is, and we were young.

1 9 3 6

8. This poem honors the professional soldiers of

9. In Greek mythology, the souls of the dead paid the British regular army who fought in the First World War I. For the Scottish poet Hugh MacDiarmid's reply, "Another Epitaph on an Army of Mercenaries," see p. 1379.

world.

1 1 8 1

RUDYARD K I P L I N G

1865-1936

Tommy1

I went into a public-house to get a pint o' beer, *bar*

The publican 'e up an' sez, "We serve no red-coats here."
barkeep The girls be'ind the bar they laughed an' giggled fit to die,

I outs into the street again an' to myself sez I:

O it's Tommy this, an' Tommy that, an' "Tommy, go away";

But it's "Thank you, Mister Atkins," when the band begins to play—

The band begins to play, my boys, the band begins to play,

O it's "Thank you, Mister Atkins," when the band begins to play.

I went into a theatre as sober as could be,

io They gave a drunk civilian room, but 'adn't none for me;

They sent me to the gallery or round the music-halls,2

But when it comes to fightin', Lord! they'll shove me in the stalls!

For it's Tommy this, an' Tommy that, an' "Tommy, wait outside";

But it's "Special train for Atkins" when the trooper's on the tide—

15 The troopship's on the tide, my boys, the troopship's on the tide,

O it's "Special train for Atkins" when the trooper's on the tide.

Yes, makin' mock o' uniforms that guard you while you sleep

Is cheaper than them uniforms, an' they're starvation cheap;

An' hustlin' drunken soldiers when they're goin' large a bit

20 Is five times better business than paradin' in full kit.^o

equipment

Then it's Tommy this, an' Tommy that, an' "Tommy, 'ow's yer soul?"

But it's "Thin red line of 'eroes"³ when the drums begin to roll—

The drums begin to roll, my boys, the drums begin to roll,

O it's "Thin red line of 'eroes" when the drums begin to roll.

25 We aren't no thin red 'eroes, nor we aren't no blackguards⁰ too, *criminals* But single men in barricks, most remarkable like you;

An' if sometimes our conduck isn't all your fancy paints,

Why, single men in barricks don't grow into plaster saints;

While it's Tommy this, an' Tommy that, an' "Tommy, fall be'ind,"

30 But it's "Please to walk in front, sir," when there's trouble in the wind—

There's trouble in the wind, my boys, there's trouble in the wind,

O it's "Please to walk in front, sir," when there's trouble in the wind.

You talk o' better food for us, an' schools, an' fires, an' all:

We'll wait for extry rations if you treat us rational.

35 Don't mess about the cook-room slops, but prove it to our face

The Widow's Uniform⁴ is not the soldier-man's disgrace.

1. The typical soldier (British usage, derived from had used the phrase "thin red line tipped with "Thomas Atkins," name used as a model in official steel" to describe the 93rd Highlanders infantry army forms).

regiment as they stood to meet the advancing Rus-

2. Cheaper seats in a theater, in the balcony; the sian cavalry at Balaclava (1854), in the Crimean best seats, in the orchestra, are the stalls (line 12).

War.

3. W. H. Russell, a London *Times* correspondent,

4. I.e., the queen's uniform. In his poems and sto-

1 1 8 2 / R U D Y A R D K I P L I N G

For it's Tommy this, an' Tommy that, an' "Chuck him out, the brute!"

But it's "Saviour of 'is country" when the guns begin to shoot;

An' it's Tommy this, an' Tommy that, an' anything you please;

40 An' Tommy ain't a bloomin' fool—you bet that Tommy sees!

1 8 9 0

Recessional⁵

18976

God of our fathers, known of old,
Lord of our far-flung battle-line,
Beneath whose awful Hand we hold
Dominion over palm and pine—
5 Lord God of Hosts, be with us yet,
Lest we forget—lest we forget!
The tumult and the shouting dies;
The Captains and the Kings depart:
Still stands Thine ancient sacrifice,
io An humble and a contrite heart.⁷
Lord God of Hosts, be with us yet,
Lest we forget—lest we forget!
Far-called, our navies melt away;
On dune and headland sinks the fire:⁸
15 Lo, all our pomp of yesterday
Is one with Nineveh and Tyre!⁹
Judge of the Nations, spare us yet,
Lest we forget—lest we forget!
If, drunk with sight of power, we loose
20 Wild tongues that have not Thee in awe,
Such boastings as the Gentiles use,
Or lesser breeds without the Law—¹
Lord God of Hosts, be with us yet,
Lest we forget—lest we forget!
25 For heathen heart that puts her trust
In reeking tube and iron shard,
ries, Kipling occasionally referred to Q u e e n Vic-
7. Cf. Psalms 51.17.

toria as “The Widow at Windsor.”

8. On the night of the anniversary of Victoria’s

5. A piece of music or a hymn to be played or sung

accession to the throne, bonfires were lit on high

at the close of a religious service.

points throughout Great Britain.

6. The year of Queen Victoria’s Diamond Jubilee,

9. Nineveh, ancient capital of Assyria, and Tyre,

celebrating the sixtieth year of her reign, the occa-

capital of Phoenicia, were once great cities, but

sion serving also to celebrate the great extent,

dwindled to ruins and a small town, respectively.

power, and prosperity of the British Empire.

1. Cf. Romans 2.14.

E P I T A P H S O F T H E W A R / 1 1 8 3

All valiant dust that builds on dust,

And guarding, calls not Thee to guard,

For frantic boast and foolish word—

30 Thy mercy on Thy People, Lord!

1 8 9 7 1 8 9 9

Epitaphs of the War

1 9 1 4 - 1 8

“Equality of Sacrifice”

A. “I was a Have.” B. “I was a ‘have-not.’ ”

(Together.) “What hast thou given which I gave not?”

A Servant

We were together since the war began.

He was my servant—and the better man.

A Son

My son was killed while laughing at some jest. I would I knew
What it was, and it might serve me in a time when jests are
few.

An Only Son

I have slain none except my mother. She
(Blessing her slayer) died of grief for me.

Ex-clerk

Pity not! The army gave
Freedom to a timid slave:
In which freedom did he find
Strength of body, will, and mind:
5 By which strength he came to prove
Mirth, companionship, and love:
For which love to death he went:
In which death he lies content.

The Wonder

Body and spirit I surrendered whole
To harsh instructors—and received a soul ...
If mortal man could change me through and through
From all I was—what may the God not do?

1 1 8 4 / R U D Y A R D K I P L I N G

Hindu Sepoy² in France

This man in his own country prayed we know not to what
powers.

We pray them to reward him for his bravery in ours.

The Coward

I could not look on death, which being known,
Men led me to him, blindfold and alone.

Shock

My name, my speech, my self I had forgot.
My wife and children came—I knew them not.
I died. My mother followed. At her call
And on her bosom I remembered all.

A Grave Near Cairo

Gods of the Nile, should this stout fellow here
Get out—get out! He knows not shame nor fear.

Pelicans in the Wilderness

(A GRAVE NEAR HALFA) 3

The blown sand heaps on me, that none may learn
Where I am laid for whom my children grieve... .
O wings that beat at dawning, ye return
Out of the desert to your young at eve!

Two Canadian Memorials

i

We giving all gained all.
Neither lament us nor praise.
Only in all things recall,
It is fear, not death that slays.

2

From little towns in a far land we came,
To save our honour and a world aflame.
By little towns in a far land we sleep;
And trust that world we won for you to keep.

The Favour

Death favoured me from the first, well knowing I could not
endure

To wait on him day by day. He quitted my betters and came
2. Native of India employed as soldier under Euro- 3. In the
Sudan,
pean (especially British) discipline.

EPITAPHS OF THE WAR / 1185

Whistling over the fields, and, when he had made all sure,
“Thy line is at end,” he said, “but at least I have saved its
name.”

The Beginner

On the first hour of my first day
In the front trench I fell.
(Children in boxes at a play
Stand up to watch it well.)

R.A.F.4 (Aged Eighteen)

Laughing through clouds, his milk-teeth still unshed,
Cities and men he smote from overhead.
His deaths delivered, he returned to play
Childlike, with childish things now put away.

The Refined Man

I was of delicate mind. I stepped aside for my needs,
Disdaining the common office. I was seen from afar and
killed... .
How is this matter for mirth? Let each man be judged by his
deeds.

*I have paid my price to live with myself on the terms that I
willed.*

Native Water-Carrier (M.E.F.)

Prometheus‘5 brought down fire to men.
This brought up water.
The Gods are jealous—now, as then,

Giving no quarter.

Bombed in London

On land and sea I strove with anxious care

To escape conscription. It was in the air!

The Sleepy Sentinel

Faithless the watch that I kept: now I have none to keep.

I was slain because I slept: now I am slain I sleep.

Let no man reproach me again, whatever watch is unkept—

I sleep because I am slain. They slew me because I slept.

Batteries Out of Ammunition

If any mourn us in the workshop, say

We died because the shift kept holiday.

4. Royal Air Force. humanity and was punished by the gods.

M.E.F.

5. In Greek mythology, a Titan who gave fire to Mediterranean Expeditionary Force.

1 1 8 6 / R U D Y A R D K I P L I N G

Common Form

If any question why we died,
Tell them, because our fathers lied.

A Dead Statesman

I could not dig: I dared not rob:
Therefore I lied to please the mob.
Now all my lies are proved untrue
And I must face the men I slew.
5 What tale shall serve me here among
Mine angry and defrauded young?

The Rebel

If I had clamoured at Thy gate
For gift of life on earth,
And, thrusting through the souls that wait,
Flung headlong into birth—
5 Even then, even then, for gin and snare
About my pathway spread,
Lord, I had mocked Thy thoughtful care
Before I joined the dead!
But now? ... I was beneath Thy hand
io Ere yet the planets came.
And now—though planets pass, I stand
The witness to Thy shame!

The Obedient

Daily, though no ears attended,
Did my prayers arise.
Daily, though no fire descended,
Did I sacrifice.

5 Though my darkness did not lift,
Though I faced no lighter odds,
Though the Gods bestowed no gift,
Nonetheless,
Nonetheless, I served the Gods!

*A Drifter Off Tarentum*⁶

He from the wind-bitten North with ship and companions
descended,
Searching for eggs of death spawned by invisible hulls.
Many he found and drew forth. Of a sudden the fishery ended
In flame and a clamorous breath known to the eye-pecking
gulls.

6. Roman name for Taranto, just under the heel of the Italian peninsula.

EPITAPHS OF THE WAR / 1187

Destroyers in Collision

For fog and fate no charm is found
To lighten or amend.
I, hurrying to my bride, was drowned—
Cut down by my best friend.

Convoy Escort

I was a shepherd to fools
Causelessly bold or afraid.
They would not abide by my rules.
Yet they escaped. For I stayed.

Unknown Female Corpse

Headless, lacking foot and hand,
Horrible I come to land.
I beseech all women's sons

Know I was a mother once.

Raped and Revenged

One used and butchered me: another spied
Me broken—for which thing an hundred died.
So it was learned among the heathen hosts
How much a freeborn woman's favour costs.

Salonika⁷ Grave

I have watched a thousand days
Push out and crawl into night
Slowly as tortoises.

Now I, too, follow these.

5 It is fever, and not the fight—
Time, not battle,—that slays.

The Bridegroom

Call me not false, beloved,
If, from thy scarce-known breast
So little time removed,
In other arms I rest.

5 For this more ancient bride,
Whom coldly I embrace,
Was constant at my side
Before I saw thy face.

7. Of Thessalonica (or Salonika), the second largest city in Greece, destroyed by fire in 1917.

1198 / WILLIAM BUTLER YEATS

Our marriage, often set—
10 By miracle delayed—
At last is consummate,

And cannot be unmade.
Live, then, whom life shall cure,
15 Almost, of memory,
And leave us to endure
Its immortality.

V.A.D.8 (Mediterranean)

Ah, would swift ships had never been, for then we ne'er had
found,

These harsh Aegean⁹ rocks between, this little virgin
drowned,

Whom neither spouse nor child shall mourn, but men she
nursed through

pain

And—certain keels for whose return the heathen look in vain.

Actors

ON A MEMORIAL TABLET IN HOLY TRINI
TY CHURCH, STRATFORD-ON-AVON 1

We counterfeited once for your disport

Men's joy and sorrow: but our day has passed.

We pray you pardon all where we fell short—

Seeing we were your servants to this last.

Journalists

ON A PANEL IN THE HALL OF THE INSTITU
TE OF JOURNALISTS

We have served our day.

1919, 1940

WILLIAM BUTLER YEATS*

1865-1939

The Stolen Child

Where dips the rocky highland

Of Sleuth Wood¹ in the lake,

There lies a leafy island

Where flapping herons wake

8. Voluntary Aid Detachment.

liam Butler Yeats (1940).

9. Aegean Sea, part of the Mediterranean Sea.

1. Place-names throughout the poem refer to the

1. Town in central England where Shakespeare
area near Sligo, in the west of Ireland: Rosses Point
was born, lived part of his life, and died.

on Sligo Bay, and Glen-Car, a small lake near

*Yeats's poems are arranged here in the order in
Sligo.

which they appear in *The Collected Poems of Wil-*

T H E S T O L E N C H I L D / 1 1 8 9

5 The drowsy water-rats;

There we've hid our faery vats,

Full of berries

And of reddest stolen cherries.

Come away, O human child!

10 To the waters and the wild

With a faery, hand in hand,

For the world's more full of weeping than you can understand.

Where the wave of moonlight glosses

The dim grey sands with light,

15 Far off by furthest Rosses

We foot it all the night,

Weaving olden dances,

Mingling hands and mingling glances

Till the moon has taken flight;

20 To and fro we leap

And chase the frothy bubbles,

While the world is full of troubles

And is anxious in its sleep.

Come away, O human child!

25 *To the waters and the wild*

With a faery, hand in hand,

For the world's more full of weeping than you can understand.

Where the wandering water gushes

From the hills above Glen-Car,

BO In pools among the rushes

That scarce could bathe a star,

We seek for slumbering trout

And whispering in their ears

Give them unquiet dreams;

35 Leaning softly out

From ferns that drop their tears

Over the young streams.

Come away, O human child!

To the waters and the wild

40 *With a faery, hand in hand,*

For the world's more full of weeping than you can understand.

Away with us he's going,

The solemn-eyed:

He'll hear no more the lowing

45 Of the calves on the warm hillside

Or the kettle on the hob
Sing peace into his breast,
Or see the brown mice bob
Round and round the oatmeal-chest.
50 For he comes, the human child!
To the waters and the wild
With a faery, hand in hand,
From a world more full of weeping than he can understand.

1 8 8 9

1 1 9 8 / W I L L I A M B U T L E R Y E A T S

The Lake Isle of Innisfree²

I will arise and go now, and go to Innisfree,
And a small cabin build there, of clay and wattles³ made:
Nine bean-rows will I have there, a hive for the honey-bee,
And live alone in the bee-loud glade.

5 And I shall have some peace there, for peace comes
dropping slow,

Dropping from the veils of the morning to where the cricket
sings;

There midnight's all a glimmer, and noon a purple glow,
And evening full of the linnet's⁰ wings. *a songbird's*

I will arise and go now, for always night and day

10 I hear lake water lapping with low sounds by the shore;

While I stand on the roadway, or on the pavements grey,

I hear it in the deep heart's core.

1 8 9 0 1 8 9 2

When You Are Old⁴

When you are old and grey and full of sleep,
And nodding by the fire, take down this book,

And slowly read, and dream of the soft look
Your eyes had once, and of their shadows deep;
5 How many loved your moments of glad grace,
And loved your beauty with love false or true,
But one man loved the pilgrim soul in you,
And loved the sorrows of your changing face;
And bending down beside the glowing bars,
io Murmur, a little sadly, how Love fled
And paced upon the mountains overhead
And hid his face amid a crowd of stars.

1 8 9 1 1 8 9 3

Adam's Curse⁵

We sat together at one summer's end,
That beautiful mild woman, your close friend,⁶
And you and I, and talked of poetry.

2. Island in Lough Gill, County Sligo.

candlelight”), but is a free adaptation rather than

3. Rods interwoven with twigs or branches to form
a translation.

a framework for walls or roof.

5. After the Fall, God cursed Adam to work the

4. This poem derives from a sonnet by the French
ground for his food (Genesis 3.17—19).

poet Pierre de Ronsard (1524—1585) that begins

6. The two women who figure in the poem are

“*Quand vous serez bien vieille, au soir a la chan-*

the Irish nationalist Maud Gonne (whom Yeats

delle” (“When you are very old, in the evening, by

loved unrequitedly) and, rather than a friend, her

N o S E C O N D T R O Y / 1 1 9 1

I said, “A line will take us hours maybe;
Yet if it does not seem a moment’s thought,
Our stitching and unstitching has been naught.
Better go down upon your marrow-bones
And scrub a kitchen pavement, or break stones
Like an old pauper, in all kinds of weather;

10

For to articulate sweet sounds together
Is to work harder than all these, and yet
Be thought an idler by the noisy set
Of bankers, schoolmasters, and clergymen
The martyrs call the world.”

And thereupon

1 5

That beautiful mild woman for whose sake
There’s many a one shall find out all heartache
On finding that her voice is sweet and low
Replied, “To be born woman is to know—
Although they do not talk of it at school—

20

That we must labour to be beautiful.”

I said, “It’s certain there is no fine thing
Since Adam’s fall but needs much labouring.
There have been lovers who thought love should be
So much compounded of high courtesy

2 5

That they would sigh and quote with learned looks
Precedents out of beautiful old books;
Yet now it seems an idle trade enough.”

We sat grown quiet at the name of love;
We saw the last embers of daylight die,
3 0

And in the trembling blue-green of the sky
A moon, worn as if it had been a shell
Washed by time’s waters as they rose and fell
About the stars and broke in days and years.

I had a thought for no one’s but your ears:
That you were beautiful, and that I strove
To love you in the old high way of love;
That it had all seemed happy, and yet we’d grown
As weary-hearted as that hollow moon.

November 1902

1904

No Second Troy’

r 7

Why should I blame her⁸ that she filled my days
With misery, or that she would of late
Have taught to ignorant men most violent ways,
sister, Kathleen Pilcher.

destruction of the first city of Troy, on the east side

7. According to legend, Helen of Troy (see note 8,
of the Aegean entrance to the Dardanelles.

p. 1197) caused the Trojan War and hence the

8. Maud Gonne (see note 6 above).

1198 / WILLIAM BUTLER YEATS

Or hurled the little streets upon the great,
5 Had they but courage equal to desire?
What could have made her peaceful with a mind
That nobleness made simple as a fire,
With beauty like a tightened bow, a kind
That is not natural in an age like this,
10 Being high and solitary and most stern?
Why, what could she have done, being what she is?
Was there another Troy for her to burn?

December 1908 1910

The Wild Swans at Coole⁹

The trees are in their autumn beauty,
The woodland paths are dry,
Under the October twilight the water
Mirrors a still sky;
5 Upon the brimming water among the stones
Are nine-and-fifty swans.

The nineteenth autumn has come upon me
Since I first made my count;¹

I saw, before I had well finished,
10 All suddenly mount
And scatter wheeling in great broken rings
Upon their clamorous wings.

I have looked upon those brilliant creatures,
And now my heart is sore.

15 All's changed since I, hearing at twilight,
The first time on this shore,

The bell-beat of their wings above my head,
Trode with a lighter tread.
Unwearied still, lover by lover,
20 They paddle in the cold
Companionable streams or climb the air;
Their hearts have not grown old;
Passion or conquest, wander where they will,
Attend upon them still.
25 But now they drift on the still water,
Mysterious, beautiful;
Among what rushes will they build,
By what lake's edge or pool

9. Coole Park, the estate in western Ireland of 1. Yeats had first visited Coole Park nineteen years Lady Augusta Gregory, Yeats's patroness and earlier friend.

THE SCHOLARS / 1193

Delight men's eyes when I awake some day
30 To find they have flown away?
October 1916
1917

An Irish Airman Foresees His Death²

I know that I shall meet my fate
Somewhere among the clouds above;
Those that I fight I do not hate,
Those that I guard I do not love;
5 My country is Kiltartan Cross,³
My countrymen Kiltartan's poor,
No likely end could bring them loss

Or leave them happier than before.
Nor law, nor duty bade me fight,
io Nor public men, nor cheering crowds,
A lonely impulse of delight
Drove to this tumult in the clouds;
I balanced all, brought all to mind,
The years to come seemed waste of breath,
15 A waste of breath the years behind
In balance with this life, this death.

1919

The Scholars

Bald heads forgetful of their sins,
Old, learned, respectable bald heads
Edit and annotate the lines
That young men, tossing on their beds,
5 Rhymed out in love's despair
To flatter beauty's ignorant ear.
All shuffle there; all cough in ink;
All wear the carpet with their shoes;
All think what other people think;
io All know the man their neighbour knows.
Lord, what would they say
Did their Catullus⁴ walk that way?

1917

2. The airman, killed in action in Italy in January
in County Galway, western Ireland.

1918, is Major Robert Gregory, son of Yeats's

4. Gaius Valerius Catullus (ca. 84 - ca. 54 **B.C.E.**),

friend and patron Lady Augusta Gregory.

Roman poet famous for his erotic verse.

3. A village near the Gregory estate, Coole Park,

1 1 9 8 / W I L L I A M B U T L E R Y E A T S

Easter 19165

I have met them at close of day

Coming with vivid faces

From counter or desk among grey

Eighteenth-century houses.

5 I have passed with a nod of the head

Or polite meaningless words,

Or have lingered awhile and said

Polite meaningless words,

And thought before I had done

io Of a mocking tale or a gibe

To please a companion

Around the fire at the club,

Being certain that they and I

But lived where motley⁶ is worn:

15 All changed, changed utterly:

A terrible beauty is born.

That woman's days were spent

In ignorant good will,

Her nights in argument

20 Until her voice grew shrill.

W h a t voice more sweet than hers

W h e n , young and beautiful,

She rode to harriers?⁷

This man had kept a school
25 And rode our winged horse;⁸
This other his helper and friend
Was coming into his force;
He might have won fame in the end,
So sensitive his nature seemed,
30 So daring and sweet his thought.

This other man I had dreamed
A drunken, vainglorious lout.⁹
He had done most bitter wrong
To some who are near my heart,
35 Yet I number him in the song;
He, too, has resigned his part

5. This title, echoing Yeats's "September 1913,"

7. Countess Constance Georgina Markiewicz, nee suggests the poem is a palinode (one in which the Gore-Booth, an Irish aristocrat and nationalist.

author retracts something said in a previous

8. Padraic Pearse, a schoolmaster and prolific poem). On Easter Monday of 1916, Irish nation-writer of poems, plays, stories, and essays on Irish alists launched a heroic but unsuccessful revolt politics and Gaelic literature. The mythological against the British government; the week of street winged horse, Pegasus, is here used as a symbol of fighting that followed is known as the Easter Rising. poetic inspiration. "This other" (line 26) was Thoinn. As a result, a number of the nationalists were

mas MacDonough, a schoolteacher.

executed: Britain, at war with Germany, was in no

9. Major John MacBride, who had married Maud
mood to tolerate Irish agitation for independence—
Gonne (the Irish nationalist with whom Yeats had
which was supported, for obvious reasons, by Ger-
for years been hopelessly in love) in 1903 and sep-
many. Yeats knew the chief rebels personally.
arated from her in 1905.

6. Jester's multicolored costume.

E A S T E R 1 9 1 6 / 1 1 9 5

In the casual comedy;

He, too, has been changed in his turn,

Transformed utterly:

40 A terrible beauty is born.

Hearts with one purpose alone

Through s u m m e r and winter seem

E n c h a n t e d to a stone

To trouble the living stream.

45 The horse that comes from the road,

T h e rider, the birds that range

From cloud to tumbling cloud,

M i n u t e by minute they change;

A shadow of cloud on the stream

50 Changes minute by minute;

A horse-hoof slides on the brim,

And a horse plashes within it;

The long-legged moor-hens dive,

And hens to moor-cocks call;
55 Minute by minute they live:
The stone's in the midst of all.
Too long a sacrifice
Can make a stone of the heart.
O when may it suffice?
60 That is Heaven's part, our part
To m u r m u r name upon name,
As a mother names her child
W h e n sleep at last has come
On limbs that had run wild.
65 W h a t is it but nightfall?
No, no, not night but death;
W a s it needless death after all?
For England may keep faith
For all that is done and said.
70 We know their dream; enough
To know they dreamed and are dead;
And what if excess of love
Bewildered t h e m till they died?
I write it out in a verse—
75 MacDonagh and MacBride
And Connolly and Pearse
Now and in time to be,
Wherever green is worn,
Are changed, changed utterly,
so A terrible beauty is born.
S e p t e m b e r 25, 1916

1916

1 1 9 8 / W I L L I A M B U T L E R Y E A T S

The Second Coming

Turning and turning in the widening gyre
The falcon cannot hear the falconer;¹
Things fall apart; the centre cannot hold;
Mere anarchy is loosed upon the world,
5 The blood-dimmed tide is loosed, and everywhere
The ceremony of innocence is drowned;
The best lack all conviction, while the worst
Are full of passionate intensity.
Surely some revelation is at hand;
10 Surely the Second Coming is at hand:
The Second Coming! Hardly are those words out
When a vast image out of *Spiritus Mundi*²
Troubles my sight: somewhere in sands of the desert
A shape with lion body and the head of a man,³
15 A gaze blank and pitiless as the sun,
Is moving its slow thighs, while all about it
Reel shadows of the indignant desert birds.
The darkness drops again; but now I know
That twenty centuries of stony sleep
20 Were vexed to nightmare by a rocking cradle,⁴
And what rough beast, its hour come round at last,
Slouches towards Bethlehem⁵ to be born?

January 1919 1921

A Prayer for My Daughter⁶

Once more the storm is howling, and half hid

Under this cradle-hood and coverlid
My child sleeps on. There is no obstacle
But Gregory's wood⁷ and one bare hill
5 Whereby the haystack- and roof-levelling wind,
Bred on the Atlantic, can be stayed;

1. The gyre (Yeats's term, pronounced with a hard shallow edge of a vast luminous sea.”

g) is a conical shape based on the geometrical figure of interpenetrating cones; here, it is traced in (in *Wheels and Butterflies*, 1935), Yeats describes the falcon's sweep upward and out in widening circles the way in which the sphinx image had first manifested itself to him: “Our civilisation was about to reverse itself, or some new civilisation about to be born from all that our age had rejected ... ;

the cycle of Greco-Roman civilization as having been brought to a close by the advent of Christianity many... . I associated [the 'brazen winged anity, and in the violence of his own times—“the beast'] with laughing, ecstatic destruction.”

growing murderousness of the world”—he saw

4. That of the infant Christ.

signs that the two-thousand-year cycle of Christi-

5. Christ's birthplace.

anity was about to end and be replaced by a system

6. Yeats's daughter, Anne Butler Yeats, was born antithetical to it.

on February 26, 1919.

2. Or *Anima Mundi*, the Great Memory (Latin);

7. Part of the Gregory estate—about which, and according to Yeats, “a great memory passing on about Yeats's tower (line 10), which he called from generation to generation... . Our daily

Thoor Ballylee, see note to the next poem.

thought was certainly but the line of foam at the

A PRAYER FOR MY D A U G H T E R / 1 1 9 7

And for an hour I have walked and prayed

Because of the great gloom that is in my mind.

I have walked and prayed for this young child an hour

io And heard the sea-wind scream upon the tower,

And un4er the arches of the bridge, and scream

In the elms above the flooded stream;

Imagining in excited reverie

That the future years had come,

15 Dancing to a frenzied drum,

Out of the murderous innocence of the sea.

May she be granted beauty and yet not

Beauty to make a stranger's eye distraught,

Or hers before a looking glass, for such,

20 Being made beautiful overmuch,

Consider beauty a sufficient end,

Lose natural kindness and maybe
The heart-revealing intimacy
That chooses right, and never find a friend.
25 Helen⁸ being chosen found life flat and dull
And later had much trouble from a fool,
While that great Queen,⁹ that rose out of the spray,
Being fatherless could have her way
Yet chose a bandy-legged smith for man.
30 It's certain that fine women eat
A crazy salad with their meat,
Whereby the Horn of Plenty is undone.
In courtesy I'd have her chiefly learned;
Hearts are not had as a gift but hearts are earned
35 By those that are not entirely beautiful;
Yet many, that have played the fool
For beauty's very self, has charm made wise,
And many a poor man that has roved,
Loved and thought himself beloved,
40 From a glad kindness cannot take his eyes.
May she become a flourishing hidden tree
That all her thoughts may like the linnet⁰ be, *a songbird*
And have no business but dispensing round
Their magnanimities of sound,
45 Nor but in merriment begin a chase,
Nor but in merriment a quarrel.
Oh, may she live like some green laurel
Rooted in one dear perpetual place.

8. Helen of Troy, whose beauty was legendary.

Helen was reunited with Menelaus.

The daughter of Zeus (the supreme god) and Leda
9. Aphrodite, Greek goddess of love. “Fatherless”
(a mortal), she married Menelaus, brother of the
(line 28) in the sense that, in Hesiod’s version of
Greek leader, Agamemnon. She was abducted by
the myth, she sprang from sea foam. She was mar-
Paris, son of the king of Troy; the Greeks under-
ried to Hephaestus, the blacksmith, lame from
took an expedition to Troy to bring her back,
birth, who forged thunderbolts for the gods.
besieged the city for ten years, and finally took it.

1198 / WILLIAM BUTLER YEATS

My mind, because the minds that I have loved,
50 The sort of beauty that I have approved,
Prosper but little, has dried up of late,
Yet knows that to be choked with hate
May well be of all evil chances chief.
If there’s no hatred in a mind
55 Assault and battery of the wind
Can never tear the linnet from the leaf.
An intellectual hatred is the worst,
So let her think opinions are accursed.
Have I not seen the loveliest woman born
60 Out of the mouth of Plenty’s horn,
Because of her opinionated mind
Barter that horn and every good
By quiet natures understood

For an old bellows full of angry wind?
65 Considering that, all hatred driven hence,
The soul recovers radical innocence
And learns at last that it is self-delighting,
Self-appeasing, self-affrighting,
And that its own sweet will is Heaven's will;
70 She can, though every face should scowl
And every windy quarter howl
Or every bellows burst, be happy still.
And may her bridegroom bring her to a house
Where all's accustomed, ceremonious;
75 For arrogance and hatred are the wares
Peddled in the thoroughfares.
How but in custom and in ceremony
Are innocence and beauty born?
Ceremony's a name for the rich horn,
so And custom for the spreading laurel tree.

February-June 1919 1921

To Be Carved on a Stone at Thoor Ballylee²

I, the poet William Yeats,
With old mill boards and sea-green slates,
And smithy work from the Gort forge,
Restored this tower for my wife George;
1. Doubtless Maud Gonne, whom Yeats had loved
Norman tower, Thoor (Gaelic for "tower") Bally-
hopelessly since meeting her in 1889, and who had
lee, part of the Gregory estate, Coole Park, in Kil-
married Major John MacBride in 1903; often to

tartan, near the village of Gort, County Galway.

Yeats's dismay, she was a very daring activist in the

After marrying Georgie (changed by Yeats to
cause of Irish liberation.

George) Hyde-Lees in October 1917, he made the

2. In June 1917, Yeats had purchased a small plot
tower and two cottages suitable for habitation.

of land and the buildings on it, including a ruined

SAILING TO BYZANTIUM / 1199

5 And may these characters remain

When all is ruin once again.

19181921

Sailing to Byzantium³

i

That is no country for old men. The young

In one another's arms, birds in the trees

—Those dying generations—at their song,

The salmon-falls, the mackerel-crowded seas,

5 Fish, flesh, or fowl, commend all summer long

Whatever is begotten, born, and dies.

Caught in that sensual music all neglect

Monuments of unaging intellect.

2

An aged man is but a paltry thing,

io A tattered coat upon a stick, unless

Soul clap its hands and sing, and louder sing

For every tatter in its mortal dress,

Nor is there singing school but studying

Monuments of its own magnificence;

15 And therefore I have sailed the seas and come
To the holy city of Byzantium.

3

O sages standing in God's holy fire

As in the gold mosaic of a wall,

Come from the holy fire, perne in a gyre,⁴

20 And be the singing-masters of my soul.

Consume my heart away; sick with desire

3. Of the ancient city of Byzantium—on the site

had achieved “Unity of Being”: “I think if I could

of modern Istanbul, capital of the Eastern Roman

be given a month of Antiquity and leave to spend

Empire, and the center, especially in the fifth and

it where I chose, I would spend it in Byzantium a

sixth centuries, of highly developed and character-

little before Justinian [who ruled at Byzantium

istic forms of art and architecture—Yeats made a

from 527 to 565] opened St. Sophia and closed the

many-faceted symbol, which, since it is a symbol,

Academy of Plato [i.e., circa 535], ... I think that

should not be brought within the limits of too nar-

in early Byzantium, maybe never before or since in

rowly specific interpretation. Byzantine painting

recorded history, religious, aesthetic and practical

and the mosaics that decorated its churches (Yeats

life were one, that architect and artificers ...

had seen later derivatives of these mosaics in Italy,

spoke to the multitude and the few alike. The
at Ravenna and elsewhere) were stylized and for-
painter, the mosaic worker, the worker in gold and
mal, making no attempt at the full naturalistic ren-
silver, the illuminator of sacred books, were almost
dering of h u m a n forms, so that the city and its art
impersonal, almost perhaps without the conscious-
can appropriately symbolize a way of life in which
ness of individual design, absorbed in their subject-
art is frankly accepted and proclaimed as artifice.

matter and that the vision of a whole people.”

As artifice, as a work of the intellect, this art is not

4. Out of the noun *pern* (usually *pirn*), a weaver’s
subject to the decay and death that overtake the
bobbin, spool, or reel, Yeats makes a verb meaning
life of “natural things.” But while such an opposi-
to move in the spiral pattern taken by thread being
tion of artifice and nature is central to the poem,
unwound from a bobbin or being wound upon it.

there are references to Byzantium in Yeats’s prose

Here the speaker entreats the sages to descend to
that suggest the wider range of meaning that the

him in this manner, to come down into the gyres

city held for him. In *A Vision* (1937), particularly,

of history, the cycles of created life, out of their

he makes of it an exemplar of a civilization that

eternity. On “gyre,” see note 1, p. 1196.

1198 / W I L L I A M B U T L E R Y E A T S

And fastened to a dying animal
It knows not what it is; and gather me
Into the artifice of eternity.

4

25 Once out of nature I shall never take
My bodily form from any natural thing,
But such a form as Grecian goldsmiths make
Of hammered gold and gold enamelling
To keep a drowsy Emperor awake;
30 Or set upon a golden bough to sing
To lords and ladies of Byzantium
Of what is past, or passing, or to come.

September 1926 1927

Leda and the Swan⁵

A sudden blow: the great wings beating still
Above the staggering girl, her thighs caressed
By the dark webs, her nape caught in his bill,
He holds her helpless breast upon his breast.
5 How can those terrified vague fingers push
The feathered glory from her loosening thighs?
And how can body, laid in that white rush,
But feel the strange heart beating where it lies?
A shudder in the loins engenders there
io The broken wall, the burning roof and tower
And Agamemnon dead.
Being so caught up,
So mastered by the brute blood of the air,
Did she put on his knowledge with his power

Before the indifferent beak could let her drop?

September 1923 1924

Among School Children

i

I walk through the long schoolroom questioning;

A kind old nun in a white hood replies;

The children learn to cipher and to sing,

5. In Greek mythology, Leda, raped by Zeus, the
the mother of Clytemnestra, who murdered her
supreme god, in the guise of a swan, gave birth to
own husband, Agamemnon, on his return from the
Helen of Troy and the twins Castor and Pollux.

war. Yeats saw Leda as the recipient of an annun-
Helen's abduction by Paris from her husband,
ciation that would found Greek civilization, as the
Menelaus, caused the Trojan War. Leda was also
Annunciation to Mary would found Christianity.

A M O N G S C H O O L C H I L D R E N / 1 2 0 1

To study reading-books and histories,

5 To cut and sew, be neat in everything

In the best modern way—the children's eyes

In momentary wonder stare upon

A sixty-year-old smiling public man.

2

I dream of a Ledaean body,⁶ bent

io Above a sinking fire, a tale that she

Told of a harsh reproof, or trivial event

That changed some childish day to tragedy—

Told, and it seemed that our two natures blent
Into a sphere from youthful sympathy,
15 Or else, to alter Plato's parable,
Into the yolk and white of the one shell.⁷

3

And thinking of that fit of grief or rage
I look upon one child or t'other there
And wonder if she stood so at that age—
20 For even daughters of the swan can share
Something of every paddler's heritage—
And had that colour upon cheek or hair,
And thereupon my heart is driven wild:
She stands before me as a living child.

4

25 Her present image floats into the mind—
Did Quattrocento finger⁸ fashion it
Hollow of cheek as though it drank the wind
And took a mess of shadows for its meat?
And I though never of Ledaean kind
30 Had pretty plumage once—enough of that,
Better to smile on all that smile, and show
There is a comfortable kind of old scarecrow.

5

What youthful mother, a shape upon her lap
Honey of generation had betrayed,
35 And that must sleep, shriek, struggle to escape
As recollection or the drug decide,⁹

6. I.e., the body of a woman he has known and

8. I.e., the hand of an Italian artist of the fifteenth century loved and who has seemed to him as beautiful as

Leda or her daughter, Helen of Troy—about both

9. “I have taken the ‘honey of generation’ from of whom, see note to the previous poem.

Porphyry’s essay on ‘The Cave of the Nymphs’ but

7. In Plato’s *Symposium*, one of the speakers, to find no warrant in Porphyry for considering it the explain the origin of human love, recounts the leg- ‘drug’ that destroys the ‘recollection’ of pre-natal end according to which h u m a n beings were origi- freedom” [Yeats’s note]. In the essay, which nally double their present form until Zeus, the explains the symbolism of a passage from book 13 supreme god, fearing their power, cut them in two, of the *Odyssey*, the Neoplatonic philosopher Por- which he did “as men cut sorbapples in two when phyry (ca. 232—305) makes such statements as they are preparing them for pickling, or as they cut that “the sweetness of honey signifies ... the same eggs in two with a hair.” Since then, “each of us is thing as the pleasure arising from copulation,” the ... but the half of a human being, ... each is for- pleasure “which draws souls downward to genera- ever seeking his missing half.” tion.”

Would think her son, did she but see that shape
With sixty or more winters on its head,
A compensation for the pang of his birth,
40 Or the uncertainty of his setting forth?

6

Plato thought nature but a spume that plays
Upon a ghostly paradigm of things;¹
Solider Aristotle played the taws
Upon the bottom of a king of kings;²
45 World-famous golden-thighed Pythagoras³
Fingered upon a fiddle-stick or strings
What a star sang and careless Muses⁴ heard:
Old clothes upon old sticks to scare a bird.
Both nuns and mothers worship images,
50 But those the candles light are not as those
That animate a mother's reveries,
But keep a marble or a bronze repose.
And yet they too break hearts—O Presences
That passion, piety or affection knows,
55 And that all heavenly glory symbolize—
O self-born mockers of man's enterprise;

8

Labour is blossoming or dancing where
The body is not bruised to pleasure soul,
Nor beauty born out of its own despair,
60 Nor blear-eyed wisdom out of midnight oil.
O chestnut-tree, great-rooted blossomer,
Are you the leaf, the blossom or the bole?^o *trunk*

O body swayed to music, O brightening glance,
How can we know the dancer from the dance?

June 1926 1927

Byzantium⁵

The unpurged images of day recede;

The Emperor's drunken soldiery are abed;

1. In Plato's philosophy, the world of nature, of
of philosophy (along with the doctrine of the trans-
appearances, that we know is but the copy of a
migration of souls) was the premise that the uni-
world of ideal, permanently enduring prototypes.
verse is mathematically regular, an idea based on
2. Aristotle's philosophy differed most markedly
the Pythagoreans' observations of the exact math-
from Plato's in that it emphasized the systematic
emational relationships underlying musical har-
investigation of verifiable phenomena. Aristotle
mony.

was tutor to the son of King Philip of Macedo-

4. In Greek mythology, nine sister goddesses who
nia, later Alexander the Great. *Played the taws*:
presided over song, poetry, and the arts and sci-
whipped.
ences.

3. Greek philosopher (ca. 580-ca. 500 **B.C.E.**),

5. Under the heading "Subject for a Poem, April
about whom many legends clustered even in his
30th," Yeats wrote in his 1930 *Diary*: "Describe

own lifetime, as that he was the incarnation of the
Byzantium as it is in the system [that is, his system
god Apollo, that he had a golden hipbone or thigh-
in *A Vision*] towards the end of the first Christian
bone, and so on. Central to the Pythagorean school
millennium. A walking mummy. Flames at the

BYZANTIUM / 1203

Night resonance recedes, night-walkers' song
After great cathedral gong;

5 A starlit or a moonlit dome disdains⁶

All that man is,

All mere complexities,

The fury and the mire of human veins.

Before me floats an image, man or shade,

10 Shade more than man, more image than a shade;

For Hades' bobbin bound in mummy-cloth

May unwind the winding path;⁷

A mouth that has no moisture and no breath

Breathless mouths may summon;⁸

15 I hail the superhuman;

I call it death-in-life and life-in-death.

Miracle, bird or golden handiwork,

More miracle than bird or handiwork,

Planted on the starlit golden bough,

20 Can like the cocks of Hades crow,⁹

Or, by the moon embittered, scorn aloud

In glory of changeless metal

Common bird or petal

And all complexities of mire or blood.

25 At midnight on the Emperor's pavement flit

Flames that no faggot¹ feeds, nor steel has lit,

Nor storm disturbs, flames begotten of flame,

Where blood-begotten spirits come

And all complexities of fury leave,

30 Dying into a dance,

An agony of trance,

An agony of flame that cannot singe a sleeve.

street corners where the soul is purified, birds of
describe the figure, wrapped in a winding-sheet or
hammered gold singing in the golden trees, in the
mummy-cloth, but it also conveys the idea that the
harbor [dolphins], offering their backs to the wail-
soul may unwind the thread of its fate by retracing
ing dead that they may carry them to Paradise.”

its path, returning to the world to serve as guide,

6. If the dome is “starlit” at the dark of the moon
instructor, inspiration.

and “moonlit” at the full, then these terms may

8. The two lines have been read in two different
refer to Phase 1 and Phase 15, respectively, of the
ways, depending on which of the two phrases (“a
twenty-eight phases of the moon in the system of
mouth” or “breathless mouths”) is seen as subject
A Vision. As Yeats's character Michael Robartes
and which as object of “may summon.” Taking
says in “The Phases of the Moon,” “There's no

“breathless mouths” as subject: mouths of the living, breathless with the intensity of the act of invocation, may call up the mouths of the dead to the Wheel of Being. Phase 1 is the phase of complete objectivity, the soul being “completely

9. A symbol of rebirth and resurrection. In a book absorbed by its supernatural environment,” waiting on Roman sculpture that Yeats is believed to have to be formed, in a state of “complete plasticity.”

known, *Apotheosis and After Life* (1915), Eugenia Phase 15 is the state of complete subjectivity,

Strong writes: “The great vogue of the cock on later when the soul is completely absorbed in an

Roman tombstones is due ... to the fact that as achieved state, “a phase of complete beauty.” Thus

herald of the sun he becomes by an easy transition the world of “mere complexities,” the world in

the herald of rebirth and resurrection.” In the next which humanity is in a state of becoming, is ban-

sentence, she mentions a visual symbol that figures shed from the poem at the beginning, as the

in the poem’s last stanza: “The dolphins and “unpurged images of day” have been banished.

marine monsters, another frequent decoration,
7. Hades was the Greek god of the underworld,

form a mystic escort of the dead to the Islands of the realm of the dead. The comparison of a dead the Blest.”

body or soul to a bobbin (spool) is at first visual, to
1. Bundle of sticks.

1 1 9 8 / W I L L I A M B U T L E R Y E A T S

Astraddle on the dolphin's mire and blood,
Spirit after spirit! The smithies break the flood.

35 The golden smithies of the Emperor!

Marbles of the dancing floor

Break bitter furies of complexity,

Those images that yet

Fresh images beget,

40 That dolphin-torn, that gong-tormented sea.

September 1930 1932

Crazy Jane² Talks with the Bishop

I met the Bishop on the road

And much said he and I.

“Those breasts are flat and fallen now,

Those veins must soon be dry;

5 Live in a heavenly mansion,

Not in some foul sty.”

“Fair and foul are near of kin,

And fair needs foul,” I cried.³

“My friends are gone, but that's a truth

io Nor grave nor bed denied,

Learned in bodily lowliness

And in the heart's pride.

“A woman can be proud and stiff
When on love intent;
15 But Love has pitched his mansion in
The place of excrement;
For nothing can be sole or whole
That has not been rent.”

November 1931 1932

Lapis Lazuli⁴

(For Harry Clifton)

I have heard that hysterical women say
They are sick of the palette and fiddle-bow,
Of poets that are always gay,

2. In a series of poems, Yeats presents her as a
carved by some Chinese sculptor into the sem-
source of wisdom.

blance of a mountain with temple, trees, paths and

3. Cf. *Macbeth* 1.1.10: “Fair is foul, and foul is
an ascetic and pupil about to climb the mountain.
fair.”

Ascetic, pupil, hard stone, eternal theme of the

4. A deep-blue semiprecious stone. In a letter
sensual east. The heroic cry in the midst of despair.
dated July 6, 1935, Yeats wrote, “Someone [i.e.,
But no, I am wrong, the east has its solutions
the English writer Harry Clifton (1908-1978)] has
always and therefore knows nothing of tragedy. It
sent me a present of a great piece [of lapis lazuli]
is we, not the east, that must raise the heroic cry.”

L A P I S L A Z U L I / 1 2 0 5

For everybody knows or else should know

5 That if nothing drastic is done

Aeroplane and Zeppelin⁵ will come out,

Pitch like King Billy⁶ bomb-balls in

Until the town lie beaten flat.

All perform their tragic play,

10 There struts Hamlet, there is Lear,

That's Ophelia, that Cordelia;

Yet they, should the last scene be there,

The great stage curtain about to drop,

If worthy their prominent part in the play,

15 Do not break up their lines to weep.

They know that Hamlet and Lear are gay;

Gaiety transfiguring all that dread.

All men have aimed at, found and lost;

Black out; Heaven blazing into the head:

20 Tragedy wrought to its uttermost.

Though Hamlet rambles and Lear rages,

And all the drop-scenes drop at once

Upon a hundred thousand stages,

It cannot grow by an inch or an ounce.

25 On their own feet they came, or on shipboard,

Camelback, horseback, ass-back, mule-back,

Old civilizations put to the sword.

Then they arid their wisdom went to rack:

No handiwork of Callimachus,⁷

30 Who handled marble as if it were bronze,

Made draperies that seemed to rise
When sea-wind swept the corner, stands;
His long lamp-chimney shaped like the stem
Of a slender palm, stood but a day;
35 All things fall and are built again,
And those that build them again are gay.
Two Chinamen, behind them a third,
Are carved in lapis lazuli,
Over them flies a long-legged bird,
40 A symbol of longevity;
The third, doubtless a serving-man,
Carries a musical instrument.
Every discolouration of the stone,
Every accidental crack or dent,
45 Seems a water-course or an avalanche,
Or lofty slope where it still snows
Though doubtless plum or cherry-branch
5. Cylindrical airship.

Vision, Yeats says that only one example of his work

6. At the Battle of the Boyne on July 1, 1690, Wil-
remains, a marble chair, and goes on to mention
liam III, king of England since 1689, had defeated
“that bronze lamp [in the Erechtheum, a temple of
the forces of the deposed king, James II.

the guardian deities of Athens] shaped like a palm,

7. Greek sculptor of the fifth century **B.C.E.** In A
known to us by a description in Pausanias.”

1198 / WILLIAM BUTLER YEATS

Sweetens the little half-way house
Those Chinamen climb towards, and I
50 Delight to imagine them seated there;
There, on the mountain and the sky,
On all the tragic scene they stare.
One asks for mournful melodies;
Accomplished fingers begin to play.
55 Their eyes mid many wrinkles, their eyes,
Their ancient, glittering eyes, are gay.

July 1936 1938

Long-Legged Fly

That civilisation may not sink,
Its great battle lost,
Quiet the dog, tether the pony
To a distant post;
5 Our master Caesar is in the tent
Where the maps are spread,
His eyes fixed upon nothing,
A hand under his head.

Like a long-legged fly upon the stream

io His mind moves upon silence.

That the topless towers be burnt
And men recall that face,⁸
Move most gently if move you must
In this lonely place.

15 She thinks, part woman, three parts a child,
That nobody looks; her feet
Practice a tinker shuffle

Picked up on a street.

Like a long-legged fly upon the stream

20 *Her mind moves upon silence.*

That girls at puberty may find

The first Adam in their thought,

Shut the door of the Pope's chapel,⁹

Keep those children out.

25 There on that scaffolding reclines

Michael Angelo.

With no more sound than the mice make

His hand moves to and fro.

Like a long-legged fly upon the stream

BO *His mind moves upon silence.*

November 1937

1939

8. Helen, legendary beauty whose abduction

9. On the ceiling of the Sistine Chapel, so called

caused the Trojan War and hence the fall of Troy.

because it was built under Pope Sixtus IV, Michel-

An echo of Christopher Marlowe's play *Dr. Faustus*-

angelo (1475-1564) painted a series of biblical

tus: "Was this the face that launched a thousand

scenes, including the creation of Adam.

ships, / And burnt the topless towers of Ilium?"

**THE CIRCUS ANIMALS 'DESERTION' / 12
07**

The Circus Animals' Desertion

1

I sought a theme and sought for it in vain,
I sought it daily for six weeks or so.
Maybe at last, being but a broken man,
I must be satisfied with my heart, although
5 Winter and summer till old age began
My circus animals were all on show,
Those stilted boys, that burnished chariot, 1
Lion and woman and the Lord knows what.

2

What can I but enumerate old themes?
io First that sea-rider Oisin² led by the nose
Through three enchanted islands, allegorical dreams,
Vain gaiety, vain battle, vain repose,
Themes of the embittered heart, or so it seems,
That might adorn old songs or courtly shows;
15 But what cared I that set him on to ride,
I, starved for the bosom of his faery bride?
And then a counter-truth filled out its play,
The Countess Cathleen 3 was the name I gave it;
She, pity-crazed, had given her soul away,
20 But masterful Heaven had intervened to save it.
I thought my dear⁴ must her own soul destroy,
So did fanaticism and hate enslave it,
And this brought forth a dream and soon enough
This dream itself had all my thought and love.
25 And when the Fool and Blind Man stole the bread
Cuchulain fought the ungovernable sea;⁵
Heart-mysteries there, and yet when all is said

It was the dream itself enchanted me:

Character isolated by a deed

30 To engross the present and dominate memory.

Players and painted stage took all my love,

And not those things that they were emblems of.

1. The images of lines 7—8 may refer to motifs of time of famine, are selling their souls to emissaries from earlier works by Yeats (in his play *The Unicorn from the Stars*, for instance, a gilded state Cathleen sells hers “for a great price.” She dies, coach, adorned with lion and unicorn, is being but an angel announces that she is “passing to the built on stage), or they may be generalized images, floor of peace.”

in line with the title and argument of the poem, of 4. Maud Gonne, whom Yeats had loved since first the people and things to be encountered in the meeting her in 1889, and who had married John heightened, unreal world of a circus.

MacBride in 1903; she was a daring, even violent,

2. The hero of Yeats’s allegorical (and symbolic) activist in the cause of Irish liberation.

long poem, *The Wanderings of Oisín* (pronounced

5. In another early play, *On Baile’s Strand*, 1904,

Usheen), 1889, is led by the fairy Niamh (pro-

Cuchulain (pronounced *Cuhoolin*) unwittingly

nounced *Nee-ave*) in succession to the three

kills his own son; maddened, he rushes out to fight
Islands of, respectively, Dancing (changeless joy),
the waves. As the people run to the shore to watch,
Victories (also called “Of Many Fears”), and For-
the fool and the blind man hurry off to steal the
getfulness.

bread from their ovens.

3. Yeats’s first play, 1892. In it, the people, in a

1 1 9 8 / W I L L I A M B U T L E R Y E A T S

3

Those masterful images because complete

Grew in pure mind, but out of what began?

35 A mound of refuse or the sweeping of a street,

Old kettles, old bottles, and a broken can,

Old iron, old bones, old rags, that raving slut

Who keeps the till. Now that my ladder’s gone,

I must lie down where all the ladders start,

40 In the foul rag-and-bone shop of the heart.

1 9 3 9

Under Ben Bulben⁶

I

Swear by what the sages spoke

Round the Mareotic Lake⁷

That the Witch of Atlas knew,

Spoke and set the cocks a-crow.⁸

5 Swear by those horsemen, by those women

Complexion and form prove superhuman,⁹

That pale, long-visaged company

That air in immortality
Completeness of their passions won;
io Now they ride the wintry dawn
Where Ben Bulbin sets the scene.¹
Here's the gist of what they mean.

2

Many times man lives and dies
Between his two eternities,
15 That of race and that of soul,
And ancient Ireland knew it all.

6. A mountain in County Sligo, in the west of Ire-
beauty, and freedom, visits Egypt and the Mareotic
land, that overlooks Drumcliff Churchyard, where
Lake in the course of her magic journeyings. The
Yeats is buried. The last three lines of the poem
knowledge and belief that Yeats describes as com-
are carved on his tombstone.

mon to her and to the sages “set the cocks a-crow”

7. Lake Mareotis, a salt lake in northern Egypt,
in the sense that, like “the cocks of Hades” and the
near which the Christian monks and nuns of the
golden bird in Yeats's “Byzantium” (see p. 1202),
Thebaid, among them St. Anthony (ca. 251—356),
they summon to a spiritual rebirth.

had withdrawn to contemplation. In his *1930*

9. Fairies called the Sidhe (pronounced *shee*) were
Diary, Yeats wrote that “men went on pilgrimage
believed to ride through the countryside near Ben

to Saint Anthony that they might learn about their Bulben.

spiritual states, what was about to happen and why

1. In another late poem, “Alternative Song for the
it happened, and Saint Anthony would reply nei-
Severed Head in ‘The King of the Great Clock
ther out of traditional casuistry nor common sense
Tower,’ ” Yeats reintroduces some of the Irish
but from spiritual powers.”

mythological or legendary heroes and heroines

8. In the poem “The Witch of Atlas,” by Percy
who figure in his early poems—Cuchulain, Niamh
Bysshe Shelley (1 7 9 2 - 1 8 2 2 ; for his poetry, see
and others—with whom the supernatural riders of
pp. 863—93) the protagonist, a spirit of love,
these lines may be identified.

U N D E R B E N B U L B E N / 1 2 0 9

Whether man die in his bed
Or the rifle knocks him dead,
A brief parting from those dear
20 Is the worst man has to fear.
Though gravediggers’ toil is long,
Sharp their spades, their muscles strong,
They but thrust their buried men
Back in the human mind again.

3

25 You that Mitchel’s prayer have heard,
“Send war in our time, O Lord!”“2

Know that when all words are said
And a man is fighting mad,
Something drops from eyes long blind,
30 He completes his partial mind,
For an instant stands at ease,
Laughs aloud, his heart at peace.
Even the wisest man grows tense
With some sort of violence
35 Before he can accomplish fate,
Know his work or choose his mate.

4

Poet and sculptor, do the work,
Nor let the modish painter shirk
What his great forefathers did,
40 Bring the soul of man to God,
Make him fill the cradles right.
Measurement began our might:3
Forms a stark Egyptian thought,
Forms that gentler Phidias wrought.
45 Michael Angelo left a proof
On the Sistine Chapel roof,4
Where but half-awakened Adam
Can disturb globe-trotting Madam
Till her bowels are in heat,
50 Proof that there's a purpose set
Before the secret working mind:
Profane perfection of mankind.
Quattrocento5 put in paint

On backgrounds for a God or Saint

2. John Mitchel (1815-1875), Irish nationalist, the proportions of their sculptured figures—rules wrote in his *jail Journal*, or *Five Years in British Prisons* (1854): “Czar, I bless thee, I kiss the hem the fifth century **B.C.E.**, used, and that have been of thy garment. I drink to thy health and longevity. implicit in the greatest Western art up to the present. Give us war in our time, O Lord.”

ent, when “confusion [falls] upon our thought”

3. The achievements of Western civilization (now, (line 67).

according to the poem, being challenged or

4. See note 9, p. 1206.

destroyed) began with the exact mathematical

5. The Italian fifteenth century.

rules that the Egyptians followed in working out

1 1 9 8 / W I L L I A M B U T L E R Y E A T S

5 5

Gardens where a soul’s at ease;

Where everything that meets the eye,

Flowers and grass and cloudless sky,

Resemble forms that are or seem

When sleepers wake and yet still dream,

60

And when it’s vanished still declare,

With only bed and bedstead there,

That heavens had opened.

Gyres⁶ run on;

When that greater dream had gone

Calvert and Wilson, Blake and Claude,

6 5

Prepared a rest for the people of God,

Palmer's phrase,⁷ but after that

Confusion fell upon our thought.

5

Irish poets, learn your trade,

Sing whatever is well made,

7 0

Scorn the sort now growing up

All out of shape from toe to top,

Their unremembering hearts and heads

Base-born products of base beds.

Sing the peasantry, and then

7 5

Hard-riding country gentlemen,

The holiness of monks, and after

Porter^o-drinkers' randy laughter; *dark brown beer*

Sing the lords and ladies gay

That were beaten into the clay

8 0

Through seven heroic centuries;

Cast your mind on other days

That we in coming days may be

Still the indomitable Irishry.

6

Under bare Ben Bulben's head

8 5

In Drumcliff churchyard Yeats is laid.

An ancestor was rector there⁸

Long years ago, a church stands near,

By the road an ancient cross.

No marble, no conventional phrase;

9 0

On limestone quarried near the spot

By his command these words are cut:

6. I.e., the cycles of history. See note 1, p. 1196.

vert (1799-1883) and Samuel Palmer (1805 -

7. Lines 64—66 name five artists who had provided

1881), visionaries, landscape painters, and engrav-

Yeats with images and with ideals of what art

ers, had found inspiration in the life and work of

should be. Claude Lorrain (1600-1682), French

William Blake (1757 - 1827 ; see pp. 732-47).

landscape painter, was a central standard for land-

8. Yeats's great-grandfather, the Reverend John

scape painters up to the early nineteenth century,

Yeats (1774—1847), was rector of Drumcliff from

including the English artists mentioned here, espe-

1805.

cially Richard Wilson (1714-1782). Edward Cal-

N O N S U M Q U A L I S E R A M B O N A E S U B R E G N O

C Y N A R A E / 1 2 1 1

Cast a cold eye

On life, on death.

Horseman, pass by!

September 4, 1938 1939

ERNEST DOWSON

1867-1900

Vitae summa brevis spes rivos vetat incohare longam!

They are not long, the weeping and the laughter,

Love and desire and hate:

I think they have no portion in us after

We pass the gate.

5 They are not long, the days of wine and roses:

Out of a misty dream

Our path emerges for a while, then closes

Within a dream.

1891 1896

Non sum qualis eram bonae sub regno Cynarae²

Last night, ah, yesternight, betwixt her lips and mine

There fell thy shadow, Cynara! thy breath was shed

Upon my soul between the kisses and the wine;

And I was desolate and sick of an old passion,

5 Yea, I was desolate and bowed my head:

I have been faithful to thee, Cynara! in my fashion.

All night upon mine heart I felt her warm heart beat,

Night-long within mine arms in love and sleep she lay;

Surely the kisses of her bought red mouth were sweet;

io But I was desolate and sick of an old passion,

When I awoke and found the dawn was grey:

I have been faithful to thee, Cynara! in my fashion.

I have forgot much, Cynara! gone with the wind,

Flung roses, roses riotously with the throng,

15 Dancing, to put thy pale, lost lilies out of mind;

But I was desolate and sick of an old passion,

1. The brevity of life forbids us to entertain hopes

urges Venus, Roman goddess of love and beauty,

of long duration (Latin); Horace, *Odes* 1.4.15.

to spare him new efforts in her service, because he

2. I am not as I was under the reign of the good

is no longer up to the task.

Cynara (Latin); Horace, *Odes* 4.1.3—4: the poet

1 2 1 2 / EDWIN ARLINGTON ROBINSON

Yea, all the time, because the dance was long:

I have been faithful to thee, Cynara! in my fashion.

I cried for madder music and for stronger wine,

20 But when the feast is finished and the lamps expire,

Then falls thy shadow, Cynara! the night is thine;

And I am desolate and sick of an old passion,

Yea hungry for the lips of my desire:

I have been faithful to thee, Cynara! in my fashion.

1 8 9 1 1 8 9 6

EDWIN ARLINGTON ROBINSON

1869-1935

Richard Cory

Whenever Richard Cory went down town,

We people on the pavement looked at him:

He was a gentleman from sole to crown,

Clean favored, and imperially slim.
5 And he was always quietly arrayed,
And he was always human when he talked;
But still he fluttered pulses when he said,
“Good-morning,” and he glittered when he walked.
And he was rich—yes, richer than a king—
10 And admirably schooled in every grace:
In fine, we thought that he was everything
To make us wish that we were in his place.
So on we worked, and waited for the light,
And went without the meat, and cursed the bread;
15 And Richard Cory, one calm summer night,
Went home and put a bullet through his head.

1 8 6 9

George Crabbe 1

Give him the darkest inch your shelf allows,
Hide him in lonely garrets, if you will,
But his hard, human pulse is throbbing still
With the sure strength that fearless truth endows.

1. English poet, physician, and curate (1754—1832; see pp. 723—31), known for his realistic narrative poems.

MINIVER CHEEVY / 1 2 1 3

5 In spite of all fine science disavows,
Of his plain excellence and stubborn skill
There yet remains what fashion cannot kill,
Though years have thinned the laurel² from his brows.
Whether or not we read him, we can feel
10 From time to time the vigor of his name

Against us like a finger for the shame
And emptiness of what our souls reveal
In books that are as altars where we kneel
To consecrate the flicker, not the flame.

1 8 9 7

Reuben Bright

Because he was a butcher and thereby
Did earn an honest living (and did right),
I would not have you think that Reuben Bright
Was any more a brute than you or I;
5 For when they told him that his wife must die,
He stared at them, and shook with grief and fright,
And cried like a great baby half that night,
And made the women cry to see him cry.
And after she was dead, and he had paid
io The singers and the sexton and the rest,
He packed a lot of things that she had made
Most mournfully away in an old chest
Of hers, and put some chopped-up cedar boughs
In with them, and tore down the slaughter-house.

1 8 9 7

Miniver Cheevy

Miniver Cheevy, child of scorn,
Grew lean while he assailed the seasons;
He wept that he was ever born,
And he had reasons.
5 Miniver loved the days of old
When swords were bright and steeds were prancing;

The vision of a warrior bold

Would set him dancing.

2. In classical Greece, laurel was associated with prophecy and poetry; laurel wreaths crowned poets as well as the victors in athletic contests.

1 2 1 4 / E D W I N A R L I N G T O N R O B I N S O N

Miniver sighed for what was not,

10 And dreamed, and rested from his labors;

He dreamed of Thebes and Camelot,

And Priam's³ neighbors.

Miniver mourned the ripe renown

That made so many a name so fragrant;

15 He mourned Romance, now on the town,

And Art, a vagrant.

Miniver loved the Medici,⁴

Albeit he had never seen one;

He would have sinned incessantly

20 Could he have been one.

Miniver cursed the commonplace

And eyed a khaki suit with loathing;

He missed the medieval grace

Of iron clothing.

25 Miniver scorned the gold he sought,

But sore annoyed was he without it;

Miniver thought, and thought, and thought,

And thought about it.

Miniver Cheevy, born too late,

30 Scratched his head and kept on thinking;

Miniver coughed, and called it fate,

And kept on drinking.

1 9 1 0

The Mill

The miller's wife had waited long,
The tea was cold, the fire was dead;
And there might yet be nothing wrong
In how he went and what he said:
5 "There are no millers any more,"
Was all that she had heard him say;
And he had lingered at the door
So long that it seemed yesterday.
Sick with a fear that had no form
io She knew that she was there at last;
And in the mill there was a warm
And mealy fragrance of the past.

3. King of Troy during the Trojan War, immortal- 4. Merchant-
princes of Renaissance Florence, ized in Homer's *Iliad*.
Thebes: Ancient Greek city, known both for cruelty and for
their support of famous in history and legend. *Camelot*:
according learning and art.

to English legend, the site of King Arthur's court.

MR. FLOOD 'S PARTY / 1 2 1 5

What else there was would only seem
To say again what he had meant;
15 And what was hanging from a beam
Would not have heeded where she went.
And if she thought it followed her,
She may have reasoned in the dark
That one way of the few there were

20 Would hide her and would leave no mark:
Black water, smooth above the weir^o *milldam*
Like starry velvet in the night,
Though ruffled once, would soon appear
The same as ever to the sight.

1 9 2 0

Mr. Flood's Party

Old Eben Flood, climbing alone one night
Over the hill between the town below
And the forsaken upland hermitage
That held as much as he should ever know
5 On earth again of home, paused warily.
The road was his with not a native near;
And Eben, having leisure, said aloud,
For no man else in Tilbury Town to hear:
“Well, Mr. Flood, we have the harvest moon
io Again, and we may not have many more;
The bird is on the wing, the poet says,⁵
And you and I have said it here before.
Drink to the bird.” He raised up to the light
The jug that he had gone so far to fill,
15 And answered huskily: “Well, Mr. Flood,
Since you propose it, I believe I will.”
Alone, as if enduring to the end
A valiant armor of scarred hopes outworn,
He stood there in the middle of the road
20 Like Roland's ghost winding a silent horn.⁶
Below him, in the town among the trees,

Where friends of other days had honored him,
A phantom salutation of the dead
Rang thinly till old Eben's eyes were dim.

5. A paraphrase of the seventh stanza of *The*

6. The hero of the French poem *The Song of
Rubaiyat of Omar Khayyam* as translated in 1859
Roland (ca. 1000) had an enchanted horn; in battle
by the English poet Edward FitzGerald (1809—
at Roncevalles (778), he sounded his horn for help
1883; see pp. 961 - 73).

just before dying.

1216 / CHARLOTTE MEW

25 Then, as a mother lays her sleeping child
Down tenderly, fearing it may awake,
He set the jug down slowly at his feet
With trembling care, knowing that most things break;
And only when assured that on firm earth
30 It stood, as the uncertain lives of men
Assuredly did not, he paced away,
And with his hand extended paused again:
“Well, Mr. Flood, we have not met like this
In a long time; and many a change has come
35 To both of us, I fear, since last it was
We had a drop together. Welcome home!”
Convivially returning with himself,
Again he raised the jug up to the light;
And with an acquiescent quaver said:
40 “Well, Mr. Flood, if you insist, I might.

“Only a very little, Mr. Flood—
For auld lang syne.⁷ No more, sir; that will do.”
So, for the time, apparently it did,
And Eben evidently thought so too;
45 For soon amid the silver loneliness
Of night he lifted up his voice and sang,
Secure, with only two moons listening,
Until the whole harmonious landscape rang—
“For auld lang syne.” The weary throat gave out,
50 The last word wavered; and the song being done,
He raised again the jug regretfully
And shook his head, and was again alone.
There was not much that was ahead of him,
And there was nothing in the town below—
55 Where strangers would have shut the many doors
That many friends had opened long ago.

1 9 2 0

C H A R L O T T E M E W

1869-1928

The Farmer's Bride

Three Summers since I chose a maid,
Too young maybe—but more's to do
At harvest-time than bide and woo.

When us was wed she turned afraid

7. Old long since (Scottish), the days of long ago; title and refrain of a famous song by the eighteenth-century Scottish poet Robert Burns (see p. 753).

THE FARMER'S BRIDE / 1 2 1 7

5 Of love and me and all things human;

Like the shut of a winter's day.
Her smile went out, and 'twasn't a woman—
More like a little frightened fay.^o *fairy*
One night, in the Fall, she runned away.
10 "Out 'mong the sheep, her be," they said,
'Should properly have been abed;
But sure enough she wasn't there
Lying awake with her wide brown stare.
So over seven-acre field and up-along across the down^o
upland pasture 15 We chased her, flying like a hare
Before our lanterns. To Church-Town
All in a shiver and a scare
We caught her, fetched her home at last
And turned the key upon her, fast.
20 She does the work about the house
As well as most, but like a mouse:
Happy enough to chat and play
With birds and rabbits and such as they,
So long as men-folk keep away.
25 "Not near, not near!" her eyes beseech
When one of us comes within reach.
The women say that beasts in stall
Look round like children at her call.
I've hardly heard her speak at all.
30 Shy as a leveret,^o swift as he, *young hare*
Straight and slight as a young larch tree,
Sweet as the first wild violets, she,
To her wild self. But what to me?

The short days shorten and the oaks are brown,
35 The blue smoke rises to the low grey sky,
One leaf in the still air falls slowly down,
A magpie's spotted feathers lie
On the black earth spread white with rime,^o *frozen dew*
The berries redden up to Christmas-time.
40 What's Christmas-time without there be
Some other in the house than we!
She sleeps up in the attic there
Alone, poor maid. 'Tis but a stair
B e t w i x t u s . O h ! m y G o d ! t h e d o w n , *o light, soft*
body hair 45 The soft young down of her, the brown,
The brown of her—her eyes, her hair, her hair!

1912

1916

1 2 1 8 / C H A R L O T T E M E W

In Nunhead Cemetery

It is the clay that makes the earth stick to his spade;
He fills in holes like this year after year;
The others have gone; they were tired, and half afraid
But I would rather be standing here;
5 There is nowhere else to go. I have seen this place
From the windows of the train that's going past
Against the sky. This is rain on my face—
It was raining here when I saw it last.
There is something horrible about a flower;
10 This, broken in my hand, is one of those
He threw in just now: it will not live another hour;

There are thousands more: you do not miss a rose.
One of the children hanging about
Pointed at the whole dreadful heap and smiled
15 This morning, after THAT was carried out;
There is something terrible about a child.
We were like children, last week, in the Strand;¹
That was the day you laughed at me
Because I tried to make you understand
20 The cheap, stale chap I used to be
Before I saw the things you made me see.
This is not a real place; perhaps by-and-by
I shall wake—I am getting drenched with all this rain:
To-morrow I will tell you about the eyes of the Crystal Palace²
train
25 Looking down on us, and you will laugh and I shall see
what you
see again.
Not here, not now. We said “Not yet
Across our low stone parapet
Will the quick shadows of the sparrows fall.”
But still it was a lovely thing
30 Through the grey months to wait for Spring
With the birds that go a-gypsying
In the parks till the blue seas call.
And next to these, you used to care
For the lions in Trafalgar Square,³
35 Who’ll stand and speak for London when her bell of
Judgment tolls—
And the gulls at Westminster that were

The old sea-captains' souls.

1. Street in central London.

London, wherein four bronze lions stand at the

2. Large building made of glass and iron, erected
base of a commemorative column. Gulls gather in
in London's Great Exhibition of 1851.

the fountains of Trafalgar, as in areas surrounding

3. Grand plaza in the Westminster borough of
the nearby river Thames.

I N N U N H E A D C E M E T E R Y / 1 2 1 9

To-day again the brown tide splashes, step by step, the river
stair,

And the gulls are there!

40 By a month we have missed our Day:

The children would have hung about

Round the carriage and over the way

As you and I came out.

We should have stood on the gulls' black cliffs and heard the
sea

45 And seen the moon's white track,

I would have called, you would have come to me

And kissed me back.

You have never done that: I do not know

Why I stood staring at your bed

50 And heard you, though you spoke so low,

But could not reach your hands, your little head.

There was nothing we could not do, you said,

And you went, and I let you go!

Now I will burn you back, I will burn you through,

55 Though I am damned for it we two will lie
And burn, here where the starlings fly
To these white stones from the wet sky—;
Dear, you will say this is not I—
It would not be you, it would not be you!
60 If for only a little while
You will think of it you will understand,
If you will touch my sleeve and smile
As you did that morning in the Strand
I can wait quietly with you
65 Or go away if you want me to—
God! What is God? but your face has gone and your hand!
Let me stay here too.
When I was quite a little lad
At Christmas-time we went half mad
70 For joy of all the toys we had,
And then we used to sing about the sheep
The shepherds watched by night;
We used to pray to Christ to keep
Our small souls safe till morning light—;
75 I am scared, I am staying with you to-night—
Put me to sleep.
I shall stay here: here you can see the sky;
The houses in the streets are much too high;
There is no one left to speak to there;
so Here they are everywhere,
And just above them fields and fields of roses lie—
If he would dig it all up again they would not die.

1916

1220

STEPHEN CRANE

1871-1900

*From The Black Riders and Other Lines*1

I

BLACK RIDERS CAME FROM THE SEA.
THERE WAS CLANG AND CLANG OF SPEAR AND
SHIELD,
AND CLASH AND CLASH OF HOOF AND HEEL,
WILD SHOUTS AND THE WAVE OF HAIR
5 IN THE RUSH UPON THE WIND :
THUS THE RIDE OF SIN.

III

IN THE DESERT
I SAW A CREATURE, NAKED, BESTIAL,
WHO, SQUATTING UPON THE GROUND,
HELD HIS HEART IN HIS HANDS,
5 AND ATE OF IT.
I SAID, "IS IT GOOD, FRIEND?"
"IT IS BITTER—BITTER," HE ANSWERED;
"BUT I LIKE IT
"BECAUSE IT IS BITTER,
io "AND BECAUSE IT IS MY HEART."

XXV

BEHOLD, THE GRAVE OF A WICKED MAN,
AND NEAR IT, A STERN SPIRIT.
THERE CAME A DROOPING MAID WITH VIOLETS,

BUT THE SPIRIT GRASPED HER ARM.

5 “NO FLOWERS FOR HIM,” HE SAID.

THE MAID WEPT:

“AH, I LOVED HIM.”

BUT THE SPIRIT, GRIM AND FROWNING:

“NO FLOWERS FOR HIM.”

10 NOW, THIS IS IT

IF THE SPIRIT WAS JUST,

WHY DID THE MAID WEEP?

1. The stylish Boston publishers of Crane’s first reproduced the poems in standard typography; poetry collection, *The Black Riders and Other* here the original look of the “lines” (“I never call *Lines*, proposed what they called a “severely class- them poems,” Crane said) is more closely approx- sic” design, printing the poems in capitals only— imated.

which greatly pleased Crane. Modern editors have

[A M A N A D R I F T O N A S L I M S P A R] / 1 2 2 1

LVI

A MAN FEARED THAT HE MIGHT FIND AN ASSASSIN;

ANOTHER THAT HE MIGHT FIND A VICTIM.

ONE WAS MORE WISE THAN THE OTHER.

1895

*From War is Kind*²

Do not weep, maiden, for war is kind.

Because your lover threw wild hands toward the sky

And the affrighted steed ran on alone,

Do not weep.

5 War is kind.

Hoarse, booming drums of the regiment

Little souls who thirst for fight,

These men were born to drill and die

The unexplained glory flies above them

io Great is the battle-god, great, and his kingdom

A field where a thousand corpses lie.

Do not weep, babe, for war is kind.

Because your father tumbled in the yellow trenches,

Raged at his breast, gulped and died,

15 Do not weep.

War is kind.

Swift, blazing flag of the regiment

Eagle with crest of red and gold,

These men were born to drill and die

20 Point for them the virtue of slaughter

Make plain to them the excellence of killing

And a field where a thousand corpses lie.

Mother whose heart hung humble as a button

On the bright splendid shroud of your son,

25 Do not weep.

War is kind.

1899

[A Man Adrift on a Slim Spar]

A man adrift on a slim spar

A horizon smaller than the rim of a bottle

2. The poems in Crane's second and final collection of verse were printed conventionally, with upper- and lowercase letters.

1 2 2 2 / P A U L L A U R E N C E D U N B A R

Tented waves rearing lashed dark points

The near whine of froth in circles.

God is cold.

The incessant raise and swing of the sea

And growl after growl of crest

The sinkings, green, seething, endless

The upheaval half-completed.

God is cold.

The seas are in the hollow of The Hand;

Oceans may be turned to a spray

Raining down through the stars

Because of a gesture of pity toward a babe.

15 Oceans may become grey ashes,

Die with a long moan and a roar

Amid the tumult of the fishes

And the cries of the ships,

Because The Hand beckons the mice.

20 A horizon smaller than a doomed assassin's cap,

Inky, surging tumults

A reeling, drunken sky and no sky

A pale hand sliding from a polished spar.

God is cold.

25 The puff of a coat imprisoning air.

A face kissing the water-death

A weary slow sway of a lost hand

And the sea, the moving sea, the sea.

God is cold.

ca. **1 8 9 7 1 9 2 9**

PAUL LAURENCE DUNBAR

1872-1906

A Summer's Night

The night is dewy as a maiden's mouth,
The skies are bright as are a maiden's eyes,
Soft as a maiden's breath, the wind that flies
Up from the perfumed bosom of the South.
5 Like sentinels, the pines stand in the park;
And hither hastening like rakes that roam,
With lamps to light their wayward footsteps home,
The fire-flies come stagg'ring down the dark.

1 8 9 5

LITTLE BROWN BABY / 1 2 2 3

We Wear the Mask

We wear the mask that grins and lies,
It hides our cheeks and shades our eyes—
This debt we pay to human guile;
With torn and bleeding hearts we smile,
5 And mouth with myriad subtleties.
Why should the world be over-wise,
In counting all our tears and sighs?
Nay, let them only see us, while
We wear the mask.
10 We smile, but, O great Christ, our cries
To thee from tortured souls arise.

We sing, but oh the clay is vile
Beneath our feet, and long the mile;
But let the world dream otherwise,
15 We wear the mask!

1896

Little Brown Baby

Little brown baby wif spa'klin' eyes,
Come to yo' pappy an' set on his knee.
What you been doin', suh-makin' san' pies?
Look at dat bib—you's ez du'ty ez me.
5 Look at dat mouf—dat's merlasses, I bet;
Come hyeah, Maria, an' wipe off his han's.
Bees gwine to ketch you an' eat you up yit,
Bein' so sticky an sweet—goodness lan's!^o *lands!*
Little brown baby wif spa'klin' eyes,
io Who's pappy's darlin' an' who's pappy's chile?
Who is it all de day nevah once tries
Fu' to be cross, er once loses dat smile?
Whah did you git dem teef? My, you's a scamp!
Whah did dat dimple come f'om in yo' chin?
15 Pappy do' know you—I b'lieves you's a tramp;
Mammy, dis hyeah's some ol' straggler got in!
Let's th'ow him outen de do' in de san',
We do' want stragglers a-layin' 'roun' hyeah;
Let's gin him 'way to de big buggah-man;
20 I know he's hidin' erroun' hyeah right neah.
Buggah-man, buggah-man, come in de do',
Hyeah's a bad boy you kin have fu' to eat.

1 2 2 4 / P A U L L A U R E N C E D U N B A R

Mammy an' pappy do' want him no mo',
Swaller him down f'om his haid to his feet!
25 Dah, now, I t'ought dat you'd hug me up close.
Go back, ol' buggah, you sha'n't have dis boy.
He ain't no tramp, ner no straggler, of co'se;
He's pappy's pa'dner an' playmate an' joy.
Come to you' pallet now—go to yo' res';
30 Wisht you could alius know ease an' cleah skies;
Wisht you could stay jes' a chile on my breas'—
Little brown baby wif spa'klin' eyes!

1 8 9 9 ?

Sympathy

I know what the caged bird feels, alas!
When the sun is bright on the upland slopes;
When the wind stirs soft through the springing grass,
And the river flows like a stream of glass;
5 When the first bird sings and the first bud opes,^o *opens*
And the faint perfume from its chalice steals—
I know what the caged bird feels!
I know why the caged bird beats his wing
Till its blood is red on the cruel bars;
io For he must fly back to his perch and cling
When he fain would be1 on the bough a-swing;
And a pain still throbs in the old, old scars
And they pulse again with a keener sting—
I know why he beats his wing!
15 I know why the caged bird sings, ah me,

When his wing is bruised and his bosom sore,—
When he beats his bars and he would be free;
It is not a carol of joy or glee,
But a prayer that he sends from his heart's deep core,
20 But a plea, that upward to Heaven he flings—
I know why the caged bird sings!

1 8 9 9

1. He would like to be.

1 2 2 5

J O H N McCRAE

1872-1918

In Flanders Fields¹

In Flanders fields the poppies blow
Between the crosses, row on row,
That mark our place; and in the sky
The larks, still bravely singing, fly
5 Scarce heard amid the guns below.

We are the Dead. Short days ago
We lived, felt dawn, saw sunset glow,
Loved and were loved, and now we lie,
In Flanders fields.

io Take up our quarrel with the foe:
To you from failing hands we throw
The torch; be yours to hold it high.
If ye break faith with us who die
We shall not sleep, though poppies grow
15 In Flanders fields.

1 9 1 5 1 9 1 9

WALTER DE LA MARE

1873-1956

The Listeners

“Is there anybody there?” said the Traveller,
Knocking on the moonlit door;
And his horse in the silence champed the grasses
Of the forest’s ferny floor:
5 And a bird flew up out of the turret,
Above the Traveller’s head:
And he smote upon the door again a second time;
“Is there anybody there?” he said.
But no one descended to the Traveller;
io No head from the leaf-fringed sill
Leaned over and looked into his grey eyes,

1. Written in April 1915 during the Second Battle
who were shot actually rolled down the bank [of
of Ypres, France, in the region (once the country)
the Ypres Canal] into his dressing station... . [H]e
called Flanders, which encompasses parts of mod-
and I watched [men] burying their dead whenever
ern France, Belgium, and the Netherlands.

there was a lull. Thus the crosses, row on row, grew
McCrae, a Canadian soldier and physician, sur-
into a good-sized cemetery.” The poem, first pub-
vived massive German shelling in one of the blood-
lished in the December 1915 issue of *Punch* mag-
iest chapters in World War I. Major-General
azine, achieved instant international fame and was

E. W. B. Morrison, who commanded McCrae's
memorized by soldiers.

brigade, wrote: "During periods in the battle men

1 2 2 6 / W A L T E R D E L A M A R E

Where he stood perplexed and still.

But only a host of phantom listeners

That dwelt in the lone house then

15 Stood listening in the quiet of the moonlight

To that voice from the world of men:

Stood thronging the faint moonbeams on the dark stair,

That goes down to the empty hall,

Harkening in an air stirred and shaken

20 By the lonely Traveller's call.

And he felt in his heart their strangeness,

Their stillness answering his cry,

While his horse moved, cropping the dark turf,

'Neath the starred and leafy sky;

25 For he suddenly smote on the door, even

Louder, and lifted his head:—

"Tell them I came, and no one answered,

That I kept my word," he said.

Never the least stir made the listeners,

BO Though every word he spake

Fell echoing through the shadowiness of the still house

From the one man left awake:

Ay, they heard his foot upon the stirrup,

And the sound of iron on stone,

35 And how the silence surged softly backward,

When the plunging hoofs were gone.

1 9 1 2

Fare Well

When I lie where shades of darkness

Shall no more assail mine eyes,

Nor the rain make lamentation

When the wind sighs;

5 How will fare the world whose wonder

Was the very proof of me?

Memory fades, must the remembered

Perishing be?

Oh, when this my dust surrenders

io Hand, foot, lip, to dust again,

May these loved and loving faces

Please other men!

May the rusting harvest hedgerow

Still the Traveller's Joy¹ entwine,

15 And as happy children gather

Posies once mine.

1. Wild climbing plant also known as Virgin's Bower or Old Man's Beard.

M E N D I N G W A L L / 1 2 2 7

Look thy last on all things lovely,

Every hour. Let no night

Seal thy sense in deathly slumber

20 Till to delight

Thou have paid thy utmost blessing;

Since that all things thou wouldst praise

Beauty took from those who loved them
In other days.

1918

R O B E R T F R O S T

1874-1963

Mending Wall

Something there is that doesn't love a wall,
That sends the frozen-ground-swell under it,
And spills the upper boulders in the sun;
And makes gaps even two can pass abreast.

5 The work of hunters is another thing:

I have come after them and made repair

Where they have left not one stone on a stone,

But they would have the rabbit out of hiding,

To please the yelping dogs. The gaps I mean,

io No one has seen them made or heard them made,

But at spring mending-time we find them there.

I let my neighbor know beyond the hill;

And on a day we meet to walk the line

And set the wall between us once again.

15 We keep the wall between us as we go.

To each the boulders that have fallen to each.

And some are loaves and some so nearly balls

We have to use a spell to make them balance:

“Stay where you are until our backs are turned!”

20 We wear our fingers rough with handling them.

Oh, just another kind of outdoor game,

One on a side. It comes to little more:

There where it is we do not need the wall:
He is all pine and I am apple orchard.
25 My apple trees will never get across
And eat the cones under his pines, I tell him.
He only says, "Good fences make good neighbors."
Spring is the mischief in me, and I wonder
If I could put a notion in his head:
30 "*Why* do they make good neighbors? Isn't it
Where there are cows? But here there are no cows.
Before I built a wall I'd ask to know

1 2 2 8 / R O B E R T F R O S T

What I was walling in or walling out,
And to whom I was like to give offense.
35 Something there is that doesn't love a wall,
That wants it down." I could say "**Lives**" to him,
But it's not elves exactly, and I'd rather
He said it for himself. I see him there
Bringing a stone grasped firmly by the top
40 In each hand, like an old-stone savage armed.
He moves in darkness as it seems to me,
Not of woods only and the shade of trees.
He will not go behind his father's saying,
And he likes having thought of it so well
45 He says again, "Good fences make good neighbors."

1 9 1 4

Home Burial

He saw her from the bottom of the stairs
Before she saw him. She was starting down,

Looking back over her shoulder at some fear.
She took a doubtful step and then undid it
5 To raise herself and look again. He spoke
Advancing toward her. “What is it you see
From up there always—for I want to know.”
She turned and sank upon her skirts at that,
And her face changed from terrified to dull,
10 He said to gain time: “What is it you see,”
Mounting until she cowered under him.
“I will find out now—you must tell me, dear.”
She, in her place, refused him any help
With the least stiffening of her neck and silence.
15 She let him look, sure that he wouldn’t see,
Blind creature; and awhile he didn’t see.
But at last he murmured, “Oh,” and again, “Oh.”
“What is it—what?” she said.
“Just that I see.”
20 “You don’t,” she challenged. “Tell me what it is.”
“The wonder is I didn’t see at once.
I never noticed it from here before.
I must be wonted to it—that’s the reason. *accustomed*.
The little graveyard where my people are!
25 So small the window frames the whole of it.
Not so much larger than a bedroom, is it?
There are three stones of slate and one of marble,
H O M E B U R I A L / 1 2 2 9
Broad-shouldered little slabs there in the sunlight
On the sidehill. We haven’t to mind *those*.

30 But I understand: it is not the stones,
But the child's mound—”
“Don't, don't, don't, don't,” she cried.
She withdrew shrinking from beneath his arm
That rested on the bannister, and slid downstairs;
35 And turned on him with such a daunting look,
He said twice over before he knew himself:
“Can't a man speak of his own child he's lost?”
“Not you! Oh, where's my hat? Oh, I don't need it!
I must get out of here. I must get air.
40 I don't know rightly whether any man can.”
“Amy! Don't go to someone else this time.
Listen to me. I won't come down the stairs.”
He sat and fixed his chin between his fists.
“There's something I should like to ask you, dear.”
45 “You don't know how to ask it.”
“Help me, then.”
Her fingers moved the latch for all reply.
“My words are nearly always an offense.
I don't know how to speak of anything
50 So as to please you. But I might be taught
I should suppose. I can't say I see how.
A man must partly give up being a man
With women-folk. We could have some arrangement
By which I'd bind myself to keep hands off
55 Anything special you're a-mind to name.
Though I don't like such things 'twixt those that love.
Two that don't love can't live together without them.

But two that do can't live together with them."
She moved the latch a little. "Don't—don't go.
60 Don't carry it to someone else this time.
Tell me about it if it's something human.
Let me into your grief. I'm not so much
Unlike other folks as your standing there
Apart would make me out. Give me my chance.
65 I do think, though, you overdo it a little.
What was it brought you up to think it the thing
To take your mother-loss of a first child
So inconsolably—in the face of love.
You'd think his memory might be satisfied—"
70 "There you go sneering now!"

1 2 3 0 / R O B E R T F R O S T

"I'm not, I'm not!
You make me angry. I'll come down to you.
God, what a woman! And it's come to this,
A man can't speak of his own child that's dead."
75 "You can't because you don't know how to speak.
If you had any feelings, you that dug
With your own hand—how could you?—his little grave;
I saw you from that very window there,
Making the gravel leap and leap in air,
so Leap up, like that, like that, and land so lightly
And roll back down the mound beside the hole.
I thought, Who is that man? I didn't know you.
And I crept down the stairs and up the stairs
To look again, and still your spade kept lifting.

85 Then you came in. I heard your rumbling voice
Out in the kitchen, and I don't know why,
But I went near to see with my own eyes.
You could sit there with the stains on your shoes
Of the fresh earth from your own baby's grave
90 And talk about your everyday concerns.
You had stood the spade up against the wall
Outside there in the entry, for I saw it."
"I shall laugh the worst laugh I ever laughed.
I'm cursed. God, if I don't believe I'm cursed."
95 "I can repeat the very words you were saying.
Three foggy mornings and one rainy day
Will rot the best birch fence a man can build.
Think of it, talk like that at such a time!
What had how long it takes a birch to rot
100 To do with what was in the darkened parlor.
You *couldn't* care! The nearest friends can go
With anyone to death, comes so far short
They might as well not try to go at all.
No, from the time when one is sick to death,
105 One is alone, and he dies more alone.
Friends make pretense of following to the grave,
But before one is in it, their minds are turned
And making the best of their way back to life
And living people, and things they understand.
110 But the world's evil. I won't have grief so
If I can change it. Oh, I won't, I won't!"
"There, you have said it all and you feel better.

You won't go now. You're crying. Close the door.
The heart's gone out of it: why keep it up.
115 Amy! There's someone coming down the road!"
"You—oh, you think the talk is all. I must go—
Somewhere out of this house. How can I make you—"

AFTER APPLE - PICKING / 1 2 3 1

"If—you—do!" She was opening the door wider.
"Where do you mean to go? First tell me that.
120 I'll follow and bring you back by force. I *will!*—"

1 9 1 4

After Apple-Picking

My long two-pointed ladder's sticking through a tree
Toward heaven still,

And there's a barrel that I didn't fill

Beside it, and there may be two or three

5 Apples I didn't pick upon some bough.

But I am done with apple-picking now.

Essence of winter sleep is on the night,

The scent of apples: I am drowsing off.

I cannot rub the strangeness from my sight

io I got from looking through a pane of glass

I skimmed this morning from the drinking trough

And held against the world of hoary grass.

It melted, and I let it fall and break.

But I was well

15 Upon my way to sleep before it fell,

And I could tell

What form my dreaming was about to take.

Magnified apples appear and disappear,
Stem end and blossom end,
20 And every fleck of russet showing clear.
My instep arch not only keeps the ache,
It keeps the pressure of a ladder-round.
I feel the ladder sway as the boughs bend.
And I keep hearing from the cellar bin
25 The rumbling sound
Of load on load of apples coming in.
For I have had too much
Of apple-picking: I am overtired
Of the great harvest I myself desired.
30 There were ten thousand thousand fruit to touch,
Cherish in hand, lift down, and not let fall.
For all
That struck the earth,
No matter if not bruised or spiked with stubble,
35 Went surely to the cider-apple heap
As of no worth.
One can see what will trouble
This sleep of mine, whatever sleep it is.
Were he not gone,
40 The woodchuck could say whether it's like his
Long sleep, as I describe its coming on,
Or just some human sleep.

1 9 1 4

1 2 3 2 /

R O B E R T F R O S T

The Wood-Pile

Out walking in the frozen swamp one gray day,
I paused and said, "I will turn back from here.
No, I will go on farther—and we shall see."
The hard snow held me, save where now and then
One foot went through. The view was all in lines
Straight up and down of tall slim trees
Too much alike to mark or name a place by
So as to say for certain I was here
Or somewhere else: I was just far from home.
A small bird flew before me. He was careful
To put a tree between us when he lighted,
And say no word to tell me who he was
Who was so foolish as to think what *he* thought.
He thought that I was after him for a feather—
The white one in his tail; like one who takes
Everything said as personal to himself.
One flight out sideways would have undeceived him.
And then there was a pile of wood for which
I forgot him and let his little fear
Carry him off the way I might have gone,
Without so much as wishing him good-night.
He went behind it to make his last stand.
It was a cord of maple, cut and split
And piled—and measured, four by four by eight.
And not another like it could I see.
No runner tracks in this year's snow looped near it.
And it was older sure than this year's cutting,

Or even last year's or the year's before.
The wood was gray and the bark warping off it
And the pile somewhat sunken. Clematis
Had wound strings round and round it like a bundle.
What held it though on one side was a tree
Still growing, and on one a stake and prop,
These latter about to fall. I thought that only
Someone who lived in turning to fresh tasks
Could so forget his handiwork on which
He spent himself, the labor of his ax,
And leave it there far from a useful fireplace
To warm the frozen swamp as best it could
With the slow smokeless burning of decay.

1 9 1 4

The Road Not Taken

Two roads diverged in a yellow wood,
And sorry I could not travel both

B I R C H E S / 1 2 3 3

And be one traveler, long I stood
And looked down one as far as I could
5 To where it bent in the undergrowth;
Then took the other, as just as fair,
And having perhaps the better claim,
Because it was grassy and wanted wear;
Though as for that the passing there
10 Had worn them really about the same,
And both that morning equally lay
In leaves no step had trodden black.

Oh, I kept the first for another day!
Yet knowing how way leads on to way,
15 I doubted if I should ever come back.
I shall be telling this with a sigh
Somewhere ages and ages hence:
Two roads diverged in a wood, and I—
I took the one less traveled by,
20 And that has made all the difference.

1 9 1 6

The Oven Bird

There is a singer everyone has heard,
Loud, a mid-summer and a mid-wood bird,
Who makes the solid tree trunks sound again.
He says that leaves are old and that for flowers
5 Mid-summer is to spring as one to ten.
He says the early petal-fall is past
When pear and cherry bloom went down in showers
On sunny days a moment overcast;
And comes that other fall we name the fall,
10 He says the highway dust is over all.
The bird would cease and be as other birds
But that he knows in singing not to sing.
The question that he frames in all but words
Is what to make of a diminished thing.

1 9 1 6

Birches

When I see birches bend to left and right
Across the lines of straighter darker trees,

I like to think some boy's been swinging them.

1 2 3 4 / R O B E R T F R O S T

But swinging doesn't bend them down to stay

5 As ice-storms do. Often you must have seen them

Loaded with ice a sunny winter morning

After a rain. They click upon themselves

As the breeze rises, and turn many-colored

As the stir cracks and crazes their enamel.

10 Soon the sun's warmth makes them shed crystal shells

Shattering and avalanching on the snow-crust—

Such heaps of broken glass to sweep away

You'd think the inner dome of heaven had fallen.

They are dragged to the withered bracken⁰ by the load, *ferns*

15 And they seem not to break; though once they are bowed

So low for long, they never right themselves:

You may see their trunks arching in the woods

Years afterwards, trailing their leaves on the ground

Like girls on hands and knees that throw their hair

20 Before them over their heads to dry in the sun.

But I was going to say when Truth broke in

With all her matter-of-fact about the ice-storm

I should prefer to have some boy bend them

As he went out and in to fetch the cows—

25 Some boy too far from town to learn baseball,

Whose only play was what he found himself,

Summer or winter, and could play alone.

One by one he subdued his father's trees

By riding them down over and over again

30 Until he took the stiffness out of them,
And not one but hung limp, not one was left
For him to conquer. He learned all there was
To learn about not launching out too soon
And so not carrying the tree away
35 Clear to the ground. He always kept his poise
To the top branches, climbing carefully
With the same pains you use to fill a cup
Up to the brim, and even above the brim.
Then he flung outward, feet first, with a swish,
40 Kicking his way down through the air to the ground.
So was I once myself a swinger of birches.
And so I dream of going back to be.
It's when I'm weary of considerations,
And life is too much like a pathless wood
45 Where your face burns and tickles with the cobwebs
Broken across it, and one eye is weeping
From a twig's having lashed across it open.
I'd like to get away from earth awhile
And then come back to it and begin over.
50 May no fate willfully misunderstand me
And half grant what I wish and snatch me away
Not to return. Earth's the right place for love:
I don't know where it's likely to go better.
I'd like to go by climbing a birch tree,
55 And climb black branches up a snow-white trunk

THE HILL WIFE / 1 2 3 5

Toward heaven, till the tree could bear no more,

But dipped its top and set me down again.
That would be good both going and coming back.
One could do worse than be a swinger of birches.

1 9 1 6

The Hill Wife

Loneliness

H E R W O R D

One ought not to have to care
So much as you and I
Care when the birds come round the house
To seem to say good-by;
5 Or care so much when they come back
With whatever it is they sing;
The truth being we are as much
Too glad for the one thing
As we are too sad for the other here—
io With birds that fill their breasts
But with each other and themselves
And their built or driven nests.

House Fear

Always—I tell you this they learned—
Always at night when they returned
To the lonely house from far away
To lamps unlighted and fire gone gray,
5 They learned to rattle the lock and key
To give whatever might chance to be
Warning and time to be off in flight:
And preferring the out- to the in-door night,

They learned to leave the house-door wide
io Until they had lit the lamp inside.

The Smile

H E R W O R D

I didn't like the way he went away.
That smile! It never came of being gay.
Still he smiled—did you see him?—I was sure!
Perhaps because we gave him only bread
5 And the wretch knew from that that we were poor.
Perhaps because he let us give instead

1 2 3 6 / R O B E R T F R O S T

Of seizing from us as he might have seized.
Perhaps he mocked at us for being wed,
Or being very young (and he was pleased
10 To have a vision of us old and dead).
I wonder how far down the road he's got.
He's watching from the woods as like as not.

The Oft-Repeated Dream

She had no saying dark enough
For the dark pine that kept
Forever trying the window-latch
Of the room where they slept.
5 The tireless but ineffectual hands
That with every futile pass
Made the great tree seem as a little bird
Before the mystery of glass!
It never had been inside the room,
io And only one of the two

Was afraid in an oft-repeated dream
Of what the tree might do.

The Impulse

It was too lonely for her there,
And too wild,
And since there were but two of them,
And no child,
5 And work was little in the house,
She was free,
And followed where he furrowed field,
Or felled tree.

She rested on a log and tossed

io The fresh chips,

With a song only to herself

On her lips.

And once she went to break a bough

Of black alder.

15 She strayed so far she scarcely heard

When he called her—

And didn't answer—didn't speak—

Or return.

She stood, and then she ran and hid

20 In the fern.

He never found her, though he looked

Everywhere,

ACQUAINTED WITH THE N I G H T / 1 2 3 7

And he asked at her mother's house

Was she there.

**25 Sudden and swift and light as that
The ties gave,
And he learned of finalities
Besides the grave.**

1916

**Stopping by Woods on a Snowy Evening
Whose woods these are I think I know.
His house is in the village though;
He will not see me stopping here
To watch his woods fill up with snow.**

**5 My little horse must think it queer
To stop without a farmhouse near
Between the woods and frozen lake
The darkest evening of the year.**

**He gives his harness bells a shake
io To ask if there is some mistake.
The only other sound's the sweep
Of easy wind and downy flake.**

**The woods are lovely, dark and deep,
But I have promises to keep,**

**15 And miles to go before I sleep,
And miles to go before I sleep.**

1923

**Acquainted with the Night
I have been one acquainted with the night.
I have walked out in rain—and back in rain.
I have outwalked the furthest city light.
I have looked down the saddest city lane.**

**5 I have passed by the watchman on his beat
And dropped my eyes, unwilling to explain.
I have stood still and stopped the sound of feet
When far away an interrupted cry
Came over houses from another street,**

1 2 3 8 / R O B E R T F R O S T

10 But not to call me back or say good-by;
And further still at an unearthly height,
One luminary clock against the sky
Proclaimed the time was neither wrong nor right.
I have been one acquainted with the night.

1 9 2 8

West-Running Brook

“Fred, where is north?”

“North? North is there, my love.

The brook runs west.”

“West-running Brook then call it.”

5 (West-running Brook men call it to this day.)

“What does it think it’s doing running west

When all the other country brooks flow east

To reach the ocean? It must be the brook

Can trust itself to go by contraries

io The way I can with you—and you with me—

Because we’re—we’re—I don’t know what we are.

What are we?”

“Young or new?”

“We must be something.

15 We’ve said we two. Let’s change that to we three.

As you and I are married to each other,
We'll both be married to the brook. We'll build
Our bridge across it, and the bridge shall be
Our arm thrown over it asleep beside it.
20 Look, look, it's waving to us with a wave
To let us know it hears me.”
“Why, my dear,
That wave's been standing off this jut of shore—”
(The black stream, catching on a sunken rock,
25 Flung backward on itself in one white wave,
And the white water rode the black forever,
Not gaining but not losing, like a bird
White feathers from the struggle of whose breast
Flecked the dark stream and flecked the darker pool
30 Below the point, and were at last driven wrinkled
In a white scarf against the far shore alders.)
“That wave's been standing off this jut of shore
Ever since rivers, I was going to say,
Were made in heaven. It wasn't waved to us.”

WEST - RUNNING BROOK / 1 2 3 9

35 **“It wasn't, yet it was. If not to you
It was to me—in an annunciation.”**
**“Oh, if you take it off to lady-land,
As't were the country of the Amazons1
We men must see you to the confines of
40 And leave you there, ourselves forbid to enter,—
It is your brook! I have no more to say.”**
“Yes, you have, too. Go on. You thought of something.”

**“Speaking of contraries, see how the brook
In that white wave runs counter to itself.
45 It is from that in water we were from
Long, long before we were from any creature.
Here we, in our impatience of the steps,
Get back to the beginning of beginnings,
The stream of everything that runs away.
50 Some say existence like a Pirouot
And Pirouette,² forever in one place,
Stands still and dances, but it runs away,
It seriously, sadly, runs away
To fill the abyss’ void with emptiness.
55 It flows beside us in this water brook,
But it flows over us. It flows between us
To separate us for a panic moment.
It flows between us, over us, and *with* us.
And it is time, strength, tone, light, life, and love—
60 And even substance lapsing unsubstantial;
The universal cataract of death
That spends to nothingness—and unresisted,
Save by some strange resistance in itself,
Not just a swerving, but a throwing back,
65 As if regret were in it and were sacred.
It has this throwing backward on itself
So that the fall of most of it is always
Raising a little, sending up a little.
Our life runs down in sending up the clock.
70 The brook runs down in sending up our life.**

**The sun runs down in sending up the brook.
And there is something sending up the sun.
It is this backward motion toward the source,
Against the stream, that most we see ourselves in,
75 The tribute of the current to the source.
It is from this in nature we are from.
It is most us.”**

**“Today will be the day
You said so.”**

1. Legendary female warriors who inhabited a 2. Traditional characters in French pantomime, country without men.

1240 / R O B E R T F R O S T

**so “No, today will be the day
You said the brook was called West-running Brook.”
“Today will be the day of what we both said.”**

1928

**Neither Out Far Nor In Deep
The people along the sand
All turn and look one way.
They turn their back on the land.
They look at the sea all day.
5 As long as it takes to pass
A ship keeps raising its hull;
The wetter ground like glass
Reflects a standing gull.
The land may vary more;
io But wherever the truth may be—
The water comes ashore,**

And the people look at the sea.

They cannot look out far.

They cannot look in deep.

15 But when was that ever a bar

To any watch they keep?

1936

Design

I found a dimpled spider, fat and white,

On a white heal-all,³ holding up a moth

Like a white piece of rigid satin cloth—

Assorted characters of death and blight

5 Mixed ready to begin the morning right,

Like the ingredients of a witches' broth—

A snow-drop spider, a flower like a froth,

And dead wings carried like a paper kite.

What had that flower to do with being white,

io The wayside blue and innocent heal-all?

What brought the kindred spider to that height,

Then steered the white moth thither in the night?

3. One of a variety of plants in the mint family; the flowers are usually violet-blue.

T H E S I L K E N T E N T / 1 2 4 1

What but design of darkness to appall?—

If design govern in a thing so small.

1936

Provide, Provide

The witch that came (the withered hag)

To wash the steps with pail and rag,

**Was once the beauty Abishag,⁴
The picture pride of Hollywood.
Too many fall from great and good
For you to doubt the likelihood.
Die early and avoid the fate.
Or if predestined to die late,
Make up your mind to die in state.
10 Make the whole stock exchange your own!
If need be occupy a throne,
Where nobody can call *you* crone.
Some have relied on what they knew;
Others on being simply true.**

15

**What worked for them might work for you.
No memory of having starred
Atones for later disregard,
Or keeps the end from being hard.
Better to go down dignified**

20

**With boughten friendship at your side
Than none at all. Provide, provide!**

1934 1936

The Silken Tent

**She is as in a field a silken tent
At midday when a sunny summer breeze
Has dried the dew and all its ropes relent,
So that in guys⁵ it gently sways at ease,
5 And its supporting central cedar pole,**

That is its pinnacle to heavenward

And signifies the sureness of the soul,

4. A beautiful maiden brought to warm King 5. Ropes or cables used to steady an object.

David in his old age (1 Kings 1.2-4).

1 2 4 2 / R O B E R T F R O S T

Seems to owe naught to any single cord,

But strictly held by none, is loosely bound

10 By countless silken ties of love and thought

To everything on earth the compass round,

And only by one's going slightly taut

In the capriciousness of summer air

Is of the slightest bondage made aware.

1942

Come In

As I came to the edge of the woods,

Thrush music—hark!

Now if it was dusk outside,

Inside it was dark.

5 Too dark in the woods for a bird

By sleight of wing

To better its perch for the night,

Though it still could sing.

The last of the light of the sun

io That had died in the west

Still lived for one song more

In a thrush's breast.

Far in the pillared dark

**Thrush music went—
15 Almost like a call to come in
To the dark and lament.
But no, I was out for stars:
I would not come in.
I meant not even if asked,
20 And I hadn't been.**

1942

**Never Again Would Birds' Song Be the Same⁶
He would declare and could himself believe
That the birds there in all the garden round
From having heard the daylong voice of Eve
Had added to their own an oversound,
5 Her tone of meaning but without the words.
Admittedly an eloquence so soft**

6. Cf. Genesis 2.18 ff., God's creation of Eve for Adam.

THE GIFT O U T R I G H T / 1 2 4 3

**Could only have had an influence on birds
When call or laughter carried it aloft.
Be that as may be, she was in their song.
10 Moreover her voice upon their voices crossed
Had now persisted in the woods so long
That probably it never would be lost.
Never again would birds' song be the same.
And to do that to birds was why she came.**

1942

The Most of It

He thought he kept the universe alone;

For all the voice in answer he could wake
Was but the mocking echo of his own
From some tree-hidden cliff across the lake.
5 Some morning from the boulder-broken beach
He would cry out on life, that what it wants
Is not its own love back in copy speech,
But counter-love, original response.
And nothing ever came of what he cried
10 Unless it was the embodiment that crashed
In the cliff's talus⁷ on the other side,
And then in the far distant water splashed,
But after a time allowed for it to swim,
Instead of proving human when it neared
15 And someone else additional to him,
As a great buck it powerfully appeared,
Pushing the crumpled water up ahead,
And landed pouring like a waterfall,
And stumbled through the rocks with horny tread,
20 And forced the underbrush—and that was all.

1942

The Gift Outright

The land was ours before we were the land's.
She was our land more than a hundred years
Before we were her people. She was ours
In Massachusetts, in Virginia,
5 But we were England's, still colonials,
Possessing what we still were unpossessed by,
Possessed by what we now no more possessed.

**Something we were withholding made us weak
Until we found it was ourselves**

7. Sloping rock debris.

1 2 4 4 / R O B E R T F R O S T

**10 We were withholding from our land of living,
And forthwith found salvation in surrender.**

**Such as we were we gave ourselves outright
(The deed of gift was many deeds of war)**

To the land vaguely realizing westward,

**15 But still unstoried, artless, unenhanced,
Such as she was, such as she would become.**

1942

Directive

Back out of all this now too much for us,

Back in a time made simple by the loss

Of detail, burned, dissolved, and broken off

Like graveyard marble sculpture in the weather,

5 There is a house that is no more a house

Upon a farm that is no more a farm

And in a town that is no more a town.

The road there, if you'll let a guide direct you

Who only has at heart your getting lost,

10 May seem as if it should have been a quarry—

Great monolithic knees the former town

Long since gave up pretense of keeping covered.

And there's a story in a book about it:

Besides the wear of iron wagon wheels

15 The ledges show lines ruled southeast northwest,

The chisel work of an enormous Glacier
That braced his feet against the Arctic Pole.
You must not mind a certain coolness from him
Still said to haunt this side of Panther Mountain.
20 Nor need you mind the serial ordeal
Of being watched from forty cellar holes
As if by eye pairs out of forty firkins.⁰ *small wooden tubs*
As for the woods' excitement over you
That sends light rustle rushes to their leaves,
25 Charge that to upstart inexperience.
Where were they all not twenty years ago?
They think too much of having shaded out
A few old pecker-fretted⁸ apple trees.
Make yourself up a cheering song of how
30 Someone's road home from work this once was,
Who may be just ahead of you on foot
Or creaking with a buggy load of grain.
The height of the adventure is the height
Of country where two village cultures faded
35 Into each other. Both of them are lost.
And if you're lost enough to find yourself
By now, pull in your ladder road behind you
And put a sign up CLOSED to all but me.

8. I.e., marked by woodpeckers.

P A T T E R N S / 1 2 4 5

Then make yourself at home. The only field
40 Now left's no bigger than a harness gall.⁹
First there's the children's house of make believe,

Some shattered dishes underneath a pine,
The playthings in the playhouse of the children.
Weep for what little things could make them glad.
45 Then for the house that is no more a house,
But only a belilaced cellar hole,
Now slowly closing like a dent in dough.
This was no playhouse but a house in earnest.
Your destination and your destiny's
50 A brook that was the water of the house,
Cold as a spring as yet so near its source,
Too lofty and original to rage.
(We know the valley streams that when aroused
Will leave their tatters hung on barb and thorn.)
55 I have kept hidden in the instep arch
Of an old cedar at the waterside
A broken drinking goblet like the Grail
Under a spell so the wrong ones can't find it,
So can't get saved, as Saint Mark says they mustn't.¹
60 (I stole the goblet from the children's playhouse.)
Here are your waters and your watering place.
Drink and be whole again beyond confusion.

1947

AMY LOWELL

1874-1925

Patterns

I walk down the garden paths,
And all the daffodils
Are blowing, and the bright blue squills.¹

**I walk down the patterned garden-paths
5 In my stiff, brocaded gown.
With my powdered hair and jewelled fan,
I too am a rare
Pattern. As I wander down
The garden paths.**

**io My dress is richly figured,
And the train
Makes a pink and silver stain**

9. A sore caused by chafing against a harness.

the Last Supper, the object of many quests in

1. Cf. Mark 16.16: "He that believeth and is bap-
medieval and Arthurian romance.

tized shall be saved; but he that believeth not shall

1. Plants of the lily family.

be damned." *The Grail*: the cup used by Jesus at

1 2 4 6 / A M Y L O W E L L

On the gravel, and the thrift

Of the borders.

15 Just a plate of current fashion,

Tripping by in high-heeled, ribboned shoes.

Not a softness anywhere about me,

Only whalebone and brocade.

And I sink on a seat in the shade

20 Of a lime tree. For my passion

Wars against the stiff brocade.

The daffodils and squills

Flutter in the breeze

As they please.

25 And I weep;

For the lime-tree is in blossom

And one small flower has dropped upon my bosom.

And the plashing⁰ of waterdrops *splashing*

In the marble fountain

30 Comes down the garden-paths.

The dripping never stops.

Underneath my stiffened gown

Is the softness of a woman bathing in a marble basin,

A basin in the midst of hedges grown

35 So thick, she cannot see her lover hiding,

But she guesses he is near,

And the sliding of the water

Seems the stroking of a dear

Hand upon her.

40 What is Summer in a fine brocaded gown!

I should like to see it lying in a heap upon the ground.

All the pink and silver crumpled up on the ground.

I would be the pink and silver as I ran along the paths,

And he would stumble after,

45 Bewildered by my laughter.

I should see the sun flashing from his sword-hilt and the
buckles on

his shoes.

I would choose

To lead him in a maze along the patterned paths,

A bright and laughing maze for my heavy-booted lover.

50 Till he caught me in the shade,
And the buttons of his waistcoat bruised my body as he
clasped me,

Aching, melting, unafraid.

With the shadows of the leaves and the sundrops,
And the plopping of the waterdrops,

55 All about us in the open afternoon—

I am very like to swoon

With the weight of this brocade,

For the sun sifts through the shade.

Underneath the fallen blossom

60 In my bosom,

Is a letter I have hid.

P A T T E R N S / 1 2 4 7

**It was brought to me this morning by a rider from the
Duke.**

**“Madam, we regret to inform you that Lord Hartwell
Died in action Thursday se nnight.’ 0 a week ago**

**65 As I read it in the white, morning sunlight,
The letters squirmed like snakes.**

“Any answer, Madam,” said my footman.

“No,” I told him.

“See that the messenger takes some refreshment.

70 No, no answer.”

And I walked into the garden,

Up and down the patterned paths,

In my stiff, correct brocade.

The blue and yellow flowers stood up proudly in the sun,

75 Each one.

I stood upright too,
Held rigid to the pattern
By the stiffness of my gown.
Up and down I walked,
so Up and down.
In a month he would have been my husband.
In a month, here, underneath this lime,
We would have broke the pattern;
He for me, and I for him,
85 He as Colonel, I as Lady,
On this shady seat.
He had a whim
That sunlight carried blessing.
And I answered, "It shall be as you have said."
90 Now he is dead.
In Summer and in Winter I shall walk
Up and down
The patterned garden-paths
In my stiff, brocaded gown.
95 The squills and daffodils
Will give place to pillared roses, and to asters, and to snow.
I shall go
Up and down,
In my gown.
100 Gorgeously arrayed,
Boned and stayed.
And the softness of my body will be guarded from embrace
By each button, hook, and lace.

**For the man who should loose me is dead,
105 Fighting with the Duke in Flanders,²
In a pattern called a war.**

Christ! What are patterns for?

1916

2. A medieval country; later the term for a region comprised of parts of France, Belgium, and the Netherlands. The poem was written during World War I, when Flanders was also a famous site of battle.

1 2 4 8 / G E R T R U D E S T E I N

The Weather-Cock Points South

I put your leaves aside,

One by one:

The stiff, broad outer leaves;

The smaller ones,

5 Pleasant to touch, veined with purple;

The glazed inner leaves.

One by one

I parted you from your leaves,

Until you stood up like a white flower

10 Swaying slightly in the evening wind.

White flower,

Flower of wax, of jade, of unstreaked agate;

Flower with surfaces of ice,

With shadows faintly crimson.

15 Where in all the garden is there such a flower?

The stars crowd through the lilac leaves

To look at you.

The low moon brightens you with silver.

The bud is more than the calyx.3

20 There is nothing to equal a white bud,

Of no colour, and of all,

Burnished by moonlight,

Thrust upon by a softly-swinging wind.

1919

G E R T R U D E S T E I N

1874-1946

*From Stanzas in Meditation*1

Part I

STANZA XIII

**She may count three little daisies very well
By multiplying to either six nine or fourteen
Or she can be well mentioned as twelve
Which they may like which they can like soon**

3. Outermost group of the parts of a flower.

‘of,’ ‘not,’ ‘have,’ ‘about,’ and so on, though now and

1. Written in the same year as Stein’s hugely pop-

then Miss Stein throws in an orange, a lilac, or an

ular *Autobiography of Alice B. Toklas, Stanzas in*

Albert to remind us that it really is the world, our

Meditation is a long-neglected five-part poem with

world, that she has been talking about” [American

autobiographical elements, but which resists

poet John Ashbery (b. 1927; see pp. 1736-40)]. In

straightforward interpretation. “These austere

the *Autobiography*, Stein calls the *Stanzas* “her real

‘stanzas’ are made up almost entirely of colorless

achievement of the commonplace.”

connecting words such as ‘where,’ ‘which,’ ‘there,’

STANZAS IN M E D I T A T I O N / 1

5 Or more than ever which they wish as a button

Just as much as they arrange which they wish

Or they can attire where they need as which say

**Can they call a hat or a hat a day
Made merry because it is so.**

Part III

STANZA II

I think very well of Susan but I do not know her name

I think very well of Ellen but which is not the same

I think very well of Paul I tell him not to do so

I think very well of Francis Charles but do I do so

I think very well of Thomas but I do not not do so

I think very well of not very well of William

I think very well of any very well of him

I think very well of him.

It is remarkable how quickly they learn

**But if they learn and it is very remarkable how quickly
they learn**

It makes not only but by and by

And they can not only be not here

But not there

Which after all makes no difference

**After all this does not make any does not make any
difference**

I add added it to it.

I could rather be rather be here.

STANZA V

It is not a range of a mountain

Of average of a range of a average mountain

Nor can they of which of which of arrange

To have been not which they which

5 Can add a mountain to this.

Upper an add it then maintain

That if they were busy so to speak

Add it to and

It not only why they could not add ask

io Or when just when more each other

There is no each other as they like

They add why then emerge an add in

It is of absolutely no importance how often they add it.

Part V

STANZA XXXVIII

Which I wish to say is this
There is no beginning to an end
But there is a beginning and an end
To beginning.

5 Why yes of course.

1 2 5 0 / T R U M B U L L S T I C K N E Y

Any one can learn that north of course
Is not only north but north as north
Why were they worried.

What I wish to say is this.

10 Yes of course

STANZA LXIII

I wish that I had spoken only of it all.

1932 1956

T R U M B U L L S T I C K N E Y

1874-1904

[And, the Last Day Being Come, Man Stood Alone]

And, the last day being come,¹ Man stood alone
Ere sunrise on the world's dismantled verge,⁰ *edge*
Awaiting how from everywhere should urge
The Coming of the Lord. And, behold, none
5 Did come,—but indistinct from every realm
Of earth and air and water, growing more

And louder, shriller, heavier, a roar
Up the dun^o atmosphere did overwhelm *dark*
His ears; and as he looked affrighted round
io Every manner of beast innumerable
All thro' the shadows crying grew, until
The wailing was like grass upon the ground.
Asudden then within his human side
Their anguish, since the goad² he wielded first,
15 And, since he gave them not to drink, their thirst,
Darted compressed and vital.—As he died,
Low in the East now lighting gorgeously
He saw the last sea-serpent iris-mailed³
Which, with a spear transfixed, yet availed
20 To pluck the sun down into the dead sea.

1905

1. Stickney's apocalyptic vision of the Lord's com- 2. A pointed stick for driving cattle and other ani-ing partakes of imagery in Revelation and other mals.

books of the Bible, but is essentially original. 3. In rainbow-colored armor.

ANATHENIANGARDEN / 1251

An Athenian Garden

The burned and dusty garden said:

“My leaves are echoes, and thy earth

Is packed with footsteps of the dead.

“The strength of spring-time brought to birth

5 Some needles on the crooked fir,—

A rose, a laurel⁴—little worth.

“Come here, ye dreaming souls that err

Among the immortals of the grave:5
My summer is your sepulchre.
10 “On earth what darker voices rave
Than now this sea-breeze, driving dust
And whirling radiance wave on wave,
“With lulls so fearful thro’ the gust
That on the shapeless flower-bed
15 Like timber splits the yellow crust.
“O thirsty, thirsty are the dead,6
Still thirsty, ever unallayed.
Where is no water, bring no bread.”
I then had almost answer made,
20 When round the path in pleasure drew
Three golden children to the shade.
They stirred the dust with pail and hoe.
Then did the littlest from his fears
Come up and with his eyes of blue
25 Give me some berries seriously.
And as he turned to his brother, I
Looked after him thro’ happy tears.

1903 1905

4. The laurel is a symbol of glory; the fir, of time; lots that allow them to choose, wisely or unwisely, the rose, of love.

from an assortment of next lives (*Republic* 10).

5. Stickney, a devotee of the ancient Greek phi-

6. In Greek mythology, the dead are often represented. In Plato's *Republic*, the philosopher Plato, may be referring to Plato's Myth of

sented as thirsty.

Er, according to which immortal souls are given

1 2 5 2 / C A R L S A N D B U R G

From Fragments

IX7

I hear a river thro' the valley wander

Whose water runs, the song alone remaining.

A rainbow stands and summer passes under.

1905

C A R L S A N D B U R G

1878-1967

Chicago

Hog Butcher for the World,

Tool Maker, Stacker of Wheat,

Player with Railroads and the Nation's Freight Handler;

Stormy, husky, brawling,

5 City of the Big Shoulders:

**They tell me you are wicked and I believe them, for I have
seen your**

painted women under the gas lamps luring the farm boys.

**And they tell me you are crooked and I answer: Yes, it is
true I have**

seen the gunman kill and go free to kill again.

**And they tell me you are brutal and my reply is: On the
faces of**

**women and children I have seen the marks of wanton
hunger.**

**And having answered so I turn once more to those who
sneer at this**

my city, and I give them back the sneer and say to them:

**io Come and show me another city with lifted head singing
so proud to**

be alive and coarse and strong and cunning.

**Flinging magnetic curses amid the toil of piling job on job,
here is a**

tall bold slugger set vivid against the little soft cities;

**Fierce as a dog with tongue lapping for action, cunning as
a savage**

pitted against the wilderness,

Bareheaded,

Shoveling,

15 Wrecking,

Planning,

Building, breaking, rebuilding,

**Under the smoke, dust all over his mouth, laughing with
white**

teeth,

**Under the terrible burden of destiny laughing as a young
man**

laughs,

**20 Laughing even as an ignorant fighter laughs who has
never lost a**

battle,

7. Cf. John Hollander's homage to this poem, "Variations on a
Fragment by Trumbull Stickney" (p. 1777).

A D L E S T R O P / 1 2 5 3

**Bragging and laughing that under his wrist is the pulse,
and under**

his ribs the heart of the people,

Laughing!

**Laughing the stormy, husky, brawling laughter of Youth,
half-naked,
sweating, proud to be Hog Butcher, Tool Maker, Stacker of
Wheat, Player with Railroads and Freight Handler to the
Nation.**

1916

Grass

Pile the bodies high at Austerlitz¹ and Waterloo.

Shovel them under and let me work—

I am the grass; I cover all.

And pile them high at Gettysburg

5 And pile them high at Ypres and Verdun.

Shovel them under and let me work.

Two years, ten years, and passengers ask the conductor:

What place is this?

Where are we now?

I am the grass.

Let me work.

1918

EDWARD THOMAS

1878-1917

Adlestrop¹

Yes, I remember Adlestrop—

The name, because one afternoon

Of heat the express-train drew up there

Unwontedly. It was late June.

5 The steam hissed. Someone cleared his throat.

No one left and no one came

On the bare platform. What I saw

Was Adlestrop—only the name

1. The places listed here are sites of major, bloody 1. Village
in Gloucestershire, southwest-central battles in the Napoleonic
Wars, the Civil War, and England.

World War I.

1 2 5 4 / E D W A R D T H O M A S

And willows, willow-herb, and grass,

10 And meadowsweet, and haycocks dry,

No whit less still and lonely fair

Than the high cloudlets in the sky.

And for that minute a blackbird sang

Close by, and round him, mistier,

15 Farther and farther, all the birds

Of Oxfordshire and Gloucestershire.

1 9 1 5 1 9 1 7

The Owl

Downhill I came, hungry, and yet not starved;

Cold, yet had heat within me that was proof

Against the North wind; tired, yet so that rest

Had seemed the sweetest thing under a roof.

5 Then at the inn I had food, fire, and rest,

Knowing how hungry, cold, and tired was I.

All of the night was quite barred out except

An owl's cry, a most melancholy cry

Shaken out long and clear upon the hill,

io No merry note, nor cause of merriment,

But one telling me plain what I escaped

And others could not, that night, as in I went.

**And salted was my food, and my repose,
Salted and sobered, too, by the bird's voice
15 Speaking for all who lay under the stars,
Soldiers and poor, unable to rejoice.**

1 9 1 7

In Memoriam [Easter 1915]

**The flowers left thick at nightfall in the wood
This Eastertide call into mind the men,
Now far from home, who, with their sweethearts, should
Have gathered them and will do never again.**

1 9 1 5

1 9 1 7

As THE TEAM'S HEAD BRASS / 1 2 5 5

Rain

**Rain, midnight rain, nothing but the wild rain
On this bleak hut, and solitude, and me
Remembering again that I shall die
And neither hear the rain nor give it thanks
5 For washing me cleaner than I have been
Since I was born into this solitude.**

Blessed are the dead that the rain rains upon:

**But here I pray that none whom once I loved
Is dying tonight or lying still awake**

10 Solitary, listening to the rain,

Either in pain or thus in sympathy

Helpless among the living and the dead,

Like a cold water among broken reeds,

Myriads of broken reeds all still and stiff,

15 Like me who have no love which this wild rain
Has not dissolved except the love of death,
If love it be towards what is perfect and
Cannot, the tempest tells me, disappoint.

1916 1917

As the team's head brass²

As the team's head brass flashed out on the turn
The lovers disappeared into the wood.

I sat among the boughs of the fallen elm

That strewed an angle of the fallow,³ and

5 Watched the plough narrowing a yellow square
Of charlock.⁴ Every time the horses turned

Instead of treading me down, the ploughman leaned
Upon the handles to say or ask a word,
About the weather, next about the war.

io Scraping the share he faced towards the wood,
And screwed along the furrow till the brass flashed
Once more.

The blizzard felled the elm whose crest

I sat in, by a woodpecker's round hole,

The ploughman said. "When will they take it away?"

15 "When the war's over." So the talk began—

One minute and an interval of ten,

A minute more and the same interval.

"Have you been out?" "No." "And don't want to,
perhaps?"

"If I could only come back again, I should.

20 I could spare an arm. I shouldn't want to lose

2. A team of horses pulling a plow, the head brass 3.
Cultivated land left implanted during the grow-being the
ornamental brass plaque attached to ing season.

their bridle. 4. Wild mustard, a common, yellow field weed.

1 2 5 6 / W A L L A C E S T E V E N S

**A leg. If I should lose my head, why, so,
I should want nothing more... Have many g
one From here? "Yes." "Many lost?" "Yes, a g
ood few.**

Only two teams work on the farm this year.

**25 One of my mates is dead. The second day I
n France they killed him. It was back in Ma
rch, The very night of the blizzard, too. No
wif He had stayed here we should have mov
ed the tree."**

**" And I should not have a there. Everythin
g 30 Would have been different. For it woul
d have been Another world." "Ay, and a bett
er, though If we could see all all might seem
good." Then The lovers came out of the woo
d again:**

The horses started and for the last time

**35 I watched the clod scumble and topple
over After the plough share and the stumbl
ing team.**

1916 1917

WALLACE STEVENS

1879-1955

The Snow Man

One must have a mind of winter

To regard the frost and the boughs

Of the pine-trees crusted with snow;

And have been cold a long time

5 To behold the junipers shagged with ice
, *shaggy*

The spruces rough in the distant glitter Of
the January sun; and not to think

Of any misery in the sound of the wind,

In the sound of a few leaves,

10 Which is the sound of the land

Full of the same wind

That is blowing in the same bare place

For the listener, who listens in the snow, A
nd, nothing himself, beholds

15 Nothing that is not there and then nothing
that is.

1923

The Emperor of Ice-Cream

Call the roller of big cigars,

The muscular one, and bid him whip

SUNDAY MORNING / 1257

In kitchen cups concupiscent curds.

Let the wenches dawdle in such dress

5 As they are used to wear, and let the boys

Bring flowers in last month's newspapers.

Let be be finale of seem.

The only emperor is the emperor of ice-cream.

Take from the dresser of deal.0 *pine or firwood*

10 Lacking the three glass knobs, that sheet

On which she embroidered fantails0 once *fantail pigeons*

And spread it so as to cover her face.

If her horny feet protrude, they come

To show how cold she is, and dumb.

15 Let the lamp affix its beam.

The only emperor is the emperor of ice-cream.

1 9 2 3

Sunday Morning

i

Complacencies of the peignoir,⁰ and late *negligee*

Coffee and oranges in a sunny chair,

And the green freedom of a cockatoo

Upon a rug mingle to dissipate

5 The holy hush of ancient sacrifice.

She dreams a little, and she feels the dark

Encroachment of that old catastrophe,

As a calm darkens among water-lights.

The pungent oranges and bright, green wings

io Seem things in some procession of the dead,

Winding across wide water, without sound.

The day is like wide water, without sound,

Stilled for the passing of her dreaming feet

Over the seas, to silent Palestine,

15 Dominion of the blood and sepulchre.¹

2

Why should she give her bounty to the dead?

What is divinity if it can come

Only in silent shadows and in dreams?

Shall she not find in comforts of the sun,

20 In pungent fruit and bright, green wings, or else

In any balm or beauty of the earth,

Things to be cherished like the thought of heaven?

Divinity must live within herself:

Passions of rain, or moods in falling snow;

25 Grievings in loneliness, or unsubdued

Elations when the forest blooms; gusty

1. I.e., the holy sepulcher, the cave in Jerusalem where Jesus was entombed; at the Last Supper, Jesus referred to his blood as sealing “the covenant between God and his people” (Matthew 26.28).

1 2 5 8 / W A L L A C E S T E V E N S

Emotions on wet roads on autumn nights;

All pleasures and all pains, remembering

The bough of summer and the winter branch.

30 These are the measures destined for her soul.

3

Jove² in the clouds had his inhuman birth.

No mother suckled him, no sweet land gave

Large-mannered motions to his mythy mind

He moved among us, as a muttering king,

35 Magnificent, would move among his hinds,³

Until our blood, commingling, virginal,

With heaven, brought such requital to desire

The very hinds discerned it, in a star.

Shall our blood fail? Or shall it come to be

40 The blood of paradise? And shall the earth

Seem all of paradise that we shall know?

The sky will be much friendlier then than now,

A part of labor and a part of pain,

And next in glory to enduring love,

45 Not this dividing and indifferent blue.

4

She says, "I am content when wakened birds,
Before they fly, test the reality
Of misty fields, by their sweet questionings;
But when the birds are gone, and their warm fields
50 Return no more, where, then, is paradise?"

There is not any haunt of prophecy,
Nor any old chimera⁴ of the grave,
Neither the golden underground, nor isle
Melodious, where spirits gat them home,
55 Nor visionary south, nor cloudy palm
Remote on heaven's hill, that has endured
As April's green endures; or will endure
Like her remembrance of awakened birds,
Or her desire for June and evening, tipped
60 By the consummation of the swallow's wings.

5

She says, "But in contentment I still feel
The need of some imperishable bliss."
Death is the mother of beauty; hence from her,
Alone, shall come fulfilment to our dreams
65 And our desires. Although she strews the leaves
Of sure obliteration on our paths,

The path sick sorrow took, the many paths

2. Or Jupiter (meaning "sky father"), supreme
Jesus' birth.

Roman god. His Greek counterpart, Zeus, was

4. In Greek mythology, a monster with a lion's
Suckled by a goat in his childhood.

head, goat's body, and serpent's tail. Also, an illu-

3. Farmhands, rustics; alludes to the shepherds
sion or fabrication of the mind.

who saw the Star of Bethlehem, which signaled

SUNDAY MORNING / 1259

W h e r e triumph rang its brassy phrase, or love

Whispered a little out of tenderness,

70 She makes the willow shiver in the sun

For maidens who were wont^o to sit and gaze *accustomed*

Upon the grass, relinquished to their feet.

She causes boys to pile new plums and pears

On disregarded plate.⁵ The maidens taste

75 And stray impassioned in the littering leaves.

6

Is there no change of death in paradise?

Does ripe fruit never fall? Or do the boughs

Hang always heavy in that perfect sky,

Unchanging, yet so like our perishing earth,

so With rivers like our own that seek for seas

They never find, the same receding shores

That never touch with inarticulate pang?

W h y set the pear upon those river-banks

Or spice the shores with odors of the plum?

85 Alas, that they should wear our colors there,

The silken weavings of our afternoons,

And pick the strings of our insipid lutes!

Death is the mother of beauty, mystical,
Within whose burning bosom we devise
90 Our earthly mothers waiting, sleeplessly.

7

Supple and turbulent, a ring of men
Shall chant in orgy on a summer morn
Their boisterous devotion to the sun,
Not as a god, but as a god might be,
95 Naked among them, like a savage source.
Their chant shall be a chant of paradise,
Out of their blood, returning to the sky;
And in their chant shall enter, voice by voice,
The windy lake wherein their lord delights,
100 The trees, like serafin,⁶ and echoing hills,
That choir among themselves long afterward.
They shall know well the heavenly fellowship
Of men that perish and of summer morn.
And whence they came and whither they shall go
105 The dew upon their feet shall manifest.

8

She hears, upon that water without sound,
A voice that cries, "The tomb in Palestine
Is not the porch of spirits lingering.

It is the grave of Jesus, where he lay."

no We live in an old chaos of the sun,

5. "Plate is used in the sense of so-called family I mean,
therefore, that death releases and renews"

plate. Disregarded refers to the disuse into which [*Letters of
Wallace Stevens*, 1966, 183-84], things fall that have been

possessed for a long time. 6. I.e., seraphim, the highest order of angels.

1 2 6 0 / W A L L A C E S T E V E N S

**Or old dependency of day and night,
Or island solitude, unsponsored, free,
Of that wide water, inescapable.**

Deer walk upon our mountains, and the quail

115 Whistle about us their spontaneous cries;

Sweet berries ripen in the wilderness;

And, in the isolation of the sky,

At evening, casual flocks of pigeons make

Ambiguous undulations as they sink,

120 Downward to darkness, on extended wings.

1 9 1 5 1 9 2 3

Anecdote of the Jar

I placed a jar in Tennessee,

And round it was, upon a hill.

It made the slovenly wilderness

Surround that hill.

5 The wilderness rose up to it,

And sprawled around, no longer wild.

The jar was round upon the ground

And tall and of a port in air.

It took dominion everywhere,

io The jar was gray and bare.

It did not give of bird or bush,

Like nothing else in Tennessee.

1 9 2 3

Thirteen Ways of Looking at a Blackbird

I

**Among twenty snowy mountains,
The only moving thing
Was the eye of the blackbird.**

II

**I was of three minds,
5 Like a tree
In which there are three blackbirds.**

III

**The blackbird whirled in the autumn winds.
It was a small part of the pantomime.**

THIRTEEN WAYS OF LOOKING AT A BLACK
BIRD / 1261

IV

**A man and a woman
10 Are one.
A man and a woman and a blackbird
Are one.**

V

**I do not know which to prefer,
The beauty of inflections
15 Or the beauty of innuendoes,
The blackbird whistling
Or just after.**

VI

**Icicles filled the long window
With barbaric glass.**

20 The shadow of the blackbird

Crossed it to and fro.

The mood

Traced in the shadow

An indecipherable cause.

VII

25 O thin men of Haddam,⁷

Why do you imagine golden birds?

Do you not see how the blackbird

Walks around the feet

Of the women about you?

VIII

30 I know noble accents

And lucid, inescapable rhythms;

But I know, too,

That the blackbird is involved

In what I know.

IX

35 When the blackbird flew out of sight,

It marked the edge

Of one of many circles.

7. A town in Connecticut. Stevens explains: "The thin men of Haddam are entirely fictitious... I just like the name. ... It has a completely Yankee sound" [*Letters*, 340].

1 2 6 2 / W A L L A C E S T E V E N S

X

At the sight of blackbirds

Flying in a green light,

40 Even the bawds of euphony⁸

Would cry out sharply.

XI

He rode over Connecticut

In a glass coach.

Once, a fear pierced him

45 In that he mistook

The shadow of his equipage⁰ *coach*

For blackbirds.

XII

The river is moving.

The blackbird must be flying.

XIII

50 It was evening all afternoon.

It was snowing

And it was going to snow.

The blackbird sat

In the cedar-limbs.

1 9 2 3

Peter Quince at the Clavier⁹

I

Just as my fingers on these keys

Make music, so the selfsame sounds

On my spirit make a music, too.

Music is feeling, then, not sound;

5 And thus it is that what I feel,

Here in this room, desiring you,

Thinking of your blue-shadowed silk,

Is music. It is like the strain

Waked in the elders by Susanna.1

8. I.e., madams or prostitutes of sweet sound.

More Songs from Vagabondia (1895).

9. Early keyboard instrument. *Peter Quince*: the

1. In Daniel 13, a chapter in the Apocrypha, stage manager of the rustic actors who clumsily Susanna refuses seduction by two Hebrew elders, perform a “tragedy” within Shakespeare’s comedy or tribal councilors, who then falsely accuse her of *A Midsummer Night’s Dream*. Also, an allusion to a liaison with a young man. Daniel protects her the poem “Quince to Lilac: to G. H.,” from Bliss from being punished.

Carmen and Richard Hovey’s once-popular book

PETER QUINCE AT THE CLAVIER / 1263

10 Of a green evening, clear and warm,
She bathed in her still garden, while
The red-eyed elders watching, felt
The basses of their beings throb
In witching chords, and their thin blood
15 Pulse pizzicati of Hosanna.2

II

In the green water, clear and warm,
Susanna lay.
She searched
The touch of springs,
20 And found
Concealed imaginings.

She sighed,
For so much melody.
Upon the bank, she stood
25 In the cool
Of spent emotions.
She felt, among the leaves,
The dew
Of old devotions.
30 She walked upon the grass,
Still quavering.
The winds were like her maids,
On timid feet,
Fetching her woven scarves,
35 Yet wavering.
A breath upon her hand
Muted the night.
She turned—
A cymbal crashed,
40 And roaring horns.

III

Soon, with a noise like tambourines,
Came her attendant Byzantines.³
They wondered why Susanna cried
Against the elders by her side;
45 And as they whispered, the refrain
Was like a willow swept by rain.

2. Great praise. *Pizzicati*: musical passages in
through the fifteenth centuries); an anachronism,

which strings are plucked.

as they postdated Susanna.

3. People of the Byzantine Empire (fourth

1 2 6 4 / W A L L A C E S T E V E N S

Anon, their lamps' uplifted flame

Revealed Susanna and her shame.

And then, the simpering Byzantines

50 Fled, with a noise like tambourines.

IV

Beauty is momentary in the mind—

The fitful tracing of a portal;

But in the flesh it is immortal.

The body dies; the body's beauty lives.

55 So evenings die, in their green going,

A wave, interminably flowing.

So gardens die, their meek breath scenting

The cowl of winter, done repenting.

So maidens die, to the auroral

60 Celebration of a maiden's choral.

Susanna's music touched the bawdy strings

Of those white elders; but, escaping,

Left only Death's ironic scraping.

Now, in its immortality, it plays

65 On the clear viol of her memory,

And makes a constant sacrament of praise.

1 9 2 3 1 9 3 1

The Idea of Order at Key West⁴

She sang beyond the genius⁵ of the sea.

The water never formed to mind or voice,
Like a body wholly body, fluttering
Its empty sleeves; and yet its mimic motion
5 Made constant cry, caused constantly a cry,
That was not ours although we understood,
Inhuman, of the veritable ocean.

The sea was not a mask. No more was she.
The song and water were not medleyed sound
io Even if what she sang was what she heard,
Since what she sang was uttered word by word.
It may be that in all her phrases stirred
The grinding water and the gasping wind;
But it was she and not the sea we heard.

15 For she was the maker of the song she sang.
The ever-hooded, tragic-gestured sea
Was merely a place by which she walked to sing.
Whose spirit is this? we said, because we knew

4. One of the coral islands off the south coast of 5. The
pervading and guardian spirit of a place.

Florida.

W A V I N G A D I E U , A D I E U , A D I E U / 1 2 6 5

It was the spirit that we sought and knew
20 That we should ask this often as she sang.
If it was only the dark voice of the sea
That rose, or even colored by many waves;
If it was only the outer voice of sky
And cloud, of the sunken coral water-walled,
25 However clear, it would have been deep air,

The heaving speech of air, a summer sound
Repeated in a summer without end
And sound alone. But it was more than that,
More even than her voice, and ours, among
30 The meaningless plungings of water and the wind,
Theatrical distances, bronze shadows heaped
On high horizons, mountainous atmospheres
Of sky and sea.

It was her voice that made
35 The sky acutest at its vanishing.
She measured to the hour its solitude.
She was the single artificer of the world
In which she sang. And when she sang, the sea,
Whatever self it had, became the self
40 That was her song, for she was the maker. Then we,
As we beheld her striding there alone,
Knew that there never was a world for her
Except the one she sang and, singing, made.
Ramon Fernandez,⁶ tell me, if you know,
45 Why, when the singing ended and we turned
Toward the town, tell why the glassy lights,
The lights in the fishing boats at anchor there,
As the night descended, tilting in the air,
Mastered the night and portioned out the sea,
50 Fixing emblazoned zones and fiery poles,
Arranging, deepening, enchanting night.
Oh! Blessed rage for order, pale Ramon,
The maker's rage to order words of the sea,

Words of the fragrant portals, dimly-starred,
55 And of ourselves and of our origins,
In ghostlier demarcations, keener sounds.

1936

Waving Adieu, Adieu, Adieu⁷

That would be waving and that would be crying,
Crying and shouting and meaning farewell,

6. Stevens claimed (*Letters*, 798) that he had simply
(1894-1944).

combined two common Spanish names at ran-

7. Cf. Mark Strand's homage to this poem in *Dark
dom*, without conscious reference to the French
Harbor, XVI (p. 1864).

literary critic and essayist Ramon Fernandez

1 2 6 6 / W A L L A C E S T E V E N S

**Farewell in the eyes and farewell at the centre,
Just to stand still without moving a hand.**

**5 In a world without heaven to follow, the stops
Would be endings, more poignant than partings,
profounder,**

**And that would be saying farewell, repeating farewell,
Just to be there and just to behold.**

To be one's singular self, to despise

10 The being that yielded so little, acquired

So little, too little to care, to turn

To the ever-jubilant weather, to sip

One's cup and never to say a word,

Or to sleep or just to lie there still,

**15 Just to be there, just to be beheld,
That would be bidding farewell, be bidding farewell.
One likes to practice the thing. They practice,
Enough, for heaven. Ever-jubilant,
What is there here but weather, what spirit
20 Have I except it comes from the sun?**

1 9 3 6

The Poems of Our Climate

I

**Clear water in a brilliant bowl,
Pink and white carnations. The light
In the room more like a snowy air,
Reflecting snow. A newly-fallen snow
5 At the end of winter when afternoons return.
Pink and white carnations—one desires
So much more than that. The day itself
Is simplified: a bowl of white,
Cold, a cold porcelain, low and round,
io With nothing more than the carnations there.**

II

**Say even that this complete simplicity
Stripped one of all one's torments, concealed
The evilly compounded, vital I
And made it fresh in a world of white,
15 A world of clear water, brilliant-edged,
Still one would want more, one would need more,
More than a world of white and snowy scents.**

TABLE TALK / 1 2 6 7

III

**There would still remain the never-resting mind,
So that one would want to escape, come back
20 To what had been so long composed.**

The imperfect is our paradise.

Note that, in this bitterness, delight,

Since the imperfect is so hot in us,

Lies in flawed words and stubborn sounds.

1 9 4 2

The House Was Quiet and the World Was Calm

The house was quiet and the world was calm.

The reader became the book; and summer night

Was like the conscious being of the book.

The house was quiet and the world was calm.

5 The words were spoken as if there was no book,

Except that the reader leaned above the page,

Wanted to lean, wanted much most to be

The scholar to whom his book is true, to whom

The summer night is like a perfection of thought,

io The house was quiet because it had to be.

The quiet was part of the meaning, part of the mind:

The access of perfection to the page.

And the world was calm. The truth in a calm world,

In which there is no other meaning, itself

15 Is calm, itself is summer and night, itself

Is the reader leaning late and reading there.

1 9 4 7

Table Talk

Granted, we die for good.

Life, then, is largely a thing

Of happens to like, not should.

And that, too, granted, why

5 Do I happen to like red bush,

Gray grass and green-gray sky?

1 2 6 8 / W A L L A C E S T E V E N S

What else remains? But red,

Gray, green, why those of all?

That is not what I said:

10 Not those of all. But those.

One likes what one happens to like.

One likes the way red grows.

It cannot matter at all.

Happens to like is one

15 Of the ways things happen to fall.

ca. 1 9 3 5 1 9 5 7

A Room on a Garden

O stagnant east-wind, palsied mare,

Giddap! The ruby roses' hair

Must blow.

Behold how order is the end

5 Of everything. The roses bend

As one.

Order, the law of hoes and rakes,

May be perceived in windy quakes

And squalls.

io The gardener searches earth and sky

**The truth in nature to espy
In vain.
He well might find that eager balm
In lilies' stately-stated calm;
15 But then
He well might find it in this fret
Of lilies rusted, rotting, wet
With rain.**

1 9 3 5 1 9 5 7

Of Mere Being

**The palm at the end of the mind,
Beyond the last thought, rises
In the bronze decor,⁸**

8. In the first published version of this poem, the 1957 *Opus Posthumous* incorrectly gave "decor" as "distance." The 1989 edition provided a correction.

H A S K E L L / 1 2 6 9

**A gold-feathered bird
5 Sings in the palm, without human meaning,
Without human feeling, a foreign song.
You know then that it is not the reason
That makes us happy or unhappy.
The bird sings. Its feathers shine.
10 The palm stands on the edge of space.
The wind moves slowly in the branches.
The bird's fire-fangled feathers dangle down.**

1 9 5 5 ?

1 9 5 7 , 1 9 8 9

W I T T E R B Y N N E R

1881-1968

Haskell1

Here in Kansas is a school

Made of square stones and windows,

Where Indian boys are taught to use a tool,

A printing-press, a book,

5 And Indian girls

To read, to dress, to cook.

And as I watch today

The orderly industrious classes,

Only their color and silence and the way

**io The hair lies flat and black on their heads proclaims
them Sioux,**

Comanche, Choctaw, Cherokee,

Creek, Chippewa, Paiute²—and the red and blue

Of the girls' long sweaters and the purple and yellow,

And the tawny slant of the machine-made shirts ...

15 Noon—and out they come. And one tall fellow,

**Breaking from the others with a glittering yell and
crouching slim,**

Gives a leap like the leap of Mordkin,³

And the sun carves under him

A canyon of glory ...

20 And then it shadows, and he darts,

With head hung, to the dormitory.

1 9 2 0

1. Town in Kansas.

3. Mikhail Mordkin (1881-1944), Russian ballet

2. Names of Native American tribes.

dancer.

1 2 7 0 / E . J . P R A T T

From Chinese Drawings

A Philosopher

What though they conquer us?

The tea has come.

In at most nine hundred years,

Someone will conquer them.

1 9 2 0

The Wintry Mind

Winter uncovers distances, I find;

And so the cold and so the wintry mind

Takes leaves away, till there is left behind

A wide cold world. And so the heart grows blind

5 To the earth's green motions lying warm below

Field upon field, field upon field, of snow.

1 9 4 0

More Lovely than Antiquity

There comes a moment in her veins

Not of the earth, not of the rains,

Something not of stalks and stems

But of dim crowns and diadems,0 *royal headbands*

5 Something commanding her to be

More ancient than antiquity

And to soothe her head on a pike above

The vacant circumstance of love.

1 9 4 7

E . J . P R A T T

1883-1964

Come Not the Seasons Here

Comes not the springtime here,

Though the snowdrop came,

And the time of the cowslip⁰ is near, *a wildflower*

For a yellow flame

5 Was found in a tuft of green;

FROM STONE TO STEEL / 1 2 7 1

And the joyous shout

Of a child rang out

That a cuckoo's eggs were seen.

Comes not the summer here,

10 Though the cowslip be gone,

Though the wild rose blow as the year

Draws faithfully on;

Though the face of the poppy be red

In the morning light,

15 And the ground be white

With the bloom of the locust shed.

Comes not the autumn here,

Though someone said

He found a leaf in the sere *withered state*

20 By an aster dead;

And knew that the summer was done,

For a herdsman cried

That his pastures were brown in the sun,

And his wells were dried.

**25 Nor shall the winter come,
Though the elm be bare,
And every voice be dumb
On the frozen air;
But the flap of a waterfowl
30 In the marsh alone,
Or the hoot of a horned owl
On a glacial stone.**

1 9 2 3

From Stone to Steel

**From stone to bronze, from bronze to steel
Along the road-dust of the sun
Two revolutions of the wheel
From Java to Geneva run.¹
5 The snarl Neanderthal is worn
Close to the smiling Aryan² lips,
The civil polish of the horn
Gleams from our praying finger tips.**

The evolution of desire

io Has but matured a toxic wine,

1. Java, now part of Indonesia, was the site of fosters of the League of Nations from 1919 until the sil excavations where the bones of an early type of outbreak of World War II.

prehistoric human (“Neanderthal,” line 5) were

2. According to Nazi racial theory, the Aryan found. Geneva, in Switzerland, was the headquar-
“race” was superior to all others.

1 2 7 2 / W I L L I A M C A R L O S W I L L I A M S

Drunk long before its heady fire

Reddened Euphrates or the Rhine.³

Between the temple and the cave

The boundary lies tissue-thin:

15 The yearlings still the altars crave

As satisfaction for a sin.

The road goes up, the road goes down—

Let Java or Geneva be—

But whether to the cross or crown,

20 The path lies through Gethsemane.⁴

1 9 3 2

W I L L I A M C A R L O S W I L L I A M S

1883-1963

Danse Russe¹

If when my wife is sleeping

and the baby and Kathleen

are sleeping

and the sun is a flame-white disc

5 in silken mists

above shining trees,—

if I in my north room

dance naked, grotesquely

before my mirror

io waving my shirt round my head

and singing softly to myself:

“I am lonely, lonely.

I was born to be lonely,

I am best so!”

**15 If I admire my arms, my face,
my shoulders, flanks, buttocks
against the yellow drawn shades,—
Who shall say I am not
the happy genius² of my household?**

1 9 1 7

3. The Euphrates was one of the two great river

1. Russian dance (French). Just before writing valleys of ancient Mesopotamian civilization. The this poem, Williams had seen a performance in river Rhine flows through western Germany and New York City by the Ballet Russes, a company led the Netherlands.

by the producer and critic Sergey Pavlovich Dia-

4. The garden where Christ prayed while his disciples slept, and where Judas betrayed him (Matthew 26.36-56).

2. The pervading and guardian spirit of a place.

thew 26.36-56).

QUEEN - ANNE ' S - L A C E / 1 2 7 3

Portrait of a Lady³

**Your thighs are appletrees
whose blossoms touch the sky.**

**Which sky? The sky
where Watteau hung a lady's**

**5 slipper.⁴ Your knees
are a southern breeze—or**

a gust of snow. Agh! what
sort of man was Fragonard?
—as if that answered
10 anything. Ah, yes—below
the knees, since the tune
drops that way, it is
one of those white summer days,
the tall grass of your ankles
15 flickers upon the shore—
Which shore?—
the sand clings to my lips—
Which shore?

Agh, petals maybe. How
20 should I know?
Which shore? Which shore?
I said petals from an appletree.

1920, 1934

Queen-Anne's-Lace⁵

Her body is not so white as
anemone petals nor so smooth—nor
so remote a thing. It is a field
of the wild carrot taking
5 the field by force; the grass
does not raise above it.

Here is no question of whiteness,
white as can be, with a purple mole
at the center of each flower,
io Each flower is a hand's span

**of her whiteness. Wherever
his hand has lain there is
a tiny purple blemish. Each part
is a blossom under his touch**

3. The title recalls those of works by the English

4. Williams seems to be conflating the French
(American-born) novelist Henry James (1843-

painter Jean-Antoine Watteau (1684-1721) with

1916), the English (American-born) poet T. S.

the French artist Jean-Honore Fragonard (1732—

Eliot (1888-1965; see pp. 1340-66), and the

1806). In Fragonard's famous painting *The Swing*,

American poet Ezra Pound (1885-1972; see

a girl on a swing has kicked off her slipper, which

pp. 1295—1310). Cf. Pound's poem "Portrait d'une

remains suspended in air.

Femme" (p. 1295).

5. A common field flower.

1 2 7 4 / W I L L I A M C A R L O S W I L L I A M S

15 to which the fibres of her being

stem one by one, each to its end,

until the whole field is a

white desire, empty, a single stem,

a cluster, flower by flower,

20 a pious wish to whiteness gone over—

or nothing.

1 9 2 1

The Red Wheelbarrow

**so much depends
upon
a red wheel
barrow
5 glazed with rain
water
beside the white
chickens.**

1 9 2 3

This Is Just to Say⁶

**I have eaten
the plums
that were in
the icebox
5 and which
you were probably
saving
for breakfast
Forgive me
io they were delicious
so sweet
and so cold**

1 9 3 4

6. Cf. Kenneth Koch's parody of this poem, "Variations on a Theme by William Carlos Williams" (p. 1693).

T H E Y A C H T S / 1 2 7 5

Poem

As the cat

climbed over
the top of
the jamcloset
5 first the right
forefoot
carefully
then the hind
stepped down
10 into the pit of
the empty
flowerpot
1 9 3 4

The Yachts

contend in a sea which the land partly encloses
shielding them from the too-heavy blows
of an ungoverned ocean which when it chooses
tortures the biggest hulls, the best man knows
5 to pit against its beatings, and sinks them pitilessly.
Mothlike in mists, scintillant in the minute
brilliance of cloudless days, with broad bellying sails
they glide to the wind tossing green water
from their sharp prows while over them the crew crawls
io ant-like, solicitously grooming them, releasing,
making fast as they turn, lean far over and having
caught the wind again, side by side, head for the mark.
In a well guarded arena of open water surrounded by
lesser and greater craft which, sycophant, lumbering
15 and fluttering follow them, they appear youthful, rare

as the light of a happy eye, live with the grace
of all that in the mind is fleckless, free and
naturally to be desired. Now the sea which holds them
is moody, lapping their glossy sides, as if feeling
20 for some slightest flaw but fails completely.
Today no race. Then the wind comes again. The yachts
1 2 7 6 / W I L L I A M C A R L O S W I L L I A M S
move, jockeying for a start, the signal is set and they
are off. Now the waves strike at them but they are too
well made, they slip through, though they take in canvas.
25 Arms with hands grasping seek to clutch at the prows.
Bodies thrown recklessly in the way are cut aside.
It is a sea of faces about them in agony, in despair
until the horror of the race dawns staggering the mind,
the whole sea become an entanglement of watery bodies
30 lost to the world bearing what they cannot hold.
Broken,
beaten, desolate, reaching from the dead to be taken up
they cry out, failing, failing! their cries rising
in waves still as the skillful yachts pass over.

1 9 3 5

A Sort of a Song

Let the snake wait under

his weed

and the writing

be of words, slow and quick, sharp

5 to strike, quiet to wait,

sleepless.

**—through metaphor to reconcile
the people and the stones.**

**Compose. (No ideas
io but in things) Invent!**

**Saxifrage⁷ is my flower that splits
the rocks.**

1 9 4 4

From Asphodel, That Greeny Flower⁸

Book I

**Of asphodel, that greeny flower,
like a buttercup**

7. Breaking rocks (Latin); a perennial herb.

world of Homer's *Odyssey*, a grove of poplars sacred

8. A tripartite love poem, with coda, for the poet's
to Persephone stood at the entrance of *asphodel*

wife. The green asphodel first impressed Williams

limona, fields of asphodel inhabited by the souls of

as a child in Switzerland, and it appears in his early

the dead.) The opening lines were originally pub-

work *Kora in Hell: Improvisations* (1920). (Kora—

lished in the October 1952 issue of *Poetry* maga-

or *Kore*, Greek for girl or young woman—is

zine, as "Paterson, Book V: The River of Heaven,"

another name for the mythological figure Perseph-

but were later removed from Williams's epic, *Pat-*

erson. The daughter of Demeter, she was carried to

erson.

the underworld by its ruler, Hades. In the under-

**ASPHODEL, THAT GREENY FLOWER / 1
277**

upon its branching stem—

save that it's green and wooden—

5 I come, my sweet,

to sing to you.

We lived long together
a life filled,
if you will,
10 with flowers. So that
I was cheered
when I came first to know
that there were flowers also
in hell.

15 Today

I'm filled with the fading memory of those flowers
that we both loved,
even to this poor
colorless thing—

20 I saw it

when I was a child—
little prized among the living
but the dead see,
asking among themselves:

25 What do I remember

that was shaped
as this thing is shaped?
while our eyes fill
with tears.

so Of love, abiding love
it will be telling
though too weak a wash of crimson
colors it
to make it wholly credible.

35 There is something
something urgent
I have to say to you
and you alone
but it must wait
40 while I drink in
the joy of your approach,
perhaps for the last time.

And so
with fear in my heart
45 I drag it out
and keep on talking
for I dare not stop.
Listen while I talk on
against time.

50 It will not be
for long.
I have forgot
and yet I see clearly enough
something

1 2 7 8 / W I L L I A M C A R L O S W I L L I A M S

55 c e n t r a l t o t h e s k y
w h i c h r a n g e s r o u n d i t.

A n o d o r
s p r i n g s f r o m i t!
A s w e e t e s t o d o r !

60 H o n e y s u c k l e ! A n d n o w
t h e r e c o m e s t h e b u z z i n g o f a b e e !

and a whole flood
of sister memories!
Only give me time,
65 time to recall them
before I shall speak out.
Give me time,
time.

When I was a boy
70 I kept a book
to which, from time
to time,
I added pressed flowers
until, after a time,
75 I had a good collection.
The asphodel,
forebodingly,
among them.
I bring you,
so reawakened,
a memory of those flowers.
They were sweet
when I pressed them
and retained
85 something of their sweetness
a long time.
It is a curious odor,
a moral odor,
that brings me

90 near to you .
The color
was the first to go .
There had come to me
a challenge ,
95 your dear self ,
mortal as I was ,
the lily's throat
to the hummingbird !
Endless wealth ,
100 I thought ,
held out its arm to me .
A thousand tropics
in an apple blossom .
The generous earth itself
105 gave us lief . 9
The whole world

9. Leave, or permission. An obsolete form of *leaf* and *life*,
“lief” also connotes gladness.

**ASPHODEL, THAT GREEN YFLOWER / 1
279**

became my garden!
But the sea
which no one tends
no is also a garden
when the sun strikes it
and the waves
are wakened.
I have seen it

115 and so have you
when it puts all flowers
to shame.

Too, there are the starfish
stiffened by the sun

120 and other sea wrack
and weeds. We knew that
along with the rest of it
for we were born by the sea,
knew its rose hedges

125 to the very water's brink.
There the pink mallow grows
and in their season
strawberries

and there, later,

130 we went to gather
the wild plum.

I cannot say
that I have gone to hell
for your love

135 but often
found myself there
in your pursuit.

I do not like it
and wanted to be

140 in heaven. Hear me out.

Do not turn away.

I have learned much in my life

from books
and out of them
145 about love.

Death
is not the end of it.
There is a hierarchy
which can be attained,
150 I think,
in its service.

Its guerdon *reward*
is a fairy flower;
a cat of twenty lives.
155 If no one came to try it
the world
would be the loser.

It has been
for you and me

1 2 8 0 / W I L L I A M C A R L O S W I L L I A M S

**i60 a s o n e w h o w a t c h e s a s t o r m
c o m e i n o v e r t h e w a t e r .**

**W e h a v e s t o o d
f r o m y e a r t o y e a r
b e f o r e t h e s p e c t a c l e o f f o u r l i v e s
165 w i t h j o i n e d h a n d s .**

T h e s t o r m u n f o l d s .

**L i g h t n i n g
p l a y s a b o u t t h e e d g e s o f t h e c l o u d s .**

T h e s k y t o t h e n o r t h

170 is placid,
blue in the afterglow
as the storm piles up.
It is a flower
that will soon reach
175 the apex of its bloom.
We danced,
in our minds,
and read a book together.
You remember?
i80 It was a serious book.
And so books
entered our lives.
Thesea! Thesea!
Always
185 when I think of thesea
there comes to mind
the *Iliad*
and Helen's public fault
that bred it.¹
190 Were it not for that
there would have been
no poem but the world
if we had remembered,
those crimson petals
195 spilled among the stones,
would have called it simply
murder.

**T h e s e x u a l o r c h i d t h a t b l o o m e d t h e n
s e n d i n g s o m a n y
200 d i s i n t e r e s t e d
m e n t o t h e i r g r a v e s
h a s l e f t i t s m e m o r y
t o a r a c e o f f o o l s
o r h e r o e s**

205 i f s i l e n c e i s a v i r t u e .

**T h e s e a a l o n e
w i t h i t s m u l t i p l i c i t y
h o l d s a n y h o p e .**

T h e s t o r m

1. In Greek mythology, the beautiful Helen
by Paris (son of the Trojan king, Priam). The dis-
(daughter of the god Zeus and the mortal Leda;
pute that followed was a cause of the Trojan War.
wife of the Spartan King Menelaus) was abducted

**A S P H O D E L , T H A T G R E E N Y F L O W E R / 1
2 8 1**

210 has proven abortive
but we remain
after the thoughts it roused
to
re-cement our lives.

215 It is the mind
the mind
that must be cured
short of death's

intervention,
220 and the will becomes again
a garden. The poem
is complex and the place made
in our lives
for the poem.

225 Silence can be complex too,
but you do not get far
with silence.

Begin again.

It is like Homer's
230 catalogue of ships:²
it fills up the time.

I speak in figures,
well enough, the dresses
you wear are figures also,
235 we could not meet
otherwise. When I speak
of flowers

it is to recall
that at one time
240 we were young.

All women are not Helen,
I know that,
but have Helen in their hearts.

My sweet,
245 you have it also, therefore
I love you

and could not love you otherwise.

Imagine you saw
a field made up of women
250 all silver-white.

What should you do
but love them?

The storm bursts
or fades! it is not
255 the end of the world.

Love is something else,
or so I thought it,
a garden which expands,
though I knew you as a woman
260 and never thought otherwise,
until the whole sea

2. Cf. *Iliad* 2.484-785, where the Greek ships that sailed to
Troy are listed.

1 2 8 2 / W I L L I A M C A R L O S W I L L I A M S

has been taken up
and all its gardens.

It was the love of love,
265 the love that swallows up all else,
a grateful love,
a love of nature, of people,
animals,
a love engendering
270 gentleness and goodness
that moved me

and *that* I saw in you.

I should have known,

though I did not,

275 that the lily-of-the-valley

is a flower makes many ill

who whiff it.

We had our children,

rivals in the general onslaught.

280 I put them aside

though I cared for them

as well as any man

could care for his children

according to my lights.

285 You understand

I had to meet you

after the event

and have still to meet you.

Love

290 to which you too shall bow

along with me—

a flower

a weakest flower

shall be our trust

295 and not because

we are too feeble

to do otherwise

but because

at the height of my power

300 I risked what I had to do,
therefore to prove
that we love each other
while my very bones sweated
that I could not cry to you
305 in the act.

Of asphodel, that greeny flower,
I come, my sweet,
to sing to you!
My heart rouses
310 thinking to bring you news
of something
that concerns you
and concerns many men. Look at
what passes for the new.

P I C T U R E S F R O M B R U E G H E L / 1 2 8 3

**315 Y o u w i l l n o t f i n d i t t h e r e b u t i n
d e s p i s e d p o e m s .**

I t i s d i f f i c u l t

t o g e t t h e n e w s f r o m p o e m s

y e t m e n d i e m i s e r a b l y e v e r y d a y

320 f o r l a c k

o f w h a t i s f o u n d t h e r e .

H e a r m e o u t

f o r I t o o a m c o n c e r n e d

a n d e v e r y m a n

**325 w h o w a n t s t o d i e a t p e a c e i n h i s b e d
b e s i d e s .**

1955

*From Pictures from Brueghel*³

*II Landscape with the Fall of Icarus*⁴

**A c c o r d i n g t o B r u e g h e l
w h e n I c a r u s f e l l
i t w a s s p r i n g
a f a r m e r w a s p l o u g h i n g
5 h i s f i e l d
t h e w h o l e p a g e a n t r y
o f t h e y e a r w a s
a w a k e t i n g l i n g
n e a r
i o t h e e d g e o f t h e s e a
c o n c e r n e d
w i t h i t s e l f
s w e a t i n g i n t h e s u n
t h a t m e l t e d
15 t h e w i n g s ' w a x
u n s i g n i f i c a n t l y
o f f t h e c o a s t
t h e r e w a s
a s p l a s h q u i t e u n n o t i c e d
20 t h i s w a s
I c a r u s d r o w n i n g**

1962

3. Peter Brueghel (or Breughel) the Elder (1521?-
made of feathers and wax. Icarus flew too close to
1569), Flemish painter; this poem, taking its title

the sun and fell into the sea when his wings
from one of Brueghel's paintings, is one of ten in
melted. Cf. W. H. Auden, "Musée des Beaux Arts"
a series.

(p. 1471), which like Williams's poem notes Brue-
4. In Greek mythology, Icarus and his father, Dae-
ghel's marginal treatment of Icarus's legs in the
dalus, sought to escape Crete on wings Daedalus
sea.

1 2 8 4

D . H . L A W R E N C E

1885-1930

Love on the Farm¹

**What large, dark hands are those at the window
Grasping in the golden light
Which weaves its way through the evening wind
At my heart's delight?**

5 Ah, only the leaves! But in the west

I see a redness suddenly come

Into the evening's anxious breast—

'Tis the wound of love goes home!

The woodbine⁰ creeps abroad *honeysuckle*

io Calling low to her lover:

The sun-lit flirt who all the day

Has poised above her lips in play

And stolen kisses, shallow and gay

Of pollen, now has gone away—

15 She woos the moth with her sweet, low word:

And when above her his moth-wings hover
Then her bright breast she will uncover
And yield her honey-drop to her lover.
Into the yellow, evening glow
20 Saunters a man from the farm below;
Leans, and looks in at the low-built shed
Where the swallow has hung her marriage bed.
The bird lies warm against the wall.
She glances quick her startled eyes
25 Towards him, then she turns away
Her small head, making warm display
Of red upon the throat. Her terrors sway
Her out of the nest's warm, busy ball,
Whose plaintive cry is heard as she flies
so In one blue stoop from out the sties⁰ p e n s f o r a n i m
a h
Into the twilight's empty hall.
Oh, water-hen, beside the rushes
Hide your quaintly scarlet blushes,
Still your quick tail, lie still as dead,
35 Till the distance folds over his ominous tread!
The rabbit presses back her ears,
Turns back her liquid, anguished eyes
And crouches low; then with wild spring
Spurts from the terror of *his* oncoming;
40 To be choked back, the wire ring
Her frantic effort throttling:

1. Originally published as "Cruelty and Love," but retitled for the *Collected Poems* (1928).

PIANO / 1285

Piteous brown ball of quivering fears!

Ah, soon in his large, hard hands she dies,

And swings all loose from the swing of his walk!

45 Yet calm and kindly are his eyes

And ready to open in brown surprise

Should I not answer to his talk

Or should he my tears surmise.

I hear his hand on the latch, and rise from my chair

50 Watching the door open; he flashes bare

His strong teeth in a smile, and flashes his eyes

In a smile like triumph upon me; then careless-wise

He flings the rabbit soft on the table board

And comes towards me: ah! the uplifted sword

55 Of his hand against my bosom! and oh, the broad

Blade of his glance that asks me to applaud

His coming! With his hand he turns my face to him

And caresses me with his fingers that still smell grim

Of the rabbit's fur! God, I am caught in a snare!⁰ *wire trap*

60 I know not what fine wire is round my throat;

I only know I let him finger there

My pulse of life, and let him nose like a stoat²

Who sniffs with joy before he drinks the blood.

And down his mouth comes to my mouth! and down

65 His bright dark eyes come over me, like a hood

Upon my mind! his lips meet mine, and a flood

Of sweet fire sweeps across me, so I drown

Against him, die, and find death good.

1 9 1 3

Piano

Softly, in the dusk, a woman is singing to me;

Taking me back down the vista of years, till I see

**A child sitting under the piano, in the boom of the tingling
strings**

**And pressing the small, poised feet of a mother who smiles
as she sings.**

5 In spite of myself, the insidious mastery of song

Betrays me back, till the heart of me weeps to belong

To the old Sunday evenings at home, with winter outside

**And hymns in the cosy parlour, the tinkling piano our
guide.**

So now it is vain for the singer to burst into clamour

io With the great black piano appassionato. The glamour

Of childish days is upon me, my manhood is cast

**Down in the flood of remembrance, I weep like a child for
the past.**

1 9 1 8

2. Small, carnivorous animal of the weasel family.

1 2 8 6 / D . H . L A W R E N C E

Snake

A snake came to my water-trough

On a hot, hot day, and I in pyjamas for the heat,

To drink there.

**In the deep, strange-scented shade of the great dark carob-
tree**

5 I came down the steps with my pitcher

**And must wait, must stand and wait, for there he was at
the trough**

before me.

He reached down from a fissure in the earth-wall in the
gloom

And trailed his yellow-brown slackness soft-bellied down,
over the

edge of the stone trough

And rested his throat upon the stone bottom,

10 And where the water had dripped from the tap, in a
small clearness,

He sipped with his straight mouth,

Softly drank through his straight gums, into his slack long
body,

Silently.

Someone was before me at my water-trough,

15 And I, like a second comer, waiting.

He lifted his head from his drinking, as cattle do,

And looked at me vaguely, as drinking cattle do,

And flickered his two-forked tongue from his lips, and
mused a

moment,

And stooped and drank a little more,

20 Being earth-brown, earth-golden from the burning
bowels of the

earth

On the day of Sicilian July, with Etna³ smoking.

The voice of my education said to me

He must be killed,

For in Sicily the black, black snakes are innocent, the gold
are

venomous.

25 And voices in me said, If you were a man

You would take a stick and break him now, and finish him off.

But must I confess how I liked him,

How glad I was he had come like a guest in quiet, to drink at my

water-trough

And depart peaceful, pacified, and thankless,

30 Into the burning bowels of this earth?

Was it cowardice, that I dared not kill him?

Was it perversity, that I longed to talk to him?

3. Mt. Etna, a volcano.

S N A K E / 1 2 8 7

Was it humility, to feel so honoured?

I felt so honoured.

35 And yet those voices:

If you were not afraid, you would kill him!

And truly I was afraid, I was most afraid,

But even so, honoured still more

That he should seek my hospitality

40 From out the dark door of the secret earth.

He drank enough

And lifted his head, dreamily, as one who has drunken,

And flickered his tongue like a forked night on the air, so black,

Seeming to lick his lips,

45 And looked around like a god, unseeing, into the air,

And slowly turned his head,

And slowly, very slowly, as if thrice adream,

Proceeded to draw his slow length curving round
And climb again the broken bank of my wall-face.
50 And as he put his head into that dreadful hole,
And as he slowly drew up, snake-easing his shoulders, and
entered
farther,
A sort of horror, a sort of protest against his withdrawing into
that
horrid black hole,
Deliberately going into the blackness, and slowly drawing
himself
after,
Overcame me now his back was turned.
55 I looked round, I put down my pitcher,
I picked up a clumsy log
And threw it at the water-trough with a clatter.
I think it did not hit him,
But suddenly that part of him that was left behind convulsed in
undignified haste.
60 Writhed like lightning, and was gone
Into the black hole, the earth-lipped fissure in the wall-front,
At which, in the intense still noon, I stared with fascination.
And immediately I regretted it.
I thought how paltry, how vulgar, what a mean act!
65 I despised myself and the voices of my accursed human
education.
And I thought of the albatross⁴
And I wished he would come back, my snake.
For he seemed to me again like a king,

Like a king in exile, uncrowned in the underworld,
70 Now due to be crowned again.

4. In Samuel Taylor Coleridge's "Rime of the Ancient
Mariner" (see p. 812).

1 2 8 8 / D . H . L A W R E N C E

**And so, I missed my chance with one of the lords
Of life.⁵**

**And I have something to expiate;
A pettiness.**

Taormina.

1 9 2 3

Elemental

**Why don't people leave off being lovable
Or thinking they are lovable, or wanting to be lovable,
And be a bit elemental instead?**

Since man is made up of the elements

5 Fire, and rain, and air, and live loam

And none of these is lovable

But elemental,

Man is lop-sided on the side of the angels.

**I wish men would get back their balance among the
elements**

**io And be a bit more fiery, as incapable of telling lies
As fire is.**

**I wish they'd be true to their own variation, as water is,
Which goes through all the stages of steam and stream and
ice**

Without losing its head.

15 I am sick of lovable people,

Somehow they are a lie.

1 9 2 9

Self-Protection

When science starts to be interpretive

It is more unscientific even than mysticism.

**To make self-preservation and self-protection the first law
of existence**

**Is about as scientific as making suicide the first law of
existence,**

5 And amounts to very much the same thing.

A nightingale singing at the top of his voice

**Is neither hiding himself nor preserving himself nor
propagating his**

species;

He is giving himself away in every sense of the word;

And obviously, it is the culminating point of his existence.

5. Cf. George Meredith, "Modern Love," 30, line 7 (p. 1108).

T R E E S I N T H E G A R D E N / 1 2 8 9

10 A tiger is striped and golden for his own glory.

**He would certainly be much more invisible if he were grey-
green.**

**And I don't suppose the ichthyosaurus sparkled like the
humming-bird,**

**No doubt he was khaki-colored with muddy protective
colouration,**

So why didn't he survive?

**15 As a matter of fact, the only creatures that seem to
survive**

Are those that give themselves away in flash and sparkle

And gay flicker of joyful life;

Those that go glittering abroad

With a bit of splendour.

20 Even mice play quite beautifully at shadows,

And some of them are brilliantly piebald.⁰ *of different colors*

I expect the dodo looked like a clod,

A drab and dingy bird.

1 9 2 9

Trees in the Garden

Ah in the thunder air

How still the trees are!

And the lime-tree, lovely and tall, every leaf silent

Hardly loses even a last breath of perfume.

5 And the ghostly, creamy coloured little tree of leaves

White, ivory white among the rambling greens

How evanescent, variegated elder, she hesitates on the green grass

As if, in another moment, she would disappear

With all her grace of foam!

10 And the larch that is only a column, it goes up too tall to see:

And the balsam-pines that are blue with the grey-blue blueness of

things from the sea,

And the young copper beech, its leaves red-rosy at the ends

How still they are together, they stand so still

In the thunder air, all strangers to one another

15 As the green grass glows upwards, strangers in the garden.

Lichtental.6

1932

6. A village near Raden-Baden, in south Germany, where Lawrence wrote the poem.

1290 / D . H . L A W R E N C E

The English Are So Nice!

The English are so nice

So awfully nice

They are the nicest people in the world.

And what's more, they're very nice about being nice

5 About your being nice as well!

If you're not nice they soon make you feel it.

Americans and French and Germans and so on

They're all very well

But they're not *really* nice, you know.

10 They're not nice in *our* sense of the word, are they now?

That's why one doesn't have to take them seriously.

We must be nice to them, of course,

Of course, naturally.

But it doesn't really matter what you say to them,

15 They don't really understand

You can just say anything to them:

Be nice, you know, just nice

But you must never take them seriously, they wouldn't understand,

Just be nice, you know! oh, fairly nice,

20 Not too nice of course, they take advantage

But nice enough, just nice enough

To let them feel they're not quite as nice as they might be.

1932

Andraitx⁷—Pomegranate Flowers

It is June, it is June

The pomegranates are in flower,

The peasants are bending cutting the bearded wheat.

The pomegranates are in flower

5 Beside the high road, past the deathly dust,

And even the sea is silent in the sun.

Short gasps of flame in the green of night, way off

The pomegranates are in flower,

Small sharp red fires in the night of leaves.

io And noon is suddenly dark, is lustrous, is silent and dark

Men are unseen, beneath the shading hats;

Only, from out the foliage of the secret loins

7. A town on the island of Majorca, Spain.

T H E S H I P O F D E A T H / 1 2 9 1

Red flamelets here and there reveal

A man, a woman there.

1 9 3 2

Bavarian Gentians⁸

Not every man has gentians in his house

in Soft September, at slow, sad Michaelmas.⁹

Bavarian gentians, big and dark, only dark

**darkening the daytime, torch-like with the smoking
blueness of**

Pluto's gloom,¹

**5 ribbed and torch-like, with their blaze of darkness
spread blue**

**down flattening into points, flattened under the sweep of
white day**

**torch-flower of the blue-smoking darkness, Pluto's dark-
blue daze,
black lamps from the halls of Dis, burning dark blue,
giving off darkness, blue darkness, as Demeter's pale
lamps give off
light,
io lead me then, lead the way.
Reach me a gentian, give me a torch!
let me guide myself with the blue, forked torch of this
flower
down the darker and darker stairs, where blue is darkened
on
blueness
even where Persephone goes, just now, from the frosted
September
15 to the sightless realm where darkness is awake upon the
dark
and Persephone herself is but a voice
or a darkness invisible enfolded in the deeper dark
of the arms Plutonic, and pierced with the passion of dense
gloom,
among the splendour of torches of darkness, shedding
darkness on
the lost bride and her groom.**

1 9 3 2

The Ship of Death²

1

**Now it is autumn and the falling fruit
and the long journey towards oblivion.**

8. Herbs with striking blue flowers.

mother in the world above.

9. September 29, the feast day celebrating St.

2. In *Etruscan Places* (1932), the book that
Michael the Archangel.

describes his visit to the Etruscan painted tombs

1. Pluto (Greek Hades), also known as Dis (line
in central Italy in the spring of 1927, Lawrence

8), was the Roman god of the underworld. He

mentions that originally, before the tombs were pil-

abducted Persephone (Roman Proserpine), the

laged, there would be found in the last chamber

daughter of Demeter (Roman Ceres), goddess of

among "the sacred treasures of the dead, the little

growing vegetation and living nature. Persephone

bronze ship that should bear [the soul of the dead]

ruled with him as queen of the underworld, but

over to the other world." He had in mind his own

returned to spend six months of each year with her

imminent death.

1 2 9 2 / D . H . L A W R E N C E

The apples falling like great drops of dew

to bruise themselves an exit from themselves.

5 And it is time to go, to bid farewell

to one's own self, and find an exit

from the fallen self.

2

Have you built your ship of death, O have you?

O build your ship of death, for you will need it.

**io The grim frost is at hand, when the apples will fall
thick, almost thundrous, on the hardened earth.**

And death is on the air like a smell of ashes!

Ah! can't you smell it?

**And in the bruised body, the frightened soul
15 finds itself shrinking, wincing from the cold
that blows upon it through the orifices.**

3

**And can a man his own quietus⁰ make *release from, life*
with a bare bodkin?³**

**With daggers, bodkins, bullets, man can make
20 a bruise or break of exit for his life;**

but is that a quietus, O tell me, is it quietus?

**Surely not so! for how could murder, even self-murder
ever a quietus make?**

4

**O let us talk of quiet that we know,
25 that we can know, the deep and lovely quiet
of a strong heart at peace!**

How can we this, our own quietus, make?

5

**Build then the ship of death, for you must take
the longest journey, to oblivion.**

**3. I.e., his death bring about with an unsheathed dagger? Cf.
Hamlet 3.1.77—78.**

T H E S H I P O F D E A T H / 1 2 9 3

**30 And die the death, the long and painful death
that lies between the old self and the new.**

Already our bodies are fallen, bruised, badly bruised,
already our souls are oozing through the exit
of the cruel bruise.

35 Already the dark and endless ocean of the end
is washing in through the breaches of our wounds,
already the flood is upon us.

Oh build your ship of death, your little ark
and furnish it with food, with little cakes, and wine
40 for the dark flight down oblivion.

6

Piecemeal the body dies, and the timid soul
has her footing washed away, as the dark flood rises.

We are dying, we are dying, we are all of us dying
and nothing will stay the death-flood rising within us

45 and soon it will rise on the world, on the outside world.

We are dying, we are dying, piecemeal our bodies are dying
and our strength leaves us,

and our soul cowers naked in the dark rain over the flood,
cowering in the last branches of the tree of our life.

7

50 We are dying, we are dying, so all we can do
is now to be willing to die, and to build the ship
of death to carry the soul on the longest journey.

A little ship, with oars and food

and little dishes, and all accoutrements

55 fitting and ready for the departing soul.

Now launch the small ship, now as the body dies
and life departs, launch out, the fragile soul

in the fragile ship of courage, the ark of faith
with its store of food and little cooking pans
60 and change of clothes,
upon the flood's black waste
upon the waters of the end
upon the sea of death, where still we sail
darkly, for we cannot steer, and have no port.
65 There is no port, there is nowhere to go
only the deepening blackness darkening still
blacker upon the soundless, ungurgling flood

1 2 9 4

/ D . H . L A W R E N C E

**darkness at one with darkness, up and down
and sideways utterly dark, so there is no direction any
more.**

70 and the little ship is there; yet she is gone.

She is not seen, for there is nothing to see her by.

**She is gone! gone! and yet
somewhere she is there.**

Nowhere!

8

**75 And everything is gone, the body is gone
completely under, gone, entirely gone.**

**The upper darkness is heavy as the lower,
between them the little ship**

is gone

so she is gone.

It is the end, it is oblivion.

9

And yet out of eternity, a thread
separates itself on the blackness,
a horizontal thread

85 that fumes a little with pallor upon the dark.

Is it illusion? or does the pallor fume
A little higher?

Ah wait, wait, for there's the dawn,
the cruel dawn of coming back to life
90 out of oblivion.

Wait, wait, the little ship
drifting, beneath the deathly ashy grey
of a flood-dawn.

Wait, wait! even so, a flush of yellow
95 and strangely, O chilled wan soul, a flush of rose.
A flush of rose, and the whole thing starts again.

10

The flood subsides, and the body, like a worn sea-shell
emerges strange and lovely.

And the little ship wings home, faltering and lapsing
100 on the pink flood,
and the frail soul steps out, into her house again
filling the heart with peace.

Swings the heart renewed with peace
even of oblivion.

P O R T R A I T D ' U N E F E M M E / 1 2 9 5

105 Oh build your ship of death, oh build it!
for you will need it.

For the voyage of oblivion awaits you.

1 9 2 9 - 3 0 1 9 3 2

EZRA P O U N D

1885-1972

Portrait d'une Femme¹

Your mind and you are our Sargasso Sea,²

London has swept about you this score years

And bright ships left you this or that in fee:

Ideas, old gossip, oddments of all things,

5 Strange spars of knowledge and dimmed wares of price.

Great minds have sought you—lacking someone else.

You have been second always. Tragical?

No. You preferred it to the usual thing:

One dull man, dulling and uxorious,

io One average mind—with one thought less, each year.

Oh, you are patient, I have seen you sit

Hours, where something might have floated up.

And now you pay one. Yes, you richly pay.

You are a person of some interest, one comes to you

15 And takes strange gain away:

Trophies fished up; some curious suggestion;

Fact that leads nowhere; and a tale or two,

Pregnant with mandrakes,³ or with something else

That might prove useful and yet never proves,

20 That never fits a corner or shows use,

Or finds its hour upon the loom of days:

The tarnished, gaudy, wonderful old work;

Idols and ambergris⁴ and rare inlays,

**These are your riches, your great store; and yet
25 For all this sea-hoard of deciduous things,
Strange woods half sodden, and new brighter stuff:
In the slow float of differing light and deep,
No! there is nothing! In the whole and all,
Nothing that's quite your own.
30 Yet this is you.**

1 9 1 2

1. Portrait of a lady (French). Cf. William Carlos Williams, "Portrait of a Lady" (p. 1273) female fertility.
2. A relatively calm part of the North Atlantic,
4. Waxlike substance produced by sperm whales, named for an abundance of floating gulfweed. used in making perfume.

3. Plants, the root of which, shaped roughly like a

1 2 9 6 / E Z R A P O U N D

The Garden

En robe de parade.⁵

— S A M A I N

**Like a skein of loose silk blown against a wall
She walks by the railing of a path in Kensington Gardens,⁶
And she is dying piecemeal
of a sort of emotional anemia.
5 And round about there is a rabble
Of the filthy, sturdy, unkillable infants of the very poor.
They shall inherit the earth.⁷**

**In her is the end of breeding.
Her boredom is exquisite and excessive.
10 She would like some one to speak to her,
And is almost afraid that I
will commit that indiscretion.**

1913, 1916

A Pact

**I make a pact with you, Walt Whitman⁸—
I have detested you long enough.
I come to you as a grown child
Who has had a pig-headed father;
5 I am old enough now to make friends.
It was you that broke the new wood,
Now is a time for carving.**

**We have one sap and one root—
Let there be commerce between us.**

1913, 1916

Ts'ai Chi'h⁹

**The petals fall in the fountain,
the orange-colored rose-leaves,
Their ochre clings to the stone.**

1913, 1916

5. Dressed as for a state occasion; from "The
the earth; and shall delight themselves in the abun-
Infanta," a poem by the French poet Albert Samain
dance of peace."

(1858-1900).

8. American poet (1819-1892; see pp. 1060-86).

6. Extensive public gardens in a residential district

9. More usually Ts'ao Chih, a Chinese poet (192-
of London.

232) who wrote five-character poems.

7. Cf. Psalm 37.11: "But the meek shall inherit

**T H E R I V E R - M E R C H A N T ' S W I F E : A L E T
T E R / 1 2 9 7**

In a Station of the Metro¹

The apparition of these faces in the crowd;

Petals on a wet, black bough.

1 9 1 3 , 1 9 1 6

The River-Merchant's Wife: a Letter²

While my hair was still cut straight across my forehead

I played about the front gate, pulling flowers.

You came by on bamboo stilts, playing horse,

You walked about my seat, playing with blue plums.

5 And we went on living in the village of Chokan:³

Two small people, without dislike or suspicion.

At fourteen I married My Lord you.

I never laughed, being bashful.

Lowering my head, I looked at the wall,

io Called to, a thousand times, I never looked back.

At fifteen I stopped scowling,

I desired my dust to be mingled with yours

Forever and forever and forever.

Why should I climb the look out?

15 At sixteen you departed,

**You went into far Ku-to-yen,⁴ by the river of swirling
eddies,**

And you have been gone five months.

The monkeys make sorrowful noise overhead.

You dragged your feet when you went out.

**20 By the gate now, the moss is grown, the different
mosses,**

Too deep to clear them away!

The leaves fall early this autumn, in wind.

The paired butterflies are already yellow with August

Over the grass in the West garden;

25 They hurt me. I grow older.

**If you are coming down through the narrows of the river
Kiang,**

Please let me know beforehand,

1. Pound writes in *Gaudier-Brzeska: A Memoir* had been left by my metro emotion. I wrote a (1916) of having suddenly seen a succession of thirty-line poem, and destroyed it... . Six months beautiful faces one day on the Paris Metro (sub-later I made the following *hokku-like* sentence.” way), after which he tried all day to find words “as

2. Adaptation from the Chinese of Li Po (701-762), named Rihaku in Japanese. Pound’s work is that evening ... I was still trying and I found, sub-based on notes by the American scholar Ernest Fenellosa, themselves based on interpretations by words, but there came an equation ... not in Japanese scholars.

speech, but in little splotches of color... . The

3. Ch'ang-Kan, a suburb of Nanking.

'one-image poem' is a form of super-position, that

4. Ch'tit'ang, a Chinese river called Kiang in Japanese (line 26), here treated as a place.

it useful in getting out of the impasse in which I

1 2 9 8 / E Z R A P O U N D

And I will come out to meet you

As far as Cho-fu-Sa.⁵

By Rihaku

1 9 1 5

Hugh Selwyn Mauberley

LIFE A N D C O N T A C T S⁶

E. P. Ode pour l'élection de Son Sepulchre¹

For three years, out of key with his time,

He strove to resuscitate the dead art

Of poetry; to maintain "the sublime"

In the old sense. Wrong from the start—

5 No, hardly, but seeing he had been born

In a half savage country,⁸ out of date;

Bent resolutely on wringing lilies from the acorn;

Capaneus;⁹ trout for factitious⁰ bait; *false, artificial*

"I⁵[xev yap TOL Jtav⁰' ocr¹ evi, Tpoiri¹

io Caught in the unstopped ear;

Giving the rocks small lee-way

The chopped seas held him, therefore, that year.

His true Penelope was Flaubert,²

**He fished by obstinate isles;
15 Observed the elegance of Circe's¹ hair
Rather than the mottoes on sundials.
Unaffected by "the march of events,"
He passed from men's memory in *Van trentiesme*
De son eage;⁴ the case presents
20 No adjunct to the Muses' diadem.⁵**

5. Chang-feng Sha, a beach several hundred miles in Troy (Greek); Homer, *Odyssey* 12.189. From the up the river from Nanking.

song of the Sirens, which was meant to lure Odys-
6. *Hugh Selwyn Mauberley* comprises two sets of
seus's ship onto the rocks. Odysseus plugged his
poems: the thirteen poems reprinted here ("Life
companions' ears with wax, and he alone, bound
and Contacts," or "Contacts and Life," as Pound
to the mast, heard the song with "unstopped ear"
subtitled a 1957 edition) and five poems that fol-
(line 10).

low, headed "Mauberley (1920)." The entire vol-
2. Gustave Flaubert (1821-1880), French realist
ume bore an epigraph from the fourth Eclogue of
novelist and meticulous craftsman. Penelope, the
the third-century Carthaginian poet Nemesianus:
paradigmatic faithful wife, fended off suitors while
Vocat aestus in umbram (Latin, "The heat calls us
Odysseus spent ten years at the siege of Troy and
into the shade").

another ten years returning home.

7. Cf. Pierre de Ronsard (1524-1585), *Odes* 4.5,

3. Beautiful enchantress who seduced Odysseus;

“*De {‘election de son sepulchre*” [French, “Concern-
he stayed on her island for over a year.

ing the choice of his tomb”], in which the poet

4. In the thirty-first year of his age (French);

describes the kind of burial place and the kind of

Pound’s age when his book *Lustra* was published.

fame he would like to have.

Adapted from the beginning of *Le Grand Testa-*

8. I.e., the United States.

ment, by the fifteenth-century French poet Fran-

9. In Aeschylus’s tragedy *The Seven against Thebes*

gois Villon: “In the thirtieth year of my age.”

(467 B.C.E.), Capaneus swore he would sack that

5. Crown. In Greek mythology, the Muses were

city despite the god Zeus and was struck dead with

nine sister goddesses who presided over song,

a thunderbolt.

poetry, and the arts and sciences.

1. For we know all the things that [were suffered]

H U G H S E L W Y N M A U B E R L E Y / 1 2 9 9

II

The age demanded an image

Of its accelerated grimace,

Something for the modern stage,

Not, at any rate, an Attic6 grace;

5 Not, not certainly, the obscure reveries
Of the inward gaze;
Better mendacities
Than the classics in paraphrase!
The “age demanded” chiefly a mold in plaster,
10 Made with no loss of time,
A prose kinema,⁷ not, not assuredly, alabaster
Or the “sculpture” of rhyme.

III

The tea-rose tea-gown, etc.
Supplants the mousseline of Cos,⁸
The pianola⁰ “replaces” *player piano*
Sappho’s barbitos.⁹
5 Christ follows Dionysus,¹
Phallic and ambrosial
Made way for macerations;⁰ *fastings, wastings*
Caliban casts out Ariel.²
All things are a flowing,
io Sage Heracleitus³ says;
But a tawdry cheapness
Shall outlast our days.
Even the Christian beauty
Defects—after Samothrace;⁴
15 We s e e TO KCXXOV⁵
Decreed in the market place.
Faun’s flesh is not to us,
Nor the saint’s vision.
We have the press for wafer;

20 Franchise for circumcision.

6. Athenian; i.e., simple, pure, classical.

2. In Shakespeare's *Tempest*, Caliban is earth-

7. Motion (Greek); and an early spelling of *cinema*
bound and coarse, Ariel a beautiful and imagina-
(motion pictures).

tive spirit.

8. Greek island. *Mousseline*: fine cloth (muslin).

3. Greek philosopher (ca. 540-ca. 480 **B.C.E.**),

9. Lyrelike instrument played by the Greek lyric
whose teaching emphasized flux ("all things flow").
poet Sappho (fl. ca. 610-ca. 580 **B.C.E.**).

4. Greek island where a mystery cult was centered

1. Greek god of fertility, wine, and poetic inspi-
and where the famous statue *Winged Victory* was
ration, whose worship included ecstatic frenzies,
found.

sexual rites, and dramatic festivals.

5. The beautiful (Greek).

1 3 0 0 / E Z R A P O U N D

All men, in law, are equals.

Free of Pistratus,⁶

We choose a knave or an eunuch

To rule over us.

25 O bright Apollo,

TLV av5pa, TLV f]pacoa, riva Qeov,⁷

What god, man, or hero

Shall I place a tin wreath upon!

IV

**These fought in any case,
and some believing,
pro domo,⁸ in any case ...**

**Some quick to arm,
5 some for adventure,
some from fear of weakness,
some from fear of censure,
some for love of slaughter, in imagination,
learning later ...**

io some in fear, learning love of slaughter;

**Died some, pro patria,
non “dulce” non “et decor” ... 9**

**walked eye-deep in hell
believing in old men’s lies, then unbelieving
15 came home, home to a lie,
home to many deceits,
home to old lies and new infamy;
usury age-old and age-thick
and liars in public places.**

20 Daring as never before, wastage as never before.

**Young blood and high blood,
fair cheeks, and fine bodies;
fortitude as never before
frankness as never before,
25 disillusion as never told in the old days,
hysterias, trench confessions,
laughter out of dead bellies.**

V

There died a myriad,

And of the best, among them,

6. Three times the absolute ruler of Athens (d. god, what hero, what man shall we loudly praise?"

527 B.C.E.), he made the city the foremost power

8. For home (Latin).

in Ionia and supported the arts.

9. For one's native land, not sweetly, not gloriously

7. What man, what hero, what god (Greek); cf. the

(Latin); cf. the Roman poet Horace's *Odes* 3.2.13:

Greek poet Pindar's Olympian Ode 2.2: "What

"Sweet and fitting it is to die for one's country."

H U G H S E L W Y N M A U B E R L E Y / 1 3 0 1

F o r a n o l d b i t c h g o n e i n t h e t e e t h ,

F o r a b o t c h e d c i v i l i z a t i o n ,

5 C h a r m , s m i l i n g a t t h e g o o d m o u t h ,

Q u i c k e y e s g o n e u n d e r e a r t h ' s l i d ,

F o r t w o g r o s s o f b r o k e n s t a t u e s ,

F o r a f e w t h o u s a n d b a t t e r e d b o o k s .

Yeux Glauques!

G l a d s t o n e 2 w a s s t i l l r e s p e c t e d ,

W h e n J o h n R u s k i n p r o d u c e d

" K i n g ' s T r e a s u r i e s " ; 3 S w i n b u r n e

A n d R o s s e t t i s t i l l a b u s e d . 4

5 F e t i d B u c h a n a n l i f t e d u p h i s v o i c e

W h e n t h a t f a u n ' s h e a d o f h e r s

B e c a m e a p a s t i m e f o r

Painters and adulterers.

The Burne-Jones cartoons⁵

io Have preserved her eyes;

Still, at the Tate, they teach

Cophetuatorhapsodize;

Thin like brook water,

With a vacant gaze.

15 The English Rubaiyat was still born⁶

In those days.

The thin, clear gaze, the same

**Still darts out faunlike from the half-ruined
face, Questing and passive....**

20 "Ah, poor Jenny 's case" ⁷...

Bewildered that a world

Shows no surprise

At the last maquero's⁸

Adulteries.

1. Sea-green eyes (French). Pound's poem focuses the English of having "despised literature ... sci- on the eyes of Elizabeth Siddal (d. 1862), wife of ence ... Art! ... Nature ... compassion."

the English poet and painter Dante Gabriel Ros-

4. Rossetti and the English poet Algernon Swin-

setti (1828—1882) and the model used for many of

burne (1837-1909) were abused by the Scottish

his paintings as well as for those of other Pre-

writer Robert W. Buchanan (1841-1901) in "The

Raphaelite painters, including Edward Burne-

Fleshly School of Poetry” (1871).

Jones (1833-1898), in whose painting *King*

5. Cartoons (French); preliminary sketches.

Cophetua and the Beggar Maid (1884; now in the

6. Edward FitzGerald’s translation of *The Rubai-*

Tate Gallery, London; see the third stanza below)

yat of Omar Khayyam (see p. 961), first published

she appears as the beggar maid.

in 1859, became popular only when the Pre-

2. William Ewart Gladstone (1809-1898), active

Raphaelites “discovered” it.

in British politics for over sixty years, was four

7. Buchanan had particularly attacked Rossetti’s

times prime minister.

“Jenny,” a sympathetic portrayal of a prostitute.

3. “Sesame. Of King’s Treasuries” is the first lec-

8. Perhaps a pun, suggesting both one who lac-

ture in *Sesame and Lilies* (1865), in which the

quers pictures (from the Spanish verb *maquear*)

English critic John Ruskin (1819—1900) accuses

and a pimp (from the French noun *maquereau*).

1302 / EZRA POUND

“*Siena Mi Fe*”; *Disfecemi Maremma*”⁹

**A m o n g t h e p i c k l e d f e t u s e s a n d b o t t l e d b o n e s ,
E n g a g e d i n p e r f e c t i n g t h e c a t a l o g u e ,**

I f o u n d t h e l a s t s c i o n o f t h e

S e n a t o r i a l f a m i l i e s o f S t r a s b o u r g , M o n s i e u r V e r o g . 1

5 F o r t w o h o u r s h e t a l k e d o f G a l l i f e t ; 2

**Of Dowson; of the Rhymers' Club; 3
Told me how Johnson (Lionel) died 4
By falling from a high stool in a pub ...
But showed no trace of alcohol
10 At the autopsy, privately performed —
Tissue preserved — the pure mind
Arose toward Newman 5 as the whiskey war-
med.**

**Dowson found harlots cheaper than hotels
; Headlam for uplift; Image 6 impartially im-
bued 15 With raptures for Bacchus, Terpsichore 7
and the Church.**

**Sospoke the author of "The Dorian Mood,"
M. Verog, out of step with the decade,
Detached from his contemporaries,
Neglected by the young,
20 Because of these reveries.**

Brennbaum 8

**The sky like limpideyes,
The circular infant's face,
The stiffness from spatstocollar
Never relaxing into grace;
5 The heavy memories of Horeb, Sinai and t
he forty years 9**

Showed only when the daylight fell

9. Siena made me; the Maremma undid me (Ital-
Irish poet William Butler Yeats (1865-1939; see
ian; *Purgatorio* 5.134). Words spoken to Dante by
pp. 1188-1211) and his friends.

the spirit of Pia de' Tolomei, encountered in Pur-

4. I.e., from a fall in the street.

gatory among those who died by violence and with-

5. John Henry Newman (1801-1890), the most

out absolution. She was murdered by her husband.

famous Victorian convert to Roman Catholicism

The line carries with it the idea of exile from one's

(and eventually a cardinal). Johnson was also an

native place; the subject of Pound's poem had been

ardent convert.

born in Alsace.

6 Selwyn Image (1849-1930), artist, poet, and

1. Pound's model for Verog was the poet and

clergyman; the Reverend Stewart Headlam (1847—

librarian of the Royal College of Surgeons Victor

1924), liberal clergyman who was for many years

Gustav Plarr (1863-1929), author of the poem "In

a vicar in the East End of London, writer on social

the Dorian-Mood" (line 16). His friends included

and religious questions. Roth members of the

the poets Ernest Dowson (1867—1900; see

Rhymers' Club, they founded the Church and

pp. 1211-12) and Lionel Johnson (1867-1902).

Stage Guild.

He, like them, was a member of the Rhymers' Club

7. Greek Muse of the dance. *Bacchus*: Roman god

(see line 6, note 2); he published a memoir of Dow-

of wine.

son. Pound edited Johnson's *Poetical Works*

8. Often identified as Max Reerbohm (1872-1915).

1956), English critic and caricaturist, who was

2. Marquis de Galliffet (1830-1909), a French known as “the Incomparable Max.” Pound mistak-
general who led a cavalry charge at the Rattle of
only thought he was Jewish.

Sedan (1870), in the Franco-Prussian War.

9. After the Exodus from Egypt, the Israelites, led

3. London literary club founded in 1891 by the
by Moses, spent forty years in the wilderness. At

H U G H S E L W Y N M A U B E R L E Y / 1 3 0 3

L e v e l a c r o s s t h e f a c e

O f B r e n n b a u m ” T h e I m p e c c a b l e . ”

Mr. Nixon

**I n t h e c r e a m g i l d e d c a b i n o f h i s s t e a m y a c h
t M r . N i x o n a d v i s e d m e k i n d l y , t o a d v a n c e
w i t h f e w e r D a n g e r s o f d e l a y . ” C o n s i d e r
C a r e f u l l y t h e r e v i e w e r .**

5 **“ I w a s a s p o o r a s y o u a r e ;**

” W h e n I b e g a n I g o t , o f c o u r s e ,

**” A d v a n c e o n r o y a l t i e s , f i f t y a t f i r s t , ” s a i
d M r . N i x o n ,**

” F o l l o w m e , a n d t a k e a c o l u m n ,

” E v e n i f y o u h a v e t o w o r k f r e e .

**1 0 ” B u t t e r r e v i e w e r s . F r o m f i f t y t o t h r e e h
u n d r e d**

” I r o s e i n e i g h t e e n m o n t h s ;

” T h e h a r d e s t n u t I h a d t o c r a c k

” Was Dr. Dundas.

” I never mentioned a man but with the view
15” Of selling my own works.

” The tip ‘s a good one, as for literature

“It gives no man a sinecure.

” And no one knows, at sight, a masterpiece
.

” And give up verse, my boy,

20” There ‘s nothing in it.”

Likewise a friend of Bloughram ‘s 2 once a
dvised me: Don ‘t kick against the pricks, 3

Accept opinion. The ” Nineties ” 0 tried yo
ur game 1890s And died, there ‘s nothing in
it.

X

Beneath the sagging roof

The stylist 4 has taken shelter,

Unpaid, uncelebrated,

At last from the world ‘s welter

5 Nature receives him;

With a placid and uneducated mistress

Horeb, God spoke to Moses from a burning bush

(1812-1889; see pp. 1009-41), is more practical

(Exodus 3.1—4); on Mt. Sinai, Moses received the

than devotional in his beliefs.

Ten Commandments (Exodus 19—20).

3. Cf. Jesus’ words to Saul: “It is hard for thee to

1. Pound wrote that Nixon “is a fictitious name for
kick against the pricks” (Acts 9.5).

a real person”—perhaps the English novelist

4. Probably based on the English writer Ford
Arnold Bennett (1867-1931), who owned a yacht.
Madox Ford (1873-1939), a friend of Pound and
2. The speaker in "Bishop Blougram's Apology"
an influence on his writing style.
(1855), by the English poet Robert Browning

1304 / EZRA POUND

H e e x e r c i s e s h i s t a l e n t s

A n d t h e s o i l m e e t s h i s d i s t r e s s .

T h e h a v e n f r o m s o p h i s t i c a t i o n s a n d c o n t e n t i o n s
l e a k s t h r o u g h i t s t h a t c h ;

H e o f f e r s s u c c u l e n t c o o k i n g ;

T h e d o o r h a s a c r e a k i n g l a t c h .

XI

" C o n s e r v a t r i x o f M i l e s i e n " 5

H a b i t s o f m i n d a n d f e e l i n g ,

P o s s i b l y . B u t i n E a l i n g 6

W i t h t h e m o s t b a n k - c l e r k l y o f E n g l i s h m e n ?

5 N o , " M i l e s i a n " i s a n e x a g g e r a t i o n .

N o i n s t i n c t h a s s u r v i v e d i n h e r

O l d e r t h a n t h o s e h e r g r a n d m o t h e r

T o l d h e r w o u l d f i t h e r s t a t i o n .

XII

" D a p h n e w i t h h e r t h i g h s i n b a r k

S t r e t c h e s t o w a r d m e h e r l e a f y h a n d s , " 7 —

S u b j e c t i v e l y . I n t h e s t u f f e d - s a t i n d r a w i n g r o o m I a w a i t T h e L a d y V a l e n t i n e ' s c o m m a n d s ,

**5 Knowing my coat has never been
 Of precisely the fashion
 To stimulate, in her,
 A durable passion;
 Doubtful, somewhat, of the value
 io Of well-gowned approbation
 Of literary effort,
 But never of The Lady Valentine's vocatio
 n: Poetry, her border of ideas,
 The edge, uncertain, but a means of blendi
 ng 15 With other strata
 Where the lower and higher have ending;
 A hook to catch the Lady Jane's attention,
 A modulation toward the theatre,
 Also, in the case of revolution,**

5. I.e., preserver of Milesian tradition; cf. the conserved.

phrase "Women, conservers of Milesian 6. Staid, middle-class London suburb.

traditions," from the short story "Stratages," by the

7. A translation of two lines from "Le Chateau de French writer Remy de Gourmont (1858—1915).

Souvenir," by the French poet Theophile Gautier

The Greek city Miletus, a center of literature and

(1811-1872). In Greek mythology, Daphne, pur- philosophy, was also associated with the erotic sto-

sued by the god Apollo, was turned into a laurel to

ries of Aristides' *Milesian Tales* (second century

enable her to escape.

B.C.E.), which have not survived and so cannot be
H U G H S E L W Y N M A U B E R L E Y / 1 3 0 5
2 0 A p o s s i b l e f r i e n d a n d c o m f o r t e r .
C o n d u c t , o n t h e o t h e r h a n d , t h e s o u l
” W h i c h t h e h i g h e s t c u l t u r e s h a v e n o u r i s h
e d ” 8
T o F l e e t S t . w h e r e
D r . J o h n s o n 9 f l o u r i s h e d ;
2 5 B e s i d e t h i s t h o r o u g h f a r e
T h e s a l e o f h a l f - h o s e h a s
L o n g s i n c e s u p e r s e d e d t h e c u l t i v a t i o n
O f P i e r i a n 1 r o s e s .

Envoi (1919)

Go, dumb-born book, 2

Tell her that sang me once that song of Lawes:

Hadst thou but song

As thou hast subjects known,

5 Then were there cause in thee that should condone

Even my faults that heavy upon me lie,

And build her glories their longevity.

Tell her that sheds

Such treasure in the air,

io Recking naught else but that her graces give

Life to the moment,

I would bid them live

As roses might, in magic amber laid,

Red overwrought with orange and all made

i 5 One substance and one color

*Braving time.
Tell her that goes
With song upon her lips
But sings not out the song, nor knows
20 The maker of it, some other mouth,
May be as fair as hers,
Might, in new ages, gain her worshipers,
When our two dusts with Waller's shall be laid,
Siftings on siftings in oblivion,
25 Till change hath broken down
All things save Beauty alone.*

1920

8. A translation of two lines from “Complainte de
with the Muses, nine sister goddesses in Greek
Pianos,” by the French poet Jules Laforgue (1860—
mythology who presided over song, poetry, and the
1887).

arts and sciences.

9. Samuel Johnson (1709-1784), poet, journalist,

2. Here and throughout this poem, Pound echoes
critic, essayist, lexicographer, and the dominant
Edmund Waller's “Song” (see p. 393), which
English man of letters of the mid-eighteenth cen-
begins “Go, lovely rose!” and which was set to
tury. *Fleet Street*: the center of London newspaper
music by the English composer Henry Lawes
publishing.
(1596-1662).

1. Pieria is a region of northern Greece associated

1306 / EZRA POUND

Medallion³

Luini⁴ in porcelain!

The grand piano

Utters a profane

Protest with her clear soprano.

5 The sleek head emerges

From the gold-yellow frock

As Anadyomenes in the opening

Pages of Reinach.

Honey-red, closing the face-oval,

**10 A basket-work of braids which seem as if
they were spun in King Minos' hall**

From metal, or intractable amber;

The face-oval beneath the glaze,

Bright in its suave bounding-line, as,

15 Beneath half-wattays,

The eyes turn to opaz.

1920

FROM THE CANTOS

I7

And then went down to the ship,

**Set keel to breakers, forth on the godly sea
, and we set up mast and sail on that swart
ship, bore sheep aboard her, and our bodies
also heavy with weeping, and winds from
sternward bore us onward with belly
ing canvas, Circe's this craft, the trim-coi
fed goddess. 8**

**T h e n s a t w e a m i d s h i p s , w i n d j a m m i n g t h e t
i l l e r , 3.** This poem was originally an “Envoi (1919)”—

poem of epic proportions on which he worked for
like (see above) final section of Pound’s “1920
over fifty years, is taken up, through line 67, with
(Mauberley),” itself an extension of and comment
Pound’s translation of the beginning of book 11 of
on “Hugh Selwyn Mauberley: Life and Contacts.”
Homer’s *Odyssey*, not directly from the Greek but
4. Bernardino Luini (ca. 1480-1532), Italian
from the sixteenth-century Latin translation of
painter.

Andreas Divus (see line 68 and note 3). Rook 11

5. Rising [from the sea] (Greek); *Aphrodite anad-*
describes Odysseus’s trip to the underworld to con-
uomene was a famous painting by Apelles (fourth
sult the spirit of Tiresias, the blind Theban
century **B.C.E.**), and similar depictions of the god-
prophet, who will give him instructions for the final
dess in sculpture are illustrated in Salomon Rei-
stages of his return to his home island, Ithaca.

nach’s *Apollo: An Illustrated History of Art*

8. Circe was the enchantress with whom Odys-
throughout the Ages (1904).

seus lived for over a year and who told him to seek

6. In Greek mythology, king of Crete.

Tiresias’s advice.

7. The opening of Pound’s *Cantos*, the complex

THE CANTOS : I / 1307

Thus with stretched sail, we went over sea till day's end.

10 Sun to his slumber, shadows o'er all the ocean,

Came we then to the bounds of deepest water,

To the Kimmerian lands,⁹ and peopled cities

Covered with close-webbed mist, unpierced ever

With glitter of sun-rays

15 Nor with stars stretched, nor looking back from heaven

Swartest night stretched over wretched men there.

The ocean flowing backward, came we then to the place

Aforesaid by Circe.

Here did they rites, Perimedes and Eurylochus,¹

20 And drawing sword from my hip

I dug the ell-square pitkin;²

Poured we libations unto each the dead,

First mead³ and then sweet wine, water mixed with white
flour.

Then prayed I many a prayer to the sickly death's-heads;

25 As set in Ithaca, sterile bulls of the best

For sacrifice, heaping the pyre with goods,

A sheep to Tiresias only, black and a bell-sheep.⁴

Dark blood flowed in the fosse,⁰ *trench, ditch*

Souls out of Erebus,⁵ cadaverous dead, of brides

30 Of youths and of the old who had borne much;

Souls stained with recent tears, girls tender,

Men many, mauled with bronze lance heads,

Battle spoil, bearing yet dreory⁶ arms,

These many crowded about me; with shouting,

35 Pallor upon me, cried to my men for more beasts;
Slaughtered the herds, sheep slain of bronze;
Poured ointment, cried to the gods,
To Pluto the strong, and praised Proserpine;⁷
Unsheathed the narrow sword,
40 I sat to keep off the impetuous impotent dead,
Till I should hear Tiresias.
But first Elpenor⁸ came, our friend Elpenor,
Unburied, cast on the wide earth,
Limbs that we left in the house of Circe,
45 Unwept, unwrapped in sepulchre, since toils urged other.
Pitiful spirit. And I cried in hurried speech:

“Elpenor, how art thou come to this dark coast?

“Cam’st thou afoot, outstripping seamen?”

And he in heavy speech:

9. The Cimmerians were a mythical people living
Hades.

in darkness and mist on the farthest borders of the

6. Bloody (from the Old English *dreorig*).

known world.

7. Roman name for Persephone, goddess of regen-

1. Two of Odysseus’s men.

eration and wife of Pluto (Roman Dis), god of the

2. Small, square pit, one ell (forty-five inches) on

underworld.

each side.

8. The youngest of Odysseus’s men, he had drunk-

3. Alcoholic drink made from fermented honey.

only fallen asleep on a loft on the eve of their
4. The sheep that leads the herd, here likened to
departure from her island and fell to his death
Tiresias.

when he tried to climb down a ladder.

5. A dark place in the underworld, on the way to

1 3 0 8 / EZRA P O U N D

50 “111 fate and abundant wine. I slept in Circe’s ingle.° *nook,*
corner

“Going down the long ladder unguarded,

“I fell against the buttress,

“Shattered the nape-nerve, the soul sought Avernus.9

“But thou, O King, I bid remember me, unwept, unburied,

55 “Heap up mine arms, be° tomb by sea-bord, and inscribed:
make my

“A man of no fortune, and with a name to come.

“And set my oar up, that I swung mid fellows.”

And Anticlea¹ came, whom I beat off, and then Tiresias
Theban,

Holding his golden wand, knew me, and spoke first:

60 “A second time?2 why? man of ill star,

“Facing the sunless dead and this joyless region?

“Stand from the fosse, leave me my bloody bever° *drink*

“For soothsay.”

And I stepped back,

65 And he strong with the blood, said then: “Odysseus

“Shalt return through spiteful Neptune, over dark seas,

“Lose all companions.” And then Anticlea came.

Lie quiet Divus. I mean, that is Andreas Divus,³

In officina Wecheli, 1538, out of Homer.

70 And he sailed, by Sirens and thence outward and away
And unto Circe.⁴

Venerandam,⁵

In the Cretan's phrase, with the golden crown, Aphrodite,
Cypri munimenta sortita est, mirthful, oricalchi,⁶ with golden

75 Girdles and breast bands, thou with dark eyelids

Bearing the golden bough of Argicida. So that:⁷

1921 1930

9. A lake near Naples believed by the ancients to
that figure, in Latin or in English, in the closing
be the entrance to the underworld.

lines of the Canto: "Reverend golden-crowned

1. Odysseus's mother; according to the *Odyssey*,
beautiful Aphrodite I shall sing, who has received
Odysseus wept at seeing her, but obeyed Circe's
as her lot the citadels of all sea-girt Cyprus... ."

instruction to speak to no one until he had heard

6. Of copper. I.e., Aphrodite has received earrings,
Tiresias.

flower-shaped, of copper and gold.

2. They first saw each other on Earth.

7. The Canto ends on the colon, going immedi-

3. The sixteenth-century Italian whose translation
ately into Canto II, which begins with the words
of the *Odyssey* had been published "in officina

"Hang it all, Robert Rrowning, / There can be but
Wecheli," at the printing shop of Chretien Wechel,

one 'Sordello.' ” *Argicida*: an epithet for Hermes, Paris, in 1538.

the gods' messenger and “slayer of Argos” (the many-

4. After this visit to the underworld, Odysseus eyed herdsman set to watch Io); from the other returned to Circe and then, forewarned by her, Homeric Hymn, which recounts the union of Aph-

successfully sailed past the Sirens. rodite and Anchises, a union that led to the birth 5. Worthy of worship (Latin); applied to Aphro- of the Trojan leader Aeneas. Aphrodite, deceiving dote, Greek goddess of love and beauty. This, like Anchises at first, says that she is a mortal maiden, the Latin words and phrases in the next lines, that the “slayer of Argos, with wand of gold” has derives from a Latin translation of two Hymns to brought her to be his wife. Before descending to Aphrodite (among the so-called Homeric Hymns, the underworld, Aeneas offered the golden bough dating from the eighth to the sixth century **B.C.E.**).

to Proserpine; it is sacred to the goddess Diana, This translation by Georgius Dartona Cretensis though Pound seems to associate it with Aphro- (“the Cretan,” line 73) was contained in the vol- dote, “slayer of Argi” (Greeks) during the Trojan ume in which Pound had found Divus' translation War.

of the *Odyssey*. One hymn begins with the words

THE CANTOS : XLV / 1309

XLV

With *Usura*⁸

With usura hath no man a house of good stone
each block cut smooth and well fitting
that design might cover their face,
with usura

5 hath no man a painted paradise on his church wall
*harpes et luthes*⁹

or where virgin receiveth message
and halo projects from incision,
with usura

10 seeth no man Gonzaga his heirs and his concubines'
no picture is made to endure nor to live with
but it is made to sell and sell quickly
with usura, sin against nature,

is thy bread ever more of stale rags

15 is thy bread dry as paper,
with no mountain wheat, no strong flour
with usura the line grows thick

with usura is no clear demarcation
and no man can find site for his dwelling.

20 Stone cutter is kept from his stone
weaver is kept from his loom

WITH USURA

wool comes not to market
sheep bringeth no gain with usura

25 Usura is a murrain,⁰ usura *plague*

blunteth the needle in the maid's hand
and stoppeth the spinner's cunning. Pietro Lombardo²
came not by usura
Duccio³ came not by usura
30 nor Pier della Francesca; Zuan Bellin' not by usura
nor was "La Calunnia"⁴ painted.
Came not by usura Angelico; came not Ambrogio Praedis,
Came no church of cut stone signed: *Adamo me fecit*.⁵
Not by usura St Trophime
35 Not by usura Saint Hilaire,⁶
Usura rusteth the chisel

8. Usury (Latin). "N.B. Usury: a charge for the use
2. Italian architect and sculptor (1435—1515). He
of purchasing power, levied without regard to pro-
and other artists in the poem were supported by
duction; often without regard to the possibilities of
patrons.

production. (Hence the failure of the Medici

3. Agostino di Duccio (1418?-1481), Italian
bank)" [Pound's note]. *Medici bank*: operated
sculptor.

1397-1494 by the Medici family of Florence.

4. Calumny (Italian); title of painting by Sandro
Pound felt that the legalizing of usury during the
Botticelli (1444-1510). Piero della Francesca (ca.
Reformation had profound, negative effects on
1420-1492) and Giovanni Bellini (ca. 1430-
society.

1516), Italian painters.

9. Allusion to a poem of the *Grand Testament*, by

5. Adam made me (Latin); a sculptor's inscription

the French poet Francois Villon (1431—1463?):

in the Church of San Zeno, Verona, Italy. Fra

“Painted paradise where there are harps and lutes.”

Angelico (ca. 1400-1455) and Ambrogio Praedis

1 . *Gonzaga, His Heirs and Concubines* is a paint-

(1455?-! 508), Italian painters.

ing of a powerful patron of Mantua, Francesco

6. Church in Poitiers, France. *St Trophime*:

Gonzaga (1444-1483), by the Italian painter

church in Aries, France.

Andrea Mantegna (1431-1506).

1 3 1 0 / E L I N O R W Y L I E

It rusteth the craft and the craftsman

It gnaweth the thread in the loom

None learneth to weave gold in her pattern;

40 Azure hath a canker by usura; cramoisi⁷ is unbroidered

Emerald findeth no Memling⁸

Usura slayeth the child in the womb

It stayeth the young man's courting

It hath brought palsey to bed, lyeth

45 between the young bride and her bridegroom

CONTRA NATURAM⁹

They have brought whores for Eleusis¹

Corpses are set to banquet

at behest of usura.

1937

E L I N O R W Y L I E

1885-1928

Full Moon

My bands of silk and miniver⁰ *white fur*

Momently grew heavier;

The black gauze was beggarly thin;

The ermine muffled mouth and chin;

5 I could not suck the moonlight in.

Harlequin in lozenges¹

Of love and hate, I walked in these

Striped and ragged rigmaroles;²

Along the pavement my footsoles

io Trod warily on living coals.

Shouldering the thoughts I loathed,

In their corrupt disguises clothed,

Mortality I could not tear

From my ribs, to leave them bare

15 Ivory in silver air.

There I walked, and there I raged;

The spiritual savage caged

Within my skeleton, raged afresh

To feel, behind a carnal mesh,

20 The clean bones crying in the flesh.

1923

7. Crimson cloth (French).

tutes “whores”).

8. Hans Memling (1430?—1495), Flemish painter.

1. Diamond shapes. *Harlequin*: a buffoon, a char-
9. Against nature (Latin); phrase used in Aris-
acter in the Italian *commedia dell'arte*, or one
tote's *Politics* to describe usury.

dressed in fabric of certain variegated patterns.

1. Town in ancient Greece known for spring fer-

2. Literally, confused or meaningless statements.

tility rites (involving priestesses—Pound substi-

S E A R O S E / 1 3 1 1

Doomsday

T h e e n d o f e v e r y t h i n g a p p r o a c h e s ;

I h e a r i t c o m i n g

L o u d a s t h e w h e e l s o f p a i n t e d c o a c h e s

O n t u r n p i k e s d r u m m i n g ;

5 L o u d a s t h e p o m p o f p l u m y h e a r s e s ,

O r p e n n o n e d c h a r g e s ; 3

L o u d a s w h e n e v e r y o a r r e v e r s e s

V e n e t i a n b a r g e s ;

L o u d a s t h e c a v e s o f c o v e r e d b r i d g e s

1 0 F u l f i l l e d w i t h r u m b l e

O f h o o v e s ; a n d l o u d a s c l o u d y r i d g e s

W h e n g l a c i e r s t u m b l e ;

L i k e c r e e p i n g t h u n d e r t h i s c o n t i n u e s

D i f f u s e d a n d d i s t a n t ,

1 5 L o u d i n o u r e a r s a n d i n o u r s i n e w s ,

I n s a n e , i n s i s t e n t ;

L o u d a s a l i o n s c o r n i n g c a r r i o n

F u r t h e r a n d f u r t h e r ;

Loud as the ultimate loud clarion

20 Or the first murder. 0 *murder*

1932

H. D. (HILDADOOLITTLE)

1886-1961

Sea Rose

**Rose, harsh rose,
marred and with stint of petals,
meager flower, thin,
sparse of leaf,
5 more precious
than a wet rose
single on a stem—
you are caught in the drift.
Stunted, with small leaf,
io you are flung on the sand,
you are lifted
in the crisp sand
that drives in the wind.**

3. Military charges with streaming banners.

1312/H. D. (HILDADOOLITTLE)

**Can the spice-rose
drip such acrid fragrance
hardened in a leaf?**

1916

Sea Violet

**The white violet
is scented on its stalk,**

thesea-violet
fragileasagate,
5liesfrontingallthewind
amongthetornshells
onthesand-bank.
Thegreaterblueviolets
flutteronthehill,
iobutwhowouldchangeforthese
whowouldchangeforthese
onerootofthewhitesort?

Violet
yourgraspisfrail
15ontheedgeofthesand-hill,
butyoucatchthelight—
frost,astaredgeswithitsfire.

1916

Helen1

AllGreecehates
thetilleyesinthewhiteface,
thelusterasofolives
whereshestands,
5Andthewhitehands.
AllGreecereviles
thewanfacewhenshesmiles,
hatingitdeeperstill
whenitgrowswanandwhite,
iorememberingpastenchantments
andpastills.

1. In Greek mythology, the beautiful wife of the Greek leader Menelaus; abducted by the Trojan prince Paris, she was blamed for the Trojan War, waged to regain her.

WINE BOWL / 1313

**Greece sees unmoved,
God's daughter, born of love, 2
the beauty of cool feet
15 and slenderest knees,
could love indeed the maid,
only if she were laid,
white ash amid funereal cypresses.**

1924

Wine Bowl

**I will rise
from my troth
with the dead,
I will sweeten my cup
5 and my bread
with a gift;
I will chisel a bowl for the wine,
for the white wine
and red;
io I will summon a Satyr to dance, 3
a Centaur,
a Nymph
and a Faun;
I will picture
15 a warrior King,
a Giant,**

a N a i a d ,
a M o n s t e r ;
I w i l l c u t r o u n d t h e r i m o f t h e c r a t e r , 4
2 0 s o m e s i m p l e
f a m i l i a r t h i n g ,
v i n e l e a v e s
o r t h e s e a - s w a l l o w ' s w i n g ;
I w i l l w o r k a t e a c h s e p a r a t e p a r t
2 5 t i l l m y m i n d i s w o r n o u t
a n d m y h e a r t :
i n m y s k u l l ,
w h e r e t h e v i s i o n h a d b i r t h ,
w i l l c o m e w i n e ,
3 0 w o u l d p o u r s o n g
o f t h e h o t e a r t h ,
o f t h e f l o w e r a n d t h e s w e e t

2. Helen was said to be the daughter of Zeus, ruler with the legs of goats and with pointed ears or of the gods, and Leda, a mortal woman, whom Zeus raped in the guise of a swan.

woodland spirits, the fauns. Centaurs had the faces

3. Lines 10—18 evoke figures from classical and chests of men and the bodies of horses. Satyrs mythology. Nymphs were minor nature goddesses; are usually associated with lechery; centaurs, with those who lived in springs, fountains, rivers, and savagery.

lakes were called naiads. In Greek mythology,
4. I.e., a *krater*, the usual Greek term for a drink-
satyrs were woodland spirits in the form of men
ing bowl.

1314/H.D.(HILDADOOOLITTLE)

of the hill,

thyme,

35 meadow-plant,

grass-blade and sorrel;

in my skull,

from which vision took flight,

will come wine

40 will pour song

of the cool night,

of the silver and blade of the moon,

of the star,

of the sun's kiss at midnoon;

45 I will challenge the reed-pipe

and stringed lyre, 5
to sing sweeter,
pipe wilder,
praise louder
50 the fragrance and sweet
of the wine jar,
till each lover
must summon another,
to proffer a rose
55 where all flowers are,
in the depths of the exquisite crater;
flower will fall upon flower
till the red shower
inflame all
60 with intimate fervor;
till:
men who travel afar
will look up,
sensing grape
65 and hill-slope
in the cup;
men who sleep by the wood
will arise,
hearing ripple and fall
70 of the tide,
being drawn by the spell of the sea;
the bowl will ensnare and enchant
men who crouch by the hearth

till they want
75 but the riot of stars in the night;
those who dwell far inland
will seek ships;
the deep-sea fisher,
plying his nets,
so will forsake them
for wheat-sheaves and loam;
men who wander

5. The pipe was the instrument of Pan, Greek god of forests, pastures, flocks, and herds; the lyre was the instrument of Apollo, Greek and Roman god of sunlight, prophecy, music, and poetry.

THE WALLS DO NOT FALL / 1315

will yearn for their home,
men at home
85 will depart.

I will rise

from my troth with the dead,

I will sweeten my cup

and my bread

90 with a gift;

I will chisel a howl for the wine,

for the white wine

and red.

1931

*From The Walls Do Not Fall*⁶

m

An incident here and there,

and rails gone (for guns)
from your (and my) old town square:
mist and mist-grey, no colour,
5 still the Luxor⁷ bee, chick and hare
pursue unalterable purpose
in green, rose-red, lapis;
they continue to prophesy
from the stone papyrus:
io there, as here, ruin opens
the tomb, the temple; enter,
there as here, there are no doors:
the shrine lies open to the sky,
the rain falls, here, there
15 sand drifts; eternity endures:
ruin everywhere, yet as the fallen roof
leaves the sealed room
open to the air,

6. The first of three book-length poems (the other
our past ‘on show,’ as it were ‘another sliced wall
two being *Tribute to the Angels* and *The Flowering*
where poor utensils show like rare objects in a
of the Rod) that would be known as H. D.’s war
museum’ ” (H. D., in a letter to her eventual lit-
trilogy. “The parallel between ancient Egypt and
erary executor, the American scholar Norman
‘ancient’ London is obvious. In I (*The Walls Do Not*
Holmes Pearson).

Fall) the ‘fallen roof leaves the sealed room open

7. An Egyptian town on the Nile, near the ruins to the air' is of course true of our own house of ancient Thebes. Representations of the bee, life—outer violence touching the deepest hidden chick, and hare appear on the Temple of Karnak, subconscious terrors, etc. and we see so much of in Thebes.

1316 / **H . D . (H I L D A D O O L I T T L E)**

so, through our desolation,
20 thoughts stir, inspiration stalks us
through gloom:
unaware, Spirit announces the Presence;
shivering overtakes us,
as of old, Samuel:8
25 trembling at a known street-corner,
we know not nor are known;
the Pythian⁹ pronounces—we pass on
to another cellar, to another sliced wall
where poor utensils show
30 like rare objects in a museum;
Pompeii¹ has nothing to teach us,
we know crack of volcanic fissure,
slow flow of terrible lava,
pressure on heart, lungs, the brain
35 about to burst its brittle case
(what the skull can endure!):
over us, Apocryphal² fire,
under us, the earth sway, dip of a floor,

slope of a pavement
40 where men roll, drunk
with a new bewilderment,
sorcery, bedevilment:
the bone-frame was made for
no such shock knit within terror,
45 yet the skeleton stood up to it:
the flesh? it was melted away,
the heart burnt out, dead ember,
tendons, muscles shattered, outer husk dismembered,
yet the frame held:
50 we passed the flame: we wonder
what saved us? what for?

1944

8. Cf. 1 Samuel 28.15, where the prophet Samuel
eruption of Mt. Vesuvius in 79 c.E.

is disturbed at being raised from the dead, and 1

2. Or perhaps “apocalyptic,” meaning the fiery

Samuel 28.3: “When Saul saw the army of the

judgments of the Apocalypse prophesied in the

Philistines, he was afraid, and his heart trembled

Christian Scriptures. Cf. 1 Corinthians 3.15: “If
greatly.”

any man’s work shall be burned, he shall suffer

9. In Greek mythology, high priestess of the oracle

loss: but he himself shall be saved; yet so as by fire.”

at Delphi.

The Apocrypha are books rejected from the Bible

1. Ancient city on the bay of Naples, buried by an
because of dubious authenticity.

1 3 1 7

S I E G F R I E D S A S S O O N

1886-1967

Christ and the Soldier

I

The straggled soldier halted—stared at Him—

Then clumsily dumped down upon his knees,

Gasping, “O blessed crucifix, I’m beat!”

And Christ, still sentried by the seraphim,¹

5 Near the front-line, between two splintered trees,

Spoke him: “My son, behold these hands and feet.”

The soldier eyed Him upward, limb by limb,

Paused at the Face; then muttered, “Wounds like these

Would shift a bloke to Blighty² just a treat!”

io Christ, gazing downward, grieving and ungrim,

Whispered, “I made for you the mysteries,

Beyond all battles moves the Paraclete.”³

II

The soldier chucked his rifle in the dust,

And slipped his pack, and wiped his neck, and said—

15 “O Christ Almighty, stop this bleeding fight!”

Above that hill the sky was stained like rust

With smoke. In sullen daybreak flaring red

The guns were thundering bombardment’s blight.

The soldier cried, “I was born full of lust,

20 With hunger, thirst, and wishfulness to wed.

Who cares today if I done wrong or right?”
Christ asked all pitying, “Can you put no trust
In my known word that shrives each faithful head?
Am I not resurrection, life and light?”

III

25 Machine-guns rattled from below the hill;
High bullets flicked and whistled through the leaves;
And smoke came drifting from exploding shells.

Christ said, “Believe; and I can cleanse your ill.

I have not died in vain between two thieves;

30 Nor made a fruitless gift of miracles.”

1. Angels of the highest of nine orders. In the

3. Advocate or counselor; sometimes, as here,

Bible (Isaiah 6), six-winged celestial beings.

applied to the Holy Ghost.

2. Slang for Britain.

1 3 1 8 / S I E G F R I E D S A S S O O N

The soldier answered, “Heal me if you will,

Maybe there’s comfort when a soul believes

In mercy, and we need it in these hells.

But be you for both sides? I’m paid to kill

35 And if I shoot a man his mother grieves.

Does that come into what your teaching tells?”

A bird lit on the Christ and twittered gay;

Then a breeze passed and shook the ripening corn.

A Red Cross waggon bumped along the track.

40 Forsaken Jesus dreamed in the desolate day—

Uplifted Jesus, Prince of Peace forsworn—

An observation post for the attack.

“Lord Jesus, ain’t you got no more to say?”

Bowed hung that head below the crown of thorns.

45 The soldier shifted, and picked up his pack,

And slung his gun, and stumbled on his way.

“O God,” he groaned, “why ever was I born?” ...

The battle boomed, and no reply came back.

1916 1973

“They”

The Bishop tells us: “When the boys come back

They will not be the same; for they’ll have fought

In a just cause: they lead the last attack

On Anti-Christ; their comrades’ blood has bought

5 New right to breed an honourable race,

They have challenged Death and dared him face to face.”

“We’re none of us the same!” the boys reply.

“For George lost both his legs; and Bill’s stone blind;

Poor Jim’s shot through the lungs and like to die;

io And Bert’s gone syphilitic: you’ll not find

A chap who’s served that hasn’t found *some* change.”

And the Bishop said: “The ways of God are strange!”

1916 1917

The General

“Good-morning, good-morning!” the General said

When we met him last week on our way to the line.

Now the soldiers he smiled at are most of ‘em dead,

And we’re cursing his staff for incompetent swine.

EVERYONESANG / 1319

5 “He’s a cheery old card,” grunted Harry to Jack
As they slogged up to Arras⁴ with rifle and pack.
But he did for them both by his plan of attack.

1917

1918

Glory of Women

You love us when we’re heroes, home on leave,
Or wounded in a mentionable place.

You worship decorations; you believe
That chivalry redeems the war’s disgrace.

5 You make us shells. You listen with delight,
By tales of dirt and danger fondly thrilled.

You crown our distant ardours while we fight,
And mourn our laurelled memories when we’re killed.

You can’t believe that British troops “retire”

io When hell’s last horror breaks them, and they run,
Trampling the terrible corpses—blind with blood.

O German mother dreaming by the fire,
While you are knitting socks to send your son
His face is trodden deeper in the mud.

1917

1918

Everyone Sang

Everyone suddenly burst out singing;

And I was filled with such delight

As prisoned birds must find in freedom,

Winging wildly across the white

5 Orchards and dark-green fields; on—on—and out of sight.

Everyone's voice was suddenly lifted;
And beauty came like the setting sun:
My heart was shaken with tears; and horror
Drifted away ... O, but Everyone
io Was a bird; and the song was wordless; the singing will
never be done.

1919

1919

4. A city in northern France, in the front line British suffered casualties of eighty-four thousand throughout much of World War I. The British troops, inflicted casualties of seventy-five thousand assault on the Western Front that began on April on the Germans, and took thirteen thousand pris-9, 1917, was known as the Battle of Arras. The oners.

1 3 2 0 / R O B I N S O N J E F F E R S

On Passing the New Menin Gate⁵

Who will remember, passing through this Gate,
The unheroic Dead who fed the guns?

Who shall absolve the foulness of their fate,—
Those doomed, conscripted, unvictorious ones?

5 Crudely renewed, the Salient⁶ holds its own.

Paid are its dim defenders by this pomp;
Paid, with a pile of peace-complacent stone,
The armies who endured that sullen swamp.

Here was the world's worst wound. And here with pride

10 "Their name liveth for ever," the Gateway claims.

Was ever an immolation so belied

As these intolerably nameless names?

Well might the Dead who struggled in the slime

Rise and deride this sepulchre of crime.

1927-28 1928

ROBINSON JEFFERS

1887-1962

Shine, Perishing Republic

While this America settles in the mold of its vulgarity, heavily
thickening to empire,

And protest, only a bubble in the molten mass, pops and sighs
out,

and the mass hardens,

I sadly smiling remember that the flower fades to make fruit,
the fruit

rots to make earth.

Out of the mother; and through the spring exultances, ripeness
and

decadence; and home to the mother.

5 You making haste haste on decay: not blameworthy; life is
good, be it

stubbornly long or suddenly

A mortal splendor: meteors are not needed less than
mountains:

shine, perishing republic.

But for my children, I would have them keep their distance
from the

thickening center; corruption

Never has been compulsory, when the cities lie at the
monster's feet

there are left the mountains.

5. The names of 54,889 men killed in World War 6. Projecting
part of a line of defensive trenches, I are engraved on the gate,
a war memorial in Bel- open to attack from the front and both
sides, gium.

HURTHAWKS / 1321

And boys, be in nothing so moderate as in love of man, a
clever

servant, insufferable master.

There is the trap that catches noblest spirits, that caught—they
say—

God, when he walked on earth.

1924

Boats in a Fog

Sports and gallantries, the stage, the arts, the antics of dancers,

The exuberant voices of music,

Have charm for children but lack nobility; it is bitter
earnestness

That makes beauty; the mind

Knows, grown adult.

A sudden fog-drift muffled the ocean,

A throbbing of engines moved in it,

At length, a stone's throw out, between the rocks and the
vapor,

One by one moved shadows

Out of the mystery, shadows, fishing-boats, trailing each other,

Following the cliff for guidance,

Holding a difficult path between the peril of the sea-fog

And the foam on the shore granite.

One by one, trailing their leader, six crept by me,

Out of the vapor and into it,

The throb of their engines subdued by the fog, patient and
cautious,

Coasting all round the peninsula

Back to the buoys in Monterey harbor.¹ A flight of pelicans

Is nothing lovelier to look at;
The flight of the planets is nothing nobler; all the arts lose
virtue
Against the essential reality
Of creatures going about their business among the equally
Earnest elements of nature.

1924

Hurt Hawks

I

The broken pillar of the wing jags from the clotted shoulder,
The wing trails like a banner in defeat,
No more to use the sky forever but live with famine
And pain a few days: cat nor coyote
Will shorten the week of waiting for death, there is game
without
talons.

He stands under the oak-bush and waits
The lame feet of salvation; at night he remembers freedom
And flies in a dream, the dawns ruin it.
Part of Monterey Bay, a Pacific inlet in California.

1 3 2 2 / R O B I N S O N J E F F E R S

He is strong and pain is worse to the strong, incapacity is
worse.

10 The curs of the day come and torment him

At distance, no one but death the redeemer will humble that
head,

The intrepid readiness, the terrible eyes.

The wild God of the world is sometimes merciful to those
That ask mercy, not often to the arrogant.

15 You do not know him, you communal people, or you have forgotten

him;

Intemperate and savage, the hawk remembers him;

Beautiful and wild, the hawks, and men that are dying,
remember

him.

2

I'd sooner, except the penalties, kill a man than a hawk;

but the great red-tailed hawk

Had nothing left but unable misery

20 From the bone too shattered for mending, the wing that
trailed under

his talons when he moved.

We had fed him six weeks, I gave him freedom,

He wandered over the foreland hill and returned in the
evening,

asking for death,

Not like a beggar, still eyed with the old

Implacable arrogance. I gave him the lead gift in the twilight.
What

fell was relaxed,

25 Owl-downy, soft feminine feathers; but what

Soared: the fierce rush: the night-herons by the flooded river
cried

fear at its rising

Before it was quite unsheathed from reality.

1928

The Purse-Seine²

Our sardine fishermen work at night in the dark of the moon;
daylight
or moonlight
They could not tell where to spread the net, unable to see the
phosphorescence of the shoals⁰ of fish. *schools*
They work northward from Monterey, coasting Santa Cruz; off
New Year's Point or off Pigeon Point³
The look-out man will see some lakes of milk-color light on
the sea's
night-purple; he points, and the helmsman
5 Turns the dark prow, the motorboat circles the gleaming
shoal and
drifts out her seine-net. They close the circle
And purse the bottom of the net, then with great labor haul it
in.

I cannot tell you

How beautiful the scene is, and a little terrible, then, when the
crowded fish

2. Large fishing net with a closeable bottom.

3. These are all places in the Monterey Bay area of western
California.

BIRDS AND FISHES / 1 3 2 3

Know they are caught, and wildly beat from one wall to the
other of

their closing destiny the phosphorescent

10 Water to a pool of flame, each beautiful slender body
sheeted with

flame, like a live rocket

A comet's tail wake of clear yellow flame; while outside the
narrowing

Floats and cordage of the net great sea-lions come up to watch,
sigh-

ing in the dark; the vast walls of night

Stand erect to the stars.

Lately I was looking from a night mountain-top

15 On a wide city, the colored splendor, galaxies of light: how
could I

help but recall the seine-net

Gathering the luminous fish? I cannot tell you how beautiful
the city

appeared, and a little terrible.

I thought, We have geared the machines and locked all
together into

interdependence; we have built the great cities; now

There is no escape. We have gathered vast populations
incapable of

free survival, insulated

From the strong earth, each person in himself helpless, on all
depend-

ent. The circle is closed, and the net

20 Is being hauled in. They hardly feel the cords drawing, yet
they shine

already. The inevitable mass-disasters

Will not come in our time nor in our children's, but we and our
children

Must watch the net draw narrower, government take all
powers—or

revolution, and the new government

Take more than all, add to kept bodies kept souls—or anarchy,
the

mass-disasters.

These things are Progress;

25 Do you marvel our verse is troubled or frowning, while it
keeps its

reason? Or it lets go, lets the mood flow

In the manner of the recent young men into mere hysteria,
splintered

gleams, crackled laughter. But they are quite wrong.

There is no reason for amazement: surely one always knew
that

cultures decay, and life's end is death.

1937

Birds and Fishes

Every October millions of little fish come along the shore,

Coasting this granite edge of the continent

On their lawful occasions: but what a festival for the sea-fowl.

What a witches' sabbath⁴ of wings

5 Hides the dark water. The heavy pelicans shout "Haw!" like
Job's friend's warhorse⁵

And dive from the high air, the cormorants⁶

4. Midnight meeting of witches and wizards,

the horse, who "saith among the trumpets Ha, ha;

believed to be devil worshipers, to celebrate the

and he smelleth the battle afar off, the thunder of

witchcraft cult.

the captains and the shouting."

5. In Job 39.19—25, God describes the strength of

6. Aquatic birds with dark plumage.

1 3 2 4 / R U P E R T B R O O K E

Slip their long black bodies under the water and hunt like
wolves

Through the green half-light. Screaming, the gulls watch,
Wild with envy and malice, cursing and snatching. What
hysterical
greed!

10 What a filling of pouches! the mob

Hysteria is nearly human—these decent birds!—as if they
were finding

Gold in the street. It is better than gold,

It can be eaten: and which one in all this fury of wild-fowl
pities the

fish?

No one certainly. Justice and mercy

15 Are human dreams, they do not concern the birds nor the
fish nor

eternal God.

However—look again before you go.

The wings and wild hungers, the wave-worn skerries,^{0 reefs}
the bright quick minnows

Living in terror to die in torment—

Man's fate and theirs—and the island rocks and immense
ocean

beyond, and Lobos⁷

20 Darkening above the bay: they are beautiful?

That is their quality: not mercy, not mind, not goodness, but
the

beauty of God.⁸

1963

R U P E R T B R O O K E

1887-1915

Sonnet

Oh! Death will find me, long before I tire
Of watching you; and swing me suddenly
Into the shade and loneliness and mire^o *mud*
Of the last land! There, waiting patiently,
5 One day, I think, I'll feel a cool wind blowing,
See a slow light across the Stygian¹ tide,
And hear the Dead about me stir, unknowing,
And tremble. And I shall know that you have died,
And watch you, a broad-browed and smiling dream,
io Pass, light as ever, through the lightless host,
Quietly ponder, start, and sway, and gleam—
Most individual and bewildering ghost!—
7. Point Lobos, a promontory on the Pacific in
the place beneath.”

California.

1. Of Styx, one of the mythological rivers of

8. Cf. Shakespeare, *The Merchant of Venice*

Hades, across which the ferryman Charon rowed

4.1.179—81: “The quality of mercy is not strained.
the souls of the dead.

/ It droppeth as the gentle rain from heaven / Upon

THE OLD VICARAGE, GRANTCHESTER / 1
3 2 5

And turn, and toss your brown delightful head

Amusedly, among the ancient Dead.

April 1909 1911

*From The Old Vicarage, Grantchester*²

(Café des Westens, Berlin, May 1912)

Just now the lilac is in bloom,
All before my little room;
And in my flower-beds, I think,
Smile the carnation and the pink;
5 And down the borders, well I know,
The poppy and the pansy blow ...
Oh! there the chestnuts, summer through,
Beside the river make for you
A tunnel of green gloom, and sleep
io Deeply above; and green and deep
The stream mysterious glides beneath,
Green as a dream and deep as death.
—Oh, damn! I know it! and I know
How the May fields all golden show,
15 And when the day is young and sweet,
Gild gloriously the bare feet
That run to bathe ...

*Du lieber Gott!*³

Here am I, sweating, sick, and hot,
20 And there the shadowed waters fresh
Lean up to embrace the naked flesh.

Temperamentvoll 4 German Jews

Drink beer around;—and *there* the dews
Are soft beneath a morn of gold.
25 Here tulips bloom as they are told;
Unkempt about those hedges blows
An English unofficial rose;
And there the unregulated sun

Slopes down to rest when day is done,
30 And wakes a vague unpunctual star,
A slippered Hesper;⁰ and there are *evening star (Venus)*
Meads⁰ towards Haslingfield and Coton *meadows*
Where *das Betreten*'s not *verboten*.⁵
ei'0e yevoifxTiv6 ... would I were
35 In Grantchester, in Grantchester!—

2. Like Haslingfield and Coton (both line 32) and
4. Temperamental (German).

Madingley (line 129), a village near Cambridge,
5. Forbidden (German). *Das Betreten*: walking on
England. The Old Vicarage was Brooke's house.
the grass (German).

3. [You] dear God! (German).

6. Would I were (Greek).

1 3 2 6 / R U P E R T B R O O K E

Some, it may be, can get in touch
With Nature there, or Earth, or such.
And clever modern men have seen
A Faun a-peeping through the green,
40 And felt the Classics were not dead,
To glimpse a Naiad's reedy head,
Or hear the Goat-foot⁷ piping low: ...
But these are things I do not know.
I only know that you may lie
45 Day-long and watch the Cambridge sky,
And, flower-lulled in sleepy grass,
Hear the cool lapse of hours pass,

Until the centuries blend and blur
In Grantchester, in Grantchester... .
50 Still in the dawnlit waters cool
His ghostly Lordship swims his pool,⁸
And tries the strokes, essays the tricks,
Long learnt on Hellespont, or Styx.⁹
Dan Chaucer¹ hears his river still
55 Chatter beneath a phantom mill.
Tennyson² notes, with studious eye,
How Cambridge waters hurry by ...
And in that garden, black and white,
Creep whispers through the grass all night;
60 And spectral dance, before the dawn,
A hundred Vicars down the lawn;
Curates,³ long dust, will come and go
On lissom,⁰ clerical, printless toe; *lithe, nimble*
And oft between the boughs is seen
65 The sly shade of a Rural Dean⁴ ...
Till, at a shiver in the skies,
Vanishing with Satanic cries,
The prim ecclesiastic rout
Leaves but a startled sleeper-out,
70 Grey heavens, the first bird's drowsy calls,
The falling house that never falls.
ii⁶ Ah God! to see the branches stir
Across the moon at Grantchester!
7. I.e., Pan, Greek god of pastures, flocks, and
which Charon ferried the souls of the dead. *Hel-*

shepherds; half man and half goat, he played the *lespont*: the “Sea of Helle”—now known as the reed flute. *Faun*: Roman mythological figure Dardanelles—between Bulgaria and Turkey; (Greek satyr), also half man and half goat, associated with nature. *Naiad*: a nymph (i.e., Greek

1. Geoffrey Chaucer (ca. 1343-1400; see pp. 19-70), who set “The Reeve’s Tale” at the border of (Greek satyr) associated with lakes, rivers, springs, and Cambridge and Grantchester, near a mill. *Dan*: fountains.

master, sir (archaic).

8. “Byron’s Pool,” a favorite bathing place in the

2. Alfred, Lord Tennyson (1809-1892; see pp. 982-1009).

bridge student) George Gordon, Lord Byron

3. Junior clergyman in the Church of England. (1788-1824; see pp. 833-63).

4. Clergyman in the Church of England with

9. One of the mythological rivers of Hades over responsibility for certain country parishes.

T H E S O L D I E R / 1 3 2 7

To smell the thrilling-sweet a n d rotten

U n f o r g e t t a b l e , u n f o r g o t t e n

120 R i v e r - s m e l l , a n d h e a r t h e b r e e z e

S o b b i n g in the little trees.
Say, do the e l m - c l u m p s greatly s t a n d
Still g u a r d i a n s of that holy land?
T h e c h e s t n u t s s h a d e, in reverend d r e a m ,
125 T h e y e t u n a c a d e m i c s t r e a m ?
Is dawn a secret shy a n d cold
A n a d y o m e n e, 5 silver-gold?
A n d s u n s e t still a golden s e a
F r o m H a s l i n g f i e l d t o M a d i n g l e y ?
130 A n d after, ere the night is born,
D o h a r e s c o m e out a b o u t the corn?
O h, is the water sweet a n d cool,
G e n t l e a n d brown, above the pool?
A n d l a u g h s the i m m o r t a l river still
135 U n d e r the mill, u n d e r the mill?
Say, is there B e a u t y yet to find?
A n d C e r t a i n t y ? a n d Q u i e t kind?
D e e p m e a d o w s yet, for to forget
T h e l i e s, a n d truths, a n d p a i n ? ... **O h !** yet
140 S t a n d s the C h u r c h c l o c k at ten to three?
A n d is there h o n e y still for tea?

1 9 1 2 1 9 1 4

The Soldier

If I s h o u l d die, think only this of m e :
T h a t there's s o m e corner of a foreign field
T h a t is for ever E n g l a n d . T h e r e shall be
In that rich earth a richer d u s t c o n c e a l e d ;

**5 A dust w h o m E n g l a n d bore, s h a p e d , m a d e
aware,
G a v e , once, her flowers to love, her ways to r o a m ,
A body of England's, breathing English air,
W a s h e d by the rivers, blest by s u n s of h o m e .
A n d think, this heart, all evil s h e d away,
io A p u l s e in the eternal mind, no less
Gives s o m e w h e r e b a c k the t h o u g h t s by E n g l a
n d given; H e r sights a n d s o u n d s ; d r e a m s h a p p
y as her day;
A n d laughter, learnt of friends; a n d g e n t l e n e s s ,
In hearts at p e a c e , u n d e r an E n g l i s h heaven.**

N o v e m b e r - D e c e m b e r 1 9 1 4 1 9 1 4

5. Rising (Greek); name given to the goddess Aphrodite, who rose (at her birth) from the sea.

1 3 2 8

M A R I A N N E M O O R E

1887-1972

To a Steam Roller

The illustration

is nothing to you without the application.

You lack half wit. You crush all the particles down
into close conformity, and then walk back and forth on them.

5 Sparkling chips of rock

are crushed down to the level of the parent block.

Were not "impersonal judgment in aesthetic
matters, a metaphysical impossibility,"¹ you
might fairly achieve

io it. As for butterflies, I can hardly conceive

of one's attending upon you, but to question
the congruence of the complement is vain, if it exists.

1915 1921

To a Chameleon²

Hid by the august foliage and fruit of the grape-vine
twine

your anatomy

round the pruned and polished stem,

5 Chameleon.

Fire laid upon

an emerald as long as

the Dark King's massy

one,

io could not snap the spectrum up for food as you have done.

1916 1921

The Fish

wade

through black jade.

Of the crow-blue mussel-shells, one keeps

adjusting the ash-heaps;

5 opening and shutting itself like

1. Quotation, slightly changed, from an article by

2. Originally published with the title "You are Like

the American music critic Lawrence Gilman

the Realistic Product of an Idealistic Search for

(1878-1939) in the April 1915 *New American*

Gold at the Foot of the Rainbow."

Review.

POETRY / 1 3 2 9

an

injured fan.

The barnacles which encrust the side

of the wave, cannot hide

10 there for the submerged shafts of the

sun,

split like spun

glass, move themselves with spotlight swiftness

into the crevices—

15 in and out, illuminating

the

turquoise sea

of bodies. The water drives a wedge

of iron through the iron edge

20 of the cliff; whereupon the stars,

pink

rice-grains, ink-

bespattered jelly-fish, crabs like green

lilies, and submarine

25 toadstools, slide each on the other.

All

e x t e r n a l

marks of abuse are present on this

defiant edifice—

30 all the physical features of

ac-

cident—lack

of cornice, dynamite grooves, burns, and
hatchet strokes, these things stand
35 out on it; the chasm-side is
dead.

Repeated
evidence has proved that it can live
on what can not revive
40 its youth. The sea grows old in it.
1918 1921, 1935

Poetry3

I, too, dislike it: there are things that are important beyond all
this
fiddle.

Reading it, however, with a perfect contempt for it, one
discovers in

3. Moore later cut this poem to the first three lines.

1 3 3 0 / M A R I A N N E M O O R E

it after all, a p l a c e for the g e n u i n e .

H a n d s that c a n grasp, eyes

5 that c a n dilate, hair that c a n rise

**if it m u s t , these things are i m p o r t a n t not b e c a u s e
e a h i g h - s o u n d i n g interpretation c a n b e p u t u p o
n t h e m b u t b e c a u s e they are u s e f u l . W h e n they
b e c o m e so derivative as to b e c o m e unintelligible, the
s a m e thing m a y be said for all of us, that we**

10 do not a d m i r e what

w e c a n n o t u n d e r s t a n d : the bat

**holding on u p s i d e down or in q u e s t of s o m e t h i n g
to**

eat, elephant pushing, a wild horse taking a roll,
a tireless wolf under a tree, the immortal critic
twitching his skin like a horse that feels a flea, the base-
15 ball fan, the statistician —

nor is it valid

to discriminate against "business documents
and school-books";⁴ all these phenomena
are important. One must make a distinction

however: when dragged into prominence by half
poets, the result is not poetry,

20 nor till the poets among us can be

"literalists of

the imagination"⁵ — above

insolence and triviality and can present

for inspection, "imaginary gardens with real toads
in them", shall we²⁵ have it. In the meantime, if
you demand on the one hand, the raw material of
poetry in

all its rawness and

that which is on the other hand

genuine, you are interested in poetry.

1919 1921

A Grave

Man looking into the sea,

taking the view from those who have as much right to
it as you have to it yourself,

it is human nature to stand in the middle of a
thing, but you cannot stand in the middle of this;

4. *Diary of Tolstoy* (Dutton), p. 84. 'Where the

p. 182. 'The limitation of [Blake's] view was from

boundary between prose and poetry lies, I shall

the very intensity of his vision; he was a too literal
never be able to understand. The question is raised
realist of imagination, as others are of nature; and
in manuals of style, yet the answer to it lies beyond
because he believed that the figures seen by the
me. Poetry is verse: prose is not verse. Or else
mind's eye, when exalted by inspiration, were "eter-
poetry is everything with the exception of business
nal existences," symbols of divine essences, he
documents and school books' " [Moore's note].
hated every grace of style that might obscure their
Leo Tolstoy (1828-1910), Russian novelist, phi-
lineaments' " [Moore's note], William Butler Yeats
losopher, and mystic.

(1865-1939; see pp. 1188-1211), Irish poet and
5. "Yeats: *Ideas of Good and Evil* (A. H. Bullen),
dramatist.

T H E S T E E P L E - J A C K / 1 3 3 1

**5 the sea has nothing to give but a well excavated
grave.**

**T h e f i r s t a n d i n a p r o c e s s i o n , e a c h w i t h a n e m
e r a l d t u r k e y - f o o t a t t h e t o p ,**

r e s e r v e d a s t h e i r c o n t o u r s , s a y i n g n o t h i n g ;

**r e p r e s s i o n , h o w e v e r , i s n o t t h e m o s t o b v i o u s
c h a r a c t e r i s t i c o f t h e s e a ; t h e s e a i s a c o l l e c t o r , q u i c k t o
r e t u r n a r a p a c i o u s l o o k .**

**10 T h e r e a r e o t h e r s b e s i d e s y o u w h o h a v e w o r n t h a t
l o o k —**

**w h o s e e x p r e s s i o n i s n o l o n g e r a p r o t e s t ; t h e f i s h n o
l o n g e r i n v e s t i g a t e t h e m**

for their bones have not lasted:

men lower nets, unconscious of the fact that they
are desecrating a grave,

and row quickly away — the blades of the oars

15 moving together like the feet of water-spiders as if
there were no such thing as death.

The wrinkles progress among themselves in a
phalanx 6 — beautiful under networks of foam,

and fade breathlessly while the sea rustles in and out of
the seaweed; the birds swim through the air at
top speed, emitting cat-calls as heretofore —

the tortoise-shell scurges about the feet of the
cliffs, in motion beneath them;

20 and the ocean, under the pulsation of
lighthouses and noise of bell-buoys,

advances as usual, looking as if it were not that ocean
in which dropped things are bound to sink —

in which if they turn and twist, it is neither with volition
nor

consciousness.

1921 1924, 1935

The Steeple-Jack

Revised, 1961

Diirer⁷ would have seen a reason for living

in a town like this, with eight stranded whales

to look at; with the sweet sea air coming into your house

on a fine day, from water etched

5 with waves as formal as the scales

on a fish.

O n e by o n e in two's and three's, the seagulls k e e p
flying b a c k a n d forth over the town clock,
or sailing a r o u n d the lighthouse without m o v i n g
their w i n g s —

io rising steadily with a slight
quiver of the b o d y — o r flock
m e w i n g where

a s e a the purple of the p e a c o c k ' s n e c k is
p a l e d to greenish azure as Diirer c h a n g e d

6. Compact body of troops. and engraver particularly gifted in rendering

7. Albrecht Diirer (1471 — 1528), German painter closely and meticulously observed detail.

1 3 3 2 / M A R I A N N E M O O R E

15 the pine green of the Tyrol⁸ to p e a c o c k b l u e a n d g
u i n e a gray.⁹ You c a n see a twenty-five-p o u n d
lobster; a n d f i s h n e t s a r r a n g e d

to dry. T h e

whirlwind fife-and-drum of the s t o r m b e n d s the salt

20 m a r s h grass, disturbs stars in the sky a n d the

star on the steeple; it is a privilege to see so

m u c h c o n f u s i o n . D i s g u i s e d b y w h a t

m i g h t s e e m the opposite, the sea-

side flowers a n d

25 trees are favored by the f o g so that you have

the tropics at first h a n d : the trumpet-vine,

fox-glove, giant s n a p - d r a g o n , a salpiglossis¹ that has

spots a n d stripes; morning-glories, gourds,

or moon-vines trained on fishing-twine

30 at the b a c k

door; cat-tails, flags, blueberries a n d spiderwort,
striped grass, lichens, sunflowers, asters, d a i s i e s —
yellow a n d crab-claw r a g g e d sailors with green b r a c
t s 2 — t o a d - p l a n t , p e t u n i a s , ferns; p i n k lilies,
blue

35 ones, tigers; p o p p i e s ; b l a c k sweet-peas.

T h e climate

is not right for the b a n y a n , frangipani, or

jack-fruit trees;³ or an exotic s e r p e n t

life. R i n g lizard a n d snake-skin for the foot, if you see
fit;

40 b u t here they've cats, not c o b r a s , to

k e e p down the rats. T h e diffident

little newt

with white pin-dots on b l a c k horizontal s p a c e d

out b a n d s lives here; yet there is n o t h i n g that

45 ambition c a n b u y or take away. T h e college s t u d e
n t

n a m e d A m b r o s e sits on the hillside

with his not-native b o o k s a n d hat

a n d s e e s b o a t s

at s e a p r o g r e s s white a n d rigid as if in

50 a groove. Liking an e l e g a n c e of which

the s o u r c e is not bravado, he knows by heart the a n t i
q u e

sugar-bowl s h a p e d s u m m e r - h o u s e o f

interlacing slats, a n d the pitch

of the c h u r c h

8. The mountainous western area of Austria.

ing dogwood).

9. The slate gray, speckled with white, of the

3. The banyan is an East Indian tree, some of guinea fowl.

whose branches send out trunks that grow down-

1. An herb with large, varicolored flowers that ward; frangipani is a tropical American shrub (red often have striking markings.

jasmine is a species); the jackfruit is a large East

2. Flowerlike leaves on some plants (e.g., flower-Indian tree with large edible fruit.

N o S W A N S o F I N E / 1 3 3 3

**55 spire, not true, 4 f r o m which a m a n in scarlet lets
down a rope as a spider spins a thread;**

**he m i g h t be part of a novel, but on the sidewalk a
sign says C. J. Poole, S t e e p l e J a c k ,**

in b l a c k a n d white; a n d one in red

60 a n d white says

**D a n g e r . T h e c h u r c h portico has f o u r fluted
c o l u m n s , e a c h a single piece of stone, m a d e
m o d e s t e r by white-wash. T h i s w o u l d be a fit haven
for**

waifs, children, a n i m a l s , prisoners,

**65 a n d p r e s i d e n t s w h o have repaid
sin-driven**

senators by not thinking a b o u t them. T h e

**p l a c e has a s c h o o l - h o u s e , a post-office in a
store, f i s h - h o u s e s , h e n - h o u s e s , a t h r e e - m a
s t e d 70 s c h o o n e r on**

the stocks. T h e hero, the student,

the steeple-jack, e a c h in his way,
is at h o m e .

I t c o u l d n o t b e d a n g e r o u s t o b e l i v i n g

75 i n a t o w n l i k e t h i s , o f s i m p l e p e o p l e ,

w h o h a v e a s t e e p l e - j a c k p l a c i n g d a n g e r - s i g n s b y t h e c h u r c h w h i l e h e i s g i l d i n g t h e s o l i d - p o i n t e d s t a r , w h i c h o n a s t e e p l e

s t a n d s f o r h o p e .

1932 1935,1961

No Swan So Fine

” N o w a t e r s o s t i l l a s t h e

d e a d f o u n t a i n s o f V e r s a i l l e s . “ 5 N o s w a n ,

w i t h s w a r t b l i n d l o o k a s k a n c e

a n d g o n d o l i e r i n g l e g s , 6 s o f i n e

5 a s t h e c h i n t z c h i n a o n e w i t h f a w n -

b r o w n e y e s a n d t o o t h e d g o l d

c o l l a r o n t o s h o w w h o s e b i r d i t w a s .

L o d g e d i n t h e L o u i s F i f t e e n t h

c a n d e l a b r u m - t r e e 7 o f c o c k s c o m b -

I O t i n t e d b u t t o n s , d a h l i a s ,

s e a - u r c h i n s , a n d e v e r l a s t i n g s , 8

i t p e r c h e s o n t h e b r a n c h i n g f o a m

4. Not placed or fitted accurately.

7. “A pair of Louis XV candelabra with Dresden

5. “Percy Phillip, *New York Times Magazine*, May figures of swans belonging to Lord Balfour”

10, 1931” [Moore’s note]. Famed palace of French [Moore’s note].

kings, including Louis XV, in the late seventeenth

8. Plants with flowers that may be dried without
and early eighteenth centuries; now a museum.
losing their form or color; also, the flowers from
6. Italian gondoliers paddle from the stern to pro-
such plants.
pel their gondolas.

1 3 3 4 / M A R I A N N E M O O R E

of polished sculptured
flowers—at ease and tall. The king is dead.

1932 1935, 1951

What Are Years?

What is our innocence,
what is our guilt? All are
naked, none is safe. And whence
is courage: the unanswered question,
5 the resolute doubt,—
dumbly calling, deafly listening—that
in misfortune, even death,
encourages others
and in its defeat, stirs
io the soul to be strong? He
sees deep and is glad, who
accedes to mortality
and in his imprisonment rises
upon himself as
15 the sea in a chasm, struggling to be
free and unable to be,
in its surrendering

finds its continuing.
So he who strongly feels,
20 behaves. The very bird,
grown taller as he sings, steels
his form straight up. Though he is captive,
his mighty singing
says, satisfaction is a lowly
25 thing, how pure a thing is joy.

This is mortality,
this is eternity.

1931-39 1941

Nevertheless

you've seen a strawberry
that's had a struggle; yet
was, where the fragments met,
a hedgehog or a star-
5 fish for the multitude
of seeds. What better food

THE MIND IS AN ENCHANTING THING / 13
3 5

**than a p p l e - s e e d s — t h e fruit
within the f r u i t — l o c k e d i n
like c o u n t e r - c u r v e d twin
10 hazel-nuts? Frost that kills
the little rubber-plant-
leaves of *kok-saghyz-stalks*,⁹ can't
h a r m the roots; they still grow
in frozen ground. O n c e w h e r e**

15 there w a s a prickly-pear-
leaf clinging to b a r b e d wire,
a root shot d o w n to grow
in earth two f e e t below;
a s carrots f o r m m a n d r a k e s ‘
20 or a ram’s-horn root s o m e -
times. Victory won’t c o m e
to me u n l e s s I go
to it; a grape-tendrill
ties a knot in knots till
25 knotted thirty t i m e s , — s o
the b o u n d twig that’s under-
g o n e a n d over-gone, can’t stir.
T h e w e a k o v e r c o m e s i t s
m e n a c e , the strong over-
30 c o m e s itself. W h a t is there
like fortitude! W h a t s a p
went t h r o u g h that little thread
to m a k e the cherry red!

1944

The Mind Is an Enchanting Thing
is an e n c h a n t e d thing
like the glaze on a
katydid-wing
subdivided by s u n
5 till the nettings are legion.
Like G i e s e k i n g playing Scarlatti;2

9. Russian dandelions. German (French-born) pianist, was famous for his

1. Medicinal plants with forked roots. renditions of the music of the Italian composer 2. Walter Wilhelm Giesecking (1895-1956), Domenico Scarlatti (1685-1757).

1 3 3 6 / E D W I N M U I R

like the apteryx-aw13

as a beak, or the

kiwi's rain-shawl

10 of haired feathers, the mind

feeling its way as though blind,

walks along with its eyes on the ground.

It has memory's ear

that can hear without

15 having to hear.

Like the gyroscope's fall,

truly unequivocal

because trued0 by regnant0 certainty, *balanced / authoritative*

it is a power of

20 strong enchantment. It

is like the dove-

neck animated by

sun; it is memory's eye;

it's conscientious inconsistency.

25

It tears off the veil; tears

the temptation, the

mist the heart wears,

from its eyes—if the heart

has a face; it takes apart

30

dejection. It's fire in the dove-neck's

iridescence; in the

inconsistencies

of Scarlatti.

Unconfusion submits

35 its confusion to proof; it's

not a Herod's oath⁴ that cannot change.

1944

EDWIN MUIR

1887-1959

Childhood

Long time he lay upon the sunny hill,

To his father's house below securely bound.

Far off the silent, changing sound was still,

With the black islands lying thick **a r o u n d .**

3. New Zealand bird, related to the kiwi, with an

filled an oath to Salome by having John the Baptist

awl-shaped beak.

beheaded. Cf. Mark 6.22-27.

4. Herod, ruler of Judea under the Romans, ful-

T H E R E T U R N O F T H E G R E E K S / 1 3 3 7

5 He saw each separate height, each vaguer hue,

Where the massed islands rolled in mist away,

And though all ran together in his view

He knew that unseen straits between them lay.

Often he wondered what new shores were there.

10 In thought he saw the still light on the sand,
The shallow water clear in tranquil air,
And walked through it in joy from strand to strand.
Over the sound a ship so slow would pass
That in the black hill's gloom it seemed to lie.
15 The evening sound was smooth like sunken glass,
And time seemed finished ere the ship passed by.
Grey tiny rocks slept round him where he lay,
Moveless as they, more still as evening came,
The grasses threw straight shadows far away,
20 And from the house his mother called his name.
1925

The Return of the Greeks

The veteran Greeks came home
Sleepwandering from the war.¹
We saw the galleys come
Blundering over the bar.
5 Each soldier with his scar
In rags and tatters came home.
Reading the wall of Troy
Ten years without a change
Was such intense employ
io (Just out of the arrows' range),
All the world was strange
After ten years of Troy.
Their eyes knew every stone
In the huge heartbreaking wall
15 Year after year grown

Till there was nothing at all
But an alley steep and small,
Tramped earth and towering stone.

Now even the hills seemed low
20 In the boundless sea and land,
Weakened by distance so.

1. The Trojan War, during which the Greeks besieged the city of Troy for ten years (as described in Homer's *Iliad*).

1 3 3 8 / E D W I N M U I R

How could they understand
Space empty on every hand
And the hillock squat and low?
25 And when they arrived at last
They found a childish scene
Embosomed in the past,
And the war lying between—
A child's preoccupied scene
30 When they came home at last.
But everything trite and strange,
The peace, the parcelled ground,
The vine rows—never a change!
The past and the present bound
35 In one oblivious round
Past thinking trite and strange.
But for their grey-haired wives
And their sons grown shy and tall
They would have given their lives
40 To raise the battered wall

Again, if this was all
In spite of their sons and wives.
Penelope² in her tower
Looked down upon the show
45 And saw within an hour
Each man to his wife go,
Hesitant, sure and slow:
She, alone in her tower.

1946

Adam's Dream

They say the first dream Adam our father had
After his age long day dream in the Garden³
When heaven and sun woke in his wakening
mind, The earth with all its hills and woods
and waters,⁵ The friendly tribes of trees and
animals, And earth's last wonder Eve (the first
great dream Which is the ground of every
dream since then) —

They say he dreamt lying on the naked
ground, The gates shut fast behind him as he
lay
io Fallen in Eve's fallen arms, his terror
drowned In her engulfing terror, in the
abyss

2. Wife of Odysseus, a Greek leader who took
Adam and Eve were expelled from the Garden of
another ten years to return home (as described in
Eden because they ate the fruit of the one tree
the *Odyssey*).

forbidden to them by God (the tree of the knowl-
3. I.e., after the Fall. According to Genesis 2—3,
edge of good and evil).

ADAM'S DREAM / 1339

Whence there's no further fall, and comfort is—
That he was standing on a rocky ledge
High on the mountainside, bare crag behind,
15 In front a plain as far as eye could reach,
And on the plain a few small figures running
That were like men and women, yet were so far away
He could not see their faces. On they ran,
And fell, and rose again, and ran, and fell,
20 And rising were the same yet not the same,
Identical or interchangeable,
Different in indifference. As he looked
Still there were more of them, the plain was filling
As by an alien arithmetical magic
25 Unknown in Eden, a mechanical
Addition without meaning, joining only
Number to number in no mode or order,
Weaving no pattern. For these creatures moved
Towards no fixed mark even when in growing bands
BO They clashed against each other and clashing fell
In mounds of bodies. For they rose again,
Identical or interchangeable,
And went their way that was not like a way;
Some back and forward, back and forward, some
35 In a closed circle, wide or narrow, others
In zigzags on the sand. Yet all were busy,
And tense with purpose as they cut the air
Which seemed to press them back. Sometimes they paused

While one stopped one—fortuitous assignments
40 In the disorder, whereafter two by two
They ran awhile,
Then parted and again were single. Some
Ran straight against the frontier of the plain
Till the horizon drove them back. A few
45 Stood still and never moved. Then Adam cried
Out of his dream, “What are you doing there?”
And the crag answered “Are you doing there?”
“What are you doing there?”—“you doing there?”
The animals had withdrawn and from the caves
50 And woods stared out in fear or condemnation,
Like outlaws or like judges. All at once
Dreaming or half-remembering, “This is time,”
Thought Adam in his dream, and time was strange
To one lately in Eden. “I must see,”
55 He cried, “the faces. Where are the faces? Who
Are you all out there?” Then in his changing dream
He was a little nearer, and he saw
They were about some business strange to him
That had a form and sequence past their knowledge;
60 And that was why they ran so frenziedly.
Yet all, it seemed, made up a story, illustrated
By these the living, the unknowing, cast
Each singly for his part. But Adam longed
1 3 4 0 / T . S . ELIOT
For more, not this mere moving pattern, not
65 This illustrated storybook of mankind

Always a-making, improvised on nothing.
At that he was among them, and saw each face
Was like his face, so that he would have hailed them
As sons of God but that something restrained him.
70 And he remembered all, Eden, the Fall,
The Promise, and his place, and took their hands
That were his hands, his and his children's hands,
Cried out and was at peace, and turned again
In love and grief in Eve's encircling arms.

1950, 1952

T. S. E L I O T

1888-1965

The Love Song of J. Alfred Prufrock

S'io credesse che mia risposta fosse

A persona che mai tornasse al mondo,

Questafiamma staria senza piu scosse.

Ma perciocche giammai di questo fondo

Non torno vivo alcun, s'i'odo il vero,

Senza tema d'infamia ti rispondo. |

Let us go then, you and I,

When the evening is spread out against the sky

Like a patient etherised upon a table;

Let us go, through certain half-deserted streets,

5 The muttering retreats

Of restless nights in one-night cheap hotels

And sawdust restaurants with oyster-shells:

Streets that follow like a tedious argument

Of insidious intent

io To lead you to an overwhelming question ...

Oh, do not ask, "What is it?"

Let us go and make our visit.

In the room the women come and go

Talking of Michelangelo.

15 The yellow fog that rubs its back upon the window-panes,

The yellow smoke that rubs its muzzle on the window-panes

Licked its tongue into the corners of the evening,

Lingered upon the pools that stand in drains,

1. Dante, *Inferno* 27.61—66. These words are spo-

return to the world, / this flame would stand still

ken by Guido da Montefeltro, whom Dante has

without moving any further. / But since never from

encountered among the false counselors (each

this abyss / has anyone ever returned alive, if what

spirit is concealed within a flame): "If I thought my

I hear is true, / without fear of infamy I answer

answer were given / to anyone who would ever

you."

**THE LOVESONG OF J. ALFRED PRUFRO
CK / 1341**

Let fall upon its back the soot that falls from chimneys,

20 Slipped by the terrace, made a sudden leap,

And seeing that it was a soft October night,

Curled once about the house, and fell asleep.

And indeed there will be time²

For the yellow smoke that slides along the street,

25 Rubbing its back upon the window-panes;

There will be time, there will be time
To prepare a face to meet the faces that you meet;
There will be time to murder and create,
And time for all the works and days³ of hands
30 That lift and drop a question on your plate;
Time for you and time for me,
And time yet for a hundred indecisions,
And for a hundred visions and revisions,
Before the taking of a toast and tea.
35 In the room the women come and go
Talking of Michelangelo.
And indeed there will be time
To wonder, “Do I dare?” and, “Do I dare?”
Time to turn back and descend the stair,
40 With a bald spot in the middle of my hair—
[They will say: “How his hair is growing thin!”]
My morning coat, my collar mounting firmly to the chin,
My necktie rich and modest, but asserted by a simple pin—
[They will say: “But how his arms and legs are thin!”]
45 Do I dare
Disturb the universe?
In a minute there is time
For decisions and revisions which a minute will reverse.
For I have known them all already, known them all—
50 Have known the evenings, mornings, afternoons,
I have measured out my life with coffee spoons;
I know the voices dying with a dying fall⁴
Beneath the music from a farther room.

So how should I presume?

55 And I have known the eyes already, known them all—

The eyes that fix you in a formulated phrase,

And when I am formulated, sprawling on a pin,

When I am pinned and wriggling on the wall,

Then how should I begin

60 To spit out all the butt-ends of my days and ways?

And how should I presume?

2. Cf. Andrew Marvell, “To His Coy Mistress,”

farming and family life.

line 1 (p. 478).

4. Cf. Shakespeare, *Twelfth Night* 1.1.1-4: “If

3. *Works and Days*, by the Greek poet Hesiod

music be the food of love, play on... . That strain

(eighth century B.C.E.), is a didactic poem about

again, it had a dying fall.”

1 3 4 2 / T . S . E L I O T

**A n d I h a v e k n o w n t h e a r m s a l r e a d y , k n o w n t h e m
a l l —**

A r m s t h a t a r e b r a c e l e t e d a n d w h i t e a n d b a r e

[B u t i n t h e l a m p l i g h t , d o w n e d w i t h l i g h t b r o w n h a i r !]

65 I s i t p e r f u m e f r o m a d r e s s

T h a t m a k e s m e s o d i g r e s s ?

A r m s t h a t l i e a l o n g a t a b l e , o r w r a p a b o u t a s h a w l .

A n d s h o u l d I t h e n p r e s u m e ?

A n d h o w s h o u l d I b e g i n ?

**70 S h a l l I s a y , I h a v e g o n e a t d u s k t h r o u g h n a r r o w
s t r e e t s**

A n d w a t c h e d t h e s m o k e t h a t r i s e s f r o m t h e p i p e s

Of lonely men in shirt-sleeves, leaning out of windows
? ...

It should have been a pair of ragged claws

Scuttling across the floors of silent seas.

75 And the afternoon, the evening, sleeps so peacefully!

Smoothed by long fingers,

Asleep ... tired ... or it malingers,

Stretched on the floor, here beside you and me.

Should I, after tea and cakes and ices,

so have the strength to force the moment to its crisis?

But though I have wept and fasted, wept and prayed,

Though I have seen my head [grown slightly bald]
brought in upon a platter,

I am no prophet — and here's no great matter;

I have seen the moment of my greatness flicker,

85 And I have seen the eternal Footman hold my coat,
and snicker, and in short, I was afraid.

And would it have been worth it, after all,

After the cups, the marmalade, the tea,

Among the porcelain, among some talk of you
and me, 90 Would it have been worth while,

To have bitten off the matter with a smile,

To have squeezed the universe into a ball

To roll it toward some overwhelming question,

To say: "I am Lazarus, 7 come from the dead,

95 Come back to tell you all, I shall tell you all" —

If one, settling a pillow by her head,

S h o u l d s a y : ” T h a t i s n o t w h a t I m e a n t a t a l l .

T h a t i s n o t i t , a t a l l .”

5. The head of John the Baptist was presented to 6. Cf. “To His Coy Mistress,” lines 41-44.

Salome on a plate at her request (Mark 6.17-20, 7. On the resurrection of Lazarus, see John 11.1 —

Matthew 14.3-11). 44, Luke 16.19-31.

**T H E L O V E S O N G O F J . A L F R E D P R U F R O
C K / 1 3 4 3**

**A n d w o u l d i t h a v e b e e n w o r t h i t , a f t e r a l l ,
100 W o u l d i t h a v e b e e n w o r t h w h i l e ,**

**A f t e r t h e s u n s e t s a n d t h e d o o r y a r d s a n d t h e
e s p r i n k l e d s t r e e t s , A f t e r t h e n o v e l s , a f t e r
r t h e t e a c u p s , a f t e r t h e s k i r t s t h a t t r a i l a l o n g
t h e f l o o r —**

A n d t h i s , a n d s o m u c h m o r e ? —

I t i s i m p o s s i b l e t o s a y j u s t w h a t I m e a n !

**105 B u t a s i f a m a g i c l a n t e r n t h r e w t h e n e r v e
s i n p a t t e r n s o n a s c r e e n : W o u l d i t h a v e b e e n
w o r t h w h i l e**

**I f o n e , s e t t l i n g a p i l l o w o r t h r o w i n g o f f a s h
a w l , A n d t u r n i n g t o w a r d t h e w i n d o w , s h o u l d
s a y :**

” T h a t i s n o t i t a t a l l ,

n o T h a t i s n o t w h a t I m e a n t , a t a l l .”

**N o ! I a m n o t P r i n c e H a m l e t , n o r w a s m e a n t t o
b e ; A m a n a t t e n d a n t l o r d , o n e t h a t w i l l d o**

**T o s w e l l a p r o g r e s s , 8 s t a r t a s c e n e o r t w o , A
d v i s e t h e p r i n c e ; n o d o u b t , a n e a s y t o o l , 115
D e f e r e n t i a l , g l a d t o b e o f u s e ,**

P o l i t i c , c a u t i o u s , a n d m e t i c u l o u s ;

**F u l l o f h i g h s e n t e n c e , 0 b u t a b i t o b t u s e ;
sententiousness A t t i m e s , i n d e e d , a l m o s t r i d i c u**

l o u s —

A l m o s t , a t t i m e s , t h e F o o l .

120 I g r o w o l d . . . I g r o w o l d . . .

I s h a l l w e a r t h e b o t t o m s o f m y t r o u s e r s r o l l e d .

S h a l l I p a r t m y h a i r b e h i n d ? D o I d a r e t o e a t a p e a c h ?

I s h a l l w e a r w h i t e f l a n n e l t r o u s e r s , a n d w a l k u p o n t h e b e a c h .

I h a v e h e a r d t h e m e r m a i d s s i n g i n g , e a c h t o e a c h .

125 I d o n o t t h i n k t h a t t h e y w i l l s i n g t o m e .

I h a v e s e e n t h e m r i d i n g s e a w a r d o n t h e w a v e s C o m b i n g t h e w h i t e h a i r o f t h e w a v e s b l o w n b a c k W h e n t h e w i n d b l o w s t h e w a t e r w h i t e a n d b l a c k .

W e h a v e l i n g e r e d i n t h e c h a m b e r s o f t h e s e a 130 B y s e a - g i r l s w r e a t h e d w i t h s e a w e e d r e d a n d b r o w n T i l l h u m a n v o i c e s w a k e u s , a n d w e d r o w n .

1910-11 1915,1917

8. Journey made by a royal court, often depicted in Elizabethan drama, in which the Fool (line 119) was also a fixture.

1 3 4 4 / T . S . E L I O T

The Waste Land⁹

” N a m S i b y l l a m q u i d e m C u m i s e g o i p s e o c u l i s m e i s v i d i i n a m p u l l a p e n d e r e , e t c u m i l l i p u e r i d i c e r e n t : 2iBuA.A.a TI 0E?IEI5 r e s p o n d e b a -

tilla: djTO0au£iv QkXm.“1

F O R E Z R A P O U N D

IL MIGLIOR FABBRO.2

*I. The Burial of the Dead*³

April is the cruellest month, breeding⁴

Lilacs out of the dead land, mixing

Memory and desire, stirring

Dull roots with spring rain.

5 Winter kept us warm, covering

Earth in forgetful snow, feeding

A little life with dried tubers.

**Summers surprised us, coming over the Sta
rnberger see**⁵

**With a shower of rain; we stopped in the col
onnade, io And went on in sunlight, into the
e Hofgarten, And drank coffee, and talked
for an hour.**

**Bin gar keine Russin, stamm' aus Litauen,
echt deutsch.**⁶

**And when we were children, staying at the
arch-duke's, My cousin's, he took me out to
nasled,**

15 And I was frightened. He said, Marie,

Marie, hold on tight. And down we went.

In the mountains, there you feel free.

**I read, much of the night, and go south in the
winter.**

**What are the roots that clutch, what branches
grow 20 Out of this stony rubbish? Son
of man,**⁷

**You cannot say, or guess, for you know only
A heap of broken images, where the sun beats,
And the dead tree gives no shelter, the
cricket no relief,**⁸

A n d t h e d r y s t o n e n o s o u n d o f w a t e r . O n l y 9.
On its publication in book form, T. S. Eliot pro-you want?' she replied, 'I want to die.' ” From

vided *The Waste Land* with many (and perhaps Petronius (d. 66), *Satyricon*, chapter 48. The Sibyl sometimes parodic) notes. They begin: “Not only of Cumae, a prophetess of the god Apollo, was the title, but the plan and a good deal of the inci-immortal but not eternally young.

dental symbolism of the poem were suggested by
2. The better craftsman (Italian). So the poet Miss Jessie L. Weston’s book on the Grail legend: Guido Guinizelli characterizes the Provençal poet *From Ritual to Romance* (Cambridge, [1902]).

Arnaut Daniel in Dante’s *Purgatorio* 26.117.

Indeed, so deeply am I indebted, Miss Weston’s

3. The burial service of the Anglican Church.

book will elucidate the difficulties of the poem

4. Perhaps an echo of Chaucer, “General Pro-much better than my notes can do; and I recom-logue” to *The Canterbury Tales*, line 1 (p. 19).

mend it (apart from the great interest of the book

5. Lake a few miles south of Munich. The Hof-itself) to any who think such elucidation of the

garten (line 10) is a public garden in Munich,

poem worth the trouble. To another work of partly surrounded by a colonnaded walk.

anthropology I am indebted in general, one which

6. I am certainly no Russian, I come from Lithu-

has influenced our generation profoundly; I mean
ania, a true German (German).

The Golden Bough [by Sir James Frazer; 12 vol-
7. “Cf. Ezekiel II, i” [Eliot’s note], where God
umes, 1890-1915]; I have used especially the two
addresses Ezekiel: “Son of man, stand upon thy
volumes *Adonis, Attis, Osiris*. Anyone who is
feet, and I will speak unto thee.”

acquainted with these works will immediately rec-
8. “Cf. Ecclesiastes XII, v” [Eliot’s note], a
ognize in the poem certain references to vegetation
description of times of fear and death, when “the
ceremonies [i.e., fertility rites].”

grasshopper shall be a burden, and desire shall
1. “For indeed I myself have seen, with my own
fail.” The passage continues, “Then shall the dust
eyes, the Sibyl hanging in a bottle at Cumae, and
return to the earth as it was” (12.7); cf. line 30
when those boys would say to her: ‘Sibyl, what do
below.

T H E W A S T E L A N D / 1 3 5 5

25 T h e r e i s s h a d o w u n d e r t h i s r e d r o c k ,
(C o m e i n u n d e r t h e s h a d o w o f t h i s r e d r o c k),⁹
A n d I w i l l s h o w y o u s o m e t h i n g d i f f e r e n t f r o m
e i t h e r
Y o u r s h a d o w a t m o r n i n g s t r i d i n g b e h i n d y o u
O r y o u r s h a d o w a t e v e n i n g r i s i n g t o m e e t y o u ;
30 I w i l l s h o w y o u f e a r i n a h a n d f u l o f d u s t .

Frisch weht der Wind

Der Heimat zu

Mein Irisch Kind,

Wo weilest du?1

35 “You gave me hyacinth s first a year ago ;

“They called me the hyacinth girl.”

— Y e t w h e n w e c a m e back, late, f r o m the H y a c i
n t h g a r d e n , Y o u r a r m s full, a n d your hair wet, I c o
u l d not

S p e a k , a n d my eyes failed, I w a s neither

40 Living nor dead, a n d I k n e w nothing,

L o o k i n g into the heart of light, the silence.

Oed' und leer das Meer.2

M a d a m e Sosostris,3 f a m o u s clairvoyante,

H a d a b a d cold, nevertheless

45 I s k n o w n to be the wisest w o m a n in E u r o p e ,

With a w i c k e d p a c k of c a r d s . 4 H e r e , said she,

I s your card, the d r o w n e d P h o e n i c i a n Sailor,

(T h o s e are pearls that were his eyes.5 L o o k !)

H e r e is B e l l a d o n n a , the L a d y of the R o c k s ,

50 T h e lady of situations.

H e r e is the m a n with three staves, a n d here the W h e e
l ,

A n d here is the one-eyed m e r c h a n t , a n d this card,

W h i c h is blank, is s o m e t h i n g he carries on his back,

W h i c h I a m f o r b i d d e n to see. I do not find

55 T h e H a n g e d M a n . F e a r d e a t h by water.

I s e e c r o w d s of p e o p l e , walking r o u n d in a ring.

T h a n k you. If you s e e d e a r M r s . E q u i t o n e ,

Tell her I bring the h o r o s c o p e myself:

O n e m u s t b e s o c a r e f u l t h e s e d a y s .

60 U n r e a l C i t y , 6

U n d e r t h e b r o w n f o g o f a w i n t e r d a w n ,

9. Cf. Isaiah's prophecy of a Messiah who will befits my purpose in two ways: because he is associated in my mind with the Hanged God of Frazer, a great rock in a weary land" (Isaiah 32.2).

and because I associate him with the hooded figure

1. "V. *Tristan und Isolde*, I, verses 5—8" [Eliot's note]. The sailor's song from an opera by the

V. The Phoenician Sailor and the Merchant appear German composer Richard Wagner (1813-1883):

later; also the 'crowds of people' and Death by "Frjsh blows the wind / Toward home. / My Irish Water is executed in Part IV. The Man with Three child, / Where are you waiting?"

Staves (an authentic member of the Tarot pack) I

2. "Id. Ill, verse 24" [Eliot's note]. Empty and associate, quite arbitrarily, with the Fisher King waste the sea (German); i.e., the ship bringing himself" [Eliot's note]. The tarot cards are used in Isolde back to the dying Tristan is nowhere in fortune-telling; some of the figures named in the sight.

following lines come from tarot decks.

3. A pseudo-Egyptian name assumed by a fortune-teller in the English writer Aldous Huxley's novel "Full fathom five thy father lies." *Phoenician Chrome Yellow* (1921).

Sailor: the Phoenicians were seagoing merchants

4. "I am not familiar with the exact constitution (cf. "Mr. Eugenides," line 209, and "Phlebas the Phoenician," line 312).

ously departed to suit my own convenience. The

6. "Cf. Baudelaire: 'Fourmillante cite, cite pleine Hanged Man, a member of the traditional pack, de reves, / Ou le spectre en plein jour raccroche le

1 3 4 6 / T . S . E L I O T

A crowd flowed over London Bridge, so many,

I had not thought death had undone so many.⁷

Sighs, short and infrequent, were exhaled,⁸

65 And each man fixed his eyes before his feet.

Flowed up the hill and down King William Street,

To where Saint Mary Woolnoth kept the hours

With a dead sound on the final stroke of nine.⁹

There I saw one I knew, and stopped him, crying: "Stetson!

70 "You who were with me in the ships at Mylae!1

"That corpse you planted last year in your garden,

"Has it begun to sprout? Will it bloom this year?

"Or has the sudden frost disturbed its bed?

"Oh keep the Dog far hence, that's friend to men,

75 “Or with his nails he’ll dig it up again!2

“You! hypocrite lecteur!—mon semblable,—mon frere!”3

*II. A Game of Chess*4

The Chair she sat in, like a burnished throne,5

Glowed on the marble, where the glass

Held up by standards wrought with fruited vines

so From which a golden Cupidon peeped out

(Another hid his eyes behind his wing)

Doubled the flames of sevenbranched candelabra6

Reflecting light upon the table as

The glitter of her jewels rose to meet it,

85 From satin cases poured in rich profusion;

In vials of ivory and coloured glass

Unstoppered, lurked her strange synthetic perfumes,

Unguent,0 powdered, or liquid—troubled, confused *ointment*

And drowned the sense in odours; stirred by the air

90 That freshened from the window, these ascended

In fattening the prolonged candle-flames,

passant’ ” [Eliot’s note]. Swarming city, city filled

B.C.E.), the Romans defeated the Carthaginians.

with dreams, / Where the specter in broad daylight

2. “Cf. the Dirge in Webster’s *White Devil* [1612]”

accosts the passerby (French); from one of the

[Eliot’s note]. In the English dramatist John Web-

poems in the French poet Charles Baudelaire’s *Les*

ster’s play, the song is sung by a crazed mother,

Fleurs du mal (1857).

who has witnessed one son murder another, and

7. “Cf. *Inferno* III, 55-57: ‘si lunga tratta / di ends, “But keep the wolf far thence, that’s foe to gente, ch’ io non avrei mai creduto / che morte men; / For with his nails he’ll dig them up again” tanta n’avesse disfatta’ ” [Eliot’s note]. On his arrival (5.4.97-98).

val in the *Inferno*, Dante sees the vast crowd, “such

3. “V. Baudelaire, Preface to *Fleurs du mal*” a long procession of people, that I would never [Eliot’s note]. Hypocrite reader!—my likeness,— have believed that death had undone so many” my brother! (French); last line of the prefatory (Italian).

poem, “Au lecteur” (“To the Reader”).

8. “Cf. *Inferno* IV, 25—27: ‘Quivi, secondo che per

4. The title alludes to two plays by the English ascoltare, / non avea pianto, ma’ che di sospiri, / dramatist Thomas Middleton, *A Game of Chess* che l’aura eterna facevan tremare’ ” [Eliot’s note].

(1627) and *Women Beware Women* (1657), both Dante descends into the first circle of Hell, filled of which involve sexual intrigue. In the second, a with virtuous pagans condemned to Limbo game of chess is used to mark a seduction, the because they had lived before Christianity: “Here, moves in the game paralleling its steps.

if one trusted to hearing, there was no weeping but

5. “Cf. *Antony and Cleopatra*, II, ii, 1 [line] 190”

so many sighs as caused the everlasting air to trem-
[Eliot's note]. Eliot's language recalls the passage
ble" (Italian).

in Shakespeare that describes Cleopatra's first
9. "A phenomenon which I have often noticed"
meeting with Antony, which begins: "The barge
[Eliot's note]. The church and the other London
she sat in, like a burnished throne / Burned on the
sites are in the City, London's financial and busi-
water."
ness center.

6. The Menorah, used in Jewish worship.

1. Sicilian seaport; at the battle of Mylae (260

i

THE WASTELAND / 135 5

Flung their smoke into the laquearia, 7

Stirring the pattern on the coffered ceiling . with recessed panels Hugesea-wood fed with copper

95 Burned green and orange, framed by the coloured stone, In which sad light a carved dolphinswam.

Above the antique mantel was displayed

As though a window gave upon the sylvan scene 8

The change of Philomel, by the barbarous king 9

100 So rudely forced; yet there the nightingale 1

Filled all the desert with inviolable voice
And still she cried, and still the world pursues,

”Jug Jug” 2 to dirty years.

And other withered stumps of time

105 Were told upon the walls; staring forms
Leaned out, leaning, hushing the room enclosed.

Footsteps shuffled on the stair.

Under the firelight, under the brush, her hair
Spread out in fiery points

no Glow ed into words, then would be savagely still.

”My nerves are bad to-night. Yes, bad. Stay with me.

”Speak to me. Why do you never speak. Speak.

”What are you thinking of? What thinking? What?”

”I never know what you are thinking. Think.”

us I think we are in rats’ alley ^

Where the dead men lost their bones.

”What is that noise?”

The wind under the door. 4

”What is that noise now? What is the wind doing?”

120 Nothing again nothing.

”Do

”You know nothing? Do you see nothing? Do you remember

”Nothing?”

I r e m e m b e r

125 T h o s e a r e p e a r l s t h a t w e r e h i s e y e s . 5

**” A r e y o u a l i v e , o r n o t ? I s t h e r e n o t h i n g i n y
o u r h e a d ? ”**

B u t

O O O O t h a t S h a k e s p e h e r i a n R a g —

I t ’ s s o e l e g a n t

7. “Laquearia. V. *Aeneid*, I, 726: dependent lychni
To avenge her, his wife, Procne, murdered her son
laquearibus aureis / Incensi, et noctem flammis
and fed him to Tereus. All three were changed into
funalia vincunt” [Eliot’s note]. Lighted lamps hang
birds: the sisters into the nightingale and swallow,
from the golden paneled ceiling [*laquearia*], and
Tereus into the hoopoe pursuing them.

the torches conquer the night with their flames

1. “Cf. Part III, 1 [ine] 204” [Eliot’s note],
(Latin); description of the banquet hall where Dido
2. In Elizabethan poetry, the conventional render-
welcomes Aeneas to Carthage (her passion for the
ing of the nightingale’s song.

visitor, like Cleopatra’s, ended in suicide).

3. “Cf. Part III, 1 [ine] 195” [Eliot’s note],

8. “Sylvan scene. V. Milton, *Paradise Lost*, IV,

4. “Cf. Webster: ‘Is the wind in that door still?’ ”

140” [Eliot’s note]. The phrase occurs in the
[Eliot’s note], referring to John Webster’s play *The*
description of Eden as first seen by Satan.

Devil's Law Case (1623) 3.2.162. In context, the

9. "V. Ovid, *Metamorphoses*, VI, Philomela"

speaker is asking if someone is still alive.

[Eliot's note]. Ovid describes how Tereus raped his

5. "Cf. Part I, 11. 37, 48" [Eliot's note]. See note

sister-in-law, Philomela, and cut out her tongue.

5, p. 1345.

1 3 4 8 / T . S . E L I O T

BO So intelligent⁶

"What shall I do now? What shall I do?"

"I shall rush out as I am, and walk the street

"With my hair down, so. What shall we do tomorrow?

"What shall we ever do?"

135 The hot water at ten.

And if it rains, a closed car at four.

And we shall play a game of chess,

Pressing lidless eyes and waiting for a knock upon the door.⁷

When Lil's husband got demobbed,⁸ I said—

MO I didn't mince my words, I said to her myself,

HURRY UP PLEASE ITS TIME⁹

Now Albert's coming back, make yourself a bit smart.

He'll want to know what you done with that money he gave
you

To get yourself some teeth. He did, I was there.

145 You have them all out, Lil, and get a nice set,

He said, I swear, I can't bear to look at you.

And no more can't I, I said, and think of poor Albert,

He's been in the army four years, he wants a good time,

And if you don't give it him, there's others will, I said.

150 Oh is there, she said. Something o' that, I said.

Then I'll know who to thank, she said, and give me a straight look.

H U R R Y UP PLEASE ITS TIME

If you don't like it you can get on with it, I said.

Others can pick and choose if you can't.

155 But if Albert makes off, it won't be for lack of telling.

You ought to be ashamed, I said, to look so antique.

(And her only thirty-one.)

I can't help it, she said, pulling a long face,

It's them pills I took, to bring it off,¹ she said.

160 (She's had five already, and nearly died of young George.)

The chemist⁰ said it would be all right, but I've never been
druggist

the same.

You *are* a proper fool, I said.

Well, if Albert won't leave you alone, there it is, I said,

What you get married for if you don't want children?

165 H U R R Y UP PLEASE ITS TIME

Well, that Sunday Albert was home, they had a hot

g a m m o n , 0 smoked ham

And they asked me in to dinner, to get the beauty of it hot—

HURRY UP PLEASE ITS TIME

H U R R Y UP PLEASE ITS TIME

170 Goonight Bill. Goonight Lou. Goonight May. Goonight.

Ta ta. Goonight. Goonight.

Good night, ladies, good night, sweet ladies, good night, good night.²

6. Cf. the chorus to “The Shakespearian Rag,” a

9. Typical call of a British bartender to clear the popular song from 1912: “That Shakespearian bar at closing time.

Rag, most intelligent, very elegant.”

1. To cause an abortion.

7. “Cf. the game of chess in Middleton’s *Women*

2. Cf. Ophelia’s farewell before drowning (*Hamlet Beware Women* ” [Eliot’s note].

4.5.69—70) and the popular song lyric “Good night

8. Demobilized (discharged from military service) ladies, we’re going to leave you now.”

after World War I.

THE WASTELAND / 1355

III. The Fire Sermon³

The river’s tent is broken: the last fingers of leaf

Clutch and sink into the wet bank. The wind

175 Crosses the brown land, unheard. The nymphs are departed

Sweet Thames, run softly, till I end my song.⁴

The river bears no empty bottles, sandwich papers,

Silk handkerchiefs, cardboard boxes, cigarette ends

Or other testimony of summer nights. The nymphs are departed.

180 And their friends, the loitering heirs of city directors;

Departed, have left no addresses.

By the waters of Leman I sat down and wept⁵ ...

Sweet Thames, run softly till I end my song,

Sweet Thames, run softly, for I speak not loud or long.

185 But at my back in a cold blast I hear⁶
 The rattle of the bones, and chuckle spread from ear to ear.
 A rat crept softly through the vegetation
 Dragging its slimy belly on the bank
 While I was fishing in the dull canal
 190 On a winter evening round behind the gashouse
 Musing upon the king my brother's wreck⁷
 And on the king my father's death before him.
 White bodies naked on the low damp ground
 And bones cast in a little low dry garret,
 195 Rattled by the rat's foot only, year to year.
 But at my back from time to time I hear⁸
 The sound of horns and motors, which shall bring
 Sweeney to Mrs. Porter in the spring.⁹
 O the moon shone bright on Mrs. Porter
 200 And on her daughter
 They wash their feet in soda water¹
*Et O ces voix d'enfants, chantant dans la coupole!*²
 3. I.e., Buddha's Fire Sermon; see Eliot's note to
 den, listening, you shall hear, / A noise of horns
 line 309.
 and hunting, which shall bring / Actaeon to Diana
 4. "V. Spenser, *Prothalamion*" [Eliot's note]. The
 in the spring' " [Eliot's note]. In Greek mythology,
 line is the refrain of the marriage song by Edmund
 Actaeon saw Diana, chaste goddess of the hunt,
 Spenser (ca. 1552-1599; see pp. 159-205), a pas-
 naked as she bathed; the goddess changed him into

toral celebration of a wedding near the Thames, a stag, and his own hounds killed him. *The Parliament of Bees* is the best-known work of the Elizabethan dramatist John Day.

5. An echo of the exiled Jews mourning for their homeland (Psalm 137): “By the rivers of Babylon, which these lines are taken: it was reported to me from Sydney, Australia” [Eliot’s note]. The bawdy Lake Geneva, and much of *The Waste Land* was written at Lausanne, on its shore. *Leman* is also an archaic word for lover or mistress.

1. “I do not know the origin of the ballad from there we sat down, yea, we wept, when we remembered Zion.” Lac Leman is the French name for Lake Geneva, and much of *The Waste Land* was written at Lausanne, on its shore. *Leman* is also an archaic word for lover or mistress.

thoughtless sexual enterprise who figures in Eliot’s 6. Cf. Andrew Marvell, “To His Coy Mistress,” “Sweeney Among the Nightingales” and “Sweeney Agonistes.”

7. “Cf. *The Tempest*, I, ii” [Eliot’s note]. Just before Ariel sings “Full fathom five thy father lies” those children’s voices singing in the dome! (see line 48), Ferdinand describes himself as “sit- (French); last line of a sonnet by the French poet

ting on a bank, / Weeping again the King my
Paul Verlaine (1844-1896) that treats ironically
father's wreck. / This music crept by me upon the
the conquering of fleshly temptation. In Wagner's
waters."

opera *Parsifal*, the feet of the title character, a
8. "Cf. Marvell, *To His Coy Mistress*" [Eliot's note].
questing knight, are washed before he enters the
See line 185.

sanctuary of the Grail.

9. "Cf. Day, *Parliament of Bees*: "When of the sud-

1350 / T . S . E L I O T

Twit twit twit

Jug jug jug jug jug jug

205 So rudely forc'd.

Tereu³

Unreal City

Under the brown fog of a winter noon

Mr. Eugenides, the Smyrna⁰ m e r c h a n t *port in West Turkey*

210 Unshaven, with a pocket full of currants

C.i.f. London: documents at sight,⁴

Asked me in demotic⁵ French

To luncheon at the C a n n o n Street Hotel

Followed by a weekend at the Metropole.⁶

215 At the violet hour, when the eyes and back

Turn upward from the desk, when the h u m a n engine waits

Like a taxi throbbing waiting,

I Tiresias,⁷ though blind, throbbing between two lives,

Old m a n with wrinkled female breasts, can see
 220 At the violet hour, the evening h o u r that strives
 Homeward, and brings the sailor h o m e from sea,8
 The typist h o m e at teatime, clears her breakfast, lights
 H e r stove, and lays out food in tins.
 O u t of the window perilously spread
 225 H e r drying combinations⁰ touched by the sun's last rays,
underwear On the divan are piled (at night her bed)
 Stockings, slippers, camisoles, and stays.⁰ *corset*
 I Tiresias, old m a n with wrinkled dug^o *breasts*
 Perceived the scene, and foretold the rest—
 230 I too awaited the expected guest.

He, the young m a n carbuncular,⁰ arrives, *with pimples*

A small house agent's clerk, with one bold stare,

3. Another conventional Elizabethan rendering of refer the question to wise Tiresias who knew love the nightingale's song, as well as a form of the from both points of view. For once, with a blow of name Tereus (see lines 99—103).

his staff, he had separated two huge snakes who

4. "The currants were quoted at a price 'carriage were copulating in the forest, and miraculously and insurance free to London'; and the Bill of Lad- was changed instantly from a man into a woman ing etc. were to be handled to the buyer upon pay- and remained so for seven years. In the eighth year ment of the sight draft" [Eliot's note]. "C.i.f." can he saw the snakes again and said: 'If a blow against

also mean “cost, insurance, and freight.”

you is so powerful that it changes the sex of the

5. I.e., vulgar or simplified.

author of it, now I shall strike you again.’ With

6. A large hotel at Brighton, a seaside town on

these words he struck them, and his former shape

England’s south coast. *Cannon Street Hotel*: a very

and masculinity were restored. As referee in the

large hotel in London’s commercial district.

sportive quarrel, he supported Jove’s claim. Juno,

7. “Tiresias, although a mere spectator and not

overly upset by the decision, condemned the arbi-

indeed a ‘character,’ is yet the most important per-

trator to eternal blindness. But the all-powerful

sonage in the poem, uniting all the rest. Just as the

father (inasmuch as no god can undo what has

one-eyed merchant, seller of currants, melts into

been done by another god) gave him the power of

the Phoenician sailor, and the latter is not wholly

prophecy, with this honor compensating him for

distinct from Ferdinand Prince of Naples, so all the

the loss of sight.”

women are one woman, and the two sexes meet in

8. “This may not appear as exact as Sappho’s lines,

Tiresias. What Tiresias sees, in fact, is the sub-

but I had in mind the ‘longshore’ or ‘dory’ fisher-

stance of the poem. The whole passage from Ovid

man, who returns at nightfall” [Eliot’s note]. Frag-

is of great anthropological interest” [Eliot’s note].
 ment 149 of the Greek poet Sappho (fl. ca. 61 fl-
 Eliot then cites in Latin Ovid’s version of why Tiresias
 was blinded, then granted a seer’s power (*Met-*
amorphoses 3.320—38): “Evening, bringing all that light-
 giving dawn has scattered, you bring the sheep, you
 bring the goat, you bring the child to its mother.”
 here very drunk] said jokingly to Juno [his wife]:
 But cf. “Requiem,” by the Scottish poet Robert
 Louis Stevenson (1850-1894): “Home is the
 enjoyed by men.’ She denied it. So they decided to
 sailor, home from the sea.”

T H E W A S T E L A N D / 1 3 5 5

O n e of the low on w h o m assurance sits
 As a silk hat on a Bradford⁹ millionaire.
 235 The time is now propitious, as he guesses,
 The meal is ended, she is bored and tired,
 Endeavours to engage her in caresses
 W h i c h still are unproved, if undesired.
 Flushed and decided, he assaults at once;
 240 Exploring hands e n c o u n t e r no defence;
 His vanity requires no response,
 And makes a welcome of indifference.
 (And I Tiresias have foresuffered all
 Enacted on this same divan or bed;
 245 I who have sat by Thebes below the wall¹

And walked among the lowest of the dead.)
Bestows one final patronizing kiss,
And gropes his way, finding the stairs unlit ...
She turns and looks a m o m e n t in the glass,
250 Hardly aware of her departed lover;
Her brain allows one half-formed thought to pass:
“Well now that’s done: and I’m glad it’s over.”
W h e n lovely woman stoops to folly and
Paces about her room again, alone,
255 She smooths her hair with automatic hand,
And puts a record on the gramophone.²
“This music crept by me upon the waters”³
And along the Strand, up Q u e e n Victoria Street.
O City city, I can sometimes hear
260 Beside a public bar in Lower Thames Street,
The pleasant whining of a mandoline
And a clatter and a chatter from within
W h e r e fishermen lounge at noon: where the walls
Of Magnus Martyr⁴ hold
265 Inexplicable splendour of Ionian white and gold.
The river sweats⁵
Oil and tar
The barges drift
With the turning tide
270 Red sails
Wide
To leeward, swing on the heavy spar.
The barges wash

9. A manufacturing town in Yorkshire, England,
note to line 191, p. 1349.

that enjoyed an industrial boom during World

4. “The interior of [London’s] St. Magnus Martyr
War I.

is to my mind one of the finest among [Christo-

1. Tiresias prophesied in the marketplace by the
pher| Wren’s interiors” [Eliot’s note],

wall of Thebes, foretold the fall of the Theban

5. “The song of the (three) Thames-daughters
kings Oedipus and Crcon, and continued to proph-
begins here. From line 292 to 306 inclusive they
esy in the underworld.

speak in turn. V. *Gotterdammerung*, III, i: the

2. “V. Goldsmith, the song in *The Vicar of Wake-*
Rhine-daughters” [Eliot’s note]. Lines 277—78 and
field” [Eliot’s note]. Cf. Oliver Goldsmith, “When

290—91 repeat the refrain of the Rhine maidens

Lovely Woman Stoops to Folly” (p. 686).

lamenting the lost beauty of their river in Wagner’s

3. “V. *The Tempest*, as above” [Eliot’s note]. See
opera.

1 3 5 2 / T . S . E L I O T

Drifting logs

Down Greenwich reach

Past the Isle of Dogs.⁶

Weialala leia

Wallala leialala

Elizabeth and Leicester⁷

Beating oars

The stern was formed

A gilded shell

Red and gold

The brisk swell

Rippled both shores

Southwest wind

Carried down stream

The peal of bells

White towers

Weialala leia

Wallala leialala

“Trams and dusty trees.

Highbury bore me. Richmond and Kew

Undid me.⁸ By Richmond I raised my knees

Supine on the floor of a narrow canoe.”

“My feet are at Moorgate,⁹ and my heart
Under my feet. After the event
He wept. He promised ‘a new start.’
I made no comment. What should I resent?”
“On Margate Sands.¹
I can connect
Nothing with nothing.
The broken fingernails of dirty hands.
My people humble people who expect
Nothing.”

la la

To Carthage then I came²

6. A peninsula extending into the Thames oppo-
8. “Cf. *Purgatorio*, V, 133” [Eliot’s note], referring
site Greenwich, a borough of London and Queen
to Dante’s “Remember me, who am la Pia; Sien
Elizabeth I’s birthplace.
made me, the Maremma undid me”; also quoted
7. “V. Froude, [*Reign of*] Elizabeth, Vol. I, ch. iv,
by Ezra Pound in “Hugh Selwyn Mauberley” (see
letter of [Bishop] De Quadra [the ambassador] to
note 9, p. 1302). Highbury is a residential suburb
Philip of Spain: ‘In the afternoon we were in a
in North London; Richmond and Kew are up the
barge, watching the games on the river. (The
river from London.
queen) was alone with the Lord Robert and myself
9. A slum in East London.

on the poop, when they began to talk nonsense,
1. A beach resort in Kent—popular with London
and went so far that Lord Robert at last said, as I
residents—where the Thames broadens into the
was on the spot there was no reason why they
Channel.

should not be married if the queen pleased' ”

2. “V. St. Augustine’s *Confessions*: ‘to Carthage
[Eliot’s note]. Sir Robert Dudley (15327-1588),
then I came, where a cauldron of unholy loves sang
earl of Leicester, was romantically involved with
all about mine ears’ ” [Eliot’s note], Augustine is
the queen.

recounting his licentious youth.

T H E W A S T E L A N D / 1 3 5 5

Burning burning burning burning³

O Lord Thou pluckest me out⁴

310 O Lord Thou pluckest

burning

IV. Death hy Water

Phlebas the Phoenician, a fortnight dead,

Forgot the cry of gulls, and the deep sea swell

And the profit and loss.

315 A current under sea

Picked his bones in whispers. As he rose and fell

He passed the stages of his age and youth

Entering the whirlpool.

Gentile or Jew

320 O you who turn the wheel and look to windward,
Consider Phlebas, who was once handsome and tall as you.

*V. What the Thunder Said*⁵

After the torchlight red on sweaty faces

After the frosty silence in the gardens

After the agony in stony places

325 The shouting and the crying

Prison and palace and reverberation

Of thunder of spring over distant mountains

He who was living is now dead

We who were living are now dying

330 With a little patience

Here is no water but only rock

Rock and no water and the sandy road

The road winding above among the mountains

Which are mountains of rock without water

335 If there were water we should stop and drink

Amongst the rock one cannot stop or think

Sweat is dry and feet are in the sand

If there were only water amongst the rock

Dead mountain mouth of carious⁰ teeth that cannot spit
decayed

340 Here one can neither stand nor lie nor sit

There is not even silence in the mountains

But dry sterile thunder without rain

There is not even solitude in the mountains

3. Taken from “the complete text of the Buddha’s
employed: the journey to Emmaus, the approach

Fire Sermon (which corresponds in importance to the Chapel Perilous (see Miss Weston's book) the Sermon on the Mount)" [Eliot's note], and the present decay of eastern Europe" [Eliot's 4. "From St. Augustine's *Confessions* again. The note]. On the third day after his Crucifixion, Jesus collocation of these two representatives of eastern appeared to two of his disciples as they walked to and western asceticism, as the culmination of this the village of Emmaus, but they knew him only part of the poem, is not an accident" [Eliot's note]. when he vanished (Luke 24.13—34). The Chapel Cf. Zechariah 3.2, where the Lord (i.e., God) calls Perilous is connected with the quest for the Holy Joshua "a brand plucked out of the fire." Grail, in which only those of perfect purity can 5. "In the first part of Part V three themes are succeed.

1 3 5 4 / T . S . E L I O T

But red sullen faces sneer and snarl
345 From doors of mudcracked houses
If there were water
And no rock
If there were rock
And also water
350 And water
A spring
A pool among the rock

If there were the sound of water only
Not the cicada⁶
355 And dry grass singing
But sound of water over a rock
Where the hermit-thrush⁷ sings in the pine trees
Drip drop drip drop drop drop drop
But there is no water
360 Who is the third who walks always beside you?⁸
When I count, there are only you and I together
But when I look ahead up the white road
There is always another one walking beside you
Gliding wrapt in a brown mantle, hooded
365 I do not know whether a man or a woman
—But who is that on the other side of you?
What is that sound high in the air⁹
Murmur of maternal lamentation
Who are those hooded hordes swarming
370 Over endless plains, stumbling in cracked earth
Ringed by the flat horizon only
What is the city over the mountains
Cracks and reforms and bursts in the violet air
Falling towers
375 Jerusalem Athens Alexandria
Vienna London
Unreal
A woman drew her long black hair out tight
And fiddled whisper music on those strings
380 And bats with baby faces in the violet light

Whistled, and beat their wings

And crawled head downward down a blackened wall

6. Grasshopper. Cf. line 23 and note 8, p. 1344.

from the nonfiction book *Blick ins Chaos* (A

7. “This is ... the hermit-thrush which I have
Glimpse into Chaos), by the German writer Her-
heard in Quebec Province. ... Its ‘water-dripping
man Hesse (1877-1962), that may be translated
song’ is justly celebrated” [Eliot’s note].

as follows: “Already half Europe, already at least

8. “The following lines were stimulated by the
half of Eastern Europe, is on the road to Chaos,
account of one of the Antarctic expeditions (I for-
drives drunken in holy madness along the abyss
get which, but I think one of Shackleton’s): it was
and sings the while, sings drunk and hymnlike as
related that the party of explorers, at the extremity
Dmitri Karamazov sang [in the novel *The Brothers*
of their strength, had the constant delusion that
Karamazov, by the Russian writer Fyodor Dosto-
there was *one more member* than could actually be
yevsky (1821-1881)]. The bourgeois laughs,
counted” [Eliot’s note]. These lines also recall the
offended, at these songs, the saint and the prophet
journey to Emmaus; see note 2 directly above.
hear them with tears.”

9. Eliot’s note to lines 367—77 quotes a passage

THE WASTELAND / 1355

And upside down in air were towers
Tolling reminiscent bells, that kept the hours
385 And voices singing out of empty cisterns and exhausted
wells.

In this decayed hole among the mountains
In the faint moonlight, the grass is singing
Over the tumbled graves, about the chapel
There is the empty chapel, only the wind's home.

390 It has no windows, and the door swings,
Dry bones can harm no one.

Only a cock stood on the rooftree

Co co rico co co rico 1

In a flash of lightning. Then a damp gust

395 Bringing rain

Ganga² was sunken, and the limp leaves

Waited for rain, while the black clouds

Gathered far distant, over Himavant.⁰ *Himalayan peak*

The jungle crouched, humped in silence.

400 Then spoke the thunder

D A 3

Datta: what have we given?

My friend, blood shaking my heart

The awful daring of a moment's surrender

405 Which an age of prudence can never retract

By this, and this only, we have existed

Which is not to be found in our obituaries

Or in memories draped by the beneficent spider⁴

Or under seals broken by the lean solicitor⁰ *lawyer*

4io In our empty rooms

D A

Dayadhvam: I have heard the key⁵

Turn in the door once and turn once only

We think of the key, each in his prison

415 Thinking of the key, each confirms a prison

Only at nightfall, ethereal rumours

Revive for a moment a broken Coriolanus⁶

1. When Peter denied Jesus, “immediately the epitaphs’ ” [Eliot’s note].

cock crew,” as Jesus had predicted (Matthew

5. “Cf. *Inferno*, XXXIII, 46” [Eliot’s note], where

26.34, 74—75). Also, in folklore a cock’s crow sig-

Ugolino recalls his imprisonment with his sons in

nals the departure of ghosts.

the tower where they starved to death: “And I

2. The Sanskrit name of the Indian river Ganges.

heard below the door of the horrible tower being

3. ” ‘Datta, dayadhvam, damyata’ (Give, sympa-

locked up.” Eliot also cites F. H. Bradley, *Appear-*

thize, control). The fable of the meaning of the

ance and Reality (1893), p. 346: “My external sen-

Thunder is found in the *Brihadaranyaka—Upani-*

sations are no less private to myself than are my

shad, 5, 1” [Eliot’s note]. In the Hindu fable (found

thoughts or my feelings. In either case my experi-

within the ancient, sacred Sanskrit dialogues

ence falls within my own circle, a circle closed on

known as the Upanishads), the supreme deity, Pra-
the outside; and, with all its elements alike, every
japati, gives instruction in the form of the syllable
sphere is opaque to the others which surround it.
Da, which the gods understand as “be restrained”
... In brief, regarded as an existence which
(*damyata*), humans as “give alms” (*datta*), and
appears in a soul, the whole world for each is pecu-
demons as “have compassion” (*dayadhvam*). All are
liar and private to that soul.”

correct, and a divine voice repeats the syllable with
6. Legendary Roman patrician, the protagonist of
the force of thunder.

Shakespeare’s tragedy *Coriolanus*, who joined

4. “Cf. Webster, *The White Devil*, V. vi:

forces with the enemy he had once defeated when
they’ll remarry / Ere the worm pierce your winding-
the leaders of the Roman populace opposed him.
sheet, ere the spider / Make a thin curtain for your

1 3 5 6 / T . S . E L I O T

D A

Damyata: The boat responded

420 Gaily, to the hand expert with sail and oar

The sea was calm, your heart would have responded

Gaily, when invited, beating obedient

To controlling hands

I sat upon the shore

425 Fishing,⁷ with the arid plain behind me

Shall I at least set my lands in order?⁸

London Bridge is falling down falling down falling down⁹

Poi s'ascose nelfoco che gli ajfina'

*Quando fiatn uti chelidon*²—O swallow swallow'

430 *Le Prince d'Aquitaine a la tour abolie*⁴

These fragments I have shored against my ruins

Why then lie fit you. Hieronymo's mad againe.⁵

Datta. Dayadhvam. Damyata.

Shantih shantih shantih⁶

1922

The Hollow Men

Mistah Kurtz — he dead.⁷

A penny for the Old Guy⁸

I

We are the hollow men

We are the stuffed men

7. "V. Weston: *Front Ritual to Romance*; chapter Swallow, Swallow, flying, flying south."

on the Fisher King" [Eliot's note].

4. "V. [French writer] Gerard de Nerval [1808-

8. Cf. Isaiah 38.1: "Thus saith the Lord, Set thine house in order: for thou shalt die, and not live."

line reads: "The prince of Aquitania in the ruined

9. One of the later lines of this nursery rhyme is tower" (French).

"Take the key and lock her up, my fair lady."

5. "V. Kyd's *Spanish Tragedy*" [Eliot's note]. The

1. “V. *Purgatorio*, XXVI, 148” [Eliot’s note]. Eliot subtitle of *The Spanish Tragedy*, by the English here quotes the final lines of Dante’s encounter playwright Thomas Kyd (1558-1594), is *Hieronymo’s Mad Againe*. Hieronymo, driven mad by his encountered among the lustful in Purgatory:

son’s death, “fits” the parts in a court masque so
” ‘And so I pray you, by that Virtue which guides that in the course of it he kills his son’s murderers you to the top of the stair, be reminded in time of before himself committing suicide.

my pain.’ Then he hid himself in the fire that puri-

6. “Shantih. Repeated as here, a formal ending to fies them” (Italian). This last sentence translates an Upanishad. ‘The Peace which passeth underline 428 of *The Waste Land*.

standing’ is our nearest equivalent to this word”

2. “V. *Pervigilium Veneris*. Cf. *Philomela in Parts* [Eliot’s note],

I and II” [Eliot’s note]. *The Vigil of Venus*, an anon-

7. From the novella *Heart of Darkness*, by the ymous Latin poem (ca. second century C.E.) cele- Polish English (Ukrainian-born) novelist Joseph brating the spring festival of the goddess Venus, Conrad (1857-1924). The dying words of Mr. ends with an allusion to the Procne-Philomela- Kurtz, the official of a trading company, who has

Tereus myth. The quoted line means “When shall entered the African jungle and descended into evil, I become like the swallow”; the Latin continues, are “The horror! The horror!”

“that I may cease to be silent.”

8. I.e., money to buy fireworks to burn Guy

3. Cf. “Itylus,” by Algernon Charles Swinburne

Fawkes in effigy. Said by begging children in

(1837-1909; see pp. 1146-52), which begins:

England on November 5, Guy Fawkes Day, a com-

“Swallow, my sister, O sister Swallow.” Cf. also the

memoration of Fawkes’s failed conspiracy, for

song in *The Princess*, by Alfred, Lord Tennyson

which he was executed, to blow up the House of

(1809-1892; see pp. 982-1009), that begins: “O

Commons in 1605.

THE HOLLOW MEN / 1 3 5 7

Leaning together

Headpiece filled with straw. Alas!

5 Our dried voices, when

We whisper together

Are quiet and meaningless

As wind in dry grass

Or rats’ feet over broken glass

10 In our dry cellar

Shape without form, shade without colour,

Paralysed force, gesture without motion;

Those who have crossed

With direct eyes, to death's other Kingdom
15 Remember us—if at all—not as lost
Violent souls, but only
As the hollow men
The stuffed men.

II

Eyes I dare not meet in dreams
20 In death's dream kingdom
These do not appear:
There, the eyes are
Sunlight on a broken column
There, is a tree swinging
25 And voices are
In the wind's singing
More distant and more solemn
Than a fading star.
Let me be no nearer
30 In death's dream kingdom
Let me also wear
Such deliberate disguises
Rat's coat, crowskin, crossed staves
In a field
35 Behaving as the wind behaves
No nearer—
Not that final meeting
In the twilight kingdom

III

This is the dead land

40 This is cactus land
Here the stone images
Are raised, here they receive
The supplication of a dead man's hand
Under the twinkle of a fading star.

1 3 5 8 / T . S . E L I O T

45 Is it like this
In death's other kingdom
Waking alone
At the hour when we are
Trembling with tenderness
50 Lips that would kiss
Form prayers to broken stone.

IV

The eyes are not here
There are no eyes here
In this valley of dying stars
55 In this hollow valley
This broken jaw of our lost kingdoms
In this last of meeting places
We grope together
And avoid speech
60 Gathered on this beach of the tumid river
Sightless, unless
The eyes reappear
As the perpetual star
Multifoliate rose⁹
65 Of death's twilight kingdom

The hope only
Of empty men.

V

Here we go round the prickly pear

Prickly pear prickly pear

70 *Here we go round the prickly pear*

At five o'clock in the morning.1

Between the idea

And the reality

Between the motion

75 And the act

Falls the Shadow

For Thine is the Kingdom2

Between the conception

And the creation

so Between the emotion

And the response

Falls the Shadow

Life is very long

9. Reference to the vision of saved souls surround-

“Here we go round the mulberry bush.”

ing God in *Paradiso*, the third part of Dante’s

2. Fragment from the end of the Lord’s Prayer:

Divine Comedy,

“For Thine is the Kingdom, and the power, and the

1. An ironic variation on the children’s chant

glory, forever and ever, Amen.”

JOURNEY OF THE MAGI / 1359

Between the desire

85 And the spasm

Between the potency

And the existence

Between the essence

And the descent

90 Falls the Shadow

For Thine is the Kingdom

For Thine is

Life is

For Thine is the

95 *This is the way the world ends*

This is the way the world ends

This is the way the world ends

Not with a hang hut a whimper.

1925

Journey of the Magi³

“A cold coming we had of it,⁴

Just the worst time of the year

For a journey, and such a long journey:

The ways deep and the weather sharp,

5 The very dead of winter.”

And the camels galled, sore-footed, refractory,

Lying down in the melting snow.

There were times we regretted

The summer palaces on slopes, the terraces,

io And the silken girls bringing sherbet.

Then the camel men cursing and grumbling

And running away, and wanting their liquor and women,
And the night-fires going out, and the lack of shelters,
And the cities hostile and the towns unfriendly
15 And the villages dirty and charging high prices:
A hard time we had of it.
At the end we preferred to travel all night,
Sleeping in snatches,
With the voices singing in our ears, saying
20 That this was all folly.
Then at dawn we came down to a temperate valley,
Wet, below the snow line, smelling of vegetation;
With a running stream and a water-mill beating the darkness,

3. The poem re-creates the recollections of one of

4. The first five lines are adapted from the sermon
the wise men, or Magi, who followed the star to
preached at Christmas, 1622, by Bishop Lancelot
Bethlehem bearing gifts for the newly born Jesus
Andrewes.

(Matthew 2.1-12).

1 3 6 0

/ T. S. ELIOT

And three trees on the low sky,⁵
25 And an old white horse galloped away in the meadow.
Then we came to a tavern with vine-leaves over the lintel,
Six hands at an open door dicing for pieces of silver,
And feet kicking the empty wine-skins.
But there was no information, and so we continued
30 And arrived at evening, not a moment too soon

Finding the place; it was (you may say) satisfactory.
All this was a long time ago, I remember,
And I would do it again, but set down
This set down
35 This: were we led all that way for
Birth or Death? There was a Birth, certainly,
We had evidence and no doubt. I had seen birth and death,
But had thought they were different; this Birth was
Hard and bitter agony for us, like Death, our death.
40 We returned to our places, these Kingdoms,
But no longer at ease here, in the old dispensation,
With an alien people clutching their gods.
I should be glad of another death.

1927

FROM FOUR QUARTETS

Little Gidding⁶

I

Midwinter spring is its own season
Sempiternal⁰ though sodden towards sundown, *everlasting*
Suspended in time, between pole and tropic.
When the short day is brightest, with frost and fire,
5 The brief sun flames the ice, on pond and ditches,
In windless cold that is the heart's heat,
Reflecting in a watery mirror
A glare that is blindness in the early afternoon.
And glow more intense than blaze of branch, or brazier,
io Stirs the dumb spirit: no wind, but pentecostal fire⁷
5. The image prefigures the three crosses of the

Gidding, an Anglican religious community, was Crucifixion (Luke 23.32), as line 27 suggests the founded by Nicholas Ferrar in 1625. The com-Roman soldiers casting lots for Jesus' robe (John munity was dispersed after the Puritans' victory in 19.23—24), as well as the pieces of silver paid to the English Civil War, but in the nineteenth cen-Judas for betraying him (Matthew 26.14—15). tury its chapel was rebuilt.

6. The final and, in Eliot's opinion, the best poem

7. See Acts 2.2—4, where Jesus' disciples are of *Four Quartets*, each of which is divided into five assembled on the feast of Pentecost: "And sud-parts. This quartet, like the others, addresses one denly there came a sound from heaven, as of a of the four elements; in "Little Gidding" it is fire. rushing mighty wind... . And there appeared unto The imagery is reminiscent of the "Fire Sermon" them cloven tongues, like as of fire... . And they section of *The Waste Land* (p. 1349), in which were all filled with the Holy Ghost."

fire suggests both torment and salvation. Little

LITTLE GIDDING / 13

In the dark time of the year. Between melting and freezing
The soul's sap quivers. There is no earth smell
Or smell of living thing. This is the spring time
But not in time's covenant. Now the hedgerow
Is blanched for an hour with transitory blossom

Of snow, a bloom more sudden
Than that of summer, neither budding nor fading,
Not in the scheme of generation.
Where is the summer, the unimaginable
Zero summer?
If you came this way,
Taking the route you would be likely to take
From the place you would be likely to come from,
If you came this way in may time, you would find the hedges
White again, in May, with voluptuary sweetness.
It would be the same at the end of the journey,
If you came at night like a broken king,⁸
If you came by day not knowing what you came for,
It would be the same, when you leave the rough road
And turn behind the pig-sty to the dull façade
And the tombstone. And what you thought you came for
Is only a shell, a husk of meaning
From which the purpose breaks only when it is fulfilled
If at all. Either you had no purpose
Or the purpose is beyond the end you figured
And is altered in fulfilment. There are other places
Which also are the world's end, some at the sea jaws,
Or over a dark lake, in a desert or a city—
But this is the nearest, in place and time,
Now and in England.
If you came this way,
Taking any route, starting from anywhere,
At any time or at any season,

It would always be the same: you would have to put off
Sense and notion. You are not here to verify,
Instruct yourself, or inform curiosity
Or carry report. You are here to kneel
Where prayer has been valid. And prayer is more
Than an order of words, the conscious occupation
Of the praying mind, or the sound of the voice praying.
And what the dead had no speech for, when living,
They can tell you, being dead: the communication
Of the dead is tongued with fire beyond the language of the
living.

Here, the intersection of the timeless moment
Is England and nowhere. Never and always.

King Charles I (1600-1649), who went to Little Gidding after
his defeat in the civil war.

1 3 6 2 / T . S . E L I O T

Ash on an old man's sleeve
Is all the ash the burnt roses leave.
Dust in the air suspended
Marks the place where a story ended.
60 Dust inbreathed was a house—
The wall, the wainscot and the mouse.
The death of hope and despair,
This is the death of air.⁹
There are flood and drouth
65 Over the eyes and in the mouth,
Dead water and dead sand
Contending for the upper hand.
The parched eviscerate soil

Gapes at the vanity of toil,
70 Laughs without mirth.
This is the death of earth.
Water and fire succeed
The town, the pasture and the weed.
Water and fire deride
75 The sacrifice that we denied.
Water and fire shall rot
The marred foundations we forgot,
Of sanctuary and choir.
This is the death of water and fire.
so In the uncertain hour before the morning¹
Near the ending of interminable night
At the recurrent end of the unending
After the dark dove with the flickering tongue²
Had passed below the horizon of his homing
85 While the dead leaves still rattled on like tin
Over the asphalt where no other sound was
Between three districts whence the smoke arose
I met one walking, loitering and hurried
As if blown towards me like the metal leaves
90 Before the urban dawn wind unresisting.
And as I fixed upon the down-turned face
That pointed scrutiny with which we challenge
The first-met stranger in the waning dusk
I caught the sudden look of some dead master
95 Whom I had known, forgotten, half recalled
Both one and many; in the brown baked features

The eyes of a familiar compound ghost³

Both intimate and unidentifiable.

9. The Greek philosopher Heraclitus (ca. 540—

raid warden in London during World War II.

ca. 480 **B.C.E.**) theorized about the conflict among

2. The Nazi dive bomber.

the elements: “Fire lives in the death of air.”

3. I.e., compounding the ghosts of two Irish-Anglo

1. The terza rima stanza pattern used by Dante in

poets, William Butler Yeats (1865-1939; see

his *Divine Comedy* is roughly suggested by Eliot’s

pp. 1188-1211) and Jonathan Swift (1667-1745;

form in this final section of part II. The speaker

see pp. 568-89).

here patrols the streets as Eliot had done as an air-

L I T T L E G I D D I N G / 1 3 6 3

So I assumed a double part, and cried

100 And heard another’s voice cry: “What! are *you* here?”⁴

Although we were not. I was still the same,

Knowing myself yet being someone other—

And he a face still forming; yet the words sufficed

To compel the recognition they preceded.

105 And so, compliant to the common wind,

Too strange to each other for misunderstanding,

In concord at this intersection time

Of meeting nowhere, no before and after,

We trod the pavement in a dead patrol.

110 I said: “The wonder that I feel is easy,

Yet ease is cause of wonder. Therefore speak:
I may not comprehend, may not remember.”
And he: “I am not eager to rehearse
My thought and theory which you have forgotten.
115 These things have served their purpose: let them be.
So with your own, and pray they be forgiven
By others, as I pray you to forgive
Both bad and good. Last season’s fruit is eaten
And the fullfed beast shall kick the empty pail.
120 For last year’s words belong to last year’s language
And next year’s words await another voice.
But, as the passage now presents no hindrance
To the spirit unappeased and peregrine0 *wandering*
Between two worlds become much like each other,
125 So I find words I never thought to speak
In streets I never thought I should revisit
When I left my body on a distant shore.
Since our concern was speech, and speech impelled us
To purify the dialect of the tribe5
BO And urge the mind to aftersight and foresight,
Let me disclose the gifts reserved for age
To set a crown upon your lifetime’s effort.
First, the cold friction of expiring sense
Without enchantment, offering no promise
135 But bitter tastelessness of shadow fruit
As body and soul begin to fall asunder.
Second, the conscious impotence of rage6
At human folly, and the laceration

Of laughter at what ceases to amuse.⁷

140 And last, the rending pain of re-enactment
Of all that you have done, and been; the shame
Of motives late revealed, and the awareness

4. Dante's words when he recognizes his mentor,
think it horrible that lust and rage / Should dance
Brunetto Latini, in *Inferno* 15.30.

attendance upon my old age.”

5. From the poem “Le Tombeau d’Edgar Poe,” by

7. Allusion to Swift’s Latin epitaph for himself, as
the French poet Stephane Mallarme (1842-1898):
translated by Yeats: “Savage indignation now /
“Donner un sens plus pur aux mots de la tribu.”
Cannot lacerate his breast.”

6. Cf. W. B. Yeats, “The Spur,” lines 1 - 2 : “You

1 3 6 4 / T . S . E L I O T

Of things ill done and done to others’ harm

Which once you took for exercise of virtue.⁸

145 Then fools’ approval stings, and honour stains.

From wrong to wrong the exasperated spirit

Proceeds, unless restored by that refining fire⁹

Where you must move in measure, like a dancer.¹

The day was breaking. In the disfigured street

150 He left me, with a kind of valediction,

And faded on the blowing of the horn.²

There are three conditions which often look alike

Yet differ completely, flourish in the same hedgerow:

Attachment to self and to things and to persons,
detachment

155 From self and from things and from persons; and,
growing between

them, indifference

Which resembles the others as death resembles life,

Being between two lives—unflowering, between

The live and the dead nettle. This is the use of memory:

For liberation—not less of love but expanding

i60 Of love beyond desire, and so liberation

From the future as well as the past. Thus, love of a country

Begins as attachment to our own field of action

And comes to find that action of little importance

Though never indifferent. History may be servitude,

165 History may be freedom. See, now they vanish,

The faces and places, with the self which, as it could, loved
them,

To become renewed, transfigured, in another pattern.

Sin is Behovely,³ but

All shall be well, and

170 All manner of thing shall be well.

If I think, again, of this place,

And of people, not wholly commendable,

Of no immediate kin or kindness,

But some of peculiar genius,

175 All touched by a common genius,

United in the strife which divided them;

If I think of a king at nightfall,

Of three men, and more, on the scaffold⁴

And a few who died forgotten

i80 **In other places, here and abroad,**

8. Cf. Yeats, "Vacillation," esp. lines 51—56:

2. Eliot's description of the "All clear" siren fading
"Things said or done long years ago, / Or things
after the air raid is phrased to recall the disap-
did not do or say / But thought that I might say or
pearance of Hamlet's father's ghost in *Hamlet*
do, / Weigh me down ... "

1.1.138: "It faded on the crowing of the cock."

9. As in the "Fire Sermon" section of *The Waste*

3. Necessary in God's eye. The fourteenth-century
Land, which alludes to Buddha's counseling his
mystic Julian of Norwich wrote, "Sin is behovable
followers to turn away from the fires of passion and
but all shall be well ... and all manner of things
to attain freedom from earthly things.
shall be well."

1. Allusion to the images of humankind as dancers

4. King Charles I and, earlier, his aides Thomas
in Yeats, "Among School Children" and "Nineteen
Wentworth and Archbishop Laud were executed
Hundred and Nineteen."

on the scaffold.

L I T T L E G I D D I N G / 1 3 6 5

And a few who died blind and quiet,⁵

Why should we celebrate

These dead men more than the dying?

It is not to ring the bell backward
185 Nor is it an incantation
To summon the spectre of a Rose.⁶
We cannot revive old factions
We cannot restore old policies
Or follow an antique drum.
190 These men, and those who opposed them
And those whom they opposed
Accept the constitution of silence
And are folded in a single party.
Whatever we inherit from the fortunate
195 We have taken from the defeated
What they had to leave us—a symbol:
A symbol perfected in death.
And all shall be well and
All manner of thing shall be well
200 By the purification of the motive
In the ground of our beseeching.⁷

IV

The dove⁸ descending breaks the air
With flame of incandescent terror
Of which the tongues declare
205 The one discharge from sin and error.
The only hope, or else despair
Lies in the choice of pyre or pyre—
To be redeemed from fire by fire.
Who then devised the torment? Love.
210 Love is the unfamiliar Name

Behind the hands that wove
The intolerable shirt of flame
Which human power cannot remove.⁹

We only live, only suspire⁰ *breathe*
215 Consumed by either fire or fire.

V

What we call the beginning is often the end
And to make an end is to make a beginning.

5. I.e., Milton, who sided against Charles during
our beseeching” is love.

the civil war.

8. Here, symbolizing the Holy Ghost, with its

6. Allusions here to the title of a ballet in which a
tongues of fire, and the dive bomber.

girl dreams of a rose she wore to a ball, and to the

9. In Greek mythology, the shirt that Hercules’

Wars of the Roses, in which the house of Lancaster
wife gave Nessus because she believed it would win
was the white rose and the house of York the red.

his love; it clung to his skin so painfully that he

7. According to Julian of Norwich, “the ground of
immolated himself on a pyre.

1 3 6 6 / T . S . E L I O T

The end is where we start from. And every phrase
And sentence that is right (where every word is at home,
220 Taking its place to support the others,
The word neither diffident nor ostentatious,
An easy commerce of the old and the new,

The common word exact without vulgarity,
The formal word precise but not pedantic,
225 The complete consort dancing together)
Every phrase and every sentence is an end and a beginning,
Every poem an epitaph. And any action
Is a step to the block, to the fire, down the sea's throat
Or to an illegible stone: and that is where we start.

230 We die with the dying:
See, they depart, and we go with them.

We are born with the dead:
See, they depart, and we go with them.

The moment of the rose and the moment of the yew-tree¹
235 Are of equal duration. A people without history
Is not redeemed from time, for history is a pattern
Of timeless moments. So, while the light fails
On a winter's afternoon, in a secluded chapel
History is now and England.

240 With the drawing of this Love and the voice of this
Calling²

We shall not cease from exploration
And the end of all our exploring
Will be to arrive where we started
And know the place for the first time.

245 Through the unknown, remembered gate
When the last of earth left to discover
Is that which was the beginning;
At the source of the longest river
The voice of the hidden waterfall

250 And the children in the apple-tree
Not known, because not looked for
But heard, half-heard, in the stillness
Between two waves of the sea.

Quick now, here, now, always—3

255 A condition of complete simplicity
(Costing not less than everything)

And all shall be well and

All manner of thing shall be well

When the tongues of flame are in-folded

260 Into the crowned knot⁴ of fire

And the fire and the rose are one.

1942, 1943

1. Symbolizing death and grief, in contrast with
Quartets's first poem, "Burnt Norton": "There rises
the rose.

the hidden laughter / Of children in the foliage /

2. Quotation from the anonymous fourteenth-
century religious work *The Cloud of Unknowing*.
Quick now, here, always."

3. Eliot comes full circle, to an image from *Four*

4. A nautical knot, tied to prevent untwisting.

3. Eliot comes full circle, to an image from *Four*

1 3 6 7

JOHN CROWER ANSOM

1888-1974

Bells for John Whiteside's Daughter

There was such speed in her little body,

And such lightness in her footfall,

It is no wonder her brown study
Astonishes us all.

5 Her wars were bruited⁰ in our high window. *loudly voiced*

We looked among orchard trees and beyond

Where she took arms against her shadow,

Or harried unto the pond

The lazy geese, like a snow cloud

io Dripping their snow on the green grass,

Tricking and stopping, sleepy and proud,

Who cried in goose, Alas,

For the tireless heart within the little

Lady with rod that made them rise

15 From their noon apple-dreams and scuttle

Goose-fashion under the skies!

But now go the bells, and we are ready,

In one house we are sternly stopped

To say we are vexed at her brown study,

20 Lying so primly propped.

1924

Piazza Piece1

—I am a gentleman in a dustcoat trying

To make you hear. Your ears are soft and small

And listen to an old man not at all,

They want the young men's whispering and sighing.

5 But see the roses on your trellis dying

And hear the spectral singing of the moon;

For I must have my lovely lady soon,

I am a gentleman in a dustcoat trying.

—I am a lady young in beauty waiting
io Until my truelove comes, and then we kiss.

But what gray man among the vines is this
Whose words are dry and faint as in a dream?

1. This sonnet plays upon the old folktale of Death and the Maiden. *Piazza*: porch.

1 3 6 8 / J O H N C R O W E R A N S O M

Back from my trellis, Sir, before I scream!

I am a lady young in beauty waiting.

1925 1927

Blue Girls

Twirling your blue skirts, travelling the sward° *grass*

Under the towers of your seminary,

Go listen to your teachers old and contrary

Without believing a word.

5 Tie the white fillets⁰ then about your hair *ribbons*

And think no more of what will come to pass

Than bluebirds that go walking on the grass

And chattering on the air.

Practise your beauty, blue girls, before it fail;

io And I will cry with my loud lips and publish

Beauty which all our power shall never establish,

It is so frail.

For I could tell you a story which is true;

I know a woman with a terrible tongue,

15 Blear⁰ eyes fallen from blue, *bleary*

All her perfections tarnished—yet it is not long

Since she was lovelier than any of you.

1927

Parting, without a Sequel

She has finished and sealed the letter

At last, which he so richly has deserved,

With characters venomous and hatefully curved,

And nothing could be better.

5 But even as she gave it

Saying to the blue-capped functioner of doom,

“Into his hands,” she hoped the leering groom

Might somewhere lose and leave it.

Then all the blood

io Forsook the face. She was too pale for tears,

Observing the ruin of her younger years.

She went and stood

L A D Y L O S T / 1 3 6 9

Under her father’s vaunting oak

Who kept his peace in wind and sun, and glistened

15 Stoical in the rain; to whom she listened

If he spoke.

And now the agitation of the rain

Rasped his sere leaves, and he talked low and gentle

Reproaching the wan daughter by the lintel;

20 Ceasing and beginning again.

Away went the messenger’s bicycle,

His serpent’s track went up the hill forever,

And all the time she stood there hot as fever

And cold as any icicle.

1927

Lady Lost

This morning, flew up the lane
A timid lady bird to our birdbath
And eyed her image dolefully as death;
This afternoon, knocked on our windowpane
5 To be let in from the rain.
And when I caught her eye
She looked aside, but at the clapping thunder
And sight of the whole world blazing up like tinder
Looked in on us again so miserably
io It was as if she would cry.
So I will go out into the park and say,
“Who has lost a delicate brown-eyed lady
In the West End section? Or has anybody
Injured some fine woman in some dark way
15 Last night, or yesterday?
“Let the owner come and claim possession,
No questions will be asked. But stroke her gently
With loving words, and she will evidently
Return to her full soft-haired white-breasted fashion
20 And her right home and her right passion.”

1 9 2 7

1 3 7 0

C O N R A D A I K E N

1889-1973

From Senlin:1 A Biography

II. His Futile Preoccupations

22

It is morning, Senlin says, and in the morning
When the light drips through the shutters like the dew,
I arise, I face the sunrise,
And do the things my fathers learned to do.
5 Stars in the purple dusk above the rooftops
Pale in a saffron mist and seem to die,
And I myself on a swiftly tilting planet
Stand before a glass and tie my tie.
Vine leaves tap my window,
io Dew-drops sing to the garden stones,
The robin chirps in the chinaberry tree
Repeating three clear tones.
It is morning. I stand by the mirror
And tie my tie once more.
15 While waves far off in a pale rose twilight
Crash on a coral shore.
I stand by a mirror and comb my hair:
How small and white my face!—
The green earth tilts through a sphere of air
20 And bathes in a flame of space.
There are houses hanging above the stars
And stars hung under a sea.
And a sun far off in a shell of silence
Dapples my walls for me.
25 It is morning, Senlin says, and in the morning
Should I not pause in the light to remember god?
Upright and firm I stand on a star unstable,
He is immense and lonely as a cloud.³

I will dedicate this moment before my mirror
30 To him alone, for him I will comb my hair.
Accept these humble offerings, cloud of silence!
I will think of you as I descend the stair.

Vine leaves tap my window,

The snail-track shines on the stones,

1. An invented name that, according to Aiken's
is it that I am I, Senlin, and not someone else?"

preface to *The Divine Pilgrim* (1949), "means lit-

2. This section has also been published separately
erally the 'little old man' that each of us must
as "Morning Song."

become"; the poem poses "the basic and possibly

3. An allusion to William Wordsworth, "I Wan-
unanswerable question, *who and what am I*, how
dered Lonely as a Cloud" (p. 801).

T o H i s L O V E / 1 3 7 1

35 Dew-drops flash from the chinaberry tree

Repeating two clear tones.

It is morning, I awake from a bed of silence,

Shining I rise from the starless waters of sleep.

The walls are about me still as in the evening,

40 I am the same, and the same name still I keep.

The earth revolves with me, yet makes no motion,

The stars pale silently in a coral sky.

In a whistling void I stand before my mirror,

Unconcerned, and tie my tie.

45 There are horses neighing on far-off hills

Tossing their long white manes,
And mountains flash in the rose-white dusk,
Their shoulders black with rains.
It is morning. I stand by the mirror
50 And surprise my soul once more;
The blue air rushes above my ceiling,
There are suns beneath my floor.
... It is morning, Senlin says, I ascend from darkness
And depart on the winds of space for I know not where,
55 My watch is wound, a key is in my pocket,
And the sky is darkened as I descend the stair.
There are shadows across the windows, clouds in heaven,
And a god among the stars; and I will go
Thinking of him as I might think of daybreak
60 And humming a tune I know.
Vine leaves tap at the window,
Dewdrops sing to the garden stones,
The robin chirps in the chinaberry tree
Repeating three clear tones.

1918

IVOR GURNEY

1890-1937

To His Love

He's gone, and all our plans
Are useless indeed.

We'll walk no more on Cotswold
Where the sheep feed
5 Quietly and take no heed.

1. Range of hills in Gloucestershire, in southwest-central England.

1 3 7 2 / I V O R G U R N E Y

His body that was so quick

Is not as you

Knew it, on Severn river²

Under the blue

10 Driving our small boat through.

You would not know him now ...

But still he died

Nobly, so cover him over

With violets of pride

15 Purple from Severn side.

Cover him, cover him soon!

And with thick-set

Masses of memoried flowers—

Hide that red wet

20 Thing I must somehow forget.

1919

The Silent One

Who died on the wires,³ and hung there, one of two—

Who for his hours of life had chattered through

Infinite lovely chatter of Bucks⁴ accent:

Yet faced unbroken wires; stepped over, and went

5 A noble fool, faithful to his stripes—and ended.

But I weak, hungry, and willing only for the chance

Of line—to fight in the line, lay down under unbroken

Wires, and saw the flashes and kept unshaken,

Till the politest voice—a finicking accent, said:

io “Do you think you might crawl through there: there’s a hole.”

Darkness, shot at: I smiled, as politely replied—

“I’m afraid not, Sir.” There was no hole no way to be seen

Nothing but chance of death, after tearing of clothes.

Kept flat, and watched the darkness, hearing bullets whizzing

—

15 And thought of music—and swore deep heart’s deep oaths

(Polite to God) and retreated and came on again,

Again retreated—and a second time faced the screen.

1954

First Time In

After the dread tales and red yarns of the Line

Anything might have come to us; but the divine

2. Which flows west of the Cotswolds. infantry attack.

3. The barbed wire protecting the front from 4.

Buckinghamshire, in southern England.

B R E A K O F D A Y I N T H E T R E N C H E S / 1 3 7 3

Afterglow brought us up to a Welsh colony

Hiding in sandbag ditches, whispering consolatory

5 Soft foreign things. Then we were taken in

To low huts candle-lit, shaded close by slitten0 *slit*

Oilsheets, and there the boys gave us kind welcome,

So that we looked out as from the edge of home,

Sang us Welsh things, and changed all former notions

10 To human hopeful things. And the next day’s guns

Nor any line-pangs ever quite could blot out

That strangely beautiful entry to war’s rout;

Candles they gave us, precious and shared over-rations—
Ulysses⁵ found little more in his wanderings without doubt.
15 “David of the White Rock”, the “Slumber Song” so soft,
and that Beautiful tune to which roguish words by Welsh pit
boys
Are sung—but never more beautiful than there under the guns’
noise.

1919-20 1982

ISAAC R O S E N B E R G

1890-1918

Break of Day in the Trenches

The darkness crumbles away.

It is the same old druid¹ Time as ever,

Only a live thing leaps my hand,

A queer sardonic rat,

5 As I pull the parapet’s² poppy

To stick behind my ear.

Droll rat, they would shoot you if they knew

Your cosmopolitan sympathies.

Now you have touched this English hand

io You will do the same to a German

Soon, no doubt, if it be your pleasure

To cross the sleeping green between.

It seems you inwardly grin as you pass

Strong eyes, fine limbs, haughty athletes,

15 Less chanced than you for life,

Bonds to the whims of murder,

Sprawled in the bowels of the earth,

The torn fields of France.

What do you see in our eyes
20 At the shrieking iron and flame
Hurled through still heavens?

What quaver—what heart aghast?

5. Or Odysseus, the hero of Homer's *Odyssey*, who 1. Member
of an ancient Celtic order of priest-spent ten years wandering
on his way home after magicians.

the Trojan War. 2. Wall protecting a trench in World War I.

1 3 7 4 / I S A A C R O S E N B E R G

Poppies whose roots are in man's veins

Drop, and are ever dropping;

25 But mine in my ear is safe—

Just a little white with the dust.

June 1916 1922

Louse Hunting

Nudes—stark and glistening,

Yelling in lurid glee. Grinning faces

And raging limbs

Whirl over the floor one fire.

5 For a shirt verminously busy

Yon soldier tore from his throat, with oaths

Godhead might shrink at, but not the lice.

And soon the shirt was aflame

Over the candle he'd lit while we lay.

io Then we all sprang up and stript

To hunt the verminous brood.

Soon like a demons' pantomime

The place was raging.

See the silhouettes agape,

15 See the gibbering shadows
Mixed with the battled arms on the wall.
See gargantuan hooked fingers
Pluck in supreme flesh
To smutch supreme littleness.
20 See the merry limbs in hot Highland fling'
Because some wizard vermin
Charmed from the quiet this revel
When our ears were half lulled
By the dark music
25 Blown from Sleep's trumpet.
1917 1922

Dead Man's Dump

The plunging limbers⁴ over the shattered track
Racketed with their rusty freight,
Struck out like many crowns of thorns,
And the rusty stakes like sceptres old
5 To stay the flood of brutish men
Upon our brothers dear.

3. Scottish dance.

4. Two-wheeled vehicles for pulling guns or caissons
(ammunition wagons).

DEAD MAN 'S DUMP / 1 3 7 5

The wheels lurched over sprawled dead
But pained them not, though their bones crunched,
Their shut mouths made no moan,
io They lie there huddled, friend and foeman,
Man born of man, and born of woman,

And shells go crying over them
From night till night and now.
Earth has waited for them
15 All the time of their growth
Fretting for their decay:
Now she has them at last!
In the strength of their strength
Suspended—stopped and held.
20 What fierce imaginings their dark souls lit
Earth! have they gone into you?
Somewhere they must have gone,
And flung on your hard back
Is their souls' sack,
25 Emptied of God-ancestral essences.
Who hurled them out? Who hurled?
None saw their spirits' shadow shake the grass,
Or stood aside for the half-used life to pass
Out of those doomed nostrils and the doomed mouth,
30 When the swift iron burning bee
Drained the wild honey of their youth.
What of us, who flung on the shrieking pyre,
Walk, our usual thoughts untouched,
Our lucky limbs as on ichor⁵ fed,
35 Immortal seeming ever?
Perhaps when the flames beat loud on us,
A fear may choke in our veins
And the startled blood may stop.
The air is loud with death,

40 The dark air spurts with fire
The explosions ceaseless are.
Timelessly now, some minutes past,
These dead strode time with vigorous life,
Till the shrapnel called “an end!”
45 But not to all. In bleeding pangs
Some borne on stretchers dreamed of home,
Dear things, war-blotted from their hearts.
A man’s brains splattered on
A stretcher-bearer’s face;
50 His shook shoulders slipped their load,
But when they bent to look again

5. In Greek mythology, the ethereal fluid flowing through the veins of the gods.

1 3 7 6 / H U G H M A C D I A R M I D

The drowning soul was sunk too deep
For human tenderness.
They left this dead with the older dead,
55 Stretched at the cross roads.
Burnt black by strange decay,
Their sinister faces lie
The lid over each eye,
The grass and coloured clay
60 More motion have than they,
Joined to the great sunk silences.
Here is one not long dead;
His dark hearing caught our far wheels,
And the choked soul stretched weak hands

65 To reach the living word the far wheels said,
The blood-dazed intelligence beating for light,
Crying through the suspense of the far torturing wheels
Swift for the end to break,
Or the wheels to break,
70 Cried as the tide of the world broke over his sight.
Will they come? Will they ever come?
Even as the mixed hoofs of the mules,
The quivering-bellied mules,
And the rushing wheels all mixed
75 With his tortured upturned sight,
So we crashed round the bend,
We heard his weak scream,
We heard his very last sound,
And our wheels grazed his dead face.

1917 1922

HUGH MACDIARMID

(CHRISTOPHER MURRAY GRIEVE)

1892-1978

From Lament for the Great Music

Yet there is no great problem in the world to-day

Except disease and death men cannot end

If no man tries to dominate another.

The struggle for material existence is over. It has been won.

5 The need for repressions and disciplines has passed.

The struggle for truth and that indescribable necessity,

Beauty, begins now, hampered by none of the lower needs.

L A M E N T F O R T H E G R E A T M u s i c / 1377

No one now needs live less or be less than his utmost.

And in the slow and devious development that has brought
men to

this stage

10 Scottish genius has played a foremost role. Yet I turn to
you,

For unselfish intellect rises like a perfume

Above the faults and follies of the world of will.

But for the excellence of the typical swift life no nation

Deserves to be remembered more than the sands of the sea.

15 I am only that Job¹ in feathers, a heron myself,

Gaunt and unsubstantial—yet immune to the vicissitudes

Other birds accept as a matter of course; impervious to the
effects

Of even the wildest weather, no mean consideration in a
country

like this;

And my appetite is not restricted to any particular fare.

20 Hence I am encountered in places far removed from one
another

And widely different in an intimately topographical sense

—Spearing a rat at the mouth of a culvert at midnight

And bolting an eel on the seashore in the halflight of dawn—

Communal dweller yet lone hunter, lumbering yet swift and
sustained flier,

25 The usual steely expression of my eyes does not flatter me;

Few birds perhaps have so successfully solved

The problem of existence as my grey lanky self

That in light or darkness, wet or shine, subsists

By a combination of alertness, patience, and passivity.

30 A kind of Caolite mac Ronain² too; but it takes

All my wits in Scotland to-day.

This is the darkness where you have been; and have left

I think forever. It is the darkness from which nothing is cast
out,

No loss, no wanton pain, no disease, no insanity,

35 None of the unripe intelligence of so-called dead nature,

Abortive attempts of nature to reflect itself.

All the unintelligible burden that alone leads to the height

Where it seems that extremes meet and I could reach you

*i bh-fogus do dhul ar neamh-nidh, with a leim eanamhail.*³

40 In this depth that I dare not leave

I who am no dilettante of chaos and find

No bitter gratification in the contemplation of ultimate

Incoherence

Know that the world is at any given moment anything it may
be

called

And even more difficult to group round any central character,

45 Yet it is out of this aimless dispersion, all these zig-zagging
efforts,

All this disorderly growth, that the ideal of an epoch ends

By disentangling itself. Myriads of human activities

Are scattered in all directions by the indifferent forces

1. Biblical character who has come to represent

birds from the Erne, two cormorants from the

patience in adversity.

Cliannth, two foxes from Slieve Gullion, and the

2. "The grey spare swift runner, he who saved

rest)” [MacDiarmid’s note].

Fionn once by that wonderful feat of gathering

3. Birdlike leap (Gaelic). *I bh-fogus do dhul ar*

couples of all the wild beasts and birds of Ireland

neamh-nidh: on the confines of vanishing (Gaelic).

(a ram and a crimson sheep from Inis, two water-

1 3 7 8 / H U G H M A C D I A R M I D

Of self-interest, passion, crime, madness—but out of their
number

50 Some few of these activities are endowed with a little
constancy

By the pure in heart, for reasons which seem to respond

To the most elementary designs of the spirit.

Civilisation, culture, all the good in the world

Depends ultimately on the existence of a few men of good
will.

55 The perspective will converge upon them yet.

I dare not leave this dark and distracted scene.

I believe in the necessary and unavoidable responsibility of
man

And in the ineluctable certainty of the resurrection

And know that the mind of man creates no ideas

60 Though it is ideas alone that create.

Mind is the organ through which the Universe reaches

Such consciousness of itself as is possible now, and I must not
brood

On the intermittence of genius, the way consciousness varies

Or declines, as in Scotland here, till it seems

65 Heaven itself may be only the best that is feasible

For most people, but a sad declension from music like yours.
Yes, I am prepared to see the Heavens open
And find the celestial music poor by comparison.
Yet my duty is here. It is now the duty of the Scottish genius
70 Which has provided the economic freedom for it
To lead in the abandonment of creeds and moral compromises
Of every sort and to commence to express the unity of life
By confounding the curse of short-circuited thought
Circumscribing consciousness, for that is the thought
75 Of compromise, the medium of the time-server.
This must be done to lead men to cosmic consciousness
And as it cannot be quick, except on occasion
And *that* the creative instant, the moment of divine realisation,
When the self is lit up by its own inner light
so Caused in the self by its intensity of thought
Possibly over a long period, it must be thought of as a craft
In which the consummation of the idea, not in analysis but in
synthesis,
Must be the subject of the object—life.
Wherefore I cannot take the bird-like leap to you
85 Though well I know that: “He that can endure
To follow with allegiance a fallen lord
Does conquer him that did his master conquer.”⁴
I dare not leap to you now. But after all since I cannot believe
You will ever be really for everyone or even for many
90 And are likely to pursue in the hereafter
A separate destiny from theirs—or simply because

I long to hear the great pipers play their great music
themselves.

And they all dead (save one) centuries before I was born,
And have one glimpse of my beloved Scotland yet

95 As the land I have dreamt of where the supreme values
Which the people recognise are states of mind

4. Shakespeare, *Antony and Cleopatra* 3.13.42—44.

A N O T H E R E P I T A P H O N A N A R M Y O F M E R
C E N A R I E S / 1 3 7 9

Their ruling passion the attainment of higher consciousness,
And their actual rulers those in whom they find,
Or think they do, the requisite knowledge for such attainments

100 And where one is not required to believe anything

But even warned of the dangers of doing so

Except with infinite qualifications and care,

My duty done, I will try to follow you on the last day of the
world,

And pray I may see you all standing shoulder to shoulder

105 With Patrick Mor MacCrimmon and Duncan Ban
MacCrimmon in

the centre

In the hollow⁵ at Boreraig or in front of Dunvegan Castle

Or on the lip of the broken graves in Kilmuir Kirkyard⁶

While, the living stricken ghastly in the eternal light

And the rest of the dead all risen blue-faced from their graves

no (Though, the pipes to your hand, you will be once more

Perfectly at ease, and as you were in your prime)

All ever born crowd the islands and the West Coast of
Scotland

Which has standing room for them all, and the air curdled with

angels,

And everywhere that feeling seldom felt on the earth before
us Save in the hearts of parents or in youth untouched by
tragedy

That in its very search for personal experience often found
A like impersonality and self-forgetfulness,

And you playing: "Farewell to Scotland, and the rest of the
Earth,"

The only fit music there can be for that day

120 —And I will leap then and hide behind one of you,

*Us Caismeachd phiob-mora bras shroiceadh am puirt.*⁷

Look! Is that only the setting sun again?

Or a piper coming from far away?

1934

Another Epitaph on an Army of Mercenaries⁸

It is a God-damned lie to say that these

Saved, or knew, anything worth any man's pride.

They were professional murderers and they took

Their blood money and impious risks and died.

5 In spite of all their kind some elements of worth

With difficulty persist here and there on earth.

1935

5. I.e., the pipers' hollow where the students at the

7. While the notes of the great pipes shrilly

college of the MacCrimmons (1500-1800) prac-

sounded out their cries (Gaelic); from "Charles

ticed. Ten generations of MacCrimmons were the

Son of James," by the Scottish poet Alasdair

hereditary pipers of MacLeod, whose seat is at

MacMhaighstir Alasdair (1695-1770).

Dunvegan Castle in the Isle of Skye. Boreraig was

8. “In reply to A. E. Housman’s” [MacDiarmid’s
where the MacCrimmons lived.

note]. See A. E. Housman’s poem “Epitaph on an
6. Near Dunvegan.

Army of Mercenaries” (p. 1180).

1 3 8 0 / H U G H M A C D I A R M I D

From In Memoriam James Joyce

*We Must Look at the Harebell*⁹

We must look at the harebell as if

We had never seen it before.

Remembrance gives an accumulation of satisfaction

Yet the desire for change is very strong in us

5 And change is in itself a recreation.

To those who take any pleasure

In flowers, plants, birds, and the rest

An ecological change is recreative.

(Come. Climb with me. Even the sheep are different

10 And of new importance.

The coarse-fleeced, hardy Herdwick,

The Hampshire Down, artificially fed almost from birth,

And butcher-fat from the day it is weaned,

The Lincoln-Longwool, the biggest breed in England,

15 With the longest fleece, and the Southdown

Almost the smallest—and between them thirty other breeds,

Some whitefaced, some black,

Some with horns and some without,

Some long-wooled, some short-wooled,
20 In England where the men, and women too,
Are almost as interesting as the sheep.)
Everything is different, everything changes,
Except for the white bedstraw which climbs all the way
Up from the valleys to the tops of the high passes
25 The flowers are all different and more precious
Demanding more search and particularity of vision.
Look! Here and there a pinguicula¹ eloquent of the Alps
Still keeps a purple-blue flower
On the top of its straight and slender stem.
30 Bog-asphodel, deep-gold, and comely in form,
The queer, almost diabolical, sundew,
And when you leave the bog for the stag moors and the rocks
The parsley fern—a lovelier plant
Than even the proud *Osmunda Regalis*²—
35 Flourishes in abundance
Showing off oddly contrasted fronds
From the cracks of the lichened stones.
It is pleasant to find the books
Describing it as “very local.”
40 Here is a change indeed!
The universal *is* the particular.

1955

9. A blue flower, with bell-shaped blossom, that sticky liquid to catch insects, grows wild in Scotland. 2. The flowering, or “royal,” fern.

1. The butterwort, a small herb that secretes a

1 3 8 1

ARCHIBALD MACLEISH

1892-1982

Ars Poetica¹

A poem should be palpable and mute

As a globed fruit,

Dumb

As old medallions to the thumb,

5 Silent as the sleeve-worn stone

Of casement ledges where the moss has grown—

A poem should be wordless

As the flight of birds.

A poem should be motionless in time

10 As the moon climbs,

Leaving, as the moon releases

Twig by twig the night-entangled trees,

Leaving, as the moon behind the winter leaves,

Memory by memory the mind—

15 A poem should be motionless in time

As the moon climbs.

A poem should be equal to:

Not true.

For all the history of grief

20 An empty doorway and a maple leaf.

For love

The leaning grasses and two lights above the sea—

A poem should not mean

But be.

1926

1. The art of poetry (Latin); title of a treatise on poetics by the Roman poet Horace (65—8 b.c.e.).

1 3 8 2 / E D N A S T . V I N C E N T M I L L A Y

The Snowflake Which Is Now and Hence Forever

Will it last? he says.

Is it a masterpiece?

Will generation after generation

Turn with reverence to the page?

5 Birdseye scholar of the frozen fish,

What would he make of the sole, clean, clear

Leap of the salmon that has disappeared?

To *be*, yes!—whether they like it or not!

But not to last when leap and water are forgotten,

10 A plank of standard pinkness in the dish.

They also live

Who swerve and vanish in the river.²

1952

E D N A S T . V I N C E N T M I L L A Y

1892-1950

First Fig1

My candle burns at both ends;

It will not last the night;

But ah, my foes, and oh, my friends—

It gives a lovely light!

1920

Second Fig2

Safe upon the solid rock the ugly houses stand:

Come and see my shining palace built upon the sand!

1920

2. An allusion to Milton, “When I Consider How thorns, or figs of thistles?”

My Light Is Spent” (p. 418), a sonnet that con-

2. See the preceding note and Matthew 7.26—27, cludes, “They also serve who only stand and wait.”

referring to “a foolish man, which built his house

1. From *A Few Figs from Thistles*, a title derived upon the sand.”

from Matthew 7.16: “Do m e n gather grapes of

[I , B E I N G B O R N A W O M A N A N D D I S T R E S S E D] / 1 3 8 3

Euclid Alone Has Looked on Beauty Bare

Euclid³ alone has looked on Beauty bare.

Let all who prate of Beauty hold their peace,

And lay them prone upon the earth and cease

To ponder on themselves, the while they stare

5 At nothing, intricately drawn nowhere

In shapes of shifting lineage; let geese

Gabble and hiss, but heroes seek release

From dusty bondage into luminous air.

O blinding hour, O holy, terrible day,

10 When first the shaft into his vision shone

Of light anatomized! Euclid alone

Has looked on Beauty bare. Fortunate they

Who, though once only and then but far away,

Have heard her massive sandal set on stone.

1 9 2 0

Spring

To what purpose, April, do you return again?

Beauty is not enough.

You can no longer quiet me with the redness

Of little leaves opening stickily.

5 I know what I know.

The sun is hot on my neck as I observe

The spikes of the crocus.

The smell of the earth is good.

It is apparent that there is no death,

io But what does that signify?

Not only under ground are the brains of men

Eaten by maggots.

Life in itself

Is nothing,

is An empty cup, a flight of uncarpeted stairs.

It is not enough that yearly, down this hill,

April

Comes like an idiot, babbling and strewing flowers.

1 9 2 1

[I, Being Born a Woman and Distressed]

I, being born a woman and distressed

By all the needs and notions of my kind,

3. Greek mathematician (ca. 300 B.C .L.), best-known for his treatise on geometry.

1 3 8 4 / E D N A S T . V I N C E N T M I L L A Y

Am urged by your propinquity⁰ to find *nearness*

Your person fair, and feel a certain zest

5 To bear your body's weight upon my breast:
So subtly is the fume of life designed,
To clarify the pulse and cloud the mind,
And leave me once again undone, possessed.
Think not for this, however, the poor treason
10 Of my stout blood against my staggering brain,
I shall remember you with love, or season
My scorn with pity,—let me make it plain:
I find this frenzy insufficient reason
For conversation when we meet again.

1923

The Buck in the Snow

White sky, over the hemlocks bowed with snow,
Saw you not at the beginning of evening the antlered buck and
his
doe
Standing in the apple-orchard? I saw them. I saw them
suddenly go,
Tails up, with long leaps lovely and slow,
5 Over the stone-wall into the wood of hemlocks bowed with
snow.
Now lies he here, his wild blood scalding the snow.
How strange a thing is death, bringing to his knees, bringing to
his
antlers
The buck in the snow.
How strange a thing,—a mile away by now, it may be,
10 Under the heavy hemlocks that as the moments pass
Shift their loads a little, letting fall a feather of snow—

Life, looking out attentive from the eyes of the doe.

1928

I Dreamed I Moved among the Elysian Fields⁴

I dreamed I moved among the Elysian fields,
In converse with sweet women long since dead;
And out of blossoms which that meadow yields
I wove a garland for your living head.

⁵ Danae,⁵ that was the vessel for a day
Of golden Jove, I saw, and at her side,
Whom Jove the Bull desired and bore away,
Europa⁶ stood, and the Swan's featherless bride.⁷
All these were mortal women, yet all these

4. The abode of the happy dead in the Greek by descending upon her as a shower of gold, mythological underworld. 6. Carried away by Jove in the form of a bull.

5. Whom Jove (Zeus), the supreme god, seduced 7. Leda, raped by Jove in the form of a swan.

ARMENONVILLE / 1385

10 Above the ground had had a god for guest;
Freely I walked beside them and at ease,
Addressing them, by them again addressed,
And marveled nothing, for remembering you,
Wherefore I was among them well I knew.

1930

Ragged Island

There, there where those black spruces crowd
To the edge of the precipitous cliff,
Above your boat, under the eastern wall of the island;
And no wave breaks; as if

5 All had been done, and long ago, that needed
Doing; and the cold tide, unimpeded
By shoal or shelving ledge, moves up and down,
Instead of in and out;
And there is no driftwood there, because there is no beach;
10 Clean cliff going down as deep as clear water can reach;
No driftwood, such as abounds on the roaring shingle,⁸
To be hefted home, for fires in the kitchen stove;
Barrels, banged ashore about the boiling outer harbor;
Lobster-buoys, on the eel-grass of the sheltered cove:
15 There, thought unbraids itself, and the mind becomes
single.

There you row with tranquil oars, and the ocean
Shows no scar from the cutting of your placid keel;
Care becomes senseless there; pride and promotion
Remote; you only look; you scarcely feel.

20 Even adventure, with its vital uses,
Is aimless ardour now; and thrift is waste.
Oh, to be there, under the silent spruces,
Where the wide, quiet evening darkens without haste
Over a sea with death acquainted, yet forever chaste.

1954

Armenonville⁹

By the lake at Armenonville in the Bois de Boulogne
Small begonias had been set in the embankment, both pink and
red;

With polished leaf and brittle, juicy stem;
They covered the embankment; there were wagon-loads of
them,

5 Charming and neat, gay colours in the warm shade.
8. Stones on a seashore.
9. Pavilion in the park of the Bois de Boulogne, in Paris.

1 3 8 6 / W I L F R E D O W E N

We had preferred a table near the lake, half out of view,
Well out of hearing, for a voice not raised above
A low, impassioned question and its low reply.
We both leaned forward with our elbows on the table, and you
10 Watched my mouth while I answered, and it made me shy.
I looked about, but the waiters knew we were in love,
And matter-of-factly left us blissfully alone.

There swam across the lake, as I looked aside, avoiding
Your eyes for a moment, there swam from under the pink and
red

begonias

15 A small creature; I thought it was a water-rat; it swam very
well,

In complete silence, and making no ripples at all

Hardly; and when suddenly I turned again to you,

Aware that you were speaking, and perhaps had been speaking
for

some time,

I was aghast at my absence, for truly I did not know

20 Whether you had been asking or telling.

1954

W I L F R E D O W E N

1893-1918

Anthem for Doomed Youth

What passing-bells for these who die as cattle?1

—Only the monstrous anger of the guns.
 Only the stuttering rifles' rapid rattle
 Can patter out their hasty orisons.⁰ *prayers*
 5 No mockeries now for them; no prayers nor bells;
 Nor any voice of mourning save the choirs,—
 The shrill, demented choirs of wailing shells;
 And bugles calling for them from sad shires.⁰ *counties*
 What candles may be held to speed them all?
 io Not in the hands of boys but in their eyes
 Shall shine the holy glimmers of goodbyes.
 The pallor of girls' brows shall be their pall;
 Their flowers the tenderness of patient minds,
 And each slow dusk a drawing-down of blinds.
 September-October 1917 1920

1. Owen was probably responding to the anonymous, while one of the youngest, almost as these
 mous prefatory note to *Poems of Today* (1916), of
 words are written, has gone singing to lay down his
 which he possessed a copy: "This book has been
 life for his country's cause... . There is no arbitrary
 compiled in order that boys and girls, already per-
 trary isolation of one theme from another; they
 haps familiar with the great classics of the English
 mingle and interpenetrate throughout, to the
 speech, may also know something of the newer
 music of Pan's flute, and of Love's viol, and the
 poetry of their own day. Most of the writers are
 bugle-call of Endeavour, and the passing-bells of

living, and the rest are still vivid memories among
Death.”

INSENSIBILITY / 1387

Dulce Et Decorum Est²

Bent double, like old beggars under sacks,
Knock-kneed, coughing like hags, we cursed through sludge,
Till on the haunting flares we turned our backs
And towards our distant rest began to trudge.
5 Men marched asleep. Many had lost their boots
But limped on, blood-shod. All went lame; all blind;
Drunk with fatigue; deaf even to the hoots
Of tired, outstripped Five-Nines³ that dropped behind.
Gas! GAS! Quick, boys!—An ecstasy of fumbling,
10 Fitting the clumsy helmets just in time;
But someone still was yelling out and stumbling,
And flound'ring like a man in fire or lime ...
Dim, through the misty panes⁴ and thick green light,
As under a green sea, I saw him drowning.
15 In all my dreams, before my helpless sight,
He plunges at me, guttering, choking, drowning.
If in some smothering dreams you too could pace
Behind the wagon that we flung him in,
And watch the white eyes writhing in his face,
20 His hanging face, like a devil's sick of sin;
If you could hear, at every jolt, the blood
Come gargling from the froth-corrupted lungs,
Obscene as cancer, bitter as the cud
Of vile, incurable sores on innocent tongues,—

25 My friend,⁵ you would not tell with such high zest
To children ardent for some desperate glory,
The old Lie: Dulce et decorum est
Pro patria mori.

October 1917-March 1918

1920

Insensibility

I

Happy are men who yet before they are killed
Can let their veins run cold.

Whom no compassion fleers⁰

mocks

Or makes their feet

2. “The famous Latin tag [from Horace, *Odes*

4. Of the gas mask’s celluloid window.

3.2.13] means, of course, *It is sweet and meet to*

5. Jessie Pope, to whom the poem was originally
die for one’s country. Sweet! And decorous!”

to have been dedicated, was the author of numer-

[Owen’s letter to his mother, October 16, 1917],

ous prewar children’s books as well as *Jessie Pope’s*

3. I.e., 5.9-caliber shells.

War Poems (1915).

1 3 8 8 /

W I L F R E D O W E N

5 Sore on the alleys cobbled⁶ with their brothers.

The front line withers.

But they are troops who fade, not flowers,

For poets' tearful fooling:

Men, gaps for filling:

10 Losses, who might have fought

Longer; but no one bothers.

2

And some cease feeling

Even themselves or for themselves.

Dullness "best solves

15 The tease and doubt of shelling,

And Chance's strange arithmetic

Comes simpler than the reckoning of their shilling.⁷

They keep no check on armies' decimation.

3

Happy are these who lose imagination:

20 They have enough to carry with ammunition.

Their spirit drags no pack.

Their old wounds, save with cold, can not more ache.

Having seen all things red,

Their eyes are rid

25 Of the hurt of the colour of blood for ever.

And terror's first constriction over,

Their hearts remain small-drawn.

Their senses in some scorching cautery of battle

Now long since ironed,

30 Can laugh among the dying, unconcerned.

4

Happy the soldier home, with not a notion

How somewhere, every dawn, some men attack,

And many sighs are drained.

Happy the lad whose mind was never trained:

35 His days are worth forgetting more than not.

He sings along the march

Which we march taciturn, because of dusk,

The long, forlorn, relentless trend

From larger day to huger night.

6. "They are dying again at Beaumont Hamel, 7. A "King's shilling" was traditionally given to the which already in 1916 was cobbled with skulls" newly established soldier by the recruiting officer.

[Owen's letter to his sister, March 1918],

S T R A N G E M E E T I N G / 1 3 8 9

5

40 We wise,8 who with a thought besmirch

Blood over all our soul,

How should we see our task

But through his blunt and lashless eyes?

Alive, he is not vital overmuch;

45 Dying, not mortal overmuch;

Nor sad, nor proud,

Nor curious at all.

He cannot tell

Old men's placidity from his.

50 But cursed are dullards whom no cannon stuns,

That they should be as stones.

Wretched are they, and mean

With paucity that never was simplicity.

By choice they made themselves immune

55 To pity and whatever moans in man
Before the last sea and the hapless stars;
Whatever mourns when many leave these shores;
Whatever shares
The eternal reciprocity of tears.

1 9 1 7 - 1 8 1 9 2 0

Strange Meeting⁹

It seemed that out of battle I escaped
Down some profound dull tunnel, long since scooped
Through granites which titanic wars had groined.⁰ *grooved*
Yet also there encumbered sleepers groaned,
5 Too fast in thought or death to be bestirred.
Then, as I probed them, one sprang up, and stared
With piteous recognition in fixed eyes,
Lifting distressful hands, as if to bless.
And by his smile, I knew that sullen hall,—
io By his dead smile I knew we stood in Hell.
With a thousand pains that vision's face was grained;
Yet no blood reached there from the upper ground,
And no guns thumped, or down the flues made moan.

8. I.e., poets.

Seemed like some brothers on a journey wide

9. Cf. Shelley, *The Revolt of Islam*, lines 1 8 2 8 -

Gone forth, whom now strange meeting did befall

32:

In a strange land.

And one whose spear had pierced me, leaned beside,

The speaker of Owen's poem imagines his victim a

With quivering lips and humid eyes;—and all
German poet.

1390 / WILFRED OWEN

“Strange friend,” I said, “here is no cause to mourn.”

15 “None,” said that other, “save the undone years,
The hopelessness. Whatever hope is yours,

Was my life also; I went hunting wild

After the wildest beauty in the world,

Which lies not calm in eyes, or braided hair,

20 But mocks the steady running of the hour,

And if it grieves, grieves richer than here.

For by my glee might many men have laughed.
d.

And of my weeping something had been left,

Which must die now. I mean the truth untold,

25 The pity of war, the pity war distilled.¹

Now men will go content with what we spoiled,

Or, discontent, boil bloody, and be spilled.

They will be swift with swiftness of the tigress.

None will break ranks, though nations trek from
progress.

30 Courage was mine, and I had mystery,

Wisdom was mine, and I had mastery:

To miss the march of this retreating world

Into vain citadels that are not walled.

Then, when much blood had clogged their chariot-wheels,
35 I would go up and wash them
from sweet wells,

Even with truths that lie too deep for taint.

I would have poured my spirit without stint

**B u t n o t t h r o u g h w o u n d s ; n o t o n t h e c e s s 2 o
f war.**

**F o r e h e a d s o f m e n h a v e b l e d w h e r e n o w o u n
d s w e r e .**

40 “I a m t h e e n e m y y o u k i l l e d , m y f r i e n d .

I k n e w y o u i n t h i s d a r k : f o r s o y o u f r o w n e d

Y e s t e r d a y t h r o u g h m e a s y o u j a b b e d a n d k i l l e d .

I p a r r i e d ; b u t m y h a n d s w e r e l o a t h a n d c o l d .

L e t u s s l e e p n o w”

J a n u a r y — M a r c h 1 9 1 8

1 9 2 0

F u t i l i t y

M o v e h i m i n t o t h e s u n —

G e n t l y i t s t o u c h a w o k e h i m o n c e ,

A t h o m e , w h i s p e r i n g o f f i e l d s h a l f - s o w n .

A l w a y s i t w o k e h i m , e v e n i n F r a n c e ,

5 U n t i l t h i s m o r n i n g a n d t h i s s n o w .

I f a n y t h i n g m i g h t r o u s e h i m n o w

T h e k i n d o l d s u n w i l l k n o w .

T h i n k h o w i t w a k e s t h e s e e d s —

W o k e o n c e t h e c l a y s o f a c o l d s t a r .

1. “My subject is War, and the pity of War. The

2. Luck, as in the phrase *had cess to you* (may evil

Poetry is in the pity” [Owen’s draft preface to his

befall you); also muck or excrement, as in the word
poems].

cesspool.

O N E P E R F E C T R O S E / 1 3 9 1

10 A r e l i m b s , s o d e a r a c h i e v e d , a r e s i d e s

Full-nerved, still warm, too hard to stir?

Was it for this the clay grew tall?

—O what made fatuous sunbeams toil

To break earth's sleep at all?

May 1918 1920

D O R O T H Y P A R K E R

1893-1967

Unfortunate Coincidence

By the time you swear you're his,

Shivering and sighing,

And he vows his passion is

Infinite, undying—

5 Lady, make a note of this:

One of you is lying.

1926

Resume

Razors pain you;

Rivers are damp;

Acids stain you;

And drugs cause cramp.

5 Guns aren't lawful;

Nooses give;

Gas smells awful;

You might as well live.

1926

One Perfect Rose

A single flow'r he sent me, since we met.

All tenderly his messenger he chose;

Deep-hearted, pure, with scented dew still wet—

One perfect rose.

5 I knew the language of the floweret;

“My fragile leaves,” it said, “his heart enclose.”

Love long has taken for his amulet

One perfect rose.

1 3 9 2 / E . E . C U M M I N G S

W h y i s i t n o o n e e v e r s e n t m e y e t

10 O n e p e r f e c t l i m o u s i n e , d o y o u s u p p o s e ?

A h n o , i t ' s a l w a y s j u s t m y l u c k t o g e t

O n e p e r f e c t r o s e .

1 9 2 6

E . E . C U M M I N G S

1894-1962

All in green went my love riding

A l l i n g r e e n w e n t m y l o v e r i d i n g

o n a g r e a t h o r s e o f g o l d

i n t o t h e s i l v e r d a w n .

f o u r l e a n h o u n d s c r o u c h e d l o w a n d s m i l i n g
5 t h e m e r r y d e e r r a n b e f o r e .

F l e e t e r b e t h e y t h a n d a p p l e d d r e a m s

t h e s w i f t s w e e t d e e r

t h e r e d r a r e d e e r .

F o u r r e d r o e b u c k a t a w h i t e w a t e r

i o t h e c r u e l b u g l e s a n g b e f o r e .

H o r n a t h i p w e n t m y l o v e r i d i n g

r i d i n g t h e e c h o d o w n

i n t o t h e s i l v e r d a w n .

four lean hounds crouched low and smiling
15 the level meadows ran before.

Softer bethey than slippered sleep

the lean lithe deer

the fleet flown deer.

Four fleet does at a gold valley

20 the famished arrow sang before.

Bow at belt went my love riding

riding the mountain down

into the silver dawn.

four lean hounds crouched low and smiling
25 the sheer peaks ran before.

Paler bethey than a daunting death

the sleek slim deer

the tall tense deer.

SPRING is LIKE A PERHAPS HAND / 1393

Four tall stags at a green mountain

30 the lucky hunter sang before.

All in green went my love riding

on a great horse of gold

into the silver dawn.

four lean hounds crouched low and smiling

35 my heart fell dead before.

1923

the Cambridge ladies who live in furnished souls

the Cambridge ladies who live in furnished souls

are unbeautiful and have comfortable minds

(also, with the church's protestant blessings

daughters, unscented shapeless spirited)

5 they believe in Christ and Longfellow,¹ both dead,
are invariably interested in so many things—
at the present writing one still finds
delighted fingers knitting for the is it Poles?
perhaps. While permanent faces coyly bandy
io scandal of Mrs. N and Professor D
. . . . the Cambridge ladies do not care,above
Cambridge if sometimes in its box of
sky lavender and cornerless,the
moon rattles like a fragment of angry candy

1 9 2 3

Spring is like a perhaps hand
Spring is like a perhaps hand
(which comes carefully
out of Nowhere)arranging
a window,into which people look(while
5 people stare
arranging and changing placing
carefully there a strange
thing and a known thing here)and
changing everything carefully
io spring is like a perhaps
Hand in a window
(carefully to

1. For most of his life, the American poet Henry Wadsworth Longfellow (1807—1882; see pp. 951—57) lived in Cambridge, Massachusetts, where for two decades he taught modern languages at Harvard University.

1 3 9 4 / E . E . C U M M I N G S

and from moving New and
Old things, while
15 people stare carefully
moving a perhaps
fraction of flower here placing
an inch of air there)and
without breaking anything.

1925

“next to of course god america i
“next to of course god america i
love you land of the pilgrims’ and so forth oh
say can you see by the dawn’s early my
country ‘tis of centuries come and go
5 and are no more what of it we should worry
in every language even deaf and dumb
thy sons acclaim your glorious name by gorry
by jingo² by gee by gosh by gum
why talk of beauty what could be more beaut-
10 iful than these heroic happy dead
who rushed like lions to the roaring slaughter
they did not stop to think they died instead
then shall the voice of liberty be muffled”

He spoke. And drank rapidly a glass of water

1926

since feeling is first
since feeling is first
who pays any attention
to the syntax of things

will never wholly kiss you;
5 wholly to be a fool
while Spring is in the world
my blood approves,
and kisses are a better fate
than wisdom
io lady i swear by all flowers. Don't cry
—the best gesture of my brain is less than
your eyelids' flutter which says

2. "Jingo" is both part of a mild oath and a reference to jingoism: extreme nationalism, especially as demonstrated in a belligerent foreign policy.

MAY I F E E L S A I D H E / 1 3 9 5

we are for each other:then
laugh,leaning back in my arms
15 for life's not a paragraph
And death i think is no parenthesis
1 9 2 6

somewhere i have never travelled,gladly beyond
somewhere i have never travelled,gladly beyond
any experience,your eyes have their silence:
in your most frail gesture are things which enclose me,
or which i cannot touch because they are too near
5 your slightest look easily will uncloze me
though i have closed myself as fingers,
you open always petal by petal myself as Spring opens
(touching skilfully,mysteriously)her first rose
or if your wish be to close me,i and
io my life will shut very beautifully,suddenly,

as when the heart of this flower imagines
the snow carefully everywhere descending;
nothing which we are to perceive in this world equals
the power of your intense fragility: whose texture
15 compels me with the colour of its countries,
rendering death and forever with each breathing
(i do not know what it is about you that closes
and opens; only something in me understands
the voice of your eyes is deeper than all roses)
20 nobody, not even the rain, has such small hands
1 9 3 1

may i feel said he
may i feel said he
(i'll squeal said she
just once said he)
it's fun said she
5 (may i touch said he
how much said she
a lot said he)
why not said she

1 3 9 6 / E . E . C U M M I N G S

(let's go said he
10 not too far said she
what's too far said he
where you are said she)
may i stay said he
(which way said she
15 like this said he

if you kiss said she
may i move said he
is it love said she)
if you're willing said he
20 (but you're killing said she
but it's life said he
but your wife said she
now said he)

ow said she
25 (tiptop said he
don't stop said she
oh no said he)

go slow said she
(cccome?said he
30 ummm said she)
you're divinelsaid he
(you are Mine said she)

1 9 3 5

anyone lived in a pretty how town
anyone lived in a pretty how town
(with up so floating many bells down)
spring summer autumn winter
he sang his didn't he danced his did.
5 Women and men(both little and small)
cared for anyone not at all
they sowed their isn't they reaped their same
sun moon stars rain
children guessed(but only a few

io and down they forgot as up they grew
autumn winter spring summer)

that noone loved him more by more

when by now and tree by leaf

she laughed his joy she cried his grief

WHO ARE YOU, LITTLE I / 1397

15 bird by snow and stir by still

anyone's any was all to her

someone's married their everyone's

laughed their cryings and did their dance

(sleep wake hope and then) they

20 said their neverst they slept their dream

stars rain sun moon

(and only the snow can begin to explain

how children are apt to forget to remember

with ups of floating many bells down)

25 one day anyone died i guess

(and no one stooped to kiss his face)

busy folk buried them side by side

little by little and was by was

all by all and deep by deep

30 and more by more they dream their sleep

no one and anyone earth by april

wish by spirit and if by yes.

Women and men (both doing and ding)

summer autumn winter spring

35 reaped their sowing and went their came

sun moon stars rain

1940

who are you, little i

who are you, little i

(five or six years old)

peering from some high

window; at the gold

5 of november sunset

(and feeling: that if day

has to become night

this is a beautiful way)

1963

1398

JEAN T O O M E R

1894-1967

FROM CANE 1

Reapers

Black reapers with the sound of steel on stones

Are sharpening scythes. I see them place the hones

In their hip-pockets as a thing that's done,

And start their silent swinging, one by one.

5 Black horses drive a mower through the weeds,

And there, a field rat, startled, squealing bleeds,

His belly close to ground. I see the blade,

Blood-stained, continue cutting weeds and shade.

Face

Hair—

silver-gray,

like streams of stars,

Brows—
5 recurved canoes
quivered by the ripples blown by pain,
Her eyes—
mist of tears
condensing on the flesh below
10 And her channeled muscles
are cluster grapes of sorrow
purple in the evening sun
nearly ripe for worms.

Georgia Dusk

The sky, lazily disdaining to pursue
The setting sun, too indolent to hold
A lengthened tournament for flashing gold,
Passively darkens for night's barbecue,
5 A feast of moon and men and barking hounds,
An orgy for some genius of the South
With blood-hot eyes and cane-lipped scented mouth,
Surprised in making folksongs from soul sounds.

1. A collection—of fiction, drama, and poetry— D.C., it was partly inspired by the period in which that Toomer saw as a unified book not to be the urban Toomer, of black and white ancestry, excerpted. Set in Georgia and in Washington, worked in a school in Sparta, Georgia.

H A R V E S T S O N G / 1 3 9 9

The sawmill blows its whistle, buzz-saws stop,
10 And silence breaks the bud of knoll and hill,
Soft settling pollen where plowed lands fulfill
Their early promise of a bumper crop.

Smoke from the pyramidal sawdust pile
Curls up, blue ghosts of trees, tarrying low
15 Where only chips and stumps are left to show
The solid proof of former domicile.
Meanwhile, the men, with vestiges of pomp,
Race memories of king and caravan,
High-priests, an ostrich, and a juju-man,²
20 Go singing through the footpaths of the swamp.
Their voices rise . . . the pine trees are guitars,
Strumming, pine-needles fall like sheets of rain . . .
Their voices rise . . . the chorus of the cane
Is caroling a vesper to the stars . . .
25 O singers, resinous and soft your songs
Above the sacred whisper of the pines,
Give virgin lips to cornfield concubines,
Bring dreams of Christ to dusky cane-lipped throngs.
Portrait in Georgia
Hair—braided chestnut,
coiled like a lyncher's rope,
Eyes—fagots,⁰ *bundles of sticks*
Lips—old scars, or the first red blisters,
5 Breath—the last sweet scent of cane,
And her slim body, white as the ash
of black flesh after flame.

Harvest Song

I am a reaper whose muscles set at sundown. All my oats are
cradled.
But I am too chilled, and too fatigued to bind them. And I
hunger.

I crack a grain between my teeth. I do not taste it.

I have been in the fields all day. My throat is dry. I hunger.

5 My eyes are caked with dust of oatfields at harvest-time.

I am a blind man who stares across the hills, seeking stacked
fields of

other harvesters.

2. One who controls the magic associated with jujus, the
fetishes or charms of West African peoples.

1 4 0 0 / R O B E R T G R A V E S

It would be good to see them . . . crook'd, split, and iron-ringed
handles

of the scythes. It would be good to see them, dust-caked and
blind. I hunger.

(Dusk is a strange feared sheath their blades are dulled in.)

My throat is dry. And should I call, a cracked grain like the
oats ...

eoho—

10 I fear to call. What should they hear me, and offer me their
grain,

oats, or wheat, or corn? I have been in the fields all day. I fear
I

could not taste it. I fear knowledge of my hunger.

My ears are caked with dust of oatfields at harvest-time.

I am a deaf man who strains to hear the calls of other
harvesters

whose throats are also dry.

It would be good to hear their songs . . . reapers of the sweet-
stalked

cane, cutters of the corn . . . even though their throats cracked
and

the strangeness of their voices deafened me.

I hunger. My throat is dry. Now that the sun has set and I am chilled,
I fear to call. (Eoho, my brothers!)
is I am a reaper. (Eoho!) All my oats are cradled. But I am too fatigued
to bind them. And I hunger. I crack a grain. It has no taste to it.
My throat is dry ...
O my brothers, I beat my palms, still soft, against the stubble of my
harvesting. (You beat your soft palms, too.) My pain is sweet.
Sweeter than the oats or wheat or corn. It will not bring me
knowledge of my hunger.

1 9 2 3

R O B E R T G R A V E S

1895-1985

Love Without Hope

Love without hope, as when the young bird-catcher
Swept off his tall hat to the Squire's own daughter,
So let the imprisoned larks escape and fly
Singing about her head, as she rode by.

1 9 2 5

In Broken Images

He is quick, thinking in clear images;
I am slow, thinking in broken images.

W A R N I N G T O C H I L D R E N / 1 4 0 1

He becomes dull, trusting to his clear images;
I become sharp, mistrusting my broken images.
5 Trusting his images, he assumes their relevance;
Mistrusting my images, I question their relevance.

Assuming their relevance, he assumes the fact;
Questioning their relevance, I question the fact.
When the fact fails him, he questions his senses;
io When the fact fails me, I approve my senses.
He continues quick and dull in his clear images;
I continue slow and sharp in my broken images.
He in a new confusion of his understanding;
I in a new understanding of my confusion.

1 9 2 9

Warning to Children

Children, if you dare to think
Of the greatness, rareness, muchness,
Fewness of this precious only
Endless world in which you say
5 You live, you think of things like this:
Blocks of slate enclosing dappled
Red and green, enclosing tawny
Yellow nets, enclosing white
And black acres of dominoes,
io Where a neat brown paper parcel
Tempts you to untie the string.
In the parcel a small island,
On the island a large tree,
On the tree a husky fruit.
15 Strip the husk and pare the rind off:
In the kernel you will see
Blocks of slate enclosed by dappled
Red and green, enclosed by tawny

Yellow nets, enclosed by white
20 And black acres of dominoes,
Where the same brown paper parcel—
Children, leave the string alone!
For who dares undo the parcel
Finds himself at once inside it,
25 On the island, in the fruit,
Blocks of slate about his head,
Finds himself enclosed by dappled
Green and red, enclosed by yellow
Tawny nets, enclosed by black

1402 / ROBERT GRAVES

**30 And white acres of dominoes,
With the same brown paper parcel
Still unopened on his knee.
And, if he then should dare to think
Of the fewness, muchness, rareness,
3s Greatness of this endless only
Precious world in which he says
He lives — he then unties the string.**

1929

The Persian Version

**Truth-loving Persians do not dwell upon
The trivial skirmish fought near Marathon. 1
As for the Greek theatrical tradition
Which represents that summer 's expedition
on 5 Not as a mere reconnaissance in force
By three brigades of foot and one of horse
(Their left flank covered by some obsolete**

**Light craft detached from the main Persian
fleet) But as a grandiose, ill-starred attempt
io To conquer Greece — they treat it with cont
empt; And only incidentally refute
Major Greek claims, by stressing what repu
te The Persian monarch and the Persianna
tion Won by this salutary demonstration:
is Despite a strong defence and adverse weath
er All arms combined magnificently together.**

1945

To Juan at the Winter Solstice²

**There is one story and one story only
That will prove worth your telling,
Whether as learned bard or gifted child;³
To it all lines or lesser gauds⁴ belong
5 That startle with their shining
Such common stories as they stray into.
Is it of trees you tell, their months and virtues,⁵
Or strange beasts that beset you,**

1. The Rattle of Marathon (490 H.C.C.) was a deci-
light to the north) is in many religions the birthday
sive Greek victory over the Persians.

of the Sun Hero.

2. Graves's "grammar of poetic myth," *The White*

3. The ancient Celtic bard Taliesin, as a "gifted
Goddess (1948), finds the only theme for true
child," outmatched twenty-four experienced court
poetry in the story of the life cycle of the Sun God,
poets.

or Sun Hero, his marriage with the Goddess, and

4. The larger beads placed between the decades his inevitable death at her hands or by her command of “aves” in a Roman Catholic rosary (i.e., every mand. The poet’s son Juan was born on December eleventh bead).

21, 1945, one day before the winter solstice, which

5. Graves cites, in addition to Taliesin’s poem

(being the time when the sun gives least heat and

“The Rattle of the Trees,” an ancient Druidic “tree-

T o J U A N A T T H E W I N T E R S O L S T I C E / 1 4 0 3

Of birds that croak at you the Triple will?⁶

Or of the Zodiac and how slow it turns

Below the Boreal Crown,⁷

Prison of all true kings that ever reigned?

Water to water, ark again to ark,

From woman back to woman:

So each new victim treads unfalteringly

The never altered circuit of his fate,

Bringing twelve peers⁸ as witness

Both to his starry rise and starry fall.⁹

Or is it of the Virgin’s silver beauty,

All fish below the thighs?

She in her left hand bears a leafy quince;¹

When with her right she crooks a finger, smiling,

How may the King hold back?

Royally then he barter life for love.

Or of the undying snake from chaos hatched,

Whose coils contain the ocean,

Into whose chops with naked sword he springs,
Then in black water, tangled by the reeds,
Battles three days and nights,
To be spewed up beside her scalloped shore?²
Much snow is falling, winds roar hollowly,
The owl hoots from the elder,
Fear in your heart cries to the loving-cup:
Sorrow to sorrow as the sparks fly upward.
The log groans and confesses:³
There is one story and one story only.
Dwell on her graciousness, dwell on her smiling,
Do not forget what flowers
The great boar trampled down in ivy time.⁴
Her brow was creamy as the crested wave,
Her sea-grey eyes were wild⁵
But nothing promised that is not performed.

1 9 4 5

calendar” that describes the natural and magic
the water.

properties of different trees and associates each

1. Two forms of the Goddess are Aphrodite, Greek
with a different month or season.

goddess of love, whose emblem is the quince, and

6. The Goddess sometimes speaks through such

Rahab, the Hebraic sea goddess, who was depicted
“prophetic” birds as the owl and eagle and has been
with a fish’s tail.

called the Triple Goddess because of her threefold

2. The snake, Ophion, was created by the Goddess aspect as Goddess of the Underworld, Earth, and and mated with her. From their egg, the world was Sky.

hatched by the sun's rays. The king (or Solar Hero)

7. "*Corona Borealis*, . . . which in Thracian- must kill the snake to win the Goddess, but in Libyan mythology carried to Bronze Age Britain, October the snake (perhaps reincarnated as the was the purgatory where Solar Heroes went after boar of line 39) must kill the king.

death" [Graves's note]. The twelve signs of the

3. Cf. Job 5.7: "Man is born unto trouble, as the turning zodiac correspond to the twelve months. sparks fly upward." "The log is the Yule [or Christ-

8. Perhaps the twelve knights of King Arthur's mas] log, burned at the year's end" [Graves's note]. round table, Christ's twelve apostles, or the twelve

4. Aphrodite's lover, Adonis, was killed by a boar. signs of the zodiac.

5. Cf. Keats, "La Belle Dame sans Merci," line 16:

9. The king (or Solar Hero), reincarnated, reap- "And her eyes were wild" (p. 917).

appears at the winter solstice floating in an ark on

1 4 0 4 / E D M U N D B L U N D E N

The White Goddess⁶

All saints revile her, and all sober men

Ruled by the God Apollo's golden mean⁷—

In scorn of which we sailed to find her
In distant regions likeliest to hold her
5 Whom we desired above all things to know,
Sister of the mirage and echo.
It was a virtue not to stay,
To go our headstrong and heroic way
Seeking her out at the volcano's head,
10 Among pack ice, or where the track had faded
Beyond the cavern of the seven sleepers:⁸
Whose broad high brow was white as any leper's,
Whose eyes were blue, with rowan-berry lips,
With hair curled honey-coloured to white hips.
15 Green sap of Spring in the young wood a-stir
Will celebrate the Mountain Mother,
And every song-bird shout awhile for her;
But we are gifted, even in November
Rawest of seasons, with so huge a sense
20 Of her nakedly worn magnificence
We forget cruelty and past betrayal,
Heedless of where the next bright bolt may fall.

1 9 5 3

E D M U N D B L U N D E N

1896-1974

Forefathers

Here they went with smock and crook,
Toiled in the sun, lolled in the shade,
Here they mudded out the brook
And here their hatchet cleared the glade:

5 Harvest-supper woke their wit,
Huntsman's moon their wooings lit.
From this church they led their brides,
From this church themselves were led
Shoulder-high; on these waysides
io Sat to take their beer and bread.

6. See note 2, p. 1402.

8. Cf. Donne, "The Good Morrow," line 4

7. The middle way, moderation. Apollo's motto
(p. 293): "Or snorted we in the Seven Sleepers'
was "Nothing in Excess."
den?"

1 9 1 6 S E E N F R O M 1 9 2 1 / 1 4 0 5

Names are gone—what men they were
These their cottages declare.

Names are vanished, save the few

In the old brown Bible scrawled;

15 These were men of pith and thew,¹

Whom the city never called;

Scarce could read or hold a quill,

Built the barn, the forge, the mill.

On the green they watched their sons

20 Playing till too dark to see,

As their fathers watched them once,

As my father once watched me;

While the bat and beetle flew

On the warm air webbed with dew.

25 Unrecorded, unrenowned,

Men from whom my ways begin,
Here I know you by your ground
But I know you not within—
There is silence, there survives
30 Not a moment of your lives.
Like the bee that now is blown
Honey-heavy on my hand,
From his toppling tansy²-throne
In the green tempestuous land—
35 I'm in clover now, nor know
Who made honey long ago.

1 9 2 2

1916 seen from 1921

Tired with dull grief, grown old before my day,
I sit in solitude and only hear
Long silent laughters, murmurings of dismay,
The lost intensities of hope and fear;
5 In those old marshes yet the rifles lie,
On the thin breastwork flutter the grey rags,
The very books I read are there—and I
Dead as the men I loved, wait while life drags
Its wounded length from those sad streets of war
10 Into green places here, that were my own;
But now what once was mine is mine no more,
I seek such neighbours here and I find none.

1. Strong muscle. *Of pith*: i.e., forcible and terse. 2. Tall, yellow-flowered plant.

1 4 0 6 / L O U I S E B O G A N

With such strong gentleness and tireless will
Those ruined houses seared themselves in me,
15 Passionate I look for their dumb story still,
And the charred stub outspeaks the living tree.
I rise up at the singing of a bird
And scarcely knowing slink along the lane,
I dare not give a soul a look or word
20 Where all have homes and none s at home in vain:
Deep red the rose burned in the grim redoubt,
The self-sown wheat around was like a flood,
In the hot path the lizard lolled time out,
The saints in broken shrines were bright as blood.
25 Sweet Mary's shrine between the sycamores!
There we would go, my friend of friends and I,
And snatch long moments from the grudging wars,
Whose dark made light intense to see them by.
Shrewd bit the morning fog, the whining shots
30 Spun from the wrangling wire;⁴ then in warm swoon
The sun hushed all but the cool orchard plots,
We crept in the tall grass and slept till noon.

1 9 2 2 1 9 3 0

L O U I S E B O G A N

1897-1970

Medusa¹

I had come to the house, in a cave of trees,
Facing a sheer sky.
Everything moved,—a bell hung ready to strike,
Sun and reflection wheeled by.

5 When the bare eyes were before me
And the hissing hair,
Held up at a window, seen through a door.
The stiff bald eyes, the serpents on the forehead
Formed in the air.

io This is a dead scene forever now.

Nothing will ever stir.

The end will never brighten it more than this,

Nor the rain blur.

3. Earthwork defensive position enclosed on all
of whom was so terrible it turned people to stone.
sides.

Perseus killed Medusa by cutting off her head,

4. Barbed wire.

which retained the power to petrify (in both

1. One of the Gorgons, Greek mythological sisters
senses) its viewers.

with monstrous faces and snakes for hair, the sight

M A N A L O N E / 1 4 0 7

The water will always fall, and will not fall,

15 And the tipped bell make no sound.

The grass will always be growing for hay

Deep on the ground.

And I shall stand here like a shadow

Under the great balanced day,

20 My eyes on the yellow dust, that was lifting in the wind,

And does not drift away.

1 9 2 3

Juan's Song

When beauty breaks and falls asunder

I feel no grief for it, but wonder.

When love, like a frail shell, lies broken,

I keep no chip of it for token.

5 I never had a man for friend

Who did not know that love must end.

I never had a girl for lover

Who could discern when love was over.

What the wise doubt, the fool believes—

io Who is it, then, that love deceives?

1 9 2 3

Man Alone

It is yourself you seek

In a long rage,

Scanning through light and darkness

Mirrors, the page,

5 Where should reflected be

Those eyes and that thick hair,

That passionate look, that laughter.

You should appear

Within the book, or doubled,

io Freed, in the silvered glass;

Into all other bodies

Yourself should pass.

The glass does not dissolve;

Like walls the mirrors stand;

15 The printed page gives back

Words by another hand.

1 4 0 8 / L O U I S E B O G A N

And your infatuate eye

Meets not itself below:

Strangers lie in your arms

20 As I lie now.

1 9 3 7

Roman Fountain

Up from the bronze, I saw

Water without a flaw

Rush to its rest in air,

Reach to its rest, and fall.

5 Bronze of the blackest shade,

An element man-made,

Shaping upright the bare

Clear gouts of water in air.

O, as with arm and hammer,

io Still it is good to strive

To beat out the image whole,

To echo the shout and stammer

When full-gushed waters, alive,

Strike on the fountain's bowl

15 After the air of summer.

1 9 3 7

Song for the Last Act

Now that I have your face by heart, I look

Less at its features than its darkening frame

Where quince and melon, yellow as young flame,

Lie with quilled dahlias and the shepherd's crook.
5 Beyond, a garden. There, in insolent ease
The lead and marble figures watch the show
Of yet another summer loath to go
Although the scythes hang in the apple trees.
Now that I have your face by heart, I look.
io Now that I have your voice by heart, I read
In the black chords upon a dulling page
Music that is not meant for music's cage,
Whose emblems mix with words that shake and bleed.
The staves² are shuttled over with a stark
2. Horizontal lines on which music is written.

N I G H T / 1 4 0 9

15 Unprinted silence. In a double dream
I must spell out the storm, the running stream.
The beat's too swift. The notes shift in the dark.
Now that I have your voice by heart, I read.
Now that I have your heart by heart, I see
20 The wharves with their great ships and architraves;³
The rigging and the cargo and the slaves
On a strange beach under a broken sky.
O not departure, but a voyage done!
The bales stand on the stone; the anchor weeps
25 Its red rust downward, and the long vine creeps
Beside the salt herb, in the lengthening sun.
Now that I have your heart by heart, I see.

1 9 5 4

Night

The cold remote islands
And the blue estuaries
Where what breathes, breathes
The restless wind of the inlets,
5 And what drinks, drinks
The incoming tide;
Where shell and weed
Wait upon the salt wash of the sea,
And the clear nights of stars
10 Swing their lights westward
To set behind the land;
Where the pulse clinging to the rocks
Renews itself forever;
Where, again on cloudless nights,
15 The water reflects
The firmament's partial setting;
—O remember
In your narrowing dark hours
That more things move
20 Than blood in the heart.

1 9 6 8

3. Beams on columns.

1 4 1 0

H A R T C R A N E

1899-1932

My Grandmother's Love Letters

There are no stars to-night

But those of memory.

Yet how much room for memory there is
In the loose girdle of soft rain.
5 There is even room enough
For the letters of my mother's mother,
Elizabeth,
That have been pressed so long
Into a corner of the roof
io That they are brown and soft,
And liable to melt as snow.
Over the greatness of such space
Steps must be gentle.
It is all hung by an invisible white hair.
15 It trembles as birch limbs webbing the air.
And I ask myself:
"Are your fingers long enough to play
Old keys that are but echoes:
Is the silence strong enough
20 To carry back the music to its source
And back to you again
As though to her?"
Yet I would lead my grandmother by the hand
Through much of what she would not understand;
25 And so I stumble. And the rain continues on the roof
With such a sound of gently pitying laughter.
1926
At Melville's Tomb
Often beneath the wave, wide from this ledge
The dice² of drowned men's bones he saw bequeath

An embassy. Their numbers as he watched,
Beat on the dusty shore and were obscured.

5 And wrecks passed without sound of bells,
The calyx³ of death's bounty giving back

1. The American poet and novelist Herman Mel-
note to editor Harriet Monroe].

ville (1819-1891; see pp. 1054-57), best-known

3. Literally, the outer whorl of a flower, formed by
for his works dealing with the sea.

modified leaves. "This calyx refers in a double

2. Small, broken pieces. "Dice as a symbol of
ironic sense both to a cornucopia (cone-shaped
chance and circumstance is also implied" [Crane's
receptacle) and the vortex made by a sinking ves-

VOYAGES / 1 4 1 1

A scattered chapter, livid hieroglyph,

The portent wound in corridors of shells.

Then in the circuit calm of one vast coil,

io Its lashings charmed and malice reconciled,

Frosted eyes there were that lifted altars;

And silent answers crept across the stars.

Compass, quadrant and sextant⁴ contrive

No farther tides ... High in the azure steeps

15 Monodys shall not wake the mariner.

This fabulous shadow only the sea keeps.

1 9 2 6

Voyages

I

Above the fresh ruffles of the surf
Bright striped urchins flay each other with sand.
They have contrived a conquest for shell shucks,
And their fingers crumble fragments of baked weed
5 Gaily digging and scattering.
And in answer to their treble interjections
The sun beats lightning on the waves,
The waves fold thunder on the sand;
And could they hear me I would tell them:
io O brilliant kids, frisk with your dog,
Fondle your shells and sticks, bleached
By time and the elements; but there is a line
You must not cross nor ever trust beyond it
Spry cordage⁰ of your bodies to caresses ropes *in ship's
rigging*

15 Too lichen-faithful from too wide a breast.
The bottom of the sea is cruel.

2

—And yet this great wink of eternity,
Of rimless floods, unfettered leewardings,
Samite⁶ sheeted and processioned where
Her undinal⁷ vast belly moonward bends,
5 Laughing the wrapt inflections of our love;
sel” [Crane’s note to Monroe].

original boundaries of the entity measured.”

4. Instruments used in navigation: the compass

5. Elegy or dirge sung by one person.

determines geographic directions; the quadrant

6. A rich, silky fabric interwoven with gold or silver and sextant measure angles and reckon altitudes.
ver. *Leewardings*: ship's movements away from the Crane's note to Monroe suggests that they "have wind.

inadvertently so extended the concepts of the

7. The adjective suggests both waves and undines, entity they were invented to measure ... that they or water spirits.

may metaphorically be said to have extended the

1 4 1 2 / H A R T C R A N E

Take this Sea, whose diapason⁰ knells *burst of sound*

On scrolls of silver snowy sentences,

The sceptered terror of whose sessions rends

As her demeanors motion well or ill.

10 All but the pieties of lovers' hands.

And onward, as bells off San Salvador⁸

Salute the crocus lusters of the stars,

In these poinsettia⁹ meadows of her tides—

Adagios of islands, O my Prodigal,¹

15 Complete the dark confessions her veins spell.

Mark how her turning shoulders wind the hours,

And hasten while her penniless rich palms

Pass superscription of bent foam and wave—

Hasten, while they are true—sleep, death, desire,

20 Close round one instant in one floating flower.

Bind us in time, O Seasons clear, and awe.

O minstrel galleons of Carib² fire,

Bequeath us to no earthly shore until
Is answered in the vortex of our grave
25 The seal's wide spindrift gaze toward paradise.

3

Infinite consanguinity⁰ it bears— *blood relationship*

This tendered theme of you that light
Retrieves from sea plains where the sky
Resigns a breast that every wave enthrones;

5 While ribboned water lanes I wind
Are laved and scattered with no stroke

Wide from your side, whereto this hour
The sea lifts, also, reliquary hands.³

And so, admitted through black swollen gates

io That must arrest all distance otherwise,

Past whirling pillars and lithe pediments,
Light wrestling there incessantly with light,

Star kissing star through wave on wave unto

Your body rocking!

15 and where death, if shed,

Presumes no carnage, but this single change,

Upon the steep floor flung from dawn to dawn

The silken skilled transmemberment⁴ of song;

Permit me voyage, love, into your hands ...

8. An island of the Bahamas group, Columbus's
are musically slow and graceful.

first landfall on the first voyage.

2. Some of the West Indian islands, or the sea sur-

9. Showy plant native to Central America.

rounding them.

1. Wasteful, lavish one; cf. the Prodigal Son in

3. I.e., hands holding sacred relics.

Luke 15. *Adagios*: divisions of a composition that

4. Exchange or transformation of parts.

V O Y A G E S / 1 4 1 3

4

Whose counted smile of hours and days, suppose

I know as spectrum of the sea and pledge

Vastly now parting gulf on gulf of wings

Whose circles bridge, I know, (from palms to the severe

5 Chilled albatross's⁵ white immutability)

No stream of greater love advancing now

Than, singing, this mortality alone

Through clay aflow immortally to you.

All fragrance irrefragibly,⁶ and claim

io Madly meeting logically in this hour

And region that is ours to wreath again,

Portending eyes and lips and making told

The chancel⁷ port and portion of our June—

Shall they not stem and close in our own steps

15 Bright staves of flowers and quills to-day as I

Must first be lost in fatal tides to tell?

In signature of the incarnate word

The harbor shoulders to resign in mingling

Mutual blood, transpiring as foreknown

20 And widening noon within your breast for gathering

All bright insinuations that my years have caught

For islands where must lead inviolably
Blue latitudes and levels of your eyes—
In this expectant, still exclaim receive
25 The secret oar and petals of all love.

5

Meticulous, past midnight in clear rime, *0 frost*
Infrangible *0* and lonely, smooth as though cast *inviolable*
Together in one merciless white blade—
The bay estuaries fleck the hard sky limits.
5 —As if too brittle or too clear to touch!
The cables of our sleep so swiftly filed,
Already hang, shred ends from remembered stars.

One frozen trackless smile ... What words
Can strangle this deaf moonlight? For we
io Are overtaken. Now no cry, no sword
Can fasten or deflect this tidal wedge,
Slow tyranny of moonlight, moonlight loved
And changed ... “There’s

5. That of a large seabird capable of long, sus- 6. Undeniably;
unalterably.

tained flights away from land, believed to sleep in 7. The part
of a church that contains the altar and the air without moving
its wings. seats for the clergy and choir.

1 4 1 4 / H A R T C R A N E

Nothing like this in the world,” you say,
15 Knowing I cannot touch your hand and look
Too, into that godless cleft of sky
Where nothing turns but dead sands flashing.
“—And never to quite understand!” No,

In all the argosy⁸ of your bright hair I dreamed

20 Nothing so flagless as this piracy.

But now

Draw in your head, alone and too tall here.

Your eyes already in the slant of drifting foam;

Your breath sealed by the ghosts I do not know:

25 Draw in your head and sleep the long way home.

6

Where icy and bright dungeons lift

Of swimmers their lost morning eyes,

And ocean rivers, churning, shift

Green borders under stranger skies,

5 Steadily as a shell secretes

Its beating leagues of monotone,

Or as many waters trough the sun's

Red kelson⁹ past the cape's wet stone;

10 rivers mingling toward the sky

io And harbor of the phoenix¹ breast—

My eyes pressed black against the prow,

—Thy derelict and blinded guest

Waiting, afire, what name, unspoke,

1 cannot claim: let thy waves rear

15 More savage than the death of kings,

Some splintered garland for the seer.

Beyond siroccos² harvesting

The solstice thunders, crept away,

Like a cliff swinging or a sail

20 Flung into April's inmost day—

Creation's blithe and petaled word
To the lounged goddess when she rose
Conceding dialogue with eyes
That smile unsearchable repose—

8. A rich supply; also, a large ship or a fleet of
by burning itself; from its ashes arises a new phoe-
ships.

nix. The phoenix is also a symbol of the Resurrec-

9. A beam laid parallel to the keel of a ship to hold
tion.

together the flooring and the keel.

2. Hot, moist winds, usually those from North

1. A mythological bird said to end its very long life
African deserts.

T H E B R I D G E / 1 4 1 5

25 Still fervid covenant, Belle Isle,³

—Unfolded floating dais before

Which rainbows twine continual hair—

Belle Isle, white echo of the oar!

The imaged Word, it is, that holds

30 Hushed willows anchored in its glow.

It is the unbetrayable reply

Whose accent no farewell can know.

1 9 2 6

From The Bridge

Proem: To Brooklyn Bridge

How many dawns, chill from his rippling rest

The seagull's wings shall dip and pivot him,

Shedding white rings of tumult, building high
Over the chained bay waters Liberty—
5 Then, with inviolate curve, forsake our eyes
As apparitional as sails that cross
Some page of figures to be filed away;
—Till elevators drop us from our day ...
I think of cinemas, panoramic sleights
io With multitudes bent toward some flashing scene
Never disclosed, but hastened to again,
Foretold to other eyes on the same screen;
And Thee,⁴ across the harbor, silver-paced
As though the sun took step of thee, yet left
15 Some motion ever unspent in thy stride—
Implicitly thy freedom staying thee!
Out of some subway scuttle, cell or loft
A bedlamite⁰ speeds to thy parapets, *madman*
Tilting there momentarily, shrill shirt ballooning,
20 A jest falls from the speechless caravan.
Down Wall,^s from girder into street noon leaks,
A rip-tooth of the sky's acetylene,
All afternoon the cloud-flown derricks turn ...
Thy cables breathe the North Atlantic still.
25 And obscure as that heaven of the Jews,⁶
Thy guerdon⁰ ... Accolade thou dost bestow *reward*
3. Tiny island near Newfoundland that is the first
bridge's Manhattan end.
land seen by boats coming from Europe.
6. I.e., heaven is a vaguer notion in the Jewish tra-

4. I.e., Brooklyn Bridge.

dition than in the Christian.

5. Wall Street is less than half a mile south of the

1 4 1 6 / H A R T C R A N E

Of anonymity time cannot raise:

Vibrant reprieve and pardon thou dost show.

O harp and altar, of the fury fused,

30 (How could mere toil align thy choiring strings!)⁷

Terrific threshold of the prophet's pledge,

Prayer of pariah, and the lover's cry—

Again the traffic lights that skim thy swift

Unfractioned idiom, immaculate sigh of stars,

35 Beading thy path—condense eternity:

And we have seen night lifted in thine arms.

Under thy shadow by the piers I waited;

Only in darkness is thy shadow clear.

The City's fiery parcels all undone,

40 Already snow submerges an iron year ...

O Sleepless as the river under thee,

Vaulting the sea, the prairies' dreaming sod,

Unto us lowliest sometime sweep, descend

And of the curveship lend a myth to God.

1 9 3 0

To Emily Dickinson⁸

You who desired so much—in vain to ask—

Yet fed your hunger like an endless task,

Dared dignify the labor, bless the quest—

Achieved that stillness ultimately best,

5 Being, of all, least sought for: Emily, hear!
O sweet, dead Silencer, most suddenly clear
When singing that Eternity possessed
And plundered momentarily in every breast;
—Truly no flower yet withers in your hand,
io The harvest you descried and understand
Needs more than wit to gather, love to bind.
Some reconciliation of remotest mind—
Leaves Ormus rubyless, and Ophir chill.⁹
Else tears heap all within one clay-cold hill.

1 9 3 3

7. The suspension bridge has cables formed from
Gulf; in 1 Kings 10.11, Solomon receives rich gifts,
parallel steel wires that were spun in place.

including gold and precious stones, from a region

8. American poet (1 8 3 0 - 1 8 8 6 ; see pp. 1110-27).
called Ophir.

9. Ormus (or Hormuz), ancient city on the Persian
1417

A L L E N T A T E

1899-1979

Ode to the Confederate Dead

Row after row with strict impunity

The headstones yield their names to the element,

The wind whirrs without recollection;

In the riven troughs the splayed leaves

5 Pile up, of nature the casual sacrament

To the seasonal eternity of death;

Then driven by the fierce scrutiny
Of heaven to their election in the vast breath,
They sought the rumor of mortality. *moan*
io Autumn is desolation in the plot
Of a thousand acres where these memories grow
From the inexhaustible bodies that are not
Dead, but feed the grass row after rich row.
Think of the autumns that have come and gone!
is Ambitious November with the humors of the year,
With a particular zeal for every slab,
Staining the uncomfortable angels that rot
On the slabs, a wing chipped here, an arm there:
The brute curiosity of an angel's stare
20 Turns you, like them, to stone,
Transforms the heaving air
Till plunged to a heavier world below
You shift your sea-space blindly
Heaving, turning like the blind crab.
25 Dazed by the wind, only the wind
The leaves flying, plunge
You know who have waited by the wall
The twilight certainty of an animal,
Those midnight restitutions of the blood
30 You know—the immitigable¹ pines, the smoky frieze
Of the sky, the sudden call: you know the rage,
The cold pool left by the mounting flood,
Of muted Zeno and Parmenides.²
You who have waited for the angry resolution

35 Of those desires that should be yours tomorrow,
You know the unimportant shrift of death
And praise the vision

And praise the arrogant circumstance
Of those who fall

40 Rank upon rank, hurried beyond decision—
Here by the sagging gate, stopped by the wall.

1. Unable to become less harsh.

changeable, all “development,” is illusory, for real-

2. Greek philosophers (fifth century **B.C.E.**) of the
ity is one and changeless.

Eleatic school. They held that what is various and

1 4 1 8 / A L L E N T A T E

Seeing, seeing only the leaves

Flying, plunge and expire

Turn your eyes to the immoderate past,

45 Turn to the inscrutable infantry rising

Demons out of the earth—they will not last.

Stonewall, Stonewall, and the sunken fields of hemp,

Shiloh, Antietam, Malvern Hill, Bull Run.’

Lost in that orient of the thick and fast

50 You will curse the setting sun.

Cursing only the leaves crying

Like an old man in a storm

You hear the shout, the crazy hemlocks point

With troubled fingers to the silence which

55 Smothers you, a mummy, in time.

The hound bitch

Toothless and dying, in a musty cellar
Hears the wind only.
Now that the salt of their blood
60 Stiffens the saltier oblivion of the sea,
Seals the malignant purity of the flood,
What shall we who count our days and bow
Our heads with a commemorial woe
In the ribboned coats of grim felicity,
65 What shall we say of the bones, unclean,
Whose verdurous⁴ anonymity will grow?
The ragged arms, the ragged heads and eyes
Lost in these acres of the insane green?
The gray lean spiders come, they come and go;
70 In a tangle of willows without light
The singular screech-owl's tight
Invisible lyric seeds the mind
With the furious murmur of their chivalry.
We shall say only the leaves
75 Flying, plunge and expire
We shall say only the leaves whispering
In the improbable mist of nightfall
That flies on multiple wing:
Night is the beginning and the end
so And in between the ends of distraction
Waits mute speculation, the patient curse
That stones the eyes, or like the jaguar leaps
For his own image in a jungle pool, his victim.
3. Names of important Civil War battles. St *one-*

first battle of Bull Run (1861); fatally wounded by
wall: Thomas “Stonewall” Jackson (1824—1863),
his men at Chancellorsville.

Confederate general, earned his nickname at the
4. Green (i.e., vigorous) as growing vegetation.

T H E S W I M M E R S / 1 4 1 9

What shall we say who have knowledge
85 Carried to the heart? Shall we take the act
To the grave? Shall we, more hopeful, set up the grave
In the house? The ravenous grave?

Leave now

The shut gate and the decomposing wall:
90 The gentle serpent, green in the mulberry bush,
Riots with his tongue through the hush—
Sentinel of the grave who counts us all!

1 9 2 8

The Swimmers

SCENE: *Montgomery County,*
Kentucky, July 1911

Kentucky water, clear springs: a boy fleeing
To water under the dry Kentucky sun,
His four little friends in tandem with him, seeing
Long shadows of grapevine wriggle and run
5 Over the green swirl; mullein under the ear
Soft as Nausicaa’s⁵ palm; sullen fun
Savage as childhood’s thin harmonious tear:
O fountain, bosom source undying-dead
Replenish me the spring of love and fear

io And give me back the eye that looked and fled
When a thrush idling in the tulip tree
Unwound the cold dream of the copperhead.
—Along the creek the road was winding; we
Felt the quicksilver sky. I see again
15 The shrill companions of that odyssey:
Bill Eaton, Charlie Watson, “Nigger” Layne
The doctor’s son, Harry Duesler who played
The flute; and Tate, with water on the brain.
Dog-days:6 the dusty leaves where rain delayed
20 Hung low on poison-oak and scuppernong,7
And we were following the active shade
Of water, that bells and bickers all night long.
“No more’n a mile,” Layne said. All five stood still.
Listening, I heard what seemed at first a song;
5. The king’s daughter who welcomes Odysseus in 6. The
hottest days of the year, book 6 of the *Odyssey*. *Mullein*:
wooly-leaved herb. 7. Kind of grapevine.

1 4 2 0 / A L L E N T A T E

2 5 P e e r i n g , I h e a r d t h e h o o v e s c o m e d o w n t h e h i l l .

**T h e p o s s e p a s s e d , t w e l v e h o r s e ; t h e l e a d e r
' s f a c e W a s w o r n a s l i m e s t o n e o n a n a n c i e n t
s i l l .**

**T h e n , a s s l e e p w a l k e r s s h i f t f r o m a h a r d p l a c e
I n b e d , a n d r i s i n g t o k e e p a f o r m a l p l e d g e
3 0 D e s c e n d a l a d d e r i n t o e m p t y s p a c e ,
W e s c u t t l e d d o w n t h e b a n k b e l o w a l e d g e
A n d m a r c h e d s t i f f - l e g g e d i n o u r c o m m o n f
r i g h t A l o n g a h o g - t r a c k b y t h e r i f f l e ' s 8 e d g e :**

Into a world where sound shaded the sight
35 Dropped the dull hooves again; the horse
men came again, all but the leader: it was
night

Momentarily and I feared: eleven same

Jesus-Christers unremembered and unmade,
e,

Whose Corpse had died again in dirty shame

40 The bank then levelling in a speckled glade,
We stopped to breathe above the swimming-hole;
I gazed at its reticulated shade
netlike

Recoiling in blue fear, and felt it roll

Over my ears and eyes and lift my hair

45 Like seaweed tossing on a sunk atoll.

I rose again. Borne on the copper air

A distant voice green as a funeral wreath

Against a grave: "That dead nigger there."

The melancholy sheriff slouched beneath

50 A giant sycamore; shaking his head

He plucked a sassafras twig and picked his
teeth:

"We come too late." He spoke to the tired dead
Whose ragged shirt soaked up the viscous
flow of blood in which I lay discomfited.

55 A butting horse-fly gave one ear a blow

And glanced off, as the sheriff kicked the
rope loose from the neck and hooked it with
his toe away from the blood. — I looked
back down the slope: The friends were gone
that I had hoped to greet. —

60 A single horseman came at a slowlope

A n d p u l l e d u p a t t h e h a n g e d m a n ' s h o r n y f e e t ; T h e s h e r i f f n o o s e d t h e f e e t , t h e o t h e r e n d T h e s t r a n g e r t i e d t o h i s p o m m e l i n a n e a t

8. Shallow part of a stream.

B R I G G F L A T T S / 1 4 2 1

Slip-knot. I saw the Negro's body bend

65 And straighten, as a fish-line cast transverse

Yields to the current that it must subtend.

The sheriff's Goddamn was a murmured curse

Not for the dead but for the blinding dust

That boxed the cortege⁹ in a cloudy hearse

70 And dragged it towards our town. I knew I must

Not stay till twilight in that silent road;

Sliding my bare feet into the warm crust,

I hopped the stonecrop like a panting toad

Mouth open, following the heaving cloud

75 That floated to the court-house square its load

Of limber corpse that took the sun for shroud.

There were three figures in the dying sun

Whose light were company where three was crowd.

My breath crackled the dead air like a shotgun

80 As, sheriff and the stranger disappearing,

The faceless head lay still. I could not run

Or walk, but stood. Alone in the public clearing

This private thing was owned by all the town,

Though never claimed by us within my hearing.

1 9 5 3

B A S I L B U N T I N G

1900-1985

*From Briggflatts*¹

From I

Brag, sweet tenor bull,
descant on Rawthey's madrigal,²
each pebble its part
for the fells' ³ late spring.

5 Dance tiptoe, bull,
black against may.⁴
Ridiculous and lovely
chase hurdling shadows
morning into noon.

9. Funeral procession.

2. Part-song for three or more voices. *Descant:*

1. In an interview, Bunting remarked, "My auto-
sing the upper part of a part-song.

biography is Briggflatts." His poem's title is the

3. Hills or stretches of high moorland.

name of a small village, straddling the river Raw-

4. Flowers, pink or white, of the hawthorn tree.

they, in the Lake District of northern England.

1 4 2 2 / B A S I L B U N T I N G

10 May on the bull's hide
and through the dale
furrows fill with may,
paving the slowworm's⁵ way.

A mason times his mallet

15 to a lark's twitter,
listening while the marble rests,

lays his rule
at a letter's edge,
fingertips checking,
20 till the stone spells a name
naming none,
a man abolished.

Painful lark, labouring to rise!
the solemn mallet says:
25 In the grave's slot
he lies. We rot.

Decay thrusts the blade,
Wheat stands in excrement
trembling. Rawthey trembles.
30 Tongue stumbles, ears err
for fear of spring.

Rub the stone with sand,
wet sandstone rending
roughness away. Fingers
35 ache on the rubbing stone.

The mason says: Rocks
happen by chance.

No one here bolts the door,
love is so sore.

40 Stone smooth as skin,
cold as the dead they load
on a low lorry⁰ by night.

truck

The moon sits on the fell

but it will rain.

45 Under sacks on the stone

two children lie,

hear the horse stale,⁰

urinate

the mason whistle,

harness mutter to shaft,

50 felloe⁰ to axle squeak,

exterior rim of a wheel

rut thud the rim,

crushed grit.

Stocking to stocking, jersey⁰ to jersey,

head to a hard arm,

55 they kiss under the rain,

bruised by their marble bed.

5. Or blind worm, a small, burrowing, limbless lizard.

B R I G G F L A T T S / 1 4 2 3

In Garsdale, dawn;

at Hawes, tea from the can.⁶

Rain stops, sacks

60 steam in the sun, they sit up.

Copper-wire moustache,

sea-reflecting eyes

and Baltic plainsong speech

declare: By such rocks

65 men killed Bloodaxe.⁷

Fierce blood throbs in his tongue,

lean words.

Skulls cropped for steel caps
huddle round Stainmore.8
70 Their becks ring on limestone,
whisper to peat.9
The clogged cart pushes the horse downhill.
In such soft air
they trudge and sing,
75 laying the tune frankly on the air.
All sounds fall still,
fellside bleat,
hide-and-seek peewit.1
Her pulse their pace,
80 palm countering palm,
till a trench is filled,
stone white as cheese
jeers at the dale.
Knotty wood, hard to rive,^o *split*
85 smoulders to ash;
smell of October apples.
The road again,
at a trot.
Wetter, warmed, they watch
90 the mason meditate
on name and date.
Rain rinses the road,
the bull streams and laments.
Sour rye porridge from the hob²
95 with cream and black tea,

meat, crust and crumb.

Her parents in bed
the children dry their clothes.

He has untied the tape

6. Metal container with handle and cover (not,
caps: helmets.

i.e., a modern sealed can). Garsdale and Hawes are

9. “Beck” is a dialect word for a mattock, an agri-
small country towns in northern England.

cultural instrument; it would “ring” on hard lime-

7. Eric Bloodaxe, ruler of the Viking kingdom of
stone, but “whisper” cutting into soft “peat,” or
Northumbria, was overthrown and killed by the
decayed vegetable tissue in the earth.

English in 954. “Baltic plainsong” refers to the

1. Bird noted for its shrill, wailing cry.

Vikings’ rough yet rhythmic speech.

2. Shelf in a fireplace, where a kettle can be kept

8. Desolate forest in the north of England. *Steel*
warm.

1 4 2 4 / B A S I L B U N T I N G

100 of her striped flannel drawers

before the range. Naked

on the pricked rag mat³

his fingers comb

thatch of his manhood’s home.

105 Gentle generous voices weave

over bare night

**words to confirm and delight
till bird dawn.**

**Rainwater from the butt
no she fetches and flannel
to wash him inch by inch,
kissing the pebbles.**

Shining slowworm part of the marvel.

**The mason stirs:
us Words!**

Pens are too light.

Take a chisel to write.

**Every birth a crime,
every sentence life.**

**120 Wiped of mould and mites
would the ball run true?**

No hope of going back.

**Hounds falter and stray,
Shame deflects the pen.**

**125 Love murdered neither bleeds nor stifles
but jogs the draftsman's elbow,
what can he, changed, tell
her, changed, perhaps dead?**

**Delight dwindles. Blame
no stays the same.**

**Brief words are hard to find,
shapes to carve and discard:**

**Bloodaxe, king of York,
king of Dublin, king of Orkney.⁴**

**135 Take no notice of tears;
letter the stone to stand
over love laid aside lest
insufferable happiness impede
flight to Stainmore,
HO to trace
lark, mallet,
becks, flocks
and axe knocks.**

Dung will not soil the slowworm's

145 mosaic. Breathless lark

3. Rug made from strips of rag hooked through a
“king” here is in the sense of an early tribal chief-
sacking base.

tain.

4. Islands off the northeast coast of Scotland;

THE WINDSUFFERS / 1425

drops to nest in sodden trash;

Rawthey truculent, dingy.

Drudge at the mallet, the may is down,

fog on fells. Guilty of spring

150 and spring's ending

amputated years ache after

the bull is beef, love a convenience.

It is easier to die than to remember.

N a m e and date

155 split in soft slate

a few m o n t h s obliterate.

###

1965 1966

LAURA (RIDING) JACKSON

1901-1991

The Wind Suffers

The wind suffers of blowing,

The sea suffers of water,

And fire suffers of burning,

And I of a living name.

5 As stone suffers of stoniness,

As light of its shiningness,

As birds of their wingedness,

SO I of my whoness.

And what the cure of all this?

io What the not and not suffering?

What the better and later of this?

What the more me of me?

How for the pain-world to be

More world and no pain?

15 How for the old rain to fall

More wet and more dry?

How for the wilful blood to run

More salt-red and sweet-white?

And how for me in my actualness

20 To more shriek and more smile?

By no other miracles,

By the same knowing poison,

By an improved anguish,

By my further dying.

1 9 3 0

1 4 2 6 / S T E R L I N G A . B R O W N

Ding-Donging

With old hours all belfry heads

Are filled, as with thoughts.

With old hours ring the new hours

Between their bells.

5 And this hour-long ding-donging

So much employs the hour-long silences

That bells hang thinking when not striking,

When striking think of nothing.

Chimes of forgotten hours

10 More and more are played

While bells stare into space,

And more and more space wears

A look of having heard

But hearing not:

15 Forgotten hours chime louder

In the meantime, as if always,

And spread ding-donging back

More and more to yesterdays.

1930

S T E R L I N G A . B R O W N

1901-1989

Slim in Atlanta1

Down in Atlanta,

De whitefolks got laws

For to keep all de niggers
From laughin' outdoors.
5 Hope to Gawd I may die
If I ain't speakin' truth
Make de niggers do deir laughin'
In a telefoam booth.
Slim Greer hit de town
io An' de rebs² got him told,—
“Dontcha laugh on de street,
If you want to die old.”

1. One of a series of poems about the fictional
federacy in the Civil War; here, a general term for
character Slim Greer.

southerners.

2. Abbreviation for rebels, or members of the Con-

S L I M I N A T L A N T A / 1 4 2 7

Den dey showed him de booth,
An' a hundred shines⁰ *black people*
In front of it, waitin'
In double lines.
Slim thought his sides
Would bust in two,
Yelled, “Lookout, everybody,
I'm coming through!”
Pulled de other man out,
An' bust in de box,
An' laughed four hours
By de Georgia clocks.

Den he peeked through de door,

An' what did he see?

Three hundred niggers there

In misery.—

Some holdin' deir sides,

Some holdin' deir jaws,

To keep from breakin'

De Georgia laws.

An' Slim gave a holler,

An' started again;

An' from three hundred throats

Come a moan of pain.

An' everytime Slim

Saw what was outside,

Got to whoopin' again

Till he nearly died.

An' while de poor critters

Was waitin' deir chance,

Slim laughed till dey sent

Fo' de ambulance.

De state paid de railroad

To take him away;

Den, things was as usural

In Atlanta, Gee A.3

1932

3. GA; abbreviation for the state of Georgia.

1 4 2 8 / S T E R L I N G A . B R O W N

Chillen Get Shoes

Hush little Lily,
Don't you cry;
You'll get your silver slippers
Bye and bye.⁴

5 Moll wears silver slippers
With red heels,
And men come to see her
In automobiles.

Lily walks wretched,
io Dragging her doll,
Worshipping stealthily
Good-time Moll;
Envyng bitterly
Moll's fine clothes,
i5 And her plump legs clad
In openwork hose.

Don't worry, Lily,
Don't you cry;
You'll be like Moll, too,
20 Bye and bye.

1932

Bitter Fruit of the Tree

They said to my grandmother: "Please do not be bitter,"
When they sold her first-born and let the second die,
When they drove her husband till he took to the swamplands,
And brought him home bloody and beaten at last.

5 They told her, "It is better you should not be bitter,
Some must work and suffer so that we, who must, can live,

Forgiving is noble, you must not be heathen bitter;
These are your orders: you *are* not to be bitter.”
And they left her shack for their porticoed house.
io They said to my father: “Please do not be bitter,”
When he ploughed and planted a crop not his,
When he weatherstripped a house that he could not enter,
And stored away a harvest he could not enjoy.
They answered his questions: “It does not concern you,
4. Cf. the lullaby “Hush Little Baby.”

T H E W E A R Y B L U E S / 1 4 2 9

15 It is not for you to know, it is past your understanding,⁵
All you need know is: you must not be bitter.”

1939 1980

Conjured

“She done put huh little hands
On the back uh my head;
I cain’t git away from her
Twill I’m dead.

5 “She done laid her little body
Beneaf my breast,
And I won’t never
Git no rest.

“She done been in my arms
io Twill the break of day
Won’t never
Git away... .

“She done put her little shoes
Underneaf my bed

is Never git away from her

Twill I'm dead.

“Won't want to leave her

Then,” he said.

“Oh, baby, gotta lay

20 So long

Alone ”

1930s 1980

L A N G S T O N H U G H E S

1902-1967

The Weary Blues

Droning a drowsy syncopated tune,

Rocking back and forth to a mellow croon,

I heard a Negro play.

Down on Lenox Avenue¹ the other night

5. Ironic echo of Phillipians 4, esp. 4.7: “And the Jesus.”

peace of God, which passeth all understanding, 1. A main thoroughfare in New York City, in the shall keep your hearts and minds through Christ heart of Harlem; now called Malcolm X Blvd.

1 4 3 0 / L A N G S T O N H U G H E S

By the pale dull pallor of an old gas light

He did a lazy sway... .

He did a lazy sway... .

To the tune o' those Weary Blues.

With his ebony hands on each ivory key

He made that poor piano moan with melody.

O Blues!

Swaying to and fro on his rickety stool

He played that sad raggy tune like a musical fool.

Sweet Blues!

Coming from a black man's soul.

O Blues!

In a deep song voice with a melancholy tone

I heard that Negro sing, that old piano moan—

“Ain't got nobody in all this world,

Ain't got nobody but ma self.

I's gwine to quit ma frownin'

And put ma troubles on the shelf.”

Thump, thump, thump, went his foot on the floor.

He played a few chords then he sang some more—

“I got the Weary Blues

And I can't be satisfied.

Got the Weary Blues

And can't be satisfied—

I ain't happy no mo'

And I wish that I had died.”

And far into the night he crooned that tune.

The stars went out and so did the moon.

The singer stopped playing and went to bed

While the Weary Blues echoed through his head.

He slept like a rock or a man that's dead.

1926

The Negro Speaks of Rivers

*(To W.E.B. Du Bois)*²

I've known rivers:

I've known rivers ancient as the world and older than the flow
of

human blood in human veins.

My soul has grown deep like the rivers.

I bathed in the Euphrates when dawns were young.

5 I built my hut near the Congo and it lulled me to sleep.

I looked upon the Nile and raised the pyramids above it.

I heard the singing of the Mississippi when Abe Lincoln went
down

to New Orleans,³ and I've seen its muddy bosom turn all
golden

in the sunset.

2. American historian, educator, and activist

increasingly interested in Pan-Africanism.

(1868—1963); he was one of the founders of the

3. President Lincoln's decision to end slavery was

NAACP (National Association for the Advance-

partly inspired by this trip.

ment of Colored People), and in later life became

C R O S S / 1 4 3 1

I've known rivers:

Ancient, dusky rivers.

10 My soul has grown deep like the rivers.

1926

Dream Variations

To fling my arms wide

In some place of the sun,

To whirl and to dance

Till the white day is done.

5 Then rest at cool evening
Beneath a tall tree
While night comes on gently,
Dark like me—
That is my dream!
io To fling my arms wide
In the face of the sun,
Dance! Whirl! Whirl!
Till the quick day is done.
Rest at pale evening ...

15 A tall, slim tree ...
Night coming tenderly
Black like me.

1926

Cross

My old man's a white old man
And my old mother's black.
If ever I cursed my white old man
I take my curses back.

5 If ever I cursed my black old mother
And wished she were in hell,
I'm sorry for that evil wish
And now I wish her well.

My old man died in a fine big house,
io My ma died in a shack.
I wonder where I'm gonna die,
Being neither white nor black?

1 9 2 6

1 4 3 2 / L A N G S T O N H U G H E S

Bad Luck Card

Cause you don't love me

Is awful, awful hard.

Gypsy done showed me

My bad luck card.

5 There ain't no good left

In this world for me.

Gypsy done tole me—

Unlucky as can be.

I don't know what

10 Po' weary me can do.

Gypsy says I'd kill my self

If I was you.

1927

Song for a Dark Girl

Way Down South in Dixie

(Break the heart of me)

They hung my black young lover

To a cross roads tree.

5 Way Down South in Dixie

(Bruised body high in air)

I asked the white Lord Jesus

What was the use of prayer.

Way Down South in Dixie

io (Break the heart of me)

Love is a naked shadow

On a gnarled and naked tree.

1927

Harlem Sweeties

Have you dug the spill

Of Sugar Hill?⁴

Cast your gims⁰

eyes

On this sepia⁰ thrill:

brown

5 Brown sugar lassie,

Caramel treat,

4. In the early part of the twentieth century, the most fashionable residential area of Harlem.

H A R L E M / 1 4 3 3

Honey-gold baby

Sweet enough to eat.

Peach-skinned girlie,

Coffee and cream,

Chocolate darling

Out of a dream.

Walnut tinted

Or cocoa brown,

Pomegranate-lipped

Pride of the town.

Rich cream-colored

To plum-tinted black,

Feminine sweetness

In Harlem's no lack.

Glow of the quince

To blush of the rose.
Persimmon bronze
To cinnamon toes.
Blackberry cordial,
Virginia Dare⁵ wine—
All those sweet colors
Flavor Harlem of mine!
Walnut or cocoa,
Let me repeat:
Caramel, brown sugar,
A chocolate treat.
Molasses taffy,
Coffee and cream,
Licorice, clove, cinnamon
To a honey-brown dream.
Ginger, wine-gold,
Persimmon, blackberry,
All through the spectrum
Harlem girls vary—
So if you want to know beauty's
Rainbow-sweet thrill,
Stroll down luscious,
Delicious, *fine* Sugar Hill.

1942

Harlem

What happens to a dream deferred?

Does it dry up

like a raisin in the sun?

Or fester like a sore—

And then run?

1 4 3 4 / L A N G S T O N H U G H E S

Does it stink like rotten meat?

Or crust and sugar over—

like a syrupy sweet?

Maybe it just sags

10 like a heavy load.

Or *does it explode?*

1951

Theme for English B

The instructor said,
*Go home and write
a page tonight.
And let that page come out of you—
5 Then, it will be true.*

I wonder if it's that simple?
I am twenty-two, colored, born in Winston-Salem.
I went to school there, then Durham,⁶ then here
to this college⁷ on the hill above Harlem,
so I am the only colored student in my class.
The steps from the hill lead down into Harlem,
through a park, then I cross St. Nicholas,
Eighth Avenue, Seventh, and I come to the Y,
the Harlem Branch Y, where I take the elevator
is up to my room, sit down, and write this page:
It's not easy to know what is true for you or me
at twenty-two, my age. But I guess I'm what
I feel and see and hear, Harlem, I hear you:
hear you, hear me—we two—you, me, talk on this page.
20 (I hear New York, too.) Me—who?
Well, I like to eat, sleep, drink, and be in love.
I like to work, read, learn, and understand life.
I like a pipe for a Christmas present,
or records—Bessie,⁸ bop, or Bach.
25 I guess being colored doesn't make me *not* like
the same things other folks like who are other races.
So will my page be colored that I write?
Being me, it will not be white.

6. Like Winston-Salem, a city in North Carolina. 8. Bessie Smith (1894 or 1898-1937), American blues singer. 7. City College of the City University of New York blues singer.

(CCNY).

D I N N E R G U E S T : M E / 1 4 3 5

But it will be

30 a part of you, instructor.

You are white—

yet a part of me, as I am a part of you.

That's American.

Sometimes perhaps you don't want to be a part of me.

35 Nor do I often want to be a part of you.

But we are, that's true!

I guess you learn from me—

although you're older—and white—

and somewhat more free.

40 This is my page for English B.

1951

Dinner Guest: Me

I know I am

The Negro Problem⁹

Being wined and dined,

Answering the usual questions

5 That come to white mind

Which seeks demurely

To probe in polite way

The why and wherewithal

Of darkness U.S.A.—

io Wondering how things got this way

**In current democratic night,
Murmuring gently
Over /raises du bois, I
“I’m so ashamed of being white.”**

**15 The lobster is delicious,
The wine divine,
And center of attention
At the damask table, mine.**

**To be a Problem on
20 Park Avenue at eight
Is not so bad.**

**Solutions to the Problem,
Of course, wait.**

1967

9. Allusion to the controversial 1963 essay “My
1. Wild strawberries (French); ironic allusion to
Negro Problem—and Ours,” by the American
W. E. B. Du Bois (see note 2, p. 1430).
writer Norman Podhoretz (b. 1930).

1 4 3 6

ROY C A M P B E L L

1902-1957

The Zulu Girl

To F. C. Slater

**When in the sun the hot red acres smoulder,
Down where the sweating gang its labour plies,
A girl flings down her hoe, and from her shoulder
Unslings her child tormented by the flies.**

5 She takes him to a ring of shadow pooled
By thorn-trees: purpled with the blood of ticks,
While her sharp nails, in slow caresses ruled,
Prowl through his hair with sharp electric clicks,
His sleepy mouth, plugged by the heavy nipple,
io Tugs like a puppy, grunting as he feeds:
Through his frail nerves her own deep languors ripple
Like a broad river sighing through its reeds.
Yet in that drowsy stream his flesh imbibes
An old unquenched unsmotherable heat—
15 The curbed ferocity of beaten tribes,
The sullen dignity of their defeat.
Her body looms above him like a hill
Within whose shade a village lies at rest,
Or the first cloud so terrible and still
20 That bears the coming harvest in its breast.

1926 1930

The Sisters

After hot loveless nights, when cold winds stream
Sprinkling the frost and dew, before the light,
Bored with the foolish things that girls must dream
Because their beds are empty of delight,
5 Two sisters rise and strip. Out from the night
Their horses run to their low-whistled pleas—
Vast phantom shapes with eyeballs rolling white
That sneeze a fiery steam about their knees:
Through the crisp manes their stealthy prowling hands,
io Stronger than curbs, in slow caresses rove,

**They gallop down across the milk-white sands
And wade far out into the sleeping cove:**

R E Q U I E M / 1 4 3 7

**The frost stings sweetly with a burning kiss
As intimate as love, as cold as death:**

**15 Their lips, whereon delicious tremors hiss,
Fume with the ghostly pollen of their breath.**

Far out on the grey silence of the flood

**They watch the dawn in smouldering gyres⁰ expand *spiral*
*turnings***

Beyond them: and the day burns through their blood

20 Like a white candle through a shuttered hand.

1926 1930

O G D E N N A S H

1902-1971

The Cow

The cow is of the bovine ilk;

One end is moo, the other, milk.

1931

Reflections on Ice-breaking

Candy

Is dandy

But liquor

Is quicker.

1931

Requiem

There was a young belle of old Natchez¹

Whose garments were always in patchez.

**When comment arose
On the state of her clothes,
5 She drawled, When Ah itchez, Ah scratchez!
1 9 3 5**

1. Town in Mississippi.

1 4 3 8 / O G D E N N A S H

Columbus

**Once upon a time there was an Italian,
And some people thought he was a rascalion,
But he wasn't offended,
Because other people thought he was splendid,
5 And he said the world was round,
And everybody made an uncomplimentary sound,
But he went and tried to borrow some money from
Ferdinand
But Ferdinand said America was a bird in the bush and
he'd rather
have a berdinand,
But Columbus' brain was fertile, it wasn't arid,
10 And he remembered that Ferdinand was married,
And he thought, there is no wife like a misunderstood one,
Because if her husband thinks something is a terrible idea
she is
bound to think it a good one,
So he perfumed his handkerchief with bay rum and
citronella,
And he went to see Isabella,
15 And he looked wonderful but he had never felt sillier,
And she said, I can't place the face but the aroma is
familiar,**

And Columbus didn't say a word,

**All he said was, I am Columbus, the fifteenth-century
Admiral Byrd,²**

**And, just as he thought, her disposition was very
malleable,**

**20 And she said, Here are my jewels, and she wasn't
penurious like**

**Cornelia the mother of the Gracchi,¹ she wasn't referring
to her**

**children, no, she was referring to her jewels, which were
very**

very valuable,

**So Columbus said, Somebody show me the sunset and
somebody**

did and he set sail for it,

And he discovered America and they put him in jail for it,

And the fetters gave him welts,

And they named America after somebody else,⁴

**25 So the sad fate of Columbus ought to be pointed out to
every child**

and every voter,

**Because it has a very important moral, which is, Don't be a
discoverer,**

be a promoter.

1935

The Turtle

The turtle lives 'twixt plated decks

Which practically conceal its sex.

I think it clever of the turtle

In such a fix to be so fertile.

1940

2. Richard Evelyn Byrd (1888-1957), American show her jewels by producing her two sons (famous explorer of the North and South Poles. men in their own right).

3. Cornelia (second century **B.C.E.**) was the

4. Amerigo Vespucci (1454-1512), Italian navigator and explorer, who first sailed across the Atlantic in 1497. penurious, she famously responded to a request to Roman model of matronly virtue. Though hardly

1 4 3 9

S T E V I E S M I T H

1902-1971

No Categories!

I cry I cry

To God who created me

Not to you Angels who frustrated me

Let me fly, let me die,

5 Let me come to Him.

Not to you Angels on the wing,

With your severe faces,

And your scholarly grimaces,

And your do this and that,

io And your exasperating pit-pat

Of appropriate admonishment.

That is not what the Creator meant.

In the day of his gusty creation

He made this and that

15 And laughed to see them grow fat.

Plod on, you Angels say, do better aspire higher

And one day you may be like us, or those next below us,

Or nearer the lowest,

Or lowest,

20 Doing their best.

Oh no no, you Angels, I say,

No hierarchies I pray.

Oh God, laugh not too much aside

Say not, it is a small matter.

25 See what your Angels do; scatter

Their pride; laugh them away.

Oh no categories I pray.

1950

Mr. Over

Mr. Over is dead

He died fighting and true

And on his tombstone they wrote

Over to You.

5 And who pray is this You

To whom Mr. Over is gone?

1 4 4 0 / S T E V I E S M I T H

Oh if we only knew that

We should not do wrong.

But who is this beautiful You

10 We all of us long for so much

Is he not our friend and our brother

Our father and such?

Yes he is this and much more

This is but a portion

15 A sea-drop in a bucket

Taken from the ocean

So the voices spake

Softly above my head

And a voice in my heart cried: Follow

20 Where he has led

And a devil's voice cried: Happy

Happy the dead.

1950

The Death Sentence

Cold as No Plea,

Yet wild with all negation,

Weeping I come

To my heart's destination,

5 To my last bed

Between th' unhallowed boards—

The Law allows it

And the Court awards.

1950

Not Waving but Drowning

Nobody heard him, the dead man,

But still he lay moaning:

I was much further out than you thought

And not waving but drowning.

5 Poor chap, he always loved larking

And now he's dead

It must have been too cold for him his heart gave way,

They said.

**THOUGHTS ABOUT THE PERSON FROM
PORLOCK / 1441**

Oh, no no no, it was too cold always

10 (Still the dead one lay moaning)

I was much too far out all my life

And not waving but drowning.

1957

The Celts

I think of the Celts¹ as rather a whining lady

Who was beautiful once but is not so much so now

She is not very loving, but there is one thing she loves

It is her grievance which she hugs and takes out walking.

5 The Celtic lady likes fighting very much for freedom

But when she has got it she is a proper tyrant

Nobody likes her much when she is governing.

The Celtic lady is not very widely popular

But the English love her oh they love her very much

io Especially when the Celtic lady is Irish they love her

**Which is odd as she hates them then more than anyone
else,**

**When she's Welsh the English stupidly associate her
chiefly**

With national hats, eisteddfods² and Old Age Pensions.

**(They don't think of her at all when she is Scotch, it is
rather a**

problem.)

**15 Oh the Celtic lady when she's Irish is the one for me
Oh she is so witty and wild, my word witty,
And flashing and spiteful this Celtic lady we love
All the same she is not so beautiful as she was.**

1957

Thoughts about the Person from Porlock³

Coleridge received the Person from Porlock

And ever after called him a curse,

Then why did he hurry to let him in?

He could have hid in the house.

**5 It was not right of Coleridge in fact it was wrong
(But often we all do wrong)**

1. Peoples speaking languages related to those of
Khan" and, especially, note 8 (p. 809). Coleridge
the ancient Gauls, including Bretons, Cornish,
attributed his leaving "Kubla Khan" unfinished to
Welsh, Irish, etc.

an interruption, while he was writing it, by "a per-

2. Traditional Welsh congresses of bards, min-
son on business from Porlock." Having been
strels, and poets, at which contests of minstrelsy,
"detained by him for above an hour," Coleridge
singing, or oratory are conducted.

proved unable to recapture the vision that was the

3. See Samuel Taylor Coleridge's poem "Kubla
substance of the poem.

1 4 4 2 / S T E V I E S M I T H

As the truth is I think he was already stuck

With Kubla Khan.

He was weeping and wailing: I am finished, finished,

10 I shall never write another word of it,

When along comes the Person from Porlock

And takes the blame for it.

It was not right, it was wrong,

But often we all do wrong.

15 May we enquire the name of the Person from Porlock?

Why, Porson, didn't you know?

He lived at the bottom of Porlock Hill

So had a long way to go,

He wasn't much in the social sense

20 Though his grandmother was a Warlock,

One of the Rutlandshire ones I fancy

And nothing to do with Porlock,

And he lived at the bottom of the hill as I said

And had a cat named Flo,

25 And had a cat named Flo.

I long for the Person from Porlock

To bring my thoughts to an end,

I am becoming impatient to see him

I think of him as a friend,

30 Often I look out the window

Often I run to the gate

I think, He will come this evening,

I think it is rather late.

I am hungry to be interrupted

35 For ever and ever amen

0 Person from Porlock come quickly

And bring my thoughts to an end.

1 felicitate the people who have a Person from Porlock

To break up everything and throw it away

40 Because then there will be nothing to keep them

And they need not stay.

Why do they grumble so much?

He comes like a benison⁰ *blessing*

They should be glad he has not forgotten them

45 They might have had to go on.

**These thoughts are depressing I know. They are
depressing,**

I wish I was more cheerful, it is more pleasant,

HERITAGE / 1443

Also it is a duty, we should smile as well as submitting

To the purpose of One Above who is experimenting

50 With various mixtures of human character which goes best,

All is interesting for him it is exciting, but not for us.

There I go again. Smile, smile, and get some work to do

Then you will be practically unconscious without positively
having to go.

1962

C O U N T E E C U L L E N

1903-1946

Heritage

For Harold Jackman

What is Africa to me:

Copper sun or scarlet sea,

Jungle star or jungle track,
Strong bronzed men, or regal black
5 Women from whose loins I sprang
When the birds of Eden sang?
One three centuries removed
From the scenes his fathers loved,
Spicy grove, cinnamon tree,
io What is Africa to me?
So I lie, who all day long
Want no sound except the song
Sung by wild barbaric birds
Goading massive jungle herds,
15 Juggernauts of flesh that pass
Trampling tall defiant grass
Where young forest lovers lie,
Plighting troth beneath the sky.
So I lie, who always hear,
20 Though I cram against my ear
Both my thumbs, and keep them there,
Great drums throbbing through the air.
So I lie, whose fount of pride,
Dear distress, and joy allied,
25 Is my somber flesh and skin,
With the dark blood dammed within
Like great pulsing tides of wine
That, I fear, must burst the fine
Channels of the chafing net
30 Where they surge and foam and fret.

1. Great forces or massive objects that crush everything in their path.

1 4 4 4 / C o U N T E E C U L L E N

Africa? A book one thumbs

Listlessly, till slumber comes.

Unremembered are her bats

Circling through the night, her cats

35 Crouching in the river reeds,

Stalking gentle flesh that feeds

By the river brink; no more

Does the bugle-throated roar

Cry that monarch claws have leapt

40 From the scabbards where they slept.

Silver snakes that once a year

Doff the lovely coats you wear,

Seek no covert in your fear

Lest a mortal eye should see;

45 What's your nakedness to me?

Here no leprous flowers rear

Fierce corollas⁰ in the air; *petals*

Here no bodies sleek and wet,

Dripping mingled rain and sweat,

50 Tread the savage measures of

Jungle boys and girls in love.

What is last year's snow to me,²

Last year's anything? The tree

Budding yearly must forget

55 How its past arose or set—

Bough and blossom, flower, fruit,
Even what shy bird with mute
Wonder at her travail there,
Meekly labored in its hair.

*60 One three centuries removed
From the scenes his fathers loved,
Spicy grove, cinnamon tree,
What is Africa to me?*

So I lie, who find no peace
65 Night or day, no slight release
From the unremittent beat
Made by cruel padded feet
Walking through my body's street.

Up and down they go, and back,
70 Treading out a jungle track.

So I lie, who never quite
Safely sleep from rain at night—
I can never rest at all

When the rain begins to fall;
75 Like a soul gone mad with pain
I must match its weird refrain;
Ever must I twist and squirm,
Writhing like a baited worm,

2. Cf. the refrain of "Ballad of the Ladies of Bygone Time," by the French poet Francois Villon (1431-1463?): "Where are the snows of yesteryear?"

HERITAGE / 1445

**While its primal measures drip
so Through my body, crying, "Strip!**

**Doff this new exuberance.
Come and dance the Lover's Dance!"
In an old remembered way
Rain works on me night and day.
85 Quaint, outlandish heathen gods
Black men fashion out of rods,
Clay, and brittle bits of stone,
In a likeness like their own,
My conversion came high-priced;
90 I belong to Jesus Christ,
Preacher of Humility;
Heathen gods are naught to me.
Father, Son, and Holy Ghost,
So I make an idle boast;
95 Jesus of the twice-turned cheek,³
Lamb of God, although I speak
With my mouth thus, in my heart
Do I play a double part.
Ever at Thy glowing altar
100 Must my heart grow sick and falter,
Wishing He I served were black,
Thinking then it would not lack
Precedent of pain to guide it,
Let who would or might deride it;
105 Surely then this flesh would know
Yours had borne a kindred woe.
Lord, I fashion dark gods, too,
Daring even to give You**

**Dark despairing features where,
110 Crowned with dark rebellious hair,
Patience wavers just so much as
Mortal grief compels, while touches
Quick and hot, of anger, rise
To smitten cheek and weary eyes.
115 Lord, forgive me if my need
Sometimes shapes a human creed.**

*All day long and all night through,
One thing only must I do:
Quench my pride and cool my blood,
120 Lest I perish in the flood,
Lest a hidden ember set
Timber that I thought was wet
Burning like the driest flax,
Melting like the merest wax,*

3. Cf. Matthew 5.39: "I say unto you, that ye resist not evil: but whosoever shall smite thee on the right cheek, turn to him the other also."

1 4 4 6 / C o U N T E E C u L L E N

*125 Lest the grave restore its dead.
Not yet has my heart or head
In the least way realized
They and I are civilized.*

1925

Incident

Once riding in old Baltimore,
Heart-filled, head-filled with glee,
I saw a Baltimorean

Keep looking straight at me.
5 Now I was eight and very small,
And he was no whit bigger,
And so I smiled, but he poked out
His tongue, and called me, "Nigger."
I saw the whole of Baltimore
io From May until December;
Of all the things that happened there
That's all that I remember.

1925

Yet Do I Marvel
I doubt not God is good, well-meaning, kind,
And did He stoop to quibble could tell why
The little buried mole continues blind,
Why flesh that mirrors Him must some day die,
5 Make plain the reason tortured Tantalus⁴
Is baited by the fickle fruit, declare
If merely brute caprice dooms Sisyphus⁵
To struggle up a never-ending stair.
Inscrutable His ways are, and immune
io To catechism by a mind too strewn
With petty cares to slightly understand
What awful brain compels His awful hand.
Yet do I marvel at this curious thing:
To make a poet black, and bid him sing!

1925

I 4. Figure in Greek mythology who was offered 5. Figure in Greek mythology who perpetually food and water only to have

it taken away. rolled a stone uphill only to see it roll down again.

1 4 4 7

E A R L E B I R N E Y

1904-1991

Bushed

He invented a rainbow but lightning struck it
shattered it into the lake-lap of a mountain
so big his mind slowed when he looked at it

Yet he built a shack on the shore

s learned to roast porcupine belly and
wore the quills on his hatband

At first he was out with the dawn

whether it yellowed bright as wood-columbine
or was only a fuzzed moth in a flannel of storm

10 But he found the mountain was clearly alive
sent messages whizzing down every hot morning
boomed proclamations at noon and spread out
a white guard of goat

before falling asleep on its feet at sundown

is When he tried his eyes on the lake ospreys¹

would fall like valkyries²

choosing the cut-throat

He took then to waiting

till the night smoke rose from the boil of the sunset

20 But the moon carved unknown totems
out of the lakeshore

owls in the beardusky woods derided him

moosehorned cedars circled his swamps and tossed
their antlers up to the stars
25 Then he knew though the mountain slept the winds
were shaping its peak to an arrowhead
poised
And now he could only
bar himself in and wait
30 for the great flint to come singing into his heart
1952

The Bear on the Delhi Road³

Unreal tall as a myth
by the road the Himalayan bear

1. Large, fish-eating hawks.

battle and afterwards carried them to Valhalla, the

2. In Norse mythology, the warrior-maidens of
hall of the heroic slain.

Odin; they selected the heroes who were to die in

3. In India.

1 4 4 8 / C . D A Y L E W I S

is beating the brilliant air

with his crooked arms

About him two men bare

spindly as locusts leap

One pulls on a ring

in the great soft nose His mate

flicks flicks with a stick

10 up at the rolling eyes

They have not led him here

down from the fabulous hills
to this bald alien plain
and the clamorous world to kill

15

but simply to teach him to dance
They are peaceful both these spare
men of Kashmir⁴ and the bear
alive is their living too
If far on the Delhi way

20

around him galvanic⁵ they dance
it is merely to wear wear
from his shaggy body the tranced
wish forever to stay
only an ambling bear

25

four-footed in berries
It is no more joyous for them
in this hot dust to prance
out of reach of the praying claws
sharpened to paw for ants

30

in the shadows of deodars⁰ *East Indian cedars*
It is not easy to free
myth from reality
or rear this fellow up
to lurch lurch with them
in the tranced dancing of men

1962

1975

C . DAY L E W I S

1904-1972

Two Songs

I've heard them liltng at loom and belting,

Lasses liltng before dawn of day:

4. Mountainous region of northern India.

1. Cf. Jean Elliot, "The Flowers of the Forest"

5. I.e., exciting him as if with electric shock.

(p. 677).

W H E R E A R E T H E W A R P O E T S ? / 1 4 4 9

But now they are silent, not gamesome and gallant—

The flowers of the town are rotting away.

5 There was laughter and loving in the lanes at evening;

Handsome were the boys then, and girls were gay.

But lost in Flanders² by medalled commanders

The lads of the village are vanished away.

Cursed be the promise that takes our men from us—

10 All will be champion if you choose to obey:

They fight against hunger but still it is stronger—

The prime of our land grows cold as the clay.

The women are weary, once lilted so merry,

Waiting to marry for a year and a day:

15 From wooing and winning, from owning or earning

The flowers of the town are all turned away.

Come, live with me and be my love,^s

And we will all the pleasures prove

Of peace and plenty, bed and board,
20 That chance employment may afford.
I'll handle dainties⁰ on the docks *delicacies*
And thou shalt read of summer frocks:
At evening by the sour canals
We'll hope to hear some madrigals.
25 Care on thy maiden brow shall put
A wreath of wrinkles, and thy foot
Be shod with pain: not silken dress
But toil shall tire thy loveliness.
Hunger shall make thy modest zone⁰ *belt*
30 And cheat fond death of all but bone—
If these delights thy mind may move,
Then live with me and be my love.

1935

Where are the War Poets?
They who in folly or mere greed
Enslaved religion, markets, laws,
Borrow our language now and bid
Us to speak up in freedom's cause.

2. Site of many of the most murderous battles of Shepherd to His Love" (p. 256) and Sir Walter World War I. Raleigh, "The Nymph's Reply to the Shepherd"

3. Cf. Christopher Marlowe, "The Passionate (p. 152).

1 4 5 0 / P A T R I C K K A V A N A G H

5 It is the logic of our times,
No subject for immortal verse—
That we who lived by honest dreams
Defend the bad against the worse.

1943

RICHARDEBERHART

b. 1904

The Fury of Aerial Bombardment

You would think the fury of aerial bombardment

Would rouse God to relent; the infinite spaces

Are still silent. He looks on shock-pried faces.

History, even, does not know what is meant.

5 You would feel that after so many centuries

God would give man to repent; yet he can kill

As Cain¹ could, but with multitudinous will,

No farther advanced than in his ancient furies.

Was man made stupid to see his own stupidity?

io Is God by definition indifferent, beyond us all?

Is the eternal truth man's fighting soul

Wherein the Beast ravens in its own avidity?

Of Van Wattering I speak, and Averill,

Names on a list, whose faces I do not recall

15 But they are gone to early death, who late⁰ in school
recently

Distinguished the belt feed lever from the belt holding pawl.²

1947

PATRICK KAVANAGH

1904-1967

Sanctity

To be a poet and not know the trade,

To be a lover and repel all women;

Twin ironies by which great saints are made,

The agonising pincer-jaws of Heaven.

1936

I. The firstborn son of Adam and Eve, he murdered his brother Abel (Genesis 4.8).

II. Eberhart was an aerial gunnery instructor during

2. Parts of the .50-caliber Browning machine gun, during the summer of 1944.

THE GREAT HUNGER / 1 4 5 1

*From The Great Hunger*¹

I

Clay is the word and clay is the flesh

Where the potato-gatherers like mechanised scarecrows move

Along the side-fall of the hill—Maguire and his men.

If we watch them an hour is there anything we can prove

5 Of life as it is broken-backed over the Book

Of Death? Here crows gabble over worms and frogs

And the gulls like old newspapers are blown clear of the hedges,

luckily.

Is there some light of imagination in these wet clods?

Or why do we stand here shivering?

10 Which of these men

Loved the light and the queen

Too long virgin? Yesterday was summer. Who was it promised marriage to himself

Before apples were hung from the ceilings for Hallowe'en?

We will wait and watch the tragedy to the last curtain,

15 Till the last soul passively like a bag of wet clay
Rolls down the side of the hill, diverted by the angles
Where the plough missed or a spade stands, straitening the
way.
A dog lying on a torn jacket under a heeled-up cart,
A horse nosing along the posied headland, trailing
20 A rusty plough. Three heads hanging between wide-apart
Legs. October playing a symphony on a slack wire paling.
Maguire watches the drills flattened out
And the flints that lit a candle for him on a June altar
Flameless. The drills slipped by and the days slipped by
25 And he trembled his head away and ran free from the
world's halter,
And thought himself wiser than any man in the townland²
When he laughed over pints of porter⁰ *strong, dark ale*
Of how he came free from every net spread
In the gaps of experience. He shook a knowing head
30 And pretended to his soul
That children are tedious in hurrying fields of April
Where men are spanging⁰ across wide furrows. *leaping*
Lost in the passion that never needs a wife—
The pricks that pricked were the pointed pins of harrows.
35 Children scream so loud that the crows could bring
The seed of an acre away with crow-rude jeers.
Patrick Maguire, he called his dog and he flung a stone in the
air
And hallooed the birds away that were the birds of the years.
1. Kavanagh's most famous work is his long poem
Maguire, who is bound to the soil by the need not

in fourteen sections, *The Great Hunger* (1942).

to leave his aged mother, and whose Church-Named for a severe famine that decimated the induced sense of sin is so strong that he dies a Irish population during the 1840s, the poem bachelor and perhaps a virgin.

focuses on the spiritual and sexual hunger of the
2. In Ireland, an area of land comparable to a Irish peasantry among whom Kavanagh grew up. township.

The central figure is a potato farmer named Patrick

1 4 5 2 / P A T R I C K K A V A N A G H

Turn over the weedy clods and tease out the tangled skeins.

40 What is he looking for there?

He thinks it is a potato, but we know better

Than his mud-gloved fingers probe in this insensitive hair.

“Move forward the basket and balance it steady

In this hollow. Pull down the shafts of that cart, Joe,

45 And straddle the horse,” Maguire calls.

“The wind’s over Brannagan’s, now that means rain.

**Graip⁰ up some withered stalks and see that no potato falls
*fork***

Over the tail-board going down the ruckety pass—

And *that’s* a job we’ll have to do in December,

**50 Gravel it and build a kerb on the bog-side. Is that
Cassidy’s ass**

Out in my clover? Curse o’ God—

Where is that dog?

Never where he’s wanted.” Maguire grunts and spits

Through a clay-wattled moustache and stares about him
from the

height.

55 His dream changes again like the cloud-swung wind

And he is not so sure now if his mother was right

When she praised the man who made a field his bride.

Watch him, watch him, that man on a hill whose spirit

Is a wet sack flapping about the knees of time.

60 He lives that his little fields may stay fertile when his
own body

Is spread in the bottom of a ditch under two coulter's
crossed in

Christ's Name.

He was suspicious in his youth as a rat near strange bread,

When girls laughed; when they screamed he knew that
meant

The cry of fillies in season. He could not walk

65 The easy road to his destiny. He dreamt

The innocense of young brambles to hooked treachery.

O the grip, O the grip of irregular fields! No man escapes.

It could not be that back of the hills love was free

And ditches straight.

70 No monster hand lifted up children and put down apes

As here

“O God if I had been wiser!”

That was his sigh like the brown breeze in the thistles.

He looks towards his house and haggard.0 “O God if I had
been wiser!” *yard*

75 But now a crumpled leaf from the whitethorn bushes

Darts like a frightened robin, and the fence

**Shows the green of after-grass through a little window,
And he knows that his own heart is calling his mother a
liar.**

**God's truth is life—even the grotesque shapes of its foulest
fire.**

so **The horse lifts its head and cranes**

Through the whins⁰ and stones *masses of gorse shrub*

To lip late passion in the crawling clover.

3. Iron blades in ploughs.

CANAL BANK WALK / 1 4 5 3

In the gap there's a bush weighted with boulders like morality,
The fools of life bleed if they climb over.

85 The wind leans from Brady's, and the coltsfoot leaves are
holed with

rust,

Rain fills the cart-tracks and the sole-plate grooves;

A yellow sun reflects in Donaghmoyne⁴

The poignant light in puddles shaped by hooves.

Come with me, Imagination, into this iron house

90 And we will watch from the doorway the years run back,

And we will know what a peasant's left hand wrote on the
page.

Be easy, October. No cackle hen, horse neigh, tree sough, duck
quack.

1942

Epic

I have lived in important places, times

When great events were decided, who owned

That half a rood⁰ of rock, a no-man's land *quarter acre*

Surrounded by our pitchfork-armed claims.

5 I heard the Duffys shouting “Damn your soul”
And old McCabe stripped to the waist, seen
Step the plot defying blue cast-steel—
“Here is the march along these iron stones”
That was the year of the Munich bother.⁵ Which
io Was more important? I inclined
To lose my faith in Ballyrush and Gortin⁶
Till Homer’s ghost came whispering to my mind
He said: I made the Iliad⁷ from such
A local row. Gods make their own importance.

1951

Canal Bank Walk⁸

Leafy-with-love banks and the green waters of the canal
Pouring redemption for me, that I do
The will of God, wallow in the habitual, the banal,
Grow with nature again as before I grew.

5 The bright stick trapped, the breeze adding a third
Party to the couple kissing on an old seat,
And a bird gathering materials for the nest for the Word
Eloquently new and abandoned to its delirious beat.

4. A stream in County Monaghan.

6. Small townships, near Kavanagh’s home, in

5. Diplomatic crisis of September 1939 (involving
County Monaghan.

Britain, Czechoslovakia, France, and Germany)

7. Homer’s epic poem about the Trojan War.

that precipitated World War II.

8. Along Dublin’s Grand Canal.

1 4 5 4 / S T A N L E Y K U N I T Z

O unworn world enrapture me, encapture me in a web
10 Of fabulous grass and eternal voices by a beech,
Feed the gaping need of my senses, give me ad lib
To pray unselfconsciously with overflowing speech
For this soul needs to be honoured with a new dress woven
From green and blue things and arguments that cannot be
proven.

1960

S T A N L E Y K U N I T Z

b. 1905

He1

He runs before the wise men: he
Is moving on the hills like snow.

No gifts, no tears, no company
He brings, but wind-rise and water-flow.

5 In meadows of descended day

His motion leans, dividing air:

He takes the unforgiving way

Beneath the apostolic star.²

She who has known him calls him stranger,

io Parting the night's long hair, he steals

Within the heart, that humble manger

Where the white, astonished spirit kneels.

His vertical inflicting pride,

Whose shadow cuts the nib of space,

15 Bends to this virtue fructified.³

But though he kiss the little face

Like rapture breaking on the mind,
The necessary fierce details
Implacably he has designed.
20 Redemption hangs upon the nails.
1928, 1958 1930, 1958

Robin Redbreast

It was the dingiest bird
you ever saw, all the color

1. Kunitz's preferred version of a poem he wrote Incarnation,
at twenty-three, inspired by Luke's account, in the 2. The star
of Bethlehem.

Christian Scriptures, of the Annunciation and 3. Made fruitful,
productive. *Nib*: point of a pen.

T O U C H M E / 1 4 5 5

washed from him, as if
he had been standing in the rain,
5 friendless and stiff and cold,
since Eden went wrong.

In the house marked For Sale,
where nobody made a sound,
in the room where I lived
10 with an empty page, I had heard
the squawking of the jays
under the wild persimmons
tormenting him.

So I scooped him up
15 after they knocked him down,
in league with that ounce of heart
pounding in my palm,

that dumb beak gaping.
Poor thing! Poor foolish life!
20 without sense enough to stop
running in desperate circles,
needing my lucky help
to toss him back into his element.
But when I held him high,
25 fear clutched my hand,
for through the hole in his head,
cut whistle-clean ...
through the old dried wound
between his eyes
30 where the hunter's brand
had tunneled out his wits ...
I caught the cold flash of the blue
unappeasable sky.

1971

Touch Me

Summer is late, my heart.

Words plucked out of the air
some forty years ago
when I was wild with love
5 and torn almost in two
scatter like leaves this night
of whistling wind and rain.
It is my heart that's late,
it is my song that's flown,
io Outdoors all afternoon

under a gun-metal sky
staking my garden down,
I kneeled to the crickets trilling
underfoot as if about

1 4 5 6 / R O B E R T P E N N W A R R E N

15 to burst from their crusty shells;
and like a child again
marveled to hear so clear
and brave a music pour
from such a small machine.

20 What makes the engine go?

Desire, desire, desire.

The longing for the dance
stirs in the buried life.

One season only,

25 and it's done.

So let the battered old willow
thrash against the windowpanes
and the house timbers creak.

Darling, do you remember

30 the man you married? Touch me,
remind me who I am.

1995

R O B E R T P E N N W A R R E N

1905-1989

Bearded Oaks

The oaks, how subtle and marine,
Bearded, and all the layered light

Above them swims; and thus the scene,
Recessed, awaits the positive night.

5 So, waiting, we in the grass now lie
Beneath the languorous tread of light:

The grasses, kelp-like, satisfy
The nameless motions of the air.

Upon the floor of light, and time,

io Unmurmuring, of polyp made,

We rest; we are, as light withdraws,

Twin atolls on a shelf of shade.

Ages to our construction went,

Dim architecture, hour by hour:

15 And violence, forgot now, lent

The present stillness all its power.

The storm of noon above us rolled,

Of light the fury, furious gold,

The long drag troubling us, the depth:

20 Dark is unrocking, unrippling, still.

M A S T S A T D A W N / 1 4 5 7

Passion and slaughter, ruth, decay

Descend, minutely whispering down,

Silted down swaying streams, to lay

Foundation for our voicelessness.

25 All our debate is voiceless here,

As all our rage, the rage of stone;

If hope is hopeless, then fearless is fear,

And history is thus undone.

Our feet once wrought the hollow street

**30 With echo when the lamps were dead
At windows, once our headlight glare
Disturbed the doe that, leaping, fled.
I do not love you less that now
The caged heart makes iron stroke,
35 Or less that all that light once gave
The graduate⁰ dark should now revoke. *increasing*
We live in time so little time
And we learn all so painfully,
That we may spare this hour's term
40 To practice for eternity.**

1944

Masts at Dawn

**Past second cock-crow yacht masts in the harbor go slowly
white.**

No light in the east yet, but the stars show a certain fatigue.

**They withdraw into a new distance, have discovered our
unworthiness.**

It is long since

**The owl, in the dark eucalyptus, dire and melodious, last
called, and**

5 Long since the moon sank and the English

**Finished fornicating in their ketches.¹ In the evening there
was a**

strong swell.

**Red died the sun, but at dark wind rose easterly, white sea
nagged the**

black harbor headland.

**When there is a strong swell, you may, if you surrender to
it,**

experience

**A sense, in the act, of mystic unity with that rhythm. Your
peace is the**

sea's will.

**io But now no motion, the bay-face is glossy in darkness,
like**

1. Sailing vessels.

58 / R O B E R T P E N N W A R R E N

An old window pane flat on black ground by the wall, near the
ash

heap. It neither

Receives nor gives light. Now is the hour when the sea

Sinks into meditation. It doubts its own mission. The drowned
cat

That on the evening swell had kept nudging the piles of the
pier and

had seemed

To want to climb out and lick itself dry, now floats free. On
that

surface a slight convexity only, it is like

An eyelid, in darkness, closed. You must learn to accept the
kiss of

fate, for

The masts go white slow, as light, like dew, from darkness

Condensed on them, on oiled wood, on metal. Dew whitens in
darkness.

I lie in my bed and think how, in darkness, the masts go white.

The sound of the engine of the first fishing dory dies seaward.
Soon

In the inland glen wakes the dawn-dove. We must try

To love so well the world that we may believe, in the end, in
God.

1968

There's a Grandfather's Clock in the Hall

There's a grandfather's clock in the hall, watch it closely. The
minute

hand stands still, then it jumps, and in between jumps there is
no-

Time,

And you are a child again watching the reflection of early
morning

sunlight on the ceiling above your bed,

Or perhaps you are fifteen feet under water and holding your
breath

as you struggle with a rock-snagged anchor, or holding your
breath just long enough for one more long, slow thrust to make
the orgasm really intolerable,

Or you are wondering why you really do not give a damn, as
they

trundle you off to the operating room,

Or your mother is standing up to get married and is very
pretty, and

excited and is a virgin, and your heart overflows, and you
watch

her with tears in your eyes, or

She is the one in the hospital room and she is really dying.

They have taken out her false teeth, which are now in a
tumbler on

the bedside table, and you know that only the undertaker will
ever put them back in.

You stand there and wonder if you will ever have to wear false teeth.

EVENINGHAWK / 1459

She is lying on her back, and God, is she ugly, and

10 With gum-flabby lips and each word a special problem, she is asking if

it is a new suit that you are wearing.

You say yes, and hate her uremic² guts, for she has no right to make

you hurt the way that question hurts.

You do not know why that question makes your heart hurt like a kick

in the scrotum,

For you do not yet know that the question, in its murderous triviality, is

the last thing she will ever say to you,

Nor know what baptism is occurring in a sod-roofed hut or hole on

the night-swept steppes of Asia, and a million mouths, like ruined

stars in darkness, make a rejoicing that howls like wind, or wolves,

15 Nor do you know the truth, which is: *Seize the nettle of innocence in both your hands, for this is the only way, and every*

Ulcer in love's lazaret³ may, like a dawn-stung gem, sing—or even hurst into whoops of, perhaps, holiness.

But, in any case, watch the clock closely. Hold your breath and wait.

Nothing happens, nothing happens, then suddenly, quick as a wink,

and slick as a mink's prick, Time thrusts through the time of
no-

Time.

1974

Evening Hawk

From plane of light to plane, wings dipping through

Geometries and orchids that the sunset builds,

Out of the peak's black angularity of shadow, riding

The last tumultuous avalanche of

5 Light above pines and the guttural gorge,

The hawk comes.

His wing

Scythes down another day, his motion

Is that of the honed steel-edge, we hear

io The crashless fall of stalks of Time.

The head of each stalk is heavy with the gold of our error.

Look! Look! he is climbing the last light

Who knows neither Time nor error, and under

Whose eye, unforgiving, the world, unforgiven, swings

15 Into shadow.

2. Characterized by a toxic condition associated 3. Storeroom;
also (*lazaretto*), quarters for quar-with kidney disease. antine
or contagious hospital.

1 4 6 0 / J O H N B E T J E M A N

Long now,

The last thrush is still, the last bat

Now cruises in his sharp hieroglyphics. His wisdom

Is ancient, too, and immense. The star

20 Is steady, like Plato,⁴ over the mountain.

If there were no wind we might, we think, hear
The earth grind on its axis, or history
Drip in darkness like a leaking pipe in the cellar.

1975

J O H N B E T J E M A N

1906-1984

Death in Leamington¹

She died in the upstairs bedroom
By the light of the evening star
That shone through the plate glass window
From over Leamington Spa.

5 Beside her the lonely crochet
Lay patiently and unstirred,
But the fingers that would have worked it
Were dead as the spoken word.

And Nurse came in with the tea-things
to Breast high 'mid the stands and chairs—
But Nurse was alone with her own little soul,
And the things were alone with theirs.

She bolted the big round window,
She let the blinds unroll,

15 She set a match to the mantle,²
She covered the fire with coal.

And “Tea!” she said in a tiny voice
“Wake up! It’s nearly *five*.”

Oh! Chintzy,³ chintzy cheeriness,

20 Half dead and half alive!

Do you know that the stucco is peeling?

Do you know that the heart will stop?

From those yellow Italianate arches

Do you hear the plaster drop?

4. Here, a symbol of the “steady” because he char-

2. The incandescent cloth hood of a gaslight jet.

acterized physical objects as impermanent repre-

3. Not in the slang sense of gaudy or cheap, but

sentations of unchanging ideas.

meaning that the room’s hangings and furniture

1. Leamington Spa is a health resort in Warwick-

coverings are of the flower-patterned, glazed-

shire, England, with medicinal springs and baths.

cotton fabric called chintz.

THE ARREST OF OSCAR WILDE AT THE CADOGAN HOTEL / 1461

25 Nurse looked at the silent bedstead,

At the grey, decaying face,

As the calm of a Leamington evening

Drifted into the place.

She moved the table of bottles

30 Away from the bed to the wall;

And tiptoeing gently over the stairs

Turned down the gas in the hall.

1932

The Arrest of Oscar Wilde at the Cadogan Hotel⁴

He sipped at a weak hock⁵ and seltzer

As he gazed at the London skies

Through the Nottingham lace of the curtains

Or was it his bees-winged⁶ eyes?
5 To the right and before him Pont Street
Did tower in her new built red,
As hard as the morning gaslight
That shone on his unmade bed,
“I want some more hock in my seltzer,
10 And Robbie,⁷ please give me your hand—
Is this the end or beginning?
How can I understand?
“So you’ve brought me the latest *Yellow Book*:⁸
And Buchan⁹ has got in it now:
15 Approval of what is approved of
Is as false as a well-kept vow.
“More hock, Robbie—where is the seltzer?
Dear boy, pull again at the bell!
They are all little better than *cretins*,
20 Though this *is* the Cadogan Hotel.
“One astrakhan coat is at Willis’s—
Another one’s at the Savoy:
Do fetch my morocco portmanteau,
And bring them on later, dear boy.”

4. On May 27, 1895, the Irish writer Oscar Wilde
Wilde after the latter’s downfall.

(1856—1900) was convicted of “indecent

8. An elaborately illustrated hardcover periodical,
between grown men, in public or private” (i.e., of
which appeared quarterly from 1894 to 1897, and
homosexuality) and was sentenced to two years

in which many writers associated with the Aes-
hard labor.

thetic movement were published.

5. Generic term for German white wine.

9. John Buchan, later Lord Tweedsmuir (1875—

6. Filmed over (from *beeswing*: a film that forms
1940), author of several popular novels, contrib-
on old wines).

uted two stories to *The Yellow Book* in 1896.

7. Robert Ross, a friend who remained loyal to

1 4 6 2 / J O H N B E T J E M A N

25 A thump, and a murmur of voices—

(“Oh why must they make such a din?”)

As the door of the bedroom swung open

And **TWO PLAIN CLOTHES POLICEMEN** came in:

“Mr. Woilde, we ave come for tew take yew

30 Where felons and criminals dwell:

We must ask yew tew leave with us quietly

For this *is* the Cadogan Hotel.”

He rose, and he put down *The Yellow Book*.

He staggered—and, terrible-eyed,

35 He brushed past the palms on the staircase

And was helped to a hansom outside.

1937

East Anglian Bathel

Oh when the early morning at the seaside

Took us with hurrying steps from Horsey Mere

To see the whistling bent-grass on the leaside

And then the tumbled breaker-line appear,
5 On high, the clouds with mighty adumbration0 *shadows*
Sailed over us to seaward fast and clear
And jellyfish in quivering isolation
Lay silted in the dry sand of the breeze
And we, along the tableland of beach blown
io Went gooseflesh from our shoulders to our knees
And ran to catch the football, each to each thrown,
In the soft and swirling music of the seas.
There splashed about our ankles as we waded
Those intersecting wavelets morning-cold,
15 And sudden dark a patch of sea was shaded,
And sudden light, another patch would hold
The warmth of whirling atoms in a sun-shot
And underwater sandstorm green and gold.
So in we dived and louder than a gunshot
20 Sea water broke in fountains down the ear.
How cold the bathe, how chattering cold the drying,
How welcoming the inland reeds appear,
The wood smoke and the breakfast and the frying,
And your warm freshwater ripples, Horsey Mere.
1945

1. East Anglia comprises the English counties of
area of the town of Horsey) is on the coast of Nor-
Norfolk and Suffolk; Horsey Mere (“Mere,” deriv-
folk, north of Great Yarmouth.

ing from Latin *mare*, the sea, indicating the resort

False Security

I remember the dread with which I at a quarter past four
Let go with a bang behind me our house front door
And, clutching a present for my dear little hostess tight,
Sailed out for the children's party into the night
5 Or rather the gathering night. For still some boys
In the near municipal acres were making a noise
Shuffling in fallen leaves and shouting and whistling
And running past hedges of hawthorn, spikey and bristling.
And black in the oncoming darkness stood out the trees
10 And pink shone the ponds in the sunset ready to freeze
And all was still and ominous waiting for dark
And the keeper was ringing his closing bell in the park
And the arc lights started to fizzle and burst into mauve
As I climbed West Hill to the great big house in The Grove,
15 Where the children's party was and the dear little hostess.
But halfway up stood the empty house where the ghost is
I crossed to the other side and under the arc
Made a rush for the next kind lamppost out of the dark
And so to the next and the next till I reached the top
20 Where the Grove branched off to the left. Then ready to
drop
I ran to the ironwork gateway of number seven
Secure at last on the lamplit fringe of Heaven.
Oh who can say how subtle and safe one feels
Shod in one's children's sandals from Daniel Neal's,
25 Clad in one's party clothes made of stuff from Heal's?
And who can still one's thrill at the candle shine

On cakes and ices and jelly and blackcurrant wine,
And the warm little feel of my hostess's hand in mine?
Can I forget my delight at the conjuring show?

30 And wasn't I proud that I was the last to go?

Too overexcited and pleased with myself to know
That the words I heard my hostess's mother employ
To a guest departing, would ever diminish my joy,

**I W O N D E R W H E R E J U L I A F O U N D T H A T
S T R A N G E , R A T H E R C O M M O N L I T T L E
B O Y ?**

1958

W I L L I A M E M P S O N

1906-1984

Legal Fiction1

Law makes long spokes of the short stakes of men.

Your well fenced out real estate of mind

2. English interior-design chain. *Daniel Neal's*: 1. Something assumed to be true for the purpose famous English shoe store. of legal argument, whether or not it is true.

1 4 6 4 / W I L L I A M E M P S O N

No high flat of the nomad citizen

Looks over, or train leaves behind.

5 Your rights extend under and above your claim

Without bound; you own land in heaven and hell;

Your part of earth's surface and mass the same,

Of all cosmos' volume, and all stars as well.

Your rights reach down where all owners meet, in hell's

10 Pointed exclusive conclave, at earth's centre

(Your spun farm's root still on that axis dwells);

And up, through galaxies, a growing sector.
You are nomad yet; the lighthouse beam you own
Flashes, like Lucifer,² through the firmament.
15 Earth's axis varies; your dark central cone
Wavers a candle's shadow, at the end.

1935

Missing Dates

Slowly the poison the whole blood stream fills.
It is not the effort nor the failure tires.
The waste remains, the waste remains and kills.
It is not your system or clear sight that mills
5 Down small to the consequence a life requires;
Slowly the poison the whole blood stream fills.
They bled an old dog dry yet the exchange rills⁰ *streams*
Of young dog blood gave but a month's desires;
The waste remains, the waste remains and kills.
io It is the Chinese tombs and the slag hills
Usurp the soil, and not the soil retires.³
Slowly the poison the whole blood stream fills.
Not to have fire is to be a skin that shrills.
The complete fire is death. From partial fires
15 The waste remains, the waste remains and kills.
It is the poems you have lost, the ills
From missing dates, at which the heart expires.
Slowly the poison the whole blood stream fills.
The waste remains, the waste remains and kills.

1940

2. The morning star (Venus); also, a name of

reported somewhere, but the legend that a fifth or
Satan (meaning “light-bearer”) before he was cast
some such part of the soil of China is given up to
out of heaven.

ancestral tombs is (by the way) not true” [Empson’s

3. “It is true about the old dog, at least I saw it
note].

1 4 6 5

W . H . A U D E N

1907-1973

Lullaby

Lay your sleeping head, my love,

Human on my faithless arm;

Time and fevers burn away

Individual beauty from

5 Thoughtful children, and the grave

Proves the child ephemeral:

But in my arms till break of day

Let the living creature lie,

Mortal, guilty, but to me

10 The entirely beautiful.

Soul and body have no bounds:

To lovers as they lie upon

Her tolerant enchanted slope

In their ordinary swoon,

15 Grave the vision Venus¹ sends

Of supernatural sympathy,

Universal love and hope;

While an abstract insight wakes
Among the glaciers and the rocks
20 The hermit's carnal ecstasy.
Certainty, fidelity
On the stroke of midnight pass
Like vibrations of a bell
And fashionable madmen raise
25 Their pedantic boring cry:
Every farthing² of the cost,
All the dreaded cards foretell,
Shall be paid, but from this night
Not a whisper, not a thought,
30 Not a kiss nor look be lost.
Beauty, midnight, vision dies:
Let the winds of dawn that blow
Softly round your dreaming head
Such a day of welcome show
35 Eye and knocking heart may bless,
Find our mortal world enough;
Noons of dryness find you fed
By the involuntary powers,
Nights of insult let you pass
40 Watched by every human love.

January 1937 1940

1. Roman goddess of love and beauty.
2. Old British coin worth one fourth of a penny.

1 4 6 6 / W . H . A U D E N

Spain 19373

Yesterday all the past. The language of size
Spreading to China along the trade-routes; the diffusion
Of the counting-frame and the cromlech;⁴
Yesterday the shadow-reckoning in the sunny climates.
5 Yesterday the assessment of insurance by cards,
The divination of water; yesterday the invention
Of cart-wheels and clocks, the taming of
Horses; yesterday the bustling world of the navigators.
Yesterday the abolition of fairies and giants;
10 The fortress like a motionless eagle eyeing the valley,
The chapel built in the forest;
Yesterday the carving of angels and of frightening gargoyles;
The trial of heretics among the columns of stone;
Yesterday the theological feuds in the taverns
15 And the miraculous cure at the fountain;
Yesterday the Sabbath of Witches.⁵ But to-day the struggle.
Yesterday the installation of dynamos and turbines;
The construction of railways in the colonial desert;
Yesterday the classic lecture
20 On the origin of Mankind. But to-day the struggle.
Yesterday the belief in the absolute value of Greek;
The fall of the curtain upon the death of a hero;
Yesterday the prayer to the sunset,
And the adoration of madmen. But to-day the struggle.
25 As the poet whispers, startled among the pines
Or, where the loose waterfall sings, compact, or upright
On the crag by the leaning tower:
“O my vision. O send me the luck of the sailor.”

And the investigator peers through his instruments

30 At the inhuman provinces, the virile bacillus

Or enormous Jupiter finished:

“But the lives of my friends. I inquire, I inquire.”

And the poor in their fireless lodgings dropping the sheets

Of the evening paper: “Our day is our loss. O show us

35 History the operator, the

Organiser, Time the refreshing river.”

3. Auden traveled to Spain in January 1936, say-

seen.

ing he was going to drive an ambulance for the left-

4. Ancient stone monument.

wing Republican forces then engaged in a civil war

5. Ceremonial gathering of witches in parody of

with the Fascist Nationalists, but returned shortly,

Christian service.

without having done so, horrified by what he had

S P A I N 1 9 3 7 / 1 4 6 7

And the nations combine each cry, invoking the life

That shapes the individual belly and orders

T h e private nocturnal terror:

40 “Did you not f o u n d once the city state of the sponge,

“Raise the vast military empires of the shark

And the tiger, establish the robin’s plucky canton?0 *district*

Intervene. O descend as a dove6 or

A furious papa or a mild engineer:7 but descend.”

45 And the life, if it answers at all, replies from the heart

And the eyes and the lungs, from the shops and squares of the city:

“O no, I am not the Mover,

Not to-day, not to you. To you I’m the

“Yes-man, the bar-companion, the easily-duped:

50 I am whatever you do; I am your vow to be

Good, your h u m o r o u s story;

I am your business voice; I am your marriage.

“What’s your proposal? To build the Just City?8 I will.

I agree. Or is it the suicide pact, the romantic

55 Death? Very well, I accept, for

I am your choice, your decision: yes, I am Spain.”

Many have heard it on remote peninsulas,

On sleepy plains, in the aberrant fishermen’s islands,

In the corrupt heart of the city;

60 Have heard and migrated like gulls or the seeds of a flower.

They clung like burrs to the long expresses that lurch

Through the unjust lands, through the night, through the alpine tunnel;

They floated over the oceans;

They walked the passes: they came to present their lives.

65 On that arid square, that fragment nipped off from hot

Africa, soldered so crudely to inventive Europe,

On that tableland scored by rivers,

O u r fever’s menacing shapes are precise and alive.

To-morrow, perhaps, the future: the research on fatigue

70 And the movements of packers; the gradual exploring of all the

Octaves of radiation;

To-morrow the enlarging of consciousness by diet and breathing.

To-morrow the rediscovery of romantic love;

The photographing of ravens; all the fun under

75 Liberty's masterful shadow;

To-morrow the hour of the pageant-master and the musician.

6. In the Bible and Christian iconography, the

of the Greek for "god from the machinery"), the

Holy Ghost often takes the form of a dove descend-

device by which in Greek theater the gods were

ing to Earth.

shown in the air.

7. Refers to a *deus ex machina* (Latin translation

8. A topic discussed by Plato in his *Republic*.

1 4 6 8 / W . H . A U D E N

To-morrow for the young the poets exploding like bombs,

The walks by the lake, the winter of perfect communion;

To-morrow the bicycle races

so Through the suburbs on summer evenings: but to-day the struggle.

To-day the inevitable increase in the chances of death;

The conscious acceptance of guilt in the fact of murder;⁹

To-day the expending of powers

On the flat ephemeral pamphlet and the boring meeting.

85 To-day the makeshift consolations; the shared cigarette;

The cards in the candle-lit barn and the scraping concert,

The masculine jokes; to-day the

Fumbled and unsatisfactory embrace before hurting.

The stars are dead; the animals will not look:

90 We are left alone with our day, and the time is short and
History to the defeated

May say Alas but cannot help or pardon.

April 1937 1937, 1940

As I Walked Out One Evening

As I walked out one evening,

Walking down Bristol Street,

The crowds upon the pavement

Were fields of harvest wheat.

5 And down by the brimming river

I heard a lover sing

Under an arch of the railway:

“Love has no ending.

“I’ll love you, dear, I’ll love you

io Till China and Africa meet,

And the river jumps over the mountain

And the salmon sing in the street,

“I’ll love you till the ocean

Is folded and hung up to dry

15 And the seven stars go squawking

Like geese about the sky.

“The years shall run like rabbits,

For in my arms I hold

The Flower of the Ages,

20 And the first love of the world.”

9. At its first printing, this line read: “The conscious acceptance of guilt in the necessary murder.” Auden later suppressed the poem, largely because of its seeming support for murder.

A s I W A L K E D O U T O N E E V E N I N G / 1 4 6 9

But all the clocks in the city

Began to whirr and chime:

“O let not Time deceive you,

You cannot conquer Time.

25 “In the burrows of the Nightmare

Where Justice naked is,

Time watches from the shadow

And coughs when you would kiss.

“In headaches and in worry

30 Vaguely life leaks away,

And Time will have his fancy

Tomorrow or today.

“Into many a green valley

Drifts the appalling snow;

35 Time breaks the threaded dances

And the diver’s brilliant bow.

“O plunge your hands in water,

Plunge them in up to the wrist;

Stare, stare in the basin

40 And wonder what you’ve missed.

“The glacier knocks in the cupboard,

The desert sighs in the bed,

And the crack in the teacup opens

A lane to the land of the dead.

45 “Where the beggars raffle the banknotes

And the Giant is enchanting to Jack,

And the Lily-white Boy is a Roarer,

And Jill goes down on her back.

“O look, look in the mirror,

50 O look in your distress;

Life remains a blessing

Although you cannot bless.

“O stand, stand at the window

As the tears scald and start;

55 You shall love your crooked neighbour

With your crooked heart.”

It was late, late in the evening,

The lovers they were gone;

The clocks had ceased their chiming,

60 And the deep river ran on.

November 1937

1940

1 4 7 0 / W . H . A U D E N

From Twelve Songs

IX. [Funeral Blues]

Stop all the clocks, cut off the telephone,

Prevent the dog from barking with a juicy bone,

Silence the pianos and with muffled drum

Bring out the coffin, let the mourners come.

Let aeroplanes circle moaning overhead

Scribbling on the sky the message He Is Dead,

Put crepe bows round the white necks of the public doves,

Let the traffic policemen wear black cotton gloves.

He was my North, my South, my East and West,

10 My working week and my Sunday rest,

My noon, my midnight, my talk, my song;
I thought that love would last for ever: I was wrong.
The stars are not wanted now: put out every one;
Pack up the moon and dismantle the sun;
is Pour away the ocean and sweep up the wood;
For nothing now can ever come to any good.

1936?

XII. [Tell Me the Truth About Love]

Some say that love's a little boy,
And some say it's a bird,
Some say it makes the world go round,
And some say that's absurd,
5 And when I asked the man next-door,
Who looked as if he knew,
His wife got very cross indeed,
And said it wouldn't do.
Does it look like a pair of pyjamas,
io Or the ham in a temperance hotel?¹
Does its odour remind one of llamas,²
Or has it a comforting smell?
Is it prickly to touch as a hedge is,
Or soft as eiderdown fluff?³
15 Is it sharp or quite smooth at the edges?
O tell me the truth about love.
Our history books refer to it
In cryptic little notes,
It's quite a common topic on
20 The Transatlantic boats;

1. A hotel where no alcohol is available.

3. Fluffy duck feathers.

2. South American camel-like animals.

M U S I S E D E S B E A U X A R T S / 1 4 7 1

I've found the subject m e n t i o n e d in

Accounts of suicides,

And even seen it scribbled on

The backs of railway-guides.

25 D o e s it howl like a hungry Alsatian,

Or b o o m like a military band?

Could one give a first-rate imitation

On a saw or a Steinway Grand?4

Is its singing at parties a riot?

30 D o e s it only like Classical stuff?

Will it stop w h e n o n e wants to be quiet?

O tell me the truth about love.

I looked inside the summer-house;

It wasn't ever there:

35 I tried the T h a m e s at Maidenhead,

And Brighton's5 bracing air.

I don't know what the blackbird sang,

Or what the tulip said;

But it wasn't in the chicken-run,

40 Or underneath the bed.

Can it pull extraordinary faces?

Is it usually sick on a swing?

D o e s it spend all its time at the races,

Or fiddling with pieces of string?

45 Has it views of its own about money?

D o e s it think Patriotism enough?

Are its stories vulgar but funny?

O tell me the truth about love.

W h e n it c o m e s , will it c o m e without warning

50 Just as I'm picking my nose?

Will it knock on my door in the morning,

Or tread in the bus on my toes?

Will it c o m e like a change in the weather?

Will its greeting be courteous or rough?

55 Will it alter my life altogether?

O tell me the truth about love.

January 1 9 3 8 1 9 4 0

Musee des Beaux Artsf

About suffering they were never wrong,

T h e Old Masters: h o w well they understood

4. Brand of grand piano. through a town west of London.

5. Resort town on the English Channel. *Thames* 6. Museum of Fine Arts (French).

at Maidenhead: the river Thames, as it runs

1 4 7 2

/ W . H . A U D E N

Its human position; how it takes place

While someone else is eating or opening a window or just walking

dully along;

5 How, when the aged are reverently, passionately waiting

For the miraculous birth, there always must be

Children who did not specially want it to happen, skating

On a pond at the edge of the wood:

They never forgot

10 That even the dreadful martyrdom must run its course

Anyhow in a corner, some untidy spot

Where the dogs go on with their doggy life and the torturer's
horse

Scratches its innocent behind on a tree.

In Brueghel's *Icarus*,⁷ for instance: how everything turns
away

15 Quite leisurely from the disaster; the ploughman may

Have heard the splash, the forsaken cry,

But for him it was not an important failure; the sun shone

As it had to on the white legs disappearing into the green

Water; and the expensive delicate ship that must have seen

20 Something amazing, a boy falling out of the sky,

Had somewhere to get to and sailed calmly on.

December 1938 1940

In Memory of W. B. Yeats⁸

(d. Jan. 1939)

I

He disappeared in the dead of winter:

The brooks were frozen, the airports almost deserted,

And snow disfigured the public statues;

The mercury sank in the mouth of the dying day.

5 What instruments we have agree

The day of his death was a dark cold day.

Far from his illness

The wolves ran on through the evergreen forests,

The peasant river was untempted by the fashionable quays;

io By mourning tongues

The death of the poet was kept from his poems.

7. *The Fall of Icarus*, by the Flemish artist Pieter

The poem also alludes to the Nativity scene in Brueghel (ca. 1525—1569), the painting described Brueghel's *Numbering at Bethlehem*, skaters in his here, is in the Musee d'Art Ancien, a section of the *Winter Landscape with Skaters and a Bird Trap*, Musees Royaux des Beaux Arts, in Brussels. Dae- and a horse scratching its behind in his *Massacre dalus*, the legendary Athenian craftsman, con-
of the Innocents.

structed a labyrinth for Minos, king of Crete, but

Cf. William Carlos Williams, "Pictures from

was then imprisoned in it with his son, Icarus. Dae-
Brueghel" (p. 1283).

dalus made wings of feathers and wax, with which

8. The Irish poet and dramatist William Butler

they flew away, but Icarus flew too near the sun,

Yeats (b. 1865; see pp. 1188-1211), died in Roque-
the wax melted, and he fell into the sea.

brune (southern France) on January 29, 1939.

IN MEMORY OF W. B. YEATS / 1473

But for him it was his last afternoon as himself,

An afternoon of nurses and rumours;

The provinces of his body revolted,

15 The squares of his mind were empty,

Silence invaded the suburbs,

The current of his feeling failed; he became his admirers.
Now he is scattered among a hundred cities
And wholly given over to unfamiliar affections.
20 To find his happiness in another kind of wood⁹
And be punished under a foreign code of conscience.¹
The words of a dead man
Are modified in the guts of the living.
But in the importance and noise of to-morrow
25 When the brokers are roaring like beasts on the floor of the
Bourse,²
And the poor have the sufferings to which they are fairly
accustomed,
And each in the cell of himself is almost convinced of his
freedom,
A few thousand will think of this day
As one thinks of a day when one did something slightly
unusual.
30 What instruments we have agree
The day of his death was a dark cold day.

II

You were silly like us;³ your gift survived it all:
The parish of rich women,⁴ physical decay,
Yourself. Mad Ireland hurt you into poetry.
35 Now Ireland has her madness and her weather still,
For poetry makes nothing happen: it survives
In the valley of its making where executives
Would never want to tamper, flows on south
From ranches of isolation and the busy griefs,
40 Raw towns that we believe and die in; it survives,

A way of happening, a mouth.

III

Earth, receive an honoured guest:

William Yeats is laid to rest.

Let the Irish vessel lie

45 Emptied of its poetry.⁵

9. At the beginning of the *Inferno* (1.1—3), middle- and rhyme of Yeats's late poem "Under Ben Bulage J Dante finds himself in a metaphorical "dark ben" (see p. 1208). In *Collected Shorter Poems* wood."

(1966) and thereafter, Auden omitted the three

1. Yeats, as represented by his work, must endure stanzas that originally followed:

the judgment of the living; a veiled reference to his Irish nationalism.

Time that is intolerant

2. The French stock exchange.

Of the brave and innocent,

3. In his prose pieces, Auden objects to aspects of

And indifferent in a week

Yeats's thought, particularly to his interest in the

To a beautiful physique,

supernatural.

4. Lady Augusta Gregory (1852-1932), Irish

Worships language and forgives

dramatist, was one of several wealthy women who

Everyone by whom it lives;

provided financial help to Yeats.

Pardons cowardice, conceit

5. This section's stanza pattern echoes the meter

Lays its honours at their feet,

1 4 7 4 / W . H . A U D E N

In the nightmare of the dark

All the dogs of Europe bark.⁶

And the living nations wait,

Each sequestered in its hate;

50 Intellectual disgrace

Stares from every human face,

And the seas of pity lie

Locked and frozen in each eye.

Follow, poet, follow right

55 To the bottom of the night,

With your unconstraining voice

Still persuade us to rejoice;

With the farming of a verse

Make a vineyard of the curse,

60 Sing of human unsuccess

In a rapture of distress;

In the deserts of the heart

Let the healing fountain start,

In the prison of his days

65 Teach the free man how to praise.

February 1939

1940

September 1, 1939

I sit in one of the dives
On Fifty-Second Street⁸
Uncertain and afraid
As the clever hopes expire

5

Of a low dishonest decade:
Waves of anger and fear
Circulate over the bright
And darkened lands of the earth,
Obsessing our private lives;

10

The unmentionable odour of death
Offends the September night.
Accurate scholarship can
Unearth the whole offence
Time that with this strange excuse
Yeats was at times antidemocratic and appeared to
Pardon Kipling and his views,
favor dictatorship.

And will pardon Paul Claudel,

6. A reference to World War II, which began in
Pardons him for writing well.

September 1939.

The English writer Rudyard Kipling (1865-1936;

7. The date of Hitler's invasion of Poland, which
see pp. 1181—88) was imperialistic and jingoistic.
started World War II.

The French poet, dramatist, and diplomat Paul

8. Perhaps the Dizzy Club, a bar on West 52nd
Caudel (1868—1955) was extremely right-wing.
Street, New York City.

S E P T E M B E R 1 , 1 9 3 9 / 1 4 7 5

From Luther⁹ until now

15 That has driven a culture mad,

Find what occurred at Linz,¹

What huge imago² made

A psychopathic god:

I and the public know

20 What all schoolchildren learn,

Those to whom evil is done

Do evil in return.

Exiled Thucydides³ knew

All that a speech can say

25 About Democracy,

And what dictators do,

The elderly rubbish they talk

To an apathetic grave;

Analysed all in his book,

30 The enlightenment driven away,

The habit-forming pain,

Mismanagement and grief:

We must suffer them all again.

Into this neutral air

35 Where blind skyscrapers use

Their full height to proclaim

The strength of Collective Man,

Each language pours its vain
Competitive excuse:
40 But who can live for long
In an euphoric dream;
Out of the mirror they stare,
Imperialism's face
And the international wrong.
45 Faces along the bar
Cling to their average day:
The lights must never go out,
The music must always play,
All the conventions conspire
50 To make this fort assume
The furniture of home;
Lest we should see where we are,
Lost in a haunted wood,
Children afraid of the night
55 Who have never been happy or good.
The windiest militant trash

Important Persons shout

9. Martin Luther (1483-1546), biblical scholar
image that influences a person's attitudes and
and founder of the Protestant Reformation.

behavior.

1. Hitler spent his boyhood in the Austrian city of

3. Greek general (460-400 **B.C.E.**), whose *History*
Linz.

of the Peloponnesian War Auden read in the sum-

2. Psychoanalytic term for the subconscious
mer of 1939.

1 4 7 6 / W . H . A U D E N

Is not so crude as our wish:

What mad Nijinsky wrote

60 About Diaghilev⁴

Is true of the normal heart;

For the error bred in the bone

Of each woman and each man

Craves what it cannot have,

65 Not universal love

But to be loved alone.⁵

From the conservative dark

Into the ethical life

The dense commuters come,

70 Repeating their morning vow,

“I *will* be true to the wife,

I’ll concentrate more on my work”,

And helpless governors wake

To resume their compulsory game:

75 Who can release them now,

Who can reach the deaf,
Who can speak for the dumb?
All I have is a voice
To undo the folded lie,
so The romantic lie in the brain
Of the sensual man-in-the-street
And the lie of Authority
Whose buildings grope the sky:
There is no such thing as the State
85 And no one exists alone;
Hunger allows no choice
To the citizen or the police;
We must love one another or die.⁶
Defenceless under the night
90 Our world in stupor lies;
Yet, dotted everywhere,
Ironic points of light
Flash out wherever the Just
Exchange their messages:
95 May I, composed like them
Of Eros⁷ and of dust,

4. Vaslav Nijinsky (1890-1950), dancer and choreographer, was a star of the Russian Ballet, myself: “That’s a damned lie! We must die any- directed by the impresario Sergey Diaghilev way.” So, in the next edition, I altered it to (1872-1929).

“We must love one another and die.” This didn’t
5. Auden borrowed lines 65—66 from *The Diary of*
seem to do either, so I cut the stanza. Still no
Vaslav Nijinsky (1937): “Some politicians are hyp-
good. The whole poem, I realized, was infected
ocrites like Diaghilev, who does not want universal
with an incurable dishonesty—and must be
love, but to be loved alone. I want universal love.”
scrapped.

6. In his foreword to the first edition of B. C.
Bloomfield’s
The popularity of the poem persuaded Auden to
W. H. Auden: A Bibliography (1964),
Auden writes:
restore it in later editions of his work.

7. Greek god of erotic love; hence, here, sexual
Rereading a poem of mine, *1st September, 1939*,
love.

after it had been published, I came to the line

I N P R A I S E O F L I M E S T O N E / 1 4 7 7

Beleaguered by the same

N e g a t i o n and despair,

S h o w an affirming flame.

S e p t e m b e r 1 9 3 9 1 9 3 9

In Praise of Limestone

If it form the one landscape that we, the inconstant ones,

Are consistently homesick for, this is chiefly

Because it dissolves in water. Mark these rounded slopes

W i t h their surface fragrance of thyme and, beneath,
5 A secret system of caves and conduits; hear the springs
That spurt out everywhere with a chuckle,
Each filling a private pool for its fish and carving
Its o w n little ravine w h o s e cliffs entertain
T h e butterfly and the lizard; examine this region
io Of short distances and definite places:
W h a t could be more like Mother or a fitter background
For her son, the flirtatious male w h o lounges
Against a rock in the sunlight, never doubting
That for all his faults he is loved; w h o s e works are but
15 Extensions of his power to charm? From weathered
outcrop
To hilltop temple, from appearing waters to
C o n s p i c u o u s fountains, from a wild to a formal
vineyard,
Are ingenious but short steps that a child's wish
To receive more attention than his brothers, whether
20 By pleasing or teasing, can easily take.
Watch, then, the band of rivals as they climb up and down
Their steep stone gennels⁰ in twos and threes, at times
channels
Arm in arm, but never, thank God, in step; or engaged
On the shady side of a square at midday in
25 Voluble discourse, knowing e a c h other too well to
think
There are any important secrets, unable
To conceive a god w h o s e temper tantrums are moral
And not to be pacified by a clever line

**Or a good lay: for, a c c u s t o m e d to a stone that
responds,**

30 They have never had to veil their faces in awe

Of a crater w h o s e blazing fury could not be fixed;

Adjusted to the local needs of valleys

Where everything can be touched or reached by walking,

Their eyes have never looked into infinite space

**35 Through the latticework of a nomad's comb; born
lucky,**

Their legs have never encountered the fungi

And insects of the jungle, the monstrous forms and lives

**With which we have nothing, we like to hope, in c o m m o
n .**

**So, w h e n o n e of them goes to the bad, the way his mind
works**

40 Remains comprehensible: to b e c o m e a pimp

1 4 7 8 / W . H . A U D E N

Or deal in fake jewelry or ruin a fine tenor voice

For effects that bring down the house, could happen to all

But the best and the worst of us ...

That is why, I suppose,

The best and worst never stayed here long but sought

45 Immoderate soils where the beauty was not so external,

The light less public and the meaning of life

Something more than a mad camp. "Come!" cried the granite
wastes,

"How evasive is your humour, how accidental

Your kindest kiss, how permanent is death." (Saints-to-be

50 Slipped away sighing.) "Come!" purred the clays and
gravels.

“On our plains there is room for armies to drill; rivers
Wait to be tamed and slaves to construct you a tomb
In the grand manner: soft as the earth is mankind and both
Need to be altered.” (Intendant Caesars⁸ rose and
55 Left, slamming the door.) But the really reckless were
fetched
By an older colder voice, the oceanic whisper:
“I am the solitude that asks and promises nothing;
That is how I shall set you free. There is no love;
There are only the various envies, all of them sad.”
60 They were right, my dear, all those voices were right
And still are; this land is not the sweet home that it looks,
Nor its peace the historical calm of a site
Where something was settled once and for all: A backward
And dilapidated province, connected
65 To the big busy world by a tunnel, with a certain
Seedy appeal, is that all it is now? Not quite:
It has a worldly duty which in spite of itself
It does not neglect, but calls into question
All the Great Powers assume; it disturbs our rights. The poet,
70 Admired for his earnest habit of calling
The sun the sun, his mind Puzzle, is made uneasy
By these marble statues which so obviously doubt
His antimythological myth; and these gamins,⁰ *street urchins*
Pursuing the scientist down the tiled colonnade
75 With such lively offers, rebuke his concern for Nature’s
Remotest aspects: I, too, am reproached, for what
And how much you know. Not to lose time, not to get caught,

Not to be left behind, not, please! to resemble
The beasts who repeat themselves, or a thing like water
so Or stone whose conduct can be predicted, these
Are our Common Prayer, whose greatest comfort is music
Which can be made anywhere, is invisible,
And does not smell. In so far as we have to look forward
To death as a fact, no doubt we are right: But if
85 Sins can be forgiven, if bodies rise from the dead,
These modifications of matter into
Innocent athletes and gesticulating fountains,
Made solely for pleasure, make a further point:
The blessed will not care what angle they are regarded from,
90 Having nothing to hide. Dear, I know nothing of
8. I.e., administrative emperors.

T H E S H I E L D O F A C H I L L E S / 1 4 7 9

Either, but when I try to imagine a faultless love
Or the life to come, what I hear is the murmur
Of underground streams, what I see is a limestone landscape.

May 1948 1951

Their Lonely Betters

As I listened from a beach-chair in the shade
To all the noises that my garden made,
It seemed to me only proper that words
Should be withheld from vegetables and birds.
5 A robin with no Christian name ran through
The Robin-Anthem which was all it knew,
And rustling flowers for some third party waited
To say which pairs, if any, should get mated.

Not one of them was capable of lying,
io There was not one which knew that it was dying
Or could have with a rhythm or a rhyme
Assumed responsibility for time.

Let them leave language to their lonely betters
Who count some days and long for certain letters;
15 We, too, make noises when we laugh or weep:
Words are for those with promises to keep.

1950 1951

The Shield of Achilles⁹

She looked over his shoulder
For vines and olive trees,
Marble well-governed cities
And ships upon untamed seas,
5 But there on the shining metal
His hands had put instead
An artificial wilderness
And a sky like lead.

9. In books 16—17 of Homer's *Iliad*, Achilles, the chief Greek hero in the Trojan War, loses his armor when his great friend Patroclus, wearing it, is slain by Hector. While Achilles mourns his friend, his mother, the goddess Thetis, goes to Mt. Olympus; a city in peace (with a wedding and a trial) and

Olympus to entreat Hephaestos to make new
a city at war; country life (including a harvest feast
armor for Achilles, whom both she and Hephaestos
and a grape-gathering), animal life, and the joyful
pity because he is fated to die soon and his life has
life of young men and women. Around all these
not been happy. The splendid shield, incorporating
scenes, closing them in as the outer border, flows
gold and silver as well as less precious metals, is
the ocean.

1 4 8 0 / W . H . A U D E N

A plain without a feature, bare and brown,
10 No blade of grass, no sign of neighbourhood,
Nothing to eat and nowhere to sit down,
Yet, congregated on its blankness, stood
An unintelligible multitude,
A million eyes, a million boots in line,
15 Without expression, waiting for a sign.
Out of the air a voice without a face
Proved by statistics that some cause was just
In tones as dry and level as the place:
No one was cheered and nothing was discussed;
20 Column by column in a cloud of dust
They marched away enduring a belief
Whose logic brought them, somewhere else, to grief.
She looked over his shoulder
For ritual pieties,
25 White flower-garlanded heifers,

Libation and sacrifice,1

But there on the shining metal

Where the altar should have been,

She saw by his flickering forge-light

30 Quite another scene.

Barbed wire enclosed an arbitrary spot

Where bored officials lounged (one cracked a joke)

And sentries sweated for the day was hot:

A crowd of ordinary decent folk

35 Watched from without and neither moved nor spoke

As three pale figures were led forth and bound

To three posts driven upright in the ground.

The mass and majesty of this world, all

That carries weight and always weighs the same

40 Lay in the hands of others; they were small

And could not hope for help and no help came:

What their foes liked to do was done, their shame

Was all the worst could wish; they lost their pride

And died as men before their bodies died.

45 She looked over his shoulder

For athletes at their games,

Men and women in a dance

Moving their sweet limbs

Quick, quick, to music,

50 But there on the shining shield

His hands had set no dancing-floor

But a weed-choked field.

1. Lines 23-26: cf. John Keats, "Ode on a Grecian Urn," lines 31-34 (p. 939). *Libation*: sacrifice involving wine or other liquid.

A U S T R A L I A / 1 4 8 1

A ragged urchin, aimless and alone,
Loitered about that vacancy, a bird
55 Flew up to safety from his well-aimed stone:
That girls are raped, that two boys knife a third,
Were axioms to him, who'd never heard
Of any world where promises were kept,
Or one could weep because another wept.
60 The thin-lipped armourer,
Hephaestos hobbled away,
Thetis of the shining breasts
Cried out in dismay
At what the god had wrought
65 To please her son, the strong
Iron-hearted man-slaying Achilles
Who would not live long.

1952 1955

A. D. H O P E

1907-2000

Australia

A Nation of trees, drab green and desolate grey
In the field uniform of modern wars,
Darkens her hills, those endless, outstretched paws
Of Sphinx¹ demolished or stone lion worn away.
5 They call her a young country, but they lie:
She is the last of lands, the emptiest,

A woman beyond her change of life,² a breast
Still tender but within the womb is dry.
Without songs, architecture, history:
io The emotions and superstitions of younger lands,
Her rivers of water drown among inland sands,
The river of her immense stupidity
Floods her monotonous tribes from Cairns to Perth.³
In them at last the ultimate men arrive
15 Whose boast is not: “we live” but “we survive.”
A type who will inhabit the dying earth.

1. A reference to the monumental stone sphinx of
3. I.e., from one end of the continent to the other.
Egypt.

Cairns is at the far northeast of Australia, Perth at
2. Menopause; i.e., she is past her childbearing
the southwest.
years.

1 4 8 2 / A . D . H O P E

And her five cities, like five teeming sores,
Each drains her: a vast parasite robber-state
Where second-hand Europeans pullulate⁰ *breed*
20 Timidly on the edge of alien shores.
Yet there are some like me turn gladly home
From the lush jungle of modern thought, to find
The Arabian desert of the human mind,
Hoping, if still from the deserts the prophets come,
25 Such savage and scarlet as no green hills dare
Springs in that waste, some spirit which escapes

The learned doubt, the chatter of cultured apes
Which is called civilization over there.

1939

Imperial⁴ Adam

Imperial Adam, naked in the dew,
Felt his brown flanks and found the rib was gone.
Puzzled he turned and saw where, two and two,
The mighty spoor of Jahweh⁰ marked the lawn. *Jehovah, God*

5 Then he remembered through mysterious sleep

The surgeon fingers probing at the bone,

The voice so far away, so rich and deep:

“It is not good for him to live alone.”⁵

Turning once more he found Man’s counterpart

io In tender parody breathing at his side.

He knew her at first sight, he knew by heart

Her allegory of sense unsatisfied.

The pawpaw⁶ drooped its golden breasts above

Less generous than the honey of her flesh;

15 The innocent sunlight showed the place of love;

The dew on its dark hairs winked crisp and fresh.

This plump gourd severed from his virile root,

She promised on the turf of Paradise

Delicious pulp of the forbidden fruit;

20 Sly as the snake she loosed her sinuous thighs,

And waking, smiled up at him from the grass;

Her breasts rose softly and he heard her sigh—

From all the beasts whose pleasant task it was

In Eden to increase and multiply

4. I.e., emperor. from one of Adam's ribs (cf. line 6).

5. Genesis 2.18: "And the Lord said, It is not good 6. Papaya tree,

that the man should be alone." Eve was created

A D V I C E T O Y O U N G L A D I E S / 1 4 8 3

25 Adam had learned the jolly deed of kind:

He took her in his arms and there and then,

Like the clean beasts, embracing from behind,

Began in joy to found the breed of men.

Then from the spurt of seed within her broke

30 Her terrible and triumphant female cry,

Split upward by the sexual lightning stroke.

It was the beasts now who stood watching by:

The gravid elephant, the calving hind,

The breeding bitch, the she-ape big with young

35 Were the first gentle midwives of mankind;

The teeming lioness rasped her with her tongue;

The proud vicuna⁷ nuzzled her as she slept

Lax on the grass; and Adam watching too

Saw how her dumb breasts at their ripening wept,

40 The great pod of her belly swelled and grew,

And saw its water break, and saw, in fear,

Its quaking muscles in the act of birth,

Between her legs a pigmy face appear,

And the first murderer⁸ lay upon the earth.

1955

Advice to Young Ladies

A.U.C.9 334: about this date

**For a sexual misdemeanour, which she denied,
The vestal virgin¹ Postumia was tried.
Livy records it among affairs of state.
5 They let her off: it seems she was perfectly pure;
The charge arose because some thought her talk
Too witty for a young girl, her eyes, her walk
Too lively, her clothes too smart to be demure.
The Pontifex Maximus, summing up the case,
io Warned her in future to abstain from jokes,
To wear less modish and more pious frocks.
She left the court reprieved, but in disgrace.**

7. Species of wild llama, a camel-like animal.

its Foundation, the Roman historian Livy (59

8. Cf. Genesis 4: “And Adam knew Eve his wife;
B.C.E.—17 C.E.) records the incident narrated in the
and she conceived, and bare Cain ... and it came
first three stanzas.

to pass ... that Cain rose up against Abel his

1. One of the young, female priests who tended
brother, and slew him.”

the shrine of Vesta, goddess of the hearth. They

9. *Ah urbe Condita*, “from the founding of the
were governed by the Pontifex Maximus (line 9),
city” (Latin); the city is Rome, traditionally
chief priest of the Roman religion.

founded in 753 **B.C.E.** In his *History of Rome from*

1484 / A . D . H O P E

What then? With her the annalist⁰ is less *historian*

Concerned than what the men achieved that year:
15 Plots, quarrels, crimes, with oratory to spare!
I see Postumia with her dowdy dress,
Stiff mouth and listless step; I see her strive
To give dull answers. She had to knuckle down.
A vestal virgin who scandalized that town
20 Had fair trial, then they buried her alive.²
Alive, bricked up in suffocating dark,
A ration of bread, a pitcher if she was dry,
Preserved the body they did not wish to die
Until her mind was quenched to the last spark.
25 How many the black maw has swallowed in its time!
Spirited girls who would not know their place;
Talented girls who found that the disgrace
Of being a woman made genius a crime;
How many others, who would not kiss the rod³
30 Domestic bullying broke or public shame?
Pagan or Christian, it was much the same:
Husbands, St. Paul declared,⁴ rank next to God.
Livy and Paul, it may be, never knew
That Rome was doomed; each spoke of her with pride.
35 Tacitus,⁵ writing after both had died,
Showed that whole fabric rotten through and through.
Historians spend their lives and lavish ink
Explaining how great commonwealths collapse
From great defects of policy—perhaps
40 The cause is sometimes simpler than they think.
It may not seem so grave an act to break

Postumia's spirit as Galileo's,⁶ to gag

Hypatia as crush Socrates,⁷ or drag

Joan as Giordano Bruno⁸ to the stake.

45 Can we be sure? Have more states perished, then,
For having shackled the inquiring mind,

2. As punishment for breaking her vows of chastity.
demn his own scientific conclusions and was for a
tity.

time imprisoned.

3. As the symbol of obedience and chastisement.

7. In 415, Hypatia, a beautiful and learned Egyptian

4. In Ephesians 5.22: "Wives, submit yourselves
to your own husbands, as unto the Lord."

an archbishop. In 399 B.C.E., Socrates was sen-

5. Roman historian (ca. 77-117), whose *Histories*
tenced to die by poison because of his supposedly
criticize the degeneracy of the times as exemplified
subversive teachings.

by three Roman emperors who ruled and were suc-

8. Both were burned at the stake, Joan of Arc in
cessively deposed in 68—69.

1431 for heresy and sorcery, Bruno in 1600 for

6. In 1633, the Italian astronomer Galileo Galilei
theological and scientific heresies.

was forced by the Roman Catholic Church to con-

THE SUNLIGHT ON THE GARDEN / 1485

Than whose who, in their folly not less blind,

Trusted the servile womb to breed free men?

1966

Inscription for a War

Stranger, go tell the Spartans
we died here obedient to their commands.

— Inscription at Thermopylae 9

Linger not, stranger; shed no tear;
Go back to those who sent us here.
We are the young they drafted out
To wars their folly brought about.
Go tell those old men, safe in bed,
We took their orders and are dead.

1981

LOUIS MACNEICE

1907 - 1963

The Sunlight on the Garden¹

The sunlight on the garden
Hardens and grows cold,
We cannot cage the minute
Within its nets of gold,
5 When all is told
We cannot beg for pardon.
Our freedom as free lances
Advances towards its end;
The earth compels, upon it
io Sonnets and birds descend;
And soon, my friend,
We shall have no time for dances.

The sky was good for flying

Defying the church bells

9. Thermopylae takes its name from hot baths
against a huge Persian army led by Xerxes. The
near the pass, twenty-five feet wide at its narrow-
Persians infiltrated the Greek line by treachery,
est, between Thessaly and Locris in Greece. This
and the Spartans were wiped out.

place was defended by Leonides and three hun-

1. MacNeice's farewell to his first wife, Mary (nee
dred Spartans (with seven hundred Thespians)

Ezra), once the best dancer in Oxford (see line 12).

1486 / Louis M A C N E I C E

15 And every evil iron

Siren and what it tells:

The earth compels,

We are dying, Egypt, dying²

And not expecting pardon,

20 Hardened in heart anew,

But glad to have sat under

Thunder and rain with you,

And grateful too

For sunlight on the garden.

1938

Bagpipe Music³

It's no go the merrygoround, it's no go the rickshaw,

All we want is a limousine and a ticket for the peepshow.

Their knickers⁴ are made of crepe-de-chine, their shoes are made of

python,

Their halls are lined with tiger rugs and their walls with heads of bison.

5 John MacDonald found a corpse, put it under the sofa,

Waited till it came to life and hit it with a poker,

Sold its eyes for souvenirs, sold its blood for whiskey,

Kept its bones for dumbbells to use when he was fifty.

It's no go the Yogi-man, it's no go Blavatsky⁵

io All we want is a bank balance and a bit of skirt in a taxi.

Annie MacDougall went to milk, caught her foot in the heather,

Woke to hear a dance record playing of Old Vienna.

It's no go your maidenheads, it's no go your culture,

All we want is a Dunlop tyre and the devil mend the puncture.

15 The Laird o' Phelps spent Hogmanay⁶ declaring he was sober,

Counted his feet to prove the fact and found he had one foot over.

Mrs. Carmichael had her fifth, looked at the job with repulsion,

Said to the midwife "Take it away; I'm through with overproduction."

It's no go the gossip column, it's no go the Ceilidh,⁷

20 All we want is a mother's help and a sugar-stick for the baby.

2. From Shakespeare, *Antony and Cleopatra*

5. Madame Helena Petrovna Blavatsky (1831—

4.16.43, Antony's speech to Cleopatra: "I am

1891), Russian occultist and theosophist, in whose dying, Egypt, dying.”

writings there was renewed interest in the 1930s.

3. The poem is set in Scotland in the 1930s, the

6. New Year's Eve (Scottish).

years of the Depression, years that led up to the

7. Pronounced *kaley*; Gaelic term for a social

Munich crisis of 1938 and to the outbreak of

gathering with traditional music, storytelling, or

World War II in 1939.

dancing.

4. Women's panties.

A U T U M N J O U R N A L / 1 4 8 7

Willie Murray cut his thumb, couldn't count the damage,

Took the hide of an Ayrshire cow and used it for a bandage.

His brother caught three hundred cran8 when the seas were lavish,

Threw the bleeders back in the sea and went upon the parish.⁹

25 It's no go the Herring Board, it's no go the Bible,

All we want is a packet of fags⁰ when our hands are idle.

cigarettes

It's no go the picture palace, it's no go the stadium,

It's no go the country cot⁰ with a pot of pink geraniums,

cottage

It's no go the Government grants, it's no go the elections,

30 Sit on your arse for fifty years and hang your hat on a pension.

It's no go my honey love, it's no go my poppet;

Work your hands from day to day, the winds will blow the profit.

The glass⁰ is falling hour by hour, the glass will fall forever,
barometer

But if you break the bloody glass you won't hold up the
weather.

1937 1938

From Autumn Journal

IV

September has come and I wake

And I think with joy how whatever, now or in future, the
system

Nothing whatever can take

The people away, there will always be people

5 For friends or for lovers though perhaps

The conditions of love will be changed and its vices
diminished

And affection not lapse

To narrow possessiveness, jealousy founded on vanity.

September has come, it is *hers*

io Whose vitality leaps in the autumn,

Whose nature prefers

Trees without leaves and a fire in the fire-place;

So I give her this month and the next

Though the whole of my year should be hers who has rendered
already

15 So many of its days intolerable or perplexed

But so many more so happy;

Who has left a scent on my life and left my walls

Dancing over and over with her shadow,

Whose hair is twined in all my waterfalls

20 And all of London littered with remembered kisses.

So I am glad

That life contains her with her moods and moments

More shifting and more transient than I had

8. A measure of just-caught herrings (about 750).

events (public and, as here, private) in autumn

9. I.e., went on relief.

1938.

1. A book-length “documentary” poem covering

1 4 8 8 / L o u i s M A C N E I C E

Yet thought of as being integral to beauty;

25 Whose mind is like the wind on a sea of wheat,

Whose eyes are candour,

And assurance in her feet

Like a homing pigeon never by doubt diverted.

To whom I send my thanks

30 That the air has become shot silk, the streets are music,

And that the ranks

Of men are ranks of men, no more of cyphers.0 *zeros*

So that if now alone

I must pursue this life, it will not be only

35 A drag from numbered stone to numbered stone

But a ladder of angels, river turning tidal.

Off-hand, at times hysterical, abrupt,

You are one I always shall remember,

W h o m cant can never corrupt

40 Nor argument disinherit.

Frivolous, always in a hurry, forgetting the address,

Frowning too often, taking enormous notice
Of hats and backchat—how could I assess
The thing that makes you different?
45 You whom I remember glad or tired,
Smiling in drink or scintillating anger,
Inopportunately desired
On boats, on trains, on roads when walking.
Sometimes untidy, often elegant,
50 So easily hurt, so readily responsive,
To whom a trifle could be an irritant
Or could be balm and manna.0 *food (from heaven)*
Whose words would tumble over each other and pelt
From pure excitement,
55 Whose fingers curl and melt
W h e n you were friendly.
I shall remember you in bed with bright
Eyes or in a cafe stirring coffee
Abstractedly and on your plate the white
60 Smoking stub your lips had touched with crimson.
And I shall remember how your words could hurt
Because they were so honest
And even your lies were able to assert
Integrity of purpose.
65 And it is on the strength of knowing you
I reckon generous feeling more important
Than the mere deliberating what to do
W h e n neither the pros nor cons affect the pulses.
And though I have suffered from your special strength

70 W h o never flatter for points nor fake responses
I should be proud if I could evolve at length
An equal thrust and pattern.

1 9 3 8

L O N D O N R A I N / 1 4 8 9

London Rain

T h e rain of London pimples
T h e ebony street with white
And the neon-lamps of London
Stain the canals of night
5 And the park b e c o m e s a jungle
In the alchemy of night.
My wishes turn to violent
Horses black as c o a l —
T h e randy mares of fancy,
10 T h e stallions of the s o u l —
Eager to take the f e n c e s
That f e n c e about my soul.
Across the countless chimneys
T h e horses ride and across
15 The country to the channel
Where warning b e a c o n s toss,
To a place where God and N o - G o d
Play at pitch and toss.
Whichever wins I am happy
20 For G o d will give me bliss
But N o - G o d will absolve me
From all I do amiss

And I need not suffer c o n s c i e n c e

If the world was made amiss.

25 Under God we can reckon

On pardon w h e n we fall

But if we are under N o - G o d

N o t h i n g will matter at all,

Adultery and murder

30 Will c o u n t for nothing at all.

So reinforced by logic

As having nothing to lose

My lust goes riding horseback

To ravish where I choose,

35 To burgle all the turrets

Of beauty as I choose.

But n o w the rain gives over

Its dance upon the town,

Logic and lust together

40 C o m e dimly tumbling down,

And neither God nor N o - G o d

Is either up or down.

1490 / L o u i s M A C N E I C E

The argument was wilful,

The alternatives untrue,

45 We need no metaphysics

To sanction what we do

Or to muffle us in comfort

From what we did not do.

Whether the living river

50 Began in bog or lake,
The world is what was given,
The world is what we make.
And we only can discover
Life in the life we make.

55 So let the water sizzle
Upon the gleaming slates,
There will be sunshine after
W h e n the rain abates
And rain returning duly
60 W h e n the sun abates.

My wishes now come homeward,
Their gallopings in vain,
Logic and lust are quiet
And again it starts to rain;
65 Falling asleep I listen
To the falling London rain.

1941

Star-gazer

Forty-two years ago (to me if to no one else

The number is of some interest) it was a brilliant starry
night

And the westward train was empty and had no corridors

So darting from side to side I could catch the
unwonted⁰ sight *unaccustomed*

5 Of those almost intolerably bright

Holes, punched in the sky, which excited me partly because
Of their Latin names and partly because I had read in the
textbooks

How very far off they were, it seemed their light
Had left them (some at least) long years before I was.
io And this remembering now I mark that what
Light was leaving some of them at least then,
Forty-two years ago, will never arrive
In time for me to catch it, which light when
It does get here may find that there is not
15 Anyone left alive

T H E P R I M E R / 1 4 9 1

To run from side to side in a late night train
Admiring it and adding noughts in vain.

January 1 9 6 3 1 9 6 7

J O S E P H I N E J A C O B S E N

1908-2003

The Primer

I said in my youth

“they lie to children”

but it is not so.

Mother my goose I know

5 told me the truth.

I remember that treetop minute.

That was a baby is a w o m a n now;

in a rough wind, it was a broken bough

brought down the cradle with the baby in it.

io I had a dumpy friend (you would not know his name,

though he indeed had several), after his fall

lay in live pieces by my garden wall

in a vain tide of epaulets and manes.

I had another friend (and you would know her name),
15 took up her candle on her way to bed.
She had a steady hand and a yellow head
up the tall stairwell, but the chopper came.
So small they meant to run away, from sightless eyes
three mice ran toward my mind instead;
20 I seized the shapely knife. They fled
in scarlet haste, the blind and tailless mice.
Cock robin was three birds of a single feather.
Three times cock robin fell w h e n a breeze blew;
eye of fly watched; arrow of sparrow flew:
25 three times cock robin died in the same weather.
Sheep, cows, meander in the corn and meadow;
soundless the horn, fine, fine my seam;
nothing I feed, but rosy grows my cream.
My blue boy sleeps under the stack's huge shadow.

1 9 7 4

1. As in the Mother Goose nursery rhymes. Each stanza of the poem rewrites one of these rhymes.

1 4 9 2 / J O S E P H I N E J A C O B S E N

Bush

It is the sound of lions lapping.

They drink themselves

from the gold shapes that waver

and grow shallower.

5 Blue peels itself in the water-

hole; it is the sun coming.

Crouched, the lions m e e t

their m a t c h e s at the surface.

T h e foxy jackals are far off

10 but the vultures cloud the flat treetop;

the drum of the zebra's body

is lined with red sunrise.

T h e jackals and vultures are waiting

for what happened under the moon.

15 T h e lions are through with it; they

lift their dripping chins and look ahead.

It is six o'clock on Christmas morning.

N o w the lions have stopped lapping

the bush makes no sound

20 the vultures shift, but without sound.

T h e day is perfectly seamless.

Slowly the lions move like pistons past the dry grasses;

the jackals do not move yet;

the vultures show patience.

25 T h e lions pass a thornbush and melt.

T h o u g h the w h o l e day is unbroken

the passage of the sun will represent heaven;

the b o n e s will represent time.

1974

Hourglass

“Flawless” is the word, no doubt, for this third of May

that has landed on the grounds of Mayfair,

the Retirement C o m m u n i t y par excellence.

Right behind the wheels of the mower, grass

5 explodes again, the bare trees most tenderly

push out their chartreuse tips.

R O O T C E L L A R / 1 4 9 3

Bottle bees are back. Feckless, reckless,
stingless, they probably have a function.

Above the cardinal, scarlet on the rim

10 of the birdbath, twinning himself,

they hover, cruise the flowers, mate.

The tiny water catches the sky.

On the circular inner road, the lady

untangles the poodle's leash from her cane.

15 He is wild to chase the splendid smells.

T h e small m a n with the small smile,

rapidly steering his Amigo,²

bowls past. She would wave, but can't.

All around, birds and sexual flowers

20 are intent on color, flight, fragrance.

The gardener sweeps his sweaty face

with a khaki sleeve. His tulips are shined

black at their centers. They have c o m e along nicely.

He is young and will be gone before dark.

25 The man in the Amigo has in mind a May

a mirror of this, but unobtainable

as the touch of the w o m a n in that glass.

The sun's force chills him. But the lady

with the curly poodle could melt her cane

30 in the very heat of her precious pleasure.

She perfectly understands the calendar

and the sun's passage. But she grips the leash

and leans on the air that is hers and here.

1995

T H E O D O R E R O E T H K E

1908-1963

Root Cellar

**Nothing would sleep in that cellar, dank as a ditch,
Bulbs broke out of boxes hunting for chinks in the dark,
Shoots dangled and drooped,
Lolling obscenely from mildewed crates,**

2. Brand of sport utility vehicle.

1 5 0 0 / T H E O D O R E R O E T H K E

5 H u n g down long yellow evil necks, like tropical snakes.

And what a congress of stinks!

Roots ripe as old bait,

Pulpy stems, rank, silo-rich,

Leaf-mold, manure, lime, piled against slippery planks.

1 0 N o t h i n g would give up life:

Even the dirt kept breathing a small breath.

1948

Child on Top of a Greenhouse¹

The wind billowing out the seat of my britches,

My feet crackling splinters of glass and dried putty,

The half-grown chrysanthemums staring up like accusers,

Up through the streaked glass, flashing with sunlight,

5 A f e w white clouds all rushing eastward,

A line of elms plunging and tossing like horses,

And everyone, everyone pointing up and shouting!

1948

My Papa's Waltz

**The whiskey on your breath
Could make a small boy dizzy;
But I h u n g on like death:
Such waltzing was not easy.
5 We romped until the pans
Slid from the kitchen shelf;
My mother's c o u n t e n a n c e
Could not unfrown itself.
The hand that held my wrist
io Was battered on one knuckle;
At every step you missed
My right ear scraped a buckle.
You beat time on my head
With a palm caked hard by dirt,
15 T h e n waltzed me off to bed
Still clinging to your shirt.**

1948

1. Roethke, author of a series of "greenhouse poems," called the greenhouse "my symbol for the whole of life, a womb, a heaven-on-earth." His father, a florist, owned a greenhouse in Saginaw, Michigan.

T H E L O S T S O N / 1 4 9 5

The Lost Son

1. The Flight

**At Woodlawn² I heard the dead cry:
I was lulled by the slamming of iron,
A slow drip over stones,
Toads brooding wells.**

5 All the leaves stuck out their tongues;
I shook the softening chalk of my bones,
Saying,
Snail, snail, glister me forward,
Bird, soft-sigh me h o m e ,
io Worm, be with me.
This is my hard time.
Fished in an old w o u n d ,
The soft pond of repose;
N o t h i n g nibbled my line,
15 N o t even the m i n n o w s came.
Sat in an empty h o u s e
W a t c h i n g shadows crawl,
Scratching.
There was o n e fly.
20 Voice, c o m e out of the silence.
Say something.
Appear in the form of a spider
Or a m o t h beating the curtain.
Tell me:
25 W h i c h is the way I take;
Out of what door do I go,
W h e r e and to whom?
Dark hollows said, lee0 to the wind, *shelter*
T h e m o o n said, back of an eel,
30 The salt said, look by the sea,
Your tears are not enough praise,
You will find no comfort here,

**In the kingdom of bang and blab.
Running lightly over spongy ground,
35 Past the pasture of flat stones,
The three elms,
The sheep strewn on a field,
Over a rickety bridge
Toward the quick-water, wrinkling and rippling.**

2. The New York City cemetery where Roethke's father was buried.

1 5 0 0 / T H E O D O R E R O E T H K E

**40 Hunting along the river,
D o w n among the rubbish, the bug-riddled foliage,
By the muddy pond-edge, by the bog-holes,
By the shrunken lake, hunting, in the heat of summer.
The shape of a rat?
45 It's bigger than that.
It's less than a leg
And more than a nose,
Just under the water
It usually goes.
50 Is it soft like a mouse?
C a n it wrinkle its nose?
Could it c o m e in the house
On the tips of its toes?
Take the skin of a cat
55 And the back of an eel,
T h e n roll them in grease,—
That's the way it would feel.**

**It's sleek as an otter
With wide webby toes
60 Just under the water**

It usually goes.

2. The Pit

**W h e r e do the roots go?
Look down under the leaves.
W h o put the moss there?**

65

**These stones have b e e n here too long.
W h o stunned the dirt into noise?
Ask the mole, he knows.³**

I feel the slime of a wet nest.

Beware Mother Mildew.

70

Nibble again, fish nerves.

3. The Gibber⁴

**At the wood's mouth,
By the cave's door,
I listened to s o m e t h i n g
I had heard before.**

75 Dogs of the groin

Barked and howled,

The sun was against me,

The m o o n would not have me.

3. Cf. William Blake, *The Book of Thel*, lines 1-

4. A possible triple pun: meaningless utterance,

2: "Does the Eagle know what is in the pit? / Or

the pouch at the base of a flower's calyx, and
wilt thou go ask the Mole?" (p. 737).

working-class slang for a key.

T H E L O S T S O N / 1 4 9 7

The weeds whined,

so The snakes cried,

The cows and briars

Said to me: Die.

What a small song. What slow clouds. What dark water.

**Hath the rain a father? All the caves are ice. Only the
snow's here.**

**85 I'm cold. I'm cold all over. Rub me in father and
mother.**

Fear was my father, Father Fear.

His look drained the stones.

What gliding shape

Beckoning through halls,

90 Stood poised on the stair,

Fell dreamily down?

From the mouths of jugs

Perched on many shelves,

I saw substance flowing

95 That cold morning.

Like a slither of eels

That watery cheek

As my own tongue kissed

My lips awake.

**100 Is this the storm's heart? The ground is unstilling
itself.**

**My veins are running nowhere. Do the bones cast out their
fire?**

**Is the seed leaving the old bed? These buds are live as
birds.**

Where, where are the tears of the world?

Let the kisses resound, flat like a butcher's palm;

105 Let the gestures freeze; our doom is already decided.

All the windows are burning! What's left of my life?

I want the old rage, the lash of primordial milk!

Goodbye, goodbye, old stones, the time-order is going,

I have married my hands to perpetual agitation,

110 I run, I run to the whistle of money.

Money money money

Water water water

How cool the grass is.

Has the bird left?

115 The stalk still sways.

Has the worm a shadow?

What do the clouds say?

These sweeps of light undo me.

Look, look, the ditch is running white!

120 I've more veins than a tree!

Kiss me, ashes, I'm falling through a dark swirl.

5. Quoted from Job 38.28.

1 4 9 8 / T H E O D O R E R O E T H K E

4. *The Return*

The way to the boiler was dark,

Dark all the way,

Over slippery cinders

**125 Through the long greenhouse.
The roses kept breathing in the dark.
They had many mouths to breathe with.
My knees made little winds underneath
Where the weeds slept.**

**130 There was always a single light
Swinging by the fire-pit,
Where the fireman pulled out roses,
The big roses, the big bloody clinkers.⁶
Once I stayed all night.**

**135 The light in the morning came slowly over the white
Snow.**

**There were many kinds of cool
Air.**

Then came steam.

**140 Pipe-knock.
Scurry of warm over small plants.
Ordnung!⁷ ordnung!
Papa is coming!**

A fine haze moved off the leaves;

**145 Frost melted on far panes;
The rose, the chrysanthemum turned toward the light.
Even the hushed forms, the bent yellowy weeds
Moved in a slow up-sway.**

5. "It was beginning winter"

It was beginning winter,

**150 An in-between time,
The landscape still partly brown:**

**The bones of weeds kept swinging in the wind,
Above the blue snow.
It was beginning winter,
155 The light moved slowly over the frozen field,
Over the dry seed-crowns,
The beautiful surviving bones
Swinging in the wind.**

6. Large cinders, the remains of burned coal. 7. Order!
(German).

E L E G Y F O R J A N E / 1 4 9 9

Light traveled over the wide field;
Stayed.
The weeds stopped swinging.
The mind moved, not alone,
Through the clear air, in the silence.
Was it light?
Was it light within?
Was it light within light?
Stillness becoming alive,
Yet still?
A lively understandable spirit
Once entertained you.
It will come again.
Be still.
Wait.
1948
Elegy for Jane
My Student, Thrown by a Horse

I remember the neckcurls, limp and damp as tendrils;
And her quick look, a sidelong pickerel smile;
And how, once startled into talk, the light syllables leaped for
her,
And she balanced in the delight of her thought,
5 A wren, happy, tail into the wind,
Her song trembling the twigs and small branches.
The shade sang with her;
The leaves, their whispers turned to kissing;
And the mold sang in the bleached valleys under the rose.
io Oh, when she was sad, she cast herself down into such a
pure depth,
Even a father could not find her:
Scraping her cheek against straw;
Stirring the clearest water.
My sparrow, you are not here,
15 Waiting like a fern, making a spiny shadow.
The sides of wet stones cannot console me,
Nor the moss, wound with the last light.
If only I could nudge you from this sleep,
My maimed darling, my skittery pigeon.
20 Over this damp grave I speak the words of my love:
I, with no rights in this matter,
Neither father nor lover.

1 9 5 3

1 5 0 0 / T H E O D O R E R O E T H K E

The Waking

I wake to sleep, and take my waking slow.

I feel my fate in what I cannot fear.

I learn by going where I have to go.
We think by feeling. What is there to know?
5 I hear my being dance from ear to ear.
I wake to sleep, and take my waking slow.
Of those so close beside me, which are you?
God bless the Ground! I shall walk softly there,
And learn by going where I have to go.
10 Light takes the Tree; but who can tell us how?
The lowly worm climbs up a winding stair;
I wake to sleep, and take my waking slow.
Great Nature has another thing to do
To you and me; so take the lively air,
15 And, lovely, learn by going where to go.
This shaking keeps me steady. I should know.
What falls away is always. And is near.
I wake to sleep, and take my waking slow.
I learn by going where I have to go.

1953

I Knew a Woman

I knew a woman, lovely in her bones,
When small birds sighed, she would sigh back at them;
Ah, when she moved, she moved more ways than one:
The shapes a bright container can contain!
5 Of her choice virtues only gods should speak,
Or English poets who grew up on Greek
(I'd have them sing in chorus, cheek to cheek).
How well her wishes went! She stroked my chin,
She taught me Turn, and Counter-turn, and Stand;8

io She taught me Touch, that undulant white skin;
I nibbled meekly from her proffered hand;
She was the sickle; I, poor I, the rake,
Coming behind her for her pretty sake
(But what prodigious mowing we did make).

8. Translations of the Greek literary terms *strophe*, *antistrophe*, and *epode* (more properly, “the song that follows”), which are the three parts of the Pindaric ode.

I N A D A R K T I M E / 1 5 0 1

15 Love likes a gander, and adores a goose:
Her full lips pursed, the errant note to seize;
She played it quick, she played it light and loose,
My eyes, they dazzled at her flowing knees;
Her several parts could keep a pure repose,
20 Or one hip quiver with a mobile nose
(She moved in circles, and those circles moved).

Let seed be grass, and grass turn into hay:
I’m martyr to a motion not my own;
What’s freedom for? To know eternity.
25 I swear she cast a shadow white as stone.
But who would count eternity in days?
These old bones live to learn her wanton ways:
(I measure time by how a body sways).

1958

Wish for a Young Wife
My lizard, my lively writher,
May your limbs never wither,
May the eyes in your face
Survive the green ice

5 Of envy's mean gaze;
May you live out your life
Without hate, without grief,
And your hair ever blaze,
In the sun, in the sun,
io When I am undone,
When I am no one.

1964

In a Dark Time

In a dark time, the eye begins to see,
I meet my shadow in the deepening shade;
I hear my echo in the echoing wood—
A lord of nature weeping to a tree.
5 I live between the heron and the wren,⁹
Beasts of the hill and serpents of the den.
What's madness but nobility of soul
At odds with circumstance? The day's on fire!
I know the purity of pure despair,
io My shadow pinned against a sweating wall.

9. The heron is a large, solitary wading bird, the wren a small, sociable songbird.

1 5 0 2 / R I C H A R D W R I G H T

That place among the rocks—is it a cave,
Or winding path? The edge is what I have.
A steady storm of correspondences!
A night flowing with birds, a ragged moon,
15 And in broad day the midnight come again!
A man goes far to find out what he is—

Death of the self in a long, tearless night,
All natural shapes blazing unnatural light.
Dark, dark my light, and darker my desire.
20 My soul, like some heat-maddened summer fly,
Keeps buzzing at the sill. Which I is I?
A fallen man, I climb out of my fear.
The mind enters itself, and God the mind,
And one is One, free in the tearing¹ wind.

1964

R I C H A R D W R I G H T

1908-1960

FROM HAIKU: THIS OTHER WORLD

21

On winter mornings
The candle shows faint markings
Of the teeth of rats.

31

In the falling snow
A laughing boy holds out his palms
Until they are white.

120

Crying and crying,
Melodious strings of geese
Passing a graveyard.

1. With a pun on “tearless” (line 17), according to a note of Roethke’s.

D E L I R I U M I N V E R A C R U Z / 1 5 0 3

490

Waking from a nap
And hearing summer rain falling,—
What else has happened?

762

Droning autumn rain:
A boy lines up toy soldiers
For a big battle.

783

I cannot find it,
That very first violet
Seen from my window.

ca. 1960 2000

M A L C O L M LOWRY

1909-1957

Delirium in Vera Cruz¹

Where has tenderness gone, he asked the mirror
Of the Biltmore Hotel, cuarto 216. Alas, *room*
Can its reflection lean against the glass
Too, wondering where I have gone, into what horror?
Is that it staring at me now with terror
Behind your frail tilted barrier? Tenderness
Was here, in this very bedroom, in this
Place, its form seen, cries heard, by you. What error
Is here? Am I that rashed image?
Is this the ghost of the love you reflected?
Now with a background of tequila, stubs, dirty collars,
Sodium perborate,² and a scrawled page
1. The chief seaport of Mexico; now Veracruz.

(whose 1962 selected edition included some questionable changes), or the editor of the 1992 *Col-Mexico*, where his most celebrated work, the novel *lected Poetry of Malcolm Lowry*, Kathleen Sherf. *Under the Volcano* (1947), was set. The state of This poem is a Birney version.

Lowry's poem texts is extraordinarily complicated, 2. A water-soluble solid used as a bleach and as and the versions here are chosen from among seven an antiseptic.

eral, offered either by his first editor, Earle Birney

1 5 0 4 / M A L C O L M L O W R Y

To the dead, telephone off the hook? In rage
He smashed all the glass in the room. (Bill: \$50.)
1936 1962

The Wild Cherry³

We put a prop beneath the sagging bough
That yearned over the beach, setting four stones
Cairn-like against it, but we thought our groans
Were the wild cherry's, for it was as though
5 Utterly set with broken seams on doom
It listed wilfully down like a mast,
Stubborn as some smashed recalcitrant boom
That will neither be cut loose nor made fast.
Going—going—it was yet no bidder
io For life, whether for such sober healing
We left its dead branches to consider

Until its sunward pulse renewed, feeling
The passionate hatred of that tree
Whose longing was to wash away to sea.

1940-47 1962, 1992

Eye-Opener⁴

How like a man, is Man, who rises late
And gazes on his unwashed dinner plate
And gazes on the bottles, empty too,
All gulphed in last night's loud long how-do-you-do,
5 —Although one glass yet holds a gruesome bait—
How like to Man is this man and his fate—
Still drunk and stumbling through the rusty trees
To breakfast on stale rum sardines and peas.

1953 1962, 1992

Strange Type⁵

I wrote: in the dark cavern of our birth.
The printer had it tavern, which seems better:
But herein lies the subject of our mirth,
Since on the next page death appears as dearth.

3. Sherf version.

accurate, Birney's version is given here for its read-

4. Sherf version.

ing of the last word, "bitter," which seems more

5. The title is Birney's; Lowry left the poem unlikely than Sherf's "better."

tioned. Though Sherf's punctuation is probably more

U L T I M A R A T I O R E G U M / 1 5 0 5

5 So it may be that God's word was distraction,

Which to our strange type appears destruction,
Which is bitter.

1946-54 1962

S T E P H E N S P E N D E R

1909-1995

I Think Continually of Those Who Were Truly Great

I think continually of those who were truly great.

Who, from the womb, remembered the soul's history

Through corridors of light where the hours are suns

Endless and singing. Whose lovely ambition

5 Was that their lips, still touched with fire,

Should tell of the Spirit clothed from head to foot in song.

And who hoarded from the Spring branches

The desires falling across their bodies like blossoms.

What is precious is never to forget

io The essential delight of the blood drawn from ageless
springs

Breaking through rocks in worlds before our earth.

Never to deny its pleasure in the morning simple light

Nor its grave evening demand for love.

Never to allow gradually the traffic to smother

15 With noise and fog the flowering of the spirit.

Near the snow, near the sun, in the highest fields

See how these names are feted⁰ by the waving grass *honored*

And by the streamers of white cloud

And whispers of wind in the listening sky.

20 The names of those who in their lives fought for life

Who wore at their hearts the fire's centre.

Born of the sun they travelled a short while towards the sun,
And left the vivid air signed with their honour.

1933

Ultima Ratio Regum¹

The guns spell money's ultimate reason
In letters of lead on the Spring hillside.
But the boy lying dead under the olive trees
Was too young and too silly

1. Kings' ultimate reason, i.e., for taking action (Latin).

1 5 0 6 / S T E P H E N S P E N D E R

5 To have been notable to their important eye.

He was a better target for a kiss.

When he lived, tall factory hooters⁰ never summoned him
sirens

Nor did restaurant plate-glass doors revolve to wave him in.

His name never appeared in the papers.

10 The world maintained its traditional wall

Round the dead with their gold sunk deep as a well,

Whilst his life, intangible as a Stock Exchange rumour, drifted
outside.

O too lightly he threw down his cap

One day when the breeze threw petals from the trees.

15 The unflowering wall sprouted with guns,

Machine-gun anger quickly scythed the grasses;

Flags and leaves fell from hands and branches;

The tweed cap rotted in the nettles.

Consider his life which was valueless

20 In terms of employment, hotel ledgers, news files.

Consider. One bullet in ten thousand kills a man.

Ask. Was so much expenditure justified
On the death of one so young, and so silly
Lying under the olive trees, O world, O death?

1939

Seascape

(In Memoriam, M.A.S.)

There are some days the happy ocean lies

Like an unfingered harp, below the land.

Afternoon gilds all the silent wires

Into a burning music for the eyes.

5 On mirrors flashing between fine-strung fires

The shore, heaped up with roses, horses, spires,

Wanders on water, walking above ribbed sand.

The motionlessness of the hot sky tires

And a sigh, like a woman's, from inland

io Brushes the instrument with shadowing hand

Drawing across its wires some gull's sharp cries

Or bell, or shout, from distant, hedged-in shires;0 *counties*

These, deep as anchors, the hushing wave buries.

Then from the shore, two zig-zag butterflies,

15 Like errant dog-roses, cross the bright strand

Spiraling over sea in foolish gyres0 *spiral turnings*

Until they fall into reflected skies.

They drown. Fishermen understand

Such wings sunk in such ritual sacrifice,

FIGLIOMAGGIORE / 1507

20 Recalling legends of undersea, drowned cities.

W h a t voyagers, oh what heroes, flamed like pyres

With helmets plumed, have set forth from some island
And them the sea engulfed. Their eyes,
Contorted by the cruel waves' desires
25 Glitter with coins through the tide scarcely scanned,
While, above them, that harp assumes their sighs.

1947

R O B E R T FITZGERALD

1910-1985

Figlio Maggiore¹

Benedict Robert Champion Fitzgerald

Twitched in her belly, or he raised a fist,
and came and cried. O red and meager baby,
umbilical, priapic,⁰ knobby, *phallic*
mashed and wrinkled as an old pugilist.

5 A lyric name he got and a saint's name,
a third stout name from Pa, *doe Roberto*.²

Think of this Christian if you care to
filling his giant napkin⁰ without shame. *diaper*

And soon for happy trilled at goldy leaves
io by a summer air. What hours our boy would warble.

You find my doting lines intolerable?

Never was infant such under such eaves.

Behave. "I'm being hayve." With Harpo's³ grin.

At three he shook his cap and bells, our jester,

15 or tented him in a souwester⁰ *rain hat*

and fragrant slicker to stay in the rain in.

Never (ah!) to inherit that dripping grove,

in a DC—⁶ he peered at cumulo-cirrus

“trees” on ocean. (Graciously hear us,
20 lord of the aircraft gaily named **LOVE**)

Ligurian fry⁴ inquired, “Why is your old man
home all day? *W h a t m e s t i e r e* ⁵ has he?”

1. Eldest son (Italian). 3. Harpo Marx (1893-1964), one
member of the

2. That is, Robert (Fitzgerald) (Italian). *Lyric* Marx Brothers
comedy team.

name: from Thomas Campion (1567—1620; see 4. Children in
Liguria, Italy, pp. 278—82), English poet and composer.
Saint’s ⁵. Job, profession (Italian).

name: Benedict.

1508 / NORMAN MACCAIG

“*Da notte vafuori a rubare case.*”⁶

A penman’s alibi. Tie it if you can.

25 Off iodine-scented rock pure undersea,
fronded, astir, awaited our explorer.

Noon. With a tentacled small horror
draped on his tines⁷ he swam ashore in glee.

Daemonic lightning, ire of rebellious powers
30 could rend this patient hunter of the polyp.⁸

Bone-ache from one corrective wallop
disabled the parental hand for hours.

Child of my own rage, rippling in Tuscan speech
through five hard winters’ *compiti*, my Benny,

35 *temi, storie, disegni!*⁹

W h a t will the next years teach?

1971

N O R M A N M A C C A I G

1910-1996

Summer Farm

Straws like tame lightnings lie about the grass
And hang zigzag on hedges. Green as glass
The water in the horse-trough shines.
Nine ducks go wobbling by in two straight lines.
5 A hen stares at nothing with one eye,
Then picks it up. Out of an empty sky
A swallow falls and, flickering through
The barn, dives up again into the dizzy blue.
I lie, not thinking, in the cool, soft grass,
io Afraid of where a thought might take me—as
This grasshopper with plated⁰ face *armor-plated*.
Unfolds his legs and finds himself in space.
Self under self, a pile of selves I stand
Threaded on time, and with metaphysic hand
15 Lift the farm like a lid and see
Farm within farm, and in the centre, me.

1955

6. At night he goes out to burgle houses (Italian).
8. Tentacled sea creature.
7. Meant to suggest the tines of the triton of Nep-
9. Themes, stories, drawings! (Italian). *Compiti*:
tune, Roman god of the sea.
homework (Italian).

RETURN TO SCALPAY / 1509

Return to Scalpay¹

The ferry wades across the kyle. I drive

T h e car ashore
On to a trim tarred road. A car on Scalpay?
Yes, and a road where never was one before.
5 T h e ferrymen's Gaelic wonders who I am
(Not knowing I know it), this m a n back from the dead,
W h o takes the blue-black road (no traffic jam)
From by Craig Lexie over to Bay Head.
A m a n bows in the North wind, shaping up
10 His lazybeds,²
And through the salt air vagrant peat smells waver
From houses where no house should be. The sheds
At the curing station³ have been newly tarred.
Aunt Julia's⁴ house has vanished. T h e Red Well
15 Has been bulldozed away. But sharp and hard
The c h u r c h still stands, barring the road to Hell.
A chugging prawn boat slides round Cuddy Point
W h e r e in a gale
I spread my batwing jacket and j u m p e d farther
20 T h a n I've j u m p e d since. There's where I used to sail
Boats looped from rushes. On the jetty there
I caught eels, cut their heads off and watched them slew
Slow through the water. A h — C a p e Finisterre⁵
I called that point, to show how m u c h I knew.
25 While Hamish sketches, a crofter⁰ tells me that *tenant
farmer*
T h e Scalpay folk,
Though very intelligent, are not Spinozas ...⁶
We walk the O u t End road (no need to invoke

That troublemaker, Memory, she's everywhere)

30 To Laggandoan, greeted all the way—

My city eyeballs prickle; it's hard to bear

With such affection and such gaiety.

Scalpay revisited?—more than Scalpay. I

Have no defence,

35 For half my thought and half my blood is Scalpay,

Against that pure, hardheaded innocence

1. Island in the Scottish Outer Hebrides, to the

4. The subject of a well-known poem by MacCaig:

east of Harris and separated from it by a kyle, or

“Aunt Julia spoke Gaelic / very loud and fast.”

narrow channel.

5. Promontory—the name meaning “world's end”

2. Earthen beds, about six feet wide, on which

(Latin)—on the Atlantic coast of northern Spain.

potatoes are grown.

6. I.e., not as smart as the Dutch philosopher Ben-

3. Place where fish are salted and dried.

edict de (Baruch) Spinoza (1632-1677).

1 5 1 0 / N O R M A N M A C C A I G

That shows love without shame, weeps without shame,

Whose every thought is hospitality—

Edinburgh, Edinburgh, you're dark years away.

40 Scuttering snowflakes riddling the hard wind

Are almost spent

W h e n we reach Johann's⁷ house. She fills the doorway,

Sixty years of size and astonishment,

Then laughs and cries and laughs, as she always did
45 And will (Easy glum, easy glow, a friend would say) ...

Scones, oatcakes, herrings from under a bubbling lid.

Then she comes with us to put us on our way.

Hugging my arm in her stronger one, she says,

Fancy me

50 *Walking this road beside my darling Norman!*

And what is there to say? ... We look back and see

Her monumental against the flying sky

And I am filled with love and praise and shame

Knowing that I have been, and knowing why,

55 Diminished and enlarged. Are they the same?

1974

Kingfisher

That kingfisher jewelling upstream

seems to leave a streak of itself behind it

in the bright air. The trees

are all the better for its passing.

5 It's not a mineral eater, though it looks it:

It doesn't nip nicks out of the edges

of rainbows.—It dives

into the burly water, then, perched

on a Japanese bough, gulps

io into its own incandescence

a wisp of minnow, a warrior stickleback.

— Or it vanishes into its burrow, resplendent

Samurai, returning home

to his stinking slum.

1977

7. Johann Macleod, a native of Scalpay.

1 1 5 1 1

C H A R L E S O L S O N

1910-1970

Mercel of Egypt

I

I sing the tree is a heron

I praise long grass²

I wear the lion skin

over the long skirt

5 to the ankle. T h e ankle

is a heron

I look straightly backward. Or I bend to the side straightly

to raise the sheaf

up the stick of the leg

io as the bittern's leg, raised

as slow as

his neck grows

as the wheat. T h e presentation,

the representation,

is is flat,

**I am followed by w o m e n and a small boy in white
carrying a duck,**

**all have flat feet and, foot before foot, the w o m e n with
black wigs**

And I intent

upon idlers,

20 and flowers

2

the sedge

as tall as I am, the rushes

as I am

as far as I am animal, antelope

25 with such's attendant carnivores

and rows of beaters

drive the game to the hunter, or into nets,

where it is thick-wooded or there are open spaces

with low shrubs

3

30 I speak downfall, the ball of my foot

on the neck of the earth, the hardsong

of the rise of all trees, the jay

w h o uses the air. I am the recovered sickle

I. Merce Cunningham (b. 1919), American

2. Olson's references to song and grass recall dancer and choreographer. While head of Black "Song of Myself," part of *Leaves of Grass*, by the Mountain College, an experimental school in American poet Walt Whitman (1819-1892; see North Carolina, Olson brought him there to teach pp. 1060-86).

and even participated in some of his dance classes.

1 5 1 2 / C H A R L E S O L S O N

with the grass-stains still on the flint of its teeth.

35 I am the six-rowed barley

they cut down.

I am tree. The boy of the back of my legs
is roots. I am water fowl
when motion is the season of my river, and the wild boar
40 casts me. But my time
is hawkweed,

4

I hold what the wind blows, and silt.
I hide in the swamps of the valley to escape civil war,
and marauding soldiers. In the new procession
45 I am first, and carry wine
made of dandelions. The new rites
are my bones

I built my first settlement
in groves

5

50 as they would flail crops
when the spring comes, and flood, the tassels
rise, as my head

1953

Variations Done for Gerald Van De Wiele³

*I. Le Bonheur*⁴

dogwood flakes

what is green

the petals

from the apple

5 blow on the road

mourning doves

mark the sway

of the afternoon, bees

dig the plum blossoms

3. A student at Black Mountain College during
Saison en enfer (*A Season in Hell*, 1873). Some-
Olson's time as head there (see note 1 above).

times Olson cites a word or a phrase from the poem

4. The "Variations" allude repeatedly, and in com-
in French, sometimes he translates a word by the
plex, subtle ways, to a poem by the French poet
English word it resembles (*trepas* as "trespass"),
Arthur Rimbaud (1854-1891), "Le Bonheur"
then later by the word that translates it correctly
("Happiness"), the last of the poems that occur
("death").

throughout Rimbaud's poem-prose complex *Une*

VARIATIONS DONE FOR GERALD V AND EWIELE / 1513

10 the morning

stands up straight, the night

is blue from the full of the April moon

iris and lilac, birds

birds, yellow flowers

15 white flowers, the Diesel

does not let up dragging

the plow

as the whippoorwill,

the night's tractor, grinds

20 his song

and no other birds but us
are as busy (O saisons, o chateaux!
Delires!⁵
What soul
25 is without fault?
Nobody studies
happiness
Every time the cock crows
I salute him
30 I have no longer any excuse
for envy. My life
has been given its orders: the seasons
seize
the soul and the body, and make mock
35 of any dispersed effort. The hour of death
is the only trespass

II. The Charge

dogwood flakes
the green
the petals from the apple-trees
40 fall for the feet to walk on
the birds are so many they are
loud, in the afternoon

5. Two sections of *Une Saison en enfer* are entitled
teaux!” (“O seasons! o castles!”) is the first line and
“Delires” (“Deliriums,” “Frenzies”), and “Le Bon-refrain of
“Le Bonheur.”

heur” occurs in “Delires II.” “O saisons, o cha-

1514 / CHARLES OLSON

they distract, as so many bees do
suddenly all over the place
45 With spring one knows today to see
that in the morning each thing
is separate but by noon
they have melted into each other
and by night only crazy things
50 like the full moon and the whippoorwill
and us, are busy. We are busy
if we can get by that whiskered bird,
that nightjar, and get across, the moon *a nocturnal bird*
is our conversation, she will say
55 what soul
isn't in default?
can you afford not to make
the magical study
which happiness is? do you hear
60 the cock when he crows? do you know the charge,
that you shall have no envy, that your life
has its orders, that the seasons
seize you too, that no body and soul are one
if they are not wrought
65 in this retort? that otherwise efforts
are efforts? And that the hour of your flight
will be the hour of your death?

III. Spring

The dogwood

lights up the day.

70 The April moon

flakes the night.

Birds, suddenly,

are a multitude

The flowers are ravined0 *hollowed out*

75 by bees, the fruit blossoms

C A S A B I A N C A

/ 1 5 1 5

are thrown to the ground, the wind

the rain forces everything. Noise—

even the night is drummed

by whippoorwills, and we get

so as busy, we plow, we move,

we break out, we love. The secret

which got lost neither hides

nor reveals itself, it shows forth

tokens. And we rush

85 to catch up. The body

whips the soul. In its great desire

it demands the elixir

In the roar of spring,

transmutations. Envy

90 drags herself off. The fault of the body and the soul

—that they are not one—

the matutinal0 cock clangs *morning*

and singleness: we salute you

season of no bungling

1960

ELIZABETH B I S H O P

1911-1979

Casabianca¹

Love's the boy stood on the burning deck
trying to recite "The boy stood on
the burning deck." Love's the son
stood stammering elocution
5 while the poor ship in flames went down.

Love's the obstinate boy, the ship,
even the swimming sailors, who
would like a schoolroom platform, too,

1. Cf. Felicia Dorothea Hemans, "Casabianca" ing ship during
the 1798 Battle of the Nile (a deci-

(p. 899), line 1 of which is "The boy stood on the sive defeat
for Napoleon), thinking that his father, burning deck." The boy
had remained on the burn- the admiral, had not released him
from duty.

1 5 1 6 / E L I Z A B E T H B I S H O P

or an excuse to stay

10 on deck. And love's the burning boy.

1 9 4 6

The Fish

**I caught a tremendous fish
and held him beside the boat
half out of water, with my hook
fast in a corner of his mouth.**

5 He didn't fight.

He hadn't fought at all.

He hung a grunting weight,
battered and venerable
and homely. Here and there
10 his brown skin hung in strips
like ancient wallpaper,
and its pattern of darker brown
was like wallpaper:
shapes like full-blown roses
15 stained and lost through age.
He was speckled with barnacles,
fine rosettes of lime,
and infested
with tiny white sea-lice,
20 and underneath two or three
rags of green weed hung down.
While his gills were breathing in
the terrible oxygen
—the frightening gills,
25 fresh and crisp with blood,
that can cut so badly—
I thought of the coarse white flesh
packed in like feathers,
the big bones and the little bones,
30 the dramatic reds and blacks
of his shiny entrails,
and the pink swim-bladder
like a big peony.
I looked into his eyes

35 which were far larger than mine
but shallower, and yellowed,
the irises backed and packed
with tarnished tinfoil
seen through the lenses
40 of old scratched isinglass.²
They shifted a little, but not
to return my stare.

2. Mica in thin, transparent sheets; originally prepared from the air bladders of certain fish.

FILLING STATION / 1517

—It was more like the tipping
of an object toward the light.
45 I admired his sullen face,
the mechanism of his jaw,
and then I saw
that from his lower lip
—if you could call it a lip—
50 grim, wet, and weaponlike,
hung five old pieces of fish-line,
or four and a wire leader
with the swivel still attached,
with all their five big hooks
55 grown firmly in his mouth.
A green line, frayed at the end
where he broke it, two heavier lines,
and a fine black thread
still crimped from the strain and snap

60 when it broke and he got away.
Like medals with their ribbons
frayed and wavering,
a five-haired beard of wisdom
trailing from his aching jaw.
65 I stared and stared
and victory filled up
the little rented boat,
from the pool of bilge
where oil had spread a rainbow
70 around the rusted engine
to the bailer rusted orange,
the sun-cracked thwarts,
the oarlocks on their strings,
the gunnels—until everything
75 was rainbow, rainbow, rainbow!
And I let the fish go.

1 9 4 6

Filling Station

Oh, but it is dirty!
—this little filling station,
oil-soaked, oil-permeated
to a disturbing, over-all
5 black translucency.
Be careful with that match!
Father wears a dirty,
oil-soaked monkey suit
that cuts him under the arms,

io and several quick and saucy

1 1 5 1 8 / E L I Z A B E T H B I S H O P

and greasy sons assist him
(it's a family filling station),
all quite thoroughly dirty.

Do they live in the station?

15 It has a cement porch
behind the pumps, and on it
a set of crushed and grease-
impregnated wickerwork;
on the wicker sofa

20 a dirty dog, quite comfy.

Some comic books provide
the only note of color—
of certain color. They lie
upon a big dim doily

25 draping a taboret *drum-shaped table*

(part of the set), beside
a big hirsute begonia.

Why the extraneous plant?

Why the taboret?

BO Why, oh why, the doily?

(Embroidered in daisy stitch
with marguerites, I think, *small daisies*
and heavy with gray crochet.)

Somebody embroidered the doily.

35 Somebody waters the plant,
or oils it, maybe. Somebody

arranges the rows of cans

so that they softly say:

ESSO—so—so—so³

40 to high-strung automobiles.

Somebody loves us all.

1965

Sandpiper

The roaring alongside he takes for granted,

and that every so often the world is bound to shake.

He runs, he runs to the south, finical, awkward,

in a state of controlled panic, a student of Blake.⁴

5 The beach hisses like fat. On his left, a sheet
of interrupting water comes and goes

3. The company name Esso, later changed to

Exxon. cence” begins, “To see a World in a Grain of Sand
Exxon.

/ And a Heaven in a Wild Flower, / Hold Infinity

4. William Blake (1 7 5 7 - 1 8 2 7 ; see pp. 732-47),

in the palm of your hand / And Eternity in an

English poet, whose 1803 poem “Auguries of Inno-
hour.”

T H E A R M A D I L L O / 1 5 1 9

and glazes over his dark and brittle feet.

He runs, he runs straight through it, watching his toes.

—Watching, rather, the spaces of sand between them,

10 where (no detail too small) the Atlantic drains

rapidly backwards and downwards. As he runs,

he stares at the dragging grains.

The world is a mist. And then the world is
minute and vast and clear. The tide
15 is higher or lower. He couldn't tell you which.
His beak is focussed; he is preoccupied,
looking for something, something, something.
Poor bird, he is obsessed!
The millions of grains are black, white, tan, and gray,
20 mixed with quartz grains, rose and amethyst.

1965

The Armadillo⁵

For Robert Lowell

This is the time of year
when almost every night
the frail, illegal fire balloons appear.
Climbing the mountain height,
5 rising toward a saint
still honored in these parts,
the paper chambers flush and fill with light
that comes and goes, like hearts.

Once up against the sky it's hard
to tell them from the stars—
planets, that is—the tinted ones:
Venus going down, or Mars,
or the pale green one. With a wind,
they flare and falter, wobble and toss;
15 but if it's still they steer between
the kite sticks of the Southern Cross,⁶
receding, dwindling, solemnly
and steadily forsaking us,
or, in the downdraft from a peak,
20 suddenly turning dangerous.

5. Cf. Robert Lowell, "Skunk Hour" (p. 1601), 6. Bright
constellation, which is modeled on Bishop's poem.

1 5 2 0 / E L I Z A B E T H B I S H O P

Last night another big one fell.
It splattered like an egg of fire
against the cliff behind the house.
The flame ran down. We saw the pair
25 of owls who nest there flying up
and up, their whirling black-and-white
stained bright pink underneath, until
they shrieked up out of sight.
The ancient owls' nest must have burned.
30 Hastily, all alone,
a glistening armadillo left the scene,
rose-flecked, head down, tail down,
and then a baby rabbit jumped out,

short-eared, to our surprise.

35 So soft!—a handful of intangible ash
with fixed, ignited eyes.

Too pretty, dreamlike mimicry!

*O falling fire and piercing cry
and panic, and a weak mailed fist*

40 *clenched ignorant against the sky!*

1965

Sestina⁷

September rain falls on the house.

In the failing light, the old grandmother
sits in the kitchen with the child

beside the Little Marvel Stove,⁸

5 reading the jokes from the almanac,
laughing and talking to hide her tears.

She thinks that her equinoctial tears
and the rain that beats on the roof of the house
were both foretold by the almanac,
io but only known to a grandmother.

The iron kettle sings on the stove.

She cuts some bread and says to the child,

It 's time for tea now; but the child

is watching the teakettle's small hard tears

15 dance like mad on the hot black stove,
the way the rain must dance on the house.

Tidying up, the old grandmother

hangs up the clever almanac

7. On this verse form, see “Versification,” p. 2045. 8. Brand of wood-burning stove.

IN THE WAITING ROOM / 1 5 2 1

**on its string. Birdlike, the almanac
20 hovers half open above the child,
hovers above the old grandmother
and her teacup full of dark brown tears.
She shivers and says she thinks the house
feels chilly, and puts more wood in the stove.**

25 *It was to he,* says the Marvel Stove.

***I know what I know,* says the almanac.**

**With crayons the child draws a rigid house
and a winding pathway. Then the child
puts in a man with buttons like tears
30 and shows it proudly to the grandmother.**

**But secretly, while the grandmother
busies herself about the stove,
the little moons fall down like tears
from between the pages of the almanac**

**35 into the flower bed the child
has carefully placed in the front of the house.**

***Time to plant tears,* says the almanac.**

**The grandmother sings to the marvelous stove
and the child draws another inscrutable house.**

1 9 6 5

In the Waiting Room

In Worcester, Massachusetts,

I went with Aunt Consuelo

to keep her dentist's appointment
and sat and waited for her
5 in the dentist's waiting room.

It was winter. It got dark
early. The waiting room
was full of grown-up people,
arctics and overcoats,
10 lamps and magazines.

My aunt was inside
what seemed like a long time
and while I waited I read
the *National Geographic*
15 (I could read) and carefully
studied the photographs:
the inside of a volcano,
black, and full of ashes;
then it was spilling over
20 in rivulets of fire.

Osa and Martin Johnson⁹

9. Famous husband-and-wife explorers and writers.

1 5 2 2 / E L I Z A B E T H B I S H O P

dressed in riding breeches,
laced boots, and pith helmets.

A dead man slung on a pole
25 —“Long Pig,”¹ the caption said.
Babies with pointed heads
wound round and round with string;
black, naked women with necks

wound round and round with wire
30 like the necks of light bulbs.
Their breasts were horrifying.
I read it right straight through.
I was too shy to stop.
And then I looked at the cover:
35 the yellow margins, the date.
Suddenly, from inside,
came an *oh!* of pain
—Aunt Consuelo’s voice—
not very loud or long.
40 I wasn’t at all surprised;
even then I knew she was
a foolish, timid woman.
I might have been embarrassed,
but wasn’t. What took me
45 completely by surprise
was that it was *me*:
my voice, in my mouth.
Without thinking at all
I was my foolish aunt,
50 I—we—were falling, falling,
our eyes glued to the cover
of the *National Geographic*,
February, 1918.
I said to myself: three days
55 and you’ll be seven years old.
I was saying it to stop

the sensation of falling off
the round, turning world
into cold, blue-black space.

60 But I felt: you are an I,
you are an *Elizabeth*,
you are one of *them*.

Why should you be one, too?

I scarcely dared to look

65 to see what it was I was.

I gave a sidelong glance

—I couldn't look any higher—

at shadowy gray knees,

trousers and skirts and boots

70 and different pairs of hands

1. Polynesian cannibals' name for the h u m a n body as food.

T H E M O O S E / 1 5 2 3

lying under the lamps.

I knew that nothing stranger

had ever happened, that nothing

stranger could ever happen.

75 Why should I be my aunt,

or me, or anyone:1

What similarities—

boots, hands, the family voice

I felt in my throat, or even

so the *National Geographic*

and those awful hanging breasts—

held us all together

or made us all just one?
How—I didn't know any
85 word for it—how “unlikely” ...

How had I come to be here,
like them, and overhear
a cry of pain that could have
got loud and worse but hadn't?

90 The waiting room was bright
and too hot. It was sliding
beneath a big black wave,
another, and another.

Then I was back in it.

95 The War² was on. Outside,
in Worcester, Massachusetts,
were night and slush and cold,
and it was still the fifth
of February, 1918.

1976

The Moose

For Grace Bulmer Bowers

From narrow provinces³
of fish and bread and tea,
home of the long tides
where the bay leaves the sea
5 twice a day and takes
the herrings long rides,
where if the river
enters or retreats

in a wall of brown foam

io depends on if it meets

2. World War I. Nova Scotia, where Bishop was born, and
New

3. The maritime provinces of Canada, including Brunswick.

1 5 2 4 / E L I Z A B E T H B I S H O P

the bay coming in,

the bay not at home;

where, silted red,

sometimes the sun sets

15 facing a red sea,

and others, veins the flats'

lavender, rich mud

in burning rivulets;

on red, gravelly roads,

20 down rows of sugar maples,

past clapboard farmhouses

and neat, clapboard churches,

bleached, ridged as clamshells,

past twin silver birches,

25 through late afternoon

a bus journeys west,

the windshield flashing pink,

pink glancing off of metal,

brushing the dented flank

30 of blue, beat-up enamel;

down hollows, up rises,

and waits, patient, while

a lone traveller gives
kisses and embraces
35 to seven relatives
and a collie supervises.
Goodbye to the elms,
to the farm, to the dog.
The bus starts. The light
40 grows richer; the fog,
shifting, salty, thin,
comes closing in.
Its cold, round crystals
form and slide and settle
45 in the white hens' feathers,
in gray glazed cabbages,
on the cabbage roses
and lupins like apostles;
the sweet peas cling
50 to their wet white string
on the whitewashed fences;
bumblebees creep
inside the foxgloves,
and evening commences.

T H E M O O S E / 1 5 2 5

One stop at Bass River.
Then the Economies—
Lower, Middle, Upper;
Five Islands, Five Houses,⁴
where a woman shakes a tablecloth

out after supper.
A pale flickering. Gone.
The Tantramar marshes⁵
and the smell of salt hay.
An iron bridge trembles
and a loose plank rattles
but doesn't give way.
On the left, a red light
swims through the dark:
a ship's port lantern.
Two rubber boots show,
illuminated, solemn.
A dog gives one bark.
A woman climbs in
with two market bags,
brisk, freckled, elderly.
"A grand night. Yes, sir,
all the way to Boston."
She regards us amicably.
Moonlight as we enter
the New Brunswick woods,
hairy, scratchy, splintery;
moonlight and mist
caught in them like lamb's wool
on bushes in a pasture.
The passengers lie back.
Snores. Some long sighs.
A dreamy divagation

begins in the night,
a gentle, auditory,
slow hallucination. . . .

In the creakings and noises,
an old conversation
—not concerning us,
but recognizable, somewhere,
95 back in the bus:

Grandparents' voices

4. Towns in Nova Scotia.

5. Marshes of the Tantramar River, which empties into the Bay
of Fundy.

1 1 5 2 6 / E L I Z A B E T H B I S H O P

uninterruptedly
talking, in Eternity:
names being mentioned,
100 things cleared up finally;
what he said, what she said,
who got pensioned;
deaths, deaths and sicknesses;
the year he remarried;
105 the year (something) happened.
She died in childbirth.
That was the son lost
when the schooner foundered.
He took to drink. Yes.
110 She went to the bad.
When Amos began to pray

even in the store and
finally the family had
to put him away.

ii5 “Yes ...” that peculiar
affirmative. “Yes ... ”

A sharp, indrawn breath,
half groan, half acceptance,
that means “Life’s like that.
120 We know *it* (also death).”

Talking the way they talked
in the old featherbed,
peacefully, on and on,
dim lamplight in the hall,
125 down in the kitchen, the dog
tucked in her shawl.

Now, it’s all right now
even to fall asleep
just as on all those nights.

130 —Suddenly the bus driver
stops with a jolt,
turns off his lights.

A moose has come out of
the impenetrable wood
135 and stands there, looms, rather,
in the middle of the road.

It approaches; it sniffs at
the bus’s hot hood.

Towering, antlerless,

140 high as a church,
homely as a house

ONE ART / 1527

(or, safe as houses).

A man's voice assures us
"Perfectly harmless... ."

145 Some of the passengers
exclaim in whispers,
childishly, softly,

"Sure are big creatures."

"It's awful plain."

150 "Look! It's a she!"

Taking her time,
she looks the bus over,
grand, otherworldly.

Why, why do we feel

155 (we all feel) this sweet
sensation of joy?

"Curious creatures,"

says our quiet driver,
rolling his r's.

160 "Look at that, would you."

T h e n he shifts gears.

For a m o m e n t longer,
by craning backward,
the moose can be seen

165 on the moonlit macadam;
then there's a dim

smell of moose, an acrid
smell of gasoline.

1 9 7 6

One Art

The art of losing isn't hard to master;
so many things seem filled with the intent
to be lost that their loss is no disaster.

Lose something every day. Accept the fluster
of lost door keys, the hour badly spent.

The art of losing isn't hard to master.

Then practice losing farther, losing faster:
places, and names, and where it was you meant
to travel. None of these will bring disaster.

io I lost my mother's watch. And look! my last, or
next-to-last, of three loved houses went.

The art of losing isn't hard to master.

1 5 2 8 / A L L E N C U R N O W

I lost two cities, lovely ones. And, vaster,
some realms I owned, two rivers, a continent.

15 I miss them, but it wasn't a disaster.

—Even losing you (the joking voice, a gesture

I love) I shan't have lied. It's evident

the art of losing's not too hard to master

though it may look like (*Write it!*) like disaster.

1 9 7 6

A L L E N C U R N O W

1911-2001

Landfall in Unknown Seas1

The 300th Anniversary of the Discovery of New Zealand by
Abel Tasman, 13 December 1642

I

Simply by sailing in a new direction

You could enlarge the world

You picked your captain,

Keen on discoveries, tough enough to make them,

5 Whatever vessels could be spared from other

More urgent service for a year's adventure;

Took stock of the more probable conjectures

About the Unknown to be traversed, all

Guesses at golden coasts and tales of monsters

io To be digested into plain instructions

For likely and unlikely situations.

All this resolved and done, you launched the whole

On a fine morning, the best time of year,

Skies widening and the oceanic furies

15 Subdued by summer illumination; time

To go and to be gazed at going

On a fine morning, in the Name of God

Into the nameless waters of the world.

O you had estimated all the chances

20 Of business in those waters, the world's waters

Yet unexploited.

But more than the sea-empire's

Cannon, the dogs of bronze and iron barking

From Timor to the Straits, backed up the challenge.

25 Between you and the South an older enmity

Lodged in the searching mind, that would not tolerate

1. Written as part of New Zealand's tercentenary celebrations.

LANDFALL IN UNKNOWN SEAS / 1529

So huge a hegemony of ignorance.

There, where your Indies had already sprinkled

Their tribes like ocean rains, you aimed your voyage;

30 Like them invoked your God, gave seas to history

And islands to new hazardous tomorrows.

II

Suddenly exhilaration

Went off like a gun, the whole

Horizon, the long chase done,

35 Hove to.² There was the seascape

Crammed with coast, surprising

As new lands will, the sailor

Moving on the face of the waters,

Watching the earth take shape

40 Round the unearthly summits, brighter

Than its emerging colour.

Yet this, no far fool's errand,

Was less than the heart desired,

In its old Indian dream

45 The glittering gulfs ascending

Past palaces and mountains

Making one architecture.

Here the uplifted structure,

Peak and pillar of cloud—

50 O splendour of desolation—reared

Tall from the pit of the swell,
With a shadow, a finger of wind, forbade
Hopes of a lucky landing.
Always to islanders danger
55 Is what comes over the sea;
Over the yellow sands and the clear
Shallows, the dull filament
Flickers, the blood of strangers:
Death discovered the Sailor
60 O in a flash, in a flat calm,
A clash of boats in the bay
And the day marred with murder.
The dead required no further
Warning to keep their distance;
65 The rest, noting the failure,
Pushed on with a reconnaissance
To the north; and sailed away.

III

Well, home is the Sailor,³ and that is a chapter
In a schoolbook, a relevant yesterday

2. Dropped anchor. writer Robert Louis Stevenson (1850-1894):

3. From line 7 of “Requiem,” by the Scottish “Home is the sailor, home from sea.”

1 5 3 0 / I R V I N G L A Y T O N

70 We thought we knew all about, being m u c h apter
To profit, sure of our ground,
No murderers mooring in our Golden Bay.
But now there are no more islands to be found

And the eye scans risky horizons of its own
75 In unsettled weather, and m u r m u r s of the drowned
H a u n t their familiar beaches—
W h o navigates us towards what unknown
But not improbable provinces? W h o reaches
A f u t u r e down for us from the high shelf
so Of spiritual daring? Not those speeches
Pinning on the Past like a decoration
For merit that congratulates itself,
O not the self-important celebration
Or most painstaking history, can release
85 The current of a discoverer's elation
And silence the voices saying,
“Here is the world's end where wonders cease.”
Only by a more faithful memory, laying
On him the half-light of a diffident glory,
90 T h e Sailor lives, and stands beside us, paying
O u t into our time's wave
T h e stain of blood that writes an island story.

1 9 4 2 1 9 4 3

IRVING LAYTON

b. 1912

The Birth of Tragedy¹

And me happiest when I compose poems.

Love, power, the huzza of battle

are something, are much;

yet a poem includes them like a pool

5 water and reflection.

In me, nature's divided things—
tree, mold on tree—
have their fruition;
I am their core. Let them swap,
io bandy, like a flame swerve
I am their mouth; as a m o u t h I serve.

1. The first book (1872) by the German philoso-
emotionalism as well as Apollonian rationalism in
pher Friedrich Nietzsche (1844-1900), *The Birth*
the creation of tragedy.

of Tragedy argued for the importance of Dionysian

THE C O L D G R E E N E L E M E N T / 1 5 3 1

And I observe how the sensual moths
big with odor and sunshine
dart into the perilous shrubbery;
15 or drop their visiting shadows
upon the garden I one year made
of flowering stone to be a footstool
for the perfect gods:
who, friends to the ascending orders,
20 sustain all passionate meditations
and call down pardons
for the insurgent blood.
A quiet m a d m a n , never far from tears,
I lie like a slain thing
25 under the green air the trees
inhabit, or rest upon a chair
towards which the inflammable air

tumbles on many robins' wings;
noting how seasonably
30 leaf and blossom uncurl
and living things arrange their death,
while someone from afar off
blows birthday candles for the world.

1 9 5 4

The Cold Green Element

At the end of the garden walk
the wind and its satellite wait for me;
their meaning I will not know
until I go there,
5 but the black-hatted undertaker
who, passing, saw my heart beating in the grass,
is also going there. Hi, I tell him,
a great squall in the Pacific blew a dead poet
out of the water,
io Who now hangs from the city's gates.
Crowds depart daily to see it, and return
with grimaces and incomprehension;
if its limbs twitched in the air
they would sit at its feet
15 peeling their oranges.
And turning over I embrace like a lover
the trunk of a tree, one of those
for whom the lightning was too m u c h
and grew a brilliant
20 h u n c h b a c k with a crown of leaves.

1 5 3 2 / I R V I N G L A Y T O N

The ailments escaped from the labels
of medicine bottles are all fled to the wind;
I've seen myself lately in the eyes
of old women,
25 spent streams mourning my manhood,
in whose old pupils the sun became
a bloodsmear on broad catalpa leaves
and hanging from ancient twigs,
my murdered selves
30 sparked the air like the muted collisions
of fruit. A black dog howls down my blood,
a black dog with yellow eyes;
he too by someone's inadvertence
saw the bloodsmear
35 on the broad catalpa leaves.

But the furies² clear a path for me to the worm
who sang for an hour in the throat of a robin,
and misled by the cries of young boys

I am again

40 a breathless swimmer in that cold green element.

1 9 5 5

Berry Picking

Silently my wife walks on the still wet furze

Now darkgreen the leaves are full of metaphors

Now lit up is each tiny lamp of blueberry.

The white nails of rain have dropped and the sun is free.

5 And whether she bends or straightens to each bush

To find the children's laughter among the leaves
Her quiet hands seem to make the quiet summer hush—
Berries or children, patient she is with these.
I only vex and perplex her; madness, rage
io Are endearing perhaps put down upon the page;
Even silence daylong and sullen can then
Enamor as restraint or classic discipline.
So I envy the berries she puts in her mouth,
The red and succulent juice that stains her lips;
15 I shall never taste that good to her, nor will they
Displease her with a thousand barbarous jests.

2. In classical mythology, goddesses who punished the doers
of unavenged wrongs.

MOURNING POEM FOR THE QUEEN OF SUNDAY / 1533

How they lie easily for her hand to take,
Part of the unoffending world that is hers;
Here beyond complexity she stands and stares
20 And leans her marvelous head as if for answers.
No more the easy soul my childish craft deceives
Nor the simpler one for whom yes is always yes;
No, now her voice comes to me from a far way off
Though her lips are redder than the raspberries.

1958

ROBERT HAYDEN

1913-1980

Those Winter Sundays

Sundays too my father got up early

and put his clothes on in the blueblack cold,

then with cracked hands that ached
from labor in the weekday weather made
5 banked fires blaze. No one ever thanked him.
I'd wake and hear the cold splintering, breaking.
W h e n the rooms were warm, he'd call,
and slowly I would rise and dress,
fearing the chronic angers of that house,
io Speaking indifferently to him,
who had driven out the cold
and polished my good shoes as well.
W h a t did I know, what did I know
of love's austere and lonely offices?

1 9 6 2

Mourning Poem for the Queen of Sunday

Lord's lost Him His mockingbird,

His fancy warbler;

Satan sweet-talked her,

four bullets hushed her.

5 W h o would have thought

she'd end that way?

Four bullets hushed her. And the world a-clang with evil.

Who's going to make old hardened sinner m e n tremble now

and the righteous rock?

1 5 3 4 / R O B E R T H A Y D E N

10 Oh who and oh who will sing Jesus down

to help with struggling and doing without and being colored

all through blue Monday?

Till way next Sunday?

All those angels
15 in their cretonne¹ clouds and finery
the true believer saw
when she rared back her head and sang,
all those angels are surely weeping.
W h o would have thought
20 she'd end that way?
Four holes in her heart. The gold works wrecked.
But she looks so natural in her big bronze coffin
among the Broken Hearts and Gates-Ajar,
it's as if any m o m e n t she'd lift her head
25 from its pillow of chill gardenias
and turn this quiet into shouting Sunday
and make folks forget what she did on Monday.
O h , Satan sweet-talked her,
and four bullets hushed her.
30 Lord's lost Him His diva,
His fancy warbler's gone.
W h o would have thought,
who would have thought she'd end that way?

1 9 6 6

Night, Death, Mississippi²

I

A quavering cry. Screech-owl?

Or one of them?

The old m a n in his reek

and gauntness laughs—

5 O n e of them, I bet—

and turns out the kitchen lamp,
limping to the porch to listen
in the windowless night.

Be there with Boy and the rest
io if I was well again.

Time was. Time was.

White robes like moonlight

1. Cotton or linen cloth.

civil rights activists known as Freedom Fighters,

2. In Philadelphia, Mississippi, in 1964, Ku Klux
who were challenging segregationist laws in the
Klansmen and police deputies murdered Michael
South.

Schwerner, Andrew Goodman, and James Chaney,

**” ‘ M Y S T E R Y B O Y ‘ L O O K S F O R K I N I N N A
S H V I L L E ” / 1 5 3 5**

In the sweetgum^ dark.

Unbucked that one then

15 and him squealing bloody Jesus

as we cut it off.

Time was. A cry?

A cry all right.

He hawks and spits,

20 fevered as by groinfire.

Have us a bottle,

Boy and me—

he’s earned him a bottle—

when he gets home.

II

25 Then we beat them, he said,
beat them till our arms was tired
and the big old chains
messy and red.

O Jesus burning on the lily cross

30 Christ, it was better
than hunting bear
which don't know why
you want him dead.

O night, rawhead and bloodyhones night

35 You kids fetch Paw
some water now so's he
can wash that blood
off him, she said.

O night betrayed by darkness not its own

1 9 6 6

” ‘Mystery Boy’ Looks for Kin in Nashville”

Puzzle faces in the dying elms
promise him treats if he will stay.
Sometimes they hiss and spit at him
like varmints caught

5 in a thicket of butterflies.

3. The dark woods of the sweet gum, a North American tree of
a deep reddish brown grain.

1 5 3 6 / R O B E R T H A Y D E N

A black doll,
one disremembered time,

came floating down to him
through mimosa's fancywork leaves and blooms
10 to be his hidden bride.
From the road beyond the creepered walls
they call to him now and then,
and he'll take off in spite of the angry trees,
hearing like the loudening of his heart
15 the name he never can he never can repeat.
And when he gets to where the voices were—
Don't cry, his dollbaby wife implores;
I know where they are, don't cry.
We'll go and find them, we'll go
20 and ask them for your name again.

1 9 7 7

Paul Laurence Dunbar⁴

For Herbert Martin

We lay red roses on his grave,
speak sorrowfully of him
as if he were but newly dead
And so it seems to us
5 this raw spring day, though years
before we two were born he was
a young poet dead.
Poet of our youth—
his "cri du coeur"⁵ our own,
in his verses "in a broken tongue"
beguiling as an elder
brother's antic lore.

Their sad blackface lilt and croon
survive him like

15 The happy look (subliminal
of victim, dying man)
a summer's tintypes⁶ hold.

4. African American poet (1872—1906; see
cry from the heart). The next line is probably a
pp. 1222-24).

reference to Dunbar's poems in dialect (blackface).

5. Passionate appeal or protest (French; literally,

6. I.e., old photographs.

NIGHTFEEDING / 1537

The roses flutter in the wind;
we weight their stems
20 with stones, then drive away.

1978

MURIEL RUKEYSER

1913-1980

Boy with His Hair Cut Short

Sunday shuts down on this twentieth-century evening.

The EP passes. Twilight and bulb define *elevated train*
the brown room, the overstuffed plum sofa,
the boy, and the girl's thin hands above his head.

5 A neighbor radio sings stocks, news, serenade.

He sits at the table, head down, the young clear neck exposed,
watching the drugstore sign from the tail of his eye;
tattoo, neon, until the eye blears, while his
solicitous tall sister, simple in blue, bending

io behind him, cuts his hair with her cheap shears.
T h e arrow's electric red always reaches its mark,
successful neon! He coughs, impressed by that precision.
His child's forehead, forever protected by his cap,
is bleached against the lamplight as he turns head
15 and steadies to let the snippets drop.
Erasing the failure of weeks with level fingers,
she sleeks the fine hair, combing: "You'll look fine tomorrow!
You'll surely find something, they can't keep turning you
down;
the finest gentleman's not so trim as you!" Smiling, he raises
20 the adolescent forehead wrinkling ironic now.
He sees his decent suit laid out, new-pressed,
his carfare on the shelf. He lets his head fall, meeting
her earnest hopeless look, seeing the sharp blades splitting,
the darkened room, the impersonal sign, her motion,
25 the blue vein, bright on her temple, pitifully beating.

1 9 3 8

Night Feeding

Deeper than sleep but not so deep as death

I lay there sleeping and my magic head

1 5 3 8 / M U R I E L R U K E Y S E R

remembered and forgot. On first cry I

remembered and forgot and did believe.

5 I knew love and I knew evil:

woke to the burning song and the tree burning blind,

despair of our days and the calm milk-giver who

knows sleep, knows growth, the sex of fire and grass,

and the black snake with gold bones.

10 Black sleeps, gold burns; on second cry I woke
fully and gave to feed and fed on feeding.

Gold seed, green pain, my wizards in the earth
walked through the house, black in the morning dark.

Shadows grew in my veins, my bright belief,

15 my head of dreams deeper than night and sleep.

Voices of all black animals crying to drink,

cries of all birth arise, simple as we,

found in the leaves, in clouds and dark, in dream,

deep as this hour, ready again to sleep.

1 9 5 1

Rondell

Now that I am fifty-six

Come and celebrate with me—

What happens to song and sex

Now that I am fifty-six?

5 They dance, but differently,

Death and distance in the mix;

Now that I'm fifty-six

Come and celebrate with me.

1 9 7 3

Ballad of Orange and Grape

After you finish your work

after you do your day

after you've read your reading

after you've written your say—

5 you go down the street to the hot dog stand,

one block down and across the way.

On a blistering afternoon in East Harlem in the twentieth century.

1. Based loosely on the French syllabic verse form, a thirteen-line poem that turns on two rhymes, with a refrain.

B A L L A D O F O R A N G E A N D G R A P E / 1 5 3 9

Most of the windows are boarded up,

the rats run out of a sack—

10 sticking out of the c r u m m y garage

one shiny long Cadillac;

at the glass door of the drug-addiction center,

a m a n who'd like to break your back.

But here's a brown w o m a n with a little girl dressed in rose and pink,

too.

15 Frankfurters frankfurters sizzle on the steel

where the hot-dog-man leans—

nothing else on the counter

but the usual two machines,

the grape one, empty, and the orange one, empty,

20 I face him in between.

A black boy comes along, looks at the hot dogs, goes on walking.

I watch the m a n as he stands and pours

in the familiar shape

bright purple in the one marked **ORANGE**

25 orang e in th e on e marke d **GRAPE**,

the grape drink in the machine marked **ORANGE**

and orange drink in the **GRAPE**.

Just the one word large and clear, unmistakable, on each machine.

I ask him : How can we go on reading
30 and make sense out of what we read?—

How can they write and believe what they're writing,
the young ones across the street,

while you go on pouring grape into **ORANGE**

and orange into the one marked **G R A P E — ?**

35 (How are we going to believe what we read and we write
and we hear

and we say and we do?)

He looks at the two machines and he smiles
and he shrugs and smiles and pours again.

It could be violence and nonviolence
it could be white and black women and m e n

40 it could be war and peace or any
binary system, love and hate, enemy, friend.

Yes and no, be and not-be, what we do and what we don't do.

On a corner in East Harlem
garbage, reading, a deep smile, rape,

45 forgetfulness, a hot street of murder,
misery, withered hope,

a man keeps pouring grape into **ORANGE**

and orange into the one marked **GRAPE**,

pouring orange into **GRAPE** and grape into **ORANGE**
forever.

1953

MAY S W E N S O N

1913-1989

Motherhood

She sat on a shelf,
her breasts two bellies
on her poked-out belly,
on which the navel looked
like a sucked-in m o u t h —
her knees bent and apart,
her long left arm raised,
with the large h a n d knuckled
to a bar in the ceiling—
her right hand clamping
the skinny infant to her chest—
its round, pale, new,
soft muzzle hunting
in the brown hair for a nipple,
its splayed, tiny hand picking
at her naked, dirty ear.
Twisting its little neck,
with tortured, ecstatic eyes
the size of lentils, it looked
into her severe, close-set,
solemn eyes, that beneath bald
eyelids glared—dull lights
in sockets of leather.
She twitched some chin-hairs,
with pain or pleasure,
as the baby-mouth found and
yanked at her nipple;

its pink-nailed, jointless
fingers, wandering her face,
tangled in the tufts
of her cliffy brows.
She brought her big
hand down from the bar—
with pretended exasperation
unfastened the little hand,
and locked it within her palm—
while her right hand,
with snag-nailed forefinger
and short, sharp thumb, raked
the new orange hair
of the infant's skinny flank—
and found a louse,
which she lipped, and
thoughtfully crisped
between broad teeth.

CARDINAL IDEOGRAMS / 1541

She wrinkled appreciative
nostrils which, without a nose,
stood open—damp holes
above the poke of her mouth.
50 She licked her lips, flicked
her leather eyelids—
then, suddenly flung
up both arms and grabbed
the bars overhead.

55 The baby's scrabbly fingers
instantly caught the hair—
as if there were metal rings there—
in her long, stretched armpits.
And, as she stately swung,
60 and then proudly, more swiftly
slung herself from corner
to corner of her cell—
arms longer than her round
body, short knees bent—
65 her little wild-haired,
poke-mouthed infant hung,
like some sort of trophy,
or decoration, or shaggy medal—
shaped like herself—but new,
70 clean, soft and shining
on her chest.

1 9 6 7

Cardinal Ideograms 1

A mouth. Can blow or breathe,

0 be funnel, or Hello.

A grass blade or a cut.

1

A question seated. And a proud

2 bird's neck.

Shallow mitten for two-fingered hand.

3

4 Three-cornered hut

on one stilt. Sometimes built
so the roof gapes.

1. Counting numbers interpreted as if they were pictures.

1 5 4 2 / M A Y S W E N S O N

5 A policeman. Polite.

Wearing visored cap.

6 O unrolling,

tape of ambiguous length

on which is written the mystery

of everything curly.

7 A step,

detached from its stair.

The universe in diagram:

A cosmic hourglass.

8 (Note enigmatic shape,
absence of any valve of origin,
how end overlaps beginning.)

Unknotted like a shoelace

and whipped back and forth,

can serve as a model of time.

9 Lorgnette for the right eye.

In England or if you are Alice²

the stem is on the left.

10 A grass blade or a cut

companioned by a mouth.

Open? Open. Shut? Shut.

1 9 6 7

Waterbird

Part otter, part snake, part bird the bird Anhinga,³
jalousie⁰ wings, draped open, dry. When slack- *shutterlike*
hinged, the wind flips them shut. Her cry,
a slatted clatter, inflates her chin-
5 pouch; it's like a fish's swim-
bladder. Anhinga's body, otter-
furry, floats, under water-
mosses, neck a snake with white-
rimmed blue round roving eyes. Those long feet stilt-
10 paddle the only bird of the marsh that flies
submerged. Otter-
quick over bream⁰ that hover in water- *fish*
shade, she feeds, finds fillets among the water-
weeds. Her beak, ferrule⁰ of a folded black *metal tip*

2. Alice, who sees the mirror images of things in
glasses or opera glasses with a handle.

the book *Through the Looking-Glass*, by the

3. Also known as snake-bird or water-turkey. With
English mathematician and writer Lewis Carroll
a long fantail and thin neck, it swims submerged
(1832-1898; see pp. 1135-39). *Lorgnette*: eye-
up to the neck, thus resembling a snake.

GOODBYE, GOLDENEYE / 1543

15 umbrella, with neat thrust impales her prey.
She flaps up to dry on the crooked, look-
dead-limb of the Gumbo Limbo,⁴ her tan-
tipped wing fans spread, tail a shut fan dangled.

1987

Goodbye, Goldeneye

,5

Rag of black plastic, shred of a kite
caught on the telephone cable above the bay
has twisted in the wind all winter, summer, fall.
Leaves of birch and maple, brown paws of the oak
5 have all let go but this. Shiny black Mylar⁶
on stem strong as fishline, the busted kite string
whipped around the wire and knotted—how long
will it cling there? Through another spring?
Long barge nudged up channel by a snorting tug,
io its blunt front aproned with rot-black tires—
what is being hauled in slime-green drums?
The herring gulls that used to feed their young
on the shore—puffy, wide-beaked babies standing
spraddle-legged and crying—are not here this year.
15 Instead, steam shovel, bulldozer, cement mixer
rumble over sand, beginning the big new beach house.
There'll be a hotdog stand, flush toilets, trash—
plastic and glass, greasy cartons, crushed beercans,
barrels of garbage for water rats to pick through.
20 So, goodbye, goldeneye, and grebe and scaup and loon.
Goodbye, morning walks beside the tide tinkling
among clean pebbles, blue mussel shells and snail
shells that look like staring eyeballs. Goodbye,
kingfisher, little green, black crowned heron,
25 snowy egret. And, goodbye, oh faithful pair of
swans that used to glide—god and goddess

shapes of purity—over the wide water.

1 9 8 7

4. Tropical American tree with a smooth, coppery bark mentioned in line 20, is a freshwater diving duck.

6. Brand of strong, thin polyester film, here used

5. The goldeneye, like the grebe, scaup, and loon in string.

1 5 4 4

R. S. T H O M A S

1913-2000

Welsh Landscape

To live in Wales is to be conscious

At dusk of the spilled blood

That went to the making of the wild sky,

Dyeing the immaculate rivers

5 In all their courses.

It is to be aware,

Above the noisy tractor

And hum of the machine

Of strife in the strung woods,

io Vibrant with sped arrows.

You cannot live in the present,

At least not in Wales.

There is the language for instance,

The soft consonants

15 Strange to the ear.

There are cries in the dark at night

As owls answer the moon,
And thick ambush of shadows,
Hushed at the fields' corners.

20 There is no present in Wales,
And no future;
There is only the past,
Brittle with relics,
Wind-bitten towers and castles
25 With sham ghosts;
Mouldering quarries and mines;
And an impotent people,
Sick with inbreeding,
Worrying the carcass of an old song.

1 9 5 5

The View from the Window
Like a painting it is set before one,
But less brittle, ageless; these colours
Are renewed daily with variations
Of light and distance that no painter
5 Achieves or suggests. Then there is movement,
Change, as slowly the cloud bruises
Are healed by sunlight, or snow caps
A black mood; but gold at evening
To cheer the heart. All through history
10 The great brush has not rested,

L O R E / 1 5 4 5

Nor the paint dried; yet what eye,
Looking coolly, or, as we now,

Through the tears' lenses, ever saw
This work and it was not finished?

1958

On the Farm

There was Dai Puw. He was no good.

They put him in the fields to dock0 swedes,0 *cut/ turnips*

And took the knife from him, when he came home

At late evening with a grin

5 Like the slash of a knife on his face.

There was Llew Puw, and he was no good.

Every evening after the ploughing

With the big tractor he would sit in his chair,

And stare into the tangled fire garden,

io Opening his slow lips like a snail.

There was Huw Puw, too. What shall I say?

I have heard him whistling in the hedges

On and on, as though winter

Would never again leave those fields,

15 And all the trees were deformed.

And lastly there was the girl:

Beauty under some spell of the beast.

Her pale face was the lantern

By which they read in life's dark book

20 The shrill sentence: God is love.

1963

Lore

Job Davies, eighty-five

Winters old, and still alive

After the slow poison
And treachery of the seasons.
5 Miserable? Kick my arse!
It needs more than the rain's hearse,
Wind-drawn, to pull me off
The great perch of my laugh.

1 5 4 6 / J O H N B E R R Y M A N

What's living but courage?
10 Paunch full of hot porridge,
Nerves strengthened with tea,
Peat-black, dawn found me
Mowing where the grass grew,
Bearded with golden dew.
15 Rhythm of the long scythe
Kept this tall frame lithe.
What to do? Stay green.
Never mind the machine,
Whose fuel is human souls.
20 Live large, man, and dream small.

1 9 6 4

J O H N B E R R Y M A N

1914-1972

From Homage to Mistress Bradstreet I

U7]

The winters close, Springs open, no child stirs
130 under my withering heart, O seasoned heart
God grudged his aid.
All things else soil like a shirt.

Simon is much away. My executive² stales.
The town came through for the cartway by the pales,³
135 but my patience is short.

I revolt from, I am like, these savage foresters

[J8]

whose passionless dicker in the shade, whose glance
impassive & scant, belie their murderous cries
when quarry seems to show.

140 Again I must have been wrong, twice.⁴

Unwell in a new way. Can that begin?

God brandishes. O love, O I love. Kin,

gather. My world is strange

and merciful, ingrown months, blessing a swelling trance.

1. Berryman's book-length poem about, and
as well as the form of the "dream song," see the
mostly in the voice of, the early American poet
introduction to Berryman's *Collected Poems 1937—*
Anne Bradstreet (ca. 1612 - 1672 ; see pp. 458 - 67) .
1971 (1989) by Charles Thornbury, xl-xliii.

Bradstreet speaks here of her struggle in child-

2. Power to act. *Simon*: her husband.

birth. For a discussion of the complex stanza form

3. Stockade fence.

Berryman invented for this poem (modeled partly

4. I.e., she twice failed to conceive.

on W. B. Yeats's "In Memory of Major Gregory"),

ASYMPATHY, A WELCOME / 1547

[19]

145 So squeezed, wince you I scream? I love you & hate
off with you. Ages! *Useless*. Below my waist
he has me in Hell's vise.

Stalling. He let go. Come back: brace
me somewhere. No. No. Yes! everything down

150 hardens I press with horrible joy down
my back cracks like a wrist

shame I am voiding oh behind it is too late

[20]

hide me forever I work thrust I must free

now I all muscles & bones concentrate

155 what is living from dying?

Simon I must leave you so untidy

Monster you are killing me Be sure

I'll have you later W o m e n do endure

I can *can* no longer

160 and it passes the wretched trap whelming and I am me

[21]

drencht & powerful, I did it with my body!

One proud tug greens Heaven. Marvellous,
unforbidding Majesty.

Swell, imperious bells. I fly.

165 Mountainous, woman not breaks and will bend:

sways God nearby: anguish comes to an end.

Blossomed Sarah,5 and I

blossom. Is that thing alive? I hear a famisht howl.

1 9 4 8 - 5 3 1 9 5 6

A Sympathy, A Welcome

Feel for your bad fall how could I fail,
poor Paul, who had it so good.
I can offer you only: this world like a knife.
Yet you'll get to know your mother
5 and humourless as you do look you will laugh
and all the others
will **NOT** be fierce to you, and loverhood
will swing your soul like a broken bell
deep in a forsaken wood, poor Paul,
io whose wild bad father loves you well.

1 9 5 8

5. Wife of Abraham, who after long barrenness gave birth to Isaac (Genesis 17.19).

1 5 4 8 / J O H N B E R R Y M A N

*From The Dream Songs*⁶

I

H u f f y Henry hid the day,
unappeasable Henry sulked.
I see his point,—a trying to put things over.
It was the thought that they thought
5 they could *do* it made Henry wicked & away.
But he should have come out and talked.
All the world like a woolen lover
once did seem on Henry's side.
T h e n came a departure,
io Thereafter nothing fell out as it might or ought.
I don't see how Henry, pried
open for all the world to see, survived.

W h a t he has now to say is a long
wonder the world can bear & be.

15 O n c e in a sycamore I was glad
all at the top, and I sang.

Hard on the land wears the strong sea
and empty grows every bed.

1 9 6 4

4

Filling her compact & delicious body
with chicken paprika, she glanced at me
twice.

Fainting with interest, I hungered back

5 and only the fact of her husband & four other people
kept me from springing on her
or falling at her little feet and crying

“You are the hottest one for years of night

Henry’s dazed eyes

io have enjoyed, Brilliance.” I advanced upon

(despairing) my spumoni.—Sir Bones: is stuffed,
de world, wif feeding girls.

—Black hair, complexion Latin, jeweled eyes

downcast ... The slob beside her feasts ... W h a t wonders is

15 she sitting on, over there?

The restaurant buzzes. She might as well be on Mars.

6. “[The Dream Songs are] essentially about an

person, sometimes in the third, sometimes even in

imaginary character (not the poet, not me) named

the second; he has a friend, never named, who

Henry, a white American in early middle age some-
addresses him as Mr. Bones and variants thereof”
times in blackface, who has suffered an irreversible
[Berryman’s note]. These poems were written over
loss and talks about himself sometimes in the first
a period of thirteen years.

THE DREAMSONGS : 29 / 1549

Where did it all go wrong? There ought to be a
law against Henry.

— Mr. Bones: there is.

1964

14

Life, friends, is boring. We must not say so.
After all, the sky flashes, the great sea yearns,
we ourselves flash and yearn,
and more over my mother told me as a boy
5 (repeatingly) ”Ever to confess you ‘rebor-
ed means you have no
Inner Resources.” I conclude now I have no
inner resources, because I am heavily bored.
People bore me,
io literature bores me, especially great lite-
rature, Henry bores me, with his plights & gr-
ipes as bad as achilles, 7
who loves people and valiant art, which bore
me.
And the tranquil hills, & gin, look like a drag
15 and somehow a dog
has taken itself & its tail considerably away
into mountains or sea or sky, leaving
behind: me, wag.

1964

29

There sat down, once, a thing on Henry's heart
so heavy, if he had a hundred years

& more, & weeping, sleepless, in all the time
Henry could not make good.

5 Starts again always in Henry's ears
the little cough somewhere, an odor, a chime

And there is another thing he has in mind
like a grave Sieneſe face 8 a thousand years
would fail to blur the still profiled reproach
of. Ghastly, iowith open eyes, he attends, blind.

All the bells say: too late. This is not for tears;
thinking.

But never did Henry, as he thought he did,
end anyone and hack her body up

7. The Greek hero of Homer's *Iliad*, who withdrew
with Henry's father" [John Haffenden, *John Berryman: A Critical Commentary*, 1980, 55].

Berryman claimed that some of the structure of

8. The painters of thirteenth- and fourteenth-
The Dream Songs could be traced to parallel scenes
century Siena, Italy, were known for their austere
in the *Iliad*. "The chief enemy, in Achilles case,
religious portraits.

was Hector, whom Berryman explicitly equated

1550 / JOHN BERRYMAN

15 and hideth pieces, wher they may be found.

He knows: he went over everyone, & nobody's missing.

Often hereckons, in the dawn, them up.

Nobody is ever missing.

1964

40

I'm scared alone. Never see my son,
easy benottosee anyone,
combers out to sea
know they're goin somewhere but not me.

5 Got a little poison, got a little gun,

I'm scared alone.

I'm scared a only one thing, which is me,
from othering I don't take nothin, see,
for any hound dog's sake,

io But this is where I live in, where I rake
my leaves and cop my promise, 9 this 'where
we cry oursel's awake.

Wishin was dy in but I gotta make
it all this way to that bed on these feet
15 where peoplessaid to meet.

Maybe but even if I see my son
forever never, get back on the take,
free, black & forty-one. 1

1964

145

Also I love him: me he's donenowrong

forgoing on forty years — forgiveness time
—

Itouchnowhisdespair,

hefeltasbadasWhitman²onhistower

5buthedidnotswimoutwithmeormybrother
rashethreatened—

a powerfull swimmer, totakeoneofusalonga
scompanyinthedefeat sublime,

freezingmyhelplessmother:

ioheonly,veryearlyinthemorning,

rosewithhisgunandwentoutdoorsbymywi
ndowanddidwhatwasneeded.

9. Build my potential.

campus with bullets for eighty minutes on August

1. A play on the phras *efree, white and twenty-one*,

1, 1966. Whitman wrote of fear and violent

connoting independence.

impulses before his mass killing. “He” here refers

2. Charles Whitman, a sniper who, from a tower

to Berryman’s father, John Smith, who committed

at the University of Texas at Austin, sprayed the

suicide when the poet was twelve years old.

THE DREAMSONGS : 382 / 1551

Icannotreadthatwretchedmind,sostrong

&soundone.I’vealways tried.I—I’m

15 tryingtoforgive

whosefranticpassage,whenhecouldnotliv
eaninstantlonger,inthesummerdawn

leftHenrytoliveon.

1968

324. *An Elegy for W. C. W., 3 The Lovely Man Henry*
in Ireland to Bill Underground:

Restwell, who worked so hard, whom made a good
sound constantly, for so many years:

your high-jinks delighted the continents &
our ears: 5 you had so many girls your life was
a triumph and you loved your new wife.

At dawn you rose & wrote — the book poured
forth —

you delivered infinite babies, 4 in one great
birth —

and your generosity

into juniors made you deeply loved, deeply:
if envy was a Henry trademark, he would envy
you, especially the being through.

Too many journeys lie for him ahead,

too many galleys & page-proof to be read, 1
5 he would like to lie down

in your sweet silence, to whom was not denied
the mysterious late excellence which is the
crown of four trials & our last bride.

1968

382

At Henry's bier let something fall out well: e
nтер there none who somewhat has to sell, the
music ancient & gradual,

the voice solemn but the grief subdued,

5 no hairy jokes but everybody's mood

subdued, subdued,

until the Dancer comes, in a short short dress
shair black & long & loose, dark dark glasses
, up tilted face,

io pallor & strangeness, the music changes
o "Give!" & "Ow!" and how! the music changes,
she kicks a backward limb

3. The American poet William Carlos Williams 4. Williams
was a physician and specialized in (1883-1963; see pp. 1272-
83). pediatrics.

1552 / RANDALL JARRELL

on tiptoe, pirouettes, & she is free

to the knocking music, sails, dips, & suddenly
ly 15 return to the terrible gay

occasion hopeless & mad, she weaves, it 'shell,
she flings to her head a leg, bobs, all is well,
she dances Henry away.

1968

RANDALL JARRELL

1914-1965

90 North 1

At home, in my flannel gown, like a bear to its
floe, I clambered to bed; up the globe 's impos-
sible sides I sailed all night—till at last, with
my black beard, My furs and my dogs, I stood
at the northern pole.

5 There in the childish night my companions
lay frozen, The stiff furs knocked at my star-
veling throat, And I gave my great sigh: the
lakes came huddling, Were they really my
end? In the darkness I turned to my rest.

—Here, the flags snap in the glare and silence
io Of the unbroken ice. I stand here,

The dogs bark, my beard is black, and I stare
At the North Pole...

And now what? Why, go back.

Turn as I please, my step is to the south.

The world—my world spin on this final point
15 Of cold and wretchedness: all lines, all
winds End in this whirlpool I at last discover

And it is meaningless. In the child's bed
After the night's voyage, in that warm world
Where people work and suffer for the end

20 That crown the pain—in that Cloud-Cuckoo-Land²

I reached my North and it had meaning.
Here at the actual pole of my existence,
Where all that I have done is meaningless,
Where I die or live by accident alone—

25 Where, living or dying, I am still alone; Here
where North, the night, the berg of death
1. Ninety degrees north latitude; the North Pole. *tist*
Aristophanes (ca. 450—ca. 388 B.C.E.), an imaginary city the cuckoos
build in the clouds.

EIGHTH AIR FORCE / 1553

Crowd me out of the ignorant darkness,

I see at last that all the knowledge

I wrung from the darkness—that the darkness flung me—

**BO Is worthless as ignorance: nothing comes from
nothing,³**

**The darkness from the darkness. Pain comes from the
darkness**

And we call it wisdom. It is pain.

1942

The Death of the Ball Turret Gunner⁴

From my mother's sleep I fell into the State,

And I hunched in its belly till my wet fur froze.

Six miles from earth, loosed from its dream of life,
I woke to black flak and the nightmare fighters.
5 When I died they washed me out of the turret with a
hose.

1 9 4 5

Eighth Air Force⁵

If, in an odd angle of the hutment,⁰ *encampment*

A puppy laps the water from a can

Of flowers, and the drunk sergeant shaving

Whistles O *Paradiso!*⁶—shall I say that man

5 Is not as men have said: a wolf to man?

The other murderers troop in yawning;

Three of them play Pitch,⁰ one sleeps, and one *a card game*

Lies counting missions, lies there sweating

Till even his heart beats: One; One; One.

io O *murderers!* . . . Still, this is how it's done:

This is a war... . But since these play, before they die,

Like puppies with their puppy; since, a man,

I did as these have done, but did not die—

I will content the people as I can

15 And give up these to them: Behold the man!⁷

3. Cf. Shakespeare, *King Lear* 1.1.89: “Nothing
shells. The hose was a steam hose” [Jarrell’s note].

will come of nothing”; also a statement in Aristotle,

5. “A poem about the air force which bombed the
Physics I.

Continent from England. The man who lies count-

4. “A ball turret was a plexiglass sphere set into

ing missions has one to go before being sent home.
the belly of a B-17 or B-24, and inhabited by two
The phrases from the Gospels compare such crim-
.50 caliber machine-guns and one man, a short
inals and scapegoats as these with that earlier
small man. When this gunner tracked with his
criminal and scapegoat about whom the Gospels
machine-guns a fighter attacking his bomber from
were written” [Jan-ell’s note],

below, he revolved with the turret; hunched

6. A popular operatic aria.

upside-down in his little sphere, he looked like the

7. Quoting John 19.5: these are Pilate’s words as
foetus in the womb. The fighters which attacked
he presents Jesus, scourged and wearing a crown
him were armed with cannon firing explosive
of thorns, to the crowd.

1 5 5 4 / R A N D A L L J A R R E L L

I have suffered, in a dream, because of him,

Many things;8 for this last saviour, man,

I have lied as I lie now. But what is lying?

Men wash their hands, in blood, as best they can:

20 I find no fault in this just man.9

1 9 4 5

A Front1

Fog over the base: the beams ranging

From the five towers pull home from the night

The crews cold in fur, the bombers banging

Like lost trucks down the levels of the ice.
5 A glow drifts in like mist (how many tons of it?),
Bounces to a roll, turns suddenly to steel
And tires and turrets, huge in the trembling light.
The next is high, and pulls up with a wail,
Comes round again—no use. And no use for the rest
io In drifting circles out along the range;
Holding no longer, changed to a kinder course,
The flights drone southward through the steady rain.
The base is closed... . But one voice keeps on calling,
The lowering pattern of the engines grows;
15 The roar gropes downward in its shaky orbit
For the lives the season quenches. Here below
They beg, order, are not heard; and hear the darker
Voice rising: *Can't you hear me? Over. Over—*
All the air quivers, and the east sky glows.

1 9 4 5

A Field Hospital

He stirs, beginning to awake.

A kind of ache

Of knowing troubles his blind warmth; he moans,

And the high hammering drone

5 Of the first crossing fighters shakes

His sleep to pieces, rakes

The darkness with its skidding bursts, is done.

All that he has known

8. Pilate's wife wrote to him about Jesus: "Have
for Christ's death.

nothing to do with that just man: for I have suf-
1. “A front is closing in over a bomber base; the
fered many things this day in a dream because of
bombers, guided in by signals from the five towers
him” (Matthew 27.19).

of the radio range, are landing. Only one lands
9. After the crowd had called on him to free the
before the base is closed; the rest fly south to fields
robber Barabbas and execute Jesus, Pilate had
that are still open. One plane’s radio has gone
Jesus brought forth, “that you may know that I find
bad—it still transmits, but doesn’t receive—and
no fault in him” (John 19.4-5). Pilate washed his
this plane tries to land and crashes” [Jarrell’s note].
hands to symbolize his freedom from responsibility

N E X T D A Y / 1 5 5 5

Floods in upon him; but he dreads

10 The crooked thread

Of fire upon the darkness: “The great drake

Flutters to the icy lake—

The shotguns stammer in my head.

I lie in my own bed,”

15 He whispers, “dreaming”; and he thinks to wake.

The old mistake.

A cot creaks; and he hears the groan

He thinks his own—

And groans, and turns his stitched, blind, bandaged head

20 Up to the tent-flap, red

With dawn. A voice says, “Yes, this one”;
His arm stings; then, alone,
He neither knows, remembers—but instead
Sleeps, comforted.

1948

Next Day

Moving from Cheer to Joy, from Joy to All,
I take a box
And add it to my wild rice, my Cornish game hens.
The slacked or shorted, basketed, identical
5 Food-gathering flocks
Are selves I overlook. Wisdom, said William James,
Is learning what to overlook.² And I am wise
If that is wisdom.
Yet somehow, as I buy All from these shelves
io And the boy takes it to my station wagon,
What I’ve become
Troubles me even if I shut my eyes.
When I was young and miserable and pretty
And poor, I’d wish
15 What all girls wish: to have a husband,
A house and children. Now that I’m old, my wish
Is womanish:
That the boy putting groceries in my car
See me. It bewilders me he doesn’t see me.
20 For so many years
I was good enough to eat: the world looked at me

**And its mouth watered. How often they have undressed
me,**

The eyes of strangers!

And, holding their flesh within my flesh, their vile

2. From *Principles of Psychology*, by the American
philosopher William James (1842-1910).

1 5 5 6 / R A N D A L L J A R R E L L

25 Imaginings within my imagining,

I too have taken

The chance of life. Now the boy pats my dog

And we start home. Now I am good.

The last mistaken,

BO Ecstatic, accidental bliss, the blind

Happiness that, bursting, leaves upon the palm

Some soap and water—

It was so long ago, back in some Gay

Twenties, Nineties, I don't know ... Today I miss

35 My lovely daughter

Away at school, my sons away at school,

My husband away at work—I wish for them.

The dog, the maid,

And I go through the sure unvarying days

40 At home in them. As I look at my life,

I am afraid

Only that it will change, as I am changing:

I am afraid, this morning, of my face.

It looks at me

45 From the rear-view mirror, with the eyes I hate,

The smile I hate. Its plain, lined look

Of gray discovery

Repeats to me: "You're old." That's all, I'm old.

And yet I'm afraid, as I was at the funeral

50 I went to yesterday.

My friend's cold made-up face, granite among its flowers,

Her undressed, operated-on, dressed body

Were my face and body.

As I think of her I hear her telling me

55 How young I seem; I *am* exceptional;

I think of all I have.

But really no one is exceptional,

No one has anything, I'm anybody,

I stand beside my grave

**60 Confused with my life, that is commonplace and
solitary.**

1 9 6 5

A Man Meets a Woman in the Street

Under the separated leaves of shade

Of the gingko, that old tree

That has existed essentially unchanged

Longer than any other living tree,

**A M A N M E E T S A W O M A N I N T H E S T R E E T /
1 5 5 7**

5 I walk behind a woman. Her hair's coarse gold

Is spun from the sunlight that it rides upon.

W o m e n were paid to knit from sweet champagne

Her second skin: it winds and unwinds, winds

Up her long legs, delectable haunches,

10 As she sways, in sunlight, up the gazing aisle.

The shade of the tree that is called maidenhair,
That is not positively known
To exist in a wild state, spots her fair or almost fair
Hair twisted in a French twist; tall or almost tall,
15 She walks through the air the rain has washed, a clear thing
Moving easily on its high heels, seeming to men
Miraculous ... Since I can call her, as Swann³ couldn't,
A woman who is my type, I follow with the warmth
Of familiarity, of novelty, this new
20 Example of the type,
Reminded of how Lorenz's⁴ just-hatched goslings
Shook off the last remnants of the egg
And, looking at Lorenz, realized that Lorenz
Was their mother. Quacking, his little family
25 Followed him everywhere; and when they met a goose,
Their mother, they ran to him afraid.
Imprinted upon me
Is the shape I run to, the sweet strange
Breath-taking contours that breathe to me: "I am yours,
30 Be mine!"
Following this new
Body, somehow familiar, this young shape, somehow old,
For a m o m e n t I'm younger, the century is younger.
The living Strauss,⁵ his moustache just getting gray,
35 Is shouting to the players: "Louder!
Louder! I can still hear Madame Schumann-Heink—"6
Or else, white, bald, the old man's joyfully
Telling conductors they must play *Elektra*

Like *A Midsummer Night's Dream* 7—like fairy music;
40 Proust, dying, is swallowing his iced beer
And changing in proof the death of Bergotte⁸
According to his own experience; Garbo,⁹
A commissar in Paris, is listening attentively
To the voice telling how McGillicuddy met McGillivray,
45 And McGillivray said to McGillicuddy—no, McGillicuddy

3. Charles Swann, a protagonist of the first book in

6. Ernestine Schumann-Heink (1861-1936),
the seven-volume novel *A la recherche du temps*
American (Bohemian-born) contralto.

perdu (*In Search of Lost Time*), by the French

7. Incidental music, based on Shakespeare's play,
writer Marcel Proust (1871-1922). After Swann's
by Felix Mendelssohn (1809-1847), German com-
infatuation with his lover Odette ceases, he
poser.

remarks that she was never his type.

8. Character in Proust's novel, a distinguished

4. Konrad Lorenz (1903-1989), Austrian etholo-
writer.

gist who in a 1935 study described the process of

9. Greta Garbo (1905-1990), American (Swed-

“imprinting.” Just-hatched goslings preferred

ish-born) film actor, famous for her unsmiling

Lorenz to their natural mother after having re-

demeanor. Here quoted from the film *Ninotchka*

ceived certain stimuli.

(1939), before she finally laughs for the first time

5. Richard Strauss (1864-1949), German composer,
on screen.

poser, wrote the opera *Electra*.

1 5 5 8 / R A N D A L L J A R R E L L

Said to McGillivray—that is, McGillivray ... Garbo

Says seriously: “I wish dey’d never met.”

As I walk behind this woman I remember

That before I flew here—waked in the forest

50 At dawn, by the piece called *Birds Beginning Day*

That, each day, birds play to begin the day—

I wished as men wish: “May this day be different!”

The birds were wishing, as birds wish—over and over,

With a last firmness, intensity, reality—

55 “May this day be the same!”

Ah, turn to me

And look into my eyes, say: “I am yours,

Be mine!”

My wish will have come true. And yet

60 W h e n your eyes meet my eyes, they’ll bring into

The weightlessness of my pure wish the weight

Of a h u m a n being: someone to help or hurt,

Someone to be good to me, to be good to,

Someone to cry w h e n I am angry

65 That she doesn’t like *Elektra*, someone to start out on

Proust with.

A wish, come true, is life. I have my life.

W h e n you turn just slide your eyes across my eyes

And show in a look flickering across your face
As lightly as a leaf's shade, a bird's wing,
70 That there is no one in the world quite like me,
That if only ... If only ...
That will be enough.
But I've pretended long enough: I walk faster
And come close, touch with the tip of my finger
75 The nape of her neck, just where the gold
Hair stops, and the champagne-colored dress begins.
My finger touches her as the gingko's shadow
Touches her.
Because, after all, it *is* my wife
so In a new dress from Bergdorf's, walking toward the park.
She cries out, we kiss each other, and walk arm in arm
Through the sunlight that's much too good for New York,
The sunlight of our own house in the forest.
Still, though, the poor things need it ... We've no need
85 To start out on Proust, to ask each other about Strauss.
We first helped each other, hurt each other, years ago.
After so many changes made and joys repeated,
Our first bewildered, transcending recognition
Is pure acceptance. We can't tell our life
90 From our wish. Really I began the day
Not with a man's wish: "May this day be different,"
But with the birds' wish: "May this day
Be the same day, the day of my life."

1 9 6 7

1 1 5 5 9

W E L D O N K E E S

1914-1955

What the Spider Heard

Will there be time for egnogs and eclogues

In the place where we're going?

Said the spider to the fly.1

I think not, said the fly.

5 I think not, sang the chorus.

I think not, said a stranger

W h o mysteriously happened by.

Will they beat me and treat me the way they did here,

In the place where we're going?

io Asked the spider of the fly.

It is likely, said the fly.

Very likely, sang the chorus.

Extremely likely, said the stranger,

With an eager gleam in his eye.

**15 O, why go there w h e n we know there is nothing there
but fear**

At this place where we're going?

Said the spider to the fly.

What a question! said the fly.

What a question! sang the chorus.

20 What a question! said the stranger,

Leering slightly at the spider,

Winking slyly at the fly.

1 9 4 3

For H. V. (1901-1927)

**I remember the clumsy surgery: the face
Scarred out of recognition, ruined and not his own.
Wax hands fattened a m o n g pink silk and pinker roses.
The minister was in fine form that afternoon.
5 I remember the ferns, the organ faintly out of tune,
The gray light, the two extended prayers,
Rain falling on stained glass; the pallbearers,
Selected by the family, and n o n e of t h e m his friends.**

1 9 4 3

1. Allusion to the children's poem "The Spider my parlor?" said the spider to the fly.' "The spider and the Fly," by the English writer Mary Howitt seduces the fly "up his winding stair" and kills her.

(1799-1888), which begins, "Will you walk into

1 5 6 0 / W E L D O N K E E S

When the Lease Is Up

Walk the horses down the hill

Through the darkening groves;

Pat their rumps and leave the stall;

Even the eyeless cat perceives

5 Things are not going well.

Fasten the lock on the drawingroom door,

Cover the tables with sheets:

This is the end of the swollen year

W h e n even the sound of the rain repeats:

10 The lease is up, the time is near.

Pull the curtains to the sill,

Darken the rooms, cut all the wires.

Crush the embers as they fall

From the dying fires:

15 Things are not going well.

1 9 4 3

Robinson²

The dog stops barking after Robinson has gone.

His act is over. The world is a gray world,

Not without violence, and he kicks under the grand piano,

The nightmare chase well under way.

5 The mirror from Mexico, stuck to the wall,

Reflects nothing at all. The glass is black.

Robinson alone provides the image Robinsonian.

W h i c h is all of the room—walls, curtains,

Shelves, bed, the tinted photograph of Robinson's first wife,

io Rugs, vases, panatellas⁰ in a humidor. *cigars*

They would fill the room if Robinson came in.

The pages in the books are blank,

The books that Robinson has read. That is his favorite chair,

Or where the chair would be if Robinson were here.

15 All day the phone rings. It could be Robinson

Calling. It never rings w h e n he is here.

Outside, white buildings yellow in the sun.

Outside, the birds circle continuously

Where trees are actual and take no holiday.

1 9 4 7

2. A fictional everyman who appears in a number of Kees's poems.

1 1 5 6 1

NORMANNICHOLSON

1914-1987

To the River Duddon¹

I wonder, D u d d o n , if y o u still r e m e m b e r
An oldish m a n w i t h a n o s e like a pony's n o s e ,
Broad b o n e s , legs l o n g and l e a n b u t strong e n o u g
h
To carry h i m over Hardknott at seventy years of age.
5 He c a m e to y o u first as a boy w i t h a fishing-rod
A n d a h u n k of A n n Tyson's bread and c h e e s e in his
pocket,
W a l k i n g f r o m H a w k s h e a d across W a l n a
Scar;²
T h e n as a m i d d l e - a g e d Rydal³ landlord,
W i t h a d o t i n g sister and a p e n s i o n on the civil list,
io W h o left his verse s g u m m e d to your rocks like
lichen ,
T h e dry and y e l l o w e d g e s of a o n c e - g r e e n
spring.
H e m a d e a g u i d e - b o o k for you, f r o m your source
T h e r e w h e r e y o u bubble through the m o s s o n W r
y n o s e (A m o n g the ribs of bald and b o n y fells⁰
upland tracts
15 W i t h screes⁴ scratched in the turf like grey scabs),
A n d twist and slither u n d e r h u m p b a c k e d b r i d g
e s —
B u i l t like a child's h o u s e from odds and e n d s
O f s t o n e s that lie about the m o u n t a i n s i d e —
P a s t C o c k l e y B e c k Farm and on to Birk's Bridge,
20 W h e r e the rocks stride about like legs in armour,

**A n d the steel birches buckle and b o u n c e in the wind
W i t h a crinkle of silver foil in the crisp of the leaves;
O n t h e n to Seathwaite, w h e r e like a steam-navvy⁵
You shovel and slash your way t h r o u g h the gorge**

25 By Wallabarrow Crag, broader n o w

**F r o m b e c k s that f l o w out of black upland tarns⁰
small lakes Or o o z e t h r o u g h g o l d e n saxifrage and
the roots of rowans; N e x t U l p h a , w h e r e a s t o n e
dropped f r o m the bridge**

S w i m s like a tadpole d o w n thirty f e e t of water

**30 B e t w e e n steep skirting-boards of rock; and t h e n c
e**

You dribble into lower D u n n e r d a l e

**T h r o u g h w e t w o o d s and w o o d - s o i l and w o o d
l a n d flowers, T u t s o n , the St. John's-wort w i t h a
single y e l l o w bead,**

M a r s h marigold, c r e e p i n g j e n n y and daffodils;

35 H e r e f r o m hazel islands in the late spring

**T h e catkins⁰ fall and ride along the stream *spiky*
*flowerings***

Like little y e l l o w w e a s e l s , and the soil is l o o s e d

From bulbs of the w h i t e lily that smells of garlic,

A n d dippers rock up and d o w n on rubber legs,

**40 A n d long-tailed tits^o are f l u n g t h r o u g h the air
like darts; *birds* 1. In England's southwest Lake District,
flowing**

Wordsworth lodged with Hugh and Ann Tyson
down Dunnerdale from Wrynose and Hardknott
while attending Hawshead Grammar School,
passes. This poem recalls *The River Duddon: A*
Cumbria.

Series of Sonnets (1820), by William Wordsworth

3. Lake District village where Wordsworth later (1770-1850; see pp. 763-805), the “oldish man” lived with his sister, Dorothy (1771-1855).

in line 2.

4. Masses of debris at the foot of a cliff.

2. A rocky eminence in England’s Lake District.

5. Steam-powered excavator {*navvy*: laborer).

1 5 6 2 / N O R M A N N I C H O L S O N

By Foxfield n o w y o u taste the salt in your m o u t h ,

A n d thrift m i n g l e s w i t h the turf, and the h e r o n stands

W a t c h i n g the wagtails. W o r d s w o r t h wrote:

“Remote f r o m every taint of sordid industry”.⁶

45 But y o u and I k n o w better, D u d d o n lass.

For I, who’ve lived for nearly thirty years

U p o n your shore, have s e e n the slagbanks⁷ slant

Like screes s h e e r into the sand, and s e e n the tide

Purple with ore back up the m u d d y gullies

50 A n d w i p e d the sinter dust from the farmyard d a m s o n s . ⁸

A h u n d r e d years of floods and rain and w i n d

Have w a s h e d your rocks clear of his words again,

M a n y of t h e m half-forgotten, b r i m m i n g the Irish Sea,

But that w h i c h W o r d s w o r t h knew, e v e n the old m a n

55 W h e n poetry had failed like desire, was s o m e t h i n g

I have yet to learn, and you, D u d d o n ,

Have learned and re-learned to forget and forget again.
N o t the radical, the poet and heretic,
T o w h o m the water-forces s h o u t e d and the fells
60 W e r e like a blackboard for the scrawls of God,
B u t the old man, inarticulate and h u m b l e ,
K n e w that eternity flows in a m o u n t a i n b e c k 0 —
creek T h e l o n g cord of the water, the shepherd's n u m e
r a l s
T h a t run upstream, through the singing d e c a d e s of
dialect.

65 He knew, b e n e a t h m u t a t i o n of year and s e a s o
n ,
Flood and drought, frost and fire and thunder,
T h e frothy b l o s s o m on the rowan and the r e d d e n i
n g of the berries, T h e silt, the sand, the slagbanks and
the shingle,9

A n d the wild c a t a s t r o p h e s of the breaking m o u n t
a i n s , 70 There stands the base and root of the living
rock,

Thirty t h o u s a n d f e e t of solid C u m b e r l a n d .

1 9 4 4

Halley's Comet

My father s a w it back in 1 9 1 0 ,

T h e year King Edward died.

Above dark telegraph poles, above the high

Spiked steeple of the Liberal Club, the w h i t e

5 Gas-lit dials of the Market Clock,

B e y o n d the w i d e

S u n s e t - g l o w cirrus of blast-furnace smoke,

My father s a w it fly

Its thirty-seven-million-mile-long kite

io Across Black Combe's 1 black sky.

6. From *The River Duddon*, sonnet II, lines 1—2.

9. Round, water-worn gravel and pebbles.

7. Accumulations of volcanic rock.

1. Place-name meaning dark, armchair-shaped

8. Plum trees. *Sinter*: cinder (i.e., from slag).
rock formation.

CHARD WHITLOW / 1 5 6 3

And what of me,
Born four years too late?
Will I have breath to wait
Till the long-circuiting commercial traveller
15 Turns up at his due?
In 1986, aged seventy-two,
Watery in the eyes and phlegmy in the flue
And a bit bad tempered at so delayed a date,
Will I look out above whatever is left of the town—
20 The Liberal Club long closed and the clock stopped,
And the chimneys smokeless above damped-down
Furnace fires? And then will I
At last have chance to see it
With my own as well as my father's eyes,
25 And share his long-ago Edwardian surprise
At that high, silent jet, laying its bright trail
Across Black Combe's black sky?

1981

HENRY REED

1914-1986

Chard Whitlow

(Mr Eliot's Sunday Evening Postscript) I

As we get older we do not get any younger.
Seasons return, and today I am fifty-five,
And this time last year I was fifty-four,

And this time next year I shall be sixty-two.
 5 And I cannot say I should care (to speak for myself)
 To see my time over again—if you can call it time,
 Fidgeting uneasily under a draughty stair,
 Or counting sleepless nights in the crowded Tube.²
 There are certain precautions—though none of them very
 reliable—
 io Against the blast from bombs, or the flying splinter,
 But not against the blast from Heaven, *vento dei venti*,³
 The wind within a wind, unable to speak for wind;
 And the frigid burnings of purgatory will not be touched
 By any emollient.

15 I think you will find this put,
 Far better than I could ever hope to express it,
 In the words of Kharma:⁴ “It is, we believe,

1. Mr. Eliot is the British (American-born) poet
 which thousands of Londoners were sheltering
 T. S. Eliot (1888-1965; see pp. 1340-66). Reed’s
 during the firebombing of London (known as the
 title and subtitle evoke three of Eliot’s titles: *Burnt*
Blitz) of World War II, when this poem was writ-
Norton, “Mr. Eliot’s Sunday Morning Service,” and
 ten.

“The *Boston Evening Transcript*.” *Whitlow*: inflam-

3. Wind of winds (Italian).

matory sore on the finger.

4. A concept common to Hinduism, Buddhism,

2. Colloquial term for the London subway, in

and Jainism, the doctrine of Karma asserts that

1 5 6 4 / H E N R Y R E E D

Idle to hope that the simple stirrup-pump⁵

Can extinguish hell.”

20 Oh, listeners,

And you especially who have switched off the wireless,⁶

And sit in Stoke or Basingstoke, listening appreciatively to the
silence

(Which is also the silence of hell), pray not for yourselves but
your

souls.

And pray for me also under the draughty stair.

25 As we get older we do not get any younger.

And pray for Kharma under the holy mountain.

1 9 4 1 1 9 4 6

Lessons of the War

T O A L A N M I C H E L L

Vixi duellis nuper idoneus

*Et militavi non sine gloria*⁷

1. Naming of Parts

Today we have naming of parts. Yesterday,

We had daily cleaning. And tomorrow morning,

We shall have what to do after firing. But today,

Today we have naming of parts. Japonica⁸

5 Glistens like coral in all of the neighbouring gardens,

And today we have naming of parts.

This is the lower sling swivel. And this

Is the upper sling swivel, whose use you will see,

When you are given your slings. And this is the piling
swivel,

io Which in your case you have not got. The branches
Hold in the gardens their silent, eloquent gestures,
Which in our case we have not got.

This is the safety-catch, which is always released
With an easy flick of the thumb. And please do not let me

15 See anyone using his finger. You can do it quite easy
one's state in this life is a result of actions in past

7. The opening lines of a Latin poem by Horace
incarnations, and that action in this life can deter-
(3.26), but with Horace's word *puellis* (girls)

mine one's destiny in future incarnations. Reed
changed to *duellis* (war, battles): "Lately I have
deliberately misspells Karma and confuses it with
lived in the midst of battles, creditably enough, /
Buddha.

And have soldiered, not without glory."

5. A portable foot pump used to combat fires dur-

8. The flowering quince (*Cydonia japonica*), a
ing the Blitz.

shrub with brilliant scarlet flowers.

6. I.e., radio.

LESSONS OF THE WAR / 1565

If you have any strength in your thumb. The blossoms
Are fragile and motionless, never letting anyone see
Any of them using their finger.

And this you can see is the bolt. The purpose of this

20 Is to open the breech, as you see. We can slide it
Rapidly backwards and forwards: we call this
Easing the spring.⁹ And rapidly backwards and forwards
The early bees are assaulting and fumbling the flowers:
They call it easing the Spring.
25 They call it easing the Spring: it is perfectly easy
If you have any strength in your thumb: like the bolt,
And the breech, and the cocking-piece, and the point of
balance,
Which in our case we have not got; and the almond-blossom
Silent in all of the gardens and the bees going backwards and
forwards,
30 For today we have naming of parts.

1 9 4 2 1 9 4 6

2. Judging Distances

Not only how far away, but the way that you say it
Is very important. Perhaps you may never get
The knack of judging a distance, but at least you know
How to report on a landscape: the central sector,
5 The right of arc and that, which we had last Tuesday,
And at least you know
That maps are of time,¹ not place, so far as the army
Happens to be concerned—the reason being,
Is one which need not delay us. Again, you know
io There are three kinds of tree, three only, the fir and the
poplar,
And those which have bushy tops to; and lastly
That things only seem to be things.
A barn is not called a barn, to put it more plainly,

Or a field in the distance, where sheep may be safely grazing.

15 You must never be over-sure. You must say, when reporting:

At five o'clock in the central sector is a dozen
Of what appear to be animals; whatever you do,
Don't call the bleeders *sheep*.

I am sure that's quite clear; and suppose, for the sake of example,

20 The one at the end, asleep, endeavours to tell us
What he sees over there to the west, and how far away,
After first having come to attention. There to the west,
On the fields of summer the sun and the shadows bestow
Vestments of purple and gold.

9. Moving the bolt of a rifle "rapidly backwards

1. I.e., they convey the locations of targets
and forwards," thereby ejecting any bullets remain-
through an imaginary clock with a topographical
ing in the magazine and taking pressure off the
feature at its center.

spring.

1572 / D Y L A N T H O M A S

25 The still white dwellings are like a mirage
in the heat, And under the swaying elms
a man and a woman Lie gently together. Which
is, perhaps, only to say That there is a row
of houses to the left of arc, And that under
some poplars a pair of what appear to be
humans 30 Appear to be loving.

Well that, for an answer, is what we might
rightly call Moderately satisfactory only,

the reason being, I sth at two things have been omitted, and those are important.

The human beings, now: in what direction are they, 35 And how far away, would you say? And do not forget There may be dead ground 2 in between.

There may be dead ground in between; and I may not have got The knack of judging a distance; I will only venture A guess that perhaps between me and the apparent lovers 40 (Who, incidentally, appear by now to have finished) At seven o'clock from the house, is roughly a distance O of about one year and a half.

1943 1946

DYLAN THOMAS

1914-1953

The Force That Through the Green Fuse Drives the Flower

The force that through the green fuse drives the flower Drives my green age; that blasts the roots of trees Is my destroyer.

And I am dumb to tell the crooked rose

5 My youth is bent by the same wintry fever.

The force that drives the water through the rocks Drives my red blood; that dries the mouthing streams Turns mine to wax.

And I am dumb to mouth hunt to my veins

io How at the mountains spring the same mouths suck.

The hand that whirls the water in the pool

Stirs the quicksand; that ropes the blowing wind Hauls my shrouds aile.

And I am dumb to tell the hanging man

15 How of my clay is made the hangman's lime. 2

2. Military term for space that cannot be reached making the water curative.

by fire from a given weapon or a given point. 2. Quicklime poured into the graves of people 1. In John 5.1—4, an angel stirs the pool Bethesda, publically hanged, to hasten decomposition.

AFTER THE FUNERAL / 1567

The lips of time leech to the fountain head;
Love drips and gathers, but the fallen blood
Shall calm her sores.

And I am dumb to tell a weather's wind
20 How time has ticked a heaven round the stars.
And I am dumb to tell the lover's tomb
How at my sheet³ goes the same crooked worm.

1934

The Hand That Signed the Paper
The hand that signed the paper felled a city;
Five sovereign fingers taxed the breath,
Doubled the globe of dead and halved a country;
These five kings did a king to death.

5 The mighty hand leads to a sloping shoulder,
The finger joints are cramped with chalk;
A goose's quill has put an end to murder
That put an end to talk.

The hand that signed the treaty bred a fever,
io And famine grew, and locusts came;
Great is the hand that holds dominion over
Man by a scribbled name.

The five kings count the dead but do not soften
The crusted wound nor stroke the brow;
15 A hand rules pity as a hand rules heaven;
Hands have no tears to flow.

1 9 3 6

After the Funeral

*(In Memory of Ann Jones)*⁴

After the funeral, mule praises, brays,
Windshake of sailshaped ears, muffle-toed tap
Tap happily of one peg in the thick
Grave's foot, blinds down the lids, the teeth in black,
5 The spittled eyes, the salt ponds in the sleeves,
Morning smack of the spade that wakes up sleep,
Shakes a desolate boy who slits his throat
3. Corpse's winding-sheet.

rented farm, in the Welsh countryside, was Fern

4. Ann [Williams] Jones (d. 1933), Dylan Tho-
Hill (seep. 1571).

mas's maternal aunt, married a tenant farmer; their

1 5 7 2 / D Y L A N T H O M A S

**In the dark of the coffin and sheds dry leaves,
That breaks one bone to light with a judgment clout,
io After the feast of tear-stuffed time and thistles
In a room with a stuffed fox and a stale fern,
I stand, for this memorial's sake, alone
In the snivelling hours with dead, h u m p e d Ann
W h o s e hooded, fountain heart o n c e fell in puddles**

15 Round the parched worlds of W a l e s and drowned
each sun

(Though this for her is a monstrous image blindly

Magnified out of praise; her death was a still drop;

She would not have me sinking in the holy

Flood of her heart's fame; she would lie dumb and deep

20 And n e e d no druid⁵ of her broken body).

But I, Ann's bard on a raised hearth, call all

The seas to service that her wood-tongued virtue

Babble like a bellbuoy over the hymning heads,

Bow down the walls of the ferned and foxy woods

25 That her love sing and swing through a brown chapel,

Bless her bent spirit with four, crossing birds.

Her flesh was m e e k as milk, but this skyward statue

With the wild breast and blessed and giant skull

Is carved from her in a room with a wet w i n d o w

30 In a fiercely mourning h o u s e in a crooked year.

I know her scrubbed and sour humble hands

Lie with religion in their cramp, her threadbare

Whisper in a damp word, her wits drilled hollow,

Her fist of a face died c l e n c h e d on a round pain;

35 And sculptured Ann is seventy years of stone.

These cloud-sopped, marble hands, this m o n u m e n t a l

Argument of the h e w n voice, gesture and psalm,

Storm me forever over her grave until

The stuffed lung of the fox twitch and cry Love

40 And the strutting fern lay seeds on the black sill.

f 9 3 9

The Hunchback in the Park

The h u n c h b a c k in the park

A solitary mister

Propped between trees and water

From the opening of the garden lock

5 That lets the trees and water enter

Until the Sunday sombre bell at dark⁶

Eating bread from a newspaper

Drinking water from the chained cup

That the children filled with gravel

5. Priest, among ancient Celts of Gaul or Britain; 6. The bell that warns visitors that the park gates also, magician or soothsayer. are about to be closed for the night.

**A R E F U S A L T O M O U R N T H E D E A T H , B Y F I
R E , O F A C H I L D / 1 5 6 9**

10 In the fountain basin where I sailed my ship

Slept at night in a dog kennel

But nobody chained him up.

Like the park birds he c a m e early

Like the water he sat down

15 And Mister they called Hey mister

T h e truant boys from the town

Running w h e n he had heard them clearly

On out of sound

Past lake and rockery

20 Laughing when he shook his paper

H u n c h b a c k e d in mockery

Through the loud zoo of the willow groves

Dodging the park keeper

W i t h his stick that picked up leaves.
25 And the old dog sleeper
Alone between nurses and swans
While the boys a m o n g willows
Made the tigers jump out of their eyes
To roar on the rockery stones
30 And the groves were blue with sailors
Made all day until bell time
A w o m a n figure without fault
Straight as a young elm
Straight and tall from his crooked b o n e s
35 That she might stand in the night
After the locks and chains
All night in the u n m a d e park
After the railings and shrubberies
T h e birds the grass the trees the lake
40 And the wild boys innocent as strawberries
Had followed the h u n c h b a c k
To his kennel in the dark.

1 9 4 2

A Refusal to Mourn the Death, by Fire,⁷ of a Child in London

Never until the mankind making
Bird beast and flower
Fathering and all humbling darkness
Tells with silence the last light breaking
5 And the still hour
Is c o m e of the sea tumbling in harness

7. During the firebombing of London, known as the Blitz, in World War II.

1 5 7 0 / D Y L A N T H O M A S

And I must enter again the round

Zion⁸ of the water bead

And the synagogue of the ear of corn

io Shall I let pray the shadow of a soun d

Or sow my salt seed

In the least valley of sackcloth to mourn

The majesty and burning of the child's death.

I shall not murder

15 The mankind of her going with a grave truth

Nor blaspheme down the stations of the breath

With any further

Elegy of i n n o c e n c e and youth.

D e e p with the first dead lies London's daughter,

20 Robed in the long friends,

T h e grains beyond age, the dark veins of her mother,

Secret by the unmourning water

Of the riding Thames.⁹

After the first death, there is no other.

1 9 4 6

The Conversation of Prayer

T h e conversation of prayers about to be said

By the child going to bed and the man on the stairs

W h o climbs to his dying love in her high room,

The o n e not caring to w h o m in his sleep he will move

5 And the other full of tears that she will be dead,

Turns in the dark on the sound they know will arise
Into the answering skies from the green ground,
From the man on the stairs and the child by his bed.
The sound about to be said in the two prayers
io For the sleep in a safe land and the love who dies
Will be the same grief flying. Who shall they calm?
Shall the child sleep unharmed or the man be crying?
The conversation of prayers about to be said
Turns on the quick and the dead, and the man on the stairs
15 Tonight shall find no dying but alive and warm
In the fire of his care his love in the high room.
And the child not caring to whom he climbs his prayer
Shall drown in a grief as deep as his true grave,
And mark the dark eyed wave, through the eyes of sleep,
20 Dragging him up the stairs to one who lies dead.

1946

8. Heaven (from a Palestinian citadel, the nucleus 9. River that flows through London, of Jerusalem).

FERNHILL / 1571

Fern Hill¹

Now as I was young and easy under the apple boughs
About the lilting house and happy as the grass was
green,
The night above the dingle² starry,
Time let me hail and climb
5 Golden in the heydays of his eyes,
And honoured among wagons I was prince of the apple
towns
And once below a time I lordly had the trees and leaves

Trail with daisies and barley

D o w n the rivers of the windfall light.

**10 And as I was green and carefree, famous among the
barns**

About the happy yard and singing as the farm was home,

In the sun that is young o n c e only,

Time let me play and be

Golden in the mercy of his means,

**15 And green and golden I was h u n t s m a n and
herdsman, the calves**

**Sang to my horn, the foxes on the hills barked clear and
cold,**

And the sabbath rang slowly

In the pebbles of the holy streams.

All the sun long it was running, it was lovely, the hay

**20 Fields high as the house, the tunes from the chimneys, it
was air**

And playing, lovely and watery

And fire green as grass.

And nightly under the simple stars

As I rode to sleep the owls were bearing the farm away,

**25 All the m o o n long I heard, blessed a m o n g stables,
the night-jars Flying with the ricks,³ and the horses**

Flashing into the dark.

And then to awake, and the farm, like a wanderer white

**With the dew, c o m e back, the cock on his shoulder: it
was all**

30 Shining, it was Adam and maiden,⁴

T h e sky gathered again

And the sun grew round that very day.

**So it must have been after the birth of the simple light
In the first, spinning place, the spellbound horses walking
warm**

35 Out of the whinnying green stable

On to the fields of praise.

**And honoured among foxes and pheasants by the gay
house**

**Under the new made clouds and happy as the heart was
long,**

In the sun born over and over,

40 I ran my heedless ways,

My wishes raced through the house high hay

**And nothing I cared, at my sky blue trades, that time
allows**

In all his tuneful turning so few and such morning songs

1. Welsh farm, rented by Thomas's aunt and

3. Haystacks. *Night-jars*: nocturnal birds.

uncle, in which he spent summer holidays as a boy.

4. Adam and Eve (Genesis 1).

2. Small wooded valley.

1 5 7 2 / D Y L A N T H O M A S

Before the children green and golden

45 Follow him out of grace,

**Nothing I cared, in the lamb white days, that time would
take me**

Up to the swallow thronged loft by the shadow of my hand,

In the moon that is always rising,

Nor that riding to sleep

50 I should hear him fly with the high fields

And wake to the farm forever fled from the childless land.

**Oh as I was young and easy in the mercy of his means,
Time held me green and dying
T h o u g h I sang in my chains like the sea.**

1 9 4 6

In My Craft or Sullen Art

In my craft or sullen art

Exercised in the still night

W h e n only the m o o n rages

And the lovers lie abed

5 W i t h all their griefs in their arms,

I labour by singing light

N o t for ambition or bread

Or the strut and trade of charms

On the ivory stages

io But for the c o m m o n wages

Of their most secret heart.

N o t for the proud man apart

From the raging m o o n I write

On these spindrift⁵ pages

15 Nor for the towering dead

With their nightingales and psalms

But for the lovers, their arms

Round the griefs of the ages,

W h o pay no praise or wages

20 Nor heed my craft or art.

1 9 4 6

Do Not Go Gentle into That Good Night⁶

Do not go gentle into that good night,

Old age should burn and rave at close of day;

Rage, rage against the dying of the light.

5. Driven by the wind, like sea spray.

6. This villanelle was written in May 1951, during the final, prolonged illness of Thomas's father.

A L L D A Y I T H A S R A I N E D / 1 5 7 3

T h o u g h wise men at their end know dark is right,

5 Because their words had forked no lightning they

Do not go gentle into that good night.

Good men, the last wave by, crying h o w bright

Their frail deeds might have danced in a green bay,

Rage, rage against the dying of the light.

io Wild men w h o caught and sang the sun in flight,

And learn, too late, they grieved it on its way,

Do not go gentle into that good night.

Grave men, near death, who see with blinding sight

Blind eyes could blaze like meteors and be gay,

15 Rage, rage against the dying of the light.

And you, my father, there on the sad height,

Curse, bless, me n o w with your fierce tears, I pray.

Do not go gentle into that good night.

Rage, rage against the dying of the light.

1 9 5 2

ALUN LEWIS

1915-1944

All Day It Has Rained

All day it has rained, and we on the edge of the moors

Have sprawled in our bell-tents,1 moody and dull as boors,

Groundsheets and blankets spread on the muddy ground

And from the first grey wakening we have found

5 No refuge from the skirmishing fine rain

And the wind that made the canvas heave and flap

And the taut wet guy-ropes ravel out and snap.

All day the rain has glided, wave and mist and dream,

Drenching the gorse and heather, a gossamer stream

10 Too light to stir the acorns that suddenly

Snatched from their cups by the wild south-westerly

Pattered against the tent and our upturned dreaming
faces.

And we stretched out, unbuttoning our braces,

Smoking a Woodbine, 2 darning dirty socks,

15 Reading the Sunday papers—I saw a fox

And mentioned it in the note I scribbled home;—

And we talked of girls, and dropping bombs on Rome,

And thought of the quiet dead and the loud celebrities

Exhorting us to slaughter, and the herded refugees;

1. Conical tents with a central pole.

2. Brand of cheap cigarette.

1574 / A L U N L E W I S

20 —Yet thought softly, morosely of them, and as
indifferently

As of ourselves or those whom we

For years have loved, and will again

Tomorrow maybe love; but now it is the rain

Possesses us entirely, the twilight and the rain.

25 And I can remember nothing dearer or more to my
heart

**Than the children I watched in the woods on Saturday
Shaking down burning chestnuts for the schoolyard's
merry play,**

Or the shaggy patient dog who followed me

By Sheet and Steep and up the wooded scree³

**30 To the Shoulder o' Mutton where Edward Thomas
brooded long**

On death and beauty—till a bullet stopped his song.⁴

1 9 4 0

1 9 4 1 , 1 9 4 2

Song

(On seeing dead bodies floating off the Cape⁵)

The first month of his absence

I was numb and sick

And where he'd left his promise

Life did not turn or kick.

5 The seed, the seed of love was sick.

The second month my eyes were sunk

In the darkness of despair,

And my bed was like a grave

And his ghost was lying there,

io And my heart was sick with care.

The third month of his going

I thought I heard him say

“Our course deflected slightly

On the thirty-second day—”

15 The tempest blew his words away.

And he was lost among the waves,

His ship rolled helpless in the sea,

The fourth month of his voyage

He shouted grievously

20 “Beloved, do not think of me.”

The flying fish like kingfishers

Skim the sea’s bewildered crests,

3. Mass of debris at the foot of a cliff. *Sheet and Trumpet and Other Poems*: “I have been garrisoned *Steep*: villages.

for six months in Edward Thomas country and

4. The English poet Edward Thomas (1878-1917; walked his walks. I have sheltered from the rain in see pp. 1253-56) was killed in World War I. In the the beautiful house he built but did not inhabit.”

issue of the magazine *Horizon* in which this poem *Shoulder o’ Mutton*: a hill in Hampshire.

first appeared, Lewis reviewed Thomas’s *The*

5. The Cape of Good Hope, South Africa.

GOODBYE / 1 5 7 5

T h e w h a l e s b l o w s t e a m i n g f o u n t a i n s ,

T h e s e a g u l l s h a v e n o n e s t s

2 5 W h e r e m y l o v e r s w a y s a n d r e s t s .

W e n e v e r t h o u g h t t o b u y a n d s e l l

T h i s l i f e t h a t b l o o m s o r w i t h e r s i n t h e l e a f ,
A n d I ’ l l n o t s t i r , s o h e s l e e p s w e l l ,

T h o u g h c e l l b y c e l l t h e c o r a l r e e f

3 0 B u i l d s a n e t e r n i t y o f g r i e f .

B u t o h ! t h e d r a g a n d d u l l n e s s o f m y S e l f ; T h e
r e t u r n i n g s e a s o n s w i t h e r i n m y h e a d ;

A l l t h i s s l o w n e s s , a l l t h i s h a r d n e s s ,

**The nearness that is waiting in my bed,
35 The gradual self-effacement of the dead.**

1944

Goodbye

So we must say Goodbye, my darling,

And go, as lovers go, forever;

**Tonight remains, to pack and fix on labels
And make an end of flying down together.**

5 I put a final shilling in the gas, 6

**And watch you slip your dress below your knees
And lies so still I hear your rustling comb
Modulate the autumn in the trees.**

**And all the countless things I shall remember
io Lay mummy-cloths 7 of silence round
my head; I fill the car a few with a drink of water;**

You say "We paid a guinea 8 for this bed,"

**And then, "We'll leave some gas, a little warmth
For the next resident, and these dry flowers,"**

**15 And turn your face away, afraid to speak
The big word, that Eternity is ours.**

**Your kisses close my eyes and yet you stare
As though God struck a child with nameless
fears; Perhaps the water glitters and discloses
20 Time's chalice and its limpid useless tears.**

**Everything we renounce except ourselves
; Selfishness is the last to go;**

6. Gas fire, the fuel supply of which is controlled mummy.

by a meter that must be fed with shilling coins. 8. Old British currency: one pound and one shil-7. Bandages wrapped around

an Egyptian ling (105p.).

1 5 7 6 / M A R G A R E T W A L K E R

**Our sighs are exhalations of the earth,
Our footprints leave a track across the snow.
25 We made the universe to be our h o m e ,
Our nostrils took the wind to be our breath,
Our hearts are massive towers of delight,
We stride across the seven seas of death.
Yet w h e n all's done you'll keep the emerald
30 I placed upon your finger in the street;
And I will keep the patches⁹ that you sewed
On my old battledress tonight, my sweet.**

1 9 4 5

MARGARET WALKER

1915-1998

Since 1619¹

**H o w many years since 1 6 1 9 have I been singing
Spirituals?**

**H o w long have I been praising God and shouting
hallelujahs?**

H o w long have I been hated and hating?

H o w long have I been living in hell for heaven?

**5 W h e n will I see my brother's face wearing another
color?**

W h e n will I be ready to die in a honest fight?

**W h e n will I be conscious of the struggle—now to do or
die?**

W h e n will these scales fall away from my eyes?²

W h a t will I say w h e n days of wrath³ descend:

**io W h e n the money-gods take all my life away;
W h e n the death knell sounds
And p e a c e is a flag of far-flung blood and filth?
W h e n will I understand the cheated and the cheaters;
Their paltry pittances and cold c o n c e s s i o n s to my
pride?**

**15 W h e n will I burst from my kennel an angry mongrel,
Lean and hungry and tired of my dry bones and years?**

1 9 4 2

9. Cloth badges of rank attached to a soldier's uniform.
9.18: "And immediately there fell from his eyes as
form.

it had been scales: and he received sight forthwith,

1. The year that the first African slaves arrived in
and arose, and was baptized."

Jamestown, Virginia, aboard a Dutch frigate.

3. According to the Bible (e.g., Zephaniah 1.1.15),

2. Cf. the account of Saul's conversion in Acts
days of God's judgment.

W O M A N T O M A N / 1 5 7 7

Childhood

**W h e n I was a child I knew red miners
dressed raggedly and wearing carbide lamps.**

**I saw t h e m c o m e down red hills to their camps
dyed with red dust from old Ishkooda⁴ mines.**

**5 Night after night I met them on the roads,
or on the streets in town I caught their glance;
the swing of dinner buckets in their hands,**

and grumbling undermining all their words.

I also lived in low cotton country

**10 where moonlight hovered over ripe haystacks,
or stumps of trees, and croppers' rotting shacks
with famine, terror, flood, and plague near by;
where sentiment and hatred still held sway
and only bitter land was washed away.**

1 9 4 2

J U D I T H W R I G H T

1915-2000

Woman to Man

**The eyeless labourer in the night,
the selfless, shapeless seed I hold,
builds for its resurrection day—
silent and swift and deep from sight
5 foresees the unimagined light.**

**This is no child with a child's face;
this has no name to name it by:
yet you and I have known it well.**

**This is our hunter and our chase,
io the third w h o lay in our embrace.**

**This is the strength that your arm knows,
the arc of flesh that is my breast,
the precise crystals of our eyes.**

**This is the blood's wild tree that grows
15 the intricate and folded rose.**

**This is the maker and the made;
this is the question and reply;**

4. South of Birmingham, Alabama, where Walker's family lived until she was five. The sestet of this sonnet shifts to her second childhood home, near New Orleans.

1 5 7 8 / J U D I T H W R I G H T

the blind head butting at the dark,

the blaze of light along the blade.

20 Oh hold me, for I am afraid.

1 9 4 9

Train Journey

Glassed with cold sleep and dazzled by the moon,

out of the c o n f u s e d hammering dark of the train

I looked and saw under the moon's cold sheet

your delicate dry breasts, country that built my heart;

5 and the small trees on their uncoloured slope

like poetry moved, articulate and sharp

and purposeful under the great dry flight of air,

under the crosswise currents of wind and star.

C l e n c h down your strength, box-tree and ironbark.1

io Break with your violent root the virgin rock.

Draw from the flying dark its breath of dew

till the unliving c o m e to life in you.

Be over the blind rock a skin of sense,

under the barren height a slender dance ...

15 I woke and saw the dark small trees that burn

suddenly into flowers more lovely than the white moon.

1 9 5 3

Request to a Year

If the year is meditating a suitable gift,

I should like it to be the attitude

of my great-great-grandmother,
legendary devotee of the arts,
5 who, having had eight children
and little opportunity for painting pictures,
sat o n e day on a high rock
beside a river in Switzerland
and from a difficult distance viewed
io her s e c o n d son, balanced on a small ice-floe,
drift down the current towards a waterfall
that struck rock-bottom eighty feet below,

1. Australian eucalyptus tree.

E V E T O H E R D A U G H T E R S / 1 5 7 9

while her second daughter, impeded,
no doubt, by the petticoats of the day,
15 stretched out a last-hope alpenstock²
(which luckily later caught him on his way).
Nothing, it was evident, could be done;
and with the artist's isolating eye
my great-great-grandmother hastily sketched the scene.
20 The sketch survives to prove the story by.
Year, if you have no Mother's day present planned;
reach back and bring me the firmness of her hand.

1 9 5 3

Eve³ to Her Daughters

It was not I w h o began it.

Turned out into draughty caves,
hungry so often, having to work for our bread,
hearing the children whining,

**5 I was nevertheless not unhappy.
W h e r e A d a m went I was fairly contented to go.
I adapted myself to the punishment: it was my life.
But Adam, you know ... !
He kept on brooding over the insult,
io over the trick The y had played on us, over the scolding.
He had discovered a flaw in himself
and he had to make up for it.
Outside Eden the earth was imperfect,
the seasons changed, the game was fleet-footed,
15 he had to work for our living, and he didn't like it.
He even complained of my cooking
(it was hard to compete with Heaven).
So he set to work.
T h e earth must be made a n e w Eden
20 with central heating, domesticated animals,
m e c h a n i c a l harvesters, combustion engines,
escalators, refrigerators,
and modern m e a n s of communication
and multiplied opportunities for safe investment
25 and higher education for Abel and Cain
and the rest of the family.
You can see h o w his pride had b e e n hurt.**

2. Staff used in mountain climbing.

3. According to Genesis, the first woman, wife of Adam.

1 5 8 0 / D A V I D G A S C O Y N E

In the process he had to unravel everything,
because he believed that mechanism

30 was the whole secret—he was always mechanical-minded.
He got to the very inside of the whole machine
exclaiming as he went, So this is how it works!
And now that I know how it works, why, I must have invented
it.
As for God and the Other, they cannot be demonstrated,
35 and what cannot be demonstrated
doesn't exist.
You see, he had always been jealous.
Yes, he got to the centre
where nothing at all can be demonstrated.
40 And clearly he doesn't exist; but he refuses
to accept the conclusion.
You see, he was always an egotist.
It was warmer than this in the cave;
there was none of this fall-out.
45 I would suggest, for the sake of the children,
that it's time you took over.
But you are my daughters, you inherit my own faults of
character;
you are submissive, following Adam
even beyond existence.
50 Faults of character have their own logic
and it always works out.
I observed this with Abel and Cain.
Perhaps the whole elaborate fable
right from the beginning
55 is meant to demonstrate this; perhaps it's the whole secret.
Perhaps nothing exists but our faults?

At least they can be demonstrated.

But it's useless to make

such a suggestion to Adam.

60 He has turned himself into God,

who is faultless, and doesn't exist.

1 9 6 6

DAVID GASCOYNE

1916-2001

Yves Tanguy¹

The worlds are breaking in my head

Blown by the brainless wind

1. American (French-born) Surrealist painter (1900—1955).

E C C E H O M O / 1 5 8 1

That c o m e s from afar

Swollen with dusk and dust

5 And hysterical rain

The fading cries of the light

Awaken the endless desert

Engrossed in its tropical slumber

Enclosed by the dead grey oceans

10 Enclasped by the arms of the night

The worlds are breaking in my head

Their fragments are crumbs of despair

The food of the solitary damned

W h o await the gross tumult of turbulent

15 Days bringing change without end.

The worlds are breaking in my head

The fuming future sleeps no more

**For their seeds are beginning to grow
To creep and to cry midst the
20 Rocks of the deserts to c o m e
Planetary seed
S o w n by the grotesque wind
W h o s e head is so swollen with rumours
W h o s e hands are so urgent with tumours
25 W h o s e feet are so deep in the sand.**

1 9 3 6

Ecce Homo²

**W h o s e is this horrifying face,
This putrid flesh, discoloured, flayed,
Fed on by flies, scorched by the sun?
W h o s e are these hollow red-filmed eyes
5 And thorn-spiked head and spear-stuck side?
Behold the Man: He is Man's Son.
Forget the legend, tear the decent veil
That cowardice or interest devised
To make their mortal e n e m y a friend,
io To hide the bitter truth all His w o u n d s tell,
Lest the great scandal be no more disguised:
He is in agony till the world's end,**

2. Behold the man (Latin); Pilate's words when presenting Christ, beaten and crowned with thorns before his Crucifixion, to the people (John 19.5).

1 5 8 2 / D A V I D G A S C O Y N E

And we must never sleep during that time!

He is suspended on the cross-tree now

15 And we are onlookers at the crime,

Callous contemporaries of the slow
Torture of God. Here is the hill
Made ghastly by His spattered blood
Whereon He hangs and suffers still:
20 See, the centurions wear riding-boots,
Black shirts and badges and peaked caps,
Greet one another with raised-arm salutes;
They have cold eyes, unsmiling lips;
Yet these His brothers know not what they do.³
25 And on his either side hang dead
A labourer and a factory hand,
Or one is maybe a lynched Jew
And one a Negro or a Red,
Coolie or Ethiopian, Irishman,
30 Spaniard or German democrat.
Behind His lolling head the sky
Glares like a fiery cataract
Red with the murders of two thousand years
Committed in His name and by
35 Crusaders, Christian warriors
Defending faith and property.
Amid the plain beneath His transfixed hands,
Exuding darkness as indelible
As guilty stains, fanned by funereal
40 And lurid airs, besieged by drifting sands
And clefted⁰ landslides our about-to-be *cloven, split*
Bombed and abandoned cities stand.
He who wept for Jerusalem

Now sees His prophecy extend
45 Across the greatest cities of the world,
A guilty panic reason cannot stem
Rising to raze^o them all as He foretold; *knock down*
And He must watch this drama to the end.

Though often named, He is unknown
50 To the dark kingdoms at His feet
Where everything disparages His words,
And each man bears the common guilt alone
And goes blindfolded to his fate,
And fear and greed are sovereign lords.

3. “Then said Jesus, Father, forgive them; for they know not what they do” (Luke 23.34).

S T O R I E S O F S N O W / 1 5 8 3

**55 T h e turning point of history
Must c o m e . Yet the complacent and the proud
And w h o exploit and kill, may be d e n i e d —
Christ of Revolution and of Poetry—**

T h e resurrection and the life⁴

60 W r o u g h t by your spirit’s blood.

Involved in their o w n sophistry

T h e black priest and the upright man

Faced by subversive truth shall be struck dumb,

Christ of Revolution and of Poetry,

65 W h i l e the rejected and c o n d e m n e d b e c o m e

Agents of the divine.

N o t from a monstrance⁵ silver-wrought

But from the tree of h u m a n pain

**Redeem our sterile misery,
70 Christ of Revolution and of Poetry,
That man's long journey through the night
May not have been in vain.**

1943

P. K. PAGE

b. 1916

Stories of Snow

**T h o s e in the vegetable rain retain
an area behind their sprouting eyes
held soft and rounded with the dream of snow
precious and reminiscent as those globes—
5 souvenir of some never-nether land—
w h i c h hold their snow-storms circular, complete,
high in a tall and teakwood cabinet.**

**In countries where the leaves are large as hands
where flowers protrude their fleshy chins
io and call their colors,
an imaginary snow-storm sometimes falls
a m o n g the lilies.**

**And in the early morning one will waken
to think the glowing linen of his pillow
15 a northern drift, will find himself mistaken
and lie back weeping.**

4. "Jesus said unto her, I am the resurrection, and
(sanctified bread or wafer) is carried in the Roman
the life" (John 11.25).

Catholic service known as the Mass.

5. Open or transparent box in which the Host
1 5 8 4 / P . K . P A G E

And there the story shifts from head to head,
of how in Holland, from their feather beds
hunters arise and part the flakes and go
20 forth to the frozen lakes in search of swans—
the snow-light falling white along their guns,
their breath in plumes.

While tethered in the wind like sleeping gulls
ice-boats wait the raising of their wings
25 to skim the electric ice at such a speed
they leap jet strips of naked water,
and how these flying, sailing hunters feel
air in their mouths as terrible as ether.

And on the story runs that even drinks
30 in that white landscape dare to be no color;
how flaked and water clear, the liquor slips
silver against the hunters' moving hips.

And of the swan in death these dreamers tell
of its last flight and how it falls, a plummet,
35 pierced by the freezing bullet
and how three feathers, loosened by the shot,
descend like snow upon it.

While hunters plunge their fingers in its down
deep as a drift, and dive their hands
40 up to the neck of the wrist
in that warm metamorphosis of snow
as gentle as the sort that woodsmen know

who, lost in the white circle, fall at last
and dream their way to death.

45 And stories of this kind are often told
in countries where great flowers bar the roads
with reds and blues which seal the route to snow—
as if, in telling, raconteurs unlock
the color with its complement and go
50 through to the area behind the eyes
where silent, unrefractive whiteness lies.

1 9 4 6

Deaf-Mute in the Pear Tree

His clumsy body is a golden fruit
pendulous in the pear tree

Blunt fingers among the multitudinous buds

Adriatic¹ blue the sky above and through

5 the forking twigs

1. Adriatic Sea, part of the Mediterranean Sea.

D E A F - M U T E I N T H E P E A R T R E E / 1 5 8 5

Sun ruddying tree's trunk, his trunk

his massive head thick-nobbed with burnished curls

tight-clenched in bud

(Painting by Generalic.² Primitive.)

10 I watch him prune with silent secateurs⁰ *pruning shears*

Boots in the crotch of branches shift their weight

heavily as oxen in a stall

Hear small inarticulate mewes from his locked mouth

a kitten in a box

15 Pear clippings fall

soundlessly on the ground
Spring finches sing
soundlessly in the leaves
A stone. A stone in ears and on his tongue
20 Through palm and fingertip he knows the tree's
quick springtime pulse
Smells in its sap the sweet incipient pears
Pale sunlight's choppy water glistens on
his mutely snipping blades
25 and flags and scraps of blue
above him make regatta of the day *boat race*
But when he sees his wife's foreshortened shape
sudden and silent in the grass below
uptilt its face to him
30 then air is kisses, kisses
stone dissolves
his locked throat finds a little door
and through it feathered joy
flies screaming like a jay

1 9 8 5

2. Ivan Generalic (1914—1992), Croatian painter in a “naive,”
or “primitive,” style.

1 5 8 6

G W E N D O L Y N B R O O K S

1917-2000

kitchenette building

We are things of dry hours and the involuntary plan,
Grayed in, and gray. “Dream” makes a giddy sound, not strong

Like “rent,” “feeding a wife,” “satisfying a man.”
But could a dream send up through onion fumes
5 Its white and violet, fight with fried potatoes
And yesterday’s garbage ripening in the hall,
Flutter, or sing an aria down these rooms
Even if we were willing to let it in,
Had time to warm it, keep it very clean,
io Anticipate a message, let it begin?
We wonder. But not well! not for a minute!
Since Number Five is out of the bathroom now,
We think of lukewarm water, hope to get in it.

1 9 4 5

my dreams, my works, must wait till after hell
I hold my honey and I store my bread
In little jars and cabinets of my will.
I label clearly, and each latch and lid
I bid, Be firm till I return from hell.
5 I am very hungry. I am incomplete.
And none can tell when I may dine again.
No man can give me any word but Wait,
The puny light. I keep eyes pointed in;
Hoping that, when the devil days of my hurt
io Drag out to their last dregs and I resume
On such legs as are left me, in such heart
As I can manage, remember to go home,
My taste will not have turned insensitive
To honey and bread old purity could love.

1 9 4 5

the birth in a narrow room

Weeps out of western country something new.

Blurred and stupendous. Wanted and unplanned.

T H E B E A N E A T E R S / 1 5 8 7

Winks. Twines, and weakly winks

Upon the milk-glass fruit bowl, iron pot,

5 The bashful china child tipping forever

Yellow apron and spilling pretty cherries.

Now, weeks and years will go before she thinks

“How pinchy is my room! how can I breathe!

I am not anything and I have got

10 Not anything, or anything to do!”—

But prances nevertheless with gods and fairies

Blithely about the pump and then beneath

The elms and grapevines, then in darling endeavor

By privy foyer, where the screenings stand

15 And where the bugs buzz by in private cars

Across old peach cans and old jelly jars.

1 9 4 9

the rites for Cousin Vit

Carried her unprotesting out the door.

Kicked back the casket-stand. But it can't hold her,

That stuff and satin aiming to enfold her,

The lid's contrition nor the bolts before.

5 Oh oh. Too much. Too much. Even now, surmise,

She rises in the sunshine. There she goes,

Back to the bars she knew and the repose

In love-rooms and the things in people's eyes.

Too vital and too squeaking. Must emerge,
io Even now she does the snake-hips with a hiss,
Slops the bad wine across her shantung,1 talks
Of pregnancy, guitars and bridgework, walks
In parks or alleys, comes haply on the verge
Of happiness, haply hysterics. Is.

1 9 4 9

The Bean Eaters

They eat beans mostly, this old yellow pair.

Dinner is a casual affair.

Plain chipware on a plain and creaking wood,

Tin flatware.

5 Two who are Mostly Good.

Two who have lived their day,

1. Silk of an uneven texture.

1 5 8 8 / G W E N D O L Y N B R O O K S

But keep on putting on their clothes

And putting things away.

And remembering ...

10 Remembering, with twinklings and twinges,

As they lean over the beans in their rented back room that is
full of

beads and receipts and dolls and clothes, tobacco crumbs,
vases

and fringes.

1 9 6 0

We Real Cool

**T H E P O O L P L A Y E R S . S E V E N A T T H E G O L
D E N S H O V E L .**

We real cool. We
Left school. We
Lurk late. We
Strike straight. We
Sing sin. We
Thin gin. We
Jazz June. We
Die soon.

1 9 6 0

Medgar Evers²

For Charles Evers

The man whose height his fear improved he
arranged to fear no further. The raw
intoxicated time was time for better birth or
a final death.

5 Old styles, old tempos, all the engagement of
the day—the sedate, the regulated fray—
the antique light, the Moral rose, old gusts,
tight whistlings from the past, the mothballs
in the Love at last our man forswore.

io Medgar Evers annoyed confetti and assorted
brands of businessmen's eyes.

2. Prominent black civil rights activist (1925—ored People) in
Mississippi, he was murdered by a 1963). The first field
secretary of the NAACP white supremacist.

(National Association for the Advancement of Col-

BOY BREAKING GLASS / 1 5 8 9

The shows came down: to maxims and surprise.
And palsy.

Roaring no rapt arise-ye to the dead, he
15 leaned across tomorrow. People said that
he was holding clean globes in his hands.

1 9 6 8

Boy Breaking Glass

To Marc Crawford From Whom the Commission

W h o s e broken window is a cry of art

(success, that winks aware

as elegance, as a treasonable faith)

is raw: is sonic: is old-eyed premiere.

5 Our beautiful flaw and terrible ornament.

Our barbarous and metal little man.

“I shall create! If not a note, a hole.

If not an overture, a desecration.”

Full of pepper and light

io and Salt and night and cargoes.

“Don’t go down the plank

if you see there’s no extension.

Each to his grief, each to

his loneliness and fidgety revenge.

15 Nobody knew where I was and now I am no longer there.”

The only sanity is a cup of tea.

The music is in minors.

Each one other

is having different weather.

20 “It was you, it was you who threw away my name!

And this is everything I have for me.”

W h o has not Congress, lobster, love, luau,

the Regency Room, the Statue of Liberty,
runs. A sloppy amalgamation.

25 A mistake.

A cliff.

A hymn, a snare, and an exceeding sun.

1 9 6 8

1 1 5 9 0

C H A R L E S CAUSLEY

1917-2003

Armistice Day¹

I stood with three comrades in Parliament Square

November her freights of grey fire unloading,

No sound from the city upon the pale air,

Above us the sea-bell eleven exploding.

5 Down by the bands and the burning memorial

Beats all the brass in a royal array,

But at our end we are not so sartorial:

Out of (as usual) the rig of the day.

Starry is wearing a split pusser's flannel²

io Rubbed, as he is, by the regular tide;

Oxo the ducks³ that he ditched in the Channel

In June, 1940 (when he was inside).

Kitty recalls his abandon-ship station,

Running below at the Old Man's salute

15 And (with a deck-watch) going down for duration

Wearing his oppo's pneumonia-suit.⁴

Comrades, for you the black captain of carracks

Writes in Whitehall⁵ his appalling decisions,

But as was often the case in the Barracks
20 Several ratings are not at Divisions.⁶
Into my eyes the stiff sea-horses stare,
Over my head sweeps the sun like a swan.
As I stand alone in Parliament Square
A cold bugle calls, and the city moves on.

1957

At the British War Cemetery, Bayeux⁷

I walked where in their talking graves

And shirts of earth five thousand lay,

1. November 11, when, at the eleventh hour (of
Oppo's: friend, comrade (from *opposite number*).

the eleventh day of the eleventh month), church

5. London street on which navy headquarters is
services throughout Britain commemorate the

located. *Carracks*: large merchant ships equipped
dead of the two world wars. A "Remembrance Day"
for warfare.

service held at London's Parliament Square

6. I.e., noncommissioned sailors have skipped the
includes two minutes of silence.

parade (religious service) of the ship's company.

2. A torn naval-issue shirt.

7. Town in northern France where many British

3. Suit made of white duck (a canvaslike mate-
soldiers killed in Normandy and Flanders during
rial).

World War II are buried.

4. Canvas suit worn while painting the ship.

E D E N R O C K / 1 5 9 1

W h e n history with ten feasts of fire
Had eaten the red air away.

5 “I am Christ’s boy,” I cried. “I bear
In iron hands the bread, the fishes.⁸

I hang with honey and with rose
This tidy wreck of all your wishes.

“On your geometry of sleep

10 The chestnut and the fir-tree fly,

And lavender and marguerite

Forge with their flowers an English sky.

“Turn now towards the belling town

Your jigsaws of impossible bone,

15 And rising read your rank of snow

Accurate as death upon the stone.”

About your easy heads my prayers

I said with syllables of clay.

“What gift,” I asked, “shall I bring now

20 Before I weep and walk away?”

Take, they replied, the oak and laurel.

Take our fortune of tears and live

Like a spendthrift lover. All we ask

Is the one gift you cannot give.

1 9 5 7

Eden Rock

They are waiting for me somewhere beyond Eden Rock:

My father, twenty-five, in the same suit

Of Genuine Irish Tweed, his terrier Jack
Still two years old and trembling at his feet.
5 My mother, twenty-three, in a sprigged⁰ dress *floral*
Drawn at the waist, ribbon in her straw hat,
Has spread the stiff white cloth over the grass.
Her hair, the colour of wheat, takes on the light.
She pours tea from a Thermos, the milk straight
io From an old H.P. sauce⁹ bottle, a screw
Of paper for a cork; slowly sets out
The same three plates, the tin cups painted blue.
8. Allusion to Christ's feeding of the five thousand 9. A brand
of steak sauce.

(John 6, Matthew 14).

1 5 9 2 / R O B E R T L O W E L L

The sky whitens as if lit by three suns.
My mother shades her eyes and looks my way
15 Over the drifted stream. My father spins
A stone along the water. Leisurely,
They beckon to me from the other bank.
I hear them call, "See where the stream-path is!
Crossing is not as hard as you might think."
20 I had not thought that it would be like this.

1 9 8 8

R O B E R T L O W E L L

1917-1977

The Quaker Graveyard in Nantucket

(F O R W A R R E N W I N S L O W , 1 D E A D A T S E A
)

Let man have dominion over the fishes of the sea and the fowls of the air and the beasts and the whole earth, and every creeping creature that moveth upon the earth. 2

1

A brackish reach of shoal off Madaket³
The sea was still breaking violently and night
Had steamed into our North Atlantic Fleet,
When the drowned sailor clutched the drag-net. Light
5 Flashed from his matted head and marble feet,
He grappled at the net
With the coiled, hurdling muscles of his thighs:
The corpse was bloodless, a botch of reds and whites,
Its open, staring eyes
10 Were lusterless dead-lights^o *porthole covers*
Or cabin-windows on a stranded hulk
Heavy with sand.⁴ We weight the body, close
Its eyes and heave it seaward whence it came,
Where the heel-headed dogfish barks its nose
15 On Ahab's⁵ void and forehead; and the name
Is blocked in yellow chalk.

Sailors, who pitch this portent at the sea
Where dreadnaughts^o shall confess *battleships*

1. Lowell's cousin, who died when his naval vessel
Thoreau (1817-1862; see pp. 1045-46).

was sunk during World War II.

5. Captain Ahab, protagonist of the novel *Moby-*

2. Cf. Genesis 1.26.

Dick, by the American writer Herman Melville

3. Small settlement on Nantucket Island, Massachusetts (1819-1891; see pp. 1054-57), and a recurring presence in this sequence of poems, sailed from whaling industry.

Nantucket on the *Pequod* in obsessive pursuit of

4. Lines 1 — 12 are based on the opening chapter of *Cape Cod*, by the American writer Henry David

of *Cape Cod*, by the American writer Henry David

THE QUAKER GRAVEYARD IN NANTUCKET / 1593

Its hell-bent deity,

20 When you are powerless

To sand-bag this Atlantic bulwark, faced

By the earth-shaker, green, unwearied, chaste

In his steel scales: ask for no Orphean lute

To pluck life back.⁶ The guns of the steeled fleet

25 Recoil and then repeat

The hoarse salute.

2

Whenever winds are moving and their breath

Heaves at the roped-in bulwarks of this pier,

The terns and sea-gulls tremble at your death

30 In these home waters. Sailor, can you hear

The *Pequod*'s sea wings, beating landward, fall

Headlong and break on our Atlantic wall

Off 'Sconset, where the yawing S-boats⁷ splash

The bellbuoy, with ballooning spinnakers,⁰ *sails*

35 As the entangled, screeching mainsheet clears
The blocks: off Madaket, where lubbers⁰ lash *landlubbers*
The heavy surf and throw their long lead squids
For blue-fish? Sea-gulls blink their heavy lids
Seaward. The winds' wings beat upon the stones,
40 Cousin, and scream for you and the claws rush
At the sea's throat and wring it in the slush
Of this old Quaker graveyard where the bones
Cry out in the long night for the hurt beast
Bobbing by Ahab's whaleboats in the East.

3

45 All you recovered from Poseidon died
With you, my cousin, and the harrowed brine
Is fruitless on the blue beard of the god,
Stretching beyond us to the castles in Spain,
Nantucket's westward haven. To Cape Cod
50 Guns, cradled on the tide,
Blast the eelgrass about a waterclock
Of bilge and backwash, roil the salt and sand
Lashing earth's scaffold, rock
Our warships in the hand
55 Of the great God, where time's contrition blues
Whatever it was these Quaker sailors lost
In the mad scramble of their lives. They died
When time was open-eyed,
Wooden and childish; only bones abide
60 There, in the nowhere, where their boats were tossed
6. In Greek mythology, the musician Orpheus

Greek god of the sea.

used song to win his wife, Eurydice, back from the

7. Racing sailboats. *Sconset*: Siasconset, a town
underworld (though he lost her again before he
on Nantucket. *Yawing*: moving from side to side in
reached the surface). *Earth-shaker*: Poseidon,
a heavy sea.

1 5 9 4 / R O B E R T L O W E L L

Sky-high, where mariners had fabled news
Of IS,⁸ the whited monster. What it cost
Them is their secret. In the sperm-whale's slick
I see the Quakers drown and hear their cry:
65 "If God himself had not been on our side,
If God himself had not been on our side,
W h e n the Atlantic rose against us, why,
T h e n it had swallowed us up quick."

4

This is the end of the whaleroad⁹ and the whale
70 W h o spewed Nantucket bones on the thrashed swell
And stirred the troubled waters to whirlpools
To send the Pequod packing off to hell:
This is the end of them, three-quarters fools,
Snatching at straws to sail
75 Seaward and seaward on the turntail whale,
Spouting out blood and water as it rolls,
Sick as a dog to these Atlantic shoals:
Clamavimus, O depths.¹ Let the sea-gulls wail
For water, for the deep where the high tide

so Mutter to its hurt self, mutters and ebbs.

Waves wallow in their wash, go out and out,

Leave only the death-rattle of the crabs,

The beach increasing, its enormous snout

Sucking the ocean's side.

85 This is the end of running on the waves;

We are poured out like water. W h o will dance

The mast-lashed master of Leviathans²

Up from this field of Quakers in their unstoned graves?

5

W h e n the whale's viscera go and the roll

90 Of its corruption overruns this world

Beyond tree-swept Nantucket and Wood's Hole³

And Martha's Vineyard, Sailor, will your sword

Whistle and fall and sink into the fat?

In the great ash-pit of Jehoshaphat⁴

95 The bones cry for the blood of the white whale,

The fat flukes arch and whack about its ears,

The death-lance churns into the sanctuary, tears

The gun-blue swingle,⁵ heaving like a flail,

And hacks the coiling life out: it works and drags

8. Cf. God's naming of himself to Moses as "I AM"

of Martha's Vineyard, which lies to the west of

(Exodus 3.14).

Nantucket.

9. An Anglo-Saxon epithet for the sea.

4. "The valley of judgment. The world, according

1. Adaptation of the Vulgate opening of Psalm

to some prophets, and scientists, will end in fire”

130: “Out of the depths have I cried unto thee, O
[Lowell’s note to the American scholars Kimon
Lord” (here, “we have cried”).

Friar and John Malcolm Brinnin]. Ahab, king of

2. In various biblical accounts, Leviathan is a sea
Israel, persuaded Jehoshaphat, king of Judah, to go
monster defeated by God.

to war (Joel 3.12).

3. On the coast of Massachusetts, near the island

5. Rod for beating flax.

THE QUAKER GRAVEYARD IN NANTUCKET / 1595

100 And rips the sperm-whale’s midriff into rags,

Gobbets of blubber spill to wind and weather,

Sailor, and gulls go round the stoven timbers

W h e r e the morning stars sing out together

And thunder shakes the white surf and dismembers

105 The red flag hammered in the mast-head.⁶ Hide,

Our steel, Jonas Messias,⁷ in Thy side.

6. Our Lady of Walsingham⁸

There once the penitents took off their shoes

And then walked barefoot the remaining mile;

And the small trees, a stream and hedgerows file

110 Slowly along the munching English lane,

Like cows to the old shrine, until you lose

Track of your dragging pain.

The stream flows down under the druid tree,⁹

Shiloh's¹ whirlpools gurgle and make glad
us The castle of God. Sailor, you were glad
And whistled Sion by that stream. But see:
Our Lady, too small for her canopy,
Sits near the altar. There's no comeliness
At all or charm in that expressionless
120 Face with its heavy eyelids. As before,
This face, for centuries a memory,
*Non est species, neque decor,*²
Expressionless, expresses God: it goes
Past castled Sion. She knows what God knows,
125 Not Calvary's Cross nor crib at Bethlehem
Now, and the world shall come to Walsingham.

7

The empty winds are creaking and the oak
Splatters and splatters on the cenotaph,³
The boughs are trembling and a gaff^o *spar*
130 Bobs on the untimely stroke
Of the greased wash exploding on a shoal-bell^P *bell buoy*
In the old mouth of the Atlantic. It's well;
Atlantic, you are fouled with the blue sailors,
Sea-monsters, upward angel, downward fish:⁴
6. As was the flag in the concluding chapter of
Gaul and Britain who served as priests, teachers,
Moby-Dick.

and magicians; their beliefs and practices are asso-
7. The prophet Jonah (also called Jonas), who
ciated with trees.

emerged alive from the whale, is often linked with
1. According to Isaiah 8.6, the stream that flows
the Messiah as a figure of salvation. Here he is
past God's Temple on Mt. Sion. In Isaiah 51.11,
pierced by a harpoon as Jesus was pierced by a
the redeemed come "singing into Zion," the heav-
Roman soldier's spear (cf. Matthew 12.39-41).
only city.

8. Walsingham is a small town in Norfolk,
2. There is no beauty or charm (Latin); quoted
England; a shrine to the Virgin Mary, built in the
from Watkin.

eleventh century, was an object of pilgrimage until
3. An empty tomb or monument erected to the
it was destroyed during the Reformation. Lowell
dead but not containing their remains.

adapted this section from the description in E. I.

4. Cf. Milton, *Paradise Lost* 1.462-63: "Dagon his
Watkin's *Catholic Art and Culture* (1942).

name, sea monster, upward man / And downward

9. The Druids were an order of ancient Celts of
fish."

1 5 9 6 / R O B E R T L O W E L L

135 Unmarried and corroding, spare of flesh
Mart0 once of supercilious, wing'd clippers, *market*
Atlantic, where your bell-trap guts its spoil
You could cut the brackish winds with a knife
Here in Nantucket, and cast up the time

140 When the Lord God formed man from the sea's slime
And breathed into his face the breath of life,
And blue-lung'd combers lumbered to the kill.
The Lord survives the rainbow of His will.⁵

1 9 4 6

Mr. Edwards⁶ and the Spider

I saw the spiders marching through the air,
Swimming from tree to tree that mildewed day
In latter August when the hay
Came creaking to the barn. But where

5 The wind is westerly,
Where gnarled November makes the spiders fly
Into the apparitions of the sky,
They purpose nothing but their ease and die
Urgently beating east to sunrise and the sea;
io What are we in the hands of the great God?

It was in vain you set up thorn and briar
In battle array against the fire
And treason crackling in your blood;

For the wild thorns grow tame
15 And will do nothing to oppose the flame;
Your lacerations tell the losing game
You play against a sickness past your cure.

How will the hands be strong? How will the heart endure?⁷
A very little thing, a little worm,

20 Or hourglass-blazoned spider,⁸ it is said,
Can kill a tiger. Will the dead
Hold up his mirror and affirm

To the four winds the smell

And flash of his authority? It's well

25 If God who holds you to the pit of hell,

5. The rainbow symbolizes God's covenant with
over the pit of Hell, much as one holds a spider or
Noah never again to destroy the earth by flood (see
some loathsome insect, over the fire, abhors you,
Genesis 9.11-17).

and is dreadfully provoked; his wrath towards you

6. Jonathan Edwards (1703-1758), Puritan the-
burns like fire.”

ologian and preacher whose works are alluded to

7. Cf. Ezekiel 22.14 (the point of departure of
throughout. The first stanza draws upon a paper,
“Sinners in the Hands of an Angry God”): “Can
“On Insects,” probably written ca. 1719—20, in
thine heart endure, or can thine hands be strong,
which Edwards records his observations of the
in the days that I shall be strong, in the days that
behavior of spiders. The poem is also heavily
I shall deal with thee?”

indebted to Edwards's most famous sermon, “Sin-

8. The black widow spider, common in North
ners in the Hands of an Angry God,” which com-
America, is marked with a red hourglass pattern on
pares humans to spiders: “The God that holds you
its abdomen.

**MY LAST AFTERNOON WITH UNCLE DE
VEREUX WINSLOW / 1597**

Much as one holds a spider, will destroy,
Baffle and dissipate your soul. As a small boy
On Windsor Marsh,⁹ I saw the spider die
When thrown into the bowels of fierce fire:
30 There's no long struggle, no desire
To get up on its feet and fly—
It stretches out its feet
And dies. This is the sinner's last retreat;
Yes, and no strength exerted on the heat
35 Then sinews the abolished will, when sick
And full of burning, it will whistle on a brick.
But who can plumb the sinking of that soul?
Josiah Hawley,¹ picture yourself cast
Into a brick-kiln where the blast
40 Fans your quick vitals to a coal—
If measured by a glass,
How long would it seem burning! Let there pass
A minute, ten, ten trillion; but the blaze
Is infinite, eternal: this is death,
45 To die and know it. This is the Black Widow, death.

1946

My Last Afternoon with Uncle Devereux Winslow

**1922: THE STONE PORCH OF MY GRANDF
ATHER'S SUMMER HOUSE**

I

“I won't go with you. I want to stay with Grandpa!”

That's how I threw cold water

on my Mother and Father's
 watery martini pipe dreams at Sunday dinner.
 5 ... Fontainebleau, Mattapoisett, Puget Sound. ... 2
 Nowhere was anywhere after a summer
 at my Grandfather's farm.
 Diamond-pointed, athirst and Norman,³
 its alley of poplars
 io paraded from Grandmother's rose garden
 to a scary stand of virgin pine,
 scrub, and paths forever pioneering.
 One afternoon in **1922**,
 I sat on the stone porch, looking through
 15 screens as black-grained as drifting coal.
 9. Near East Windsor, Connecticut, Edwards's
 setts, and Washington State, respectively).
 childhood home.
 3. A version of Romanesque architecture devel-
 1. Edwards's uncle, Joseph Hawley, who killed
 oped in the French province of Normandy in the
 himself in 1735.
 tenth century.
 2. Desirable places to visit (in France, Massachu-
1598 / ROBERT LOWELL
Tockytock, tockytock
 clumped our Alpine, Edwardian cuckoo clock,
 slung with strangled, wooden game.
 Our farmer was cementing a root-house⁴ under the hill.
 20 One of my hands was cool on a pile

of black earth, the other warm
on a pile of lime. All about me
were the works of my Grandfather's hands:
snapshots of his *Liberty Bell* silver mine;
25 his high school at *Stuttgart am Neckar*; 5
stogie-brown beams; fools'-gold nuggets;
octagonal red tiles,
sweaty with a secret dank, crummy with ant-stale;
a Rocky Mountain chaise longue,
30 its legs, shellacked saplings.
A pastel-pale Huckleberry Finn⁶
fished with a broom straw in a basin
hollowed out of a millstone.
Like my Grandfather, the decor
35 was manly, comfortable,
overbearing, disproportioned.
W h a t were those sunflowers? Pumpkins floating shoulder-
high?
It was sunset, Sadie and Nellie
bearing pitchers of ice-tea,
40 oranges, lemons, mint, and peppermints,
and the jug of shandygaff,
which Grandpa made by blending half and half
yeasty, wheezing homemade sarsaparilla with beer.
The farm, entitled *Char-de-sa*
45 in the Social Register,
was named for my Grandfather's children:
Charlotte, Devereux, and Sarah.

No one had died there in my lifetime ...

Only Cinder, our Scottie puppy

50 paralyzed from gobbling toads.

I sat mixing black earth and lime.

2

I was five and a half.

My formal pearl gray shorts

had been worn for three minutes.

55 My perfection was the Olympian

poise of my models in the imperishable autumn

display windows

of Rogers Peet's boys' store below the State House

in Boston. Distorting drops of water

60 pinpricked my face in the basin's mirror.

4. Small building, partly underground, used for 6. Boy hero of the novel *The Adventures of Huckstering* root vegetables,

bulbs, etc. *leherry Finn*, by the American writer Mark Twain

5. German city on the Neckar River. (1835—1910).

**MY LAST AFTERNOON WITH UNCLE DE
VEREUX WINSLOW / 1599**

I was a stuffed toucan

with a bibulous, multicolored beak.

3

Up in the air

by the lakeview window in the billiards-room,

65 lurid in the doldrums of the sunset hour,

my Great Aunt Sarah

was learning *Samson and Delilah*.⁷

She thundered on the keyboard of her dummy piano,

with gauze curtains like a boudoir table,
70 accordionlike yet soundless.
It had been bought to spare the nerves
of my Grandmother,
tone-deaf, quick as a cricket,
now needing a fourth for “Auction,”⁰ *auction bridge*
75 and casting a thirsty eye
on Aunt Sarah, risen like the phoenix⁸
from her bed of troublesome snacks and Tauchnitz⁹ classics.
Forty years earlier,
twenty, auburn headed,
so grasshopper notes of genius!
Family gossip says Aunt Sarah
tilted her archaic Athenian nose
and jilted an Astor.¹
Each morning she practiced
85 on the grand piano at Symphony Hall,
deathlike in the off-season summer—
its naked Greek statues draped with purple
like the saints in Holy Week... .
On the recital day, she failed to appear.

4

90 I picked with a clean finger nail at the blue anchor
on my sailor blouse washed white as a spinnaker.
W h a t in the world was I wishing?
... A sail-colored horse browsing in the bullrushes ...
A fluff of the west wind puffing
95 my blouse, kiting me over our seven chimneys,

troubling the waters... .

As small as sapphires were the ponds: *Quittacus*, *Snippituit*,
and *Assawompset*, halved by “the Island,”

where my Uncle’s duck blind

IOO floated in a barrage of smoke-clouds.

7. Piano arrangement of an opera by the French

9. German publisher of inexpensive paperbacks,
composer Camille Saint-Saens (1835-1921).

including many English and American works in

8. A long-lived mythological bird that consumed
English.

itself in flames and was then reborn from its ashes.

1. In the nineteenth century, three generations of

Aunt Sarah: Sarah Stark Winslow, Robert Lowell’s
Astors in New York accumulated one of the largest
mother’s aunt.

fortunes in the world.

1 1 6 0 0 / R O B E R T L O W E L L

Double-barreled shotguns

stuck out like bundles of baby crow-bars.

A single sculler⁰ in a camouflaged kayak *rower*
was quacking to the decoys... .

105 At the cabin between the waters,

the nearest windows were already boarded.

Uncle Devereux was closing camp for the winter.

As if posed for “the engagement photograph,”

he was wearing his severe

110 war-uniform of a volunteer Canadian officer.

Daylight from the doorway riddled his student posters,
tacked helter-skelter on walls as raw as a boardwalk.

Mr. Punch,² a water melon in hockey tights,
was tossing off a decanter of Scotch.

ii⁵ *La Belle France* in a red, white and blue toga
was accepting the arm of her “protector,”
the ingenu and porcine Edward VII.³

The pre-war music hall belles
had goose necks, glorious signatures, beauty-moles,
120 and coils of hair like rooster tails.

The finest poster was two or three young m e n in khaki
kilts

being bushwhacked on the veldt⁴—

They were almost life-size... .

My Uncle was dying at twenty-nine.

125 “You are behaving like children,”
said my Grandfather,

w h e n my Uncle and Aunt left their three baby daughters,
and sailed for Europe on a last honeymoon ...

I cowered in terror.

BO I wasn’t a child at all—

unseen and all-seeing, I was Agrippina⁵
in the Golden H o u s e of Nero... .

Near me was the white measuring-door
my Grandfather had penciled with my Uncle’s heights.

135 In 1911, he had stopped growing at just six feet.

While I sat on the tiles,

and dug at the anchor on my sailor blouse,

Uncle Devereux stood behind me.

He was as brushed as Bayard, our riding horse.

140 His face was putty.

His blue coat and white trousers

grew sharper and straighter.

His coat was a blue jay's tail,

his trousers were solid cream from the top of the bottle.

2. A cartoon figure used as emblem for the English
the traditional emblem for France.

humor magazine *Punch*.

4. Open country in South Africa. The Boer War

3. Edward VII, king of England from 1901 to
(1899-1902) was fought by the British against the
1910, helped initiate the era of good feeling
descendants of Dutch settlers in South Africa.

between England and France known as "L'Entente

5. Mother of Nero (first century); her scheming
Cordiale." On a poster, he is pictured with an arm
helped make him Roman emperor. He later had
around the waist of Marianne, "La Belle France,"
her murdered.

SKUNKHOUR / 1601

145 He was animated, hierarchical,

like a gingersnap man in a clothes-press.

He was dying of the incurable Hodgkin's disease

**My hands were warm, then cool, on the pile
sofearthandle,**

150 a black pile and a white pile

Comewinter,
UncleDevereuxwouldblendtotheonecolor.

1959

Skunk Hour

(FOR ELIZABETH BISHOP) 6

NautilusIsland'shermit

heiresstilllivessthroughwinterinherSpartancottage;hershpeestillgrazeabovethesea.

Herson'sabishop.Herfarmer
5isfirstselectman8inourvillage;
she'sinherdotage.

Thirstingfor
thehierarchicprivacy
ofQueenVictoria'scentury,
ioshebuysupall
theeyesoreshacinghershore,
andletsthemfall.

Theseason'sill—
we'velostoursummermillionaire,
15whoseemedtoleapfromanL.L.Bean9
catalogue.Hisnine-knotyawl
wasauctionedofftolobstermen.

AredfoxstaincoversBlueHill.

Andnowourfairly

20decoratorbrightenshisshopforfall;hisfishnet'sfilledwithorangecork,
orange,hiscobbler'sbenchandawl;

there is no money in his work,
he'd rather marry.

25 On a dark night,

my Tudor Ford climbed the hill's skull;

I watched for love-cars. Lights turned down,
they lay together, hull to hull,

6. Lowell said that he modeled this poem on 8. Many New England towns are administered by Bishop's "The Armadillo" (see p. 1519). an elected board of selectmen.

7. In Castine, Maine, where Lowell had a summer 9. A mail-order company in Maine, originally specializing in hunting, fishing, and camping gear.

11602 / ROBERT LOWELL

where the graveyard shelves on the town... .

30 My mind's not right.

A car radio bleats,

"Love, O careless Love... ." I hear

my ill-spirit sob in each blood cell,

as if my hand were at its throat... .

35 I myself am hell;2

nobody's here—

only skunks, that search

in the moonlight for a bite to eat.

They march on their soles up Main Street:

40 white stripes, moonstruck eyes' red fire

under the chalk-dry and spar0 spire *mastlike*

of the Trinitarian Church.

I stand on top

of our back steps and breathe the rich air—

45 a mother skunk with her column of kittens swills the
garbage pail.

She jabs her wedge-head in a cup
of sour cream, drops her ostrich tail,
and will not scare.

1 9 5 7 1 9 5 9

Water

It was a Maine lobster town—
each morning boatloads of hands
pushed off for granite
quarries on the islands,
5 and left dozens of bleak
white frame houses stuck
like oyster shells
on a hill of rock,
and below us, the sea lapped
io the raw little match-stick
mazes of a weir,
where the fish for bait were trapped.
Remember? We sat on a slab of rock.

From this dance in time,
15 it seems the color
of iris, rotting and turning purpler,

1. From a popular song of the time, “Careless and your
sweetheart too.”

Love,” which includes the lines “Now you see what 2. Cf.
Satan in Milton’s *Paradise Lost* 4.75: careless love will do ... /
Make you kill yourself “Which way I fly is Hell; myself am
Hell.”

F O R T H E U N I O N D E A D / 1 6 0 3

but it was only
the usual gray rock
turning t h e usual green
20 w h e n drenched by the sea.
T h e sea d r e n c h e d the rock
at our feet all day,
and kept tearing away
flake after flake.

25 O n e night y o u d r e a m e d
you w e r e a m e r m a i d clinging to a wharf-pile,
and trying to pull
off the barnacles w i t h your h a n d s .

W e w i s h e d our two souls
30 might return like gulls
to the rock. In the end,
the water w a s too cold for us.

1 9 6 4

For the Union Dead³

“Relinquunt Omnia Sew are Rem Publicam.”

T h e old S o u t h B o s t o n A q u a r i u m stands
in a Sahara of s n o w n o w . Its broken w i n d o w s are
boarded.

T h e bronze w e a t h e r v a n e c o d has lost half its
scales.

T h e airy tanks are dry.

5 O n c e my n o s e crawled like a snail on the glass;
my h a n d tingled
to burst t h e b u b b l e s

drifting from the noses of the cowed, compliant fish.

My hand draws back. I often sigh still

for the dark downward and vegetating kingdom

of the fish and reptile. One morning last March,

I pressed against the new barbed and galvanized

fence on the Boston Common. Behind their cage,

yellow dinosaur steamshovels were grunting

as they cropped up tons of mush and grass

to gouge their underworld garage.

3. At the edge of Boston Common, across from

born) sculptor Augustus Saint-Gaudens (1848—

the Massachusetts State House, stands a monu-

1907), was dedicated in 1897. In the upper right

ment to Colonel Robert Gould Shaw (1837-1863)

it bears the Latin motto of the Society of the Cin-

and the first all-black Civil War regiment, the 54th

cinnati, *Omnia relinquit servare rem publicam*

Massachusetts; Shaw and many of his troops were

("He gives up everything to serve the republic").

killed in the assault on Fort Wagner, South Caro-

Lowell's epigraph changes "he gives" to "they give."

lina. The bronze relief, by the American (Irish-

11604 / ROBERT LOWELL

Parking spaces luxuriate like civic

sandpiles in the heart of Boston.

A girdle of orange, Puritan-pumpkin colored girders

20 braces the tingling Statehouse,
shaking over the excavations, as it faces Colonel Shaw
and his bell-cheeked Negro infantry
on St. Gaudens' shaking Civil War relief,
propped by a plank splint against the garage's earthquake.

25 Two months after marching through Boston,
half the regiment was dead;
at the dedication,

William James⁴ could almost hear the bronze Negroes
breathe.

Their monument sticks like a fishbone
30 in the city's throat.

Its Colonel is as lean
as a compass-needle.

He has an angry wrenlike vigilance,
a greyhound's gentle tautness;
35 he seems to wince at pleasure,
and suffocate for privacy.

He is out of bounds now. He rejoices in man's lovely,
peculiar power to choose life and die—
when he leads his black soldiers to death,
40 he cannot bend his back.

On a thousand small town New England greens,
the old white churches hold their air
of sparse, sincere rebellion; frayed flags
quilt the graveyards of the Grand Army of the Republic.

45 The stone statues of the abstract Union Soldier
grow slimmer and younger each year—

wasp-waisted, they doze over muskets
and muse through their sideburns ...

Shaw's father wanted no monument

50 except the ditch,

where his son's body was thrown

and lost with his "niggers."

The ditch is nearer.

There are no statues for the last war here;

55 on Boylston Street,⁵ a commercial photograph

shows Hiroshima boiling

4. Philosopher and psychologist (1842—1910), 5. A major street in Boston. *Last war*: World War who taught at Harvard University. II.

E P I L O G U E / 1 6 0 5

over a Mosler Safe, the "Rock of Ages"

that survived the blast. Space is nearer.

W h e n I crouch to my television set,

60 the drained faces of Negro school-children rise like balloons.⁶

Colonel Shaw

is riding on his bubble,

he waits

for the blessed break.

65 The Aquarium is gone. Everywhere,

giant finned cars nose forward like fish;

a savage servility

slides by on grease.

1 9 6 4

Harriet⁷

A repeating fly, blueback, thumbthick—so gross,
it seems apocalyptic in our h o u s e —
whams back and forth across the nursery bed
manned by a madhouse of stuffed animals,
5 not one a fighter. It is like a plane
dusting apple orchards or Arabs on the screen—
one of the mighty ... one of the helpless. It
bumbles and bumps its brow on this and that,
making a short, unhealthy life the shorter.
10 I kill it, and another instant's added
to the horrifying mortmain⁸ of
ephemera: keys, drift, sea-urchin shells,
you packrat off with joy ... a dead fly swept
under the carpet, wrinkling to fulfillment.

1 9 7 0 1 9 7 3

Epilogue

**Those blessed structures, plot and rhyme—
why are they no help to me now**

**I want to make
something imagined, not recalled?**

5 I hear the noise of my own voice:

*The painter's vision is not a lens,
it trembles to caress the light.*

6. The struggles to integrate public schools (first

8. A legal term (“dead hand”) referring to perpet-

in the South, and later in the North) were fre-

ual ownership; more generally, the influence of the

quently featured in television newscasts.

past on the present.

7. The poet's daughter, born January 4, 1945.

1 6 0 6 / L A W R E N C E F E R L I N G H E T T I

**But sometimes everything I write
with the threadbare art of my eye**

1 0 s e e m s a snapshot,

lurid, rapid, garish, grouped,

heightened from life,

yet paralyzed by fact.

All's misalliance.

15 Yet why not say what happened?

Pray for the grace of accuracy

Vermeer⁹ gave to the sun's illumination

stealing like the tide across a map
to his girl solid with yearning.
20 We are poor passing facts,
warned by that to give
each figure in the photograph
his living name.

1 9 7 7

L A W R E N C E F E R L I N G H E T T I

b. 1919

Sometime During Eternity ...

S o m e t i m e during eternity

some guys show up

and one of t h e m

w h o shows up real late

5 is a kind of carpenter¹

from some square-type place

like Galilee²

and he starts wailing

and claiming he is hip

io to **w h o** made heaven

and earth

and that the cat

w h o really laid it on us

is his Dad

15 And moreover

he adds

It's all writ down

on s o m e scroll-type parchments

w h i c h s o m e h e n c h m e n

20 leave lying around the Dead Sea³ somewheres

9. Jan Vermeer (1632—1675), Dutch painter 3. Sea between the West Bank and Jordan, where known for his treatment of light. the Dead Sea Scrolls, fragments of the Jewish 1. Jesus was a carpenter. Essene order's library dating back to 130 **B . C . E .** , 2. Region in northern Israel, home of Jesus. were found in 1947.

S O M E T I M E D U R I N G E T E R N I T Y ... / 1 6 0 7

a long time ago

and which you won't even find

for a coupla thousand years or so

or at least for

nineteen hundred and fortyseven

of them

to be exact

and even then

nobody really believes them

or me

for that matter

You're hot

they tell him

And they cool him

They stretch him on the Tree to cool

And everybody after that

is always making models

of this Tree

with Him hung up

and always crooning His name

and calling Him to come down

and sit in
on their combo
as if he is *the* king cat
who's got to blow⁴
or they can't quite make it
Only he don't come down
from His Tree
Him just hang there
on His Tree
looking real Petered out⁵
and real cool
and also
according to a roundup
of late world news
from the usual unreliable sources
real dead

1 9 5 8

4. Play. *King cat*: slang for leader (Jesus was also exhaustion and to St. Peter, who denied being a called king of the Jews). *Combo*: group of music-disciple three times after Jesus' arrest (John 18.17—cians, particularly jazz players.
27).

5. Pun referring both to a sense of defeat or

1 1 6 0 8

WILLIAM M E R E D I T H

b. 1919

The Illiterate

Touching your goodness, I am like a man
Who turns a letter over in his hand
And you might think this was because the hand
Was unfamiliar but, truth is, the man
5 Has never had a letter from anyone;
And now he is both afraid of what it means
And ashamed because he has no other means
To find out what it says than to ask someone.
His uncle could have left the farm to him,
10 Or his parents died before he sent them word,
Or the dark girl changed and want him for beloved.
Afraid and letter-proud, he keeps it with him.
What would you call his feeling for the words
That keep him rich and orphaned and beloved?

1958

Rhode Island

Here at the seashore they use the clouds over & over
again, like the rented animals in *Aida*.1

In the late morning the land breeze
turns and now the extras are driving
5 all the white elephants the other way.

What language are the children shouting in?

He2 is lying on the beach listening.

The sand knocks like glass, struck by bare heels.

He tries to remember snow noise,

10 Would powder snow ping like that?

But you don't lie with your ear to powder snow.

Why doesn't the girl who takes care

**of the children, a Yale girl without flaw,
know the difference between *lay* and *lie*?**

15 He tries to remember snow, his season.

The mind is in charge of things then.

**Summer is for animals, the ocean is erotic,
all that openness and swaying.**

1. During a triumphal procession in this opera by
often hire horses and elephants to augment the
the Italian composer Giuseppe Verdi (1813—
spectacle.

1901), the victorious Egyptian forces return to

2. Hazard, the Painter (title character of the vol-
Memphis with their captives; major companies
ume from which this poem comes); cf. line 25.

BEACH GLASS / 1609

N o m a t t e r h o w o f t e n y o u m a k e l o v e

**20 i n A u g u s t y o u ' r e a l w a y s a w a r e o f g e n i t a
l i a , y o u r o w n a n d t h e h a l f - n a k e d o t h e r s ' .**

E v e n w i t h t h e g r a c e f u l e s t b a t h e r s

**y o u ' r e a w a r e o f t h e i r k i n s h i p w i t h p o r p o i
s e s , m a m m a l s d i s p o r t i n g t h e m s e l v e s i n a b
l u e e l e m e n t , 25 s m e l l i n g s l i g h t l y o f f i s h . P
o r p o i s e H a z a r d w a t c h e s h i m s e l f a w h i l e , l i
k e a b l u e m o v i e .**

I n t h e o t h e r h e m i s p h e r e n o w p e o p l e

a r e s t a n d i n g u p , a t w o r k a t t h e i r e a s e l s .

T h e r e t h e y t h i n k a b o u t l o v e a t n i g h t

**30 w h e n t h e y t a k e o f f t h e i r s e r i o u s c l o t h e s
a n d g o t o b e d s a n d l e s s l y , u n d e r b l a n k e t s .**

T o d a y t h e c h i l d r e n , h i s o w n a m o n g t h e m ,

are apparently shouting fluently in Portuguese, using the colonial dialect of Brazil

35 It is just as well, they have all been changed into small shrill marginal animals, he would not want to understand them again until after Labor Day. He just lays there.

1975

AMY CLAMPITT

1920-1994

Beach Glass

While you walk the water's edge,
turning over concepts

I can't envision, the honking buoy
serves notice that at any time

5 the wind may change,
the reef-bell clatters

its treble monotone, deaf as Cassandra
to any note but warning. The ocean,
cumbered by no business more urgent
io than keeping open old accounts
that never balanced,

goes on shuffling its millenniums
of quartz, granite, and basalt.

It behaves

15 toward the permutations of novelty—
driftwood and shipwreck, last night's
beer cans, spilt oil, the coughed-up

1. In Greek mythology, the daughter of Priam (last king of Troy), and a prophetess who predicted the fall of Troy. Her gift

of prophecy was marred by the curse of never being believed.

1610 / AMYCLAMPITT

residue of plastic — with random
impartiality, playing catch or tag
20 or touch-last like a terrier,
turning the same thing over and over,
over and over. For the ocean, nothing
is beneath consideration.

The houses

25 of so many mussels and periwinkles⁰ *mollusks,*
snails have been abandoned here, it's hopeless
to know which to salvage. Instead

I keep a lookout for beach glass—

a amber of Budweiser, chrysoprase²

30 of Almaden and Gallo, lapis³

by way of (no getting around it,

I'm afraid) Phillips'

Milk of Magnesia, with now and then a rare

translucent turquoise or blurred amethyst

35 of no known origin.

The process

goes on forever: they came from sand,

they go back to gravel,

along with the treasures

40 of Murano, the butressed

astonishments of Chartres,⁵

which even now are readying

for being turned over and over as gravely

**and gradually as an intellect
45 e n g a g e d in the hazardous
redefinition of structures
no o n e has yet looked at.**

1 9 8 3

Beethoven, Opus 1116

F O R N O R M A N C A R E Y

There are epochs ... when mankind, not content with the present,

longing for time's deeper layers, like the plowman, thirsts for the

virgin soil of time.

OSIP MANDELSTAM⁷

— **O r , conversely, h u n g e r s**

for the levitations of the c o n c e r t hall:

the h a n d s like rafts of *putti*⁸

2. The green color of chalcedony quartz.

(1770-1827). An exemplar of Romanticism and

3. The deep-blue color of lapis lazuli, a mineral.

revolution, Beethoven had become deaf by the

4. An island near Venice, famous for manufactur-

time he wrote this piece, in 1821—22.

ing fine glass.

7. Russian poet and critic (1891-1938), who was

5. The cathedral of Notre Dame de Chartres, in

arrested for a poem on Joseph Stalin and later died

France, celebrated for its stained-glass windows.

in a transit camp.

6. *Piano Sonata No. 32 in C Minor*, Opus 111, the

8. “The stylized infant cherubs that appear to soar, last work in the form, as Clampitt’s note remarks, plunge or hover in some Italian and Spanish paintings by the German composer Ludwig van Beethoven on Christian themes” [Clampitt’s note].

BEETHOVEN, OPUS 111 / 1611

out of a region where the dolorous stars
are fixed in glassy ceremonies of Art;
the *ancien regime*’s diaphanous splash⁹
athwart the mounting throb of hobnails—
shodsquadrons of vibration
mining the air, its struck core hardening
into a plowshare, a downward wandering
disrupting every formal symmetry:
from the supine harp-case, the strung-foot
end on under the mahogany, the bulldozer
in the bass unearths a Piranesian
catacomb: Beethoven ventilating,
with a sound he cannot hear, the cave-in
of recurring rage.
In the tornado country
of mid-America, my father
might have been his twin—a farmer
hacking at our dock, at the strangle-
root of thistles and wild morning glories,
setting out trashly, one October,
torid the fencerows of poison ivy:
livid seed-glob sturtead
in trinities of glitter, ripe

with the malefic gleen of farmer doubts
lives deep down things.² My father
was naive enough — by nature
revolutionary, though he'd have
disowned the label — to suppose he might
in some way, minor but radical, disrupt
the given of existence: set
his neighbors' thinking straight, undo
the stranglehold of freasons nations
send their boys off to war. That fall,
after the oily fireworks had cooled down
to tellises of hairy wicks,
he dug them up, root stocks and all,
and burned them. Do-gooder!

The well-meant holocaust became
a mist of venom, sowing itself along
the sculptured hollows of his overalls,
braceleting wrists and collarbone —
a mesh of blisters spreading to a shirt
worn like a curse. For weeks
he writhed inside it. Awful.

High art

with a stiff neck: an upright Steinway³
bought in Chicago; a chromo of a Hobbema
9. I.e., the extremely delicate splash of France's
Grandeur" (p. 1166), in which "There lives the
political and social system before the revolution in
dearest freshness deep down things." *Malefic*:

1789. *Cerements*: shrouds for the dead.

malignant, malicious.

1. As in the work of Giambattista Piranesi (1720—

3. Meindert Hobbema (1638-1709), Dutch

1778), Italian architect, painter, and engraver.

painter. *Chromo*: chromolithograph, print. *Stein-*

2. An allusion to Gerard Manley Hopkins, “God’s

way: one of the best brands of pianos.

1 6 1 2 / A M Y C L A M P I T T

tree-avenue, or of Millet’s imagined peasant, the lark she listens to invisible, 4 perhaps irrelevant: harp strings and fripperies of a fir congealed into an object nailed against the wall, 5 its sole ironic function (if it has any)

to demonstrate that one, though he may grunt and sweat at work, is not a clod.

Beethoven might declare the air

his domicile, the wind skin, 5 the tornado

60 a kind of second cousin; here,

his labor merely shimmers— a deracinated

album leaf, a bagatelle, the “Moonlight”

rendered with a dying fall 6 (the chords

subside, disintegrate, regroup

65 in climbing sequences *con brio*); 7 there’s no

dwelling on the sweet past here,

there being no past to speak of

other than the setbacks: typhoid

in the wells, half the first settlers

70 dead or fit before a year was out;

diphtheria and scarlet fever
every winter; drought, the Depression,
a mortgage on the mortgage. High art
as a susurrus, 0 the silk and perfume *whisper* 7 5
of unsullied hands. Those hands! —
driving the impressionable wild with angu-
ish for another life entirely: the Lyceum 8 cir-
cuit, the doomed diving bell of Art.

Beethoven

so in his workroom: ear trumpet,
conversation book and pencil, candlestick,
broken crockery, the Graf piano
wrecked by repeated efforts to hear himself
—

out of a humdrum squalor the levitations,
85 the shakes and triplets, the *Adagio*
molto semplice e cantabile, 9 the *Arietta* 0 *little air*

a disintegrating surf of blossom

opening along the keyboard, along the fence
row the astonishment of sweetness. My fat-
her, 90 driving somewhere in Kansas or Colo-
rado, in dust bowl country, stopped the car
to dig up by the roots a flower

he'd never seen before — a kind

of prickly poppy most likely, its luminous-
ness 95 wounding the blank plains like desire

.

4. Because the European skylark sings in flight,

6. Cf. Shakespeare, *Twelfth Night* 1.1.1-4: "...

often too high to be seen, as in the famous painting

that strain again! It had a dying fall." "*Moonlight*":

of the listening peasant, by the French painter
Beethoven's *Piano Sonata in C Sharp Minor*
Jean-Francois Millet (1814-1875).

(*Moonlight*), Opus 27, No. 2.

5. "In a letter to Count Brunswick dated February

7. With vigor (Italian); musical direction.

13, 1814, Beethoven wrote: 'As regards me, great

8. A building used for cultural activities, such as
heavens! my dominion is in the air; the tones whirl
concerts.

like the wind, and often there is a whirl in my

9. A slow movement, played very simply and in a
soul' " [Clampitt's note].

songlike manner (Italian).

THE SUN UNDERFOOT AMONG THE SUNDEWS / 1 6 1 3

**H e m e n t i o n e d i n a l e t t e r t h e d i s a p p o i n t m e
n t o f h i s h a v i n g h o p e d i t m i g h t t r a n s p l a n t**

—

a n e p i s o d e t h a t b r i n g s m e n e a r t e a r s ,

still, a s e v e n h i s d y i n g d o e s n o t —

ioo t h a t a w f u l d y i n g , m o n t h s - l o n g , h u n k e r e d ,

i r a s c i b l e . F r o m a c l o d n o p l o w s h a r e

c o u l d d e l i v e r , a g r o a n f o r s o m e o n e

(b e c a u s e h e d i d n ' t w a n t t o l o o k

a t a n y t h i n g) t o t a k e a w a y t h e f l o w e r s ,

**105 a b a w l i n g a s o f s l a u g h t e r h o u s e s , s l o g a n
s o f a g e n e r a l u p r i s i n g : *Freiheit!***

B e e t h o v e n , s h u t u p w i t h t h e f o u r w a l l s

of his deafness, rehearsing the unbearable
semplice e cantabile, somehow reconstituting
110 the blister shirt of the intolerable
into these shakes and triplets, a hurrying
into flowering along the fence rows: dying
, for my father, came to be like that
finally — in its message the levitation
115 of serenity, as though the spirit might
aspire, in its last act,
to walk on air.

1983

The Sun Underfoot Among the Sundews²
A ingenuity too astonishing
to be quite fortuitous is
this bog full of sundews, sphagnum - 0 *moss-*
lined and shaped like a teacup.

5 A step

down and you're into it; a
wilderness swallows you up:
ankle-, then knee-, then midriff-
to-shoulder-deep in wet footed
io understory, an overhead
spruce-tamarack horizon hinting
you'll never get out of here.

But the sun

among the sundews, down there,
15 is so bright, an underfoot
webwork of carnivorous rubies,
a star-swarm thick as the gnats

they're set to catch, delectable
double-faced cockleburs, each
20 hair-tip a sticky mirror
a fire with sunlight, a million
of them and again a million,

1. Freedom! (German).

2. Carnivorous bog plants.

1614 / AMY CLAMPITT

each mirror a trap set to

unhand unbelieveing,

25 that either

a First Cause said once, "Let there

be sundews,"³ and there were, or they've made
their way here unaided

other than by that backhand, round-

30 about refusal to assume responsibility
now as Natural Selection.⁴

But the sun

underfoot is so dazzling

down there among the sundews,

35 there is so much light

in the cup that, looking,

you start to fall upward.

1983

The Cormorant in Its Element

That bonypot bellied arrow, wing-pumping
along implacably, with a ramrod's rigid ad-
herence, airborne, to the horizontal, disclos-
es a talent so new would never have guessed at. P-
lummeting⁵ waterward, big black feet pla

yed for a landing gear, slim head turning and turning, vermilion-

strapped, this way and that, with a lightning glance over the shoulder, the cormorant astounding-

ly, in one sleek involuted arabesque, a vertical otturnonadime, goes into that inimitable vanishing-and-emerging-from-under-the-briny-

deep act which, unlike the works of Homo Houdini, 5

is performed for reasons having nothing at all to do with the ego, guilt, ambition, or even money.

1983

Syrinx⁶

Like the foghorn that 's all lung,
the windchime that 's all percussion,

3. See Genesis 1.14: "And God said, Let there be

6. The vocal organ of birds, named after the Arca-lights in the firmament of the heaven."

dian mountain nymph in Greek mythology who, to

4. The theory of evolution as formulated by the protect her chastity from the god Pan, was trans-English naturalist Charles Darwin (1809-1882).

formed into a reed. From that reed Pan made the

5. An invented term conflating the Latin *Homo* pan-pipe, also called the syrinx. Pastoral poets considered Pan a patron of their art.

cian Harry Houdini (1874-1926).

SYRINX / 1 6 1 5

like the wind itself, that's merely air
in a terrible fret,⁷ without so much
5 as a finger to articulate
what ails it, the aeolian⁸
syrinx, that reed
in the throat of a bird,
when it comes to the shaping of
10 what we call consonants, is
too imprecise for consensus
about what it even seems to
be saying: is it *o-ka-lee*
or *con-ka-ree*, is it really *jug jug*,
15 is it *cuckoo* for that matter?—
much less whether a bird's call
means anything in
particular, or at all.
Syntax comes last, there can be
20 no doubt of it: came last,
can be thought of (is
thought of by some) as a
higher form of expression:
is, in extremity, first to
25 be jettisoned: as the diva
onstage, all soaring
pectoral breathwork,
takes off, pure vowel
breaking free of the dry,

30 the merely fricative
husk of the particular, rises
past saying anything, any
more than the wind in
the trees, waves breaking,
35 or Homer's gibbering
Thespisae iache:9
those last-chance vestiges
above the threshold, the ail-
but dispossessed of breath.

1 9 9 4

7. In the double sense of 1) worried agitation, and from out of Erebus the spirits of those that are 2) a ridge set across the fingerboard of a stringed dead, brides, and unwedded youths, and toil-worn instrument to help the fingers stop the strings cor-old men, and tender maidens with hearts yet new rectly.

to sorrow, and many, too, that had been wounded

8. Producing a windlike moaning or sighing with bronze-tipped spears, men slain in fight, wear-sound.

ing their blood-stained armour. These came

9. Clampitt's oblique commentary, in a note, is a thronging in crowds about the pit from every side, quotation from Homer's *Odyssey* 10.34—43, as with a wondrous cry ...”

translated by A. T. Murray: “Then there gathered

1 6 1 6

BARBARA G U E S T

b. 1920

Roses

“painting has n o air ... ”

G E R T R U D E S T E I N 1

**T h a t t h e r e s h o u l d n e v e r b e a i r
i n a p i c t u r e s u r p r i s e s m e .**

**I t w o u l d s e e m t o b e o n l y a p i c t u r e
o f a c e r t a i n k i n d , a p o r t r a i t i n p a p e r
5 o r g l u e d , s o m e w h e r e a s t i c k i n e s s
a s o p p o s e d t o a s t i c k - t o - i t - n e s s
o f a n o t h e r g e n r e . I t m i g h t b e
q u i t e n e w t o d o w i t h o u t
t h a t a i r , o r t o f i n d o x y g e n
i o o n t h e l a n d s c a p e l i n e
l i k e a b o a t w h i c h i s a n o b j e c t
o r a s h o e w h i c h n e v e r f l o a t s
a n d i s s t a t i o n a r y .**

S t i l l t h e r e

15

**a r e c e r t a i n i l l n e s s e s t h a t r e q u i r e
a i r , l o t s o f i t . A n d t h e r e a r e n e r v o u s
p e o p l e w h o c a n n o t m a n u f a c t u r e
e n o u g h a i r a n d m u s t s e e k
f o r i t w h e n t h e y d o n ' t h a v e p l a n t s ,**

20

i n p i c t u r e s . T h e r e i s t h e m y s t e r i o u s

traveling that one does outside
the cube and this takes place
in air.

It is why one develops

25 an attitude toward roses picked
in the morning air, even roses
without sun shining on them.

The roses of Juan Gris² from which
we learn the selflessness of roses

30 existing perpetually without air,
the lid being down, so to speak,
a 1912 fragrance sifting

to the left corner where we read

"The Marvelous" and escape.

1973

1. American writer (1874—1946; see pp. 1248—ists and
writers between the two world wars.

50), whose Paris home was a salon for leading art- 2. Spanish
Cubist painter (1887—1927).

TWILIGHT POLKA DOTS / 1617

Twilight Polka Dots

The lake was filled with distinguished fish
purchased at much expense in their prime.
It was a curious lake, half salt, wishing to
set at one of solitude edged with poetry.

This was a conscious body aware of shelves
and wandering rootlings, dutysuggeste
dit provide a scenic atmosphere of content
, a solicitude for the brooding emotions.

It despised the fish who enriched the waters.
Fish with their lithesome bodies, and th

birds disagreeable concern with feeding. They disturbed the water which preferred the cultivated echoes of a hunting horn. Inside a mercantile heart the lake dwelt on boning and deboning, skin and sharpened eyes, a ritual search through dependable deposits for slimier luxuries. The surface presented an appeal to meditation and surcease.

15 Situated below the mountain, surrounded by aged trees, the lake offered a picture appealing both to young and mature romance. At last it was the visual choice of two figures who in the fixity of their shared glance were admired by the lake. Tactfully they ignored the lacustrine

20 fish, their gaze faltered lightly on the lapping margins, their thoughts flew elsewhere, even beyond the loop of her twisted hair and the accent of his poised tie-pin.

The scenes supplied them with theatre, it was an evening performance and the water understood and strained its source for bugle echoes and silvered laments. The couple referred to the lake without speech, by the turn of a head, a hand waved, they placed a dignity upon the lake brow causing an undercurrent of physical pleasure to shake the water.

30 Until the letter fell. Torn into fragments the manta tossed it on the water, and the wind spilled the paper forward, the cypress bent, the mountains sent a glacial flake.

Fish leapt. Polka dots now stippled the twilight water and a superannuated gleam like a browned autumnal stalk follow

**ed the couple where they shied in the lake
a rsh grass like two eels who were caught.**

1989

3. Of or pertaining to a lake.

1618

EDWIN MORGAN

b. 1920

Strawberries

There were never strawberries

like the ones we had

that sultry afternoon

sitting on the step

5 of the open french window

facing each other

your knees held in mine

the blue plates in our laps

the strawberries glistening

io in the hot sunlight

we dipped them in sugar

looking at each other

not hurrying the feast

for one to come

15 the empty plates

laid on the stone together

with the two forks crossed

and I bent towards you

sweet in that air

20 in my arms

abandoned like a child
from your eager mouth
the taste of strawberries
in my memory
25 lean back again
let me love you
let the sun beat
on our forgetfulness
one hour of all
30 the heat intense
and summer lightning
on the Kilpatrick hills¹
let the storm wash the plates

1 9 6 5

King Billy

Grey over Riddrie² the clouds piled up,
dragged their rain through the cemetery trees.

The gates shone cold. Wind rose

1. Upland plateau in the county of West Dunbar- 2. A district
of Glasgow,

tonshire, Scotland.

T H E D O W S E R / 1 6 1 9

**f l a r i n g t h e h i s s i n g l e a v e s , t h e b r a n c h e s s
w u n g , h e a v y , a c r o s s t h e l a m p s .**

**G r a v e s t o n e s h u d d l e d i n d r i z z l i n g s h a d o w
, f l i c k e r i n g s t r e e t l i g h t s c a n n e d t h e r e q u i
e s c a t s , 3**

**a n a m e a n d a n u r n , a d a t e , a d o v e
p i c k e d o u t , l o s t , h a l f r e g a i n e d .**

10

What is this dripping wreath, blown from
its grave red, white, blue, and gold

“To Our Leader of Thirty years Ago” —

Bare headed, in dark suits, with flutes
and drums, they brought him here, in proc
ession 15

seriously, King Billy of Brighton, dead,
from Bridgeton Cross: a memory of violen
ce, brooding days of empty bellies,

billiard smoke 4 and a sour pint,

boots or fists, famous sherrickings, s

20

the word, the scuffle, the flash, the shout,
bloody crumpling in the close,

bricks for papish windows, get *Roman Catholic*

the Conks 6 next time, the Conks ambush

the Billy Boys, the Billy Boys the Conks till

25

Sillito escuffs the razors down the tank 0 —
drain

No, but it isn't the violence they remember b
ut the legend of a violent man

born poor, gang-leader in the bad times

of idleness and boredom, lost in better days,

30

a bouncer in a betting club,

quiet man at last, dying

alone in Bridgeton in a box bed.

So a thousand people stopped the traffic

f o r t h e h e a r s e o f a f o l k h e r o a n d t h e f l u t e s

35

**t h r e w " O n w a r d C h r i s t i a n S o l d i e r s " t o t h e
w i n d s f r o m u n i r o n i c l i p s , t h e m o u r n e r s k e p
t**

i n s t e p , a n d t h e r e w e r e s o m e w h o w e p t .

**G o f r o m t h e g r a v e . T h e s h r i l l f l u t e s
a r e s i l e n t , t h e m a r c h d i s p e r s e d .**

**D e p l o r e w h a t i s t o b e d e p l o r e d ,
a n d t h e n f i n d o u t t h e r e s t .**

1 9 6 8

The Dowser⁷

W i t h m y f o r k e d b r a n c h o f L e b a n e s e c e d a r

I q u a r t e r t h e d u n e s l i k e d o w n s a n d g u i d e

3. *Requiescat in pace* is Latin for "Rest in peace"

7. Someone who searches for underground
(often shortened to R.I.P. on gravestones).

streams by holding a forked branch of cedar or

4. Cigarette smoke from a billiard saloon.

hazel, which twitches when it is above water. A

5. Fussing over nothing (Scottish slang).

"water-table" (line 10) is the level to which under-

6. Name of a Roman Catholic gang.

ground water rises.

1 6 2 0 / K E I T H D O U G L A S

a n i n v i s i b l e p l o u g h f a r o v e r t h e s a n d .

B u t h o w t o q u a r t e r s u c h s h i f t i n g a c r e s

**5 w h e n t h e w i n d m e l t s t h e i r s h a p e s , a n d s h a
d o w s m a s s w h e r e a l l w a s b r i g h t b e f o r e ,**

and landmarks walk like wraiths 0 at noon?
ghosts

All I know is that underneath,
how many miles no one can say,
10 an unbroken water-table waits
like a lake; it has seen no bird or sail
in its long darkness, and no man;
not even pharaohs dug so far
for all their thirst, or thirst of glory,
15 or thrust-power of ten thousand slaves.
I tell you I can smell it though,
that water. I am old and black
and I know the manners of the sun
which makes me bend, not break. I lose
20 my ghostly footprints without complaint.

I put every mirage in its place.
I watch the lizard make its lace.
Like one not quite blind I go
feeling for the sunken face.
25 So hot the days, then nights so cold,
I gather my white rags and sigh
but sighing steps so steadily
that any vibrance in so deep
a lake would never fail to rise
30 towards the snowy cedar's bait.
Great desert, let your sweetness wake.

1986 1988

KEITH DOUGLAS

1920-1944

Vergissmeinnicht1

**Three weeks gone and the combatants gone
returning over the nightmare ground**

**we found the place again, and found
the soldiers sprawling in the sun.**

**5 The frowning barrel of his gun
overshadowing. As we came on
that day, he hit my tank with one
like the entry of a demon.**

1. Forget me not (German).

ARISTOCRATS / 1 6 2 1

**Look. Here in the gun pits spoil
10 the dishonoured picture of his girl
who has put: *Steffi. Vergissmeinnicht*
in a copy book gothic script.**

**We see him almost with content,
abased, and seeming to have paid
15 and mocked at by his own equipment
that's hard and good when he's decayed.**

**But she would weep to see today
how on his skin the swart flies move; *black*
the dust upon the paper eye**

20 and the burst stomach like a cave.

**For here the lover and killer are mingled
who had one body and one heart.**

**And death who had the soldiers singled
has done the lover mortal hurt.**

1943

1944

Aristocrats

The noble horse with courage in his eye,
clean in the bone, looksup at a shellburst:
away fly the images of the shires²

but he puts the pipe back in his mouth.

5 Peter was unfortunately killed by an 88:
3

it took his leg away, he died in the ambulance.

I saw him crawling on the sand; he said
It's most unfair, they've shot my foot off.

How can I live among this gentle

io obsolescent breed of heroes, and not weep?

Unicorns, almost,

for they are falling into two legends

in which their stupidity and chivalry

are celebrated. Each, fool and hero, will be
an immortal.

15 The plains were their cricket pitch⁴

and in the mountain the tremendous drop
fences⁵

brought down some of the runners. Here they
en under the stones and earth they dispose
themselves, I think with their famous un-
concern.

20 It is not gunfire I hear, but a hunting horn
.6

Tunisia, 1943

1 9 4 6

2. Counties. Cf. Wilfred Owen, "Anthem for
4. Field on which the game of cricket is played.

Doomed Youth," line 8 (p. 1386).

5. Fences in the course of a steeplechase horse

3. A German tank fitted with an eighty-eight-
race.

millimeter gun.

6. See note 7 below.

1 6 2 2 / K E I T H D O U G L A S

Gallantry

The Colonel⁷ in a casual voice

spoke into the microphone a joke

Which through a hundred earphones broke
into the ears of a doomed race.⁸

5 Into the ears of the doomed boy, the fool
whose perfectly mannered flesh fell
in opening the door for a shell
as he had learnt to do at school.

Conrad luckily survived the winter:

10 he wrote a letter to welcome
the auspicious spring: only his silken
intentions severed with a single splinter.

Was George fond of little boys?

We always suspected it,

15 but who will say: since George was hit
we never mention our surmise.

It was a brave thing the Colonel said,

but the whole sky turned too hot
and the three heroes never heard what
20 it was, gone deaf with steel and lead.
But the bullets cried with laughter,
the shells were overcome with mirth,
plunging their heads in steel and earth—
(the air commented in a whisper).

April 1943 1949

On a Return from Egypt
To stand here in the wings of Europe
disheartened, I have come away
from the sick land where in the sun lay
the gentle sloe-eyed⁹ murderers
5 of themselves, exquisites under a curse;
here to exercise my depleted fury.

7. “Lt. Col. J. D. Player, killed in Tunisia, Enfi-
on one of the manuscripts of “Aristocrats”; Player
daviile, February 1943, left £3,000 to the Beaufort
was in fact killed in April].

Hunt, and directed that the incumbent of the liv-

8. Cf. Wilfred Owen, “Anthem for Doomed
ing in his gift [i.e., the church whose vicar he was
Youth” (p. 1386).

entitled to appoint] should be a ‘man who approves

9. Dark-eyed: a sloe is the dark fruit of the black-
of hunting, shooting, and all manly sports, which
thorn.

are the backbone of the nation’ ” [Douglas’s note

T H E G O O S E F I S H / 1 6 2 3

For the heart is a coal, growing colder
when jewelled cerulean¹ seas change
into grey rocks, grey water-fringe,
10 sea and sky altering like a cloth
till colour and sheen are gone both:
cold is an opiate of the soldier.

And all my endeavours are unlucky explorers
come back, abandoning the expedition;
15 the specimens, the lilies of ambition
still spring in their climate, still unpicked:
but time, time is all I lacked
to find them, as the great collectors before me.

The next month, then, is a window
20 and with a crash I'll split the glass.
Behind it stands one I must kiss,
person of love or death
a person or a wraith,
I fear what I shall find.

March-April 1944? 1944

H O W A R D N E M E R O V

1920-1991

The Goose Fish

On the long shore, lit by the moon
To show them properly alone,
Two lovers suddenly embraced
So that their shadows were as one.

5 The ordinary night was graced

For them by the swift tide of blood
That silently they took at flood,
And for a little time they prized
Themselves emparadised.

10

Then, as if shaken by stage-fright
Beneath the hard moon's bony light,
They stood together on the sand
Embarrassed in each other's sight
But still conspiring hand in hand,

15

Until they saw, there underfoot,
As though the world had found them out,
The goose fish turning up, though dead,
His hugely grinning head.

1. Dark blue or green.

1 6 2 4 / H O W A R D N E M E R O V

There in the china light he lay,
20 Most ancient and corrupt and gray
They hesitated at his smile,
Wondering what it seemed to say
To lovers who a little while
Before had thought to understand,
25 By violence upon the sand,
The only way that could be known
To make a world their own.
It was a wide and moony grin
Together peaceful and obscene;

30 They knew not what he would express,
So finished a comedian
He might mean failure or success,
But took it for an emblem of
Their sudden, new and guilty love
35 To be observed by, when they kissed,
That rigid optimist.
So he became their patriarch,
Dreadfully mild in the half-dark.
His throat that the sand seemed to choke,
40 His picket teeth, these left their mark
But never did explain the joke
That so amused him, lying there
While the moon went down to disappear
Along the still and tilted track
45 That bears the zodiac.

1 9 5 5

A Primer of the Daily Round
A peels an apple, while B kneels to God,
C telephones to D, who has a hand
On E's knee, F coughs, G turns up the sod
For H's grave, I do not understand
5 But J is bringing one clay pigeon down
While K brings down a nightstick on L's head,
And M takes mustard, N drives into town,
O goes to bed with P, and Q drops dead,
R lies to S, but happens to be heard
io By T, who tells U not to fire V

For having to give W the word
That X is now deceiving Y with Z,
Who happens just now to remember A
Peeling an apple somewhere far away.

1 9 5 8

T H E B L U E S W A L L O W S / 1 6 2 5

The Blue Swallows

Across the millstream below the bridge
Seven blue swallows divide the air
In shapes invisible and evanescent,
Kaleidoscopic beyond the mind's
5 Or memory's power to keep them there.

“History is where tensions were,”

“Form is the diagram of forces.”

Thus, helplessly, there on the bridge,
While gazing down upon those birds—
10 How strange, to be above the birds!—

T h u s helplessly the mind in its brain

Weaves up relation's spindrift web,

Seeing the swallows' tails as nibs

Dipped in invisible ink, writing ...

15 Poor mind, what would you have them write?

Some cabalistic⁰ history *occult*

Whose authorship you might ascribe

To God? to Nature? Ah, poor ghost,

You've capitalized your Self enough.

20 That villainous William of Occam¹

Cut out the feet from under that dream

Some seven centuries ago.
It's taken that long for the mind
To waken, yawn and stretch, to see
25 With opened eyes emptied of speech
The real world where the spelling mind
Imposes with its grammar book
Unreal relations on the blue
Swallows. Perhaps when you will have
30 Fully awakened, I shall show you
A new thing: even the water
Flowing away beneath those birds
Will fail to reflect their flying forms,
And the eyes that see become as stones
35 W h e n c e never tears shall fall again.
O swallows, swallows, 2 poems are not
The point. Finding again the world,
That is the point, where loveliness
Adorns intelligible things
40 Because the mind's eye lit the sun.

1 9 6 7

1. Fourteenth-century scholastic philosopher; his complications.

central principle (“Occam’s razor”) was that the

2. Cf. T. S. Eliot, *The Waste Land*, line 429

simplest, most economical explanation is always
(p. 1356).

preferable over one that introduces unnecessary

1 6 2 6 / H O W A R D N E M E R O V

Boy with Book of Knowledge³

He holds a volume open in his hands:

Sepia portraits of the hairy great,

The presidents and poets in their beards

Alike, simplified histories of the wars,

5 Conundrums, quizzes, riddles, games and poems,

“Immortal Poems”; at least he can’t forget them,

Barbara Fritchie and the Battle Hymn,

And best of all America the Beautiful,⁴

Whose platitudinous splendors ended with

io “From sea to shining sea,” and made him cry

And wish to be a poet, only to say such things,

From sea to shining sea. Could that have been

Where it began? the vast pudding of knowledge,

With poetry rare as raisins in the midst

15 Of those gold-lettered volumes black and green?

Mere piety to think so. But being now

As near his deathday as his birthday then,

He would acknowledge all he will not know,

The silent library brooding through the night

20 With all its lights continuing to burn

Insomniac, a luxury liner on what sea

Unfathomable of ignorance who could say?

And poetry, as steady, still, and rare

As the lighthouses now unmanned and obsolete

25 That used to mark America’s dangerous shores.

1 9 7 5

Strange Metamorphosis of Poets

From epigram to epic is the course
For riders of the American winged horse.⁵
They change both size and sex over the years,
The voice grows deeper and the beard appears;
5 Running for greatness they sweat away their salt,
They start out Emily and wind up Walt.⁶

1 9 7 5

3. A type of reference book once used in schools.
ular patriotic poems of the Civil War.

4. “America the Beautiful” was often, and some-

5. Pegasus, the winged horse of Greek mythology,
times still is, sung in classrooms. “Barbara
bore poets in flights of genius.

Frietchie” (Nemerov misspelled it), by the Ameri-

6. Emily Dickinson (1830-1886; see pp. 1110—
can abolitionist John Greenleaf Whittier (1807—
27) and Walt Whitman (1819-1892; see

1892; see pp. 957-60), and the “Battle-Hymn of
pp. 1060—86), American poets known for their epi-
the Republic,” by the American suffragist Julia
grammatic and epic styles, respectively.

Ward Howe (1819-1910; see p. 1054), were pop-

T H E O L D W O M E N / 1 6 2 7

A Cabinet of Seeds Displayed

These are the original monies of the earth,

In which invested, as the spark in fire,

They will produce a green wealth toppling tall,

A trick they do by dying, by decay,

5 In burial becoming each his kind
To rise in glory and be magnified
A million times above the obscure grave.
Reader, these samples are exhibited
For contemplation, locked in potency
io And kept from act for reverence's sake.
May they remind us while we live on earth
That all economies are primitive;
And by their reservations may they teach
Our governors, who speak of husbandry
i5 And think the hurricane, where power lies.

1 9 7 5

G E O R G E M A C K A Y B R O W N

1921-1996

The Old Women

Go sad or sweet or riotous with beer
Past the old women gossiping by the hour,
They'll fix on you from every close and pier
An acid look to make your veins run sour.
5 "No help," they say, "his grandfather that's dead
Was troubled with the same dry-throated curse,
And many a night he made the ditch his bed.
This blood comes welling from the same cracked source."
On every kind of merriment they frown,
io But I have known a gray-eyed sober boy
Sail to the lobsters in a storm, and drown.
Over his body dripping on the stones
Those same old hags would weave into their moans

An undersong of terrible holy joy.

1 9 5 9

M O N A VAN DUYN

b. 1921

Letters from a Father

I

Ulcerated tooth keeps me awake, there is
such pain, would have to go to the hospital to have
it pulled or would bleed to death from the blood thinners,
but can't leave Mother, she falls and forgets her salve
and her tranquilizers, her ankles swell so and her bowels
are so bad, she almost had a stoppage and sometimes
what she passes is green as grass. There are big holes
in my thigh where my leg brace buckles the size of dimes.
My head pounds from the high pressure. It is awful
not to be able to get out, and I fell in the bathroom
and the girl could hardly get me up at all.

Sure thought my back was broken, it will be next time.

Prostate is bad and heart has given out,
feel bloated after supper. Have made my peace
because am just plain done for and have no doubt
that the Lord will come any day with my release.

You say you enjoy your feeder, I don't see why
you want to spend good money on grain for birds
and you say you have a hundred sparrows, I'd buy
poison and get rid of their diseases and turds.

II

We enjoyed your visit, it was nice of you to bring

the feeder but a terrible waste of your money
for that big bag of feed since we won't be living
more than a few weeks longer. We can see
them good from where we sit, big ones and little ones
but you know when I farmed I used to like to hunt
and we had many a good meal from pigeons
and quail and pheasant but these birds won't
be good for nothing and are dirty to have so near
the house. Mother likes the redbirds though.
My bad knee is so sore and I can't hardly hear
and Mother says she is hoarse from yelling but I know
it's too late for a hearing aid. I belch up all the time
and have a sour mouth and of course with my heart
it's no use to go to a doctor. Mother is the same.
Has a scab she thinks is going to turn to a wart.

III

The birds are eating and fighting, Ha! Ha! All shapes
and colors and sizes coming out of our woods
but we don't know what they are. Your Mother hopes
M O N A VAN DUYN

b. 1921

Letters from a Father

I

Ulcerated tooth keeps me awake, there is
such pain, would have to go to the hospital to have
it pulled or would bleed to death from the blood thinners,
but can't leave Mother, she falls and forgets her salve
and her tranquilizers, her ankles swell so and her bowels

are so bad, she almost had a stoppage and sometimes
what she passes is green as grass. There are big holes
in my thigh where my leg brace buckles the size of dimes.
My head pounds from the high pressure. It is awful
not to be able to get out, and I fell in the bathroom
and the girl could hardly get me up at all.
Sure thought my back was broken, it will be next time.
Prostate is bad and heart has given out,
feel bloated after supper. Have made my peace
because am just plain done for and have no doubt
that the Lord will come any day with my release.
You say you enjoy your feeder, I don't see why
you want to spend good money on grain for birds
and you say you have a hundred sparrows, I'd buy
poison and get rid of their diseases and turds.

II

We enjoyed your visit, it was nice of you to bring
the feeder but a terrible waste of your money
for that big bag of feed since we won't be living
more than a few weeks longer. We can see
them good from where we sit, big ones and little ones
but you know when I farmed I used to like to hunt
and we had many a good meal from pigeons
and quail and pheasant but these birds won't
be good for nothing and are dirty to have so near
the house. Mother likes the redbirds though.
My bad knee is so sore and I can't hardly hear
and Mother says she is hoarse from yelling but I know

it's too late for a hearing aid. I belch up all the time
and have a sour mouth and of course with my heart
it's no use to go to a doctor. Mother is the same.
Has a scab she thinks is going to turn to a wart.

III

The birds are eating and fighting, Ha! Ha! All shapes
and colors and sizes coming out of our woods
but we don't know what they are. Your Mother hopes
1 6 3 0 / M O N A V A N D U Y N
40 you can send us a kind of book that tells about birds.
There is one the folks called snowbirds, they eat on the
ground,
we had the girl sprinkle extra there, but say,
they eat something awful. I sent the girl to town
to buy some more feed, she had to go anyway.

IV

45 Almost called you on the telephone
but it costs so much to call thought better write.
Say, the funniest thing is happening, one
day we had so many birds and they fight
and get excited at their feed you know
50 and it's really something to watch and two or three
flew right at us and crashed into our window
and bang, poor little things knocked themselves silly.
They come to after awhile on the ground and flew away.
And they been doing that. We felt awful
55 and didn't know what to do but the other day
a lady from our Church drove out to call

and a little bird knocked itself out while she sat
and she brought it in her hands right into the house,
it looked like dead. It had a kind of hat
60 of feathers sticking up on its head, kind of rose
or pinky color, don't know what it was,
and I petted it and it come to life right there
in her hands and she took it out and it flew. She says
they think the window is the sky on a fair
65 day, she feeds birds too but hasn't got
so many. She says to hang strips of aluminum foil
in the window so we'll do that. She raved about
our birds. P.S. The book just come in the mail.

V

Say, that book is sure good, I study
70 in it every day and enjoy our birds.
Some of them I can't identify
for sure, I guess they're females, the Latin words
I just skip over. Bet you'd never guess
the sparrows I've got here, House Sparrows you wrote,
75 but I have Fox Sparrows, Song Sparrows, Vesper Sparrows,
Pine Woods and Tree and Chipping and White Throat
and White Crowned Sparrows. I have six Cardinals,
three pairs, they come at early morning and night,
the males at the feeder and on the ground the females,
so Juncos, maybe 25, they fight
for the ground, that's what they used to call snowbirds. I miss
the Bluebirds since the weather warmed. Their breast
is the color of a good ripe muskmelon. Tufted Titmouse

is sort of blue with a little tiny crest.

85 And I have Flicker and Red-Bellied and Red-

FALLING IN LOVE AT SIXTY-FIVE / 1 6 3 1

Headed Woodpeckers, you would die laughing

to see Red-Bellied, he hangs on with his head

flat on the board, his tail braced up under,

wing out. And Dickcissel and Ruby Crowned Ringlet

90 and Nuthatch stands on his head and Veery on top

the color of a bird dog and Hermit Thrush with spot

on breast, Blue Jay so funny, he will hop

right on the backs of the other birds to get the grain.

We bought some sunflower seeds just for him.

95 And Purple Finch I bet you never seen,

color of a watermelon, sits on the rim

of the feeder with his streaky wife, and the squirrels,

you know, they are cute too, they sit tall

and eat with their little hands, they eat bucketfuls.

100 I pulled my own tooth, it didn't bleed at all.

VI

It's sure a surprise how well Mother is doing,

she forgets her laxative but bowels move fine.

Now that windows are open she says our birds sing

all day. The girl took a Book of Knowledge¹ on loan

105 from the library and I am reading up

on the habits of birds, did you know some males have three

wives, some migrate some don't. I am going to keep

feeding all spring, maybe summer, you can see

they expect it. Will need thistle seed for Goldfinch and Pine

110 Siskin next winter. Some folks are going to come see us
from Church, some bird watchers, pretty soon.

They have birds in town but nothing to equal this.

So the world woos its children back for an evening kiss.

1 9 8 2

Falling in Love at Sixty-Five

It is like the first and last time I tried a Coleman⁰ *lamp*
for reading in bed in Maine. Too early the camp
went dark for fossil habits, no longer could candleflame
convince my eyes, and I lit that scary lamp.

5 Instant outcry came from the savage white light
of the mantles,² as if a star had been brought down
out of space and trapped by the unchinked logs of the
bedroom,
roaring its threat to explode the walls and be gone,
or as if the lamp could tell time and knew that one tongue
io was no longer enough to speak with, it must double its
blare,
overwhelm two senses at once, that the jaded heart
might burst into ravished applause for its *son et lumiere*.³

1. A general reference book. 3. Sound and light show
(French).

2. Incandescent cloth hoods of gaslight jets.

1 6 3 2 / R I C H A R D W I L B U R

Perched on a pile of books on the seat of a chair
drawn to the head of the bed, the lamp called out
15 the guilty years and shamed them for cracks and shrivels
that bent the patient, scabbed logs of the walls and ceiling.
Then I opened a book whose every radiant page

was illuminated in colors of lightning and thunder
by the quick-witted lamp in its artistry of rage.

20 The book and the lamp fused to one voice, whose sense
became mine, strokes of a slow, rhythmic broom
swept a dusty pith that seemed to lie still until
some other sense told me that there were wings in the room.

In one much earlier year I had fallen asleep

25 in the meadow, head near bright heights of fireweed,
fireweed

strewn on my chest from a hand that let go its bouquet,
and had wakened at eyelash touches, the delicate need
of five blue butterflies that found me in bloom.

Now, striking my neck and cheeks, came the first

BO wave of this late invasion, three flying bugs

that hit me, lit, flew again, hit, an outburst

the lamp had called for through log-gaps and screenholes, then

more entered the air, winged in gray, brown, dun,

and more, as I tried to read on, in the muted shades

35 brushed on by sundown's dimming imagination.

Beetle-bodied or light as moths they came

and, big and small, bombed the lit skin of face,

arms, shoulders, rested, crawled, unfurled, and sent

the blind wanting that stuffed full each one's carapace

40 in a clicking crash at the lampglass, then crazily flew

back to me, the bared part of me becoming a plan

for plates of an insect book whose specimens

rearranged themselves fiercely over and over again.

For as long as the lantern lasted they would have kept coming,

45 as if the grave darkness had smiled at that tiny dawn
and had hurled them in fistfuls straight at the speaking light
in answer to what was being insisted upon.

1 9 9 0

R I C H A R D W I L B U R

b. 1921

First Snow in Alsace¹

The snow came down last night like moths
Burned on the moon; it fell till dawn,
Covered the town with simple cloths.

1. Region of northern France.

**LOVE CALLS U S T O T H E T H I N G S O F T H I S
W O R L D / 1 6 3 3**

Absolute snow lies rumpled on
5 What shellbursts scattered and deranged,
Entangled railings, crevassed lawn.
As if it did not know they'd changed,
Snow smoothly clasps the roofs of homes
Fear-gutted, trustless and estranged.
10 The ration stacks are milky domes;
Across the ammunition pile
The snow has climbed in sparkling combs.
You think: beyond the town a mile
Or two, this snowfall fills the eyes
is Of soldiers dead a little while.
Persons and persons in disguise,
Walking the new air white and fine,
Trade glances quick with shared surprise.

At children's windows, heaped, benign,
20 As always, winter shines the most,
And frost makes marvelous designs.
The night guard coming from his post,
Ten first-snows back in thought, walks slow
And warms him with a boyish boast:
25 He was the first to see the snow.

1 9 4 7

Love Calls Us to the Things of This World²
The eyes open to a cry of pulleys,
And spirited from sleep, the astounded soul
Hangs for a moment bodiless and simple
As false dawn.

Outside the open window
5 The morning air is all awash with angels.
Some are in bed-sheets, some are in blouses,
Some are in smocks: but truly there they are.
Now they are rising together in calm swells
Of halcyon feeling, filling whatever they wear
io With the deep joy of their impersonal breathing;
Now they are flying in place, conveying
The terrible speed of their omnipresence, moving
2. A quotation from St. Augustine (354—430), author of
works such as the *Confessions*.

1 6 3 4 / R I C H A R D W I L B U R

And staying like white water; and now of a sudden
They swoon down into so rapt a quiet
15 That nobody seems to be there.

The soul shrinks
From all that it is about to remember,
From the punctual rape of every blessed day,
And cries,
“Oh, let there be nothing on earth but laundry,
Nothing but rosy hands in the rising steam
20 And clear dances done in the sight of heaven.”
Yet, as the sun acknowledges
With a warm look the world’s hunks and colors,
The sou] descends once more in bitter love
To accept the waking body, saying now
25 In a changed voice as the man yawns and rises,
“Bring them down from their ruddy gallows;
Let there be clean linen for the backs of thieves;
Let lovers go fresh and sweet to be undone,
And the heaviest nuns walk in a pure floating
30 Of dark habits,
keeping their difficult balance.”

1 9 5 6

Piazza di Spagna,³ Early Morning

I can’t forget
How she stood at the top of that long marble stair
Amazed, and then with a sleepy pirouette
Went dancing slowly down to the fountain-quieted square;
5 Nothing upon her face
But some impersonal loneliness,—not then a girl,
But as it were a reverie of the place,
A called-for falling glide and whirl;

As when a leaf, petal, or thin chip
io Is drawn to the falls of a pool and, circling a moment above
it,
Rides on over the lip—
Perfectly beautiful, perfectly ignorant of it.

1 9 5 6

3. Plaza in Rome, famous for its long, curved stairway.

**A BAROQUE WALL - FOUNTAIN IN THE VILLA
SCIARRA / 1 6 3 5**

A Plain Song for Comadre⁴

Though the unseen may vanish, though insight fails
And doubter and downcast saint
Join in the same complaint,

What holy things were ever frightened off

5 By a fly's buzz, or itches, or a cough?

Harder than nails

They are, more warmly constant than the sun,

At whose continual sign

The dimly prompted vine

io Upbraids itself to a green excellence.

What evening, when the slow and forced expense

Of sweat is done,

Does not the dark come flooding the straight furrow

Or filling the well-made bowl?

15 What night will not the whole

Sky with its clear studs and steady spheres

Turn on a sound chimney? It is seventeen years

Come tomorrow

That Bruna Sandoval has kept the church

20 Of San Ysidro,⁵ sweeping
And scrubbing the aisles, keeping
The candlesticks and the plaster faces bright,
And seen no visions but the thing done right
From the clay porch
25 To the white altar. For love and in all weathers
This is what she has done.
Sometimes the early sun
Shines as she flings the scrubwater out, with a crash
Of grimy rainbows, and the stained suds flash
30 Like angel-feathers.

1 9 5 6

A Baroque Wall-Fountain in the Villa Sciarra⁶

For Dore and Adja

Under the bronze crown
Too big for the head of the stone cherub whose feet
4. Peasant woman (Spanish); also, midwife, god-
5. Village in San Diego County, near the Mexican
mother, neighbor. *Plain song*: or plainsong; the
border.

unisonous vocal music of the early Christian

6. A large public park in Rome.

Church; also, any simple melody.

1 6 3 6 / R I C H A R D W I L B U R

A serpent has begun to eat,
Sweet water brims a cockle⁷ and braids down
5 Past spattered mosses, breaks
On the tipped edge of a second shell, and fills

The massive third below. It spills
In threads then from the scalloped rim, and makes
A scrim or summery tent
10 For a faun-menage⁸ and their familiar goose.
Happy in all that ragged, loose
Collapse of water, its effortless descent
And flatteries of spray,
The stocky god upholds the shell with ease,
15 Watching, about his shaggy knees,
The goatish innocence of his babes at play;
His fauness all the while
Leans forward, slightly, into a clambering mesh
Of water-lights, her sparkling flesh
20 In a saecular⁹ ecstasy, her blinded smile
Bent on the sand floor
Of the trefoil¹⁰ pool, where ripple-shadows come *three-leaved*
And go in swift reticulum,⁰ *netlikeform*
More addling to the eye than wine, and more
25 Interminable to thought
Than pleasure's calculus. Yet since this all
Is pleasure, flash, and waterfall,
Must it not be too simple? Are we not
More intricately expressed
30 In the plain fountains that Maderna¹ set
Before St. Peter's—the main jet
Struggling aloft until it seems at rest
In the act of rising, until
The very wish of water is reversed,

35 That heaviness borne up to burst
In a clear, high, cavorting head, to fill
With blaze, and then in gauze
Delays, in a gnatlike shimmering, in a fine
Illumined version of itself, decline,
40 And patter on the stones its own applause?
7. Shell-shaped basin, part of the fountain.
1. Carlo Maderno (1556-1629), Italian architect
8. Group surrounding the faun, in classical
and designer responsible for giving St. Peter's
mythology a lusty rural god usually pictured with
Basilica, in Rome, the shape of a cross and for
a goat's legs and tail.
completing the facade.
9. Lasting for ages (punning on *secular*, worldly).

A D V I C E T O A P R O P H E T / 1 6 3 7

If that is what men are
Or should be, if those water-saints display
The pattern of our arete,²
What of these showered fauns in their bizarre,
45 Spangled, and plunging house?
They are at rest in fulness of desire
For what is given, they do not tire
Of the smart of the sun, the pleasant water-douse
And riddled pool below,
50 Reproving our disgust and our ennui
With humble insatiety.
Francis,³ perhaps, who lay in sister snow

Before the wealthy gate
Freezing and praising, might have seen in this
55 No trifle, but a shade of bliss—
That land of tolerable flowers, that state
As near and far as grass
Where eyes become the sunlight, and the hand
Is worthy of water: the dreamt land
60 Toward which all hungers leap, all pleasures pass.

1 9 5 6

Advice to a Prophet
When you come, as you soon must, to the streets of our city,
Mad-eyed from stating the obvious,
Not proclaiming our fall but begging us
In God's name to have self-pity,
5 Spare us all word of the weapons, their force and range,
The long numbers that rocket the mind;
Our slow, unreckoning hearts will be left behind,
Unable to fear what is too strange.
Nor shall you scare us with talk of the death of the race,
io How should we dream of this place without us?—
The sun mere fire, the leaves untroubled about us,
A stone look on the stone's face?
Speak of the world's own change. Though we cannot conceive
Of an undreamt thing, we know to our cost
15 How the dreamt cloud crumbles, the vines are blackened by
frost,
How the view alters. We could believe,
2. "A Greek word meaning roughly 'virtue' " [Wil- 3. I.e., St.
Francis of Assisi (1182—1226), known bur's note], for his

vow of poverty and love of nature.

1 6 3 8 / R I C H A R D W I L B U R

If you told us so, that the white-tailed deer will slip
Into perfect shade, grown perfectly shy,
The lark avoid the reaches of our eye,
20 The jack-pine lose its knuckled grip
On the cold ledge, and every torrent burn
As Xanthus⁴ once, its gliding trout
Stunned in a twinkling. What should we be without
The dolphin's arc, the dove's return,
25 These things in which we have seen ourselves and spoken?
Ask us, prophet, how we shall call
Our natures forth when that live tongue is all
Dispelled, that glass obscured or broken
In which we have said the rose of our love and the clean
30 Horse of our courage, in which beheld
The singing locust of the soul unshelled,
And all we mean or wish to mean.
Ask us, ask us whether with the worldless rose
Our hearts shall fail us; come demanding
35 Whether there shall be lofty or long standing
When the bronze annals of the oak-tree close.

1 9 6 1

Junk

Huru Welandes

wore ne geswiced

monna senigum

dara de Mimming can

heardne gehealdan.

—*Waldere*5

An axe angles
from my neighbor's ashcan;
It is hell's handiwork,
The flow of the grain
the wood not hickory,
The shivered shaft
not faithfully followed,
Of plastic playthings, rises from a shellheap
And the sheer shards
paper plates,
of shattered tumblers

4. "Haphaestus, invoked by Achilles, scalded the Wayland, and may roughly be translated: 'Truly, river Xanthus (Scamander) in *Iliad*, *xxi*' [Wilbur's Wayland's handiwork—the sword Mimmingwhich note]. he made—will never fail any man who knows how

5. "The epigraph, taken from a fragmentary to use it bravely' ” [Wilbur's note].

Anglo-Saxon poem, concerns the legendary smith

J U N K / 1 6 3 9

That were not annealed
for the time needful.
15 At the same curbside,
a cast-off cabinet
Of wavily-warped
unseasoned wood
Waits to be trundled
20 in the trash-man's truck.

Haul them off! Hide them!
The heart winces
For junk and gimcrack,
for jerrybuilt things
25 And the men who make them
for a little money,
Bartering pride
like the bought boxer
Who pulls his punches,
30 or the paid-off jockey
Who in the home stretch
holds in his horse.
Yet the things themselves
in thoughtless honor
35 Have kept composure,
like captives who would not
Talk under torture.
Tossed from a tailgate
Where the dump displays
40 its random dolmens,⁶
Its black barrows
and blazing valleys,
They shall waste in the weather
toward what they were.
45 The sun shall glory
in the glitter of glass-chips,
Foreseeing the salvage
of the prisoned sand,

And the blistering paint
50 peel off in patches,
That the good grain
be discovered again.
Then burnt, bulldozed,
they shall all be buried
55 To the depth of diamonds,
in the making dark
Where halt Hephaestus⁷
keeps his hammer
And Wayland's work
60 is worn away.

1 9 6 1

6. Prehistoric monuments of horizontal stone tombs.
slabs supported by upright stones; believed to be 7. Greek god
of fire and the forge.

1 6 4 0 / R I C H A R D W I L B U R

Cottage Street, 1953

Framed in her phoenix fire-screen, Edna Ward⁸
Bends to the tray of Canton,⁹ pouring tea
For frightened Mrs. Plath;¹ then, turning toward
The pale, slumped daughter, and my wife, and me,
5 Asks if we would prefer it weak or strong.
Will we have milk or lemon, she enquires?
The visit seems already strained and long.
Each in his turn, we tell her our desires.
It is my office to exemplify
io The published poet in his happiness,

Thus cheering Sylvia, who has wished to die;
But half-ashamed, and impotent to bless,
I am a stupid life-guard who has found,
Swept to his shallows by the tide, a girl
15 Who, far from shore, has been immensely drowned,
And stares through water now with eyes of pearl.
How large is her refusal; and how slight
The genteel chat whereby we recommend
Life, of a summer afternoon, despite
20 The brewing dusk which hints that it may end.
And Edna Ward shall die in fifteen years,
After her eight-and-eighty summers of
Such grace and courage as permit no tears,
The thin hand reaching out, the last word *love*,
25 Outliving Sylvia who, condemned to live,
Shall study for a decade, as she must,
To state at last her brilliant negative
In poems free and helpless and unjust.

1 9 7 6

Zea2

Once their fruit is picked,
The cornstalks lighten, and though
Keeping to their strict

8. Wilbur's mother-in-law.

already attempted suicide and eventually took her

9. Porcelain named after the city in China.

own life.

1. Mother of Sylvia Plath, the American poet

2. Indian corn.

(1932-1963; see pp. 1836-45), who by 1953 had

REMEMBERING THE 'THIRTIES / 1641

Rows, begin to be

5 The tall grasses that they are—

Lissom, now, and free

As canes that clatter

In island wind, or plumed reeds

Rocked by lake water.

10 Soon, if not cut down,

Their ranks grow whistling-dry, and

Blanch to lightest brown,

So that, one day, all

Their ribbon-like, down-arcing

is Leaves rise up and fall

In tossed companies,

Like goose-wings beating southward

Over the changed trees.

Later, there are days

20 Full of bare expectancy,

Downcast hues, and haze,

Days of an utter

Calm, in which one white corn-leaf,

Oddly aflutter,

25 Its fabric sheathing

A gaunt stem, can seem to be

The sole thing breathing.

2000

D O N A L D D A V I E

1922-1995

Remembering the 'Thirties

I

Hearing one saga, we enact the next.

We please our elders when we sit enthralled;

But then they're puzzled; and at last they're vexed

To have their youth so avidly recalled.

5 It dawns upon the veterans after all

That what for them were agonies, for us

Are high-brow thrillers, though historical;

And all their feats quite strictly fabulous.

1 6 4 2 / D O N A L D D A V I E

This novel written fifteen years ago,

10 Set in my boyhood and my boyhood home,

These poems about "abandoned workings", show

Worlds more remote than Ithaca¹ or Rome.

The Anschluss, Guernica²—all the names

At which those poets thrilled or were afraid

15 For me mean schools and schoolmasters and games;

And in the process some-one is betrayed.

Ourselves perhaps. The Devil for a joke

Might carve his own initials on our desk,

And yet we'd miss the point because he spoke

20 An idiom too dated, Audenesque.³

Raleigh's Guiana also killed his son.⁴

A pretty pickle if we came to see

The tallest story really packed a gun,

The Telemachiad⁵ an *Odyssey*.

II

25 Even to them the tales were not so true

As not to be ridiculous as well;

The ironmaster met his Waterloo,

But Rider Haggard⁶ rode along the fell.

“Leave for Cape Wrath tonight!” They lounged away

30 On Fleming’s trek or Isherwood’s ascent.⁷

England expected every man that day

To show his motives were ambivalent.

They played the fool, not to appear as fools

In time’s long glass. A deprecating air

35 Disarmed, they thought, the jeers of later schools;

Yet irony itself is doctrinaire,

And curiously, nothing now betrays

Their type to time’s derision like this coy

Insistence on the quizzical, their craze

40 For showing Hector⁸ was a mother’s boy.

1. Greek island; home of Odysseus, the story of

5. The first four books of the *Odyssey*, which center on Telemachus,

Penelope, and son, Telemachus, is told in Homer’s

6. English writer (1856-1925), famous for boys’ *Odyssey*.

adventure stories and novels such as *King Solo-*

2. Spanish town bombed by German aircraft in *mon’s Mines* (1885). *Waterloo*: battle of 1815, in

the Spanish Civil War, an event commemorated by Belgium, in which Napoleon was finally defeated. the Spanish expatriate artist Pablo Picasso's painting *Guernica* (1937). *Anschluss*: union (German); by W. H. Auden and the American (English-born) name given to the German seizure of Austria in writer Christopher Isherwood (1904-1986), both March 1938.

of whom met the English explorer and travel writer 3. In the style of the American (English-born) Peter Fleming (1907-1971) on a trip to China. poet W. H. Auden (1907-1973; see pp. 1465-81). The quoted line, from Auden's 1929 poem "Miss- 4. In search of gold, the English courtier-poet Sir ing," refers to the northernmost point of mainland Walter Raleigh (ca. 1552-1618; see pp. 151-58) Scotland.

led a military expedition to Guiana, in South Amer- 8. In Homer's *Iliad*, leader of the Trojans at the ica, on which his son was killed in 1617. siege of Troy.

TIME PASSING , BELOVED / 1643

A neutral tone is nowadays preferred.

And yet it may be better, if we must,

To praise a stance impressive and absurd

Than not to see the hero for the dust.

45 For courage is the vegetable king,

The sprig of all ontologies, the weed
That beards the slag-heap with his hectoring,
Whose green adventure is to run to seed.

1 9 5 5

The Fountain

Feathers up fast, and steeples; then in clods
Thuds into its first basin; thence as surf
Smokes up and hangs; irregularly slops
Into its second, tattered like a shawl;
5 There, chill as rain, stipples a darker green,
Where urgent tritons⁹ lob their heavy jets.
For Berkeley¹ this was human thought, that mounts
From bland assumptions to inquiring skies,
There glints with wit, fumes into fancies, plays
io With its negations, and at last descends,
As by a law of nature, to its bowl
Of thus enlightened but still common sense.
We who have no such confidence must gaze
With all the more affection on these forms,
15 These spires, these plumes, these calm reflections, these
Similitudes of surf and turf and shawl,
Graceful returns upon acceptances.
We ask of fountains only that they play,
Though that was not what Berkeley meant at all.

1 9 5 7

Time Passing, Beloved

Time passing, and the memories of love
Coming back to me, carissima,² no more mockingly

Than ever before; time passing, unslackening,
Unhastening, steadily; and no more

9. I.e., statues depicting the Greek demigod of the
not an independent entity of which our minds may
sea, Triton, whose lower body was that of a fish.

be an effect, but, rather, depends on our sensory

1. George Berkeley (1685-1753), Irish bishop
perception for its existence.

and philosopher, who maintained that the world is

2. Darling (Italian).

1 6 4 4 / S I D N E Y K E Y E S

5 Bitterly, beloved, the memories of love

Coming into the shore.

How will it end? Time passing and our passages of love

As ever, beloved, blind

As ever before; time binding, unbinding

10 About us; and yet to remember

Never less chastening, nor the flame of love

Less like an ember.

What will become of us? Time

Passing, beloved, and we in a sealed

15 Assurance unassailed

By memory. How can it end,

This siege of a shore that no misgivings have steeled,

No doubts defend?

1 9 5 7

S I D N E Y K E Y E S

1922-1943

Elegy

*(In memoriam S. K. K.)*¹

April again, and it is a year again
Since you walked out and slammed the door
Leaving us tangled in your words. Your brain
Lives in the bank-book, and your eyes look up
5 Laughing from the carpet on the floor:
And we still drink from your silver cup.
It is a year again since they poured
The dumb ground into your mouth:
And yet we know, by some recurring word
io Or look caught unawares, that you still drive
Our thoughts like the smart cobs² of your youth—
When you and the world were alive.
A year again, and we have fallen on bad times
Since they gave you to the worms.
15 I am ashamed to take delight in these rhymes
Without grief; but you need no tears.
We shall never forget nor escape you, nor make terms
With your enemies, the swift departing years.

1 9 3 8 1 9 4 5

1. Keyes was sixteen when he wrote this elegy for 2. Stocky, short-legged riding horses, his grandfather.

T H E F O R E I G N G A T E / 1 6 4 5

From The Foreign Gate

The moon is a poor woman.
The moon returns to weep with us. The crosses
Burn raw and white upon the night's stiff banners.

The wooden crosses and the marble trees
5 Shrink from the foreign moon.
The iron gate glitters. Here the soldiers lie.
Fold up the flags, muffle the soldier's drum;
Silence the calling fife. O drape *small flute*
The soldier's drum with heavy crepe;
10 With mourning weeds muffle the soldier's girl.
It's a long way and a long march
To the returning moon and to the soil
No time at all.

O call

H The soldier's glory by another name:
Shroud up the soldier's common shame
And drape the soldier's drum, but spare
The steel-caged brain, the feet that walk to war.
Once striding under a horsehair plume
20 Once beating the taut drums for war
The sunlight rang from brass and iron;
History was an angry play—
The boy grew tall and roae away;
The door hung slack; the pale girl wept
25 And cursed the company he kept.
And dumb men spoke
Through the glib mouths of smoke;
The servile learned to strike
The proud to shriek;
30 And strangled in their lovers' lips
The young fell short of glory in the sand

Raking for graves among the scattered sand;
The tattered flags strained at the wind
Scaring the thrifty kite, mocking the dead.
35 But muffle the soldier's drum, hide his pale head,
His face a spider's web of blood. O fold
The hands that grip a splintered gun.
The glittering gate
Baffles him still, his starvecrow³ soul. O drape
40 The soldier's drum and cry, who never dare
Defy the ironbound brain, the feet that walk to war.
The cold hand clenches. The stupid mouth
Writhes like a ripple. Now the field is full
Of noises and dead voices ...
45 "My rags flap
3. Cursed (from the Australian slang *Gawd starve the crows!*).
1 6 4 6 / S I D N E Y K E Y E S
Though the great flags are trampled ... "
"My mouth speaks
Terror and truth, instead of hard command."
"Remember the torn lace, the fine coats slashed
50 With steel instead of velvet. Kiinersdorf⁴
Fought in the shallow sand was my relief."
"I rode to Naseby" ... "And the barren land
Of Tannenberg drank me. Remember now
The grey and jointed corpses in the snow,
55 The struggle in the drift, the numb hands freezing
Into the bitter iron ... "
"At Dunkirk I

Rolled in the shallows, and the living trod
Across me for a bridge ... ”

60 “Let me speak out
Against this sham of policy, for pain
Alone is true. I was a general
Who fought the cunning Africans, returned
Crowned with harsh laurel,⁵ frantically cheered
65 Through Roman streets. I spoke of fame and glory.
Women grabbed at my robe. Great poets praised me.
I died of cancer, screaming, in a year.”

“I fell on a black Spanish hillside
Under the thorn-hedge, fighting for a dream
70 That troubled me in Paris; vomited
My faith and courage out among the stones ...”

“I was a barb of light, a burning cross
Of wood and canvas, falling through the night.”

“I was shot down at morning, in a yard.”

75 The moon regards them without shame. The wind
Rises and twitters through the wreck of bone ...

“It is so hard to be alone
Continually, watching the great stars march
Their circular unending route; sharp sand
so Straying about the eyes, blinding the quick-eyed spirit.”

A soldier’s death is hard;
There’s no prescribed or easy word
For dissolution in the Army books.
The uniform of pain with pain put on is straiter
85 Than any lover’s garment; yet the death

Of these is different, and their glory greater.
Once men, then moving figures on a map,
Patiently giving time and strength and vision
Even identity

90 Into the future's keeping;
Nourished on wounds and weeping
Faces and laughing flags and pointed laurels,
Their pain cries down the noise of poetry.

4. Lines 50—57 refer to famous battles from dif- 5. In ancient Greece and Rome, crowns of laurel ferent periods of history. leaves were awarded as honors.

W A R P O E T / 1 6 4 7

So muffle the soldier's drum, forget the battles;

95 Remember only fame's a way of living:

The writing may be greater than the speaking

And every death for something different

From time's compulsion, is a written word.

Whatever gift, it is the giving

100 Remains significant: whatever death

It is the dying matters.

Emblematic

Bronze eagle or bright banner or carved name

Of fighting ancestor; these never pardon

105 The pain and sorrow. It is the dying pardons,

For something different from man or emblem.

Then drape the soldier's drum

And carry him down

Beyond the moon's inspection, and the noise

no Of bands and banners and the striking sun.

Scatter the soldier's emblems and his fame:
Shroud up the shattered face, the empty name;
Speak out the word and drape the drum and spare
The captive brain, the feet that walk to war
ii5 The ironbound brain, the hand unskilled in war
The shrinking brain, sick of an inner war.

1 9 4 2 1 9 4 2

War Poet

I am the man who looked for peace and found
My own eyes barbed.

I am the man who groped for words and found
An arrow in my hand.

5 I am the builder whose firm walls surround
A slipping land.

When I grow sick or mad

Mock me not nor chain me:

When I reach for the wind

io Cast me not down:

Though my face is a burnt book

And a wasted town.

1 9 4 2

1 9 4 3

1 6 4 8

P H I L I P L A R K I N

1922-1985

For Sidney Bechet¹

That note you hold, narrowing and rising, shakes
Like New Orleans reflected on the water,

And in all ears appropriate falsehood wakes,
Building for some a legendary Quarter
5 Of balconies, flower-baskets and quadrilles,²
Everyone making love and going shares—
Oh, play that thing! Mute glorious Storyvilles³
Others may license, grouping round their chairs
Sporting-house girls like circus tigers (priced
io Far above rubies)⁴ to pretend their fads,
While scholars *manques* ⁵ nod around unnoticed
Wrapped up in personnels⁰ like old plaids. *band members*
On me your voice falls as they say love should,
Like an enormous yes. My Crescent City
15 Is where your speech alone is understood,
And greeted as the natural noise of good,
Scattering long-haired grief and scored pity.

1 9 5 4

1 9 6 4

Born Yesterday

*for Sally Amis*⁶

Tightly-folded bud,
I have wished you something
None of the others would:
Not the usual stuff
5 About being beautiful,
Or running off a spring
Of innocence and love—
They will all wish you that,
And should it prove possible,

io Well, you're a lucky girl.

1. American jazz clarinetist and saxophonist
rious Milton here may rest.”

(1897-1959), born in New Orleans (“Crescent

4. Cf. Proverbs 31.10: “Who can find a virtuous
City,” line 14), where he spent his teenage years
woman? For her price is far above rubies.”

playing in the dance halls and brothels of the

5. Would-be scholars.

Storyville (line 7) Quarter (line 4), or district.

6. Daughter (1954-2000) of Larkin's friend the

2. Square dance for couples.

English novelist Kingsley Amis and Amis's wife,

3. Cf. Thomas Gray, “Elegy Written in a Country
Hilary. Cf. W. B. Yeats, “A Prayer for my Daugh-
Churchyard,” line 59 (p. 671): “Some mute inglo-
ter” (p. 1196).

CHURCHGOING / 1649

But if it shouldn't, then

May you be ordinary;

Have, like other women,

An average of talents:

15 Not ugly, not good-looking,

Nothing uncustomary

To pull you off your balance,

That, unworkable itself,

Stops all the rest from working.

20 In fact, may you be dull—

If that is what a skilled,
Vigilant, flexible,
Unemphasised, enthralled
Catching of happiness is called.

1 9 5 4 1 9 5 5

Church Going

Once I am sure there's nothing going on
I step inside, letting the door thud shut.
Another church: matting, seats, and stone,
And little books; sprawlings of flowers, cut
5 For Sunday, brownish now; some brass and stuff
Up at the holy end; the small neat organ;
And a tense, musty unignorable silence,
Brewed God knows how long. Hatless, I take off
My cycle-clips⁷ in awkward reverence,
io Move forward, run my hand around the font.
From where I stand, the roof looks almost new—
Cleaned, or restored? Someone would know: I don't.
Mounting the lectern, I peruse a few
Hectoring large-scale verses,⁸ and pronounce
15 "Here endeth" much more loudly than I'd meant.
The echoes snigger briefly. Back at the door
I sign the book, donate an Irish sixpence,⁹
Reflect the place was not worth stopping for.
Yet stop I did: in fact I often do,
20 And always end much at a loss like this,
Wondering what to look for; wondering, too,
When churches fall completely out of use

What we shall turn them into, if we shall keep
A few cathedrals chronically on show,
25 Their parchment, plate and pyx¹ in locked cases,
And let the rest rent-free to rain and sheep.

Shall we avoid them as unlucky places?

7. Devices worn below the knee to keep trouser

9. An Irish sixpence has no value in England.

legs from getting caught in a bicycle chain.

1. Box, often made of gold or silver, in which com-

8. I.e., biblical verses printed in large type for
munion wafers are kept.

reading aloud.

1 6 5 0 / P H I L I P L A R K I N

Or, after dark, will dubious women come

To make their children touch a particular stone;

30 Pick simples⁰ for a cancer; or on some *medicinal herbs*

Advised night see walking a dead one?

Power of some sort or other will go on

In games, in riddles, seemingly at random;

But superstition, like belief, must die,

35 And what remains when disbelief has gone?

Grass, weedy pavement, brambles, buttress, sky,

A shape less recognisable each week,

A purpose more obscure. I wonder who

Will be the last, the very last, to seek

40 This place for what it was; one of the crew

That tap and jot and know what rood-lofts² were?

Some ruin-bibber, randy for antique,

Or Christmas-addict, counting on a whiff
Of gown-and-bands and organ-pipes and myrrh?³
45 Or will he be my representative,
Bored, uninformed, knowing the ghostly silt
Dispersed, yet tending to this cross of ground
Through suburb scrub because it held unspilt
So long and equably what since is found
50 Only in separation—marriage, and birth,
And death, and thoughts of these—for which was built
This special shell? For, though I've no idea
What this accoutred frowsty barn is worth,
It pleases me to stand in silence here;
55 A serious house on serious earth it is,
In whose blent air all our compulsions meet,
Are recognized, and robed as destinies.
And that much never can be obsolete,
Since someone will forever be surprising
60 A hunger in himself to be more serious,
And gravitating with it to this ground,
Which, he once heard, was proper to grow wise in,
If only that so many dead lie round.

1 9 5 4 1 9 5 5

An Arundel Tomb⁴

Side by side, their faces blurred,
The earl and countess lie in stone,
2. In churches, galleries on top of carved screens
ents given to the infant Jesus (Matthew 2, Luke 2).
separating the naves, or main halls, from the

Gown-and-bands: gown and decorative collar worn
choirs, or areas where services are performed
by clergymen.

(*rood*: cross).

4. Fourteenth-century table tomb of Richard Fitz-

3. Gum resin, from trees of eastern Africa and
alan III, thirteenth earl of Arundel, and his wife,
Arabia, used to make incense; one of three pres-
Eleanor, in Chichester Cathedral, Sussex.

A N A R U N D E L T O M B / 1 6 5 1

Their proper habits⁰ vaguely shown *clothing*

As jointed armour, stiffened pleat,

5 And that faint hint of the absurd—

The little dogs under their feet.

Such plainness of the pre-baroque

Hardly involves the eye, until

It meets his left-hand gauntlet, still

10 Clasped empty in the other; and

One sees, with a sharp tender shock

His hand withdrawn, holding her hand.

They would not think to lie so long.

Such faithfulness in effigy

15 Was just a detail friends would see:

A sculptor's sweet commissioned grace

Thrown off in helping to prolong

The Latin names around the base.

They would not guess how early in

20 Their supine stationary voyage

The air would change to soundless damage,
Turn the old tenantry away;
How soon succeeding eyes begin
To look, not read. Rigidly they
25 Persisted, linked, through lengths and breadths
Of time. Snow fell, undated. Light
Each summer thronged the glass. A bright
Litter of birdcalls strewed the same
Bone-riddled ground. And up the paths
30 The endless altered people came,
Washing at their identity.
Now, helpless in the hollow of
An unarmorial age, a trough
Of smoke in slow suspended skeins
35 Above their scrap of history,
Only an attitude remains:
Time has transfigured them into
Untruth. The stone fidelity
They hardly meant has come to be
40 Their final blazon,0 and to prove *record, of virtue*
Our almost-instinct almost true:
What will survive of us is love.

1 9 5 6

1 9 6 4

1 6 5 2 / P H I L I P L A R K I N

The Whitsun⁵ Weddings

That Whitsun, I was late getting away:

Not till about

One-twenty on the sunlit Saturday
Did my three-quarters-empty train pull out,
5 All windows down, all cushions hot, all sense
Of being in a hurry gone. We ran
Behind the backs of houses, crossed a street
Of blinding windscreens, smelt the fish-dock; thence
The river's level drifting breadth began,
10 Where sky and Lincolnshire and water meet.
All afternoon, through the tall heat that slept
For miles inland,
A slow and stopping curve southwards we kept.
Wide farms went by, short-shadowed cattle, and
15 Canals with floatings of industrial froth;
A hothouse flashed uniquely: hedges dipped
And rose: and now and then a smell of grass
Displaced the reek of buttoned carriage-cloth
Until the next town, new and nondescript,
20 Approached with acres of dismantled cars.
At first, I didn't notice what a noise
The weddings made
Each station that we stopped at: sun destroys
The interest of what's happening in the shade,
25 And down the long cool platforms whoops and skirls
shrill cries
I took for porters larking with the mails,
And went on reading. Once we started, though,
We passed them, grinning and pomaded, girls
In parodies of fashion, heels and veils,

30 All posed irresolutely, watching us go,
As if out on the end of an event
Waving goodbye
To something that survived it. Struck, I leant
More promptly out next time, more curiously,
35 And saw it all again in different terms:
The fathers with broad belts under their suits
And seamy foreheads; mothers loud and fat;
An uncle shouting smut; and then the perms,
The nylon gloves and jewellery-substitutes,
40 The lemons, mauves, and olive-ochres that
Marked off the girls unreally from the rest.

Yes, from cafes

And banquet-halls up yards, and bunting-dressed
5. Or Whitsunday, the seventh Sunday after
white robes. In the 1950s, British taxlawmade the
Easter, commemorating the day of Pentecost,
Whitsun weekend a financially advantageous time
when converts to the early Christian Church wore
to be married.

MCMXIV / 1653

Coach-party annexes, the wedding-days
Were coming to an end. All down the line
Fresh couples climbed aboard: the rest stood round;
The last confetti and advice were thrown,
And, as we moved, each face seemed to define
Just what it saw departing: children frowned

50

At something dull; fathers had never known
Success so huge and wholly farcical;
The women shared
The secret like a happy funeral;
While girls, gripping their handbags tighter, stared
55

At a religious wounding. Free at last,
And loaded with the sum of all they saw,
We hurried towards London, shuffling gout of steam.
Now fields were building-plots, and poplars cast
Long shadows over major roads, and for
60

Some fifty minutes, that in time would seem
Just long enough to settle hats and say
I nearly died,

A dozen marriages got under way.
They watched the landscape, sitting side by side
65

—An Odeon went past, a cooling tower,⁶
And someone running up to bowl⁷—and none
Thought of the others they would never meet
Or how their lives would all contain this hour.
I thought of London spread out in the sun,
70

Its postal districts packed like squares of wheat:
There we were aimed. And as we raced across
Bright knots of rail
Past standing Pullmans,⁸ walls of blackened moss

Came close, and it was nearly done, this frail

75

Travelling coincidence; and what it held

Stood ready to be loosed with all the power

That being changed can give. We slowed again,

And as the tightened brakes took hold, there swelled

A sense of falling, like an arrow-shower

80

Sent out of sight, somewhere becoming rain.

1 9 5 8

MCMXIV9

Those long uneven lines

Standing as patiently

As if they were stretched outside

6. Industrial structure for cooling hot water before

8. Railway saloons or sleeping cars first made in

reuse. *Odeon*: one in a chain of movie theaters.

the United States by George M. Pullman.

7. In the sport of cricket, to pitch the ball to the

9. 1914, in roman numerals, as incised on stone

batsman.

memorials to the dead of World War I.

1 6 5 4 / P H I L I P L A R K I N

The Oval or Villa Park,1

5 The crowns of hats, the sun

On moustached archaic faces

Grinning as if it were all

An August Bank Holiday lark;

And the shut shops, the bleached,
10 Established names on the sunblinds,
The farthings and sovereigns,²
And dark-clothed children at play
Called after kings and queens,
The tin advertisements
15 For cocoa and twist,⁰ and the pubs *tobacco*
Wide open all day;³
And the countryside not caring:
The place-names all hazed over
With flowering grasses, and fields
20 Shadowing Domesday lines⁴
Under wheat's restless silence;
The differently-dressed servants
With tiny rooms in huge houses,
The dust behind limousines;
25 Never such innocence,
Never before or since,
As changed itself to past
Without a word—the men
Leaving the gardens tidy,
30 The thousands of marriages
Lasting a little while longer:
Never such innocence again.

1 9 6 0 1 9 6 4

Talking in Bed

Talking in bed ought to be easiest,
Lying together there goes back so far,

An emblem of two people being honest.

Yet more and more time passes silently.

5 Outside, the wind's incomplete unrest

Builds and disperses clouds about the sky,

1. I.e., outside a (London) cricket ground or a public houses ("pubs").

(Birmingham) soccer field. The lines consist of

4. The still-visible boundaries of medieval farmers' men waiting to enlist.

long and narrow plots, ownership of which is

2. At that time, the least valuable and the most recorded in William the Conqueror's Domesday valuable British coins, respectively.

Rook (1085-86).

3. A 1915 law restricted the business hours of

A M B U L A N C E S / 1 6 5 5

And dark towns heap up on the horizon.

None of this cares for us. Nothing shows why

At this unique distance from isolation

10 It becomes still more difficult to find

Words at once true and kind,

Or not untrue and not unkind.

1 9 6 0 1 9 6 4

Ambulances

Closed like confessionals,5 they thread

Loud noons of cities, giving back

None of the glances they absorb.

Light glossy grey, arms on a plaque,

5 They come to rest at any kerb:
All streets in time are visited.
Then children strewn on steps or road,
Or women coming from the shops
Past smells of different dinners, see
io A wild white face that overtops
Red stretcher-blankets momentarily
As it is carried in and stowed,
And sense the solving emptiness
That lies just under all we do,
15 And for a second get it whole,
So permanent and blank and true.
The fastened doors recede. *Poor soul,*
They whisper at their own distress;
For borne away in deadened air
20 May go the sudden shut of loss
Round something nearly at an end,
And what cohered in it across
The years, the unique random blend
Of families and fashions, there
25 At last begin to loosen. Far
From the exchange of love to lie
Unreachable inside a room
The traffic parts to let go by
Brings closer what is left to come,
30 And dulls to distance all we are.

1 9 6 1 1 9 6 4

5. Enclosed stalls in Roman Catholic churches, in which priests hear confession.

1 6 5 6 / P H I L I P L A R K I N

The Trees

The trees are coming into leaf
Like something almost being said;
The recent buds relax and spread,
Their greenness is a kind of grief.
5 Is it that they are born again
And we grow old? No, they die too.
Their yearly trick of looking new
Is written down in rings of grain.
Yet still the unresting castles thresh
10 In fullgrown thickness every May.
Last year is dead, they seem to say,
Begin afresh, afresh, afresh.

1 9 6 7 1 9 7 4

Sad Steps⁶

Groping back to bed after a piss
I part thick curtains, and am startled by
The rapid clouds, the moon's cleanliness.
Four o'clock: wedge-shadowed gardens lie
5 Under a cavernous, a wind-picked sky.
There's something laughable about this,
The way the moon dashes through clouds that blow
Loosely as cannon-smoke to stand apart
(Stone-coloured light sharpening the roofs below)
io High and preposterous and separate—

Lozenge of love! Medallion of art!
O wolves of memory! Immensements! No,
One shivers slightly, looking up there.
The hardness and the brightness and the plain
15 Far-reaching singleness of that wide stare
Is a reminder of the strength and pain
Of being young; that it can't come again,
But is for others undiminished somewhere.

1 9 6 8 1 9 7 4

6. Cf. Sir Philip Sidney, *Astrophil and Stella* 31.1: "With how
sad steps, O Moon, thou climb'st the skies"

(p. 214).

T H I S B E T H E V E R S E / 1 6 5 7

The Explosion

On the day of the explosion
Shadows pointed towards the pithead.
In the sun the slagheap⁷ slept.
Down the lane came men in pitboots
5 Coughing oath-edged talk and pipe-smoke,
Shouldering off the freshened silence.
One chased after rabbits; lost them;
Came back with a nest of lark's eggs;
Showed them; lodged them in the grasses.
10 So they passed in beards and moleskins,⁸
Fathers, brothers, nicknames, laughter,
Through the tall gates standing open.
At noon, there came a tremor; cows
Stopped chewing for a second; sun,

15 Scarfed as in a heat-haze, dimmed.

*The dead go on before us, they
Are sitting in God's house in comfort,
We shall see them face to face—*

Plain as lettering in the chapels

20 It was said, and for a second

Wives saw men of the explosion

Larger than in life they managed—

Gold as on a coin, or walking

Somehow from the sun towards them,

25 One showing the eggs unbroken.

1 9 7 0 1 9 7 4

This Be The Verse⁹

They fuck you up, your mum and dad.

They may not mean to, but they do.

They fill you with the faults they had

And add some extra, just for you.

7. Pile of debris. *Pithead*: entrance to a coal mine. 9. Cf. Robert Louis Stevenson, "Requiem," esp.

8. Clothes made of heavy, durable cotton fabric. line 5: "This be the verse you grave for me."

1 6 5 8 / P H I L I P L A R K I N

5 But they were fucked up in their turn

By fools in old-style hats and coats,

Who half the time were soppo-stern

And half at one another's throats.

Man hands on misery to man.

10 It deepens like a coastal shelf.

Get out as early as you can,

And don't have any kids yourself.

1 9 7 1 1 9 7 4

Aubade1

I work all day, and get half-drunk at night.

Waking at four to soundless dark, I stare.

In time the curtain-edges will grow light.

Till then I see what's really always there:

Unresting death, a whole day nearer now,

Making all thought impossible but how

And where and when I shall myself die.

Arid interrogation: yet the dread

Of dying, and being dead,

Flashes afresh to hold and horrify.

The mind blanks at the glare. Not in remorse

—The good not done, the love not given, time

Torn off unused—nor wretchedly because

An only life can take so long to climb

Clear of its wrong beginnings, and may never;

But at the total emptiness for ever,

The sure extinction that we travel to

And shall be lost in always. Not to be here,

Not to be anywhere,

And soon; nothing more terrible, nothing more true.

This is a special way of being afraid

No trick dispels. Religion used to try,

That vast moth-eaten musical brocade

Created to pretend we never die,

And specious stuff that says *No rational being*

Can fear a thing it will not feel, not seeing
That this is what we fear—no sight, no sound,
No touch or taste or smell, nothing to think with,
Nothing to love or link with,
The anaesthetic from which none come round.

1. Music or poem announcing dawn.

THE PERSISTENCE OF SONG / 1659

**And so it stays just on the edge of vision, As
small unfocused blur, a standing chill**

That slow seachimpulsedowntoindecision.

**Most things may never happen: this one will,
35 And realisation of it rages out**

**In furnace-fear when we are caught without
People or drink. Courage is no good:**

**It means not scaring others. Being brave
Lets no one off the grave.**

**40 Death is no different whined at than with
stood.**

**Slowly light strengthens, and the room takes
shape.**

**It stands plain as a wardrobe, what we know,
Have always known, know that we can't
escape, Yet can't accept. One side will have
to go.**

**45 Meanwhile telephones crouch, getting
ready to ring In locked-up offices, and all the
uncaring Intricate rented world begins
to rouse.**

The sky is white as clay, with no sun.

Work has to be done.

50 Postmen like doctors go from house to house.

1977

HOWARD MOSS

1922-1987

The Persistence of Song

Although it is not yet evening,

These secretaries have changed their frocks

As if it were time for dancing,

And locked up in the scholars' books

5 There is a kind of rejoicing,

There is a kind of singing

That even the dark stone canyon makes

As though all fountains were going

At once, and the color flowed from bricks i

o In one wild, lit up surging.

What is the weather doing?

And who arrived on a scallop shell

With the smell of these at this morning? 1

— Creating a small upheaval

15 High above the scaffolding

By saying, "All will be well.

There is a kind of rejoicing."

1. Venus, Roman goddess of love and beauty, was said to have been born from a shell in the sea.

1660 / HOWARD MOSS

Is there a kind of rejoicing

In saying, "All will be well"?

20 High above the scaffolding,

Creating a small upheaval,
The smell of the sea this morning
Arrived on a scallop shell.
What was the weather doing
25 In one wild, lit upsurging?
At once, the color flowed from bricks
As though all fountains were going,
And even the dark stone canyon makes
Here a kind of singing,
30 And there a kind of rejoicing,
And locked up in the scholars' books
There is a time for dancing
When the secretaries have changed their frocks,
And though it is not yet evening,
35 There is the persistence of song.

1 9 6 8

Tourists
Cramped like sardines on the Queens,² and sedated,
The sittings all first, the roommates mismated,
Three nuns at the table, the waiter a barber,
Then dumped with their luggage at some frumpish harbor,
5 Veering through rapids in a vapid *rapido*
To view the new moon from a ruin on the Lido,³
Or a sundown in London from a rundown Mercedes,
Then high-borne to Glyndebourne for Orfeo in Hades,⁴
Embarrassed in Paris in Harris tweed, dying to
io Get to the next museum piece that they're flying to,
Finding, in Frankfurt, that one indigestible

Comestible makes them too ill for the Festival,
Footloose in Lucerne, or taking a pub in in
Stratford or Glasgow, or maudlin in Dublin, in-
2. Ocean liner.

4. Reference to the opera *Orphee aux Enfers*, by
3. A chain of islands between the Lagoon of Ven-
the French composer Jacques Offenbach (1819—
ice and the Adriatic Sea. *Rapido*: Italian term for
1880).

an express passenger boat in Venice.

T H E L I F E G U A R D / 1 6 6 1

15 sensitive, garrulous, querulous, audible,
Drunk in the Dolomites, tuning a portable,
Homesick in Stockholm, or dressed to toboggan
At the wrong time of year in too dear0 Copenhagen, *expensive*
Generally being too genial or hostile—
20 Too grand at the Grand, too old at the Hostel—
Humdrum conundrums, what's to become of them?
Most will come home, but there will be some of them
Subsiding like Lawrence in Florence,5 or crazily
Ending up tending shop up in Fiesole.6

1 9 7 6

J A M E S D I C K E Y

1923-1997

The Lifeguard

In a stable of boats I lie still,
From all sleeping children hidden.
The leap of a fish from its shadow

Makes the whole lake instantly tremble.

5 With my foot on the water, I feel
The moon outside
Take on the utmost of its power.
I rise and go out through the boats.
I set my broad sole upon silver,
10 On the skin of the sky, on the moonlight,
Stepping outward from earth onto water
In quest of the miracle
This village of children believed
That I could perform as I dived
15 For one who had sunk from my sight.
I saw his cropped haircut go under.
I leapt, and my steep body flashed
Once, in the sun.
Dark drew all the light from my eyes.
20 Like a man who explores his death
5. The English writer D. H. Lawrence (1885— 6. Town in
Italy, near Florence.

1930; see pp. 1284—95) lived in Italy several times.

1 6 6 2 / J A M E S D I C K E Y

By the pull of his slow-moving shoulders,
I hung head down in the cold,
Wide-eyed, contained, and alone
Among the weeds,
25 And my fingertips turned into stone
From clutching immovable blackness.
Time after time I leapt upward
Exploding in breath, and fell back

From the change in the children's faces
30 At my defeat.
Beneath them I swam to the boathouse
With only my life in my arms
To wait for the lake to shine back
At the risen moon with such power
35 That my steps on the light of the ripples
Might be sustained.
Beneath me is nothing but brightness
Like the ghost of a snowfield in summer.
As I move toward the center of the lake,
40 Which is also the center of the moon,
I am thinking of how I may be
The savior of one
Who has already died in my care.
The dark trees fade from around me.
45 The moon's dust hovers together.
I call softly out, and the child's
Voice answers through blinding water.
Patiently, slowly,
He rises, dilating to break
50 The surface of stone with his forehead.
He is one I do not remember
Having ever seen in his life.
The ground I stand on is trembling
Upon his smile.
55 I wash the black mud from my hands.
On a light given off by the grave

I kneel in the quick of the moon
At the heart of a distant forest
And hold in my arms a child
60 Of water, water, water.

1 9 6 2

B U C K D A N C E R ' S C H O I C E / 1 6 6 3

Buckdancer's1 Choice

So I would hear out those lungs,
The air split into nine levels,
Some gift of tongues of the whistler
In the invalid's bed: my mother,
5 Warbling all day to herself
The thousand variations of one song;
It is called Buckdancer's Choice.
For years, they have all been dying
Out, the classic buck-and-wing men
10 Of traveling minstrel shows;
With them also an old woman
Was dying of breathless angina,
Yet still found breath enough
To whistle up in my head
15 A sight like a one-man band,
Freed black, with cymbals at heel,
An ex-slave who thrivingly danced
To the ring of his own clashing light
Through the thousand variations of one song
20 All day to my mother's prone music,
The invalid's warbler's note,

While I crept close to the wall
Sock-footed, to hear the sounds alter,
Her tongue like a mockingbird's break
25 Through stratum after stratum of a tone
Proclaiming what choices there are
For the last dancers of their kind,
For ill women and for all slaves
Of death, and children enchanted at walls
so With a brass-beating glow underfoot,
Not dancing but nearly risen
Through barnlike, theaterlike houses
On the wings of the buck and wing.

1 9 6 5

1. Performer of the buck-and-wing, a solo tap dance invented by black entertainers.

1 6 6 4 / J A M E S D I C K E Y

Sled Burial, Dream Ceremony

W h i l e t h e s o u t h r a i n s , t h e n o r t h

I s s n o w i n g , a n d t h e d e a d s o u t h e r n e r

I s t a k e n t h e r e . H e l i e s w i t h t h e t o p o f h i s c a s k e t O p e n , h i s h a i r c o m b e d , t h e p a r t i c l e s i n t h e a i r 5 C h a n g i n g t o o t h e r t h i n g s . T h e t r a i n s t o p s I n a s m a l l f u r r y v i l l a g e , a n d m e n i n f l a p - e a r e d c a p s A n d o t h e r s w i t h w o m e n ' s s c a r v e s t i e d a r o u n d t h e i r h e a d s A n d b u s i n e s s h a t s o v e r t h o s e , u n l o a d h i m , A n d o n e o f t h e m r e a c h e s i n s i d e t h e c o f f i n a n d p l a c e s i o T h e s o u t h e r n e r ' s h a n d a t t h e c e n t e r

O f h i s d e a d b r e a s t . T h e y l o a d h i m o n t o a s l e d , A n o l d - f a s h i o n e d s l e d w i t h h i g h - c u r l e d r u n n e r s , D r a w n b y h o r s e s w i t h b e l l s , a n d b e g i n

To walk out of town, past dull red barns

15 Inching closer to the road as its snows
Harder, past an army of gunny-sacked bushes,
Past horses with flakes in the hollows of
their way-backs, Past round faces drawn by
children

On kitchen windows, all shedding basic-shaped
tears.

20 The coffin top still is wide open;

His dead eyes stare through his lids,

Not fooled that the snow is cotton. The woods
fall slowly off all of them, until they are
walking between rigid little houses of ice-
fishers
25 On a plain which is a great plain of water

Until the last rabbit track fails, and they
are at the center. They take axes, shovels,
mattocks, dig the snow away, and saw the
ice in the form of his coffin, lifting the slab
like a door
30 Without hinges. The snow creaks
under the sled as they unload him like
hay, holding his weight by ropes.

Sensing an unwanted freedom, a fish

Slides by, under the hole leading up through
the snow to nothing, and is gone. The coffin
's shadow
35 Is white, and they stand there,
gunny-sacked bushes, summoned from
villagesleep into someone else's dream
Of death, and let him down, still seeing the
flakes in the air At the place they are born
of pure shadow Like his dead eyelids,
rocking for a moment like a boat
40 On utter foreignness,
before he fills and sails down.

1965

1665

PETER KANE D U F A U L T

b. 1923

A Letter for All-Hallows¹ (1949)

**I am still hurt, Plin,
by your desertion. Now and again,
between rains, or among
sagged syllables on a page,
5 I am stopped suddenly by your grinning
lantern-jawed, monkey-eared beautiful
face —**

**and I am hurt because you went to war
and died right in the middle of your letters
and never said goodbye.**

**io And then your father followed you,
at a respectful distance,**

**and the high house on the hill went
for a Trappist monkery.² ... I hope those em
onks have veneration for the juniper**

**15 and the blackberries and the frog pond a
nd the dust of toy-soldiers in the attic whe
re we warred long November afternoons.**

—

**Above all, for the black road that,
if I listen on All-Souls' Eve, I will clatter²
0 to the gait of your riding home
from the whitewoodson Diamond, your ho
rse.**

**The glue is long since dry
they made of him. Yet we mark well:
He was the last of the historic horses.**

**25 Revererodehim, and Sheridan,
and Sitting Bull. 4 ...**

**I hope those monks treat you gently, shade
sgallopingsidetheemptyingmeadow
ws, from Concord and Lexington,**

**30 from the fords of the Shenandoah,
theforksoftheLittleBighorn. 5**

**Surely they would not be unmerciful
and frighten away with signs and bells and
torches** 1. Or All Saints' Day, a church festival celebrated

1818), American patriot famous for a horseback

November 1 in honor of all saints.

ride on the evening of April 18, 1775, in which he

2. The Trappist monks are members of a branch
warned Massachusetts colonists of the arrival of
of the austere Cistercian order.

British troops. Philip Henry Sheridan (1831-

3. Evening of November 1, before All Souls' Day
1888), Union general in the American Civil War.

(a day of prayer for all the dead).

5. Scenes of the battles associated with Revere,

4. Native American warrior, victor at the Battle of
Sheridan, and Sitting Bull.

the Little Big Horn (1876). Paul Revere (1735—

1666 / PETER KANE DUFAULT

so young an old-soldier and his friend

35 who, one way or another, were made ghosts

in all their country's wars.

1949 1978

A First Night

It's the first night, I suppose,
in more than eighty year
Hattie has slept alone... .
And outdoors, in the falling
5 snow, without bedclothes
or night light and none near
but the deaf sunken stone
were one to awake calling.
What could old Hattie have done
io wrong, anyway?—Made raw-
milk cheese, rubbed eggs, admired
her rose-red Christmas cactus, and
rocked, looking out at one
more mid-February thaw,
15 drifts melting and dungwagon mired—
that now like a reprimand
she might have heard sixty-eight
or seventy years ago,
(such as “Hattie thinks she is clever,
20 but will go to bed with boxed ears
and no supper”) she is told: “Tonight
you'll sleep with shoes on in the snow
in the cemetery and never
never wake up in a million years.”

1 9 7 8

Burden

I called you because I could not stand alone

looking north to that skyline-
tree globed with its yellow apples
balancing like a fountain of planets
5 in the bright light and the blue air.
And because on the way there
I looked at a smooth cirque⁰ *circle*
the brook had worn in a stone;
A H I L L / 1 6 6 7
and nothing as soft as water
10 could, by taking care,
have so pestled⁰ and polished *pounded*
that granite mortar; only
by a thousand years of indifference,
of aiming elsewhere.
is I wish we might do—or no,
look back and find we had done—
some un-advertized thing,
overwhelming and un-self-aware
as water streamlining a stone, or a tree's
20 kindling in an empty meadow
its casual Hesperides.⁶

1 9 7 6 1 9 7 8

A N T H O N Y H E C H T

1923-2004

A Hill

In Italy, where this sort of thing can occur,
I had a vision once—though you understand
It was nothing at all like Dante's,¹ or the visions of saints,

And perhaps not a vision at all. I was with some friends,
5 Picking my way through a warm sunlit piazza
In the early morning. A clear fretwork of shadows
From huge umbrellas littered the pavement and made
A sort of lucent shallows in which was moored
A small navy of carts. Books, coins, old maps,
io Cheap landscapes and ugly religious prints
Were all on sale. The colors and noise
Like the flying hands were gestures of exultation,
So that even the bargaining
Rose to the ear like a voluble godliness.
15 And then, when it happened, the noises suddenly stopped,
And it got darker; pushcarts and people dissolved
And even the great Farnese Palace² itself
Was gone, for all its marble; in its place
Was a hill, mole-colored and bare. It was very cold,
20 Close to freezing, with a promise of snow.
The trees were like old ironwork gathered for scrap
Outside a factory wall. There was no wind,
And the only sound for a while was the little click
Of ice as it broke in the mud under my feet.
25 I saw a piece of ribbon snagged on a hedge,
6. In Greek mythology, a garden where golden 1. As in the
Italian poet's *Divine Comedy*.
apples were grown. 2. Palace in Rome.

1 6 6 8 / A N T H O N Y H E C H T

But no other sign of life. And then I heard
What seemed the crack of a rifle. A hunter, I guessed;

At least I was not alone. But just after that
Came the soft and papery crash
30 Of a great branch somewhere unseen falling to earth.
And that was all, except for the cold and silence
That promised to last forever, like the hill.
Then prices came through, and fingers, and I was restored
To the sunlight and my friends. But for more than a week
35 I was scared by the plain bitterness of what I had seen.
All this happened about ten years ago,
And it hasn't troubled me since, but at last, today,
I remembered that hill; it lies just to the left
Of the road north of Poughkeepsie;³ and as a boy
40 I stood before it for hours in wintertime.

1 9 6 7

The Dover Bitch

A Criticism of Life

F O R A N D R E W S W A N N I N G

So there stood Matthew Arnold⁴ and this girl
With the cliffs of England crumbling away behind them,
And he said to her, "Try to be true to me,
And I'll do the same for you, for things are bad
5 All over, etc., etc."⁵

Well now, I knew this girl. It's true she had read
Sophocles in a fairly good translation
And caught that bitter allusion to the sea,⁶
But all the time he was talking she had in mind
io The notion of what his whiskers would feel like
On the back of her neck. She told me later on

That after a while she got to looking out
At the lights across the channel, and really felt sad,
Thinking of all the wine and enormous beds
15 And blandishments in French and the perfumes.
And then she got really angry. To have been brought
All the way down from London, and then be addressed
As a sort of mournful cosmic last resort
Is really tough on a girl, and she was pretty.
20 Anyway, she watched him pace the room
And finger his watch-chain and seem to sweat a bit,
And then she said one or two unprintable things.

3. Town in upstate New York.

5. Cf. "Dover Reach," lines 29-37: "Ah, love, let

4. English poet (1822-1888; see pp. 1087-1101),
us be true / To one another! ... "

whose most famous poem, "Dover Reach"

6. Cf. "Dover Reach," lines 15—18 and note 9

(p. 1101), is set on the southern coast of England.
there.

THE GHOST IN THE MARTINI / 1669

**B u t y o u m u s t n ' t j u d g e h e r b y t h a t . W h a t I m
e a n t o s a y i s , S h e ' s r e a l l y a l l r i g h t . I s t i l l s e
e h e r o n c e i n a w h i l e 2 5 A n d s h e a l w a y s t r e a t
s m e r i g h t . W e h a v e a d r i n k A n d I g i v e h e r a g
o o d t i m e , a n d p e r h a p s i t ' s a y e a r B e f o r e I s e e
h e r a g a i n , b u t t h e r e s h e i s ,**

**R u n n i n g t o f a t , b u t d e p e n d a b l e a s t h e y c o
m e .**

**A n d s o m e t i m e s I b r i n g h e r a b o t t l e o f *Nuit
d'Amour*. 7**

1968

The Ghost in the Martini⁸

Over the rim of the glass

Containing a good martini with a twist

I eye her bosom and consider a pass,

Certain we 'd not be missed

5 In the general hubbub.

Her lips, which I forgot to say, are superb,

Never stop babbling once (Aye, there 's the
erub)⁹

But who would want to curb

Such delicious, artful flattery?

io It seems she adores my work, the distinguished
grey Of my hair. I muse on the salt and
battery¹

Of the sexual clinch, and say

Something terse and gruff

About the marked disparity in our ages.

15 She looks like twenty-three, though he
age enough.

As for the famous wages

Of sin, 2 she can 't have attained

Event on unions scale, though you never can
tell.

Her waist is slender and suggestively
chained,²⁰ And things are going well.

The martin does its job,

God bless it, seeping down to the dark old
id

.

(“Is there no cradle, Sir, you would not rob?”

S a y s e g o , b u t t h e l i d

25 I s o f f . T h e w o r d i s S t r i k e

**W h i l e t h e i r o n ' s h o t .) A n d n o w , i n g e n u o u s
a n d g a y , S h e i s a s k i n g m e a b o u t w h a t I w a s l
i k e**

A t t w e n t y . (T w e n t y , e h ?)

7. Night of love (French).

a quite different double bind of the speaker, Prince

8. Alludes to the expression *the ghost in the Hamlet*, who is considering suicide.

machine, a way of describing the mind/body oppo-

1. A play on *assault and battery*.
sition.

2. Cf. Romans 6.23: "For the wages of sin is

9. Cf. *Hamlet* 3.1.64, where the phrase refers to death."

1 6 7 0 / A N T H O N Y H E C H T

You wouldn't have liked me then,

30 I answer, looking carefully into her eyes.

I was shy, withdrawn, awkward, one of those men

That girls seemed to despise,

Moody and self-obsessed,

Unhappy, defiant, with guilty dreams galore,

35 Full of ill-natured pride, an unconfessed

Snob and a thorough bore.

Her smile is meant to convey

How changed or modest I am, I can't tell which,

When I suddenly hear someone close to me say,

40 "You lousy son-of-a-bitch!"

A young man's voice, by the sound,
 Coming, it seems, from the twist in the martini.
 "You arrogant, elderly leech, you broken-down
 Brother of Apeneck Sweeney!³
 45 Thought I was buried for good
 Under six thick feet of mindless self-regard?
 Dance on my grave, would you, you galliard⁰ stud, *lively*
 Silenus⁴ in leotard?
 Well, summon me you did,
 50 And I come unwillingly, like Samuel's ghost.⁵
All things shall he revealed that have been hid. ⁶
There's something for you to toast!
 You only got where you are
 By standing upon my ectoplasmic⁰ shoulders, *ghostly*
 55 And wherever that is may not be so high or far
 In the eyes of some beholders.
 Take, for example, me.
 I have sat alone in the dark, accomplishing little,
 And worth no more to myself, in pride and fee,
 60 Than a cup of luke-warm spittle.
 But honest about it, withal ..."
 ("Withal," forsooth!) "Please not to interrupt.
 And the lovelies went by, 'the long and the short and the tall,'⁷
 Hankered for, but untapped.⁸
 3. Cf. T. S. Eliot, "Sweeney Among the Nightin-
 found his prayers for guidance unanswered, and so
 gales": "Apeneck Sweeney spreads his knees /
 consulted a medium to raise the unwilling Samuel

Letting his arms hang down to laugh.”

from the dead (1 Samuel 28).

4. In Greek mythology, foster father and compan-

6. A rewriting of a recurrent theme in the Gospels,
ion of the wine god, Dionysus; of human form,
as in Luke 12.2 or Matthew 10.26.

with a horse’s ears and tail. Generally old, bald, and

7. As in the 1940 popular song by Jimmy Hughes
bearded. A famous legend relates that Midas made
and Frank Lake, “Bless Em All.”

Silenus drunk to learn his secrets.

8. Not copulated with (as a ewe is tugged by a

5. Saul, fearful of the army of the Philistines,
ram).

S T I L L L I F E / 1 6 7 1

65 Bloody monastic it was.

A neurotic mixture of self-denial and fear;

The verse halting, the cataleptic pause,

No sensible pain, no tear,

But an interior drip

70 As from an ulcer, where, in the humid deep

Center of myself, I would scratch and grip

The wet walls of the keep,

Or lie on my back and smell

From the corners the sharp, ammoniac, urine stink.

75 *‘No light, hut rather darkness visible. ‘9*

And plenty of time to think.

In that thick, fetid air

I talked to myself in giddy recitative:
7 *have been studying how I may compare*
so This prison where I live
Unto the world ... 1 I learned
Little, and was awarded no degrees.
Yet all that sunken hideousness earned
Your negligence and ease.
85 Nor was it wholly sick,
Having procured you a certain modest fame;
A devotion, rather, a grim device to stick
To something I could not name.”
Meanwhile, she babbles on
90 About men, or whatever, and the juniper juice
Shuts up at last, having sung, I trust, like a swan.²
Still given to self-abuse!
Better get out of here;
If he opens his trap again it could get much worse.
95 I touch her elbow, and, leaning toward her ear,
Tell her to find her purse.

1 9 7 7

Still Life

Sleep-walking vapor, like a visitant ghost,
Hovers above a lake
Of T e n n y s o ^ a ^ calm just before dawn.

9. Cf. Milton, *Paradise Lost* 1.61-63, where Satan
prison).

views hell: “A Dungeon horrible, on all sides round

2. A swan is said to sing before it dies. Juniper

/ As one great Furnace flam'd, yet from those
juice is an ingredient used in flavoring gin.

flames / No light, but rather darkness visible.”

3. As in the work of the English poet Alfred, Lord

1. Cf. Shakespeare, *Richard II* 5.5.1 ff. (the
Tennyson (1809-1892; see pp. 982-1009).

poetic, self-absorbed King Richard's soliloquy in

1 6 7 2 / A N T H O N Y H E C H T

Inverted trees and boulders waver and coast

5 In polished darkness. Glints of silver break

Among the liquid leafage, and then are gone.

Everything's doused and diamonded with wet.

A cobweb, woven taut

On bending stanchion⁰ frames of tentpole grass, *upright prop*

10 Sags like a trampoline or firemen's net

With all the glitter and riches it has caught,

Each drop a paperweight of Steuben glass.⁴

No birdsong yet, no cricket, nor does the trout

Explode in water-scrolls

15 For a skimming fly. All that is yet to come.

Things are as still and motionless throughout

The universe as ancient Chinese bowls,

And nature is magnificently dumb.

Why does this so much stir me, like a code

20 Or muffled intimation

Of purposes and preordained events?

It knows me, and I recognize its mode

Of cautionary, spring-tight hesitation,

This silence so impacted and intense.
25 As in a water-surface I behold
The first, soft, peach decree
Of light, its pale, inaudible commands.
I stand beneath a pine-tree in the cold,
Just before dawn, somewhere in Germany,
30 A cold, wet, Garand rifle in my hands.

1 9 7 9

The Book of Yolek

Wir haben ein Gesetz,

Und nach dem Gesetz soll er sterben

The dowsed coals fume and hiss after your meal
Of grilled brook trout, and you saunter off for a walk
Down the fern trail, it doesn't matter where to,
Just so you're weeks and worlds away from home,
And among midsummer hills have set up camp
In the deep bronze glories of declining day.

4. Brand of handmade, heavy lead crystal.

Walk," by the Polish poet Hannah Mortkowicz-

5. From the German translation of John 19.7

Olczakowa (1905-1968)—in Jacob Glatstein and

("We have a law, and by that law he ought to die")

Israel Knox, eds., *Anthology of Holocaust Literature*

by the theologian Martin Luther (1483-1546),

(1973), 134—37—which recounts a historical

leader in Germany of the Protestant Reformation.

event in Germany.

Hecht's poem is inspired by "Yanosz Korezak's Last

DEATH THE PAINTER / 1673

You remember, peacefully, an earlier day
In childhood, remember a quite specific meal:
A corn roast and bonfire in summer camp.
10 That summer you got lost on a Nature Walk
; More than you dared admit, you thought of home;
No one else knows where the mind wanders to.

The fifth of August, 1942.

It was morning and very hot. It was the day 15
They came at dawn with rifles to The Home For
Jewish Children, cutting short the meal of
bread and soup, lining them up to walk
In close formation off to a special camp.

How often you have thought about that camp
, 20 As though in some strange way you were
riveto, And about the children, and how they
were made to walk, Yolek who had bad lungs,
who wasn't a day

Over five years old, commanded to leave his
meal and shamble between armed guards to
his long home.

25 We're approaching August again. It will
drive home the regulation torments of that
camp

Yolek was sent to, his small, unfinished meal,
The electric fences, the numeral tattoo,

The quite extraordinary heat of the day

30 They all were forced to take that terrible
walk.

Whether on a silent, solitary walk

Or among crowds, far off for safe at home,

You will remember, helplessly, that day,

And the smell of smoke, and the loud speaker
of the camp.

35 Wherever you are, Yolek will be there, to
o.

His unuttered name will interrupt your meal
.

Prepare to receive him in your home some da
y.

Though they killed him in the camp they sent
him to, He will walk in as you're sitting down
to a meal.

1990

Death the Painter⁶

Snub-nosed, bone-fingered, deft with engr
aving tools, I have alone been given

The powers of Joshua, who stayed the sun

In its traverse of heaven.⁷

6. From *The Presumptions of Death*, a series of

7. Cf. Joshua 10.12-13; when Joshua asked the

twenty-two poems written from the perspective of

sun and the moon to stand still, "the sun stood still,

Death, to accompany woodcuts by the American

and the moon stayed, until the people had avenged

artist Leonard Baskin (1922-2000).

themselves upon their enemies."

1674 / R I C H A R D WilbUr

5 Here in this Gotham 8 of unnumbered fools
I have sought out and arrested everyone.

Under my watchful eye all human creatures

Convert to a *still life*,

As with unique precision I apply
10 White lead and palette knife.
A model student of remodelled features,
The final barber, the last beautician, I.
You lordlings, what is Man, his blood and vit
als, 9

When all is said and done?

15 A poor forked animal, I amest of flies.

Tellus, what is this one

Once a horn of all his dignities and titles, Di
vested of his testicles and eyes?

1995

RICHARD HUGO

1923-1982

The Way a Ghost Dissolves

Where she lived the closer remained the best.

The nearest music and the static cloud,
sun and dirt were all she understood.

She planted corn and left the rest

5 to elements, convinced that God

with giant faucets regulates the rain

and saves the crops from frost or foreign win
d.

Fate assisted her with special cures.

Rub a half potato on your wart

io and wrap it in a damp cloth. Close

you eyes and whirl three times and throw.

Then bury rag and spud exactly where

they fall. The only warts that I have now

a r e m e m o r i e s o r c o m i c o n m y n o s e .

8. Proverbial town (in England) known for its fool-
ters Edgar, disguised in rags as a madman,
ish inhabitants.

laments, “Is man no more than this?” and says,

9. Cf. Psalm 8.4: “What is man, that thou art
“unaccommodated man is no more but such a
mindful of him?”

poor, bare, fork’d animal as thou art.”

1. Cf. *King Lear* 3.4.101 ff., where Lear encoun-

THE LADY IN KICKING HORSE RESERVOI
R / 1 6 7 5

1 5 U p a t d a w n . T h e e a r t h p r o v i d e d f o o d
i f w o r k e d a n d w a t e r e d , p l a n t e d g r e e n
w i t h r y e g r a s s e v e r y f a l l . O r d r i v e n w i l d
b y s n a k e s t h a t k e p t t h e c a r r o t s c l e a n ,
s h e b u t c h e r e d s n a k e s a n d c a r r o t s w i t h a h o e .

2 0 H e r s c r e a m s w e r e s e a b i r d s i n t h e w i n d ,
h e r c h o p p i n g — n o t h i n g l i k e i t n o w .

I w i l l g a r d e n o n t h e d o u b l e r u n ,
m y r h y t h m o b v i o u s i n r i n g i n g r a k e s ,
a n d t r u s t i n f a t e t o k e e p m e p o o r a n d k i n d

2 5 a n d w o r k u n t i l m y h e a r t i s s h o r t ,
t h e n g o o u t s l o w l y w i t h a f e e b l e g r i n ,
m y f i n g e r s f l e x i n g b u t m y e y e s g o n e g r a y
f r o m c r a m p s a n d t h e l a c k o f o x y g e n .

F o r g e t t h e t o n e . C a l l t h e n e i g h b o r ‘ s t r u m p e
t 3 0 g o l d e n a s i t g r a t e s . E x a l t t h e w e e d s .

S a y t h e l o c a l a n i m a l s h a v e c l a s s

or help me say that ghost has gone to seed.
And why attempt to see the cloud again—
the screaming face it was before it cracked 3
5 in wind from Asia and a want on rain.

1961

The Lady in Kicking Horse Reservoir 1

Not my hands but green across you now.
Green tons hold you down, and ten bass curve
teasing in your hair. Summer slime
will pile deep on your breast. Four months of
ice 5 will keep you firm. I hope each spring
to find you tangled in those pads
pulled not quite loose by the spillway pour, s
tars in dead reflection of your teeth.
Lie there lily still. The spillway 's closed, i
o Two feet down most lakes are common gray

This lake is dark from the black blue Mission
range climbing sky like music dying Indian
sonce wailed.

On ocean beaches, mystery fish
are offered to the moon. Your jaw s g blue.
15 Your hands start waving every wind.
Wave to the ocean where we crushed a mile of
foam.

1. Both Kicking Horse Reservoir and the Mission mountain
range (line 11) are on the Flathead Indian Reservation, in
Montana.

1676 / R I C H A R D WilbUr

We still love there in thundering foam
and love. Whales fall in love with gulls

and tide reclaims the Dolly skeletons²

20

gone with a blast of aching horns to China.

Landlocked in Montana here

the end is limited by light, the final note

will trail off at the farthest point we see,

already faded, lover, where you bloat.

25

All girls should be nicer. Arrows rain

above us in the Indian wind. My future

should be full of windy gems, my past

will stop this roaring in my dreams.

Sorry. Sorry. Sorry. But the arrows sing:

30

no way to float her up. The dead sink

from dead weight. The Mission range

turns this water black late afternoons.

One boy slapped the other. Hard.

The slapped boy talked until his dignity

35

dissolved, screamed a single "stop"

and went down sobbing in the company pond.

I swam for him all night. My only suit

got wet and factory hands went home.

No one cared the coward disappeared.

40

Morning then: cold music I had never heard.

Loners like work best on second shift.

No one liked our product and the factory closed.

Off south, the bison multiply so fast
a slaughter's mandatory every spring

45

and every spring the creeks get fat
and Kicking Horse fills up. My hope is vague.

The far blur of your bones in May
may be nourished by the snow.

The spillway's open and you spill out

50

into weather, lover down the bright canal
and mother, irrigating crops
dead Indians forgot to plant.

I'm sailing west with arrows to dissolving foam
where waves strand naked Dollys.

Their eyes are white as oriental mountains
and their tongues are teasing oil from whales.

1 9 7 3

2. Specifically, here, skeletons of the Dolly Varden trout (but see also line 54).

D E N I S E L E V E R T O V

1923-1997

Scenes from the Life of the Peppertrees

I

The peppertrees, the peppertrees!

Cats are stretching in the doorways,
sure of everything. It is morning.

But the peppertrees

stand aside in diffidence, with berries
of modest red.

Branch above branch, an air
of lightness; of shadows
scattered lightly.

A cat
closes upon its shadow.

Up and up goes the sun,
sure of everything.

The peppertrees
shiver a little.

Robust
and soot-black, the cat
leaps to a low branch. Leaves
close about him.

2

The yellow moon dreamily
tipping buttons of light
down among the leaves. Marimba,
marimba—from beyond the
black street.

Somebody dancing,
somebody
getting the hell
outta here. Shadows of cats
weave round the tree trunks,
the exposed knotty roots.

3

The man on the bed sleeping
defenseless. Look—
his bare long feet together
sideways, keeping each other
warm. And the foreshortened shoulders,
the head
barely visible. He is good.

1 6 7 8 / D E N I S E L E V E R T O V

let him sleep.

But the third peppertree

40

is restless, twitching
thin leaves in the light
of afternoon. After a while
it walks over and taps
on the upstairs window with a bunch

45

of red berries. Will he wake?

1 9 5 8

Triple Feature

Innocent decision: to enjoy.

And the pathos

of hopefulness, of his solicitude:

—he in mended serape,

5 she having plaited carefully

magenta ribbons into her hair,

the baby a round half-hidden shape

slung in her rebozo,⁰ and the young son steadfastly *shawl*

gripping a fold of her skirt,
io pale and severe under a
handed-down sombrero—
all regarding
the stills with full attention, preparing
to pay and go in—
15 to worlds of shadow-violence, half-
familiar, warm with popcorn, icy
with strange motives, barbarous splendors!

1 9 5 9

O Taste and See

The world is

not with us enough.¹

O taste and see

the subway Bible poster said,

5 meaning The Lord,² meaning

if anything all that lives

to the imagination's tongue,

1. Cf. William Wordsworth's sonnet "The World

2. "O taste and see that the Lord is good" (Psalms

Is Too M u c h with Us" (p. 802).

34.8).

T E N E B R A E / 1 6 7 9

grief, mercy, language,

tangerine, weather, to

10 breathe them, bite,

savor, chew, swallow, transform

into our flesh our

deaths, crossing the street, plum, quince,
living in the orchard and being
15 hungry, and plucking
the fruit.

1 9 6 4

Tenebrae³

*(Fall of 1967)*⁴

Heavy, heavy, heavy, hand and heart.

We are at war,

bitterly, bitterly at war.

And the buying and selling

5 buzzes at our heads, a swarm
of busy flies, a kind of innocence.

Gowns of gold sequins are fitted,
sharp-glinting. What harsh rustlings
of silver moire⁰ there are, *-watered silk*
io to remind me of shrapnel splinters.

And weddings are held in full solemnity
not of desire but of etiquette,
the nuptial pomp of starched lace;
a grim innocence.

15 And picnic parties return from the beaches
burning with stored sun in the dusk;
children promised a TV show when they get home
fall asleep in the backs of a million station wagons,
sand in their hair, the sound of waves
20 quietly persistent at their ears.

They are not listening.

Their parents at night
dream and forget their dreams.

They wake in the dark

25 and make plans. Their sequin plans

3. Darkness (Latin); church service observed dur- 4. Time of a
march on the Pentagon to protest the ing the final part of Holy
Week to commemorate continuing presence of American
troops in Viet-the sufferings and death of Christ. nam.

1 6 8 0 / D E N I S E L E V E R T O V

glitter into tomorrow.

They buy, they sell.

They fill freezers with food.

Neon signs flash their intentions

30 into the years ahead.

And at their ears the sound

of the war. They are

not listening, not listening.

1 9 7 2

Caedmon5

All others talked as if

talk were a dance.

Clodhopper I, with clumsy feet

would break the gliding ring.

5 Early I learned to

hunch myself

close by the door:

then when the talk began

I'd wipe my

io mouth and wend

unnoticed back to the barn
to be with the warm beasts,
dumb among body sounds
of the simple ones.

15 I'd see by a twist
of lit rush⁶ the motes
of gold moving
from shadow to shadow
slow in the wake
20 of deep untroubled sighs.

The cows
munched or stirred or were still. I
was at home and lonely,
both in good measure. Until
25 the sudden angel affrighted me—light effacing
my feeble beam,
a forest of torches, feathers of flame, sparks upflying:
but the cows as before
were calm, and nothing was burning,

5. The earliest known English Christian poet (fl.
English Church and People, but I first read it as a
658—680), an unlettered cowherd who, the legend
child in John Richard Green's *History of the*
goes, received a divine call to praise in verse. (Cf.
English People, 1855" [Levertov's note],

Caedmon's "Hymn," p. 1.) "The story comes, of
6. Rush plants were lit to serve as candlewicks.
course, from the Venerable Bede's *History of the*

L A M E N T F O R A L E G / 1 6 8 1

30 nothing but I, as that hand of fire
touched my lips and scorched my tongue
and pulled my voice
into the ring of the dance.

1 9 8 7

J O H N O R M O N D

1923-1990

Cathedral Builders

They climbed on sketchy ladders towards God,
With winch and pulley hoisted hewn rock into heaven,
Inhabited sky with hammers, defied gravity,
Deified stone, took up God's house to meet Him,
5 And came down to their suppers and small beer;
Every night slept, lay with their smelly wives,
Quarrelled and cuffed¹ the children, lied,
Spat, sang, were happy or unhappy,
And every day took to the ladders again;
io Impeded the rights of way of another summer's
Swallows, grew greyer, shakier, became less inclined
To fix a neighbour's roof of a fine evening,
Saw naves sprout arches, clerestories² soar,
Cursed the loud fancy glaziers⁰ for their luck, *glass cutters*
15 Somehow escaped the plague, got rheumatism,
Decided it was time to give it up,
To leave the spire to others; stood in the crowd
Well back from the vestments at the consecration,
Envied the fat bishop his warm boots,

20 Cocked up a squint eye and said, "I bloody did that."

1 9 6 9

Lament for a Leg

Near the yew tree under which the hody of Dafydd ap Gwilym³ is hurried

in Strata Florida, Cardiganshire, there stands a stone with the following inscription: "The left leg and part of the thigh of Henry Hughes, Cooper, was cut off and interr'd here, June 18, 1756". Later the rest of Henry Hughes set off across the Atlantic in search of better fortune.

1. Struck, especially with the palm of the hand. main sections of churches.

2. Upper stories with their own windows. *Naves*: 3. Fourteenth-century Welsh poet.

1 6 8 2 / J O H N O R M O N D

A short service, to be sure,
With scarcely half a hymn they held,
Over my lost limb, suitable curtailment.

Out-of-tune notes a crow cawed

5 By the yew tree, and me,
My stump still tourniqued,
Awkward on my new crutch,
Being snatched towards the snack
Of a funeral feast they made.

10 With seldom a dry eye, for laughter,
They jostled me over the ale
I'd cut the casks for, and the mead.

"Catch me falling under a coach",
Every voice jested, save mine,

15 Henry Hughes, cooper. A tasteless caper!

Soon with my only, my best, foot forward
I fled, quiet, to far America:
Where, with my two tried hands, I plied
My trade and, true, in time made good
20 Though grieving for Pontrhydfendigaid.⁴
Sometimes, all at once, in my tall cups,
I'd cry in *hiraeth*⁵ for my remembered thigh
Left by the grand yew in Ystrad Fflur's
Bare ground, near the good bard.
25 Strangers, astonished at my high
Beer-flush, would stare, not guessing,
Above the bar-board, that I, of the starry eye,
Had one foot in the grave; thinking me,
No doubt, a drunken dolt in whom a whim
30 Warmed to madness, not knowing a tease
Of a Welsh worm was tickling my distant toes.
"So I bequeath my leg", I'd say and sigh,
Baffling them, "my unexiled part, to Dafydd
The pure poet who, whole, lies near and far
35 From me, still pining for Morfudd's heart",⁶
Giving him, generous to a fault
With what was no more mine to give,
Out of that curt plot, my quarter grave,
Good help, I hope. What will the great God say
40 At Dafydd's wild-kicking-climbing extra leg,
Jammed hard in heaven's white doorway
(I'll limp unnimble round the narrow back)
Come the quick trumpet of the Judgement Day?

1 9 7 3

4. Welsh place-name, as is Ystrad Fflur (line 23). very drunk.
5. Longing, nostalgia (Welsh). *In my tall cups*: 6. The love of Morfudd.

1 1 6 8 3

J A M E S S C H U Y L E R

1923-1991

Freely Espousing

a commingling sky

a semi-tropic night

that cast the blackest shadow

of the easily torn, untrembling banana leaf

5 or Quebec! what a horrible city

so Steubenville¹ is better?

the sinking sensation

when someone drowns thinking, "This can't be happening to me!"

the profit of excavating the battlefield where Hannibal
whomped the

Romans²

io the sinuous beauty of words like allergy

the tonic resonance of

pill when used as in

"she is a pill"

on the other hand I am not going to espouse any short stories
in

which lawn mowers clack.

15 No, it is absolutely forbidden

for words to echo the act described; or try to. Except very
directly

as in

bong. And tickle. Oh it is inescapable kiss.

Marriages of the atmosphere

20 are worth celebrating

where Tudor City³

catches the sky or the glass side

of a building lit up at night in fog

“What is that gold green tetrahedron down the river?”

25 “You are experiencing a new sensation.”

if the touch-me-nots

are not in bloom

neither are the chrysanthemums

the bales of pink cotton candy

30 in the slanting light

are ornamental cherry trees.

The greens around them, and

the browns, the grays, are the park.

It’s. Hmm. No.

35 Their scallop shell of quiet

is the S.S. *United States*.

It is not so quiet and they

1. Town in Ohio.

armies, using brilliant military tactics.

2. In 217—216 **B.C.E.**, the Carthaginian general

3. Large apartment complex on the east side of

Hannibal crossed the Alps and defeated Roman

Manhattan.

1 6 8 4 / D O N A L D J U S T I C E

are a medium-size couple who
when they fold each other up
40 well, thrill. That's their story.

1 9 7 9

Shimmer

The pear tree that last year
was heavy laden this year
bears little fruit. Was
it that wet spring we had?
5 All the pear tree leaves
go shimmer, all at once. The
August sun blasts down
into the coolness from the
ocean. The New York Times
is on strike. My daily
fare! I'll starve! Not
quite. On my sill, balls
of twine wrapped up in
cellophane glitter. The
15 brown, the white, and one
I think you'd call ecru.° *beige*
The sunlight falls partly
in a cup: it has a blue
transfer of two boys, a
20 dog and a duck and says,
"Come Away Pompey." I
like that cup, half
full of sunlight. Today

you could take up the
25 tattered shadows off
the grass. Roll them
and stow them. And collect
the shimmerings in a
cup, like the coffee
30 here at my right hand.

1 9 7 4

D O N A L D J U S T I C E

1925-2004

Counting the Mad1

This one was put in a jacket,

This one was sent home,

1. This poem plays on the nursery rhyme that begins “this little pig went to market.”

M E N A T F O R T Y / 1 6 8 5

T h i s o n e w a s g i v e n b r e a d a n d m e a t

B u t w o u l d e a t n o n e ,

5 A n d t h i s o n e c r i e d N o N o N o N o

All day long.

T h i s o n e l o o k e d a t t h e w i n d o w

A s t h o u g h i t w e r e a w a l l ,

T h i s o n e s a w t h i n g s t h a t w e r e n o t t h e r e ,

10 T h i s o n e t h i n g s t h a t w e r e ,

A n d t h i s o n e c r i e d N o N o N o N o

All day long.

T h i s o n e t h o u g h t h i m s e l f a b i r d ,

T h i s o n e a d o g ,

15 A n d t h i s o n e t h o u g h t h i m s e l f a m a n ,
A n o r d i n a r y m a n ,
A n d c r i e d a n d c r i e d N o N o N o N o
A l l d a y l o n g .

1 9 6 0

Men at Forty

M e n a t f o r t y

L e a r n t o c l o s e s o f t l y

T h e d o o r s t o r o o m s t h e y w i l l n o t b e

C o m i n g b a c k t o .

5 A t r e s t o n a s t a i r l a n d i n g ,

T h e y f e e l i t m o v i n g

B e n e a t h t h e m n o w l i k e t h e d e c k o f a s h i p ,

T h o u g h t h e s w e l l i s g e n t l e .

A n d d e e p i n m i r r o r s

i o T h e y r e d i s c o v e r

T h e f a c e o f t h e b o y a s h e p r a c t i c e s t y i n g

H i s f a t h e r ' s t i e t h e r e i n s e c r e t ,

A n d t h e f a c e o f t h a t f a t h e r ,

S t i l l w a r m w i t h t h e m y s t e r y o f l a t h e r .

15 T h e y a r e m o r e f a t h e r s t h a n s o n s t h e m s e l
v e s n o w .

S o m e t h i n g i s f i l l i n g t h e m , s o m e t h i n g

T h a t i s l i k e t h e t w i l i g h t s o u n d

O f t h e c r i c k e t s , i m m e n s e ,

F i l l i n g t h e w o o d s a t t h e f o o t o f t h e s l o p e

20 B e h i n d t h e i r m o r t g a g e d h o u s e s .

1 9 6 7

1686 / DONALD JUSTICE

Nostalgia of the Lakefronts

Cities burn behind us; the lake glitters.

A tall loudspeaker is announcing prizes;

Another, by the lake, the times of cruises.

Childhood, once vast with terrors and surprises,

5 Is fading to a landscape deep with distance —

And always the sad piano in the distance,

Faintly in the distance, a ghostly tinkling

(O indecipherable blurred harmonies)

Or some far horn repeating over water

10 Its high lost note, cut loose from all harmonies.

At such times, wakeful, a child will dream the world,
And this is the world we run to from the world.

Or the two worlds come together and are one
On dark, sweet afternoons of storm and of rain,

15 And stereopticons brought out and dusted,
slide projectors Stacks of old *Geographies*,² or, through the rain,
A mad wet dash to the local movie palace

And the shriek, perhaps, of Kane's³ white cock
atoo.

(Would this have been summer, 1942?)

20 By June the city always seems neurotic.

But lakes are good all summer for reflection,

And ours is famed among painters for its blues,

Yet not entirely sad, upon reflection.

Why sad at all? Is their wish so unique —
25 To anthropomorphize the inanimate
With a love that masquerades as pure technique?
Art and the child were innocent together!
But landscapes grow abstract, like aging
parents.
Soon now the war will shutter the grand hotels
, 30 And we, when we come back, will come as
parents.
There are no lanterns now strung between
pines—
Only, like history, the stark bare northern pines.
And after a time the lake front disappears
Into the stubborn verses of its exiles
35 Or a few gifted sketches of old piers.
It rains perhaps on the other side of the heart;
Then we remember, whether we would or no.
—Nostalgia comes with the smell of rain, you
know.

1987

2. Issues of *National Geographic*. magnate in Orson Welles's
1941 film, *Citizen* 3. Charles Foster Kane, the fictional
newspaper *Kane*.

PANTOUM OF THE GREAT DEPRESSION /
1687

Pantoum⁴ of the Great Depression

Our lives avoided tragedy
Simply by going on and on,

Without end and with little apparent meaning.

Oh, there were storms and small catastrophes.

5 Simply by going on and on

We managed. No need for the heroic.

Oh, there were storms and small catastrophes.

I don't remember all the particulars.

We managed. No need for the heroic.

10 There were the usual celebrations, the usual sorrows.

I don't remember all the particulars.

Across the fence, the neighbors were our chorus.

There were the usual celebrations, the usual sorrows
Thank god no one said anything in verse.

15 The neighbors were our only chorus,

And if we suffered we kept quiet about it.

At no time did anyone say anything in verse.

It was the ordinary pities and fears consumed us,
pnp And if we suffered we kept quiet about it.

20 No audience would ever know our story.

It was the ordinary pities and fears consumed us.

We gathered on porches; the moon rose; we were poor.

What audience would ever know our story?

Beyond our windows shone the actual world.

25 We gathered on porches; the moon rose; we were poor.

**A n d t i m e w e n t b y, d r a w n b y s l o w h o r s e s .
S o m e w h e r e b e y o n d o u r w i n d o w s s h o n e t h e
w o r l d .**

**T h e G r e a t D e p r e s s i o n h a d e n t e r e d o u r s o u l s
l i k e f o g .**

A n d t i m e w e n t b y, d r a w n b y s l o w h o r s e s .

**3 0 W e d i d n o t o u r s e l v e s k n o w w h a t t h e e n d w
a s .**

**T h e G r e a t D e p r e s s i o n h a d e n t e r e d o u r s o u l s
l i k e f o g .**

W e h a d o u r f l a w s, p e r h a p s a f e w p r i v a t e v i r t u e s .

**B u t w e d i d n o t o u r s e l v e s k n o w w h a t t h e e n d w
a s .**

P e o p l e l i k e u s s i m p l y g o o n .

3 5 W e h a v e o u r f l a w s, p e r h a p s a f e w p r i v a t e v i r t u e s ,

**B u t i t i s b y b l i n d c h a n c e o n l y t h a t w e e s c a p e
t r a g e d y .**

A n d t h e r e i s n o p l o t i n t h a t; i t i s d e v o i d o f p o e t r y .

1 9 9 5

4. Verse form in which alternating lines repeat in the following stanza (see "Versification," p. 2046).

1 6 8 8 / C A R O L Y N K I Z E R

C A R O L Y N K I Z E R

b. 1925

The Erotic Philosophers

Part Five of "Pro Femina" I

I t ' s a s p r i n g m o r n i n g ; s u n p o u r s i n t h e w i n d o w

**A s I s i t h e r e d r i n k i n g c o f f e e , r e a d i n g A u g u s t i
n e . 2**

A n d f i n d i n g h i m , a s a l w a y s, n e w l y m i n t e d

From when I first encountered him in school.

5 Today I'm overcome with astonishment
At the way we girls denied all that was meant
In those revered philosophers we studied;
Who found us loathsome, loathsome lyse
ductive; Irrelevant, at best, to noble discourse
io Among the sex, the only sex that counted.

Wounded, we pretended not to mind it
And wore tight sweaters to tease our shy professor.

We sat in autumn sunshine "as the clouds
arose From slimy desires of the flesh, and from
15 Youth's seething spring." Thank you, Augustine.

Attempting to seem blase, our cheeks on fire
It didn't occur to us to rush from the room.

Instead we brushed aside "the briars of unclean
n desire"

And struggled on through mires of misogyny
ny 20 Till we arrived at Kierkegaard,³ and began to see

That though Saint A. and Soren had much in
n common Including fear and trembling before
o women, The Saints scared himself, while
e Soren was scared of *us*.

Had we, poor girls, been flattered by their
thralldom?

25 Yes, it was always us, the rejected feminine
From whom temptation came. It was our flesh
e sh With its deadly sweetness that led them on.

Yet how could we not treasure Augustine,

“Stuck fast in the bird-lime of pleasure”?

**30 That roomful of adolescent poets man-
que 0 unsuccessful Assuaged, bemused by mu-
sic, let the meaning go.**

**Swept by those psalmic cadences, we were
seduced!**

**Some of us tried for a while to be well-trained s-
ouls And pious seekers, enmeshed in the
Saint’s dialectic: 35 Responsible for our actions, yet utterly
helpless.**

**A sensible girl would have barked like a dog before
God.**

1. A five-part poem, dealing variously with the
he sets out two ways of life, the ethical and the
lives of women, written over several decades.

aesthetic. In the aesthetic, the lowest and most

2. St. Augustine (354-430), author of works such
purely sensory figure is the legendary libertine Don
as the *Confessions*.

Juan, also known as Don Giovanni in the opera by

3. Soren Kierkegaard (1813 - 1855), Danish phi-
the Austrian composer Wolfgang Amadeus Mozart
losopher. His works include *Fear and Trembling*
(1756—1791) discussed later in Kizer’s poem.

and *Either/Or* (both 1843), in the latter of which

THE EROTIC PHILOSOPHERS / 1689

We students, children still, were shocked to learn

The children these men desired were younger than we!

Augustine fancied a girl about eleven,

40 The age of Adeodatus, Augustine’s son.

Soren, like Poe,⁴ eyed his girl before she was sixteen,
To impose his will on a malleable child, when
She was not equipped to withstand or understand him.
Ah, the Pygmalion⁵ instinct! Mold the clay!
45 Create the compliant doll that can only obey,
Expecting to be abandoned, minute by minute.
It was then I abandoned philosophy,
A minor loss, although I majored in it.
But we were a group of sunny innocents.
50 I don't believe we knew what evil meant.
Now I live with a well-trained soul who deals with evil,
Including error, material or spiritual,
Easily, like changing a lock on the kitchen door.
He prays at set times and in chosen places
55 (At meals, in church), while I
Pray without thinking how or when to pray,
In a low mumble, several times a day,
Like running a continuous low fever;
The sexual impulse for the most part being over.
60 Believing I believe. Not banking on it ever.
It's afternoon. I sit here drinking kir^o *cocktail*
And reading Kierkegaard: "All sin begins with fear."
(True. We lie first from terror of our parents.)
In, I believe, an oblique crack at Augustine,
65 Soren said by denying the erotic
It was brought to the attention of the world.
The rainbow curtain rises on the sensual:
Christians must admit it before they can deny it.

**He reflected on his father's fierce repression
70 Of the sexual, which had bent him out of shape;
Yet he had to pay obeisance to that power:
He chose his father when he broke with his Regina.⁶**

Soren said by denying the erotic

It is brought to the attention of the world.

75 You must admit it before you can deny it.

**So much for "Repetition"—another theory⁷
Which some assume evolved from his belief
He could replay his courtship of Regina
With a happy ending. Meanwhile she'd wait for him,**

4. Edgar Allan Poe (1809-1849; see pp. 975-81). unhappiness without her than with her." Kierke-American writer.

gaard's obsession with sacrificing Regine is in the 5. In Greek mythology, a sculptor who fell in love with his own creation, the beautiful Galatea.

cusses the faith of Abraham in offering to sacrifice

6. Regine Olsen (1822-1904), to whom Kierkegaard's son Isaac to God.

gaard became engaged in 1840, though he later

7. The theory appears in Kierkegaard's book *Repetition* (1843). decided that he could "become happier in my

1690 / CAROLYN KIZER

Eternally faithful, eternally seventeen.

Instead, within two years, the bitch got married.

In truth, he couldn't wait till he got rid of her,
To create from recollection, not from living;
To use the material, not the material girl.
I sip my kir, thinking of *Either / Or*,
Especially *Either*, starring poor Elvira.⁸
He must have seen *Giovanni* a score of times,
And Soren knew the score.
He took Regina to the opera only once,
And as soon as Mozart's overture was over,
Kierkegaard stood up and said, "Now we are leaving.
You have heard the best: the expectation of pleasure."
In his interminable aria on the subject
S.K. insisted the performance *was* the play.
Was the overture then the foreplay? Poor Regina
Should have known she'd be left waiting in the lurch.
Though he chose a disguise in which to rhapsodize,
It was his voice too: Elvira's beauty
Would perish soon; the deflowered quickly fade:
A night-blooming cereus⁰ after Juan's one-night stand. *cactus*
Soren, eyes clouded by romantic mist,
Portrayed Elvira always sweet sixteen.
S.K.'s interpretation seems naive.
He didn't seem to realize that innocent sopranos
Who are ready to sing Elvira, don't exist.
His diva may have had it off with Leporello⁹
Just before curtain time, believing it freed her voice
(So backstage legend has it), and weakened his.
I saw La Stupenda¹ sing Elvira once.

Her cloak was larger than an army tent.
Would Giovanni be engulfed when she inhaled?
Would the boards shiver when she stamped her foot?
Her voice of course was great. Innocent it was not.
Soren, long since, would have fallen in a faint.
When he, or his doppelganger,⁰ wrote *double*
That best-seller, “The Diary of a Seducer,”²
He showed how little he knew of true Don Juans:
Those turgid letters, machinations, and excursions,
Those tedious conversations with dull aunts,
Those convoluted efforts to get the girl!
Think of the worldly European readers
Who took Soren seriously, did not see
His was the cynicism of the timid virgin.

8. Donna Elvira in *Don Giovanni*, one of the
Australian soprano Joan Sutherland (b. 1926).

women the dissolute seducer has betrayed.

2. A famous section of *Either/Or*, it presents one

9. Don Giovanni’s servant.

man’s romantic exploits as “an attempt to realize

1. The stupendous one (Italian); nickname for the
the task of living poetically.”

P E R M A N E N T L Y / 1 6 9 1

Once in my youth I knew a real Don Juan

125 Or he knew me. He didn’t need to try,

The characteristic of a true seducer.

He seems vulnerable, shy; he hardly speaks.

Somehow, you know he will never speak of you.

You trust him—and you thrust yourself at him.
130 He responds with an almost absentminded grace.
Even before the consummation he's looking past you
For the next bright yearning pretty face.
Relieved at last of anxieties and tensions
When your terrible efforts to capture him are over,
135 You overflow with happy/unhappy languor.
But S.K.'s alter-ego believes the truly terrible
Is for you to be consoled by the love of another.
We women, deserted to a woman, have a duty
To rapidly lose our looks, decline, and die,
HO Our only chance of achieving romantic beauty.
So Augustine was sure, when Monica, his mother,³
Made him put aside his nameless concubine
She'd get her to a nunnery, and pine.⁴
He chose his mother when he broke with his beloved.
145 In Soren's long replay of his wrecked romance,
"Guilty/Not Guilty,"⁵ he says he must tear himself away
From earthly love, and suffer to love God.
Augustine thought better: love, human therefore flawed,
Is the way to the love of God. To deny this truth
150 Is to be "left outside, breathing into the dust,
Filling the eyes with earth." We women,
Outside, breathing dust, are still the Other.
The evening sun goes down; time to fix dinner.
"You women have no major philosophers." We know.
155 But we remain philosophic, and say with the Saint,
"Let me enter my chamber and sing my songs of love."

2001

K E N N E T H K O C H

1925-2002

Permanently

One day the Nouns were clustered in the street.

An Adjective walked by, with her dark beauty.

3. St. Monica (322—387), credited with helping rejects
Ophelia: “Get thee to a nunnery.”

convert her son from a wayward life. 5. A section of his book
Stages on Life's Way 4. Allusion to *Hamlet* 3.1.122, in which
Hamlet (1845).

6 9 2 / K E N N E T H K O C H

The Nouns were struck, moved, changed.

The next day a Verb drove up, and created the Sentence.

Each Sentence says one thing—for example. “Although it was
a dark

rainy day when the Adjective walked by, I shall remember the
pure and sweet expression on her face until the day I perish
from

the green, effective earth.”

Or, “Will you please close the window, Andrew?”

Or, for example, “Thank you, the pink pot of flowers on the
window

sill has changed color recently to a light yellow, due to the heat
from the boiler factory which exists nearby.”

In the springtime the Sentences and the Nouns lay silently on
the

grass.

A lonely Conjunction here and there would call, “And! But!”

But the Adjective did not emerge.

As the adjective is lost in the sentence,
So I am lost in your eyes, ears, nose, and throat—
You have enchanted me with a single kiss
Which can never be undone
Until the destruction of language.

1 9 6 2

You Were Wearing

You were wearing your Edgar Allan Poe printed cotton blouse.
In each divided up square of the blouse was a picture of Edgar
Allan
Poe.

Your hair was blonde and you were cute. You asked me, “Do
most

boys think that most girls are bad?”

I smelled the mould of your seaside resort hotel bedroom on
your hair

held in place by a John Greenleaf Whittier clip.

“No,” I said, “it’s girls who think that boys are bad.” Then we
read *Snowbound* together.

And ran around in an attic, so that a little of the blue enamel
was

scraped off my George Washington, Father of His Country,
shoes.

Mother was walking in the living room, her Strauss Waltzes
comb in

her hair.

We waited for a time and then joined her, only to be served tea
in

cups painted with pictures of Herman Melville

As well as with illustrations from his book *Moby Dick* and
from his

novella, *Benito Cereno*.

Father came in wearing his Dick Tracy necktie: "How about a
drink,

everyone?"

I said, "Let's go outside a while." Then we went onto the
porch and sat on the Abraham Lincoln swing.

ENERGY IN SWEDEN / 1 6 9 3

You sat on the eyes, mouth, and beard part, and I sat on the
knees.

In the yard across the street we saw a snowman holding a
garbage can

lid smashed into a likeness of the mad English king, George
the

Third.

1 9 6 2

Variations on a Theme by William Carlos Williams¹

i

I chopped down the house that you had been saving to live in
next

summer.

I am sorry, but it was morning, and I had nothing to do
and its wooden beams were so inviting.

2

We laughed at the hollyhocks together

5 and then I sprayed them with lye.

Forgive me. I simply do not know what I am doing.

3

I gave away the money that you had been saving to live on for
the

next ten years.

The man who asked for it was shabby

and the firm March wind on the porch was so juicy and cold.

4

io Last evening we went dancing and I broke your leg.

Forgive me. I was clumsy, and

I wanted you here in the wards, where I am the doctor!

1 9 6 2

Energy in Sweden

Those were the days

When there was so much energy in and around me

I could take it off and put it back on, like clothes

That one has bought only for a ski trip

5 But then finds that one is using every day

Because every day is like a ski trip—

I think that's how I was at twenty-three.

Seeing those six young women in a boat I was on a ski trip.

They said, We are all from Minneapolis. This was in
Stockholm.

1. American poet (1883—1963; see pp. 1272—83) and
physician (see line 12). This poem parodies Williams's "This
Is Just to Say" (p. 1274).

1 6 9 4 / K E N N E T H K O C H

10 The melding of American and Swedish-American female
looks was a

ski trip

Although I had no particular reason at that time to put all my
energy

on

Yet there it was, I had it, the way a giant has the hegemony of his

nerves

In case he needs it, or the way a fisherman has all his poles and

lines and lures, and a scholar all his books

The way a water heater has all its gas

15 Whether it is being used or not, I had all that energy.

Really, are you all from Minneapolis? I said, almost bursting with

force.

And yes, one of them, about the second prettiest, replied. We are here

for several days.

I thought about this moment from time to time

For eight or ten years. It seemed to me I should have done something

at the time,

20 To have used all that energy. Lovemaking is one way to use it and

writing is another.

Both maybe are overestimated, because the relation is so clear.

But that is probably human destiny and I'm not going to go against

it here.

Sometimes there are the persons and not the energy, sometimes the

energy and not the persons.

When the gods give both, a man shouldn't complain.

1 9 9 4

To My Twenties

How lucky that I ran into you

When everything was possible

For my legs and arms, and with hope in my heart

And so happy to see any woman—

O woman! O my twentieth year!

Basking in you, you

Oasis from both growing and decay

Fantastic unheard of nine- or ten-year oasis

A palm tree, hey! And then another

io And another—and water!

I'm still very impressed by you. Whither,

Midst falling decades, have you gone? Oh in what lucky
fellow,

Unsure of himself, upset, and unemployable

For the moment in any case, do you live now?

15 From my window I drop a nickel

By mistake. With

You I race down to get it

But I find there on

The street instead, a good friend,

C O R S O N S I N L E T / 1 6 9 5

20 X N , who says to me

Kenneth do you have a minute?

And I say yes! I am in my twenties!

I have plenty of time! In you I marry,

In you I first go to France; I make my best friends

25 In you, and a few enemies. I
Write a lot and am living all the time
And thinking about living. I loved to frequent you
After my teens and before my thirties.
You three together in a bar
30 I always preferred you because you were midmost
Most lustrous apparently strongest
Although now that I look back on you
What part have you played?
You never, ever, were stingy.
35 What you gave me you gave whole
But as for telling
Me how best to use it
You weren't a genius at that.
Twenties, my soul
40 Is yours for the asking
You know that, if you ever come back.

2000

A. R. A M M O N S

1926-2001

Corsons Inlet1

I went for a walk over the dunes again this morning
to the sea,
then turned right along
the surf
5 rounded a naked headland
and returned
along the inlet shore:

it was muggy sunny, the wind from the sea steady and high,
crisp in the running sand,

io some breakthroughs of sun

but after a bit

continuous overcast:

the walk liberating, I was released from forms,
from the perpendiculars,

I. Located on the southern New Jersey shore.

1 6 9 6 / A . R . A M M O N S

15 straight lines, blocks, boxes, binds

of thought

into the hues, shadings, rises, flowing bends and blends

of sight:

I allow myself eddies of meaning:

20 yield to a direction of significance

running

like a stream through the geography of my work:

you can find

in my sayings

25 swerves of action

like the inlet's cutting edge:

there are dunes of motion,

organizations of grass, white sandy paths of remembrance

in the overall wandering of mirroring mind:

30 but Overall is beyond me: is the sum of these events

I cannot draw, the ledger I cannot keep, the accounting

beyond the account:

in nature there are few sharp lines: there are areas of

primrose

35 more or less dispersed;

disorderly orders of bayberry; between the rows
of dunes,

irregular swamps of reeds,

though not reeds alone, but grass, bayberry, yarrow, all ...

40 predominantly reeds:

I have reached no conclusions, have erected no boundaries,
shutting out and shutting in, separating inside

from outside: I have

drawn no lines:

45 as

manifold events of sand

change the dune's shape that will not be the same shape
tomorrow,

so I am willing to go along, to accept

50 the becoming

thought, to stake off no beginnings or ends, establish
no walls:

by transitions the land falls from grassy dunes to creek
to undercreek: but there are no lines, though

55 change in that transition is clear

as any sharpness: but "sharpness" spread out,

allowed to occur over a wider range

than mental lines can keep:

C O R S O N S I N L E T / 1 6 9 7

the moon was full last night: today, low tide was low:

black shoals of mussels exposed to the risk

of air
and, earlier, of sun,
waved in and out with the waterline, waterline inexact,
caught always in the event of change:
a young mottled gull stood free on the shoals
and ate
to vomiting: another gull, squawking possession, cracked a
crab,
picked out the entrails, swallowed the soft-shelled legs, a
ruddy
turnstone⁰ running in to snatch leftover bits: *a shorebird*
risk is full: every living thing in
siege: the demand is life, to keep life: the small
white blacklegged egret, how beautiful, quietly stalks and
spears
the shallows, darts to shore
to stab—what? I couldn't
see against the black mudflats—a frightened
fiddler crab?
the news to my left over the dunes and
reeds and bayberry clumps was
fall: thousands of tree swallows
gathering for flight:
an order held
in constant change: a congregation
rich with entropy: nevertheless, separable, noticeable
as one event,
not chaos: preparations for
flight from winter,

cheet, cheet, cheet, cheet, wings rifling the green clumps,
beaks
at the bayberries
a perception full of wind, flight, curve,
sound:
the possibility of rule as the sum of rulelessness:
the “field” of action
with moving, incalculable center:
in the smaller view, order tight with shape:
blue tiny flowers on a leafless weed: carapace of crab:
snail shell:
pulsations of order
in the bellies of minnows: orders swallowed,
broken down, transferred through membranes
to strengthen larger orders: but in the large view, no
lines or changeless shapes: the working in and out, together
and against, of millions of events: this,
so that I make
no form
formlessness:
1 6 9 8 / A . R . A M M O N S
orders as summaries, as outcomes of actions override
or in some way result, not predictably (seeing me gain
the top of a dune,
110 the swallows
could take flight—some other fields of bayberry
could enter fall
berryless) and there is serenity:

no arranged terror: no forcing of image, plan,
115 or thought:

no propaganda, no humbling of reality to precept:
terror pervades but is not arranged, all possibilities
of escape open: no route shut, except in
the sudden loss of all routes:

120 I see narrow orders, limited tightness, but will
not run to that easy victory:

still around the looser, wider forces work:

I will try

to fasten into order enlarging grasps of disorder, widening

125 scope, but enjoying the freedom that

Scope eludes my grasp, that there is no finality of vision,

that I have perceived nothing completely,

that tomorrow a new walk is a new walk.

1 9 6 5

The City Limits

When you consider the radiance, that it does not withhold
itself but pours its abundance without selection into every
nook and cranny not overhung or hidden; when you consider
that birds' bones make no awful noise against the light but
5 lie low in the light as in a high testimony; when you consider
the radiance, that it will look into the guiltiest
swervings of the weaving heart and bear itself upon them,
not flinching into disguise or darkening; when you consider
the abundance of such resource as illuminates the glow-blue
io bodies and gold-skeined wings of flies swarming the
dumped

guts of a natural slaughter or the coil of shit and in no
way winces from its storms of generosity; when you consider
that air or vacuum, snow or shale, squid or wolf, rose or
lichen,

each is accepted into as much light as it will take, then

15 the heart moves roomier, the man stands and looks about,
the

THE ARC INSIDE AND OUT / 1 6 9 9

leaf does not increase itself above the grass, and the dark
work of the deepest cells is of a tune with May bushes
and fear lit by the breadth of such calmly turns to praise.

1 9 7 1

The Arc Inside and Out

For Harold Bloom

If, whittier and dumper, gross carver
into the shadiest curvings, I took branch
and meat from the stalk of life, threw
away the monies of the treasured,
5 treasurable mind, cleaved memory free
of the instant, if I got right down
shucking off periphery after periphery
to the glassy vague gray parabolas
and swoops of unailable perception,
io would I begin to improve the purity,
would I essentialize out the distilled
form, the glitter-stone that whether
the world comes or goes clicks gleams
and chinks of truth self-making, never
15 to be shuttered, the face-brilliant core

stone: or if I, amasser, heap shoveler,
depth pumper, took in all springs and
oceans, paramoecia and moons, massive
buttes and summit slants, rooted trunks
20 and leafages, anthologies of wise words,
schemata, all grasses (including the
tidal *Spartinas*,² marginal, salty
broadsweps) would I finally come on a
suasion, large, fully-informed, restful
25 scape, turning back in on itself, its
periphery enclosing our system with
its bright dot and allowing in nonparlant
quantities at the edge void, void, and
void, would I then feel plenitude
30 brought to center and extent, a sweet
2. Genus of various swamp grasses.

1 7 0 0 / A . R . A M M O N S

easing away of all edge, evil, and surprise:
these two ways to dream! dreaming them's
the bumfuzzlement—the impoverished
diamond, the heterogeneous abundance
35 starved into oneness: ultimately, either
way, which is our peace, the little
arc-line appears, inside which is nothing,
outside which is nothing—however big,
nothing beyond: however small, nothing
40 within: neither way to go's to stay, stay
here, the apple an apple with its own hue

or streak, the drink of water, the drink,
the falling into sleep, restfully ever the
falling into sleep, dream, dream, and
45 every morning the sun comes, the sun.

1 9 7 2

Pet Panther

My attention is a wild
animal: it will if idle
make trouble where there
was no harm: it will
5 sniff and scratch at the
breath's sills:
it will wind itself tight
around the pulse
or, undistracted by
io verbal toys, pommel the
heart frantic: it will
pounce on a stalled riddle
and wrestle the mind numb:
attention, fierce animal
15 I cry, as it coughs in my
face, dislodges boulders
in my belly, lie down, be
still, have mercy, here
is song, coils of song, play
20 it out, run with it.

1 9 8 3

W I L D B E E S / 1 7 0 1

All's All

A construed entity too

lessened to syllabify;

a mite or more

dimpling

5 domy^o generalization; *domelike*

a vague locus

(the flow of air

through prisons)

a puff of

10 the whiff of

a snail falling asleep;

stringy recollections of

fruitflies cruising

rosy bowlsful of

15 mangoes ripening mild:

ghostly leavings leaving

ghosts leave: retinal

worms empurpling

light scars

20 behind today's views:

bits of

retrenched nothings:

so much so,

little and all

25 alternately disappear:

the tiniest kiss

at the world's end

ends the world.

1 9 9 6

J A M E S K. B A X T E R

1926-1972

Wild Bees

Often in summer, on a tarred bridge plank standing,
Or downstream between willows, a safe Ophelia drifting¹
In a rented boat—I had seen them come and go,
Those wild bees swift as tigers, their gauze wings a-glitter

1. Ophelia, the young heroine of Shakespeare's *Hamlet*, goes mad, then drowns while drifting down a river (*Hamlet* 4.7.137-55).

1 7 0 2 / J A M E S K . B A X T E R

5 In passionless industry, clustering black at the crevice
Of a rotten cabbage tree, where their hive was hidden low.
But never strolled too near. Till one half-cloudy evening
Of ripe January, my friends and I

Came, gloved and masked to the eyes like plundering
desperadoes,

10 To smoke them out. Quiet beside the stagnant river
We trod wet grasses down, hearing the crickets chitter
And waiting for light to drain from the wounded sky.

Before we reached the hive their sentries saw us
And sprang invisible through the darkening air,

15 Stabbed, and died in stinging. The hive woke. Poisonous
fuming

Of sulphur filled the hollow trunk, and crawling

Blue flame sputtered—yet still their suicidal

Live raiders dived and clung to our hands and hair.

O it was Carthage under the Roman torches,
20 Or loud with flames and falling timber, Troy!²
A job well botched. Half of the honey melted
And half the rest young grubs. Through earth-black
smoldering
ashes
And maimed bees groaning, we drew out our plunder.
Little enough their gold, and slight our joy.
25 Fallen then the city of instinctive wisdom.
Tragedy is written distinct and small:
A hive burned on a cool night in summer.
But loss is a precious stone to me, a nectar
Distilled in time, preaching the truth of winter
30 To the fallen heart that does not cease to fall.

1 9 5 3

East Coast Journey

About twilight we came to the whitewashed pub
On a knuckle of land above the bay
Where a log was riding and the slow
Bird-winged breakers cast up spray.

5 One of the drinkers round packing cases had
The worn face of a kumara³ god,

2. References to the destruction by fire of two
the end of the Trojan War.

great cities of classical times—Carthage by the

3. Sweet potato (Maori); a staple food of the
Romans in 146 **B.C.E.** and Troy by the Greeks at
Maori, the Polynesian natives of New Zealand.

NEW ZEALAND / 1703

Or so it struck me. Later on

Lying awake in the veranda bedroom

In great dryness of mind I heard the voice of the sea

10 Reverberating, and thought: As a man

Grows older he does not want beer, bread, or the prancing
flesh,

But the arms of the eater of life, Hine-nui-te-po,⁴

With teeth of obsidian and hair like kelp

Flashing and glimmering at the edge of the horizon.

1966

New Zealand

(For Monte Holcroft)

These unshaped islands, on the sawyer's⁵ bench,

Wait for the chisel of the mind,

Green canyons to the south, immense and passive,

Penetrated rarely, seeded only

s By the deer-culler's⁶ shot, or else in the north

Tribes of the shark and the octopus,

Mangroves, black hair on a boxer's hand.

The founding fathers with their guns and bibles,

Botanist, whaler, added bones and names

io To the land, to us a bridle

As if the id were a horse: the swampy towns

Like dreamers that struggle to wake,

Longing for the poet's truth

And the lover's pride. Something new and old

15 Explores its own pain, hearing

The rain's choir on curtains of gray moss
Or fingers of the Tasman⁷ pressing
On breasts of hardening sand, as actors
Find their own solitude in mirrors,
20 As one who has buried his dead,
Able at last to give with an open hand.

1 9 6 9

4. Maori goddess of death.

ment who controls the herds of deer.

5. One who saws.

7. The Tasman Sea, to the west of New Zealand.

6. A kind of game warden, an agent of the govern-

1 1 7 0 4

R O B E R T B L Y

b. 1926

Waking from Sleep

Inside the veins there are navies setting forth,

Tiny explosions at the water lines,

And seagulls weaving in the wind of the salty blood.

It is the morning. The country has slept the whole winter.

5 Window seats were covered with fur skins, the yard was full

Of stiff dogs, and hands that clumsily held heavy books.

Now we wake, and rise from bed, and eat breakfast!—

Shouts rise from the harbor of the blood,

Mist, and masts rising, the knock of wooden tackle in the
sunlight.

io Now we sing, and do tiny dances on the kitchen floor.

Our whole body is like a harbor at dawn;

We know that our master has left us for the day.

1 9 6 2

Johnson's Cabinet¹ Watched by Ants

i

It is a clearing deep in a forest: overhanging boughs

Make a low place. Here the citizens we know during the day,

The ministers, the department heads,

Appear changed: the stockholders of large steel companies

5 In small wooden shoes: here are the generals dressed as
gamboling

lambs.

2

Tonight they burn the rice-supplies; tomorrow

They lecture on Thoreau;² tonight they move around the trees,

Tomorrow they pick the twigs from their clothes;

Tonight they throw the fire-bombs, tomorrow

io They read the Declaration of Independence; tomorrow they
are in

church.

3

Ants are gathered around an old tree.

In a choir they sing, in harsh and gravelly voices,

Old Etruscan³ songs on tyranny.

1. Advisors of U.S. President Lyndon B. Johnson
pp. 1045-46), American Transcendentalistphilos-
(1908—1973), whose term was dominated by the
opher, essayist, and poet.

Vietnam War and by protests against it.

3. An early Italian people and culture, originating

2. Henry David Thoreau (1817-1862; see
in Etruria; one of its city-states became Rome.

I K N O W A M A N / 1 7 0 5

Toads nearby clap their small hands, and join

15 The fiery songs, their five long toes trembling in the soaked
earth.

1 9 6 7

R O B E R T C R E E L E Y

b. 1926

Heroes

In all those stories the hero

is beyond himself into the next

thing, be it those labors

of Hercules, or Aeneas¹ going into death.

5 I thought the instant of the one humanness

in Virgil's plan of it

was that it was of course human enough to die,

yet to come back, as he said, *hoc opus, hic labor est.*²

That was the Cumaean Sibyl speaking,

io This is Robert Creeley, and Virgil

is dead now two thousand years, yet Hercules

and the *Aeneid*, yet all that industrious wis-

dom lives in the way the mountains

and the desert are waiting

15 for the heroes, and death also

can still propose the old labors.

1 9 5 9

I Know a Man

As I sd to my
friend, because I am
always talking,—John, I
sd, which was not his
5 name, the darkness sur-
rounds us, what

1. Trojan hero whose adventures and travails are
priestess and prophet, how he might visit his dead
recorded in Virgil's epic poem, the *Aeneid*. Her-
father in the underworld, she answers that the
cules: legendary Greek hero of superhuman
descent is easy, but to return—"That is the task,
strength, best-known for his twelve labors.
that is the labor."

2. *Aeneid* 6.129. When Aeneas asks the Sibyl, a

1 7 0 6 / R O B E R T C R E E L E Y

can we do against
it, or else, shall we &
why not, buy a goddamn big car,
10 drive, he sd, for
christ's sake, look
out where yr going.

1 9 6 2

The World

I wanted so ably
to reassure you, I wanted
the man you took to be me,
to comfort you, and got

5 up, and went to the window,
pushed back, as you asked me to,
the curtain, to see
the outline of the trees
in the night outside.
io The light, love,
the light we felt then,
grayly, was it, that
came in, on us, not
merely my hands or yours,
15 or a wetness so comfortable,
but in the dark then
as you slept, the gray
figure came so close
and leaned over,
20 between us, as you
slept, restless, and
my own face had to
see it, and be seen by it,
the man it was, your
25 gray lost tired bewildered
brother, unused, untaken—
hated by love, and dead,
but not dead, for an
instant, saw me, myself
BO the intruder, as he was not.
B R E S S O N ‘ S M O V I E S / 1 7 0 7
I tried to say, it is

all right, she is
happy, you are no longer
needed. I said,
35 he is dead, and he
went as you shifted
and woke, at first afraid,
then knew by my own knowing
what had happened—
40 and the light then
of the sun coming
for another morning
in the world.

1 9 6 9

Bresson's 3 Movies

A movie of Robert

Bresson's showed a yacht,
at evening on the Seine,⁴
all its lights on, watched
5 by two young, seemingly
poor people, on a bridge adjacent,
the classic boy and girl
of the story, any one
one cares to tell. So
10 years pass, of course, but
I identified with the young,
embittered Frenchman,
knew his almost complacent
anguish and the distance

15 he felt from his girl.

Yet another film

of Bresson's has the

aging Lancelot⁵ with his

awkward armor standing

20 in a woods, of small trees,

3. Robert Bresson (1907-1999), French director *Nuits d'Un Reveur* {*Four Nights of a Dreamer*}, and screenwriter, known for his austere style. 1971.

4. River in northern France. The movie is *Quatre 5. Lancelot du Lac* (*Lancelot of the Lake*), 1974.

1 7 0 8 / A L L E N G I N S B E R G

dazed, bleeding, both he

and his horse are,

trying to get back to

the castle, itself of

25 no great size. It

moved me, that

life was after all

like that. You are

in love. You stand

30 in the woods, with

a horse, bleeding.

The story is true.

1 9 8 2

A L L E N G I N S B E R G

1926-1997

From Howl

F o r C a r l S o l o m o n 1

I

I saw the best minds of my generation destroyed by madness,
starving
hysterical naked,
dragging themselves through the negro streets at dawn looking
for an
angry fix,
angelheaded hipsters burning for the ancient heavenly
connection to
the starry dynamo in the machinery of night,
who poverty and tatters and hollow-eyed and high sat up
smoking in
the supernatural darkness of cold-water flats floating across
the
tops of cities contemplating jazz,
5 who bared their brains to Heaven under the El² and saw
Mohammedan
angels staggering on tenement roofs illuminated
who passed through universities with radiant cool eyes
hallucinating
Arkansas and Blake-light³ tragedy among the scholars of war,
who were expelled from the academies for crazy & publishing
obscene
odes on the windows of the skull,
who cowered in unshaven rooms in underwear, burning their
money
in wastebaskets and listening to the Terror through the wall,
who got busted in their pubic beards returning through
Laredo⁴ with a
belt of marijuana for New York,
1. Ginsberg met Solomon (b. 1928) while both

2. Elevated railway in New York City; also,
were patients in the Columbia Psychiatric Institute
Hebrew for God.

in 1949. Many details in *Howl* come from the

3. In 1948, Ginsberg had a vision/hallucination of
“apocryphal history” that Solomon then told him,
the English poet and artist William Blake (1757—
while other details refer to experiences of Ginsberg
1827; see pp. 732-47).

and his fellow Beat writers of the 1950s.

4. City in Texas, on the Mexican border.

H O W L / 1 7 0 9

10 who ate fire in paint hotels or drank turpentine in Paradise
Alley,⁵

death, or purgatoried their torsos night after night

with dreams, with drugs, with waking nightmares, alcohol and
cock

and endless balls,

incomparable blind streets of shuddering cloud and lightning
in the

mind leaping toward poles of Canada & Paterson,⁶
illuminating

all the motionless world of Time between,

Peyote solidities of halls, backyard green tree cemetery dawns,
wine

drunkenness over the rooftops, storefront boroughs of teahead

joyride neon blinking traffic light, sun and moon and tree

vibrations in the roaring winter dusks of Brooklyn, ashcan

rantings and kind king light of mind,

who chained themselves to subways for the endless ride from
Battery

to holy Bronx⁷ on benzedrine until the noise of wheels and
children brought them down shuddering mouth-wracked and
battered bleak of brain all drained of brilliance in the drear
light

of Zoo,

15 who sank all night in submarine light of Bickford's floated
out and sat

through the stale beer afternoon in desolate Fugazzi's,⁸
listening

to the crack of doom on the hydrogen jukebox,

who talked continuously seventy hours from park to pad to bar
to

Bellevue⁹ to museum to the Brooklyn Bridge,

a lost battalion of platonic conversationalists jumping down
the stoops

off fire escapes off windowsills off Empire State out of the
moon,

yacketayakking screaming vomiting whispering facts and
memories

and anecdotes and eyeball kicks and shocks of hospitals and
jails

and wars,

whole intellects disgorged in total recall for seven days and
nights with

brilliant eyes, meat for the Synagogue cast on the pavement,

20 who vanished into nowhere Zen New Jersey leaving a trail
of

ambiguous picture postcards of Atlantic City Hall,

suffering Eastern sweats and Tangerian bone-grindings and
migraines

of China under junk-withdrawal in Newark's bleak furnished
room,
who wandered around and around at midnight in the railroad
yard
wondering where to go, and went, leaving no broken hearts,
who lit cigarettes in boxcars boxcars boxcars racketing
through snow
toward lonesome farms in grandfather night,
who studied Plotinus Poe St. John of the Cross¹ telepathy and
bop
kaballa² because the cosmos instinctively vibrated at their feet
in
Kansas,
25 who loned it through the streets of Idaho seeking visionary
indian
angels, who were visionary indian angels,
5. Then a tenement courtyard in New York's
receiving center for mental patients.
Lower East Side; the setting of *The Subterraneans*,
1. Spanish poet and mystic (1542—1591), who
a 1958 novel by the American writer Jack Kerouac
wrote *The Dark Night of the Soul*. Plotinus (2 0 5 -
(1922-1969).
270), Roman mystic philosopher. Edgar Allan Poe
6. City in New Jersey where Ginsberg was born.
(1809-1894; see pp. 9 7 5 - 8 1) , American poet and
7. The south and north extremes of one set of New
author of supernatural tales as well as the cosmo-
York subway lines; the zoo is in the Bronx.
logical *Eureka*.

8. A bar near Greenwich Village, then New York's
2. A tradition of mystical interpretation of the
bohemian center. *Bickford's*: one of a chain of caf-
Hebrew Scriptures. *Bop*: jazz style especially influ-
eterias open twenty-four hours a day.
ential in the 1940s and 1950s.

9. A public hospital in New York serving as a

1 7 1 0 / A L L E N G I N S B E R G

who thought they were only mad when Baltimore gleamed in
supernatural ecstasy,
who jumped in limousines with the Chinaman of Oklahoma on
the
impulse of winter midnight streetlight smalltown rain,
who lounged hungry and lonesome through Houston seeking
jazz or
sex or soup, and followed the brilliant Spaniard to converse
about
America and Eternity, a hopeless task, and so took ship to
Africa,
who disappeared into the volcanoes of Mexico leaving behind
nothing
but the shadow of dungarees and the lava and ash of poetry
scattered in fireplace Chicago,
30 who reappeared on the West Coast investigating the F.B.I,
in beards
and shorts with big pacifist eyes sexy in their dark skin passing
out incomprehensible leaflets,
who burned cigarette holes in their arms protesting the
narcotic
tobacco haze of Capitalism,

who distributed Supercommunist pamphlets in Union Square
weeping
and undressing while the sirens of Los Alamos³ wailed them
down, and wailed down Wall,⁴ and the Staten Island ferry also
wailed,
who broke down crying in white gymnasiums naked and
trembling
before the machinery of other skeletons,
who bit detectives in the neck and shrieked with delight in
policecars
for committing no crime but their own wild cooking pederasty
and intoxication,
35 who howled on their knees in the subway and were dragged
off the
roof waving genitals and manuscripts,
who let themselves be fucked in the ass by saintly
motorcyclists, and
screamed with joy,
who blew and were blown by those human seraphim,⁵ the
sailors,
caresses of Atlantic and Caribbean love,
who balled in the morning in the evenings in rosegardens and
the
grass of public parks and cemeteries scattering their semen
freely
to whomever come who may,
who hiccupped endlessly trying to giggle but wound up with a
sob
behind a partition in a Turkish Bath when the blonde & naked
angel came to pierce them with a sword,⁶

40 who lost their loveboys to the three old shrews of fate⁷ the
one eyed

shrew of the heterosexual dollar the one eyed shrew that winks
out of the womb and the one eyed shrew that does nothing but
sit on her ass and snip the intellectual golden threads of the
craftsman's loom,

who copulated ecstatic and insatiate with a bottle of beer a
sweetheart

a package of cigarettes a candle and fell off the bed, and
continued

along the floor and down the hall and ended fainting on the
wall

with a vision of ultimate cunt and come eluding the last gyzym
of

consciousness,

3. Laboratory in New Mexico where the develop-

5. The highest order of angels.

ment of the atomic bomb was completed. *Union*

6. An allusion to *The Ecstasy of St. Teresa*, a sculp-
Square: site of radical demonstrations in New York
ture by Lorenzo Bernini (1598-1680) based on St.
in the 1930s.

Teresa's (1515-1582) distinctly erotic description

4. Wall Street, the center of New York's financial
of a religious vision.

district; but also, Jerusalem's Wailing Wall, a place

7. In Greek mythology, the three Fates spun,
of prayer and lamentation.

wove, and finally cut the thread of every mortal life.

H O W L / 1 7 1 1

who sweetened the snatches of a million girls trembling in the sunset,

and were red eyed in the morning but prepared to sweeten the snatch of the sunrise, flashing buttocks under barns and naked in

the lake,

who went out whoring through Colorado in myriad stolen night-cars,

N.C.,⁸ secret hero of these poems, cocksman and Adonis of Denver—joy to the memory of his innumerable lays of girls in empty lots & diner backyards, moviehouses' rickety rows, on mountaintops in caves or with gaunt waitresses in familiar roadside lonely petticoat upliftings & especially secret gas-station

solipsisms of johns, & hometown alleys too,

who faded out in vast sordid movies, were shifted in dreams, woke on

a sudden Manhattan, and picked themselves up out of basements

hangover with heartless Tokay and horrors of Third Avenue⁹ iron

dreams & stumbled to unemployment offices,

⁴⁵ who walked all night with their shoes full of blood on the snowbank

docks waiting for a door in the East River to open to a room full

of steamheat and opium,

who created great suicidal dramas on the apartment cliff-banks of the

Hudson under the wartime blue floodlight of the moon & their heads shall be crowned with laurel¹¹ in oblivion,

who ate the lamb stew of the imagination or digested the crab
at the

muddy bottom of the rivers of Bowery,²

who wept at the romance of the streets with their pushcarts full
of

onions and bad music,

who sat in boxes breathing in the darkness under the bridge,
and rose

up to build harpsichords in their lofts,

50 who coughed on the sixth floor of Harlem crowned with
flame under

the tubercular sky surrounded by orange crates of theology,

who scribbled all night rocking and rolling over lofty
incantations

which in the yellow morning were stanzas of gibberish,

who cooked rotten animals lung heart feet tail borsht &
tortillas

dreaming of the pure vegetable kingdom,

who plunged themselves under meat trucks looking for an egg,

who threw their watches off the roof to cast their ballot for
Eternity

outside of Time, & alarm clocks fell on their heads every day
for

the next decade,

55 who cut their wrists three times successively
unsuccessfully, gave up

and were forced to open antique stores where they thought
they

were growing old and cried,

who were burned alive in their innocent flannel suits on
Madison

Avenue³ amid blasts of leaden verse & the tanked-up clatter of
the iron regiments of fashion & the nitroglycerine shrieks of
the
fairies of advertising & the mustard gas of sinister intelligent
editors, or were run down by the drunken taxicabs of Absolute
Reality,

8. Neal Cassady (1926-1968), a friend and lover
sey.

of Ginsberg. Also a friend of Jack Kerouac, he is
2. Lower end of Third Avenue; traditional haunt
the hero of Kerouac's novel *On the Road* (1957).
of alcoholics and derelicts.

9. In Manhattan. *Tokay*: a Hungarian wine.

3. The center of New York's advertising industry.

1. In classical Greece, victors in the Pythian
Cf. *The Man in the Gray Flannel Suit*, a best-
games were crowned with laurel. *Hudson*: the
selling 1955 novel by the American writer Sloan
Hudson River, between Manhattan and New Jer-
Wilson (b. 1920).

1 7 1 2 / A L L E N G I N S B E R G

who jumped off the Brooklyn Bridge this actually happened
and

walked away unknown and forgotten into the ghostly daze of
Chinatown soup alleyways & firetrucks, not even one free
beer,

who sang out of their windows in despair, fell out of the
subway

window, jumped in the filthy Passaic,⁴ leaped on negroes,
cried

all over the street, danced on broken wineglasses barefoot
smashed phonograph records of nostalgic European 1930's
German jazz finished the whiskey and threw up groaning into
the
bloody toilet, moans in their ears and the blast of colossal
steamwhistles,
who barreled down the highways of the past journeying to
each other's
hotrod-Golgotha jail-solitude watch or Birmingham5 jazz
incarnation,
60 who drove crosscountry seventytwo hours to find out if I
had a vision
or you had a vision or he had a vision to find out Eternity,
who journeyed to Denver, who died in Denver, who came back
to
Denver & waited in vain, who watched over Denver &
brooded &
lone in Denver and finally went away to find out the Time, &
now Denver is lonesome for her heroes,
who fell on their knees in hopeless cathedrals praying for each
other's
salvation and light and breasts, until the soul illuminated its
hair
for a second,
who crashed through their minds in jail waiting for impossible
criminals with golden heads and the charm of reality in their
hearts who sang sweet blues to Alcatraz,
who retired to Mexico to cultivate a habit, or Rocky Mount to
tender
Buddha or Tangiers to boys or Southern Pacific to the black

locomotive or Harvard to Narcissus to Woodlawn⁶ to the
daisychain or grave,
65 who demanded sanity trials accusing the radio of
hypnotism & were
left with their insanity & their hands & a hung jury,
who threw potato salad at CCNY lecturers on Dadaism⁷ and
subsequently presented themselves on the granite steps of the
madhouse with shaven heads and harlequin speech of suicide,
demanding instantaneous lobotomy,
and who were given instead the concrete void of insulin
metrasol
electricity hydrotherapy psychotherapy occupational therapy
pingpong & amnesia,
who in humorless protest overturned only one symbolic
pingpong
table, resting briefly in catatonia,
returning years later truly bald except for a wig of blood, and
tears and
fingers, to the visible madman doom of the wards of the
madtowns of the East,
70 Pilgrim State's Rockland's and Greystone's⁸ foetid halls,
bickering with
the echoes of the soul, rocking and rolling in the midnight
solitude-bench dolmen-realms⁹ of love, dream of life a
nightmare,
bodies turned to stone as heavy as the moon,
4. The river that flows through Paterson.
7. An artistic movement based on absurdity and
5. In Alabama. *Golgotha*: hill near Jerusalem
accident; it flourished during World War I. *CCNY*:

where Jesus was crucified.

City College of New York.

6. Cemetery in the Bronx. Kerouac was then living

8. Three mental hospitals near New York. Carl

in Rocky Mount, North Carolina. Ginsberg and

Solomon was an inmate at Pilgrim State and Rock-

the American writer William Burroughs (1914—

land, and Ginsberg's mother was institutionalized

1997) had lived in Tangiers. Cassady worked as a

at Greystone.

brakeman for the Southern Pacific Railroad.

9. Dolmens are prehistoric monuments of hori-

A S U P E R M A R K E T I N C A L I F O R N I A / 1 7 1 3

with mother finally * * * * * a n d the last fantastic book flung
out of

the tenement window, and the last door closed at 4 AM and the

last telephone slammed at the wall in reply and the last
furnished

room emptied down to the last piece of mental furniture, a
yellow

paper rose twisted on a wire hanger in the closet, and even that

imaginary, nothing but a hopeful little bit of hallucination—

ah, Carl, while you are not safe I am not safe, and now you're
really in

the total animal soup of time—

and who therefore ran through the icy streets obsessed with a
sudden

flash of the alchemy of the use of the ellipse the catalog the

meter & the vibrating plane,

who dreamt and made incarnate gaps in Time & Space through

images juxtaposed, and trapped the archangel of the soul
between

2 visual images and joined the elemental verbs and set the
noun

and dash of consciousness together jumping with sensation of
Pater Omnipotens Aeterna Deus¹

75 to recreate the syntax and measure of poor human prose
and stand

before you speechless and intelligent and shaking with shame,
rejected yet confessing out the soul to conform to the rhythm
of

thought in his naked and endless head,

the madman bum and angel beat in Time, unknown, yet
putting down

here what might be left to say in time come after death,
and rose reincarnate in the ghostly clothes of jazz in the
goldhorn

shadow of the band and blew the suffering of America's naked
mind for love into an eli eli lamma lamma sabacthani²
saxophone

cry that shivered the cities down to the last radio

with the absolute heart of the poem of life butchered out of
their own

bodies good to eat a thousand years.

San Francisco 1955 1956

A Supermarket in California

What thoughts I have of you tonight, Walt Whitman,³ for I
walked down the sidestreets under the trees with a headache
self-

conscious looking at the full moon.

In my hungry fatigue, and shopping for images, I went into the

neon fruit supermarket, dreaming of your enumerations!
What peaches and what penumbras!0 Whole families *shadows*
shopping at night! Aisles full of husbands! Wives in the
avocados,
babies in the tomatoes!—and you, Garcia Lorca,4 what were
you doing
down by the watermelons?

zontal stone slabs supported by upright stones,
2. My God, my God, why have you forsaken me?
found in Britain and France and believed to be
(Hebrew). These are Jesus' last words from the
tombs.

cross (Matthew 27.46, Mark 15.34, Psalm 22.1).

1. All-powerful Father, Eternal God (Latin;
3. American poet (1819-1892; see pp. 1060-86),
“Aeterna” is feminine, the nouns are masculine).
of great influence on Ginsberg.

Paul Cezanne (1839-1906), the French Impres-

4. Federico Garcia Lorca (1898—1936), Spanish
sionist painter, used this phrase to describe the
poet and dramatist.

effects of nature on him.

1 7 1 4 / A L L E N G I N S B E R G

I saw you, Walt Whitman, childless, lonely old grubber,
poking

among the meats in the refrigerator and eyeing the grocery
boys.

5 I heard you asking questions of each: Who killed the pork
chops? What price bananas? Are you my Angel?

I wandered in and out of the brilliant stacks of cans following
you, and followed in my imagination by the store detective.

We strode down the open corridors together in our solitary
fancy

tasting artichokes, possessing every frozen delicacy, and never
passing

the cashier.

Where are we going, Walt Whitman? The doors close in an
hour. Which way does your beard point tonight?

(I touch your book and dream of our odyssey in the
supermarket

and feel absurd.)

10 Will we walk all night through solitary streets? The trees
add

shade to shade, lights out in the houses, we'll both be lonely.

Will we stroll dreaming of the lost America of love past blue
automobiles in driveways, home to our silent cottage?

Ah, dear father, graybeard, lonely old courage-teacher, what
America did you have when Charon quit poling his ferry and
you got

out on a smoking bank and stood watching the boat disappear
on the

black waters of Lethe?5

1 9 5 6

To Aunt Rose

Aunt Rose—now—might I see you

with your thin face and buck tooth smile and pain

of rheumatism—and a long black heavy shoe

for your bony left leg

5 limping down the long hall in Newark on the running carpet

past the black grand piano
in the day room
where the parties were
and I sang Spanish loyalist songs⁶
in a high squeaky voice
(hysterical) the committee listening
while you limped around the room
collected the money—
Aunt Honey, Uncle Sam, a stranger with a cloth arm
15 in his pocket
and huge young bald head
of Abraham Lincoln Brigade⁷

5. In Greek mythology, a river of Hades, signifying
Francisco Franco (1892-1975). Ginsberg's rela-
forgetfulness; Charon ferried the dead across it.

tives in Newark, New Jersey, were among the many

6. During the Spanish Civil War (1936-39),
left-wing Americans who supported the loyalists.
Spanish loyalists fought against the Fascists,

7. A group of American volunteers in the Spanish
whose eventual triumph led to the dictatorship of
Civil War.

T o A U N T R O S E / 1 7 1 5

— y o u r l o n g s a d f a c e

y o u r t e a r s o f s e x u a l f r u s t r a t i o n

20 (w h a t s m o t h e r e d s o b s a n d b o n y h i p s

u n d e r t h e p i l l o w s o f O s b o r n e T e r r a c e)

— t h e t i m e I s t o o d o n t h e t o i l e t s e a t n a k e d

and you powdered my thighs with Calomine
against the poison ivy — my tender

25 and shamed first black curled hairs

what were you thinking in secret heart then
knowing me a man already —

and I an ignorant girl of family silence on the
thin pedestal of my legs in the bathroom — M
useum of Newark.

30 Aunt Rose

Hitler is dead, Hitler is in Eternity; Hitler is wi
th Tamburlane and Emily Bronte 8

Though I see you walking still, a ghost on Osb
orne Terracedown the long dark hall to the
front door

35 limping a little with a pinched smile

in what must have been a silken

flower dress

welcoming my father, the Poet, on his visit to Ne
wark

— see you arriving in the living room

40 dancing on your crippled leg

and clapping hands his book

had been accepted by Liveright 9

Hitler is dead and Liveright's gone out of busine
ss *The Attic of the Past* and *Everlasting Minute* are out of
print 45 Uncle Harry sold his last silk stocking

Claire quit interpretive dancing school

Buba 1 sits a wrinkled monument in Old

Ladies Home blinking at new babies

last time I saw you was the hospital

50 pale skull protruding under a shen skin

**blueveinedunconsciousgirl
in an oxygen tent
the war in Spain has ended long ago
Aunt Rose
Paris 1958 1961**

8. English poet and novelist (1818-1848), whose
that published *The Everlasting Minute*, a 1937
novel *Wuthering Heights* is in part a ghost story.
book of poems by Ginsberg's father, Louis, whose
Tamburlane: E. Timur (1336—1405), Turkic con-
first book, *The Attic of the Past*, was published in
queror; the bloodthirsty hero of Christopher
1920.

Marlowe's tragedy *Tambulaine the Great* (1587).

1. Grandmother (Yiddish).

9. Company (now a subsidiary of W. W. Norton)

11716

JAMES MERRILL

1926-1995

The Broken Home¹

Crossing the street,

I saw the parents and the child

At their window, gleaming like fruit

With evening's mild gold leaf.

5 In a room on the floor below,

Sunless, cooler—a brimming

Saucer of wax, marbly and dim—

I have lit what's left of my life.

I have thrown out yesterday's milk
io And opened a book of maxims.
The flame quickens. The word stirs.
Tell me, tongue of fire,
That you and I are as real
At least as the people upstairs.
15 My father, who had flown in World War I,
Might have continued to invest his life
In cloud banks well above Wall Street and wife.²
But the race was run below, and the point was to win.
Too late now, I make out in his blue gaze
20 (Through the smoked glass of being thirty-six)
The soul eclipsed by twin black pupils, sex
And business; time was money in those days.
Each thirteenth year he married. When he died
There were already several chilled wives
25 In sable orbit—rings, cars, permanent waves.
We'd felt him warming up for a green bride.
He could afford it. He was "in his prime"
At three score ten. But money was not time.
When my parents were younger this was a popular act:
30 A veiled woman would leap from an electric, wine-dark car
1. This poem is composed of sonnets, some "bro-
founder of the investment firm Merrill Lynch.
ken" into unconventional proportions and rhyme
Wall Street is the hub of the financial industry in
schemes.
New York City.

2. Charles Merrill, the poet's father, was a co-

THE BROKEN HOME / 1717

To the steps of no matter what — the Senate
or the Ritz Bar —

And bodily, at news reels speed, attack

No matter whom — Al Smith or Jose Maria
Sert

Or Clemenceau³ — veins standing out on
her throat³⁵ As she yelled *War mongerer! Pig! Give us the
vote!*,

And would have to be hauled away in her hob-
ble skirt.⁴

What had they done? Oh, made history.

Her business (he had implied) was giving
birth, Tending the house, mending the socks

.

40 Always that same old story —

Father Time and Mother Earth,⁵

A marriage on the rocks.

One afternoon, red, satyr-thighed⁶

Michael, the Irish setter, head

45 Passionately lowered, led

The child I was to a shut door. Inside,

Blinds beat sun from the bed.

The green-gold room throbbed like a bruise.

Under a sheet, clad in taboos

50 Lay whom we sought, her hair undone, out-
spread, And of a blackness found, if ever now,
in old

Engravings where the acid bit.

I must have needed to touch it

O r t h e w h i t e n e s s — w a s s h e d e a d ?

55 H e r e y e s f l e w o p e n , s t a r t l e d s t r a n g e a n d c o l d .

T h e d o g s l u m p e d t o t h e f l o o r . S h e r e a c h e d f o r m e . I f l e d .

T o n i g h t t h e y h a v e s t e p p e d o u t o n t o t h e g r a v e l .

T h e p a r t y i s o v e r . I t ' s t h e f a l l

O f 1 9 3 1 . T h e y l o v e e a c h o t h e r s t i l l .

60 S h e : C h a r l i e , I c a n ' t s t a n d t h e p a c e .

H e : C o m e o n , h o n e y — w h y , y o u ' l l b u r y u s a l l !

A l e a d s o l d i e r g u a r d s m y w i n d o w s i l l :

K h a k i r i f l e , u n i f o r m , a n d f a c e .

S o m e t h i n g i n m e g r o w s h e a v y , s i l v e r y , p l i a b l e .

3. Georges Clemenceau (1841-1929), premier of

5. A reference to the Greek mythological figures

France during World War I, visitor to the United

Cronus (ruler of the Titans; his name means

States in 1922. Alfred Smith (1873-1944), gov-

“Time”) and Rhea (his wife; an Earth deity known

ernor of New York and 1928 candidate for the U.S.

as Mother of the Gods).

presidency. Jose Maria Sert y Badia (1876—1945),

6. In Greek mythology, the satyrs were minor

Spanish painter and muralist, who decorated New

nature deities, their upper halves resembling men,

York’s Waldorf-Astoria Hotel in 1930.

their lower halves resembling goats or horses.

4. Long, straight skirt.

1 7 1 8 / J A M E S M E R R I L L

65 How intensely people used to feel!

Like metal poured at the close of a proletarian novel,7

Refined and glowing from the crucible,
I see those two hearts, I'm afraid,
Still. Cool here in the graveyard of good and evil,
70 They are even so to be honored and obeyed.
... Obeyed, at least, inversely. Thus
I rarely buy a newspaper, or vote.
To do so, I have learned, is to invite
The tread of a stone guest⁸ within my house.
75 Shooting this rusted bolt, though, against him,
I trust I am no less time's child than some
Who on the heath impersonate Poor Tom⁹
Or on the barricades risk life and limb.
Nor do I try to keep a garden, only
so An avocado in a glass of water—
Roots pallid, gemmed with air. And later,
When the small gilt leaves have grown
Fleshy and green, I let them die, yes, yes,
And start another. I am earth's no less.
85 A child, a red dog roam the corridors,
Still, of the broken home. No sound. The brilliant
Rag runners halt before wide-open doors.
My old room! Its wallpaper—cream, medallioned
With pink and brown—brings back the first nightmares,
90 Long summer colds, and Emma, sepia-faced,
Perspiring over broth carried upstairs
Aswim with golden fats I could not taste.
The real house became a boarding school.
Under the ballroom ceiling's allegory

95 Someone at last may actually be allowed
To learn something; or, from my window, cool
With the unstiflement of the entire story,
Watch a red setter stretch and sink in cloud.

1 9 6 6

7. Type of socialist novel that romanticized work- Austrian
composer Wolfgang Amadeus Mozart ers and sometimes, as
here, industry. (1756—1791).

8. In the play *The Stone Feast*, by the French 9. The nickname
that Edgar, the disowned son of dramatist Jean-Baptiste
Moliere (1622—1673), a Gloucester in Shakespeare's *King
Lear*, gives to stone statue of the commander of Seville drags
his himself when he wanders the heath in disguise as
murderer, Don Juan, down to hell. A version of this a
disheveled madman.

story appears in the opera *Don Giovanni*, by the

THE V I C T O R D O G / 1 7 1 9

The Victor Dog¹

For Elizabeth Bishop

Bix to Buxtehude to Boulez,

The little white dog on the Victor label

Listens long and hard as he is able.

It's all in a day's work, whatever plays.

5 From judgment, it would seem, he has refrained.

He even listens earnestly to Bloch,

Then builds a church upon our acid rock.²

He's man's—no—he's the Leiermann's best friend,³

Or would be if hearing and listening were the same.

10 *Does* he hear? I fancy he rather smells

Those lemon-gold arpeggios in Ravel's

“Les jets d’eau du palais de ceux qui s’aiment.”⁴
 He ponders the Schumann Concerto’s tall willow hit
 By lightning, and stays put. When he surmises
 15 Through one of Bach’s eternal boxwood mazes⁵
 The oboe pungent as a bitch in heat,
 Or when the calypso decants its raw bay rum
 Or the moon in *Wozzeck* ⁶ reddens ripe for murder,
 He doesn’t sneeze or howl; just listens harder.
 20 Adamant⁰ needles bear down on him from *diamond*
 Whirling of outer space, too black, too near—
 But he was taught as a puppy not to flinch,
 Much less to imitate his bete noire Blanche
 Who barked, fat foolish creature, at King Lear.⁷
 25 Still others fought in the road’s filth over Jezebel,⁸
 Slavered⁰ on hearths of horned and pelted barons. *drooled*
 His forebears lacked, to say the least, forbearance.
 Can nature change in him? Nothing’s impossible.
 1. Long a trademark of RCA, the dog “Nipper”—
 dogs.
 here, called “Victor” (line 38)—was on the label of
 4. The palace fountains of those who are in love
 RCA Victor records, listening intently to a gramophone,
 with each other (French).
 phone, with the caption “His master’s voice.” In
 5. The composer’s works are compared to labyrinths
 the poem, passing reference is made to the jazz
 rинths executed in living boxwood plants, popular
 trumpeter Bix Beiderbecke (1903-1931), to the

in eighteenth-century formal gardens.

classical composers Dietrich Buxtehude (1637—

6. An opera by Berg in which the protagonist mur-

1707), Johann Sebastian Bach (1685-1750),

ders his unfaithful wife beneath a rising moon.

George Frederick Handel (1685-1759), Franz

7. In *King Lear*, the mad king says, “The little dogs

Schubert (1797-1828), and Robert Schumann

and all. / Tray, Blanch, and Sweet-heart, see, they

(1810-1856), and to the modernists Pierre Boulez

bark at me” (3.6.57—58). *Bete noire*: a person or

(b. 1925), Ernest Bloch (1880-1959), Maurice

thing detested or avoided; in French, its literal

Ravel (1875-1937), and Alban Berg (1885-1935).

meaning is “black beast,” whereas *blanche* means

2. Cf. Matthew 16.18: “... upon this rock I will

“white.”

build my church ...”

8. The proverbial wicked woman, she was killed in

3. In Schubert’s song “Der Leiermann” (“The

the street; when the body was recovered for burial,

Organ-Grinder”), an old man cranks his barrel-

dogs had eaten most of it, as had been prophesied

organ in the winter cold to an audience of snarling

earlier by Elijah (1 Kings 21, 2 Kings 9.30-37).

1 7 2 0 / J A M E S M E R R I L L

The last chord fades. The night is cold and fine.

30 His master’s voice rasps through the grooves’ bare groves.

Obediently, in silence like the grave's
He sleeps there on the still-warm gramophone
Only to dream he is at the premiere of a Handel
Opera long thought lost— *II Cane Minore*.⁹
35 Its allegorical subject is his story!
A little dog revolving round a spindle
Gives rise to harmonies beyond belief,
A cast of stars. . . . Is there in Victor's heart
No honey for the vanquished? Art is art.
40 The life it asks of us is a dog's life.

1 9 7 2

Lost in Translation

for Richard Howard

*Diese Tage, die leer dir scheinen
und wertlos für das All,
haben Wurzeln zwischen den Steinen
und trinken dort überall.*¹

A card table in the library stands ready
To receive the puzzle which keeps never coming.
Daylight shines in or lamplight down
Upon the tense oasis of green felt.
5 Full of unfulfillment, life goes on,
Mirage arisen from time's trickling sands
Or fallen piecemeal into place:
German lesson, picnic, see-saw, walk
With the collie who "did everything but talk"—
io Sour windfalls of the orchard back of us.
A summer without parents is the puzzle,

Or should be. But the boy, day after day,
Writes in his Line-a-Day^o *No puzzle. diary*
He's in love, at least. His French Mademoiselle,
15 In real life a widow since Verdun,²
Is stout, plain, carrot-haired, devout.
She prays for him, as does a cure in Alsace,³
9. The little dog (Italian).

Merrill may have meant to refer also to Robert

1. These days which seem empty and entirely
Frost's definition of poetry as that which is lost in
fruitless to you have roots between the stones and
translation. The American poet Richard Howard
drink from everywhere (German). From the trans-
(b. 1929; see pp. 1778-83) is also well known as
lation by the Austrian poet Rainer Maria Rilke
a translator.

(1 8 7 5 - 1 9 2 6) of "Palme," by the French poet Paul

2. His French-speaking governess, called Made-
Valery (1871 — 1945). Ironically, the epigraph pro-
moiselle, widowed since the battle of Verdun in
vides the very translation Merrill claims, within the
World War I.

poem, to be "lost"—or difficult to find. Though the

3. Region of France on the border of Germany.
expression *lost in translation* is in common use,
Cure: priest (French).

LOST IN TRANSLATION / 1721

Sews costumes for his marionettes,

Helps him to keep behind the scene
20 Whose sidelit goosegirl, speaking with his voice,
Plays Guinevere as well as Gunmoll Jean.⁴
Or else at bedtime in his tight embrace
Tells him her own French hopes, her German fears,
Her—but what more is there to tell?
25 Having known grief and hardship, Mademoiselle
Knows little more. Her languages. Her place.
Noon coffee. Mail. The watch that also waited
Pinned to her heart, poor gold, throws up its hands—
No puzzle! Steaming bitterness
30 Her sugars draw pops back into his mouth, translated:
“Patience, cheri. Geduld, mein Shatz.”⁵
(Thus, reading Valery the other evening
And seeming to recall a Rilke version of “Palme,”
That sunlit paradigm⁰ whereby the tree *pattern*
35 Taps a sweet wellspring of authority,
The hour came back. Patience dans l’azur.
Geduld im ... Himmelblau? Mademoiselle.)
Out of the blue, as promised, of a New York
Puzzle-rental shop the puzzle comes—
40 A superior one, containing a thousand hand-sawn,
Sandal^o-scented pieces. Many take *sandalwood*
Shapes known already—the craftsman’s repertoire
Nice in its limitation—from other puzzles:
Witch on broomstick, ostrich, hourglass,
45 Even (surely not just in retrospect)
An inchling, innocently branching palm.

These can be put aside, made stories of
While Mademoiselle spreads out the rest face-up,
Herself excited as a child; or questioned
50 Like incoherent faces in a crowd,
Each with its scrap of highly colored
Evidence the Law must piece together.
Sky-blue ostrich? Likely story.
Mauve of the witch's cloak white, severed fingers
55 Pluck? Detain her. The plot thickens
As all at once two pieces interlock.
Mademoiselle does borders—(Not so fast.
A London dusk, December last.
Chatter silenced in the library
60 This grown man reenters, wearing grey.
A medium. All except him have seen
Panel slid back, recess explored,
An object at once unique and common
4. Term for a gangster's female accomplice. *Goose-*
rill is reminded, in the lines to follow, of Valfrý's
girl: as in the fairy tale "The Goosegirl"; i.e., an
"Palme" and Rilke's translation, "Patience in the
impersonating voice. *Guinevere*: in English legend,
Blue," which refers to the palm tree's patience in
wife of King Arthur.
growth. The "blue" of the German "Himmelblau"
5. Patience, my dear (French and German). Mer-
provides Merrill with his own "Out of the blue."

Displayed, planted in a plain tole0 *coated-metal*
65 Casket the subject now considers
Through shut eyes, saying in effect:
“Even as voices reach me vaguely
A dry saw-shriek drowns them out,
Some loud machinery—a lumber mill?
70 Far uphill in the fir forest
Trees tower, tense with shock,
Groaning and cracking as they crash groundward.
But hidden here is a freak fragment
Of a pattern complex in appearance only.
75 What it seems to show is superficial
Next to that long-term lamination
Of hazard and craft, the karma that has
Made it matter in the first place.
Plywood, Piece of a puzzle.” Applause
so Acknowledged by an opening of lids
Upon the thing itself. A sudden dread—
But to go back. All this lay years ahead.)
Mademoiselle does borders. Straight-edge pieces
Align themselves with earth or sky
85 In twos and threes, naive cosmogonists6
Whose views clash. Nomad inlanders meanwhile
Begin to cluster where the totem
Of a certain vibrant egg-yolk yellow
Or pelt of what emerging animal
90 Acts on the straggler like a trumpet call
To form a more sophisticated unit.

By supertime two ragged wooden clouds
Have formed. In one, a Sheik with beard
And flashing sword hilt (he is all but finished)
95 Steps forward on a tiger skin. A piece
Snaps shut, and fangs gnash out at us!
In the second cloud—they gaze from cloud to cloud
With marked if undecipherable feeling—
Most of a dark-eyed woman veiled in mauve
100 Is being helped down from her camel (kneeling)
By a small backward-looking slave or page-boy
(Her son, thinks Mademoiselle mistakenly)
Whose feet have not been found. But lucky finds
In the last minutes before bed
105 Anchor both factions to the scene's limits
And, by so doing, orient
Them eye to eye across the green abyss.
The yellow promises, oh bliss,
To be in time a sumptuous tent.
no *Puzzle begun* I write in the day's space,
Then, while she bathes, peek at Mademoiselle's
Page to the cure: "... cette innocente mere,
6. Theorists about the universe's origin.
L O S T I N T R A N S L A T I O N / 1 7 2 3
Ce pauvre enfant, que deviendront-ils?"⁷
Her azure script is curlicued like pieces
115 Of the puzzle she will be telling him about.
(Fearful incuriosity of childhood!
"Tu as Taccent allemand,"⁸ said Dominique.

Indeed. Mademoiselle was only F r e n c h by marriage.
Child of an English mother, a remote
120 Descendant of the great explorer Speke,⁹
And Prussian father. No one knew. I heard it
Long afterwards from her nephew, a UN
Interpreter. His matter-of-fact account
Touched old strings. My poor Mademoiselle,
125 With 19391 about to shake
This world where “each was the enemy, each the friend”
To its foundations, kept, though signed in blood,
Her peace a shameful secret to the end.)
“Schlaf wohl, cheri.”² Her kiss. Her t h u m b
130 Crossing my brow against the dreams to come.
This World that shifts like sand, its unforeseen
Consolidations and elate routine,
W h o s e Potentate had lacked a retinue?
Lo! it assembles on the shrinking Green.
135 Gunmetal-skinned or pale, all plumes and scars,
Of Vassalage the noblest avatars—³
T h e very coffee-bearer in his vair⁰ *fur-trimmed*
Vest is a swart Highness, next to ours.
Kef⁴ easing Boredom, and iced syrups, thirst,
HO In guessed-at glooms old wives who know the worst
Outsweat that virile fiction of the New:
“Insh’ Allah,⁵ he will tire—” “—or kill her first!”
(Hardly a proper subject for the Home,
Work o f — d e a r Richard, I shall let *you* comb
145 Archives and learned journals for his n a m e —

A minor lion attending on Gerome.⁶)

While, thick as Thebes⁷ whose presently complete

Gates close behind them, Houri and Afreet⁸

Both claim the Page.⁹ He wonders w h o m to serve,

150 And what his duties are, and where his feet,

7. This innocent mother, this poor child, what will

painter; also, an allusion to Saint Jerome, who, the

become of them? (French).

legend goes, pulled a thorn from the paw of a lion,

8. You have a German accent (French).

which then befriended him.

9. John Hanning Speke (1827-1864), English

7. Capital of ancient Upper Egypt; pun on *thick*

explorer; possible pun on *speak*.

as thieves.

1. W h e n World War II began.

8. Evil demon in Arabian mythology. *Houri*: one

2. Sleep well, darling (German, French).

of the beautiful virgins who live with the blessed

3. The noblest incarnations of slavery.

in the Islamic paradise.

4. Narcotic made from hemp.

9. The servant, with a suggestion too of the

5. As Allah wills (Arabic).

printed page.

6. Jean Leon Gerome (1824-1940), French

1 7 2 4 / J A M E S M E R R I L L

**And if we 'll find, as some before us did, That
a piece of Distance deep in which lies hid
Your tiny apex sugary with sun,**

Eternal Triangle, Great Pyramid!

**155 Then Sky alone is left, a hundred blue
Fragments in revolution, with no clue
To where a Niche will open. Quite a task,
Putting together Heaven, yet we do.**

It's done. Here under the table all along

i60 Were those missing feet. It's done.

**The dog 'stail thumping. Mademoiselle sketching
Costumes for a coming harem drama**

**To star the goose girl. All too soon the swift
Dismantling. Lifted by two corners,**

**165 The puzzle hung together — and did not
.**

Irresistibly a populace

Unstitched of its attachments, rattled down.

Power went to pieces as the witch

Slithered easily from Virtue 's gown.

**170 The blue held out for time, but crumbled,
too.**

The city had long fallen, and the tent,

A separating sauce mousseline, 1

Been swept away. Remained the green

**On which the grown-up gambled. A green
dusk.**

**175 First lightning bugs. Last glow of west
Green in the false eyes of (coincidence) *Our***

m a n g y t i g e r s a f e o n h i s b a r e d h e a r t h .

B e f o r e t h e p u z z l e w a s b o x e d a n d r e a d d r e s s e d T o t h e p u z z l e s h o p i n t h e m i d - S i x t i e s , 2
i s o S o m e t h i n g t e l l s m e t h a t o n e p i e c e c o n t r i
v e d T o s t a y i n t h e b o y ' s p o c k e t . H o w d o I k n
o w ?

I k n o w b e c a u s e s o m a n y l a t e r p u z z l e s

H a d m i s s i n g p i e c e s — M a g g i e T e y t e ' s 3 h i g
h n o t e s G o n e a t t h e w a r ' s e n d , e n d o f t h e v o g
u e f o r c o l l i e s , 1 8 5 A h o u s e t o r n d o w n ; a n d h a
d n ' t M a d e m o i s e l l e K e p t b a c k h e r p i t i f u l b
i t o f t r u t h a s w e l l ?

I ' v e s p e n t t h e l a s t d a y s , f u r t h e r m o r e ,

R a n s a c k i n g A t h e n s f o r t h a t t r a n s l a t i o n o f
" P a l m e . "

N e i t h e r t h e G o e t h e h a u s 4 n o r t h e N a t i o n a l
L i b r a r y 1 9 0 S e e m s a b l e t o u n e a r t h i t . Y e t I c a
n ' t

J u s t b e i m a g i n i n g . I ' v e s e e n i t . K n o w

H o w m u c h o f t h e s u n - r i p e o r i g i n a l

F e l i c i t y R i l k e m a d e h i m s e l f f o r e g o

(W h o l o v e d F r e n c h w o r d s — v e r g e r , m u r , p
a r f u m e r 5) 1 9 5 I n o r d e r t o r e n d e r i t s u n d e r l
y i n g s e n s e .

K n o w a l r e a d y i n t h a t t o n g u e o f h i s

1. A white, creamy sauce. repertoire in French.

2. The streets numbered in the mid-Sixties in 4. A German library.

Manhattan. 5. Orchard, ripe, to scent (French).

3. English soprano (1888—1976), known for her

T H E B O O K O F E P H R A I M / 1 7 2 5

What Pains, what monolithic Truths

Shadow stanza to stanza's symmetrical
Rhyme-rutted pavement. Know that ground plan left
200 Sublime and barren, where the warm Romance
Stone by stone faded, cooled; the fluted nouns
Made taller, lonelier than life
By leaf-carved capitals in the afterglow.
The owlet umlaut⁶ peeps and hoots
205 Above the open vowel. And after rain
A deep reverberation fills with stars.
Lost, is it, buried? One more missing piece?
But nothing's lost. Or else: all is translation
And every bit of us is lost in it
210 (Or found—I wander through the ruin of S⁷
Now and then, wondering at the peacefulness)
And in that loss a self-effacing tree,
Color of context, imperceptibly
Rustling with its angel,⁸ turns the waste
215 To shade and fiber, milk and memory.
1 9 7 6

*From The Book of Ephraim*⁹

correct but cautious, that first night, we asked
Our visitor's name, era, habitat.
E P H R A I M came the answer. A Greek Jew
Born AD 8 at XANTHOS Where was that?
5 In Greece WHEN WOLVES & RAVENS WERE IN ROME
(Next day the classical dictionary yielded
A Xanthos on the Asia Minor Coast.)
N O W W H O ARE u W e told him. ARE U XTIANs

We guessed so. WHAT A COZY CATACOMB
IO Christ had W R O U G H T HAVOC in *his* family,
E N T I C E D MY FATHER F R O M MY M O T H E R S B
E D

(I too had issued from a broken home¹—

The first of several facts to coincide.)

Later a favorite of TIBERIUS² Died

6. German accent mark (“”), the two high dots of
have with spirits from the other world, who illu-
which resemble an owl’s eyes.

minate a system of reincarnation and purification

7. Initial of a former lover.

as well as suggest theories about the creation and

8. Pun on *wrestling with its angel*. Jacob wrestled
future of the universe. Merrill models the structure
with an angel, saying, “I will not let thee go, except
of each part of the trilogy on the design of the
thou bless me” (Genesis 32.26).

Ouija board; thus *Ephraim* is in twenty-six parts,

9. The first part of an epic trilogy, *The Changing*
one for each letter of the alphabet. In “C” (iden-
Light at Sandover, which also includes *Mirahell*:

tified by the large initial letter), the spirit guide

Books of Number and *Scripts for the Pageant*. *The*

Ephraim introduces himself; uppercase letters

Book of Ephraim originally appeared in the volume
indicate the “speech” of the Ouija board.

Divine Comedies, which made explicit Merrill’s

1. Cf. Merrill's poem "The Broken Home"
debt to Dante's tripartite *Divine Comedy*. Merrill
(p. 1716).

(JM) records encounters through the Ouija board

2. Roman emperor (42 **B.C.E**-37 **C.E.**)

that he and his companion, David Jackson (DJ),

1 7 2 6 / J A M E S M E R R I L L

15 AD 36 on CAPRI throttled

By the imperial guard for having LOVED

T H E M O N S T E R S N E P H E W (s i c) C A L I G U L
A 3

Rapidly he went on—changing the subject?

A long incriminating manuscript

20 Boxed in bronze lay U N D E R P O R P H Y R Y 0 *rock*

Beneath the deepest excavations. He

Would help us find it, but we must please make haste

Because Tiberius wanted it destroyed.

Oh? And where, we wondered of the void,

25 *Was* Tiberius these days? STAGE T H R E E

Why was he telling us? He'd overheard us

Talking to S I M P S O N Simpson? His LINK W I T H
EARTH

His REPRESENTATIVE A feeble nature

All but bestial, given to violent

30 Short lives—one ending lately among flames

In an Army warehouse. Slated for rebirth

But not in time, said Ephraim, to prevent

The brat from wasting, just now at our cup,⁴

Precious long distance minutes—don't hang up!

35 So much facetiousness—well, we were young
And these were matters of life and death—dismayed us.
Was he a devil? His reply MY POOR
INNOCENTS left the issue hanging fire.
As it flowed on, his stream-of-consciousness
40 Deepened. There was a buried room, a BED
WROUGHT IN SILVER I CAN LEAD U THERE
IF If? U GIVE ME What? HA HA YR SOULS
(Another time he'll say that he misread
Our innocence for insolence that night,
45 And meant to scare us.) Our eyes met. What if ...
The blood's least vessel hoisted jet-black sails.
Five whole minutes we were frightened stiff
—But after all, we weren't *that* innocent.
The Rover Boyss at thirty, still red-blooded
50 Enough not to pass up an armchair revel
And pure enough at heart to beat the devil,
Entered into the spirit, so to speak,
And said they'd leave for Capri⁶ that same week.
Pause. Then, as though we'd passed a test,
55 Ephraim's whole manner changed. He brushed aside
Tiberius and settled to the task
Of answering, like an experienced guide,
Those questions we had lacked the wit to ask.
Here on Earth—huge tracts of information
60 Have gone into these capsules flavorless
3. Roman emperor (12 - 41 c.E.).
5. Heroes of a popular series of children's books.

4. JM and DJ place hands on a teacup to “read”

6. Italian island, in the Bay of Naples.

the Ouija board.

A R A B I A N N I G H T / 1 7 2 7

And rhymed for easy swallowing—on Earth

We’re each the REPRESENTATIVE of a PATRON

—Are there that many patrons? YES o YES

These secular guardian angels fume and fuss

65 For what must seem eternity over us.

It is forbidden them to INTERVENE

Save, as it were, in the entr’acte⁰ between *intermission*

One incarnation and another. Back

To school from the disastrously long vac⁰ *summer vacation*

70 Goes the soul its patron crams yet once

Again with savoir vivre.⁷ Will the dunce

Never—by rote, the hundredth time round—learn

What ropes make fast that point of no return,

A footing on the lowest of NINE STAGES

75 Among the curates and the minor mages?⁰ *priests,*
magicians

Patrons at last ourselves, an upward notch

Our old ones move THEY’VE BORNE IT ALL FOR THIS

And take delivery from the Abyss

Of brand-new little savage souls to watch,

so One difference: with every rise in station

Comes a degree of PEACE FROM REPRESENTATION

—Odd phrase, more like a motto for abstract

Art—or for Autocracy—In fact

Our heads are spinning—From the East a light—

85 RUT U A R E T I R E D M E S C H E R S 8 S W E E T D R
E A M S T O M O R R O W N I G H T

1 9 7 6

Arabian Night⁹

Features unseen embers and tongs once worried
bright as brass, cool, trim, of a depth to light his
way at least who, trusting mirages, finds in
them the oasis,

5 what went wrong? You there in the mirror, did our
freshest page get sent to the Hall of Cobwebs?

Or had Rime's Emir¹ all along been merely
after your body?

No reply. Then ("there" of course, also) insight's
io dazzle snaps at gloom, like a wick when first lit.

Look! on one quick heartstring glissando,² stranger
kindles to father

7. Knowledge of how to live (French).

zade preserves her life by telling tales.

8. My dears (French).

1. An Arab prince, provincial governor, or military

9. *The Arabian Nights*, also known as *One Thou-*

commander. Also, the word is a mirror image of

sand and One Nights, is a collection of tales of

rime, rare spelling for *rhyme*, which here is syn-

unknown date (but referred to by the tenth cen-

onymous with poetry. The "page" of the previous

tury) and of mixed origins, including Indian, Per-

line thus connotes not only the emir's servant but
sian, and Arabic. Compiled in its "original" form in
a page of poetry.

Egypt by the fifteenth century, it is united by a

2. Italian term for a rapid series of consecutive
framework in which the newly married Schehera-
notes played by sliding fingers over keys or a string.

1 7 2 8 / F R A N K O ' H A R A

thirty years a shade, yet whose traits (plus others
not so staring—loyalty, cynicism,

15 neophyte's pure heart in erotic mufti³

straight out of Baghdad)

solve the lifelong riddle: a face no longer

sought in dreams but worn as my own. Aladdin⁴

rubs his lamp—youth? age?—and the rival two beam

20 forth in one likeness.

1 9 8 8

F R A N K O ' H A R A

1926-1966

The Day Lady¹ Died

It is 12:20 in New York a Friday

three days after Bastille day,² yes

it is 1959 and I go get a shoeshine

because I will get off the 4:19 in Easthampton³

5 npat 7:15 and then go straight to dinner

and I don't know the people who will feed me

I walk up the muggy street beginning to sun

and have a hamburger and a malted and buy

an ugly N E W W O R L D WRITING to see what the poets
io in Ghana are doing these days

I go on to the bank

and Miss Stillwagon (first name Linda I once heard)

doesn't even look up my balance for once in her life

and in the G O L D E N GRIFFIN⁴ I get a little Verlaine

15 for Patsy with drawings by Bonnard although I do

think of Hesiod, trans. Richmond Lattimore or

Brendan Behan's new play or *Le Balcon* or *Les Negres*

of Genet, but I don't, I stick with Verlaine

after practically going to sleep with quandariness

20 and for Mike I just stroll into the PARK LANE

Liquor Store and ask for a bottle of Strega and

then I go back where I came from to 6th Avenue

and the tobacconist in the Ziegfeld Theatre and

casually ask for a carton of Gauloises and a carton

25 of Picayunes, and a N E W Y O R K P O S T with her face
on it

3. Civilian clothes worn by someone usually in
blues singer, called Lady Day.

military uniform.

2. July 14, the French national holiday that cele-

4. Boy in "The Story of Aladdin and the Magic
brates the storming of the Bastille prison in 1789.

Lamp," popularly believed to be collected in the

3. One of "the Hamptons," towns on eastern Long
original *Arabian Nights* but actually an eighteenth-
Island, popular, especially in the summer, with

century addition. In it, Aladdin has a magic lamp
New York City artists and writers.

whose genie promises to grant any wish.

4. An avant-garde bookshop near the Museum of

1. Billie Holiday (1915-1959), American jazz and
Modern Art, where O'Hara was a curator.

H o w T O G E T T H E R E / 1 7 2 9

and I am sweating a lot by now and thinking of
leaning on the john door in the 5 SPOT

while she whispered a song along the keyboard
to Mal Waldron⁵ and everyone and I stopped breathing
1959 1964

How to Get There

White the October air, no snow, easy to breathe
beneath the sky, lies, lies everywhere writhing and gasping
clutching and tangling, it is not easy to breathe
lies building their tendrils into dim figures

5 who disappear down corridors in west-side⁶ apartments
into childhood's proof of being wanted, not abandoned,
kidnaped

betrayal staving off loneliness, I see the fog lunge in
and hide it

where are you?

io here I am on the sidewalk

under the moonlike lamplight thinking how precious moss is
so unique and greenly crushable if you can find it
on the north side of the tree where the fog binds you
and then, tearing apart into soft white lies, spreads its disease

15 through the primal night of an everlasting winter
which nevertheless has heat in tubes, west-side and east-side
and its intricate individual pathways of white accompanied
by the ringing of telephone bells beside which someone sits in
silence denying their own number, never given out! nameless
20 like the sound of troika⁷ bells rushing past suffering
in the first storm, it is snowing now, it is already too late
the snow will go away, but nobody will be there
police cordons for lying political dignitaries ringing too
the world becomes a jangle
25 from the index finger
to the vast empty houses filled with people, their echoes
of lies and the tendrils of fog trailing softly around their
throats
now the phone can be answered, nobody calling, only an echo
all can confess to be home and waiting, all is the same
30 and we drift into the clear sky enthralled by our
disappointment
never to be alone again
never to be loved
sailing through space: didn't I have you once for my self?
West Side?
for a couple of hours, but I am not that person

1 9 6 0 1 9 6 4

5. Billie Holiday's accompanist (1926—2002). 7. A Russian
vehicle drawn by three horses 6. "West-side" and "east-side"
in the poem refer to abreast, areas in Manhattan (west or east
of Fifth Avenue).

1 7 3 0 / F R A N K O ' H A R A

Ave Maria⁸

Mothers of America

let your kids go to the movies!

get t h e m out of the house so they won't know what you're
up to

it's true that fresh air is good for the body

5 but what about the soul

that grows in darkness, embossed by silvery images

and when you grow old as grow old you must

they won't hate you

they won't criticize you they won't know

10 they'll be in some glamorous country

they first saw on a Saturday afternoon or playing hookey

they may even be grateful to you

for their first sexual experience

which only cost you a quarter

15 and didn't upset the peaceful h o m e

they will know where candy bars come from

and gratuitous bags of popcorn

as gratuitous as leaving the movie before it's over

with a pleasant stranger whose apartment is in the Heaven on
Earth

Bldg

20 near the Williamsburg Bridge⁹

oh mothers you will have made the little tykes

so happy because if nobody does pick them up in the movies

they won't know the difference

and if somebody does it'll be sheer gravy

25 and they'll have been truly entertained either way

instead of hanging around the yard

or up in their room
hating you
prematurely since you won't have done anything horribly
mean yet
30 except keeping them from the darker joys
it's unforgivable the latter
so don't blame me if you won't take this advice
and the family breaks up
and your children grow old and blind in front of a TV set
35 seeing
movies you wouldn't let them see when they were young
19 6 0 1 9 6 4

Why I Am Not a Painter

I am not a painter, I am a poet.

Why? I think I would rather be
a painter, but I am not. Well,

8. Hail Mary (Latin); the Catholic prayer ad- 9. Bridge
connecting lower Manhattan with the dressed to the Virgin
Mary, mother of Jesus. Williamsburg section of Brooklyn.

H E A R T ' S N E E D L E / 1 7 3 1

for instance, Mike Goldberg
1 is starting a painting. I drop in.
"Sit down and have a drink" he
says. I drink; we drink. I look
up. "You have SARDINES in it."
"Yes, it needed something there."
10 "Oh." I go and the days go by
and I drop in again. The painting
is going on, and I go, and the days

go by. I drop in. The painting is
finished. "Where's SARDINES?"
15 All that's left is just
letters, "It was too much," Mike says.
But me? O n e day I am thinking of
a color: orange. I write a line
about orange. Pretty soon it is a
20 whole page of words, not lines.
Then another page. There should be
so much more, not of orange, of
words, of how terrible orange is
and life. Days go by. It is even in
25 prose, I am a real poet. My poem
is finished and I haven't mentioned
orange yet. It's twelve poems, I call
i t ORANGES. A n d o n e d a y i n a g a l l e r y
I see Mike's painting, called SARDINES.

1 9 7 1

W . D . S N O D G R A S S

b. 1926

From Heart's Needle

For Cynthia

" 'Your f a t h e r is dead.' 'That grieves me,' said he. 'Your m
o t h e r is dead,' said t h e lad. ' N o w all pity for me is at an
end,' said he. 'Your b r o t h e r is dead,' said Loingsechan. 'I
am sorely w o u n d e d by that,'

said Suibne. 'Your d a u g h t e r is dead,' said Loingsechan.
'And an only d a u g h t e r is t h e needle of t h e heart,' said
Suibne. 'Dear is your son w h o used to call you "Father," ' '
said Loingsechan. 'Indeed,' said he,

‘that is the drop that brings a man to the ground.’ ”

FROM AN OLD IRISH STORY,

The Frenzy of Suibne,

A STRANSLATED BY MYLES DILLON

1. New York painter (b. 1924), whose silk-screen 1.
Snodgrass's long poem for his daughter, after a prints appear
in O'Hara's *Odes* (1960). divorce, is written in ten sections.

1732 / W. D. SNODGRASS

2

Late April and you are three; today

We dug your garden in the yard.

To curb the damage of your play,

**Strange dogs at night and the mole stunnel
ing, 5 Four slender sticks of lath stand guard
wood Uplifting their thin string.**

So you were the first to tramp it down.

And after the earth was sifted close

You brought your watering can to drown

**io All earth *and* us. But these mixed seeds are pre
s sed With light loam in their steadfast rows.**

Child, we've done our best.

Someone will have to weed and spread

The young sprouts. Sprinkle them in the hour

15 When shadow falls across their bed.

You should try to look at them every day

Because when they come to full flower

I will be away.

3

The child between them on the street

Comes to a puddle, lifts his feet

**A n d h a n g s o n t h e i r h a n d s . T h e y s t a r t
A t t h e l i v e w e i g h t a n d l u r c h t o g e t h e r ,
5 R e c o i l t o s w i n g h i m t h r o u g h t h e w e a t h e r ,
S t i f f e n a n d p u l l a p a r t .**

**W e r e a d o f c o l d w a r 2 s o l d i e r s t h a t
N e v e r g a i n e d g r o u n d , g a v e n o n e , b u t s a t
T i g h t i n t h e i r c h i l l t r e n c h e s ,
i o P a i n s e e p s u p f r o m s o m e c a v i t y
T h r o u g h t h e r a n k e d t e e t h i n s y m p a t h y ;
T h e w h o l e j a w g r i n d s a n d c l e n c h e s
T i l l s o m e t h i n g s o m e w h e r e h a s t o g i v e .
I t ' s b e t t e r t h e p o o r s o l d i e r s l i v e**

**15 I n s o m e o n e e l s e ' s h a n d s
T h a n d r o p w h e r e h e l p l e s s p o w e r s f a l l
O n c r o p s a n d b a r n s , o n t o w n s w h e r e a l l
W i l l b u r n . A n d n o m a n s t a n d s .**

2. The post—World War II rivalry between the Soviet Union and the United States.

H E A R T ' S N E E D L E / 1 7 3 3

Here in the scuffled dust
is our ground of play.
I lift you on your swing and must
shove you away,
5 see you return again,
drive you off again, then
stand quiet till you come.
You, though you climb
higher, farther from me, longer,
10 will fall back to me stronger.

Bad penny, p e n d u l u m ,
you keep my constant time
to bob in blue July
where fat goldfinches fly
15 over the glittering, f e c u n d
reach of our growing lands.
O n c e more now, this second,
I hold you in my hands.

10

T h e vicious winter finally yields
the green winter wheat;
the farmer, tired in the tired fields
he dare not leave will eat.
5 O n c e more the runs come fresh; prevailing
piglets, stout as jugs,
harry their old sow to the railing
to ease her swollen dugs
and game colts trail the herded mares
io that circle the pasture courses;
our seasons bring us back once more
like merry-go-round horses.
With crocus mouths, perennial hungers,
into the park Spring comes;
15 we roast hot dogs on old coat hangers
and feed the swan bread crumbs,
pay our respects to the peacocks, rabbits,
and leathery Canada goose
who took, last Fall, our tame white habits

20 and now will not turn loose.

In full regalia, the pheasant cocks

march past their dubious hens;

1 7 3 4 / W . D . S N O D G R A S S

the p o r c u p i n e and the lean, red fox

trot a r o u n d b a c h e l o r p e n s

25 and t h e miniature painted train

wails on its oval track:

y o u said, I'm going to Pennsylvania!

and waved. A n d you've c o m e back.

If I loved you, they said, I'd leave

30 a n d find my o w n affairs.

W e l l , o n c e again this April, we've

c o m e around to the bears;

p u n i s h e d and cared for, b e h i n d bars,

the c o o n s 0 on bread and water *raccoons*

35 stretch thin black fingers after ours.

A n d you are still my daughter.

1 9 5 9

Mementos, 1

Sorting o u t letters and piles of my old

**C a n c e l e d c h e c k s , old clippings, and y e l l o w n o t
e cards T h a t m e a n t s o m e t h i n g o n c e , I h a p p e
n e d to find Your picture. *That* picture. I stopped there
cold,**

5 Like a m a n raking piles of dead leaves in his yard

W h o h a s turned up a severed hand.

Still, that first s e c o n d , I was glad: y o u stand

Just as y o u s t o o d — s h y , delicate, slender,

In that l o n g g o w n of green lace netting and daisies
io That you wore to our first dance. T h e sight of you s t u
n n e d
Us all. W e l l , our n e e d s were different, t h e n ,
A n d our ideals c a m e easy.
T h e n t h r o u g h t h e war³ and t h o s e t w o l o n g years
Overseas, the J a p a n e s e dead in their shacks
15 A m o n g dishes, dolls, and lost shoes; I carried
This g l i m p s e of you, there, to c h o k e d o w n my fear,
Prove it h a d b e e n , that it m i g h t c o m e back.
T h a t was b e f o r e we got married.
— B e f o r e we drained o u t o n e another's force
20 W i t h lies, self-denial, u n s p o k e n regret
A n d the sick eyes that blame; before the divorce
A n d the treachery. Say it: before we m e t . Still,
I put back your picture. S o m e d a y , in d u e course,
I will find that it's still there.

1 9 6 8

3. World War II.

1 7 3 5

ELIZABETH JENNINGS

1926-2001

My Grandmother

S h e kept a n a n t i q u e s h o p — o r i t kept h e r .

A m o n g A p o s t l e s p o o n s a n d B r i s t o l g l a s s ,¹

T h e f a d e d s i l k s , t h e h e a v y f u r n i t u r e ,

S h e w a t c h e d h e r o w n r e f l e c t i o n i n t h e b r a s s⁵

S a l v e r s⁰ a n d s i l v e r b o w l s , a s i t t o p r o v e *r o u n d*
trays P o l i s h w a s a l l , t h e r e w a s n o n e e d o f l o v e .

And I remember how I once refused
To go out with her, since I was afraid.
It was perhaps a wish not to be used
io Like antique objects. Though she never said
That she was hurt, I still could feel the guilt
Of that refusal, guessing how she felt.
Later, too frail to keep a shop, she put
All her best things in one long narrow room.
15 The places melt old, of things too long kept
hut, The smell of absences where shadows come
me
That can't be polished. There was nothing then
To give her own reflection back again.
And when she died I felt no grief at all,
20 Only the guilt of what I once refused.
I walked into her room among the tall
Sideboards and cupboards — things she never
used But needed: and no finger-marks were
there, Only the new dust falling through the
air.

1961

One Flesh

Lying apart now, each in a separate bed,
He with a book, keeping the light on late,
She like a girl dreaming of childhood,
All men elsewhere — it is as if they wait
5 Some new event: the book he holds unread,
Her eyes fixed on the shadow overhead.
Tossed up like flotsam from a former passion,
How cool they lie. They hardly ever touch,
Or if they do it is like a confession

1. Prized glassware of a deep blue color. *Apostle spoons*: set of teaspoons, the handles of which are in the form of male figures, supposedly the Apostles.

1736 / JOHN ASHBERRY

IO Of having little feeling — or too much .

Chastity faces them , a destination

For which their whole lives were a preparation .

Strangely apart, yet strangely close together,

Silence between them like a thread to hold

15 And not wind in. And time itself's a feather

Touching them gently. Do they know they're old,

These two who are my father and my mother

Whose fire from which I came , has now grown cold?

1966

JOHN ASHBERRY

b. 1927

The Painter

Sitting between the sea and the buildings

He enjoyed painting the sea's portrait.

But just as children imagine a prayer

Is merely silence, he expected his subject

5 To rush up the sand , and , seizing a brush ,

Plaster its own portrait on the canvas.

So there was never any paint on his canvas

Until the people who lived in the buildings

Put him to work: "Try using the brush

io As a means to an end . Select, for a portrait,

Something less angry and large, and more subject
To a painter 's moods, or, perhaps, to a prayer.”

How could he explain to them his prayer

That nature, not art, might usurp the canvas?

15 He chose his wife for a new subject,

Making her vast, like ruined buildings,

As if, forgetting itself, the portrait

Had expressed itself without a brush.

Slightly encouraged, he dipped his brush

20 In the sea, murmuring a heartfelt prayer:

“My soul, when I paint this next portrait

Let it be you who wreck the canvas.”

The news spread like wildfire through the
buildings:

He had gone back to the sea for his subject.

25 I imagine a painter crucified by his subject!

Too exhausted even to lift his brush,

He provoked some artists leaning from the
buildings **SOONEST MENDED / 1737**

To malicious mirth:” We haven't a prayer

Now, of putting ourselves on canvas,

30 Or getting the sea to sit for a portrait!”

Others declared it a self-portrait.

Finally all indications of a subject

Began to fade, leaving the canvas

Perfectly white. He put down the brush.

35 At once a howl, that was also a prayer,

Arose from the overcrowded buildings.

They tossed him, the portrait, from the tallest of the buildings; And the sea devoured the canvas and the brush

As though his subject had decided to remain a prayer.

1956

Soonest Mended¹

Barely tolerated, living on the margin

In our technological society, we were always having to be rescued On the brink of destruction, like heroin es in *Orlando Furioso*²

Before it was time to start all over again.

5 There would be thunder in the bushes, a rustling of coils, And Angelica, in the Ingres painting,³ was considering

The colorful but small monster near her toe, as though wondering whether forgetting

The whole thing might not, in the end, be the only solution.

And then there always came a time when

io Happy Hooligan⁴ in his rusted green automobile Came plowing down the course, just to make sure everything was O.K.,

Only by that time we were in another chapter and confused About how to receive this latest piece of information.

Was it information? Weren't we rather acting this out¹⁵ For someone else's benefit, thoughts in a mind With room enough and to spare for our little problems (so they began to seem),

Our daily quandary about food and the rent and bills to be paid?

To reduce all this to a small variant,

To step free at last, minuscule on the gigantic plateau —

20 This was our ambition: to be small and clear and free.

Alas, the summer's energy wanes quickly,

A moment and it is gone. And no longer

May we make the necessary arrangements,
simple as they are.

Our star was brighter perhaps when it had water
in it.

1. Allusion to the expression *Least said, soonest*

3. *Roger Delivering Angelica* (1819), painting
mended.

depicting Ariosto's heroine by the French artist

2. Epic by the Italian poet Ludovico Ariosto

Jean-Auguste-Dominique Ingres (1780-1867).

(1474—1533); his much-rescued heroine is Angel-

4. Character in a comic strip of the 1920s and
ica.

1930s.

1738 / JOHN ASHBURY

25 Now there is no question even of that, but only

Of holding on to the hard earth so as not to get thrown off,

With an occasional dream, a vision: a robin flies across

The upper corner of the window, you brush your hair away

And cannot quite see, or a wound will flash

30 Against the sweet faces of the others, something like:

This is what you wanted to hear, so why

Did you think of listening to something else? We are all talkers

It is true, but underneath the talk lies
The moving and not wanting to be moved, the loose
35 Meaning, untidy and simple like a threshing floor.
These then were some hazards of the course,
Yet though we knew the course *was* hazards and nothing else
It was still a shock when, almost a quarter of a century later,
The clarity of the rules dawned on you for the first time.
40 *They* were the players, and we who had struggled at the
game
Were merely spectators, though subject to its vicissitudes
And moving with it out of the tearful stadium, borne on
shoulders, at
last.
Night after night this message returns, repeated
In the flickering bulbs of the sky, raised past us, taken away
from us,
45 Yet ours over and over until the end that is past truth,
The being of our sentences, in the climate that fostered them,
Not ours to own, like a book, but to be with, and sometimes
To be without, alone and desperate.
But the fantasy makes it ours, a kind of fence-sitting
50 Raised to the level of an esthetic ideal. These were
moments, years,
Solid with reality, faces, namable events, kisses, heroic acts,
But like the friendly beginning of a geometrical progression
Not too reassuring, as though meaning could be cast aside
some day
When it had been outgrown. Better, you said, to stay cowering
55 Like this in the early lessons, since the promise of learning
Is a delusion, and I agreed, adding that

Tomorrow would alter the sense of what had already been
learned,
That the learning process is extended in this way, so that from
this
standpoint
None of us ever graduates from college,
60 For time is an emulsion, and probably thinking not to grow
up
Is the brightest kind of maturity for us, right now at any rate.
And you see, both of us were right, though nothing
Has somehow come to nothing; the avatars⁰ *incarnations*
Of our conforming to the rules and living
65 Around the home have made—well, in a sense, “good
citizens” of us, Brushing the teeth and all that, and learning to
accept
The charity of the hard moments as they are doled out,
For this is action, this not being sure, this careless
Preparing, sowing the seeds crooked in the furrow,
70 Making ready to forget, and always coming back
To the mooring of starting out, that day so long ago.

1 9 7 0

5. On which, at harvest time, wheat is separated from chaff
(debris).

P A R A D O X E S A N D O X Y M O R O N S / 1 7 3 9

Ode to Bill

S o m e t h i n g s w e d o t a k e u p a l o t m o r e t i m e
And are considered a fruitful, natural thing to
do.

I a m c o m i n g o u t o f o n e w a y t o b e h a v e

I n t o a p l o w e d c o r n f i e l d . O n m y l e f t , g u l l s ,

5 On an inland vacation. They seem to mind the way I write.

Or, to take another example: last month

I vowed to write more. What is writing?

Well, in my case, it's getting down on paper

Not thoughts, exactly, but ideas, maybe:

10 Ideas about thoughts. Thoughts is too grand a word.

Ideas is better, though not precisely what I mean.

Someday I'll explain. Not today though.

I feel as though someone had made me a vest

Which I was wearing out of doors into the countryside
15 Out of loyalty to the person, although

There is no one to see, except me

With my inner vision of what I look like.

The wearing is both a duty and a pleasure

Because it absorbs me, absorbs me too much.

20 One horse stands out irregularly against

The land over there. And am I receiving

This vision? Is it mine, or do I already owe it

For other visions, unnoticed and unrecorded

On the great, relaxed curve of time,

25 All the forgotten springs, dropped pebbles,

Songs once heard that then passed out of light

Into everyday oblivion? He moves away slowly,

Looks up and pumps the sky, a lingering

Question. Him too we can sacrifice

30 To the end progress, for we must, we must be moving on.

1975

Paradoxes and Oxymorons

This poem is concerned with language on a very plain level.

Look at it talking to you. You look out a window
Or pretend to fidget. You have it but you don't have it.
You miss it, it misses you. You miss each other.

5 The poem is sad because it wants to be yours, and cannot.

What's a plain level? It is that and other things,

Bringing a system of them into play. Play?

Well, actually, yes, but I consider play to be

1740 / GALWAY KINNEL

A deeper outside thing, a dreamed role-pattern,

10 As in the division of grace these long August days

Without proof. Open-ended. And before you know

It gets lost in the steam and chatter of typewriters.

It has been played once more. I think you exist only

To tease me into doing it, on your level, and then you aren't there

15 Or have adopted a different attitude. And the poem

Has set me softly down beside you. The poem is you.

1981

Brute Image

It's a question of altitude, or latitude,

Probably. I see them leaving their offices.

By seven they are turning smartly into the drive

To spend the evening with small patterns and odd,

5 Oblique fixtures. Authentic what? Did I say,

Or more likely did you ask is there any
Deliverance from any of this? W h y yes,
O n e boy says, one can step for a m o m e n t
Out into the hall. Spells bring some relief
io And antique shrieking into the night
That was not here before, not like this.
This is only a stand-in for the more formal,
More serious side of it. There is partial symmetry here.
Later one protests: H o w did we get here
15 This way, unable to stop communicating?
And is it all right for the children to listen,
For the weeds slanting inward, for the cold mice
Until dawn? N o w every yard has its tree,
Every heart its valentine, and only we
20 Don't know h o w to occupy the tent of night
So that what must c o m e to pass shall pass.

1 9 9 2

GALWAY K I N N E L L

b. 1927

First Song

T h e n it was dusk in Illinois, the small boy

After an afternoon of carting dung

H u n g on the rail fence, a sapped thing

Weary to crying. Dark was growing tall

T H E C O R R E S P O N D E N C E S C H O O L I N S T
R U C T O R S A Y S G O O D B Y E / 1 7 4 1

5 And he began to hear the pond frogs all

Calling on his ear with what s e e m e d their joy.

**S o o n their sound was pleasant for a boy
Listening in the smoky dusk and the nightfall
Of Illinois, and from the fields two small
10 Boys came bearing cornstalk violins
And they rubbed the cornstalk bows with resins
And the three sat there scraping of their joy.
It was n o w fine music the frogs and the boys
Did in the towering Illinois twilight make
15 And into dark in spite of a shoulder's ache
A boy's h u n c h e d body loved out of a stalk
The first song of his happiness, and the song woke
His heart to the darkness and into the sadness of joy.
1 9 6 0**

The Correspondence School Instructor Says Goodbye to
His Poetry Students

**Goodbye, lady in Bangor, w h o sent me
snapshots of yourself, after definitely hinting
you were beautiful; goodbye,
Miami Beach urologist, w h o enclosed plain
5 brown envelopes for the return of your *very*
“Clinical Sonnets”; goodbye, manufacturer
of brassieres on the Coast, whose eclogues
give the fullest treatment in literature yet
to the sagging breast motif; goodbye, you in San Quentin,1
io w h o wrote, “Being German my hero is Hitler,”
instead of “Sincerely yours,” at the end of long,
neat-scripted letters demolishing
the pre-Raphaelites:2**

I swear to you, it was just my way
15 of cheering myself up, as I licked
the stamped, self-addressed envelopes,
the game I had
of trying to guess which one of you, this time,
had p o i s o n e d his glue. I did care.

20 I did read each p o e m entire.

1. Prison in California. spirit of the arts before the Italian painter Raphael 2. A group of nineteenth-century English painters (1483—1520).

and poets, who wished to restore the methods and

7 4 2 / G A L W A Y K I N N E L L

I did say what I thought was the truth
in the mildest words I knew. And now,
in this poem, or c h o p p e d prose, not any better,
I realize, than those troubled lines

25 I kept sending back to you,

I have to say I am relieved it is over:

at the end I could feel only pity

for that urge toward more life

your p o e m s kept smothering in words, the smell

30 of which, days later, w o u l d tingle

in your nostrils as new, God-given impulses

to write.

Goodbye,

you w h o are, for me, the postmarks again

35 of shattered towns—Xenia, Burnt Cabins, Hornell—

their loneliness

given away in poems, only their solitude kept.

1 9 6 8

After Making Love We Hear Footsteps

For I can snore like a bullhorn

or play loud music

or sit up talking with any reasonably sober Irishman

and Fergus will only sink deeper

into his dreamless sleep, which goes by all in one flash,

but let there be that heavy breathing

or a stifled come-cry anywhere in the house

and he will wrench himself awake

and make for it on the run—as now, we lie together,

**after making love, quiet, touching along the length of our
bodies,**

familiar touch of the long-married,

and he appears—in his baseball pajamas, it happens,

the neck opening so small he has to screw t h e m o n —

**and flops down between us and hugs us and snuggles
himself to sleep,**

his face gleaming with satisfaction at being this very child.

In the half darkness we look at each other

and smile

and touch arms across this little, startlingly muscled body

—

**this one w h o m habit of memory propels to the ground of
his making,**

sleeper only the mortal sounds can sing awake,

this blessing love gives again into our arms.

1 9 8 0 , 1 9 9 3

1 7 4 3

W . S . M E R W I N

b. 1927

The Drunk in the Furnace

For a good decade

The furnace stood in the naked gully, fireless

And vacant as any hat. Then when it was

No more to them than a hulking black fossil

5 To erode unnoticed with the rest of the junk-hill

By the poisonous creek, and rapidly to be added

To their ignorance.

They were afterwards astonished

To confirm, one morning, a twist of smoke like a pale

io Resurrection, staggering out of its chewed hole,

And to remark then other tokens that someone,

Cozily bolted behind the eye-holed iron

Door of the drafty burner, had there established

His bad castle.

15 Where he gets his spirits

It's a mystery. But the stuff keeps him musical:

Hammer-and-anvil^{ing} with poker and bottle

To his juggled bellowings, till the last groaning clang

As he collapses onto the rioting

20 Springs of a litter of car-seats ranged on the grates,

To sleep like an iron pig.¹

In their tar-paper church

On a text about stoke-holes² that are sated never

Their Reverend lingers. They nod and hate trespassers.

25 When the furnace wakes, though, all afternoon

Their witless offspring flock like piped rats³ to its siren
Crescendo, and agape on the crumbling ridge
Stand in a row and learn.

1 9 6 0

Odysseus⁴

For George Kirstein

Always the setting forth was the same,
Same sea, same dangers waiting for him
As though he had got nowhere but older.

1. A crude block poured from a smelting furnace.
then the children out of town.

2. Furnace mouths.

4. Hero of Homer's *Odyssey*, in which, after the

3. As in the German folktale about the Pied Piper
Trojan War, he wanders for ten years, attempting
of Hamelin, whose playing lured first the rats and
to return to his home island, Ithaca.

1 7 4 4 / W . S . M E R W I N

B e h i n d h i m o n t h e r e c e d i n g s h o r e

5 T h e i d e n t i c a l r e p r o a c h e s , a n d s o m e w h e r e
O u t b e f o r e h i m , t h e u n r a v e l i n g p a t i e n c e

H e w a s w e d d e d t o . T h e r e w e r e t h e i s l a n d s

E a c h w i t h i t s w o m a n a n d t w i n i n g w e l c o m e

T o b e n a v i g a t e d , a n d o n e t o c a l l " h o m e . " ⁵

10 T h e k n o w l e d g e o f a l l t h a t h e b e t r a y e d

G r e w t i l l i t w a s t h e s a m e w h e t h e r h e s t a y e d

O r w e n t . T h e r e f o r e h e w e n t . A n d w h a t w o n d e r
I f s o m e t i m e s h e c o u l d n o t r e m e m b e r

Which was the one who wished on his departure

15 Perils that he could never sail through,
And which, improbable, remote, and true,
Was the one he kept sailing home to?

1960

Separation

Your absence has gone through me
Like thread through a needle.
Everything I do is stitched with its color.

1973

Losing a Language

A breath leaves the sentences and does not come
back yet the old still remembers something that
they could say but they know now that such things
are no longer believed and they young have fewer words

5 many of the things the words were about
no longer exist

the noun for standing in mist by a haunted tree
the verb for I

the children will not repeat
in the phrases their parents speak
somebody has persuaded them

that it is better to say everything differently
so that they can be admired somewhere
farther and farther away

5. Alluding to Odysseus's encounters with the sorceress Circe and the nymph Calypso, and to his wife, Penelope, waiting for him on Ithaca.

WHOEVER YOU ARE / 1745

15 where nothing that is here is known
we have little to say to each other
we are wrong and dark
in the eyes of the new owners
the radio is incomprehensible
20 the day is glass
when there is a voice at the door it is foreign
everywhere instead of a name there is a lie
nobody has seen it happening
nobody remembers
25 this is what the words were made
to prophesy
here are the extinct feathers
here is the rain we saw

1988

Whoever You Are

By now when you say *I stop somewhere waiting for you*⁶
who is the I and who come to that is you
there are those words that were written a long
time ago by someone I have read about who they as
sure me is you⁵ the handwriting is still running
over the pages
but the one who has disappeared from the
script is you I wonder what age you were when tho
se words came to you though I think it is not any
age at all that is you
stopping and waiting under the soles of my feet
in this morning this waking this looking up is you

but nothing has stopped in fact and I do not know
what is waiting and surely that also is you
every time you say it you seem to be speaking
through me to some men not yet there who I suppose
is you 15 you said you were stopping and waiting be-
fore I was here maybe the one I heard say it then
is you

1999

6. Final line of Walt Whitman's "Song of Myself" (see p.
1066).

1746

CHARLESTOMLINSON

b. 1927

Farewell to Van Gogh1

The quiet deepens. You will not persuade
One leaf of the accomplished, steady, darkening
Chestnut-tower to displace itself

With more of violence than the air supplies

5 When, gathering dusk, the pond brims evenly

And we must be content with stillness.

Unhastening, daylight withdraws from us its shapes
Into their central calm. Stone by stone

Your rhetoric is dispersed until the earth

10 Becomes once more the earth, the leaves

A sharp partition against cooling blue.

Farewell, and for your instructive frenzy

Gratitude. The world does not end tonight

And the fruit that we shall pick tomorrow

15 Await us, weighing the unstripped bough.

1960

The Picture of J.T. in a Prospect of Stone²

What should one

wish a child

and that, one's own

emerging

5 from between

the stone lips

of a sheep-stile³

that divides

village graves

io and village green?

— Wish her

the constancy of stone.

— But stone

is hard.

15 — Say, rather

it resists

the slow corrosives

and the flight

1. Vincent Van Gogh (1853-1890), Dutch Post-
T. C. in a Prospect of Flowers” (p. 481).

impressionist painter, who suffered bouts of insan-

3. Steps that enable a person to climb over a fence
ity and finally killed himself.

or wall.

2. Cf. Andrew Marvell, “The Picture of Little

MR. BRODSKY / 1747

of time

20 and yet it takes
the play, the fluency
from light.

— H o w would you know
the gift you'd give
25 was the gift
she'd wish to have?

— G i f t is giving,
gift is meaning:

first

30 I'd give
then let her
live with it
to prove
its quality the better and
35 thus learn
to love
what (to begin with)
she might spurn.

—You'd
40 moralize a gift?

—I'd have her
understand
the gift I gave her.

— A n d so she shall
45 but let her play
her i n n o c e n c e away
emerging

as she does

between

50 her d o o m (unknown),

her u n m o w n green.

1 9 6 3

Mr. Brodsky

I had heard

before, of an

American w h o would have preferred

to be an Indian;

5 bu t no t

until Mr. Brodsky, of o n e

w h o s e professed and long

pondered-on passion

was to b e c o m e a Scot,

io w h o even sent for haggis⁴ and oatcakes

4. Traditional Scottish dish, consisting of minced heart, lungs, and liver of a sheep or calf, boiled in an artificial bag (or the animal's stomach) with oatmeal.

1 7 4 8 / C H A R L E S T O M L I N S O N

across continent.

Having read him

in Cambridge English

a verse or two

15 from MacDiarmid,⁵

I was invited

to repeat the reading

before a Burns Night Gathering⁶

where the Balmoral Pipers

20 of Albuquerque would
play in the haggis
out of its New York tin.
Of course, I said
No. No. I could *not* go
25 and then
half-regretted I had not been.
But to console
and cure the wish, came
Mr. Brodsky, bringing
30 his pipes and played
until the immense, distended
bladder of leather seemed
it could barely contain its water—
tears (idle
35 tears) for the bridal of Annie Laurie⁷
and Morton J. Brodsky.
A bagpipe in a dwelling is
a resonant instrument
and there he stood
40 lost in the gorse
the heather or whatever
six thousand
miles and more
from the infection's source,
45 in our neo—New Mexican parlour
where I had heard
before of an

American who would have preferred
to be merely an Indian.

1 9 6 6

Ararat⁸

We shall sleep-out together through the dark

The earth's slow voyage across centuries

5. Hugh MacDiarmid, pen name of the Scottish

7. Subject of an anonymous Scottish folk song.

poet Christopher Murray Grieve (1892-1978; see

"Tears, idle tears" are the first words of a song in

pp. 1376-80).

Alfred, Lord Tennyson's narrative poem *The Prin-*

6. Meeting devoted to Scottish culture, on the

cess (see p. 995).

evening of January 25, birthday of the Scottish

8. The mountain on which Noah's ark came to

poet Robert Burns (1759-1796; see pp. 747-60).

rest (Genesis 6-10).

**A N O T E L E F T I N J I M M Y L E O N A R D ' S S H
A C K / 1 7 4 9**

Towards whatever Ararat its ark

Is steering for. Our atoms then will feel

5 The jarring and arrival of that keel

In timelessness, and rise through galaxies,

Motes starred by the first and final light to show

Whether those shores are habitable or no.

1 9 8 7

J A M E S W R I G H T

1927-1980

A Note Left in Jimmy Leonard's Shack

Near the dry river's water-mark we found

Your brother Minnegan,

Flopped like a fish against the muddy ground.

Beany, the kid whose yellow hair turns green,

5 Told me to find you, even in the rain,

And tell you he was drowned.

I hid behind the chassis on the bank,

The wreck of someone's Ford:

I was afraid to come and wake you drunk:

io You told me once the waking up was hard,

The daylight beating at you like a board.

Blood in my stomach sank.

Besides, you told him never to go out

Along the river-side

15 Drinking and singing, clattering about.

You might have thrown a rock at me and cried

I was to blame, I let him fall in the road

And pitch down on his side.

Well, I'll get hell enough when I get home

20 For coming up this far,

Leaving the note, and running as I came.

I'll go and tell my father where you are.

You'd better go find Minnegan before

Policemen hear and come.

25 Beany went home, and I got sick and ran,

You old son of a bitch.

You better hurry down to Minnegan;
He's drunk or dying now, I don't know which,
Rolled in the roots and garbage like a fish.

30 The poor old man.

1999

1 7 5 0 / J A M E S W R I G H T

A Blessing

Just off the highway to Rochester, Minnesota,
Twilight bounds softly forth on the grass.

And the eyes of those two Indian ponies
Darken with kindness.

5 They have come gladly out of the willows
To welcome my friend and me.

We step over the barbed wire into the pasture
Where they have been grazing all day, alone.

They ripple tensely, they can hardly contain their happiness
10 That we have come.

They bow shyly as wet swans. They love each other.
There is no loneliness like theirs.

At home once more,

They begin munching the young tufts of spring in the
darkness.

15 I would like to hold the slenderer one in my arms,

For she has walked over to me

And nuzzled my left hand.

She is black and white,

Her mane falls wild on her forehead,

20 And the light breeze moves me to caress her long ear

That is delicate as the skin over a girl's wrist.
Suddenly I realize
That if I stepped out of my body I would break
Into blossom.

1 9 6 3

Speak
To speak in a flat voice
Is all that I can do.
I have gone every place
Asking for you.
5 Wondering where to turn
And how the search would end
And the last streetlight spin
Above me blind.

Then I returned rebuffed
io And saw under the sun
The race not to the swift
Nor the battle won.¹

Liston² dives in the tank,
Lord, in Lewiston, Maine,

1. As in Ecclesiastes 9.11: "I returned, and saw
2. In a controversial bout for the heavyweight box-
under the sun, that the race is not to the swift, nor
ing title in 1965, Cassius Clay knocked out Sonny
the battle to the strong... ."

Liston in one minute.

E Q U I N O X 1 9 8 0 / 1 7 5 1

15 And Ernie Doty's drunk

In hell again.
And Jenny, oh my Jenny
Whom I love, rhyme be damned,
Has broken her spare beauty
20 In a whorehouse old.
She left her new baby
In a bus-station can,
And sprightly danced away
Through Jacksontown.³
25 Which is a place I know,
One where I got picked up
A few shrunk years ago
By a good cop.
Believe it, Lord, or not.
30 Don't ask me who he was.
I speak of flat defeat
In a flat voice.
I have gone forward with
Some, few lonely some.
35 They have fallen to death.
I die with them.
Lord, I have loved Thy cursed,
The beauty of Thy house:
Come down. Come down. Why dost
40 Thou hide thy face?⁴

1 9 6 8

P E T E R D A V I S O N

b. 1928

Equinox 1980

In the stillness after dawn we two
paddled a noiseless boat
before wakefall across
a bay smooth as a mirror,
5 changeless as its glass.

Not a whisper of passage.

Hardly a single stir

inside the horizon

except for the rippling

io wrinkles pushed by our prow

3. Town in central Ohio.

4. As in Job 13.24: "Wherefore hidest thou thy face, and
holdest me for thine enemy?"

1 7 5 2 / P E T E R D A V I S O N

**and the faraway s w o o p and flurry
of a squadron of terns.**

T h e tide at its landward e d g e

ignited a s m u d g e of c o m m o t i o n ,

15 skittering sandpipers

along t h e farther shore.

In all the days of our marriage

w e had never s e e n

so u n r u f f l e d a morning:

20 never h a d any event

s h i m m e r e d w i t h so costly a light

a s w e a s c e n d e d t h e m e a n d e r i n g

creek in our s w e e t boat,

surprising n o o n e except
25 a bright-eyed otter.
P u s h e d b y m e r e hints
f r o m our paddles,
we rode up the t h i c k e n i n g tide
a m o n g heavy w a n d s
30 of ripe m a r s h grass
that w a g g e d s e e d - b u n d l e s
h i g h above our heads.
N e i t h e r o n e speaking,
we rose to go ashore
35 and l u g g e d away
our featherweight kayak
to w i n t e r quarters,
k n o w i n g as we s t o w e d it
that this w o u l d be t h e last time,
40 that we w o u l d never set out to sea
t o g e t h e r again.

1 9 8 9

Peaches

A m o u t h f u l of l a n g u a g e to swallow:
stretches o f b e a c h , s w e e t c l i n c h e s ,
b r e a c h e s in walls, p l e a c h e d 0 branches;
b r i t c h e s h a u l e d o v e r h a u n c h e s ;
5 h u n c h e d l e e c h e s , w r e n c h e d teachers.
W h a t E n g l i s h c a n d o: ransack
the w a r m t h that c h u c k l e s b e n e a t h
fuzzed surfaces, s m o o t h velvet

richness, plashy0 juices,

splashy

io I b e s e e c h you, p e a c h ,

c l e n c h m e into t h e s w e e t n e s s

of your r e a c h e s .

1 9 8 9

1 7 5 3

D O N A L D H A L L

b. 1928

Exile1

A boy who played and talked and read with me

Fell from a maple tree.

I loved her, but I told her I did not,

And wept, and then forgot.

5 I walked the streets where I was born and grew,

And all the streets were new.

1 9 5 1 - 5 5 1 9 6 9

*From The One Day*2

Prophecy

I will strike down wooden houses; I will burn aluminum

clapboard skin; I will strike down garages

where crimson Toyotas sleep side by side; I will explode

palaces of gold, silver, and alabaster: — the summer

5 great house and its folly together. Where shopping malls

spread plywood and plaster out, and roadhouses

serve steak and potatoskins beside Alaska king crab;

where triangular flags proclaim tribes of identical campers;

where airplanes nose to tail exhale kerosene,

io weeds and ashes will drowse in continual twilight.
I reject the old house and the new car; I reject
Tory and Whig³ together; I reject the argument
that modesty of ambition is sensible because the bigger
they are the harder they fall; I reject Waterford;⁴
15 I reject the five and dime; I reject Romulus and Remus;⁵
I reject Martha's Vineyard and the slamdunk contest;
I reject leaded panes; I reject the appointment made

1. Many versions of this poem exist; cf. a much
sions" [Hall's note]. The tone of "Prophecy"
longer one, written earlier but published later (in
suggests particularly an indebtedness to Heraclitus
Hall's 1990 *Old and New Poems*).

(ca. 540-ca. 480 **B.C.E.**), the Greek philosopher
2. A three-part, book-length poem written over
who argued that the essential stuff of the universe
several decades. "Prophecy" is the first of the "Four
is pure fire, and to the first part of the book of
Classic Texts" within the poem's central section,
Isaiah, who in a vision saw the vain and the wicked
which is introduced with two epigraphs: "Of the
destroyed by fire. Nadezhda Mandelstam (1899-
opposites that which tends to birth or creation is
1980), memoirist, was married to the Russian poet
called war or strife. That which tends to destruc-
Osip Mandelstam (1891-1938).

tion by fire is called concord or peace" (Heraclitus)
3. Historically, opposing parties in British politics.

and “Poetry is preparation for death” (Nadezhda

4. Brand of crystal made in Waterford, Ireland.

Mandelstam). The two principal voices of the

5. In Roman mythology, twin sons of the god Mars

poem, a female sculptor and the author, are set

and the mortal Rhea Silvia; descendants of the

aside here for a “general consciousness that nar-

hero Aeneas; founders of the city of Rome.

rates... . There are many borrowings and allu-

1 7 5 4 / D O N A L D H A L L

at the tennis net or on the seventeenth green; I reject

the Professional Bowlers Tour; I reject matchboxes;

20 I reject purple bathrooms with purple soap in them.

Men who lie awake worrying about taxes, vomiting

at dawn, whose hands shake as they administer Valium, —

skin will peel from the meat of their thighs.

Armies that march all day with elephants past pyramids

25 and roll pulling missiles past generals weary of saluting

and past president-emperors splendid in cloth-of-gold, —

soft rumps of armies will dissipate in rain. Where square

miles of corn waver in Minnesota, where tobacco ripens

in Carolina and apples in New Hampshire, where wheat

30 turns Kansas green, where pulpmills stink in Oregon, —

dust will blow in the darkness and cactus die

before it flowers. Where skiers wait for chairlifts,

wearing money, low raspberries will part rib bones.

Where the drive-in church raises a chromium cross,

35 dandelions and milkweed will straggle through blacktop.

I will strike from the ocean with waves afire;
I will strike from the hill with rainclouds of lava;
I will strike from darkened air
with melanoma in the shape of decorative hexagonals.
40 I will strike down embezzlers and eaters of snails.
I reject Japanese smoked oysters, potted chrysanthemums
allowed to die, Tupperware parties, Ronald McDonald,
Kaposi's sarcoma, the Taj Mahal, Holsteins wearing
electronic necklaces, the Algonquin, Tunisian aqueducts,
45 Phi Beta Kappa keys, the Hyatt Embarcadero, carpenters
jogging on the median, and betrayal that engorges
the corrupt heart longing for criminal surrender.
I reject shadows in the corner of the atrium
where Phyllis or Phoebe speaks with Billy or Marc
50 who says that afternoons are best although not reliable.
Your children will wander looting the shopping malls
for forty years, suffering for your idleness,
until the last dwarf body rots in a parking lot.
I will strike down lobbies and restaurants in motels
55 carpeted with shaggy petrochemicals
from Maine to Hilton Head, from the Skagit6 to Tucson.
I will strike down hang gliders, wiry adventurous boys;
6. A bay and county in Washington State. *Hilton Head*: resort
in South Carolina.

THE ONE DAY / 1755

their thigh bones will snap, their brains
slide from their skulls. I will strike down
60 families cooking wildboar in New Mexico backyards.

Then landscape will clutter with incapable machinery,
acres of vacant airplanes and schoolbuses, ploughs
with seedlings sprouting and turning brown through colters.⁷

Unlettered dwarves will burrow for warmth and shelter
65 in the caves of dynamos and Plymouths, dying
of old age at seventeen. Tribes wandering
in the wilderness of their ignorant desolation,
who suffer from your idleness, will burn your illuminated
missals to warm their rickety bodies.

70 Terrorists assemble plutonium because you are idle
and industrious. The whip-poor-will shrivels
and the pickerel chokes under the government of self-love.

Vacancy burns air so that you strangle without oxygen
like rats in a biologist's bell jar. The living god sharpens
75 the scythe of my prophecy to strike down red poppies
and blue cornflowers. When priests and policemen
strike my body's match, Jehovah will flame out;
Jehovah will suck air from the vents of bombshelters.

Therefore let the Buick swell until it explodes;
so therefore let anorexia starve and bulimia engorge.
When Elzira leaves the house wearing her tennis dress
and drives her black Porsche to meet Abraham,
quarrels, returns to husband and children, and sobs
asleep, drunk, unable to choose among them, —
85 lawns and carpets will turn into tar together
with lovers, husbands, and children.

Fat will boil in the sacs of children's clear skin.

I will strike down the nations astronauts and judges;

I will strike down Babylon,⁸ I will strike acrobats,
90 I will strike algae and the white birches.
Because professors of law teach ethics in dumbshow,
let the colonel become president; because chief executive
officers and commissars collect down for pillows,
let the injustice of cities burn city and suburb;
95 let the countryside burn; let the pineforests of Maine
explode like a kitchenmatch and the Book of Kells⁹ turn
7. Cutting tools attached to plows. epitomizing sinfulness
(Revelation 18).

8. The city to which the Jews were carried in cap- 9. An
ornately illustrated manuscript of the Gos-tivity (2 Kings 24-
25); also, a great but fallen city, pels of the Christian
Scriptures, produced by Scot-1 7 5 6

/DONALD HALL

ash in a microsecond; let oxen and athletes
flash into grease:—I return to Appalachian rocks;
I shall eat bread; I shall prophesy through millennia
100 of Jehovah's day until the sky reddens over cities:
Then houses will burn, even houses of alabaster;
the sky will disappear like a scroll rolled up
and hidden in a cave from the industries of idleness.
Mountains will erupt and vanish, becoming deserts,
105 and the sea wash over the sea's lost islands
and the earth split open like a corpse's gassy
stomach and the sun turn as black as a widow's skirt
and the full moon grow red with blood swollen inside it
and stars fall from the sky like wind-blown apples, —
110 while Babylon's managers burn in the rage of the Lamb.¹

1988

Independence Day Letter

Five A.M., the Fourth of July.

I walk by Eagle Pond² with the dog,

wearing my leather coat

against the clear early chill,

5 looking at water lilies that clutch

cool yellow fists together,

as I undertake another day

twelve weeks after the Tuesday

we learned that you would die.

io This afternoon I'll pay bills

and write a friend about her book

and watch Red Sox baseball.

I'll walk Gussie again.

I'll microwave some Stouffer's.³

15 A woman will drive from Bristol

to examine your mother's Ford

parked beside your Saab

in the dead women's used car lot.

Tonight the Andover fireworks

20 will have to go on without me

as I go to bed early, reading

*The Man Without Qualities*⁴

with insufficient attention

tish and Irish monks and completed in Kells,

2. Pond near Hall's home in New Hampshire.

Ireland, in the ninth century.

Bristol and Andover are nearby towns.

1. The Lamb of God; i.e., Jesus. This stanza is a

3. Brand of frozen meals.

freely reconceived paraphrase of Revelation 6.12—

4. Unfinished, massive novel by the Austrian

16.

author Robert Musil (1880-1942).

A N C E S T O R / 1 7 5 7

because I keep watching you die.

25 Tomorrow I will wake at five

to the tenth Wednesday

after the Wednesday we buried you.

1 9 9 8

T H O M A S K I N S E L L A

b. 1928

Another September

Dreams fled away, this country bedroom, raw

With the touch of the dawn, wrapped in a minor peace,

Hears through an open window the garden draw

Long pitch black breaths, lay bare its apple trees,

5 Ripe pear trees, brambles, windfall-sweetened soil,

Exhale rough sweetness against the starry slates.

Nearer the river sleeps St. John's,¹ all toil

Locked fast inside a dream with iron gates.

Domestic Autumn, like an animal

io Long used to handling by those countrymen,

Rubs her kind hide against the bedroom wall

Sensing a fragrant child come back again

—Not this half-tolerated consciousness,
Its own cold season never done,
15 But that unspeaking daughter, growing less
Familiar where we fell asleep as one.
Wakeful moth-wings blunder near a chair,
Toss their light shell at the glass, and go
To inhabit the living starlight. Stranded hair
20 Stirs on the still linen. It is as though
The black breathing that billows her sleep, her name,
Drugged under judgment, waned and—bearing daggers
And balances—down the lampless darkness they came,
Moving like women: Justice, Truth, such figures.

1 9 5 8

Ancestor

I was going up to say something,
and stopped. Her profile against the curtains
was old, and dark like a hunting bird's.
1. Church dedicated to St. John the Evangelist.

1 7 5 8 / T H O M A S K I N S E L L A

It was the way she perched on the high stool,
5 staring into herself, with one fist
gripping the side of the barrier around her desk
—or her head held by something, from inside.
And not caring for anything around her
or anyone there by the shelves.
10 I caught a faint smell, musky and queer.
I may have made some sound—she stopped rocking
and pressed her fist in her lap; then she stood up

and shut down the lid of the desk, and turned the key.
She shoved a small bottle under her aprons
15 and came toward me, darkening the passageway.
Ancestor ... among sweet- and fruit-boxes.
Her black heart ...
Was that a sigh?
—brushing by me in the shadows,
20 with her heaped aprons, through the red hangings
to the scullery, and down to the back room.

1 9 7 3

Tear
I was sent in to see her.
A fringe of jet drops
chattered at my ear
as I went in through the hangings.
5 I was swallowed in chambery dusk.
My heart shrank
at the smell of disused
organs and sour kidney.
The black aprons I used to
to bury my face in
were folded at the foot of the bed
in the last watery light from the window
(Go in and say goodbye to her)
and I was carried off
15 to unfathomable depths.
I turned to look at her.
She stared at the ceiling

and puffed her cheek, distracted,
propped high in the bed
20 resting for the next attack.

T E A R / 1 7 5 9

The covers were gathered close
up to her mouth,
that the lines of ill-temper still
marked. Her grey hair
25 was loosened out like
a young woman's all over
the pillow, mixed with the shadows
criss-crossing her forehead
and at her mouth and eyes,
30 like a web of strands tying down her head
and tangling down toward the shadow
eating away the floor at my feet.
I couldn't stir at first, nor wished to,
for fear she might turn and tempt me
35 (my own father's mother)
with open mouth
—with some fierce wheedling whisper—
to hide myself one last time
against her, and bury my
40 self in her drying mud.
Was I to kiss her? As soon
kiss the damp that crept
in the flowered walls
of this pit.

45 Yet I had to kiss.

I knelt by the bulk of the death bed
and sank my face in the chill
and smell of her black aprons.

Snuff and musk, the folds against my eyelids,
50 carried me into a derelict place
smelling of ash: unseen walls and roofs
rustled like breathing.

I found myself disturbing
dead ashes for any trace
55 of warmth, when far off
in the vaults a single drop
splashed. And I found
what I was looking for
—not heat nor fire,
60 not any comfort,

1 7 6 0 / T H O M A S K I N S E L L A

but her voice, soft, talking to someone
about my father: “God help him, he cried
big tears over there by the machine
for the poor little thing.” Bright
65 drops on the wooden lid for
my infant sister. My own
wail of child-animal grief
was soon done, with any early guess
at sad dullness and tedious pain
70 and lives bitter with hard bondage.
How I tasted it now—

her heart beating in my mouth!
She drew an uncertain breath
and pushed at the clothes
75 and shuddered tiredly.
I broke free
and left the room
promising myself
when she was really dead
so I would really kiss.
My grandfather half looked up
from the fireplace as I came out,
and shrugged and turned back
with a deaf stare to the heat.
85 I fidgeted beside him for a minute
and went out to the shop.
It was still bright there
and I felt better able to breathe.
Old age can digest
90 anything: the commotion
at Heaven's gate—the struggle
in store for you all your life.
How long and hard it is
before you get to Heaven,
95 unless like little Agnes
you vanish with early tears.

1 9 7 3

1 7 6 1

P H I L I P L E V I N E

b. 1928

They Feed They Lion

Out of burlap sacks, out of bearing butter,
Out of black bean and wet slate bread,
Out of the acids of rage, the candor of tar,
Out of creosote, gasoline, drive shafts, wooden dollies,
5 They Lion grow.

Out of the gray hills
Of industrial barns, out of rain, out of bus ride,
West Virginia to Kiss My Ass, out of buried aunties,
Mothers hardening like pounded stumps, out of stumps,
10 Out of the bones' need to sharpen and the muscles' to stretch,

They Lion grow.

Earth is eating trees, fence posts,
Gutted cars, earth is calling in her little ones,
"Come home, Come home!" From pig balls,
15 From the ferocity of pig driven to holiness,
From the furred ear and the full jowl come
The repose of the hung belly, from the purpose
They Lion grow.

From the sweet glues of the trotters¹
20 Come the sweet kinks of the fist, from the full flower
Of the hams the thorax² of caves,
From "Bow Down" come "Rise Up,"
Come they Lion from the reeds of shovels,
The grained arm that pulls the hands,
25 They Lion grow.

From my five arms and all my hands,
From all my white sins forgiven, they feed,
From my car passing under the stars,
They Lion, from my children inherit,
30 From the oak turned to a wall, they Lion,
From they sack and they belly opened
And all that was hidden burning on the oil-stained earth
They feed they Lion and he comes.

1 9 7 2

You Can Have It

My brother comes home from work
and climbs the stairs to our room.

I can hear the bed groan and his shoes drop
one by one. You can have it, he says.

1. Cooked pigs' feet.
2. Chest cavity.

1 7 6 2 / P H I L I P L E V I N E

5 The moonlight streams in the window
and his unshaven face is whitened
like the face of the moon. He will sleep
long after noon and waken to find me gone.

Thirty years will pass before I remember
10 that moment when suddenly I knew each man
has one brother who dies when he sleeps
and sleeps when he rises to face this life,
and that together they are only one man
sharing a heart that always labors, hands
15 yellowed and cracked, a mouth that gasps

for breath and asks, Am I gonna make it?
All night at the ice plant he had fed
the chute its silvery blocks, and then I
stacked cases of orange soda for the children
20 of Kentucky, one gray boxcar at a time
with always two more waiting. We were twenty
for such a short time and always in
the wrong clothes, crusted with dirt
and sweat. I think now we were never twenty.
25 In 1948 in the city of Detroit, founded
by de la Mothe Cadillac for the distant purposes
of Henry Ford,³ no one wakened or died,
no one walked the streets or stoked a furnace,
for there was no such year, and now
30 that year has fallen off all the old newspapers,
calendars, doctors' appointments, bonds,
wedding certificates, drivers licenses.
The city slept. The snow turned to ice.
The ice to standing pools or rivers
35 racing in the gutters. Then bright grass rose
between the thousands of cracked squares,
and that grass died. I give you back 1948.
I give you all the years from then
to the coming one. Give me back the moon
40 with its frail light falling across a face.

3. American automobile manufacturer (1863— established a fur-trade post, later the city of 1947), associated with Detroit. Antoine Laumetde Detroit; Cadillac cars are named for him.

la Mothe Cadillac (1658-1730), born in France,

THE SIMPLE TRUTH / 1763

Give me back my young brother, hard
and furious, with wide shoulders and a curse
for God and burning eyes that look upon
all creation and say, You can have it.

1979

The Simple Truth

I bought a dollar and a half's worth of small red potatoes,
took them home, boiled them in their jackets
and ate them for dinner with a little butter and salt.

Then I walked through the dried fields

5 on the edge of town. In middle June the light

hung on in the dark furrows at my feet,

and in the mountain oaks overhead the birds

were gathering for the night, the jays and mockers

squawking back and forth, the finches still darting

io into the dusty light. The woman who sold me

the potatoes was from Poland; she was someone

out of my childhood in a pink spangled sweater and sunglasses

praising the perfection of all her fruits and vegetables

at the road-side stand and urging me to taste

15 even the pale, raw sweet corn trucked all the way,

she swore, from New Jersey. "Eat, eat," she said,

"Even if you don't I'll say you did."

Some things

you know all your life. They are so simple and true

20 they must be said without elegance, meter and rhyme,

they must be laid on the table beside the salt shaker,

the glass of water, the absence of light gathering
in the shadows of picture frames, they must be
naked and alone, they must stand for themselves.

25 My friend Henri and I arrived at this together in 1965
before I went away, before he began to kill himself,
and the two of us to betray our love. Can you taste
what I'm saying? It is onions or potatoes, a pinch
of simple salt, the wealth of melting butter, it is obvious,
30 it stays in the back of your throat like a truth
you never uttered because the time was always wrong,
it stays there for the rest of your life, unspoken,
made of that dirt we call earth, the metal we call salt,
in a form we have no words for, and you live on it.

1 9 9 4

1 7 6 4

A N N E S E X T O N

1928-1974

The Truth the Dead Know

F o r m y m o t h e r , b o r n M a r c h 1 9 0 2 , d i e d M a r c h
1 9 5 9 , a n d m y f a t h e r , b o r n F e b r u a r y 1 9 0 0 , d i e d J
u n e 1 9 5 9

Gone, I say and walk from church,
refusing the stiff procession to the grave,
letting the dead ride alone in the hearse.

It is June. I am tired of being brave.

5 We drive to the Cape. I cultivate
myself where the sun gutters from the sky,
where the sea swings in like an iron gate
and we touch. In another country people die.

My darling, the wind falls in like stones
io from the whitehearted water and when we touch
we enter touch entirely. No one's alone.
Men kill for this, or for as much.
And what of the dead? They lie without shoes
in their stone boats. They are more like stone
15 than the sea would be if it stopped. They refuse
to be blessed, throat, eye and knucklebone.

1 9 6 2

And One for My Dame¹

A born salesman,
my father made all his dough
by selling wool to Fieldcrest, Woolrich and Faribo.
A born talker,
5 he could sell one hundred wet-down bales
of that white stuff. He could clock the miles and sales
and make it pay.
At home each sentence he would utter
had first pleased the buyer who'd paid him off in butter.
io Each word
had been tried over and over, at any rate,
on the man who was sold by the man who filled my plate.

1. Allusion to the nursery rhyme "Baa Baa Black Sheep,"
which ends "One for the master / And one for the dame, / And
one for the little boy / Who lives down the lane."

A N D O N E F O R M Y D A M E / 1 7 6 5

My father hovered
over the Yorkshire pudding and the beef:
15 a peddler, a hawker, a merchant and an Indian chief.

Roosevelt! Willkie! and war!²
How suddenly gauche I was
with my old-maid heart and my funny teenage applause.
Each night at home
20 my father was in love with maps
while the radio fought its battles with Nazis and Japs.
Except when he hid
in his bedroom on a three-day drunk,
he typed out complex itineraries, packed his trunk,
25 his matched luggage
and pocketed a confirmed reservation,
his heart already pushing over the red routes of the nation.
I sit at my desk
each night with no place to go,
30 opening the wrinkled maps of Milwaukee and Buffalo,
the whole U.S.,
its cemeteries, its arbitrary time zones,
through routes like small veins, capitals like small stones.
He died on the road,
35 his heart pushed from neck to back,
his white hanky signaling from the window of the Cadillac.
My husband,
as blue-eyed as a picture book, sells wool:
boxes of card waste, laps and rovings he can pull
40 to the thread
and say *Leicester, Rambouillet, Merino*,³
a half-blood, it's greasy and thick, yellow as old snow.
And when you drive off, my darling,

Yes, sir! Yes, sir! It's one for my dame,
45 your sample cases branded with my father's name,
your itinerary open,
its tolls ticking and greedy,
its highways built up like new loves, raw and speedy.

1 9 6 6

2. Franklin Delano Roosevelt (1882-1945), U.S. Wendell
Lewis Willkie (1892-1944).

president during World War II, was opposed by 3. Types of
wool.

1 7 6 6

L. E. S I S S M A N

1928-1976

*From Dying: An Introduction*¹

IV. Path. Report

Bruisingly cradled in a Harvard chair
Whose orange arms cramp my pink ones, and whose black
Back stamps my back with splat marks, I receive
The brunt of the pathology report,
5 Bitingly couched in critical terms of my
Tissue of fabrications, which is bad.
That Tyrian⁰ specimen on the limelit stage *purplish*
Surveyed by Dr. Cyclops,² magnified
Countless diameters on its thick slide,
io Turns out to end in -oma.³ “But be glad
These things are treatable today,” I'm told.
“Why, fifteen years ago—” a dark and grave-
Shaped pause. “But now, a course of radiation, and—”
Sun rays break through. “And if you want X-ray,

15 You've come to the right place." A history,
A half-life of the hospital. Marie
Curie must have endowed it. Cyclotrons,⁴
Like missile silos, lurk within its walls.
It's reassuring, anyway. But bland
20 And middle-class as these environs are,
And sanguine as his measured words may be,
And soft his handshake, the webbed, inky hand
Locked on the sill, and the unshaven face
Biding outside the window still appall
25 Me as I leave the assignation place.

V. Outbound

Outside, although November by the clock,
Has a thick smell of spring,
And everything—
The low clouds lit
5 Fluorescent green by city lights;
The molten, hissing stream
Of white car lights, cooling
To red and vanishing;
The leaves,
io Still running from last summer, chattering
Across the pocked concrete;
The wind in trees;
The ones and twos,
1. A long poem in five parts.
4. Accelerators in which particles are propelled in
2. Title character of a 1940 science fiction/horror

spiral paths. *Half-life*: time required for half the
movie, a “mad scientist” who shrinks people;
atoms of a radioactive substance to disintegrate.
named for the one-eyed giants of Greek myth.
Marie Curie (1867-1934), Polish physicist in
3. I.e., a cancer.

France, codiscoverer of radium.

A D E A T H P L A C E / 1 7 6 7

The twos and threes
15 Of college girls,
Each shining in the dark,
Each carrying
A book or books,
Each laughing to her friend
20 At such a night in fall;
The two-and-twos
Of boys and girls who lean
Together in an A and softly walk
Slowly from lamp to lamp,
25 Alternatively lit
And nighted; Autumn Street,
Astonishingly named, a rivulet
Of asphalt twisting up and back
To some spring out of sight—and everything
30 Recalls one fall
Twenty-one years ago, when I,
A freshman, opening
A green door just across the river,

Found the source
35 Of spring in that warm night,
Surprised the force
That sent me on my way
And set me down
Today. Tonight. Through my
40 Invisible new veil
Of finity, I see
November's world—
Low scud, slick street, three giggling girls—
As, oddly, not as sombre
45 As December,
But as green
As anything:
As spring.
1968
A Deathplace
Very few people know where they will die,
But I do: in a brick-faced hospital,
Divided, not unlike Caesarean Gaul,^s
Into three parts: the Dean Memorial
5 Wing, in the classic cast of 1910,
Green-grated in unglazed, Aeolian
Embrasures:⁶ the Maud Wiggin Building, which
Commemorates a dog-jawed Boston bitch
Who fought the brass⁷ down to their whipcord knees
5. Roman emperor Julius Caesar (100—44 **B.C.E.**) an Aeolian
harp.

conquered Gaul and divided it into three parts. 7. High-ranking military officers.

6. Recesses of doors or windows in the shape of

1 7 6 8 / T H O M G U N N

In World War I, and won enlisted men
Some decent hospitals, and, being rich,
Donated her own granite monument;
The Mandeville Pavilion, pink-brick tent
With marble piping, flying snapping flags
Above the entry where our bloody rags
Are rolled in to be sponged and sewn again.
Today is fair; tomorrow, scourging rain
(If only my own tears) will see me in
Those jaundiced and distempered corridors
Off which the five-foot-wide doors slowly close.
White as my skimpy chiton,⁰ I will cringe *gown*
Before the pinpoint of the least syringe;
Before the buttered catheter goes in;
Before the I.V.'s lisp and drip begins
Inside my skin; before the rubber hand
Upon the lancet takes aim and descends
To lay me open, and upon its thumb
Retracts the trouble, a malignant plum;
And finally, I'll quail before the hour
When the authorities shut off the power
In that vast hospital, and in my bed
I'll feel my blood go thin, go white, the red,
The rose all leached away, and I'll go dead.

Then will the business of life resume:
The muffled trolley wheeled into my room,
The off-white blanket blanking off my face,
The stealing, secret, private, *largo* race *slow*
Down halls and elevators to the place
I'll be consigned to for transshipment, cased
In artificial air and light: the ward
That's underground; the terminal; the morgue.
Then one fine day when all the smart flags flap,
A booted man in black with a peaked cap
Will call for me and troll me down the hall
And slot me into his black car. That's all.

1 9 6 9

T H O M G U N N

1929-2004

On the Move

“Man, you gotta Go.”

The blue jay scuffling in the bushes follows
Some hidden purpose, and the gust of birds
That spurts across the field, the wheeling swallows,

A M A P O F T H E C I T Y / 1 7 6 9

Have nested in the trees and undergrowth.
5 Seeking their instinct, or their poise, or both,
One moves with an uncertain violence
Under the dust thrown by a baffled sense
Or the dull thunder of approximate words.
On motorcycles, up the road, they come:
10 Small, black, as flies hanging in heat, the Boys,

Until the distance throws them forth, their hum
Bulges to thunder held by calf and thigh.
In goggles, donned impersonality,
In gleaming jackets trophied with the dust,
15 They strap in doubt—by hiding it, robust—
And almost hear a meaning in their noise.
Exact conclusion of their hardiness
Has no shape yet, but from known whereabouts
They ride, direction where the tyres press.
20 They scare a flight of birds across the field:
Much that is natural, to the will must yield.
Men manufacture both machine and soul,
And use what they imperfectly control
To dare a future from the taken routes.
25 It is a part solution, after all.
One is not necessarily discord
On earth; or damned because, half animal,
One lacks direct instinct, because one wakes
Afloat on movement that divides and breaks.
BO One joins the movement in a valueless world,
Choosing it, till, both hurler and the hurled,
One moves as well, always toward, toward.
A minute holds them, who have come to go:
The self-defined, astride the created will
35 They burst away; the towns they travel through
Are home for neither bird nor holiness,
For birds and saints complete their purposes.
At worst, one is in motion; and at best,

Reaching no absolute, in which to rest,
40 One is always nearer by not keeping still.

California 1957

A Map of the City

I stand upon a hill and see
A luminous country under me,
Through which at two the drunk must weave;
The transient's pause, the sailor's leave.

1 7 7 0 / T H O M G U N N

5 I notice, looking down the hill,
Arms braced upon a window sill;
And on the web of fire escapes
Move the potential, the grey shapes.
I hold the city here, complete:
10 And every shape defined by light
Is mine, or corresponds to mine,
Some flickering or some steady shine.
This map is ground of my delight.
Between the limits, night by night,
15 I watch a malady's advance,
I recognize my love of chance.
By the recurrent lights I see
Endless potentiality,
The crowded, broken, and unfinished!
20 I would not have the risk diminished.

1 9 6 1

Black Jackets

In the silence that prolongs the span

Rawly of music when the record ends,
The red-haired boy who drove a van
In weekday overalls but, like his friends,
5 Wore cycle boots and jacket here
To suit the Sunday hangout he was in,
Heard, as he stretched back from his beer,
Leather creak softly round his neck and chin.
Before him, on a coal-black sleeve
io Remote exertion had lined, scratched, and burned
Insignia that could not revive
The heroic fall or climb where they were earned.
On the other drinkers bent together,
Concocting selves for their impervious kit,
15 He saw it as no more than leather
Which, taut across the shoulders grown to it,
Sent through the dimness of a bar
As sudden and anonymous hints of light
As those that shipping give, that are
20 Now flickers in the Bay,¹ now lost in night.
1. San Francisco Bay.

FROM THE WAVE / 1771

He stretched out like a cat, and rolled
The bitterish taste of beer upon his tongue,
And listened to a joke being told:
The present was the things he stayed among.
25 If it was only loss he wore,
He wore it to assert, with fierce devotion,
Complicity and nothing more.

He recollected his initiation,
And one especially of the rites.
BO For on his shoulders they had put tattoos:
The group's name on the left, The Knights,
And on the right the slogan Born To Lose.

1 9 6 1

My Sad Captains

One by one they appear in
the darkness: a few friends, and
a few with historical
names. How late they start to shine!
5 but before they fade they stand
perfectly embodied, all
the past lapping them like a
cloak of chaos. They were men
who, I thought, lived only to
io renew the wasteful force they
spent with each hot convulsion.
They remind me, distant now.
True, they are not at rest yet,
but now that they are indeed
15 apart, winnowed0 from failures, *separated*
they withdraw to an orbit
and turn with disinterested
hard energy, like the stars.

1 9 6 1

From the Wave

It mounts at sea, a concave wall

Down-ribbed with shine,
And pushes forward, building tall
Its steep incline.

1 7 7 2 / T H O M G U N N

5 Then from their hiding rise to sight
Black shapes on boards
Bearing before the fringe of white
It mottles towards.
Their pale feet curl, they poise their weight
10 With a learn'd skill.

It is the wave they imitate
Keeps them so still.

The marbling bodies have become
Half wave, half men,
15 Grafted it seems by feet of foam
Some seconds, then,
Late as they can, they slice the face
In timed procession:

Balance is triumph in this place,
20 Triumph possession.

The mindless heave of which they rode
A fluid shelf
Breaks as they leave it, falls and, slowed,
Loses itself.

25 Clear, the sheathed bodies slick as seals
Loosen and tingle;
And by the board the bare foot feels
The suck of shingle.²

They paddle in the shallows still;
30 Two splash each other;
Then all swim out to wait until
The right waves gather.

1 9 7 1

“All Do Not All Things Well”³

Implies that some therefore
Do well, for its own sake,
One thing they undertake,
Because it has enthralled them.

5 I used to like the two

Auto freaks as I called them

Who laboured in their driveway,

2. Coarse, rounded pebbles and stones at the sea- 3. Thomas
Campion, “Now Winter Nights shore. Enlarge,” line 17 (see p.
281).

” ALL D O N O T A L L T H I N G S W E L L ” / 1 7 7 3

Its concrete black with oil,

In the next block that year.

10 One, hurt in jungle war,

Had a false leg, the other

Raised a huge beard above

A huge Hell’s Angel belly.

They seemed to live on beer

15 And corn chips from the deli.

Always with friends, they sprawled

Beneath a ruined car

In that inert but live way

Of scrutinizing innards.

20 And one week they extracted
An engine to examine,
Transplant shining like tar
Fished out into the sun.
“It’s all that I enjoy,”
25 Said the stiff-legged boy.
That was when the officious
Realtor had threatened them
For brashly operating
A business on the street
30 —An outsider, that woman
Who wanted them evicted,
Wanted the neighbourhood neat
To sell it. That was when
The boy from Vietnam told me
35 That he’d firebomb her car.
He didn’t of course, she won.
I am sorry that they went.
Quick with a friendly greeting,
They were gentle joky men
40 —Certainly not ambitious,
Perhaps not intelligent
Unless about a car,
Their work one thing they knew
They could for certain do
45 With a disinterest
And passionate expertise
To which they gave their best

Desires and energies.

Such oily-handed zest

50 By-passed the self like love.

I thought that they were good
For any neighbourhood.

1 9 9 9

1 7 7 4 / T H O M G U N N

The Missing

Now as I watch the progress of the plague,⁴
The friends surrounding me fall sick, grow thin,
And drop away. Bared, is my shape less vague
—Sharply exposed and with a sculpted skin?

⁵ I do not like the statue's chill contour,
Not nowadays. The warmth investing me
Let outward through mind, limb, feeling, and more
In an involved increasing family.

Contact of friend led to another friend,
¹⁰ Supple entwinement through the living mass
Which for all that I knew might have no end,
Image of an unlimited embrace.

I did not just feel ease, though comfortable:
Aggressive as in some ideal of sport,
¹⁵ With ceaseless movement thrilling through the whole,
Their push kept me as firm as their support.

But death—Their deaths have left me less defined:
It was their pulsing presence made me clear.

I borrowed from it, I was unconfined,
²⁰ Who tonight balance unsupported here,
Eyes glaring from raw marble, in a pose
Languorously part-buried in the block,
Shins perfect and no calves, as if I froze

Between potential and a finished work.
25 —Abandoned incomplete, shape of a shape,
In which exact detail shows the more strange,
Trapped in unwholeness, I find no escape
Back to the play of constant give and change.

1 9 8 7 1 9 9 2

4. AIDS.

1 7 7 5

J O H N H O L L A N D E R

b. 1929

Swan and Shadow

Dusk

Above the

water hang the

loud

flies

Here

O so

gray

then

What A pale signal will appear

When Soon before its shadow fades

Where Here in this pool of opened eye

In us No Upon us As at the very edges

of where we take shape in the dark air

this object bares its image awakening

ripples of recognition that will

brush darkness up into light

even after this bird this hour both drift by atop the perfect sad
instant now already passing out of sight
toward yet-untroubled reflection
this image bears its object darkening
into memorial shades Scattered bits of
light No of water Or something across
water Breaking up No Being regathered
soon Yet by then a swan will have
gone Yes out of mind into what
vast
pale
hush
of a
place
past
sudden dark as
if a swan
sang

1 9 6 9

1 7 7 6 / J O H N H O L L A N D E R

Adam's Task

” And Adam gave names to all cattle, and to the
fowl of the air, and to every beast of the field ...”

—*Gen. 2 : 2 0*

Thou, paw-paw-paw; thou, glurd; thou, spotted
Glurd; thou, whitestap, lurching through
The high-grown brush; thou, pliant-footed,
Implex; thou, awagabu.
5 Every burrower, each flier

Came for the name he had to give:
Gay, first work, ever to be prior,
Not yet sunk to primitive.
Thou, verdle; thou, McFleery's pomma;
io Thou; thou; thou—three types of grawl;
Thou, flisket; thou, kabasch; thou, comma-
Eared mashawk; thou, all; thou, all.
Were, in a fire of becoming,
Laboring to be burned away,
15 Then work, half-measuring, half-humming,
Would be as serious as play.
Thou, pambler; thou, rivarn; thou, greater
Wherret, and thou, lesser one;
Thou, sproal; thou, zant; thou, lily-eater.
20 Naming's over. Day is done.

1 9 7 1

An Old-Fashioned Song

(Nous n'irons plus au bois) I

No more walks in the wood:
The trees have all been cut
Down, and where once they stood
Not even a wagon rut
5 Appears along the path
Low brush is taking over.
No more walks in the wood;
This is the aftermath
Of afternoons in the clover
io Fields where we once made love

1 . ” *‘Nous n’irons plus au bois / Les lauriers sont coupes’*
(We’ll go no more to the woods / The laurels have been cut
down)—from a French children’s round dance” [Hollander’s
note].

**V A R I A T I O N S O N A F R A G M E N T B Y T R U M
B U L L S T I C K N E Y / 1 7 7 7**

Then wandered home together
Where the trees arched above,
Where we made our own weather
When branches were the sky.
15 Now they are gone for good,
And you, for ill, and I
Am only a passer-by.

We and the trees and the way
Back from the fields of play
20 Lasted as long as we could.
No more walks in the wood.

1 9 9 3

Variations on a Fragment by Trumbull Stickney²

*I hear a river thro’ the valley wander
Whose water runs, the song alone remaining.
A rainbow stands and summer passes under,
Flowing like silence in the light of wonder.
5 In the near distances it is still raining
Where now the valley fills again with thunder,
Where now the river in her wide meander,
Losing at each loop what she had been gaining,
Moves into what one might as well call yonder.
io The way of the dark water is to ponder*

The way the light sings as of something waning.
The far-off waterfall can sound asunder
Stillness of distances, as if in blunder,
Tumbling over the rim of all explaining.
15 Water proves nothing, but can only maunder.³
Shadows show nothing, but can only launder
The lovely land that sunset had been staining,
Long fields of which the falling light grows fonder.
Here summer stands while all its songs pass under,
20 A riverbank still time runs by, remaining.
I will remember rainbows as I wander.

1 9 9 3

2. Cf. Stickney's "Fragments," IX (p. 1252). The 3. Move aimlessly; also, mutter, three-line poem provides Hollander's first stanza.

1 7 7 8

R I C H A R D H O W A R D

b. 1929

Nikolaus Mardruz to his Master Ferdinand,
Count of Tyrol, 15651

*A tribute to Robert Browning and in celebration of the 65th
birthday of*

Harold Bloom,² who made such tribute only natural.

My Lord recalls Ferrara?³ H o w walls

rise out of water yet appear to recede

identically

into it, as if

5 built in both directions: soaring and sinking ...

S u c h mirroring was my first dismay—

my next, having crossed
the moat, was making
out that, for all its grandeur, the great
pile, observed close to, is close to a ruin!
(Even My Lord's most
unstinting dowry
may not restore these wasted precincts to what
their deteriorating state demands.)

15 Queasy it made me,
glancing first down there
at swans in the moat apparently
feeding on their own doubled image, then up
at the citadel,
20 so high—or so deep,
and *everywhere* those carved effigies of
m e n and w o m e n , monsters among them
crowding the ramparts
and seeming at h o m e
25 in the dingy water that s o m e h o w
held them up as if for our surveillance—ours?
anyone's w h o looked!
All that pretension
of marble display, the whole improbable
30 menagerie with but o n e purpose:
having to be seen.
Such was the matter
of Ferrara, and such the manner,
w h e n at last we met, of the Duke in greeting

35 My Lordship's Envoy:

life in fallen stone!

1. This poem is in the voice of the envoy of the Count's niece closes the poem and provides Count of Tyrol, upon returning home to Austria the occasion for Howard's poem. Cf. footnote 4 to from the visit to the Duke of Ferrara portrayed in "My Last Duchess" (p. 1012) for Rrowning's "My Last Duchess," by the English poet Robert blending of fact and fiction.

Rrowning (1812-1899). Rrowning's poem implies

2. American literary critic (b. 1930).

that the Duke ordered his first wife's death; the

3. City in northern Italy.

possibility of marriage between himself and the

NIKOLAUS MARDRUZ TO HIS MASTER FERDINAND / 1779

Several hours were to elapse, in the keeping
of his lackeys, before the Envoy

of My Lord the Count

40 of Tyrol might see

or even be seen to by His Grace

the Duke of Ferrara, though from such neglect
no *deliberate*

slight need be inferred:

45 now that I have had an opportunity

—have had, indeed, the obligation—

to fix on His Grace

that per lustration 0 *thorough inspection*

or power of scrutiny for which
so (I believe) My Lord holds his Envoy's service
in some favor still,
I see that the Duke,
by his own lights or, perhaps, more properly
said, by his own *tenebrosity, 0 obscurity*
55 could offer some excuse
for such cunctation 0 ... *tardiness*
Appraising a set of cameos
just brought from Cairo by a Jew in his trust,
His Grace had been rapt
60 in connoisseurship,
that study which alone can distract him
from his wonted courtesy; he was
affability
itself, once his mind
65 could be deflected from mere *objects*.
At last I presented (with those documents
which in some detail
describe and define
the duties of both signators) the portrait 70
of your daughter the Countess,
observing the while
his countenance. No
fault was found with our contract, of which
a charter had been so correctly framed
75 (if I may say so)
as to ascertain

a pre-nuptial alliance which must persuade
and please the most punctilious (and
impecunious)
so of future husbands.

Principally, or (if I may be
allowed the amendment) perhaps Ducally,
His Grace acknowledged
himself *beguiled* by

85 Cranach's 4 portrait of four young Countesses,
praising the design, the hues, the glaze—the
he frame!

4. Lucas Cranach the Younger (1515—1586), German painter
and graphic artist.

1780 / RICHARD HOWARD

and appeared averse,
for a while, even
to letting the panel leave his hands!
90 Examining those same hands, I was convinced
that no matter what
the result of our
(at this point, promising) negotiations,
your daughter's likeness must now remain
95 “for good,” as we say,
among Ferrara's
treasures, already one more trophy
in His Grace's multifarious *holdings*,
like those marble busts
IOO lining the drawbridge,
like those weed-stained statues grinning up at us

from the still moat, and—inside as well
as out—those grotesque
figures and faces
105 fastened to the walls. So be it!
Real
bother (after all, one painting, for Cranach
—*and* My Lord—need be
no great forfeiture)
110 commenced only when the Duke himself led me
out of the audience-chamber and
laboriously
(he is no longer
a young man) to a secret penthouse
115 high on the battlements where he can indulge
those despotic tastes
he denominates,
half smiling over the heartless words,
“the relative consolations of semblance.”
120 “Sir, suppose you draw
that curtain,” smiling
in earnest now, and so I sought—
but what appeared a piece of drapery proved
a painted deceit!
125 My embarrassment
afforded a cue for audible laughter,
and only then His Grace, visibly
relishing his trick,
turned the thing around,

130 whereupon appeared, on the reverse,
the late Duchess of Ferrara to the life!

Instantly the Duke
praised the portrait
so readily provided by one Pandolf⁵—

135 a monk by some profane article
attached to the court,

5. Fra (i.e., Brother) Pandolph, an artist invented by Browning.

NIKOLAUS MARDRUZ TO HIS MASTER FERDINAND / 1781

h e n c e answerable

for taking l i k e n e s s e s *as required*

in but a day's diligence, so it was c l a i m e d ...

140 Myself I find it

but a m o u n t e b a n k ' s ⁰ *charlatan's*

p r o f i c i e n c y — a n o t h e r c h i c a n e , like that

illusive curtain, a waxwork sort

of nature called forth:

145 cold legerdemain!⁰ *sleight of hand.*

T h o u g h *extranea* s u c h as t h e hares

(copulating!), t h e doves, and a full-blown rose

w e r e showily l i m n e d ,

I c o u l d n o t discern

i s o ought to be loved in t h a t c o u n t e n a n c e itself,

likely to rival, m u c h less to excel

t h e life i l l u m i n e d

in Cranach's i m a g e

of *our* C o u n t e s s , w h i c h H i s G r a c e had set 155

beside the dead w o m a n ' s p r e s e n t m e n t ... A n d

took, so evident was
the supremacy,
no further pains to assert Fra Pandolf's skill.
One last hard look, where upon the Duke
i60 resumed his discourse
in an altered tone,
now some unintelligible rant
of *stooping*—His Grace chooses “never to stoop”
when he makes reproof ...

165 My Lord will take this
as but a figure: not only is the Duke
no longer young, his body is so
queerly misshapen
that even to *speak*

170 of “not stooping” seems absurdity:
the creature *is* stooped, whether by cruel or
impartial cause — say

Time or the Tempter 0 — *Devil*

I shall not venture to hypothesize. Cause

175 or no cause, it would appear he marked
some motive for his

“reproof,” a mortal

chastisement in fact inflicted on

his poor Duchess, *put away* (I take it so)

is for smiling — at whom?

Brother Pandolf? or

some visitor to court during the sitting?

— too generally, if I construe

the Duke 's clue rightly,
185 to survive the terms
of his ... severe protocol. My Lord,
at the time it was delivered to me thus,
theadmonition

1782 / RICHARD HOWARD

if indeed it was

190 any such thing, seemed no more of a menace
than the rest of his rodomontade;⁰ *boasting*

item, he pointed,

as we toiled downstairs,

to that bronze *Neptune* by our old Claus

195 (there must be at least six of them cluttering

the Summer Palace

at Innsbruck), claiming

it was "cast in bronze for me."⁶ Nonsense, of course.

But upon reflection, I suppose

200 we had better take

the old reprobate

at his unspeakable word ... Why, even

assuming his boasts should be as plausible

as his avarice,

205 no "cause" for dismay:

once ensconced here as the Duchess, your daughter

need no more apprehend the Duke's

murderous temper

than his matchless taste.

210 For I have devised a means whereby

the dowry so flagrantly pursued by our
insolvent Duke (“no
just pretense of mine
be disallowed”⁷ indeed!), instead of being
215 paid as he pleads in one globose⁰ sum, *globe-shaped*
should drip into his
coffers by degrees—
say, one fifth each year—then after five
such years, the dowry itself to be doubled,
220 always assuming
that Her Grace enjoys
her usual smiling health. The years are her
ally in such an arbitrament,
and with confidence
225 My Lord can assure
the new Duchess (assuming her Duke
abides by these stipulations and his own
propensity for
accumulating
230 “semblances”) the long devotion (so long as
he lasts) of her last Duke ... Or more likely,
if I guess aright
your daughter’s intent,
of that young lordling I might make so
235 bold as to designate her next Duke, as well ...

6. Cf. “My Last Duchess,” lines 54-56. Claus of 7. Cf. “My
Last Duchess,” lines 50-51.

Innsbruck is also fictional.

**LIKE DOLMENS ROUND MY CHILDHOOD,
THE OLD PEOPLE / 1783**

Ever determined in
My Lordship's service,
I remain his Envoy
to Ferrara as to the world.
Nikolaus Mardruz.

1995

JOHN MONTAGUE

b. 1929

Like Dolmens¹ Round My Childhood, the Old People
Like dolmens round my childhood, the old
people.

Jamie Mac Crystals ang to himself,
A broken song without tune, without words;
He tipped me a penny every pension day.

5 Fed kindly crusts to winter birds.

When he died, his cottage was robbed,
Mattress and money box torn and searched.
Only the corpse they didn't disturb.

Maggie Owens was surrounded by animals,
io Amongrel bitch and shivering pups,
Even in her bedroom a she-goat cried.

She was a well of gossip defiled,²

Fanged chronicler of a whole countryside;

Reputed a witch, all I could find

15 Was her lonely need to deride.

The Nialls lived along a mountain lane

Where the bells bloomed, clumps of
foxglove.

All were blind, with Blind Pension and Wireless,³
Dead eyes serpent-flicked as one entered
20 To shelter from a downpour of mountain
rain.

Crickets chirped under the rocking hearths
to the Until the muddy sun shone out again.

Mary Moore lived in a crumbling gatehouse,
Famous as Pisa⁴ for its leaning gable.

25 Bag-apron and boots, she tramped the fields
Driving lean cattle from a miry stable.

A by-word for fierceness, she fell asleep

Over love stories, Red Star and Red Circle,⁵

Dreamed of gypsy love rites, by firelight sealed.

1. Ancient standing stones.

3. Radio. *Blind Pension*: state-provided income for

2. Cf. Edmund Spenser, *Faerie Queene* 4.2.32:

sightless people.

“Dan [i.e., ‘Sir’] Chaucer,” well of English unde-

4. The Leaning Tower of Pisa.

filed.”

5. Cheap-magazine romances.

1784 / JOHN MONTAGUE

30 Wild Billy Eagleson married a Catholic servant girl

When all his Loyal⁶ family passed on:

We danced round him shouting “To Hell with King Billy”,⁷

And dodged from the arc of his flailing blackthorn.⁰ *knobbed
cane*

Forsaken by both creeds, he showed little concern
35 Until the Orange⁰ drums banged past in the summer
Protestant
And bowler and sash aggressively shone.
Curate and doctor trudged to attend them,
Through knee-deep snow, through summer heat,
From main road to lane to broken path,
40 Gulping the mountain air with painful breath.
Sometimes they were found by neighbours,
Silent keepers of a smokeless hearth,
Suddenly cast in the mould of death.
Ancient Ireland, indeed! I was reared by her bedside,
45 The rune and the chant, evil eye and averted head,
Fomorian⁸ fierceness of family and local feud.
Gaunt figures of fear and of friendliness,
For years they trespassed on my dreams,
Until once, in a standing circle of stones,⁹
50 I felt their shadows pass
Into that dark permanence of ancient forms.

1 9 5 9

Old Mythologies

And now, at last, all proud deeds done,
Mouths dust-stopped, dark they embrace
Suitably disposed, as urns, underground.
Cattle munching soft spring grass
5 —Epicures of shamrock and the four-leaved clover—
Hear a whimper of ancient weapons,
As a whole dormitory of heroes turn over,

Regretting their butchers' days.
This valley cradles their archaic madness
io As once, on an impossibly epic morning,
It upheld their savage stride:
To bagpiped battle marching,
Wolfhounds, lean as models,
At their urgent heels.

1 9 6 1

6. Loyalist, Protestant.
establishing the Protestant domination of Ireland.
7. A Roman Catholic taunt to Protestant corelig-
8. The Fomorians were demons or evil gods in
ionists of King William III of England, who at the
Irish pagan mythology.
Battle of the Royne (1690) defeated his predeces-
9. Prehistoric ring of large blocks of stone set
sor, the Roman Catholic King James II, thereby
upright in the ground.

A L L E G E N D A R Y O B S T A C L E S / 1 7 8 5

The Trout
Flat on the bank I parted
Rushes to ease my hands
In the water without a ripple
And tilt them slowly downstream
5 To where he lay, light as a leaf,
In his fluid sensual dream.
Bodiless lord of creation
I hung briefly above him

Savouring my own absence
10 Senses expanding in the slow
Motion, the photographic calm
That grows before action.
As the curve of my hands
Swung under his body
15 He surged, with visible pleasure.
I was so preternaturally close
I could count every stipple
But still cast no shadow, until
The two palms crossed in a cage
20 Under the lightly pulsing gills.
Then (entering my own enlarged
Shape, which rode on the water)
I gripped. To this day I can
Taste his terror on my hands.

1 9 6 6

All Legendary Obstacles
All legendary obstacles lay between
Us, the long imaginary plain,
The monstrous ruck of mountains
And, swinging across the night,
5 Flooding the Sacramento, San Joaquin, 1
The hissing drift of winter rain.
All day I waited, shifting
Nervously from station to bar
As I saw another train sail
io By, the San Francisco Chief or

Golden Gate, water dripping

From great flanged wheels. *ribbed*.

1. River in central California that flows northwest into the Sacramento River.

1 7 8 6 / P E T E R P O R T E R

At midnight you came, pale

Above the negro porter's lamp.

15 I was too blind with rain

And doubt to speak, but

Reached from the platform

Until our chilled hands met.

You had been travelling for days

20 With an old lady, who marked

A neat circle on the glass

With her glove, to watch us

Move into the wet darkness

Kissing, still unable to speak.

1 9 6 6

P E T E R P O R T E R

b. 1929

A Consumers Report

The name of the product I tested is *Life*,

I have completed the form you sent me

and understand that my answers are confidential.

I had it as a gift,

5 I didn't feel much while using it,

in fact I think I'd have liked to be more excited.

It seemed gentle on the hands

but left an embarrassing deposit behind.
It was not economical
io and I have used much more than I thought
(I suppose I have about half left
but it's difficult to tell)—
although the instructions are fairly large
there are so many of them
15 I don't know which to follow, especially
as they seem to contradict each other.
I'm not sure such a thing
should be put in the way of children—
It's difficult to think of a purpose
20 for it. One of my friends says
it's just to keep its maker in a job.
Also the price is much too high.
Things are piling up so fast,
after all, the world got by
25 for a thousand million years
without this, do we need it now?
(Incidentally, please ask your man

**A N A N G E L I N B L Y T H B U R G H C H U R C H / 1
7 8 7**

**to stop calling me “the respondent”,
I don't like the sound of it.)
30 There s e e m s to be a lot of different labels,
sizes and colours should be uniform,
the shape is awkward, it's waterproof
but not heat resistant, it doesn't keep**

yet it's very difficult to get rid of:
35 whenever they make it cheaper they s e e m
to put less in—if you say you don't
want it, t h e n it's delivered anyway.
I'd agree it's a popular product,
it's got into the language; people
40 even say they're on the side of it.
Personally I think it's overdone,
a small thing people are ready
to behave badly about. I think
we should take it for granted. If its
45 experts are called philosophers or market
researchers or historians, we shouldn't
care. We are the consumers and the last
law makers. So finally, I'd buy it.
But the question of a "best buy"
50 I'd like to leave until I get
the competitive product you said you'd send.

1 9 7 0

An Angel in Blythburgh Church¹

Shot d o w n from its enskied formation,
This stern-faced p l u m m e t rests against the wall;
Cromwell's soldiers peppered it² and n o w the death-
watch beetle has it in thrall.³

5 If you make fortunes from wool, along
T h e w e e p i n g winter foreshores of the tide,
You build big churches with clerestories⁴
And place angels high inside.

**Their painted faces guard and guide. Now or
io Tomorrow or whenever is the promise—
The resurrection comes: fix your eyes halfway
Between Heaven and Diss.5**

1. Medieval statue in Blythburgh, a small village
that they considered idolatrous.

in northeast Suffolk, England.

3. Cf. Keats, “La Belle Dame sans Merci,” lines

2. The English general and statesman Oliver

39-40 (p. 918). *Death-watch beetle*: a bug that eats

Cromwell (1599-1658) led the anti-Royalist
wood.

“Roundheads,” who defeated the “Cavaliers” loyal

4. Upper stories with their own windows.

to King Charles I in the English Civil War. Largely

5. A town in Norfolk, near Blythburgh; also, as

Puritan, they defaced many church decorations

Dis, the Roman god of the underworld.

1788 / P E T E R P O R T E R

The face is crudely carved, simplified by wind;

It looks straight at God and waits for orders,

15 B u f f e t e d by the organ militant, and blasted

By choristers and recorders.

F a i t h w o u l d have our eyes as wooden and as
certain.

It might be worth it, to start the New Year's hymn

Allowing for death as a mere calculation,

20 A d e p r e c i a t i o n , e n t e r e d i n .

Or so I fancy looking at the roof beams
Where the dangerous beetle sails. What is it
Turns an atheist's mind to prayer in almost
Any church on a country visit?
25 Grieved for love or certainty or forgiveness?
High security rising with the sea birds?
A theology of self looking for precedents?
A chance to speak old words?
Rather, I think of a woman lying on her bed⁶
30 Staring for hours up to the ceiling where
Nothing is projected — death the only angel
To shield her from despair.

1978

An Exequy⁷

In wet May, in the months of change,
In a country you wouldn't visit, strange
Dreams pursue me in my sleep,
Black creatures of the upper deep —
5 Though you are five months dead, I see
You in guilt's iconography,
Dear Wife, lost beast, beleaguered child,
The stranded monster with the mild
Appearance, whom small waves tease,
io (Andromeda⁸ upon her knees
In orthodox deliverance)
And you alone of pure substance,
The unformed form of life, the earth
Which Piero's⁹ brushes brought to birth

15 For all to greet as myth, a thing
Out of the box of imagining.

6. Porter's wife, who committed suicide in 1974.
her homeland. An oracle demanded that Androm-
7. Funeral rite. See note 6 above.

eda be sacrificed to the monster in expiation, but

8. In Greek mythology, an Ethiopian princess.

she was saved by Perseus. After her death, she was
Her mother, Cassiopeia, claimed to be more beau-
placed among the stars.

tiful than the Nereids, sea nymphs who then per-

9. Piero della Francesca (ca. 1420-1492), Italian
sued the god Neptune to send a sea monster to
painter.

A N E X E Q U Y / 1 7 8 9

This introduction serves to sing

Your mortal death as Bishop King¹

Once hymned in tetrametric rhyme

20 His young wife, lost before her time;

Though he lived on for many years

His poem each day fed new tears

To that unreachng spot, her grave,

His lines a baroque architrave²

25 The Sunday poor with bottled flowers

Would by-pass in their mourning hours,

Esteeming ragged natural life

("Most dearly loved, most gentle wife"),

Yet, looking back when at the gate

30 And seeing grief in formal state
Upon a sculpted angel group,
Were glad that men of god could stoop
To give the dead a public stance
And freeze them in their mortal dance.
35 The words and faces proper to
My misery are private—you
Would never share your heart with those
Whose only talent's to suppose,
Nor from your final childish bed
40 Raise a remote confessing head—
The channels of our lives are blocked,
The hand is stopped upon the clock,
No one can say why hearts will break
And marriages are all opaque:
45 A map of loss, some posted cards,
The living house reduced to shards,
The abstract hell of memory,
The pointlessness of poetry—
These are the instances which tell
50 Of something which I know full well,
I owe a death to you—one day
The time will come for me to pay
W h e n your slim shape from photographs
Stands at my door and gently asks
55 If I have any work to do
Or will I come to bed with you.
O scala enigmatical

I'll climb up to that attic where
The curtain of your life was drawn
60 Some time between despair and dawn—
I'll never know with what halt steps
You mounted to this plain eclipse
But each stair now will station me
1. Bishop Henry King (1592-1669), English poet,
3. O enigmatic stairs (Latin); an allusion to the
author of "An Exequy to His Matchless, Never-to-
stairs leading to the attic in which Porter's wife
Be-Forgotten Friend" (see p. 363).
died.

2. Lintel or other molding around a door.

1790 / P E T E R P O R T E R

A black responsibility

**65 A n d p o i n t m e t o t h a t s h u t - d o w n r o o m ,
"This be your d u e a p p o i n t e d t o m b ."**

I t h i n k o f u s i n I t a l y :

G i n - a n d - c h i a n t i - f u e l l e d , w e

M o v e i n a t r a n c e t h r o u g h P a r a d i s e ,

70 F e e d i n g a t l a s t o u r s t a r v i n g e y e s ,

T w o p e o p l e o f t h e E n g l i s h b l i n d n e s s

D o i n g e a c h m a s t e r p i e c e t h e k i n d n e s s

O f d i s c o v e r i n g i t — f r o m B a l d o v i n e t t i ⁴

T o V e n i c e ' s m o s t o b s c u r e j e t t y .

75 A t r u e u n f o r t u n a t e t r a v e l l e r , I

D e p e n d u p o n y o u r n u r s e ' s e y e

T o p i c k t h e a l t a r s w h e r e n o G r i n n e r ⁰ g r o t e s q u e f i e n d

Puts us off our tourists' dinner
And in hotels to bandy words
so With Geneva girls and talking birds,
To wear your feet out following me
To night's end and true amity,
And call my rational fear of flying
A paradigm of Holy Dying —
85 And, oh my love, I wish you were
Once more with me, at night somewhere
In narrow streets applauding wines,
The moon above the Apennines *0 mountain chain*
As large as logic and the stars,
90 Most middle-aged of avatars,
As bright as when they shone for truth
Upon untried and avid youth.
The rooms and days we wandered through
Shrink in my mind to one — there you
95 Lie quite absorbed by peace — the calm
Which life could not provide is balm
In death. Unseen by me, you look
Past bed and stairs and half-read book
Eternally upon your home,
100 The end of pain, the left alone.
I have no friend, or intercessor,
No psychopomp or true confessor
But only you who know my heart
In every cramped and devious part—
105 Then take my hand and lead me out,

**T h e sky is overcast by doubt,
T h e t i m e has c o m e , I listen for
Your words of c o m f o r t at the door,
O g u i d e me through the shoals of f e a r —
110 “Fürchte dich nicht, i c h b i n bei dir.“6
1 9 7 8**

4. Alessio Baldovinetti (1425-1499), Italian a conductor of souls to the place of the dead, painter. 6. Fear not, I am with you (German); openinglyr-5. Someone who acts as a guide of the soul; also, ics of Bach's motet BMV 228.

1 7 9 1

A D R I E N N E R I C H

b. 1929

Aunt Jennifer's Tigers

Aunt Jennifer's tigers prance across a screen,

Bright topaz denizens of a world of green.

They do not fear the men beneath the tree;

They pace in sleek chivalric certainty.

5 Aunt Jennifer's fingers fluttering through her wool

Find even the ivory needle hard to pull.

The massive weight of Uncle's wedding band

Sits heavily upon Aunt Jennifer's hand.

When Aunt is dead, her terrified hands will lie

io Still ringed with ordeals she was mastered by.

The tigers in the panel that she made

Will go on prancing, proud and unafraid.

1 9 5 1

Snapshots of a Daughter-in-Law

I

You, once a belle in Shreveport,¹
with henna-colored hair, skin like a peachbud,
still have your dresses copied from that time,
and play a Chopin prelude
5 called by Cortot: "*Delicious recollections
float like perfume through the memory.*"²
Your mind now, moldering like wedding-cake,
heavy with useless experience, rich
with suspicion, rumor, fantasy,
is crumbling to pieces under the knife-edge
of mere fact. In the prime of your life.
Nervy, glowering, your daughter
wipes the teaspoons, grows another way.

2

Banging the coffee-pot into the sink
15 she hears the angels chiding, and looks out
1. City in Louisiana.

No. 7, Andantino, A Major, by Frederic Chopin

2. A remark made by the French pianist Alfred
(1810—1849), Polish composer and piano virtuoso,
Cortot (1877-1962) in his book *Chopin: 24 Pre-*
who settled in Paris in 1831.

ludes (1930); he is referring specifically to Prelude

1 7 9 2 / A D R I E N N E R I C H

past the raked gardens to the sloppy sky.

Only a week since They said: *Have no patience.*

The next time it was: *Be insatiable.*

Then: *Save yourself; others you cannot save.*

20 Sometimes she's let the tapstream scald her arm,
a match burn to her thumbnail,
or held her hand above the kettle's snout
right in the woolly steam. They are probably angels,
since nothing hurts her anymore, except
25 each morning's grit blowing into her eyes.

3

A thinking woman sleeps with monsters.
The beak that grips her, she becomes.³ And Nature,
that sprung-lidded, still commodious
steamer-trunk of *tempora* and *mores*⁴
30 gets stuffed with it all: the mildewed orange-flowers,
the female pills,⁵ the terrible breasts
of Boadicea⁶ beneath flat foxes' heads and orchids.
Two handsome women, gripped in argument,
each proud, acute, subtle, I hear scream
35 across the cut glass and majolica
like Furies⁷ cornered from their prey:
The argument *ad feminam*,⁸ all the old knives
that have rusted in my back, I drive in yours,
*ma semhlahle, ma soeur!*⁹

4

40 Knowing themselves too well in one another:
their gifts no pure fruition, but a thorn,
the prick filed sharp against a hint of scorn ...
Reading while waiting
for the iron to heat,
45 writing, *My Life had stood—a Loaded Gun—I*

in that Amherst pantry while the jellies boil and scum,
or, more often,

3. A reference to W. R. Yeats's "Leda and the
directed not to reason but to personal prejudices
Swan" (p. 1200), in which Zeus in the shape of a
and emotions.

swan rapes Leda and then lets her drop from "the
9. The last line of "Au lecteur" ("To the Reader"),
indifferent beak."

by the French poet Charles Raudelaire (1821-

4. Literally, times and customs—from the ancient
1867), addresses "*Hypocrite lecteur!—monsembla-*
Roman orator Cicero's famous phrase, "O tem-
ble—mon fr&re!" ("Hypocrite reader!—my like-
pora! O mores!")

ness!—my brother!"); Rich here instead addresses

5. Remedies for menstrual pain.

"*ma soeur*" (my sister). See also T. S. Eliot, *The*

6. British queen (d. 60 C.E.), who led her people
Waste Land, line 76 (p. 1346).

in a large though ultimately unsuccessful revolt

1. "*Emily Dickinson, Complete Poems*, ed. T. H.
against Roman rule.

Johnson, 1960, p. 369" [Rich's note]; see p. 1115.

7. Greek goddesses of vengeance. *Majolica*: a
Amherst, referred to in the next line, is the town
glazed earthenware.

in Massachusetts where Dickinson lived her entire

8. Feminine version of the Latin phrase *ad homi-*
life (1830-1886).

nem (to the man), referring to an argument

**SNAPSHOTS OF A DAUGHTER-IN-LAW /
1793**

iron-eyed and beaked and purpose d as a bird,
dusting everything on the what not every day of life.

5

50 *Dulce ridens, dulce loquens,*²

she shaves her legs until they gleam
like petrified mammoth-tusk.

6

When to her lute Corinna sings³

neither words nor music are her own;

55 only the long hair dipping

over her cheek, only the song

of silk against her knees

and these

adjusted in reflections of an eye.

60 Poised, trembling and unsatisfied, before

an unblocked door, that cage of cages,

tell us, you bird, you tragical machine —

is this *fertilisante douleur*?⁴ Pinned down

by love, for you the only natural action,

65 are you edged more keen

to prise the secrets of the vault? has Nature shown

her household books to you, daughter-in-law,

that her sons never saw?

7

*“To have in this uncertain world some stay
70 which cannot be undermined, is
of the utmost consequence.”*⁵

Thus wrote

a woman, partly brave and partly good,
who fought with what she partly understood.
75 Few men about her would or could do more,
hence she was labeled harpy, shrew and whore.

8

“You all die at fifteen,” said Diderot,⁶
and turn part legend, part convention.

Still, eyes inaccurately dream

2. Sweetly laughing, sweetly speaking (Latin);
feminist thinkers, is best-known for her *Vindica-*
from Horace, *Odes* 22.23-24.

tion of the Rights of Woman (1792).

3. First line of a lyric by Thomas Campion (see
6. Denis Diderot (1713-1784), French philoso-
p. 280).

pher, encyclopedist, playwright, and critic.” “You

4. Fertilizing (i.e., life-giving) sorrow (French).

all die at fifteen’: ‘Vous mourez toutes a quinze

5. “From Mary Wollstonecraft, *Thoughts on the
ans,*’ from the *Lettres a Sophie Volland*, quoted by
Education of Daughters, London, 1787” [Rich’s
Simone de Beauvoir in *Le Deuxieme Sexe*, Vol. II,
note]. Wollstonecraft (1759-1797), one of the first

pp. 123-24” [Rich’s note].

1 7 9 4 / A D R I E N N E R I C H

so behind closed windows blankening with steam.

Deliciously, all that we might have been,

all that we were—fire, tears,

wit, taste, martyred ambition—

stirs like the memory of refused adultery

85 the drained and flagging bosom of our middle years.

9

Not that it is done well, hut

that it is done at all **Yes, think**

of the odds! or shrug them off forever.

This luxury of the precocious child,

90 Time’s precious chronic invalid,—

would we, darlings, resign it if we could?

Our blight has b e e n our sinecure:

mere talent was e n o u g h for u s —

glitter in fragments and rough drafts.

95 Sigh no more, ladies.

Time is male

and in his cups⁸ drinks to the fair.

B e m u s e d by gallantry, we hear

our mediocrities over-praised,

100 indolence read as abnegation,

slattern thought styled intuition,

every lapse forgiven, our crime

only to cast too bold a shadow

or smash the mold straight off.

**105 For that, solitary confinement,
tear gas, attrition shelling.**

Few applicants for that honor.

10

Well,

**she's long about her coming, who must be
110 more merciless to herself than history.**

**Her mind full to the wind, I see her plunge
breasted and glancing through the currents,**

taking the light upon her

at least as beautiful as any boy

115 or helicopter,⁹

7. "Sir, a woman's preaching is like a dog's walking she is also the totem set deep in the African jungle; on his hinder legs. It is not done well; but you are she is a helicopter and she is a bird; and there is surprised to find it done at all": the English writer this, the greatest wonder of all: under her tinted Samuel Johnson (1709—1784), to his friend and hair the forest murmur becomes a thought, and biographer, James Boswell (1740-1795).

words issue from her breasts" (Simone de Beau-

8. While drinking. "Sigh no more, ladies, sigh no voir, *The Second Sex*, trans. H. M. Parshley

more, / Men were deceivers ever": Shakespeare,

[1953], p. 729). (A translation of the passage from

Much Ado About Nothing 2.3.56-57.

Le Deuxieme Sexe, Vol. II, p. 574, cited in French

9. "She comes down from the remoteness of ages,
by Rich.)

from Thebes, from Crete, from Chichen-Itza; and

ORION / 1795

poised, still coming,
her fine blades making the air wince
but the cargo
no promise then:
120 delivered
palpable
ours.

1958-601963

Orion1

Far back when I went zig-zagging
through tamarack pastures
you were my genius, 0 you *attendant spirit*
my cast-iron Viking, my helmed
5 lion-heart king in prison. 2
Years later now you're young
my fierce half-brother, staring
down from that simplified west
your breast open, your belt dragged down
io by an old fashioned thing, a sword
the last bravado you won't give over
though it weighs you down as you stride
and the stars in it are dim
and may behave stopped burning.
15 But you burn, and I know it;

as I throw back my head to take you in
an old transfusion happens again:
divine astronomy is nothing to it.
Indoors I bruise and blunder,
20 break faith, leave ill enough
alone, a dead child born in the dark.
Night cracks up over the chimney,
pieces of time, frozen geodes³
comes showering down in the grate.
25 A man reaches behind my eyes
and finds them empty
a woman's head turns away
from my head in the mirror
children are dying my death
30 and eating crumbs of my life.

1. Constellation of the winter sky that appears as
Hearted (1157—1199), imprisoned in Austria on
a warrior with belt and sword; named after a giant
his return from the Crusades.

hunter in Greek mythology.

3. Small, spheroid stones, with a cavity often lined

2. Alluding to the English king Richard the Lion-
with crystals.

1796 / ADRIENNERICH

Pity is not your forte.

Calmly you ache up there

pinned aloft in your crow's nest,⁴

my speechless pirate!

35 You take it all for granted
and when I look you back
it's with a starlike eye
shooting its cold and egotistical⁵ spear
where it can do least damage.

40 Breathe deep! No hurt, no pardon
out here in the cold with you
you with your back to the wall.

1 9 6 5 1 9 6 9

A Valediction Forbidding Mourning⁶
My swirling wants. Your frozen lips.
The grammar turned and attacked me.
Themes, written under duress.
Emptiness of the notations.

5 They gave me a drug that slowed the healing of wounds.
I want you to see this before I leave:
the experience of repetition as death
the failure of criticism to locate the pain
the poster in the bus that said:
io my bleeding is under control.

A red plant in a cemetery of plastic wreaths.
A last attempt: the language is a dialect called metaphor.
These images go unglossed: hair, glacier, flashlight.
When I think of a landscape I am thinking of a time.

15 When I talk of taking a trip I mean forever.
I could say: those mountains have a meaning
but further than that I could not say.
To do something very common, in my own way.

1 9 7 0 1 9 7 1

4. Lookout post on the masts of old ships.

With your back to the wall, careworn and weary,

5. “One of two phrases suggested by Gottfried
in the gray light of the void, read Job and Jeremiah
Benn’s essay, *Artists and Old Age in Primal Vision*,
and keep going.”

edited by E. B. Ashton, *New Directions*” [Rich’s

6. The title of a poem by John Donne (see p. 306),
note]. Renn (1886—1956), German poet and critic,
in which he forbids his wife to lament his depar-
advises the modern artist: “Don’t lose sight of the
ture on a trip to the Continent.

cold and egotistical element in your mission. . . .

D I V I N G I N T O T H E W R E C K / 1 7 9 7

Diving into the Wreck

First having read the book of myths,

and loaded the camera,

and checked the edge of the knife-blade,

I put on

5 the body-armor of black rubber

the absurd flippers

the grave and awkward mask.

I am having to do this

not like Cousteau⁷ with his

10 assiduous team

aboard the sun-flooded schooner

but here alone.

There is a ladder.

The ladder is always there
15 hanging innocently
close to the side of the schooner.

We know what it is for,
we who have used it.

Otherwise
20 it is a piece of maritime floss
some sundry equipment.

I go down.

Rung after rung and still
the oxygen immerses me

25 the blue light
the clear atoms
of our human air.

I go down.

My flippers cripple me,
30 I crawl like an insect down the ladder
and there is no one
to tell me when the ocean
will begin.

First the air is blue and then
35 it is bluer and then green and then
black I am blacking out and yet
my mask is powerful
it pumps my blood with power
the sea is another story

40 the sea is not a question of power

I have to learn alone
to turn my body without force
in the deep element.

7. Jacques-Yves Cousteau (1910—1997), French underwater
explorer, photographer, and author.

1 7 9 8 / A D R I E N N E R I C H

And now: it is easy to forget

45 what I came for

among so many who have always

lived here

swaying their crenellated⁸ fans

between the reefs

50 and besides

you breathe differently down here.

I came to explore the wreck.

The words are purposes.

The words are maps.

55 I came to see the damage that was done

and the treasures that prevail.

I stroke the beam of my lamp

slowly along the flank

of something more permanent

60 than fish or weed

the thing I came for:

the wreck and not the story of the wreck

the thing itself and not the myth

the drowned face⁹ always staring

65 toward the sun

the evidence of damage
worn by salt and sway into this threadbare beauty
the ribs of the disaster
curving their assertion
70 among the tentative haunters.

This is the place.

And I am here, the mermaid whose dark hair
streams black, the merman in his armored body

We circle silently

75 about the wreck

we dive into the hold.

I am she: I am he

whose drowned face sleeps with open eyes

whose breasts still bear the stress

so whose silver, copper, vermeil¹ cargo lies

obscurely inside barrels

half-wedged and left to rot

we are the half-destroyed instruments

that once held to a course

85 the water-eaten log

the fouled compass

We are, I am, you are

by cowardice or courage

the one who find our way

8. With repeated indentations. mented old sailing ships' bows.

9. I.e., one of the female figureheads that orna- 1. Gilded silver
or bronze.

E A S T E R N W A R T I M E / 1 7 9 9

90 back to this scene
carrying a knife, a camera
a book of myths
in which
our names do not appear.

1973

*From Eastern War Time*²

I

Memory lifts her smoky mirror: 1943,
single isinglass window kerosene
stove in the streetcar barn halfset moon
8:15 a.m. Eastern War Time dark
5 Number 29 clanging in and turning
looseleaf notebook *Latin for Americans*
Breasted's *History of the Ancient World*
on the girl's lap
money for lunch and war-stamps in her pocket
io darkblue wool wet acrid on her hands
three pools of light weak ceiling bulbs
a schoolgirl's hope-spilt terrified
sensations wired to smells
of kerosene wool and snow
15 and the sound of the dead language
praised as key torchlight of the great dead
Grey spreading behind still-flying snow
the lean and sway of the streetcar she must ride
to become one of a hundred girls
20 rising white-cuffed and collared in a study hall

to sing *For those in peril on the sea*³
under plaster casts of the classic frescoes
chariots horses draperies certitudes.
A woman wired in memories
stands by a house collapsed in dust
her son beaten in prison grandson
shot in the stomach daughter
5 organizing the camps an aunt's unpublished poems
grandparents' photographs a bridal veil
phased into smoke up the obliterate air
With whom shall she let down and tell her story
Who shall hear her to the end
io standing if need be for hours in wind

2. Rich's invented term conflating Eastern Stan-
memories, as an American Jew, with facts of the
dard Time, the time zone in which she grew up (in
Holocaust, in Europe.

Baltimore), with the time of World War II. The

3. A hymn, also known as "Eternal Father, Strong
poem, in ten parts, juxtaposes Rich's childhood
to Save" and the "Navy Hymn."

1 8 0 0 /

A D R I E N N E R I C H

that swirls the levelled dust
in sun that beats through their scarfed hair
at the lost gate by the shattered prickly pear
Who must hear her to the end
15 but the woman forbidden to forget

the blunt groats⁰ freezing in the wooden ladle *hulled grain*
old winds dusting the ovens with light snow?

1 9 9 5

Modotti⁴

Your footprints of light on sensitive paper
that typewriter you made famous
my footsteps following you up stair-
wells of scarred oak and shredded newsprint
5 these windowpanes smeared with stifled breaths
corridors of tile and jaundiced plaster
if this is where I must look for you
then this is where I'll find you
From a streetlamp's wet lozenge bent
io on a curb plastered with newsprint
the headlines aiming straight at your eyes
to a room's dark breath-smeared light
these footsteps I'm following you with
down tiles of a red corridor
15 if this is a way to find you
of course this is how I'll find you
Your negatives pegged to dry in a darkroom
rigged up over a bathtub's lozenge
your footprints of light on sensitive paper
20 stacked curling under blackened panes
the always upstairs of your hideout
the stern exposure of your brows
—these footsteps I'm following you with
aren't to arrest you

25 The bristling hairs of your eyeflash
that typewriter you made famous
your enormous will to arrest and frame
what was, what is, still liquid, flowing
your exposure of manifestos, your
30 lightbulb in a scarred ceiling
well if this is how I find you
Modotti so I find you

4. “Tina Modotti (1896-1942): photographer,
Mella. Framed for his murder by the fascists in
political activist, revolutionary. Her most signifi-
1929, she was expelled from Mexico in 1930. After
cant work was done in Mexico in the 1920s,
some years of political activity in Berlin, she
including a study of the typewriter belonging to her
returned incognito to Mexico, where she died in
lover, the Cuban revolutionary Julio Antonio
1942” [Rich’s note].

S N A K E S / 1 8 0 1

**In the red wash of your darkroom
from your neighborhood of volcanoes
35 to the geranium nailed in a can
on the wall of your upstairs hideout
in the rush of breath a window
of revolution allowed you
on this jaundiced stair in this huge lashed eye
these
40 footsteps I’m following you with**

1 9 9 6 1 9 9 9

A. K. R A M A N U J A N

1929-1993

Snakes

No, it does not happen

when I walk through the woods.

But, walking in museums of quartz

or the aisles of books tacks,

5 looking at their geometry

without curves

and the layers of transparency

that make them opaque,

dwelling on the yellower vein

io in the yellow amber

or touching a book that has gold

on its spine,

I think of snakes.

The twirls of their hisses

15 rise like the tiny dust-cones on slow-noon roads

winding through the farmers' feet.

Black lorgnettes¹ are etched on their hoods,

ridiculous, alien, like some terrible aunt,

a crest among tiles and scales

20 that moult with the darkening half

of every moon.

A basketful of ritual cobras

comes into the tame little house,

their brown-wheat glisten ringed with ripples.

**25 They lick the room with their bodies, curves
uncurling, writing a sibilant² alphabet of panic
on my floor. Mother gives them milk
in saucers. She watches them suck
and bare the black-line design
30 etched on the brass of the saucer.**

1. Eyeglasses or opera glasses with a handle. 2. Having or producing the sound of s or *sh*.

1 8 0 2 / A . K . R A M A N U J A N

The snakeman wreathes their writhing
round his neck

for father's smiling
money. But I scream.

Sister ties her braids
with a knot of tassel.

But the weave of her knee-long braid has scales,
their gleaming held by a score of clean new pins.

I look till I see her hair again.

40

My night full of ghosts from a sadness
in a play, my left foot listens to my right footfall,
a clockwork clicking in the silence
within my walking.

The clickshod heel suddenly strikes

45

and slushes on a snake: I see him turn,
the green white of his belly
measured by bluish nodes, a water-bleached lotus stalk

plucked by a landsman hand. Yet panic rushes
my body to my feet, my spasms wring
and drain his fear and mine. I leave him sealed,
a flat-head whiteness on a stain.

Now

frogs can hop upon this sausage rope,
flies in the sun will mob the look in his eyes,
55 and I can walk through the woods.

1 9 6 6

Breaded Fish

Specially for me, she had some breaded
fish; even thrust a blunt-headed
smelt into my mouth;
and looked hurt when I could
5 neither sit nor eat, as a hood
of memory like a coil on a heath
opened in my eyes: a dark half-naked
length of woman, dead
on the beach in a yard of cloth,
io dry, rolled by the ebb, breaded
by the grained indifference of sand. I headed
for the shore, my heart beating in my mouth.

1 9 6 6

NEW WORLD A - COMIN ' / 1 8 0 3

Self-Portrait

I resemble everyone
but myself, and sometimes see
in shop-windows,

despite the well-known laws
5 of optics,
the portrait of a stranger,
date unknown,
often signed in a corner
by my father.

1 9 6 6

E D W A R D K A M A U B R A T H W A I T E

b. 1930

FROM THE ARRIVANTS: A NEW WORLD TRILOGY

New World A-Comin'

I

Helpless like this
leader-
less like this,
heroless,
5 we met you: lover,
warrior, hater,
coming through the files
of the forest
soft foot
io to soft soil
of silence:
we met in the soiled
tunnel of leaves.
Click lock
15 your fire-
lock fore-

arm fire-

arm flashed

fire and our firm

20 fleshed, flame

warm, fly

bitten warriors

fell.

1 8 0 4 / E D W A R D K A M A U B R A T H W A I T E

How long

25 how long

O Lord

O devil

O fire

O flame

30 have we walked

have we journeyed

to this place

to this meeting

this shock

35 and shame

in the soiled

silence.

How long have we

travelled down

40 valleys down

slopes, silica

glinted, stones

dry as water,

to this flash
45 of flame in the forest.

O who now will help

us, help-

less, horse-

less, leader-

50 less, no

hope, no

Hawkins, no

Cortez¹ to come.

Prempeh imprisoned,

55 Tawiah dead,

Asantewa² bridled

and hung.

O who now can help

us: Geronimo, Tackie,

60 Montezuma³ to come.

And the fire, our

fire, fashioning locks,

rocks darker than iron;

1. Hernando Cortez (1485-1547), the Spanish
Tackie Tawiah (1862—1902), king of Accra, Ghana.

conqueror of Mexico. *Hawkins*: Sir John Hawkins

3. Montezuma II (1480?-1520), the last Mexican

(1532-1595), the first Englishman to traffic in

emperor, was killed in the resistance against Cor-

slaves.

tez's conquest of Mexico. *Geronimo*: a chief of the

2. Yaa Asantewaa (1850-1921), the queen
Chiricahwa group of Apache Indians (ca. 1829-
mother who, in Ghana, led Ashanti opposition
1909). His forces terrorized New Mexico and Ari-
against the British. Captured in 1901, she was
zona from 1875 until 1885, but surrendered to
exiled to the Seychelles. *Prempeh*: last king of the
General George Cook in 1886. *Tackie*: Tacky, a
Ashanti (1888-1931). He reigned from 1894 until
Caribbean priest/leader. The 1760 Tacky Rebel-
1896, when he was deposed by the British and
lion in Jamaica was fomented and in places led by
exiled to the Seychelles. *Tawiah*: probably Nii
obeah men (spiritual leaders).

NEW WORLD A - COMIN ' / 1 8 0 5

fire betrayed us once
65 in our village; now
in the forest, fire falls
us like birds, hot pods
in our belly. Fire
falls walls, fashions
70 these fire-
locks darker than iron,
and we filed down the path
linked in a new
clinked silence of iron.

2

75 It will be a long long time before we see

this land again, these trees
again, drifting inland with the sound
of surf, smoke rising
It will be a long long time before we see
so these farms again, soft wet slow green
again: Aburi, Akwamu,⁴
mist rising
Watch now these hard men, cold
clear eye'd like the water we ride,
85 skilful with sail and the rope and the tackle
Watch now these cold men, bold
as the water banging the bow in a sudden wild tide,
indifferent, it seems, to the battle
of wind in the water;
90 for our blood, mixed
soon with their passion in sport,
in indifference, in anger,
will create new soils, new souls, new
ancestors; will flow like this tide fixed
95 to the star by which this ship floats
to new worlds, new waters, new
harbours, the pride of our ancestors mixed
with the wind and the water
the flesh and the flies, the whips and the fixed
IOO fear of pain in this chained and welcoming port.

1 9 6 7

4. Towns in the Akan-speaking area of Ghana.

1 8 0 6 / E D W A R D K A M A U B R A T H W A I T E

Ancestors

I

Every Friday morning my grandfather
left his farm of canefields, chickens, cows,
and rattled in his trap down to the harbour town
to sell his meat. He was a butcher.

5 Six-foot-three and very neat: high collar,
winged, a grey cravat,⁰ a waistcoat, watch- *scarf*
chain just above the belt, thin narrow-
bottomed trousers, and the shoes his wife
would polish every night. He drove the trap
io himself: slap of the leather reins
along the horse's back and he'd be off
with a top-hearted homburg⁵ on his head:
black English country gentleman.

Now he is dead. The meat shop burned,
15 his property divided. A doctor bought
the horse. His mad alsatians killed it.

The wooden trap was chipped and chopped
by friends and neighbours and used to stop-
gap fences and for firewood. One yellow
20 wheel was rolled across the former cowpen gate.

Only his hat is left. I "borrowed" it.

I used to try it on and hear the night wind
man go battering through the canes, cocks waking up and
thinking

it was dawn throughout the clinking country night.

25 Great caterpillar tractors clatter down

the broken highway now; a diesel engine grunts
where pigs once hunted garbage.

A thin asthmatic cow shares the untrashed garage.

2

All that I can remember of his wife,
30 my father's mother, is that she sang us songs
("Great Tom Is Cast"⁶ was one), that frightened me.

And she would go chug chugging with a jar
of milk until its white pap turned to yellow
butter. And in the basket underneath the stairs
35 she kept the polish for grandfather's shoes.

All that I have of her is voices:

laughing me out of fear because a crappaud⁰ *toad*
jumped and splashed the dark where I was huddled
in the galvanized tin bath; telling us stories

40 round her fat white lamp. It was her Queen
Victoria lamp, she said; although the stamp

5. Old-fashioned, tall, felt hat.

6. Song about the making (or "casting") of a bell.

MARRIAGE / 1807

read Ever Ready. And in the night, I listened to her singing
in a Vicks and Vapour Rub-like voice what you would call the
blues

3

Come-a look

45 come-a look

see wha' happen

come-a look

come-a look
see wha' happen
50 Sookey dead
Sookey dead
Sookey dead-o
Sookey dead
Sookey dead
55 Sookey dead-o.
Him a-wuk
him a-wuk
till 'e bleed-o
him a-wuk
60 him a-wuk
till 'e bleed-o
Sookey dead
Sookey dead
Sookey dead-o
65 Sookey dead
Sookey dead
Sookey dead-o ...

1 9 6 9

G R E G O R Y C O R S O

1930-2001

Marriage

Should I get married? Should I be good?

Astound the girl next door with my velvet suit and faustus
hood?1

Don't take her to movies but to cemeteries

1. The legendary Faust, a medieval alchemist, sold his soul to the Devil. He gained not only knowledge and power but renewed youth and attractiveness to young women.

1 8 0 8 / G R E G O R Y C O R S O

tell all about werewolf bathtubs and forked clarinets

5 then desire her and kiss her and all the preliminaries

and she going just so far and I understanding why

not getting angry saying You must feel! It's beautiful to feel!

Instead take her in my arms lean against an old crooked
tombstone

and woo her the entire night the constellations in the sky—

io When she introduces me to her parents

back straightened, hair finally combed, strangled by a tie,

should I sit knees together on their 3rd degree sofa

and not ask Where's the bathroom?

How else to feel other than I am,

is often thinking Flash Gordon² soap—

O how terrible it must be for a young man

seated before a family and the family thinking

We never saw him before! He wants our Mary Lou!

After tea and homemade cookies they ask What do you do for
a living?

20 Should I tell them? Would they like me then?

Say All right get married, we're losing a daughter

but we're gaining a son—

And should I then ask Where's the bathroom?

O God, and the wedding! All her family and her friends

25 and only a handful of mine all scroungy and bearded

just wait to get at the drinks and food—

And the priest! he looking at me as if I masturbated
asking me Do you take this woman for your lawful wedded
wife?

And I trembling what to say say Pie Glue!

30 I kiss the bride all those corny men slapping me on the back
She's all yours, boy! Ha-ha-ha!

And in their eyes you could see some obscene honeymoon
going on—

Then all that absurd rice and clanky cans and shoes

Niagara Falls! Hordes of us! Husbands! Wives! Flowers!
Chocolates!

35 All streaming into cozy hotels

All going to do the same thing tonight

The indifferent clerk he knowing what was going to happen

The lobby zombies they knowing what

The whistling elevator man he knowing

40 The winking bellboy knowing

Everybody knowing! I'd be almost inclined not to do
anything!

Stay up all night! Stare that hotel clerk in the eye!

Screaming: I deny honeymoon! I deny honeymoon!

running rampant into those almost climactic suites

45 yelling Radio belly! Cat shovel!

O I d live in Niagara forever! in a dark cave beneath the Falls

I'd sit there the Mad Honeymooner

devising ways to break marriages, a scourge of bigamy

a saint of divorce—

2. A 1930s science fiction “space opera” that first appeared as
a comic strip, then as popular radio and movie serials.

M A R R I A G E / 1 8 0 9

50 But I should get married I should be good
How nice it'd be to come home to her
and sit by the fireplace and she in the kitchen
aproned young and lovely wanting my baby
and so happy about me she burns the roast beef
55 and comes crying to me and I get up from my big papa
chair
saying Christmas teeth! Radiant brains! Apple deaf!
God what a husband I'd make! Yes, I should get married!
So much to do! like sneaking into Mr Jones' house late at
night
and cover his golf clubs with 1920 Norwegian books
60 Like hanging a picture of Rimbaud³ on the lawnmower
like pasting Tannu Tuva postage stamps⁴ all over the picket
fence
like when Mrs Kindhead comes to collect for the Community
Chest
grab her and tell her There are unfavorable omens in the sky!
And when the mayor comes to get my vote tell him
65 When are you going to stop people killing whales!
And when the milkman comes leave him a note in the bottle
Penguin dust, bring me penguin dust, I want penguin dust—
Yet if I should get married and it's Connecticut and snow
and she gives birth to a child and I am sleepless, worn,
70 up for nights, head bowed against a quiet window, the past
behind
me,
finding myself in the most common of situations a trembling
man

knowledged with responsibility not twig-smear nor Roman
coin soup—

O what would that be like!

Surely I'd give it for a nipple a rubber Tacitus⁵

75 For a rattle a bag of broken Bach records

Tack Della Francesca⁶ all over its crib

Sew the Greek alphabet on its bib

And build for its playpen a roofless Parthenon

No, I doubt I'd be that kind of father

so Not rural not snow no quiet window

but hot smelly tight New York City

seven flights up, roaches and rats in the walls

a fat Reichian⁷ wife screeching over potatoes Get a job!

And five nose running brats in love with Batman

85 And the neighbors all toothless and dry haired

like those hag masses of the 18th century

all wanting to come in and watch TV

The landlord wants his rent

Grocery store Blue Cross Gas & Electric Knights of Columbus

90 Impossible to lie back and dream Telephone snow, ghost
parking—

No! I should not get married I should never get married!

But—imagine If I were married to a beautiful sophisticated
woman

3. Arthur Rimbaud (1854-1891), French Sym-

6. Piero della Francesca (ca. 1420—1492), Italian
bolist poet.

painter. Johann Sebastian Bach (1685—1750),

4. Collector's items issued by this Siberian repub-

German composer.

lic located on the border between Russia and Mon-

7. Wilhelm Reich (1897-1957) founded a contro-
golia.

versial school of psychiatry that emphasized love

5. Cornelius Tacitus (ca. 56—120), Roman histo-
and sexual pleasure as the basis of mental health.

rian; punning on *tacitus*, Latin for “silent.”

1 8 1 0 / T E D H U G H E S

**tall a n d p a l e w e a r i n g a n e l e g a n t b l a c k d r e s s a
n d l o n g b l a c k g l o v e s h o l d i n g a c i g a r e t t e h o l d
e r i n o n e h a n d a n d a h i g h b a l l i n t h e o t h e r 9 5 a n d
w e l i v e d h i g h u p i n a p e n t h o u s e w i t h a h u g e w i n
d o w f r o m w h i c h w e c o u l d s e e a l l o f N e w Y o r k a
n d e v e r f a r t h e r o n c l e a r e r d a y s**

**N o , c a n ’ t i m a g i n e m y s e l f m a r r i e d t o t h a t p l e a s a
n t p r i s o n d r e a m —**

0 b u t w h a t a b o u t l o v e ? I f o r g e t l o v e

n o t t h a t I a m i n c a p a b l e o f l o v e

**1 0 0 i t ’ s j u s t t h a t I s e e l o v e a s o d d a s w e a r i n g s h o e
s —**

**1 n e v e r w a n t e d t o m a r r y a g i r l w h o w a s l i k e m y m
o t h e r A n d I n g r i d B e r g m a n 8 w a s a l w a y s i m p o s s
i b l e**

**A n d t h e r e ’ s m a y b e a g i r l n o w b u t s h e ’ s a l r e a d y
m a r r i e d**

A n d I d o n ’ t l i k e m e n a n d —

1 0 5 b u t t h e r e ’ s g o t t o b e s o m e b o d y !

**B e c a u s e w h a t i f I ’ m 6 0 y e a r s o l d a n d n o t m a r r i e d ,
a l l a l o n e i n a f u r n i s h e d r o o m w i t h p e e s t a i n s o n
m y u n d e r w e a r a n d e v e r y b o d y e l s e i s m a r r i e d !
A l l t h e u n i v e r s e m a r r i e d b u t m e !**

**A h , yet we ll I k n o w t h a t w e r e a w o m a n p o s s i b l e
e a s I a m p o s s i b l e 110 t h e n m a r r i a g e w o u l d b e p o
s s i b l e —**

**L i k e S H E i n h e r l o n e l y a l i e n g a u d 9 w a i t i n g h
e r E g y p t i a n l o v e r s o I w a i t — b e r e f t o f 2 , 0 0 0 y e a r s
a n d t h e b a t h o f l i f e .**

1 9 6 0

T E D H U G H E S

1930-1998

The Thought-Fox

I i m a g i n e t h i s m i d n i g h t m o m e n t ' s f o r e s t :

S o m e t h i n g e l s e i s a l i v e

B e s i d e t h e c l o c k ' s l o n e l i n e s s

A n d t h i s b l a n k p a g e w h e r e m y f i n g e r s m o v e .

5 T h r o u g h t h e w i n d o w I s e e n o s t a r :

S o m e t h i n g m o r e n e a r

T h o u g h d e e p e r w i t h i n d a r k n e s s

I s e n t e r i n g t h e l o n e l i n e s s :

C o l d , d e l i c a t e l y a s t h e d a r k s n o w ,

i o A f o x ' s n o s e t o u c h e s t w i g , l e a f ;

T w o e y e s s e r v e a m o v e m e n t , t h a t n o w

A n d a g a i n n o w , a n d n o w , a n d n o w

8. Swedish actor (1915—1982) in American films,
novel of this title, “She” gains eternal youth by
known for her beauty.

bathing in a pillar of flame and waits thousands of

9. Showy clothing. In H. Rider Haggard’s 1887
years for the return of her lover.

W I N D / 1 8 1 1

Sets neat prints into the snow
Between trees, and warily a lame
15 Shadow lags by stump and in hollow
Of a body that is bold to come
Across clearings, an eye,
A widening deepening greenness,
Brilliantly, concentratedly,
20 Coming about its own business
Till, with a sudden sharp hot stink of fox
It enters the dark hole of the head.
The window is starless still; the clock ticks,
The page is printed.

1 9 5 7

Wind

This house has been far out at sea all night,
The woods crashing through darkness, the booming hills,
Winds stampeding the fields under the window
Floundering black astride and blinding wet
5 Till day rose; then under an orange sky
The hills had new places, and wind wielded
Blade-light, luminous and emerald,
Flexing like the lens of a mad eye.
At noon I scaled along the house-side as far as
io The coal-house door. I dared once to look up—
Through the brunt wind that dented the balls of my eyes
The tent of the hills drummed and strained its guyrope,
The fields quivering, the skyline a grimace,
At any second to bang and vanish with a flap:

15 The wind flung a magpie away and a black-
Back gull bent like an iron bar slowly. The house
Rang like some fine green goblet in the note
That any second would shatter it. Now deep
In chairs, in front of the great fire, we grip
20 Our hearts and cannot entertain book, thought,
Or each other. We watch the fire blazing,
And feel the roots of the house move, but sit on,
Seeing the window tremble to come in,
Hearing the stones cry out under the horizons.

1 9 5 7

1 8 1 2 / T E D H U G H E S

Pike

Pike, three inches long, perfect
Pike in all parts, green tigering the gold.
Killers from the egg: the malevolent aged grin.
They dance on the surface among the flies.
Or move, stunned by their own grandeur,
Over a bed of emerald, silhouette
Of submarine delicacy and horror.
A hundred feet long in their world.
In ponds, under the heat-struck lily pads—
Gloom of their stillness:
Logged on last year's black leaves, watching upwards.
Or hung in an amber cavern of weeds
The jaws' hooked clamp and fangs
Not to be changed at this date;
A life subdued to its instrument;

The gills kneading quietly, and the pectorals.
Three we kept behind glass,
Jungled in weed: three inches, four,
And four and a half: fed fry^o to them— *young fish*
Suddenly there were two. Finally one
With a sag belly and the grin it was born with.
And indeed they spare nobody.
Two, six pounds each, over two feet long,
High and dry and dead in the willow-herb—
One jammed past its gills down the other's gullet:
The outside eye stared: as a vice locks—
The same iron in this eye
Though its film shrank in death.
A pond I fished, fifty yards across,
Whose lilies and muscular tench¹
Had outlasted every visible stone
Of the monastery that planted them—
Stilled legendary depth:
It was as deep as England. It held
Pike too immense to stir, so immense and old
That past nightfall I dared not cast
1. Variety of freshwater fish.

EXAMINATION AT THE WOMB - DOOR / 18
13

But silently cast and fished
With the hair frozen on my head
For what might move, for what eye might move.
40 The still splashes on the dark pond,

Owls hushing the floating woods
Frail on my ear against the dream
Darkness beneath night's darkness had freed,
That rose slowly towards me, watching.

1 9 5 9 , 1 9 6 0

Theology

No, the serpent did not
Seduce Eve to the apple.²

All that's simply
Corruption of the facts.

5 Adam ate the apple.

Eve ate Adam.

The serpent ate Eve.

This is the dark intestine.

The serpent, meanwhile,
io Sleeps his meal off in Paradise—

Smiling to hear

God's querulous calling.

1 9 6 7

Examination at the Womb-Door³

Who owns these scrawny little feet? *Death.*

Who owns this bristly scorched-looking face? *Death.*

Who owns these still-working lungs? *Death.*

Who owns this utility coat of muscles? *Death.*

5 Who owns these unspeakable guts? *Death.*

Who owns these questionable brains? *Death.*

All this messy blood? *Death.*

These minimum-efficiency eyes? *Death.*

This wicked little tongue? *Death.*

io This occasional wakefulness? *Death.*

Given, stolen, or held pending trial?

Held.

2. Cf. Genesis 3.

3. The demonic hero of the Crow myth is interrogated by an unidentified questioner.

1 8 1 4 /

T E D H U G H E S

Who owns the whole rainy, stony earth? *Death.*

Who owns all of space? *Death.*

15 Who is stronger than hope? *Death.*

Who is stronger than the will? *Death.*

Stronger than love? *Death.*

Stronger than life? *Death.*

But who is stronger than death?

Me, evidently.

20 Pass, Crow.

1 9 7 0

Daffodils

Remember how we4 picked the daffodils?

Nobody else remembers, but I remember.

Your daughter came with her armfuls, eager and happy.

Helping the harvest. She has forgotten.

5 She cannot even remember you. And we sold them.

It sounds like sacrilege, but we sold them.

Were we so poor? Old Stoneman, the grocer,

Boss-eyed, his blood-pressure purpling to beetroot5

(It was his last chance,
io He would die in the same great freeze as you),
He persuaded us. Every Spring
He always bought them, sevenpence a dozen,
“A custom of the house”.
Besides, we still weren’t sure we wanted to own
15 Anything. Mainly we were hungry
To convert everything to profit.
Still nomads—still strangers
To our whole possession. The daffodils
Were incidental gilding of the deeds.⁶
20 Treasure trove. They simply came,
And they kept on coming.
As if not from the sod but falling from heaven.
Our lives were still a raid on our own good luck.
We knew we’d live for ever. We had not learned
25 What a fleeting glance of the everlasting
Daffodils are. Never identified
The nuptial flight of the rarest ephemera⁷—
Our own days!
We thought they were a windfall.
30 Never guessed they were a last blessing.
So we sold them. We worked at selling them

4. Hughes is addressing his first wife, the American poet Sylvia Plath (1932-1963; see pp. 1836-45), who committed suicide during London’s

house.

coldest winter in the twentieth century.

7. Insect that lives only a few days.

P L A T F O R M O N E / 1 8 1 5

As if employed on somebody else's

Flower-farm. You bent at it

In the rain of that April—your last April.

35 We bent there together, among the soft shrieks

Of their jostled stems, the wet shocks shaken

Of their girlish dance-frocks—

Fresh-opened dragonflies, wet and flimsy,

Opened too early.

40 We piled their frailty lights on a carpenter's bench,

Distributed leaves among the dozens—

Buckling blade-leaves, limber, groping for air, zinc-silvered—

Propped their raw butts in bucket water,

Their oval, meaty butts,

45 And sold them, sevenpence a bunch—

Wind-wounds, spasms from the dark earth,

With their odourless metals,

A flamy purification of the deep grave's stony cold

As if ice had a breath—

50 We sold them, to wither.

The crop thickened faster than we could thin it.

Finally, we were overwhelmed

And we lost our wedding-present scissors.

Every March since they have lifted again

55 Out of the same bulbs, the same

Baby-cries from the thaw,
Ballerinas too early for music, shiverers
In the draughty wings of the year.
On that same groundswell of memory, fluttering
60 They return to forget you stooping there
Behind the rainy curtains of a dark April,
Snipping their stems.
But somewhere your scissors remember. Wherever they are.
Here somewhere, blades wide open,
65 April by April
Sinking deeper
Through the sod—an anchor, a cross of rust.

1 9 9 8

Platform One⁸

Holiday squeals, as if all were scrambling for their lives,
Panting aboard the “Cornish Riviera”.⁹

8. On platform number one of London’s Padding-
their Lives for King and Country” in the World
ton Station, Charles Sargeant Jagger’s larger-than-
Wars of 1914-18 and 1939-45.

life-size bronze statue of the soldier described in

9. Coastal resort of south Cornwall. Here, the
this poem stands as a memorial to the “Men and
name of a steam locomotive.

Women of the Great Western Railway who gave

1 8 1 6 / G A R Y S N Y D E R

Then overflow of relief and luggage and children,
Then ducking to smile out as the station moves.

5 Out there on the platform, under the rain,
Under his rain-cape, helmet and full pack,
Somebody, head bowed reading something,
Doesn't know he's missing his train.
He's completely buried in that book.
10 He's forgotten utterly where he is.
He's forgotten Paddington, forgotten
Timetables, forgotten the long, rocking
Cradle of a journey into the golden West,
The coach's soft wingbeat—as light
is And straight as a dove's flight.
Like a graveyard statue sentry cast
In blackened old bronze. Is he reading poems?
A letter? The burial service? The raindrops
Beaded along his helmet rim are bronze.
20 The words on his page are bronze. Their meanings bronze.
Sunk in his bronze world he stands, enchanted.
His bronze mind is deep among the dead.
Sunk so deep among the dead that, much
As he would like to remember us all, he cannot.

1 9 9 6

GARY SNYDER

b. 1930

Above Pate Valley¹

We finished clearing the last

Section of trail by noon,

High on the ridge-side

Two thousand feet above the creek

5 Reached the pass, went on
Beyond the white pine groves,
Granite shoulders, to a small
Green meadow watered by the snow,
Edged with Aspen—sun
io Straight high and blazing
But the air was cool.

1. In Yosemite National Park.

FOUR POEMS FOR ROBIN / 1817

Ate a cold fried trout in the
Trembling shadows. I spied
A glitter, and found a flake
15 Black volcanic glass-obsidian—
By a flower. Hands and knees
Pushing the Bear grass, thousands
Of arrowhead leavings over a
Hundred yards. Not one good
20 Head, just razor flakes
On a hill snowed all but summer,
A land of fat summer deer,
They came to camp. On their
Own trails. I followed my own
25 Trail here. Picked up the cold-drill,
Pick, singlejack,² and sack
Of dynamite.

Ten thousand years.

1959

Four Poems for Robin

*Siwashing it out once in Siuslaw Forest*³

I slept under rhododendron
All night blossoms fell
Shivering on a sheet of cardboard
Feet stuck in my pack
5 Hands deep in my pockets
Barely able to sleep.
I remembered when we were in school
Sleeping together in a big warm bed
We were the youngest lovers
io When we broke up we were still nineteen.
Now our friends are married
You teach school back east
I dont mind living this way
Green hills the long blue beach
15 But sometimes sleeping in the open
I think back when I had you.

*A spring night in Shokoku-ji*⁴

Eight years ago this May
We walked under cherry blossoms
At night in an orchard in Oregon.

2. Short-handled hammer used, with the other with light equipment, roughing it.

tools, to cut holes in solid rock for dynamite. 4. Fourteenth-century Zen monastery in Kyoto 3. West of Eugene, Oregon.
Siwashing: camping (once the capital of Japan).

1 8 1 8 / G A R Y S N Y D E R

20 All that I wanted then
Is forgotten now, but you.

Here in the night
In a garden of the old capital
I feel the trembling ghost of Yugao⁵
25 I remember your cool body
Naked under a summer cotton dress.

An autumn morning in Shokoku-ji

Last night watching the Pleiades,⁶
Breath smoking in the moonlight,
Bitter memory like vomit
30 Choked my throat.
I unrolled a sleeping bag
On mats on the porch
Under thick autumn stars.

In dream you appeared
35 (Three times in nine years)
Wild, cold, and accusing.
I woke shamed and angry:
The pointless wars of the heart.
Almost dawn. Venus and Jupiter.⁷

40 The first time I have
Ever seen them close.

December at Yases

You said, that October,
In the tall dry grass by the orchard
When you chose to be free,
45 “Again someday, maybe ten years.”
After college I saw you
One time. You were strange.

And I was obsessed with a plan.

Now ten years and more have

50 Gone by: I've always known

where you were—

I might have gone to you

Hoping to win your love back.

You still are single.

5. In the Japanese novel *Genji monogatori* (*The*

6. A cluster of stars in the constellation Taurus;

Tale of Genji), written between 1001 and 1006,

named after the seven daughters of Atlas, in Greek

Murasaki-no-Shikibu (Lady Murasaki) recounts

mythology.

the amorous exploits of the young Prince Genji.

7. Snyder both names the plants and alludes to

Genji has a brief liaison with a young woman,

the Roman gods (Venus, goddess of love and

Yugao, who dies suddenly and mysteriously. After

beauty; Jupiter, ruler of all the gods).

happening upon a dress of hers, he writes a poem.

8. Near northeast Kyoto.

I N S T R U C T I O N S / 1 8 1 9

55 I didn't.

I thought I must make it alone. I

Have done that.

Only in dream, like this dawn,

Does the grave, awed intensity

60 Of our young love

Return to my mind, to my flesh.

We had what the others

All crave and seek for;

We left it behind at nineteen.

65 I feel ancient, as though I had

Lived many lives.

And may never now know

If I am a fool

Or have done what my

70 karma demands.

1 9 6 8

Instructions

Fuel filler cap

—haven't I seen this before? The

sunlight under the eaves, mottled

shadow, on the knurled rim of *milled*

5 dull silver metal.

Oil filler cap

bright yellow,

horns like a snail

—the oil's down there—

io amber, clean, it

falls back to its pit.

Oil drain plug

so short, from in to out. Best

let it drain when it is hot.

15 Engine switch

off, on. Off, on. Just

two places. Forever,

or, not even one.

1 9 9 6

1 8 2 0

D E R E K W A L C O T T

b. 1930

A Far Cry from Africa

A wind is ruffling the tawny pelt

Of Africa. Kikuyu,¹ quick as flies,

Batten upon the bloodstreams of the veldt.²

Corpses are scattered through a paradise.

5 Only the worm, colonel of carrion, cries:

“Waste no compassion on these separate dead!”

Statistics justify and scholars seize

The salients of colonial policy.

What is that to the white child hacked in bed?

io To savages, expendable as Jews?

Threshed out by beaters,³ the long rushes break

In a white dust of ibises whose cries

Have wheeled since civilization’s dawn

From the parched river or beast-teeming plain.

15

The violence of beast on beast is read

As natural law, but upright man

Seeks his divinity by inflicting pain.

Delirious as these worried beasts, his wars

Dance to the tightened carcass of a drum,

20

While he calls courage still that native dread
Of the white peace contracted by the dead.
Again brutish necessity wipes its hands
Upon the napkin of a dirty cause, again
A waste of our compassion, as with Spain,⁴
25 The gorilla wrestles with the superman.
I who am poisoned with the blood of both,
Where shall I turn, divided to the vein?
I who have cursed
The drunken officer of British rule, how choose
30 Between this Africa and the English tongue I love?
Betray them both, or give back what they give?
How can I face such slaughter and be cool?
How can I turn from Africa and live?

1 9 6 2

1. An east African tribe whose members, as Mau
Batten: feed gluttonously.

Mau fighters, conducted an eight-year campaign

3. In big-game hunting, people are hired to beat
of violent resistance against British colonial set-
the brush, driving birds—such as ibises (line 12)—
tlers in Kenya.

and other animals into the open.

2. Grassland, usually with some trees and shrubs.

4. The Spanish Civil War (1936-39).

THE GLORY TRUMPETER / 1 8 2 1

Nights in the Gardens of Port of Spain⁵

Night, the black summer, simplifies her smells

into a village; she assumes the impenetrable
musk of the negro, grows secret as sweat,
her alleys odorous with shucked oyster shells,
5 coals of gold oranges, braziers of melon.
Commerce and tambourines increase her heat.
Hellfire or the whorehouse: crossing Park Street,
a surf of sailors' faces crests, is gone
with the sea's phosphorescence; the boites-de-nuit⁶
10 tinkle like fireflies in her thick hair.
Blinded by headlamps, deaf to taxi klaxons,^{0 horns}
she lifts her face from the cheap, pitch oil flare
towards white stars, like cities, flashing neon,
burning to be the bitch she must become.
15 As daylight breaks the coolie turns his tumbri⁷
of hacked, beheaded coconuts towards home.

1 9 6 4

The Glory Trumpeter
Old Eddie's face, wrinkled with river lights,
Looked like a Mississippi man's. The eyes,
Derisive and avuncular at once,
Swivelling, fixed me. They'd seen
5 Too many wakes, too many cathouse nights.
The bony, idle fingers on the valves
Of his knee-cradled horn could tear
Through "Georgia on My Mind" or "Jesus Saves"
With the same fury of indifference,
io If what propelled such frenzy was despair.
Now, as the eyes sealed in the ashen flesh,

And Eddie, like a deacon at his prayer,
Rose, tilting the bright horn, I saw a flash
Of gulls and pigeons from the dunes of coal
5. Capital of Trinidad, British West Indies.
7. Open cart used during the French Revolution
6. Nightclubs (French).
to carry condemned people to the guillotine.

1 8 2 2 / D E R E K W A L C O T T

15 Near my grandmother's barracks on the wharves,
I saw the sallow faces of those men
Who sighed as if they spoke into their graves
About the Negro in America. That was when
The Sunday comics sprawled out on her floor,
20 Sent from the States, had a particular odour,
A smell of money mingled with man's sweat.
And yet, if Eddie's features held our fate,
Secure in childhood I did not know then
A jesus-ragtime or gut-bucket blues
25 To the bowed heads of lean, compliant men
Back from the States in their funereal serge,
Black, rusty Homburgs⁸ and limp waiters' ties
With honey accents and lard-coloured eyes
Was Joshua's ram's horn wailing for the Jews
30 Of patient bitterness or bitter siege.⁹
Now it was that as Eddie turned his back
On our young crowd out feteing, swilling liquor,
And blew, eyes closed, one foot up, out to sea,
His horn aimed at those cities of the Gulf,

35 Mobile and Galveston and sweetly meted
The horn of plenty through a bitter cup,
In lonely exaltation blaming me
For all whom race and exile have defeated,
For my own uncle in America,
40 That living there I never could look up.

1 9 6 4

The Gulf

[F O R J A C K A N D B A R B A R A H A R R I S O N]

I

The airport coffee tastes less of America.
Sour, unshaven, dreading the exertion
of tightening, racked nerves fuelled with liquor,
some smoky, resinous Bourbon,
5 the body, buckling at its casket hole,
a roar like last night's blast racing its engines,
watches the fumes of the exhausted soul
as the trans-Texas jet, screeching, begins
its flight and friends diminish. So, to be aware
8. Old-fashioned, felt hats. *Funereal serge*: cheap, 9. At the
fall of the city of Jericho (Joshua 6.1 —
dark suits. 21).

T H E G U L F / 1 8 2 3

10 of the divine union the soul detaches
itself from created things.' "We're in the air,"
the Texan near me grins. All things: these matches
from LBJ's2 campaign hotel, this rose
given me at dawn in Austin by a child,

is this book of fables by Borges,³ its prose
a stalking, moonlit tiger. What was willed
on innocent, sun-streaked Dallas,⁴ the beast's claw
curled round that hairspring rifle is revealed
on every page as lunacy or feral law;
20 circling that wound we leave Love Field.⁵
Fondled, these objects conjure hotels,
quarrels, new friendships, brown limbs
nakedly moulded as these autumn hills
memory penetrates as the jet climbs
25 the new clouds over Texas; their home means
an island suburb, forest, mountain water;
they are the simple properties for scenes
whose joy exhausts like grief, scenes where we learn,
exchanging the least gifts, this rose, this napkin,
30 that those we love are objects we return,
that this lens on the desert's wrinkled skin
has priced our flesh, all that we love in pawn
to that brass ball, that the gifts, multiplying
clutter and choke the heart, and that I shall
35 watch love reclaim its things as I lie dying.
My very flesh and blood! Each seems a petal
shrivelling from its core. I watch them burn,
by the nerves' flare I catch their skeletal
candour! Best never to be born
40 the great dead cry.⁶ Their works shine on our shelves,
by twilight tour their gilded gravestone spines,
and read until the lamplit page revolves

1. With reference to the Neoplatonic doctrine
man of letters, best-known for his short stories.

that earthly relationships and attachments con-

4. With an allusion to the assassination there of
tminate the striving for spiritual union with God;
President John F. Kennedy, November 22, 1963.

in contrast to the teaching that divine love is man-

5. The Dallas airport.

ifested in the created world and in human rela-

6. E.g., in Sophocles, *Oedipus at Colonus*: “Not to
tionships.

be born surpasses thought and speech. / The sec-

2. Lyndon Baines Johnson (1906-1973), thirty-
ond best is to have seen the light / And then to go
sixth president of the United States.

back quickly whence we came.”

3. Jorge Luis Borges (1899-1986), Argentinian

1 8 2 4 / D E R E K W A L C O T T

to a white stasis⁰ whose detachment shines *stillness*
like a propeller’s rainbowed radiance.

45 Circling like us; no comfort for their loves!

II

The cold glass darkens. Elizabeth wrote once
that we make glass the image of our pain;

I watch clouds boil past the cold, sweating pane
above the Gulf. All styles yearn to be plain

50 as life. The face of the loved object under glass
is plainer still. Yet, somehow, at this height,

above this cauldron boiling with its wars,
our old earth, breaking to familiar light,
that cloud-bound mummy with self-healing scars
55 peeled of her cerements⁰ again looks new; *grave clothes*
some cratered valley heals itself with sage,
through that grey, fading massacre a blue
light-hearted creek flutes of some seige
to the amnesia of drumming water.

60 Their cause is crystalline: the divine union
of these detached, divided States, whose slaughter
darkens each summer now, as one by one,
the smoke of bursting ghettos clouds the glass
down every coast where filling-station signs
65 proclaim the Gulf, an air, heavy with gas,
sickens the state, from Newark to New Orleans.

III

Yet the South felt like home. Wrought balconies,
the sluggish river with its tidal drawl,
the tropic air charged with the extremities
70 of patience, a heat heavy with oil,
canebrakes, that legendary jazz. But fear
thickened my voice, that strange, familiar soil
prickled and barbed the texture of my hair,
my status as a secondary soul.

75 The Gulf, your gulf, is daily widening,
each blood-red rose warns of that coming night
when there's no rock cleft to go hidin' in⁷
and all the rocks catch fire, when that black might,

7. A reference to the hymn that begins “Rock of Ages, cleft for me, / Let me hide myself in thee.” The

“rock” signifies Christ, “cleft” in his Crucifixion.

T H E S C H O O N E R *FLIGHT* / 1 8 2 5

their stalking, moonless panthers turn from Him

80 whose voice they can no more believe, when the black X’s8
mark their passover with slain seraphim.9

IV

The Gulf shines, dull as lead. The coast of Texas

glints like a metal rim. I have no home

as long as summer bubbling to its head

85 boils for that day when in the Lord God’s name

the coals of fire are heaped upon the head

of all whose gospel is the whip and flame,

age after age, the uninstrucing dead.

1 9 6 9

From The Schooner Flight

I Adios, Carenage!

In idle August, while the sea soft,

and leaves of brown islands stick to the rim

of this Caribbean, I blow out the light

by the dreamless face of Maria Concepcion

5 to ship as a seaman on the schooner *Flight*.

Out in the yard turning grey in the dawn,

I stood like a stone and nothing else move

but the cold sea rippling like galvanize

and the nail holes of stars in the sky roof,

io till a wind start to interfere with the trees.

I pass me dry neighbour sweeping she yard
as I went downhill, and I nearly said:
“Sweep soft, you witch, ‘cause she don’t sleep hard,”
but the bitch look through me like I was dead.

15 A route taxi pull up, park-lights still on.

The driver size up my bags with a grin:

“This time, Shabine, like you really gone!”

I ain’t answer the ass, I simply pile in

the back seat and watch the sky burn

20 above Laventille² pink as the gown

in which the woman I left was sleeping,

and I look in the rearview and see a man

exactly like me, and the man was weeping

for the houses, the streets, the whole fucking island.

25 Christ have mercy on all sleeping things!

From that dog rotting down Wrightson Road

8. Such as Malcolm X, the Black Muslim leader,

onto land, especially for cleaning or repairing; the

assassinated February 21, 1965, and the Black

name of a port in Trinidad, west of Port of Spain.

Panthers, a militant black organization.

Adios: goodbye (Spanish).

9. Angels of the highest order.

2. Hilly, low-income suburb east of Port of Spain.

1. Careening (French), or the pulling of a ship

1 8 2 6 / D E R E K W A L C O T T

to when I was a dog on these streets;

if loving these islands must be my load,

out of corruption my soul takes wings,
But they had started to poison my soul
with their big house, big car, big-time bohbohl,³
coolie, nigger, Syrian, and French Creole,
so I leave it for them and their carnival—
I taking a sea-bath, I gone down the road.
I know these islands from Monos to Nassau,
a rusty head sailor with sea-green eyes
that they nickname Shabine, the patois⁰ for *spoken dialect*
any red nigger, and I, Shabine, saw
when these slums of empire was paradise.
I'm just a red nigger who love the sea,
I had a sound colonial education,
I have Dutch, nigger, and English in me,
and either I'm nobody, or I'm a nation.
But Maria Concepcion was all my thought
watching the sea heaving up and down
as the port side of dories, schooners, and yachts
was painted afresh by the strokes of the sun
signing her name with every reflection;
I knew when dark-haired evening put on
her bright silk at sunset, and, folding the sea,
sidled under the sheet with her starry laugh,
that there'd be no rest, there'd be no forgetting.
Is like telling mourners round the graveside
about resurrection, they want the dead back,
so I smile to myself as the bow rope untied
and the *Flight* swing seaward: "Is no use repeating

that the sea have more fish. I ain't want her
dressed in the sexless light of a seraph,⁰ *angel*
I want those round brown eyes like a marmoset,⁴ and
till the day when I can lean back and laugh,
those claws that tickled my back on sweating
Sunday afternoons, like a crab on wet sand.”
As I worked, watching the rotting waves come
past the bow that scissor the sea like silk,
I swear to you all, by my mother's milk,
by the stars that shall fly from tonight's furnace,
that I loved them, my children, my wife, my home;
I loved them as poets love the poetry
that kills them, as drowned sailors the sea.
You ever look up from some lonely beach
and see a far schooner? Well, when I write
this poem, each phrase go be soaked in salt;
I go draw and knot every line as tight
as ropes in this rigging; in simple speech

3. Or *hohol*: corruption by highly placed people 4. South
American monkey.

(Eastern Caribbean English).

O M E R O S / 1 8 2 7

75 my common language go be the wind,
my pages the sails of the schooner *Flight*.

1 9 7 9

Midsummer

Certain things here⁵ are quietly American—
that chain-link fence dividing the absent roars

of the beach from the empty ball park, its holes
muttering the word umpire instead of empire;
5 the gray, metal light where an early pelican
coasts, with its engine off, over the pink fire
of a sea whose surface is as cold as Maine's.
The light warms up the sides of white, eager Cessnas⁶
parked at the airstrip under the freckling hills
io of St. Thomas. The sheds, the brown, functional hangar,
are like those of the Occupation in the last war.
The night left a rank smell under the casuarinas,⁷
the villas have fenced-off beaches where the natives walk,
illegal immigrants from unlucky islands
15 who envy the smallest polyp its right to work.
Here the wetback crab and the mollusc are citizens,
and the leaves have green cards. Bulldozers jerk
and gouge out a hill, but we all know that the dust
is industrial and must be suffered. Soon—
20 the sea's corrugations are sheets of zinc
soldered by the sun's steady acetylene. This
drizzle that falls now is American rain,
stitching stars in the sand. My own corpuscles
are changing as fast. I fear what the migrant envies:
25 the starry pattern they make—the flag on the post office—
the quality of the dirt, the fealty changing under my foot.

1 9 8 4

*From Omeros*⁸

Chapter XXXVIII

HI

Who decrees a great epoch? The meridian of Greenwich.⁹

Who doles out our zeal, and in which way lies our

hope? In the cobbles of sinister Shoreditch,¹

5. I.e., in Trinidad.

claims for the “great epoch” of their empire, bit-

6. Make of small aircraft.

terly juxtaposing “our” Caribbean experience of

7. Trees with jointed branches.

exploitation with the experience of the exploiting

8. *Omeros* (the Greek name for Homer) is a book-imperialists.

length epic poem that transposes elements of

9. The system of geographic longitude was worked

Homer’s *Iliad* and *Odyssey* from the Aegean to the

out in London’s Royal Observatory, beside the river

Caribbean. Walcott’s principal subject—like

Thames at Greenwich. The prime meridian, or lon-

Homer’s—is the history of his people, and in this

gitude 0°, passes through the Observatory.

chapter the poem’s narrator questions British

1. District, for many centuries a slum, in London’s

1828 / D E R E K W A L C O T T

in the widening rings of Big Ben’s iron flower,²

5 in the barges chained like our islands to the Thames.
Where is the alchemical corn and the light it yields?
Where, in which stones of the Abbey, are incised our names?3
Who defines our delight? St. Martin-in-the-Fields.4
After every Michaelmas,5 its piercing soprano steeple
10 defines our delight. Within whose palatable vault
will echo the Saints' litany of our island people?
St. Paul's salt shaker,6 when we are worth their salt.
Stand by the tilted crosses of well-quiet Glen-da-Lough.7
Follow the rook's crook'd finger to the ivied grange.8
15 As black as the rook is, it comes from a higher stock.
Who screams out our price? The crows of the Corn
Exchange.9
Where are the pleasant pastures? A green baize-table.1
Who invests in our happiness? The Chartered Tour.
Who will teach us a history of which we too are capable?
20 The red double-decker's view of the Bloody Tower.2
When are our brood, like the sparrows, a public nuisance?
When they screech at the sinuous swans on the Serpentine.3
The swans are royally protected,4 but in whose hands
are the black crusts of our children? In the pointing sign
25 under the harps of the willows, to the litter of Margate
Sands.5
What has all this to do with the price of fish, our salary
tidally scanned with the bank-rate by waxworks tellers?6
Where is the light of the world?7 In the National Gallery.
In Palladian Wren. In the City8 that can buy and sell us
30 the packets of tea stirred with our crystals of sweat.
East End.

2. From the upper deck of a London bus one can

2. Famous bell in the Clock Tower of London's see the Bloody Tower (reputedly the site of the Houses of Parliament.

murder of the little princes, Edward V and Rich-

3. Many British poets are commemorated in the ard, duke of York) in the larger complex of the Poets' Corner of Westminster Abbey.

Tower of London.

4. Church, famous for its music, at the edge of

3. Lake in London's Hyde Park.

London's Trafalgar Square.

4. Swans in England are, by tradition, owned by

5. The feast of St. Michael, September 29.

the Crown.

6. The great dome of London's St. Paul's Cathe-

5. Popular seaside resort on the Thames Estuary, dral may be said to resemble a salt shaker (or an or lower end, where it meets the North Sea.

onion, as in line 32).

6. I.e, bank clerks working mechanically.

7. Celtic crosses of the monastic community,

7. Reference to the Pre-Raphaelite painter William Holman Hunt's famous picture of Christ, *The Hills of southern Ireland*.

Light of the World.

8. Country house with attached farm buildings.

8. London's financial district. *Palladian Wren*-. Sir
9. Handsome building in London's Mark Lane,
Christopher Wren (1632-1723), architect of St.
erected in 1828 to be the center of the city's whole-
Paul's Cathedral and many lesser London
sale corn trade.

churches, was a leading exponent of the neoclas-
1. Imitation-felt-covered table for playing bridge,
sical style inaugurated by the Italian architect
craps, roulette, etc.

Andrea Palladio (1508-1580).

C O M M O N S E N S E / 1 8 2 9

**W h e r e is our sublunar⁹ peace? In that sickle sovereign
peeling the gilt from St. Paul's onion silhouette.**

**There is our lunar peace: in the glittering grain
of the coined estuary, our moonlit, immortal wheat,¹
35 its white sail cresting the gradual swell of the Downs,²
startling the hare from the pillars on Salisbury Plain,³
sharpening the grimaces of thin-lipped market towns,
whitewashing the walls of Brixton,⁴ darkening the grain
w h e n coal-shadows cross it. Dark future down darker
street.**

1 9 9 0

ALAN B R O W N J O H N

b. 1931

Common Sense¹

An agricultural labourer, w h o has

A wife and four children, receives 20s² a week.

3 A buy s food , an d th e member s of th e family

Have three meals a day.

5 H o w m u c h is that per person per meal?

—*From Pitman's Common Sense Arithmetic, 1917*

A gardener, paid 24s a week, is

Fin ed 1A if he c o m e s to work late.

At the end of 26 weeks, he receives

io £ 3 0 . 5 . 3 . H o w

O f t e n was he late?

—*From Pitman's Common Sense Arithmetic, 1917*

A milk dealer buys milk at 3d a quart. He

Dilutes it with 3% water and sells

15 124 gallons of the mixture at

4d per quart. H o w m u c h of his profit is made by

Adulterating the milk?

—*From Pitman's Common Sense Arithmetic, 1917*

9. Of the terrestrial world.

“Versification,” p. 2050): “The book and its date

1. Cf. Thomas Treherne, *Centuries of Meditations*

are real, and so are the ‘sum’ stanzas, but I short-

3.3: “The corn was orient and immortal wheat.”

ened, adapted the phrasing to make manageable

2. The South Downs, an area of rolling upland on

lines. Occasionally, the math doesn’t make sense

the English south coast.

as a result of my adaptation.”

3. Stonehenge, prehistoric circle of gigantic

2. s: abbreviation of shilling, coin worth 12d—

standing stones set in the middle of Salisbury
abbreviation of *denarii* (Latin), pennies—offormer
Plain, on the Downs.

British currency. £30.5.3 (line 10) = 30 pounds,

4. District of south London.

5 shillings, and 3 pennies.

1. Brownjohn writes of this “found poem” (see

1 8 3 0 / J A Y M A C P H E R S O N

The table printed below gives the number

20 Of paupers in the United Kingdom, and

The total cost of poor relief.³

Find the average number

Of paupers per ten thousand people.

—*From Pitman’s Common Sense Arithmetic, 1917*

25 An army had to march to the relief of

A besieged town, 5 0 0 miles away, which

Had telegraphed that it could hold out for 18 days.

The army made forced marches at the rate of 18

Miles a day. Would it be there in time?

30 — *From Pitman’s Common Sense Arithmetic, 1917*

Out of an army of 2 8 , 0 0 0 men,

15% were

Killed, 25% were

Wounded. Calculate

35 H o w many men there were left to fight.

—*From Pitman’s Common Sense Arithmetic, 1917*

These sums are offered to

That host of young people in our Elementary Schools, who

**Are so ardently desirous of setting
40 Foot upon the first rung of the
Educational ladder ...**

—*From Pitman's Common Sense Arithmetic, 1917*

1989

J A Y M A C P H E R S O N

b . 1 9 3 1

The Swan

White-habited, the mystic Swan

**Walks her rank0 cloister as the night draws down,
*overgrown***

**In sweet c o m m u n i o n with her sister shade,
Matchless and unassayed.**

5 The tower of ivory sways,

Gaze bends to mirrored gaze:

This perfect arc embraces all her days.

And when she comes to die,

The treasures of her silence patent lie:

io **“I am all that is and was and shall be,**

My garment may no man put by.”

1957

3. Welfare payments.

T H E D I S T A N T F U R Y O F B A T T L E / 1 8 3 1

A Lost Soul

S o m e are plain lucky—we ourselves a m o n g them:

H o u s e s with books, with gardens, all we wanted,

Work we enjoy, with colleagues we feel close t o —

Love we have, even:

**5 True love and candid, faithful, strong as gospel,
Patient, untiring, fond w h e n we are fretful.
Having so m u c h , h o w is it that we ache for
Those darker others?**

**S o m e days for t h e m we could let slip the whole damn
10 Soft bed we've made ourselves, our friends in Heaven
Let slip away, buy back with blood our ancient
Vampires and demons.**

First loves and oldest, what names shall I call you?

Older to me than language, old as breathing,

**15 Born with me, in this flesh: by n o w I know you're
Greed, pride and envy.**

T o o long I've shut you out, denied acquaintance,

Favoured less barefaced vices, hoped to pass for

Reasonable, rate with those w h o more inclined to

20 Self-hurt than murder.

You were my soul: in arrogance I banned you.

N o w I recant—return, possess me, take my

Hands, bind my eyes, infallibly restore my

Share in perdition.

1 9 8 1

G E O F F R E Y H I L L

b. 1932

The Distant Fury of Battle

Grass resurrects to mask, to strangle

Words glossed on stone, lopped stone-angel;

But the dead maintain their ground—

That there's no getting r o u n d —

**5 W h o in places vitally rest,
Named, anonymous; w h o test
Alike the endurance of yews
Laurels, m o o n s h i n e , stone, all tissues;
1 8 3 2 / G E O F F R E Y H I L L**

**With w h o m , under licence and duress,
10 There are pacts made, if not peace.
Union with the stone-wearing dead
Claims the born leader, the prepared
Leader, the devourers and all lean men.
Some, finally, learn to begin.**

**15 S o m e keep to the arrangement of love
(Or similar trust) under w h o s e auspices move
Most subjects, toward the profits of this
Combine of doves and witnesses.**

**Some, dug out of hot-beds, are brought bare,
20 N o t past conceiving but past care.**

1 9 5 5 1 9 5 9

The Guardians

**The young, having risen early, had gone,
S o m e with excursions beyond the bay-mouth,
S o m e toward lakes, a fragile reflected sun.
Thunder-heads drift, awkwardly, from the south;
5 T h e old watch them. They have watched the safe
Packed harbours topple under sudden gales,
Great tides irrupt, yachts burn at the wharf
That on clean seas pitched their effective sails.
There are silences. These, too, they endure:**

**io Soft comings-on; soft aftershocks of calm.
Quietly they wade the disturbed shore;
Gather the dead as the first dead scrape home.**

1 9 5 6 1 9 5 9

September Song

Born 19.6.32—Deported 24.9.421

**Undesirable you may have been, untouchable
you were not. N o t forgotten
or passed over at the proper time.**

**As estimated, you died. Things marched,
io sufficient, to that end.**

1. Hill was born on June 18, 1932, one day before the birthdate given here.

M E R C I A N H Y M N S / 1 8 3 3

**Just so m u c h Zyklon² and leather, patented
terror, so many routine cries.**

**(I have made
an elegy for myself it
10 is true)**

**September fattens on vines. Roses
flake from the wall. The smoke
of harmless fires drifts to my eyes.**

This is plenty. This is more than enough.

1 9 6 8

From Mercian Hymns³

V/

**The princes of Mercia were badger and raven. Thrall⁴
to their freedom, I dug and hoarded. Orchards**

**fruited above clefts. I drank from honeycombs of
chill sandstone.**

5 “A boy at odds in the house, lonely among brothers.”

**But I, w h o had none, fostered a strangeness; gave
myself to unattainable toys.**

**Candles of gnarled resin, apple-branches, the tacky
mistletoe. “Look” they said and again “look.” But
io I ran slowly; the landscape flowed away, back to
its source.**

**In the schoolyard, in the cloakrooms, the children
boasted their scars of dried snot; wrists and
knees garnished with impetigo.⁵**

VII

**Gasholders, russet a m o n g fields. Milldams, marlpools⁶
that lay unstirring. Eel-swarms. Coagulations of
frogs; once, with branches and half-bricks, he
battered a ditchful; then sidled away from the
5 stillness and silence.**

2. Hydrocyanic acid, used in fumigation; also
ing from the middle of the eighth century until the
(Zyklon-B) used in the gas chambers of the Nazi
middle of the twentieth (and possibly beyond). The
concentration camps.

indication of such a timespan will, I trust, explain

3. “The historical Offa reigned over Mercia (and
and to some extent justify a number of anachro-
the greater part of England south of the Humber)
nisms” [Hill’s note],

in the years A.D. 757—796. During early medieval

4. Slave.

times he was already becoming a creature of leg-

5. Skin disease.

end. The Offa who figures in this sequence might

6. Pools in deposits of crumbling clay and chalk.

perhaps most usefully be regarded as the presiding

Gasholders: or gasometers, large metal receptacles

genius of the West Midlands, his dominion endur-

for gas.

1 8 3 4 / G E O F F R E Y H I L L

Ceolred7 w a s his friend and r e m a i n e d so, even after

the day of the lost fighter: a biplane, already

obsolete and irreplaceable, two i n c h e s of heavy

s n u b silver. C e o l r e d let it spin through a hole

10 in the classroom-floorboards, softly, into the

rat droppings a n d coins.

After s c h o o l h e lured Ceolred, w h o w a s sniggering

with fright, d o w n to the old quarries, and flayed

him. T h e n , leaving Ceolred, he j o u r n e y e d for hours,

15 c a l m and alone, in his private derelict sandlorry

n a m e d *Albion*.8

VIII

T h e m a d are predators. T o o o f t e n lately they

harbour

against us. A novel heresy exculpates all m a i m e d

souls. Abjure it! I am the King of Mercia, and

I know.

5 T h r e a t e n e d b y p h o n e - c a l l s a t m i d n i g h t, v e n o m o u s l e t t e r s, f o r e w a r n e d I h a v e t h w a r t e d t h e i r i m m i n e n t d e v i c e s.

T o d a y I n a m e t h e m ; t o m o r r o w I s h a l l e x p r e s s t h e n e w l a w. I d e d i c a t e m y a w a k e n i n g t o t h i s m a t t e r.

1 9 7 1

*From Lachrimae*⁹

O R

S E V E N T E A R S F I G U R E D I N S E V E N P A S S I O N A T E P A V A N S

Passions I allow, and loves I approve, onely

I would wish that men would alter their

object and better their intent.

— **S T . R O B E R T S O U T H W E L L**,¹ *Mary Magdalen's*

Funeral Tears, 1591

1. Lachrimae Verae

**Crucified Lord, y o u s w i m u p o n y o u r c r o s s
a n d n e v e r m o v e. S o m e t i m e s i n d r e a m s o f h e l l
t h e b o d y m o v e s b u t m o v e s t o n o a v a i l
a n d i s a t o n e w i t h t h a t e t e r n a l l o s s.**

7. A ninth-century bishop of Leicester, but the sixteenth-century composer John Dowland's piece name is here used as a characteristic Anglo-Saxon for viols and lutes. Dowland's "Lachrimae" is Mercian name.

divided into seven parts: "Antiquae," "Novae,"

8. An old Celtic name for England; also, the name "Genentes," "Tristes," "Coactae," "Amantis," and of a famous make of British truck. *Sandlorry*: sand

"Verae" ("true"). A pavan is a stately dance or the

truck.

music for this.

9. Tears (Latin). Hill takes his title from the

1. English Jesuit priest and poet (1561—1595).

AN APOLOGY FOR THE REVIVAL OF CHRISTIAN ARCHITECTURE / 1835

5 You are the castaway of d r o w n e d remorse,

you are the world's a t o n e m e n t on the hill.

This is your body twisted by our skill

into a p a t i e n c e proper for redress.

I c a n n o t turn aside f r o m w h a t I do;

10 you c a n n o t turn away f r o m w h a t I am.

You do not dwell in me nor I in y o u

h o w e v e r m u c h I p a n d e r to your n a m e

o r a n s w e r to your lords of revenue,

surrendering the joys that they c o n d e m n .

1978

*From An Apology for the Revival of Christian Architecture in
England*

the spiritual, Platonic old England ... 2

— S T C , *Anima Poetae*

“Your situation,” said Coningsby, looking up
the green and silent valley, “is absolutely
poetic.”

“I try sometimes to fancy,” said Mr. Millbank,
with a rather fierce smile, “that I am in the
New World.”

— B E N J A M I N D I S R A E L I , *Coningsby*

9. *The Laurel Axe*

A u t u m n r e s u m e s the land, ruffles the w o o d s
with s m o k y wings, e n t a n g l e s t h e m . Trees s h i n e
o u t f r o m their leaves, rocks m i l d e w t o m o s s - g r e e
n ;

the a v e n u e s are spread w i t h brittle floods.

5 Platonic England, h o u s e of solitudes,
rests in its laurels and its injured stone,
replete w i t h c o m p l e x f o r t u n e s that are g o n e ,
b e s e t by dynasties of m o o d s a n d clouds.

It stands, as t h o u g h at ease with its o w n world,
i o the mannerly extortions, languid praise,
all that devotion l o n g s i n c e b o u g h t and sold,
the r o o m s of cedar and s o f t - t h u d d i n g baize,⁴
t r e m u l o u s boudoirs w h e r e the crystals kissed
in c a b i n e t s of a m e t h y s t and frost.

1 9 7 8

2. I.e., an idealized orderly rural England. *STC*:

4. I.e., billiard rooms in great old British homes;
the English poet and philosopher Samuel Taylor
the “soft-thudding baize” refers to the soft green
Coleridge (1772-1834; see pp. 805-31).

cloth covering billiard tables as well as to the

3. British novelist and statesman (1804-1881);
“green-baize door” traditionally dividing the family
the “New World” referred to is that of an idealized
quarters in a grand house from the servants’ quar-
rural America.

ters.

1 8 3 6 / S Y L V I A P L A T H

Veni Coronaberis⁵

*A Garland for Helen Waddell*⁶

**The crocus armies from the dead
rise up; the realm of love renews
the battle it was born to lose,
though for a time the snows have fled
5 and old stones blossom in the south
with sculpted vine and psaltery⁷
and half-effaced adultery
the bird-dung dribbling from its mouth;
and abstinence crowns all our care
10 with martyr-laurels⁸ for this day.**

**Towers and steeples rise away
into the towering gulfs of air.**

1 9 7 8

S Y L V I A P L A T H

1 9 3 2 - 1 9 6 3

The Colossus¹

**I shall never get you put together entirely,
Pieced, glued, and properly jointed.
Mule-bray, pig-grunt and bawdy cackles
Proceed from your great lips.
5 It's worse than a barnyard.
Perhaps you consider yourself an oracle,
Mouthpiece of the dead, or of some god or other.
Thirty years now I have labored**

To dredge the silt from your throat,

io I am none the wiser.

Scaling little ladders with gluepots and pails of lysol

I crawl like an ant in mourning

Over the weedy acres of your brow

To mend the immense skull plates and clear

15 The bald, white tumuli² of your eyes.

5. Come and you will be crowned (Latin).

achievement.

6. British scholar (1889-1965), who translated

1. Alluding to the gigantic statue of this name that

several volumes of Latin poems, most notably

stood at the entrance of the harbor to Rhodes,

Medieval Latin Lyrics.

Greece, in the third century **B.C.E.**

7. Ancient and medieval stringed instrument.

2. I.e., grave mounds.

8. Laurels were a classical symbol of victory,

M O R N I N G S O N G / 1 8 3 7

A blue sky out of the Oresteia³

Arches above us. O father, all by yourself

You are pithy and historical as the Roman Forum.

I o p e n my l u n c h on a hill of black cypress.

20 Your fluted b o n e s and acanthine⁴ hair are littered

In their old anarchy to the horizon-line.

It would take more than a lightning-stroke

To create s u c h a ruin.

Nights, I squat in the cornucopia

25 Of your left ear, out of the wind,
C o u n t i n g the red stars and those of plum-color.
T h e sun rises under the pillar of your tongue.
My hours are married to shadow.

No longer do I listen for the scrape of a keel
30 On the blank stones of the landing.

1 9 5 9

1 9 6 0

Morning Song

Love set you going like a fat gold watch.

T h e midwife slapped your footsoles, and your bald cry
Took its place among the elements.

Our voices echo, magnifying your arrival. N e w statue.

5 In a drafty m u s e u m , your nakedness

Shadows our safety. We stand round blankly as walls.

I'm no more your mother

Than the cloud that distills a mirror to reflect its own slow
Effacement at the wind's hand.

io All night your moth-breath

Flickers among the flat pink roses. I wake to listen:

A far sea moves in my ear.

O n e cry, and I stumble from bed, cow-heavy and floral
In my Victorian nightgown.

15 Your m o u t h opens clean as a cat's. T h e window
square

W h i t e n s and swallows its dull stars. And n o w you try
Your handful of notes;

T h e clear vowels rise like balloons.

1 9 6 1

1 9 6 5

3. Trilogy of plays by the Greek dramatist Aeschylus.

lus (525—456 **B.C.E.**) that recounts Orestes' and

4. I.e., curved like the acanthus leaves depicted

Electra's efforts to avenge the murder of their

atop some Greek columns.

father, Agamemnon, by their mother, Clytemnes-

3 8 / S Y L V I A P L A T H

Tulips

The tulips are too excitable, it is winter here.

Look how white everything is, how quiet, how snowed-in.

I am learning peacefulness, lying by myself quietly

As the light lies on these white walls, this bed, these hands.

I am nobody; I have nothing to do with explosions.

I have given my name and my day-clothes up to the nurses

And my history to the anaesthetist and my body to surgeons.

They have propped my head between the pillow and the sheet-cuff

Like an eye between two white lids that will not shut.

Stupid pupil, it has to take everything in.

The nurses pass and pass, they are no trouble,

They pass the way gulls pass inland in their white caps,

Doing things with their hands, one just the same as another,

So it is impossible to tell how many there are.

My body is a pebble to them, they tend it as water

Tends to the pebbles it must run over, smoothing them gently.

They bring me numbness in their bright needles, they bring me sleep

Now I have lost myself I am sick of baggage—

My patent leather overnight case like a black pillbox,

My husband and child smiling out of the family photo;

Their smiles catch onto my skin, little smiling hooks.

I have let things slip, a thirty-year-old cargo boat

Stubbornly hanging on to my name and address.

They have swabbed me clear of my loving associations.

Scared and bare on the green plastic-pillowed trolley

I watched my tea-set, my bureaus of linen, my books

Sink out of sight, and the water went over my head.

I am a nun now, I have never been so pure.

I didn't want any flowers, I only wanted

To lie with my hands turned up and be utterly empty.

How free it is, you have no idea how free—

The peacefulness is so big it dazes you,

And it asks nothing, a name tag, a few trinkets.

It is what the dead close on, finally; I imagine them

Shutting their mouths on it, like a Communion tablet.

The tulips are too red in the first place, they hurt me.

Even through the gift paper I could hear them breathe

Lightly, through their white swaddlings, like an awful baby.

Their redness talks to my wound, it corresponds.

They are subtle: they seem to float, though they weigh me down,

Upsetting me with their sudden tongues and their color,

A dozen red lead sinkers round my neck.

Nobody watched me before, now I am watched.

The tulips turn to me, and the window behind me

E L M / 1 8 3 9

45 Where once a day the light slowly widens and slowly thins,

And I see myself, flat, ridiculous, a cut-paper shadow

Between the eye of the sun and the eyes of the tulips,

And I have no face, I have wanted to efface myself.

The vivid tulips eat my oxygen.

50 Before they came the air was calm enough,

Coming and going, breath by breath, without any fuss.

Then the tulips filled it up like a loud noise.

Now the air snags and eddies round them the way a river

Snags and eddies round a sunken rust-red engine.

55 They concentrate my attention, that was happy

Playing and resting without committing itself.

The walls, also, seem to be warming themselves.

The tulips should be behind bars like dangerous animals;

They are opening like the mouth of some great African cat,

60 And I am aware of my heart: it opens and closes

Its bowl of red blooms out of sheer love of me.

The water I taste is warm and salt, like the sea,

And comes from a country far away as health.

1 9 6 1 1 9 6 5

Elm

For Ruth Fainlight

I know the bottom, she says. I know it with my great tap root:

It is what you fear.

I do not fear it: I have been there.

Is it the sea you hear in me,

5 Its dissatisfactions?

Or the voice of nothing, that was your madness?

Love is a shadow.

How you lie and cry after it.

Listen: these are its hooves: it has gone off, like a horse.

io All night I shall gallop thus, impetuously,

Till your head is a stone, your pillow a little turf,

Echoing, echoing.

Or shall I bring you the sound of poisons?

This is rain now, this big hush.

15 And this is the fruit of it: tin-white, like arsenic.

I have suffered the atrocity of sunsets.

Scorched to the root

My red filaments burn and stand, a hand of wires.

1 8 4 0 / S Y L V I A P L A T H

Now I break up in pieces that fly about like clubs.

20 A wind of such violence

Will tolerate no bystanding: I must shriek.

The moon, also, is merciless: she would drag me

Cruelly, being barren.

Her radiance scathes me. Or perhaps I have caught her.

25 I let her go. I let her go

Diminished and flat, as after radical surgery.

How your bad dreams possess and endow me.

I am inhabited by a cry.

Nightly it flaps out

30 Looking, with its hooks, for something to love.

I am terrified by this dark thing

**That sleeps in me;
All day I feel its soft, feathery turnings, its malignity.
Clouds pass and disperse.
35 Are those the faces of love, those pale irretrievables?
Is it for such I agitate my heart?
I am incapable of more knowledge.
What is this, this face
So murderous in its strangle of branches?
40 Its snaky acids kiss.
It petrifies the will. These are the isolate, slow faults
That kill, that kill, that kill.**

1 9 6 2

Daddy

**You do not do, you do not do
Any more, black shoe
In which I have lived like a foot
For thirty years, poor and white,
5 Barely daring to breathe or Achoo.
Daddy, I have had to kill you.
You died before I had time
Marble-heavy, a bag full of God,
Ghastly statue with one grey toe5
io Big as a Frisco seal**

5. Plath's father's toe turned black from gangrene.

D A D D Y / 1 8 4 1

And a head in the freakish Atlantic
Where it pours bean green over blue
In the waters off beautiful Nauset.

I used to pray to recover you.

15 Ach, du.6

In the German tongue, in the Polish town⁷

Scraped flat by the roller

Of wars, wars, wars.

But the name of the town is common.

20 My Polack friend

Says there are a dozen or two.

So I never could tell where you

Put your foot, your root,

I never could talk to you.

25 The tongue stuck in my jaw.

It stuck in a barb wire snare.

Ich, ich, ich, ich,⁸

I could hardly speak.

I thought every German was you.

30 And the language obscene

An engine, an engine

Chuffing me off like a Jew.

A Jew to Dachau, Auschwitz, Belsen.⁹

I began to talk like a Jew.

35 I think I may well be a Jew.

The snows of the Tyrol,¹ the clear beer of Vienna

Are not very pure or true.

With my gypsy ancestress and my weird luck

And my Taroc pack and my Taroc pack²

40 I may be a bit of a Jew.

I have always been scared of *you*,

With your Luftwaffe,³ your gobbledygoo.

And your neat moustache

And your Aryan eye, bright blue.

45 Panzer⁴-man, panzer-man, O You

Not God but a swastika

So black no sky could squeak through.

Every woman adores a Fascist,

The boot in the face, the brute

50 Brute heart of a brute like you.

. Ah, you (German).

1. Austrian Alpine region.

. Grabow, Poland, Otto Plath's birthplace.

2. Tarot cards, used for fortune-telling.

. I, I, I, I (German).

3. The German air force.

. German concentration camps, where millions

4. Armor (German), especially, during World War

f Jews were murdered during World War II.

II, referring to the German armored tank corps.

1 8 4 2 / S Y L V I A P L A T H

You stand at the blackboard, daddy,

In the picture I have of you,

A cleft in your chin instead of your foot

But no less a devil for that, no not

Any less the black man who

Bit my pretty red heart in two.

I was ten when they buried you.

At twenty I tried to die

And get back, back, back to you.
I thought even the bones would do.
But they pulled me out of the sack,
And they stuck me together with glue,⁵
And then I knew what to do.
I made a model of you,
A man in black with a Meinkampf⁶ look
And a love of the rack and the screw.
And I said I do, I do.
So daddy, I'm finally through.
The black telephone's off at the root,
The voices just can't worm through.
If I've killed one man, I've killed two
The vampire who said he was you
And drank my blood for a year,
Seven years, if you want to know.
75 Daddy, you can lie back now.
There's a stake in your fat black heart
And the villagers never liked you.
They are dancing and stamping on you.
They always *knew* it was you.
so Daddy, daddy, you bastard, I'm through.
1 9 6 2 1 9 6 5
Ariel⁷
Stasis in darkness.
Then the substanceless blue
Pour of tor^o and distances. *craggy hill*
God's lioness,

5 How one we grow,

Pivot of heels and knees!—The furrow

5. An allusion to Plath's first suicide attempt.

7. Lion of God (Hebrew); the name of a horse

6. *Mein Kam-pf (My Struggle)* is Hitler's political

Plath often rode; also, the airy spirit in Shake-
autobiography and Nazi polemic, published before
speare's *Tempest*.

his rise to power.

L A D Y L A Z A R U S / 1 8 4 3

Splits and passes, sister to

The brown arc

Of the neck I cannot catch,

10 Nigger-eye

Berries cast dark

Hooks—

Black sweet blood mouthfuls,

Shadows.

15 Something else

Hauls me through air—

Thighs, hair;

Flakes from my heels.

White

20 Godiva,8 I unpeel—

Dead hands, dead stringencies.

And now I

Foam to wheat, a glitter of seas.

The child's cry

25 Melts in the wall.

And I

Am the arrow,

The dew that flies

Suicidal, at one with the drive

30 Into the red

Eye, the cauldron of morning.

1 9 6 2 1 9 6 5

Lady Lazarus⁹

I have done it again.

One year in every ten

I manage it—

A sort of walking miracle, my skin

5 Bright as a Nazi lampshade,¹

My right foot

8. According to legend, Lady Godiva (ca. 1010—11.1-44).

1067) rode naked through the streets of Coventry,

1. In the Nazi death camps, the skins of victims

England, to persuade her husband, the local lord,

were sometimes used to make lampshades and the
to lower taxes.

bodies to make soap.

9. Lazarus was raised from the dead by Jesus (John

1 8 4 4 / S Y L V I A P L A T H

A paperweight,

My face a featureless, fine

Jew linen.

10 Peel off the napkin
0 my enemy.
Do I terrify?—
The nose, the eye pits, the full set of teeth?
The sour breath
15 Will vanish in a day.
Soon, soon the flesh
The grave cave ate will be
At home on me
And I a smiling woman.
20 I am only thirty.
And like the cat I have nine times to die.
This is Number Three.
What a trash
To annihilate each decade.
25 What a million filaments.
The peanut-crunching crowd
Shoves in to see
Them unwrap me hand and foot—
The big strip tease.
30 Gentleman, ladies,
These are my hands,
My knees.
I may be skin and bone,
Nevertheless, I am the same, identical woman.
35 The first time it happened I was ten.
It was an accident.
The second time I meant

To last it out and not come back at all.
I rocked shut
40 As a seashell.
They had to call and call
And pick the worms off me like sticky pearls.
Dying
Is an art, like everything else.
45 I do it exceptionally well.
I do it so it feels like hell.
I do it so it feels real.
I guess you could say I've a call.
L A D Y L A Z A R U S / 1 8 4 5
It's easy enough to do it in a cell.
50 It's easy enough to do it and stay put.
It's the theatrical
Comeback in broad day
To the same place, the same face, the same brute
Amused shout:
55 "A miracle!"
That knocks me out.
There is a charge
For the eyeing of my scars, there is a charge
For the hearing of my heart—
60 It really goes.
And there is a charge, very large charge,
For a word or a touch
Or a bit of blood
Or a piece of my hair or my clothes.

65 So, so, Herr Doktor.
So, Herr Enemy.
I am your opus,
I am your valuable,
The pure gold baby
70 That melts to a shriek.
I turn and burn.
Do not think I underestimate your great concern.
Ash, ash—
You poke and stir.
75 Flesh, bone, there is nothing there—
A cake of soap,
A wedding ring,
A gold filling.
Herr God, Herr Lucifer,
so Beware
Beware.
Out of the ash²
I rise with my red hair
And I eat men like air.

1 9 6 2 1 9 6 5

2. An allusion to the phoenix, the mythical bird that dies in flames and is reborn from its own ashes.

Beware / Beware: cf. Samuel Taylor Coleridge, "Kubla Khan," line 49 (p. 810).

1 8 4 6

J O H N U P D I K E

b. 1932

V. B. Nimble, V. B. Quick

Science, Pure and Applied, by V. B. Wigglesworth, F.R.S.,¹
Quick

Professor of Biology in the University of Cambridge.

—a talk listed in the B.B.C.'s *Radio Times*

V. B. Wigglesworth wakes at noon,

Washes, shaves, and very soon

Is at the lab; he reads his mail,

Tweaks a tadpole by the tail,

5 Undoes his coat, removes his hat,

Dips a spider in a vat

Of alkaline, phones the press,

Tells them he is F.R.S.,

Subdivides six protocells,

10 Kills a rat by ringing bells,

Writes a treatise, edits two

Symposia on "Will Man Do?,"

Gives a lecture, audits three,

Has the Sperm Club in for tea,

15 Pensions off an aging spore,

Cracks a test tube, takes some pure

Science and applies it, finds

His hat, adjusts it, pulls the blinds,

Instructs the jellyfish to spawn,

20 And, by one o'clock, is gone.

1 9 5 4

I Missed His Book, but I Read His Name

"The Silver Pilgrimage," by M. Anantanarayanan ... 160
pages.

Criterion. \$3.95.

—*The New York Times*

Though authors are a dreadful clan

To be avoided if you can,

I'd like to meet the Indian,

M. Anantanarayanan.

5 I picture him as short and tan.

We'd meet, perhaps, in Hindustan.²

I'd say, with admirable *elan*,^o *zest*

“Ah, Anantanarayanan—

1. Fellow of the Royal Society.

2. Predominantly Hindu area of India.

TEMPORARILY IN OXFORD / 1847

I've heard of you. The *Times* once ran

10 A notice on your novel, an

Unusual tale of God and Man.”

And Anantanarayanan

Would seat me on a lush divan

And read his name—that sumptuous span

15 Of “a”s and “n”s more lovely than

“In Xanadu did Kubla Khan”³—

Aloud to me all day. I plan

Henceforth to be an ardent fan

Of Anantanarayanan—

20 M. Anantanarayanan.

1963

ANN STEVENSON

b. 1933

Temporarily in Oxford

Where they will bury me

I don't know.

Many places might not be

sorry to store me.

5 The Midwest has right of origin.

Already it has welcomed my mother

to its flat sheets.

The English fens that bore me

have been close curiously often,

io It seems I can't get away from

dampness and learning.

If I stay where I am

I could sleep in this educated earth.

But if they are kind

15 they'll burn me and

send me to Vermont.

I'd be an education for the trees

and would relish, really,

flaring into maple each October—

20 my scarlet letter to you.

3. First line of Samuel Taylor Coleridge's "Kubla Khan" (p. 809).

1 8 4 8 / A N N E S T E V E N S O N

Your stormy north is possible.

You will be there, engrossed in its peat.

It would be handy not to have to

cross the whole Atlantic

25 e a c h time I wanted to

**lift up the turf
and slip in beside you.**

1 9 7 7

Arioso Dolente1

(for my grandchildren when they become grandparents)

**Mother, w h o read and thought and poured herself into
me;**

she was the jug and I was the two-eared cup.

**H o w she w o u l d scorn today s “show-biz inanity,
democracy twisted, its high ideals sold up!”**

5 Cancer filched her voice, then cut her throat.

W h y is it

n o n e of the faces in this family snapshot

looks upset?

Father, w h o ran downstairs as I practised the piano;

io barefooted, buttoning his shirt, he shouted “G,

D-natural, C-flat! Dolente, arioso.

Put all the griefs of the world in that change of key.”

W h o then could lay a finger on his sleeve

to distress him with

**15 “One day, Steve, two of your well-taught daughters
will be deaf.”**

Mother must be sitting, left, on the porch-set,

you can just see her. My sister’s on her lap.

And that’s Steve confiding to his cigarette

20 s o m e t h i n g my mother’s mother has to laugh at.

T h e screened door twangs, slamming

on its sprung hinge.

Paint blisters on the steps; iced tea, grasscuttings,
elm flowers, mock orange ...

25 A grand June evening, like this one, not too buggy,
unselfquestioning midwestern, maybe 1951.

And, of course, there in my grandmother's memory
lives just such another s u m m e r — 1 8 9 0 or 91.

T h o u g h it's not on her mind now/then.

30 No, she's thinking of

the yeast-ring rising, in the oven. Or h o w *any* shoes
irritate her bunion.

1. A sorrowful melodic passage (Italian); here, "from
Beethoven's piano sonata, opus 110, third movement;
introduction to the fugue" [Stevenson's note].

THE EX - QUEEN AMONG THE ASTRONOM
ERS / 1 8 4 9

Paper gestures, pictures, newsprint laughter.

And after the camera winks and makes its catch,

35 the decibels drain away *for ever and ever*.

No need to say "Look!" to these smilers on the porch,

"Grandmother will have her stroke,

and you, mother, will nurse her."

Or to myself, this woman died paralysed-dumb, and that one

40 dumb from cancer.

Sufficient unto the day ... 2 Grandmother, poor and liturgical,

whose days were duties, stitches in the tea-brown blanket

she for years crocheted, its zigzag of yellow wool,

her grateful offering, her proof of goodness to present,

45 gift-wrapped, to Our Father in Heaven. "Accept,

O Lord, this best-I-can-make-it soul."

And He: "Thou good and faithful servant, lose thyself
and be whole."

Consciousness walks on tiptoe through what happens.

50 So much is felt, so little of it said.

But ours is the breath on which the past depends.

"What happened" is what the living teach the dead,

who, smilingly lost to their lost concerns,

in grey on grey,

55 are all of them deaf, blind, unburdened

by today.

As if our recording selves, our mortal identities,

could be cupped in a concave universe or lens,

ageless at all ages, cleansed of memories,

60 not minding that meaningful genealogy extends

no further than mind's flash images reach back.

As for what happens next,

let all the griefs of the world

find keys for that.

2000

F L E U R A D C O C K

b. 1934

The Ex-Queen Among the Astronomers

They serve revolving saucer eyes,

dishes of stars; they wait upon

huge lenses hung aloft to frame

the slow procession of the skies.

2. Matthew 6.34: "Sufficient unto the day is the evil thereof."

1 8 5 0 / F L E U R A D C O C K

5 They calculate, adjust, record,
watch transits, measure distances.
They carry pocket telescopes
to spy through when they walk abroad.
Spectral possess their eyes; they face
10 upwards, alert for meteorites,
cherishing little glassy worlds:
receptacles for outer space.
But she, exile, expelled, ex-queen,
swishes among the men of science
15 waiting for cloudy skies, for nights
when constellations can't be seen.
She wears the rings he let her keep;
she walks as she was taught to walk
for his approval, years ago.
20 His bitter features taunt her sleep.
And so when these have laid aside
their telescopes, when lids are closed
between machine and sky, she seeks
terrestrial bodies to bestride.
25 She plucks this one or that among
the astronomers, and is become
his canopy, his occultation;²
she sucks at earlobe, penis, tongue
mouthing the tubes of flesh; her hair
30 crackles, her eyes are comet-sparks.
She brings the distant briefly close
above his dreamy abstract stare.

1 9 7 9

Poem Ended by a Death

They will wash all my kisses and fingerprints off you
and my tearstains—I was more inclined to weep
in those wild-garlicky days—and our happier stains,
thin scales of papery silk ... Fuck that for a cheap
5 opener; and false too—any such traces
you pumiced away yourself, those years ago
when you sent my letters back, in the week I married
that anecdotal ape. So start again. So:

1. Images retained for a time on the retina of the
2. Concealment of a heavenly body behind the
eye when it is turned away after gazing fixedly at
body of Earth.
bright objects.

THE SOHO HOSPITAL FOR WOMEN / 1 8 5 1

They will remove the tubes and drips and dressings
10 which I censor from my dreams. They will, it is true,
wash you; and they will put you into a box.
After which whatever else they may do
won't matter. This is my laconic⁰ style. *terse*
You praised it, as I praised your intricate pearled
15 embroideries; these links laced us together,
plain and purl³ across the ribs of the world ...

1 9 7 9

The Soho Hospital for Women

I

Strange room, from this angle:

white door open before me,
strange bed, mechanical hum, white lights.

There will be stranger rooms to come.

5 As I almost slept I saw the deep flower opening
and leaned over into it, gratefully.

It swimmingly closed in my face. I was not ready.

It was not death, it was acceptance.

Our thin patient cat died purring,
io her small triangular head tilted back,
the nurse's fingers caressing her throat,
my hand on her shrunken spine; the quick needle.

That was the second death by cancer.

The first is not for me to speak of.

15 It was telephone calls and brave letters
and a friend's hand bleeding under the coffin.

Doctor, I am not afraid of a word.

But neither do I wish to embrace that visitor,
to engulf it as Hine-Nui-te-Po

20 engulfed Maui;⁴ that would be the way of it.

And she was the winner there: her womb crushed him.

Goddesses can do these things.

But I have admitted the gloved hands and the speculum⁵
and must part my ordinary legs to the surgeon's knife.

3. Stitch in knitting with needle moved in opposite
to depart through her mouth, but when his bird
to normal (plain) direction.

companion laughed at the sight, Hine awoke and

4. Supernatural hero in Polynesian mythology,

crushed Maui to death.

Maui the sun-snarer, fire-stealer, monster-slayer,

5. Surgical instrument for dilating orifices of the
entered the womb of Hine, sleeping goddess of the
body to facilitate examination or operation.

underworld, in search of immortality. He intended

1 8 5 2 / F L E U R A D C O C K

2

25 Nellie has only one breast

ample enough to make several.

Her quilted dressing-gown softens

to semi-doubtful this imbalance

and there's no starched vanity

30 in our abundant ward-mother:

her silvery hair's in braids, her slippers

loll, her weathered smile holds true.

When she dresses up in her black

with her glittering marcasite brooch⁶ on

35 to go for the weekly radium treatment

she's the bright star of the taxi-party—

whatever may be growing under her ribs.

Doris hardly smokes in the ward—

and hardly eats more than a dreamy spoonful—

40 but the corridors and bathrooms

reek of her Players Number 10,⁷

and the drug-trolley pauses

for long minutes by her bed.

Each week for the taxi-outing

45 she puts on her skirt again
and has to pin the slack waistband
more tightly over her scarlet sweater.
Her face, a white shadow through smoked glass,
lets Soho display itself unregarded.
50 Third in the car is Mrs Golding
who never smiles. And why should she?

3

The senior consultant on his rounds
murmurs in so subdued a voice
to the students marshalled behind
55 that they gather in, forming a cell,
a cluster, a rosette around him
as he stands at the foot of my bed
going through my notes with them,
half-audibly instructive, grave.

60 The slight ache as I strain forward
to listen still seems imagined.

Then he turns his practised smile on me:

“How are you this morning?” “Fine,
very well, thank you.” I smile too.

6. Cheap brooch made of crystallized iron pyrites.

7. Brand and type of cigarette.

WHERE HAVE ALL THE FLOWERS GONE? /

1 8 5 3

65 And possibly all that murmurs within me
is the slow dissolving of stitches.

4

I am out in the supermarket choosing—
this very afternoon, this day—
picking up tomatoes, cheese, bread,
70 things I want and shall be using
to make myself a meal, while they
eat their stodgy suppers in bed:
Janet with her big freckled breasts,
her prim Scots voice, her one friend,
75 and never in hospital before,
who came in to have a few tests
and now can't see where they'll end;
and Coral in the bed by the door
who whimpered and gasped behind a screen
so with nurses to and fro all night
and far too much of the day;
pallid, bewildered, nineteen.
And Mary, who will be all right
but gradually. And Alice, who may.
85 Whereas I stand almost intact,
giddy with freedom, not with pain.
I lift my light basket, observing
how little I needed in fact;
and move to the checkout, to the rain,
90 to the lights and the long street curving.

1 9 7 9

POPULAR BALLADS OF THE
TWENTIETH CENTURY

Pete Seeger (b. 1919) • Where Have All the Flowers Gone?1

Where have all the flowers gone?—long time passing

Where have all the flowers gone?—long time ago

1. With additional verse by Joe Hickerson. Cf. Jean Elliot,
“The Flowers of the Forest” (p. 677).

54 / P O P U L A R BALLADS OF THE T W E N T I E T H C E N T U R Y

Where have all the flowers gone?—girls have picked them
every one

When will they ever learn? When will they ever learn?

Where have all the young girls gone?—long time passing

Where have all the young girls gone?—long time ago

Where have all the young girls gone?—they’ve taken
husbands every one

When will they ever learn? When will they ever learn?

Where have all the young men gone?—long time passing

Where have all the young men gone?—long time ago

Where have all the young men gone?—gone for soldiers every
one

When will they ever learn? When will they ever learn?

Where have all the soldiers gone?—long time passing

Where have all the soldiers gone?—long time ago

Where have all the soldiers gone?—gone to graveyards
everyone

When will they ever learn? When will they ever learn?

Where have all the graveyards gone?—long time passing

Where have all the graveyards gone?—long time ago

Where have all the graveyards gone?—gone to flowers
everyone

When will they ever learn? When will they ever learn?

1961

Bob Dylan (b. 1941) • Boots of Spanish Leather

Oh, I'm sailin' away my own true love,

I'm sailin' away in the morning.

Is there something I can send you from across the sea,

From the place that I'll be landing?

5 No, there's nothin' you can send me, my own true love,

There's nothin' I wish to be ownin'.

Just carry yourself back to me unspoiled,

From across that lonesome ocean.

Oh, but I just thought you might want something fine

io Made of silver or of golden,

Either from the mountains of Madrid

Or from the coast of Barcelona.

Oh, but if I had the stars from the darkest night

And the diamonds from the deepest ocean,

15 I'd forsake them all for your sweet kiss

For that's all I'm wishin' to be ownin'.

That I might be gone a long time

And it's only that I'm askin',

Is there something I can send you to remember me by,

20 To make your time more easy passin'.

B A L L A D O F B I R M I N G H A M / 1 8 5 5

Oh, how can, how can you ask me again,

It only brings me sorrow.

The same thing I want from you today,

I would want again tomorrow.

25 I got a letter on a lonesome day,

It was from her ship a-sailin',

Saying I don't know when I'll be comin' back again,
It depends on how I'm a-feelin'.
Well, if you, my love, must think that-a-way,
30 I'm sure your mind is roamin'.
I'm sure your heart is not with me,
But with the country to where you're goin'.
So take heed, take heed of the western wind,
Take heed of the stormy weather.
35 And yes, there's something you can send back to me,
Spanish boots of Spanish leather.

1 9 6 3

Dudley Randall (b. 1914) • Ballad of Birmingham

*(On the bombing of a church in Birmingham, Alabama, 1963)*²

“Mother dear, may I go downtown
Instead of out to play,
And march the streets of Birmingham
In a Freedom March today?”
5 “No, baby, no, you may not go,
For the dogs are fierce and wild,
And clubs and hoses, guns and jails
Aren't good for a little child.”
“But, mother, I won't be alone,
io Other children will go with me,
And march the streets of Birmingham
To make our country free.”
“No, baby, no, you may not go,
For I fear those guns will fire.

15 But you may go to church instead

And sing in the children's choir.”

2. Two weeks after Martin Luther King's August 23rd March on Washington; in Birmingham, King had led nonviolent civil rights demonstrations that were met with attack dogs, tear gas, cattle prods, and firehoses.

1 8 5 6 / A M I R I B A R A K A (L E R O I J O N E S)

She has combed and brushed her night-dark hair,

And bathed rose petal sweet,

And drawn white gloves on her small brown hands,

20 And white shoes on her feet.

The mother smiled to know her child

Was in the sacred place,

But that smile was the last smile

To come upon her face.

25 For when she heard the explosion,

Her eyes grew wet and wild.

She raced through the streets of Birmingham

Calling for her child.

She clawed through bits of glass and brick,

30 Then lifted out a shoe.

“O, here's the shoe my baby wore,

But, baby, where are you?”

1 9 6 9

A M I R I B A R A K A (L E R O I J O N E S)

b. 1934

In Memory of Radio

Who has ever stopped to think of the divinity of Lamont
Cranston?1

(Only Jack Kerouac,² that I know of: & me.

The rest of you probably had on WCBS and Kate Smith,
Or something equally unattractive.)

5 What can I say?

It is better to have loved and lost

Than to put linoleum in your living rooms?³

Am I a sage or something?

Mandrake's hypnotic gesture of the week?

io (Remember, I do not have the healing powers of Oral
Roberts ...

I cannot, like F. J. Sheen, tell you how to get saved & *rich!*

I cannot even order you to gaschamber satori⁴ like Hitler or
Goody

Knight

1. The hero's alter ego on the 1930—50s radio
and television—as governor of California in the
serial “The Shadow.” The poem refers to promi-
1950s, he wanted University of California teachers
nent characters (Mandrake) and personalities that
to sign a loyalty oath as a condition of employment.

Jones would have heard on the radio as a boy: Kate

2. American writer (1922—1969), affiliated, as was
Smith (1907—1986), a popular American singer,
Baraka (loosely), with the Beat movement.

best-known for her frequent performances of “God

3. Cf. Alfred, Lord Tennyson, “In Memoriam

Bless America”; Oral Roberts (b. 1918), evangelist;

A. H. H.,” 28.15-16, 85.3-4: ” ‘Tis better to have

Fulton J. Sheen (1895-1979), Roman Catholic

loved and lost / than never to have loved at all.”
popularizer of religion; Goodwin Knight (1896—
4. The state of spiritual enlightenment sought in
1970), one of the first politicians to exploit radio
Zen Buddhism.

A N AGONY. A s N o w . / 1 8 5 7

& Love is an evil word.

Turn it backwards / see, what I mean?

An evil word. & besides

Who understands it?

I certainly wouldn't like to go out on that kind of limb.

Saturday mornings we listened to *Red Lantern* & his undersea
folk.

At 11, *Let's Pretend* / & we did / & I, the poet, still do, Thank
God!

What was it he used to say (after the transformation, when he
was

safe

& invisible & the unbelievers couldn't throw stones?) “Heh,
heh, heh, Who knows what evil lurks in the hearts of men?
The Shadow knows.”

O, yes he does

O, yes he does.

An evil word it is,

This Love.

1961

An Agony. As Now.

I am inside someone

who hates me. I look

out from his eyes. Smell

what fouled tunes come in
5 to his breath. Love his
wretched women.

Slits in the metal, for sun. Where
my eyes sit turning, at the cool air
the glance of light, or hard flesh
io rubbed against me, a woman, a man,
without shadow, or voice, or meaning.

This is the enclosure (flesh,
where innocence is a weapon. An
abstraction. Touch. (Not mine.

15 Or yours, if you are the soul I had
and abandoned when I was blind and had
my enemies carry me as a dead man
(if he is beautiful, or pitied.

It can be pain. (As now, as all his
20 flesh hurts me.) It can be that. Or
pain. As when she ran from me into
that forest.

Or pain, the mind
silver spiraled whirled against the
25 sun, higher than even old men thought

1 8 5 8 / A U D R E L O R D E

God would be. Or pain. And the other. The
yes. (Inside his books, his fingers. They
are withered yellow flowers and were never
beautiful.) The yes. You will, lost soul, say
30 “beauty.” Beauty, practiced, as the tree. The

slow river. A white sun in its wet sentences.
Or, the cold men in their gale. Ecstasy. Flesh
or soul. The yes. (Their robes blown. Their bowls
empty. They chant at my heels, not at yours.) Flesh
35 or soul, as corrupt. Where the answer moves too quickly.
W h e r e the God is a self, after all.)
Cold air blown through narrow blind eyes. Flesh,
white hot metal. Glows as the day with its sun.
It is a h u m a n love. I live inside. A bony skeleton
40 you recognize as words or simple feeling.
But it has no feeling. As the metal, is hot, it is not,
given to love.

It burns the thing
inside it. And that thing
45 screams.

1 9 6 4

A U D R E L O R D E

1 9 3 4 - 1 9 9 2

Coal

I

is the total black, being spoken
from the earth's inside.

There are many kinds of open
5 how a diamond comes into a knot of flame
how sound comes into a word, colored
by who pays what for speaking.
Some words are open like a diamond
on glass windows

io singing out within the passing crash of sun
Then there are words like stapled wagers
in a perforated book—buy and sign and tear apart—
and come whatever wills all chances
the stub remains

15 an ill-pulled tooth with a ragged edge.

Some words live in my throat

FROM THE HOUSE OF YEMANJA / 1859

breeding like adders. Others know sun

seeking like gypsies over my tongue

to explode through my lips

20 like young sparrows bursting from shell.

Some words

bedevil me.

Love is a word, another kind of open.

As the diamond comes into a knot of flame

25 I am Black because I come from the earth's inside

now take my word for jewel in the open light.

1968, 1976

From the House of Yemanja I

My mother had two faces and a frying pot

where she cooked up her daughters

into girls

before she fixed our dinner.

5 My mother had two faces

and a broken pot

where she hid out a perfect daughter

who was not me

I am the sun and moon and forever hungry
io for her eyes.

I bear two women upon my back
one dark and rich and hidden
in the ivory hungers of the other
mother

15 pale as a witch
yet steady and familiar
brings me bread and terror
in my sleep
her breasts are huge exciting anchors
20 in the midnight storm.

All this has been
before

in my mother's bed
time has no sense

25 I have no brothers
and my sisters are cruel.

1. "Mother of the other *Orisha* [the goddesses and Yemanja's long breasts, and when she fled with her gods ... of the Yoruba peoples of Western Nige- pots he knocked her down. From her breasts ria], Yemanja is also the goddess of oceans. Rivers flowed the rivers, and from her body then sprang are said to flow from her breasts. One legend has forth all the other *Orisha*. River-smooth stones are it that a son tried to rape her. She fled until she Yemanja's symbol, and the sea is sacred to her fol-

collapsed, and from her breasts, the rivers flowed.

lowers. Those who please her are blessed with

Another legend says that a husband insulted
many children” [Lorde’s note].

1 8 6 0 / A U D R E L O R D E

Mother I need

mother I need

mother I need your blackness now

30 as the august earth needs rain.

I am

the sun and moon and forever hungry

the sharpened edge

where day and night shall meet

35 and not be

one.

1 9 7 8

Echoes

There is a timbre of voice

that comes from not being heard

and knowing you are not being

heard noticed only

5 by others not heard

for the same reason.

The flavor of midnight fruit tongue

calling your body through dark light

piercing the allure of safety

io ripping the glitter of silence

around you

dazzle me with color
and perhaps I won't notice
till after you're gone
15 your hot grain smell tattooed
into each new poem resonant
beyond escape I am listening
in that fine space
between desire and always
20 the grave stillness
before choice.
As my tongue unravels
in what pitch
will the scream hang unsung
25 or shiver like lace on the borders
of never recording
which dreams heal which
dream can kill
stabbing a man and burning his body
30 for cover being caught
making love to a woman
I do not know.

1 9 9 3

1 8 6 1

N . S C O T T M O M A D A Y

b. 1934

Headwaters

Noon in the intermountain plain:

There is scant telling of the marsh—

A log, hollow and weather-stained.
An insect at the mouth, and moss—
5 Yet waters rise against the roots,
Stand brimming to the stalks. What moves?
What moves on this archaic force
Was wild and welling at the source.

1 9 7 6

The Eagle-Feather Fan

The eagle is my power,

And my fan is an eagle.

It is strong and beautiful

In my hand. And it is real.

5 My fingers hold upon it

As if the beaded handle

Were the twist of bristlecone.

The bones of my hand are fine

And hollow; the fan bears them,

io My hand veers in the thin air

Of the summits. All morning

It scuds on the cold currents;

All afternoon it circles

To the singing, to the drums.

1 9 7 6

The Gift

For Bobby Jack Nelson

Older, more generous,

We give each other hope.

The gift is ominous:

Enough praise, enough rope.

1 9 7 6

1 8 6 2 / W O L E S O Y I N K A

Two Figures

These figures moving in my rhyme,
Who are they? Death and Death's dog, Time.

1 9 7 6

W O L E S O Y I N K A

b. 1934

Telephone Conversation

The price seemed reasonable, location
Indifferent. The landlady swore she lived
Off premises. Nothing remained
But self-confession. "Madam," I warned,
5 "I hate a wasted journey—I am African."
Silence. Silenced transmission of
Pressurized good-breeding. Voice, when it came,
Lipstick coated, long gold-rolled
Cigarette-holder pipped. Caught I was, foully,
io "HOW DARK?" ... I had not misheard ... "ARE YOU
LIGHT
OR VERY DARK?" Button B. Button A.1 Stench
Of rancid breath of public hide-and-speak.
Red booth. Red pillar-box.° Red double-tiered *mailbox*
Omnibus squelching tar. It *was* real! Shamed
15 By ill-mannered silence, surrender
Pushed dumbfoundment to beg simplification.
Considerate she was, varying the emphasis—

“ARE YOU DARK? OR VERY L I G H T ? ” Revelation came.

“You mean—like plain or milk chocolate?”

20 Her assent was clinical, crushing in its light

Impersonality. Rapidly, wave-length adjusted,

I chose. “West African sepia”²—and as afterthought,

“Down in my passport.” Silence for spectroscopic³

Flight of fancy, till truthfulness clangd her accent

25 Hard on the mouthpiece, “WHAT’S THAT?” conceding

” D O N ‘ T KNOW WHAT THAT is.” “Like brunette.”

“THAT’S DARK, ISN’T I T ? ” “Not altogether.

Facially, I am brunette, but, madam, you should see

The rest of me. Palm of my hand, soles of my feet

30 Are a peroxide blond. Friction, caused—

Foolishly, madam—by sitting down, has turned

My bottom raven black—One moment, madam!”—sensing

Her receiver rearing on the thunderclap

1. Buttons to be pressed by caller who has inserted 2. Reddish brown.

a coin into an old type of British public pay phone. 3. Related to study of the color spectrum.

A L W A Y S / 1 8 6 3

**A b o u t m y e a r s — ” M a d a m , ” I p l e a d e d ,
“wouldn’t y o u r a t h e r 35 S e e f o r y o u r s e l f ? ”**

1 9 6 2

MARK S T R A N D

b. 1934

The Prediction

T h a t n i g h t t h e m o o n d r i f t e d o v e r t h e p o n d ,

turning the water to milk, and under
the boughs of the trees, the blue trees,
a young woman walked, and for an instant
5 the future came to her:

rain falling on her husband's grave, rain falling
on the lawns of her children, her own mouth
filling with cold air, strangers moving into her
house, a man in her room writing a poem, the moon
drifting into it, io a woman strolling under its
trees, thinking of death, thinking of him thin
king of her, and the wind rising and taking the m
oon and leaving the paper dark.

1970

Always

for Charles Simic

Always so late in the day

In their rumpled clothes, sitting

Around a table lit by a single bulb,

The great forgetters were hard at work.

5 They tilted their heads to one side, closing their
eyes.

Then a house disappeared, and a man in his
yard With all his flowers in a row.

The great forgetters wrinkled their brows.

Then Florida went and San Francisco

io Where tugs and barges leave

Small gleaming scars across the Bay.

One of the great forgetters struck a match.

Gone were the harps of beaded lights

That vault the rivers of New York.

15 A n o t h e r filled his glass
A n d t h a t w a s i t f o r c r o w d s a t e v e n i n g
U n d e r s u l p h u r y e l l o w s t r e e t l a m p s c o m i n
g o n .

1 8 6 4 / M A R K S T R A N D

A n d a f t e r w a r d s B u l g a r i a w a s g o n e , a n d t h e n J a p a n .

“Where will it stop?” o n e o f t h e m s a i d .

20 ” S u c h d i f f i c u l t w o r k , p u r s u i n g t h e f a t e

O f e v e r y t h i n g k n o w n , ” s a i d a n o t h e r .

” D o w n t o t h e l a s t s t o n e , ” s a i d a t h i r d ,

“And only the cold zero of p e r f e c t i o n

L e f t f o r t h e i m a g i n a t i o n . ” A n d g o n e

25 W e r e N o r t h a n d S o u t h A m e r i c a ,

A n d g o n e a s w e l l t h e m o o n .

A n o t h e r y a w n e d , a n o t h e r g a z e d a t t h e w i n d o
w :

No grass, no trees ...

T h e b l a z e o f p r o m i s e e v e r y w h e r e .

1 9 9 0

FROM DARK HARBOR 1

XVI

It is true, as s o m e o n e h a s s a i d , t h a t i n

A w o r l d w i t h o u t t h e a v e n a l l i s f a r e w e l l . 2

W h e t h e r y o u w a v e y o u r h a n d o r n o t ,

It is farewell, and if no tears c o m e t o y o u r e y e s

5 It is still farewell, and if y o u p r e t e n d n o t t o n o t i c e ,

H a t i n g w h a t p a s s e s , i t i s s t i l l f a r e w e l l .

Farewell no matter what. A n d t h e p a l m s a s t h e y l e a n

O v e r t h e g r e e n , b r i g h t l a g o o n , a n d t h e p e l i c a n s

**Diving, and t h e glistening bodies of bathers resting,
io Are stages in an ultimate stillness, and the m o v e m e n
t**

**Of sand, and of wind, and the secret m o v e s of the body
Are part of the s a m e , a simplicity that turns being**

**Into an o c c a s i o n for m o u r n i n g , or into an o c c a s
i o n W o r t h celebrating, for w h a t else does o n e do,**

15 F e e l i n g t h e w e i g h t of the pelicans' wings,

**T h e density of the palms' s h a d o w s , the cells that
darken**

**T h e backs of bathers? T h e s e are b e y o n d the
distortions**

**O f c h a n c e , b e y o n d the evasions o f m u s i c . T h e e
n d I s e n a c t e d again and again. A n d we feel it**

**20 In the t e m p t a t i o n s of sleep, in the m o o n ' s
ripening,**

In the w i n e as it waits in the glass.

1. A forty-five-section, book-length poem in which
terza rima rhyme scheme) and William Words-
Strand recounts a spiritual quest while paying
worth (1770-1850; see pp. 763-805).

homage to several guiding influences in poetry.

2. Cf. Wallace Stevens, "Waving Adieu, Adieu,
Among the most important are Dante (whose
Adieu," lines 5-8 (p. 1266).

three-line stanzas he borrows, though not Dante's

H O M A G E T O C L A U D E L O R R A I N E / 1 8 6 5

XX

Is it y o u s t a n d i n g a m o n g t h e olive trees

B e y o n d t h e courtyard? Y o u i n t h e s u n l i g h t

Waving me closer with one hand while the other Shields your eyes from the brightness that turns 5 All that is not you dead white? Is it you

Around whom the leaves scatter like foam?

You in the murmuring night that is scented

With mint and lit by the distant wilderness
Of stars? Is it you? Is it really you

10 Rising from the script of waves, the length
Of your body casting a sudden shadow over
my hand So that I feel how cold it is as it moves

Over the page? You leaning down and putting
Your mouth against mine so I should know

15 That a kiss is only the beginning

Of what until now we could only imagine?

Is it you or the long compassionate wind

That whispers in my ear: alas, alas?

1993

CHARLES WRIGHT

b. 1935

Homage to Claude Lorraine I

I had a picture by him — a print, I think — on
my bedroom wall In Verona in 1959,

via Anzani n. 3.2

Or maybe a drawing, a rigged ship in a huge sea,

5 Storm waves like flames above my bed.

It's lost between there and here now,

and has been for years,

Trapped in the past's foliage, as so much else is

In spite of our constancy, or how

io We rattle the branches and keep our lights on the right place .

The room had a vaulted ceiling and faced east.

The living room was a tower with skylights on four sides.

1. Or Claude Lorrain, pseudonym of Claude Gel- 2. Address in Verona, Italy,

lee (1600-1682), French painter.

1866 / CHARLES WRIGHT

A third room sloped with the roof

until it was two feet high at the far wall,

15 All of this part of a reconstructed attic, and washed white.

I lived there for two years,

one block from the Adige³

Where seagulls, like little loaves of fresh bread,

Drifted and turned on its grey coils.

20 Between the sea fires of Claude Lorraine

and the curled sheets of the river,

I burned on my swivel stool

Night after night,

looking into the future, its charred edges

25 Holding my life like a frame

I'd hope to fit into one day, unsigned and rigged for the deeps.

1984

Chinese Journal

In 1935, the year I was born,

Giorgio Morandi⁴

Penciled these bottles in by leaving them out, letting

The presence of what surrounds them increase the presence
5 Of what is missing,
keeping its distance and measure.

The purple-and-white spike plants
stand upright and spine-laced,
As though poised to fight by keeping still,
io Inside their bristly circle,
The dwarf boxwood
flashes its tiny shields at the sun.

Under the skylight, the Pothos⁰ plant *climbing shrub*
Dangles its fourteen arms
15 into the absence of its desire.
Like a medusa in the two-ply, celadon⁵ air,
Its longing is what it grows on,
heart-leaves in the nothingness.

3. River that runs through Verona.
ology, one of three snake-haired Gorgons who
4. Italian painter (1890-1964).
turned those who looked at them into stone; also,
5. Grayish yellow-green. Medusa: in Greek myth-
a kind of jellyfish.

Q U O T A T I O N S / 1 8 6 7

To shine but not to dazzle.
20 Falling leaves, falling water,
everything comes to rest.

What can anyone know of the sure machine that makes all
things
work?

To find one word and use it correctly,
providing it is the right word,

25 Is more than enough:

An inch of music is an inch and a half of dust.

1 9 8 8

As Our Bodies Rise, Our Names Turn into Light

The sky unrolls like a rug,

unwelcoming, gun-grey,

Over the Blue Ridge.⁶

Mothers are calling their children in,

5 mellifluous syllables, floating sounds.

The traffic shimmies and settles back.

The doctor has filled his truck with leaves

Next door, and a pair of logs.

Salt stones litter the street,

io The snow falls and the wind drops.

How strange to have a name, any name, on this poor earth.

January hunkers down,

the icicle deep in her throat—

The days become longer, the nights ground bitter and cold,

15 Single grain by single grain

Everything flows toward structure,

last ache in the ache for God.

1 9 9 5

Quotations

Renoir,⁷ whose paintings I don't much like,

Says what survives of the artist is the feeling he gives by
means of

objects.

6. Eastern ridge of the Appalachian Mountains, 7. Pierre-Auguste Renoir (1841-1919), French ranging from Pennsylvania into Georgia. painter.

1 8 6 8 / D A R Y L H I N E

I do like that, however,

The feeling put in as much as the feeling received

5 To make a work distinctive,

Though I'm not sure it's true,

or even it's workable.

W h e n Chekhov⁸ died, he died at dawn,

a large moth circling the lamp,

io Beating its pressed wings.

Placed in a zinc casket, the corpse, labeled *Fresh Oysters*,

Was sent to Moscow in a freight car from Germany.

His last words were, *Has the sailor left?*

*I am dying, Ich sterhe.*⁹

15 My hreath is corrupt, my days are extinct, the graves are ready for me, Job¹ says. They change the night into day—

The light is short because of darkness ...

I have said to corruption,

thou art my father, to the worm,

20 Thou art my mother and my sister—

They shall go down to the bars of the pit,

when our rest together is in the dust.

That's all. There's nothing left after that.

As Meng Chiao² says,

25 For a while the dust weighs lightly on my cloak.

1 9 9 8

DARYL H I N E

b. 1936

Letting Go

I loved you first the time I saw you last,

I knew you best before I let you go.

All the misapprehensions of the past

Dissipated in an hour or so,

8. Anton Chekhov (1860-1904), Russian fiction

tested by God with many forms of suffering. These

writer and playwright.

quotations are taken from Job 17.

9. I am dying (German).

2. Chinese poet (751-814).

1. In the Hebrew Scriptures, a virtuous man

R E P R E S S I O N / 1 8 6 9

5 Naked to the h u m a n eye you lay

Candid as a cadaver on the couch

I could have slept on, but I went away

Ashamed to stay, afraid almost to touch.

Lost, you seemed the only vivid thing

10 In a world made moribund and flat

By worldliness. Renunciations bring

Their own reward, apparently, like that

Last look of yours, ironical or tender,

A valediction and a benediction,

15 W h i c h endless reruns will not soon surrender,

T h e indispensable, improper fiction

Of your unforgettable perfection.

1 9 9 0

Riddle

Invisible, chimerical

Revolution of the air,

Fickle, hyperactive, fair,

Impulsive, unpredictable

5 Flibbertigibbet capable

Of never settling anywhere;

Fortuitously musical

Condition of the atmosphere,

Zephyr, monsoon, hurricane,

io Tempest, typhoon, gust or gale—

W h e n will inspiration fail?—

Accomplice of the hail and rain,

Blind but palpable as braille

//^LUQ 9UIIJJ9FG8 FPG MG3FPGLA3UG*

1 9 9 0

C. K. W I L L I A M S

b. 1936

Repression

More and more lately, as, not even minding the slippages yet,
the

aches and sad softenings,

I settle into my other years, I notice how many of what I once
thought

were evidences of repression,

1 8 7 0 / C . K . W I L L I A M S

sexual or otherwise, now seem, in other people anyway, to be
varieties

of dignity, withholding, tact,
and sometimes even in myself, certain patiences I would have
once
called lassitude, indifference,
5 now seem possibly to be if not the rewards then at least the
unsuspected, undreamed-of conclusions
to many of the even-then-preposterous self-evolved
disciplines, rigors,
almost mortifications
I inflicted on myself in my starting-out days, improvement
days, days
when the idea alone of psychic peace,
of intellectual, of emotional quiet, the merest hint, would have
meant
inconceivable capitulation.

1 9 8 7

Snow: II

It's very cold, Catherine is bundled in a coat, a poncho on top
of that,
high boots, gloves,
a long scarf around her neck, and she's sauntering up the
middle of
the snowed-in street,
eating, of all things, an apple, the blazing redness of which
shocks
against the world of white.
No traffic yet, the *crisp crisp* of her footsteps keeps reaching
me until she turns the corner.
5 I write it down years later, and the picture still holds
perfectly, precise, unwanting,

and so too does the sense of being suddenly bereft as she
passes
abruptly from my sight,
the quick wash of desolation, the release again into the
memory of
affection, and then affection,
as the first trucks blundered past, chains pounding, the first
delighted
children rushed out with sleds.

1 9 8 7

The Question

The middle of the night, she's wide awake, carefully lying as
far away
as she can from him.
He turns in his sleep and she can sense him realizing she's not
in the
place she usually is,
then his sleep begins to change, he pulls himself closer, his
arm
comes comfortably around her.

"Are you awake?" she says, then, afraid that he might think
she's

asking him for sex,

5 she hurries on, "I want to know something; last summer, in
Cleveland, did you have someone else?"

THE QUESTION / 1 8 7 1

She'd almost said—she was going to say—"Did you have a
lover?" but she'd caught herself;

she'd been frightened by the word, she realized; it was much
too

definite, at least for now.

Even so, it's only after pausing that he answers, "No," with what

feeling she can't tell.

He moves his hand on her, then with a smile in his voice asks, "Did

you have somebody in Cleveland?"

"That's not what I was asking you," she says crossly. "But that's what I asked *you*" he answers.

She's supposed to be content now, the old story, she knows that she's

supposed to be relieved,

but she's not relieved, her tension hasn't eased the slightest bit, which

doesn't surprise her.

She's so confused that she can't really even say now if she wants to

believe him or not.

Anyway, what about that pause? Was it because in the middle of the

night and six months later

he wouldn't have even known what she was talking about, or was it

because he needed that moment

to frame an answer which would neutralize what might after all have

been a shocking thrust

with a reasonable deflection, in this case, his humor: a laugh that's

like a lie and is.

"When would I have found the time?" he might have said, or, "Who in Cleveland could I love?"

Or, in that so brief instant, might he have been finding a way
to stay
in the realm of truth,
as she knew he'd surely want to, given how self-righteously he
esteemed his ethical integrities?

It comes to her with a start that what she most deeply and
painfully
suspects him of is a *renunciation*.

She knows that he has no one now; she thinks she knows
there's been
no contact from Cleveland,
but she still believes that there'd been something then, and if it
was as
important as she thinks,
it wouldn't be so easily forgotten, it would still be with him
somewhere
as a sad regret,
perhaps a precious memory, but with that word, *renunciation*,
hooked
to it like a price tag.

Maybe that was what so rankled her, that she might have been
the
object of his charity, his *goodness*.

That would be too much; that he would have wronged her,
then
sacrificed himself for her.

Yes, "Lover," she should have said it, "Lover, lover," should
have made him try to disavow it.

She listens to his breathing; he's asleep again, or has he taught
himself to feign that, too?

“No, last summer in Cleveland I didn’t have a lover, I have never been

to Cleveland, I love you.

There is no Cleveland, I adore you, and, as you’ll remember, there was

no last summer:

1 8 7 2 / T O N Y H A R R I S O N

the world last summer didn’t yet exist, last summer still was universal

darkness, chaos, pain.”

1 9 9 2

T O N Y H A R R I S O N

b. 1937

On Not Being Milton

*for Sergio Vieira & Armando Guebuza (Frelimo)*¹

Read and committed to the flames, I call
these sixteen lines that go back to my roots

my *Cahier d’un retour au pays natal*,²

my growing black enough to fit my boots.

5 The stutter of the scold out of the branks³

of condescension, class and counter-class

thickens with glottals to a lumpen⁴ mass

of Ludding morphemes⁵ closing up their ranks.

Each swung cast-iron Enoch of Leeds stress⁶

io clangs a forged music on the frames of Art,

the looms of owned language smashed apart!

Three cheers for mute ingloriousness!⁷

Articulation is the tongue-tied’s fighting.

In the silence round all poetry we quote

15 Tidd the Cato Street conspirator⁸ who wrote:
Sir, I Ham a very Bad Hand at Righting.

1 9 7 8

1. Mozambique freedom-fighters.

pronounced as two syllables without an interven-

2. Notebook of a return to one's land of birth
ing t.

(French). The title of a poem by the Martinican

5. Smallest meaningful language units. *Ludding*:
poet, historian, and politician Aime Cesaire (b.

Luddites were reactionary groups opposed to the
1913). Published in 1939, *Cahier d'un retour au*
mechanization of mills and factories, a change that
pays natal is a seminal work in the literature of
led to unemployment and starvation.

negritude, describing the condition of colonized

6. Forceful or prominent syllable or sound. "An
black (in Cesaire's case West Indian) people, and
'Enoch' is an iron sledge-hammer used by the Lud-
charting a literal and physical journey back from
dites to smash the frames which were also made
exile to the homeland.

by the same Enoch Taylor of Marsden. The cry

3. "Bridles," or gagging devices put over the
was: 'Enoch made them, Enoch shall break
mouths of "scolds," people who habitually com-
them!' " [Harrison's note],

plain and nag. As the old northern word for poet

7. A reference to Thomas Gray, “Elegy Written in a Country Churchyard,” line 59: “Some mute in defiance of the society that silences them, as inglorious Milton here may rest” (p. 671).

well as to political agitators and revolutionaries.

8. Participant in a failed early nineteenth-century

4. Lower-class. *Glottals*: sounds made by opening and closing the larynx. The Leeds dialect uses glottal stops, the sound made when the word *hutter* is London’s Edgware Road.

T H E M & [u z] / 1 8 7 3

Classics Society

(*Leeds Grammar School* 1 5 5 2 — J 9 5 2) 9

*The grace of Tullies eloquence doth excell
any Englishmans tongue ... my barbarous stile ... I*

The tongue our leaders use to cast their spell
was once denounced as “rude”, “gross”, “base” and “vile”.

5 How fortunate we are who’ve come so far!

We boys can take old Hansards² and translate
the British Empire into SPQR³

but nothing demotic⁰ or too up-to-date, *slangy*
and *not* the English that I speak at home,
io not Hansard standards, and if Antoninus⁴
spoke like delinquent Latin back in Rome
he’d probably get gamma double minus.⁵

And so the lad who gets the alphas works
the hardest in his class at his translation
15 and finds good Ciceronian for Burke's:
*a dreadful schism in the British nation.*⁶

1 9 7 8

Them & [uz]

*for Professors Richard Hoggart & Leon Cortez*⁷

I

ai ai, ay, ay! ... stutterer Demosthenes⁸
gob^o full of pebbles outshouting seas—
mouth

9. Harrison won a scholarship to Leeds Grammar
often based on the Greek alphabet. Thus alpha
School, a highly academic school for pupils aged
would be A, beta B, and gamma double minus
eleven to eighteen, otherwise for fee-paying stu-
C - - , or fail.
dents.

6. Edmund Burke (1729-1797), an Irishman,

1. A quotation from Robert Recorde's preface to
became one of Britain's foremost political thinkers.
his *Ground of Arts* (1543), a textbook that
His writings advocated a sound constitutional
expresses the ethos of Leeds Grammar School in
statesmanship in a time of misgovernment and cor-
preferring the (now defunct) language of "Tully,"
ruption. Though he was against the concept of
the Roman statesman, orator, and writer Marcus

inalienable human rights, he supported the notion of Tullius Cicero (106-43 **B.C.E.**), to contemporary of the “social contract.” He warned that the English.

“dreadful schism” in British society could lead to 2. Printed reports of debates in the British Houses of Parliament, revolution and regicide as in France, and he called for the suppression of free opinions.

for the suppression of free opinions.

3. *Senatus Populusque Romanus*: the senate and people of Rome (Latin).
7. Richard Hoggart (b. 1918) is an academic and, like Tony Harrison, from a working-class, north-

4. A third-century Roman emperor. As Harrison’s of-England background. “Professor” Leon Cortez first name, Tony, has been wrongly taken to be a (1898—1970) was a music-hall comedian, whose act included recitations of Shakespeare’s *Macbeth* this could be a humorous reference to an imaginary self in ancient Rome.

8. Athenian orator (385?-322 **B.C.E.**)

5. Marking in British schools and universities is

1 8 7 4 / T O N Y H A R R I S O N

4 words only of *mi ‘art aches*9 and ... “Mine’s broken, you barbarian, T.W.!”¹ *He* was nicely spoken.

5 “Can’t have our glorious heritage done to death!”

I played the Drunken Porter in *Macbeth*.
“Poetry’s the speech of kings. You’re one of those
Shakespeare gives the comic bits to: prose!
All poetry (even Cockney Keats?) you see
io ‘s been dubbed by [vs]² into RP,
Received Pronunciation, please believe [vs]
your speech is in the hands of the Receivers.”
“We say [vs] not [uz], T.W.!” That shut my trap.
I doffed my flat a’s (as in “flat cap”)
15 my mouth all stuffed with glottals,³ great
lumps to hawk up and spit out ... *E-nun-ci-ate!*

II

So right, yer buggers, then! We’ll occupy
your lousy leasehold Poetry.
I chewed up Littererchewer and spat the bones
20 into the lap of dozing Daniel Jones,⁴
dropped the initials I’d been harried as
and used my *name* and own voice: [uz] [uz] [uz],
ended sentences with by, with, from,
and spoke the language that I spoke at home.
25 RIP RP, RIP T.W.

I’m *Tony* Harrison no longer you!
You can tell the Receivers where to go
(and not aspirate it) once you know
Wordsworth’s *matter* / *water* are full rhymes,
30 [uz] can be loving as well as funny.
My first mention in the *Times*⁵
automatically made Tony Anthony!

1978

9. Cf. John Keats, "Ode to a Nightingale," line 1

3. Sounds made by opening and closing the lar-
(p. 935). To the despair of his teacher, the young
ynx. The Leeds dialect uses glottal stops, the sound
Harrison, speaking the Leeds dialect, says "mi 'art"
made when the word *butter* is pronounced as two
instead of "my heart."

syllables without an intervening *t*.

1. Harrison's first names are Tony William. His

4. English phonetician (1881-1967), whose *Out-*
first work was published under the name T. W.

line of English Phonetics (1918) is considered the
Harrison.

first comprehensive description of Received Pro-

2. Phonetic transcription representing the
nunciation.

Received Pronunciation form of *us*. The northern

5. A London "quality" newspaper.

dialect form is *uz*.

A K U M Q U A T F O R J O H N K E A T S / 1 8 7 5

A Kumquat for John Keats

Today I found the right fruit for my prime,
not orange, not tangelo, and not lime,
nor moon-like globes of grapefruit that now hang
outside our bedroom, nor tart lemon's tang
5 (though last year full of bile and self-defeat
I wanted to believe no life was sweet)

nor the tangible sunshine of the tangerine,
and no incongruous citrus ever seen
at greengrocers' in Newcastle or Leeds
10 mis-spelt by the spuds⁰ and mud-caked swedes,⁰ *potatoes I*
Swedish turnips a fruit an older poet might substitute
for the grape John Keats thought fit to be Joy's fruit,
when, two years before he died, he tried to write
how Melancholy dwelled inside Delight,⁶
15 and if he'd known the citrus that I mean
that's not orange, lemon, lime or tangerine,
I'm pretty sure that Keats, though he had heard
"of candied apple, quince and plum and gourd"⁷
instead of "grape against the palate fine"⁸
20 would have, if he'd known it, plumped for mine,
this Eastern citrus scarcely cherry size
he'd bite just once and then apostrophize
and pen one stanza how the fruit had all
the qualities of fruit before the Fall,⁹
25 but in the next few lines be forced to write
how Eve's apple tasted at the second bite,
and if John Keats had only lived to be,
because of extra years, in need like me,
at 42 he'd help me celebrate
30 that Micanopy¹ kumquat that I ate
whole, straight off the tree, sweet pulp and sour skin—
or was it sweet outside, and sour within?
For however many kumquats that I eat
I'm not sure if it's flesh or rind that's sweet,

35 and being a man of doubt at life's mid-way

I'd offer Keats some kumquats and I'd say:

You'll find that one part's sweet and one part's tart:

say where the sweetness or the sourness start.

I find I can't, as if one couldn't say

40 exactly where the night became the day,

which makes for me the kumquat taken whole

best fruit, and metaphor, to fit the soul

of one in Florida at 42 with Keats

crunching kumquats, thinking, as he eats

6. Cf. John Keats, "Ode on Melancholy," lines 25—

8. Cf. Keats, "Ode on Melancholy," line 28

26 (p. 938).

(p. 938).

7. Cf. Keats, "The Eve of St. Agnes," line 265

9. Cf. Genesis 2—3.

(p. 913).

1. Place in southern Florida.

1 8 7 6 / T O N Y H A R R I S O N

45 the flesh, the juice, the pith, the pips,⁰ the peel, *seeds*

that this is how a full life ought to feel,

its perishable relish prick the tongue,

when the man who savours life 's no longer young,

the fruits that were his futures far behind.

50 T h e n it's the k u m q u a t fruit expresses best

how days have darkness round them like a rind,

life has a skin of death that keeps its zest.

History, a life, the heart, the brain

flow to the taste buds and flow back again.
55 That decade or more past Keats's span
makes me an older not a wiser man,
who knows that it's too late for dying young,
but since youth leaves some sweetnesses unsung,
he's granted days and kumquats to express
60 Man's Being ripened by his Nothingness.
And it isn't just the gap of sixteen years,
a bigger crop of terrors, hopes and fears,
but a century of history on this earth
between J o h n Keats's death and my own birth—
65 years like an open crater, gory, grim,
with bloody bubbles leering at the rim;²
a thing no bigger than an urn explodes
and ravishes all silence, and all odes,
Flora⁰ asphyxiated by foul air *Roman goddess of flowers*
70 u n k n o w n to either Keats or Lempriere,³
dehydrated Naiads, Dryad amputees⁴
dragging themselves through slagscapes with no trees,
a shirt of Nessus fire that gnaws and eats⁵
children half the age of dying Keats ...
75 Now were you twenty five or six years old
when that fevered brow at last grew cold?
I've got no books to hand to check the dates.
My grudging but glad spirit celebrates
that all I've got to h a n d ' s the kumquats, John,
so the fruit I'd love to have your verdict on,
but dead m e n don't eat kumquats, or drink wine,

they shiver in the arms of Proserpine,⁶
not warm in bed beside their Fanny Brawne,⁷
nor watch her pick ripe grapefruit in the dawn
85 as I did, waking, when I saw her twist,
with one deft movement of a sunburnt wrist,
the moon, that feebly lit our last night's walk
past alligator swampland, off its stalk.

I thought of moon-juice juleps⁸ when I saw,
2. Cf. Keats, "Ode to a Nightingale," line 17
water nymphs.

(p. 935).

5. A magical shirt, named for the centaur Nessus

3. John Lempriere (ca. 1765—1824), English clas-
in Greek mythology, that once donned cannot be
sical scholar and author of *The Classical Dic-*
removed and that consumes the wearer in flames.
ionary—for many years a standard work.

6. In Greek mythology, queen of the underworld.

4. Landscapes dominated by heaps of rubble,

7. A young woman loved by Keats.

refuse from mines. *Dryad*: wood nymph. *Naiads*:

8. Drinks made from spirits, sugar, ice, and mint.

THE HEARTLESS ART / 1877

90 as if I'd never seen the moon before,
the planet glow among the fruit, and its pale light
make each citrus on the tree its satellite.

Each evening when I reach to draw the blind

stars seem the light zest squeezed through night's black rind;

95 the night's peeled fruit the sun, juiced of its rays,
first stains, then streaks, then floods the world with days,
days, when the very sunlight made me weep,
days, spent like the nights in deep, drugged sleep,
days in Newcastle by my daughter's bed,
100 wondering if she, or I, weren't better dead,
days in Leeds, grey days, my first dark suit,
my mother's wreaths stacked next to Christmas fruit,
and days, like this in Micanopy. Days!

As strong sun burns away the dawn's grey haze
105 I pick a kumquat and the branches spray
cold dew in my face to start the day.

The dawn's molasses make the citrus gleam
still in the orchards of the groves of dream.
The limes, like Galway after weeks of rain,
no glow with a greenness that is close to pain,
the dew-cooled surfaces of fruit that spent
all last night flaming in the firmament.

The new day dawns. O days! My spirit greets
the kumquat with the spirit of John Keats.

115 O kumquat, comfort for not dying young,
both sweet and bitter, bless the poet's tongue!
I burst the whole fruit chilled by morning dew
against my palate. Fine, for 42!

I search for buzzards as the air grows clear
120 and see them ride fresh thermals overhead.
Their bleak cries were the first sound I could hear
when I stepped at the start of sunrise out of doors,

and a noise like last night's bedsprings on our bed
from Mr Fowler sharpening farmers' saws.

1 9 8 1

The Heartless Art

in memoriam *S.T.*, *died 4 April 1985*

Death is in your house, but I'm out here
sackclothing kumquats against the forecast freeze,
filling the hole you took two days to clear
of briars, beercans, and bleached, barkless trees,
5 with hackberry leaves, pine needles, stuff like that.

1 8 7 8 / T O N Y H A R R I S O N

Next spring, when you're no longer here
we'll have the land grassed over and quite flat.
When the Southern sun starts setting it sets fast.
I've time to tip one more load if I run.

10 Because I know this light could be your last
I drain the day of every drop of sun.

The barrow wheel spins round with a clock's tick.

I hear, three fields away, a hunter's gun,
you, in the silence after, being sick.

15 I watched you, very weak, negotiate
the childproof pill jar, panting to draw breath,
and when you managed it you poured your hate
more on the poured-out contents than on death,
and, like Baptists uttering Beelzebub⁰ *the Devil*
20 syllable by syllable, spat *Meth-*
a-done,⁹ and there's also the poetic rub!

I've often heard my fellow poets (or those

who write in metres something like my own
with rhyme and rhythm, not in chopped-up prose
25 and brood on man's mortality) bemoan
the insufficiency of rhymes for death—
hence my syllabifying *Methadone*
instead of just saying that you fought for breath.
Maybe the main but not the only cause;
30 a piece of engineering I'll explain.
Each syllable *was* followed by a pause
for breathlessness, and scorn of drugs for pain.
Another reason, though, was to delay
the use of one more rhyme stored in my brain
35 that, alas, I'll have a use for any day.
I'd stored away this rhyme when we first met.
Knowing you crawled on hands and knees to prime
our water pump, I'll expiate one debt
by finally revealing that stored rhyme
40 that has the same relentlessness as death
and comes to every one of us in time
and comes to you this April full moon, SETH!
In return for all those oily working parts
you took the time and trouble to explain,
45 the pump that coughs, the saw that never starts,
I'll show you to distract you from the pain
you feel, except when napping, all the time
because you won't take drugs that dull the brain,
a bit about my metre, line and rhyme.
9. Drug used as substitute for morphine or heroin.

READING THE BIBLE BACKWARDS / 1879

50 In Arthur Symons' *St Teresa* Nazareth
is stressed on the last against its spoken flow
to engineer the contrast Jesus/Death.

Do I endorse that contrast? I don't, no!
To have a life on Earth and then want Heaven
55 seems like that all-night bar sign down below
that says that *Happy Hour's* from 4 to 7.

Package lounges² are like ambulances:
the Bourbon-bibber⁰ stares at us and glowers -*drinker*
at what he thinks are pained or pitying glances.

60 We don't see his face but he sees ours.
The non-dying don't see you but you see them
passing by to other rooms with flowers
as you fill the shining kidney with red phlegm.

I've left some spaces ()³

65 benumbed by morphia⁰ and *Methadone* painkilling drug
until the ()⁴ of April, ()^s

W h e n I began these lines could I have known
that the nurse's registration of the time
you let your spirit go with one last groan
70 would help complete the first and third line rhyme?

Those bits I added later. Them apart

I wrote this *in memoriam* for Seth,
meant to show him something of my art,
almost a whole week before his death.

75 The last thing the dying want to read,
I thought, 's a poem, and didn't show it,

and you, not dying yet, why should you need
to know the final failure of the poet?

1985

E L E A N O R W I L N E R

b. 1937

Reading the Bible Backwards¹

All around the altar, huge lianas

curled, unfurled the dark green

of their leaves to complement the red

1. The poetry of the Spanish nun and mystic St.

5. “10.05” [Harrison’s note].

Teresa of Avila (1515-1582), translated by the

1. Or from the Apocalypse in Revelation, the final

English poet and critic Arthur Symons (1865—

book of the Christian Scriptures, to the Creation

1945).

in Genesis, the first book of the Hebrew Scrip-

2. Bars (Floridian colloquialism).

tures. Wilner fuses details from both Christian and

3. “how you stayed alive” [Harrison’s note].

Hebrew Scriptures throughout the poem.

4. “4th” [Harrison’s note].

1 8 8 0 / E L E A N O R W I L N E R

**o f b l o o d s p i l l e d t h e r e — a k i n d o f C h r i s t m a
s d e c o r a t i o n , o v e r h u n g w i t h h e a v y v i n e s
a n d o v e r t h e m , t h e s t a r s .**

**W h e n t h e a n g e l s c a m e , m e s s e n g e r s l i k e b i r
d s b u t w i t h t h e o i l e d f l e s h o f m e n , t h e y h u n
g o v e r t h e s c e n e w i t h s m o l d e r i n g s w o r d s , 2**

splashing the world when they beat
their rain-soaked wings against the turning
sky.

The child was bright in his basket
as a lemon, with a bitter smell from his wet
waddling clothes. His mother bent
above him, singing a lullaby
in the liquid tongue invented
for the very young—short syllables
liked dripping from a eave
mixed with the first big drop of rain
that fell, like tiny silver pearls, from
the glistening fronds of palm. The three
who gathered there—old kings uncrowned:
the cockroach, condor and the leopard, lord
of the cracks below the ground, the moun-
tain pass and the grass-grown plain, were
not adorned, did not bear gifts, had not
come to adore; they were simply drawn
to gawk at this recurrent, awkward son
whom the wind had said would spell
the end of fear that had been.

Somewhere north of this familiar scene
the polar caps were melting, the water was
advancing in its slow, relentless
lines, swallowing the old
35 landmarks, swelling the sea that pulled
down the flowers and the great steel cities
down.

The dolphins sport in the rising sea,
anemones wave their many arms like hair

on a drowned gorgon's head, her features
40 softened by these beyond all recogniti
on.

On the desert's edge where the oasis dies in
a wash of sand, the sphinx⁵ seems to shift to
her haunches of stone, and the rain, as it r
uns down, completes the ruin of her face. T
he Nile

45 merges with the sea, the waters rise
and drown the noise of earth. At the forest's

s 2. Suggests the flaming sword of the cherubim

4. The water imagery suggests both the flood from
stationed east of the Garden of Eden (Genesis
which Noah escaped in the ark (Genesis 7) and
3.24).

the end of the Ice Age. In Greek mythology, the

3. Moses' mother hid him in a covered wicker bas-

Gorgons were three sisters who had snakes for
ket, which she set in reeds by the Nile, to protect
hair.

him from Pharaoh's command to cast all sons into

5. Wilner's sphinx evokes not the Egyptian but the
the river (Exodus 2.2—3). The lines following
Greek model, a winged creature with a woman's
return to Christ's nativity and the gifts brought to
head and lion's body.

him by the wise men (Matthew 2.1 — 12).

HIGHNOONATLOSALAMOS / 1881

edge, where the child sleeps, the waters ga
ther —

as if a hand were reaching for the curtain to
drop across the glowing, lit tableau.

50 When the waves closed over, completing
the green sweep of ocean, there was no time
for mourning.

No final trump, no thunder to announce
the silent steal of waters; how soundlessly
it all went under: the little family

55 and the scene so easily mistaken

for an adoration. Above, more clouds pour
ed in and closed their ranks across the skies;
the angels, who had seemed so solid, turned
quick silver in the rain.

60 Now, nothing but the wind

moves on the rain-pocked face

of the swollen waters, though far below

where giants squid lie hidden in shy tangles,
the whales, heavy-bodied as the angels,

65 their fins like vestiges of wings,

sings some mighty epic of their own —

a great day when the ships would all withdraw,
the harpoons fail of their aim, the land

dissolve into the waters, and they would swim
70 among the peaks of mountains, like
eagles of the deep, while far below them, the
old nightmares of fear would settle

into silt among the broken cities, the empty
basket of the child would float

75 abandoned in the seaweed until the work
of water unraveled it in filaments of straw,
w,

till even that straw rotted

**in the planetary thaw the whales prayed for,
sending their jets of waters skyward
so in the clear conviction they 'd spill back
to ocean with their will accomplished**

in the miracle of rain: *And the earth*

was without form and void, and darkness

was upon the face of the deep. And

85 the Spirit moved upon the face of the waters.7

1989

High Noon at Los Alamos⁸

T o t u r n a s t o n e

w i t h i t s w h i t e s q u i r m i n g

u n d e r n e a t h , t o p r y t h e d i s c

6. The final trumpet; image of the Last Judgment. Manhattan Project to develop an atomic bomb 7. As in Genesis 1.2. (1942-45).

8. Los Alamos, New Mexico; a major site of the

1882 / E L E A N O R W I L N E R

from the sun's eclipse—white heat

5 coiling in the blinded eye: to these malign

necessities we come

from the dim time of dinosaurs

who crawled like breathing lava

from the earth's cracked crust, and swung

io their tiny heads above the lumbering tons

of flesh, brains no bigger than a fist

clenched to resist the white flash

in the sky the day the sun-flares

pared t h e m d o w n t o r e l i c s f o r m u s e u m s ,

is turned glaciers back, seared Sinai's
meadows⁹ black—the ferns withered, the swamps
were melted down to molten mud, the cells
uncoupled, recombined, and madly
multiplied, huge trees toppled to the ground,
20 the slow life there abandoned hope,
a caterpillar stiffened in the grass.

Two apes, caught in the act of coupling,
made a m u t a n t child
who woke to sunlight wondering, his mother
25 torn by the huge new head
that forced the narrow birth canal.¹

As if compelled to repetition
and to unearth again
white fire at the heart of matter—fire
BO we sought and fire we spoke,
our thoughts, however elegant, were fire
from first to last—like sentries set to watch
at Argos for the signal fire
passed peak to peak from Troy
35 to Nagasaki,² triumphant echo of the burning
city walls and prologue to the murders
yet to come—we scan the sky
for that bright flash,
our eyes stared white from watching
40 for the signal fire that ends
the epic—a cursed line
with its caesura, a pause

to signal peace, or a rehearsal
for the silence.

1 9 8 9

9. In the Sinai Peninsula, a triangular region linking Africa with Asia.

B.C.E.). The play opens with a watchman in Argos—

1. The effects of extreme radiation can include a city on the lower peninsula of Greece, and the gene mutation.

home of Agamemnon—looking for “the light, the

2. Japanese city, site of the second atomic bomb signal-fire / breaking out of Troy” (i.e., signalling explosion in 1945. Lines 32—34 refer to the beginning of *Agamemnon*, the first play in the *Oresteia*).

1 8 8 3

1 8 8 3

DOMMORAES

b. 1938

Kanheri Caves

Over these blunted, these tormented hills,
Hawks hail and wheel, glissading⁰ down the sky: *gliding*

It seems this green ambiguous landscape tilts

And teeters the perspective of the eye.

5 Only two centuries after Christ, this cliff

Was colonized by a mild antique race,

Who left us, like a faded photograph,

Their memories that dry up in this place.
They left no ghosts. The rock alone endures,
io Their drains and cisterns work: storms wrecked the stairs:
Blocks are fallen: sunlight cracks those floors
And fidgets in a courtyard where a pair
Of giant Buddhas smile and wait their crash;
Then temples, audience-halls, a lonely tomb.
15 I touch its side. The stone's worn smooth as flesh.
A stranger dangles peaceful in that womb.
Worm he will be, if born: blink in the sun.
I'll crawl into his dark: perhaps he'll climb
Beyond the trippers to the final stone
20 Flat of the hillock, there to grow in Time.
Dry pubic ferns prick the bitter sand.
Hawks in a hot concentric ecstasy
Of flight and shriek will wake his vision. And,
When the clouds lift, he'll glimpse the miles-off sea.

1957

Snow on a Mountain

That dream, her eyes like rocks studded the high
Mountain of her body that I was to climb.
One moment past my hands had swum
The chanting streams of her thighs:
5 Then I was lost, breathless among the pines.
Alone, alone with the nervous noise of water,
Climbing, I hoped to emerge on a path, but I knew
When the spurred trees were past
I should go on no farther

io But fall there, dazzled by the miles of snow.

My dream was broken by the knock of day.

Yet, within my mind, these pictures linger:

1 8 8 4 / D O M M O R A E S

I touch her with my clumsy words of love

And sense snow in her eye,

15 Mists, and the winds that warn, Stranger, O stranger!

1 9 5 7

From Two from Israel

Rendezvous

(F O R N A T H A N A L T E R M A N N) 1

Altermann, sipping wine, reads with a look

Of infinite patience and slight suffering.

W h e n I approach him, he puts down his book,

Waves to the chair beside him like a king,

5 Then claps his hands, and an awed waiter fetches

Bread, kosher sausage, cake, a chicken's wing,

More wine, some English cigarettes, and matches.

“Eat, eat,” Altermann says, “this is good food.”

Through the awning over us the sunlight catches

io His aquiline⁰ sad head, till it seems hewed *eaglelike*

From tombstone marble. I accept some bread.

I've lunched already, but would not seem rude.

W h e n I refuse more, he feeds me instead,

Heaping my plate, clapping for wine, his eyes

15 —Expressionless inside the marble head—

Appearing not to notice how the flies

Form a black, sticky icing on the cake.

Thinking of my health now, I visualise
The Aryan snow floating, flake upon flake,
20 Over the ghetto wall where only fleas
Fed well, and they and hunger kept awake
Under sharp stars, those waiting for release.
Birds had their nests, but Jews nowhere to hide
W h e n visited by vans and black police.
25 The shekinah⁰ rose where a people died, *divine presence*
A pillar of flame by night, of smoke by day.
From Europe then the starved and terrified
Flew. Now their mourner sits in this cafe,
Telling me how to scan a Hebrew line.
BO Though my attention has moved far away

1. Israeli poet (1910-1970).

N O O N D A Y A X E M A N / 1 8 8 5

His features stay marble and aquiline.
But the eternal gesture of his race
Flowing through the h a n d s that offer bread and wine
Reveals the deep love sealed in the still face.

1 9 6 5

L E S M U R R A Y

b. 1938

Noonday Axeman

Axe-fall, echo and silence. Noonday silence.
Two miles from here, it is the twentieth century:
cars on the bitumen,¹ powerlines vaulting the farms.
Here, with my axe, I am chopping into the stillness.
5 Axe-fall, echo and silence. I pause, roll tobacco,

twist a cigarette, lick it. All is still.

I lean on my axe. A cloud of fragrant leaves
hangs over me moveless, pierced everywhere by sky.
Here, I remember all of a h u n d r e d years:
io candleflame, still night, frost and cattle bells,
the draywheels² silence final in our ears,
and the first red cattle spreading through the hills
and my great-great-grandfather here with his first sons,
who would grow old, still speaking with his Scots accent,
15 having never seen those highlands that they sang of.
A hundred years. I stand and smoke in the silence.
A h u n d r e d years of clearing, splitting, sawing,
a hundred years of timbermen, ringbarkers, fencers
and women in kitchens, stoking loud iron stoves
20 year in, year out, and singing old songs to their children
have made this silence h u m a n and familiar
no farther than where the farms rise into foothills,
and, in that time, how many have sought their graves
or fled to the cities, maddened by this stillness?
25 Things are so wordless. These two opposing scarves⁰
incisions

I have cut in my red-gum squeeze out jewels of sap

1. Name given to various inflammable mineral 2. Wheels of a
long, heavy cart, substances, here probably asphalt.

1 8 8 6 / L E S M U R R A Y

and stare. And soon, with a few more axe-strokes,
the tree will grow troubled, tremble, shift its crown
and, leaning slowly, gather speed and colossally
BO crash down and lie between the standing trunks.

And then, I know, of the knowledge that led my forebears
to drink and black rage and wordlessness, there will be silence.
After the tree falls, there will reign the same silence
as stuns and spurs us, enraptures and defeats us,
35 as seems to some a challenge, and seems to others
to be waiting here for something beyond imagining.
Axe-fall, echo and silence. U n h u m a n silence.
A stone cracks in the heat. Through the still twigs, radiance
stings at my eyes. I rub a damp brow with a handkerchief
40 and chop on into the stillness. Axe-fall and echo.
T h e great mast m u r m u r s now. The scarves in its trunk
crackle and squeak now, crack and increase as the hushing
weight of high branches heels outward, and commences
tearing and falling, and the collapse is tremendous.
45 Twigs fly, leaves puff and subside. T h e severed trunk
slips off its stump and drops along its shadow.
And then there is no more. T h e stillness is there
as ever. And I fall to lopping branches.
Axe-fall, echo and silence. It will be centuries
50 before many m e n are truly at h o m e in this country,
and yet, there have always been some, in each generation,
there have always been some who could live in the presence of
silence.
And some, I have known them, m e n with gentle broad hands,
who would die if removed from these unpeopled places,
55 some again I have seen, bemused and shy in the cities,
you have built against silence, dumbly trudging through noise
past the railway stations, looking up through the traffic

at the smoky halls, dreaming of journeys, of stepping
down from the train at some upland stop to recover
60 the crush of dry grass underfoot, the silence of trees.

Axe-fall, echo and silence. Dreaming silence.

Though I myself run to the cities, I will forever
be coming back here to walk, knee-deep in ferns,
up and away from this metropolitan century,

65 to remember my ancestors, axemen, dairymen, horse-
breakers,

now confined in silence, down with their beards and dreams,
who, unwilling or rapt, despairing or very patient,

made what amounts to a human breach in the silence,

ONCE IN A LIFETIME, SNOW / 1887

**made of their lives the rough foundation of
legends —**

**70 men must have legends, else they will die
of strangeness —**

**then died in their turn, each, after his own
fashion, resigned or agonized, from silen-
ce into great silence.**

**Axe-fall, echo and axe-fall. Noonday sile-
nce.**

**Though I go to the cities, turning my back on
these hills, 75 for the talk and dazzle of ci-
ties, for the sake of belonging for months a-
nd years at a time to the twentieth century,
the city will never quite hold me. I will be al-
ways coming back here on the up-train, pe-
ering, leaning out of the window to see, on f-
ar-off ridges, so the sky between the trees,
and over the racket of the rails to hear the e-
cho and the silence.**

**I shoulder my axe and set off home through
the stillness.**

1965

Once in a Lifetime, Snow

For Chris and Mary Sarah

**Winters at home brought wind,
black frost and raw
grey rain in barbed-wire fields,
but never more**

**5 until the day my uncle
rose at dawn
and stepped outside — to find
his paddock gone,
his cattle to their hocks
in ghostly ground
and unaccustomed light
for miles around.**

**And he stopped short, and gazed
lit from below,
15 and half his wrinkles vanished
murmuring *Snow*.**

**A man of farm and fact
he started to see
the facts of weather raised
20 to a mystery
white on the world he knew
and all he owned.**

1888 / LESMURRAY

Snow? Here? he mused. I see.
High time I learned.
25 Here, guessing what he meant
had much to do
with that black earth dread old men
are given to,
he stooped to break the sheer
30 crust with delight
at finding the cold unknown
so deeply bright,
at feeling it take his prints
so softly deep,
35 as if it thought he knew
enough to sleep,
or else so little he
might seek to shift
its weight of wintry light
40 by a single drift,
perceiving this much, he scuffed
his slippered feet
and scooped a handful up
to taste, and eat
45 in memory of the fact
that even he
might not have seen the end
of reality ...
Then, turning, he tiptoed in
50 to a bedroom, smiled,

and wakened a murmuring child
and another child.

1969

The Quality of Sprawl

Sprawl is the quality
of the man who cut down his Rolls-Royce
into a farm utility truck, and sprawl
is what the company lacked when it made repeated efforts
5 to buy the vehicle back and repair its image.

Sprawl is doing your farming by aeroplane, roughly,
or driving a hitchhiker that extra hundred miles home.

THE QUALITY OF SPRAWL / 1889

**It is the rococo of being your own still cen-
tre.**

**It is never lighting cigars with ten-dollar
notes: 10 that 's idiot ostentation and mur-
der of starving people.**

**Nor can it be bought with the ash of million-
-dollar deeds.**

**Sprawl lengthen the legs; it trains greyh-
oundson liver and beer.**

**Sprawl almost never says Why not? with pa-
lms comically raised nor can it be dressed for,
not even in running shoes worn 15 with
mink and a no sering. That is Society. That
's Style.**

**Sprawl is more like the thirteenth banana
in a dozen or anyway the fourteenth.**

**Sprawl is Hank Stamper in *Never Give an Inch*
bisecting an obstructive official's desk with
a chainsaw.**

20 Notharmingtheofficial. Sprawlisnever
rbrutalthroughit'softenintransigent. Spr
awlisneverSimondeMontfort5

atatown-storming: Killthemall! Godwill
knowhisown.

Knowingtheman'snamethiswassaidtom
ightbesprawl.

Sprawloccursinart. Thefifteenthtotwen
ty-first25linesinasonnet, forexample. A
ndincertainpaintings; IhaveSprawleno
ughtohaveforgottenwhichpaintings.

Turner's glorious *Burning of the Houses of Parliament*6

comestomind, adoublingbanneredtrium
phofsprawl—

except, hedidn'tfirethem.

30 Sprawlgetsupthenoseofmanykindsof
people(everykindthatcomesinkinds)wh
osefuturesdon'tincludeit.

Somedecryitascriminalpresumption, sil
ken-robedPopeAlexander7

dividingthenewworldbetweenSpainand
Portugal.

Ifhesmiled *in pettos* afterwards, perhaps
ethingdidhaveSprawl.

35 Sprawlisreallyclassless, though. It'sJ
ohnChristopherFrederickMurray

asleepinhisneighbours'bestbedinspurs
andoilskinsbutnothavingthrownup:

sprawlisneverCalumwho, drunk, along
thehallwaysofourhouse, reinventedtheF
estoon.9 Rather

40 it'sBeatriceMilesgoingtwelvehundred
dittoinataxi, 1

3. Style of architecture, decoration, and furniture
7. Eight popes took the name Alexander. Possibly prevalent in Louis XV's France. Characteristically Alexander VI, Rodrigo Borgia (1431-1503), father

asymmetrical, overornamented, and florid.

of Caesar, Lucretia, and other children. He
4. U.K. title of Paul Newman's movie *Sometimes*

secured the papal throne through blatant bribery.

a Great Notion (1971), an adaptation of the Ken
8. To himself (Italian).

Kesey novel about Oregon logger Hank Stamper

9. Chain of flowers, leaves, etc., hung in a curve
and his family.

between two points.

5. Thirteenth-century earl of Leicester; leader of

1. The Australian bohemian Beatrice Miles

the barons in disaffection against Henry III, and

(1902—1973) was famous for, among other things,
so an archetypal "overmighty subject."

riding in taxis and taking public transport but

6. Famous landscape by the English artist Joseph

refusing to pay the fares, for making a nineteen-

Mallord William Turner (1775-1851), whose

day taxi journey from Sydney to Perth and paying

painting, in watercolor and, later, oil, foreshad-

the fare, and for reciting Shakespeare (line 42)

owed Impressionism.

from memory. *Ditto*: i.e., miles.

1890 / LESMURRAY

No Lewd Advances, No Hitting Animals, No Speeding, on the proceeds of her two-bob-a-sonnet Shakespeare readings.

An image of my country. And would that it were more so.

No, sprawl is full-gloss murals on a council-house wall. *town hall* 45 Sprawl leans on things. It is loose-limbed in its mind.

Reprimanded and dismissed

it listens with a grin and one boot up on the rail of possibility. It may have to leave the Earth.

Being roughly Christian, it scratches the other cheek 50 and thinks it unlikely. Though people have been shot for sprawl.

1983

Morse

Tuckett. Bill Tuckett. Telegraph operator, Hall's Creek,

which is way out back of the Outback, but he stuck it, quite likely liked it, despite heat, glare, dust and the lack

of diversion or doctors. Come disaster you trusted to luck,

Singenuity and pluck. This was back when nice people said pluck, the sleeve-link and green eyes had epoch. 2

Faced, though, like Bill Tuckett

with a man needing surgery right on the spot, a lot would have done their dashes. It looked hopeless (dot dot dot) io Lift him up on the table, said Tuckett, running the key hot

till **H e a d O f f i c e** turned up a doctor w h o coolly
instructed

up a t h o u s a n d m i l e s of wire, as **T u c k e t t**
advanced slit by slit w i t h a safety razor blade, p i o n e e r
i n g on into the wet,

copper-wiring the rivers off, in the first operation c o n d u
c t e d

15 along dotted lines, with r u m drinkers gripping the
patient:

d - d - d a s h it, take care, Tuck!

A n d the vital spark stayed unshorted.

Yallah!³ breathed the c a m e l m e n . Tuckett, y o u did it,
y o u did it!

cried the spattered la-de-dah jodhpur⁴-wearing Inspector
of Stock.

20 We imagine, s o m e w e e k s later, a properly laconic
c o n v a l e s c e n t averring W i t h o u t you, I'd have
kicked the b u c k e t ...

F r o m C h u n g k i n g to Burrenjuck,⁵ m o r s e keys
have mostly g o n e silent and only old m e n m e e t n o w
to c h i t - c h a t in their electric b y g o n e dialect. T h e
last letter m a n y will forget

25 is dit-dit-dit-dah, V for Victory. T h e coders' h e r o had
speed,

resource and a t o u c h . So ditditdit daah for **Bill Tuckett**.

1 9 8 3

2. I.e., the nineteenth century. *Sleevelink*: cuff

knee to ankle.

link.

5. I.e., from southwest China to southeast Austra-

3. God be praised! (Arabic).

lia.

4. Long breeches for riding, close-fitting from

CHARLESSIMIC

b. 1938

Watch Repair

A small wheel

Incandescent,

Shivering like

A pinned butterfly.

Handsthrownup

Inalldirections:

Thecrossroads

Onearrivesat

Inanightmare.

Highertthanthat

Number12presides

Likeabeekeeper

Overtheswarminghoneycomb

Oftheopenwatch.

Otherwheels

Thatcouldfit

Insidearaindrop.

Tools

Thatmustbesplinters

Ofarcticstarlight.

Tinygoldenmills

Grindinginvisible

Coffeebeans.

Whenthecoffee'sboiling

C a u t i o u s l y ,
S o i t d o e s n ' t b u r n u s ,
W e r a i s e i t
T o t h e l i p s
O f t h e n e a r e s t
E a r .

1 8 9 2 / C H A R L E S W R I G H T

Prodigy1

I g r e w u p b e n t o v e r
a c h e s s b o a r d .

I l o v e d t h e w o r d *endgame*.

A l l m y c o u s i n s l o o k e d w o r r i e d .

5 I t w a s a s m a l l h o u s e
n e a r a R o m a n g r a v e y a r d .

P l a n e s a n d t a n k s
s h o o k i t s w i n d o w p a n e s .

A r e t i r e d p r o f e s s o r o f a s t r o n o m y
10 t a u g h t m e h o w t o p l a y .

T h a t m u s t h a v e b e e n i n 1 9 4 4 .

I n t h e s e t w e w e r e u s i n g ,
t h e p a i n t h a d a l m o s t c h i p p e d o f f
t h e b l a c k p i e c e s .

15 T h e w h i t e K i n g w a s m i s s i n g
a n d h a d t o b e s u b s t i t u t e d f o r .

I ' m t o l d b u t d o n o t b e l i e v e
t h a t t h a t s u m m e r I w i t n e s s e d
m e n h u n g f r o m t e l e p h o n e p o l e s .

20 I r e m e m b e r m y m o t h e r

bl i n d f o l d i n g m e a l o t .
S h e h a d a w a y o f t u c k i n g m y h e a d
s u d d e n l y u n d e r h e r o v e r c o a t .
I n c h e s s , t o o , t h e p r o f e s s o r t o l d m e ,
25 t h e m a s t e r s p l a y b l i n d f o l d e d ,
t h e g r e a t o n e s o n s e v e r a l b o a r d s
a t t h e s a m e t i m e .

1 9 8 0

A Book Full of Pictures

F a t h e r s t u d i e d t h e o l o g y t h r o u g h t h e m a i l

A n d t h i s w a s e x a m t i m e .

M o t h e r k n i t t e d . I s a t q u i e t l y w i t h a b o o k

F u l l o f p i c t u r e s . N i g h t f e l l .

1. This poem and “Cameo Appearance” (p. 1893) allude to the Nazi bombing of Belgrade, where Simic was born, in World War II.

C A M E O A P P E A R A N C E / 1 8 9 3

5 My hands grew cold touching the faces

Of dead kings and queens.

There was a black raincoat

in the upstairs bedroom

Swaying f r o m the ceiling,

10 But what was it doing there?

Mother’s long needles made quick crosses.

They were black

Like the inside of my head just then.

The pages I turned sounded like wings.

15 “The soul is a bird,” he once said.

In my book full of pictures

A battle raged: lances and swords
M a d e a kind of wintry forest
W i t h my heart spiked and bleeding in its branches.

1 9 9 2

Cameo Appearance

I had a small, nonspeaking part
In a bloody epic. I was one of the
Bombed and fleeing humanity.
In the distance our great leader
5 Crowded like a rooster from a balcony,
Or was it a great actor
Impersonating our great leader?
That's me there, I said to the kiddies.
I'm squeezed between the m a n
io With two bandaged hands raised
And the old woman with her m o u t h open
As if she were showing us a tooth
That hurts badly. The hundred times
I rewound the tape, not once
15 Could they catch sight of me
In that huge gray crowd,
That was like any other gray crowd.
Trot off to bed, I said finally.
I know I was there. O n e take
20 Is all they had time for.
We ran, and the planes grazed our hair,
And then they were no more
As we stood dazed in the burning city,

But, of course, they didn't film that.

1 9 9 7

1 8 9 4

M A R G A R E T A T W O O D

b. 1939

This Is a Photograph of Me

It was taken some time ago.

At first it seems to be

a smeared

print: blurred lines and gray flecks

5 blended with the paper;

then, as you scan

it, you see in the left-hand corner

a thing that is like a branch: part of a tree

(balsam or spruce) emerging

10 and, to the right, halfway up

what ought to be a gentle

slope, a small frame house.

In the background there is a lake,

and beyond that, some low hills.

15 (The photograph was taken

the day after I drowned.

I am in the lake, in the center

of the picture, just under the surface.

It is difficult to say where

20 precisely, or to say

how large or small I am:

the effect of water

on light is a distortion
but if you look long enough,
25 eventually
you will be able to see me.)

1 9 6 6

At the Tourist Center in Boston
There is my country under glass,
a white relief-
map with red dots for the cities,
reduced to the size of a wall

A T T H E T O U R I S T C E N T E R I N B O S T O N / 1 8
9 5

5 and beside it 10 blownup snapshots
one for each province,
in purple-browns and odd reds,
the green of the trees dulled;
all blues however
io of an assertive purity.

Mountains and lakes and more lakes
(though Quebec is a restaurant and Ontario the empty
interior of the parliament buildings),
with nobody climbing the trails and hauling out
15 the fish and splashing in the water
but arrangements of grinning tourists—
look here, Saskatchewan
is a flat lake, some convenient rocks
where two children pose with a father
20 and the mother is cooking something

in immaculate slacks by a smokeless fire,
her teeth white as detergent.

Whose dream is this, I would like to know:

is this a manufactured

25 hallucination, a cynical fiction, a lure
for export only?

I seem to remember people,

at least in the cities, also slush,

machines and assorted garbage. Perhaps

30 that was my private mirage

which will just evaporate

when I go back. Or the citizens will be gone,

run off to the peculiarly-

green forests

35 to wait among the brownish mountains

for the platoons of tourists

and plan their odd red massacres.

Unsuspecting

window lady, I ask you:

40 Do you see nothing

watching you from under the water?

Was the sky ever that blue?

Who really lives there?

1997

1 8 9 6 / M A R G A R E T A T W O O D

You Begin

You begin this way:

this is your hand,

this is your eye,
that is a fish, blue and flat
5 on the paper, almost
the shape of an eye.

This is your mouth, this is an O
or a moon, whichever
you like. This is yellow.

10 Outside the window
is the rain, green
because it is summer, and beyond that
the trees and then the world,
which is round and has only

15 the colors of these nine crayons.
This is the world, which is fuller
and more difficult to learn than I have said.

You are right to smudge it that way
with the red and then

20 the orange: the world burns.

Once you have learned these words
you will learn that there are more
words than you can ever learn.

The word *hand* floats above your hand
25 like a small cloud over a lake.

The word *hand* anchors
your hand to this table,
your hand is a warm stone
I hold between two words.

30 This is your hand, these are my hands, this is the world,

which is round but not flat and has more colors
than we can see.

It begins, it has an end,

this is what you will

35 come back to, this is your hand.

1 9 7 8

Flowers

Right now I am the flower girl.

I bring fresh flowers,

F L O W E R S / 1 8 9 7

d u m p out the old ones, the greenish water
that smells like dirty teeth

5 into the bathroom sink, snip off the stem ends
with surgical scissors I borrowed

from the nursing station,

put them into a j a r

I brought from home, because they don't have vases

10 in this hotel for the ill,

place them on the table beside my father

where he can't see them

because he won't open his eyes.

He lies flattened under the white sheet.

15 He says he is on a ship,

and I can see it—

the functional white walls, the minimal windows,

the little bells, the rubbery footsteps of strangers,

the whispering all around

20 of the air-conditioner, or else the ocean,

and he is on a ship;
he's giving us up, giving up everything
but the breath going in
and out of his diminished body;
25 minute by minute he's sailing slowly away,
away from us and our waving hands
that do not wave.

The women come in, two of them, in blue;
it's no use being kind, in here,
30 if you don't have hands like theirs—
large and capable, the hands
of plump muscular angels,
the ones that blow trumpets and lift swords.

They shift him carefully, tuck in the corners.
35 It hurts, but as little as possible.

Pain is their lore. The rest of us
are helpless amateurs.

A suffering you can neither cure nor enter—
there are worse things, but not many.

40 After a while it makes us impatient.

Can't we do anything but feel sorry?

I sit there, watching the flowers
in their pickle jar. He is asleep, or not.

I think: He looks like a turtle.

45 Or: He looks erased.

But somewhere in there, at the far end of the tunnel
of pain and forgetting he's trapped in
is the same father I knew before,

the one who carried the green canoe
50 over the portage, the painter trailing,
1 8 9 8 / M A R G A R E T A T W O O D
myself with the fishing rods, slipping
on the wet boulders and slapping flies.
That was the last time we went there.
There will be a last time for this also,
55 bringing cut flowers to this white room.
Sooner or later I too
will have to give everything up,
even the sorrow that comes with these flowers,
even the anger,
60 even the memory of how I brought them
from a garden I will no longer have by then,
and put them beside my dying father,
hoping I could still save him.

1 9 9 5

Up
You wake up filled with dread.
There seems no reason for it.
Morning light sifts through the window,
there is birdsong,
5 you can't get out of bed.
It's something about the crumpled sheets
hanging over the edge like jungle
foliage, the terry slippers gaping
their dark pink mouths for your feet,
io the unseen breakfast—some of it

in the refrigerator you do not dare
to open—you will not dare to eat.

What prevents you? The future. The future tense,
immense as outer space.

15 You could get lost there.

No. Nothing so simple. The past, its density
and drowned events pressing you down,
like sea water, like gelatin
filling your lungs instead of air.

20 Forget all that and let's get up.

Try moving your arm.

Try moving your head.

Pretend the house is on fire
and you must run or burn.

25 No, that one's useless.

It's never worked before.

Where is it coming from, this echo,
this huge No that surrounds you,

DIGGING / 1899

**silent as the folds of the yellow
30 curtains, mute as the cheerful
Mexican bowl with its cargo
of mummified flowers?**

**(You chose the colour of the sun,
not the dried neutrals of shadow.**

35 God knows you've tried.)

Nowhere's a good one:

you're relying on your death bed.

You have one hour to live.

Who is it, exactly, you have needed

40 all these years to forgive?

1995

SEAMUS HEANEY

b. 1939

Digging

Between my finger and my thumb

The squat pen rests; snug as a gun.

Under my window, a clean raspingsound

**When the spade sinks into gravelly ground
:5 My father, digging. I look down**

**Till his straining rump among the flower beds
Bends low, comes up twenty years away**

**Stooping in rhythm through potato drills
1**

Where he was digging.

**io The coarse boot nestled on the lug, the shaft
Against the inside knee was levered firmly.**

**He rooted out tall tops, buried the bright
dged deep To scatter new potatoes that we picked**

Loving their cool hardness in our hands.

**15 By god, the old man could handle a spade
.**

Just like his old man.

My grandfather cut more turf in a day

Than any other man on Toner's bog.

Once I carried him milk in a bottle

20 Corked sloppily with paper. He straight
t e n e d u p 1. Small furrows in which seeds are sown.

2. Slabs of peat that, when dried, are a common domestic fuel
in Ireland.

1900 / S E A M U S H E A N E Y

To drink it, then fell to right away

Nicking and slicing neatly, heaving sods

Over his shoulder, going down and down

For the good turf. Digging.

25 The cold smell of potato mould, the squelch and slap

Of soggy peat, the curt cuts of an edge

Through living roots awaken in my head.

But I've no spade to follow m e n like them.

Between my finger and my t h u m b

30 The squat pen rests.

I'll dig with it.

1966

The Forge

All I know is a door into the dark.

Outside, old axles and iron hoops rusting;

Inside, the h a m m e r e d anvil's short-pitched ring,

The unpredictable fantail of sparks

5 Or hiss w h e n a new shoe toughens in water.

The anvil must be somewhere in the centre,

Horned as a unicorn, at one end square,

Set there immovable: an altar

W h e r e he expends himself in shape and music,

io Sometimes, leather-aproned, hairs in his nose,

He leans out on the jamb, recalls a clatter

Of hoofs where traffic is flashing in rows;
Then grunts and goes in, with a slam and flick
To beat real iron out, to work the bellows.

1969

Punishment³

I can feel the tug
of the halter at the nape

3. In 1951, the peat-stained body of a young girl clearly seen [Glob reproduces a photograph of her who lived in the late first century was recovered brain], ... This girl of only fourteen had had an from a bog in Windeby, Germany. As P. V. Glob inadequate winter diet... . To keep the young describes her in *The Bog People* (1969), she “lay body under, some birch branches and a big stone naked in the hole in the peat, a bandage over the were laid upon her.” According to the Roman his- eyes and a collar round the neck. The band across torian Tacitus (ca. 56—ca. 120), the Germanic peo- the eyes was drawn tight and had cut into the neck ples punished adulterous women by shaving off and the base of the nose. We may feel sure that it their hair and then scourging them out of the vil- had been used to close her eyes to this world. There lage or killing them. In more recent times, her was no mark of strangulation on the neck, so that “betraying sisters” (line 38) have sometimes been it had not been used for that purpose.” Her hair

shaved, stripped, tarred, and handcuffed by the
“had been shaved off with a razor on the left side
Irish Republican Army to the railings of Belfast in
of the head... . When the brain was removed the
punishment for keeping company with British sol-
convolutions and folds of the surface could be
diers.

P U N I S H M E N T / 1 9 0 1

of h e r neck, the wind
on h e r naked front.

5 It blows h e r nipples
to a m b e r beads,
it shakes the frail rigging
of h e r ribs.

I can see h e r drowned
10 body in the bog,
the weighing stone,
the floating rods and boughs.

U n d e r which at first
she was a barked sapling
15 that is dug up
oak-bone, b r a i n - f i r k i n - s m a l l c a s k
her shaved h e a d
like a stubble of black corn,
her blindfold a soiled bandage,
20 her noose a ring
to store
the memories of love.

Little adulteress,
before they p u n i s h e d you
25 you were flaxen-haired,
undernourished, and your
tar-black face was beautiful.

My poor scapegoat,
I almost love you
30 but would have cast, I know,
the stones of silence.

I am the artful voyeur
of your brain's exposed
and darkened combs,⁴
35 your muscles' webbing
a n d all your n u m b e r e d bones:

I w h o have stood d u m b
w h e n your betraying sisters,
cauled⁵ in tar,
40 wept by the railings,
w h o would connive
in civilized outrage

4. Cellular structure, as in honeycomb. membrane that at birth,
when it is unruptured, 5. Wrapped or enclosed. A caul is the
inner fetal sometimes covers the infant's head.

1 9 0 2 / S E A M U S H E A N E Y

yet understand the exact
and tribal, intimate revenge.

1 9 7 5

The Skunk

Up, black, striped and damasked like the chasuble⁶

At a funeral mass, the s k u n k s tail
Paraded the skunk. Night after night
I expected her like a visitor.
5 The refrigerator whinnied into silence.
My desk light softened beyond the verandah.
Small oranges loomed in the orange tree.
I began to be tense as a voyeur.
After eleven years I was composing
io Love-letters again, broaching the word “wife”
Like a stored cask, as if its slender vowel
Had mutated into the night earth and air
Of California. T h e beautiful, useless
Tang of eucalyptus spelt your absence.
15 The aftermath of a m o u t h f u l of wine
Was like inhaling you off a cold pillow.
And there she was, the intent and glamorous,
Ordinary, mysterious skunk,
Mythologized, demythologized,
20 Snuffing the boards five feet beyond me.
It all came back to me last night, stirred
By the sootfall of your things at bedtime,
Your head-down, tail-up h u n t in a bottom drawer
For the black plunge-line nightdress.

1 9 7 9

A Dream of Jealousy

Walking with you and another lady
In wooded parkland, the whispering grass
Ran its fingers through our guessing silence

And the trees opened into a shady
5 Unexpected clearing where we sat down.
I think the candour of the light dismayed us.
6. Sleeveless vestment worn by the priest celebrating Mass, its
color regulated by the feast of the day.

S T A T I O N I S L A N D / 1 9 0 3

We talked about desire and being jealous,
O u r conversation a loose single gown
Or a white picnic tablecloth spread out
10 Like a book of m a n n e r s in the wilderness.
“Show me,” I said to our companion, “what
I have m u c h coveted, your breast’s mauve star.”
And she consented. O neither these verses
Nor my prudence, love, can heal your wounded stare.

1 9 7 9

*From Station Island*⁷

12

Like a convalescent, I took the hand
stretched down from the jetty, sensed again
an alien comfort as I stepped on ground
to find the helping hand still gripping mine,
5 fish-cold and bony, but whether to guide
or to be guided I could not be certain
for the tall m a n in step at my side
seemed blind, though he walked straight as a rush
upon his ash plant,⁸ his eyes fixed straight ahead.
io Then I knew him in the flesh
out there on the tarmac among the cars,

wintered hard and sharp as a blackthorn bush.
His voice eddying with the vowels of all rivers⁹
came back to me, though he did not speak yet,
15 a voice like a prosecutor's or a singer's,
cunning,¹ narcotic, mimic, definite
as a steel nib's downstroke, quick and clean,
and suddenly he hit a litter basket
with his stick, saying, "Your obligation
20 is not discharged by any c o m m o n rite.

W h a t you must do must be done on your own
7. "*Station Island* is a sequence of dream encounters with familiar ghosts, set on Station Island on familiar ghost is that of the Irish novelist James Lough Derg in Co. Donegal. The island is also Joyce (1882-1941).

known as St. Patrick's Purgatory because of a tradition that Patrick was the first to establish the blind.

penitential vigil of fasting and praying which still
9. The Anna Livia Plurabelle episode of Joyce's constitutes the basis of the three-day pilgrimage.

Finnegans Wake (1939) resounds with the names
Each unit of the contemporary pilgrim's exercises of many rivers.

is called a 'station,' and a large part of each station
1. "The only arms I allow myself to use—silence,

involves walking barefoot and praying round the
exile, and cunning” (Joyce, *Portrait of the Artist as
a Young Man*, 1916).

remains of early medieval monastic cells” [Hea-
1904 / SEAMUS HEANEY

so get back in harness. The main thing is to write
for the joy of it. Cultivate a work-lust

that imagines its haven like your hands at night

25 dreaming the sun in the sunspot of a breast.

You are fasted now, light-headed, dangerous.

Take off from here. And don’t be so earnest,

let others wear the sackcloth and the ashes.²

Let go, let fly, forget.

30 You’ve listened long enough. Now strike your note.”

It was as if I had stepped free into space

alone with nothing that I had not known

already. Raindrops blew in my face

as I came to. “Old father, mother’s son,

35 there is a moment in Stephen’s³ diary

for April the thirteenth, a revelation

set among my stars—that one entry

has been a sort of password in my ears,

the collect of a new epiphany,⁴

40 the Feast of the Holy Tundish.⁵ “Who cares,”

he jeered, “any more? The English language

belongs to us. You are raking at dead fires,

a waste of time for somebody your age.

That subject0 people stuff is a cod's0 game, *colonized/fool's*
45 infantile, like your peasant pilgrimage.

You lose more of yourself than you redeem
doing the decent thing. Keep at a tangent.

When they make the circle wide, it's time to swim
out on your own and fill the element

50 with signatures on your own frequency,
echo soundings, searches, probes, allurements,
elver-gleams6 in the dark of the whole sea.”

The shower broke in a cloudburst, the tarmac
fumed and sizzled. As he moved off quickly
55 the downpour loosed its screens round his straight walk.

1 9 8 4

2. As worn by penitents in biblical times and later.

Artist as a Young Man” [Heaney's note]: “13 April:

3. Stephen Dedalus: protagonist in *Portrait of the*

That tundish [funnel] has been on my mind for a
Artist, major character in Joyce's *Ulysses* (1922),
long time. I looked it up and find it English and
and Joyce's alter ego.

good old blunt English too. Damn the dean of stud-

4. Manifestation of a superhuman being, as of the

ies and his funnel! What did he come here for to
infant Jesus to the Magi (Matthew 2). In the Chris-
teach us his own language or to learn it from us?

tian calendar, the Feast of the Epiphany is January

Damn him one way or the other!”

6. *Collect*: short prayer assigned to a particular day.

6. Gleams as of young eels.

5. “See the end of James Joyce’s *Portrait of the*

CLEARANCES / 1905

*From Clearances*⁷

IN MEMORIAM M.K.H.,⁸ 1911 - 1984

She taught me what her uncle once taught her:

How easily the biggest coal block split

If you got the grain and hammer angled right.

The sound of that relaxed alluring blow,

5 Its co-opted and obliterated echo,

Taught me to hit, taught me to loosen,

Taught me between the hammer and the block

To face the music. Teach me now to listen,

To strike it rich behind the linear black.

Ill

When all the others were away at Mass

I was all hers as we peeled potatoes.

They broke the silence, let fall one by one

Like solder weeping off the soldering iron:

5 Cold comforts set between us, things to share

Gleaming in a bucket of clean water.

And again let fall. Little pleasant splashes

From each other's work would bring us to our senses.

So while the parish priest at her bedside

io Went hammer and tongs at the prayers for the dying

And some were responding and some crying

I remembered her head bent towards my head,

Her breath in mine, our fluent dipping knives—

Never closer the whole rest of our lives.

VII

In the last minutes he said more to her

Almost than in all their life together.

“You’ll be in New Row on Monday night

And I’ll come up for you and you’ll be glad

5 W h e n I walk in the door ... Isn’t that right?”

His head was bent down to her propped-up head.

She could not hear but we were overjoyed.

He called her good and girl. Then she was dead,

The searching for a pulsebeat was abandoned

io And we all knew one thing by being there.

The space we stood around had been emptied

Into us to keep, it penetrated

Clearances that suddenly stood open.

High cries were felled and a pure change happened.

7. Enforced depopulation (as of the Scottish 8. Margaret
Kathleen Heaney, the poet’s mother.

Highlands).

1 9 0 6 / S E A M U S H E A N E Y

VIII

I thought of walking round and round a space

Utterly empty, utterly a source

Where the decked chestnut tree had lost its place

In our front hedge above the wallflowers.

5 The white chips jumped and jumped and skited⁰ high. *shot*

I heard the hatchet’s differentiated

Accurate cut, the crack, the sigh

And collapse of what luxuriated
Through the shocked tips and wreckage of it all.
10 Deep-planted and long gone, my coeval0 *equally old*
Chestnut from a jam jar in a hole,
Its heft and hush become a bright nowhere,
A soul ramifying and forever
Silent, beyond silence listened for.

1 9 8 7

Casting and Gathering

F O R T E D H U G H E S 9

Years and years ago, these sounds took sides:
On the left bank, a green silk tapered cast
Went whispering through the air, saying *hush*
And *lush*, entirely free, no matter whether
5 It swished above the hayfield or the river.
On the right bank, like a speeded-up corncrake,1
A sharp ratcheting went on and on
Cutting across the stillness as another
Fisherman gathered line-lengths off his reel.
io I am still standing there, awake and dreamy,
I have grown older and can see them both
Moving their arms and rods, working away,
Each one absorbed, proofed by the sounds he's making.
One sound is saying. "You are not worth tuppence,
15 But neither is anybody. Watch it! Be severe."
The other says, "Go with it! Give and swerve.
You are everything you feel beside the river."
I love hushed air. I trust contrariness.

Years and years go past and I do not move

9. English poet (1930-1998; see pp. 1810-16). 1. Bird with a distinctive cry.

T H E S E T T L E B E D / 1 9 0 7

20 For I see that when one man casts, the other gathers
And then *vice versa*, without changing sides.

1991

The Settle Bed²

Willed down,³ waited for, in place at last and for good.

Trunk-hasped, cart-heavy, painted an ignorant brown.

And pew-strait, bin-deep, standing four-square as an ark.

If I lie in it, I am cribbed⁰ in seasoned deal⁰ *confined / pine or
fir wood* ⁵ Dry as the unkindled boards of a funeral ship.

My measure has been taken, my ear shuttered up.

Yet I hear an old sombre tide awash in the headboard:

Unpathetic *och ochs* and *och hohs*,⁴ the long bedtime

Sigh-life of Ulster,⁵ unwilling, unbeaten,

io Protestant, Catholic, the Bible, the beads,⁰ *rosary*

Late talks at gables by moonlight, boots on the hearth,

The small hours chimed sweetly away so next thing it was

The cock on the ridge-tiles.⁶

And now this is “an inheritance”—

Upright, rudimentary, unshiftable planked

15 In the long long ago, yet willable forward

Again and again and again, cargoed with

Its own dumb, tongue-and-groove⁷ worthiness

And un-get-roundable weight. But to conquer that weight,

Imagine a dower⁸ of settle beds tumbled from heaven

20 Like some nonsensical vengeance come on the people,

Then learn from that harmless barrage that whatever is given
Can always be reimagined, however four-square,
Plank-thick, hull-stupid and out of its time
It happens to be. You are free as the lookout,
25 That far-seeing joker posted high over the fog,
W h o declared by the time that he had got himself down
The actual ship had stolen away from beneath him.

1991

2. A bed like a large wooden chest with a hinged

5. The northernmost of Ireland's four provinces.

("hasped," line 2) lid that, when closed, can be

6. I.e., the rooster crows on the roof.

used as a bench.

7. Carpenters' term for the interlocked joining of

3. Inherited.

parallel planks.

4. Expressions of mild regret (Irish).

8. Dowry, inheritance.

1908 / SEAMUS HEANEY

From Glanmore Revisited

6 Bedside Reading

T h e w h o l e p l a c e a i r i e r . B i g s u m m e r t r e e s

S t i r r i n g a t e y e l e v e l w h e n w e w a k e n

A n d l i t t l e s h o o t s o f i v y c r e e p i n g i n

U n l e s s t h e y ' v e b e e n t r a i n e d o u t — l i k e m e m o r i e s

5 Y o u ' v e t r a i n e d s o l o n g n o w t h e y c a n s h o w t h e i r f a c e

A n d k e e p t h e i r d i s t a n c e . W h i t e - m o u t h e d d e p r e s s i o n

**S w i m s out f r o m its s h a d o w like a d o l p h i n
W i t h w e t , unreadable, unfurtive eyes.
I s w i m in H o m e r . 9 In B o o k T w e n t y - t h r e e ,
io At last O d y s s e u s and P e n e l o p e
W a k e n together. O n e b e d p o s t o f the b e d
I s the living trunk of an old olive tree
A n d is their secret. As ours c o u l d have b e e n ivy,
Evergreen, atremble and unsaid.**

7 The Skylight

**You w e r e the o n e for skylights. I o p p o s e d
C u t t i n g into the s e a s o n e d tongue-and-groove1
O f p i t c h pine. I liked it low a n d closed,
I t s claustrophobic, n e s t - u p - i n - t b e - r o o f
5 Effect. I liked the snuff-dry feeling,
T h e perfect, trunk-lid fit of the old ceiling.
U n d e r there, it w a s all h u t c h and hatch.
T h e b l u e slates kept the heat like midnight thatch.2
B u t w h e n the slates c a m e off, extravagant
io Sky entered and held surprise wide open.
F o r days I felt like an inhabitant
O f that h o u s e w h e r e the m a n sick of the palsy
W a s l o w e r e d t h r o u g h the roof, had his sins
forgiven,
W a s h e a l e d , took up his b e d and walked away.3**

1991

Fosterling4

“That heavy greenness fostered by water”

John Montague5

**At school I loved one picture's heavy greenness —
Horizons rigged with windmills' arms and sails.**

The millhouses' still outlines. Their in-place-ness
9. Homer's epic poem the *Odyssey*.

3. See Christ's miraculous cure, in John 5.8.

1. See note 7 above.

4. Foster child.

2. The roof tiles kept the house as warm at night

5. Irish (American-born) poet (b. 1929).

as thatch famously does.

TWO LORRIES / 1909

Still more in place when mirrored in canals

5 I can't remember not ever having known

The imminent hydraulics of a land

Of *glar*^o and *glif* and floods at

mud / oozing water

dailigone.^o

dusk

My silting hope. My lowlands of the mind.

Heaviness of being. And poetry

10 Sluggish in the doldrums of what happens.

Me waiting until I was nearly fifty

To credit marvels. Like the tree-clock of tin cans

The tinkers made. So long for air to brighten,

Time to be dazzled and the heart to lighten.

1991

From Squarings

Lightenings

VIII

**The annals⁰ say: when the monks of Clonmacno
ise⁶ histories Were all at prayers inside the oratory**

A ship appeared above them in the air.

The anchor dragged along behindsodeep

5 It hooked itself into the altar rails

And then, as the big hull rocked to a standstill,

A crewmanshinned and grappled down the rope

And struggled to release it. But in vain.

“This man can’t bear our life here and will drown,”

io The abbot said, “unless we help him.” So

**They did, the freed ship sailed, and the man climbed
back**

Out of the marvellous as he had known it.

1991

Two Lorries⁷

It’s raining on black coal and warm wet ashes.

There are tyre-marks in the yard, Agnew’s old lorry

Has all its cribs⁸ down and Agnew the coalman

With his Belfast accent’s sweet-talking my mother.

5 Would she ever go to a film in Magherafelt?⁹

But it’s raining and he still has half the load

6. Famous monastic settlement beside the river 8. Hinged,
wooden side-flaps.

Shannon, near Athlone, Ireland. 9. Small town in County
Tyrone, Northern Ire-7. Trucks. land.

1910 / MICHAEL LONGLEY

To deliver farther on. This time the lode

Our coal came from was silk-black, so the ashes

Will be the silkiest white. T h e M a g h e r a f e l t

10 (Via T o o m e b r i d g e) bus g o e s by. T h e half-
stripped lorry W i t h its e m p t i e d , folded coal-bags m o
v e s my mother:

T h e tasty ways of a leather-aproned c o a l m a n !

A n d films no less! T h e c o n c e i t of a c o a l m a n ...

S h e g o e s b a c k in and gets out the black lead

15 A n d e m e r y paper,¹ this n i n e t e e n - f o r t i e s m o
t h e r , All b u s i n e s s r o u n d her stove, half-wiping a s
h e s

W i t h a b a c k h a n d f r o m her c h e e k as the bolted²
lorry

G e t s revved and turned and h e a d s for M a g h e r a f e
l t

A n d the last delivery. O h , Magherafelt!

20 O h , d r e a m of red p l u s h and a city c o a l m a n

A s t i m e fastforwards and a different lorry

G r o a n s i n t o s h o t , 0 up Broad Street, w i t h a
payload *view* T h a t will b l o w the b u s station to dust
and a s h e s ...

After that h a p p e n e d , I'd a vision of my mother,

25 A r e v e n a n t 0 on the b e n c h w h e r e I w o u l d m
e e t her *ghost* In that cold-floored waiting-room in
Magherafelt,

H e r s h o p p i n g bags full up w i t h shovelled ashes.

D e a t h walked out past her like a d u s t - f a c e d c o a l
m a n

R e f o l d i n g body-bags, plying his load

30 E m p t y u p o n empty, in a flurry

Of m o t e s 0 and engine-revs, but w h i c h lorry

dust

**Was it now? Young Agnew's or that other,
Heavier, deadlier one, set to explode
In a time beyond her time in Magherafelt ...
35 So tallybags and sweet-talk darkness, coalman
keep a record of
Listen to the rain spit in new ashes
As you heft a load of dust that was Magherafelt,
Then reappear from your lorry as my mother's
Dreamboat coalman filmed in silk-white ashes.**

1996

MICHAEL LONGLEY

b. 1939

The Linen Industry

Pulling up flax¹ after the blue flowers have fallen

And laying our hands in the peaty water

1. Abrasive-coated paper, here used with a prep- 1. Blue-flowered plant grown for its textile fiber aration of "black lead" to polish the stove. and treated in water from the Irish peat bog.

2. With the sides folded up and locked in place.

G H E T T O / 1 9 1 1

To rot those grasses to the bone, or building stooks²

That recall the skirts of an invisible dancer,

5 We become a part of the linen industry

And follow its processes to the grubby town

Where fields are compacted into window-boxes

And there is little room among the big machines.

But even in our attic under the skylight

10 We make love on a bleach green, the whole meadow

Draped with material turning white in the sun
As though snow reluctant to melt were our attire.
What's passion but a battering of stubborn stalks,
T h e n a gentle combing out of fibres like hair
15 And a weaving of these into christening robes,
Into garments for a marriage or funeral?
Since it's like a bereavement once the labour's done
To find ourselves last workers in a dying trade,
Let flax be our matchmaker, our undertaker,
20 The provider of sheets for whatever the bed—
And be shy of your breasts in the presence of death,
Say that you look more beautiful in linen
Wearing white petticoats, the bow on your bodice
A butterfly attending the embroidered flowers.

1 9 7 9

Gorse Fires

Cattle out of their byres⁰ are dungy still, lambs *cowsheds*
Have stepped from last year as from an enclosure.
Five or six m e n stand gazing at a rusty tractor
Before carrying implements to separate fields.
5 I am travelling from one April to another.
It is the same train between the same embankments.
Gorse fires are smoking, but primroses burn
And celandines and white may and gorse flowers.

1 9 9 1

Ghetto

I

Because you will suffer soon and die, your choices

Are neither right nor wrong: a spoon will feed you,

2. Sheaves standing together.

1 9 1 2

/ M I C H A E L L O N G L E Y

A flannel keep you clean, a toothbrush bring you back
To your bathroom's view of chimney-pots and gardens.

5 With so little time for inventory or leavetaking,

You are packing now for the rest of your life

Photographs, medicines, a change of underwear, a book,

A candlestick, a loaf, sardines, needle and thread.

These are your heirlooms, perishables, worldly goods.

10 What you bring is the same as what you leave behind,

Your last belonging a list of your belongings.

II

As though it were against the law to sleep on pillows

They have filled a cathedral with confiscated feathers:

Silence irrefragible,⁰ no room for angels' wings, *unbreakable*

15 Tons of feathers suffocating cherubim and seraphim.³

III

The little girl without a mother behaves like a mother

W i t h her rag doll to w h o m she explains fear and anguish,

The meagreness of the bread ration, how to make it last,

How to get back to the doll's house and lift up the roof

20 And, before the flame-throwers and dynamiters destroy it,

How to rescue from their separate rooms love and sorrow,

Masterpieces the size of a postage stamp, small fortunes.

/ V

From among the h u n d r e d s of thousands I can imagine one

Behind the barbed-wire fences as my train crosses Poland.

25 I see him for long enough to catch the sprinkle of
snowflakes

On his hair and schoolbag, and then I am transported

Away from that world of broken hobby-horses and silent toys.

He turns into a little snowman and refuses to melt.

V

For street-singers in the marketplace, weavers, warp⁴-makers,

30 Those who suffer in sewing-machine repair shops,
excrement-

Removal workers, there are not enough root vegetables,

Beetroots, turnips, swedes,⁵ nor for the leather-stitchers

W h o are boiling leather so that their children may eat;

W h o are turning like a thick slice of potato-bread

35 This page, which is everything I know about potatoes,

My delivery of Irish Peace, Beauty of Hebron, H o m e

Guard, Arran Banners, Kerr's Pinks,⁶ resistant to eelworm,

Resignation, c o m m o n scab, terror, frost, potato-blight.

3. Types of angels. 5. Rutabagas.

4. Thread stretched lengthwise in a weaver's loom. 6. Varieties
of potatoes (lines 36—37).

ESSAY ON PSYCHIATRISTS / 1913

VI

There will be performances in the waiting room, and time

40 To jump over a skipping rope, and time to adjust

As though for a dancing class the ribbons in your hair.⁷

This string quartet is the most natural thing in the world.

VII

Fingers leave shadows on a violin, harmonics,⁸

A blackbird fluttering between electrified fences.

VIII

45 Lessons were forbidden in that terrible school.
Punishable by death were reading and writing
And arithmetic, so that even the junior infants
Grew old and wise in lofts studying these subjects.
There were drawing lessons, and drawings of kitchens
50 And farms, farm animals, butterflies, mothers, fathers
Who survived in crayon until in pen and ink
They turned into guards at executions and funerals
Torturing and hanging even these stick figures.
There were drawings of barracks and latrines as well
55 And the only windows were the windows they drew.

1 9 9 1

R O B E R T P I N S K Y

b. 1940

From Essay on Psychiatrists

IV. A Lakeside Identification

Yes, crazy to suppose one could describe them—
And yet, there was this incident: at the local beach
Clouds of professors and the husbands of professors
Swam, dabbled or stood to talk with arms folded
5 Gazing at the lake ... and one of the few townsfolk there,
With no faculty status—a matter-of-fact, competent,
Catholic woman of twenty-seven with five children
And a first-rate body—pointed her finger
At the back of one certain man and asked me,

7. Cf. T. S. Eliot, "The Love Song of J. Alfred Prufrock" (p. 1340).

Prufrock" (p. 1340).

1914 / ROBERT PINSKY

10 "Is that guy a psychiatrist?" and by god he was! "Yes,"

She said, "He looks like a psychiatrist."

Grown quiet, I looked at his pink back, and thought.

V. Physical Comparison With Professors And Others

Pink and a bit soft-bodied, with a somewhat jazzy Middle-class bathingsuit and sand sideburns, to me he looked from the back like one more professor.

And from the front, too — the boyish, unformed carriage which foreigners always note in American men, combined as in a professor with that liberal, quizzical, articulate gaze so unlike the more focused, more tolerant expression worn by a manufacturer (surgeon, salesman, athlete). On close inspection was there, perhaps, a self-satisfied or benign air, a studied gentleness toward the child whose hand he held loosely?

Absurd to speculate; but then — the woman saw something.

1975

A Long Branch Song

Some days in May, little stars

Winked all over the ocean. The blue

Barely changed all morning and afternoon:
The chimes of the bank's bronze clock;

5 The hoarse voice of Cookie, hawking

The Daily Record for thirty-five years.

1984

The Street

**Streaked and fretted with effort, the thick
kVine of the world, red nervelets**

Coiled at its tips.

All roads lead from it. 2 All night

**5 Wainwrights and upholsterers work finishing
The wheeled coffin**

1. Long Branch, New Jersey, where Pinsky was 2. A twist on
the expression *All roads lead to Rome*.

born.

THE STREET / 1915

Of the dead favorite of the Emperor,

The child's corpse propped seated

On brocade, with yellow

10 Oiled curls, kohlon the stiff lids.

Slave throw petals on the roadway

For the cortege, white

Languid flowers shooting from dark

Blisters on the vine, ramifying

15 Into streets. On mine,

Rockwell Avenue, it was embarrassing:

Trouble—fights, the police, sickness—

Seemed never to come

For anyone when they were fully dressed.

**20 It was always underwear or dirty pyjamas,
Unseemly stretches**

O f s k i n s h o w i n g t h r o u g h a t o r n h o u s e c o a t .
O n c e a s t r a n g e r d r o v e o f f i n a c a r

W i t h s o m e b o d y ' s w i f e ,

2 5 A n d h e r a n a f t e r t h e m i n h i s u n d e r s h i r t
A n d t h r e w h i s s h o e a t t h e c a r . I t b o u n c e d I n
t o t h e s t r e e t

H a r m l e s s l y , a n d w e c a r r i e d i t b a c k t o h i m ;
B u t t h e m a n h a d t o o m u c h d i g n i t y

3 0 T o p u t i t b a c k o n ,

S o h e h e l d i t a n d s t o o d c r y i n g i n t h e s t r e e t :

" H e ' s b r e a k i n g u p m y h o m e , " h e s a i d ,

" T h e s o n o f a b i t c h

B a s t a r d i s b r e a k i n g u p m y h o m e . " T h e s t r e
e t 3 5 R o s e u n d u l a n t i n p a v e m e n t - b r e a k i n
g c o i l s A n d t h e m a n r o d e i t ,

S t i l l h o l d i n g h i s s h o e a n d s t i f f l y u p r i g h t L
i k e a t r i c k r i d e r i n t h e c i r c u s p a r a d e

T h a t c a m e d o w n t h e s t r e e t

4 0 E a c h A u g u s t . A s t h e p o w e r f u l d r a g o n l i
k e H u m p s w e l l e d h e r o s e c u r s i n g a n d r e a d y

T o t h r o w h i s s h o e — w o v e n

A n g u l a r a s a t w i g i n t o t h e f a b u l o u s

R u g o r b r o c a d e w i t h c r o w n s a n d c a m e l s ,

4 5 L e o p a r d s a n d r o s e t t e s ,

1 9 1 6 / R O B E R T P I N S K Y

All riding the vegetable wave of the street

From the John Flock Mortuary Home

Down to the river.

It was a small place, and off the center,

5 0 B u t s o m u c h a p l a c e t o i t s e l f , I f e l t

Like a young prince
Or aspirant squire. I knew that *Ivanhoe*³
Was about race. The Saxons⁴ were Jews,
Or even Coloreds,
55 With their low-ceilinged, unbelievably
Sour-smelling houses down by the docks.
Everything was written
Or woven, ivory and pink and emerald—
Nothing was too ugly or petty or terrible
60 To be weighed in the immense
Silver scales of the dead: the looming
Balances set right onto the live, dangerous
Gray bark of the street.

1 9 8 4

ABC

Any body can die, evidently. Few
Go happily, irradiating joy,
Knowledge, love. Many
Need oblivion, painkillers,
5 Quickest respite.
Sweet time unafflicted,
Various world:
X = your zenith.

2000

3. Historical novel by the Scottish writer Sir Walter Scott (1771 — 1832), considered the inventor of the concept of the quest of England in 1066: “Four generations had

the form.

not sufficed to blend the hostile blood of the Nor-

4. The Germanic peoples in ancient times, some
mans and Anglo-Saxons, or to unite, by common
of whom invaded Britain in the fifth and sixth cen-
language and mutual interests, two hostile races.”
turies; here, used to mean an English person or
The Saxons were dispossessed of both land and
Anglo-Saxon. In the first pages of *Ivanhoe*, Scott
status.

1 9 1 7

BILLY C O L L I N S

b. 1941

Japan

Today I pass the time reading
a favorite haiku,
saying the few words over and over.

It feels like eating
5 the same small, perfect grape
again and again.

I walk through the house reciting it
and leave its letters falling
through the air of every room.
io I stand by the big silence of the piano and say it.
I say it in front of a painting of the sea.
I tap out its rhythm on an empty shelf.
I listen to myself saying it,
then I say it without listening,

15 then I hear it without saying it.
And when the dog looks up at me,
I kneel down on the floor
and whisper it into each of his long white ears.
It's the one about the one-ton
20 temple bell
with the moth sleeping on its surface,¹
and every time I say it, I feel the excruciating
pressure of the m o t h
on the surface of the iron bell.
25 W h e n I say it at the window,
the bell is the world
and I am the moth resting there.
W h e n I say it into the mirror,
I am the heavy bell
30 and the m o t h is life with its papery wings.
And later, when I say it to you in the dark,
you are the bell,
and I am the tongue of the bell, ringing you,

1. Haiku by the Japanese poet and painter Taniguchi Buson (1715—1783): “On the one-ton temple bell / a moon-moth, folded into sleep, / sits still” (trans. X. J. Kennedy).

1 9 1 8 / B I L L Y C O L L I N S

and the moth has flown
35 from its line
and moves like a hinge in the air above our bed.

1 9 9 8

Litany

You are the bread and the knife,
The crystal goblet and the wine.

JACQUES CRICKILLON²

You are the bread and the knife,
the crystal goblet and the wine.

You are the dew on the morning grass,
and the burning wheel of the sun.

5 You are the white apron of the baker
and the marsh birds suddenly in flight.

However, you are not the wind in the orchard,
the plums on the counter,
or the house of cards,

10 And you are certainly not the pine-scented air.

There is no way you are the pine-scented air.

It is possible that you are the fish under the bridge,
maybe even the pigeon on the general's head,
but you are not even close

15 to being the field of cornflowers at dusk.

And a quick look in the mirror will show
that you are neither the boots in the corner
nor the boat asleep in its boathouse.

It might interest you to know,

20 speaking of the plentiful imagery of the world,
that I am the sound of rain on the roof.

I also have a pen to be the shooting star,
the evening paper blowing down an alley,
and the basket of chestnuts on the kitchen table.

25 I am also the moon in the trees

and the blind woman's teacup.

But don't worry, I am not the bread and the knife.

You are still the bread and the knife.

You will always be the bread and the knife,

So not to mention the crystal goblet and — somehow — the wine.

2002

2. Belgian poet (b. 1940).

1919

ROBERT HASS

b. 1941

Meditation at Lagunitas¹

All the new thinking is about loss.

In this it resembles all the old thinking.

The idea, for example, that each particular erases the luminous clarity of a general idea. That the clown-

5 faced woodpecker probing the dead sculpted trunk of that black birch is, by his presence,

some tragic falling off from a first world

of undivided light. Or the other notion that,

because there is in this world no one thing

to which the bramble of *blackberry* corresponds,

a word is elegy to what it signifies.

We talked about it late last night and in the voice of my friend, there was a thin wire of grief, a tone almost querulous. After a while I understood that, talking this way, everything dissolves: *justice, pine, hair, woman, you* and I. There was a woman

I made love to and I remembered how, holding
her small shoulders in my hands sometimes,
1 I felt a violent wonder at her presence
20 like a thirst for salt, for my childhood river
with its island willows, silly music from the pleasure boat,
muddy places where we caught the little orange-silver fish
called *pumpkinseed*. It hardly had to do with her.
Longing, we say, because desire is full
25 of endless distances. I must have been the same to her.
But I remember so much, the way her hands dismantled bread,
the thing her father said that hurt her, what
she dreamed. There are moments when the body is as
numinous²
as words, days that are the good flesh continuing.
30 Such tenderness, those afternoons and evenings,
saying *blackberry, blackberry, blackberry*.

1 9 7 9

Tahoe³ in August

W h a t summer proposes is simply happiness:

heat early in the morning, jays

raucous in the pines. Frank and Ellen have a tennis game

at nine, Bill and Cheryl sleep on the deck

1. Little lake (Spanish); a small town in Califor-

3. A lake in the Sierra Nevada Mountains, in both
nia, near San Francisco.

eastern California and western Nevada.

2. Filled with a sense of divinity.

1 9 2 0 / R O B E R T P I N S K Y

5 to watch a shower of summer stars. Nick and Sharon
stayed in, sat and talked the dark on,
drinking tea, and Jeanne walked into the meadow
in a white smock to write in her journal
by a grazing horse who seemed to want the company.
10 Some of them will swim in the afternoon.
Someone will drive to the hardware store to fetch
new latches for the kitchen door. Four o'clock;
the joggers jogging—it is one of them who sees
down the flowering slope the woman with her notebook
15 in her hand beside the white horse, gesturing, her hair
from a distance the copper color of the hummingbirds
the slant light catches on the slope; the hikers
switchback down the canyon from the waterfall;
the readers are reading, Anna is about to meet Vronsky,⁴
20 that nice M. Swann is dining in Combray.
with the aunts, and Carrie has come to Chicago.⁵
What they want is happiness: someone to love them,
children, a summer by the lake. The woman who sets aside
her book blinks against the fuzzy dark,
25 re-entering the house. Her daughter drifts downstairs;
out late the night before, she has been napping,
and she's cross. Her mother tells her David telephoned.
"He's such a dear," the mother says, "I think
I made him nervous." The girl tosses her head as the horse
30 had done in the meadow while Jeanne read it her dream.
"You can call him now, if you want," the mother says,
"I've got to get the chicken started,

I won't listen." "Did I say you would?"
the girl says quickly. The mother who has been slapped
35 this way before and done the same herself another summer
on a different lake says, "Ouch." The girl shrugs
sulkily. "I'm sorry." Looking down: "Something
about the way you said that pissed me off."
"Hannibal has wandered off," the mother says,
40 wryness in her voice, she is thinking it is August,
"why don't you see if he's at the Finleys' house
again." The girl says, "God." The mother: "He loves
small children. It's livelier for him there."
The daughter, awake now, flounces out the door,
45 which slams. It is for all of them the sound of summer.
The mother she looks like stands at the counter snapping
beans.

1 9 8 9

4. The lover of Anna Karenina, in the novel of the
Swann, a protagonist of *Swann's Way*, the first
same name by the Russian novelist Leo Tolstoy
book in the seven-volume *A la recherche du temps*
(1828-1910).

perdu (In Search of Lost Time), by the French nov-

5. In *Sister Carrie*, by the American novelist Theo-
elst Marcel Proust (1871-1922). Swann visits the
dore Dreiser (1871—1945), the heroine, Carrie
aunts of the narrator, Marcel, at Combray, a town
Meeber, moves to Chicago. *M. Swann-*. Charles
based on Illiers, near Chartres.

1 9 2 1

D E R E K M A H O N

b. 1941

In Carrowdore Churchyard

*(at the grave of Louis MacNeice)*1

Your ashes will not stir, even on this high ground,

However the wind tugs, the headstones shake.

This plot is consecrated, for your sake,

To what lies in the future tense. You lie

5 Past tension now, and spring is coming round

Igniting flowers on the peninsula.

Your ashes will not fly, however the rough winds burst

Through the wild brambles and the reticent trees.

All we may ask of you we have; the rest

10 Is not for publication, will not be heard.

Maguire, I believe, suggested a blackbird

And over your grave a phrase from Euripides.2

Which suits you down to the ground, like this churchyard

With its play of shadow, its humane perspective.

15 Locked in the winter's fist, these hills are hard

As nails, yet soft and feminine in their turn

When fingers open and the hedges burn.

This, you implied, is how we ought to live—

The ironical, loving crush of roses against snow,

20 Each fragile, solving ambiguity. So

From the pneumonia of the ditch, from the ague0 fever

Of the blind poet and the bombed-out town you bring

The all-clear to the empty holes of spring,

Rinsing the choked mud, keeping the colours new.

1 9 6 8

A Disused Shed in Co. Wexford³

Let them not forget us, the weak souls among the asphodels.

—SEFERIS,⁴ *Mythistorema*, tr. Keeley and Sherrard

(for J. G. Farrell)

Even now there are places where a thought might grow—

Peruvian mines, worked out and abandoned

1. Irish poet (1907-1963; see pp. 1485-91), bur-
ides (ca. 484-406 **B.C.E.**) was not carved on Mac-
ied in Carrowdore Churchyard, County Down,
Neice's gravestone.

Northern Ireland.

3. County in southeast Ireland.

2. Maguire is the name MacNeice gives his old

4. George Seferis (1900-1971), Greek poet.

friend the Belfast artist George McCann in his
Below, James Gordon Farrell (1935-1979), Anglo-
book-length poem *Autumn Sequel* (1954). The
Irish novelist.

suggested phrase from the Greek dramatist Eurip-

1 9 2 2 / D E R E K M A H O N

To a slow clock of condensation,

An echo trapped for ever, and a flutter

Of wild-flowers in the lift-shaft,

Indian compounds where the wind dances

And a door bangs with diminished confidence,

Lime crevices behind rippling rain-barrels,

Dog corners for bone burials;
And in a disused shed in Co. Wexford,
Deep in the grounds of a burnt-out hotel,
Among the bathtubs and the washbasins
A thousand mushrooms crowd to a keyhole.
This is the one star in their firmament
Or frames a star within a star.
What should they do there but desire?
So many days beyond the rhododendrons
With the world waltzing in its bowl of cloud,
They have learnt patience and silence
Listening to the rooks querulous in the high wood.
They have been waiting for us in a foetor⁰ *fetid aura*
Of vegetable sweat since civil war days,
Since the gravel-crunching, interminable departure
Of the expropriated mycologist.⁵
He never came back, and light since then
Is a keyhole rusting gently after rain.
Spiders have spun, flies dusted to mildew
And once a day, perhaps, they have heard something—
A trickle of masonry, a shout from the blue
Or a lorry⁰ changing gear at the end of the lane. *truck*
There have been deaths, the pale flesh flaking
Into the earth that nourished it;
And nightmares, born of these and the grim
Dominion of stale air and rank moisture.
Those nearest the door grow strong—
“Elbow room! Elbow room!”

The rest, dim in a twilight of crumbling
Utensils and broken pitchers, groaning
For their deliverance, have been so long
Expectant that there is left only the posture.
A half century, without visitors, in the dark—
Poor preparation for the cracking lock
And creak of hinges. Magi,⁰ moonmen, *wise men*
Powdery prisoners of the old regime,
Web-throated, stalked like triffids,⁶ racked by drought
And insomnia, only the ghost of a scream

5. Someone who studies mushrooms. science fiction novel *The Day of the Triffids* (1951) 6. Mobile, flesh-eating plants in John Wyndham's and the 1962 movie based on it.

THE WINDOW / 1923

At the flash-bulb firing-squad we wake them with
Shows there is life yet in their feverish forms.
Grown beyond nature now, soft food for worms,
50 They lift frail heads in gravity and good faith.
They are begging us, you see, in their wordless way,
To do something, to speak on their behalf
Or at least not to close the door again.
Lost people of Treblinka and Pompeii!⁷
55 "Save us, save us," they seem to say,
"Let the god not abandon us
Who have come so far in darkness and in pain.
We too had our lives to live.
You with your light meter and relaxed itinerary,
60 Let not our naive labours have been in vain!"

1975

The Window

woodwoodwoodwoodwoodwoodwood

IO

oo

n o

o w

d d

w i

o w

o n

w o

o d

i o

d o

n d

w w

d w

o i

o o

o n

w o

d d

i d

w o

n w

wind

o w

d o

o i

o o

d n

w d

w d

i w

o o

n d

w w

d o

o i

oo

on

woodwoodwoodwoodwoodwoodwood

dwoodwoodwoodwoodwoodwoodwoodw

odwoodwoodwoodwoodwoodwoodwoodwo

1 9 7 9

7. Roman city preserved under ash and lava after a volcanic eruption that killed most of its inhabitants.

Treblinka: site, in northern Poland, of a principal Nazi concentration camp.

1 9 2 4 / D E R E K M A H O N

Girls on the Bridge

—*Pykene na Brukken*, Munch, 19008

Audible trout,

Notional0 midges.0 Beds, *imaginary / tiny flies*

Lamplight and crisp linen wait

In the house there for the sedate

5 Limbs and averted heads

Of the girls out
Late on the bridge.
The dusty road that slopes
Past is perhaps the high road south,
10 A symbol of world-wondering youth,
Of adolescent hopes
And privileges;
But stops to find
The girls content to gaze
15 At the unplumbed, reflective lake,
Their plangent⁰ conversational quack *plaintive*
Expressive of calm days
And peace of mind.
Grave daughters
20 Of time, you lightly toss
Your hair as the long shadows grow
And night begins to fall. Although
Your laughter calls across
The dark waters,
25 A ghastly sun
Watches in pale dismay.
Oh, you may laugh, being as you are
Fair sisters of the evening star,
But wait—if not today
30 A day will dawn
When the bad dreams
You scarcely know will scatter
The punctual increment of your lives.

The road resumes, and where it curves,
35 A mile from where you chatter,
Somebody screams.

8. *Girls on a Bridge*, title of a painting in Expressionist style
by the Norwegian artist Edvard Munch (1863—
1944), whose best-known painting is *The Scream* (lines 36 and
40).

STARFISH / 1 9 2 5

The girls are dead,
The house and pond have gone.
Steel bridge and concrete highway gleam
40 And sing in the arctic dark; the scream
We started at is grown
The serenade
Of an insane
And monstrous age. We live
45 These days as on a different planet,
One without trout or midges on it,
Under the arc-lights of
A mineral heaven;
And we have come,
50 Despite ourselves, to no
True notion of our proper work,
But wander in the dazzling dark
Amid the drifting snow
Dreaming of some
55 Lost evening when
Our grandmothers, if grand
Mothers we had, stood at the edge

Of womanhood on a country bridge

And gazed at a still pond

60 And knew no pain.

1 9 8 2

E R I C O R M S B Y

b. 1941

Starfish

The stellar sea crawler, maw

Concealed beneath, with offerings of

Prismed crimson now darkened, now like

The smile of slag,⁰ a thing made rosy *volcanic rock*

5 As poured ingots, or suddenly dimmed—

I appreciate the studious labour

Of your rednesses, the scholarly fragrance

Of your sex. To mirror tidal drifts

The light ripples across or to enhance darkness

io With palpable tinctures, dense as salt.

1 9 2 6 / E R I C O R M S B Y

You crumple like a puppet's fist

Or erect, bristling, your tender luring barbs.

Casual abandon, like a dropped fawn glove.

Tensile symmetries, like a hawk's claw.

15 You clutch the seafloor.

You taste what has fallen.

1 9 9 0

Skunk Cabbage

The skunk cabbage with its smug and opulent smell

Opens in plump magnificence near the edge

Of garbage-strewn canals, or you see its shape
Arise near the wet roots of the marsh.
5 How vigilant it looks with its glossy leaves
Parted to disclose its bruised insides,
That troubled purple of its blossom!
It always seemed so squat, dumpy and rank,
A noxious efflorescence of the swamp,
io Until I got down low and looked at it.
Now I search out its blunt totemic shape
And bow when I see its outer stalks
Drawn aside, like the frilly curtains of the ark,
For the foul magenta of its gorgeous heart.

1 9 9 0

Origins

I wanted to go down to where the roots begin,
to find words nested in their almond-skin,
the seed-curls of their birth, their sprigs of origin.
At night the dead set words upon my tongue,
5 drew back their coverings, laid bare the long
sheaths of their roots where the earth still clung.
I wanted to draw their words from the mouths of the dead,
I wanted to strip the coins from their heavy eyes,
I wanted the rosy breath to gladden their skins.
io At night the dead remembered their origins,
at night they nested in the curve of my eyes,
and I tasted the savour of their seed-bed.

1 9 9 3

1 9 9 7

1 9 2 7

D O U G L A S D U N N

b. 1942

A Removal from Terry Street¹

On a squeaking cart, they push the usual stuff,
A mattress, bed ends, cups, carpets, chairs,
Four paperback westerns. Two whistling youths
In surplus U.S. Army battle-jackets
5 Remove their sister's goods. Her husband
Follows, carrying on his shoulders the son
Whose mischief we are glad to see removed,
And pushing, of all things, a lawnmower.
There is no grass in Terry Street. The worms
io Come up cracks in concrete yards in moonlight.
That man, I wish him well. I wish him grass.

1 9 6 9

In the Grounds

Yorkshire, 1975

Barbarians in a garden, softness does
Approve of who we are as it does those
Who when we speak proclaim us barbarous
And say we have no business with the rose.
5 Gently the grass waves, and its green applauds
The justice, not of progress, but of growth.
We walk as people on the paths of gods
And in our minds we harmonize them both.
Disclosures of these grounds—a river view,
io Two Irish wolfhounds watching on a lawn;

A spinster with her sewing stares at you,
And begs you leave her pretty world alone.
More books than prejudice in our young minds ...
We could not harm her, would not, would prefer
15 A noise less military and more kind
Than our boots make across her wide *parterre*.²
We are intransigent, at odds with them.
They see our rabble-dreams as new contempt
For England's art of house and leaf. Condemn
20 Our clumsiness—you do not know, how, unkempt

1. In Hull, England.

2. French landscaping term for an arrangement of flower beds.

1 9 2 8 / D O U G L A S D U N N

And coarse, we hurt a truth with truth, still true
To who we are: barbarians, whose chins
Drool with ale-stinking hair, whose horses chew
Turf owned by watching, frightened mandarins,⁰ *bureaucrats*
25 Their surly nephews lounging at each gate,
Afraid we'll steal their family's treasured things,
Then hawk them—pictures, furniture and plate—
Round the encampments of our saddle-kings.

1 9 7 9

From Elegies

Thirteen Steps and the Thirteenth of March

She sat up on her pillows, receiving guests.
I brought them tea or sherry like a butler,
Up and down the thirteen steps from my pantry.
I was running out of vases.

5 More than one visitor came down, and said,
“Her room’s so cheerful. She isn’t afraid.”
Even the cyclamen and lilies were listening,
Their trusty tributes holding off the real.
Doorbells, shopping, laundry, post and callers,
10 And twenty-six steps up the stairs
From door to bed, two times thirteen’s
Unlucky numeral in my high house.
And visitors, three, four, five times a day;
My wept exhaustions over plates and cups
15 Drained my self-pity in these days of grief
Before the grief. Flowers, and no vases left.
Tea, sherry, biscuits, cake, and whisky for the weak ...
She fought death with an understated mischief—
“I suppose I’ll have to make an effort”—
20 Turning down painkillers for lucidity.
Some sat downstairs with a hankie
Nursing a little cry before going up to her.
They came back with their fears of dying amended.
“Her room’s so cheerful. She isn’t afraid.”
25 Each day was duty round the clock.
Our kissing conversations kept me going,
Those times together with the phone switched off,
Remembering our lives by candlelight.
NAVIDAD, S T . N I C H O L A S A V E . / 1 9 2 9
John and Stuart brought their pictures round,
30 A travelling exhibition. Dying,
She thumbed down some, nodded at others,

An artist and curator to the last,
Honesty at all costs. She drew up lists,
Bequests, gave things away. It tore my heart out.
35 Her friends assisted at this tidying
In a conspiracy of women.
At night, I lay beside her in the unique hours.
There were mysteries in candle-shadows,
Birds, aeroplanes, the rabbits of our fingers,
40 The lovely, erotic flame of the candlelight.
Sad? Yes. But it was beautiful also.
There was a stillness in the world. Time was out
Walking his dog by the low walls and privet.0 *hedge*
There was anonymity in words and music.
45 She wanted me to wear her wedding ring.
It wouldn't fit even my little finger.
It jammed on the knuckle. I knew why.
Her fingers dwindled and her rings slipped off.
After the funeral, I had them to tea and sherry
50 At the Newland Park. They said it was thoughtful.
I thought it was ironic—one last time—
A mad reprisal for their loyalty.

1 9 8 5

A L F R E D C O R N

b. 1943

Navidad, St. Nicholas Ave.1

An infant quirk of a pine
with aerosol frosting, spangles,
and bulbs that blink red-blue-gold.

Manolito, three days home, they've put
5 in his picket-fence crib,
paper diaper cinched tight,
eyes squinted in a mask
that looks Chinese or in pain.

1. Street in the Harlem section of Manhattan; here, the name alludes to St. Nick, or Santa Claus. *Navidad*: nativity (Spanish).

1 9 3 0 / A L F R E D C O R N

Asleep. Trailing sighs and smiles
10 they tiptoe out to where the Magnavox
screen extolls some *producto*²
whose logo's a crystal star.

She glances up at the window
brimming with sodium light.

15 And, *mira*, snow begins to fall
like manna³ in the warming air
as from down the avenue a taxi
beeps a brass triad. Then an offended
wail summons mother, father,
20 *todo el mundo*⁴ back to his side.

1 9 8 8

A Conch from Sicily⁵

The

Attic⁶ once

My nursery is like

An early language no longer

5 Spoken, a babble too small ever

Again to house adults. Yet the spiral

Stair remains, Maestro Fibonacci⁷ the builder,
Who made it pirouette downward like a clockwork
Calla.⁰ In the Southern Hemisphere it would run *lily*
io Counterclockwise, yet I as well as the conchs
Down under have a silhouette like South
America, and we all smooth the path
That clothes our foot with orange
Coral enamel paneling and floor,
15 As far down as this loosely
Furled calyx, one concave
Rondo's⁸ calm finale—or,
If not the last, then
The next-to-last
20 Summing up, a
Single word:
*Il tempo*⁹—
Weather,
Speed,
25 Time.

1 9 9 7

2. Product (Spanish). *Magnavox*: brand of television.
the upper floor of a house.
sion.

7. Leonardo Pisano Fibonacci (1170—1250), Ital-

3. The food that miraculously fell to the Israelites
ian mathematician, known for discovering a
in the wilderness (Exodus 16.14—36). *Mira*: look
sequence of numbers that can be used in describ-

(Spanish).

ing many forms in nature, including the spiral of a

4. All the world, everybody (Spanish).

seashell.

5. Island off the southern coast of Italy.

8. Musical form with a recurring theme.

6. Dialect of ancient Athens, or Attica, as well as

9. Weather, speed, time (Italian).

1 9 3 1

L O U I S E G L U C K

b. 1943

Gretel in Darkness

This is the world we wanted.

All who would have seen us dead

are dead. I hear the witch's cry

break in the moonlight through a sheet

5 of sugar: God rewards.

Her tongue shrivels into gas... .

Now, far from women's arms

and memory of women, in our father's hut

we sleep, are never hungry,

io Why do I not forget?

My father bars the door, bars harm

from this house, and it is years.

No one remembers. Even you, my brother,

summer afternoons you look at me as though

15 you meant to leave,

as though it never happened.

But I killed for you. I see armed firs,
the spires of that gleaming kiln—
Nights I turn to you to hold me
20 but you are not there.
Am I alone? Spies
hiss in the stillness, Hansel,
we are there still and it is real, real,
that black forest and the fire in earnest.

1 9 7 5

The Garden

I couldn't do it again,
I can hardly bear to look at it—
in the garden, in light rain
the young couple planting
5 a row of peas, as though
no one has ever done this before,
the great difficulties have never as yet
been faced and solved—
They cannot see themselves,
io in fresh dirt, starting up
1. As in the fairy tale of Hansel and Gretel.

1 9 3 2 / L O U I S E G L C C K

without perspective,
the hills behind them pale green, clouded with flowers—
She wants to stop;
he wants to get to the end,
15 to stay with the thing—
Look at her, touching his cheek

to make a truce, her fingers
cool with spring rain;
in thin grass, bursts of purple crocus—
20 even here, even at the beginning of love,
her hand leaving his face makes
an image of departure
and they think
they are free to overlook
25 this sadness.

1 9 9 2

Vita Nova²

You saved me, you should remember me.

The spring of the year; young men buying tickets for the
ferryboats.

Laughter, because the air is full of apple blossoms.

When I woke up, I realized I was capable of the same feeling.

5 I remember sounds like that from my childhood,
laughter for no cause, simply because the world is beautiful,
something like that.

Lugano.³ Tables under the apple trees.

Deckhands raising and lowering the colored flags,

io And by the lake's edge, a young man throws his hat into the
water;

perhaps his sweetheart has accepted him.

Crucial

sounds or gestures like

a track laid down before the larger themes

15 and then unused, buried.

Islands in the distance. My mother

holding out a plate of little cakes—

2. New life (Latin). Glick takes for her book *Vita* 3. Lake on the border between Switzerland and *Nova*, and for two poems within it, the title of Italy.

Dante's first major poem (ca. 1292).

LETTERS & OTHER WORLDS / 1933

as far as I remember, changed

in no detail, the moment

20 vivid, intact, having never been

exposed to light, so that I woke elated, at my age

hungry for life, utterly confident—

By the tables, patches of new grass, the pale green

pieced into the dark existing ground.

25 Surely spring has been returned to me, this time

not as a lover but a messenger of death, yet

it is still spring, it is still meant tenderly.

1999

MICHAEL ONDAATJE

b. 1943

Letters & Other Worlds

“for there was no more darkness for him and, no doubt like Adam

before the fall, he could see in the dark”

My father's body was a globe of fear

His body was a town we never knew

He hid that he had been where we were going

His letters were a room he seldom lived in

5 In them the logic of his love could grow

My father's body was a town of fear

He was the only witness to its fear dance
He hid where he had been that we might lose him
His letters were a room his body scared

10

He came to death with his mind drowning.

On the last day he enclosed himself
in a room with two bottles of gin, later
fell the length of his body
so that brain blood moved

15

to new compartments
that never knew the wash of fluid
and he died in minutes of a new equilibrium.

His early life was a terrifying comedy
and my mother divorced him again and again.

20 He would rush into tunnels magnetized
by the white eye of trains
and once, gaining instant fame,
managed to stop a Perahara¹ in Ceylon

1. Or Anuradhapura Perahera, an annual religious festival of
Sri Lanka (formerly Ceylon) commemorated 1934 / MICHAEL
LONDAATJE

—the whole procession of elephants dancers

25 local dignitaries—by falling
dead drunk onto the street.

As a semi-official, and semi-white at that,
the act was seen as a crucial
turning point in the Home Rule Movement
30 and led to Ceylon's independence in 1948.

(My mother had done her share too—
her driving so bad
she was stoned by villagers
whenever her car was recognized)
35 For 14 years of marriage
each of them claimed he or she
was the injured party.
Once on the Colombo² docks
saying goodbye to a recently married couple
40 my father, jealous
at my mother's articulate emotion,
dove into the waters of the harbour
and swam after the ship waving farewell.
My mother pretending no affiliation
45 mingled with the crowd back to the hotel.
Once again he made the papers
though this time my mother
with a note to the editor
corrected the report—saying he was drunk
50 rather than broken hearted at the parting of friends.
The married couple received both editions
of *The Ceylon Times* when their ship reached Aden.³
And then in his last years
he was the silent drinker,
55 the man who once a week
disappeared into his room with bottles
and stayed there until he was drunk
and until he was sober.

There speeches, head dreams, apologies,
60 the gentle letters, were composed.

With the clarity of architects
he would write of the row of blue flowers
his new wife had planted,
the plans for electricity in the house,
65 how my half-sister fell near a snake
and it had awakened and not touched her.

orating the birth of Vishnu, one of the three pri- shrines and
relics,

mary Hindu gods. On its fifth and final day, the 2. Port city,
capital of Sri Lanka, festival culminates in nocturnal
processions such 3. City and port in South Yemen, as that
described here, the elephants bearing

H O U S E O N A R E D C L I F F / 1 9 3 5

Letters in a clear hand of the most complete empathy
his heart widening and widening and widening
to all manner of change in his children and friends
70 while he himself edged
into the terrible acute hatred
of his own privacy
till he balanced and fell
the length of his body
75 the blood entering
the empty reservoir of bones
the blood searching in his head without metaphor.

1 9 7 9

Driving with Dominic in the Southern Province

We See Hints of the Circus

The tattered Hungarian tent

A man washing a trumpet

at a roadside tap

Children in the trees,

5 one falling

into the grip of another

2000

House on a Red Cliff

There is no mirror in Mirissa⁴

the sea is in the leaves

the waves are in the palms

old languages in the arms

5 of the casuarina pine⁵

parampara

parampara,⁶ from

generation to generation

The flamboyant⁷ a grandfather planted

io having lived through fire

lifts itself over the roof

4. Town on the southern coast of Sri Lanka. the Hindu method of transmitting knowledge 5. Indigenous tree of Sri Lanka with jointed, tree- through a guru's answering a disciple's questions, less branches. 7. Plant with flame-colored flowers.

6. One following the other, succession (Sanskrit);

1 9 3 6 / M I C H A E L P A L M E R

u n f r a m e d

the h o u s e an open net

where the night concentrates

15 on a breath

**on a step
a thing or gesture
we cannot be attached to
T h e long, the short, the difficult minutes
20 of night
where even in darkness
there is no horizon without a tree
j u s t a boat's light in the leaves
Last footstep before f o r m l e s s n e s s
2000**

M I C H A E L P A L M E R

b. 1943

Of this cloth doll which¹

(Sarah's fourth)

Of this cloth doll which

says Oh yes

and then its f a c e c h a n g e s

to O n c e upon a time

5 to W o o d e n but alive

to Like the real

to L a t e into the night

to There lived an old

to R u n n i n g across ice

io (but shadow s followed)

to Finally it sneezed

to T h e boat tipped over

to Flesh and blood

to O u t of the whale's m o u t h

1 9 8 4

1. The fractured sentence of this poem borrows phrases from fairy tales, and especially from the children's story *The Adventures of Pinocchio*, by the Italian writer Carlo Collodi (1826—1890).

I Do NOT / 1937

I Do Not

“Je ne sais pas l’anglais.”

GEORGESHUGNET 2

I do not know English

I do not know English, and therefore I can have nothing to say about

this latest war, flowering through a night scope in the evening

sky.

I do not know English and therefore, when hungry, can do no more

than point repeatedly to my mouth.

Yet such a gesture might be taken to mean any number of things.

5 I do not know English and therefore cannot seek the requisite

permissions, as outlined in the recent protocol.

Such as: May I utter a term of endearment; may I now proceed to put

my arm or arms around you and apply gentle pressure; may I now

kiss you directly on the lips; now on the left tendon of the neck;

now on the nipple of each breast? And so on.

Would not in any case be able to decipher her response.

I do not know English. Therefore I have no way of communicating

that I prefer this painting of nothing to that one of something.

No way to speak of my past or hopes for the future, of my glasses mys-

teriously shattered in Rotterdam,³ the statue of Eros and Psyche⁴

in the S u m m e r Garden, the sudden, shrill cries in the streets of

Sao Paulo,⁵ a watch abruptly stopping in Paris.

10 No way to tell the joke about the rabbi and the parrot, the bartender

and the duck, the Pope and the porte-cochere.⁶

You will understand why you have received no letters from me and

why yours have gone unread.

Those, that is, where you write so precisely of the confluence of the

visible universe with the invisible, and of the lens of dark matter.⁷

No way to differentiate the hall of mirrors from the meadow of mul-

lein, the beetlebung from the pinkletink, the kettlehole from the

ventifact.

2. I do not know English (French). Hugnet love and beauty, sent Eros, the god of erotic love, (1906—1974), French poet, essayist, and pub- to make her fall in love with an ugly creature; lisher. instead, Eros became her lover.

3. Dutch city bombed by the Allies during World 5. Capital city of Brazil.

War II. 6. Gateway for carriages, leading into a courtyard.

4. Figures from Greek mythology: Psyche was so beautiful that even the envious Aphrodite, the goddess of love, believed it accounted for gravitational effects.

1938 / EAVANBOLAND

Nor can I utter the words science, seance, silence, language
and

languish.

15 Nor can I tell of the arboreal shadows elongated and
shifting along the

wall as the sun's angle approaches maximum hibernal
declination.

Cannot tell of the almond-eyed face that peered from the well,
the

ship of stone whose sail was a tongue.

And I cannot report that this rose has twenty-four petals, one
slightly

cancred.

Cannot tell how I dismantled it myself at this desk.

Cannot ask the name of this rose.⁸

20 I cannot repeat the words of the Recording Angel⁹ or those
of the

Angle of Erasure.

Can speak neither of things abounding¹ nor of things
disappearing.

Still the games continue. A muscular man waves a stick at a
ball. A

woman in white, arms outstretched, carves a true circle in
space.

A village turns to dust in the chalk hills.

Because I do not know English I have been variously called
Mr.

Twisted, The One Undone, The Nonrespondent, The Truly
Lost

Boy, and Laughed-At-By-Horses.

The war is declared ended, almost before it has begun.

25 They have named it The Ultimate Combat between
Nearness and

Distance.

I do not know English.

2000

EAVAN B O L A N D

b. 1944

That the Science of Cartography¹ Is Limited

—and not simply by the fact that this shading of
forest cannot show the fragrance of balsam,

8. Allusion to *The Name of the Rose*, by the Italian
eousness has touched our souls, it will leave
novelist Umberto Eco (b. 1932).

nothing frozen, nothing hard, nothing burning,

9. In Christian doctrine, the angel receiving the
nothing unfruitful. It will bring out all things ripe,
soul in heaven.

all things sweet, all things abounding with much

1. Cf. St. John Chrysostom, homily 4 on 1 Thes-
pleasure.”

salonians 3.5—8: “If the fire of the Sun of Right-

1. Mapmaking.

T H E D O L L S M U S E U M I N D U B L I N / 1 9 3 9

the gloom of cypresses

is what I wish to prove.

5 When you and I were first in love we drove
to the borders of Connacht²
and entered a wood there.
Look down you said: this was once a famine road.
I looked down at ivy and the scutch grass
10 rough-cast stone had
disappeared into as you told me
in the second winter of their ordeal, in
1847, when the crop³ had failed twice,
Relief Committees gave
15 the starving Irish such roads to build.
Where they died, there the road ended
and ends still and when I take down
the map of this island, it is never so
I can say here is
20 the masterful, the apt rendering of
the spherical as flat, nor
an ingenious design which persuades a curve
into a plane,
but to tell myself again that
25 the line which says woodland and cries hunger
and gives out among sweet pine and cypress,
and finds no horizon
will not be there.

1994

The Dolls Museum in Dublin

The wounds are terrible. The paint is old.

The cracks along the lips and on the cheeks

cannot be fixed. The cotton lawn⁴ is soiled.

The arms are ivory dissolved to wax.

5 Recall the Quadrille. Hum the waltz.

Promenade on the yacht-club terraces.

Put back the lamps in their copper holders,
the carriage wheels on the cobbled quays.

2. Western province of Ireland. nineteenth century.

3. Of potatoes, staple diet of Irish peasants in the 4. Usually
fine linen, but also, as here, fine cotton.

1940 / E A V A N B O L A N D

And recreate Easter in Dublin.⁵

10 Booted officers. Their mistresses.

Sunlight criss-crossing College Green.

Steam hissing from the flanks of horses.

Here they are. Cradled and cleaned,

held close in the arms of their owners.

15 Their cold hands clasped by warm hands,
their faces memorized like perfect manners.

The altars are mannerly with linen.

The lilies are whiter than surplices.⁶

The candles are burning and warning:

20 Rejoice, they whisper. After sacrifice.

Horse-chestnuts hold up their candles.

The Green is vivid with parasols.

Sunlight is pastel and windless.

The bar of the Shelbourne⁷ is full.

Laughter and gossip on the terraces.

Rumour and alarm at the barracks.

The Empire is summoning its officers.
The carriages are turning: they are turning back.
Past children walking with governesses,
Looking down, cossetting⁰ their dolls, *pampering*
then looking up as the carriage passes,
the shadow chilling them. Twilight falls.
It is twilight in the dolls' museum. Shadows
remain on the parchment-coloured waists,
are bruises on the stitched cotton clothes,
are hidden in the dimples on the wrists.
The eyes are wide. They cannot address
the helplessness which has lingered in
the airless peace of each glass case:
to have survived. To have been stronger than
a moment. To be the hostages ignorance
takes from time and ornament from destiny. Both.
To be the present of the past. To infer the difference
with a terrible stare. But not feel it. And not know it.

1 9 9 4

5. What became known as the "Easter Rising"
General Post Office. See W. B. Yeats, "Easter
began on Easter Monday, 1916, when fifteen hun-

1916" (p. 1194).

dred Irish Nationalists seized key points in Dublin

6. White linen vestments worn over cassocks.

and an Irish Republic was proclaimed from the
7. Large Dublin hotel.

THE POMEGRANATE / 1 9 4 1

The Pomegranate

The only legend I have ever loved is
the story of a daughter lost in hell.

And found and rescued there.

Love and blackmail are the gist of it.

5 Ceres and Persephone the names.⁸

And the best thing about the legend is

I can enter it anywhere. And have.

As a child in exile in

a city of fogs and strange consonants,

10 I read it first and at first I was

an exiled child in the crackling dusk of

the underworld, the stars blighted. Later

I walked out in a summer twilight

searching for my daughter at bed-time.

15 When she came running I was ready

to make any bargain to keep her.

I carried her back past whitebeams⁰ trees

and wasps and honey-scented buddleias.⁰ bushes

But I was Ceres then and I knew

20 winter was in store for every leaf

on every tree on that road.

Was it inescapable for each one we passed.

And for me.

It is winter

25 and the stars are hidden.

I climb the stairs and stand where I can see

my child asleep beside her teen magazines,

her can of Coke, her plate of uncut fruit.
The pomegranate! How did I forget it?
BO She could have come home and been safe
and ended the story and all
our heart-broken searching but she reached
out a hand and plucked a pomegranate.
She put out her hand and pulled down
35 the French sound for apple and
the noise of stone and the proof
that even in the place of death,
at the heart of legend, in the midst
of rocks full of unshed tears
40 ready to be diamonds by the time
the story was told, a child can be
hungry. I could warn her. There is still a chance.
The rain is cold. The road is flint-coloured.
The suburb has cars and cable television.
45 The veiled stars are above ground.

8. In Roman mythology, Ceres (Greek Demeter) was the goddess of agriculture. Her daughter, Proserpina (Greek Persephone), was carried off to the underworld (when Earth mourns) and six months of each year in the underworld (when Earth rejoices and fertility returns).

Ceres found her, but by then Proserpina had eaten

1942 / CRAIGRAINE

**It is another world. But what else
can a mother give her daughter but such
beautiful rifts in time?
If I defer the grief I will diminish the gift.
50 The legend will be hers as well as mine.
S h e will enter it. As I have.
S h e will wake up. She will hold
the papery flushed skin in her hand.
And to her lips. I will say nothing.**

1 9 9 4

C R A I G R A I N E

b. 1944

The Onion, Memory

**Divorced, but friends again at last,
we walk old ground together
in bright blue uncomplicated weather.
We laugh and pause
5 to hack to bits these tiny dinosaurs,
prehistoric, crenellated,0 cast *having battlements***

between the tractor ruts in mud.

On the green, a junior Douglas Fairbanks,¹

swinging on the chestnut's unlit chandelier,

io defies the corporation spears²—

a single rank⁰ around the bole,⁰ *row / tree trunk*

rusty with blood.

Green, tacky phalluses curve up, romance.

A gust—the old flag blazes on its pole.

15 In the village bakery

the pasty babies pass

from milky slump to crusty cadaver,

from crib to coffin—without palaver.⁰ *idle talk*

All's over in a flash,

20 too silently ...

Tonight the arum lilies fold

back napkins monogrammed in gold,

crisp and laundered fresh.

Those crustaceous gladioli, on the sly,

25 reveal the crimson flower-flesh

inside their emerald armour plate.

1. American actor (1883—1939) famous for his 2. I.e., spiked
fence put up by the town corpora-swashbuckling daredevil
exploits in movies of the tion.

1920s and 1930s.

A M A R T I A N S E N D S A P O S T C A R D H O M E / 1
9 4 3

T h e uncooked herrings blink a tearful eye.

T h e candles palpitate.

T h e Oistrakhs bow a n d scrape

BO in evening dress, on Emi-tape.³

**Outside the trees are bending over backwards
to please the wind : the shining sword
grass flattens on its belly.**

T h e white-thorn's frillies⁴ offer no resistance.

**35 In the fridge, a heart-shaped jelly
strives to keep a s e n s e of balance.**

I slice up the onions. You sew up a dress.

**This is the quiet e c h o — f l e s h —
white m u s c l e on white muscle,
40 intimately folded skin,
finished with a satin rustle.**

O n e button only to undo, sewn up with shabby thread.

**It is the onion, memory,
that makes me cry.**

**45 B e c a u s e there's everything and nothing to be said,
the clock with hands held up before its face,
s t a m m e r s softly on, trying to complete a p h r a s e —
while we, together and apart,
repeat unfinished gestures got by heart.**

**50 And afterwards, I blunder with the washing on the line
—**

headless torsos, faceless lovers, friends of mine.

1 9 7 8

A Martian Sends a Postcard Home

**Caxtons⁵ are mechanical birds with m a n y wings
a n d s o m e are treasured for their m a r k i n g s —
they c a u s e the eyes to melt**

or the body to shriek without pain.

**5 I have never seen one fly, but
sometimes they perch on the hand.**

**Mist is when the sky is tired of flight
and rests its soft m a c h i n e on ground:**

3. A popular British brand of audiotape. David
1491) was the first to print in English; in the next
Oistrakh (1908-1974) and his son Igor (b. 1931),
couplet, the Martian observes the effects of books
celebrated Russian violinists.

on their readers, but does not know the words for
4. British colloquialism for frilled undergarments.
cry or laugh.

5. I.e., books, which William Caxton (ca. 1422-
1944 / C R A I G R A I N E

then the world is dim and bookish

10 like engravings under tissue paper.

Rain is when the earth is television.

It has the property of making colours darker.

Model T6 is a room with the lock inside—

a key is turned to free the world

**15 for movement, so quick there is a film
to watch for anything missed.**

But time is tied to the wrist

or kept in a box, ticking with impatience.

In homes, a haunted apparatus sleeps,

20 that snores when you pick it up.

If the ghost cries, they carry it

to their lips and soothe it to sleep
with sounds. And yet, they wake it up
deliberately, by tickling with a finger.
25 Only the young are allowed to suffer
openly. Adults go to a punishment room
with water but nothing to eat.
They lock the door and suffer the noises
alone. No one is exempt
BO and everyone's pain has a different smell.
At night, when all the colours die,
they hide in pairs
and read about themselves—
in colour, with their eyelids shut.

1 9 7 9

For Hans Keller⁷

There will be more of this,
more of this than I had realised
of finding our friends

6. I.e., automobiles; the "key" (next line) is the 7. English
(Austrian-born) musicologist (1919—
ignition key. 1985).

F O R H A N S K E L L E R / 1 9 4 5

irrevocably changed,
5 skewed like G u y F a w k e s 8 in a chair
b e c a u s e all the m u s c l e s have gone
and talking as if nothing has h a p p e n e d
when nothing has h a p p e n e d .
There will be m o r e of this,

10 more of c o m i n g to crematoria
to learn that a life can c o m e to an end
like a Haydn quartet,⁹ without a repeat.
T h e r e will be too m u c h and then more of this,
of hearing instruments negotiate with silence,
15 S t a t i n g the c a s e with gravitas^o *moral earnestness*
and anxious insect antennae.
We stand for the coffin at a word from the usher.
T h e speaker's hand feels for his pocket,
as his nerves die down
20 and the nerves take over.
That hand is alive and my feet are alive,
feeling the pinch of expensive new shoes,
and I am moved by being moved
as the coffin crawls to the fire.
25 H a n s , there is still more of this,
more of undertakers locking the hearse
and seeing the plastic safety bolts
slide, like suppositories, slowly away,
as we re-enter the sunshine alive
BO with eyes to see by C a m d e n Lock¹
a bedstead, sleeping rough,
like dead beloved bodies everywhere.

1 9 9 6

8. Conspirator (15 70-1606) in the so-called Gun-
across the U.K.

powder Plot to blow up the British Parliament.

9. Composition for four instrumentalists by the

When this failed, in 1605, Fawkes was arrested,
Austrian composer Joseph Haydn (1732—1809).
tortured, and executed. Annually on November 5
1. London market.

ever since, his effigy has been burnt on bonfires
1946

KIT WRIGHT

b. 1944

Mantles¹

**White as the sacrament, in my grandmother's house the
mantles**

**Were taught to flower in the dusk. On their soft
weighbridge⁰ platform They balanced the light, on their
milkmaid's yoke they carried it**

Over mahogany mountains,

**5 Till the room was breathing its secret to the ghost of the
wind in the**

bay.

That radiant patience made a lake of the stern piano

Where she sang *The Isle of Capri*.² Such

Beauty in the frail old voice, so long a river of widowhood

The light went running with through the banks of shadow

...

io It caught the little pointed breasts of brass

Nubian goddesses on the mantelpiece. It put in the shade

A mysterious cavern under the table

**Where African butterflies, in the pinned tomb of their
wooden boxes,**

Spread their gorgeous wings that reeked of camphor.

**15 In my grandmother's house there existed a borrowed
shrimping net**

And a maiden aunt, your best friend ever.

A peacock feather. An ostrich egg. A time

When the breathing of time was audible in gas mantles,

Conspiratorial and benign.

2000

A Love Song of Tooting³

In Tooting, the tomato

Hangs heavy on the vine

The blackbird's *ohhligato*⁴

Fulfils its liquid line

5 On summertime allotments⁰ *vegetable plots*

By lenient design.

Nine beanrows will I have there,⁵

Not ten, not eight, but nine,

And I shall build a pav^o there, *pavillion, hut*

1. Incandescent cloth hoods of gaslight jets.

ally melodic line accompanying a solo.

2. Hit song written in 1934.

5. Cf. W. B. Yeats, "The Lake Isle of Innisfree,"

3. District of south London.

lines 2-3 (p. 1190).

4. In a musical composition, a necessary, gener-

BLOODY MEN / 1 9 4 7

10 Or shed of weathered pine,

And all shall be contentment

D o w n by the railway line.

**My shed, beside a toolbox,
A coolbox⁰ shall confine *cooler*
15 And we from out the coolbox
Shall q u a f f the rare white wine.
T h e dove shall plight its truelove
And I shall sing to mine.**

2000

My Version

**I hear that since you left me
Things go from bad to worse,
T h a t the G o o d Lord, quite rightly,
H a s set a signal c u r s e
5 On you, your h o u s e and lover.
(I learn, moreover, he
Proves twice as screwed-up, selfish
And sodden, dear, as me.)
They say your days are tasteless,
io Flattened, disjointed, thinned.
Across the waste my absence,
Love's skeleton, has grinned.
Perfect. I trust my sources
Of information are sound?
15 Or is it just s o m e worthless r u m o u r
I've been spreading round?**

2000

W E N D Y C O P E

b. 1945

Bloody Men

**Bloody m e n are like bloody b u s e s —
You wait for about a year
And as soon as one approaches your stop
T w o or three others appear.**

1 9 4 8 / WENDY COPE

**5 You look at them flashing their indicators,
O f f e r i n g you a ride.**

**You're trying to read the destinations,
You haven't m u c h time to decide.**

If you m a k e a mistake, there is no turning back.

10 J u m p off, and you'll stand there and gaze

While the cars and the taxis and lorries⁰ go by *trucks*

And the minutes, the hours, the days.

1 9 9 2

Flowers

S o m e m e n never think of it.

You did. You'd c o m e along

And say you'd nearly brought me flowers

But s o m e t h i n g had gone wrong.

5 T h e s h o p was closed. Or you had d o u b t s —

T h e sort that minds like ours

D r e a m up incessantly. You thought

I might not want your flowers.

It m a d e me smile and hug you then,

io N o w I can only smile.

But, look, the flowers you nearly brought

Have lasted all this while.

1 9 9 2

Valentine

My heart has m a d e its mind up

And I'm afraid it's you.

Whatever you've got lined up,

My heart has m a d e its mind up

5 And if you can't be signed up

This year, next year will do.

My heart has m a d e its mind up

And I'm afraid it's you.

1 9 9 2

F A C I N G I T / 1 9 4 9

Serious Concerns

“She is witty and unpretentious, which is both her strength and her

limitation.”

(ROBERT O'BRIEN in the *Spectator*, ' 25.10.86)

I'm going to try a n d overcome my limitation—

Away with sloth!

N o w should I work at being less witty? Or m o r e pretentious?

Or both?

“They (Roger M c G o u g h and Brian Patten)² have something in common with her, in that they all write to amuse.”

(IBID.)

Write to a m u s e ? W h a t an appalling suggestion!

I write to m a k e people anxious and miserable and to worsen their

indigestion.

1 9 9 2

Y U S E F K O M U N Y A K A A

b. 1947

Facing It

**My black face fades,
hiding inside the black granite.**

**I said I wouldn't
dammit: No tears.**

5 I'm stone. I'm flesh.

**My clouded reflection eyes me
like a bird of prey, the profile of night
slanted against morning. I turn
this way — the stone lets me go.**

**io I turn that way—I'm inside
the Vietnam Veterans Memorial¹
again, depending on the light
to make a difference.**

**I go down the 58,022 names,
15 half-expecting to find
my own in letters like smoke.**

I touch the name Andrew Johnson;

I see the booby trap's white flash.

Names shimmer on a woman's blouse

20 but when she walks away

1. English magazine, in which O'Brien was writing the late 1960s and early 1970s, about Cope. 1. In Washington, D.C.

2. Two of the so-called Liverpool poets, popular in

1950 / Y U S E F K O M U N Y A K A A

the names stay on the wall.

Brushstrokes flash, a red bird's
wings cutting across my stare.

The sky. A plane in the sky.

25 A white vet's image floats
closer to me, then his pale eyes
look through mine. I'm a window.

He's lost his right arm
inside the stone. In the black mirror
30 a woman's trying to erase names:

No, she's brushing a boy's hair.

1 9 8 8

Banking Potatoes

Daddy would drop purple-veined vines

Along rows of dark loam

& I'd march behind him

Like a peg-legged soldier,

5 Pushing down the stick

With a V cut into its tip.

Three weeks before the first frost

I'd follow his horse-drawn plow

That opened up the soil & left

io Sweet potatoes sticky with sap,

Like flesh-colored stones along a riverbed

Or diminished souls beside a mass grave.

They lay all day under the sun's

Invisible weight, & by twilight

15 We'd bury them under pine needles

& then shovel in two feet of dirt.

**Nighthawks scalloped the sweaty air,
Their wings spread wide
As plowshares. But soon the wind
20 Knocked on doors & windows
Like a frightened stranger,
& by mid-winter we had tunneled
Back into the tomb of straw,
Unable to divide love from hunger.**

1 9 9 2

The Smokehouse

**In the hickory scent
Among slabs of pork
SUNDAY AFTERNOONS / 1 9 5 1
Glistening with salt,
I played Indian
5 In a headdress of redbird feathers
& brass buttons
O f f my mother's winter coat.**

S m o k e w o v e

**A thread of fire through meat, into D e c e m b e r
10 & January. T h e dead weight
Of the place h u n g around me,
Strung up with sweetgrass.
T h e hog had been sectioned,
A m a p scored into skin;
15 O p e n e d like love,
F r o m snout to tail,
T h e goodness**

No longer true to e a c h bone.

I was a wizard

20 In that hazy world,

& knew I could cut

Slivers of m e a t till my heart

G r e w m o r e h u m a n & flawed.

1 9 9 2

Sunday Afternoons

They'd latch the screendoors

& pull Venetian blinds,

Telling us not to leave the yard.

But we always got lost

5 A m o n g mayhaw0 & crabapple. *berry tree*

J u i c e spilled from our mouths,

& soon we were drunk & brave

As birds diving through saw" vines. *saw palmetto*

E a c h nest held three or four

io Speckle d eggs, blue as rage.

W h e r e did we learn to be unkind,

There in the power of holding each egg

While watching dogs in J u n e

D u s t & heat, or when we followed

15 T h e hawk's slow, deliberate arc?

In the yard, we heard cries

F u s e d with gospel on the radio,

L o u d as shattered glass

In a Saturday-night a r g u m e n t

20 About trust & money.

**We were born between Oh Yeah
& G o d d a m m i t . I knew life**

1 9 5 2 / J A N E S H O R E

Began where I stood in the dark,
Looking out into the light,
25 & that sometimes I could see
Everything through nothing.
The backyard trees breathed
Like a man running from himself
As my brothers backed away
30 From the screendoor. I knew
If I held my right hand above my eyes
Like a gambler's visor, I could see
How their bedroom door halved
The dresser mirror like a moon
35 Held prisoner in the house.

1 9 9 2

J A N E S H O R E

b. 1947

High Holy Days¹

It was hot. A size too large,
my wool winter suit scratched.
Indian summer flaring up through fall.
The shul's² broken window
5 bled sunlight on the congregation; the Red Sea
of the scarlet carpet parted the women from the men.³
Mother next to daughter, father next to son
flipped through prayerbooks in unison

trying to keep the place. Across the aisle,
io my father wore a borrowed prayershawl.
A black yarmulke⁴ covered his bald spot.
The rabbi unlocked the ark⁵
and slid the curtain open. Propped inside,
two scrolls of the Torah⁶ dressed like matching dolls,
15 each, a king and a queen. Ribbons hung down
from their alabaster satin jackets;

1. Also called Days of Awe, combining Rosh Ha-
4. Skullcap worn, like the “prayershawl” (a gar-
shanah, the Jewish New Year, with Yom Kippur,
ment), by Jewish men during services.

the Day of Atonement, ten days later; generally in
5. A large cabinet on the altar, in which the locked
September and October.

Torahs are kept; the Jewish equivalent of the ark

2. Synagogue’s (Yiddish).

of the Covenant (Exodus 25.10—22).

3. Men and women are seated separately in

6. The five books of Moses (Genesis, Exodus,
Orthodox Jewish congregations. Shore’s “Red Sea”
Leviticus, Numbers, and Deuteronomy), written in
of carpet, acting as a divider, reverses the image in
Hebrew. The scrolls, on two wooden rollers, are
Exodus 14.21—22, where Moses parts the Red Sea,
decorated with sterling-silver crowns and wrapped
allowing the nation of Israel to escape pursuit by
in fabric; called the “king’s possessions” because of

the Egyptians.

their centrality to Jewish religious life.

H I G H H O L Y D A Y S / 1 9 5 3

each one wore two silver crowns.

I wondered, could the ancient kings

have been so small? So small,

20 and still have vanquished our enemies?

The cantor's voice rose

like smoke over a sacrificial altar,

and lambs,⁷ we rose to echo the refrain.

Each time we sat down

25 my mother rearranged her skirt.

Each time we stood up

my head hurt from the heat, dizzy

from tripping over the alphabet's

black spikes and lyres,

30 stick-figure battalions marching to defend

the Second Temple of Jerusalem.⁸

Rocking on their heels, boats

anchored in the harbor of devotion,

the temple elders davened Kaddish,⁹ mourning the dead.

35 Our neighbor who owned the laundry down the street

covered his left wrist out of habit—

numbers indelible as those

he inked on my father's shirt collars.¹

Once, I saw that whole arm disappear

40 into a tub of soapy shirts,

rainbowed, buoyant as the pastel clouds

in *The Illustrated Children's Bible*,
where God's enormous hand reached down
and stopped a heathen army in its tracks.²

45 But on the white-hot desert of the page
I was reading, it was noon,
the marching letters swam, the regiments
wavered in the heat,
a red rain falling on their ranks.

50 I watched it fall one drop at a time.
I felt faint. And breathed out sharply,
my nose spattering blood across the page.³

I watched it fall, and thought,
*you are a Chosen One,*⁴

55 the child to lead your tribe.

I looked around the swaying room.

Why would God choose me

7. Under a system instituted by Moses, sins were
atoned for by the sacrificing of a lamb (or ox, goat,

2. God's hand is commonly said to bring Israel

or bird) as a burnt offering to God. *Cantor*: reli-
deliverance from its enemies (e.g., 1 Samuel 7.13).

gious official who sings or chants prayers.

3. One of the three readings required on the

8. Temple built after the Jews returned from cap-
morning of Yom Kippur (Leviticus 16.1—34) details

tivity in Babylon in the sixth century **B . C . E . ;**

how the priest is to consecrate the ark of the Cov-

destroyed by the Romans in 70 c.E.

enant by sprinkling the blood of a sacrificed bull

9. Recited prayers in memory of the dead.

and goat on the cover.

1. Reference to the Nazi practice of tattooing reg-

4. Moses underscored the special role of the

istration numbers on the left arms of some pris-

descendants of Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob as God's

oners before they were sent to concentration

chosen people.

1 9 5 4 / R I C H A R D K E N N E Y

to lead this congregation of mostly strangers,

defend them against the broken windows,

60 the spray-painted writing on the walls?5

Overhead, the red bulb of the everlasting light6

was burning. As if God held me in His fist,

I stumbled down the synagogue stairs

just in time to hear

65 a cyclone of breath twist through

the shofar,7 a battle cry so powerful

it blasted city walls to rubble.

And I reeled home through the dazed traffic

of the business day—

70 past shoppers, past my school,

in session as usual,

spat like Jonah from the whale8

back into the Jew-hating world.

1 9 8 7

R I C H A R D K E N N E Y

b. 1948

Aubade

Cold snap. Five o'clock.

**Outside, a heavy frost—dark
footprints in the brittle**

grass; a cat's. Q u i c k coffee,

5 jacket, watch-cap, keys.

Stars blaze across the black

gap between horizons;

pickup somehow strikes

its own dim spark—an arc—

io starts. Inside, familiar

metal cab, an icebox

full of lightless air,

limns green with dash-light. Vinyl

seat cracks, cold and brittle;

15 horn ring gleams, and chrome

cuts hard across the wrist

5. Reference to *Kristallnacht* (Night of the Broken
gogues on the High Holy Days. In Joshua 6.20,
Glass), November 9 and 10, 1938, when, in a
when the people hear the priests blow a shofar,
pogrom throughout Germany and Austria, the
they raise such a great shout that the walls of Jer-
Nazis committed violent acts such as breaking the
icho fall.

windows of Jewish stores.

8. After Jonah had been swallowed by a great fish,
6. A red electric light, symbolic of God's eternal
God spoke to it and it spew Jonah out (Jonah 2.10).
presence, is kept burning continuously in the ceil-
The Book of Jonah is read in its entirety on Yom
ing of an Orthodox synagogue.

Kippur.

7. Trumpet made of ram's horn; blown in syna-

A P P L E S O N C H A M P L A I N / 1 9 5 5

**where the sleeve falls off the glove,
as moon-track curves its cool tiara
somewhere underneath your sleep**

20 **this very moment, love—**

1 9 8 5

Apples on Champlain¹

**Oil-slick, slack shocks, ancient engine
smoking like a burning tire,**

**Augustus' old truck yaws and slews,²
its leaf-springs limp these centuries**

**5 suspending apples, somehow pulls
the last hill past the bridge at Isle**

**La Motte.³ I hear the iron arches
groaning. Why not? Whole orchards
rattling, empty racks behind us,**

**io emptied into grain sacks, piled
behind us—home ahead, we broach**

**the mile-long causeway cross from Grande Isle⁴
back. A blue heron's motionless**

15 in marsh grass to my right, and pole
and icepack at my left—one line,
two lanes, a roostertail of blue
exhaust, we part the cooling waters
of Champlain.

20 The moon's a pool
of mercury. It's zero. Ice soon.
Steaming like a teacup, losing
heat, the lake is tossing clouds up
all around the truck; and tucked
25 so in its fragile ribcage creel,
the cold heart *thump* accordions
to keep alive, and fills, as apples
interrupt this landscape's black-
on-grey like heartbeats full of blood,
30 strung beads, a life of little suns
gone rolling down the press and sump
of memory and changing form
as *thump*, horizon groans and ladles
light, and the real sun comes up,
35 sudden, weightless, warm.

1 9 8 5

1. Lake Champlain, which divides New York State
3. Vermont town on one of the islands in Lake
and Vermont near the Canadian border.
Champlain.
2. Pivots, skids. Yaws: moves side to side, like a
4. Group of four islands in Lake Champlain.

ship in a heavy sea.

1 9 5 6 / R O B Y N S A R A H

Sawmill

Snap **tempered tooth chips**

sawyer shouts *steel in sawlog*

lock engine off slack

line carriage back echo

5 like a gunshot ricochets

off galvanized tin roof the great

blade ringing like a gong

and every man down low:

look, along the log's sheer face,

10 the bright metal shows itself:

a tap, a nail, a bit of buried

wire, some wrong coordinate

or undetected intercept

exactly *there*—count the rings—

15 just forty years ago.

1 9 8 5

ROBYN SARAH

b. 1949

Courtney, Mentioned in Passing, Years After

“The most beautiful girl in the college,

and she had to go move to Thailand!”

Then

he says her name, and it turns out

5 you knew her, years ago:

you remember her from when she was small,

decked out as Pharaoh's daughter
in the Grade Two play, in an amazing dress
her mother cut for her, designed
io with the help of colour plates
from the school encyclopaedia, Volume E.
You remember how she,
who lived to ride horses, who drew
(in ink) horses on every surface of her
15 fuchsia and mauve and turquoise and pink
vinyl ring-binders, used
to punish herself at recess
when her team lost
at m u r d e r - b a l l 0 — *dodge ball*

RELICS / 1957

20 h o w

(almost weeping in her fury)

she would cry, " O h —

I hate the horses now!"

For a m o m e n t , then, in Montreal,

25 in F e b r u a r y slush, shifting f r o m foot to foot

in the bus-stop line, you think

of C o u r t n e y in Thailand, hating the horses.

You see her there,

grown up, but still

30 in her Egyptian sleeves. Her s u d d e n

wake of colours.

1998

Relics

Digging a new
cellar a c c e s s
you unearth
a cat's skull. T h e n
5 a metal stencil, rust-
encrusted. T h e n
the small bottle
in which ink
has dried black
io with the ca p
rusted on. And
other bottles—small
vials, of coloured
pharmacist's glass,
15 a n d — i n t a c t —
filled with packed dirt,
its s u r f a c e glazed
with rainbow p a t i n a —
the wide-lipped, plain
20 round thick-glassed pint
of childhood gone,
that h e l d — a g a i n
and a g a i n — f r e s h
c r e a m (thick too)
1 9 5 8 / A G H A S H A H I D A L I
25 waiting, capped,
each morning
on the stoop.

1 9 9 8

A G H A S H A H I D A L I

1949-2001

The Dacca Gauzes¹

... for a whole year he sought to accumulate the most exquisite
Dacca gauzes.

—OSCAR WILDE / *The Picture of Dorian Gray*

Those transparent Dacca gauzes

known as woven air, running

water, evening dew:

a dead art now, dead over

5 a hundred years. “No one

now knows,” my grandmother says,

“what it was to wear

or touch that cloth.” She wore

it once, an heirloom sari from

io her mother’s dowry, proved

genuine when it was pulled, all

six yards, through a ring.

Years later when it tore,

many handkerchiefs embroidered

15 with gold-thread paisleys

were distributed among

the nieces and daughters-in-law.

Those too now lost.

In history we learned: the hands

20 of weavers were amputated,

the looms of Bengal silenced,

**and the cotton shipped raw
by the British to England.**

History of little use to her,

1. Thin, finely woven muslins once made in the Bangladeshi city of Dacca.

LENOX HILL / 1959

**25 my grandmother just says
how the muslins of today
seem so coarse and that only
in autumn, should one wake up
at dawn to pray, can one
30 feel that same texture again.
One morning, she says, the air
was dew-starched: she pulled
it absently through her ring.**

1987

Lenox Hill²

*(In Lenox Hill Hospital, after surgery, my mother said the sirens sounded like the elephants of Mihiragula when his men drove them off cliffs in the Pir Panjal Range.)**

**The Hun so loved the cry, one falling elephant's,
he wished to hear it again. At dawn, my mother
heard, in her hospital-dream of elephants,
sirens wail through Manhattan like elephants
5 forced off Pir Panjal's rock cliffs in Kashmir:
the soldiers, so ruled, had rushed the elephant,
The greatest of all footprints is the elephant's,
said the Buddha.⁴ But not lifted from the universe,
those prints vanished forever into the universe,**

io though nomads still break news of those elephants
as if it were just yesterday the air spread the dye
(“War’s annals will fade into night / Ere their story die”),⁵
the punishing khaki whereby the world sees us die
out, mourning you, O massacred elephants!

15 Months later, in Amherst,⁶ she dreamt: She was, with dia-

monds, being stoned to death. I prayed: If she must die,
let it only be some dream. But there were times, Mother,
while you slept, that I prayed, “Saints, let her die.”

Not, I swear by you, that I wished you to die

20 but to save you as you were, young, in song in Kashmir,
and I, one festival, crowned Krishna⁷ by you, Kashmir
listening to my flute. You never let gods die.

2. On the structure of this poem, which is a can-
ordered a hundred more to be driven over.

zone, see “Versification,” p. 2046. Ali’s mother was

4. Sanskrit name, meaning Enlightened One, of
treated for brain cancer at Lenox Hill Hospital,
Siddhartha Gautama (ca. 563-483 B . C . E .) ,
New York City, but died in a hospital in North-
founder of Buddhism.

ampton, Massachusetts, on April 27, 1997.

5. Cf. Thomas Hardy, “In Time of ‘The Breaking

3. Himalayan mountains. Mihiragula, the early
of Nations,’ ” lines 11-12 (p. 1161).

sixth-century White Hun invader of Kashmir, is

6. Town in Massachusetts, near Northampton.

said to have been so entranced by the scream of

7. Widely revered Indian deity.

one of his elephants falling from a cliff that he

1 9 6 0 / A G H A S H A H I D A L I

Thus I swear, here and now, not to forgive the universe
that would let me get used to a universe

25 without you. She, she alone, was the universe

as she earned, like a galaxy, her right not to die,

defying the Merciful of the Universe,

Master of Disease, “in the circle of her traverse”⁸

of drug-bound time. And where was the god of elephants,⁹

30 plump with Fate, when tusk to tusk, the universe,

dyed green, became ivory? Then let the universe,

like Paradise, be considered a tomb. Mother,

they asked me, *So how's the writing?* I answered *My mother*

is my poem. What did they expect? For no verse

35 sufficed except the promise, fading, of Kashmir

and the cries that reached you from the cliffs of Kashmir

(across fifteen centuries) in the hospital. *Kashmir,*

she's dying! How her breathing drowns out the universe

as she sleeps in Amherst. Windows open on Kashmir:

40 *There,* the fragile wood-shrines—so far away—of Kashmir!

0 Destroyer,¹ let her return there, if just to die.

Save the right she gave its earth to cover her, Kashmir

has no rights. When the windows close on Kashmir,

1 see the blizzard-fall of ghost-elephants.

45 I hold back—she couldn't bear it—one elephant's

story: his return (in a country far from Kashmir)

to the jungle where each year, on the day his mother
died, he touches with his trunk the bones of his mother.
“As you sit here by me, you’re just like my mother,”
50 she tells me. I imagine her: a bride in Kashmir,
she’s watching, at the Regal,² her first film with Father.
If only I could gather you in my arms, Mother,
I’d save you—now my daughter—from God. The universe
opens its ledger. I write: How helpless was God’s mother!
55 Each page is turned to enter grief’s accounts. Mother,
I see a hand. *Tell me it’s not God’s*. Let it die.
I see it. It’s filling with diamonds. Please let it die.
Are you somewhere alive, somewhere alive, Mother?
Do you hear what I once held back: in one elephant’s
60 cry, by his mother’s bones, the cries of those elephants
that stunned the abyss? Ivory blots out the elephants.
I enter this: *The Beloved leaves one behind to die*.
For compared to my grief for you, what are those of Kashmir,
and what (I close the ledger) are the griefs of the universe
65 when I remember you—beyond all accounting—O my
mother?

2002

8. Cf. Wallace Stevens, “The Paltry Nude Starts
elephant, able to answer prayers and bring good
on a Spring Voyage,” lines 15—16: “She touches
fortune.

the clouds, where she goes / In the circle of her

1. I.e., Shiva, Hindu god of, among other things,
traverse of the sea.”

destruction and the Himalayan mountains.

9. I.e., Ganesh, Hindu god with the head of an

2. Name of a movie theater.

1 9 6 1

J A M E S F E N T O N

b. 1949

Dead Soldiers

When His Excellency Prince Norodom Chantaraingsey¹

Invited me to lunch on the battlefield

I was glad of my white suit for the first time that day.

They lived well, the mad Norodoms, they had style.

5 The brandy and the soda arrived in crates.

Bricks of ice, tied around with raffia,⁰ *palm fibers*

Dripped from the orderlies' handlebars.

And I remember the dazzling tablecloth

As the A P C s ² fanned out along the road,

io Th e dishes piled high with frogs' legs,

Pregnant turtles, their eggs boiled in the carapace,⁰ *shell*

Marsh irises in fish sauce

And inflorescence³ of a banana salad.

On every bottle, Napoleon Bonaparte

15 Pleaded for the authenticity of the spirit.⁴

They called the empties Dead Soldiers

And rejoiced to see them pile up at our feet.

Each diner was attended by one of the other ranks⁵

Whirling a table-napkin to keep off the flies.

20 It was like eating between rows of morris dancers⁶—

Only they didn't kick.

**On my left sat the prince;
On my right, his drunken aide.
The frogs' thighs leapt into the sad purple face
25 Like fish to the sound of a Chinese flute.
I wanted to talk to the prince. I wish now
I had collared his aide, who was Saloth Sar's brother.
We treated him as the club bore. He was always
Boasting of his connections, boasting with a head-shake
30 Or by pronouncing of some doubtful phrase.
And well might he boast. Saloth Sar, for instance,
Was Pol Pot's⁷ real name. The A P C s
Fired into the sugar palms but met no resistance.**

1. Military governor of Cambodia, uncle of King
include the waving of scarves, handkerchiefs, and
Norodom Sihanouk (b. 1922). Fenton was a war
sometimes wooden staves.

correspondent in Cambodia and Vietnam.

7. Kampuchean politician (1925-1998). Part of

2. Armored personnel carriers: trucks for trans-
the anti-French resistance in the 1940s, he
porting troops.

became leader of the pro-French Communist

3. Arrangement of flowers on an axis; blossoming.

Party, and prime minister in 1976. His government

4. Napoleon brandy (i.e., of high quality).

was overthrown after the Vietnamese invasion of

5. General infantrymen.

1979.

6. Performers of British folk dances, which

1962 / JAMES FENTON

In a diary, I refer to Pol Pot's brother as the Jockey Cap.

35 A few weeks later, I find him "in good form

And very skeptical about Chantaraingsey."

"But one eats well there," I remark.

"So one should," says the Jockey Cap:

"The tiger always eats well,

40 It eats the raw flesh of the deer,

And Chantaraingsey was born in the year of the tiger.

So, did they show you the things they do

With the young refugee girls?"

And he tells me how he will one day give me the

gen . inside information

45 He will tell me how the prince financed the casino

And how the casino brought Lon Nol⁸ to power.

He will tell me this.

He will tell me all these things.

All I must do is drink and listen.

50 In those days, I thought that when the game was up

The prince would be far, far away—

In a limestone faubourg,⁰ on the promenade at Nice,⁹ *suburb*

Reduced in circumstances but well enough provided for.

In Paris, he would hardly require his private army.

55 The Jockey Cap might suffice for cafe warfare,

And matchboxes for APCs.

But we were always wrong in these predictions.

It was a family war. Whatever happened,

The principals were obliged to attend its issue.
60 A few were cajoled into leaving, a few were expelled,
And there were villains enough, but none of them
Slipped away with the swag.^o *i00t*
For the prince was fighting Sihanouk,¹ his nephew,
And the Jockey Cap was ranged against his brother
65 Of whom I remember nothing more
Than an obscure reputation for virtue.
I have been told that the prince is still fighting
Somewhere in the Cardamoms or the Elephant Mountains.
But I doubt that the Jockey Cap would have survived his good
connections.

70 I think the lunches would have done for him—
Either the lunches or the dead soldiers.

1 9 8 1

8. General (1913-1985) and right-wing politi-

9. Resort city on the French Riviera.

cian, who became president of Cambodia in 1970

1. Norodom Sihanouk was made king of Cambo-

after his faction overthrew Sihanouk (see note 8

dia by the French in 1941. Overthrown by Lon

below). He was overthrown by Pol Pot.

Nol, he was reinstated in 1993.

A G E R M A N R E Q U I E M / 1 9 6 3

A German Requiem²

(To T.J. G.-A.)

For as at a great distance of place, that which wee look at,
appears

dimme, and without distinction of the smaller parts; and as
Voyces
grow weak, and inarticulate: so also after great distance of
time,
our imagination of the Past is weak; and wee lose (for
example) of
Cities wee have seen, many particular Streets; and of Actions,
many
particular circumstances. This *decaying sense*, when wee
would
express the thing it self, (I mean *fancy* it selfe,) wee call
Imagination, as I said before: But when we would express the
decay, and signifie that the Sense is fading, old, and past, it is
called Memory. So that
Imagination and *Memory* are but one thing ...

—HOBBS,³ *Leviathan*

It is not what they built. It is what they knocked down.
It is not the houses. It is the spaces between the houses.
**It is not the streets that exist. It is the streets that no longer
exist.**
It is not your memories which haunt you.
5 It is not what you have written down.
It is what you have forgotten, what you m u s t forget.
What you must go on forgetting all your life.
And with any luck oblivion should discover a ritual.
You will find out that you are not alone in the enterprise.
10 Yesterday the very furniture s e e m e d to reproach you.
Today you take your place in the Widow's Shuttle.⁴
T h e bus is waiting at the southern gate
To take you to the city of your ancestors

**W h i c h stands on the hill opposite, with gleaming
pediments,⁵**

15 As vivid as this charming square, your home.

Are you shy? You should be. It is almost like a wedding,

**T h e way you clasp your flowers and give a little tug at
your veil. Oh,**

**T h e hideous bridesmaids, it is natural that you should
resent them**

J u s t a little, on this first day.

20 But that will pass, and the cemetery is not far.

**H e r e c o m e s the driver, flicking a toothpick into the
gutter,**

His tongue still searching between his teeth.

See, he has not noticed you. No one has noticed you.

It will pass, young lady, it will pass.

25 H o w comforting it is, o n c e or twice a year,

To get together and forget the old times.

As on those special days, ladies and gentlemen,

W h e n the boiled shirts⁶ gather at the graveside

And a leering waistcoat a p p r o a c h e s the rostrum.

2. Mass or chant for the dead. Also, title of a piece

4. Popular name for bus going to the cemetery.

by the German composer Johannes Brahms

5. Triangular structures crowning the fronts of
(1833-1897).

buildings.

3. Thomas Hobbes (1588-1679), English philos-

6. (Men wearing) dress shirts with starched fronts.

opher.

1964 / JAMES FENTON

30 It is like a solemn pact between the survivors.

The mayor has signed it on behalf of the freemasonry.⁷

The priest has sealed it on behalf of all the rest.

Nothing more need be said, and it is better that way—

**The better for the widow, that she should not live in fear of
surprise,**

**35 The better for the young man, that he should move at
liberty between**

the armchairs,

**The better that these bent figures who flutter among the
graves**

Tending the nightlights and replacing the chrysanthemums

Are not ghosts,

That they shall go home.

40 The bus is waiting, and on the upper terraces

The workmen are dismantling the houses of the dead.

But when so many had died, so many and at such speed,

There were no cities waiting for the victims.

**They unscrewed the name-plates from the shattered
doorways**

45 And carried them away with the coffins.

**So the squares and parks were filled with the eloquence of
young**

cemeteries:

The smell of fresh earth, the improvised crosses

And all the impossible directions in brass and enamel.

**“Doctor Gliedschirm, skin specialist, surgeries 14—16
hours or by**

appointment.”

**50 Professor Sargnagel was buried with four degrees, two
associate**

memberships

And instructions to tradesmen to use the back entrance.

**Your uncle’s grave informed you that he lived on the third
floor, left.**

**You were asked please to ring, and he would come down in
the lift⁸**

To which one needed a key ...

55 Would come down, would ever come down

With a smile like thin gruel, and never too much to say.

How he shrank through the years.

How you towered over him in the narrow cage.⁹

How he shrinks now ...

60 But come. Grief must have its term? Guilt too, then.

**And it seems there is no limit to the resourcefulness of
recollection.**

So that a man might say and think:

When the world was at its darkest,

7. Fraternity for mutual help, called “Free and 8. Elevator.

**Accepted Masons” and having elaborate secret 9. Of the wire-
screened elevator, rituals.**

G O D , A P O E M / 1 9 6 5

W h e n the black wings p a s s e d over the rooftops¹

65 (And who can divine His purposes?) even then

T h e r e was always, always a fire in this hearth.

You see this c u p b o a r d ? A priest-hole!²

**And in that lumber-room whole generations have been h o
u s e d and fed.**

Oh, if I were to begin, if I were to begin to tell you
70 T h e half, the quarter, a mere smattering of what we
went through!

His wife nods, and a secret smile,
Like a breeze with e n o u g h strength to carry one dry leaf
Over two pavingstones, p a s s e s f r o m chair to chair.
Even the enquirer is c h a r m e d .

75 He forgets to p u r s u e the point.

It is not what he wants to know.

It is what he wants not to know.

It is not what they say.

It is what they do not say.

1 9 8 2

God, A Poem

A nasty surprise in a sandwich,
A drawing-pin caught in your sock,
T h e limpest of shakes from a hand which
You'd thought would be firm as a rock,

5 A serious mistake in a nightie,

A grave disappointment all round

Is all that you'll get f r o m th'Almighty,

Is all that you'll get underground.

Oh he *said*: "If you lay off the crumpet⁰ *women* io I'll se e
you alright in the end.

J u s t h a n g on until the last trumpet.

H a v e faith in me, c h u m — I ' m your friend."

But if you remind him, he'll tell you:

"I'm sorry, I m u s t have been p i s s e d 0 — *drunk*

15 T h o u g h your n a m e rings a sort of a bell. You

S h o u l d h a v e g u e s s e d t h a t I d o n o t e x i s t .

“I didn’t exist at Creation,

I didn’t exist at the Flood,

And I won’t be around for Salvation

20 To sort out the sheep f r o m t h e c u d —

1. Cf. Exodus 12.27: “It is the sacrifice of the

2. One of the hiding places, for Roman Catholic

Lord’s passover, who passed over the houses of the

priests, built in sixteenth-century England after the

children of Israel in Egypt, when he smote the

banning of Catholicism.

Egyptians, and delivered our houses.”

1 9 6 6 / J A M E S F E N T O N

“Or whatever the phrase is. The fact is

In soteriological⁰ terms *salvational*

I’m a crude existential malpractice

And you are a diet⁰ of^o worms. *food/for*

25 “You’re a nasty surprise in a sandwich.

You’re a drawing-pin caught in my sock.

You’re the limpest of shakes from a hand which

I’d have thought would be firm as a rock,

“You’re a serious mistake in a nightie,

30 You’re a grave disappointment all round—

That’s all that you are,” says th’Almighty,

“And that’s all that you’ll be underground.”

1 9 8 3

In Paris with You

Don’t talk to me of love. I’ve had an earful

And I get tearful when I've downed a drink or two.

I'm one of your talking wounded.

I'm a hostage. I'm marooned.

5 But I'm in Paris with you.

Yes I'm angry at the way I've been bamboozled

And resentful at the mess that I've been through.

I admit I'm on the rebound

And I don't care where are *we* bound,

io I'm in Paris with you.

Do you mind if we do *not* go to the Louvre,

If we say sod³ off to sodding Notre Dame,

If we skip the Champs Elysees

And remain here in this sleazy

15 Old hotel room

Doing this and that

To what and whom

Learning who you are,

Learning what I am.

20 Don't talk to me of love. Let's talk of Paris,

The little bit of Paris in our view.

There's that crack across the ceiling

And the hotel walls are peeling

And I'm in Paris with you.

25 Don't talk to me of love. Let's talk of Paris.

I'm in Paris with the slightest thing you do.

3. English slang, similar to but milder than *bugger*.

O F T I M E A N D T H E L I N E / 1 9 6 7

I'm in Paris with your eyes, your mouth,

I'm in Paris with ... all points south.

Am I embarrassing you?

30 I'm in Paris with you.

1 9 9 3

C H A R L E S B E R N S T E I N

b. 1950

Of Time and the Line

George Burns¹ likes to insist that he always

takes the straight lines; the cigar in his mouth

is a way of leaving space between the

lines for a laugh. He weaves lines together

5 by means of a picaresque narrative;

not so Hennie Youngman, whose lines are strict-

ly paratactic.² My father pushed a

line of ladies' dresses—not down the street

in a pushcart but upstairs in a fact'ry

io office. My mother has been more concerned

with her hemline. Chairman Mao³ put forward

Maoist lines, but that's been abandoned (most-

ly) for the East-West line of malarkey

so popular in these parts. The prestige

15 of the iambic line has recently

suffered decline, since it's no longer so

clear who T" am, much less who *you* are. When

making a line, better be double sure

what you're lining in & what you're lining

20 out & which side of the line you're on; the

world is made up so (Adam didn't so much

name as delineate).⁴ Every poem's got
a prosodic lining, some of which will *metrical*
unzip for summer wear. The lines of an
25 imaginary are inscribed on the
social flesh by the knife-point of history.
Nowadays, you can often spot a work
of poetry by whether it's in lines
or no; if it's in prose, there's a good chance
30 it's a poem. While there is no lesson in
the line more useful than that of the pick-
et line, the line that has caused the most ad-
versity is the bloodline. In Russia

1. American comedian and actor (1896—1996),

3. Mao Tse-tung (1893-1976), Communist
always seen with a cigar.

leader of the People's Republic of China.

2. Placed one after another without connectives,

4. Cf. Genesis 1.19-20: " ... a n d whatsoever
as in "Take my wife. Please"—the most famous
Adam called every living creature, that was the
one-liner delivered by Henry "Henny" Youngman
name thereof."

(1906-1998), American comedian.

1 9 6 8 / CHARLES B E R N S T E I N

everyone is worried about long lines;

35 b a c k in the U S A , it's strictly soup-

lines. " T a k e a chisel to write," but for an

actor a line's got to be cued. Or, as

they say in math, it takes two lines to make
an angle but only one line to make
40 a Margarita.

1 9 9 1

frequently unasked questions

I've a pile of memories on my other
drive, j u s t give me the word and I'll
configure them for you. I've got
the pearl blue organizer a n d the banquette
5 with double lacerators, but nothing
floral like those diphthong transducers.

W a s a time I'd arrive decked to the,
well that's no way to establish
contagious proximity. It poured several
io days in a row so that whe n the blimp
finally appeared we were f o c u s s e d
elsewise. Later, m u c h later, got
to cash in my gold for those new
chits—look so shiny over there.

2001

why we ask you not to touch

H u m a n emotions and cognition
leave a projective film over the p o e m s
making them difficult to perceive.

C a r e f u l readers maintain a m e a s u r e d
5 distance f r o m the works in order
to allow distortion-free c o m p r e h e n s i o n
and to avoid d a m a g i n g the meaning.

2001

this poem intentionally left blank

2 0 0 1

1 9 6 9

A N N E C A R S O N

b. 1950

New Rule

A New Year's white morning of hard new ice.

**High on the frozen branches I saw a squirrel j u m p and
skid.**

Is this scary? he seemed to say and glanced

down at me, clutching his branch as it bobbed

**5 in stiff recoil—or is it just that everything sounds wrong
today?**

The branches

clinked.

He wiped his small cold lips with one hand.

Do you fear the same things as

io I fear? I countered, looking up.

His empire of branches slid against the air.

The night of hooks?

The man blade left open on the stair?

Not enough spin on it, said my true love

is when he left in our fifth year.

The squirrel bounced down a branch

and caught a peg of tears.

The way to hold on is

afterwords

20 SO

clear.

2000

Sumptuous Destitution¹

” S u m p t u o u s destitution”

*Your opinion gives me a serious feeling: I would like to be
what you*

deem me.

(Emily Dickinson letter 319 to Thomas Higginson)²

is a phrase

5 You see my position is benighted.

(Emily Dickinson letter 268 to Thomas Higginson)

1. Phrase from poem (Franklin number 1404,
The mentor she addresses explicitly in many letters
Johnson number 1382) by the American poet
is the American literary critic Thomas Wentworth
Emily Dickinson (1830-1886; see pp. 1110-27),
Higginson (1823—1911). Carson makes evident
in which she remarks that joy “leaves a sumptuous
her belief that some of the letters here, whose
Destitution- / Without a name.”

undisclosed recipient Dickinson called “Master,”

2. All of the italicized quotations, except the last
were to Higginson. “Master” ‘s identity continues
(line 23), are from letters written by Dickinson.

to be disputed by scholars.

1970 / ANNE CARSON

scholars use

*She was much too enigmatical a heingfor me to solve in an
hour’s*

interview.

(Thomas Higginson letter 342a to Emily Dickinson)

10 of female

God made me [Sir] Master—I didn't he—myself.

(Emily Dickinson letter 233 to Thomas Higginson)

silence.

Rushing among my small heart—and pushing aside the blood

—

15 (Emily Dickinson letter 248 to Thomas Higginson)

Save what you can, Emily.

*And when I try to organize—my little Force explodes—and
leaves me*

hare and charred.

(Emily Dickinson letter 271 to Thomas Higginson)

Save every bit of thread.

20 Have you a little chest to put the Alive in?

(Emily Dickinson letter 233 to Thomas Higginson)

One of them may be

By Cock, said Ophelia.³

(Emily Dickinson letter 268 to Thomas Higginson)

25 the way out of here.

2 0 0 0

The Beauty of the Husband

*IV. HE SHE WE THEY YOU YOU YOU I HER SO
PRONOUNS*

*BEGIN THE DANCE CALLED WASHING WHOSE NAME
DERIVES*

*FROM AN ALCHEMICAL FACT THAT AFTER A SMALL
STILLNESS THERE IS A SMALL STIR AFTER GREAT
STILLNESS*

*A GREAT STIR*⁴

Rotate the husband and expose a hidden side. A letter he wrote from

Rio de Janeiro.⁵

Why Rio de Janeiro? is not a question worth asking.

We had been separated three years but not yet divorced.

He turned up anywhere.

5 Could be counted upon to lie if asked why. Otherwise could not be

counted upon.

When I say hidden

I mean funny.

A husband's tears are never hidden.

3. Allusion to Shakespeare, *Hamlet* 4.5.59-60,

4. Section of Carson's book-length poem *The*

where the mad Ophelia, spurned by Hamlet,

Beauty of the Husband: A Fictional Essay in 29

implies he has "tumbled" her: "Young men will do't

Tangos.

if they come to't, / By Cock, they are to blame."

5. Former capital city of Brazil.

THE BEAUTY OF THE HUSBAND / 1 9 7 1

Rio, April 23

10 I don't understand this business of linguistics.

Make me cry.

Don't make me cry.

I cry. You cry. We make ourselves cry.

Travelling foolish work spending money is what I make myself do.

15 Carioca.6

*I'm in an apartment in Rio with some Brazilians arguing over
how to make a washing machine work.*

*In half an hour they'll forget about it and go out for dinner
leaving the machine on fire.*

20 *They will come back from dinner to find their clothes
burned up, slap each other on the head*

and decide they in fact bought

a dryer which they don't know how to operate.

*I have just gone to look at this machine. It is indeed a washer
on*

fire.

25 *So now what happens. You and I.*

*We have this deep sadness between us and its spells so
habitual I*

can't

tell it from love.

You want a clean life I live a dirty one old story. Well.

30 *Not much use to you without you am I.*

I still love you.

You make me cry.

There are three things to notice about this letter.

First

35 its symmetry:

Make me cry... . You make me cry.

S e c o n d

its casuistry:

**cosmological⁷ motifs, fire and water, placed right before
talk of love**

40 to ground it in associations of primordial eros and strife.

Third no return address.

I cannot answer. He wants no answer. What does he want.

Four things.

But from the fourth I flee

45 chaste and craftily.

2001

6. Spanish term for resident of Rio de Janeiro. nature of the universe. *Casistry*: plausible but 7. Related to metaphysical speculation about the invalid reasoning.

1972

DANA GIOIA

b. 1950

Prayer

Echo of the clocktower, footstep

in the alleyway, sweep

of the wind sifting the leaves.

Jeweller of the spiderweb, connoisseur

5 of autumn's opulence, blade of lightning

harvesting the sky.

Keeper of the small gate, choreographer

of entrances and exits, midnight

whisper travelling the wires.

io Seducer, healer, deity or thief,

I will see you soon enough—

in the shadow of the rainfall,

in the brief violet darkening a sunset—

**but until then I pray watch over him
15 as a mountain guards its covert ore
and the harsh falcon its flightless young.**

1 9 9 1

The Next Poem

**How much better it seems now
than when it is finally d o n e —
the unforgettable first line,
the cunning way the stanzas run.
5 The rhymes soft-spoken and suggestive
are barely audible at first,
an appetite not yet acknowledged
like the inkling of a thirst.**

**While gradually the form appears
io as each line is coaxed aloud —
the architecture of a room
seen from the middle of a crowd.
The music that of common speech
but slanted so that each detail
15 sounds unexpected as a sharp
inserted in a simple scale.**

T H E P A L M R E A D E R / 1 9 7 3

No jumble box of imagery
dumped glumly in the reader's lap
or elegantly packaged junk
20 the unsuspecting must unwrap.
But words that could direct a friend
precisely to an unknown place,

those few unshakeable details
that no confusion can erase.
25 And the real subject left unspoken
but unmistakable to those
who don't expect a jungle parrot
in the black and white of prose.
How much better it seems now
30 than when it is finally written.
How hungrily one waits to feel
the bright lure seized, the old hook bitten.

1 9 9 1

N I C H O L A S C H R I S T O P H E R

b. 1951

The Palm Reader

In her storefront living room—
overstuffed couch, oversized TV, a bowl of mints
on the Plexiglas coffee table—
she watches *Edge of Night* and files her nails.

5 The paraphernalia pertaining to her trade
crowd a shelf beneath the large green hand
painted onto the window: a Tarot deck,
coins and obelisks, a chalky bust with numbered
phrenological divisions on the skull,
io Through the beaded curtain in the rear
some clues emerge as to *her* life:
two children trading insults,
a man calling out, “Eggs!”
as a frying pan clatters into a sink,

15 a dog running by with a wig in his mouth.

She herself is plump, heavily made up,
wearing a red dress and a shawl imprinted
with the signs of the zodiac.

A gold pyramid hangs from her throat

1. A soap opera.

1 9 7 4 / NICHOLAS CHRISTOPHER

**20 and she has combed glittering
silver stars through her black hair.**

**From a plush rocker she beckons you,
at the window, to a straight-back chair
in which she will divine (according to the sign
25 on the door) “the roads into your future,
and helpful information from the Beyond.”**

**Though the latter, especially, tempts
you powerfully, you decline,
and she shrugs with a rueful smile.**

**30 And because it is close to noon,
and the sidewalk is empty, as you cross
the street she closes up for lunch.**

**Her living room in which matters of life
and death—of human destiny laid bare—**

**35 suddenly reverts to its other function:
husband slumped on the couch clutching a beer,
children sopping bread across paper plates,
the dog sprawled under the table.**

All of them watching *Edge of Night* now.

40 The fate of whose characters, which keeps

a faithful public tuning in day after day,
year after year, is presumably known
to this woman, lighting a cigarette
and surveying that room, open to all passersby
45 yet utterly remote, as inescapable
as the future itself, that jumps out
at her from every stranger's hand.

1 9 9 5

Far from Home

A broken-down hotel on an inhospitable sea,
and behind it, a field of thorns in which
a man wearing white gloves is digging a hole
with the exact proportions of a grave.

5 Down the hall, the young chambermaid
is staring into a basin full of red water.

Her hair is white and her hands are wrinkled.
A shark tooth dangles from her ear.

In the evening she leaves a tray by my door:
io a glass, a carafe of water, and a bottle
containing liquor that swirls like mist.

Mornings she brings bitter tea and a map.
Always the same map—not of the island
we're on, but of one I left long ago.

T H E G E E S E / 1 9 7 5

15 (If it were this island, I wouldn't know,
having never ventured from the hotel.)

There is a bowl of black seashells by my bed.
The maps—thirteen of them—are stacked

between the lamp that flickers like a star
20 and the quartz lions veined with light.
The clerk at the front desk could be a statue.
His dark glasses reflect the bare lobby,
its leafless plants and shuttered windows.
At his fingertips is a tumbler filled with dust.
25 The day I check out, the other guests line
the balcony, wrapped in sheets, speaking
a language I've never heard—sibilant as
the sea, but with no two words sounding alike.
The man in white gloves appears, to carry
30 my suitcase, and pauses before a mirror
in which I see, not his image, but towering
iron waves, rising to mesh with an iron sky.

1 9 9 5

J O R I E G R A H A M

b. 1951

The Geese

Today as I hang out the wash I see them again, a code
as urgent as elegant,
tapering with goals.

For days they have been crossing. We live beneath these geese
5 as if beneath the passage of time, or a most perfect heading.

Sometimes I fear their relevance.

Closest at hand,

between the lines,

the spiders imitate the paths the geese won't stray from,

io imitate them endlessly to no avail:

things will not remain connected,
will not heal,
and the world thickens with texture instead of history,
texture instead of place.

15 Yet the small fear of the spiders
binds and binds

1 9 7 6 / J O R I E G R A H A M

the pins to the lines, the lines to the eaves, to the pincushion
bush,

as if, at any time, things could fall further apart¹
and nothing could help them

20 recover their meaning. And if these spiders had their way,
chainlink over the visible world,

would we be in or out? I turn to go back in.

There is a feeling the body gives the mind

of having missed something, a bedrock poverty, like falling

25 without the sense that you are passing through one world,
that you could reach another

anytime. Instead the real

is crossing you,

your body an arrival

30 you know is false but can't outrun. And somewhere in
between

these geese forever entering and

these spiders turning back,

this astonishing delay, the everyday, takes place.

1 9 8 0

At Luca Signorelli's² Resurrection of the Body

See how they hurry

to enter
their bodies,
these spirits.
5 Is it better, flesh,
that they
should hurry so?
From above
the green-winged angels
10
blare down
trumpets and light. But
they don't care,
they hurry to congregate,
they hurry
15 into speech, until
it's a marketplace,
it is humanity. But still
we wonder

1. Cf. W. B. Yeats, "The Second Coming," line 3:

2. Italian painter (ca. 1450—1523), whose series

"Things fall apart; the centre cannot hold"

on the Last Judgment is displayed in the gothic

(p. 1196).

cathedral of Orvieto, Italy.

AT LUCA SIGNORELLI'S RESURRECTION
OF THE BODY / 1977

in the chancel³

20 of the dark cathedral,

is it better, back?

The artist

has tried to make it so: each tendon

they press

25

to re-enter

is perfect. But is it

perfection

they're after,

pulling themselves up

30

through the soil

into the weightedness, the color,

into the eye

of the painter? Outside

it is 1500,

35 all round the cathedral

streets hurry to open

through the wild

silver grasses....

The men and women

40 on the cathedral wall

do not know how,

having come this far,

to stop their

hurrying. They amble off

45 in groups, in

couples. Soon

some are clothed, there is
distance, there is
perspective. Standing below them
50 in the church
in Orvieto, how can we
tell them
to be stern and brazen
and slow,
55 that there is no
entrance,
only entering. They keep on
arriving,
wanting names,
60 wanting
happiness. In his studio
Luca Signorelli
3. Part of a church containing the altar.
1978 / J O R I E G R A H A M
in the name of God
and Science
65 and the believable
broke into the body
studying arrival.
But the wall
of the flesh
70 opens endlessly,
its vanishing point so deep
and receding

we have yet to find it,
to have it
75 stop us. So he cut
deeper,
graduating slowly
from the symbolic
to the beautiful. How far
so is true?
When his one son
died violently,
he had the body brought to him
and laid it
85 on the drawing-table,
and stood
at a certain distance
awaiting the best
possible light, the best depth
90 of day,
then with beauty and care
and technique
and judgment, cut into
shadow, cut
95 into bone and sinew and every
pocket
in which the cold light
pooled.
It took him days,
100 that deep

caress, cutting,
unfastening,
until his mind
could climb into
105 the open flesh and
mend itself.

1 9 9 3

W H Y B R O W N L E E L E F T / 1 9 7 9

The Surface

It has a hole in it. Not only where I
concentrate.

The river still ribboning, twisting up,
into its re-

5 arrangements, chill enlightenments, tight-knotted
quickenings

and loosening—whispered messages dissolving
the messengers—

the river still glinting-up into its handfuls, heapings,
10 glassy

forgettings under the river of
my attention—

and the river of my attention laying itself down—
bending,

15 reassembling—over the quick leaving-offs and windy
obstacles—

and the surface rippling under the wind's attention—

rippling over the accumulations, the slowed-down drifting
permanences

20 of the cold

bed.

I say *iridescent* and I look down.

The leaves very still as they are carried.

1 9 9 3

P A U L M U L D O O N

b. 1951

Why Brownlee Left

Why Brownlee left, and where he went,

Is a mystery even now.

For if a man should have been content

It was him; two acres of barley,

5 One of potatoes, four bullocks,

A milker, a slated farmhouse.

He was last seen going out to plough

On a March morning, bright and early.

By noon Brownlee was famous;

io They had found all abandoned, with

The last rig¹ unbroken, his pair of black

1. Ridge between a pair of plow furrows.

1 9 8 0 / P A U L M U L D O O N

Horses, like man and wife,

Shifting their weight from foot to

Foot, and gazing into the future.

1 9 8 0

Meeting the British²

We met the British in the dead of winter.

The sky was lavender

and the snow lavender-blue.
I could hear, far below,
5 the sound of two streams coming together
(both were frozen over)
and, no less strange,
myself calling out in French
across that forest-
10 clearing. Neither General Jeffrey Amherst
nor Colonel Henry Bouquet³
could stomach our willow-tobacco.
As for the unusual
scent when the Colonel shook out his hand-
15 kerchief: *C'est la lavande,*
***une fleur mauve comme le del.*⁴**
They gave us six fishhooks
and two blankets embroidered with smallpox.

1987

Milkweed and Monarch

As he knelt by the grave of his mother and father
the taste of dill, or tarragon—
he could barely tell one from the other—

2. I.e., the British forces, met by Native Americans and apparently executed a plan to spread smallpox among the Native Americans through infected French and Indian War (1754—63).
blankets.

3. British officer (1719-1766), who with the com-

4. It is lavender, a flower as mauve as the sky
mander-in-chief, Amherst (1717—1797), devised
(French).

THIRDEPISTLETOTIMOTHY / 1981

filled his mouth. It seemed as if he might smother.

5 Why should he be stricken

with grief, not for his mother and father,

but a woman slinking from the fur of a sea-otter

in Portland, Maine, or, yes, Portland, Oregon—

he could barely tell one from the other—

10 and why should he now savour

the tang of her, her little pickled gherkin,

as he knelt by the grave of his mother and father?

He looked about. He remembered her palaver⁰ *idle talk*

on how both earth and sky would darken—

15 “You could barely tell one from the other—”

while the Monarch butterflies passed over

in their milkweed-hunger: “A wing-beat, some reckon,

may trigger off the mother and father

of all storms, striking your Irish Cliffs of Moher

20 with the force of a hurricane.”

Then: “Milkweed and Monarch ‘invented’ each other.”

He looked about. Cow’s-parsley in a samovar.⁵

He’d mistaken his mother’s name, “Regan”, for “Anger”:

as he knelt by the grave of his mother and father

25 he could barely tell one from the other.

1994

Third Epistle to Timothy⁶

You made some mistake when you intended to favor me with
some

of the new valuable grass seed ... for what you gave me ...
proves

mere timothy.

A letter from Benjamin Franklin to Jared Eliot,⁷

July 16th, 1747

I

**Midnight. June, 1923. Not a stir except for the brough and
brouhaha⁸**

surrounding the taper or link⁹

5. Russian tea urn.

introduced during the eighteenth century into

6. St. Paul writes two epistles to Timothy (Chris-
North America.

tian Scriptures books 1 Timothy and 2 Timothy).

8. Commotion. *Brough*: luminous ring around the
With a poem that often quotes St. Paul, Muldoon
moon.

provides a third.

9. A torch made of flax fiber and pitch (a resinous

7. Early American minister, physician, and scien-
substance).

tist (1685-1763). *Timothy*: a native British grass,

1 9 8 2 / P A U L M U L D O O N

in which a louse

flares up and a shadow, my da's,

**5 clatters against a wall of the six-by-eight-by-six-foot
room**

he sleeps in, eleven years old, a servant-boy at Hardy's of
Carnteel.¹

There's a boot-polish lid filled with turps or
paraffin oil
under each cast-iron bed-leg, a little barrier
10 against bed-bugs under each bed-foot.

II

That knocking's the knocking against their stalls of a team
of six black Clydesdales² mined in Coalisland
he's only just helped to unhitch from the cumbersome
star of a hay-rake. Decently and in order³
15 he brought each whitewashed nose
to its nosebag of corn, to its galvanized bucket.
One of the six black Clydesdale mares
he helped all day to hitch and unhitch
was showing, on the near hock, what might be a bud of
farcy⁴
20 picked up, no doubt, while on loan to Wesley Cummins .

III

"Decently and in order," Cummins would proclaim, "let all
Inniskillings⁵
be done." A week ago my da helped him limber⁰ up *hook*
the team to a mowing machine as if to a gun carriage. "For
no
Drag⁰⁰On^o *cavalry member*
can function without his measure of char."^o *tea*
25 He patted his belly-band. "A measure, that is, against
dysentery."

This was my da's signal to rush

into the deep shade of the hedge to fetch such little tea as
might

remain

in the tea urn. “Man does not live,” Cummins would snort,
“only by scraps

of wheaten farls and tea dregs.⁶

30 You watch your step or I’ll see you’re shipped back to
Killeter.”⁷

IV

“Kill *eeshill*,” my da says, “I’m from Killeeshill.” Along
the cast-iron rainbow of his bed-end

comes a line

of chafers⁰ or cheeselips⁰ that have scaled *beetles* /
cockchafers, *wood lice* the bed-legs

1. Parish in County Tyrone, Northern Ireland, as

5. Named after the town in County Fermanagh
is Coalisland (line 12).

that it was established to defend, the Royal Innis-

2. A breed of horse used on farms.

killing Fusiliers was a regiment of the British Army.

3. Cf. St. Paul’s First Epistle to the Corinthians

Cummins rephrases St. Paul’s “Let all things be

(1 Corinthians) 14.40: “Let all things be done
done.”

decently and in order.”

6. Cf. Deuteronomy 8.3: “man doth not live by

4. A disease that causes small tumors known as

bread only.” *Farls*: small Scottish cakes or biscuits.

farcy buds. *Hock*: the joint between the knee and

7. Village in County Tyrone, as is Killeeshill (line

the fetlock on a horse.

31).

THIRDEPISTLE TO TIMOTHY / 1983

35 despite the boot-polish lids. Eleven years of age. A servant-boy

on the point of falling asleep. The reek of paraffin

or the pinewoods reek

of turpentine

good against roundworm in horses. That knocking against their stalls

40 of six Clydesdales, each standing at sixteen hands.

V

Building hay even now, even now drawing level with the team's

headbrass,⁸

buoyed up by nothing more than the ballast

of hay—meadow cat's-tail, lucerne,⁹ the leaf upon trodden leaf

of white clover and red—

45 drawing level now with the taper-blooms of a horse chestnut.

Already light in the head.

“Though you speak, young Muldoon ...” Cummins calls up from

trimming the skirt

of the haycock,⁰ “though you speak with the tongue *small pile of hay* of an angel,¹ I see you for what you are ... Malevolent.

50 Not only a member of the church malignant² but a *malevolent* spirit.”

V/

Even now borne aloft by bearing down on lap-cocks and
shake-cocks³

from under one of which a ruddy face

suddenly twists and turns upwards as if itself carried

on a pitchfork and, meeting its gaze,

55 he sees himself, a servant-boy still, still ten or eleven,

breathing upon a Clydesdale's near hock and finding a farcy-
bud

like a tiny glow in a strut⁰ of charcoal. *stick*

"I see you," Cummins points at him with the pitchfork, "you
little by-blow,^o *bastard*

I see you casting your spells, your sorceries,

60 I see you coming as a thief in the night⁴ to stab us in the
back."

VII

A year since they kidnapped Anketell Moutray from his home
at

Favour Royal,⁵

dragging him, blindfolded, the length of his own gravel path,

eighty years old, the Orange county grand master.⁶ Four A-
Specials⁷

shot on a train

8. A team of horses pulling a plow, the head brass
suffering (souls in purgatory), and the church mil-
being the ornamental brass plaque attached to
itant (faithful on Earth).

their bridle. Cf. Edward Thomas, "As the team's

3. Like lap-cocks, elaborate shapes made of hay.
head brass" (p. 1255).

4. Cf. St. Paul's First Epistle to the Thessalonians

9. Plant resembling clover and cultivated for food.
5.2: “For yourselves know perfectly that the day of the Lord so cometh as a thief in the night.”

Meadow cat's-tail: another name for timothy grass in Britain and Ireland.

5. Demesne (estate) in County Tyrone.

1. Cf. St. Paul's First Epistle to the Corinthians

6. The Orange order is a Protestant fraternity

13.1: “Though I speak with the tongues of men and of angels, and have not charity, I am become as sounding brass, or a tinkling cymbal.”

often accused of sectarian bigotry, the order and its members have been the target of violent attacks.

2. Cummins attacks the servant boy's Roman

7. As a response to sectarian violence, the British Catholicism, thereby adding the “church malign-governments established the Ulster Special Constabulary in 1920. Overwhelmingly Protestant, this church triumphant (souls in heaven), the church new force was divided into three sections: the

1984 / PAUL MULDOON

in Clones. The Clogher valley⁸

65 a blaze of flax-mills and hay-sheds. Memories of the Land League.

Davitt and Biggar.⁹

Breaking the boycott at Lough Mask.¹

The Land Leaguers beaten
at the second battle of Saintfield.² It shall be revealed ... 3
A year since they cut out the clapper⁰ of a collabor ... a
tongue
collabor ...
70 a collaborator from Maguiresbridge.⁴

VIII

That knocking's the team's near-distant knocking on wood
while my da breathes upon
the blue-yellow flame on a fetlock, on a deep-feathered
pastern⁵
of one of six black Shires⁰ ... "Because it shall be *large farm*
horses revealed by fire,"
75 Cummins's last pitchfork is laden
with thistles, "as the sparks fly upward
man is born unto trouble.⁶ For the tongue may yet be cut
from an angel." The line of cheeselips and chafers
along the bed-end. "Just wait till you come back down and I
get a
hold
so of you, young Muldoon ... We'll see what spells you'll
cast."

IX

For an instant it seems no one else might scale
such a parapet of meadow cat's-tail, lucerne, red and white
clovers,
not even the line of chafers and cheeselips
that overthrow as they undermine
85 when, light in the head, unsteady on his pegs as Anketell
Moutray,

he squints through a blindfold of clegs⁰ *horseflies*
from his grass-capped, thistle-strewn vantage point,
the point where two hay-ropes cross,

A-Specials were full-time and paid as if regular
poor treatment by Boycott they eventually sided
policemen; the B-Specials were part-time and
with the tenants.

unpaid; and the C-Specials were a reserve force,

2. Saintfield in County Down, Northern Ireland,
also unpaid.

was the site of a battle in 1798 between the British

8. Rural area in County Tyrone, the scene of
Army and a group of United Irishmen fighting for
agrarian unrest. *Clones*: town in County Mon-
independence. In 1880, Michael Davitt addressed
aghan, Northern Ireland.

an audience at Saintfield on the subject of land

9. Michael Davitt (1846-1906) helped found the
reform, calling for tenants to become proprietors.

Land League, an organization of Irish tenant farm-

3. Cf. St. Paul's First Epistle to the Corinthians

ers founded in 1879 to resist the cruelties of land-

3.13: "Every man's work shall be made manifest:

lords. Its campaign prompted the passing, in 1881,

for the day shall declare it, because it shall be

of a Land Act that provided a commission to fix fair

revealed by fire; and the fire shall try every man's

rents. Joseph Biggar (1828-1890) was the Land

work what it is.”

League’s treasurer.

4. Parish in County Fermanagh, Northern Ire-

1. In 1880, at Lough Mask in County Mayo, now land. *Collabor*: Muldoon plays on the Irish *clapart* of the Irish Republic, Captain Charles *Boycott*, meaning an open-mouthed person.

cott, acting as agent for the landowner Lord Erne,

5. Part of a horse’s foot. *Fetlock*: part of a horse’s so angered the tenant farmers that he was ostracized by all his employees (hence the modern term

6. Cf. Job 5.7: “Yet man is born unto trouble, as

boycott). English soldiers were sent in to perform the sparks fly upward.”

the household and agricultural tasks, but after

PARSLEY / 1985

**w h e r e C u m m i n s a n d h i s c r e w h a v e l e f t h i m ,
i n a s t r a w h a t w i t h a f r a y i n g b r i m ,**

**9 0 w h i l e t h e y ‘ v e m o v e d o n t o m a r k o u t t h e n
e x t h a y c o c k .**

X

**T h a t n e x t h a y c o c k a l r e a d y s u m m o n i n g i t s
e l f f r o m w i n d r o w 7 a f t e r w i n d - w e a r y w i n d
r o w**

**w h i l e y e t a n o t h e r b r i n g s i t s e l f t o m i n d i n t
h e a c r i d s t i n k o f t u r p e n t i n e . T h e r e t h e i m a
g e o f L i z z i e ,**

**H a r d y ‘ s l a s t s e r v a n t - g i r l , r e a c h e s o u t f r o m
h e r d a i s 0 p l a t f o r m 9 5 o f s a l t h a y , s t r e t c h e s o u**

**t a n u n s u n b u r n e d a r m h a l f i n b e s t o w a l , h a l
f b e s e e c h i n g l y , t h e n t u r n s a w a y t o a p p e a l t
o a l l t h a t s p i r i t - t r o o p**

**o f h a y - t r e a d e r s a s f a r a s t h e e y e c a n s e e , t h e
c o i l o n c o i l o f h a y f r o m w h i c h , i n t h e t a p e r ' s m
i l d u p r o a r , I O O t h e y f l o a t o u t a c r o s s t h e d a
r k f a c e o f t h e e a r t h , a n e a r t h w i t h o u t f o r m ,
a n d v o i d . 8**

1 9 9 8

R I T A D O V E

b. 1952

Parsley¹

1. The Cane² Fields

**T h e r e i s a p a r r o t i m i t a t i n g s p r i n g
i n t h e p a l a c e , i t s f e a t h e r s p a r s l e y g r e e n .
O u t o f t h e s w a m p t h e c a n e a p p e a r s
t o h a u n t u s , a n d w e c u t i t d o w n . E l G e n e r a l 5
s e a r c h e s f o r a w o r d ; h e i s a l l t h e w o r l d
t h e r e i s . L i k e a p a r r o t i m i t a t i n g s p r i n g ,
w e l i e d o w n s c r e a m i n g a s r a i n p u n c h e s t h r o u
g h a n d w e c o m e u p g r e e n . W e c a n n o t s p e a k a
n R —**

**o u t o f t h e s w a m p , t h e c a n e a p p e a r s
i o a n d t h e n t h e m o u n t a i n w e c a l l i n w h i s p e r
s *Katalina*.³**

**T h e c h i l d r e n g n a w t h e i r t e e t h t o a r r o w h e a
d s .**

T h e r e i s a p a r r o t i m i t a t i n g s p r i n g .

7. A row in which mown grass or hay is laid, to be
1961), dictator of the Dominican Republic,
dried by the wind before being made into heaps or

ordered 20,000 blacks killed because they could
cocks.

not pronounce the letter r in *-perejil*, the Spanish
8. Cf. Genesis 1.1—2: “In the beginning God cre-
word for parsley” [Dove’s note].

ated the heaven and the earth. And the earth was
2. Sugar cane.

without form, and void; and darkness was upon the

3. I.e., Katarina (since the people “cannot speak
face of the deep.”

an R”).

1. “On October 2, 1937, Rafael Trujillo (1891-
1986 /

R I T A D O V E

El General has found his word: *perejil*.

**Who says it, lives. He laughs, teeth shining
15 out of the swamp. The cane appears
in our dreams, lashed by wind and streaming.
And we lie down. For every drop of blood
there is a parrot imitating spring.**

Out of the swamp the cane appears.

2. The Palace

20 The word the general’s chosen is parsley.

**It is fall, when thoughts turn
to love and death; the general thinks
of his mother, how she died in the fall
and he planted her walking cane at the grave
25 and it flowered, each spring stolidly forming**

four-star blossoms. The general
pulls on his boots, he stomps to
her room in the palace, the one without
curtains, the one with a parrot
30 in a brass ring. As he paces he wonders
Who can I kill today. And for a moment
the little knot of screams
is still. The parrot, who has traveled
all the way from Australia in an ivory
35 cage, is, coy as a widow, practising
spring. Ever since the morning
his mother collapsed in the kitchen
while baking skull-shaped candies
for the Day of the Dead,⁴ the general
40 has hated sweets. He orders pastries
brought up for the bird; they arrive
dusted with sugar on a bed of lace.
The knot in his throat starts to twitch;
he sees his boots the first day in battle
45 splashed with mud and urine
as a soldier falls at his feet amazed—
how stupid he looked!—at the sound
of artillery. *I never thought it would sing*
the soldier said, and died. Now
50 the general sees the fields of sugar
cane, lashed by rain and streaming.
He sees his mother's smile, the teeth

4. All Souls' Day, November 2. An Aztec festival

cemeteries, bearing candles, flowers, and food, all for the spirits of the dead that coincides with the of which may be shaped to resemble symbols of Catholic calendar. In Latin America and the Caribbean, death, such as skulls or coffins.

bean, friends and relatives of the dead process into

D U S T I N G / 1 9 8 7

g n a w e d t o a r r o w h e a d s . H e h e a r s

t h e H a i t i a n s s i n g w i t h o u t R ' s

55 a s t h e y s w i n g t h e g r e a t m a c h e t e s :

Katalina, they sing, Katalina,

mi madre, mi amor en muerte. s God knows

h i s m o t h e r w a s n o s t u p i d w o m a n ; s h e

c o u l d r o l l a n R l i k e a q u e e n . E v e n

60 a p a r r o t c a n r o l l a n R ! I n t h e b a r e r o o m

t h e b r i g h t f e a t h e r s a r c h i n a p a r o d y

o f g r e e n e r y , a s t h e l a s t p a l e c r u m b s

d i s a p p e a r u n d e r t h e b l a c k e n e d t o n g u e . S o

m e o n e c a l l s o u t h i s n a m e i n a v o i c e

65 s o l i k e h i s m o t h e r ' s , a s t a r t l e d t e a r

s p l a s h e s t h e t i p o f h i s r i g h t b o o t .

My mother, my love in death.

T h e g e n e r a l r e m e m b e r s t h e t i n y g r e e n s p r i g s

m e n o f h i s v i l l a g e w o r e i n t h e i r c a p e s

70 t o h o n o r t h e b i r t h o f a s o n . H e w i l l

o r d e r m a n y , t h i s t i m e , t o b e k i l l e d

f o r a s i n g l e , b e a u t i f u l w o r d .

1 9 8 3

Dusting⁶

Every day a wilderness — - no
shade in sight. Beulah
patient among knicknacks,
the solarium a rage
5 of light, a grain storm
as her gray cloth brings
dark wood to life.

Under her hand scrolls
and crests gleam
io darker still. What
was his name, that
silly boy at the fair with
the rifle booth? And his kiss and
the clear bowl with one bright
15 fish, rippling
wound!

5. I.e., *mi madre, mi amor en muerte*: my mother,
“These poems tell two sides of a story and are
my love in death.

meant to be read in sequence.” The main charac-

6. Part of a book-length narrative, *Thomas and*
ters are African Americans born at the beginning
Beulah, about which Dove writes in introduction,
of the twentieth century.

1988 / RITADOVE

Not Michael —
something finer. Each dust

stroke a deep breath and
20 the canary in bloom.
W a v e r y m e m o r y : h o m e
f r o m a d a n c e , t h e f r o n t d o o r
b l o w n o p e n a n d t h e p a r l o r
i n s n o w , s h e r u s h e d
25 t h e b o w l t o t h e s t o v e , w a t c h e d
a s t h e l o c k e t o f i c e
d i s s o l v e d a n d h e
s w a m f r e e .

T h a t w a s y e a r s b e f o r e
30 F a t h e r g a v e h e r u p
w i t h h e r n a m e , y e a r s b e f o r e
h e r n a m e g r e w t o m e a n
P r o m i s e , t h e n
D e s e r t - i n - P e a c e . 7

35 L o n g b e f o r e t h e s h a d o w a n d
s u n ' s a c c o m p l i c e , t h e t r e e .
M a u r i c e .

1986

The Bistro Styx⁸

S h e w a s t h i n n e r , w i t h a m a n n e r e d g a u n t n e
s s a s s h e p a u s e d j u s t i n s i d e t h e d o u b l e
g l a s s d o o r s t o s u r v e y t h e r o o m , s i l v e r y c a p e
b i l l o w i n g d r a m a t i c a l l y b e h i n d h e r . *What's*
this, 5 I t h o u g h t , l i f t i n g a h a n d u n t i l
s h e n o d d e d a n d s t a r t e d a c r o s s t h e p a r q u e t ;
t h a t ' s w h e n I s a w s h e w a s d r e s s e d a l l i n g r a y ,
f r o m a k i t t e n i s h c a s h m e r e s k i r t a n d c o w l

**d o w n t o t h e g r a p h i t e s i g n a t u r e o f h e r s h o e
s , i o “ S o r r y I ’ m l a t e , ” s h e p a n t e d , t h o u g h
s h e w a s n ’ t , s l i d i n g i n t o t h e c h a i r , h e r c a p e**

7. *Beulah* means “married, possessed” in Hebrew.

realizing that anyone who partakes of the food of

In the Bible, it refers to the promised land.

the dead cannot be wholly restored to the living”

8. Part of a sonnet sequence in *Mother Love*, a

[Dove’s note]. Persephone spends half of each year

book-length modernization of the Greek myth of

with Hades thereafter, and her return to Earth her-

Persephone, the girl who is abducted to the under-

alds spring. In Dove’s version, she resurfaces in

world by Hades, and whose mother, Demeter, god-

modern Paris, in a restaurant named for the Styx,

dess of agriculture, is so grief-stricken she allows

the river in the underworld over which dead souls

the crops to wither. “Before returning to the sur-

were ferried.

face, the girl eats a few pomegranate seeds, not

T H E B I S T R O S T Y X / 1 9 8 9

tossed off in a shudder of brushed steel.

We kissed. Then I leaned back to peruse

my blighted child, this wary aristocratic mole.

15 “How’s business?” I asked, and hazarded

a motherly smile to keep from crying out:

Are you content to conduct your life

as a cliché and, what’s worse,

an anachronism, the brooding artist's demimonde?

20 Near the rue Princesse⁹ they had opened
a gallery *cum*^o souvenir shop which featured *with*
fuzzy off-color Monets¹ next to his acrylics, no doubt,
plus bearded African drums and the occasional miniature
gargoyle from Notre Dame² the Great Artist had
25 carved at breakfast with a pocket knife.

“Tourists love us. The Parisians, of course”—
she blushed—“are amused, though not without
a certain admiration ... ”

The Chateaubriand³

arrived on a bone-white plate, smug and absolute
30 in its fragrant crust, a black plug steaming
like the heart plucked from the chest of a worthy enemy;
one touch with her fork sent pink juices streaming.

“Admiration for what?” Wine, a bloody
Pinot Noir, brought color to her cheeks. “Why,
35 the aplomb with which we’ve managed
to support our Art”—meaning he’d convinced
her to pose nude for his appalling canvases,
faintly futuristic landscapes strewn
with car wrecks and bodies being chewed
40 by rabid cocker spaniels. “I’d like to come by
the studio,” I ventured, “and see the new stuff.”

“Yes, if you wish ... ” A delicate rebuff
before the warning: “He dresses all
in black now. Me, he drapes in blues and carmine—
45 and even though I think it’s kinda cute,

in company I tend toward more muted shades.”

She paused and had the grace

to drop her eyes. She did look ravishing,

spookily insubstantial, a lipstick ghost on tissue,

50 or as if one stood on a fifth-floor terrace

9. Street in Paris. 2. Notre Dame de Paris, the cathedral.

1. Reproductions of work by the French painter 3. Elegant
beef dish.

Claude Monet (1840-1926).

1 9 9 0 / D A N I E L H A L L

peering through a fringe of rain at Paris’

dreaming chimney pots, each sooty issue

wobbling skyward in an ecstatic oracular spiral.

“And he never thinks of food. I wish

55 I didn’t have to plead with him to eat... .” Fruit

and cheese appeared, arrayed on leaf-green dishes.

I stuck with cafe creme. “This Camembert’s

so ripe,” she joked, “it’s practically grown hair,”

mucking a golden glob complete with parsley sprig

60 onto a heel of bread. Nothing seemed to fill

her up: She swallowed, sliced into a pear,

speared each tear-shaped lavalier⁴

and popped the dripping mess into her pretty mouth.

Nowhere the bright tufted fields, weighted

65 vines and sun poured down out of the south.

“But are you happy?” Fearing, I whispered it

quickly. “What? You know, Mother”—

she bit into the starry rose of a fig—

“one really should try the fruit here.”

70 *I've lost her*, I thought, and called for the bill.

1995

DANIEL HALL

b. 1952

Love-Letter-Burning

The archivist in us shudders at such cold-blooded destruction of the word, but since we're only human, we commit our sins to the flames. *Sauve qui peut*;¹ fear makes us bold.

5 Tanka² was bolder: when the weather turned from fair to frigid, he saw his way clear to build a sacrificial fire in which a priceless temple Buddha burned.

4. Jeweled pendant necklace; here, the jewel him ... how he dared profane the sacred image of itself.

the Buddha, he replied that he was burning it to

1. Save (yourself) if you can (French); also, a obtain its *sarira* (an indestructible substance panic or stampede.

believed to reside in the ashes of holy men)” [M.

2. The Zen master Tan-hsai, or Tanka (738—824).

Conrad Hyers, *Zen and the Comic Spirit*]. Not

“It was so cold at the temple ... that he took one finding *sarira* in one wooden Buddha, Tanka proposed burning the other two as well.

for firewood. When the horrified chief monk asked

MANGOSTEENS / 1991

(The pretext? Simple: what he sought
10 was legendary Essence in the ash.
But if it shows up only in the flesh—?
He grinned and said, Let's burn the lot!)
Believers in the afterlife perform
this purifying rite. At last
15 a match is struck: it's done. The past
will shed some light, but never keep us warm
.

1990

Mangosteens

These are the absolute top of the line,
I was telling him, they even surpass
the Jiangsu peach and the McIntosh *apple*
for lusciousness and subtlety... (He frowned:
5 McIntosh. How spelling.) We were eating

our way through another kilogram
of mangosteens, for which we'd both fallen
hard. I'd read that Queen Victoria ³

(no voluptuary) once offered a reward
10 for an edible mangosteen: I don't know
how much, or whether it was ever claimed.

(But not enough, I'd guess, and no, I hope.) Each
thick skin yields to a counter-twist, splits
15 like rotted leather. Inside, snug

15 as a brain in its cranium, half a dozen
plump white segments, all but dry, part

to the tip of the tongue like lips — they *taste* like
elips, before they ‘re bitten, a saltiness was
hedutterly away; crushed, they release 20 a
lood of unfathomable sweetness,

gone in a trice. He lay

near sleep, sunk back against a slope

of heaped-up bedding, stroked slantwise by
fingers of a afternoon sun. Mcintosh, he said
again, 25 still chewing. I ‘d also been reading
The Spoils of Poynton, 4 so slowly the plot seemed to
unfold in real-time. ” Things ‘ were of course

the sum of the world, ” James tosses out

in that mock-assertive, contradiction-baf-
fling 30 way he has, quotation marks gripped
like a tweezers 3. Queen of Great Britain from 1837 to
1901.

son, who has inherited it. She attempts unsuc-

4. Novel by the British (American-born) writer

cessfully to make a match between him and an

Henry James (1843-1916). Mrs. Gereth, a

intense young woman friend. When Poynton is

recently widowed collector of beautiful things, is

destroyed by fire, the cause is not given; here, Hall

faced with giving up her house, Poynton, to her

suspects Mrs. Gereth.

1992 / SEAN O ‘ BRIEN

lest he soil his hands on *things*,

as if the only things that mattered

were that homage be paid to English widowhood,

or whether another of his young virgins

35 would ever marry. (She wouldn't, but she would,
before the novel closed, endure one shattering
embrace, a consummation.) I spent the day
sleepwalking the halls of museums, a vessel
trembling at the lip. Lunch was a packet
40 of rice cakes and an apple in a garden
famed for its beauty, and deemed beautiful
for what had been taken away. I can still hear it,
still *taste* it, his quick gasp of astonishment
caught in my own mouth. I can feel that house
45 going up with a shudder, a clockwise funnel
howling to the heavens, while the things of her world
explode or melt or shrivel to ash
in the ecstatic emptying. The old woman set the fire
herself, she must have, she had to. His letter,
50 tattooed with postmarks, was waiting for me
back at the ryokan,5 had overtaken me
at last, half in Chinese, half in hard-won
English, purer than I will ever write—

Please don't give up me in tomorrow

55 The skin was bitter. It stained the tongue.

I want with you more time

1 9 9 3 1 9 9 6

SEAN O'BRIEN

b. 1952

Cousin Coat

You are my secret coat. You're never dry.

You wear the weight and stink of black canals.

**Malodorous companion, we know why
It's taken me so long to see we're pals,
5 To learn why my acquaintance never sniff
Or send me notes to say I stink of stiff.0 *the dead*
But you don't talk, historical bespoke.0 *made-to-order*
You must be worn, be intimate as skin,
And though I never lived what you invoke,
5. Inn (Japanese).**

W E L C O M E , MAJOR POET! / 1 9 9 3

10 At birth I was already buttoned in.
Your clammy itch became my atmosphere,
An air made half of anger, half of fear.
And what you are is what I tried to shed
In libraries with Donne and Henry James.1
15 You're here to bear a message from the dead
Whose history's dishonoured with their names.
You mean the North, the poor, and troopers sent
To shoot down those who showed their discontent.2
No comfort there for comfy meliorists3
20 Grown weepy over Jarrow4 photographs.
No comfort when the poor the state enlists
Parade before their fathers' cenotaphs.0 *war memorials*
No comfort when the strikers all go back
To see which twenty thousand get the sack.
25 Be with me when they cauterize0 the facts. *deaden*
Be with me to the bottom of the page,
Insisting on what history exacts.
Be memory, be conscience, will and rage,

And keep me cold and honest, cousin coat,
30 So if I lie, I'll know you're at my throat.

1987

Welcome, Major Poet!

We have sat here in too many poetry readings
Wearing the liberal rictus⁰ and cursing our folly, *gaping mouth*

Watching the lightbulbs die and the curtains rot

And the last flies departing for Scunthorpe.⁵

5 Forgive us. We know all about you.

Autumn gives way to midwinter once more,

As states collapse, as hemlines rise, as we miss both,

And just as our teeth fall discreetly into our handkerchiefs,

Slowly the bones of our co-tormentees will emerge

io Through their skins. QED and *hie jacent*.⁶

Except we are seated bolt upright on customized

“Chairs” of the torturers’ school. Here it comes,

Any century now, the dread declaration:

And next I shall read something longer. Please

15 Rip out our nails and accept your applause!

1. English (American-born) novelist (1843—
the economic depression and high unemployment
1916). John Donne (1572-1631; see pp. 293-
of the 1930s, a famous series of “hunger marches”
322), English poet.

headed for London.

2. Possibly an allusion to the Peterloo Massacre

5. Industrial town in northeast England. *Flies*:
(1819); see note 8, p. 872.

stagecoach.

3. Those who believe the world may be made bet-

6. Here lies (Latin); first words of an epitaph.

ter by human effort.

QED: quod erat demonstrandum; as has been dem-

4. Seaport in southeast England, from which, in

onstrated (Latin).

1 9 9 4 / VIKRAM S E T H

Stretch-limo back to the Ritz and ring home:

Bore the arse off your nearest and dearest instead,

Supposing they haven't divorced you already

Or selfishly put themselves under a train.

20 Please call them, at length and at public expense.

Send flunkies for cold Stolichnaya,⁰ an ox brand of vodka

**Or an acre of coke and a thousand-quid⁰ costing a
thousand pounds hooker.**

Why not make it three, in a chariot

**Flown to your penthouse by eunuchs⁰ on leopards? harem
attendants ²⁵ Whatever you like, only spare us the details
of when**

You were struck by your kinship with Dante and Vergil.⁷

And don't feel obliged to remind us just now

What it was Robert Lowell⁸ appeared to be saying—

You'd read him the poem you mean to read us—

30 When the doors of the lift he was in and you weren't

Began closing. Just leave us the screams

You could hear as the vehicle descended: *Poor Cal.*

Up to then he'd been perfectly normal. Ah, well.

2001

VIKRAM S E T H

b. 1952

*From The Golden Gate*¹

5.1

A week ago, when I had finished

Writing the chapter you've just read

And with avidity undiminished

Was charting out the course ahead,

5 An editor—at a plush party

(Well-wined, -provisioned, speechy, hearty)

Hosted by (long live!) Thomas Cook

Where my Tibetan travel book²

Was honored—seized my arm: “Dear fellow,

io What's your next work?” “A novel ... ” “Great!

We hope that you, dear Mr. Seth—”

“... In verse,” I added. He turned yellow.

7. The greatest Roman poet (70-19 B.C.E.), as
(see “Versification,” p. 2032) and stanza form of
Dante (1265-1321) is the greatest Italian poet.

the Russian poet Alexander Pushkin's verse novel,

8. American poet (1917-1977; see pp. 1592-

Eugene Onegin (1833), which Seth read in the

1606), known to close friends as Cal (line 32).

English translation of Sir Charles Johnston (1977).

1. Strait in western California that connects San

2. Seth's *From Heaven Lake: Travels through Sin-*

Francisco Bay with the Pacific Ocean. Set in San

kiang and Tibet (1983) won the Thomas Cook

Francisco in the 1980s, this satirical romance con-
Travel Book Award for 1983.

sists of 690 sonnets written in the tetrameter verse

i

T H E G O L D E N G A T E / 1 9 9 5

“How marvelously quaint,” he said,
And subsequently cut me dead.

5 . 2

Professor, publisher, and critic

Each voiced his doubts. I felt misplaced.

A writer is a mere arthritic

Among these muscular Gods of Taste.

5 As for that sad blancmange,⁰ a poet— *opaque jelly*

The world is hard; he ought to know it.

Driveling in rhyme’s all very well;

The question is, does spittle sell?

Since staggering home in deep depression,

io My will’s grown weak. My heart is sore.

My lyre is dumb. I have therefore

Convoked a morale-boosting session

With a few kind if doubtful friends

Who’ve asked me to explain my ends.

5 . 3

How do I justify this stanza?

These feminine rhymes? My wrinkled muse?^o *source of
inspiration*

This whole passe extravaganza?

How can I (careless of time) use

5 The dusty bread molds of Onegin
In the brave bakery of Reagan?³
The loaves will surely fail to rise
Or else go stale before my eyes.
The truth is, I can't justify it.
io But as no shroud of critical terms
Can save my corpse from boring worms,
I may as well have fun and try it.
If it works, good; and if not, well,
A theory won't postpone its knell.

5 . 4

Why, asks a friend, attempt tetrameter?
Because it once was noble, yet
Capers before the proud pentameter,
Tyrant of English. I regret
5 To see this marvelous swift meter
Demean its heritage, and peter
Into mere Hudibrastic tricks,⁴
Unapostolic⁵ knacks and knicks.

3. Ronald Reagan (1911-2004), governor of Cal- satirical
poem, *Hudibras* (1663).

ifornia 1967-75, U.S. president 1981-89. 5. Unorthodox
(literally, in a style of which 4. In the style of Samuel Butler's
mock-heroic *Christ's twelve apostles* would have
disapproved).

1 9 9 6 / G A R Y S O T O

B u t w h y take all this quite so badly?
10 I w o u l d not, had I world and time⁶
To wait for reason, rhythm, rhyme

To reassert themselves, but sadly
The time is not remote when I
Will not be here to wait. That's why.

5.5

Reader, enough of this apology;
But spare me if I think it best,
Before I tether my monology, *0 monologue*
To stake a stanza to suggest

5 You spend some unfilled day of leisure
By that original spring of pleasure:

Sweet-watered, fluent, clear, light, blithe
(This homage merely pays a tithe *0 small* part
Of what in joy and inspiration

io It gave me once and does not cease
To give me) — Pushkin's masterpiece
In Johnston's luminous translation:

Eugene Onegin—like champagne

Its effervescence stirs my brain.

1986

GARY SOTO

b. 1952

The Soup

The lights off, the clock glowing 2:10,

And Molina is at the table drawing what he thinks is
soup And its carrots rising through a gray broth.

He adds meat and peppers it with pencil markings.

5 The onion has gathered the peas in its smile.

The surface is blurred with the cold oils squeezed
from a lime.

**H e adds h o m i n y and potato that bob
In a current of pork fat, f r o m o n e rim to t h e other,
C r a s h i n g into the celery that has c a n o e d s u c h a
long way.**

io Spoon handle that is a plank an ant climbs.

Saucer that is the slipped disk of a longhorn.

Napkin that is shredded into a cupful of snow.

1 9 7 8

6. Cf. Andrew Marvell, "To His Coy Mistress," line 1 (p. 478).

N O T K N O W I N G / 1 9 9 7

Not Knowing

B y t h e n , b y t h e t i m e m y b r o t h e r

W a s g e t t i n g m a r r i e d , w e e k s b e f o r e t h e o l d

A p a r t m e n t w a s p u l l e d d o w n ,

T h e e v e n i n g s w e r e w a r m a n d t h e s o u n d s o f

**5 F r e i g h t t r a i n s a b s o r b e d b y t h r e e o l e a n d e r s , 0
*evergreen shrubs***

W h i p p e d b y w i n d a n d i r o n c l a n g i n g .

By then, by the time I was nineteen
And the crickets were hauling their armor
Into the weeds and dusty bushes,
10 I was thinking that I would have to read more
e.

I had to put together the meaning of our neighbor
Fighting in bed, then loving in bed from
3:30 to 4:00.

I would have to read more. My other neighbor

Had painted his porch light blue, and the first
15 Black family on our college-poor street

Were so friendly that they disturbed my views
About trust and mistrust. And I was stymied

When my brother and I tried

To remove the refrigerator

20 Down a narrow flight of steps.

Now it was stuck, lodged between

The walls, an absurd physics for the wrecking
crew To solve. The beast of machinery would
start up And the old apartment would come down
w n

25 The weekend my brother would pin

A carnation to his lapel, the ruffle of petal

Perfuming the air as he walked down the
aisle.

By then, by the time my brother was ready

And the refrigerator was leaking

30 Its gray liquids and gases,

I would sit my sorrow on a lawn,

Flattening the grass with the heel of my palm

.

The grass springing back from this kind of pressure,
Another physics I couldn't figure on paper

35 Or a blackboard of low math. The spin

Of light and wind

And the residue

Of an exhausted star told me nothing.

After my brother was gone

40 I sat with a book on the lawn,

The evening blood-red in the west

And my palm pressing the balance of solitary
grass, The world of unknowable forces stirring

Every live and dead tree.

1995

1998

BRADLEITHAUSER

b. 1953

The Buried Graves

From the pier, at dusk, the dim

Billowing arms of kelp

Seem the tops of trees, as though

Not long ago

5 A summer woods stood here, before a dam

Was built, a valley flooded.

Such a forest would release

Its color only slowly,

And the leafy branches sway, as they'd

io More lightly swayed
Under a less distant sun and far less
Even weather. Now, deeper down,
Those glimmers of coral might
Be the lots of some hard-luck
15 Town, or — depositing on the dead
A second bed —
A submerged cemetery. ... To this mute,
Envisioned, birdless wood would
Come a kind of autumn, at a time
20 Sea-season, with foliage tumbling
Through a weighty, trancelike fall;
And come, as well,
Soon in the emptying fullness of time,
A mild but an endless winter.

1985

In Minako Wada's House

In old Minako Wada's house
Everything has its place,
And mostly out of sight:
Bedding folded away
5 All day, brought down
From the shelf at night,
Tea things underneath
Low tea table and tablecloth —
And sliding screen doors,

io Landscape-painted, that hide

OLDBACHELOR BROTHER / 1999

Her clothes inside a wash
Of mountains. Here, the floors
Are a clean-fitting mosaic,
Mats of a texture like
15 A broom's; and in a niche
In the tea room wall
Is a shrine to all of her
Ancestors, before which
She sets each day
20 A doll-sized cup of tea,
A doll-sized bowl of rice.
She keeps a glass jar
Of crickets that are fed fish
Shavings, a eggplant slice,
25 And whose hushed chorus,
Like the drowsy toss
Of a baby's rattle, moves in
On so tranquil a song
It's soon no longer heard.
30 The walls are thin
In Minakowada's little house,
Open to every lifting voice
On the street — by day, the cries
Of the children, at night
35 Those excited, sweet,
Reiterated goodbyes
Of men full of beer who now
Must hurry home. Just to

Wake in the night inside this nest,
40 Late, the street asleep (day done,
Day not yet begun), is what
Perhaps she loves best.

1985

Old Bachelor Brother

Here from his prominent but thankfully
uncentral position at the head of the church —

a flanking member of the groom's large party —

he stands and waits to watch the women march
5 up the wide aisle, just the way they did
at last night's long and leaden-joked rehearsal.

2000 / GJERTRUDSCHNACKENBERG

Only this time, it's all changed. There's snow
a crowd, of course, and walls of flit stained glass,
and Purcell

ringing from the rented organist,

10 and yet the major difference, the one

that hits his throat as a sort of smoky thirst,

is how, so far away, the church's main

doors are flung back, uncovering a square

of sun that streams into the narthex, 0 so that
t covered walkway 15 the women whom materialize
e there

do so in blinding silhouette,

and these are not the women he has hallowed

and kissed, and who have bored, ignored, or
r teased him, but girls — whose high, garla

**nded hair goes haloed 20 by the noon-light...
The years have dropped from them.**

**One by one they 'rebodied forth, edged with
h flame, as new as flame, destined to part the
sea**

**offaces one each side, and approaching him
in all their passionate anonymity.**

1990

GJERTRUDSCHNACKENBERG

b. 1953

Darwin1 in 1881

**Sleepless as Prospero back in his bedroom
In Milan, with all his miracles**

Reduced to sailors' tales, 2

He sits up in the dark. The islands loom.

5 His seasickness upwells,

Silence creeps by in memory as it crept

**By him on water, 3 while the sailors slept, F
rom broken eggs and vacant tortoise shells
s.**

His voyage around the cape of middle age

**io Comes, with a feat of insight, to a close, Th
esameway Prospero's**

Ended before he left the stage

**To be led home across the blue-white sea,
When he had spoken of the clouds and globe
, 15 Breaking his wand, and taking off his robe:
4**

Knowledge increases unreality.

1. Henry Purcell (ca. 1659-1695), English com-

Prospero is the usurped and exiled duke of Milan;

poser.

at the play's end, he is restored to his dukedom.

1. The English naturalist Charles Darwin (1809-1882), who developed a theory of evolution. Cf. *The Tempest* 1.2.395: "This music crept by me upon the waters."

2. In Shakespeare's *The Tempest*, the magician

4. Allusion to Prospero's words: "the great globe

D A R W I N I N 1 8 8 1 / 2 0 0 1

He quickly dresses.

Form wavers like his shadow on the stair

As he descends, in need of air

20 To cure his dizziness,

Down past the ship-sunk emptiness

Of grownup children's rooms and hallways where

The family portraits stare,

All haunted by each other's likenesses.

25 Outside, the orchard and a piece of moon

Are islands, he an island as he walks,

Brushing against weed stalks.

By hook and plume

The seeds gathering on his trouser legs

30 Are archipelagoes, like nests he sees

Shadowed in branching, ramifying trees,

Each with unique expressions in its eggs.

Different islands conjure

Different beings; different beings call

35 From different isles. And after all

His scrutiny of Nature
All he can see
Is how it will grow small, fade, disappear,
A coastline fading from a traveler
40 Aboard a survey ship. Slowly,
As coasts depart,
Nature had left behind a naturalist
Bound for a place where species don't exist,
Where no emergence has a counterpart.
45 He's heard from friends
About the other night, the banquet hall
Ringing with bravos—like a curtain call,
He thinks, when the performance ends,
Failing to summon from the wings
50 An actor who had lost his taste for verse,
Having beheld, in larger theaters,
Much greater banquet vanishings
Without the quaint device and thunderclap
Required in Act 3.s
55 He wrote, Let your indulgence set me free,⁶
To the Academy, and took a nap
Beneath a *London Daily* tent,
Then pattered on his hothouse walk
Watching his orchids beautifully stalk
60 Their unreturning paths, where each descendant
Is the last—
Their inner staircases
itself, / Yea, all which it inherit, shall dissolve; /

makes it disappear with thunder and (as in the
And, like this insubstantial pageant faded, / Leave
stage direction) “a quaint device” (3.3.52).

not a rack behind” (4.1.153-55) and “Rut this

6. Prospero’s final speech, the last line of the play
rough magic / I here abjure... . I’ll break my staff”
(Epilogue 20). *Academy*: The Royal Society for the
(5.1.50-54).

Improving of Natural Knowledge.

5. Prospero conjures up a banquet and then

2002 / G J E R T R U D S C H N A C K E N B E R G

H a u n t e d b y v a n i s h e d i n s e c t f a c e s

S o t i n y , s o i n t o l e r a b l y v a s t .

65 A n d , w h i l e t h e y g a v e h i s p r o x y t h e a w a r d ,

H e d i n e d i n D o w n e 7 a n d s t a y e d u p r a t h e r l a t e

F o r b a c k g a m m o n w i t h h i s b e l o v e d m a t e ,

W h o r e a d s h i s b o o k s a n d i s , q u i t e f r a n k l y , b o r e d .

N o w , d o n e w i t h b e e t l e j a w s a n d b e a k s o f
g u l l s 70 A n d b i v a l v e h i n g e s , n o w , u t t e r l y d o n e ,

O n e m i r a c l e r e m a i n s , a n d o n l y o n e .

A n o c e a n s w e l l o f s i c k n e s s r u s h e s , p u l l s , H
e l e a n s a g a i n s t t h e f e n c e

A n d l i g h t s a c i g a r e t t e a n d d e e p l y d r a w s ,

75 D o n e w i t h f i x e d l a w s ,

D o n e w i t h e x p e r i m e n t s

W i t h i n h i s g r e e n h o u s e h e a v e n w h e r e

H i s o f f s p r i n g , F r a n k , f o r h a l f t h e a f t e r n o o n

P l a y e d , l i k e a n a w k w a r d a n g e l , h i s b a s s o o n

s o I n t o t h e h u m i d a i r

So he could tell
If sound would make a Venus's-flytrap close.
And, done for good with scientific prose,
That raging hell
85 Of tortured grammars writing on their stakes,
He'd turned to his memoirs, chuckling to
write About his boyhood in an upright
Home: a boy preferring gartersnakes
To schoolwork, a lazy, strutting liar
90 Who quite provoked her aggravated look,
Shushed in the drawing room behind her
book, His bossy sister itching with desire
To tattletale — yes, that was good.
But even then, much like the conjurer
95 Grown cranky with impatience to abjure
All his gigantic works and livelihood
In order to immerse
Himself in tales where he could be the man
In Once upon a time there was a man,
100 He'd quite by chance beheld the universe:
A disregarded game of chess
Between two love-dazed heirs
Who fiddle with the tiny pairs
Of statues in their hands, 8 while numberless
5 Abstract unseen
Combinations on the silent board remain
Unplayed forever when they leave the game
To turn, themselves, into a king and queen.
Now, like the coming day,

n o I n h a l e d s m o k e i l l u m i n a t e s h i s n e r v e s .

7. Darwin's home.

8. That is, playing chess, as in *The Tempest* 5.1.173 ff.

S U P E R N A T U R A L L O V E / 2 0 0 3

He turns, taking the sandwalk as it curves

Back to the yard, the house, the entrance way

Where, not to waken her,

He softly shuts the door,

115 And leans against it for a spell before

He climbs the stairs, holding the banister,

Up to their room: there

Emma sleeps, moored

In illusion, blown past the storm he conjured

120 With his book,⁹ into a harbor

Where it all comes clear,

Where island beings leap from shape to shape

As to escape

Their terrifying turns to disappear.

125 He lies down on the quilt,

He lies down like a fabulous-headed

Fossil in a vanished riverbed,

In ocean drifts, in canyon floors, in silt,

In lime, in deepening blue ice,

130 In cliffs obscured as clouds gather and float;

He lies down in his boots and overcoat,

And shuts his eyes.

1 9 8 2

Supernatural Love

**My father at the dictionary-stand
Touches the page to fully understand
The lamplit answer, tilting in his hand
His slowly scanning magnifying lens,
5 A blurry, glistening circle he suspends
Above the word "Carnation." Then he bends
So near his eyes are magnified and blurred,
One finger on the miniature word,
As if he touched a single key and heard
io A distant, plucked, infinitesimal string,
"The obligation due to every thing
That's smaller than the universe." I bring
My sewing needle close enough that I
Can watch my father through the needle's eye,
15 As through a lens ground for a butterfly**

9. Prospero's book of magic helped him conjure a tempest. Darwin's book *On the Origin of Species by Means of Natural Selection* (1859) was equally powerful, culturally and scientifically.

2 0 0 4 / G J E R T R U D S C H N A C K E N B E R G

Who peers down flower-hallways toward a room
Shadowed and fathomed as this study's gloom
Where, as a scholar bends above a tomb
To read what's buried there, he bends to pore
20 Over the Latin blossom. I am four,
I spill my pins and needles on the floor
Trying to stitch "Beloved" X by X.
My dangerous, bright needle's point connects
Myself illiterate to this perfect text

25 I cannot read. My father puzzles why
It is my habit to identify
Carnations as “Christ’s flowers,” knowing I
Can give no explanation but “Because.”
Word-roots blossom in speechless messages
30 The way the thread behind my sampler does
Where following each X I awkward move
My needle through the word whose root is love.
He reads, “A pink variety of Clove,
Carnatio, the Latin, meaning flesh.”
35 As if the bud’s essential oils brush
Christ’s fragrance through the room, the iron-fresh
Odor carnations have floats up to me,
A drifted, secret, bitter ecstasy,
The stems squeak in my scissors, *Child, it’s me*,
40 He turns the page to “Clove” and reads aloud:
“The clove, a spice, dried from a flower-bud.”
Then twice, as if he hasn’t understood,
He reads, “From French, for *clou*, meaning a nail.”
He gazes, motionless. “Meaning a nail.”
45 The incarnation blossoms, flesh and nail,
I twist my threads like stems into a knot
And smooth “Beloved,” but my needle caught
Within the threads, *Thy blood so dearly bought*,
The needle strikes my finger to the bone.
50 I lift my hand, it is myself I’ve sewn,
The flesh laid bare, the threads of blood my own,
I lift my hand in startled agony

And call upon his name, “Daddy daddy”—

My father’s hand touches the injury

THE BUTCHER’S WIFE / 2005

55 As lightly as he touched the page before,

Where incarnation bloomed from roots that bore

The flowers I called Christ’s when I was four.

1985

LOUISE ERDRICH

b. 1954

The Butcher’s Wife

I

Once, my braids swung heavy as ropes.

Men feared them like the gallows.

Night fell

When I combed them out.

5 Noon could see me in the dark.

Then I stood still

Too long and the braids took root.

I wept, so helpless.

The braids tapped deep and flourished.

io A man came by with an ox on his shoulders.

He yoked it to my apron

And pulled me from the ground.

**From that time on I wound the braids around
my head So that my arms would be free to tend
him.**

15 He c o u l d l i f t a g r o w n m a n b y t h e b e l t w i t h h i s t
e e t h .

I n a c o n t e s t , h e ' d p r e s s a w h o l e h o g , a s i d e o f b e e
f .

H e l o v e d h i s h i g h b a l l s , h i s h e r r i n g , a n d t h e a t t e n t i o
n s o f w o m e n .

H e d i e d p o u n d i n g h i s c h e s t w i t h n o l a s t w o r d
f o r a n y o n e .

T h e g i n v e s s e l s i n h i s f a c e b r o k e a n d d a r k e n e d
. I t r a c e d t h e m 20 F a r f r o m t h a t r o o m i n t o B r e m e
n o n t h e S e a .¹

T h e n a r r o w s t r e e t s t w i s t e d d o w n t o t h e p i e r s .

A n d f a r o f f , i n t h e b l a c k , r o c k i n g w a t e r , t h e l i g h t s
o f t r a w l e r s B e c k o n e d , l i k e t h e h e a r t ' s u n c e r t a i n
s i g n a l s ,

F a i n t , a n d f i n a l .

1984

1. Germany's oldest seaport, today the second largest after
Hamburg.

2006 / L O U I S E E R D R I C H

I Was Sleeping Where the Black Oaks Move

W e w a t c h e d f r o m t h e h o u s e

a s t h e r i v e r g r e w , h e l p l e s s

a n d t e r r i b l e i n i t s u n f a m i l i a r b o d y .

W r e s t l i n g e v e r y t h i n g i n t o i t ,

5 t h e w a t e r w r a p p e d a r o u n d t r e e s

u n t i l t h e i r l i f e - h o l d w a s b r o k e n .

T h e y w e n t d o w n , o n e b y o n e ,

a n d t h e r i v e r d r a g g e d o f f t h e i r c o v e r i n g .

N e s t s o f t h e h e r o n s , r o o t s w a s h e d t o b o n e s ,

10 s n a g s o f s o a k e d b a r k o n t h e s h o r e l i n e :

a whole forest pulled through the teeth
of the spillway. Trees surfacing
singly, where the river poured off
into arteries for fields below the reservation.
15 When at last it was over, the long removal,
they had all become the same dry wood.
We walked among them, the branches
whitening in the raw sun.

Above us drifted herons,
20 alone, hoarse-voiced, broken,
settling their beaks among the hollows.
Grandpa said, *These are the ghosts of the tree people,*
moving above us, unable to take their rest.

Sometimes now, we dream our way back to
the heron dance.

25 Their long wings are bending the air
into circles through which they fall.

They rise again in shifting wheels.

How long must we live in the broken figures
their necks make, narrowing the sky.

1984

Birth

When they were wild

When they were not yet human

When they could have been anything,

I was on the other side ready with milk to lure them,
5 And their father, too, each name a net in his hands.

1989

2007

CAROLANNDUFFY

b. 1955

Warming Her Pearls

Next to my own skin, her pearls. My mistress bids me wear them, warm them, until evening when I'll brush her hair. At six, I place them

round her cool, white throat. All day I think of her, resting in the Yellow Room, contemplating silk or taffeta, which gown tonight? She fans herself whilst I work willingly, my slow heat entering each pearl. Slack on my neck, her rope.

She's beautiful. I dream about her in my attic bed; picture her dancing with tall men, puzzled by my faint, persistent scent beneath her French perfume, her milkstones.

I dust her shoulders with a rabbit's foot, watch the soft blush seep through her skin like an indolent sigh. In her looking-glass my red lips part as though I want to speak.

Full moon. Her carriage brings her home. I see her every movement in my head... Undressing, taking off her jewels, her slim hand reaching for the case, slipping naked into bed, the way she always does... And I lie here awake,

knowing the pearls are cooling even now in the room where my mistress sleeps. All night I feel their absence and I burn.

1993

Prayer

**S o m e d a y s , a l t h o u g h w e c a n n o t p r a y , a p r a y e
r u t t e r s i t s e l f . S o , a w o m a n w i l l l i f t**

**h e r h e a d f r o m t h e s i e v e o f h e r h a n d s a n d s t a
r e a t t h e m i n i m s o s u n g b y a t r e e , a s u d d e n g i f t .**

short notes **5 S o m e n i g h t s , a l t h o u g h w e a r e f a i t
h l e s s , t h e t r u t h e n t e r s o u r h e a r t s , t h a t s m
a l l f a m i l i a r p a i n ; t h e n a m a n w i l l s t a n d s t o
c k - s t i l l , h e a r i n g h i s y o u t h i n t h e d i s t a n t L
a t i n c h a n t i n g o f a t r a i n .**

2 0 0 8 / C A R O L A N N D U F F Y

Pray for us now. Grade I piano scales¹

10 console the lodger looking out across

a Midlands² town. Then dusk, and someone calls

a child's name as though they named their loss.

Darkness outside. Inside, the radio's prayer—

Rockall. Malin. Dogger. Finisterre.³

1 9 9 3

Anne Hathaway⁴

” I t e m I g y v e u n t o m y w i e f m y s e c o n d b e s t b e d . . .
”

(f r o m S h a k e s p e a r e ' s w i l l)

The bed we loved in was a spinning world

of forests, castles, torchlight, clifftops, seas

where he would dive for pearls. My lover's words

were shooting stars which fell to earth as kisses

5 on these lips; my body now a softer rhyme

to his, now echo, assonance; his touch

a verb dancing in the centre of a noun.

Some nights, I dreamed he'd written me, the bed

a page beneath his writer's hands. Romance
io and drama played by touch, by scent, by taste.
In the other bed, the best, our guests dozed on,
dribbling their prose. My living laughing love—
I hold him in the casket of my widow's head
as he held me upon that next best bed.

1 9 9 9

Little Red-Cap

At childhood's end, the houses petered out
into playing fields, the factory, allotments⁰ *vegetable plots*
kept, like mistresses, by kneeling married men,
the silent railway line, the hermit's caravan,
5 till you came at last to the edge of the woods.
It was there that I first clapped eyes on the wolf.
He stood in a clearing, reading his verse out loud
in his wolfy drawl, a paperback in his hairy paw,
red wine staining his bearded jaw. What big ears
io he had! What big eyes he had! What teeth!
In the interval, I made quite sure he spotted me,
sweet sixteen, never been, babe, waif, and bought me a drink,

1. Musical exercises for beginners.

casts.

2. Central counties in England.

4. William Shakespeare's wife (1557?-1623).

3. Coastal regions named in British weather fore-

**INADUPLXNEARTHESANANDREASF
AULT / 2009**

my first. You might ask why. Here's why. Poetry.

The wolf, I knew, would lead me deep into the woods,
15 away from home, to a dark tangled thorny place
lit by the eyes of owls. I crawled in his wake,
my stockings ripped to shreds, scraps of red from my blazer
snagged on twig and branch, murder clues. I lost both shoes
but got there, wolf's lair, better beware. Lesson one that night,
20 breath of the wolf in my ear, was the love poem.

I clung till dawn to his thrashing fur, for
what little girl doesn't dearly love a wolf?5

Then I slid from between his heavy matted paws
and went in search of a living bird—white dove—
25 which flew, straight, from my hands to his open mouth.

One bite, dead. How nice, breakfast in bed, he said,
licking his chops. As soon as he slept, I crept to the back
of the lair, where a whole wall was crimson, gold, aglow with
books.

Words, words were truly alive on the tongue, in the head,
30 warm, beating, frantic, winged; music and blood.

But then I was young—and it took ten years
in the woods to tell that a mushroom
stoppers the mouth of a buried corpse, that birds
are the uttered thought of trees, that a greying wolf
35 howls the same old song at the moon, year in, year out,
season after season, same rhyme, same reason. I took an axe
to a willow to see how it wept. I took an axe to a salmon
to see how it leapt. I took an axe to the wolf
as he slept, one chop, scrotum to throat, and saw
40 the glistening, virgin white of my grandmother's bones.

I filled his old belly with stones. I stitched him up.
Out of the forest I come with my flowers, singing, all alone.

1999

DIONISIOD . MARTINEZ

b. 1956

In a Duplex Near the San Andreas Fault¹

When she tells him about the lump in her breast,
he kisses her on the shoulder for the first time—a natural
reflex twenty-some years in the making. Suddenly,

5. Cf. Sylvia Plath, “Daddy,” line 48 (p. 1841).

1. An active strike-slip fault extending from San Francisco to
southern California.

2010 / DIONISIOD . MARTINEZ

their entire vocabulary revolves around *benign*

5 and *malignant*—words reserved

for these occasions—though they will say

very little now, then nothing for a long time. His hands

are just as pale and nearly as fragile as rice paper,

but she’s not familiar with rice paper

10 and what she wants most desperately now

is a point of reference. Calla lilies bloom

like some glorious, abandoned music out on the lawn.

She takes one of his hands and thinks

of the spathe, which has the responsibility

15 of being leaf and petal, content and shape: without it

there would be no calla lily to remember,

nothing to see when she closes

her eyes and places his hand on her breast.

1 9 9 5

From What the Men Talk About When
the Women Leave the Room

*Stieglitz*²

The room itself. The women. The absence of women
in the room. What the absence of women does
to a room. The sound of all those women getting
up and leaving; all of them at once, like wild
5 birds or hunger. How the world can be conquered
if only ... Just don't tell the women.

What the absence of women will do to men
eventually. Fears. Men talk about fears, bad
dreams, women leaving, the room swelling with
io the absence of women. Bad dreams have a way
of walking in the room when the women leave.
Each dream is an afterimage of a woman leaving.

1 9 9 5

2. Alfred Stieglitz (1864—1946), American photographer;
husband of the artist Georgia O'Keeffe.

L I - Y O U N G L E E

b. 1957

Persimmons

In sixth grade Mrs. Walker
slapped the back of my head
and made me stand in the corner
for not knowing the difference
between *persimmon* and *precision*.

How to choose

persimmons. This is precision.
Ripe ones are soft and brown-spotted.
Sniff the bottoms. The sweet one
will be fragrant. How to eat:
put the knife away, lay down newspaper.
Peel the skin tenderly, not to tear the meat.
Chew the skin, suck it,
and swallow. Now, eat
the meat of the fruit,
so sweet,
all of it, to the heart.

Donna undresses, her stomach is white.

In the yard, dewy and shivering
with crickets, we lie naked,
face-up, face-down.

I teach her Chinese.

Crickets: *chiu chiu*. Dew: I've forgotten.

Naked: I've forgotten.

Ni, wo: you and me.

I part her legs,
remember to tell her
she is beautiful as the moon.

Other words

that got me into trouble were
fight and *fright*, *wren* and *yarn*.

Fight was what I did when I was frightened,
fright was what I felt when I was fighting.

Wrens are small, plain birds,

yarn is what one knits with.
Wrens are soft as yarn.
My mother made birds out of yarn.
I loved to watch her tie the stuff;
a bird, a rabbit, a wee man.
Mrs. Walker brought a persimmon to class
and cut it up
so everyone could taste

2012 / LI - YOUNG LEE

a *Chinese apple*. Knowing
it wasn't ripe or sweet, I didn't eat
45 but watched the other faces.
My mother said every persimmon has a sun
inside, something golden, glowing,
warm as my face.
Once, in the cellar, I found two wrapped in newspaper,
50 forgotten and not yet ripe.
I took them and set both on my bedroom windowsill,
where each morning a cardinal
sang, *The sun, the sun*.
Finally understanding
55 he was going blind,
my father sat up all one night
waiting for a song, a ghost.
I gave him the persimmons,
swelled, heavy as sadness,
60 and sweet as love.
This year, in the muddy lighting

of my parents' cellar, I rummage, looking
for something I lost.

My father sits on the tired, wooden stairs,
65 black cane between his knees,
hand over hand, gripping the handle.

He's so happy that I've come home.

I ask how his eyes are, a stupid question.

All gone, he answers.

70 Under some blankets, I find a box.

Inside the box I find three scrolls.

I sit beside him and untie

three paintings by my father:

Hibiscus leaf and a white flower.

75 Two cats preening.

Two persimmons, so full they want to drop from the cloth.

He raises both hands to touch the cloth,
asks, *Which is this?*

This is persimmons, Father.

so *Oh, the feel of the wolftail on the silk,*

the strength, the tense

precision in the wrist.

I painted them hundreds of times

eyes closed. These I painted blind.

85 *Some things never leave a person:*

scent of the hair of one you love,

THE ANTHILL / 2013

the texture of persimmons,

in your palm, the ripe weight.

1 9 8 6

Out of Hiding

Someone said my name in the garden,
while I grew smaller
in the spreading shadow of the peonies,
grew larger by my absence to another,
5 grew older among the ants, ancient
under the opening heads of the flowers,
new to myself, and stranger.

When I heard my name again, it sounded far,
like the name of the child next door,
io or a favorite cousin visiting for the summer,
while the quiet seemed my true name,
a near and inaudible singing
born of hidden ground.

Quiet to quiet, I called back.

15 And the birds declared my whereabouts all morning.

2001

C Y N T H I A Z A R I N

b. 1959

The Ant Hill

Sand pyramid, size of a child, each September
it was moved thirty feet back from the veranda's
longest shadow, which stopped in its daily
violet slope near the withering yew. Moved gently,
with a wide flat shovel. From the kitchen,
the wrecked hill was a slag heap, its mussel
color germinating in rain to brown, to velvet, to mica,

so that after a time a reflection shone from it
and scattered, and each June, Mother said aloud

2014 / CYNTHIA ZARIN

10 that it seemed the house moved closer to the hill,
even though the hill was long moved back.

For the little girls who watched, who heard,
each tremble-leg was a signal in their own patois,
a wave good-bye, the whole a black bead curtain
15 like the one at Mrs. Hennessey's, where sometimes,
of an afternoon, they were left—her doorway with its

there, not there, its speechless partings, the
dark italic hedge too small to read. A decade

of exile: of school, of being sent to bed, of being

20 told to put the book down, as every year the ants
were wrenched from their own tenacious fondness

for the veranda pilings, for the black blossoms of old tires
that clung to them like clematis until—a moving

picture of transit—the ants crossed over again

25 for their mysterious attendance on the flagstones,

the hill again grown pointed, night-colored, earth

turned to mirror-water, a satellite by

the fence post that was flattened, excavated, removed.

And then the white house was a flipped coin,

30 by and by deserted, its face showing not

the sun but the moon, and the girls who drew with a stick

under the yew and learned their letters now

stood under its cracked limbs to bicker, to

divide the world between them to say what Mother

35 said, to speak too subtly, about the ant hill now
taller than the pilings, the veranda
turned violet as its shadow.

1 9 9 3

Song

My heart, my dove, my snail, my sail, my
milktooth, shadow, sparrow, fingernail,
flower-cat and blossom-hedge, mandrake
root now put to bed, moonshell, sea-swell,
5 manatee, emerald shining back at me,
nutmeg, quince, tea leaf and bone, zither,

WHAT 'S GOING ON / 2 0 1 5

cymbal, xylophone; paper, scissors, then
there's stone—Who doesn't come through the door
to get home?

1 9 9 3

LAVINIA GREENLAW

b. 1962

Skin Full

I laugh till my jaw unhinges,
we hold me in with ribboning fingers.
Moderation in moderation. Who said that?
It makes extraordinary sense to me.
5 You say that life is a three-legged race.
They show us the door and we have some difficulty,
bound like that from thigh to ankle.
The street is a blanket. We will sleep
with you on your front, me on your back,

io The night will be endless and we will be endless,
layer on layer, infinitely warm.

I sing as we lie shoulder to shoulder
and tell you there is no such thing as anything
that is not a small circle. Now it is morning.

15 Can the bones we broke out of be mended?
My eyes ... The sun picks over their embers.

1 9 9 7

What's Going On

The demolition crew are petulant.
Swinging the ball, they could lay bets and lose.
We cannot help but stand in the street,
smile up at the light where half the roof
5 has fallen away and the sky comes at us
from all three sides through a couple of windows,
surprisingly large and somehow intact.

1 9 9 7

2 0 1 6 / G L Y N M A X W E L L

A World Where News Travelled Slowly
It could take from Monday to Thursday
and three horses. The ink was unstable,
the characters0 cramped, the paper tore where it creased.
letters

Stained with the leather and sweat of its journey,
5 the envelope absorbed each climatic shift,
as well as the salt and grease of the rider
who handed it over with a four-day chance
that by now things were different and while the head

had to listen, the heart could wait.

10 Semaphore¹ was invented at a time of revolution;
the judgement of swing in a vertical arm.

News travelled letter by letter, along a chain of towers,
each built within telescopic distance of the next.

The clattering mechanics of the six-shutter telegraph
is still took three men with all their variables
added to those of light and weather,
to read, record and pass the message on.

Now words are faster, smaller, harder

... we're almost talking in one another's arms.

20 Coded and squeezed, what chance has my voice
to reach your voice unaltered and to leave no trace?

Nets tighten across the sky and the sea bed.

When London made contact with New York,
there were such fireworks, City Hall caught light.

25 It could have burned to the ground.

1 9 9 7

GLYN M A X W E L L

b. 1962

From Letters to Edward Thomas¹

for Derek Walcott²

*

Poem to Mr Thomas and Mr Frost,

Created by a dandelion you passed

As you in talk about a stanza crossed

1. Signaling apparatus, consisting of an upright

pp. 1253—56), whose friendship with the Ameri-

post with a moveable arm or arms with lanterns
can poet Robert Frost (1874-1963; see pp. 1227-
attached, for use (especially on railways) by day or
45) was of central importance to the lives and work
night.

of both men.

1. (Philip) Edward Thomas (1878-1917; see

2. West Indian poet (b. 1930; see pp. 1820-29).

LETTERSTO EDWARD THOMAS / 2017

Half Herefordshire,³ till you sat at last

5 In silence. I'm the dandelion that saw

Two aspens shake and shed in a quick wind,

And tried to loose her own leaves to the floor

Like they did and did manage in the end,

When they were both long gone in the great storm.⁴

10 One to the west and one to the east, away

Towards the blood-commander in the dawn

And all his soldiers, pink becoming grey.

And you won't see this, if you live as long

As what you sent me: "As the team's head-brass"⁵

15 It starts but isn't titled. If I'm wrong

And your great hands one day are holding these

Dandelion hairs,

The storm would not have come, the trees have kept

Their ground, and through the hearts of all the shires

20 Would Mr Thomas and Mr Frost have stepped

And war like a rough sky

Been overlooked in talk, and blown on by.

Poem for Mr Edward Eastaway,⁶

Who lives here care of me, so no one knows

25 His name is Rumpelstiltskin⁷ and by day

He rips your verse to pieces in great prose.

By night he turns his prose to poetry

Because a poet told him to who saw

A mighty fine recruit for poverty

30 And wrote the line that opened his front door.

They have rejected Edward Eastaway

Again: the letter came this afternoon.

One knows precisely what a fool will say

Somehow. We've many stars to the one moon

35 In our night sky, but all that makes a face

Of that recurring rock is the one sun

It likes, without which it must find its place

To hide behind, or make believe it's gone.

Edward Eastaway,

40 Whose name that isn't and whose time it ain't,

Who's living here or was just yesterday,

Or in Wales, Wiltshire, Oxfordshire or Kent,⁸

The rumour's that you crossed

The Channel. Stanza-break, sighs Mr Frost.

3. English county on the Welsh border.

7. Malevolent dwarf in traditional fairy tale col-

4. World War I, also known as the Great War

lected and transcribed from oral sources by the

(1914-18).

brothers Jacob and Wilhelm Grimm.

5. The opening words of one of Thomas's poems

8. The latter three are English counties southeast

(see p. 1255).

of Herefordshire—stepping-stones toward the

6. Thomas published his first poems under the

English channel (line 44).

pseudonym Edward Eastaway.

2018 / GLYN MAXWELL

D e a r F a t h e r T h o m a s , e v e r y C h r i s t m a s E v e

**G o o d c h i l d r e n o f t h e w o r l d a r e q u i t e a s s h y
A s I a m t o w r i t e *Dear* a n d t h e n b e l i e v e F o r t w
e n t y l i n e s o u r g o o d n e s s c o u l d b e w h y I t ' s w o
r t h o u r t i m e . O u r f a i t h t u r n s t o t h i s t h r e a d
T h a t s h u t t l e s d o w n w a r d w h i l e t h e m i s c h i e
v o u s N e e d n o t h i n g b u t a c o a l s a c k b y t h e b e
d ,**

A n d w a k e t o t h e s a m e c a r o l s . E a c h o f u s

**I s w r i t i n g , E d w a r d , a s k i n g t h e g r e a t s p a c e
B e l o w u s w h a t i s m i s s i n g s t i l l , w h a t g i f t**

**W i l l m a k e u s w h o l e a g a i n . W e f o l d a n d p l a c e
O u r a n s w e r s i n t h e c h i m n e y a n d a r e l e f t**

**T h e s e p i n k e m b a r r a s s e d a u t h o r s b y t h e
f i r e .**

W e a l l t a l k t o m y - r o t ° w e u n d e r s t a n d .

***nonsense* S o m e b o d y c o u g h s , p o l i t e l y t o e n q u i
r e**

D i d t h e y n o t k i c k a b a l l o n N o M a n ' s L a n d

T w o y e a r s a g o ? 9 " T h a t ' s s o , "

S m i l e s P e t e r , a d d i n g : " N o t t o n i g h t , I f e a r . "

**A n d I h e a r G e o r g e ' s v o i c e s a y : " C r i c k e t , t h o u g h
h , S o E d w a r d g e t s a k n o c k . " 0 B u t h e ' s n o t h e r**

e, opportunity to bat George, he's where you are,
 Restless tonight like all good children are.
 One dead was sent a Valentine, so both
 Were spared their lover's blushes. What I write
 Is on its way nowhere, is less than breath,
 Somight be anything, as nothing might.
 It's that there's nothing now that doesn't seem
 As if it's where it ended. All the paths
 Beyond this word or this become the same:
 Tickets, or a handing-down of deaths
 As by a school official, not a teacher,
 A visiting official by one gate.
 Now all the hope there is is in a picture
 Of P. E. Thomas gone, because my fate
 Is never to foresee, believed or no.
 I stobewrong. These words are packing up
 And going. Words I mean you not to know
 Don't see why they should move in any step
 I fix them with. So go,
 You English words, I while he's alive, and blow
 Through all of him so Englishmen will know
 You loved him and who cares how long ago,
 And hide him from the light
 He'll strike and hold until his clay's a light.
day pipe 9. Preparing the men of his company for their part

platoon to reach the German trenches. *No Man's*
 in the Allied assault on July 1, 1916, the first day
Land: unoccupied area between opposing armies.
 of the Battle of the Somme, Captain Neville of the

1. Edward Thomas, "Words," lines 10—11:

8th East Surrey Regiment gave each of his four

“Choose me / You English words?”

platoons a football and offered a prize for the first

LETTERSTOEDWARDTHOMAS/2019

**Dear Edward, when the war was over, you
90 Were standing where a wood had been, a
nd though Nothing was left for you to name
or view**

You waited till new trees had hidden you.

**Then you came home and in a forest called
The Times your name was found, and not among
95 The officers but in a clearing filled**

**With verses, yours. Then your new name was
assung With all the old. And children lea fi
ng through And old men staring and their d
aughters stilled With admiration: all this
happened too,**

100 Or had already by the time you pulled

**The book I hidethis in from your top shelf A
nd blew its dust away. The year is what,**

1930? '40? Please yourself,

But do remember as you smile and sit

105 That everything's foreseen

By a good reader, as I think I am

On David's Day of 1917,

**Reaching for blotting-paper. 2 Now's the
time To fold the work away**

no And find me on this bleak or brilliant day.

**Choose me, Siedeutsche Worte. 3 This is the
efirst Of all the letters you will never read,**

Edward. I was shy in my own west

Always, so you never read a word

115 I sent, but this is written with a clear A
mind as has been opened like a shell.

” Greatly loved in the battery,“0 writes this de
ar *artillery unit* Major Lushington, who says yo
u fell

In early morning with some battle won

120 And all the soldiers dancing. You were lo
ved In the battery and in the morning sun

Brought out the blessed clay, when some thi
ng moved Like cloud perhaps. The Major a
sked us round To tell us you knew nothing. T
hat your book 125 Of Shakespeare’s Sonnet
sthat they knelt and found Was strangely c
reased and the clay didn’t break 4

Which Helen 5 gave your son,

And Robert’s *North of Boston* 6 in your kit

They gave to me, not needing it. And when

130 They reached you you were not marked,
not hit, Breeze blowing in your hair,

Chosen. What had stopped your heart was
air.

2. Spongy paper for absorbing ink when writing.

unmarked and his clay pipe unbroken, but the vac-

David’s Day: March 1, feast day of St. David,

uum created by the blast creased the pages of his

patron saint of Wales.

book and stopped the watch in his pocket.

3. You German words (German). See note 1

5. Thomas’s wife (1877-1967).

directly above.

6. Collection of Frost’s poems (1914), favorably

4. Thomas was killed by the blast of a German
reviewed by Thomas.

shell on Easter Monday 1917. His body was

2 0 2 0 / G L Y N M A X W E L L

Dear Edward, now there's no one at the end
There's nothing I can't say. Some eight or nine
I have by heart. Your farmer-poet friend⁷
Is flying around the world on a fine line
That starts in you, or grows out from the days
You passed together. England is the same,
Cheering to order, set in its new ways
It thinks are immemorial. The Somme⁸
Has trees beside it but some shovelwork
Will bring the dead to light. There's so much more
I want to say, because the quiet is dark,
And when the writing ends I reach a shore
Beyond which it's so cold and that's what changed,
Edward, on that Easter Monday.⁹ You
Were land to me, where England unestranged,
Were what I thought it had amounted to,
But look at the fields now,
Look eyelessly at them, like the dug men
Still nodding out of Flanders.¹ Tell them how
You walked and how you saw, and how your pen
Did nothing more than that,
And, when it stopped, what you were gazing at.
Dear Edward Thomas, Frost died, I was born.
I am a father and you'd like the names

We gave our girl. I'm writing this at dawn
Where Robert lived, in Amherst,² and your poems
I keep by his, his housebrick to your tile.
I teach you to my students, and aloud
I wonder what you would have come to. While
I wonder they look out at a white cloud
And so we pass the time. Perhaps I'll guess
Which one will ask me what they always ask:
Whom do I write for? Anybody? Yes,
You. And I'll walk home in the great dusk
Of Massachusetts that extends away
Far west and north, the ways you meant to go
To save your life. A good end to the day,
That's going to be. It's going to be cool, though,
I see out in the town,
And start to turn the trees to what the world
Comes flocking here to see: eight shades of brown
Men never saw, and ninety-nine of gold,
More shades than can have names,
Or names to bring them back when the snow comes.

1 9 9 8

7. Frost. coming "to light" (142) in the fields of Flanders.

8. French river, site of the major battle mentioned 2. From 1917 until 1938, Frost taught at Amherst in note 9 above. College (in Amherst, Massachusetts), where Max-9. See note 4, p. 2019. well teaches.

1. Perhaps, "the dead" of line 142 still (at present)

2 0 2 1

S I M O N A R M I T A G E

b. 1963

From Killing Time 1

M e a n w h i l e , s o m e w h e r e i n t h e s t a t e o f C o l o r a d o , a r m e d t o t h e t e e t h w i t h t h o u s a n d s o f f l o w e r s ,

t w o b o y s e n t e r e d t h e f r o n t d o o r o f t h e i r o w n h i g h s c h o o l a n d f o r a l m o s t f o u r h o u r s

5 g a v e f l o r a l t r i b u t e s t o f e l l o w s t u d e n t s a n d m e m b e r s o f s t a f f ,

b e g i n n i n g w i t h r e d r o s e s

s t r e w n a m o n g s t u n s u s p e c t i n g p u p i l s d u r i n g t h e i r l u n c h h o u r , f o l l o w e d b y p o s i e s

o f p e a c e l i l i e s a n d w i l d o r c h i d s . M o s t t h o u g h t t h e w h o l e s h o w i o w a s o n e e l a b o r a t e h o a x

u s i n g s i l k r e p l i c a s o f t h e r e a l t h i n g , p l a s t i c i m i t a t i o n s , e x q u i s i t e p r a c t i c a l j o k e s ,

b u t t h e f l o w e r s w e r e n o m o r e f a k e t h a n y o u o r I , a n d w e r e h a n d e d o u t

15 a s c o m p l i m e n t s r e t u r n e d , f a v o u r s r e p a i d , i n g o o d f a i t h , s t r a i g h t f r o m t h e h e a r t .

N o w o u l d n o t b e t a k e n f o r a n a n s w e r . T h e r e f o r e a d a f f o d i l w a s t u c k e d b e h i n d t h e e a r

o f a b o y i n a b a s e b a l l h a t , a n d m a r i g o l d s a n d p e o n i e s 20 t h r e a d e d t h r o u g h t h e h a i r

o f t h o s e c a u g h t o n t h e s t a i r s o r s p o t t e d a l o n g c o r r i d o r s , u n t i l e v e r y p u p i l

w h o l o o k e d u p f r o m b e h i n d a d e s k c o u l d e x p e c t t o b e m e t w i t h a t l e a s t a p e t a l

25 o r a d u s t i n g o f p o l l e n , i f n o t a n e n t i r e d a i s y - c h a i n , o r t h e c o l o u r - b u r s t

o f a d o z e n f o x g l o v e s , f l o w e r i n g f o r a l l t h e i r w o r t h ,

o r a b u t t o n h o l e t o t h e b r e a s t .

Upstairs in the school library, individuals were singled out 30 for special attention:

some were showered with blossom, others wore their blooms like brooches or medallions;

even those who turned their backs or refused point-blank to accept such honours

35 were decorated with buds, unseasonable fruits and rosettes the same as the others.

By which time a crowd had gathered outside the school, drawn through suburbia

by the rumour of flowers in full bloom, drawn through the air 40 like butterflies to buddleia, 2

like honeybees to honeysuckle, like hummingbirds dipping their tongues in,

1. In what came to be known as the Columbine day, twelve students, one teacher, and the two Massacre, two seniors of Columbine High School, murderers were dead.

Colorado, went to school on April 20, 1999, armed

2. Also known as “butterfly bush.”

with guns, knives, and bombs. At the end of the

2022 / SIMON ARMITAGE

some to soak up such over-exuberance of thought, others to savour the goings-on.

45 Finally, overcome by their own munificence or hay fever, the flower-boys pinned

the last blooms on themselves, somewhat selfishly perhaps, but had also planned

further surprises for those who swept through the aftermath

50 of broom and buttercup:
garlands and bouquets were planted in lockers and cupboards,
timed to erupt
like the first day of spring into the arms of those
who, during the first bout,
55 either by fate or chance had somehow been overlooked
and missed out.

Experts are now trying to say how two apparently quiet kids
from an apple-pie town
could get their hands on a veritable rain-forest of plants
60 and bring down
a whole botanical digest of one species or another onto the
heads
of classmates and teachers,
and where such fascination began, and why it should lead
to an outpouring of this nature.

65 And even though many believe that flowers should be kept
in expert hands
only, or left to specialists in the field such as florists,
the law of the land
dictates that God, guts and gardening made the country
70 what it is today
and for as long as the flower industry can see to it
things are staying that way.

What they reckon is this: deny a person the right to carry
flowers of his own
75 and he's liable to wind up on the business end of a flower
somebody else has grown.

As for the two boys, it's back to the same old debate:
is it something in the mind
that grows from birth, like a seed, or is it society
so makes a person that kind?

1 9 9 9

The Shout

We went out
into the school yard together, me and the boy
whose name and face
I don't remember. We were testing the range
5 of the human voice:
he had to shout for all he was worth,

OUTBOUND / 2 0 2 3

I had to raise an arm
from across the divide to signal back
that the sound had carried.
10 He called from over the park—I lifted an arm.
Out of bounds,
he yelled from the end of the road,
from the foot of the hill,
from beyond the look-out post of Fretwell's Farm—
15 I lifted an arm.
He left town, went on to be twenty years dead
with a gunshot hole
in the roof of his mouth, in Western Australia.
Boy with the name and face I don't remember,
20 you can stop shouting now, I can still hear you.
2002

G R E G W I L L I A M S O N

b. 1964

Outbound

We live life forwards and think about it backwards

Howard Nemerov¹

We passengers ride backward on the train

And train our eyes on what has passed us by.

A cobalt blur composes

Into a woman picking roses,

5 Who is already fading in the pane

As in the failing hindsight of the eye.

A line of oaks comes into focus, fades,

Supplanted by the double-dagger poles

Of power companies,

io Footnotes that redefine the trees.

An asterisk in glass, then window shades,

Graffiti, billboards, tattered banderoles⁰ *long scrolls*

Of southbound birds... . Whatever comes to view

Corrects the view, but never will explain

15 The random next event

1. American poet (1920-1991; see pp. 1623-27).

2 0 2 4 / G R E G W I L L I A M S O N

O r a n y t h i n g b u t w h e r e w e w e n t ,

W h e r e l o n g a g o a w o m a n w e a r i n g b l u e

B e g a n f o r g e t t i n g s o m e o n e o n a t r a i n .

1 9 9 5

*From Double Exposures*²

III. Visiting Couple Kissing and Halved Onion

Unjustly I've imposed upon my friends
This? It's an onion that's been cut in half
When they're (how shall I say?) making me
nds Right in the middle of the photograph,
5 After a night of words, and here they stand
d Less like those pure, textbook transparencies
cies Wrapped up in one another, hand in hand,
Than layered and opaque identities,
An arm around a shoulder, face to face,
io Developed in the dark to this full kit
And captured in this rapturous embrace.
Which has so many tears inside of it.

XXV. Group Photo with Winter Trees

These were my neighbors. It's a big group
se: On mist-gray skies, the stark, black branches
setch Horizon, lawn, in loose haphazard
rows.

As if in tin, or as in some old sketch,

5 That's The Great Bob. And that's our good
d Queen Paul whose lines, whose every nuance
ce was precise, With Champagne Anne and
Rick the dog. They're all But faded now.
I've seen the trees in ice,

Decked out (Liz, too, who helped me do the
plumbing), io But I'll be gone when their spring
blooms and scatter s Even the children. And,
God, they're all becoming.

Shades, as the new leaves turn to other
matters.

2001

New Year's: A Short Pantoum³

The sunlight was falling. A part

Pl a y e d o u t i n t h e d e e p s n o w .

W e w e r e a l l t h e r e . A t t h e s t a r t

W e k n e w h o w t h e y e a r w o u l d g o ,

2. The title refers to a form invented by William- bold type, the standard type, and the combination, son, in which three poems can be read in one: the 3. On this verse form, see “Versification,” p. 2046.

N E W Y E A R ‘ S : A S H O R T P A N T O U M / 2 0 2 5

5 P l a y e d o u t i n t h e d e e p s n o w .

T h e s u n l i g h t w a s f a l l i n g a p a r t .

W e k n e w h o w t h e y e a r w o u l d g o .

W e w e r e a l l t h e r e a t t h e s t a r t .

2001

Versification

A p o e m i s a c o m p o s i t i o n w r i t t e n f o r p e r f o r m a n c e b y t h e h u m a n v o i c e . W h a t y o u r e y e s e e s o n t h e p a g e i s t h e c o m p o s e r ‘ s v e r b a l s c o r e , w a i t i n g f o r y o u r v o i c e t o b r i n g i t a l i v e a s y o u r e a d i t a l o u d o r h e a r i t i n y o u r m i n d ‘ s e a r . U n l i k e y o u r r e a d i n g o f a n e w s p a p e r , t h e b e s t r e a d i n g — t h a t i s t o s a y , t h e m o s t s a t i s f y i n g r e a d i n g — o f a p o e m i n v o l v e s a s i m u l t a n e o u s e n g a g e m e n t o f e y e a n d e a r : t h e e y e a t t e n t i v e n o t o n l y t o t h e m e a n i n g o f w o r d s , b u t t o t h e i r g r o u p i n g a n d s p a c i n g a s l i n e s o n a p a g e ; t h e e a r a t t u n e d t o t h e g r o u p i n g a n d s p a c i n g o f s o u n d s . T h e m o r e y o u u n d e r s t a n d o f m u s i c a l n o t a t i o n a n d t h e p r i n c i p l e s o f m u s i c a l c o m p o s i t i o n , t h e m o r e y o u w i l l u n d e r s t a n d a n d a p p r e c i a t e a c o m -

poser’s s c o r e . S i m i l a r l y , t h e m o r e y o u u n d e r s t a n d o f v e r s i f i c a t i o n (t h e p r i n c i p l e s a n d p r a c t i c e o f w r i t i n g v e r s e) , t h e m o r e y o u a r e l i k e l y t o u n d e r s t a n d a n d a p p r e c i a t e p o e t r y a n d , i n p a r t i c u l a r , t h e i n t i m a t e r e l a t i o n s h i p b e t w e e

n its form and its content. *What* a poem says or means is the result of *how* it is said, a fact that poets are often at pains to emphasize. “All my life,” said W. H. Auden, “I have been more interested in technique than anything else.”

And T. S. Eliot claimed that “the conscious problems with which one is concerned in the actual writing are more those of a quasi-musical nature, in the arrangement of metric and pattern, than of a conscious exposition of ideas.” Fortunately, the principles of versification are easier to explain than those of musical composition.

The oldest classification of poetry into three broad categories still holds:

1. **Epic**: a long narrative poem, frequently extending to several “books” (sec-

tions of several hundred lines), on a great and serious subject. See, for exam-

ple, Spenser’s *The Faerie Queene* (p. 165), Milton’s *Paradise Lost* (p. 420), Wordsworth’s *The Prelude* (p. 781), and Barrett Browning’s *Aurora Leigh* (p. 948). With one notable exception, Merrill’s *The Changing Light at Sandover* (p. 1725), the few poems of comparable length to have been written in the twentieth century — for example, Williams’s *Paterson* and Pound’s *Cantos* (p. 1306) — have a freer, less formal structure.

2. **Dramatic**: poetry, monologue or dialogue, written in the voice of a character assumed by the poet. Space does not permit the inclusion in this anthology of speeches from the many great verse dramas of English literature, but sees such dramatic monologues as Tennyson’s “Ulysses” (p. 992), Browning’s “My Last Duchess” (p. 1012), and Howard’s response to

that poem, “Nikolaus Mardruz to his Master Ferdinand, Count of Tyrol, 1565”

(p. 1778).

2027

2028 / VERSIFICATION

3. Lyric: originally, a song performed in ancient Greece to the accompani-

ment of a small harp-like instrument called a lyre. The term is now used for any fairly short poem in the voice of a single speaker, although that speaker may sometimes quote others. The reader should be wary of identifying the lyric speaker with the poet, since the “I” of a poem will frequently be that of a fictional character invented by the poet. The majority of poems in this book are lyrics, and the principal types of lyric will be found set out under “Forms”

(p. 2039).

Rhythm

Poetry is the most compressed form of language, and rhythm is an essential component of language. When we speak, we hear a sequence of syllables.

These, the basic units of pronunciation, can consist of a vowel sound alone or a vowel with attendant consonants: *oh; syl-la-ble*. Sometimes *m, n, and l* are counted as vowel sounds, as in *riddle (rid-dl)* and *prism (pri-zm)*. In words of two or more syllables, one is almost always given more emphasis, as we say, is more heavily stressed than the others, so that what we hear in ordinary speech is a sequence of such units, variously stressed and unstressed as, for example:

A poem is a composition written for performance by the human voice.

We call such an analysis of stressed and unstressed syllables **scansion** (the action or art of scanning a line to determine its division into metrical feet); and a simple system of signs has been evolved to denote stressed and unstressed syllables and any significant pause between them. Adding such scansion marks will produce the following:

A poem is a composition || written for performance by the human voice.

The double bar, known as a **caesura** (from the Latin word for “cut”), indicates a natural pause in the speaking voice, which may be short (as here) or long (as between sentences); the “**˘**” sign indicates an unstressed syllable, and the “**ˆ**” sign indicates one that is stressed.

The pattern of emphasis, stress, or accent can vary from speaker to speaker and situation to situation. If someone were to contradict my definition of a poem, I might reply:

A poem is a composition ...

with a heavier stress on it than on any other syllable in the sentence. The signs “˘” and “ˆ” make no distinction between varying levels of stress and unstress — it being left to the reader to supply such variations — but some METER / 2029

analysts use the sign “ˆ” to indicate a stress falling between heavy and light.

Most people pay little or no attention to the sequence of stressed and unstressed syllables in their speaking and writing, but to a poet there may be no more important element of a poem.

Meter

If a poem's rhythm is structured into a recurrence of regular — that is, approximately equal — units, we call it meter (from the Greek word for “measure”). For many centuries after its origins were lost in the mists of antiquity, meter was the principal feature distinguishing poetry from prose. There are four metrical systems in English poetry: the accentual, the accentual-syllabic, the syllabic, and the quantitative. Of these, the second accounts for more poems in the English language — and in this anthology — than do the other three together.

Accentual meter, sometimes called *strong-stress meter*, is the oldest. The earliest recorded poem in the language — that is, the oldest of Old English or Anglo-Saxon poems, Caedmon's seventh-century “Hymn” (p. 1) — employs a line divided in two by a heavy caesura, each half dominated by the two strongly stressed syllables:

H e a e r e s t s c e o p | | a e l d a b e a r n u m

[H e f i r s t c r e a t e d f o r m e n ' s s o n s]

h e o f o n t o h r o f e | | h a l i g S c y p p e n d

[h e a v e n a s a r o o f h o l y c r e a t o r]

Here, as in most Old English poetry, each line is organized by stress and by alliteration (the repetition of speech sounds — vowels or, more usually, con-

sonants — in a sequence of nearby words). In a line structured by accentual meter, one and generally both of the stressed syllables in the first half-line alliterate with the first stressed syllable in the second half-line.

Accentual meter continued to be used into the late fourteenth century, as in Langland's *Piers Plowman* (p. 71), which begins: In a somer seson,
|| whan soft was the sonne,

[In a summer season when mild was the sun,
]

I shop me in shrouds, || as I a shepe were ...

[I clad myself in clothes as if I'd become a she
ep ...]

However, following the Saxons' conquest by the Normans in 1066, Saxon native meter was increasingly supplanted by the metrical patterns of Old French poetry brought to England in the wake of William the Conqueror, although the non-alliterative four-stress line would have a long and lively continuing life — structuring, for example, section 2 of Eliot's "The Dry Salvages." The Old English metrical system has been occasionally revived in more recent times, as for Heaney's translation of *Beowulf* (p. 2), or the four-2030

/VERSIFICATION

stress lines of Coleridge's "Christabel" and Wilbur's "Junk" (p. 1638); and many English poets from Spenser onward have used alliteration in ways that recall the character of Old and Middle English verse.

Accentual-syllabic meter provided the metrical structure of the new poetry to emerge in the fourteenth century, and its basic unit was the foot, a combination of two or three stressed and/or unstressed syllables. The four most common metrical feet in English poetry are: 1. Iambic (the noun is *iamb*): an unstressed followed by a stressed syllable, as in "New York." Between the Renaissance and the rise of free verse (p. 2048) in the last century, iambic meter was the dominant rhythm of English poetry, considered by many writers in English as well as classical Latin the meter closest to that of ordinary speech. For this reason, iambic meter is also to

be found occasionally in the work of prose writers. Dickens' novel *A Tale of Two Cities*, for example, begins: It was | the best | of times, || it was | the worst | of times ...

2. **Trochaic** (the noun is *trochee*): a stressed followed by an unstressed syllable, as in the word *London* or the line from the nursery rhyme, London | bridge is | falling | down ...

Here, as in many other trochaic lines, the final unstressed syllable has been dropped. This shortening, which gives prominence to the stressed syllable necessary for rhyme (p. 2036), is called a **catalectic line end**.

The word *London* may be a trochee, but it does not have to appear in a trochaic line. Provided its natural stress is preserved, it can take its place comfortably in an iambic line, like that from Eliot's *The Waste Land*: A crowd | flowed ov | er Lon | don bridge ...

Whereas iambic meter has a certain gravity, making it a natural choice for poems on solemn subjects, the trochaic foot has a lighter, quicker, more buoyant movement. Hence, for example, its use in Milton's "L'Allegro" (lines 25—29, for example, on p. 403) and Blake's "Introduction" to *Songs of Innocence* (p. 733).

3. **Anapestic** (the noun is *anapest*): two unstressed syllables followed by a stressed syllable, as in *Tennessee* or the opening of Byron's "The Destruction of Sennacherib" (p. 834).

The Assyr | ian came down | like the wolf | on the fold ...

The last three letters of the word *Assyrian* should be heard as one syllable, a form of contraction known as **elision**.

4. **Dactylic** (the noun is *dactyl*): a stressed syllable followed by two unstressed syllables, as in

Leningrad. This, like the previous “triple” (three-METRE / 2031

syllable) foot, the anapest, has a naturally energetic movement, making it suitable for poems with vigorous subjects, though not these only. See Hardy’s

“The Voice” (p. 1160), which begins:

Woman much | missed, how you | call to me, | call to me ...

Iamb and anapests, which have a strong stress on the last syllable, are said to constitute a rising meter, whereas trochees and dactyls, ending with an unstressed syllable, constitute a falling meter. In addition to these four standard metrical units, there are two other (two-syllable) feet that occur only as occasional variants of the others:

5. Spondaic (the noun is *spondee*): two successive syllables with approximately equal strong stresses, as on the words “draw back” in the second of these lines from Arnold’s “Dover Beach” (p. 1101): Listen! | you hear | the grat | ing roar

Of peb | bles which | the waves [draw back, | and fling ...

6. Pyrrhic (the noun is also *pyrrhic*): two successive unstressed or lightly stressed syllables, as in the second foot of the second line above, where the succession of light syllables seem to mimic the rattle of light pebbles that the heavy wave slowly draws back.

Poets, who consciously or instinctively will select a meter to suit their subject, have also a variety of line lengths from which to choose: 1. Monometer (one foot): see the fifth and sixth lines of each stanza of Herbert’s “Easter Wings” (p. 368), which reflect, in turn, the poverty and thinness of the speaker. Herrick’s “Upon His Departure Hence” is a rare example of a complete poem

miniambicmonometer. The fact that each line is a solitary foot suggests to the eye the narrow inscription of a gravestone, and to the ear the brevity and loneliness of life.

Thus I

Pass by

And die,

As one,

Unknown,

And gone:

I'm made

A shade,

And laid

I'th grave,

There have

My cave.

Where tell

I dwell,

Farewell.

2032 / VERSIFICATION

2. Dimeter (two feet): iambic dimeter alternates with iambic pentameter in Donne's "A Valediction of Weeping" (p. 300); and dactylic dimeter w w|

^ w w) gives Tennyson's "The Charge of the Light Brigade" (p. 1005) its galloping momentum:

Cannon to right of them,

Cannon to left of them,

Cannon in front of them

**Volleyed and thundered;
Stormed at with shot and shell,
Boldly they rode and well,
Into the jaws of Death,
Into the mouth of hell
Rode the six hundred.**

Lines 4 and 9, each lacking a final unstressed syllable, are *catalectic*, a com-

mon feature of dactylic as of trochaic poems.

3. Trimeter (three feet): Raleigh's "The Lie" (p. 154) and Roethke's "My Papa's Waltz" (p. 1494) are written in iambic trimeter; and all but the last line of each stanza of Shelley's "To a Skylark" (p. 876) in trochaic trimeter.

4. Tetrameter (four feet): Marvell's "To His Coy Mistress" (p. 478) is written in iambic tetrameter; and Shakespeare's "Fear No More the Heat of the Sun" (p. 276) in trochaic tetrameter.

5. Pentameter (five feet): the most popular metrical line in English poetry, the iambic pentameter provides the basic rhythmic framework, or base rhythm, of countless poems from the fourteenth century to the twenty-first, from Chaucer's "General Prologue" to *The Canterbury Tales* (p. 19) and Shakespeare's sonnets (p. 257) to Hill's "Lachrimae" (p. 1834) and Schack-

enberg's "Supernatural Love" (p. 2003). It even contributes to the stately prose of the Declaration of Independence: We hold | these truths | to be | self-ev | ident...

Anapestic pentameter is to be found in Browning's "Saul": As thy love | is discov | ered a l m

ight|y,almight|y,beprovedThypower,|th
atexists|withandfor|Tt,ofKe|ingbeloved
!

A missing syllable in the first foot of the second line gives emphasis to the important word “power,” which Browning (like many nineteenth-century Englishmen, but unlike most twenty-first-century Americans) probably pronounced as a single syllable.

6. Hexameter (six feet): The openings on neto f Sidney’s “Astrophil and Stella” (p. 213) and Dowson’s “Non sum qualis eram bonaesubregno Cynarae” (p. 1211) are written in iambic hexameter, a line sometimes known as an alexandrine (probably after a twelfth-century French poem, the *Roman METER* / 2033

d’Alexandre). A single alexandrine is often used to provide a resonant termination to a stanza of shorter lines, as, for example, the Spenserian stanza (p. 2042) or Hardy’s “The Convergence of the Twain” (p. 1156), in which the shape of the stanza suggests the iceberg that is the poem’s subject. Swin-

burne’s “The Last Oracle” is written in trochaic hexameter: Day by | day thy | shadow | shines in | heaven be | holden ...

7. Heptameter (seven feet): Kipling’s “Tommy” (p. 1181) is written in iambic heptameter (or fourteeners, as they are often called, from the number of their syllables), with an added initial syllable in three of the four lines that make up the second half of each stanza.

8. Octameter (eight feet): Browning’s “A Toccata of Galuppi’s” (p. 1017) is the most famous example of the rare trochaic octameter.

Poets who write in strict conformity to a single metrical pattern will achieve the music of a

metronome and so on drive their listeners away. Variation, surprise, is the very essence of every artist's trade; and one of the most important sources of metrical power and pleasure is the perpetual tension between the regular and the irregular, between the expected and the un-

pected, the base rhythm and the variation.

John Hollander has spoken of the "metrical contract" that poets enter into with their readers from the first few words of a poem. When Frost begins

"The Gift Outright" —

The land | was ours | before | we were | the land's

— we expect what follows to have an iambic base meter, but the irregularity or variation in the fourth foot tells us that we are hearing not robot speech but human speech. The stress on "we" makes it, appropriately, one of the two most important words in the line, "we" being the most important presence in the "land."

Frost's poem will serve as an example of ways in which skillful poets will vary their base meter:

1. The land | was ours | before | we were | the land's.
2. She was | our land || more than | a hun | dred years
3. Before | we were | her peo | pie. J She | was ours
4. In M a s s | a c h u | setts, || in | V i r g i n | ia,
5. B u t we | w e r e E n g | land's, || sfill | c o l o n | Tals,
6. Possess | ing what | we still | were un | possessed | by.
7. Possessed | by what | we now | no more | possessed.
8. S o m e t h i n g | w e w e r e | w i t h h o l d | i n g m a d e | us w e a k 9. Until | we found | out that | it was | ourselves

10. We were | with hold | ing from | our land | of
liv | ing, 11. And forth | with found | salva | tion
in | surren | der.

12. Such as | we were | we gave | ourselves | outright

2034 / VERSIFICATION

13. (The deed | of gift | was man | y deeds | of war
r) 14. To the land | vaguely | real | izing | west war
d, 15. But still | unstor | ied, || art | less, || un | en h
anced, 16. Such as | she was, || such as | she wou
ld | become.

The iambic pentameter gives the poem a stately movement appropriate to the unfolding history of the United States. In the trochaic “reversed feet” at the start of lines 2, 10, 12, and 16, the stress is advanced to lend emphasis to a key word or, in the case of line 8, an important syllable. Spondees in lines 2 (“our land”) and 3 (“her people”) bring into equal balance the two partners whose union is the theme of the poem. Such additional heavy stresses are counterbalanced by the light pyrrhic feet at the end of lines 4

and 5, in the middle of line 10, and toward the end of line 14. The multiple irregularities of that line give a wonderful impression of the land stretching westward into space, just as the variations of line 16 give a sense of the nation surging toward its destiny in time.

Frost’s reading of this poem at President Kennedy’s inauguration differed at a number of points from the above scansion, in that it was more colloquial, less emphatic, but a author cannot control others’ reading of their work as they control its writing. Scansion is to some extent a matter of interpretation, in which the rhetorical emphasis a particular reader prefers alters t

h e stress p a t t e r n . O t h e r r e a d e r s o f “T h e G i f t
O u t r i g h t ” m i g h t — n o l e s s c o r r e c t l y —

p r e f e r t h e f o l l o w i n g r h e t o r i c a l v a r i a t i o n s o f t h e
b a s e m e t e r : 7 . . . w e n o w . . .

9. U n t i l | w e f o u n d . . .

A n i m p o r t a n t f a c t o r i n v a r y i n g t h e p a t t e r n o f a
p o e m i s t h e p l a c i n g o f i t s p a u s e s , o r c a e s u r a e
. O n e f a l l i n g i n t h e m i d d l e o f a l i n e — a s i n l i n e 4 a
b o v e —

i s k n o w n a s a m e d i a l c a e s u r a ; o n e f a l l i n g n e a r
t h e s t a r t o f a l i n e , a n i n i t i a l c a e s u r a ; a n d o n e f a l l i
n g n e a r o r a t t h e e n d o f a l i n e , a t e r m i n a l c a e s u
r a .

W h e n a c a e s u r a o c c u r s a s i n l i n e s 13 a n d 14
a b o v e , t h o s e l i n e s a r e s a i d t o b e e n d - s t o p p e d . L i n e s 3
a n d 9 , h o w e v e r , a r e c a l l e d r u n - o n l i n e s (o r , t o u s e a F r e n
c h t e r m , t h e y e x h i b i t e n j a m b m e n t — ” a s t r i d i n g
o v e r ”) , b e c a u s e t h e t h r u s t o f t h e i n c o m p l e t e d s e
n t e n c e c a r r i e s o n o v e r t h e e n d o f t h e v e r s e l i n e .

S u c h t r a n s i t i o n s t e n d t o i n c r e a s e t h e p a c e o f t h
e p o e m , a s t h e e n d - s t o p p i n g o f l i n e s 10 t h r o
u g h 16 s l o w s i t d o w n .

A s t r i k i n g l y o r i g i n a l a n d i n f l u e n t i a l b l e n d i n g o f
t h e O l d E n g l i s h a c c e n t u a l a n d m o r e m o d e r
n a c c e n t u a l - s y l l a b i c m e t r i c a l s y s t e m s w a
s s p r u n g r h y t h m , c o n c e i v e d a n d p i o n e e r e
d b y G e r a r d M a n l e y H o p k i n s .

**Finding the cadences of his Victorian contemporaries — what he called their “common rhythm” — too measured and mellifluous for his liking, he sought a stronger, more muscular verse movement. Strength he equated with stress, arguing that “even one stressed syllable may make a foot, and consequently two or more stresses may come running [one after the other], which in common rhythm can, regularly speaking, never happen.” In his system of sprung rhythm, each foot began with a stress and could consist of a single stressed syllable a trochee (^ w), a dactyl (^ w w), or what he METE
R / 2035**

called a first paeon w w w). His lines will, on occasion, admit to the unstressed syllables, as in the sonnet “Felix Randal” (p. 1168): Felix | Randal, || the | farrier, || O is he | dead then? || my |

duty all | ended,

Who have | watched his [mould of man, || big- | boned and | hardy-1 handsome

Pining, || pining, || till | time when | reason | ramble d in it |

and some

Fatal | four dis | orders, || fleshed there, || all con | tended?

A poetry structured on the principle that strength is stress is particularly well suited to stressful subjects, and the sprung rhythm of what Hopkins called his “terrible sonnets” (pp. 1167—72), for example, gives them a dramatic urgency, a sense of anguished struggle that few poets have equalled in accentual-syllabic meter.

A number of other poets have experimented with two other metrical systems.

Syllabic meter measures only the number of syllables in a line, without regard to their stress. Being an inescapable feature of the English language, stress will of course appear in lines composed on syllabic principles, but will fall variously, and usually for rhetorical emphasis, rather than in any formal metrical pattern. When Marianne Moore wished to attack the pretentious-

ness of much formal "Poetry" (p. 1329), she shrewdly chose to do so in syllabics, as lines in syllabic meter are called. The effect is carefully informal and prosaic, and few unalerted readers will notice that there are 19 syllables in the first line of each stanza; 22 in the second; 11 in the third (except for the third line of the third stanza, which has 7); 5 in the fourth; 8 in the fifth; and 13 in the sixth. That the poem succeeds in deflating Poetry (with a capital P) while at once celebrating poetry and creating it is not to be explained by Moore's talent for arithmetics so much as by her unobtrusive skill in modulating the stresses and pauses of colloquial speech. The result is a music like that of good free verse (p. 2048).

Because stress plays virtually no role in Romance languages such as French and Italian and in Japanese, their poetry tends to be syllabic in construction.

One Japanese form that has taken root in English poetry on both sides of the Atlantic and beyond is the haiku, a three-line poem of seventeen syllables (divided 5, 7, 5). The haiku traditionally offers an image from the natural world — a flower, a branch of cherry blossom — and this convention Paul Muldoon adopts and adapts in his series of 110 "Hopewell Haiku":
Good Friday. At three,

a swarm of bees sets its heart

o n a n a p p l e t r e e .

Brilliantly, t h e I r i s h R o m a n C a t h o l i c g r a f t s o n t o a f o r m i n e x t r i c a b l y l i n k e d w i t h t h e J a p a n e s e S h i n t o r e l i g i o n a n i m a g e o f C h r i s t d y i n g o n t h e c r o s s a t t h r e e i n t h e a f t e r n o o n o n t h e f i r s t G o o d F r i d a y . E z r a P o u n d a d a p t e d t h e J a p a n e s e f o r m i n a p o e m w h o s e t i t l e i s a n i n t e g r a l p a r t o f t h e w h o l e : 2 0 3 6 / V E R S I F I C A T I O N

In a Station of the M e t r o

T h e a p p a r i t i o n o f t h e s e f a c e s i n t h e c r o w d ;

P e t a l s o n a w e t , b l a c k b o u g h .

T h e s y l l a b l e c o u n t h e r e (8 , 1 2 , 7) b e a r s o n l y a t o k e n r e l a t i o n t o t h a t o f t h e s t r i c t J a p a n e s e p a t t e r n , b u t t h e p o e m s u c c e e d s l a r g e l y b e c a u s e i t s i n t e r n a l r h y m e s (p . 2 0 3 7) — *S t a t i o n / a p p a r i t i o n ; M e t r o / p e t a l s / w e t ; c r o w d / b o u g h*—

p o i n t u p a s e r i e s o f d i s t i n c t s t r e s s e d s y l l a b l e s t h a t s u g g e s t , i n a n i m p r e s s i o n i s t f a s h i o n , a s e r i e s o f d i s t i n c t w h i t e f a c e s . O t h e r A m e r i c a n m a s t e r s o f t h i s f o r m a r e R i c h a r d W r i g h t (p . 1 5 0 2) a n d R i c h a r d W i l b u r (p . 1 6 3 2) , w h o s e p o e m

“Zea” (p . 1 6 4 0) i s c o m p o s e d o f s t a n z a s o f r h y m e d h a i k u l i k e M u l d o o n ‘ s .

A n u m b e r o f m o d e r n p o e t s — a m o n g t h e m A u d e n , D y l a n T h o m a s , a n d G u n n — h a v e w r i t t e n n o t a b l e p o e m s i n s y l l a b i c s ; t h e i r e f f o r t s t o c a p t u r e t h e s p i r i t — i f n o t t h e l e t t e r — o f a f o r e i g n l i n g u i s t i c a n d p o e t i c t r a d i t i o n m a y b e c o m p a r e d w i t h t h o s e o f m a n y p o e t s s i n c e t h e R e n a i s s a n c e w h o h a v e a t t e m p t e d t o r e n d e r G r e e k a n d L a t i n m e t e r s i n t o E n g l i s h v e r s e , u s i n g t h e f o u r t h m e t r i c a l s y s t e m t o b e c o n s i d e r e d h e r e .

Q u a n t i t a t i v e m e t e r , w h i c h s t r u c t u r e s m o s t G r e e k , S a n s k r i t , a n d l a t e r L a t i n p o e t r y , i s b a s e d o n n o t i o n s o f a s y l l a b l e ‘ s “ q u a n t i t y , ” i t s d u r a t i o n i n t i m e (o r i t s l e n g t h) . T h i s i s d e t e r m i n e d b y v a r i o u s c o n v e n t i

ons of spelling as well as by the type of vowel sound it contains. Complexities arise because Latin has more word-stress than does ancient Greek, and hence there is often an alignment of stress and quantity in foot-patterns of later Latin verse. This is ironic in light of the efforts, on the part of some Renaissance English poets, to “ennoble” the vernacular English tradition by following classical metrical models. Although poets like Spenser and Sidney devised elaborate rules for determining the “length” of English syllables according to ancient rules, the theoretical prescriptions often generated poems in which “long”

syllables are in fact stressed syllables. Indeed, one defender of quantitative meter in English, Thomas Campion, explicitly recommended a metrical system aligning stress with quantity; he illustrated his theory with some highly successful poems such as “Rose-cheeked Laura” (p. 280). Although some Renaissance experiments in quantitative meter produced poems distinctly less pleasing to the ear than to the (highly educated) eye, others, such as those in Sidney’s *Arcadia*, work well and remind us that experiments in cultural translation — some more successful than others — have been an enduring part of the English poetic tradition from the Anglo-Saxon era to the present.

Rhyme

Ever since the poetry of Chaucer sprang from the fortunate marriage of Old French and Old English, rhyme (the concurrence, in two or more lines, of the last stressed vowel and of all speech sounds following that vowel) has been closely associated with rhythm in English poetry. It is to be found in the early poems and songs of many languages. Most English speakers meet it first in nursery rhymes, many of which involve numbers (“One, two, /

RHYME / 2037

Buckle my shoe”), a fact supporting the theory that rhyme may have had its origin in primitive religious rites and magical spells. From such beginnings, poetry has been inextricably linked with music — Caedmon’s “Hymn” (p. 1) and the earliest popular ballads (p. 97) were all composed to be sung — and rhyme has been a crucial element in the music of poetry. More than any other factor it has been responsible for making poetry memorable. Its function

is a good deal more complicated than may at first appear, in that by associating one rhyme-word with another, poets may introduce a remote constellation of associations that may confirm, question, or on occasion deny the literal meaning of their words. Consider, for example, the opening eight lines, or *octave* (p. 2042), of Hopkins’s sonnet “God’s Grandeur” (p. 1166):

1. The world is charged with the grandeur of God.
2. It will flame out, like shining from shook foil;
3. It gathers to a greatness, like the ooze of oil
4. Crushed. Why do men then now not reckon his rod?
5. Generations have trod, have trod, have trod;
6. And all is seared with trade; bleared, smeared with toil;
7. And wears man’s smudged and shares man’s smell: the soil
8. Is bare now, nor can a foot feel, being shod.

The grand statement of the first line is illustrated not by the grand examples that the opening of lines 2 and 3 seem to promise, but by the surprising similes of shaken tin foil and olive oil oozing from its press. The down-to-earthiness that these objects have in common is stressed by the *foil / oil* rhyme that will be confirmed by the *toil / soil* of lines 6 and 7. At the other end of the cosmic scale, “The grandeur of *God*” no less appropriately rhymes with “his *rod*.” But what of the implicit couplet

ing of grand God and industrial humanity in the ending *trod / shod* rhymes of lines 5 and 8? These rhymes remind Hopkins's reader that Christ, too, was a worker, a walker of hard roads, and that "the grandeur of God" is manifest in the world through which the weary generations tread.

Rhymes appearing like these at the end of a line are known as end rhymes, but poets frequently make use of internal rhymes such as the *then / men* of Hopkins's line 4, the *seared / hleared / smeared* of line 6, or the *wears / shares* of line 7. Assonance (the repetition of identical or similar vowel sounds) is present in the *not/rod* of line 4. This sonnet also contains two examples of a related sound effect, onomatopoeia, sometimes called *echoism*, a combination

of words whose sounds seem to resemble the sound it denotes. So, in lines 3 and 4, the long, slow, alliterative vowels — "ooze of oil" — seem squeezed out by the crushing pressure of the heavily stressed verb that follows. So, too, the triple repetition of "have trod" in line 5 seems to echo the thudding boots of the laboring generations.

All the rhymes so far discussed have been what is known as masculine rhymes in that they consist of a single stressed syllable. Rhyme words in which a stressed syllable is followed by an unstressed syllable — *chiming /*

rhyming—are known as feminine rhymes. Single (one-syllable) and double (two-syllable) rhymes are the most common, but triple and even quadruple rhymes are also to be found, usually in a comic context like that of Gilbert's 2038 / VERSIFICATION

"I Am the Very Model of a Modern Major-General"
(p. 1144) or Byron's *Don Juan* (p. 837):

But — Oh! ye lords of ladies *intellectual*,

Inform us truly, have they not been *-pecked you all?*

If the correspondence of rhyming sounds is exact, it is called perfect rhyme or else *full* or *true rhyme*. For many centuries, almost all English writers of serious poems confined themselves to rhymes of this sort, except for an occasional poetic license (or violation of the rules of versification) such as *eye rhyme*s, words whose endings are spelled alike, and in most instances were pronounced alike, but have in the course of time acquired a different pronunciation: *prove/love; daughter /laughter*. Since the nineteenth century, however, an increasing number of poets have felt the con-

fident claims of perfect rhymes inappropriate for poems of doubt, frustration, and grief, and have used various forms of imperfect rhyme, including:

Off-rhyme (also known as *half rhyme, near rhyme, or slant rhyme*) differs from perfect rhyme in changing the vowel sound and/or the concluding con-

sonants expected of perfect rhyme. See Byron's *gone /alone* rhyme in the second stanza of "On This Day I Complete My Thirty-sixth Year" (p. 862), or Dickinson's rhyming of *Room / Storm; firm / Room; and he / Fly* in "I heard a Fly buzz - when I died -" (p. 1121).

Vowel rhyme goes beyond off-rhyme to the point at which rhyme words have only their vowel sound in common. See, for example, the muted but musically effective rhymes of Dylan Thomas's "Fern Hill" (p. 1571): *houghs / towns; green / leaves; starry / barley; climb / eyes / light*.

Pararhyme, in which the stressed vowel sounds differ but are flanked by identical or similar consonants, is a term coined by Edmund Blunden to describe Wilfred Owen's pioneering use of such rhymes. Although they had occurred on occasion before — see *trod / trade* in lines 5 and 6 of "God's Grandeur" — Owen was the first to employ pararhyme consistently. In a poem such as "Strange Meeting" (p. 1389), the second rhyme is usually

lower in pitch (has a deeper vowel sound) than the first, producing effects of dissonance, failure, and unfulfillment that subtly reinforce Owen's theme. The last stanza of his "Miners" shows a further refinement:

The centuries will burn rich loads
With which we groaned,
Whose warmth shall lull their dreaming lids,
While songs are crooned.
But they will not dream of us poor lads,
Left in the ground.

Here, the pitch of the pararhyme rises to reflect the dream of a happier future — *loads / lids*—before plunging to the desolate reality of *lads*, a rise and fall repeated in *groaned / crooned / ground*.

The effect of rhyming — whether the chime is loud or muted — is to a large extent dictated by one rhyme's distance from another, a factor frequently dictated by the rhyme scheme of the poet's chosen stanza form. At one FORMS / 2039

extremes stands the monorhyme, a poem of no predetermined meter, line-length, or number of lines; the sole requirement being its one rhyme. The greater the length of a monorhyme, the greater the difficulty of achieving the conversational fluency and ease of Dick Davis's "Monorhyme for the Shower":

Lifting her arms to soap her hair
Her pretty breasts respond — and there
The movement of that buoyant pair
Is like a spell to make me swear
Twenty odd years have turned to air;
Now she's the girl I didn't dare

Approach, ask out, much less declare
My love to, mirrored in young despair.
Childbearing, rows, domestic care —
All the prosaic wear and tear
That constitute the life we share —
Slip from her beautiful and bare
Bright body as, made half aware
Of my quick surreptitious stare,
Shewrings the water from her hair
And turnings smile to see me there.

At the other end of the spectrum of rhyme stands Paul Muldoon's use of the same (or virtually the same) rhymes of the ninety-line poem, "Third Epistle to Timothy" (p. 1981), in the same order, in four other ninety-line poems: "Yarrow," "Incantata," "The Mud Room," and "The Bangle (Slight Return)."

Only marginally less remarkable is Dylan Thomas's "Author's Prologue," a poem of 102 lines, in which line 1 rhymes with line 102, line 2 with 101, and so on, down to the central couplet of lines 51—52. Rhyme schemes, however, are seldom so taxing for poets (or their readers) and, as with their choice of meter, are likely to be determined consciously or subconsciously by their knowledge of earlier poems written in this or that form.

Forms

Basic Forms

Having looked at—and listened to—the ways in which metrical feet com-

bine in a poetic line, one can move on to see—and hear—how such lines combine in the

larger patterns of the dance, what are known as the forms of poetry.

1. Blank verse, at one end of the scale, consists of unrhymed (hence "blank") iambic pentameters. Introduced to England by Surrey in his translations from the *Aeneid* (1554), it soon became the standard meter for Elizabethan poetic drama. No verse form is closer to the natural rhythms of spoken English or more adaptive to different levels of speech. Following the example

of Shakespeare, whose kings, clowns, and country folk have each their own voice when speaking blank verse, it has been used by dramatists from Marlowe to Eliot. Milton chose it for his religious epic *Paradise Lost* (p. 420), Wordsworth for his autobiographical epic *The Prelude* (p. 781), and Coleridge

for his meditative lyric "Frost at Midnight" (p. 810). During the nine-

teenth century, it became a favorite form of dramatic monologue such as Tennyson's "Ulysses" (p. 992) and Browning's "Fra Lippo Lippi" (p. 1026), in which a single speaker (who is not the poet) addresses a dramatically defined listener in a specific situation and at a critical moment. All of these poems are divided into verse paragraphs of varying length, as distinct from the stanza of equal length that make up Tennyson's "Tears, Idle Tears"

(p. 995) or Stevens's "Sunday Morning" (p. 1257).

2. The couplet, two lines of verse, usually coupled by rhyme, has been a principal unit of English poetry since rhyme entered the language. The first of the anonymous thirteenth- and fourteenth-century lyrics in this anthol-

ogy (p. 15) is in couplets, but the first poet to use the form consistently was Chaucer, whose "General Prologue" to *The Canterbury Tales* (p. 19) exhibits great flexibility. His narrative momentum tends to overrun line endings, and his pentameter couplets are seldom the self-contained syntactic units one finds in Jonson's "On My First Son" (p. 323). The sustained use of such closed couplets attained its ultimate sophistication in what came to be known as heroic couplets ("heroic" because of their use in epic poems or plays), pioneered by Denham in the seventeenth century and perfected by Dryden and Pope in the eighteenth. The Chaucerian energies of the iambic pentameter were reined in, and each couplet made a balanced whole within the greater balanced whole of its poem, "Mac Flecknoe" (p. 517), for example -

ple, or "The Rape of the Lock" (p. 604). As if in reaction against the elevated ("heroic" or "mock heroic") diction and syntactic formality of the heroic couplet, more-recent users of the couplet have tended to veer toward the other extreme of informality. Colloquialisms, frequent enjambement, and variable placing of the caesura mask the formal rhyming of Browning's "My Last Duchess" (p. 1012), as the speaker of that dramatic monologue seeks to mask its diabolical organization. Owen, with the pararrhymes of "Strange Meeting" (p. 1389), and Yeats, with the off-rhymed tetrameters of "Under Ben Bulbin" (p. 1208), achieve similarly informal effects.

3. The tercet is a stanza of three lines traditionally linked with a single rhyme, although the tercets of Williams's "Poem" (p. 1275) and those of some other modern poets are unrhymed. It may also be a three-line section of

a larger poetic structure, as, for example, the set of a sonnet (p. 2042). Tercets can be composed of lines of equal length — iambic tetrameter in Herrick's

"Upon Julia's Clothes" (p. 359), trochaic octameter in Browning's "A Toccata of Galuppi's" (p. 1017) — or of different length, as in Hardy's "The Convergence of the Twain" (p. 1156). An important variant of this form is the linked tercet, or terza rima, in which the second line of each stanza rhymes with the first and third lines of the next. A group of such stanzas is commonly concluded with a final line supplying the missing rhyme, as in Wilbur's "First Snow in Alsace" (p. 1632), although Shelley expanded the conclusion to a couplet in his "Ode to the West Wind" (p. 872).

No verse form in English FORMS / 2041

poetry is more closely identified with its inventor than is terza rima with Dante, whose use of it for his *Divine Comedy*. Shelley invokes the inspiration of his great predecessor in choosing the form for his "Ode" written on the outskirts of Dante's Florence, and T. S. Eliot similarly calls the *Divine Comedy* to mind with the tercets — unrhymed, but aligned on the page like Dante's — of a passage in part 2 of "Little Gidding" that ends:

"From wrong to wrong the exasperated spirit
Proceeds, unless restored by that refining fire
Where you must move in measure, like a
dancer."

The day was breaking. In the disfigured street
He left me, with a kind of valediction,
And faded on the blowing of the horn.

4. The quatrain, a stanza of four lines, rhymed or unrhymed, is the most common of all English stanzaic forms. And the most common type of quatrain is the ballad stanza, in which lines of iambic tetrameter alternate with iambic trimeter, rhyming *abcb* (lines 1 and 3 being unrhymed) or, less com-

monly, *abab*. This, the stanza of popular ballads such as “Sir Patrick Spens”

(p. 103), Coleridge’s literary ballad “The Rime of the Ancient Mariner”

(p. 812), and Dickinson’s “I felt a Funeral, in my Brain” (p. 1115), also occurs in many hymns and is the recalled common meter. The expansion of lines 2 and 4 to tetrameters produces a quatrain known (particularly in hymn books) as long meter, the form of Hardy’s “Channel Firing” (p. 1157).

When, on the other hand, the first line is shortened to a trimeter, matching lines 2 and 4, the stanza is called short meter. Gascoigne uses it for “And If I Did, What Then?” (p. 144) and Hardy uses it for “I Look into My Glass” (p. 1153).

Stanzas of iambic pentameter rhyming *abab*, as in Gray’s

“Elegy Written in a Country Churchyard” (p. 669), are known as heroic quatrains. The pentameter stanzas of FitzGerald’s “Rubaiyat of Omar Khayyam of Naisapur” (p. 961) are rhymed *aaba*, a rhyme scheme that Frost elaborates in “Stopping by Woods on a Snowy Evening” (p. 1237), where the third line (unrhymed in the “Rubaiyat”) rhymes with lines 1, 2, and 4 of the following stanza, producing an effect like that of terza rima. Quatrains can also be in monorhyme, as in Rossetti’s “The Woodspurge” (p. 1105); com-

posed of two couplets, as in "Now Go 't the Sun
under Wood" (p. 15); or rhymed *abba*, as in Ten-
nyson's "In Memoriam A. H. H." (p. 996).

5. Rhymeroyal, a seven-line iambic-penta-
meter stanza rhyming *ababbcc*, was introduced
by Chaucer in *Troilus and Criseide* (p. 67), but its
name is thought to come from its later use by King
James I of Scotland in "The Kingis Quair." Later ex-
amples include Wyatt's "They Fleefrom Me"
(p. 127) and those somberstanza in Auden's
"The Shield of Achilles" (p. 1479) that descri-
be the twentieth century, as a contrast to the
eight-line stanza with a ballad rhythm that
describe a mythic past.

6. Ottavarima is an eight-line stanza, as its
Italian name indicates, and it rhymes *abababcc*.
Like terza rima and the sonnet (below), it was
introduced to English literature by Sir Thomas
Wyatt. Byron put it to brilliant use in *Don Juan* (p. 83
7), frequently undercutting with a comic
couplet these em-

2042 / VERSIFICATION

ing seriousness of the six preceding lines.
Yeats used ottava rima more gravely in "Sailing to By-
zantium" (p. 1199) and "Among School Child-
ren" (p. 1200).

7. The Spenserian stanza has nine lines, the
first eight being iambic pen-

tameter and the last an iambic hexameter
(an alexandrine), rhyming *ababbcbcc*. Chaucer
had used two such quatrains, linked by three
rhymes, as the stanza form of "The Monk's
Tale," but Spenser's addition of a con-

cluding alexandrine gave the stanza he devi-
sed for *The Faerie Queene* (p. 165) an inequality in
its final couplet, a variation reducing the risk of
monotony that can overtake a long series of iam-
bi

pentameters. Keats and Hopkins wrote their earliest known poems in this form, and Keats went on to achieve perhaps the fullest expression of its intricate harmonies in "The Eve of St. Agnes" (p. 907). Partly, no doubt, in tribute to that poem, Shelley used the Spenserian stanza in his great elegy for Keats, "Adonais" (p. 879); later, the form was a natural choice for the narrative of Tennyson's

"The Lotus-Eaters" (p. 988).

Ottavari and the Spenserian stanza each open with a quatrain and close with a couplet. These and other of the shorter stanzaic units similarly recur as component parts of certain lyrics with a fixed form.

8. The sonnet, traditionally a poem of fourteen iambic pentameters linked by an intricate rhyme scheme, is one of the oldest verse forms in English.

Used by almost every notable poet in the language, it is the best example of how rhyme and meter can provide the imagination not with a prison but with a theater. The sonnet originated in Italy and, since being introduced to England by Sir Thomas Wyatt (see his "Whoso List to Hunt," p. 126) in the early sixteenth century, has been the stage for the soliloquies of countless lovers and for dramatic action ranging from a dinner party (p. 1108) to the rape of Leda and the fall of Troy (p. 1200). There are two basic types of sonnet—the Italian, or Petrarchan (named after the fourteenth-century Italian poet Petrarch), and the English, or Shakespearean—and a number of variant types, of which the most important is the Spenserian. They differ in their rhyme schemes, and consequently their structure, as shown on p. 2043.

.

The Italian sonnet, with its distinctive division into octave (an eight-line unit) and sestet (a six-line unit), is structurally suited to a statement followed by a counterstatement, as in Milton's "When I Consider How My Light Is Spent" (p. 418). The blind poet's questioning of divine justice is checked by the voice of Patience, whose haste "to prevent That murmur" is conveyed by the accelerated turn (change in direction of argument or narrative) on the word "but" in the last line of the octave, rather than the first of the sestet.

Shelley's "Ozymandias" (p. 870) follows the same pattern of statement and counterstatement, except that its turn comes in the traditional position.

Another pattern common to the Italian sonnet—observation (octave) and amplifying conclusion (sestet)—underlies Keats's "On First Looking into Chapman's Homer" (p. 905) and Hill's "The Laurel Axe" (p. 1835). Of these, only Milton's has a sestet conforming to the conventional rhyme scheme:

$$\left. \begin{array}{c} a \\ b \\ b \\ a \end{array} \right\}$$

$$\left. \begin{array}{c} a \\ b \\ b \\ a \end{array} \right\}$$



The Italian Sonnet

The English Sonnet

a

First

First

b

quatrain

quatrain

a

b

Octave

c

Second

Second

d

quatrain

quatrain

c

d

e

Third

f

quatrain

e

Turn

f

First

tercet

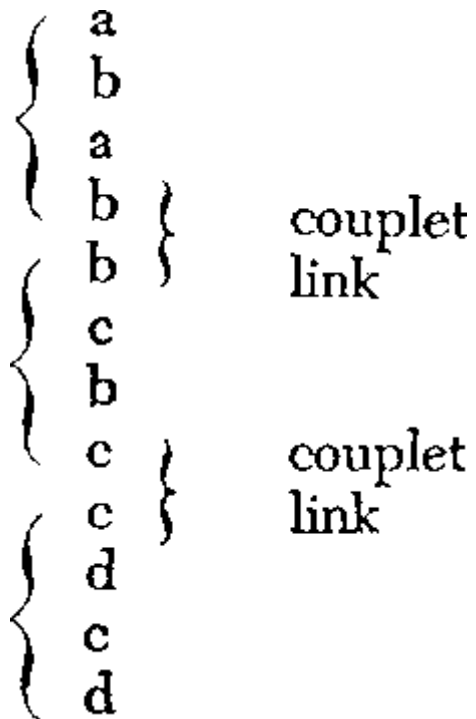
Sestet

Turn

Second

Couplet

tercet



The Spenserian Sonnet

First

quatrain

Second

quatrain

Third

quatrain

Couplet

i :

2044 / VERSIFICATION

others, such as Donne's "Holy Sonnets" (p. 318), end with a couplet, sometimes causing them to be mistaken for sonnets of the other type.

The English sonnet falls into three quatrains, with a turn at the end of line 12 and a concluding couplet often of a summary or epigrammatic character. M. H. Abrams has well described the unfolding of Drayton's "Since there's no help, come let us kiss and part" (p. 238): "The lover brusquely declares in the first two quatrains that he is glad the affair is cleanly broken off, pauses in the third quatrain as though at the threshold, and in the last two rhymed lines suddenly drops his swagger to make one last plea."

Spenser, in the variant form that bears his name, reintroduced to the English sonnet the couplets characteristic of the Italian sonnet. This interweaving of the quatrains, as in sonnet 75 of his "Amoretti" (p. 194), makes possible a more musical and closely developed argument, and tends to reduce the sometimes excessive assertiveness of the final couplet. That last feature of the English sonnet is satirized by Brooke in his "Sonnet Reversed," which turns romantic convention upside down by *beginning* with the couplet:

Hand trembling towards hand; the amazing lights

Of heart and eye. They stood on supreme heights.

The three quatrains that follow record the ensuing anticlimax of suburban married life. Meredith in "Modern Love" (p. 1107) stretched the sonnet to sixteen lines; Hopkins cut it short in what he termed his curtal (a curtailed form of "curtailed") sonnet "Pied Beauty" (p. 1167); while Shakespeare concealed a sonnet in *Romeo and Juliet* (1.5.90—103). Shakespeare's 154 better-known sonnets form a carefully organized progression, or sonnet sequence, following the precedent of earlier sonneteers such as Sidney with his "Astrophil and Stella"

(p. 213) and Spenser with his “Amoretti” (p. 190). In the nineteenth century, Elizabeth Barrett Browning’s “Sonnets from the Portuguese” (p. 947) continued a tradition in which the author of “Berryman’s Sonnets” has since, with that title, audaciously challenged the author of Shakespeare’s sonnets.

The twentieth century saw the introduction to English poetry of a Russian sonnet, the stanza form of Alexander Pushkin’s verse novel, *Eugene Onegin* (1823—31). This was successfully translated—preserving its original form—

by Sir Charles Johnston in 1977; but it was not until 1986 that the Pushkinian stanza first entered English poetry, in its own right, in Vikram Seth’s verse novel, *The Golden Gate* (p. 1994). Arguably the most technically demanding of all English poetic forms, the Pushkinian stanza is composed

of fourteen tetrameter (not pentameter) lines rhyming as follows:

a f e m i n i n e rhyme (p. 2037)

b masculine rhyme (p. 2037)

a feminine

b masculine

c feminine

c feminine

d masculine

F O R M S / 2 0 4 5

D

masculine

e

feminine

f

masculine

f

masculine

e

feminine

g

masculine

g

masculine

9. The villanelle, a French verse form derived from an earlier Italian folk song, retains the circular pattern of a peasant dance. It consists of five tercets rhyming *aha* followed by a quatrain rhyming *ahaa*, with the first line of the initial tercet recurring as the last line of the second and fourth tercets and the third line of the initial tercet recurring as the last line of the third and fifth tercets, these two refrains (lines of regular recurrence) being again repeated as the last two lines of the poem. If A1 and A2 may be said to represent the first and third lines of the initial tercet, the rhyme scheme of the villanelle will look like this:

tercet 1: A1 B A2

2: A B A1

3: A B A2

4: A B A1

5: A B A2

quatrain: A B A1 A2

The art of writing complicated forms like the villanelle and sestina (see below) is to give them the graceful momentum of good dancing, and the vitality of the dance informs triumphant examples such as Roethke's "The Waking" (p. 1500), Bishop's "One Art" (p. 1527), and Thomas's "Do Not Go Gentle into That Good Night" (p. 1572).

10. **T h e s e s t i n a** , the most complicated of the verse forms initiated by the twelfth-century wandering singers known as troubadours, is **c o m p o s e d** of six stanzas of six lines each, followed by an envoy, or concluding stanza, that incorporates lines or words used before: in this case the *words* (instead of *rhymes*) end each line in the following pattern:

stanza 1: **A B C D E F**

2: **F A E B D C**

3: **C F D A B E**

4: **E C B F A D**

5: **D E A C F B**

6: **B D F E C A**

envoy: **E C A** or **A C E** [these lines should contain the remaining three

end words]

T h e earliest example in this anthology is, in fact a *double sestina*: Sidney's

“Ye Goatherd Gods” (p. 208). Perhaps daunted by the intricate brilliance of this, **f e w** poets attempted the form for the next three centuries. It was reintroduced by Swinburne and Pound, **w h o** prepared the way for notable

2046 / V E R S I F I C A T I O N

contemporary examples such as Bishop's “Sestina” (p. 1520), Hecht's “The Book of Yolek” (p. 1566), and Ashbery's “The Painter” (p. 1736).

11. **T h e c a n z o n e** , another verse form initiated by the twelfth-century troubadours, has a history of varying lengths and patterns. It often consists of five twelve-line stanzas and a five-line envoy, all employing the same five line-end words. A **c o m m o n** pattern of repetition is that followed (with minor variations) by Agha Shahid Ali's “Lenox Hill” (p. 1959): *abaacaadae /*

eaebeeccedd / deddaddbbcc / cdceccaacbb / bcbdbbbeebaa / abcde.

12. The pantoum, a Malayan form in origin, entered English poetry by way of nineteenth-century French poetry. It may consist of any number of quatrains, lines 2 and 4 of which are repeated as lines 1 and 3 of the next quatrain.

The poem rhymes *abab / bcbc*, and so on, and generally ends with a quatrain whose repetitions (repeated lines) are lines 1 and 3 of the first stanza in reversed order, or in a repetition couplet consisting of lines 1 and 3 of the first stanza in reversed order. See Donald Justice's "Pantoum of the Great Depression" (p. 1687) and Greg Williamson's "New Year's: A Short Pantoum" (p. 2024).

13. The limerick (to end this section on the first of two lighter notes) is a five-line stanza thought to take its name from an old custom at convivial parties whereby each person was required to sing an extemporized "nonsense verse," which was followed by a chorus containing the words "Will you come up to Limerick?" The acknowledged Old Master of the limerick is Edward Lear (p. 1041), who required that the first and fifth lines end with the same word (usually a place-name), a restriction abandoned by many Modern Masters, though triumphantly retained by the anonymous author of this:

There once was a man from Nantucket

Who kept all his cash in a bucket;

But his daughter named Nan

Ran away with a man,

And as for the bucket, Nantucket.

14. The clerihew, named after its inventor, Edmund Clerihew Bentley (1875—1956), is a short comic or nonsensical poem about a famous person, consisting of two rhymed couplets with lines of unequal length. Some of the best are to be found in W. H. Auden's "Academic Graffiti"—this, for example:

John Milton

Never stayed in a Hilton

Hotel,

W h i c h was just as well.

Composite Forms

Just as good poets have always varied their base rhythm, there have always b e e n those ready to bend, stretch, or in some way modify a fixed form to suit F O R M S / 2 0 4 7

the demands of a particular subject. The earliest systematic and successful pioneer of such variation was John Skelton, who gave his name to what has come to be called S k e l t o n i c verse. His poems typically—see, for example, the extract from “Colin Clout” (p. 92)—have short lines of anything from three to seven syllables containing two or three stresses (though more of both are common), and exploit a single rhyme until inspiration and the

resources of the language run out. The breathless urgency of this form has intrigued and influenced modern poets such as Graves and Auden.

Another early composite form employed longer lines: iambic hexameter

(twelve syllables) alternating with iambic heptameter (fourteen syllables).

This form, known as “poulter’s measure”—from the poultryman’s practice of giving twelve eggs for the first dozen and fourteen for the second—was used by sixteenth-century poets such as Wyatt (p. 126), Queen Elizabeth I (p. 142), and Sidney (p. 208), but has not proved popular since.

The element of the unexpected often accounts for much of the success of

poems in a composite form such as Donne’s “The Sun Rising” (p. 295). His stanza might be described as a

combination of two quatrains (the first rhyming *abba*, the second *cdcd*), and a couplet (*ee*). That description would be accurate but inadequate in that it takes no account of the variation in line length, which is a crucial feature of the poem's structure. It opens explosively with the outrage of the interrupted lover:

Busy old fool, unruly sun,

Why dost thou thus

Through windows and through curtains call on us?

Short lines, tetrameter followed by dimeter, suggest the speaker's initial shock and give place, as he begins to recover his composure, to the steadier pentameters that complete the first quatrain. Continuing irritation propels the brisk tetrameters that form the first half of the second quatrain. This, again, is completed by calmer pentameters, and the stanza rounded off like an English sonnet, with a summary pentameter couplet:

Love, all alike, no season knows nor clime

Nor hours, days, months, which are the rags of time.

This variation in line length achieves a different effect in the third stanza, where the brief trimeter suggests an absence contrasting with the royal presences in the preceding tetrameter:

She's all states, and all princes, I,

Nothing else is.

And these lines prepare, both rhetorically and visually, for the contraction and expansion so brilliantly developed in the poem's triumphant close. Similar structural considerations account for the composite stanza forms of Arnold's "The Scholar-Gypsy" (p. 1089) and Lowell's "Skunk Hour" (p. 1601), though variations of line length and rhyme scheme between the six-line stanzas of Lowell's poem bring it close to the line that divides composite form from the next category.

Irregular Forms

A poet writing in irregular form will use rhyme and meter but follow no

fixed pattern. A classic example is Milton's "Lycidas" (p. 410), which is written in iambic pentameters interspersed with an occasional trimeter, probably modeled on the occasional half-lines that intersperse the hexameters of Virgil's *Aeneid*. Milton's rhyming in this elegy (a formal lament for a dead person) is similarly varied, and a few lines are unrhymed. The most extensive use of irregular form is to be found in one of the three types of ode.

Long lyric poems of elevated style and elaborate stanzaic structure, the original odes of the Greek poet Pindar were modeled on songs sung by the

chorus in Greek drama. The three-part structure of the regular Pindaric ode has been attempted once or twice in English, but more common and more successful has been the irregular Pindaric ode, which has no three-part

structure but sections of varying length, varying line length, and varying rhyme scheme. Each of Pindar's odes was written to celebrate someone, and celebration has been the theme of many English Pindaric odes, among them Dryden's "A Song for St. Cecilia's Day" (p. 524), Tate's "Ode to the Confederate Dead" (p. 1417), and Lowell's "The Quaker Graveyard in Nantucket"

(p. 1592). The desire to celebrate someone or something has also prompted most English odes of the third type, those modeled on the subject matter, tone, and form of the Roman poet Horace. More meditative and restrained

than the boldly irregular Pindaric ode, the Horatian ode is usually written in a repeated stanza form—Marvell's "An Horatian Ode (Upon Cromwell's Return from Ireland)" (p. 486) in quatrains, for example, and Keats's "To Autumn" (p. 939) in a composite eleven-line stanza.

Open Forms or Free Verse

At the opposite end of the formal scale from the fixed forms (or, as they are sometimes called, closed forms) of sonnet, villanelle, and sestina, we come to what was long known as free verse, poetry that makes little or no use of traditional rhyme and meter. The term is misleading, however, suggesting to some less thoughtful champions of open forms (as free-verse structures are now increasingly called) a false analogy with political freedom as opposed to slavery, and suggesting to traditionalist opponents the disorder or anarchy implied by Frost's in/famous remark that "writing free verse is like playing tennis with the net down." There was much unprofitable debate in the last century over the relative merits and "relevance" of closed and open forms, unprofitable because, as will be clear to any reader of this anthology, good poems continue to be written in both. It would be foolish to wish that Larkin wrote like Whitman, or Atwood like Dickinson. Poets must find forms and rhythms appropriate to their voices. When, around 1760, Smart chose an open form for "Jubilate Agno" (p. 678), that incantatory catalog of the attributes of his cat Jeffery proclaimed its descent from the King James translation of the Hebrew Scriptures and, specifically, such parallel cadences as those of Psalm 150:

Praise ye the Lord. Praise God in his sanctuary:

praise him in the firmament of his power.

F O R M S / 2 0 4 9

Praise him for his mighty acts: praise him

according to his excellent greatness.

Praise him with the sound of the trumpet: praise

him with the psaltery and harp.

These rhythms and rhetorical repetitions, audible also in Blake's prophetic books, resurfaced in the work of the nineteenth-century founder of American poetry, as we know it today. Whitman's elegy for an unknown soldier,

“Vigil Strange I Kept on the Field O n e Night” (p. 1071), may end with a traditional image of the rising sun, like Milton’s “Lycidas” (p. 410), but its cadences are those of the Hebrew Scriptures he read as a boy:

**And there and then and bathed by the rising sun, my son
in his grave, in**

his rude-dug grave I deposited,

**Ending my vigil strange with that, vigil of night and battle-
field dim,**

**Vigil for boy of responding kisses, (never again on earth
responding,)**

**Vigil for comrade swiftly slain, vigil I never forget, h o w as
day**

brighten’d,

**I rose from the chill ground and folded my soldier well in
his blanket,**

And buried him where he fell.

**Whitman’s breakaway from the prevailing poetic forms of
his time was truly revolutionary, but certain traditional
techniques he would use for special effect: the concealed
well/fell rhyme that gives his elegy its closing chord, for
example, or the bounding anapests of an earlier line:**

**O n e l o o k | I but gave | which your d e a r | eyes return’d
|**

with a l o o k | I shall n e v | er forget ...

**The poetic revolution that W h i t m a n initiated was
continued by Pound, w h o wrote of his predecessor:**

It was you that broke the n e w wood,

N o w is a time for carving.

**Pound, the carver, unlike Whitman, the pioneer, came to
open forms b y w a y of closed forms, a progression
reflected in the first four sections of Pound’s partly**

autobiographical portrait of the artist, “Hugh Selwyn Mauberley”

(p. 1298). Each section is less “literary,” less formal than the last, quatrains with two rhymes yielding to quatrains with one rhyme and, in section 4, to Whitmanian free verse. A similar progression from the mastery of closed forms to the mastery of open forms can be seen in the development of poets such as Lawrence, Eliot, Auden, Lowell, Rich, and Plath (pp. 1284, 1340, 1465, 1592, 1791, 1836, respectively).

Pound may have called himself a carver, but he, too, proved a pioneer,

opening up terrain that has been more profitably mined by his successors

than the highlands, the rolling cadences explored by Smart, Blake, and Whitman. Pound recovered for poets territory then inhabited only by novelists, the low ground of everyday speech, a private rather than a public language.

He was aided by Williams, who, in a poem such as “The Red Wheelbarrow,”

2 0 5 0 / V E R S I F I C A T I O N

used the simplest cadences of c o m m o n speech to reveal the extraordinary nature of “ordinary” things:

so m u c h depends

upon

a red wheel

barrow

glazed with rain

water

beside the white

chickens.

Each line depends upon the next to complete it, indicating the interdependence of things in the poem and, by extension, in the world. “The Red Wheel-

barrow” bears out the truth of Auden’s statement that in free verse “you need an infallible ear to determine where the lines should end.”

Other Forms of Poetry

Probably no century of the sixty since people began writing saw more

experimentation in the arts generally, and in poetry particularly, than the last. The twentieth-century pioneers of what came to be known as the Confessional, Imagist, L = A = N = G = U = A = G = E, and Objectivist “schools” of poetry defined these modes by aesthetic or philosophic criteria, rather than by any distinct formal characteristics (that would qualify them for inclusion in this essay).

By contrast, the twentieth century witnessed the development of at least

five other categories of experimental poetry that *can* be defined by their formal characteristics:

1. **P r o s e p o e t r y** originated in nineteenth-century France, reaching perhaps its highest point in the work of Charles Baudelaire and Arthur Rimbaud. A prose poem may have any or all of the features of the lyric, except that it is set out on the page for the eye — t h o u g h not the ear—as prose. Hill’s “Mercian Hymns” may look like prose, but the poet insists that his lines are to be printed exactly as they appear on pp. 1833—34; and the reader’s ear will

detect musical cadences no less linked and flowing than in good free verse, with which prose poetry has much in common.

2. **F o u n d** poetry, a twentieth-century offshoot of prose poetry, converts a passage or passages of someone else’s prose—from a novel, a newspaper, even an advertisement—into a poem. This may involve some modification,

like that described, for example, in Brownjohn's footnote to his poem "Common Sense" (p. 1829).

3. Shaped poetry has a distinguished lineage, extending from ancient Greece to modern England and America. Eye and ear together are never

SUGGESTIONS FOR FURTHER READING / 2051

more dramatically engaged than in the reading of shaped poems such as Herbert's "Easter Wings" (p. 368), Hollander's "Swan and Shadow"

(p. 1775), and Corn's "A Conch from Sicily" (p. 1930).

4. Concrete poetry is an exception to the generalization at the start of this essay: "A poem is a composition written for performance by the human voice." (All generalizations are false, as the French say, including this one.) The term *concrete poetry* was coined by a group of Brazilian poets in 1952

to cover a loose category of verbal explorations by avant-garde artists and poets around the world. These range from ingenious typographic structures that, unlike the shaped poems mentioned above, cannot be "voiced"—

Mahon's "The Window" (p. 1923), for example—to Jonathan Williams's

"Three ripples in Tuckasegee River," which can:

TSI KSI TSI

KSI TSI KSI

TSI KSI TSI

The poet's note to this says: "Tsiksitsi is a Cherokee onomatopoeia for the sound of running water."

5. Sound poetry, extending the latter, more abstract form of concrete poetry into a kind of music, has been called "the ultimate performance poetry." Its performative nature is engagingly demonstrated by Edwin Morgan's poem

“Interview,” which begins:

— **W h e n** did you start writing sound-poetry:1

—Vindaberry am hookshma tintol ensa ar’er.

Vindashton hama haz temmi-bloozma tontek.

—I see. So you were really quite precocious.

And did your parents encourage you?

— **Z i w a** mimtod enna parahashtom ganna,

spod **z i w a** didtod quershpot quindast volla!

Mindetta brooshch quarva tonch bot.

Spolva harabashtat su!

Suggestions for Further Reading

Poets have been making p o e m s for as long as composers have been making m u s i c or carpenters furniture, and just as it would be unreasonable to expect to find the lore and language of music or carpentry distilled into one short essay, so there is more to be said about the making and appreciating of p o e m s than is said here. The fullest treatment of the subject is to be found in *A History of English Prosody from the Twelfth Century to the Present Day*, by George Saintsbury (3 vols., N e w York, 1906—10), and the *Princeton Ency-2 0 5 2 / V E R S I F I C A T I O N*

lopedia of Poetry and Poetics, edited by Alex Preminger, Frank J. Warnke, and O. B. Hardison, Jr. (Princeton, 1965; enl. ed., 1974). More suitable for students are *The Making of a Poem: A Norton Anthology of Poetic Forms*, edited by Mark Strand and Eavan Boland (N e w York, 2 0 0 0), *The Poem’s Heartbeat*, by Alfred Corn (Ashland, Ore., 1997), *An Introduction to English Poetry*, by James Fenton (London and N e w York, 2 0 0 2), *Poetic Meter and Poetic Form*, by Paul Fussell (N e w York, 1965; rev. ed., 1979), *The Structure of Verse*, edited by Harvey Gross (N e w York, 1966; rev. ed., 1979), *Rhyme’s Reason: A Guide to English Verse*, by John Hollander (New Haven, 1981; enl. ed., 1989), *The Poetry Handbook: A Guide to Reading Poetry for Pleasure and Practical Criticism*, by John Lennard

(Oxford and New York, 1996), and the appropriate entries in *A Glossary of Literary Terms*, by M. H. Abrams (New York, 1957; 6th ed., 1990), and *The Oxford Companion to Twentieth-Century Poetry*, edited by Ian Hamilton (Oxford and New York, 1994). Each of these has its own more detailed suggestions for further reading.

J O N S T A L L W O R T H Y

Poetic Syntax

In Alexander Pope's "The Rape of the Lock" (5.47; p. 619), there is a line few native speakers of English can grasp on first reading: " 'Gainst Pallas, Mars; Latona, Hermes arms." What do we make of such a line, which is punctuated as a self-contained unit of thought:1 And why does it occur in the work of a poet renowned for his elegance and clarity of expression? The answer, or at least one answer, is that Pope is using *poetic syntax* to mimic the hurried confusion that soldiers experience in battle.

Describing a

moment when two pairs of Greek gods are arming themselves to fight each

other, as related in Homer's *Iliad*, Pope adapts a classic syntactic pattern with a Greek name — *zeugma* — for his own poetic purposes. *Zeugma* occurs when a single verb governs several parallel words or clauses (verbal units, discussed below on p. 2056). Using a pattern that some but not all of his English-speaking readers would have recognized, Pope makes a densely compressed line that slows any reader down, impeding easy comprehension. But perhaps that is part of Pope's aim, as he constructs a linguistic analogue for certain aspects of the imagined battle scene. In so doing, Pope uses syntax not only to communicate ideas but also to create certain dramatic and meaningful effects by the very structure of his lines.

What Is Syntax?

Syntax has been defined in many ways; we can begin our own inquiry into

the theory and various historical practices of poetic syntax by saying that it concerns transactions between poets and their audiences—readers and listeners—about the meanings of certain sequences of words. The meanings emerge as words unroll in time and also—if we are reading the poem—in

space. But meaning is also a function of how words and groups of words

hark back to earlier ones, sometimes with the effect of suspending or even contesting time's forward motion.

The word *syntax*, from the Greek words *syn* (together) and *tax* (to arrange), denotes the “orderly or systematic arrangements of parts or elements.” At the most general level, these elements involve symbols, including mathematical ones, that are arranged to create propositions or statements. The symbols that matter most for poetic syntax are words and groups of words; but punctuation marks, line shapes, stanza forms, metrical schemes, and

rhyme patterns are also important for understanding poetic syntax as an

arrangement of words that generates meaningful statements.

2053

2054 / POETICSyntax

When we are discussing poetry, syntax may refer either to actual arrangements of words or to the rules of grammar and conventions of word order that are reflected—but also sometimes challenged—in such arrangements.

We usually think of rules as governing behavior, and syntactic rules do govern the behavior of statements in various languages. In the domain of poetry, however, notions about governance, obedience, and order often exist in

counterpoint to notions about the aesthetic as well as the social values of certain kinds of unruliness—those traditionally discussed under the rubric *poetic license*. Poetic syntax, therefore, is a slippery and even in some ways a contradictory topic, for while we are thinking about syntax as an orderly arrangement of verbal elements according to the conventions of a particular language, we also need to be thinking about poetic syntax as the making of significant disorder within a language—and often with allusions to other

languages and their rules or practices of syntax. We can highlight a paradox inherent in any attempt to define poetic syntax by comparing poetic syntax to a game with complex rules that include—under certain circumstances

—
the option to break the rules.

Poets have played the syntactic game for a long time, often in competition with each other as well as with real and imagined audiences. In this game, some syntactic rules have changed; but many retain signs of the close historical links between English and Latin, two very different languages that nonetheless share many words as well as many ways of defining what constitutes syntactical “correctness.” For students of poetic syntax, the most important difference between English and Latin is that in English, meaning depends on certain words being neighbors to one another, whereas in Latin, proximity and distance between words matters little for understanding most written statements. In Latin, a highly inflected language, endings of words (suffixes) tell us a great deal about which words in a given statement go with which other words; the endings of nouns, adjectives, and verbs change (are

“inflected”) according to their function in a given statement. English is a much less inflected language, although certain words need to “agree” with each other, as is true in Latin and many other languages too: singular nouns take singular verbs, for instance. In English, however,

the most important determinant of meaning is the order of words, individually or in groups. The contrast can be summed up this way: in Latin you can tell your friend that she has *hit the nail on the head* by saying “*rem acu tetigisti*” or “*tetigisti acu rem.*” But in English, you cannot perform the same linguistic operation without severe semantic consequences: there is a considerable difference between saying that *you hit the nail* and saying that *the nail hit you*.

Poets in English play incessantly with normal patterns of word order, thus creating a multitude of interesting, witty, logically subtle, and often surprising effects requiring us to ponder parallels between words and groups of

words sometimes more widely separated from each other than they would be in an ordinary prose statement. Some poets in English use syntactic arrangements in ways that challenge the reader’s expectations about word

order; alternatively or additionally, some poets build sentences with multiple parts more complexly related to each other than they would be in most modern English speech or writing. To participate in the syntactic games poets typically play, we need some shared terms for describing the elements that poets arrange in orderly—but also apparently disorderly—fashion.

PARTS OF SYNTAX / 2055

Parts of Syntax

Sentences and Words

The first rule of the poetic game of syntax as it is represented in an anthology like this one, which includes a wide range of poems written at many

times in many forms of English, is that most poets use the grammatical unit called the *sentence* as a major unit of meaning, along with—but often in counterpoint to—the unit of the *poetic line* or the unit of the *stanza* (see

“Versification,” p. 2040). The sentence is the largest meaning-bearing unit of syntax, while the word is the smallest. Neither unit can be easily defined.

This is so because both sentences and words can be compounded and divided in various ways that become more complex the more closely we look at them across the arc of history. (Because English has changed so much over time, in other words, we can't safely assume that modern rules apply in centuries-old texts; as best we can, we need to bring history into our readings.)

Sentences are sometimes defined as units that have subjects and predi-

cates—in the simplest cases, a noun-subject and a predicate consisting only of a verb (*Jill runs*). In the most c o m m o n type of English sentence, a noun working as a subject is followed by a verb, which leads to (and conceptually affects, acts on) a noun, which may or may not be modified and which is called a

direct object: *the bird eats the worm* or, more elaborately, Edwin Muir's "The grasses threw straight shadows far away" ("Childhood"; p. 1337).

In a second very c o m m o n sentence type, the subject is followed by a predicate that c o m p l e m e n t s (refers back to) the subject. In this kind of sentence, the verb is usually a form of *to be* (or *to seem*) and there is no direct object; instead, a predicate complement tells us something about the subject, as in the first line of Dryden's "Mac Flecknoe" (p. 517): "All human beings are subject to decay"; another example is T. S. Eliot's line "I am not Prince Hamlet, nor was meant to be" ("The Love Song of J. Alfred Prufrock"; p. 1343); yet another is A. R. Ammons's wonderful opening to "Pet Panther"

(p. 1700): "My attention is a wild / animal." This type of sentence lends itself to reflections about identity and to metaphor-making.

In yet a third type of sentence, the subject is followed by a verb that takes neither a direct object nor a predicate complement. Because they neither act on a direct object nor reflect back on the subject, such verbs are called intransitive: *Money talks*, for example, or *Jill faints*. A more

elaborate example comes again from Eliot: “The winter evening settles down / With smell of steaks in passageways” (“Preludes”). Some verbs are always intransitive, while others can be either intransitive or transitive. If a *duck flies overhead*, the verb is intransitive; if *I fly my plane to Reno*, the verb is transitive. (When in doubt, check the dictionary.)

Some modern poets and philosophers prefer sentences with transitive

verbs to all others. Indeed, early in the last century, a philosopher named Ernest Fenellosa, who was a student of Chinese poetry and a major influence on Ezra Pound, urged poets writing in English to strive for concreteness by avoiding the verb *to be* and intransitive verbs. Arguing that the “transfer of power” is a basic truth of nature, Fenellosa maintained that the proper work of poetic syntax is to show an agent (subject) performing an act (transitive verb) on an object, as in *Farmer pounds rice* (Davie, *Articulate Energy*, 36).

2056 / POETICSyntax

Fenellosa’s theory can be contested on many counts, but it has the virtue of helping us understand why even those modern English-language poets

whose *em* to wage war on the rules of grammar and punctuation nonetheless rely on the traditional subject/verb/direct object *sentences* as a basic building block of their poems. This is so, paradoxically, even in cases where the *poem* does *not seem* to include full *sentences* (see “Nominal Syntax” below, p. 2060).

Because poets know that *competent* readers of English expect sentences, poets can assume that readers will work to create a sentence even *when none seem* to exist at first glance. *Such* work (which can also be seen as play) occurs *when* we reread the line by Pope quoted at the beginning of this essay: ” ‘Gainst Pallas, Mars; Latona, Hermes arms.” *Why* do we eventually decide that “arms” is a verb and not a *noun* in this poetic sentence, which is chock-full of inert *proper names* and which doesn’t give

us a verb where we would normally expect it to be:1 The answer, or one answer, is that Pope expects us to resolve the “confusion” of his fighting gods into a kind of peace: the sense offered by the sentence. Aided by a knowledge of syntax, we can see not only that “arms” in this line functions as a verb, but also that it functions retroactively, as it were, serving as the intransitive verb for both parts of the statement. We can translate it into prose as *Mars [arms] against Pallas; Hermes arms against Latona*. Armed with a knowledge of syntax, and willing to expend time on translating or paraphrasing Pope’s impacted statement, we can win meaning from his odd arrangement of words.

Although some poets (and English teachers) share Fenellosa’s preference for sentences with a subject, an active verb, and a direct object, many poets vary their sentence structures to capture different shades of thought about action and passion — and to create subtly varied rhythms. Consider, for example, the opening stanza of Kenneth Koch’s “Permanently” (p. 1691), which illustrates all three basic types of English sentence structure and concludes with special praise for one of them. Can you identify each type?

One day the Nouns were clustered in the street.

An Adjective walked by, with her dark beauty.

The Nouns were struck, moved, changed.

The next day a Verb drove up, and created the Sentence.*

As Koch’s lines remind us, many sentences are little narratives; in them, something happens, a story is told, time passes in a consequential way. At the end, we pause, and that pause has been signaled, in writing since the late Middle Ages, with a period. This mark is the graphic equivalent of a drop in the voice or a time for breathing between thoughts. The word *period* has many historical meanings. One denotes the sentence itself; another denotes a particular kind of sentence, in which several *subordinate clauses* build toward a *main clause*.

Clauses

A clause is a verbal unit that may look like, may even be, a sentence because both contain subjects and predicates. *Jill runs home* is both a clause

*Line 1: subject + predicate complement (Nouns were struck, moved, changed).
/ were clustered).

Line 4: subject + intransitive verb (Verb / drove

Line 2: subject + intransitive verb (Adjective / up) and subject + transitive verb + direct object walked by).

(Verb ... / created / the Sentence).

Line 3: subject + predicate complement (Nouns /

PARTS OF SYNTAX / 2057

and a sentence. But we understand the sentence to be the larger or “containing” unit and a clause to be the smaller or “component” unit. This is because a sentence may contain more than one clause. The “periodic” sentence, mentioned above, has one main (or independent) clause and any number of subordinate clauses (*When she remembered the time, which she did when the bell rang, Jill ran home*). Some sentences have two (or more) main clauses, although in such cases, the term *main* (again, or *independent*) loses some of its conventional meaning. Clauses in such sentences are coordinate and therefore, in truth, only semi-independent. They are sometimes connected by certain punctuation marks other than the period; today, independent clauses are usually yoked by the semicolon, but in older writing, the colon often connects clauses that are independent but nonetheless closely related. Alternatively, such clauses may be connected by coordinating conjunctions such as *and*, *but*, *so*, *for*. An example of such a conjunction occurs in Denise Levertov’s poem “The Closed World”:

The house-snake dwells here still

under the threshold

but for months I have not seen it... .

A subordinate clause has a subject and a predicate, but cannot stand alone in (or as) a sentence. Such clauses appear in various positions in complex sentences—some precede, others follow, a main clause, and some are

embedded in main clauses in ways that blur the grammatical and conceptual distinction between independence and dependence. Subordinate clauses

often elaborate, qualify, or even undermine an idea or image in the main

clause. In many English poems, clauses are building blocks of thought that invite the reader to look back at the beginning of the sentence, to do a mental double take, in order to grasp the logical relations among a sentence's multiple parts.

Subordinate clauses play syntactic roles similar to those played by three parts of speech: the noun, the adverb, and the adjective. Modern handbooks of grammar will give you full lists of the “joining words” that typically introduce the different kinds of subordinate clauses; adverbial clauses, for

instance, usually follow subordinating conjunctions such as *after, although, as, as if, because, whether, while.*

Shakespeare's Sonnet 106 (p. 265) begins with such an adverbial clause: “When in the chronicle of wasted time / I see descriptions of the fairest wights... .” Adjectival clauses, modifying a noun or pronoun, are typically introduced by relative pronouns (*that, which, who, whom, whose*) or by relative adverbs (*when, where, why*).

Shakespeare's Sonnet 116 (“Let me not to the marriage of true minds”; p. 266) uses an adjectival clause in its second main clause: “Love is not love,” Shakespeare writes,

“which alters when it alteration finds.” Here, the subordinate clause follows and explains the contradictory

proposition of the main clause (a good example, by the way, of the kind of predicate complement clause that Fenellosa thought poets should avoid).

The lines illustrate not only an adjectival clause at work but also the complex relation that can exist between main and subordinate clauses. **W h e n** we read Shakespeare's lines carefully, we mentally reorder the syntactic elements to place the subordinate, or "dependent" (from the Latin *pendere*, hanging), clause between, rather than after, the subject and its predicate complement, which is of course also "love": the same word but different in 2 0 5 8 / P O E T I C S Y N T A X

syntactic function. If we visualize this main clause and its dependent one (only part of a m u c h longer s e n t e n c e in the sonnet), we could diagram the relationship this way:

Love is not love

\ which alters when it alteration finds

S u c h diagramming, w h i c h reminds us that in Latin, *sub* means "beneath,"

can often be a useful tool for sorting out relations among syntactic parts of poems. (For a fine example of s u c h diagramming, see James Winn's rendering of the opening s e n t e n c e of Milton's *Paradise Lost*, which Linda Gregerson reproduces and trenchantly discusses in "Anatomizing Death," 105.) Adjectival and adverbial clauses are fairly easy to discern because they

modify a noun, pronoun, or verb in the main clause and can be diagrammed

as hanging from (depending on) a word in the main clause. N o u n clauses are harder to spot. T h e y can be introduced by relative pronouns and also by other pronouns such as *whoever, whomever, what, whatever, whichever*.

Moreover, n o u n clauses can follow many of the same subordinating con-

junctions that signal adverbial clauses. The key to identifying noun clauses is to understand their syntactic functions in the poetic sentences with which we are working. Noun clauses may be subjects, direct objects, objects of prepositions, or predicate complements; but they always appear in statements that cannot stand alone. Sometimes, however, we have to excavate these clauses because the poet has omitted the joining or articulating words that would help us see the poem's syntactic skeleton clearly. If we know how the clauses are working syntactically, however, we can catch them; there are many rewards to doing so.

Let's consider Shakespeare's Sonnet 106 (p. 265) as an illustration of how a poet uses interplay among clauses to make meaning. In the version below, to clarify the poem's structure, we have put the beginnings of main clauses (introductory words followed by subjects and verbs) in bold; we have put the beginnings of subordinate clauses in *italic*.

When in the chronicle of wasted time
I see descriptions of the fairest wights,
And beauty making beautiful old rhyme
In praise of ladies dead and lovely knights,
5 T h e n , in the blazon of sweet beauty's best,
Of hand, of foot, of lip, of eye, of brow,
I see their antique pen would have expressed
Even such a beauty as you master now.
So all their p r a i s e s are but prophecies
io Of this our time, all you prefiguring;
And, for they looked but with divining eyes,
T h e y h a d n o t skill e n o u g h your worth to sing:
For we, which now behold these present days,
H a v e eyes to wonder, b u t l a c k tongues to praise.

Finding the main clause or clauses is the first step in analyzing this or any poem. Having found the poem's head and torso, as it were, we can proceed

PARTS OF SYNTAX / 2059

to finding the subordinate clauses, which can be compared to the poem's limbs. Whether the body arises into (new) life depends in part on who is reading it, how. In this sonnet, we have to wait patiently for a main clause to appear ("I see," in line 7); and when it does, we may not recognize it, for its thought as well as its syntax seem, paradoxically, to depend on those of the initial dependent clause. Although the "when ... then" structure embodies a careful balance of ideas (each clause gets exactly four lines), the second clause is the main clause: "When" sets up expectations for the thought to be completed, and it is completed, albeit in a way that the rest of the sonnet elaborates and qualifies.

We've found the main subject and verb, and we may well expect to find a

direct object too. We do, momentarily, in the phrase "their antique pen."

But the syntax soon asks us to correct that idea, for the image of the pen is followed by a verb phrase that makes the pen the subject of a new little story:

"I see [that] their antique pen would have expressed / Even such a

beauty ..." Experienced readers will add *that* (the missing relative pronoun) automatically, but even they will have to engage in some subliminal revision, reversing the usual forward motion of reading (left to right, on the page of a text in English).

What advantage is there to recognizing the first main clause's direct object as a subordinate (noun) clause: Doing so helps us see that the "object" the poet finally sees in his main clause is not really an object, a thing, at all;

instead, what the Shakespearean speaker sees (here and elsewhere in his

sonnets) is an amazing blending of past and present, of certainty and supposition: a constructed object rather than a natural one. The main clause and its exfoliating direct object thus work to tell us something about the speaker's way of seeing as well as about what he sees. This may interest us as readers, because what the speaker is seeing arises from his interpretation of meanings located in old books (they are to him as he is to us) considered in relation to his present and, by implication, his future.

In line 8, we need to excavate or cocreate another subordinate clause to

make sense of the sonnet. As we needed to supply *that* to see the noun clause serving as the direct object of "I see," so we also need to supply missing words to line 8 to make it work: "Even such a beauty as [the one that] you master now." This subordinate clause, functioning both to rename and to describe the "beauty" that is the direct object of the noun clause functioning as a direct object of "I see," blurs the traditional distinction between adjectival and noun clause. Thus the syntax, particularly the interplay of main and subordinate clauses, contributes to the poem's larger meditation on

themes of mastery, competition, and relations of interdependence between

past and present, lover and beloved, writer and reader, subject and object of seeing.

In the last six lines, we have more main clauses than in the first eight, and they come more rapidly (and briefly) in the final couplet. They are introduced by coordinating conjunctions that, when singled out, help us see the logical skeleton of the poet's thought: "So," "And," "For." Note, finally, that the embedded subordinate clause in line 11 may fool us into thinking it a main clause ("for," after all, introduces a main clause just two lines later). Upon close analysis, however, we see that the group of words

introduced by the first “for” works adverbially, to modify the verb phrase that comes in the next 2060 / P O E T I C S Y N T A X

line. “For” is therefore glossed (translated as) “because” by this anthology’s editors, not because they have access to some mysterious dictionary un-available to readers but rather because they have decoded the poem’s syntax and come to the conclusion — as you can too—that line 11, after “And,” both interrupts and helps explain the poet’s claim that his predecessors lacked the skill to praise the speaker’s beloved because they could see him or her only by “divining,” or imagining, him or her.

Distinguishing between main and subordinate clauses is not always easy;

but it is an important skill for players of the syntax game. Equipped with terms for describing syntactic elements precisely, we turn now to other moves poets make with sentences — and with readers’ expectations about them.

Moves in the Game

Syntax operates as a kind of promise or contract of expectation between

poet and reader, so the use of subordinate clauses to delay a main verb can function as a kind of tease. Milton, for instance, at the opening of *Paradise Lost* (p. 421), and William Collins, at the opening of “Ode to Evening”

(p. 675), give us many lines of complexly interrelated subordinate clauses to ponder — and remember— before we reach the main verb of the first poetic sentence. In Milton’s epic, the imperative verb “sing” arrives after five lines; in Collins’s ode, the imperative verb phrase “now teach me” arrives only in line 15, after a many-stranded subordinate clause (beginning “If aught ...”) in which the poet seems to attempt to prove to his addressee —the “Evening”

personified as “Eve”—that his own “pastoral song” has the power “to soothe thy modest ear.”

Poets' relations to their readers are often figured in terms of pleas and commands addressed to a *muse*, a source of inspiration traditionally gendered female and often addressed as *thou*. In both Milton's and Collins's poems, the exquisitely delayed arrival of the main verb challenges the reader to participate in the poet's game of call-and-response over a space of time epitomized by the sentence's prolonged unfolding. Milton's opening sentence

points back to Genesis and forward to Christ's Second Coming; Collins's opening sentence points back to Milton while also mimicking the gradual coming of evening in a northern, English latitude. The Romantic poet Hannah More, meanwhile, provides an interesting variant on the syntactic pattern of the Miltonic *invocation* (the poem's opening address to a muse) by addressing an ungendered and plural set of muses ("Airy spirits") in line 1

of her "Inscription in a Beautiful Retreat Called Fairy Bower" (p. 707) while delaying her main verb ("come") to line 7. In other poems, the verb doesn't come at all.

Nominal Syntax

Consider, for example, this very short poem by Ezra Pound:

In a Station of the Metro

The apparition of these faces in the crowd;

Petals on a wet, black bough.

MOVES IN THE GAME / 2061

Giving us two noun phrases but no verb, Pound's poem illustrates what some critics have called *nominal syntax*: the use of noun phrases in a way that asks the reader to make a conceptual or emotional connection between the

poem's syntactic parts (Cureton, 322). "In a Station of the Metro" derives from Pound's appropriation of the ancient Japanese haiku for the modern

Imagist movement. But if we read these three lines carefully, and with some knowledge of syntactic traditions in English-language poetry, we see that Pound not only provides us with striking images but also plays creatively with the poetic tradition of the delayed opening verb, which is itself related to the oratorical tradition of periodic sentences aimed at keeping the audience in a state of suspense. Pound's poem figuratively has us wait—in a French

subway station—for a verb that never arrives. If, however, we play the poet's syntactic game by supplying some conceptual or emotional link between the poems' two major images, which seem to come from two very different worlds—on the one hand that of the bustling city, on the other hand that of nature, or (perhaps) of nature as represented in Japanese art—we will have played a role traditionally ascribed to the poet's muse: that of setting the poet's train of thoughts in motion.

As Pound's poem suggests, even modern poets who use various techniques

of sentence fragmentation to challenge poetic tradition as well as conventions of ordinary language-use presuppose that the reader knows sentence

rules well enough to appreciate meanings created when expectations are not fulfilled. Such poets dramatize the notion mentioned above: of syntax as a kind of contract between poet and reader. Their shared knowledge of rules, like soccer players' knowledge of the moves of their game, is often barely conscious until it is analyzed (as in a slow-speed replay). And for readers as for athletes, new knowledge often comes when we feel that rules have been bent or broken, and we stop to ask what's wrong.

In the opening stanza of “since feeling is first” (p. 1394), E. E. Cummings seems to justify the breaking of syntactic and other language-use rules:

since feeling is first

who pays any attention
to the syntax of things
will never wholly kiss you;

But what is Cummings really saying here about paying (or not paying) attention to “the syntax of things”? He is using an old and important poetic technique—what the critic William Empson calls *d o u b l e* syntax—to make two quite different statements in this four-line unit ending with a semicolon, a punctuation mark that, as we’ve seen, typically signals the end of a main clause.

Double Syntax

This occurs when a phrase, line, or group of lines can be read in two

different ways in relation to the syntax that precedes and/or follows the unit. In many examples of double syntax, the poet gives us an apparently

complete thought—in a syntactic unit that appears to be an independent

clause—but then goes on to revise the thought, often in a witty or paradoxical way, by showing us that the unit we thought was complete is part of a larger
2 0 6 2 / P O E T I
C S Y N T A X

(and usually more conceptually challenging) syntactic structure, often a

sentence.

In Cummings’s “since feeling is first,” the first three lines can be interpreted as a complex sentence, with a subordinate adverbial clause followed by a main one. The statement emphasizes with a *r h e t o r i c a l* *q u e s t i o n* a *c o n s e q u e n c e* of an apparently logical opening premise. We can make sense of the first three lines by adding a question mark after line 3 and paraphrasing them thus:
Because feeling comes first, that is, is most important in a scale of values, who in her or his right mind would pay any attention to the syntax (orderly or logical arrangement) of

things? The question is rhetorical because it assumes a simple answer that everyone agrees on; such questions are often used to imply that everyone consents to an idea that might well merit questioning and even dissent.

Cummins undermines his own poem's rhetorical question (and also the coercive logic of its initial clause) when, in line 4, he offers a phrase that seems, at first, a sentence fragment jarringly unrelated to the first three lines.

If, however, we pay attention to Cummings's syntax, we will go back and

reread the first three lines in the light of the new thought given in line 4.

We can then paraphrase the unit as a whole this way: *Since feeling comes first (logically and, in this poem, temporally too), he or she who pays attention to the syntax of things will never kiss you fully or totally.* The second, fuller reading requires us to supply a pronoun subject before the word "who"; that word thus becomes a relative pronoun as the opening lines change from asking a simple (and arguably simplistic) rhetorical question into making a more syntactically complex statement.

Word Order Inversions

Many poetic ambiguities, including many of those in examples of double syntax, arise from inversions of the basic transitive sentence, subject/verb/

object. The most common of these changes places the direct object before the subject and verb: "A curious knot God made in paradise," Edward Taylor writes, for example, at the beginning of his "Upon Wedlock, and Death of Children" (p. 537). Had Taylor used normal word order for this opening clause—"God made a curious knot in paradise"—he would have lost the opportunity to establish a meaningful and visually striking parallel between his title's first noun, "wedlock," and the word "knot" in his opening line. By putting "wedding" and "knot" into parallel positions, Taylor sets the stage for the

conceptual definition of “knot” as “marriage”; but by inverting normal word order to achieve the parallelism, he also subtly introduces another

meaning of “knot” developed in the poem: knot as a puzzle, as something that challenges reason and even faith in God’s providential plan (note the pun on “knot” and “not”). Here, as in many poems, word order inversion allows the poet to emphasize a certain idea or image by giving it pride of place. The inversion, often accompanied by interesting rhythms and rhymes, works to provoke thought.

In many of the older poems in this anthology, lines that may seem completely obscure at first become clear, even witty, when we unscramble a word order inversion. John Donne’s famous poem commanding his mistress to undress and make love to him begins, for instance, with the following inde-M O V E S I N T H E G A M E / 2 0 6 3

pendent clause: “Come, Madam, come, all rest my powers defy ...” If we try to read this as a sentence that uses the most common English pattern, subject/verb/direct object, we will be perplexed, for how can one’s “rest”

“defy” one’s “powers”? If we work at the syntax, however, we will see that the verb form offers a clue that an “inversion” is occurring here. “Defy” goes (“agrees”) with a plural subject, not a singular one (you wouldn’t say, “My cat defy my dog”). Mentally rearranging Donne’s word order, we arrive at a clause that is both grammatically correct and a brilliant introduction to the poem’s bawdy, boasting humor: *my powers defy all rest*. “Rest,” we see, turns out to be the direct object, not the subject, of the statement. The subject (in terms of grammar but also of theme) is the speaker’s “powers,” which, he says, “defy” or resist “rest,” either as “sleep” or as masculine “slackness.” The poem goes on to develop an intricate association (a curious knot?) between a man’s sexual powers and his verbal powers of persuasion.

Edmund Spenser also uses word order inversion to create witty effects

that have serious metaphysical implications. Early in his epic poem *The Faerie Queene* (1.1.8—9; p. 167), he describes his young, inexperienced hero this way:

Full jolly knight he seemd, and faire did sitt,

As one for knightly giusts and fierce encounters fit.

The first clause, we see, is a sentence of the type we've classified as a predicate complement; using normal English word order to make the same point, we could say that *he seemed a very jolly [i.e., gallant or cheerful] knight*.

Putting the sentence this way—performing the operation known as “paraphrasing”—is critical to understanding not only Spenser's syntax but also some of the larger themes of his Protestant epic. Indeed, syntax—which in this case requires us to think twice about our first impression of how the hero looks as a soldier—is one of Spenser's main tools for warning the reader not to take appearances as the truth.

In Spenser's Protestant poem, syntax often works to dramatize the value

of faith in an “invisible” reality; such faith is accompanied by, indeed grows from, a distrust of sensory impressions in general and of visual images in particular. Advancing his lesson in iconoclasm or distrust of images, Spenser crafts a sentence in which we first see (the words for) “jolly knight”; then we get the sentence's grammatical subject, “he”; and then we get a verb that creates irony at the hero's expense by retroactively questioning the “fit”

between the hero's appearance and his inward state of readiness for religious battle. In the narrative that follows, the hero will repeatedly fall into error by believing first impressions.

In Spenser's poem as in many others in this anthology, syntactic inversion acquires resonance when considered

along with historical, philosophical, religious, and other determinants of meaning. In his elegy “Adonais” (31—34; p. 880), for example, Percy Bysshe Shelley uses word order inversion in the course of raising some broad questions about theology, history, and politics—questions that require us to move from text to context to in-

terpret syntactically difficult lines. In them, Shelley describes the poet John Milton as

2064 / POETICSyntax

Blind, old, and lonely, w h e n his country’s pride,

T h e priest, the slave, and the liberticide,

Trampled and mocked with many a loathed rite ...

W h i c h of the n o u n s preceding the transitive verbs is the subject of the subordinate clause beginning with “when,” and which is the object? Two patterns of poetic inversion—subject/object/verb or object/subject/verb—are most c o m m o n in metrical English poetry. Is the pride of the country performing the actions of trampling and mocking the priest, the slave, and the

“liberticide,” that is, the killer of liberty? Or are the three figures mentioned in the passage’s second line trampling and mocking the kind of pride in his country that Milton felt?

We can’t solve this puzzle unless we go beyond the syntax just of these

lines to learn something about Milton and about Shelley’s views of his precursor, w h o was finally on the losing side of the English Civil War and w h o was d e n o u n c e d as a *regicide* (king killer) by some of his enemies. O n c e we know that Shelley shared Milton’s love of liberty and his scorn for the “rites”

of the established English Church and state, we can see that the second

paraphrase given above is distinctly preferable to the first: the priest, slave, and liberticide trampled and mocked Milton's pride in his country. We can also now see another possible reading of the lines: the phrase "when his country's pride" can describe Milton, a meaning that shifts our understanding of what is a subordinate, what a main clause here. We can, that is, also paraphrase these lines as saying that *the priest, the slave, and the liberticide trampled and mocked Milton when [he was] his country's pride, and they did so with many a loathed rite.*

Shelley's syntax is famously fluid. Indeed, some have denounced it as incoherent. Others have defended it by arguing that Shelley's poetry creates "the vocabulary and syntax" of a new vision of reality (Simpson, 82). For both philosophical and political reasons, Shelley wanted to blur traditional distinctions between subjects and objects; his syntax reflects that interest. In the case we have just examined, the syntactic obstacles to (immediate) comprehension dramatize the ongoing competition between different political

views of liberty in England and challenge the reader to resolve the competition in a way that rejects one possible reading to respect others more consonant with what we can glean from many sources about Shelley's—and

Milton's—views of liberty.

Because the significant ambiguities in a poem's syntax may be historically motivated, they often send us to other poems by the same author, other

poems by authors we know or suspect that our poet read, and even to the

larger texts of history, which include ongoing political, theological, and literary debates. Ambiguities of poetic syntax also invite us to consider other meaningful aspects of poems such as rhythm, stanza forms, line breaks, and punctuation. These phenomena are no less important to poems we hear read aloud, or sung, than they are to poems we encounter primarily through the

eye. But when we read poems on the page, we necessarily confront the myriad ways in which printers and editors, in tandem with the poems' original authors, shape what we see. Our very perception of some poetic ambiguities depends on the presence or absence of judgments by other readers about,

for instance, punctuation marks and spelling. With older poems in particular, THE GAME OF INTERPRETATION / 2065

punctuation marks may represent a printer's or an editor's interpretation of a line. Conventions of punctuation have changed over time, and the meaning of punctuation is always open to interpretation whether or not we possess a material text thought to represent an author's intent—which, in any case, may have changed in his or her own lifetime as a reader of his or her own poems. In any case, it is appropriate to end this introduction to poetic syntax with some brief examples of syntactic analysis linked to questions about punctuation, about the poem's mode of being as a (reproducible) material

object, and about acts of interpretation—including those of editors and other readers—as moves in a game without closure.

The Game of Interpretation

Emily Dickinson

When poems exist in multiple manuscript versions, editors necessarily

make interpretive decisions about syntax simply by deciding which version to print. This is strikingly the case for editors of Emily Dickinson, since Dickinson published few of her poems during her life and left almost two

thousand poems—in various groupings (including more than forty hand-bound booklets called “fascicles”) and in various kinds of drafts (including scrawls on the backs of envelopes)—at her death. Many poems exist in

several different forms (available at www.emilydickinson.org and in the variorum edition by R. H. Franklin). In some Dickinson poems, the presence or absence of a certain punctuation mark contributes to rich opportunities for interpretive debate. Compare, for example, two versions of her poem “A Bird, c a m e down the Walk” (no. 3 5 9 [328]; p. 1116). In o n e version, printed in R. H. Franklin’s reading edition of Dickinson’s p o e m s and in this anthology, the complex relation between the bird and the poem’s speaker—an “I”/eye looking at the bird as the bird is looking at the speaker—is rendered as

follows in the third stanza and the beginning of the fourth:

He glanced with rapid eyes,

That hurried all abroad -

T h e y looked like frightened Beads, I thought,

He stirred his Velvet Head. -

Like o n e in danger, Cautious,

I offered him a Crumb ...

In another version of this poem, however—a version printed in many modern anthologies—the transition between the third and fourth stanzas occurs

without any punctuation. This editorial c h o i c e changes the poem’s syntax and, in so doing, invites debate about h o w we perceive the relation between two creatures, the bird and the h u m a n speaker, caught in the act of looking at e a c h other:

He stirred his Velvet Head

Like o n e in danger, Cautious,

I offered him a Crumb

2 0 6 6 / P O E T I C S Y N T A X

T h e a b s e n c e of punctuation between the stanzas in this version of the p o e m allows us initially to read the

new stanza as part of the preceding clause, in which the subject is “he,” the bird. Reading on, however, we see that the new stanza’s opening line can also be understood as belonging to a new

clause, one with “I,” the speaker, as its subject. This ambiguity creates an unsettling effect, making the reader go back and forth between syntactic

alternatives in a conceptual movement subtly likened—through the poet’s

craft—to the bird’s head movements or to the dizzying exchanges of gazes, and of fears, between human and bird. Like the earlier example from Cummings’s “since feeling is first,” this version of Dickinson’s poem gives us two readings that are equally plausible in syntactic terms; the second reading, however, which necessarily encompasses our consideration of the first, is more complex, in part because the idea of a human in danger when offering a crumb to a bird is less commonsensical than the idea of a bird feeling in danger when approaching a human. This bird, however, has been described earlier in the poem as biting a worm “in halves” and as eating “the fellow, raw,” while not knowing he is being watched by the speaker. The poem as a whole creates a coolly terrifying atmosphere in which the possibility arises that the speaker is in no less danger from an unknown “watcher” than the bird is. Double syntax works to slow us down and make us aware of an unfamiliar world where some “hidden purpose,” as the poet Thomas Gunn calls it, causes such creatures as birds to look, by the poem’s end, like butterflies leaping “off Banks of Noon” and landing without splashes in an alien element where they may live or die “as they swim.”

In another poem by Dickinson, “On a Columnar Self” (no. 740 [789]; p. 1121), we have to intervene more actively to make the double syntax work; here, as is often the case in poetic interpretation, we must supply either a

missing word or a punctuation mark to make sense of the lines:

On a Columnar S e l f —

H o w ample to rely

In Tumult—or Extremity—

H o w good the Certainty

That Lever cannot pry—

And W e d g e cannot divide

Conviction—That Granitic B a s e —

Though none be on our side—

We can read the first stanza as an independent syntactic unit if we mentally supply a period after “Certainty”; then we take “That Lever” as the subject of a new sentence.

Alternatively (and, as is typical for double syntax, in addition), we may take the absence of a period after “Certainty” as license to interpret “That Lever” as a relative clause modifying “Certainty”: in this case, we supply the word *which* after “Certainty,” conceptually bridging the stanza break and thus making the poem’s first two stanzas into building blocks, it seems, for a “columnar” self that consists of yoked pieces. Read as a whole, however, the poem resists giving us a simple answer to the implied question of whether the self is divided or undivided, singular or plural. (Read o n — s e e what you can make of the syntactic options created by the absence of a

punctuation mark after “divide.” D o e s the poem’s third stanza resolve the T H E G A M E O F I N T E R P R E T A T I O N / 2 0 6 7

question of what kind of “column” the “self” is? As you reread, note that the poem’s variable metrical pattern of trimeter and tetrameter lines contributes to its questions about the shape and nature of a “columnar self.”) *John Keats*

Consider the famous opening line of John Keats’s “Ode on a Grecian Urn”

(p. 938): “Thou still unravished bride of quietness... .” Does the word “still”

function as an adjective or an adverb? In other words, is the urn, here

addressed as “thou” and thus given qualities of personhood, “still” in the sense of *unmoving* (the adjectival meaning), or is the urn “still unravished,”

with “still” in the adverbial sense of *as yet*, which, in connection with “unmoving,” shades into *not yet ravished*?

To appreciate Keats’s use of “still,” we will need not only to recognize that ambiguous part of speech in the ode’s first line but also to ponder it in

relation to the rest of this ode, which goes on to explore the idea of “ravished”

in two different senses: as ecstatically delighted; and as violated, raped. The poem is about an apparently timeless and inanimate painted object, which

is personified as a bride and hence likened to the “maidens loath,” struggling to escape pursuers, in one of the scenes painted on the urn; the urn is also likened to the heifer painted on the urn and described as “lowing,” though the poet cannot hear her voice and cannot be sure whether or not she is

being led to death as a victim of sacrifice. Keats’s ode, like Shakespeare’s Sonnet 106, uses syntactic ambiguity to slow us down as we ponder a poem

about time’s passing and the art that succeeds—but only partially and par-

adoxically—in escaping death.

Thomas Gray

Thomas Gray, who died some twenty years before Keats was born, also

wrote an ode about a painted vase; and his poem too uses syntactic ambiguity to enrich a meditation on the relation between visual (unmoving) artifacts

and poetry, an inherently temporal mode of art. In some versions, the “Ode (On the Death of a Favorite Cat, Drowned in a Tub of Goldfishes)” (p. 668) begins with the following lines:

‘Twas on a lofty vase’s side,
Where China’s gayest art had dyed
The azure flowers that blow;
Demurest of the tabby kind,
The pensive Selima reclined,
Gazed on the lake below.

Upon first reading these lines, we probably take “reclined” as an intransitive verb telling us what the cat did. As we go on to read line 6, however, we

encounter a fine instance of double syntax enabled by punctuation, for we

must revise our understanding of the initial five lines to comprehend the

syntax of line 6. Either we mentally supply *and* taking “reclined” and “gazed”

as a compound verb phrase; or we retroactively interpret “reclined” as a **past participle**—a verb used as an adjective—describing the cat’s position and thus creating a witty but melancholy joke: the cat that will, we know from

2068 / POETICSYNTAX

the title, fall into that “lofty” painted vase and drown is here caught, through the two possible interpretations of “reclined,” between life and death. A cat that can recline is alive; a cat “reclined” is perhaps already dead. In yet a third alternative, suggested by poem as a whole, the cat may exist in that

strange state of suspension between life and death that is created by art. This paradoxical state, implied by the pun on “dyed” and *died*, is neatly captured in the name of a certain genre of paintings: *still life*.

The ambiguity of “reclined” adds further shades of meaning to the poem’s opening description of the cat *on* the side of a vase. What does that preposition mean? We might read it as suggesting that the cat is *painted on* the vase. We may firmly reject that possibility when we get to “gazed,” in line 6, and stanza 2’s description of the cat’s tail “declaring” her “conscious joy”; this is (or was) evidently a real, moving cat, not a painted one—and hence

her *reclining* can be pictured as a lively, comic, even wildly acrobat act of being at rest. And yet this poem is an ode that the title declares is “on the death” of a favorite cat; how does that “on” relate to the “on” of the opening line? The poem as a whole re-creates, reanimates, something long dead and

still, exploring paradoxes of stillness and incipient movement similar to those in Keats’s “Ode on a Grecian Urn.” There, as we’ve seen, a scene painted on an old vase prompts the poet to reflect on the ways in which an artwork

arrests time’s passage while also testifying to time’s power. Gray’s ode also invites us to ponder the relations between artistic representations (verbal

and visual), and (what counts) as reality, or life.

The tiny bit of double syntax at the end of Gray’s opening stanza, which

invites us to do a double take, to revise our understanding of the relation

between verbs and adjectives, terms of motion and of stasis, disappears when modern editors add a comma to line 5, as many have done when reprinting

Gray’s poem for busy twentieth- and twenty-first-century readers. Consider

the difference:

Demurest of the tabby kind,

The pensive Selima[,] reclined,

Gazed on the lake below.

Does this difference matter? Many readers have chosen not to pause on

this comma, or its absence, because interpretations based on the presence

or absence of one mark of punctuation lead into territories where it's

famously hard to be sure one is right. In many historical examples of double syntax, including, notoriously, Shakespeare's sonnets, we can never be certain whether a given punctuation mark—or the absence thereof—reflects the writer's original intention or a printer's interpretation (or error). Uncertainty about authorial intention need not bother us if we accept the idea that meanings are culturally conditioned and the game of interpretation often

requires us to make informed guesses.

John Dryden

Like Gray, John Dryden exploits the syntactic ambiguities lurking in past

participles. Verbs arrested to modify nouns, participles often help poets

explore the relations between ideas of stillness and ideas of motion; when

participles are used in such a way that they may also be interpreted as verbs **THE GAME OF INTERPRETATION / 2069**

in the past tense, they can help raise questions about bondage, freedom, and human agency. In lines 939—41 of his long poem *Absalom and Achitophel*,

Dryden's character King David breaks a long silence with the following lines about how he plans to punish his rebellious son Absalom:

Thus long have I by native mercy *swayed*

My wrongs *dissembled*, my revenge *delayed*;

So willing to forgive the offending age,
So much the father did the king assuage, (my emphasis)
Modern editors—including those of this anthology (see p. 515)
—often sim-
plify this statement by adding explanatory commas around the
phrase “by native mercy swayed,” which makes it definitively
into an adjectival modifier; the punctuation erases the
possibility that David is saying that he has ruled for a long
time in a merciful way while at the same time pretending not
to
see the wrongs done to him—or, in another reading allowed by
the syntax,
ruling in an apparently merciful way while dissembling the
wrong he does
to others. In the form in which they were originally printed in
1681, the lines allow for several very different interpretations
(the critic William Empson
counts seven!), depending on whether the reader takes
“swayed,” “dissembled,” or “delayed” as the main verb of the
first clause. If we reread the clause aloud, trying out each
possible main verb with the other two then becoming
past participles, we see how subtly our perceptions of David’s
character
change, along with our estimates of the harshness with which
he is likely
now to undertake the punishment of the rebel. Since Dryden’s
poem uses
the biblical story to figure a contemporary drama of political
power (David
represents King Charles II of England, Absalom his
illegitimate son Mon-
mouth), syntactic ambiguity is a potentially important
protective shield for the poet attempting to analyze the
relations between what a ruler “shows”

and what he “dissembles” as he contemplates “revenge.” In removing syntactic ambiguities in some political poems of the past such as Dryden’s,

modern editors may, ironically, be blunting one of the weapons poets have

traditionally used to avoid censorship.

William Blake

For a final example of interpretation enriched by attention to syntax and

to punctuation, let’s look at William Blake’s “The Lamb.” One of a series called *Songs of Innocence*, which Blake eventually combined with the *Songs of Experience*, this poem was originally published in an illuminated book, a form Blake devised; writing in 1793, he described his illuminated books as the result of a “method of Printing which combines the Painter and the Poet”

(Prospectus, cited in Viscomi). Much has been written about Blake’s beau-

tiful books, which exist in multiple copies made during his lifetime from his etchings. For our purposes, one of these books’ most interesting features is what they show about the interplay of punctuation and syntax in creating

ambiguities of meaning. An illustrated poem like the one reproduced on

p. 2071 allows us some access to Blake’s thoughts about punctuation. The

access is only partial, however, because eighteenth-century understandings

of punctuation differ from modern ones and because Blake, as his great

editor David Erdman observes, often uses punctuation for “rhetorical” purposes rather than to clarify syntax (787). In addition, different marks appear slightly differently in different copies of the

pur-2 0 7 0 / P O E T I C S Y N T A X

illustrated poems; indeed, as Erdman also remarks, it is “impossible to copy Blake exactly” in print because the marks in the illuminated books sometimes “grade into each other” so that, for instance, a comma will be compounded with a question mark, or

the difference between a comma and a period will be impossible to deter-

mine. Even trained scholars may therefore disagree about how to transcribe

(rewrite, copy) a given Blake poem. Moreover, recognizing the gaps between

eighteenth-century conventions of punctuation and modern ones, many

modern editors feel that an attempt to follow Blake’s punctuation exactly

will distract readers rather than helping them appreciate the poems. One

practical solution to this conundrum is to compare a “modernized” version of a poem by Blake (or by Dickinson or Shakespeare or other poets in this

anthology) with a reproduction of a manuscript or early printed version of

the text. Such a comparative practice, now much easier than it used to be

because old versions of poems are readily viewable on the Web, allows us to

see that editing, and even translating a text among different media, generates interpretations we can play with, and against which we can test our own

understanding of a poem. A fascinating historical set of transcriptions and

illustrations of Blake’s poems is available for study at the innovative Web site of the Blake Archives

(www.blakearchive.org).

In the case of “The Lamb,” there are some interesting differences in punctuation among the more than twenty copies of the combined *Songs* made before Blake’s death; the poem’s penultimate line in Blake’s version, for

instance—“Little Lamb God bless thee”—is followed by a period in some transcriptions, a comma in others, and nothing—perhaps because the illustration’s colors extended farther into the text—in still others. All of the illuminated copies, however, are very lightly punctuated, at least by today’s standards and in striking contrast to most modern teaching editions of the

poem, including the one in this anthology (p. 734). The difference is under-

scored by the absence of punctuation marks in the poem’s opening lines as

Blake printed them: “Little Lamb who made thee / Dost thou know who

made thee” (see etching). Why is this significant? The presence or absence of punctuation marks in this poem gives us a glimpse into the ongoing history of reading as a process of trying to make sense of challenging poetic statements. The effort of making sense of syntax is, as we’ve seen, a key move in the game of interpretation. But so is the move of resisting premature submission to common sense. Blake invites us to tolerate, even relish, an expe-

rience of syntactic ambiguity abetted by the absence of punctuation and not

unlike what John Keats called “negative capability,” or “being in uncertainties, mysteries, doubts, without any irritable reaching after fact and reason.”

When modern editors add question marks and commas to the opening of

Blake’s poem, they make sense of it by making it fit the type of English

guise of lamb. In this reading, the referent for “thou” in the second line would be Christ, and the question the speaker is posing would shift back and forth from one about w h o made God’s h u m a n and animal creatures to one about w h o made the Son of God. Thus the apparently “elementary” little p o e m opens toward sophisticated theological debates about the relation among God’s different “persons”: the Christian trinity, like the three pronouns in the p o e m (“thee,” “He,” and “I”), is three-in-one, one-in-three.

Our willingness to grant theological complexity to the p o e m goes hand in hand with a willingness to see its multiple syntactic possibilities as mutually illuminating rather than in competition with e a c h other. The poem’s final lines, w h i c h ring an echoing change on the opening ones, leave the theological and h u m a n questions of identity and origin teasingly open even as Blake c h o o s e s (for the first time) to end two lines with periods: one after “name,” the other after the final “thee.” If we join in this process of cocreating poetic meaning, we could imaginatively punctuate many lines in the p o e m in several different ways, none of which would conflict with the light punctuation Blake left for us. The p o e m quietly suggests that the reader is always cocreating the poem: our choices about syntax are choices about meaning. Fortunately, with this poem, making one syntactic choice at one time does not prevent

us from making another later—and from attempting to hold all the possibilities in mind at once. The p o e m remains circular, fluid, teasing, and the final lines continue to solicit different interpretations, signaled here by the added commas:

Little lamb[,] God bless thee,

Little lamb God[,] bless thee.

Scorn Not Syntax

In the nineteenth century, one meaning of *syntax* was “a class in certain English R o m a n Catholic schools ...

below that called *poetry*” and often just above a class devoted to the subject of “grammar” (*Oxford English Dictionary* 2.C.). For modern students and their teachers, the relations among grammar, syntax, and poetry are rarely so orderly as such a curricular sequence suggests. Indeed, for many of us, the words *syntax* and *grammar*, like *versification*, conjure up associations with dryness and discipline: with the acts of scientific analysis that William Wordsworth, in “The Tables Turned”

(p. 764), denounced as the work of a “meddling intellect” that “murder[s] to dissect.” In this famous poem, part of a dialogue in which Wordsworth adopts different attitudes toward the old question of the relation between reason and emotion in poetry, the speaker seems to praise nature and the mind that is open to nature’s gifts as superior to all things that the mind actively produces through science *or* through art. By allying mental labor with some kind of dissection practiced on the corpses of naturally lovely things, Wordsworth’s speaker articulates a feeling many have had at the moment when the SUGGESTIONS FOR FURTHER READING / 2073

work of analyzing a poem (or a picture or a feeling of love) seems to destroy something simple, vital, and whole.

But there is another way to see the work of analyzing poems and, in particular, their syntactic bones. Playing on Wordsworth’s title for another poem—“Scorn Not the Sonnet” (p. 804) — and harking back to Edward Taylor’s phrase “the curious knot,” we could argue for the value of untying syntactic knots as an intellectual exercise that teaches us something about our own relation to language. Analyzing poems, we need not think of ourselves as murderers, or even as surgeons performing an autopsy. Instead, we can think of ourselves as readers with the power to animate poetic meanings and test our cocreations in conversations with other readers. That group

includes, of course, poets themselves, both the dead and the living.

MARGARET F E R G U S O N

Suggestions for Further Reading

Austin, Timothy R. *Language Crafted: A Linguistic Theory of Poetic Syntax.*

Bloomington: Indiana University Press, 1984.

Borck, Jim S. "Blake's 'The Lamb': The Punctuation of Innocence." *Tennessee Studies in Literature* 19 (1974): 163—75.

Boroff, Marie. *The Language and the Poet: Verbal Artistry in Frost, Stevens, and Moore.* **Chicago: University of Chicago Press, 1979.**

Brooke Rose, Christine. *A Grammar of Metaphor.* **London: Martin, Seeker, and Warburg, 1958.**

Collins, Martha. "On Syntax in Poetry." *Field* (Spring 1999): 74 - 84.

Cureton, Richard. "Poetic Syntax and Aesthetic Form." *Style* 14 (Fall 1980): 318 - 409.

Davie, Donald. *Articulate Energy.* 1955. **London, Boston: Routledge and Kegan Paul, 1976.**

Dillon, George L. "Inversions and Deletions in English Poetry." *Language and Style* 8.3 (1975): 220 - 37.

Easthope, Anthony. *Poetry as Discourse.* **London: Methuen, 1983.**

Empson, William. *Seven Types of Ambiguity.* **New York: New Directions, 1947.**

Erdman, David, ed. "The Punctuation." In *The Poetry and Prose of William Blake*, rev. ed., 786 - 87. **New York: Doubleday, 1982.**

Fairley, Gene E. *E. E. Cummings and Ungrammar.* **Searingtown, N.Y.: Water-mill Publishers, 1975.**

- Francis, W. Nelson.** “Syntax and Literary Interpretation.” In **S. Chatman and S. Levin, *Essays in the Language of Literature*, 209—16. Boston: Houghton Mifflin, 1967.**
- Franklin, R. H., ed.** *The Poems of Emily Dickinson, variorum ed.* Cambridge, Mass.: Harvard University Press (Belknap), 1998.
- . *The Poems of Emily Dickinson, reading ed.* Cambridge, Mass.: Harvard University Press (Belknap), 1999.
- Gregerson, Linda.** “Anatomizing Death.” In *Imagining Death in Spenser and 2074 / POETICSyntax Milton*, 95—115. Ed. Elizabeth Jane Bellamy, Patrick Cheney, and Michael Schoenfeldt. New York: Palgrave Macmillan, 2003.
- Huddleston, Rodney and Geoffrey K. Pullum, et al.** *Cambridge Grammar of the English Language.* Cambridge, U.K., and New York: Cambridge University Press, 2002.
- Kintgen, Eugene R.** “Perceiving Poetic Syntax.” *College English* 40.1 (Sept. 1978): 17 - 27.
- Lanham, Richard.** *A Handlist of Rhetorical Terms.* Berkeley: University of California Press, 1991.
- Miller, Cristanne.** *Emily Dickinson: A Poet’s Grammar.* Cambridge, Mass.: Harvard University Press, 1987.
- Nowotny, Winifred.** *The Language Poets Use.* London: Athlon Press, 1962.
- Oberhaus, Dorothy Huff.** *Emily Dickinson’s Fascicles: Method and Meaning.* University Park, Pa.: Pennsylvania State University Press, 1995.
- Simpson, David.** *Irony and Authority in Romantic Poetry.* New Jersey: Rowan and Littlefield, 1979.

Viscomi, Joseph. "Illuminated Printing." In "About Blake" at *The Blake Archive* www.blakearchive.org.

Wasserman, Earl R. *The Subtler Language: Critical Readings of Neoclassic and Romantic Poems.* 1959.

Westport, Conn.: Greenwood Press, 1979.

Biographical Sketches

Fleur Adcock (b. 1934), pp. 1849-53

from an Islamic background to write poetry in

Fleur Adcock was born in New Zealand, but

English, he identified a "triple heritage" of

lived in England until 1947. She was educated

Hindu, Muslim, and Western culture that

at Victoria University, New Zealand, and taught

informs his poems.

Classics there and at Otago University. In 1963,

she moved to London to become a librarian at

A. R. Ammons (1926-2001), pp. 1695-

the Foreign and Commonwealth Office. Since

1701

1979, she has been a freelance writer based in

A(rchie) R(andolph) Ammons was born and

London, though she has spent time at univer-

grew up on a small tobacco farm near White-

sities in the north of England, as a Northern Arts

ville, North Carolina, and started writing poetry

Fellow. She has translated works from Roma-

while on a U.S. Navy destroyer escort in the

nian and from medieval Latin, and edited the

South Pacific. After World War II, he earned a
Faber Book of Twentieth-Century Women's B.A. from Wake
Forest University and worked *Poetry*. She was awarded an
OBE in 1996, and
variously as an elementary school teacher, a real
estate salesman, an editor, and a sales executive
at his father's glassmaking firm. Although he
Conrad Aiken (1889-1973), pp. 1370-71
published his first volume, *Ommateum* (1955),
at his own expense, he became over a career that
Conrad Aiken was born in Savannah, Georgia,
included some thirty volumes of poetry one of
and raised there until age eleven, when his
the most influential and respected American
father shot Aiken's mother and himself to death.
poets, and one of the few to embark on book-
Aiken was sent to live with relatives in Cam-
length poems, such as *Glare* and *Garbage*. He
bridge, Massachusetts. He was educated at Har-
vard University, where he and his classmate
T. S. Eliot began a lifelong, troubled friendship.
Simon Armitage (b. 1963), pp. 2021-23
After traveling extensively in Europe, he settled
Simon Armitage was born in Huddersfield,
into a career as a writer. During the 1920s and
England. He studied geography at Portsmouth
1930s, he lived in New York, but he spent much

Polytechnic and took a postgraduate degree in time abroad, mostly in England. In his later social work at Manchester University. He years, he lived in Savannah and on Cape Cod, worked as a probation officer before becoming Massachusetts. An exceptionally prolific writer, a full-time writer. His first volume of poems, Aiken published some thirty volumes of poetry, *Zoom!*, was published in 1989, and his popular-five novels, dozens of short stories, a multitude ity has grown steadily ever since. A prolific writer of essays and reviews, and an autobiography. His and presenter for television, radio, and film, he *Senlin* (1918) employs what he called the “symphony” form, where each section of the poem and *The White Stuff*; published a collection of functions like a musical movement.

essays about the north of England, *All Points North*; and coedited *The Penguin Anthology of Agha Shahid Ali* (1949-2001), pp. 1958-60

published *Selected Poems* in 2001 and *The Universal Home Doctor*, a new collection, in 2002. and raised in Kashmir. He was educated at the He has taught at the Universities of Leeds and

University of Kashmir, Srinagar; the University of Iowa and currently teaches at Manchester Metropolitan University; Pennsylvania State University; and the University of Arizona, Tucson. He held teaching posts at various institutions, including Princeton and the University of Massachusetts, 1101

Amherst. In addition to his own poetry, Ali wrote *Matthew Arnold (1822-1888)*, pp. 1087-1101

Amherst. In addition to his own poetry, Ali wrote

Matthew Arnold was born in Laleham-on-

Thames, England, the son of Dr. Thomas

Ahmed Faiz from Urdu. One of the few Indians

Arnold, headmaster of Rugby School, and was

2075

2076 / BIOGRAPHICAL SKETCHES

educated at Balliol College, Oxford, where he (1563) published two accounts of her examina-

tion and death, in 1546 and 1547. John Foxe's

Acts and Monuments (1563) contains a descrip-

(1866). In 1851, Arnold became an inspector of

schools, a position he held for thirty-five years.

ballads about her were written in the seven-

His writing on education advocated the study of

teenth century.

the Bible and the humanities as the remedy for what he saw as the philistinism and insularity of

Margaret Atwood (b. 1939), pp. 1894-99

the times, and he worked indefatigably to

Margaret Atwood was born in Ottawa, Canada,

improve standards and introduce rigor into the

and raised there and in Toronto. As a child, she

school curriculum. After writing most of his

spent much time in the woods of northern Que-

bec, where her father conducted entomological

turned away from poetry, believing himself research. Ed

educated at the University of Toronto, unable to convey

“Joy.” Although he was elected

Radcliffe College, and Harvard University,

professor of poetry at Oxford University in 1858,

Atwood has taught at a number of Canadian

other than *New Poems* (1867) he subsequently

universities and has worked as an editor for the

published only prose, including *Essays in Criti-*

Anansi publishing house. Though known pri-

cism (1865, 1888) and *Culture and Anarchy* marily as one

of Canada's premier novelists, she (1869).

has also published poetry, short stories, chil-

dren's books, critical essays, and a study of

John Ashbery (b. 1927), pp. 1736-40

Canadian literature, and she has edited several

John Ashbery was born in Rochester, New York,

collections of verse. She is an active supporter

and raised on a farm near Lake Ontario. He was of Amnesty International and other human education at Harvard University, where he wrote rights organizations. The subjects of her some- his thesis on W. H. Auden, who selected his first times futuristic work include the social roles of book, *Some Trees* (1956), for the Yale Series of women, the power dynamics between men and Younger Poets. He received his M.A. from women, and the conflicts between nation and Columbia University and attended New York nation.

University before working as a copywriter in

New York City. Beginning in 1955, he worked

W. H. Auden (1907-1973), pp. 1465-81

for a decade as an art reviewer in Paris. He has

W(ystan) H(ugh) Auden was born in York,

since served as poetry editor of the *Partisan* England, and educated at Christ Church Col-Review and art critic for *New York* and *News-*

lege, Oxford, where he became a friend of the

week magazines. He joined the faculty of Brook-

“Pylon” poets Stephen Spender and Cecil Day

lyn College in 1974. In addition to poetry,

Lewis. In the 1930s, Auden embarked on a

Ashbery has written three plays and (with James

series of formative travels: to Germany, where

Schuyler) a collaborative novel. Loosely con-

he was introduced to Sigmund Freud’s work;

n e c t e d t o w h a t h a s b e e n c a l l e d t h e N e w Y o r k
Iceland, w h i c h h e v i s i t e d w i t h t h e p o e t L o u i s
s c h o o l — a l o n g w i t h S c h u y l e r a n d f e l l o w p o e t s
M a c N e i c e ; S p a i n , a s a R e p u b l i c a n s y m p a t h i z e r
F r a n k O ' H a r a a n d K e n n e t h K o c h — h e f r e -
d u r i n g t h e S p a n i s h C i v i l W a r ; C h i n a , w i t h
q u e n t l y a d o p t s a n d a d a p t s t h e t e c h n i q u e s o f
C h r i s t o p h e r I s h e r w o o d d u r i n g t h e S i n o - m u s i c i a n s
a s w e l l a s A b s t r a c t E x p r e s s i o n i s t a n d
J a p a n e s e W a r ; a n d t h e U n i t e d S t a t e s , t o w h i c h
S u r r e a l i s t p a i n t e r s . L i k e t h e w o r k o f G e r t r u d e
h e e m i g r a t e d i n 1 9 3 9 , t a k i n g A m e r i c a n c i t i z e n -
S t e i n , a b o u t w h o m h e h a s w r i t t e n , h i s p o e m s a r e
s h i p i n 1 9 4 6 . H e w a s a w a r d e d t h e P u l i t z e r P r i z e
c h a r a c t e r i z e d b y r a d i c a l d i s j u n c t i o n s . H e i s o n e
i n 1 9 4 8 . W i t h t h e m o v e t o A m e r i c a , A u d e n
o f t h e m o s t p r o l i f i c a n d i n f l u e n t i a l p o e t s o f t h e
t h r e w o f f t h e c o n f l i c t b e t w e e n h i s p r i v i l e g e d
l a s t h a l f - c e n t u r y .

b a c k g r o u n d a n d y o u t h f u l l e f t - w i n g s y m p a t h i e s
t h a t c h a r a c t e r i z e d h i s e a r l y p o e t r y , a n d g r a d u a l l y

Anne Askew (1521-1546), pp. 140-41

r e t u r n e d t o t h e A n g l i c a n f a i t h o f h i s m o t h e r , a
A n n e A s k e w (o r A s c u e) w a s b o r n i n t o a n o l d
c h a n g e t h a t l e f t a s t r o n g i m p r i n t o n h i s l a t e r
L i n c o l n s h i r e , E n g l a n d , f a m i l y t h a t e d u c a t e d h e r
w o r k . H e a l s o p u b l i s h e d p r o s e , d r a m a , a n d (i n
w e l l . A s a y o u n g w o m a n , s h e d e v o t e d h e r s e l f t o
c o l l a b o r a t i o n w i t h C h e s t e r K a l l m a n) l i b r e t t i . H e

Bible study and engaged the local clergy in dis-
taught at a number of institutions, including
putes about the interpretation of scripture.
Oxford, where he was professor of poetry from
Forced into marriage and eventually turned out
1956 until 1961. For the next ten years, he
of doors by her husband, Askew went to London,
divided his time between New York and Europe,
where she became a friend of Joan Bocher, a
but in 1972 he returned to Oxford to live at
Protestant of known heterodoxy. Examined in
Christ Church. He diagnosed his century's
1545 for heretical views about the sacraments,
banalities and horrors with relentless honesty
she was not found guilty but, in June 1546, was
and incisive wit, but also with compassion.

condemned by a special commission that called
no jury and no witnesses. The next day, she was
Joanna Baillie (1762-1851), pp. 760-63

tortured; after four weeks, she was burned at the
Joanna Baillie was born in Lanarkshire, Scot-
stake. The Protestant bishop John Bale (1495—
land, the daughter of Dorothea Hunter and

BIOGRAPHICAL SKETCHES / 2077

James Baillie, a Presbyterian clergyman, later
Palgrave, where they managed a school for
professor of divinity at Glasgow University. At
which she taught and wrote textbooks, one of

age ten, she was sent to a boarding school in which, *Hymns in Prose to Children* (1781), went Glasgow. Her father died in 1778. Baillie, her through thirty editions and was translated into mother, and her sister lived in Lanarkshire until five languages. The Barbaulds left Palgrave in 1784, when they moved to London to keep 1785 and settled in London, where Anna house for her brother, who had inherited a small devoted herself to writing tracts in support of medical museum from his uncle, Dr. William causes such as dissenting politics, democratic Hunter. Baillie was introduced to London liter-governments, public education, and the French hary circles by her aunt, a minor poet, and was Revolution; and to literary work, such as editing friends with the poet Anna Laetitia Barbauld. the poetry of William Collins, collecting six volumes of the correspondence of Samuel Richardson with her sister (when not traveling in England and writing prefaces to the entries in all fifty and on the Continent) for the rest of her life. volumes of *The British Novelists*. In 1773, she Her *Poems* appeared in 1790, but during her published a volume of poems containing works lifetime she was best-known for her verse drama in a variety of genres: the ode, the hymn, the

mas, which were published in three volumes
fable, and the satire. In 1808, her husband
(1798-1812) under the title *Series of Plays, in*
drowned, having become mentally ill and vio-
which It Is Attempted to Delineate the Stranger lent. Barbauld
published an anthology for girls, *Passions of the Mind*. One,
De Montfort, was *The Female Speaker*, in 1811, and a poem,
Eigh-staged at Drury Lane in 1800 and featured

teen Hundred and Eleven, in 1812. The latter

Sarah Siddons. Edmund Keane took the title role

was so badly reviewed that she published very

in an 1821 revival. *A Philanthropic Woman*, Bail-

little during the final thirteen years of her life.

lie gave much of her earnings to charity and

published *A Collection of Poems, Chiefly Manu-*

James K. Baxter (1926-1972), pp. 1701-

script, and from Living Authors (1823) to raise 03

funds for needy acquaintances. Her last book of

James K. Baxter was born in Dunedin, New Zea-

poems was published only weeks before her

land, and educated at Quaker schools in New

death.

Zealand and England, the University of Otago,

and the University of Victoria at Wellington. He

Amiri Baraka (LeRoi Jones) (b. 1934),

worked as a laborer, journalist, and teacher, and

pp. 1856-58

from 1954 until 1960 edited the Wellington

Amiri Baraka was born LeRoi Jones in Newark, New Jersey. He earned a B.A. from Howard University against alcoholism, he became a Roman Catholic in 1958, and subsequently founded a religious community and became active in social welfare programs. An extraordinarily prolific writer, Baxter published more than thirty collections of poetry as well as plays and literary criticism. His work shows a deep understanding of ventures and radical political causes. He was complex political and social issues and often instrumental in the founding of several small attacks exploitation and materialism. Later magazines; the Black Arts Repertory Theatre, in Harlem; and Spirit House, in Newark. In the 1970s, when he became a Black Muslim and ended it. His final work, based on his experiences in a Moroccan village called Jerusalem, articulates a he later dropped Imam Amiri Baraka (although he later dropped Imam Amiri Baraka), he began to write

fervent religious faith.

polemic poetry espousing black nationalism,

which he later denounced. In addition to poetry,

Aphra Behn (1640? - 1689), pp. 540-49

he has written a novel, a collection of short sto-

Different accounts and opinions exist about

ries, an autobiography, several plays, and Aphra

Behn's date of birth, parentage, religion, numerous tracts
on social issues. From 1979 to

given name, and marital status. Most historians

1999, he taught at the State University of New

agree, however, that she visited Surinam with

York at Stony Brook.

her family in her youth, returned to England

when the colony was handed over to the Dutch,

Anna Laetitia Barbauld (1743-1825),

and was briefly married to a merchant of Dutch

pp. 705-07

extraction. While spying for King Charles II in

Anna Laetitia Barbauld (nee Aikin) was born at

Antwerp in 1666, she seems to have uncovered

Kibworth Harcourt, Leicestershire, England, a Dutch

plot to sail up the river Thames and to attack at

home by her father, a schoolmaster in the British fleet;

letters survive in which

ter who became a classical tutor at the new War-

she complains of the king's failure to pay her for

ington Academy for Dissenters, an intellectual

her work, and she may have been briefly impris-

center where Barbauld spent fifteen years. She

one died for debt in the late 1660s. Writing plays
married in 1774 and followed her husband to
became her main means of support, and she was
2078 / BIOGRAPHICAL SKETCHES
one of the most prolific playwrights of the Res-
left without taking a degree. During World War
tation era. Her first play, *The Forced Marriage*,
II, he held several posts in the Ministry of Infor-
was produced in 1670; she subsequently wrote
mation. He later served as United Kingdom
seventeen plays, including many comedies that
press attaché in Dublin. Betjeman had a lifelong
satirize the consequences of ill-suited marriages.
avidity for architecture and devoted considera-
Her one tragedy, *Abdelazar* (1676), draws on
ble energy to the preservation of historic land-
previous dramatic portraits, including Shake-
marks and scenic views. After 1945, he worked
speare's in *Othello* and *Titus Andronicus*, of as a freelance
e writer and journalist and became black men who
love white women. Her prose
a celebrated television personality. His many
romance, *Oroonoko, or the Royal Slave* (1688),
honors included the Queen's Gold Medal for
was based on her experiences in Surinam and
Poetry (1960) and a knighthood (1969). In
criticized the enslavement and subsequent tor-
1972, he was a popular choice as poet laureate,
ture and execution of a princely black hero

a post he held until his death .

whom the white female narrator greatly admires.

Behn also wrote occasional poems , elegies, pro-

Earle Birney (1904 - 1991) , pp. 1447-48

logues and epilogues for other dramatists, Earle Birney was born in Calgary, Alberta, and including John Dryden, and erotic pastoral raised on a farm in Erickson, British Columbia.

poems such as "The Disappointment ." Her tragic-He worked as a bank clerk, a farm laborer, and

icomedie set in colonial Virginia, *The Widow* a park ranger before attending the University of *Ranter*, was performed and published the year British Columbia , the University of Toronto ,

after Behn died.

and the University of California at Berkeley,

from which he earned a Ph. D. in Old and Mid-

Charles Bernstein (b. 1950) , pp. 1967-68

dle English. He then taught at the Universities

Charles Bernstein was born in New York City

of Utah , Toronto , and British Columbia . During and educated at Harvard University, where he

World War II, Birney served with the Canadian

studied philosophy and was an activist against

Army as a personnel-selection officer and as

the Vietnam War . He worked as a commercial

supervisor of the International Service of the

writer and editor in health care for twenty

Canadian Broadcasting Corporation . In addi-

years. With Bruce Andrews, he co-founded a foundation to poetry, he published novels, radio plays,

L=A=N=G=U=A=G=E magazine in 1978, and literary essays.

and since then has been a principal figure in the

L=A=N=G=U=A=G=E poetry movement Elizabeth Bishop (1911-1979), pp. 1515-and a prominent theorist of radical poetics. He

28

has taught at the State University of New York

Elizabeth Bishop was born in Worcester, Massachusetts at Buffalo since 1990.

sachusetts. After her father's death in 1911 and her mother's permanent hospitalization for mental

John Berryman (1914-1972), pp. 1546-52

tal illness in 1917, Bishop lived with relatives in

John Berryman was born John Smith in McNova Scotia and Massachusetts. She was edu-

Alester, Oklahoma. When he was ten, his family

cated at Vassar College, and while still a student

moved to Tampa, Florida, where his father com-

met the poet Marianne Moore, who recognized

mitted suicide, shooting himself outside his her pro-

mise and became her mentor. Her liter-son's

window. The family moved to Massachu-

ary friendship with Robert Lowell was also a sus-

setts, then resettled in New York, where Mrs.

tenance for both. Bishop traveled extensively

Smith married a banker named John Berryman,

and often addressed questions of travel in her

who adopted her sons. The younger John Ber-

work. In 1952, she settled in Rio de Janeiro with

erryman was educated at Columbia University and Lota de Macedo Soares, a Brazilian architect Clare College, Cambridge University, where he and landscape designer; the relationship ended studied Shakespeare. A scholar, particularly of tragically with Soares's suicide, in 1967. Bishop Shakespeare, and celebrated teacher, whose returned to the United States to teach, first at students included the poets Donald Justice, the University of Washington in Seattle, then at Philip Levine, and W. D. Snodgrass, Berryman Harvard University. In addition to poetry, she taught at, among other schools, Harvard University, wrote short stories and essays; translated from Princeton University, and the University the French, Spanish, and Portuguese; and was of Minnesota. He also wrote a biography of Ste-a fine amateur painter. During her lifetime, she phen Crane. Dogged by alcoholism and a nervous on the respect of her peers, and since her vious temperament, he committed suicide in death she has come to be regarded as among the 1972. His major contribution was a series of major poets of the century.

hundreds of poems in an inventive, eighteen-line form he called "dream songs."

William Blake (1757-1827), pp. 732-47

William Blake was born in London. He attended

John Betjeman (1906-1984), pp. 1460-63

art schools, including the Royal Academy

John Betjeman was born in London and school, and at age fourteen was apprenticed to attend Madgalen College, Oxford, which he

an engraver. In 1800, he secured a patron at

BIOGRAPHICAL SKETCHES / 2079

Felpham, in Sussex, but found the arrangement his life. He studied as an undergraduate at St.

stultifying. Determined to follow his "Divine

Olaf's College and Harvard University and as a

Visions," he returned to London. He published graduate student at the University of Iowa Writers' Workshop. From 1944 until 1946, he served

of *Innocence* (1789) and *Songs of Experience*

in the navy. Bly founded and edited an influ-

(1794), which were illustrated with his own fan-

tial journal named for each decade — *The Fif-*

tastic etchings. From the 1820s, he devoted

ties, The Sixties, The Seventies, The Eighties, and

himself exclusively to pictorial art. His early

The Nineties. He has translated into English the

work reveals his dissatisfaction with the prevail-

work of many important poets, including Rilke,

ing literary styles of his day; he took as his

Goethe, Neruda, and Vallejo. He is associated

models the Elizabethan and early seventeenth-

with the mystical Deep Image school and, in

century poets, the Ossianic poems, and the work
recent years, has figured prominently in the
of William Collins, Thomas Chatterton, and
men's movement.

others working outside the prevailing con-
temporary literary conventions. Between 1795 and
Louise Bogan (1897-1970), pp. 1406-09

1820, Blake developed a complex mythology to
Louise Bogan was born in Livermore Falls,
explain human history and suffering and came
Maine. She attended Boston University for one
to see himself as a visionary, prophetic figure, or
year, then left school to marry. In 1919, newly
Bard. His writings in this vein center around the
single, Bogan moved to New York City to pursue
biblical stories of the Fall, the Redemption, and
writing. She became the poetry critic for *The*
there establishment of Eden, but Blake gave
New Yorker in 1931 and held the post until she
these materials his own spin. In his mythos, the
retired, in 1969. Bogan taught at several uni-
Fall is seen as a psychic disintegration that
versities, including the University of Washing-
results from the "original sin" of Selfhood, and
ton, the University of Chicago, the University of
the Redemption and return to Eden as a resti-
Arkansas, and Brandeis University. She also
tution of psychic wholeness, a "Resurrection to

translated Jiinger, G o e t h e , a n d Jules R e n a r d a n d
Unity.” His s c h e m a c e n t e r s a r o u n d a “Universal
wrote two influential critical works. Despite h e r
M a n ” w h o i n c o r p o r a t e s G o d r a t h e r t h a n a r o u
n d professional success, h e r s t a n d a r d s f o r h e r f o r a t r a
n s c e n d e n t Being distinct f r o m h u m a n i t y .

mal, polished p o e m s were so exacting that she
published only 105 in her lifetime. H e r reputa-

Edmund Blunden (1896-1974), *pp. 1404-*

tion as a poet has grown p o s t h u m o u s l y , t o m a t c h
06

that in h e r lifetime as a critic.

E d m u n d B l u n d e n was born in London, raised in

Yalding, Kent, a n d e d u c a t e d at Christ’s Hospital

Eavan Boland (b. 1944), *pp. 1938-42*

School, in Sussex. In 1915, he joined the army

Eavan Boland, the d a u g h t e r o f t h e Irish diplo-

a n d was s e n t t o t h e front in France. U p o n his

m a t F. H. Boland a n d t h e Postexpressionist

r e t u r n t o E n g l a n d , he briefly a t t e n d e d T h e

p a i n t e r F r a n c e s Kelley, was b o r n in Dublin, b u t

Q u e e n ‘ s College, Oxford; t h e n moved to L o n d o n

e d u c a t e d in L o n d o n , w h e r e h e r f a t h e r was Irish

to work as an assistant to J. Middleton M u r r y at

a m b a s s a d o r , a n d N e w York, w h e r e he was a rep-

t h e *Athenaeum* magazine. For the next thirty resentative to t h

e U n i t e d Nations. After gradu-years, he led a peripatetic

existence, t e a c h i n g at

ating f r o m Trinity College, D u b l i n , she l e c t u r e d

the Imperial University of Tokyo, the University in English there but found herself “completely of Hong Kong, and Merton College, Oxford. unsuited to being an academic,” and subsequently taught on a short-term basis at institutions in Ireland and the United States in order to devote her energies to writing. She has written ten essays on contemporary Irish literature, not engage in antiwar invective. In his poetry translated Irish poetry and work by Horace, and in his prose memoir, *Undertones of War* (1928), he focused instead on the experience of the men in the trenches, recording the “agonized” *lected Poems* (1995) brought together seven etched into “each grey face” but also acknowl-

collections published over twenty years. She is
edging the moments of happiness amid the
professor of English at Stanford University.

slaughter. He was one of the only poets to
mourn the devastation of the European land-
Anne Bradstreet (ca. 1612-1672), pp. 458-
scape, and his poems about the English country-
67

side are considered among his finest. He settled

Anne Bradstreet (nee Dudley) was born in

finally in Suffolk in 1964 and was elected pro-

Northampton, England, daughter of a gentle-
fessor of poetry at Oxford in 1966.

woman named Dorothy Yorke and of Thomas
Dudley, a nonconformist minister whom she
ed

Robert Bly (b. 1926), pp. 1704-05

the business interests of the earl of Lincoln.

Robert Bly was born in the town of Madison, in

educated by private tutors in the earl's house -

rural Minnesota, where he has lived nearly all

holds, she married Simon Bradstreet, a future

2080 / BIOGRAPHICAL SKETCHES

governor of the Massachusetts Bay Colony, in

Rupert Brooke (1887-1915), pp. 1324-27

1628; in 1630, Bradstreet emigrated to America

Rupert Brooke was born in Rugby, England,

with her husband and parents. When she first

where his father was a housemaster of the
came to the colonies, she” found a new world
famous public school, and educated there and
and new manners,” as she later remembered.
at King’s College, Cambridge. After graduation,
“But after I was convinced it was the way of God
he established himself in the house immortal-
I submitted to it and joined to the church of
ized in “The Old Vicarage, Grantchester.” Fol-
Boston.” While caring for her growing family
following a series of unhappy love affairs, he
(she had eight children), she continued to write.
traveled in Europe, the United States, Canada,
A volume of poems was published in London in
and the South Seas. When war broke out, he
1650. Entitled *The Tenth Muse Lately Sprung* returned to
England and was commissioned into *Up in
America*, the book was published by Brad-t he Royal
Naval Division. He was at the siege of
street’s brother-in-law without her knowledge
Antwerp in October 1914 and spent the follow-
(or so he claimed). It sold very well; a second
ing winter training in Dorset, where he com-
edition, containing numerous corrections and
posed his “war sonnets.” The following year,
additions, appeared six years after her death.
while on a troop ship bound for Gallipoli, he died
She compiled but did not publish a collection of
after contracting dysentery and blood poisoning.

prose meditations on life and death for her son
Much of his early work was published in Edward
Simon when he was about to become minister
Marsh's anthologies of Georgian verse and was
in 1664.

praised for its conversational diction, vivid
descriptions, and delight in the commonplace.

Edward Kamau Brathwaite (b. 1930),

His war sonnets, published posthumously as
pp. 1803-07

1914 and Other Poems (1915), celebrate patri-

Edward Kamau Brathwaite was born in Bridge-

otism, peace, friendship, love, and the values

town, Barbados, and educated at Harrison Col-

th that galvanized the British public in the early

lege; Pembroke College, Cambridge; and Sussex

days of the conflict—values Brooke had once

University. After working for the Ministry of

derided as "Nineteenth Century grandiose

Education in Ghana (Africa) from 1955 until

thoughts, about the Destiny of Man, the Irresis-

1962, he returned to his homeland to become a

tibility of Fate, the Doom of Nations, the fact

professor of social and cultural history at the

that Death awaits us All."

University of the West Indies. Since the 1970s,

he has taught at a variety of institutions in the

Gwendolyn Brooks (1917-2000), *pp. 1586-*

United States, publishing scholarly works on

89

West Indian history and culture and on dialect,
Gwendolyn Brooks was born in Topeka, Kansas,
and is now professor of comparative literature at
and raised in Chicago, Illinois. She published
New York University.

her first poem at age thirteen and was giving
poetry readings until just days before her death.

Emily Bronte (1818 - 1848), pp. 1046-50

A graduate of Wilson Junior College, she was
Emily Bronte, sister of novelists Charlotte and
active in the civil rights movement of the 1960s

Anne, was raised in the parsonage at Haworth,
and after, and often wrote on political themes.

on the North Yorkshire moors of England. She

Her first book, *Bronzeville* (1945), takes its title
was educated largely at home, leaving in 1838

from the phrase journalists used for Chicago's
to work as a teacher at a girls' school in Halifax.

black ghetto. Brooks ran poetry workshops for

She remained there only six months. In 1842,

underprivileged youths and taught at various

she went to Brussels with Charlotte to study lan-
institutions, including City College of New York.

guage and music, and on her return began to

She published more than twenty volumes of

write feverishly. For her first published work, the

poetry and received more than fifty honorary
joint collection *Poems* (1846) by Currier, Ellis
doctorates.

and Acton Bell, she assumed a pseudonym to
avoid being stereotyped as a "lady poet." The
George Mackay Brown (1921-1996),

book was largely ignored, selling only two copies,
pp. 1627-28

and she is best remembered for the novel *Wuth-*
George Mackay Brown was born in Stromness,
ering Heights (1847). Many of her poems a small
fishing and shipbuilding seaport in the (including "The
Prisoner" and "Remembrance") Orkney Islands of
Scotland. Apart from the time

were originally written (with Anne) as part of the
he spent at Newbattle Abbey College and the
"Gondal" saga, a series of intricate and elaborate
University of Edinburgh, he remained in the
tales set in an imaginary kingdom. The meter
Orkneys all his life. As sufferer from tuberculosis,
and form of Emily Brontë's poems often derive
he underwent several periods of extended treat-
from the Wesleyan hymns she sang as a child.

ment and convalescence in local sanatoriums
.

Much of her imagery is Gothic, and her concern
He became a Roman Catholic in 1961. Whether
with the transience of human life and beauty, as
in poetry or in his lyrical short stories and plays,

well as her reliance on a p e r s o n a l i n n e r vision,
Brown wrote almost invariably on t h e m e s con-
links h e r to t h e R o m a n t i c s . S h e died at nected with
his remote northern homeland. His H a w o r t h , of
tuberculosis.

work was inspired by Norse saga, Catholic lit-

B I O G R A P H I C A L S K E T C H E S / 2 0 8 1

urgy a n d c e r e m o n y , e l e m e n t a l rituals, ballad,
ciously in his father's eclectic library. In 1846,

myth, legend, island folklore, a n d local history,

he eloped with t h e p o e t Elizabeth Barrett, a n d

r e c o r d e d a n d imagined. In addition to publish-

he lived with h e r in Italy until h e r d e a t h , in

ing thirty-one books of poetry, twelve collections

1861. His early work, w h i c h i n c l u d e d d r a m a a n d

of s h o r t stories, a n d five novels, including poetry, was
poorly received by the public, b u t *Greenvoe* (1 9 7 2) , he
collaborated with the c o m -

b r o u g h t h i m the respect of influential literary

poser P e t e r Maxwell Davies on an opera, *The*

figures s u c h as J o h n Forster, T h o m a s Carlyle,

Martyrdom of St. Magnus.

C h a r l e s Dickens, a n d Alfred, Lord T e n n y s o n .

W i t h the publication of *Dramatis Personae* in

S t e r l i n g A. B r o w n (1 9 0 1 - 1 9 8 9) , pp. 1426-

1864, followed by the p o p u l a r *The Ring and the*

29

Book, w h i c h a p p e a r e d in m o n t h l y i n s t a l l m e n t
s Sterling A. Brown was b o r n in W a s h i n g t o n ,

b e t w e e n N o v e m b e r 1868 a n d F e b r u a r y 1869,

D.C., and educated at Williams College and at Browning's reputation grew prodigious. His collected poems were published in sixteen volumes, he embarked on a long and distinguished career, during which he taught at Virginia Seminary College and Lincoln, Fisk, and London for a funeral in Westminster Abbey and (for nearly fifty years) Howard Universities. buried in its Poets' Corner.

From 1936 until 1939, Brown worked with the Federal Writers' Project of the Works Progress

Administration (WPA). For a time, he edited

Alan Brownjohn (b. 1931), pp. 1829-30

Administration (WPA). For a time, he edited

Alan Brownjohn was born in London and educated at

Negro Affairs magazine, and he later worked at

Merton College, Oxford. A school-

Opportunity. In addition to poetry, he published

teacher from 1957 to 1965, he was also a

several seminal works on African American literature.

Brown cited the regionalists and realists

South Bank Polytechnic before becoming a full-

E. A. Robinson and Robert Frost as important

time writer in 1979. The first of his eleven col-

influences. Like Jean Toomer, he set his work

lections of poems, *The Railings*, was published

primarily in rural surroundings, and like Lang-
in 1961; his most recent, *The Cat without E-*
ston Hughes, to whom Brown is often com-
mail, in 2001; and he was the chairman of the
pared, he derived many of his forms from the
Poetry Society from 1982 to 1988. He has been
ballad, the work song, jazz, and the blues.

poetry critic for the *New Statesman*, *Encounter*,
and, since 1990, the *Sunday Times*. He has also

Elizabeth Barrett Browning (1806-1861),
written three novels, two books for children, and
pp. 947-51

a critical study of Philip Larkin. His *Collected*

Elizabeth Barrett was raised in Herefordshire,
Poems 1952-1983 was reissued in 1988.

England. She received no formal education, but
studied the classics at home and was extremely

William Cullen Bryant (1794-1878),
well educated for a woman of her day. Her two-
pp. 902-05

volume *Poems* (1844) attracted the attention of
William Cullen Bryant was born in Cumming-

Robert Browning, and in 1846 they were in, Massachusetts,
a descendant of early Puri-secretly married and
eloped to Italy. In England,

immigrants. He spent a year at Williams

she had lived the life of an invalid, but in Italy

College and, at his father's urging, three years

her strength and spirits revived. She developed

reading law at Worthington and Bridgewater
a passion for Italian politics, supporting unifi-
Colleges. Bryant's reputation as a poet was
cation and writing energetically on behalf of the
established in 1817 with the publication of
cause. Her poetry was well received, and at the
"Thanatopsis" (Greek for "a view of death"), the
time of her death, her reputation outstripped her
first version of which he wrote at age sixteen. In
husband's. She is best known for *Sonnets from*
1825, he abandoned law for literature. He
the Portuguese (1850), a sequence of forty-four
served on the editorial board of several journals,
Petrarchan sonnets that document her burge-
on -
including the *New York Review*, and in 1829 he
ing love for Browning, but she is most admired
assumed the editorship of New York's *Evening*
for *Aurora Leigh* (1857), a nine-book verse *Post*, a position he
held for nearly fifty years. In novel. That work shocked
many of its readers,
his later years, he devoted much energy to trans-
who took offense at her criticism of the stulti-
lating the *Iliad* (1870) and the *Odyssey* (1871 -
fying social forms imposed on women, but
72) into blank verse. He wrote essays and travel
deeply impressed contemporary writers, includ-
journals, and also published his speeches and
ing John Ruskin, who called it "the greatest
orations.

poem written in English.”

Basil Bunting (1900-1985), pp. 1421-25

Robert Browning (1812-1889), pp. 1009-

Basil Bunting was born in Newcastle, North-
41

umberland. He attended the London School of

Robert Browning was born in a suburb of Lon-

Economics. After being imprisoned for six

don. He attended London University, but months
as a conscientious objector during received most of
his education by reading voraciously. World War I, he lived a
bohémian existence that

2082 / BIOGRAPHICAL SKETCHES

took him to France (where he met the poet Ezra

George Gordon, Lord Byron (1788-1824),

Pound), Greece, Italy, Germany, and the Cana-
ry pp. 833-63

Islands. He enlisted in the Royal Air Force on

George Gordon, Lord Byron was born near

the outbreak of World War II, served in a num-

Aberdeen, Scotland, to dissolute aristocratic

ber of posts across the globe, and after the war

parents who had fallen on hard times. Their dif-

was appointed to the British Embassy in Tehran.

difficulties were alleviated when Byron inherited

He returned to Northumberland in 1953 and

his title at age ten. Upon graduation from Trinity

went to work for a small newspaper. After the

College, Cambridge, he embarked on a two-year

publication of *Briggflatts* (1966), the collection
to u r of Portugal, Spain, Malta, G r e e c e , a n d Asia
u p o n w h i c h h i s r e p u t a t i o n l a r g e l y r e s t s , h e w a s
M i n o r , d u r i n g w h i c h h e g a t h e r e d m u c h o f t h e
m u c h i n d e m a n d o n t h e u n i v e r s i t y c i r c u i t a n d
m a t e r i a l f o r h i s m o s t i m p o r t a n t p o e m s . H e
t a u g h t a t s e v e r a l i n s t i t u t i o n s i n E n g l a n d a n d t h e
b e c a m e a c e l e b r i t y o v e r n i g h t i n 1812 w i t h t h e
U n i t e d S t a t e s . L i k e P o u n d , B u n t i n g e x p l o i t e d
p u b l i c a t i o n o f t h e f i r s t t w o c a n t o s o f *Childe Har-*
t h e d e e p c o n n e c t i o n b e t w e e n p o e t r y a n d m u s i c ,
olde's Pilgrimage, b u t n o t o r i e t y s u p p l a n t e d f a m e
a n d h i s m a j o r p o e m s a r e w r i t t e n i n f o r m s h e
w h e n h i s a f f a i r w i t h h i s h a l f - s i s t e r , w h o m h e h a d
i d e n t i f i e d a s t h e “ o d e ” a n d t h e “ s o n a t a . ” H i s *Colme t as an*
adult, b e c a m e p u b l i c k n o w l e d g e . H i s
lected Poems w a s p u b l i s h e d i n 1968, a n d *Uncol-*
m a r r i a g e c o l l a p s e d , a n d h e w a s f o r c e d t o l e a v e
lected Poems a p p e a r e d p o s t h u m o u s l y i n 1991.
E n g l a n d i n 1816. H e f o l l o w e d t h e p o e t P e r c y
B y s s h e S h e l l e y t o G e n e v a a n d I t a l y , t h e n w e n t
o n t o G r e e c e , w h e r e h e o r g a n i z e d a c o n t i n g e n t
R o b e r t B u r n s (1759 - 1796), *pp.* 747-60
o f s o l d i e r s t o f i g h t f o r i n d e p e n d e n c e f r o m t h e
R o b e r t B u r n s w a s b o r n i n t o a f a r m i n g f a m i l y i n
T u r k s . A f t e r h e f e l l s i c k i n t h e w o o d s d u r i n g a
A y r s h i r e , S c o t l a n d . H e r e c e i v e d a m o d e s t e d u -
t r a i n i n g e x e r c i s e a n d d i e d , h e w a s m o u r n e d a s a

cation at the "adventure" school established by national hero throughout Greece. His work was his father and his neighbors, but was largely self-widely known in Europe and was immensely taught. He spent a year and a half in Edinburgh influential on the major European writers of his following the publication of his immensely popular first book, *Poems, Chiefly in the Scottish* literature was the development of the *Byronic Dialect* (1786), but returned home the following year, a doomed but impassioned wanderer, year when he was awarded a sinecure in the office driven by guilt and alienated from his society. Burns farmed and performed his Excise Office. In *Don Juan*, his master-official duties until 1791, when he gave up his piece, he uses the narrator to attack institutions and moved to Dumfries. He devoted his last such as the government, the Church, and marriage; criticize vices such as hypocrisy, greed, a project to preserve Scottish culture and the and lust; and subtly extol virtues such as courage, loyalty, and candor. Although many critics in Scots, a form of English spoken by the Scottish considered the poem a wanton celebration of tish peasantry that incorporates many dialect

them is adventures of a profligate, Byron called words, and his subject matter was frequently it “the most moral of poems.”

drawn from Scottish folk tales and legends,

Scottish landscapes, and local events. He has

Roy Campbell (1902-1957), pp. 1436-37

been compared to figures such as Robert Hen-

Roy Campbell was born in Natal, South Africa.

ryson, William Dunbar, and Gavin Douglas, After living briefly in England in his early twenties who wrote in the fifteenth and sixteenth centuries,

he returned to South Africa and founded

ries, the golden age of Scottish literature, and

the literary magazine *Voorslag* (“Whiplash”),

sponsored a revival of interest in Scottish culture.

which satirized the values of the Afrikaners.

Among the volumes of poetry he produced during

the 1920s and 1930s were *The Georgiad*, an

attack on the Bloomsbury group; *Flowering*

Witter Bynner (1881-1968), pp. 1269-70

Reeds, a return to his earlier lyricism; and *Flow-*

Witter Bynner was born in Brooklyn, New York,

ering Rifle, in which he eulogized the Spanish

and raised in Norwalk, Connecticut, and Brook-

dictator Francisco Franco. In 1935, Campbell

line, Massachusetts. He was educated at Har-

became a Roman Catholic, and during World

vard University. Until 1906, he worked as an

War II he served in the British army. He died in

editor, then quit to devote himself to writing.
a c a r c r a s h in Portugal. In addition to poetry, he
Bynner traveled extensively in t h e U n i t e d States
w r o t e two autobiographical works. His transla-
a n d in C h i n a . In addition to poetry, he p u b l i s h e d
tions of S p a n i s h a n d P o r t u g u e s e fiction, a n d
several verse d r a m a s a n d n u m e r o u s essays. W i t h
particularly of Federico Garcia Lorca's poetry
the assistance of Kiang Kang-hu, he u n d e r t o o k
a n d C h a r l e s Baudelaire's *Les Fleurs du Mai*, are
t h e t w e n t i e t h century's first significant transla-
highly regarded.

tion of C h i n e s e poetry into English. B y n n e r
gained f a m e , or infamy, for p e r p e t u a t i n g t h e
Thomas Campion (1567—1620), *pp.* 278-

“Spectricism” hoax, in w h i c h he a n d A r t h u r
82

Davidson F i n c k e p u b l i s h e d a well-received vol-
T h o m a s C a m p i o n was born in L o n d o n a n d edu-
u m e of p o e m s i n t e n d e d as a spoof on Imagism.
c a t e d a t P e t e r h o u s e , C a m b r i d g e , w h i c h he
left B I O G R A P H I C A L S K E T C H E S / 2 0 8 3
w i t h o u t taking a degree b u t with a taste for clas-
g r o u n d s he was to live for t h e rest of his life. In
sical literature, a n d at Gray's Inn, t h o u g h he was
1855, he b e c a m e a lecturer in m a t h e m a t i c s , a n d
never called to t h e bar. A f t e r receiving an M . D .
t h e r e a f t e r he p u b l i s h e d several books on t h e

from the University of Caen in 1605, he was subject, including a defense of Euclid. He was practicing medicine in London by 1606. He an inventor and a skilled photographer; considered himself to be first and foremost a although he became a clergyman in 1861, his classicist and a composer, however, his chief habitual shyness caused a bad stammer that aim being to “couple my words and notes loved kept him from preaching often. In addition to ingly together.” He fulfilled this ambition in a poems, puns, pastiche, conundrums, problems number of lyrics in four *Books of Airs* for lute of logic, and some adventurous linguistics, he and voice, and in his composition of court wrote children’s books (under the pseudonym masques including *The Lord Hay’s Masque*, performed Lewis Carroll, a Latinized form of Lutwidge formed in 1607, and the *Somerset Masque* and Charles). *Alice’s Adventures under Ground* the *Lord’s Masque*, both performed in 1613. Five (1865), now usually known as *Alice’s Adventures* poems by Crompton were published, anonymously in *Wonderland*, like its sequel, *Through the* mously, in 1591, and his *Poemata*, consisting of *Looking-glass and What Alice Found There* Latin panegyrics, elegies, and epigrams, (1871), began tales told during boating trips appeared in 1595. In his treatise *Observations in*

on the river Thames to the three daughters (one *the Art of English Poesy* (1602), he advocated the of whom was Alice) of Henry Liddell, dean of classical or “quantitative” system of meter, Christ Church. The stories were an instant and prompting Samuel Daniel’s *Defense of Rhyme* enduring success, perhaps because of the (1602). Though Champion dismissed his own absence of the “improving” matter found in most early, mainly rhymed, verse as “superfluous blossoms of my deeper studies,” his unrhymed, experimental poems have a musical quality no Anne Carson (b. 1950), pp. 1969-71 less impressive than that of his rhyming poems.

Anne Carson was born and raised in Toronto, Canada. She did both her undergraduate and Thomas Carew (ca. 1595 - 1640), pp. 385 - graduate work at the University of Toronto. Her 90

Ph.D. is in classical studies, and she has a dis-

Thomas Carew (pronounced *Carey*) was born in distinguished reputation not only as a poet but also West Wickham, Kent, England. Son of Sir Mat- as a classical scholar, translator, and essayist. thew Carew, who worked in the court of law Her poetry collections also tend to transgress known as the Chancery, Carew was educated at

Ph.D. is in classical studies, and she has a dis-

Thomas Carew (pronounced *Carey*) was born in distinguished reputation not only as a poet but also West Wickham, Kent, England. Son of Sir Mat- as a classical scholar, translator, and essayist.

thew Carew, who worked in the court of law

Her poetry collections also tend to transgress

known as the Chancery, Carew was educated at

the boundaries of genre, as can be seen in titles
Merton College, Oxford, and the law school of
such as *The Beauty of the Husband: A Fictional*
the Middle Temple. He was secretary to Sir
Essay in 29 Tangos. She is a professor of classics
Dudley Carleton, the ambassador to Venice and
at McGill University, in Montreal.

later to The Hague, from 1613 to 1616, when
he returned to England. He was next employed
Charles Causley (1917-2003), pp. 1590-92
by Sir Edward Herbert, the ambassador to
Charles Causley was born in Launceston, Cornwall, during
which time he established his

wall, and lived there all his life. His father, a
reputation as a poet and found favor with King
private soldier, returned from France after
Charles I, whom he made him a gentleman of the
World War I a hopeless invalid, and died seven
privy chamber in 1628. Carew is the earliest of
years later from the residual effects of nerve gas.

those authors who, like his friends Sir John
Causley was educated at a local grammar
Suckling and Richard Lovelace, are today school, then
worked in a builder's office and known as "Cavalier" poets. They
were Royalist

later for a small electrical supply company. His
in politics, looked to the classical poets (through
service in the Royal Navy from 1940 until 1946
Ben Jonson) for their models, and composed

proved decisive to his literary career, drawing graceful, witty, elegantly crafted verse. Carew him from prose to poetry and providing him with saw his own work as “a mine of rich and pregnant subject. After the war, he became a teacher, and brought lucidity, directness, and his first book of poetry, *Hands to Dance*, was frank sexuality, and urban cynicism to a matter published in 1951. After retiring in 1965 to verse, but also wrote on other themes, most become a full-time writer, he accepted offers to notably in his “An Elegy upon the Death of the teacher in various colleges and universities in Australia, Canada, and the United States. He also masque, *Coelum Britannicum*, was performed published plays, short stories, and children’s before Charles I in 1634, and a collection,

verse, and edited numerous collections of *Poems*, was published in 1640.

poetry. He won the Queen’s Gold Medal for Poetry and was made CBE in 1986.

Lewis Carroll (Charles Lutwidge Dodgson) (1832-1898), pp. 135-39

Margaret Cavendish (1623-1673), pp. 499-

Charles Lutwidge Dodgson was born in Dares-

500

bury, Cheshire, England, and educated at Rugby

M a r g a r e t C a v e n d i s h w a s b o r n i n E n g l a n d t o a n
a n d a t C h r i s t C h u r c h , O x f o r d , o n w h o s e a r i s t o c r a t i c
f a m i l y a n d b e c a m e a m a i d o f h o n o r 2 0 8 4 / B I O G R
A P H I C A L S K E T C H E S

to Q u e e n H e n r i e t t a M a r i a . A t t w e n t y - t w o , s h e
i n b o t h t e c h n i q u e a n d l a n g u a g e ; a g r e a t n u m b e r

m a r r i e d t h e R o y a l i s t W i l l i a m C a v e n d i s h , t h e n o f w o r d s a n d
p h r a s e s , m a n y o f F r e n c h o r i g i n , m a r q u i s o f N e w c a s t l e , l a t e r
f i r s t d u k e . S h e m e t

a p p e a r f o r t h e f i r s t t i m e i n h i s w r i t i n g s . H i s *C a n -*

h i m i n P a r i s , w h e r e t h e y b o t h l i v e d i n e x i l e d u r -

t e r b u r y T a l e s , b e g u n i n 1 3 8 6 , i s a n u n f i n i s h e d

i n g t h e C o m m o n w e a l t h . I n 1 6 5 1 , h a v i n g g r o u p o f t a l e s t o l d b y
m e m b e r s o f a c o m p a n y o f r e t u r n e d t o E n g l a n d t o t r y t o
r e c o v e r p a r t o f h e r

p i l g r i m s . T h e t a l e s d r a w o n C h a u c e r ' s k n o w l -

h u s b a n d ' s e s t a t e , s h e w r o t e *F a n c i e s* (1 6 5 3) a n d

e d g e o f m a n y d i f f e r e n t s o c i a l r o l e s a n d e v e n t s .

Philosophical Fancies (1 6 5 3 ; r e v i s e d a s p a r t o f H e l i v e d
t h r o u g h s e v e r a l p l a g u e s a n d t h e P e a s - P h i l o s o p h i c a l a n d
P h y s i c a l O p i n i o n s , 1 6 5 5) . H e r a n t ' s R e v o l t o f 1 3 8 1 ; h e s e r v e d
a s c o n t r o l l e r o f w i d e - r a n g i n g i n t e l l e c t u a l i n t e r e s t s , a m o n g
t h e m

t h e e x p o r t t a x o n w o o l , s h e e p s k i n s , a n d l e a t h e r

c h e m i s t r y a n d n a t u r a l p h i l o s o p h y , i n f o r m t h e s e

f o r t h e p o r t o f L o n d o n ; h e w a s j u s t i c e o f t h e

a n d s u b s e q u e n t w r i t i n g s i n a v a r i e t y o f g e n r e s ,

p e a c e a n d a m e m b e r o f P a r l i a m e n t f o r t h e

i n c l u d i n g t h e d e l i b e r a t e l y h y b r i d *Worlds of Olio*

c o u n t y o f K e n t ; a n d h e w a s a l s o a d e p u t y f o r -

o f 1 6 5 5 (t h e t e r m *Olio* r e f e r s t o a P o r t u g u e s e

ester. Although he never completed his plan of
stew with many ingredients). She explores the
writing one hundred and ten Canterbury Tales
question of women's "secondary" status from (two for each
pilgrim to tell on the way to Can-many and sometimes
contradictory perspectives
terbury, two for the way back), the twenty-two
in volumes of plays (1662 and 1668), in *Natures*
tales and two fragments that he did complete
Pictures (with autobiography; 1656), in her contain, as Joh n
Dryden said, "God's plenty."
Sociable Letters (1664), and in her Utopian nar-
rative, *The New Blazing World* (1668). She vis-
Nicholas Christopher (b. 1951), pp. 1973-
ited the Royal Society, a newly instituted 75
scientific institution, in 1667 and was viewed as
Nicholas Christopher was born and raised in
an "eccentric" both in her own time and later.
New York City and has lived there most of his
life. He was educated at Harvard University,
Geoffrey Chaucer (ca. 1343-1400),
where he studied with the poets Robert Lowell
pp. 19-70
and Anthony Hecht, and has taught at New York
Geoffrey Chaucer was born into a middle-class
and Columbia Universities. A prolific writer, he
merchant family and at about age fifteen
has published poetry and novels—as well as an
became a page to the countess of Ulster. While

amalgam of the two in his “novella in verse,”
serving her husband, Lionel (the second son of
Desperate Characters (1989)—and he has edited
King Edward III), during the Hundred Years
several collections of contemporary American
War, Chaucer was captured at the siege of poetry. He is also
the author of a prose work on Reims and eventually ransomed.
In 1365, he film noir.

married Philippa Roet, sister-in-law of the pow-
erful peer John of Gaunt, who was the uncle and

Amy Clampitt (1920-1994), pp. 1609-15

advisor of King Richard II. In 1367, Chaucer Amy Clampitt
was born and raised in New Prov—was granted an annuity in
the royal household

idence, Iowa. She was educated at Grinnell Col-
and soon began traveling on diplomatic mis-
lege and, briefly, at Columbia University. After
sions: to Spain (1366), to France (1368), and to
working as an editor at Oxford University Press

Italy (1372 and 1378). During his travels, he and E. P. Dutton
and as a reference librarian at encountered works by French
and Italian the National Audubon Society, she became a
authors such as Jean Froissart, Guillaume freelance writer in
1982. Clampitt published her Machaut, Dante, Petrarch, and
Boccaccio. first collection of poetry at age sixty-three; *The*
These authors influenced Chaucer in a variety

Kingfisher established her immediately as one of

of ways; his first important original work, *The*

the nation’s most acclaimed poets. Like John

Book of the Duchess, shows the influence of Keats, about
whom she wrote a series of poems, French courtly poetry; and
his later *House of*

she reveled in the sensuousness of the natural
Fame parodies Dante's *Divine Comedy* by world and of
language. A New Yorker most of depicting a poet's journey—
in the talons of an
her life, she died in Lenox, Massachusetts.
eagle—to the celestial palace of the goddess of
Fame. And his *Troilus and Criseide* (1385) was John Clare
(1793-1864), pp. 983-96
deeply indebted to Boccaccio's *Filostrato*. Chau-
John Clare was born in the small rural village of
cer's work also shows the influence of two texts
Helpstone, in Northamptonshire, England.
that he translated into English from French and
After leaving school at age twelve, he worked on
Latin, respectively: a thirteenth-century drama
the land, as gardener, hedge-settler, lime-
vision entitled *The Romance of the Rose* and a burner, and
field hand, and published his first fourth-century philosophical
dialogue by Boe-collection, *Poems Descriptive of Rural Life*
and
thus, *The Consolation of Philosophy*. At a time *Scenery*, in
1820. The book was a success, but when many of his
contemporaries were writing
as literary tastes changed, and the vogue for
in French and Latin, Chaucer's use of English
“ploughman poets” declined, subsequent vol-
helped to establish the vernacular as a viable
umes were not. Clare had a strong sense of place
medium for serious poetry. He was an innovator
and was deeply attached to his native country-

BIOGRAPHICAL SKETCHES / 2085

side. A move to a village four miles distant from but fell into a dissolute lifestyle. He fled to London and served in the 15th Light Dragoons until for chronic mental insecurity and, along with his his brothers secured his release some months parting from his first love, Mary Joyce, provided later. In 1794, he met Robert Southey, then an the theme of loss so prevalent in his writing. undergraduate at Balliol College, Oxford.

After manifesting signs of mental illness for Together they conceived the Utopian philosophy many years, he was sent to an asylum in 1837 of Pantisocracy and planned to start a commune and, having been declared insane, transferred to in New England. This never came to fruition, Northampton General Lunatic Asylum, where but Coleridge and Southey continued to lecture he remained until his death. Written in his own in Bristol on political issues. Coleridge married combination of dialect and idiosyncratic grammar Sara Fricker in 1794. The following year, he met mar, his descriptions of rural landscape and elements William Wordsworth and Wordsworth's sister, gies for a dying pastoral England are highly Dorothy, in Somerset. It was one of the most evocative. Clare's poetry remained in semi-creative periods of his life, inspiring the com- obscurity until the mid-twentieth century, when position of poems such as "Kubla Khan," "The

his evident authenticity of feeling and complex
Rime of the Ancient Mariner,” and “Christabel.”
sensitivity were made available through new edi-
With Wordsworth, he published *Lyrical Ballads*
tions of his poems, autobiographical prose, and
(1798), one of the most revolutionary collec-
letters. A memorial to him in the Poets’ Corner
tions of poetry in the history of English litera-
of Westminster Abbey was dedicated in 1989.
ture. From age thirty, Coleridge largely gave up
poetry for philosophy and criticism. He is cred-
Arthur Hugh Clough (1819-1861),
ited with introducing the works of the philoso-
phers Immanuel Kant, Friedrich von Schlegel,
pp. 1051-53

Arthur Hugh Clough (rhymes with
and Friedrich von Schelling to England. At the
rough) was
born in Liverpool, England, to a cotton mer-
height of his powers, he became addicted to
chant and the daughter of a banker. His family
opium, which had been prescribed to relieve
moved to South Carolina in 1822, but Clough
physical pains that Wordsworth said were so
returned to England in 1828 to attend first
unbearable they drove Coleridge to “throw him-
Rugby School, then Balliol College, Oxford. In
self down and writhe like a worm upon the

1842, he earned a fellowship at Oriel College, ground.” He had also fallen in love with Sara Oxford, where he became friends with the poet Hutchinson, Wordsworth’s future sister-in-law, Matthew Arnold. Like Arnold, he struggled with but although his relationship with Sara Fricker his religious beliefs, and in 1848 he resigned was deteriorating, he would not end the marriage from his fellowship because he would not take marriage. His despair was later channeled into clerical orders without sincerely believing the “Dejection; An Ode,” published in 1802. He doctrines of the Church of England. That same spent his last years in the care of a London year, he published his first work, clergyman, writing and attempting to be reconciled with estranged family and friends alienated *Toher-na-Vuolich*, a verse novel about the romance between a student and a Scottish peasant by his addiction, depression, and extreme behavior. After traveling to Rome and writing more poetry, including *Amours de Voyage*, he took an administrative position at the University of London; in 1851, however, uncertainties about his

lished in 1814, and editions of his *Collected* religious faith again led him to resign. During *Poems*, which appeared in 1817, 1828, and the next year, Clough returned to America with

1834. In an age dominated by skepticism and the thought of emigrating; he settled in Boston, empiricism, Coleridge held fast to his belief in

where he tutored, wrote for magazines, and the powers of the imagination, which he saw as established a lasting friendship with Ralph capable of leading humanity to Truth—through Waldo Emerson. He returned to England in appeals not to reason but to the senses. In 1853, took an appointment in the Education Office, and married a cousin of Florence Night-

ingale. He died in Florence, Italy, while touring the Continent in the hope of improving his health, and Matthew Arnold wrote “Thyrsis” in

poetic and may have been the progenitor of memory of his friend. Most of Clough’s work many twentieth-century experiments in free verse was published posthumously.

verse.

Samuel Taylor Coleridge (1772-1834),
Billy Collins (b. 1941), *pp. 1917-18*

pp. 805-31

Billy Collins was born in New York City. He

Samuel Taylor Coleridge was born in Ottery St.

attended parochial schools, graduated from

Mary, a rural village in Devon. He was educated

Holy Cross College, and earned his Ph.D. in
at Christ's Hospital School, London, and Jesus
Romantic poetry from the University of Califor-
College, Cambridge, where he studied Classics,
nia at Riverside. Although he published his first
2086 / BIOGRAPHICAL SKETCHES
book, *Pokerface*, in 1977, it was not until the
in a novel, *Part of His Story*, but also in nearly
1990s that he became one of the most popular
book-length poems such as *Notes from a Child*
poets and poetry readers in American literary
of Paradise. The author of a much-used prosody
history, prized for his accessibility and humor. A
manual, *The Poem's Heartbeat*, Cornell shows an
professor at Lehman College, City University of
attention to formal concerns in his many vol-
New York, since the 1970s, he was the poet lau-
umes of verse. Having taught at Columbia, Yale,
reate of the United States in 2001—02. He lives
and elsewhere, he now lives in Lenox, Mass -
in Somers, New York.

chusetts.

William Collins (1721-1759), pp. 673-77

Gregory Corso (1930-2001), pp. 1807-10

William Collins was born in Chichester, Gregory Corso
was born in New York City to England, where
his father was twice mayor.

Italian immigrants. During his childhood, his
Educated at Winchester School and Magdalen

mother died and his father returned for a time to College, Oxford, he published *Persian Eclogues* to Italy. Corso lived in an orphanage and, even as an undergraduate. Allegedly "too indolently, four foster homes; when he was twelve, even for the army," he went to London to earn his father returned, remarried, and took custody a living from writing. His finances were always of him. He first went to prison for stealing an insecure, and ruin was averted only by the action radio from a boys' home. During a later prison of friends such as Samuel Johnson. His *Odes on sentence*, he discovered literature through *Several Descriptive and Allegoric Subjects* books given to him by an elderly inmate. When (1747) was not esteemed at the time of publication in 1950 he left prison, he met Allen Ginsberg, cation, but a small inheritance enabled Collins who further guided his reading and education as to return to Chichester, where he could study a poet. In 1954, he spent time in Cambridge, and write. In 1750, he gave the Scottish play-*Massachusetts*, at the invitation of Harvard and wright John Home an unfinished draft of "Ode Radcliffe students, who gathered the money to on the Superstitions of the Highlands," in which publish his first book, *The Vestal Lady on Brattle* (as the poet Robert Lowell put it) "the whole (1955). His travels with Ginsberg to San Fran-

teacher, the arts and reviews editor of the *Inner* as secretary of the queen. He was imprisoned London Education Authority's *Contact* magazine when he returned to England ten years later, zine, and television columnist for the *Spectator*. because he was working as a spy and partly She began writing while undergoing psycho- because he had published the satire *The Puritan* analysis for severe depression following her *and the Papist* (1643). A political epic, *The Civil* father's death. In addition to her verse for adults *War*, was not published until 1679, but the children, she has edited a collection of ebrated the king's return to power with an "Ode, poetry by women. Cope's acerbic, witty, epi- Upon the Blessed Restoration" (1660). In his grammatic poems invite comparison with the "Pindaric Odes," included in *Poems* (1656), work of Dorothy Parker and Stevie Smith. Like he introduced the irregular ode form that would them, she has serious aims and proves, as she influence John Dryden, among others. says, "a humorous poem can also be ... deeply felt and saying something that matters."

William Cowper (1731-1800), pp. 695-705

Alfred Corn (b. 1943), pp. 1929-30

William Cowper (pronounced *Cooper*) was born

Alfred Corn was born and brought up in Great Berkhamstead, Hertfordshire, England, via. He was educated at Emory and Columbia

and was educated at a private school and West-Universities; his graduate studies were in minster; his experience of bullying at the former French literature. A reviewer, an essayist, and

lead to the attack on private schools in his "Tir-

an art critic, he has also edited an anthology of

ocinium" (1785). He studied law at the Inner

writings on the Christian Scriptures. His nar-

Temple and was called up to the bar, but never

rative impulse has demonstrated itself not only

practiced. From his early years, he suffered from

BIOGRAPHICAL SKETCHES / 2087

depression, which was accelerated into mental

feature historical figures, including Pocahontas

instability both by his father's forbidding his and Rip Van

Winkle; and celebrate natural as marriage to his cousin,

Theodora, and by an

well as technological wonders, including the

uncle's attempt to get him a sinecure in the Brooklyn Bridge.

House of Lords, the prospect of examination for

which brought on a suicide attempt. Treated at

Stephen Crane (1871-1900), pp. 1220-22

St. Albans asylum, Cowper turned to the con-

Stephen Crane was born in Newark, New Jersey,

solutions of evangelical Christianity, and on his

and was raised in upstate New York. He

release became “a sort of adopted son” in the household of the Reverend Morley Unwin. After attending Lafayette College and Syracuse University before moving to New York City, where Unwin’s death, Cowper, Mary Unwin, and her children set up house together in Olney, Buckinghamshire. His first novel, a naturalistic account of urban poverty called *Maggie: A Girl of the Streets* (1893), was poorly received, but his next book, *The Red Badge of Courage* (1894-95), earned him international fame. Although Crane had never fully recovered his physical and mental health. After which he written this Civil War narrative without seeing combat, he received commissions to report on conflicts across the globe, including the Cuban Insurrection, the Turkish War, and the Spanish-American War. He died in Germany, where he had gone in search of a cure for his tuberculosis.

George Crabbe (1754 - 1832), pp. 723-31

George Crabbe was born into poverty in Aldeburgh, Suffolk, England. Although he attended grammar schools between ages ten and fourteen. Although he became famous for his prose,

teen, he was educated largely at home by his father. He was parish doctor of Aldeburgh and considered pioneering examples of free verse. The before leaving for London and a literary career

poet John Berryman, his biographer, revived in 1780. With the help of his friend and admirer Edmund Burke, he published *The Library* (1781), was introduced to contemporary literary circles, and was encouraged to join the clergy to Richard Crashaw's mother and stepmother both relieve his financial distress. In 1781, he became curate of Aldeburgh, and from 1782 until 1785 most of his life rebelling against the austere religion of his father, a Puritan preacher. Crashaw Samuel Johnson helped him revise *The Village* was educated at Charterhouse and Pembroke (1783), a grimly realist portrait of rural poverty.

Hall, Cambridge, where he was influenced by After a period when he published little, in 1807 the Anglican Nicholas Ferrar, founder of the he produced a collection of earlier and new religious community at Little Gidding. After his works including "The Parish Register," which

ing his fellowship at Peterhouse with the Royal established him as a narrative poet. He pub-

alists' defeat, Crashaw spent two years in exile, lished several more collections during his life- converting to Catholicism in 1645 and fleeing time and left a quantity of unpublished work on to Paris, where another friend, the writer Abra- his death. Known for his use of the heroic cou- ham Cowley, persuaded Q u e e n Henrietta Maria plet characteristic of the departing Augustan to get Crashaw a position as an attendant to an Age, he was, according to Lord Byron, "Nature's Italian cardinal and, subsequently, as a sub- sternest painter yet the best."

canon at the Cathedral of Loretto. In 1634,

Crashaw published a book of Latin poems, *Epi- Hart Crane (1899-1932), pp. 1410-16*

grammatum Sacrorum Liber. His Steps to the

Hart (Harold) Crane was born in Garrettsville,

Temple, Sacred Poems with Other Delights of the

Ohio, and raised in Cleveland. He left high *Muses* (1646, revised and enlarged 1648) con-school in 1916 and moved to New York. From

tains both religious and secular poems and indi-

1918 to 1923, he shuttled between New York

cates its debt to George Herbert in its title. A

and Cleveland and worked for advertising agen-

passionate admirer of the Spanish mystic Saint

cies (where he wrote copy), a munitions plant,

Teresa, Crashaw sought to represent the expe-

a local newspaper, and his father's candy com-

rience of religious ecstasy in words and, per-
pany. In 1923, Crane settled in New York, but
haps, in visual media. The manuscript as well as
in 1931 he sailed to Mexico, where he planned
the printed volumes of his poetry contain elab-
to write an epic about the Spanish Conquest.
orate titles in different-sized letters; and the
On a return trip to the United States, he com-
blematic engravings in his final (post-
mitted suicide by leaping into shark-infested humously
published) volume, the *Carmen Deo* waters. Crane's long
poem, *The Bridge*, which *Nostrum* (1652), may be by his own
hand.

brought him fame, is his "mythical synthesis of
America," following in the tradition of Walt
Robert Creeley (b. 1926), pp. 1705-08
Whitman. Its fifteen sections of varying length
Robert Creeley was born in Arlington, Massa-
move westward, from New York to California;
chusetts, and educated at Harvard University.

2088 / BIOGRAPHICAL SKETCHES

From 1944 to 1945, he interrupted his studies
and Auckland and beginning studies for the
to drive an ambulance for the American Field
ministry (which he later abandoned) at St.

Service in the India-Burma theater, then later John's College.
He taught English at Auckland left Harvard during his last
semester to take up

University from 1950 until 1976. In addition to
subsistence farming. He traveled to France and

serious poetry, Curnow published satirical verse

Mallorca, Spain (where he established the under the pseudonym Whim-Wham, as well as Divers Press), and returned to the United States

plays and literary criticism. He edited two landmark anthologies, *A Book of New Zealand Verse*

in 1956. As a member of the faculty at the experimental Black Mountain College, Creeley and *The Penguin Book of New Zealand Verse*. In 1966, he founded its *Review*. In 1966, he began teaching

the 1930s, Curnow was involved with poets at the State University of New York at Buffalo. associated with the left-wing magazine *Phoenix*, Deeply influenced by Charles Olson, William and his early work reflects their shared belief in Carlos Williams, and the Beats, all of whom the importance of establishing a national literature for New Zealand. These poems characterized directly from feeling, he writes a spare and compositionally make detailed observation of the natural world. In 1972, after a fifteen-year silence, he pressed verse.

world. In 1972, after a fifteen-year silence, he began writing in a new mode, exploring the relationship between self and place, the mystery of Countee Cullen (1903-1946), pp. 1443-46 Countee Cullen was born in Louisville, Kentucky, nature, and death.

At age fifteen, he was adopted by an Epis-

copal minister from New York City. Educated at
S a m u e l Daniel (1 5 6 3 - 1 6 1 9) , pp. 230-35

New York University and Harvard University, he
Samuel Daniel was born near Taunton,

worked as an assistant editor at *Opportunity* England;
educated at Magdalen Hall, Oxford; magazine, a prominent
periodical of the Harlem

and traveled widely throughout Europe, learning
Renaissance, from 1926 until 1928, when a fel-
several languages. He enjoyed the patronage of
lowship enabled him to spend a year in Paris.

Mary Sidney, countess of Pembroke, to whose

From 1934 onward, he taught English and son he was tutor;
and his neoclassical tragedy French in New York City public
schools. In *Cleopatra* (1594, revised 1607), was influenced
addition to writing five collections of poetry,

by Mary Sidney's translation of a French play

Cullen translated Euripides, published a novel
about Cleopatra and Antony (*Antonie*, 1592).

about life in Harlem, edited an influential Daniel wrote works
in a variety of genres, from anthology of African American
poetry, and wrote

a history of the War of the Roses to tragic and
two children's books. Wanting to be known fore-
pastoral dramas, to court masques. His *Defense*
most "as a poet and not as a Negro poet," he
of Rhyme (1602?), a response to Thoma s Cam-
employed traditional forms while often exploring
pion's treatise alleging the superiority of classi-
themes of African American life.

cal prosody, occupies an important place in the debate on the status of the vernacular as a literary language. In 1592, Daniel published his sonnet cycle to “Delia”; a romance, *The Complaint of Rosamond*, appeared in the same volume. Another collection, *Certain Small Poems* University. In the early 1920s, he lived in both (1605), caused Daniel to lose the favor of King New York City (where he was affiliated with the *Dial* magazine group, which included the poet protagonist, Philotas, was identified with Queen Marianne Moore) and Paris (where he met the Elizabeth I’s rebellious courtier, the earl of poets Ezra Pound, Hart Crane, and Archibald Essex. Daniel was nonetheless patronized by MacLeish). In his later years, he lived primarily James’s queen, Anne, and he continued to write in New York. At the time of his death, he was masques for the court, including *Tethys’ Festival* one of the best-known and best-loved American (1610) and *Hymen’s Triumph* (1615). Ben Jon-poets. Like his paintings, Cummings’s poems son, with whom Daniel was “at jealousies,” crit-

reflect the influence of the Impressionist and
icized his poetry, but others, including Samuel
Cubist movements in the visual arts and Ima-
Taylor Coleridge, have praised his poetic lan-
guage. guage.
Through his radical experiments with syntax,
typography, and line, he defamiliarized common
Donald Davie (1 9 2 2 - 1 9 9 5) , *pp. 1641-44*
subjects, often with humor, whether light-
Donald Davie was born in Barnsley, Yorkshire,
hearted or satirical.

England, to Baptist parents, and brought up in
“the industrially ravaged landscape” of the West
Allen Curnow (1 9 1 1 - 2 0 0 1) , *pp. 1528-30*
Riding. He was educated at Barnsley Hogate
Allen Curnow was born in Timaru, New Zea-
Grammar School and at St. Catherine’s College,
land, the son of an Anglican clergyman and
Cambridge, where he was greatly influenced by
author of light verse. He worked as a journalist
the critic F. R. Leavis. His studies were inter-
before attending the Universities of Canterbury
rupted by service in the Royal Navy, but he then
B I O G R A P H I C A L S K E T C H E S / 2 0 8 9
returned to Cambridge and took his B.A., M.A.,
Carolina, then left to join the air force. After
and Ph.D. He taught at Trinity College, Dublin;
serving as a fighter-bomber pilot during World

the University of California at Santa Barbara; War II, he attended Vanderbilt University, and Gonville and Caius College, Cambridge. He

where he began writing poetry. He received B.A.

joined the newly founded University of Essex,

and M.A. degrees from Vanderbilt and did fur-

serving on its faculty from 1964 until 1968, then graduate work there and at Rice University, when he moved to Stanford

University. In 1978,

in Texas. Following another two years in the air

he moved to Vanderbilt University, from which

force (this time as a training officer during the

he retired in 1988 to live in Devon. Davie's first

Korean War), he spent six years as a writer of

collection of poetry, *Brides of Reason*, appeared advertising copy, then later taught at a number in 1955, to be followed by many others, includ-of universities. In 1960, he published his first

ing his *Collected Poems* in 1990. He also pub-

book of poetry, and from 1966 to 1968 he served

lished a number of influential studies of English

as poetry consultant to the Library of Congress.

poetry, diction, and syntax, as well as criticism

In addition to poetry, he published fiction,

of the work of Hardy, Pound, and Pasternak; including the best-selling novel *Deliverance* translations of the work of Polish, Hungarian,

(1970)—which he adapted into a Hollywood

and Russian writers; and a study of English hym-

film—and nonfiction, including reviews and

nology. His editorial work included several col-

autobiographical works.

lections of poetry, including the *New Oxford Book of Christian Verse* (1981). Davie's *Purity of Emily Dickinson* (1830-1886), pp. 1110-
Diction in English Verse (1952) was virtually a
27

manifesto for The Movement, a group of writers

Emily Dickinson was born in Amherst, Massa-

who eschewed the symbolism and syntactical chusetts, to a prominent family. For one year, disjunctions of Imagism and Symbolism in favor

she attended Mount Holyoke Female Seminary

of paraphrasable logic, plain diction, straight-

(now College), in nearby South Hadley, then

forward syntax, and traditional forms.

withdrew and returned to Amherst. Dickinson

lived at her family home in Amherst from 1848

Peter Davison (b. 1928), pp. 1751-52

on, rarely received visitors, and in her mature

Peter Davison was born in New York City and

years never went out. Suffering from agorapho-

raised in Colorado. He was educated at Harvard

bia (the fear of public places) and perhaps from

University and St. John's College, Cambridge,

an eye disorder, she became known as "the

and spent two years in the United States Army.

Myth" and "the character of Amherst." Fewer

Davison has had a distinguished editorial career

than a dozen of her poems were published in her

at Harcourt, Brace; Harvard University Press;
lifetime. Such a solitary life hardly dulled her
Atlantic Monthly Press; and Houghton Mifflin.

sensibilities, however, for Dickinson's works

As the poetry editor of *The Atlantic Monthly* include nearly
two thousand poems, plus volu-since 1972, he has notably
influenced poets and

minous correspondence. The poems reveal her
poetry readers. His work shows an affinity with
intimate knowledge of the Bible, classical myth,
that of his father, the English poet Edward Dav-
and the works of Shakespeare; in addition, she
ison, and family friend and mentor Robert Frost.
admired the work of Transcendentalists Tho-
He lives in Boston and in Gloucester, Massa-
reau and Emerson. In an era marked by its evan-
chusetts.

gical fervor, Dickinson adopted skepticism,
irony, ambiguity, paradox, and sardonic wit. She
Walter de la Mare (1873-1956), *pp.* 1225-

often wrote in the meters of hymns and made
27

masterful use of the ballad stanza and of slant
Walter de la Mare was born in Charlton, Kent,
rhyme. Although her innovations initially baf-
England. In 1890, he took a job as a bookkeeper
fled critics, the public's fascination with her life
at the London offices of the Standard Oil Com-
soon extended to her verse. She is, along with

pany, a position he held for eighteen years, until
Walt Whitman, the most revered and influential
a government pension enabled him to devote of nineteenth-
century American poets.

himself full-time to writing. In 1902, he pub-
lished his first collection of poetry, *Songs of
Childhood*, under the pseudonym Walter Ramal.

J o h n D o n n e (1 5 7 2 - 1 6 3 1) , pp. 2 9 3 - 3 2 2

Over the next forty-five years, he published volu-

John Donne was born in London, his father an
minously, producing novels, short stories, and
ironmonger and his mother, a devout Catholic,

poetry, as well as editing several influential the daughter of the
dramatist John Heywood as anthologies of literature, including
Come Hither

well as a descendent of Sir Thomas More.

(1923) and *Behold the Dreamer* (1939). He was

Donne studied at Oxford without taking a

made a Companion of Honour in 1948 and degree, because to
do so would have required awarded the Order of Merit in
1953.

him to swear an oath affirming that the English
monarch was head of the Church. After travel

James Dickey (1923-1997), pp. 1661-64

in Europe, he entered the legal institution of

James Dickey was born in Atlanta, Georgia. In

Lincoln's Inn in 1592. In 1595, Donne partici-

1942, he attended Clemson College, in South

pated in a naval expedition against Spain, and in

2 0 9 0 / B I O G R A P H I C A L S K E T C H E S

1596 he joined an expedition to the Azores. On his return, he became private secretary to Sir Thomas Egerton, lord keeper of the Great Seal, usually on the theme of courtly love. After payment of a huge ransom, he was dismissed when his secret marriage to Lady Egerton's seventeen-year-old niece, Ann More, was discovered. The marriage effectively blocked Donne's career as a courtier; and after many years of seeking offices and patrons, he took orders in the Church of England in 1615—

Keith Douglas (1920-1944), *pp. 1620-23*

Keith Douglas was born in Tunbridge Wells, Kent, England, and brought up near Cranleigh. King James I had been urging him to do since 1607. Two years later, his wife died. He became dean of St. Paul's Cathedral in 1621, and his childhood was difficult, as his father became a drifter and his mother was stricken with

sermons were very well attended. His private "sleepy sickness." At Merton College, Oxford, devotions (in prose) were published in 1624, but

his tutor was Edmund Blunden, the soldier-poet very few of the poems he had been writing since of World War I. In 1940, Douglas enlisted, and

the 1590s were printed during his lifetime; a year later he was posted to Egypt; though instead, they circulated widely in manuscript, ordered to remain in reserve, he commandeered creating many textual variants and many quesa truck and joined his regiment at the front. He

tions about dating for future editors and readers.

was badly injured when he stepped on a land

His poems were divided into nine generic groups

mine, but after convalescence in Palestine was

in the second edition of his poetry (1635), sent to the European front, and was killed dur-including the *Elegies*, modeled on Ovid's erotic

ing the invasion of Normandy. Before his death,

verse; the *Songs and Sonnets*, containing a vari-

Douglas had prepared a collection for publica-

ety of secular love poems; and the *Holy Sonnets*.

tion, but it did not reach print until 1966. He

also wrote a memoir, *Alamein to Tjern Z em*, based

H. D. (Hilda Doolittle) (1886-1961),

on his experiences in the Middle East. In this,

pp. 1311—16

as in his poems, he presents himself in dual

Hilda Doolittle was born in Bethlehem, Penn-

roles: victim and killer, satirist and eulogist, dis-

sylvania. In 1901, she met the poet Ezra Pound,

interested spectator and committed participant.

who encouraged her writing. Doolittle attended

His *Collected Poems* appeared, posthumously, in

Bryn Mawr College, then moved to Greenwich

1951, and an edition of his letters was published

Village, where she established her reputation as in 2001.

a writer. She traveled to London in 1911, intending to visit Pound, but stayed in Europe for the rest of her life. In 1912, Pound submitted Rita Dove (b. 1952), pp. 1985-90

three of Doolittle's poems to Harriet Monroe,

Rita Dove was born in Akron, Ohio. She was editor of *Poetry* magazine, signing them "H. D.

educated at Miami University (Ohio), the University of Tubingen (Germany), and the University of Iowa, and

has taught at Arizona State fairly early, her reputation has remained closely

University and the University of Virginia. Dove tied to that short-lived but momentous movement. In 1933, H. D. entered psychoanalysis in Berlin and Jerusalem. In 1993, she became poet laureate of the United States. In addition to poetry, she has written fiction and drama. Her

own experience against the great storehouses of literature, myth, history, religion, and the own mixed European and African American her-occult, and her *Trilogy* included three long itage has been a source of inspiration, as have poems concerning World War II, most notably mythology and history.

The Walls Do Not Fall (1944). In addition to

poetry, she published numerous volumes of Ernest Dowson (1876-1900), pp. 1211-12

prose, worked as a translator, and wrote verse

Ernest Dowson was born in Kent, England. He wrote dramas.

He went to The Queen's College, Oxford, but left without obtaining a degree. He studied Latin

Charles d'Orleans (1391-1465), pp. 77-78

poetry, and through extended stays on the Con-

tinental became familiar with French literature.

Charles VI of France), married his cousin Isa-

bella (widow of Richard II of England) in 1406.

Arthur Symonds, William Butler Yeats, and oth-

ers, Dowson formed the Rhymers' Club, an

informal writers' group based in London, and

their defeat by the English army under Henry V.

He spent the next twenty-five years in prison,

well as to *The Yellow Book* and the *Savoy*. In

1891, he met Adelaide Foltinowicz, "Missie," for

English as well as French. He produced chan-

whom he harbored a lifelong but unrequited

sons, complaintes, and translations, as well as

passion, and who became a symbol of love and

BIOGRAPHICAL SKETCHES / 2091

innocence in his poetry. He was received into political and literary satire, such as *Absalom and the Roman Catholic Church* about 1891. From *Achitophel* (1681) and the mock-heroic *Mac Flecknoe* (1682), affirmed the public role of the poet and established the basic forms of verse, and France, and supporting himself through most notably the heroic couplet, that dominated translation. His last years were marred by poverty, ill health, and depression. He died, of early nineteenth century. His introductions and tuberculosis, at the London home of a friend,

essays, at once learned and commonsensical, R. H. Sherard, who had looked after him in the final six months of his life.

criticism” from his successor Samuel Johnson and helped shape English prose style for centuries. In his later years, after writing a poem Michael Drayton was a year older than Shakespeare and born in the same county, Warwickshire, England. Drayton was brought up as a his enemies to charge him with opportunism page in the house of Sir Henry Goodyere, whose

Michael Drayton (1563 - 1631) , pp. 235-38

(James II, a Catholic, had recently succeeded to daughter Anne (later Lady Rainsford) Drayton the throne), eventually resulted in Dryden's los- loved, perforce platonically, for many years. At ing his public offices and stipends, when the age ten, he dedicated himself to a poetic career, Protestant rulers William and Mary replaced and without benefit of a university education he J a m e s in 1688. Nearing sixty, Dryden supported became a learned and accomplished practitioner himself by writing plays and translating classical of most of the Renaissance poetic genres. He writers, Chaucer, and Boccaccio.

settled in London in 1590 and the next year pub-

lished his first work, *The Harmony of the Peter Kane Dufault* (b. 1923), pp. 1665-*Church*. For reasons that remain obscure, this

67

series of verse paraphrases of the Bible was sup-

Peter Kane Dufault was born in Newark, New

pressed by public order, except for forty copies

Jersey, and attended Harvard University. During

(of which only one has survived) retained by the

World War II, he served in the United States

bishop of Canterbury. In 1593, he published Army Air Force.

Since then, he has worked as a *Idea: The Shepherd's Garland* (1593), which news editor, a house painter, a tree surgeon, a shows the influence of Spenser's pastoral poetry.

folk singer, a fiddler, a country-dance caller, an

A collection of sonnets, *Idea's Mirror*, appeared

actor, and a teacher of writing at Williams Col-

the next year (it was frequently revised and lege and Berkshire Community College (Mas-expanded); in both works Drayton honored sachusetts). His work typically observes the Anne Goodyere under the name "Idea." He con-natural world closely and carefully, sometimes

sidered *Poly-Olhion* his greatest poem, but this imbuing its subjects with mystical qualities. He thirty-thousand-line celebration of the topogra-lives in Hillsdale, New York.

phy of Britain (1612—22) proved less popular

than most of Drayton's other works, among Carol Ann Duffy (b. 1955), pp. 2007-09

them *England's Heroical Epistles* (1597), mod-

Carol Ann Duffy was born in Glasgow, Scotland,

eled on Ovid's *Heroides*. Although Drayton brought up in Staffordshire, England, and stud-wrote a poem of fulsome praise when King ied philosophy at the University of Liverpool.

J a m e s I took the crown, he never found favor at

She has been a visiting professor and a writer-

the court after Elizabeth I's death; and his vision

in-residence at a number of institutions. A reg-

of the English nation as well as his most popular

ular reviewer and broadcaster, she now lectures

poetry suggest that he belonged to the Elizabe-

in poetry at Manchester Metropolitan Univer-

than Age even though he long outlived it.

sity. Her book *Mean Time* (1993) won both the

Whitbread Prize for Poetry and the Forward

J o h n Dryden (1 6 3 1 - 1 7 0 0) , pp. 5 0 0 - 2 6

Prize. The hallmarks of her poetry—her ability

John Dryden, the son of a country gentleman to invent plausible characters, to explore a range and his wife, was educated at Westminster of points of view, and to pace her poetry so as School and Trinity College, Cambridge. to surprise readers—derive in large part from Although he wrote his first poem, *Heroic Stanzas* her experience of writing for the stage. Like Robert Browning (1659), to commemorate Oliver Cromwell's death, she favors the dramatic-death, he celebrated the return of King Charles II in *Astraea Redux* (1660). A loyal Royalist for with complex emotions, questionable ethics, the rest of his life, he was made poet laureate in and rich fantasy lives.

1668. He wrote twenty-four plays for the newly reopened London theaters and numerous Paul Laurence Dunbar (1 8 7 2 - 1 9 0 6) , important songs, poems, and elegies. Many of

pp. 1 2 2 2 - 2 4

these were written for specific occasions such as

Paul Laurence Dunbar was born in Dayton,

a coronation, a military victory, or a death. Ohio, the son of former slaves. His father had These poems, together with his long works of

escaped to Canada via the Underground Rail-

2 0 9 2 / B I O G R A P H I C A L S K E T C H E S

road, but returned to the United States to enlist

plays for radio and television, and translated

in the second black regiment of the Union Army.

Racine's *Andromache*. He has edited a selection

Dunbar attended a white high school, where he read Delmore Schwartz's poems, a collection of which showed an early talent for writing. He was inspired by Hull poets, and *The Faber Book of* unable to fund further education, however, and

Twentieth-Century Scottish Poetry. He is a professor in the School of English at the University of St. Andrews. When his reputation as a writer grew, the abolitionist Frederick Douglass secured a job for him at the

Columbian Exposition, in Chicago. From 1897 to 1898, he worked as an assistant in the reading room of the Library of Congress, and he later

Richard Eberhart (b. 1904), *p. 1450*

Richard Eberhart was born in Austin, Minnesota. He supported himself by writing and lecturing in the United States and England. In addition to his poetry, Dunbar published four novels and four volumes of short stories.

he made his way to England, where he undertook studies in English at St. John's College, Cambridge. Upon his return to the United States, Eberhart did graduate study at Harvard

William Dunbar (ca. 1460-ca. 1525),

States, Eberhart did graduate study at Harvard

pp. 86-90

University, then taught at St. Mark's School

William Dunbar was born to a noble Scottish (near Boston), where the poet Robert Lowell family and apparently took an M.A. from St. Andrews University (near Edinburgh) in 1479. Eberhart served as an aerial gunnery instructor.

He became a Franciscan friar and traveled in

In the mid-1940s, he joined his father-in-law's

England and France before leaving the order. floor-wax company, but in the 1950s he began Employed in various civil and diplomatic capacities an academic career and taught at, among other

ities abroad by James IV of Scotland, he went to

schools, the University of Washington, Prince-

England with the ambassadorial mission to Dartmouth College. In addition arrange the king's marriage to Margaret Tudor,

tion, he helped found the Poets' Theatre, in

for which occasion (in 1503) he wrote *The Cambridge*, Massachusetts.

Thryssil and the Rois, a political allegory in which

James is the thistle, Margaret the rose. This was

followed by poems allegorical, satirical, vision-

T. S. Eliot (1888 - 1965), pp. 1340-66

ary, and narrative, on both religious and secular

Thomas Stearns Eliot was born to a distin-

themes. Influenced by Chaucer and the French

guished New England family, raised in St.

poet Francois Villon, Dunbar wrote in a Scottish

Louis, Missouri, and educated at Harvard Uni-

form of English, describing, in *The Flyting* (i.e., versity, the

Sorbonne, and Oxford University, quarrel) of *Dunbar and*

Kennedie, the antipathy where he wrote his Ph.D. dissertation

on the between “Inglis”-speaking southern border-English
logician and metaphysician F. H. Brad-

landers and the Scots/Gaelic-speakers of the

ley. The critic Arthur Symons’s work on the

highlands and west. He received a royal pension

French Symbolists was a seminal influence on

in 1500, and some of his poems—“The Q u e e n i s

Eliot, as was the poet Ezra Pound, who encour-

Progress at Aberdeen,” for instance, and per-

aged him to stay in Europe and would eventually

haps his “In Prais of Wemen”—suggest that edit his
masterpiece *The Waste Land* (1922).

Q u e e n Margaret was his real or desired patron.

From 1917 until 1925, he worked in the Inter-

national Department at Lloyd’s Bank, after

D o u g l a s D u n n (b. 1 9 4 2) , pp. 1927-29

which he joined the publishing house of Faber

Douglas Dunn was born in Inchinnan, Renfrew-

and Faber, where he published the work of

shire, Scotland, and was educated at the Scot-

W. H. Auden, Stephen Spender, Louis Mac-

tish School of Librarianship and the University

Neice, and other young poets. He also edited the

of Hull. He worked as a librarian in a number

Egoist magazine and founded the influential *Cri-*

of places, including Akron, Ohio, and at the *terion*. In 1927,

Eliot took British citizenship University of Hull, where he

worked under and joined the Church of England. In his later

Philip Larkin, whose influence can be seen in

years, he wrote compelling critical studies on lit-

his early poems. Those contained in his first collection, *Terry Street* (1969), graphically describe generally considered the most important critic of the squalid living conditions and impoverished of the century. In addition, he wrote several successful verse dramas. He was awarded the Nobel Prize for Literature in 1948. Although he dis- fellow at the University of Dundee. In 1984, he missed *The Waste Land*, which he wrote largely settled in Tayport, Fife; in 1985, he won the while hospitalized for a breakdown in 1921, as Whitbread Book of the Year Award for his *El- gies*, poems written for his wife, an artist and a grouse against life,” his generation considered it curator, who died, of cancer, at thirty-seven. a definitive explanation of its distress. Eliot’s later Dunn has also published short stories, written work documents his conversion to Christianity

B I O G R A P H I C A L S K E T C H E S / 2 0 9
3

and culminates in *Four Quartets* (1 9 3 5 - 4 3) , Ralph W a l d o E m e r s o n (1 8 0 3 - 1 8 8 2) , which he considered his greatest work.

pp. 941-46

Ralph Waldo Emerson was born and raised in Queen Elizabeth I (1533-1603), *pp. 14 2-*
Boston, the son of a Unitarian minister and his

wife. He was educated at Harvard University
 The daughter of Henry VIII and his second wife,
 and Harvard Divinity School. Ordained as junior
 Anne Boleyn, Elizabeth was declared a bastard
 pastor of Boston's Second Church, he left the
 by her father, who executed her mother in 1534
 church in 1832 because of deep doubts con-
 on probably spurious grounds of adultery. Q u e s -
 cerning organized religion. That same year, he
 tions about the legitimacy of Elizabeth's birth (at
 traveled to Europe, where he met the poets Wil-
 a time when Henry's first wife, Katharine of Ara-
 liam Wordsworth and Samuel Taylor Coleridge
 gon, was still living) fueled many later attacks on
 and the essayist and historian Thomas Carlyle,
 her, especially those by Catholics who sup-
 who became a close friend and great influence.
 ported the claims to the throne of Mary Tudor,
 He also was introduced to German idealism, and
 Elizabeth's elder half-sister, or later, those of this philosophy,
 along with the writings of Plato Mary Q u e e n of Scots,
 Elizabeth's cousin. Eliz-and Swedenborg and the sacred texts
 of Hin-
 abeth replaced Mary Tudor on the throne of duism, largely
 determined Emerson's interpre-England in 1558, supported by
 many of the
 tation of Transcendentalism. Although he never
 Protestants who had welcomed her half-brother
 developed his beliefs into a full-fledged system,

Edward VI's brief reign (1547—53). Elizabeth Emerson preached self-reliance and optimism was, however, more adroit at religious compro- and promoted instinct over reason. The Tran-

mise than Edward or Mary had been; the years
scendental circle that formed around him

of Elizabeth's long reign were relatively peace-
included the writers Henry David Thoreau,

ful, despite the plots on her life and the criti-
Jones Very, Margaret Fuller, and Nathaniel

cisms made by many of her male subjects of a
Hawthorne. Although he used conventional

woman's right to rule England. Well-educated
meters and forms for his early poems, Emerson

in languages and rhetoric, the youthful Eliza-
came to believe that "a thought so passionate

beth translated works by Boethius, Petrarch, and alive ... has
an architecture of its own,"

and Marguerite of Navarre, among others; as a
and this "organic" theory of composition

queen, Elizabeth gave eloquent speeches that informed his
later works.

were recorded by others, sometimes in several
quite different versions. She wrote many letters

William E m p s o n (1 9 0 6 - 1 9 8 4) , *pp. 146 3-*

and some lyric poems. In her speeches and writ-
64

ings, Elizabeth often sought to control, and William Empson
was born at Yokefleet Hall, sometimes to counter, the many
images of her

near Howden, Yorkshire, and educated at Magdalene College, Cambridge. He took degrees in famous Elizabethans portrayed her as a “fairy mathematics and, under the tutelage of critic queen” (Spenser did so in his epic of that name,

I. A. Richards, English. After spending the as did Shakespeare in his play *A Midsummer Night's Dream* 1930s abroad, teaching at the Tokyo University, she preferred to portray herself

of Literature and Science and for the Southwest as a woman who had the “heart and stomach of Associated Universities in China, Empson a king.”

returned to England when World War II broke out and worked for the B B C , where he edited *Jean Elliot (1727 - 1805) , p. 677*

scripts for foreign broadcast. In 1947, he Jean (or Jane) Elliot was born in Teviotdale, returned to China to teach at Peking National University, and there he witnessed the Chinese death, she, her mother, and her sister moved to Edinburgh, where Elliot remained until returning to Teviotdale shortly before her death. She was appointed professor of literature at Sheffield and was the author of probably the most popular ver-

vation and the Minnesota border. She was edu-
low J a m e s to France after the king was deposed
cated at Dartmouth College—where she studied
in 1688; following his release, he and his wife
with the late Michael Dorris, who would become
retired to their estate in Eastwell, Kent. Encour-
her husband and collaborator—and at Johns aged by her
husband, Anne Finch began to write Hopkins University. She
has worked at a variety
in the 1680s, and her long poem “The Spleen”
of jobs, including teaching poetry in prisons and
was anthologized in 1701. In 1709, Jonathan
editing a newspaper dedicated to Native Amer-
Swift addressed a poem, “Apollo Outwitted,” to
ican affairs (her mother was of French Chip-
her, and she exchanged poems with Alexander
pewa descent). Known primarily as a novelist Pope about the
representation of “female wits”
and short-story writer, Erdrich is a storyteller in
in his *The Rape of the Lock* (1714). In 1713, she
her poetry as well. Many of her poems are dra-
published her *Miscellany Poems on Several*
matic monologues spoken by the inhabitants of
Occasions, which included a tragedy, *Aristo-*
a mythical small town in the early twentieth cen-
menes, but many of her poem s remained in man-
tury.
uscript at her death. William Wordsworth
praised her nature poems, especially “A Noctur-

J a m e s F e n t o n (b . 1 9 4 9) , p p . 1 9 6 1 - 6 7

nal Reverie,” and included seventeen of her

J a m e s F e n t o n was born in Lincoln, England, poems in an anthology he compiled for Lady and educated at Magdalen College, Oxford, Mary Lowther in 1819. Only recently, however, where he studied politics, philosophy, and psy-

chology. He has worked as a literary and political

the problems of women writers achieved their

journalist, and as a foreign correspondent in due recognition.

Germany, Cambodia, and Vietnam. His

publications include collections of poetry, the-

E d w a r d F i t z G e r a l d (1 8 0 9 - 1 8 8 3) , p p . 9 6 1 -

ater reviews, and accounts of his travels and

73

experiences as a war reporter. He has translated

Edward FitzGerald was born in Bredfield, Suf-

Verdi’s *Rigoletto* for the English National Opera

folk, England, and educated at Trinity College,

and contributed to the musical version of Hugo’s

Cambridge, where he met the writers William

Les Miserables. He was professor of poetry at Thackeray and Alfred, Lord Tennyson. He never Oxford University from 1994 to 1999.

adopted a trade, but lived a retired and abste-

mious life occupied with study and translation.

L a w r e n c e F e r l i n g h e t t i (b . 1 9 1 9) , p p . 1 6 0 6 -

In the 1850s, he took up oriental studies, a prev-

07

alent interest of mid-nineteenth-century intel-

Lawrence Ferlinghetti was born in Yonkers, New York, and in 1856 he produced his first New York. Upon graduation from the University

translation. The work for which he is best known

of North Carolina at Chapel Hill, he joined the

is his free translation of *The Rubaiyat of Omar*

navy and served during World War II. He *Khayyam of Naishapur*, which he published worked for *Time* magazine and later resumed his

anonymously in 1859, expanded in 1868, and

education at Columbia University and the Sor-

revised further in 1872 and 1879. FitzGerald

bonne. After moving to San Francisco, he maintained the structure of Omar Khayyam's started the City Lights Bookstore and the City

epigrammatic *ruba'i*, or quatrains, including

Lights Press, which launched the careers of a

their *aaba* rhyme scheme and mounting tension,

generation of American poets. He was associ-

but deviated significantly from the twelfth-

ated with the San Francisco Group, started by

century Persian manuscript. Imposing unity on

the poet Kenneth Rexroth, and with the Beats,

the work by introducing a time frame and dra-

whose prominent members included Jack Ker-

matic situation, he stripped it to its essential

ouac, William Burroughs, Gregory Corso, and

themes, including the evanescence of life and

Allen Ginsberg, whose popular but controversial

the consequent necessity to "seize the day"

Howl and Other Poems he published and (*carpe diem*). Initially ignored, the work rapidly defended when it was charged in court as inde-gained in popularity when it was discovered by

cent. His own *A Coney Island of the Mind* the painter and poet Dante Gabriel Rossetti and (1958), hip and satirical, was a huge success.

his Victorian coterie, the Pre-Raphaelites, who found its themes and tone strikingly contemporary.

Anne F i n c h , C o u n t e s s o f W i n c h i l s e a (1 6 6 1 - 1 7 2 0) , pp. 5 5 6 - 6 6

Anne Finch was born in Sydmonton, Berkshire,

R o b e r t F i t z g e r a l d (1 9 1 0 - 1 9 8 5) , pp. 1507-

England. After the deaths of her parents, Sir 08

William Kingsmill and Anne Haslewood, she Robert Fitzgerald was born in Geneva, New was raised and educated by an uncle. In 1683, York, and grew up in Springfield, Illinois. He with the poet Anne Killigrew, Finch became a

was educated at Harvard University and also did

maid of honor to Mary Modena, the duchess of

informal studies at Trinity College, Cambridge.

York and future wife of King J a m e s II, and at

After working as a reporter for the *New York*

court met Colonel Heneage Finch, future earl

Herald Tribune and later for *Time* magazine, he

of Winchilsea, who became her husband. Col-

served in the navy during World War II. Begin-

B I O G R A P H I C A L S K E T C H E S / 2 0 9 5

ning in 1949, Fitzgerald divided his time around the turn of the century, he worked as a between the United States and Italy.

He served
farmer in New Hampshire. From 1912 until
as poetry editor of *The New Republic* and taught
1915, he, his wife, and their four children lived
at, among other schools, Sarah Lawrence Col-
in England, where he published his first book,
lege and Princeton, Harvard, and Yale Univer-
A Boy's Will (1913), and met the poets Ezra
sities. Renowned primarily for his translations of
Pound and Edward Thomas, both of whose
Homer and Virgil, he (with Dudley Fitts) also
shrewd reviews helped establish his reputation.
translated Euripides and Sophocles.

Upon his return to America, Frost held a num-
ber of teaching appointments, his most enduring
John Fletcher (1 5 7 9 - 1 6 2 5) , p. 345

association being with Amherst College. From
John Fletcher was born in Rye, Sussex, England,
the publication of his second book, *North of Bos-*
and was educated at Benet College, Cambridge.
ton (1914), onward, Frost became one of the

After the death of his father, bishop of London,
best-known and most celebrated American

Fletcher was left to make his own way. In Lon-
poets. In 1961, he read his poem "The Gift Out-

don, he befriended Francis Beaumont, with right" at President
John F. Kennedy's inaugu-whom he cowrote a number of
plays for the fash-

ration, an honor indicating his unique status for

ionable boys' companies. Along with Shakespeare, Fletcher and Beaumont became leading playwrights of the King's Men, the most prominent theatrical company of the day. Their joint works include *Philaster* (ca. 1609), *The Maid's* ody continue to mark the work of living poets.

Tragedy (ca. 1610), and *A King and No King* (1611). Following Beaumont's early retirement

George Gascoigne (ca. 1534—1577), and death, Fletcher collaborated with other pp. 144-46

playwrights, most notably Philip Massinger, George Gascoigne was probably educated at with whom he wrote *Sir John van Olden Bar-Trinity College, Cambridge, and entered Gray's*

navelt (ca. 1619) and *The Beggar's Bush* (ca. 1555). Seeking a career as a courtier, he 1622), among other plays, and Shakespeare, sold his patrimony to cover his debts. In 1561, with whom he probably wrote *Henry VIII* (1613)

he wed the already married Elizabeth Boyes;

and *The Two Nohle Kinsmen* (1613). Fletcher is

nine years later, he w^as imprisoned for debt.

credited with sole authorship of a number of

Having served twice in Parliament in the late

plays, including *The Faithful Shepherdess* (ca. 1550s, he was refused his seat in 1572 on the 1609), *The Chances* (ca. 1617), *The Wild-Goose* grounds of his bad reputation. From 1572 until *Chase* (ca. 1621), and *Rule a Wife and Have a*

1573, he served as a soldier in the Netherlands, *Wife* (1624). His success reflected his alertness during which time an unauthorized edition of to changing tastes as well as his deft handling of his play and poems, *A Hundred Sundry Flowers* tragicomedy and the comedy of manners. Like *Bound Up in One Small Posy*, appeared, which many dramatists of his day, he included lyrics

he corrected and extended as *The Posies of* and songs in his plays.

George Gascoigne. Acknowledging Chaucer as his poetic master, Gascoigne translated from the Philip Freneau (1752 - 1832), pp. 116-18

Italian Ariosto's *The Supposes* and wrote the first

Philip Freneau was born and raised in New York

original poem in English, *The Steel Glass*, a sat-

City. He was educated at the College of New

ire. His *The Adventures of Master F. f.* is a pio-

Jersey (now Princeton University). From 1776 neering work of novelistic prose. He divided his until nearly 1779, he worked as a secretary to a

poems into three categories: "flowers," or "pleas-

plantation owner in the West Indies. Upon a ant" poems written on "light occasions"; "herbs,"

second trip to the West Indies, in 1780, he was

or "profitable" poems on moral subjects; and

captured by the British and held as a prisoner of

"weeds," or poems "neither delightful nor yet

war. In 1790, he became a clerk of foreign lan-

profitable" on his own follies. His *Certain Notes*

guages for the State Department, and he later
of Instruction Concerning the Making of Verse or
worked for a number of journals. He spent his
Rhyme in English, the first important work on
last years on his family's plantation in New Jer-
English prosody, is a pithy and practical hand-
sey, fell into poverty and obscurity, and died of
book showing a wide knowledge of poetic forms.
exposure when he lost his way home during a
snowstorm. Best known for his satires (many of
David G a s c o y n e (1 9 1 6 - 2 0 0 1) , pp. 1580-83
which were anti-British), his polemics, and his
David Gascoyne was born in Harrow, Middle-
lyrics, Freneau was called "the poet of the Amer-
sex, England, and educated at Regent Street
ican Revolution," and many consider him the
Polytechnic, London. He published his first col-
first major American poet.

lection of poems at age sixteen. In 1933, he trav-
eled to Paris to investigate the Surrealist

R o b e r t Frost (1 8 7 4 - 1 9 6 3) , pp. 1227-45
movement (and wrote the first English study of

Robert Frost was born and raised (until age it when he was
nineteen), and he lived in France eleven) in San Francisco. He
attended Dart-from 1937 to 1939 and 1954 to 1965. He joined
mouth and Harvard Colleges. For a decade, the Communist
Party in 1936 and made a brief 2 0 9 6 / B I O G R A P H I C
A L S K E T C H E S

sojourn in Spain, but his support for the Party

knighting him only in 1907, twenty-five years proved ephemeral, though his interest in social after Sullivan was knighted.

and political issues endured. In the late years of World War II, he became an actor. Psychological problems following his war experiences cul-

Allen Ginsberg (1926-1997), *pp. 1708-15*

Allen Ginsberg was born in Newark, New Jersey,

minated in several nervous breakdowns. In and was educated at Columbia University. After addition to his poems, he published a semi-spending much time in New York City with Wil-

autobiographical novel and translated the work of several European poets, including Jean Jouve.

writers, he moved to San Francisco, where

He was made *Chevalier dans l'Ordre des Arts et*

Lawrence Ferlinghetti's City Lights Press pub-

Lettres by the French Ministry of Culture in lished *Howl and Other Poems* (1956). The title 1996.

p o e m — a condemnation of bourgeois culture, a celebration of sexuality, and a manifesto for the

Beat movement—has been published in many

J o h n Gay (1 6 8 5 - 1 7 3 2) , *pp. 594-96*

languages and remains the source of Ginsberg's

John Gay was born in Barnstaple, Devon, worldwide reputation. Before dropping out of England. Educated at a Devon school, he was

the workaday world, Ginsberg had held a variety apprenticed to a London silk dealer, but was

of jobs. He subsequently traveled across
released from service due to poor health and
England, the Far East, and the United States;
began to haunt London literary society. He soon
was active in radical politics; and taught at a
gained the attention of Alexander Pope, Jona-
variety of schools. He closely studied Tibetan
than Swift, and John Arbuthnot, with whom he
Buddhism and Western mystics such as William
founded the "Scriblerus Club." With their help,
Blake. Long before his death, in New York,
he obtained posts with influential figures,
his countercultural poetry had been widely
including the duchess of Monmouth, widow of
embraced by the literary establishment.

the duke figured in Dryden's *Ahsalom and Ach-
itophel*; Lord Clarendon, whom he followed to
the court of Hanover; and the duke and duchess
D a n a Gioi a (b. 1 9 5 0) , pp. 197 2-73

of Queensberry, who housed him at their estate
(Michael) Dana Gioia was born in Los Angeles.
and managed his financial affairs. He was even-
After receiving a B.A. at Stanford University, he
tually awarded a modest sinecure as lottery com-
studied at Harvard University and at the Stan-
missioner. Gay achieved fame with *The Beggar's*
ford University Business School. From 1977
Opera (1728), a satire on Italian opera and

until 1992, he worked as an executive at General English politics. This work's evocative lyrics and Foods, in New York City. He subsequently left pleasing tunes established Gay's reputation as the business world to devote himself to writing, the premiere lyricist of his day.

and settled in Santa Rosa, California. Author of controversial essays such as "Notes on the New Formalism" and "Can Poetry Matter?," he is also W. S. Gilbert (1836-1911), pp. 1144-46 known as a translator, a librettist, and an anthologist. In 2004, he became chairman of the don. Educated at King's College, University of National Endowment for the Arts.

London, he studied law at the Inner Temple, though his career as a barrister was unsatisfying Louise Gluck (b. 1943), pp. 1931-33

and, therefore, brief. In 1857, he joined the militia, in which he served for twenty years. He on Long Island, and educated at Sarah began writing comic verse and operatic bur-Lawrence College and Columbia University, lesques during the 1860s, and in 1869 met the where she studied with the poet Stanley Kunitz. eminent composer Arthur Sullivan, with whom She lives in Vermont and has taught at Williams he wrote a series of exceptionally popular operatic College since 1984. Her poems combine auto-

rettas, including *Trial by Jury*, which satirizes biography and myth, strong feeling and cool the English legal system; *H.M.S. Pinafore*, abstraction, in spare language. In addition to which parodies the Royal Navy; *Patience*, a wry

poetry, she has written one volume of criticism.

satire on aesthetes such as Oscar Wilde, Dante

She was poet laureate of the United States in

Gabriel Rossetti, and J a m e s McNeill Whistler;

2 0 0 3 - 0 4 .

The Pirates of Penzance; and *The Mikado*. Gil-

bert and Sullivan's collaboration ended in 1896

Oliver Goldsmith (ca. 1730-1774),

due to differences in temperament. The public

pp. 686-95

adored Gilbert's poems and libretti, but he Oliver Goldsmith was born at Pallas, County referred to himself disparagingly as "a doggerel

Longford, Ireland, the son of an Anglo-Irish

bard." Satiric verse was his forte. His wit was so

clergyman and his wife. He was brought up in

biting and incisive that some thought he exhib-

ritual parishes including Lissoy, which may be

ited bad taste and others that he bordered on

one source for his poem "The Deserted Village"

the seditious. Q u e e n Victoria, for instance, (1770). After graduation from Trinity College, snubbed Gilbert by leaving his name off the pro-Dublin, his worldly career began with a series of

gram at a public performance of his work and by

misstarts: rejected for the ministry, he consid-

BIOGRAPHICAL SKETCHES / 2097

ered reading law, decided on medicine, and *dinus* and *Claudius the God* (both 1934) were enrolled at the University of Edinburgh, with-adapted for television in 1976. His reputation as

drew to study in Leyden, wandered the Conti-

a poet reached its zenith in the 1950s and '60s

ment, and on his return failed the surgeon's as he embarked on lecture tours, published his exam. Through a series of essays, poems, plays,

Collected Poems (1959), and was accorded hon-

histories, and biographies, he attracted the ors such as the Queen's Gold Medal for Poetry attention of Samuel Johnson and Sir Joshua

(1968). He was professor of poetry at Oxford

Reynolds. The former saved him from prosecu-

from 1961 to 1966.

tion for debt by arranging the sale (for £60) of

The Vicar of Wakefield (1766), the novel for T h o m a s G r a y (1 7 1 6 - 1 7 7 1) , pp. 666-73

which Goldsmith is chiefly remembered. His Thomas Gray was born in Cornhill, London, the great comedy, *She Stoops to Conquer* (1773), son of a scrivener and his wife, and the only was an immediate success.

child of twelve to survive infancy. Educated at

Eton and Peterhouse College, Cambridge, he

Jorie Graham (b. 1951), pp. 19 75-79

divided his time between London and Stoke

Jorie Graham was born in Italy, to religious his-

Poges before settling into a fellowship at Cam-

torian Curtis B. Pepper and sculptor Beverly bridge, where he pursued his studies in Classics, Pepper, and raised in Italy and

France. She early English poetry, and ancient Welsh and attended both the Sorbonne and New York Uni-Norse literatures. Other than brief stays in London and tours of the Lake District and Scotland before earning her M.F.A. at the University of Iowa. She was associated with Iowa and in search of the picturesque, Gray rarely left the several other universities before being appointed university. He embarked on a tour of France and Italy with the writer Horace Walpole in 1739, Boylston Professor of Rhetoric and Oratory at Harvard University. Greatly influential on a generation of poets, she writes allusive, far-ranging but after a quarrel returned alone. He began to write English poetry in about 1741. Little of his poems that often explore the nature of consciousness was published in his lifetime, but his

poems circulated in manuscript among friends.

In Gray's "Elegy Written in a Country Churchyard," Samuel Johnson found "sentiments to which every bosom returns an echo" and

Robert Graves (1895-1985), *pp. 1400-1404*

"images which find a mirror in every mind."

Robert Graves was born in Wimbledon, England. The end of his school days coincided with the start of World War I, and in the sum-

Matthew Green (1696-1737), *pp. 645-48*

Little is known about Matthew Green's life, but in the summer of 1914 he took a commission with the Royal Welch Fusiliers. Sent to the front in France and employed at the London Customs House.

France, where he met the poet Siegfried Sassoon. He published nothing during his lifetime, but soon, he was gravely injured at the Battle of the Somme and left his manuscripts to his friend Richard

Sassoon (1916) and sent home. After demobilization in 1919, he attended St. John's College, Oxford, and in 1926 he taught English at the University of Cairo, Egypt. That same year, he was to be known as "Spleen-Green."

began a relationship with the American poet Laura Riding, with whom he founded the Seizin Press (London). From 1929, he lived mainly in Majorca, Spain. He wrote prolifically in a number of genres, including poetry, fiction, biography, autobiography, criticism, and translation. She worked as a book editor and an arts administrator before becoming a freelance writer and

tinct phases. When a young man, he was pub-
broadcaster. *Night Photograph*, her first collec-
tion, was published in 1993. A recipient of Georgian poetry. As a result of the
pressures of
numerous awards, including the Forward Prize
war, however, which shattered his faith in the
for best poem of the year (1997), she has written
values with which he had been raised, he began
dramas and adaptations for B B C radio, and her
writing bald transcriptions of life on the battle-
first novel, *Mary George of Allnorthover*, was
field, though he later suppressed this work, published in 2001.
She reviews regularly for believing it inferior to the war poetry
of Sassoon
both U.K. and U.S. journals and teaches in the
and Wilfred Owen. His memoir, *Goodbye to All*
Creative Writing M.A. Programme at Gold-
That (1929), remains Graves's best-known con-
smith's College, University of London.
tribution to the literature of World War I. Under
Riding's influence, he experimented with mod-
Fulke Greville, Lord Brooke (1554-1628),
ernism. While doing research for a novel, he *pp. 206-07*
constructed the mythological system that lay Fulke Greville
was born into a family of War-behind his late work, centering
around a figure
wickshire, England, landowners and was sent to
he called the White Goddess. His novels *J, Clau-*
Shrewsbury School in the same year as Sir

2098 / BIOGRAPHICAL SKETCHES

Philip Sidney, who became his close friend. tion to writing poetry and essays, he edited col-After attending Jesus College, Cambridge, Gre-

lections of verse by Ben Jonson and Fulke
ville went to court, where he was introduced to
Greville.

the "Areopagus" club, an association of courtiers
and poets named after the meeting place of the

Ivor G u r n e y (1 8 9 0 - 1 9 3 7) , pp. 1371-73

Athenian aristocratic council. Knighted in 1597,

Ivor Gurney was born in Gloucester, England.

he served as treasurer to the navy from 1589 to

He attended the Royal College of Music, Lon-

1604. Although he fell from favor in the early

don, until 1915, when he enlisted in the army.

years of J a m e s I s reign, he served as chancellor

(He was initially rejected in 1914 because of

of the exchequer from 1614 to 1622 and was

poor eyesight.) Sent to the front in France, he

made first baron Brooke in 1621. Warwick Cas-

was gassed at Ypres in 1917 and sent home;

tle, granted to him on his elevation to the peer-

he suffered a breakdown the following year. He

age, was the scene of his murder by a servant,

returned briefly to his studies at the Royal Col-

who stabbed first Greville and then himself. lege, where the

composer Ralph Vaughan Wil-Greville is perhaps best known
for *The Life of*

liams became his tutor. From 1919 to 1922, he
the Renowned Sir Philip Sidney (1652), which lived restlessly,
continuing to compose music expresses Greville's political
disillusionment and to write but also working at a number of
odd after Queen Elizabeth's death, and which jobs, ranging
from organist to cinema pianist to helped to establish Sidney's
reputation as the

tax clerk. In 1922, suffering from schizophrenia,

greatest of the Renaissance chivalric courtier-

he was committed to the City of London Mental

poets. Greville also wrote *Caelica*, a sequence of

Hospital, where he died fifteen years later. Two

songs and sonnets; the neo-Stoic *Letter to an* volumes of
poems appeared in his lifetime, *Sev-Honorable Lady*; a verse
Treatise of Monarchy;

ern and Somme (1917) and *War's Embers*

and two tragedies, *Alaham* and *Mustapha*, which

(1919), and his songs were regularly published

deal with political and religious themes.

during the 1920s. Critical appreciation of Gur-

ney's artistry continued after his death with edi-

Barbara Guest (b. 1920), pp. 1616-17

tions of his songs, letters, and poetry.

Barbara Guest was born in Wilmington, North

Carolina, and raised in California and Florida.

Daniel Hall (b. 1952), pp. 1990-92

She was educated at the University of North

Daniel Hall was born in Pittsfield, Massachu-

Carolina, the University of California at Los setts. He has
traveled extensively throughout the Angeles, and the

University of California at British Isles and Asia. His first book, *Hermit Berkeley*. From 1951 to 1954, Guest served as *with Landscape* (1990), was selected for the Yale

an associate editor at *ARTnews*. In addition Series of Younger Poets by James Merrill. He is to poetry, she has written plays, fiction, and a

writer-in-residence and director of the Creative

biography of H. D. Often associated with Writing Center at Amherst College.

the poets of the so-called New York school and

the L = A = N = G = U = A = G = E poets who Donald Hall (b. 1928), *pp. 17 53-57*

descended from them, Guest has identified her

Donald Hall was born in New Haven, Connect-

concerns as “what happens every day, ... mem-

icut. Educated at Harvard and Oxford Univer-

ory, ••• conscience, ... the brevity of ideas, ...

sities, he has served as poetry editor at *The Paris*

time, disorder, flux, etc.”

Review, as a member of the editorial board for

poetry at Wesleyan University Press, and as a

T h o m G u n n (1 9 2 9 - 2 0 0 4) , *pp. 1768-74*

poetry consultant for Harper & Row. After

T h o m G u n n was born in Gravesend, Kent, teaching at Stanford University, Harvard, and England, but moved frequently as a child in the

the University of Michigan, he retired in 1975

wake of his father, a journalist. After school,

and moved back to his family home in Danbury,

Gunn served in the army for two years, then New Hampshire, to work full-time as a writer.

went to Paris, where he worked on the Metro by

In addition to poetry, Hall has published literary day and attempted to write a novel by night, and criticism, personal reminiscences, and chil-

to Rome. He then went up to Trinity College,

children's books, and has edited a number of widely

Cambridge, where he attended lectures by the

used anthologies and textbooks. Among his most

critic F. R. Leavis and published his first collec-

praised works are his poems addressing the final

tion of poems, *Fighting Terms* (1954). He did illness and death

of his wife, the poet Jane Ken-graduate work at Stanford

University under the

yon (1947 - 1995).

poet Yvor Winters. Except for a year in San

Antonio, Texas, Gunn lived in San Francisco for

Thomas Hardy (1840 - 1928), pp. 11 52-62

the rest of his life. He taught at the University Thomas Hardy

was born in Dorset, England, the of California at Berkeley

from 1958 until 1966,

area he made famous as "Wessex" in his novels.

but gave up full-time teaching to devote himself

He left school at age sixteen to work as an

to writing. His collection *The Man with Night* apprentice to an

architect in Dorchester who *Sweats* won the 1992 Forward

Prize, and his

specialized in church restoration. He went to

Collected Poems was published in 1993. In addi-

London in 1861 to continue work as an architect, but after several years returned to Dorset, raised by foster parents. He was educated at where he lived for the rest of his life. Though he Detroit City College (now Wayne State University) and the University of Michigan at Ann Arbor, where he studied with W. H. Auden. In 1936, Hayden joined the Writers' Project of the Administration, and the *Remedies*, in 1871, but made his reputation as research he did on local folklore and the history a novelist with *Far from the Madding Crowd*, in of Michigan's Underground Railroad later made 1874. He published no poetry until 1897, after its way into many of his poems. Hayden taught the publication of his final novel, *The Well-Beloved*, but then dedicated the last thirty years 1946 until 1969, and at the University of Michigan from then until his death. He professed the more than prose. Hardy was a versatile poet, Baha'i faith and, beginning in 1967, served a writing lyrics, ballads, sonnets, dramatic mono-

long tenure as editor of its *World Order* journal. logues, and a series of moving love poems com- In addition, he wrote a play on Malcolm X, pub- posed upon the death of his wife, E m m a . *Wessex* lished a collection of prose, and edited several *Poems* (1898) brought together his poetry from anthologies.

over thirty years. It was followed in 1901 by *Poems of the Past and Present*, and in 1909 by Seamus Heaney (b. 1939), *pp. 1899-1910*

Time's Laughingstocks. His verse epic about the Seamus Heaney was born in Mossbawn, County Napoleonic Wars, *The Dynasts*, was published in Derry, Northern Ireland, to a Catholic farmer three parts between 1904 and 1908, and his *Sat-* and his wife. He was educated at Queen's Uni- *ires of Circumstance* in 1914. His reputation as versity, Belfast, where he later lectured in a poet has grown steadily ever since Philip Lar- English. His first volume of poetry, *Digging*, kin included more of Hardy's p o e m s than those established his reputation as the most gifted of Yeats and Eliot in his 1973 *Oxford Book of* poet of his generation, a reputation confirmed *Twentieth-Century English Verse*.

by the ten major collections that have followed. Robert Lowell dubbed him "the best Irish poet Tony Harrison (b. 1937) , *pp. 1872-79*

since W. B. Yeats.” Not wanting to be con-
Tony Harrison was born in Leeds, England, and
strained as a “political poet” in the north of Ire-
was educated at Leeds University, where he read
land, Heaney moved to the Irish Republic. He
Classics and linguistics and published his first
now lives in Dublin, having taught at the Uni-
poems. He lectured in Nigeria from 1962 until
versity of California at Berkeley, Harvard Uni-
1966, and in Prague from 1966 until 1967. versity, and, from
1989 to 1994, as professor of Upon his return to England, he
became the first
poetry at Oxford University. A distinguished
Northern Arts Fellow at the Universities of critic and
accomplished translator, he won the Newcastle-upon-Tyne and
Durham. In addition
Whitbread Book of the Year Award for his ver-
to a number of original verse plays, many of sion of *Beowulf*.
In 1995, he was awarded the which he also directed, he has
written films and
Nobel Prize for Literature. “Crediting Poetry,”
adaptations of works by Moliere, Racine, and
his acceptance speech, was published in *Open*
others, including acclaimed versions of the *Ores-*
Ground, which collected thirty years of his
teia and the medieval Mystery plays. His volume
poems.
The Gaze of the Gorgon won the 1992 Whit-
bread Prize for Poetry, and in 1995 he was com-
Anthony H e c h t (1 9 2 3 - 2 0 0 4) , pp. 1667-74

missioned by *The Guardian* newspaper to write Anthony Hecht was born in New York City.

poems on the war in Bosnia.

After graduation from Bard College, he joined the army and was stationed in Europe and

Robert Hass (b. 1941), pp. 1919-20

Japan. He later taught at Kenyon College, where

Robert Hass was born in San Francisco, Cali-

he studied informally with fellow faculty mem-

ber John Crowe Ransom, then returned to New

York and at Stanford University, where he studied

graduate work at Columbia University under the poet Yvor Winters.

He has taught at

the State University of New York at Buffalo, St.

among other schools, Smith College, the Uni-

Mary's College, and the University of California

at Berkeley. In addition to poetry, he has written

essays and criticism and translated much Euro-

pean poetry, most notably that of Czeslaw Mil-

undertook translation, most notably of Aeschy-

osz. He was poet laureate of the United States

and Joseph Brodsky. He also collaborated

in 1995-96.

with artist Leonard Baskin on several sequences

of poems. A gifted writer of light verse, he co-
Robert Hayden (1913 - 1980), pp. 1533-37

invented (with John Hollander) the comic

Robert Hayden was born Asa Bundy Sheffey in
“double dactyl,” and even his graver poems often

a poor neighborhood of Detroit, Michigan, and

register a dark humor. He lived in Washington,

2100 / BIOGRAPHICAL SKETCHES

D.C., where in 1982—84 he served as consultant

did not preclude his harboring worldly ambition.

in poetry to the Library of Congress.

His fellowship at Trinity required him to join the

clergy within seven years, but after being elected

Felicia Dorothea Hemans (1793 - 1835),

public orator (a springboard into higher posi-

tions at court), he left his university duties to

pp. 897-901

Felicia Dorothea Hemans was born in Liverpool,

proxies while he pursued a secular career. Two

England, and raised in Wales. She was educated

terms as a member of Parliament evidently dis-

at home by her mother, who recognized her writ-

illusioned him. He was ordained deacon,

ing talent. Hemans was exceptionally prolific,

installed as canon of Lincoln Cathedral, and, in

publishing her first two volumes of poetry at age

1630, having been ordained priest, received a

fifteen, and publishing a volume almost every

living as rector of Bemerton, near Salisbury. In 1629, he married his stepfather's cousin, Jane Danvers, and they adopted his two orphaned nieces. In addition to a prose treatise, *A Priest to the Temple: Or the Country Parson, his Character and Rule of Life* (1652), he wrote many poems in both English and Latin. Shortly before his death, he sent his English poems to his friend the Anglican clergyman Nicholas Ferrar, asking him to publish them if he believed that they could "turn to the advantage of any many eminent writers of her day, and published dejected soul"; otherwise, Ferrar was to burn poems and articles in periodicals such as the *Edinburgh Annual Register*, *Blackwood's Edinburgh Magazine*, and the *New Monthly Magazine*. The poems collected in *The Temple* (1633) represented, Herbert wrote, "a picture of the many spiritual conflicts that have passed

betwixt God and my soul, before I could subject
zine. Her most successful book was *Records of*
mine to the will of Jesus my master.”

Woman: With Other Poems (1828). She was
included in Oxford University Press’s Standard
Authors series until 1914 but neglected in the
Robert Herrick (1 5 9 1 - 1 6 7 4) , *pp. 354-63*
wake of modernism. The upsurge of Women’s
Robert Herrick was born into a family of wealthy
Studies in the 1980s rekindled an appreciation
London goldsmiths. Apprenticed to his uncle at
of her writing.

age sixteen, he did not go up to Cambridge until
1613. After taking his M.A. in 1620, Herrick
returned to London, where he became an
Edward H e r b e r t (1 5 8 2 - 1 6 4 8) , *p. 346*
admirer and friend of Ben Jonson. He joined the
Edward Herbert was born at Eyton, in Shrop-
clergy in 1623, acted as a chaplain on the duke
shire, England. He was the eldest son of Richard
of Buckingham’s disastrous expedition to the
Herbert and the elder brother of the poet George
Isle of Rhe, and as a reward was given the living
Herbert. Educated at University College, of dean priory, in
Devon, a position he took up Oxford, he lived in Oxford until
moving to Lon-in 1630. The rural tranquility of the parish,
don with his wife in 1600. He was knighted soon
though at first alien to the urbane and social
after the accession of King J a m e s I. From 1608

Herrick, made possible his prolific writing to 1618, he traveled widely on the Continent as career; he produced over twenty-five hundred a soldier of fortune; in 1619, he became ambassador to France. After his recall in 1624, James tresses, others about his maid, his dog, his cat, awarded him an Irish peerage and made him and rural customs and pleasures. He also wrote Lord Herbert of Cherbury. In that same year, he on religious themes. Dispossessed of his living published his most important work, *De Veritate*, by the Puritans, he returned to London and published a Latin philosophical treatise on knowledge, truth, and religion. His poems and poems, the *Hesperides*, and his religious poems, his autobiography were published posthumously. the *Noble Numbers*. Among the former were his imitations of the classical poets Catullus and Horace. After the restoration of the monarchy George Herbert (1593 - 1633), in 1660, Herrick returned to Devon and spent pp. 367-85

George Herbert was the fifth son of Richard his last years quietly, apparently without com-Herbert, who died when the poet was three, and

posing further poems.

the younger brother of Edward, Lord Herbert of

Cherbury, also a writer. He was educated at Geoffrey Hill (b. 1932), *pp. 1831-36*

Westminster School and King's Scholar of Trin-

Geoffrey Hill was born in Bromsgrove, Worcester-
ity College, Cambridge. At age sixteen, he sent

tershire, England. He was educated at Keble

his mother, Magdalen, two accomplished and

College, Oxford, and has since taught at the

devout sonnets with a letter announcing his ded-

University of Leeds; Emmanuel and Trinity Col-

ication of his poetic powers to God, though this

leges, Cambridge; and, since 1988, Boston Uni-

B I O G R A P H I C A L S K E T C H E S / 2 1 0 1

versity; as well as being a visiting lecturer at

versity, underwent two years of medical training

several institutions in England, Nigeria, and the

in Europe, and returned to Harvard to complete

United States. His first collection of poems, *For*

his M.D. A dedicated Unitarian, he served as

the Unfallen, appeared in 1959. Distinctively professor of
anatomy at Dartmouth College and resonant as is the voice of
those early poems,

at Harvard, and later as dean of Harvard Medi-

they remain consistently impersonal. Even when

cal School. He established his reputation in

the poet's boyhood self is conflated with that of

medicine by discovering that puerperal fever,

Offa in *Mercian Hymns* (1971), subjectivity dis-

commonly associated with childbirth and often

solves in the objective projection of a historical fatal, was contagious; his work helped to stem imagination of great range and power. Where its spread. He began writing in earnest shortly that book had been concerned on one level with after earning his medical degree, and he was a “the matter of Britain,” a later collection, popular lecturer on the New England lyceum *Canaan* (1996), attempts to diagnose the matter

circuit. *The Autocrat of the Breakfast-Table* with Britain (identifying the U.K. with “Canaan, (1858), a series of witty essays first published in the land of the Philistines,” excoriated in the *The Atlantic Monthly*, is generally considered Bible). That and his more recent books, *The Triumph of Love* (1998) and *Speech! Speech!* is perhaps “Old Ironsides” (a stirring *vers* (2001), examine more searchingly and more sav-d’occasion that rescued the U . S . S . Constitution

agely the themes that have long preoccupied from the salvage yard), “The Chambered Nautilus” was his favorite.

personal dimension. Hill’s critical writings include *The Lords of Limit: Essays on Literature* A. D. Hope (1 9 0 7 - 2 0 0 0) , pp. 1481-85

and *Ideas* and *The Enemy’s Country: Words*, A(lec) D(erwent) Hope was born in Cooma, *Conjecture and Other Circumstances of Lan-New South Wales, Australia*. He was educated

guage. He has also produced a verse translation at Sydney University and University College, of Ibsen's *Brand* for the London stage. A winner Oxford. Upon graduation, he taught English in of the Whitbread and Hawthornden Prizes, he the New South Wales school system, and in is a fellow of the American Academy of the Arts 1937 became a lecturer in education at Sydney and Sciences.

Teachers' College. He taught English at the University of Melbourne from 1945 to 1965 and Daryl Hine (b. 1936), *pp. 1868-69*

at Canberra University College from 1965 to

Daryl Hine was born in Vancouver, British Columbia, in 1936, when he retired to devote himself to writing. He was educated at McGill University in Montreal, Quebec, Canada.

ing. Although his work is rich in literary, biblical, and mythological allusions, he recrafted traditional myths to fit the times in which he lived. Chicago until 1968, when he became editor of *Poetry* magazine. After serving in this post for a decade, he returned to teaching, mostly in the Chicago area. In addition to poetry, he has published a novel, a travel book, and several plays.

Chicago until 1968, when he became editor of *Poetry* magazine. After serving in this post for a decade, he returned to teaching, mostly in the Chicago area. In addition to poetry, he has published a novel, a travel book, and several plays. general statement over local or particular detail

He also has coedited an anthology of verse and individual expression. In a voice ferociously has translated Homer and Theocritus.

witty and authoritative, often sardonic and satiric, he typically approached modern life with John Hollander (b. 1929), *pp. 177 5-77*

disdain, although he softened this stance in his John Hollander was born in New York City. He later work.

was educated at Columbia University and Indiana University at Bloomington, from which he Gerard Manley Hopkins (1844-1889), received a Ph.D. Upon graduation, he embarked *pp. 1166—72*

on an academic career, during which he has Gerard Manley Hopkins was born in Stratford, taught at Harvard University, Connecticut College, Essex, England, and was educated at Balliol College, Hunter College, and Yale University. In lege, Oxford. Under the influence of Cardinal addition to poetry, Hollander has written plays, John Henry Newman, he converted to Catholicism in 1866, became a novitiate of the Society Respected as much for his scholarship as for his of Jesuits two years later, and was ordained in poetry, he has edited numerous anthologies of 1877. Hopkins served as a parish priest and

essays and poems, including a comprehensive teacher of Classics, his lengthiest appointment edition of nineteenth-century American verse.

being with University College, Dublin. He

He is also coinventor (with Anthony Hecht) of stopped writing poetry in 1868, believing it the “double dactyl” verse form.

interfered with his priestly vocation. Encouraged by Church authorities, he resumed writing Oliver Wendell Holmes (1809-1894),

in 1875, with “The Wreck of the Deutschland,”
p. 974

a poem commemorating the death of several

Oliver Wendell Holmes was born in Cambridge,

Franciscan nuns, exiled from Germany by the

Massachusetts. He studied law at Harvard Uni-

Falck Laws, in a shipwreck at the mouth of the

2102 / BIOGRAPHICAL SKETCHES

river Thames. In his subsequent poems, Hop-

Richard Howard (b. 1929), *pp. 1778-83*

kings explored his relationship to God. Central to

Richard Howard was born in Cleveland, Ohio,

his complex theories on prosody are the terms

and educated at Columbia University and the

inscape, instress, and, most important to future

Sorbonne. In Cleveland and New York City, he

poets, *sprung rhythm*. Little of his poetry was

worked as a lexicographer for the World Pub-

published during his lifetime, but the poet Rob-

lishing Company, then turned to translation and
ert Bridges, Hopkins's friend since Oxford, has since brought
into English more than 150

brought out an edition in 1918.

French texts, including works by Baudelaire,
Barthes, de Beauvoir, Breton, Camus, and Gide.

In addition, he has worked as a poetry editor for

A. E. Housman (1859-1936),

journals such as

pp. 1173-80

The New Republic, The Paris

A. E. Housman was born in Fockbury, Worces-

Review, and Shenandoah, and has taught at,

tershire, England, and was educated at St. among other
schools, Columbia University, John's College, Oxford. For a
decade, he worked

Johns Hopkins University, and the universities

for the Patent Office in London, while contin-

of Houston and Cincinnati. He lives in New

uing his studies and publishing scholarly essays

York City. A prolific writer in several modes, he

in literary journals. He held appointments at is known
especially for his mastery of the dra-University College,
London, and Trinity Col-

matic monologue.

lege, Cambridge. While he published extensively

on the classics (in particular Propertius, Juve-

nal, Lucan, and Manilius), he came to poetry Julia Ward Howe
(1819-1910), *p. 1054*

relatively late and had to publish his first collec-

Julia Ward was born in New York City, to a prominent family, and was educated at home. In 1843, she married Samuel Gridley Howe, the abolitionist and made Housman famous. His *Shropshire Lad* (1896), at his own expense. It gradually gained wide public recognition and depicts an English pastoral scene set in a world that was rapidly disappearing. He even had children. She devoted herself not only to motherhood and writing but also to the abolition and publishing *Last Poems* in 1922, but resolutely supported women's suffrage movements. In addition to declining honorary degrees and an Order of Merit, Howe published two plays and much poetry. In 1996, a plaque was dedicated to him in Westminster Abbey's Poets' Corner.

Margaret Fuller. She is best remembered for the apocalyptic "Battle-Hymn of the Republic" (1862).

Henry Howard, Earl of Surrey

(c. 1517 - 1547), pp. 137-40

Langston Hughes (1902-1967), pp. 1429-

Henry Howard, also known as "Surrey," was the

35

eldest son of an old aristocratic family. His father, who became third duke of Norfolk, had

and raised in Missouri, Kansas, Illinois, and royal ancestors, as did his mother. Two of his Ohio. He attended Columbia University from nieces, Anne Boleyn and Catherine Howard, 1921 until 1922, then traveled extensively in were wives of Henry VIII, and the king's illegit-South America and Europe before moving to imate son, Henry Fitzroy, was a childhood Washington, D.C., in 1925. The next year, friend. Surrey fought ably in campaigns against

Hughes published his first collection of poems, the French and was imprisoned in 1537 on suspicion of sympathizing with the "Pilgrimage of Grace" rebellion against the dissolution of the monasteries. During his brief life (he was executed on a frivolous charge of treason), Surrey in the Harlem Renaissance. In addition to wrote courtly poems and circulated them in poetry, he wrote fiction, drama, screenplays, manuscript. He followed Wyatt in translating essays, and autobiography. Because of his jour-sonnets from Petrarch's Italian and wrote his nalistic work in support of the Republican side first English poem in blank verse, a translation

during the Spanish Civil War and his sympathies for the American Communists, in 1953 he this "strange meter," as the publisher called it, was called to testify before Senator Joseph

appeared in print in 1554 (book 4) and 1557 McCarthy's committee on subversive activities, (book 2). Many of his lyrics were included, along

and for many years following he worked to

with Wyatt's, in Tottel's *Songs and Sonnets* restore his reputation. Always concerned (1557). His (probably fictional) love for "Gerald-

"largely ... with the depicting of Negro life in

dine" is dramatized in Thomas Nashe's *The America*," Hughes documented it in poems that *Unfortunate Traveller*, where Surrey appears as drew meters and moods from street language, the traveler's "master."

jazz, and the blues.

B I O G R A P H I C A L S K E T C H E S / 2 1 0 3

T e d H u g h e s (1 9 3 0 - 1 9 9 8) , pp. 1810-16

don. In 1939, she stopped writing verse,

Ted Hughes was born in Mytholmroyd, South

returned to the United States, and with Schuyler

Yorkshire, England, and was raised in Mexbor-

Jackson, her second husband, embarked on a

ough, a coal-mining town in South Yorkshire.

series of lexicographic and linguistic studies.

He won a scholarship to Pembroke College, In conformity with the late author's wish, Cambridge, but served two years in the Royal Air

her Board of Literary Management asks us to

Force before matriculating. He studied English,

record that, in 1940, Laura (Riding) Jackson

archaeology, and anthropology, specializing in

renounced, on grounds of linguistic principle,

mythological systems (an interest that informed

the writing of poetry: she had come to hold that much of his poetry). He later worked as a gardener, night watchman, zookeeper, scriptwriter, and teacher. In 1956, he married the American poet Sylvia Plath, and the couple spent a year in the United States before moving to England. Josephine Jacobsen (1908-2003), pp. 1491-1492. *Plath committed suicide in 1963. In*

93

1970, Hughes settled on a farm in Devon. In Josephine Jacobsen was born in Cobourg, Ontario, to American parents. She was educated and books for children. He also edited numerous plays, short stories,

Ontario, to American parents. She was educated and books for children. He also edited numerous by private tutors at Roland Park Country School, collections of verse and prose, and was a founding editor of *Modern Poetry in Translation* magazine, although she was an extensive traveler.

azine. He was poet laureate of England from 1984 until his death. His poems vividly describe

author of numerous collections, she served as the beauty of the natural world, but celebrate its poetry consultant to the Library of Congress and raw, elemental energies. He often embodies the in other capacities for the Poetry Society of

primal forces of nature as mythic animals such as the pike, the hawk, and “Crow,” a central character in a long cycle of poems. His translation and recasting of *Tales from Ovid* was published at age sixty. She also published literary and dramatic criticism.

a year later he broke his silence on his relationship with Plath with the publication of *Birthday Letters*. He received the Order of Merit from Randall Jarrell (1914-1965), pp. 1552-58

Letters. He received the Order of Merit from Randall Jarrell was born in Nashville, Tennessee Queen Elizabeth II only twelve days before his death, from cancer.

fornia. He was educated at Vanderbilt University, where he studied psychology and Richard Hugo (1923 - 1982), pp. 1674-76

English (with the poet John Crowe Ransom) and Richard Hugo was born in Seattle and educated at the University of Washington, where he studied with the poet Theodore Roethke. A bombardier, where he roomed with the novelist Peter

dier in the United States Army Air Corps during Taylor and the poet Robert Lowell; the University of Texas at Austin; and Women's College, Boeing Corporation, then began an academic career, during which he taught at the University of North Carolina at Greensboro. In World War II, he was stationed stateside, working with B-29 crews, and, based partly on their reports, wrote some of the most prized poems to come out of the war. He also earned a reputation as an astute, acerbic, and influential critic of Younger Poets, and he helped to launch the careers of many poets. His poems typically are set in desolate landscapes of the American West, as well as translations of Goethe, Chekhov, and several of Grimm's fairy tales. After being hospitalized for depression early in 1965, he died *pp. 1425-26* some months later when struck by a car. Laura Riding was born in New York City and

attended Cornell University. For a short time,
Robinson Jeffers (1887-1962), pp. 1320-
she was affiliated with the Fugitives, a promi-

24

nent group of southern writers. In the 1930s, (John) Robinson
Jeffers was born in Pittsburgh, Riding was associated with the
poet and critic

Pennsylvania, to a Classics professor in a theo-

Robert Graves, with whom she wrote *A Survey* logical
seminary and his wife. He was educated of *Modernist Poetry*
(1927), an influential study at Occidental College. Before
turning to writing, that advocated close textual reading. Riding
and

he studied medicine and forestry at the graduate

Graves also founded the Seizin Press, in Lon-

level. In 1914, he moved to Carmel, California,

2104 / BIOGRAPHICAL SKETCHES

where he lived in relative isolation—in a home

Countries and after returning to England began

overlooking the dramatic Pacific coastline that

a career in the theater, first as an actor, then as

figures prominently in his work. He also built

a playwright. In 1598, he killed a fellow actor in

with his own hands a structure he called Hawk

a duel but escaped hanging by claiming “benefit

Tower. Jeffers dubbed his philosophical stance

of clergy,” that is, by demonstrating his ability to

“inhumanism” and defined it as “a shifting read a verse from
the Bible. His conversion to emphasis and significance from
man to not-Catholicism in that same year no doubt contrib-

man.” He challenged humanity’s overreliance on the charges of “popery” and treason levied on the flawed social structures of its own making. He argued against him after he published his play and urged its return to a more primal relation to the neoclassical tragedy *Sejanus* (1606), which dealt with the natural world. He achieved his greatest fame with his 1946 translation of Euripides’ *Medea*, which was performed on Broadway.

by coauthoring *The Isle of Dogs* (1597) and *Eastward Ho* (1605); the former, considered a “lewd

Elizabeth Jennings (1926-2001), pp. 1735-36
play, containing very seditious and slanderous

matter,” caused its authors to be briefly imprisoned. Elizabeth Jennings was born in Boston, Lincolnshire, England, and educated at St. Anne’s College, Oxford. Her poems were first published in Jonson’s imprisonment, contained a passage

the 1948 edition of *Oxford Poetry*, edited by about the Scots that offended the court and the Kingsley Amis and James Michie. She worked at

Scottish king, James I. Jonson soon gained the various professions—including advertising, king’s favor, however, with the series of court librarianship, and publishing—before devoting himself exclusively to writing. In the 1960s, she

Inigo Jones—in 1605; in 1616, after he had suffered recurrent mental breakdowns, which published his *Works* and had returned (in 1610) resulted in hospitalization. Her later work docto the Church of England, he received a sub-

uments her illness and subsequent recovery. stantial pension from the king and effectively She also published critical essays, children’s occupied the position of poet laureate. Learned verse, and a translation of Michelangelo’s sonin the classics and skilled in a variety of poetic

nets. Her last volume of poems, *Timely Issues*, and dramatic forms, Jonson first acquired fame appeared shortly before her death.

as the author of “comedies of humors” satirizing the eccentricities and “ruling passions” of his

Samuel Johnson (1709-1784), *pp.* 655-65

characters. In addition to his many successful plays— *Volpone* (1605), *The Alchemist* (1610),

Samuel Johnson was born in Lichfield, England, and *Bartholomew Fair* (1614), for instance—

to a bookseller and his wife. As a child, he con-

Jonson wrote poetry in a variety of forms, includ-

tracted scrofula (tuberculosis of the lymphatic

ing witty epigrams, epitaphs, songs (both free-

system) and smallpox, a combination that left

standing and designed for plays and masques),

him badly scarred, with impaired sight and hear-

and “occasional” poems celebrating events

ing, and prone to involuntary gesticulation. He

and people. In contrast to his contemporary

went to Pembroke College, Oxford, but financial

Shakespeare, whose plays were collected only
difficulties forced him to leave after fourteen
posthumously, Jonson was concerned with con-
months. After a period spent teaching in Bir-
structing an imposing authorial persona. Mod-
mingham, in 1737 he settled in London, where
eling himself in part on classical writers such as
he worked on *The Gentleman's Magazine*, and Martial and
Horace, he was the first English the next year published
"London," an imitation

poet to inspire a “school”: the Sons, or Tribes, of Juvenal’s satires that was an immediate success, as was his second satire, “The Vanity of Herrick and Thomas Carew.

Human Wishes” (1749). Johnson’s contribution to literary scholarship, criticism, and lexicography is incalculable. In addition to his many Donald Justice (1925-2004), pp. 1684-87

reviews and essays, he published the ambitious Donald Justice was born and raised in Miami, *Lives of the Poets* (1779—81), founded and edited Florida. He earned a B.A. from the University of *The Rambler* magazine, collected the works of Miami, an M.A. from the University of North Shakespeare, and produced his monumental, if Carolina at Chapel Hill, and a Ph.D. from the idiosyncratic, *A Dictionary of the English Language* (1755).

the poets John Berryman, Robert Lowell, and Karl Shapiro. He also studied with the poet Yvor Ben Jonson (1572 - 1637), pp. 323-45 Winters at Stanford University. He taught at, Ben(jamin) Jonson was born in London after the among other schools, the University of Iowa death of his father, a clergyman. Educated at Writers’ Workshop and the University of Florida

Westminster School, he was working for his at Gainesville and counted among his students stepfather as a bricklayer by the early 1950s. He

Mark Strand, Charles Wright, and Jorie Gra-

volunteered for military service in the Low ham. An accomplished painter as well, he BIOGRAPHICAL SKETCHES / 2105

became known for understated, sometimes sity of Missouri before graduating from the Uni-darkly humorous poems.

versity of Nebraska. Initially a fiction writer,

Kees moved to New York City, where he painted,

Patrick Kavanagh (1904 - 1967), pp. 1450-

wrote art criticism, and published his first book

54

of poems, *The Last Man* (1943). In 1950, he

Patrick Kavanagh was born in Inniskeen, moved to the West Coast and worked as a pho-County Monaghan, Ireland. He left school at

tographer, film producer, radio broadcaster, and

age thirteen to go to work. During the 1930s, he

jazz pianist. When his car was found parked near

became active on the Dublin literary scene, writ-

the Golden Gate Bridge in July 1955, he was

ing reviews for local publications while support-

presumed a suicide. His best-known work is a

ing himself by farming. His first collection, series of wistful, ironic poems about an urban

“Ploughman” and Other Poems, was published in

everyman he called Robinson.

1936. In 1949, he sold his land and devoted

himself entirely to literature. He made a precarious living over the next two decades; despite the critical success of *The Great Hunger* (1942), York. He attended Dartmouth College and sales were sluggish and he had difficulty finding a publisher for subsequent work. His difficulties teaching English at the University of Washington brought him close to despair, but his autobiographical novel, *Tarry Flynn*, was issued in seminars in creative writing, in Rome. The first 1948, and in 1955 he experienced a powerful spiritual rebirth and his work enjoyed a brief revival. Kavanagh has been credited with main-Merrill for the Yale Series of Younger Poets. He

Richard Kenney (b. 1948), pp. 1954-56

Richard Kenney was born in Glens Falls, New York. He attended Dartmouth College and sales were sluggish and he had difficulty finding a publisher for subsequent work. His difficulties teaching English at the University of Washington brought him close to despair, but his autobiographical novel, *Tarry Flynn*, was issued in seminars in creative writing, in Rome. The first 1948, and in 1955 he experienced a powerful spiritual rebirth and his work enjoyed a brief revival. Kavanagh has been credited with main-Merrill for the Yale Series of Younger Poets. He

taining public interest in Irish peasant culture lives in Port Townsend, Washington.

in the period following the Celtic Twilight.

Sidney Keyes (1922 - 1943), pp. 1644-47

John Keats (1795 - 1821), pp. 905-41

Sidney Keyes was born in Dartford, England. He

John Keats was born in London, the son of a

was educated at Tonbridge School, where he

livery stableman and his wife. At age fifteen, he

began to write poetry, and at The Queen's Col-

was apprenticed to an apothecary-surgeon, and
lege, Oxford, where he became friends with
on completion of his apprenticeship did further
John Heath-Stubbs and Michael Meyer, coedi-
training at Guy's Hospital, London. Having tors of *Eight
Oxford Poets*, which includes some qualified, Keats
abandoned medicine for poetry.

of Keyes's work. His first collection, *The Iron*
In 1818, he fell in love with Fanny Brawne, but
Laurel, appeared in 1942, shortly before he was
was prevented from marrying her by financial
commissioned into his father's regiment, the
difficulties. In 1819, his annus mirabilis, he pro-
Queen's Own Royal West Kent. After only two
duced all of his great odes, a number of fine son-
weeks of active service in Tunisia, he was killed
nets, and several other masterpieces. The near Sidi Abdullah.
A second volume of poems, following year, he developed
tuberculosis, the *The Cruel Solstice*, was posthumously
published disease that had killed his mother and younger
in 1943, and a collected poems appeared in
brother, Tom. Hoping to prolong his life, he
1945. In his war poems, he portrays death as a
traveled to Italy, but died in Rome—in lodgings
real presence to which the good soldier must
in the Piazza di Spagna (now a museum)—the
submit courageously and with a measure of
following spring. At the time of his death, he had
detachment. Confronted with the reality of
published only fifty-four poems, and it was not

death, he changed his stance, advocating active
until the publication of Richard Monkton resistance against the
forces of extinction.

Milne's *Life, Letters and Literary Remains of
John Keats* in 1848 that his reputation as a great
Anne Killigrew (1660 - 1685), pp. 554-56
poet was established. In his poetry, he struggled
Anne Killigrew was born in London; she died of
to make sense of a world riddled with "misery,
smallpox. Her father, an amateur dramatist and
heartache and pain, sickness and oppression." chaplain to the
duke of York, encouraged Anne's Rather than take solace in
religious or philo-literary talents and oversaw the posthumous
sophical creeds, as did Wordsworth and Cole-
publication (in 1685—86) of her poems. In an
ridge, he looked to sensation, passion, and ode composed for
this memorial volume, John imagination to guide him. "I am
certain of noth-Dryden praises her accomplishments in the
"sis-

ing," he wrote to a friend, "but of the holiness
ter arts" of poetry and painting (two of her
of the Heart's affections and the truth of Imag-
poems describe her own paintings), but also
ination—What the imagination seizes as Beauty
presents her as an entirely "artless" poet whose
must be truth."

gifts were from "nature." Killigrew worked at her
craft, however, by writing in a variety of poetic
Weldon Kees (1914 - 1955), pp. 1559-60
genres—among her poems is a heroic tribute to

Weldon Kees was born in Beatrice, Nebraska, Alexander the Great. Recognizing that a female and educated at Doane College and the University of Nebraska, Killigrew's desire to create "deathless numbers"

2106 / BIOGRAPHICAL SKETCHES

might be viewed as overly ambitious by some

but in 1882 returned to India to work as a journalist.

When he moved back to England, in near-contemporary Katherine Philips: "Nor did

1889, he enjoyed celebrity status for books such

sex at all obstruct her fame," Killigrew wrote

as *Plain Tales from the Hills* (1888), *The Jungles*

about Philips, in a poem addressed to those who

Book (1894), and *Kim* (1901). He was awarded

impugned Killigrew's status as an author by saying

the Nobel Prize for Literature in 1907, but by

saying that her verses "Were Made by Another."

At the time of his death his reputation had

declined, due largely to the jingoism that pervaded

Henry King (1592-1669), pp. 363-66

vaded his writings during the Boer War and

Henry King was the son of a bishop of London

World War I. Following the death of his only son

and his wife. Educated at Westminster and at the Battle of

Loos, Kipling became a prominent member of Christ Church, Oxford, he

entered the Church

and became a prominent member of the Imperial War Graves Com-

mission of England and rose steadily through its ranks,

mission and wrote a history of the Irish Guards becoming the bishop of Chichester in 1642. A (1923). The rousing rhythms that propel many staunch opponent of Puritanism, he was ejected of his poems are derived from music-hall songs from his position by Parliamentarians in 1643. and Protestant hymns, leading T. S. Eliot to call After seventeen years in retirement with friends, his work “the poetry of oratory.” Although, as he was reinstated as bishop in 1660, following child of empire, Kipling held in high regard what the return of the monarchy. He published a he considered the glories of civilization, in a verse translation of the Psalms in 1651 and moving series of monologues from the mouths composed both sacred and secular poems — of common soldiers he explores and acknowl-including elegies on his friend John Donne, Ben edges the cost of attaining values such as justice, Jonson, and Sir Walter Raleigh—that were patriotism, and sacrifice of self to a larger ideal. lished anonymously in an unauthorized edition called *Poems, Elegies, Paradoxes and Sonnets* Carolyn Kizer (b. 1925), pp. 1688-91 (1657). He was known as an impressive Carolyn Kizer was born in Spokane, Washing-preacher, and a number of his sermons have ton, and was educated at Sarah Lawrence Col-been published. His best-known work, however, lege, Columbia University, and the University of is “An Exequy to His Matchless, Never-to-Be-Washington. From 1959 to 1965, she was an Forgotten Friend,” a moving lament for his wife,

editor of

Anne Berkeley, who died in 1624, at age twenty-

Poetry Northwest. She taught at a

woman's college in Pakistan for the U.S. State

four.

Department before resigning in protest against

the Vietnam War; later, she served as director of

Galway Kinnell (b. 1927), pp. 1740-42

literary programs for the National Endowment

Galway Kinnell was born in Providence, Rhode

Island. He was educated at Princeton University

in Paris and in Sonoma, California. Her best-

and the University of Rochester. From 1945 known work is a

career-spanning, five-part until 1946, he served in the navy,

and he then

poem, *Pro Femina*.

did field work for the Congress on Racial Equal-

ity. He has traveled widely in the Middle East

and Europe and has taught at more than twenty

Kenneth Koch (1925-2002), pp. 1691-95

institutions, including the University of Califor-

nia at Irvine, the University of Pittsburgh, Sarah

served as a rifleman in the Pacific during World

Lawrence College, and New York University. He

War II, before attending Harvard University and

has edited several other poets and feels a partic-

earning his Ph.D. from Columbia University.

ular affinity for Whitman. He lives in Vermont.

With the exception of brief periods abroad, especially in France and Italy, Koch lived in New

Thomas Kinsella (b. 1928), *pp. 1757-60*

York City from 1950 on, and was a key figure,

Thomas Kinsella was born in Dublin, Ireland. with his friends John Ashbery, Frank O'Hara, He studied science at University College, Dub-James Schuyler, and others, in what became

lin, but left to work for the Irish Civil Service.

known as the New York school of poetry. Writ-

After retiring from the Department of Finance

ing poems closely linked with Abstract Expres-

in 1965, he taught in the United States. In sionists and Surrealists, he sometimes exhibited 1972, in Dublin, he founded the Peppercanister

his poems alongside these artists' works. Gifted

Press, which published much of his own work.

with an offbeat sense of humor, Koch was

He has translated Gaelic poetry, notably *The* known also for his fiction, his plays, and his work *Tain* (1969), and has edited the *New Oxford* in teaching children to write poetry. He was a *Book of Irish Verse*. His *Collected Poems* was professor at Columbia University until his published in 1996.

death.

Rudyard Kipling (1865-1936), *pp. 1181-*

Yusef Komunyakaa (b. 1947), *pp. 1949-52*

88

Yusef Komunyakaa was born in Bogalusa, Lou-

Rudyard Kipling was born in Bombay, India, to

isiana. He served in Vietnam as a war corre-

British parents. He was educated in England,
spondent and for a time edited the *Southern*

BIOGRAPHICAL SKETCHES / 2107

Cross. Decorated with a Bronze Star, he later
ant of Lord Spenser in the county of Oxford-
wrote poems deriving from his Vietnam experi-
shire. The note concludes: “this aforesaid

ence, first collected in *Dien Cai Dau* (1988). William made the
book that is called *Piers Plow-Following his years in the*
military, Komunyakaa

man.” Texts of the poem both support and elab-
studied at the University of Colorado, Colorado

orate on the note’s information. In line 52 of
State, and the University of California at Irvine.

Passus 15 of the B-text, the narrator seems to

He has also lived in Australia, Saint Thomas,

offer a cryptogram of the name Langland: ” ‘I

Puerto Rico, and Japan. He teaches at Princeton

have lyved in londe,’ quod I, ‘my name is Longe

University. Many of his poems harken back to

Wille.’ ” At the beginning of the poem, the nar-

his childhood in a poor, rural, and largely black

rator depicts himself awakening from his dream

Southern community. They grapple with hard

in the “Malvern Hills,” in the West Midland

realities, including race and social class, and region of
England; elsewhere, he presents him-take some of their
rhythms and melodic effects

self as a man who has moved from the country

from jazz and the blues.

to the city and is at the time of the poem's composition living in Cornhill, in London, making a Stanley Kunitz (b. 1905), pp. 1454-56

living as a cleric who chants prayers for the souls

Stanley Kunitz was born and raised in Worcester,

of the dead. The poem further presents the narrator,

Massachusetts. After graduation from Harvard

University, he worked as an editor in New York

City. During World War II, he served in the

army, and during the academic career that

the author had received a clerical education, but

followed he taught at, among other schools, had never been

ordained a priest. Passus 5 of Columbia University. He has

been an influential

the C-text states that the narrator comes from

teacher to many poets, including Louise Gluck

“franklins,” or free men, and from married parents.

This latter detail may serve to counter suspicions

about the legitimacy of the poet's birth.

Haycraft) biographical dictionaries of literary

figures; edited a collection of William Blake's Sidney Lanier (

1842 - 1881), pp. 1162-65

work; and translated the work of Anna Sidney Lanier was born in Macon, Georgia, and Akhmatova and Andrei Voznesenksy from the educated at Oglethorpe College. In 1861, he Russian. He cofounded the Fine Arts Work enlisted in the Confederate Army, and in 1864

Center, in Provincetown, Massachusetts, and he was captured by Union forces and imprisoned at the Poet's House, in New York City. In 2000-01, he

was imprisoned for four months at Point Lookout, Maryland, served as poet laureate of the United States.

land, where he probably contracted the tuberculosis from which he later died. After the war, Lanier played in the Peabody Symphony as a flutist and, in 1879, became lecturer in literature at Johns Hopkins University. In addition to poetry, he wrote novels—including *Tiger-Lilies* (1867), which documents his war experience with its interludes of domestic tranquility, prose— and critical studies, including *The Science of English Verse* (1880), in which he argued that the same laws govern music and poetry. He lived in Italy from 1815 until 1835 and from 1857 until his death. Fluent in French, Italian, and Greek and possessing a pro-

Warwick, England, and educated at Rugby School and at

Warwick, England, and educated at Rugby School and at

to poetry, he wrote novels—including *Tiger-Trinity College, Oxford. A short-lived marriage, Lilies* (1867), which documents his war experience with its interludes of domestic tranquility, prose—and critical studies, including *The Science of English Verse* (1880), in which he argued that the same laws govern music and poetry. He lived in Italy from 1815 until 1835 and from 1857 until his death. Fluent in French, Italian, and Greek and possessing a pro-

religious knowledge of history, Landor was Aemilia Lanyer (1569 - 1645) , pp. 284 - 92

steeped in classicism. His most enduring works,

Aemilia Lanyer was the daughter of Baptist Bas-

in particular his *Imaginary Conversations* sano, an Italian court musician, and his wife, (1824), based on his studies, made him an Margaret Johnson. She was probably educated important figure to poets such as Robert Brownin the noble household of Susan Wingfield,

ing and Ezra Pound. He died in Florence and

countess of Kent. As the mistress of Henry Cary,

was buried in the Protestant cemetery there.

Lord Hunsdun, a wealthy courtier forty-five

years her senior, she enjoyed a luxurious and

William L a n g l a n d (ca. 1330 - c a . 1400) ,

privileged life until she became pregnant; she

pp. 71—74

then married Captain Alfonso Lanyer, another

A note found in the margins of an early manu-

court musician, in 1592. In 1617, she set up a

script of *Piers Plowman* in a fifteenth-century school in the fashionable St. Giles in the Fields hand is the single piece of evidence that ascribes

for the children of the nobility and gentlemen,

this poem to a man named William Langland.

but it failed in 1619. Lanyer was the first Eng-

The note, which many scholars accept as relia-

lishwoman to publish a substantial collection of

ble, states that William Langland was the son of

original poems in her own name, as well as

Stacy de Rokayle, a man of gentle birth who actively to seek patronage from a host of noble lived in Shipton-under-Wychwood and was ten-ladies addressed in the prefatory poems affixed

2108 / BIOGRAPHICAL SKETCHES

to her collection, *Salve Deus Rex Judaeorum* Irving Layton (b. 1912), pp. 1530-33

(1611).

Irving Layton was born in Romania to Jewish parents who emigrated to Montreal, Canada, the year after his birth. He was educated at Mac-Philip Larkin (1922 - 1985), pp. 1648-59 donald College, served briefly in the Canadian

Philip Larkin was born in Coventry, England, Army, then attended McGill University. Layton and educated at King Henry VIII School and St.

taught English in secondary schools and col-

John's College, Oxford. He worked as a librarian

leges until 1970, when he joined the faculty of

for the rest of his life, starting in the small town

York University (Toronto). He retired from

of Wellington and moving through the univer-

teaching in 1978. One of the most prolific poets

sity libraries of Leicester and Belfast before set-

of the twentieth century, he has published some

tling at Hull. Although he tried to achieve fifty volumes of poetry. He also has written polit-recognition as a novelist, with *Jill* in 1946 and

ical essays and a memoir and has edited numer-

A Girl in Winter in 1947, he made his reputation

ous collections of verse.

in poetry. Along with Donald Davie, Thom

Gunn, and his college friend Kingsley Amis, Lar-

kin came to be known as a writer of The Move-

E m m a L a z a r u s (1 8 4 9 - 1 8 8 7) , pp. 1112-13

ment, a group of postwar poets anthologized in

E m m a Lazarus was born in New York City, to a

Robert Conquest's *New Lines* (1956). Although

prominent Sephardic (Spanish Jewish) family.

he produced only four volumes of poetry in his

She was educated at home. In 1868, she met

lifetime— *The North Ship* (1945), *The Less* the writer Ralph

Waldo Emerson, who became *Deceived* (1955), *The Whitsun*

Weddings her literary mentor. Lazarus developed a pas-

(1965), and *High Windows* (1974)—Larkin was

sionate interest in Semitism. She translated

a highly influential presence in the second half

medieval Hebrew poets from the German and

of the twentieth century, editing the *Oxford* wrote impassioned

essays on behalf of the wave *Book of Twentieth-Century*

English Verse (1973) of Jewish immigrants seeking refuge

from per-and serving on various arts councils and library

secution in Europe after the assassination of

committees. He turned down the poet laureate-

Russian Czar Alexander II, in 1881. Lazarus was

ship, which was offered to him on the death of

appalled by the squalid conditions in which

John Betjeman. His *Collected Poems* was pub-

many of these refugees were forced to live and

lished in 1988, followed by *Selected Letters*, sympathetic to their difficulty in finding employ-1940-1985 in 1992, the latter collection ment. The last five lines of “The New Colossus,” arousing controversy and even outrage at some the poem for which she is best-remembered, are of his racist and xenophobic opinions.

engraved on the pedestal of the Statue of Liberty, which was dedicated in 1886.

D. H. Lawrence (1885 - 1930) , pp. 1284-95 Edward Lear (1812 - 1888) , pp. 1041-44

D(avid) H(erbert) Lawrence was born in East-

Edward Lear was born in Holloway, London.

wood, Nottinghamshire, England, and attended

Educated mainly at home by his elder sisters, he

University College, Nottingham. His first pub-

began to work as an illustrator at age fifteen. In

lished work, a group of poems, appeared in

1846, he published *A Book of Nonsense*, which

1909; his first short story and his first novel, *The*

he had written and illustrated to amuse the

White Peacock, the following year. From 1908 grandchildren of his patron, the earl of Derby.

to 1912, he taught in a London school, but he

It went through twenty-four editions in Lear’s

gave this up after falling in love with the German

lifetime. In the 1830s, he became a wanderer,

wife of a professor at Nottingham. They went to

supporting himself by painting landscapes

Germany together and married in 1914, after across Europe—he became known for his water-she had been divorced by her

first husband. Liv-

colors—and writing travel journals. He popular-

ing abroad, Lawrence finished *Sons and Lovers*, ized the limerick (see “Versification,” p. 2046), the autobiographical novel at which he had been

and, following his example, poets as diverse as

working off and on for years. The war brought

Dante Gabriel Rossetti, Algernon Swinburne,

the couple back to England, where his wife’s

Rudyard Kipling, and Alfred, Lord Tennyson, in

German origins and Lawrence’s fierce objection

the nineteenth century, and Ogden Nash, in the

to the war gave him trouble with the authorities.

twentieth, employed the form.

More and more—especially after the banning of

his next novel, *The Rainbow*, in 1915—he came

Li-Young Lee (b. 1957), pp. 2011^13

to feel that the forces of modern civilization Li-Young Lee was born in Jakarta, Indonesia, to were arrayed against him. As soon as he could

Chinese parents; his father had been a personal

leave England after the war, he sought refuge in

physician to Mao Zedong before becoming a

Italy, Australia, Mexico, then again Italy, and

political prisoner. Upon fleeing Indonesia, the

finally in the south of France, often desperately

family lived in Hong Kong, Macau, and Japan

ill, restlessly searching for an ideal, or at least a

before settling in the United States. Some of the

tolerable, community. He died in France, of family's story is recounted in Lee's memoir, *The tuberculosis*.

Winged Seed: A Remembrance, as well as in his

BIOGRAPHICAL SKETCHES / 2109

three volumes of poems. An American citizen his M.A. at Manchester University and returned with degrees from several U.S. universities, he

to Aberystwyth for a teacher's training course.

has taught at Northwestern University and the

Although he wavered at the thought of partici-
State University of New York at Brockport. He

participating in World War II, he enlisted in the army
lives in Chicago.

in 1940. In 1941, he married Gweno Ellis. Both

his collection of short stories, *The Last Inspec-*

Brad Leithauser (b. 1953), pp. 1998-2000

tion, and his first collection of poetry, *Raider's*

Brad Leithauser was born and grew up in *Dawn*, were
published in 1942 and focused on Detroit, Michigan. He was
educated at Harvard

the experiences of English soldiers. Lewis trav-

College and Harvard Law School. The author of

eled with his battalion to India and finally to

four volumes of poetry and five novels, he also

Burma to face the Japanese, but under the influ-

edited *The Norton Book of Ghost Stories* and is ences of the
war, a love affair, Eastern religions, a frequent reviewer and
essayist. Among his and culture shock, he began to feel he was
losing recent books are collaborations with his brother,

his grasp on his own fate. He committed suicide

the artist Mark Leithauser, who illustrated his
by shooting himself. A collection of the poems
verse novel, *Darlington's Fall*, and an alphabet he had written
while overseas, *Ha! Ha! Among* verse book, *Lettered
Creatures*. He teaches at *the Trumpets*, was published
posthumously in Mount Holyoke College and lives in
Amherst,

1945, followed by *In the Green Tree*, a collection
Massachusetts.

of short stories and letters, in 1948.

D e n i s e Levertov (1 9 2 3 - 1 9 9 7) , pp. 1677-81 C. D a y
Lewis (1 9 0 4 - 1 9 7 2) , pp. 1448-50

Denise Levertov was born in Ilford, Essex, C(ecil) Day Lewis
was born in Ballintubber, Ire-England, and educated at home.
After working

land, and raised in England. He was educated
as a nurse in London during World War II, she
at Wadham College, Oxford, where he came to
immigrated to the United States in 1948. She
know the poets W. H. Auden, Louis MacNeice,
became a U.S. citizen in 1955, but from 1956
and Stephen Spender. In the 1930s, Day Lewis
to 1959 she lived in Mexico. She then taught at
became active in left-wing politics and was a
a number of schools, including Stanford Uni-
member of the Communist Party for three years,
versity from 1981 on. In addition to poetry, she
but grew disillusioned when the movement fell
published two collections of prose. Her early short of its
ideals. His *Collected Poems* was pub-work was written in a
predominantly English

lished in 1954, and he also wrote a series of succinct, but as a result of her associations with the successful detective stories under the pseudonym Imagists William Carlos Williams, Ezra Pound, Nicholas Blake, and several novels under his own name. He translated Virgil, whose influence can be detected in his later poems. Like his fellow “Pylon” poets, as the Oxford group was called, Day Lewis introduced modern issues, such as the effects of the Vietnam War, into his poems and made broad reference to the issues of the day. He was poet laureate from 1968 until his death.

Philip Levine was born in Detroit, Michigan, to Russian Jewish immigrant parents. After graduation from Wayne State University, he worked for Thomas Lodge, the son of a lord mayor of London and his wife, was educated at Merchant Taylors’ School and Trinity College, Oxford. He earned an M.F.A. from the University of Iowa, where

entered Lincoln's Inn to study law in 1578, but his teachers included John Berryman. From soon turned to writing; in 1580, he wrote a 1588 until his retirement, he taught at Califormia State University in Fresno. In addition to son's attack on the theater in *The School of* poetry, he has written criticism and autobiography, and he has translated from the Spanish.

another pamphlet, and in 1584 Lodge retorted Spanish and Latin American poets figure largely with a lively attack on the usurers; in this work, in his imagination. Levine also identifies he depicted the dangers that moneylenders pre-strongly with the working class and its struggles, sented for young spendthrifts. Short of funds, he setting many of his poems in the decimated joined several voyages to the New World. During industrial landscape of Detroit.

one, he wrote *Rosalynde, Euphues Golden Legacy* (1590), a prose romance with verse inter-

Alun Lewis (1915 - 1944) , pp. 1573-76 ludes that is the source for Shakespeare's *As You Like It*.

Lodge returned from a later voyage with mining town in South Wales. His parents were another prose romance interspersed with many both schoolteachers, and he excelled in his years lyrics, *A Margarite of America*. He translated

at Aberystwyth College, coming first in history
many French love lyrics (for instance, from
and writing for the college magazine. He earned
Pierre Ronsard's *Amours*), and after his conver-

2110 / BIOGRAPHICAL SKETCHES

sion to Catholicism in 1600 translated prose
Richard Lovelace (1618 - 1658), pp. 472-75

works by ancient authors such as Seneca and

Richard Lovelace was born in Kent, England, to
the Jewish historian Josephus. Having turned a wealthy family
and was educated at the Char-away from secular poetry after
his conversion,

terhouse School and Gloucester Hall, Oxford.

Lodge became a noted physician in London.

He lived the life of a cultured courtier before
taking arms for the king in the Scottish expedi-

Henry Wadsworth Longfellow
tions of 1639—40. He was imprisoned by Parlia-
(1807 - 1882), pp. 951-57

ment in 1642 for presenting a Royalist petition,

Henry Wadsworth Longfellow was born in Port-

and he was jailed again in 1648 after returning

land, Maine (then part of Massachusetts). He

to England from battles where he had fought

was educated at Bowdoin College, where with the French
against the Spanish. Although Nathaniel Hawthorne was a
classmate and he was released from prison after the king's
exe-where he delivered a commencement speech

cution in 1649, Lovelace spent his final years in

calling for a national literature. He spent three

poverty. One of the group of Royalist writers years in Europe studying foreign languages and, now known as “Cavalier” poets, he was strongly upon his return, was appointed professor of influenced by Ben Jonson. Lovelace is best-modern languages at his alma mater. In 1835, known for occasional poems and lyrics that were he accepted a similar position at Harvard Uni-written mostly during his periods of imprisonment, where he remained until 1854. He had ment; his “To Althea, from Prison” regained already attained fame before the publication of popularity after its inclusion in Percy’s *Reliques* his first book (1839), and later works such as *of Ancient English Poetry* (1765), as did his “To *Evangeline* (1847) and *The Song of Hiawatha* Lucasta, Going to the Wars.” The name Lucasta (1855) were hugely popular. In 1843, he (from *Lux casta*, Latin for “pure light”) probably became partially blind, and in 1861 he was badly refers to Lucy Sacheverell, Lovelace’s fiancée, injured as he tried to extinguish the flames that, who married another man after receiving a false when her dress caught fire, burned his second report of Lovelace’s death. She is honored in the wife to death. Longfellow translated Dante, as title of Lovelace’s one volume of poems published during his lifetime (*Lucasta*, 1649) and *The Poets and Poetry of Europe* (1845). He also again in the posthumous collection published by wrote fiction and verse drama. Greatly beloved

Lovelace's brother (*Lucasta Poems Posthume*, in his day, though his reputation later declined, 1659).

Longfellow has been credited with popularizing American themes abroad and bringing European themes home.

Amy Lowell was born in Brookline, Massachusetts, into one of Boston's most prominent families; the poet James Russell Lowell was a distant

Michael Longley (b. 1939), pp. 1910-13
Michael Longley was born in Belfast, Northern Ireland, and educated at Trinity College, Dublin, and the poet Robert Lowell a distant

uncle, and the poet Robert Lowell a distant nephew. She was educated at home and mainly

in London, where he read Classics. He worked as a self-taught. From 1914 on, she lived with the schoolteacher until 1970, when he joined the

actress Ada Dwyer Russell, who inspired many Arts Council of Northern Ireland as combined of her poems. In addition to poetry, Lowell wrote arts director, a post he held until 1991. He has a biography of John Keats and much influential written scripts for BBC radio and is a frequent criticism. Flamboyant and eccentric, a celebrity commentator on the arts in Northern Ireland. A on the lecture circuit, she generously supported fellow of the Royal Society of Literature, he was many struggling artists. Lowell is best-remem-

awarded the Queen's Gold Medal for Poetry in
bered for her association with Imagism, of which
2001.

she edited three collections.

A u d r e L o r d e (1 9 3 4 - 1 9 9 2) , *pp. 1858-60*

Robert Lowell (1 9 1 7 - 1 9 7 7) , *pp. 1592-*

Audre Lorde was born in New York City to West
1606

Indian parents. She was educated at Hunter Robert Lowell was
born in Boston, Massachu-College and Columbia University,
where she setts, to a distinguished family; his ancestors earned
a master's degree in library science. In

include the poets J a m e s Russell Lowell and Amy

addition to working as a librarian, she taught at

Lowell. Following his family's expectations, he

Tougaloo College and throughout the City Uni-

attended Harvard University, but under the

versity of New York system. She published advice of the
psychiatrist who treated him for numerous collections of
poetry and two prose

the first of many breakdowns and manic epi-

memoirs, one about her struggle with cancer

sodes, transferred to Kenyon College. There he

and the other about her emergent lesbian iden-

studied with the poets John Crowe Ransom and

tity. Although she once described herself as a Allen Tate, and
met lifelong friends and literary

“black lesbian feminist warrior poet,” her con-

mentors Peter Taylor and Randall Jarrell, in

temporary Adrienne Rich added the appellations

addition to his first wife, the fiction writer Jean
“mother,” “daughter,” and “visionary.”

Stafford. After graduation from Kenyon, Lowell

BIOGRAPHICAL SKETCHES / 2111

moved to Louisiana State University, where he

Norman MacCaig (1910-1996), *pp. 1508-*

worked with the New Critics Robert Penn War-

10

ren and Cleanth Brooks. He was imprisoned as

Norman MacCaig was born in Edinburgh, Scot-

a conscientious objector during World War II,

land. He was educated at the University of Edin-

and his fiercely held Catholicism was central in

burgh, where he took a degree in Classics,

his early, densely patterned poetry. In the late

During World War II, he served time in prison

1950s, he began writing in an autobiographical

as a conscientious objector. M a c C a i g was a pri-

strain. The publication of *Life Studies* (1959) many school

teacher until 1970, when he was heralded what would be

called the Confessional

appointed a lecturer in poetry at the University

school of poetry. Later, Lowell wrote loose son-

of Stirling. His early work was heavily influenced

net sequences in which he explored the events

by the New Apocalypse movement, in which he

of his first fifty years. Lowell also was a contro-

was a central figure, and which concerned itself

versially freehanded translator of poetry, a crit-

with the relationship between art and the
ical essayist, and the adaptor of several classic
unconscious. He later repudiated his work in
works for the stage. He held teaching appoint-
this mode and began what he called “the long
ments at a number of universities, including haul back to
lucidity.” He was awarded the Harvard, Oxford, and Essex. He
is often consid-Queen’s Gold Medal for Poetry in 1986 and
ered the most important American poet of the
published his *Collected Poems* in 1990.

mid-twentieth century. At the time of his sudden
death, he was returning to his second wife, the
Hugh MacDiarmid (Christopher Murray
writer Elizabeth Hardwick, after breaking with
G r i e v e) (1 8 9 2 - 1 9 7 8) , pp. 1376-80
his third, Lady Caroline Blackwood.

Hugh MacDiarmid was born in Langholm,
Dumfriesshire, in the Scottish Borders. He
Malcolm Lowry (1909-1957), pp. 1503-05
worked on several local newspapers before join-
Malcolm Lowry was born in Birkenhead, Che-

shire, just outside of Liverpool, England. Before

After serving in the Balkans and France, he

attending St. Catherine’s College, Cambridge resumed his
career in journalism and became (from which he received a
B.A.), he worked as a

active in Communist and Scottish nationalist
crew member on a freighter bound for China

politics, involvement in each movement bring-
and on a ship sailing to Oslo. He lived in London
ing him difficulty with the other. MacDiarmid
and then Paris until 1935, when he moved to
was a central figure of the Scottish Renaissance,
Hollywood, and then to Cuernavaca, Mexico, a loose
collection of artists, writers, and musi-which became the
setting of his most famous
cians dedicated to reinvigorating Scottish cul-
novel, *Under the Volcano* (1947). From 1940 ture and
countering the sentimentality and until 1954, he lived in a
primitive cabin in Dol-insipidity that had crept into the arts
since the

larton, British Columbia, and from 1954 until
time of Robert Burns. His magazine *Scottish*
his death he lived in Italy and then England.

Chapbook and his collections *Sangschaw* (1925)

Best-known as a novelist, he wrote plays, film
and *Penny Wheep* (1926) were highly influential
scripts, and hundreds of poems, only a handful
contributions to the movement. *A Drunk Man*
of which were published during his lifetime.

Looks at the Thistle (1926), an extended dra-
matic monologue in Scots, though not enthusi-

J o h n Lyly

astically received at the time, is now considered
(1 5 5 4 - 1 6 0 6) , pp. 2 0 7 - 0 8

John Lyly was born in Kent, England, the grand-
MacDiarmid's masterpiece. He wrote many of
son of William Lyly, the humanist author of a

his early poems in “Lallans,” a synthesized lan- famous Latin grammar book. Educated at Mag- guage culled from the dialects of several regions dalen College, Oxford, and later at Cambridge, of Scotland. His linguistic experiments influ- Lyly was employed for a time by Q u e e n Eliza- enced those of, among others, J a m e s Joyce. In beth I’s treasurer, Lord Burghley, and was the 1930s, he wrote politically committed appointed vice-master of the St. Paul’s choris-poetry; from the 1940s on, he increasingly drew ters. He served several terms as a Member of on philosophy, linguistics, and science. *Hugh* Parliament and possibly hoped to obtain a place *MacDiarmid: Complete Poems 1920—1976* was at court. He had gained fame as the author of a published in 1978 and revised in 1993. romance in two parts, *Euphues, or the Anatomie of Wit* (1578) and *Euphues and His England* Archibald MacLeish (1892-1982), (1580). Lyly also wrote several plays that com-pp. 1381-82

bined classical and traditional English dramatic Archibald MacLeish was born and raised in Illi- forms. The striking style of these works, which nois. He was educated at Yale University and has given us the term *euphuism*, entails an elab- Harvard Law School. During World War I, he orate sentence structure marked by balance, volunteered to serve at the front. In the early antithesis, and alliteration, among other rhetor-1920s, he lived in Paris, and throughout the

ical effects, as well as fulsome use of imagery
1930s he served on the editorial board of *For-*
drawn mainly from the works of the ancient nat-
tune magazine. MacLeish was influential in the
uralist Pliny.

upper echelons of American government under

2112 / BIOGRAPHICAL SKETCHES

Franklin Delano Roosevelt and held the posts of

Derek Mahon (b. 1941), pp. 1921-25

librarian of Congress and assistant secretary of

Derek Mahon was born in Belfast, Northern Ire-

state, among others. After leaving government,

land, and read French at Trinity College, Dub-

he taught at Harvard University. In addition to

lin. After graduation, he traveled in France,

poetry, he wrote prose; verse plays, most Canada, and the
United States, supporting him-famously. *B.* (1957);
radio plays; and the Oscar-

self through teaching and odd jobs. He has

winning screenplay for *The Eleanor Roosevelt* worked as a
scriptwriter for the BBC, a freelance *Stor*' (1965). In his
later work, MacLeish writer and reviewer, drama critic of the
Listener, attempted to reconcile the conflict between his

features editor of *Vogue*, and poetry and fiction

famous dictum "A poem should not mean / but

editor of the *New Statesman*. His first collection,

be" and his political commitment.

Twelve Poems, was published in 1965, while a

collected edition spanning 1962 to 1975

Louis MacNeice (1907-1963), pp. 1485-

appeared in 1979. A new edition of *Selected Poems* was published in 2000 . Mahon has also

(Frederick) Louis MacNeice was born in Belfast, Ireland, and raised in Carrickfergus. Educated at Marlborough College and Merton College, Oxford, he became a lecturer in Classics at Birmingham University and, later, at Bedford College, London.

Following the breakup of his first marriage, he traveled to Iceland with his friend W. H. Auden, then to Spain on the eve of — a n d again during—the Spanish Civil War, where he was a successful shoemaker) and attended Corpus Christi College, Cambridge, on a fellowship designated for students preparing to become ministers.

Marlowe, however, spent his university years writing plays (his tragedy, *Dido Queen of Carthage*, perhaps written with Thomas Nashe, in Athens as director of the British Institute, he

After returning to England in 1940, he joined the B B C as a feature writer and producer, and, except for a year and a half spent in Athens as director of the British Institute, he

apparently dates from the 1580s) and working remained with the B B C for the rest of his life. as a spy abroad; when university officials wanted He was a pioneer of radio drama, a notable play- to deny Marlowe his M.A. in 1587, the Privy wright, a translator (of Aeschylus's *Agamemnon* Council intervened, citing his service to the and Goethe's *Faust*), and a literary critic. Best- queen in "matters touching the benefit of his known as a poet, however, he was early and country." His contacts at court also seem to have somewhat carelessly identified with the other intervened on his behalf in 1589, when he was Oxford poets—Auden, Stephen Spender, and C.

involved in a murderous brawl but only briefly Day Lewis; but just as he never, as they did, sym- imprisoned; in 1592, when he was arrested for pathized with C o m m u n i s m , he never moved, as counterfeiting coins in the Netherlands but they did, to the political right. The consistency spared imprisonment; and again in 1593, when and integrity of the man characterizes his work. he was arrested on suspicion of dangerous reli- He delights in the surface of the world his senses gious views, having been denounced by his one- apprehend and celebrates "the drunkenness of time friend Thomas Kyd for atheism and things being various," often with wit and a wild treason. In the same year that he received his

gaiety. An “unfinished autobiography” called Cambridge M.A., his enormously popular play *The Strings Are False* and his *Collected Poems Tamhurlaine* was produced on the London were published in 1965 and 1966.

stage; a sequel soon followed. His other plays include *The few of Malta*, *Doctor Faustus*, and the chronicle history *Edward IF* In addition,

J a y M a c P h e r s o n (b. 1 9 3 1) , pp. 1830-31

Jay

Marlowe translated from the Latin Ovid’s

(J e a n) MacPherso n was born in London.

When she was nine, her family emigrated to *Amores* and Lucan’s *Pharsalia* (about the Roman Canada and settled in Newfoundland. Mac-civil wars) and wrote the erotic mythological

Pherson was educated at Carleton College, poem *Hero and Leander*, which was entered in McGill University, University College (London),

the Stationers’ Register in September 1593, just and the University of Toronto, where she stud- a few months after the poet’s mysterious death, ied with the literary critic Northrop Frye. She from a knife wound in a barroom brawl.

taught at Toronto from 1957 until 1996.

MacPherson’s first collection of poems, issued

D i o n i s i o D. M a r t i n e z (b. 1 9 5 6) , pp. 2009-

when she was twenty-one, was published by

10

Robert Graves’s Seizen Press; her next collec-

Dionisio D. Martinez was born in Cuba. Follow-

tion bore the imprint of her own press, Emblem
ing his family's exile from their homeland in
Books. *The Boatman* (1957) won her national
1965, he lived in northern Spain and southern
acclaim and established her reputation as a California. He
settled in Tampa, Florida, in poet. She has also published
literary criticism

1972 and has worked as a poet in the schools,
and a textbook on mythology.

an affiliate writer at the University of Tampa,

BIOGRAPHICAL SKETCHES / 2113

and a collaborating artist with the Y M C A that traces the
journey to Iceland taken by W. H.

National Writer's Voice Project. Author of three
Auden and Louis MacNeice. Since 1996, he has
volumes of poetry, he is also a reviewer and an
lived in the U.S. and has taught at Amherst Col-
essayist.

lege, Massachusetts; Columbia University; and
New School University, New York City. He is
Andrew Marvell (1621-1678), pp. 475-89
poetry editor of *The New Republic* and a Fellow
Andrew Marvell was born in Yorkshire, England,
of the Royal Society of Literature.

the son of a Calvinist minister and his wife;

moved to Hull on his father's appointment as J o h n M c C r a
e (1 8 7 2 - 1 9 1 8) , p. 1 2 2 5

lecturer at Holy Trinity Church; and was edu-

John M c C r a e was born in Guelph, Ontario, and

cated at Hull Grammar School and Trinity Col-
educated at the University of Toronto. An
lege, Cambridge. He spent the civil war years
accomplished physician and researcher, he
touring Europe, finding “the C a u s e too good to
practiced medicine at several hospitals in the
have been fought for,” and on his return moved
United States and Canada. M c C r a e served as a
in London literary circles, befriending, among
medical officer in the Canadian Army during the
others, John Milton and Richard Lovelace. Boer War and
World War I. In the latter, he was From 1650 until 1652, he
tutored the daughter
initially stationed at the front in France, then
of the Parliamentarian general Fairfax; at Fair-
transferred to a military hospital in Boulogne,
fax’s house, N u n Appleton, in Yorkshire, Marvell
where he contracted a fatal case of double pneu-
wrote a number of poems about gardens and monia. He
published only a handful of poems in rural life, including the
famous “country house”
his lifetime and is best remembered for “In Flan-
poem “Upon Appleton.” He became Oliver ders Field,” which
he composed during the Sec-Cromwell’s unofficial laureate,
and in 1657 ond Battle of Ypres.
replaced Milton as secretary to the Council of
State. In 1659, he became a member of Parlia-
Herman Melville (1819-1891), *pp. 1054-*
ment for Hull and adroitly managed to retain

that seat after the Restoration. He fought for tol-
Herman Melvill (the *e* was added in the 1830s)
eration of religious dissenters in verse and prose
was born and raised in New York City. The son
satires, many published anonymously, and some
of a well-connected merchant who lost his for-
attacking the king's corrupt ministers and even
tune, he was taken out of school at age twelve
the king. Most of Marvell's poems were not pub-
when his father died. In 1839, he sailed to Liv-
lished until after his death, the lyrics in 1681, erpool, England,
as a cabin boy, and this voyage the satires in 1689.

inculcated in him an enduring love for the sea.

In 1841, he sailed on a whaler, but jumped ship

The Massachusetts Bay Psalm Book

in the Marquesas Islands. Captured by canni-

(1 6 4 0) , pp. 391-93

balistic natives, he escaped and went to Tahiti,

The Bay Psalm Book, also known as *The Whole* where he
worked as a field laborer, and to Hon-Book of Psalms
Faithfully Translated into English olulu, where he enlisted as a
seaman. In 1843, *Metre*, was the authoritative hymnal of the
Mashe returned home and began writing romantic

sachusetts Bay Colony and the first book pub-

novels based on his exotic adventures. His early

lished in America. Translated by Richard work sold well and
won him a wide following, Mather, John Eliot, and Thomas
Weld, this but he thought little of it. His masterpieces, work
replaced a version produced in England including the novel
Moby-Dick (1851), were that the Bay Puritans felt to be
corrupted by the

critical and commercial failures, and his poems translators' willingness to employ poetic license were largely ignored. His 1866 volume of poems, in their renderings. The Puritan translators, by *Battle-Pieces*, is now considered some of the contrast, took scrupulous pains to render the greatest verse inspired by the Civil War. An epic poems as they appeared in the original, devoid poem, *Clarel*, followed in 1876. Melville worked of added ornamentation. "God's Altar needs not from 1866 on as a customs inspector in New our Polishings," John Cotton declared in his York City, and he died in near obscurity and dire preface to the work. The book enjoyed a wide poverty. At his death, the novella *Billy Budd*, circulation for nearly a century and was *Sailor* was left not quite finished. reprinted numerous times.

George Meredith (1828-1909), pp. 1107-

Glyn Maxwell (b. 1962), pp. 2016-20

10

Glyn Maxwell was born in Welwyn Garden City,

George Meredith was born in Portsmouth,

England, and educated at Worcester College,

England. He received little education except for

Oxford, and Boston University. *Tale of the* two years at a Moravian academy at Neuweid, *Mayor's Son*, his first volume of poems, was pub-in Germany. In 1845, he was apprenticed to a

lished in 1990 and was followed by other well-

lawyer, but found the work uncongenial. He received collections. He has also written plays published his first poem in 1849 and was the for radio and the stage, a novel, and, with Simon model for Henry Wallis's painting *The Death of Armitage*, *Moon Country* (1996), a travel book *Thomas Chatterton* (1851). Needing money, he **2 1 1 4 / B I O G R A P H I C A L S K E T C H E S**

turned to journalism, then to publishing; he was W. S. Merwin (b. 1927), pp. 1743-45

a reader for Chapman and Hall from 1860 until

William Stanley Merwin was born in New York City and raised in Union City, New Jersey, at Box Hill, Surrey. Like his admirer Thomas and Scranton, Pennsylvania. He was educated

Hardy, he was better-known for his novels— at Princeton University, where he studied with such as *The Egoist* (1879) and *Diana of the* the poets John Berryman and R. P. Blackmur.

Crossways (1885)—than for his poetry, but pre-

He later traveled through Europe, and in Mal-ferred the latter to the former. His most endur-

lorca, Spain, was a tutor to the poet Robert ing work of verse is *Modern Love* (1862), a cycle

Graves's son. For several years, he worked as a of fifty sonnets about the breakup of a marriage.

translator at the BBC in London, and from 1951

Its inception was autobiographical—Meredith's until 1953 he was poetry editor at *The Nation*.

marriage to the widowed daughter of Thomas
He has since lived in, among other places, Mex-
Love Peacock collapsed in 1857 when she left
ico and France, and currently resides in Hawaii.
him for Wallis—but he significantly changed
In addition to lyric poetry, Merwin has written
real events and drafted protagonists distinct book-length
poems and several plays, and has from himself and his wife
for the work. In his
translated Latin, Greek, French, Spanish, Ital-
later years, he was a much-respected man of let-
ian, Chinese, and Japanese poetry into English.
ters, and he was awarded the Order of Merit in
In addition to a version of *Sir Gawain and the*
1905.

Green Knight, he has published essays and
memoirs. He continues to be one of America's
most prolific poets.

W i l l i a m M e r e d i t h (b . 1 9 1 9) , p p . 1 6 0 8 - 0 9

William Meredith was born in New York City
and was educated at Princeton University. After
working as a reporter for

C h a r l o t t e M e w (1 8 6 9 - 1 9 2 8) , p p . 1 2 1 6 - 1 9

The New York Times in

the early 1940s, he spent five years in the armed

Charlotte Mew was born in London and

forces, mainly as a naval aviator in the Pacific

attended Gower Street School. In her thirties,

theater of World War II. He reenlisted to fly mis-

she wrote short stories; in her forties, she turned
sions in the Korean War. His academic career
to poetry. Her first collection, *The Farmer's*
included teaching posts at, among other *Bride*, was published
in 1916. Her work was schools, Princeton, the University of
Hawaii,
much admired by poets such as John Masefield,
and Connecticut College. He has been an opera
Walter de la Mare, and Thomas Hardy, who
critic for the
became a close friend and once called her "far
Hudson Review, poetry consultant
to the Library of Congress, and a chancellor of
and away the best living woman poet." Her life
the Academy of American Poets. In addition to
was punctuated by difficulty and sadness. She
poetry, he has published criticism and a libretto;
watched two siblings succumb to insanity;
he has edited several collections of poetry; and
looked after her demanding, widowed mother;
he has translated the poetry of Guillaume Apol-
nursed her sister, who had developed inoperable
linaire.
cancer; and suffered unrequited love for Ella
D'Arcy, assistant editor of the *Yellow Book*, and
for the novelist May Sinclair. She entered a
James Merrill (1926-1995), pp. 1716-28
nursing home in 1927, but committed suicide a
J a m e s Merrill was born and raised in New York

short time later.

City, a son of Charles Merrill, founding partner of the Merrill Lynch investment firm, and his wife. He was educated at Amherst College. Near Edna St. Vincent Millay (1892-1950),

the end of World War II, he interrupted his *pp. 1 382-86* studies to serve a year with the United States

Edna St. Vincent Millay was born in Rockland, Army. In 1954, he settled in Stonington, Con- Maine. In 1912, she gained national attention

necticut, and eventually divided his time when her precocious poem "Renaissance" was between Connecticut and Florida, although he

published in *The Lyric Year*, an anthology of

spent long periods in Greece. In addition to contemporary poetry. After her graduation from poetry, he published novels, plays, a collection

Vassar College, Millay moved to Greenwich

of criticism, and a memoir. Widely admired from

Village, where her literary reputation quickly

the outset of his career, Merrill developed a flourished. She associated with many of the poetic that was autobiographical without being

prominent artists, writers, and political radicals

"confessional." His elegant, witty, highly of her day, including the poets Hart Crane and wrought style reflected the influence of Marcel

Wallace Stevens, the playwright Eugene

Proust and Henry James. His epic, *The Changing*

O'Neill, the editor Max Eastman, and the critic

Light at Sandover (1977—1982), a seventeen-
Edmund Wilson. In 1925, she settled with her
thousand-line trilogy that draws from com-
husband in Austerlitz, New York, where she
munications he received on a Ouija board lived for the rest of
her life. Witty, sometimes with his partner, David Jackson, is
consid-cynical, always polished, she is unusual in
ered one of the major achievements of having produced some
of the most traditional as twentieth-century poetry.
well as most modern verse of her day.

BIOGRAPHICAL SKETCHES / 2115

John Milton (1608-1674), *pp.* 394-451

N. Scott Momaday (b. 1934), *pp.* 1861-62

John Milton was born in London, the son of Sara

N. Scott Momaday was born in Lawton,

and John Milton. The latter earned his living by

Oklahoma, a member of the Kiowa Native

composing music and working as a “scrivener,” American
tribe. He was educated at the Univer-that is, drawing up
contracts and performing sity of New Mexico and Stanford
University.

other business tasks requiring writing. The Since then, he has
taught at Stanford, the Uni-young Milton was educated at St.
Paul’s School

versity of California at Santa Barbara, the Uni-

and Christ’s College, Cambridge, where he versity of
California at Berkeley, and the received his B.A. in 1629 and
his M.A. in 1632,

University of Arizona at Tucson. Known primar-

and where his “niceness of nature” and “honest

ily as a novelist, he is also a landscape artist.

haughtiness” (and, perhaps, his flowing locks),
Although his work is rooted in the Native Amer-
earned him the nickname “the lady of Christ’s.”
ican literary tradition, it reveals broader influ-
According to his own testimony in the volume
ences.

of the early poems he published (and carefully
arranged) in 1645, his earliest poetic endeavors

Lady Mary Wortley Montagu (1689-
were two paraphrases of Psalms done when he
1762), *pp.* 639-45

was fifteen. During his university years, Milton

Lady Mary Wortley Montagu was born Lady
wrote various poems in both English and Latin,

Mary Pierrepont, daughter of a wealthy Whig
and his 1645 book opens with “On the Morning

peer who became duke of Kingston in 1715 and
of Christ’s Nativity,” written in 1629, while he

of Lady Mary Fielding, who died when her
was still at Cambridge. From 1632 until 1638,

daughter was thirteen. Educated at home, Lady
he lived at his parents’ house, studying and writ-

Mary taught herself Latin. In 1712, she eloped
ing, supported by his father. During this period,

with Edward Wortley Montagu, whom she fol-

he wrote his masque, *Comus*, in collaboration lowed to Turkey
when he was appointed ambas-with the musician Henry
Lawes; performed in

sador to Constantinople in 1716. Her letters

1634, it was not published under Milton's name from her travels were witty and immensely popular until 1645. His first published poem was "On Shakespeare," an epitaph printed in the Second Folio (1632) of Shakespeare's plays. In November of 1637, the year his mother died, Milton largely to escape her by then loveless marriage, published his pastoral elegy "Lycidas" in a volume and lived in Europe, mostly Italy, for the rest of his life, returning home only to die. She was a student who had drowned. In 1638, Milton traveled to France and then to Italy, where he met, among others, the astronomer and physicist Galileo. Upon returning to England, he bitterly mocked her in *The Dunciad* and as the civil wars, he began the career as political writer that led him to advocate freedom of Richard Steele, founders of the *Spectator*; were divorce (in pamphlets published soon after Milton's first publishers, and the writers William

ton's own hasty marriage, to Mary Powell, had Congreve and John Gay were acquaintances. In failed in 1642); freedom from censorship of the "Epistle from Mrs. Yonge to Her Husband," she press (*Areopagitica*, 1644); and freedom from critiques sexual inequality and advises women what he and others considered tyranny. An trapped in loveless marriages to take lovers, as ardent supporter of Oliver Cromwell's republishe had in her later years.

can regime, Milton supported the execution of King Charles in 1649 and became Cromwell's "secretary for foreign tongues" that same year. John Montague (b. 1929), *pp. 1783-86*

As an official defender of the new regime, Mil-

John Montague was born in Brooklyn, New

ton wrote many prose tracts during the 1650s, York, where his Irish parents had fled in 1920

despite having become completely blind by to avoid prosecution for Republican activities 1652, the same year that Mary (who had (his father had reputedly burned the homes of returned to him in 1645, and with whom he had

absentee landlords), and was brought up by his three daughters) died. He remarried in 1655, to

aunts on a farm in Garvaghey, County Tyrone, Katherine Woodstock, but she died in childbirth

Northern Ireland. He was educated at Univer-

in 1658. With the restoration of the monarchy sity College, Dublin; Yale University; and the

in 1660, Milton was in danger of execution;

Universities of Iowa and California at Berkeley.

friends, including the writer Andrew Marvell. He worked as a journalist before becoming a lecturer, and Milton was able to return to teaching poetry at University College, Cork, and writing poetry during his final years. In 1663, he

he has been a visiting lecturer at several institutions. He married a third time, in 1667 he published *Paradise Lost*, and in 1671 he published a volume of poetry. While literary director of Claddagh Records

containing his "brief epic," *Paradise Regained*, (from 1962 until 1975), he organized recordings and his closet drama, *Samson Agonistes*.

of poets such as Robert Graves, Seamus Heaney, Thomas Kavanagh, Thomas Kinsella, and

2116 / BIOGRAPHICAL SKETCHES

Hugh MacDiarmid. His own poetry is to be his first play. *The Search after Happiness*, a found in collections such as *Forms of Exile* drama for schoolgirls, at age eighteen. Originally (1958), *A Chosen Light* (1967), and *New* published in Bristol in 1762, it was republished *Selected Poems* (1990). He has also published in London in 1773 and became hugely popular.

short stories, a play, and a novella, and has his tragedy *The Inflexible Captive* was printed translated Gaelic writing and edited collections

with a postscript by the famous actor David Garrick of Irish verse.

Garrick, who staged the play at Bath in 1775.

Another play, *Percy*, was performed at Covent Garden in 1777 to great acclaim. In addition to Marianne Moore (1887-1972), pp. 1328-

Garden in 1777 to great acclaim. In addition to

36

Garrick, More met Samuel Johnson; Johnson's

Marianne Moore was born in Kirkwood, Missouri, and was raised in Carlisle, Pennsylvania. She was also introduced to the "Bluestockings," a circle of women centered on Elizabeth Mon-lisle Commercial College; taught business skills and commercial law at the U.S. Industrial School, in Carlisle; and traveled to Europe. Moore lived all her adult life with her mother, first in New Jersey, then in Greenwich Village, then in Brooklyn. Her first collection of poor children in reading the Bible, but she was poetry, *Poems* (1921), was brought out by the against "overeducating" the lower classes. She wrote forty-nine pamphlets for the Cheap Mawr, and Bryher (Winifred Ellerman). Repository Tracts series and published her *Strictures on the Modern System of Female Education* in 1799. At her death, she was known as a teacher, a secretary, and a librarian,

left £ 3 0 , 0 0 0 to more than seventy charities.

and she edited the influential magazine *Dial* from 1925 until 1929, when it ceased publica-

Edwin M o r g a n (b. 1 9 2 0) , pp. 1618-20

tion. In her poetry, sometimes written in syllab-

Edwin Morgan was born in Glasgow, Scotland,

les, she united precise observation, and and educated at the University of Glasgow, deliberately prosaic speech that was nonetheless

interrupting his studies to serve in the Royal

highly inventive, with ornate diction and elabo-

Army Medical Corps, but returning in 1947 as

rate patterns. Her friend Elizabeth Bishop was

a lecturer. His first collection, *A Vision of Cath-*

among the many poets on whom she had a pro-

kin Braes (1952), was followed by many others,

found influence. She is considered one of the

including *Sonnets from Scotland* (1985) and

major modernists.

From the Video Box (1986). He is best-known

for his ingenious experimental and “concrete”

D o m M o r a e s (b. 1 9 3 8) , pp. 1883 - 85

poems. He was a visiting professor at Strath-

Dom(inic) Moraes was born in Bombay, India.

clyde University from 1987 until 1990. He has

He moved to England in 1954 and matriculated

translated *Beowulf* as well as the work of numer-

at J e s u s College, Oxford, then published his first

ous poets, including several Latin Americans

collection of poetry at nineteen. With that book,
whose magical-realist mode has influenced his

A Beginning (1957), he became the youngest own work. He
has also published many essays poet to win the Hawthornden
Prize. He has

and reviews and has edited several collections of
since been a journalist, a scriptwriter, and an
poetry, prose, and drama.

editor; has worked for the United Nations Fund
for Populations; and has served as an honorary
William Morris (1 8 3 4 - 1 8 9 6) , pp. 113,9-44

colonel with the United States Army, in Viet-

William Morris was born in Walthamstow,

nam. He eventually returned to India, where he

England, and educated at Exeter College,

married the actress Leela Naidu. In addition to

Oxford, where he became lifelong friends with

poetry, Moraes has published an acclaimed the painter and
designer Edward Burne-Jones.

prose autobiography called *My Father's Son* Their circle was
strongly influenced by the Pre-

(1968) and collections of essays on writing and

Raphaelite school, which they encountered in

on life in India and Pakistan.

about 1854. After graduation from Oxford, Mor-

ris joined an architectural firm, but left to paint

Hannah More (1745-1833), pp. 7 07-11

and to design the furnishings sold by his com-

Hannah More was born in Stapleton, Glouces-

pany Morris, Marshall, Faulkner and Co. (later
tershire, England, the daughter of Jacob More,
Morris and Co.). Producing his own furniture
a master of a Free School, and his wife, Mary out of
frustration at not being able to find any-Grace, a farmer's
child. Sent to the boarding thing suitable for the striking Red
House school opened in Bristol by her two older sisters,
designed for him by Philip Webb, Morris started
she there learned French, Italian, Spanish, and
a revival of the decorative arts and a revolution
Latin, and eventually joined the staff. She wrote
in Victorian taste. He founded the Society for
BIOGRAPHICALSKETCHES / 2117
the Preservation of Ancient Buildings, joined
mus Heaney, Michael Longley, and other poets
the Social Democratic Federation, on its disso-
of the Belfast "Group." Muldoon worked for the
lution assumed the leadership of the Socialist
B B C in Belfast until the mid-1980s, when he
League, and wrote and lectured for the cause of
became a freelance writer and moved to the
Socialism with unflagging enthusiasm. As a poet
United States, where he has taught at a number
(and a translator), he drew on the traditions of
of institutions. He was professor of poetry at
Icelandic, Anglo-Saxon, and classical literature.
Oxford from 1999 to 2004, and is now professor
He combined the two strands of his talent in
of humanities and creative writing at Princeton.

1891, when he founded the Kelmscott Press,
He has written a children's book, translated
producing books designed for beauty rather than
Gaelic verse, and collaborated on the opera
for economy.

Shining Brow.

Howard Moss (1922-1987), pp. 1659-61

Les Murray (b. 1938), pp. 1885-90

Howard Moss was born in New York City. He

Les Murray was born in the Nabiac, New South

received his undergraduate education at the University of New South Wales, Australia,
and raised on a dairy farm in University of Michigan and
Wisconsin Univer-nearby Bunyah. After studying arts and
modern

society and did postgraduate work at Harvard and

languages at the University of Sydney, he

Columbia Universities. During World War II, he

worked as a translator of foreign scholarly and

served in the War Information Office, and technical materials
at the Australian National between 1945 and 1948 he was an
editor at

University before embarking on a career as a

Time magazine and the *Junior Bazaar*. In 1948, freelance
writer. He has been writer-in-residence at the University of New York
where he joined the staff of *The New Yorker*, where he

residence at various institutions. In 1975, he

served as poetry editor for nearly forty years and

repurchased part of the family farm in Bunyah,

helped establish the reputations of a wide range

and in 1985 he returned there to live. An excep-

of poets, from Theodore Roethke to Mark tionaly prolific writer, he has published, in addi-Strand. He published poetry, light verse, plays,

tion to poetry, several collections of critical and criticism, and he edited several anthologies essays and an acclaimed verse novel. He has

of poetry. He also taught at, among other been coeditor of *Poetry Australia*; poetry editor schools, Barnard College and Columbia Univer-at Angus & Robertson; and, since 1991, literary

sity.

editor of *Quadrant*. He compiled *The New*

Oxford Book of Australian Verse and *The Anthol-*

Edwin Muir (1 8 8 7 - 1 9 5 9) , pp. 1 3 3 6 - 4 0

ogy of Australian Religious Verse. His *Collected*

Edwin Muir was born in the Orkney Islands. In

Poems was published in 1999.

1901, his family moved to Glasgow in search of

work, but within five years both of his parents

O g d e n N a s h (1 9 0 2 - 1 9 7 1) , pp. 1 4 3 7 - 3 8

and two of his brothers had died due to the harsh

Ogden Nash was born in Rye, New York. He

conditions in the city's slums and sweatshops.

attended Harvard University for one year, then

Muir left school at age eleven and worked in a

taught French, sold bonds, and wrote copy for

beer-bottling factory, several law offices, and a

streetcar advertisements, before embarking on a

factory that burned bones to charcoal. In 1919,

literary career. In 1929, he joined the staff of

he moved to London and began a literary career.

the fledgling *New Yorker* magazine. In addition

He was assistant to A. R. Orage on the *New Age*

to writing poetry, Nash wrote children's books,

and reviewed for the *Athenaeum* and *The Scots-*

collaborated on several musicals, the most suc-

man. From 1921 until 1956, he and his wife,

successful of which was the Broadway hit *One*

Willa, moved between Europe, England, and *Touch of Venus*

(1943), and lectured across the Scotland, eventually settling in

Cambridgeshire,

country. He was one of America's funniest and

England. Muir's *First Poems* was published in most popular

poets.

1925. He was a prolific reviewer and critic, and

collections of his writings include *Latitudes* Thomas Nashe

(1567-1601), *pp. 282-84*

(1924) and *Essays on Literature and Society* Thomas Nashe,

the son of a poor curate and his (1949). He worked for the

British Council from

wife, became a fellowship student at St. John's

1942 to 1950 in Edinburgh, Prague, and Rome,

College, Cambridge, and was graduated in

and he was Charles Eliot Norton Professor at

1886. After touring France and Italy, he joined

Harvard University from 1955 to 1956. *The* the circle of

London writers that included Rob-Complete Poems of Edwin

Muir was published ert Greene. His first published work, a

preface in 1991.

to Greene's *Menaphon* (1589), was an indict-

ment of contemporary drama and poetry; his

Paul Muldoon (b. 1951), pp. 1979- 85

second, *The Anatomy of Absurdity* (1589),

Paul Muldoon was born in Portadown, County

attacked the artificiality of recent romances.

Armagh, Northern Ireland, and was raised in When Richard Harvey accused Nashe of pre-The Moy, a small village featured prominently

sumption in writing the preface to *Menaphon*,

in many of his poems. He was educated at Nashe replied with a tract called *Pierce Penni-Queen's University, Belfast, where he met Sea-*

less, His Supplication to the Devil (1592). When

2118 / BIOGRAPHICAL SKETCHES

Gabriel Harvey wrote a contentious description

Sean O'Brien (b. 1952), pp. 1992-94

of the end of Robert Greene's life in *Four Letters*

Sean O'Brien was born in London and raised in

(1592), Nashe replied in *Four Letters Confuted Hull*.

Educated at Selwyn College, Cambridge, (1593). The exchange was finally ended, in and the Universities of Birmingham, Hull, and 1599, by Episcopal decree and confiscation of

Leeds, he has taught at Sussex University and

the adversaries' publications. Nashe's other Sheffield Hallam University. He was Northern works include *The Unfortunate Traveler* (1594), Arts Literary Fellow from 1992 to 1994 and was which has been called the first "picaresque" a visiting writer at the University of Odense, novel in English, and the plays *Summer's Last Denmark*, and at Hokudai University, Sapporo, *Will* (1592) and (with Ben Jonson) *The Isle of*

Japan. His collection *Ghost Train* won the For-

Dogs (1597), which was suppressed for its alleg-

ward Prize for Poetry. He was cofounder and editor of the literary magazine *The Printer's* and was known for his scabrous and seditious content. Though his reputation was based on his stinging wit and his *Devil* and reviews regularly for *The Times* *Lit-rhetorical skills (he coined many new words in*

erary Supplement and other periodicals. He has written his prose works), Nashe also wrote fine lyrics. He has been commissioned by the B B C to produce a radio dramatization of Yevgeny Zamayatin's novel *We*, and his verse version of Aristophanes' *The Birds* was staged at the National Theatre in 1977.

2002. His critical work, *The Deregulated Muse*,

Howard Nemerov was born and raised in New York City. He brings together his essays on contemporary British and Irish poetry. He was the brother of the photographer Diane Arbus. Upon graduation from Harvard University, he entered the Canadian Air Force to fight in World War II and later transferred to the United States Air Force. After the war, he returned to New York and worked as an editor at *Furioso* magazine for one year. During

Frank O'Hara (1926-1966), pp. 1728-31

Force to fight in World War II and later transferred to the United States Air Force. After the war, he returned to New York and worked as an editor at *Furioso* magazine for one year. During

South Pacific. He was educated at Harvard University and the University of Michigan, and in among other schools, Hamilton College, Bennington College, Brandeis University, and (from 1951 he settled in New York. A fringe member of the Beats and a central figure in the so-called 1969 on) Washington University. From 1963 New York school of poets, whose practitioners until 1964, he served as consultant in poetry to included John Ashbery, Kenneth Koch, and the Library of Congress. Influenced by Yeats, James Schuyler, he enjoyed a long association with Eliot, and Auden, Nemerov was known for his wit, his use of irony and paradox, and his mas- served for a time as associate curator) and was tery of form. Both his serious and his more friends with Abstract Expressionist artists such humorous poems asked thorny questions. In as Willem De Kooning, Jackson Pollock, and addition to poetry, he wrote fiction. He was Franz Kline. He also edited *Art News* from 1953 named poet laureate of the United States in until 1955. Like the painters he admired, 1988.

O'Hara stressed the process of composition. His poems are filled with the bric-a-brac of contemporary life and pay tribute to popular figures Norman Nicholson (1914-1987), pp. 1561- such as Billie Holiday. His exuberant tone con-

tinues to make his work very popular.

Norman Nicholson was born in Millom, Cumberland, in the Lake District of England. Except

Charles Olson (1910-1970), pp. 1511-15

for the years 1930—32, which he spent in a Charles Olson was born in Worcester, Massachusetts, and educated at Wesleyan, Harvard, for tuberculosis, he lived in Millom all his life,

and Yale Universities. In 1948, he began his

in a small apartment above the tailor shop where

association with the experimental Black Moun-

his father had worked. His *Collected Poems*—tain College, which he directed from 1951 until incorporating seven volumes published between

it closed, in 1956. During Olson's tenure, the

1944 and 1984 and some unpublished work—

composer John Cage, the choreographer Merce

appeared in 1994. He also wrote an autobiog-

Cunningham, and the artist Franz Kline taught

raphy and several prose works about the Lake

at the school; poets Robert Creeley, Robert

District. Nicholson identified his main theme as

Duncan, and Denise Levertov studied there; and

the “sense of community, of organic relationship

writers Allen Ginsberg, Jack Kerouac, and Louis

between man and his environment”; continuity

Zukofsky published early work in its influential

and change are other important themes in his

magazine, *The Black Mountain Review*. In

work, the imagery of which is drawn predomi-

1957, Olson settled in Gloucester, Massachusetts, and began work on the “Maximus” poems, “reconverted” to Christianity—and the natural world.

1950 essay, Olson dubbed his poetry “Projective

BIOGRAPHICAL SKETCHES / 2119

Verse.” Believing that art “does not seek to describe but to enact,” he attempted to convey

killed in action one week before the signing of the armistice. Only five of his poems were published in his lifetime, but his posthumous reputation as a “poet’s poet” grew with successive

Michael Ondaatje (b. 1943), pp. 1933-36

Michael Ondaatje was born in Colombo, Ceylon (now Sri Lanka), to parents of Sinhalese, Tamil, and Dutch origin, and was raised in England

editions of his work by four poets—Sassoon

(now Sri Lanka), to parents of Sinhalese, Tamil, (1920), Edmund Blunden (1931), Cecil Day Lewis (1963), and Jon Stallworthy (1983)—cul-

minating with Benjamin Britten’s setting of

where he studied at Bishop’s University, the some of his

poems in the composer’s *War Requiem*—University of Toronto, and

Queen’s University.

uiem (1962).

Ondaatje has taught at the University of Western Ontario and York University, has worked as

P. K. Page (b. 1916), pp. 1583-85

an editor at Coach House Press, and has P. K. Page was born in Swanage, Dorset, directed several films. In addition to poetry, he

England. Her family emigrated to Canada when

has written memoirs, plays, literary criticism,

she was three years old and settled in Red Deer,

and highly acclaimed fiction, including the Alberta. After high

school, Page worked as a novel *The English Patient*. He also

has edited a shop assistant, a radio actress, a filing clerk, a

collection of long poems and several volumes of

researcher, and a scriptwriter. She then taught

short stories. Much of his recent poetry is set in

poetry at the Writers' Workshop in Toronto and

his native Sri Lanka.

at the University of Victoria. From 1942 until

1945, she worked on the editorial board of

John Ormond (1923-1990), pp. 1681-82

Preview magazine. From 1953 until 1964, she

John Ormond (Thomas) was born at Dunvant

accompanied her husband, an ambassador, to

near Swansea, Glamorgan, Wales. He was edu-

Australia, Brazil, and Mexico, and while living

cated at the University College, Swansea, and

abroad she resumed her earlier studies in paint-

studied drawing at the Swansea School of Art.

ing. In addition to poetry, Page has written

After graduation, he worked as a journalist from

essays, short stories, a romance, and a memoir
1945 until 1955, then joined the B B C as a tele-
vision news assistant. He worked as a documen-
tary filmmaker from 1957 until his retirement,
Michael Palmer (b. 1943), *pp. 1936-38*

and is best-remembered for the series of films
Michael Palmer was born and raised in New
he produced on Welsh poets and writers. York City and
educated at Harvard University.

Ormond was first published in 1943, but grew

He has taught at several schools, such as the

increasingly dissatisfied with his poems and New College of
California, and has lived most largely stopped writing until the
1960s, when

of his life in the San Francisco area. In addition
new work showed that he had found a new voice.
to writing poetry, Palmer has translated French
He subsequently established himself as one of
literature and literary theory and has collabo-
the foremost Welsh poets of his generation.

rated on books with painters and dancers. Like
the artists and theorists he admires—including

Eric Ormsby (b. 1941), *pp. 19 25-26*

Gertrude Stein, Louis Zukofsky, Robert Creeley,
Eric Ormsby was born in Atlanta, Georgia, and the Surrealists
—Palmer in his work fre-raised in Florida, and later moved to
Canada.

quently examines the ways in which words sig-
Educated at Columbia, Rutgers, and Princeton

Eric Ormsby (b. 1941), *pp. 19 25-26*

Gertrude Stein, Louis Zukofsky, Robert Creeley,

Eric Ormsby was born in Atlanta, Georgia, and the Surrealists

—Palmer in his work fre-raised in Florida, and later moved to

Canada.

quently examines the ways in which words sig-

Educated at Columbia, Rutgers, and Princeton

nify meaning. As a L = A = N = G = U = A = G = E
Universities, as well as the University of Penn-
poet, he regards the reader as a cocreator of the
sylvania, he is a specialist in Islamic theology text.
and classical Arabic language and literature.

The author of scholarly works and five volumes

D o r o t h y Parke r (1 8 9 3 - 1 9 6 7) , pp. 1391-92

of poetry, among them *Daybreak at the Straits* Dorothy Parker
was born and raised in New York (2004), he lives in Montreal,
where he is a proCity. Early in her career, she worked for a
num-

fessor at McGill University's Institute of Islamic
ber of prominent magazines, including *Vogue*
Studies.

and *Vanity Fair*, where she developed her rep-
utation as an acerbic wit, and *The New Yorker*,
Wilfred Owen (1893-1918), pp. 1386-91

for which she wrote the popular "Constant
Wilfred Owen was born in Oswestry, Shrop-
Reader" column and many short stories. In the
shire, England. He left school in 1911, served
1930s, she and her second husband, Alan
as assistant to a vicar in Oxfordshire, and taught
Campbell, moved to Hollywood and wrote
English in Bordeaux. In 1915, he returned to
screenplays; with Lillian Hellman and Dashiell
England to enlist in the army and was sent to
Hammett, Parker helped found the Screen Writ-
the front in France. Two years later, having been

ers' Guild. In the 1920s and 1930s, she became
invalided to the Craiglockhart War Hospital active in leftist
politics, and she was blacklisted with shellshock, he met
Siegfried Sassoon, who

during the McCarthy era. Considered one of the
encouraged his work. After returning to combat
foremost wits of her day, she belonged to a

2 1 2 0 / B I O G R A P H I C A L S K E T C H E S

famous literary lunch group that called itself the
page, Philips gained fame, eventually becoming
Algonquin Club. Parker was as celebrated for
the best-known female poet of her age. An unau-
her short stories as for her poetry, but she spent
thorized edition of her poems (*By the Incompa-*
her later years in isolation in New York.

rable Mrs. K. P.) appeared in 1664; suppressed
four days later, it closely resembles the author-
George Peele (1557-1596), p. 221
ized edition, published in 1667.

George Peele was the son of J a m e s Peele, a clerk
of Christ's Hospital who wrote pageants as well
Robert Pinsky (b. 1 9 4 0) , pp. 1913-16

as a book on accounting, and his wife. After tak-
Robert Pinsky was born in Long Branch, New

ing a B.A. and an M.A. from Oxford, Peele Jersey. He was
educated at Rutgers University moved to London and made a
bare living from

and Stanford University, where he studied
writing pageants, plays, and poems. He is por-

under the poet Yvor Winters. He has taught at Wellesley College, the University of California anonymous book *Merry Conceited Jest* of at Berkeley, and Boston University, and served *George Peele* (1 6 0 7) , but the portrait seems to bear little relation to Peele's actual life. While as poetry editor of *The New Republic* and *Slate*. In addition to his own poetry, Pinsky has published volumes of criticism, a translation of Euripides' *Iphigenia*, and he later may have worked as an actor in London. His first play, *The Arraignment of Hass* of the writings of Polish poet Czeslaw Milosz. Poet laureate of the United States from 1997 to 2000, he had during his tenure an especially important role in popularizing the genre (including a historical one on Edward II that through his "Favorite Poems" project and other may predate Christopher Marlowe's play on the programs.

same tragic king), Peele uses blank-verse lines and lyric interludes in ways that anticipate Sylvia Plath (1932-1963), pp. 1836-45

Shakespeare. Peele also used blank verse effectively in nondramatic poems, many of them pub-

She was educated at Smith College and Newn-
lished in *Polyhymnia* (1590) and *The Honor of*
ham College, Cambridge, where she met her
the Garter (1 5 9 3) .

husband, the poet Ted Hughes. In 1953, Plath
suffered a bout of depression, attempted sui-
Katherine Philips (1632-1664), pp. 526-
cide, and was hospitalized for six months; these
30

events form the gist of her novel, *The Bell far*

Katherine Philips, the daughter of a London (1963). In 1958,
she attended Robert Lowell's merchant and his wife, first
attended school in

verse-writing seminar at Boston University,
Hackney, England, then moved to Pembroke-
where the poet Anne Sexton was a fellow stu-
shire when her widowed mother remarried, in
dent. In 1963, following the dissolution of her
1646. Katherine was married to J a m e s Philips,
marriage, she suffered another bout of depres-
thirty-eight years her senior, when she was six-
sion and committed suicide. Like Lowell and
teen, and spent twelve quiet years in Wales—

Sexton, Plath is generally considered a "Confes-
the culture of which she celebrated in her sional" poet. As
Robert Lowell writes in his pref-poems on the Welsh language
—while her hus-

ace to *Ariel*, the posthumously published
band served as a member of Oliver Cromwell's

collection that established her reputation, in her Parliament. Philips claimed that she “never writ poems “Sylvia Plath becomes ... one of those a line in my life with intention to have it super-real, hypnotic, great classical heroines.” printed,” but her poetry was being circulated before 1651, when Henry Vaughan eulogized Edgar Allan Poe (1809-1849), pp. 975-81 her in his *Olor Iscanus* (1651). In 1655, her son Edgar Poe was born in Boston to itinerant Hector was born; when he died two weeks later, actors, orphaned in 1811, and then raised by she lamented his death in an epitaph. Known as John Allan, a Richmond merchant. He attended “the matchless Orinda” in her circle of friends the University of Virginia for one year. When he and in the wider literary world, she named her ran up gambling debts, his adoptive father with-schoolmate Mary Aubrey “Rosania” in several drew support, and Poe enlisted in the army. poems and addressed her friend Anne Owen as Although he received an appointment to West “Lucasia” in others. Despite being born, and Point, he failed at military life. He then having married, a Puritan, Philips had Royalist embarked on a literary career, which took him sympathies and contributed panegyrics to the to Baltimore, Richmond, Philadelphia, and New returning monarchy, although her husband’s York. A brilliant storyteller whose 1839 collec-fortunes declined after the Restoration. On a tion

Tales of the Grotesque and Arabesque, a pub-visit to Ireland in 1662, Philips translated Pierre

lishing failure, gave way to internationally

Corneille's *La Morte de Pompee*, which was successful poems, especially "The Raven," in the staged and printed in Dublin the next year.

1840s, he won numerous prizes and published

Though only her initials appeared on the title

in respected journals, but earned too little

BIOGRAPHICAL SKETCHES / 2121

money to survive. He and his young wife nearly

translations, *After Martial* (1972). A two-volume

starved, and she died of tuberculosis in 1845. *Collected Poems* was published in 1999.

Poe, who had struggled long with mental insta-

bility, tried in 1849 to stop drinking, but his

Ezra P o u n d (1 8 8 5 - 1 9 7 2) , pp. 1295-1310

death was probably of alcohol poisoning. He Ezra Pound was born in Hailey, Idaho, and considered poems "written solely for the poem's

raised in a suburb of Philadelphia. He was edu-

sake" superior to those written to convey, for

cated at Hamilton College and at the University

instance, "the precepts of Duty." His poems of Pennsylvania, where he studied languages were greatly appreciated by the French Symbol-and became lifelong friends with the poet Wil-

ists and other adherents of "pure poetry," such

liam Carlos Williams. In 1908, Pound moved to

as Dante Gabriel Rossetti, Algernon Swinburne,

London, where he met prominent artists and

and Ernest Dowson.

writers, including W. B. Yeats, for whom he worked as secretary. He also championed the careers of promising writers such as Robert Alexander Pope (1688 - 1744), pp. 596 - 638

Frost, T. S. Eliot, and James Joyce. Pound Alexander Pope was born in London, to a Catholic linen-draper and his wife. Debarred from

1924. During World War II, he made a series of university by his religion, he learned Greek, pro-Fascist and anti-Semitic radio broadcasts Latin, Italian, and French with the help of a

that culminated in an indictment for treason.

local priest. At age twelve, he contracted a form

He was adjudged mentally unfit and sentenced of tuberculosis, probably Pott's Disease, which

to St. Elizabeth's Hospital for the Criminally

left his spine weakened, his growth stunted, and

Insane, in Washington, D.C., where he

his health permanently damaged. His family remained until 1958. Upon his release, he moved to Binfield, in Windsor Forest, where at

returned to Italy. In 1912, Pound, H. D., and

age sixteen Pope composed his "Pastorals" (pub-

Richard Aldington had launched Imagism, and

lished 1709). His friend the playwright William

later, influenced by visual artists such as Wynd-

Wycherley introduced him to London literary ham Lewis, Pound moved on to Vorticism, society, and his *Essay on*

Criticism (1711) whose practitioners strove to depict dynamic attracted the attention of Joseph Addison, energies rather than represent static images. In though Pope was to leave Addison's circle for the

1920, Pound's attempts to modernize his work,

"Scriblerus Club," which included John Gay, to "make it new," while preserving the best his-Jonathan Swift, and other writers. *The Rape of*

tory had to offer, resulted in *Hugh Selwyn*

the Lock appeared in 1712, and the first volume

Mauberley, a work that anticipated Eliot's *The*

of his translation of the *Iliad* into heroic cou-

Waste Land (1922), which Pound edited mas-

plets followed in 1715. This, together with his

terfully. The crowning achievement of his career

translation of the *Odyssey* (1 7 2 5 - 2 6) , brought is his epic,

The Cantos, which he began to write him financial security,

and he moved to Twick-in earnest in 1924 but never finished

to his sat-

enham, the Jacobite rebellion having made isfaction. It is one of the principal texts of mod-Catholics no longer welcome in the city center.

ernism.

There he wrote *The Dunciad* (1728—42, revised

1743), a satire on the alleged dullness of con-

temporary culture; the wittily and wickedly satir-

E . J . Pratt (1 8 8 3 - 1 9 6 4) , pp. 1270-72

ical "Epistle to Dr. Arbuthnot" (1735); and the

E(dwin) J(ohn) Pratt was born in Western Bay,

Essay on Man, the first volume of a projected

Newfoundland, Canada. An ordained Methodist

work in four books, reflecting Pope's interest in minister, he taught and preached in several philosophical and intellectual speculation. remote communities. Pratt held degrees in philosophy and theology from Victoria College, University of Toronto. He was a staff psychologist at the college until 1919, when he joined Peter Porter (b. 1929), pp. 1786-90

Peter Porter was born in Brisbane, Australia, the English Department, where he taught until and educated at local grammar schools. He his retirement, in 1953. In 1936, he helped worked as a journalist and in the clothing indus-found, and until 1942 was an editor of, the try before, in 1951, moving to London, where *Canadian Poetry Magazine*, which launched the he worked as a clerk, a bookseller, and an advertising copywriter; he later served as a visiting lecturer at several English and Australian Matthew Prior (1664-1721), pp. 566-68

universities. During the 1950s, he was associated with the Group, a circle of poets who critiqued one another's work with the aim of Through the patronage of Lord Dorset he was achieving accessible verse. A prolific reviewer educated at Westminster School, and with a and broadcaster, he has published many volumes of poetry, including *The Last of England*

to St. John's College, Cambridge. He was secretary to the ambassador at The Hague, but

(1970), *The Cost of Seriousness* (1978), and *The Automatic Oracle* (1987), and a collection of turned Tory in Queen Anne's reign, acted as a **2 1 2 2 / BIOGRAPHIC ALSKETCHES**

secret agent, and was instrumental in bringing prison until he was executed on the old charge about the Treaty of Utrecht (1713), for which of treason.

he was imprisoned for two years after the queen's death. He never held public office A. K. Ramanujan (1929-1993), pp. 1801-again, but Tory friends prevented his ruin by

03

subscribing to a deluxe folio edition of Prior's A(ttipat) K(ishnaswami) Ramanujan was born work (1719). A gift of £ 4 , 0 0 0 from Lord Harley in Mysore, Karnataka, India, and educated at enabled him to buy Down Hall, in Essex. Prior Mysore University, Deccan College, and India-wrote in a variety of forms, including "Public ana University. From 1950 until 1958, he Panegyrics, Amorous Odes, Serious Reflections, taught English at various colleges and universi-[and] Idle Tales," and defended his enjoyment ties in India, and from 1962 until his death he of a range of verse forms thus: "He that writes taught at the University of Chicago. He was a

in Rhimes, dances in Fetters: And as his Chain respected scholar of Dravidian languages, linguistics, culture, and folklore; a gifted translator steps.”

of works in classical Tamil and medieval and modern Kannada; and an engaging poet in both English and Kannada. In addition to poetry, he Craig Raine (b. 1944), pp. 1942-45

published plays, a novel, short stories, and an Craig Raine was born in Bishop Auckland, Durham, England, and was educated at Exeter College, Oxford, where he became a lecturer. He John Crowe Ransom (1888-1974), has worked for a number of journals and for ten

years was poetry editor at Faber and Faber. A pp.1367-69 fellow of New College, Oxford, Raine has written the libretto for the opera

John Crowe Ransom was born in Pulaski, Tennessee. He was educated at Vanderbilt University and Christ Church College, Oxford. After *of the Soviet Union*, which was adapted from Boris Pasternak's novella

The Electrification

enlisting in the army during World War I, he *The Last Summer*, and

has adapted Racine's

served on the front in France. A member of the

Andromaque for the stage.

His work is characterized by arresting, inventive

Vanderbilt faculty from 1914 until 1937, he

metaphors that defamiliarize the commonplace,

spearheaded the Agrarian movement, whose

and the poet James Fenton has dubbed him and

members included the poet and novelist Robert

his followers “The Martian School,” because

Penn Warren and the poets Allen Tate and Don-

poems such as “A Martian Sends a Postcard to Davidson. The

group championed a vision of Home” have “taught us to

become strangers in

an agrarian economy based on old Southern val-

our familiar world, to release the faculty of per-

ceptions—which they saw as a corrective for an

ception.”

urban, Northern economy. Ransom later joined

the faculty of Kenyon College, where he

founded the influential *Kenyon Review* and

Sir Walter Raleigh (ca. 1552-1618),

helped spur the New Criticism, a critical school

pp. 151-58

that emphasized close textual scrutiny and

Sir Walter Raleigh was born in Devonshire, would dominate

the American literary scene for England, to a “gentle” but not

wealthy family,

several decades.

and was educated at Oriel College, Oxford. He

became a favorite of Queen Elizabeth I, whom

Henry Reed (1914-1986), *pp. 1 563-66*

he praised in many poems. He was renowned for

Henry Reed was born in Birmingham, England,

his courage as a sailor, soldier, and explorer as

and educated at Birmingham University. From

well as for his eloquence and courtly wit. 1937 to 1941, he

worked as a teacher and as a Though he lost the queen's favor

when he journalist. During World War II, he served one

seduced and married one of her maids of honor

year in the Royal Army Ordnance Corps and

in 1592, she nonetheless gave him a royal patent

three as a cryptographer in the department of

to pursue an ill-fated search for gold in Guiana

Naval Intelligence. In 1945, he went to work as

in 1595. Earlier, he had directed the coloniza-

a broadcaster, journalist, and playwright for the

tion of Virginia, which he had named after his

B B C , where his coworkers included the poets

queen; he introduced tobacco from the colony

W. H. Auden, Louis MacNeice, and Dylan

to England. After Elizabeth died, the new king,

Thomas. He later taught at the University of

James, had Raleigh imprisoned in the Tower of

Washington in Seattle. His reputation as a poet

London on a questionable charge of treason.

rests almost exclusively on the five-part "Lessons

There he began his history of the world—which

of the War," which may be the most antholo-

was to have been dedicated to his supporter, gized poem of World War II. He also wrote some Henry, the prince of Wales. But Henry died in

famously funny radio plays.

1612 and Raleigh never finished the *History*.

Although he was briefly released to pursue a sec-

Adrienne Rich (b. 1929), *pp. 1791-1801*

ond (and equally unsuccessful) search for gold

Adrienne Rich was born in Baltimore, Mary-

in Guiana, he spent most of his later years in

land, and educated at Radcliffe College. Her

BIOGRAPHICALSKETCHES / 2 1 2 3

first book of poems, *A Change of World* (1951), Although he is considered a precursor of the was selected by W. H. Auden for the Yale Series

“Confessional” poets, his work is also visionary

of Younger Poets. She has taught at, among and imbued with nature.

other schools, Rutgers University and Stanford

University, and now lives in California. A prolific

Isaac Rosenberg (1890-1918), *pp. 1373-*

writer, Rich has published numerous collections

76

of poetry (including *Collected Early Poems* Isaac Rosenberg was born in Bristol, England, 1950—1970, *The Fact of a Doorframe: Selected* and raised in the East End of London. He *Poems 1950—2001*, and *The School among the* attended elementary schools until age fourteen, *Ruins: Poems 2000—2004*), in which her work when he became apprenticed as an engraver in has evolved from closed forms to a poetics of a firm of art publishers and attended evening change, rooted in a

radical imagination and pol-classes in the Art School of Birkbeck College.

itics. In prose works such as *What Is Found* His first ambition was to be a painter, and in *There: Notebooks on Poetry and Politics* (1993, 1911, when his apprenticeship ended, a group new edition 2 0 0 3) and *Arts of the Possible: Essays*

of three Jewish women provided the means for
and Conversations (2001), she combines auto-

him to study at the Slade School of Art. His

biography, history, and politics. In 2004, she interest in writing poetry developed steadily, and edited Muriel Rukeyser's *Selected Poems* for the

with the encouragement of his married sister he
Library of America.

circulated copies of his poems among members
of London's literary set and gained a certain rep-
Edwin Arlington Robinson (1869-1935),
utation, though neither his poetry nor his paint-
pp. 1212-16

ing won him material success. In 1914,
Edwin Arlington Robinson was born in Head
Rosenberg went to South Africa for his health
Tide, Maine, and raised in Gardiner, Maine, the
and lived there with another of his sisters. He
model for "Tilbury Town," the setting of many
returned to England in 1915, enlisted in the
of his poems. He attended Harvard University,
army, and was killed in action on April 1, 1918.
but was able to afford only two years. In 1896,
Initially buried in an unmarked grave, his

Robinson moved to New York City, where he remains were discovered in 1926 and reinterred worked as a subway-construction inspector and in a Flanders cemetery.

in the Customs House. In 1910, despite financial difficulties, he devoted himself full-time to Christina Rossetti (1830-1894), pp. 1128- writing poetry. Robinson's early work received 34

little recognition; fame came to him late, with Christina Rossetti, sister of the poet and Pre- the publication of *The Town Down the River* Raphaelite painter Dante Gabriel Rossetti, was (1910) and *The Man against the Sky* (1916). By born in London. Except for two brief trips the time of his death, he was one of the most abroad, she lived with her mother (who edu- acclaimed poets in America, having won the cated her) all her life. A committed High Angli-Pulitzer Prize three times. Although he wrote

can, she was deeply influenced by the lyric poems, dramatic monologues, and, later, Tractarian, or Oxford, movement. Her first long blank-verse narratives (such as his trilogy poems were published pseudonymously in the of verse novels based on Arthurian legend), he first issue of *The Germ*, in 1850, and her first is best-remembered for his wry poems on fic- major collection, *Goblin Market and Other* tional New England characters.

Poems, was published in 1866. The last collec- tion published during her lifetime was the

Theodore Roethke (1908-1963), pp. 1493-1502
devout *The Face of the Deep: A Devotional Commentary on the Apocalypse* (1892).

Theodore Roethke was born and raised in Saginaw, Michigan, where his German grandfather, Dante Gabriel Rossetti (1828-1882), his uncle, and his father operated greenhouses, pp. 1102-07

which would figure prominently in Roethke's work. Roethke was educated at the University of Michigan and, briefly, Harvard University. In 1935, he was hospitalized for the first of several mental breakdowns. From 1947 until his death, he taught at the University of Washington, where his students included the poets Richard

man Hunt, he formed the short-lived but influential Pre-Raphaelite Brotherhood. During the 1850s, Rossetti moved away from the naturalism of the Pre-Raphaelites toward aestheticism. He

mentary on the *Apocalypse* (1892).
Theodore Roethke was born and raised in Saginaw, Michigan, where his German grandfather, Dante Gabriel Rossetti (1828-1882), his uncle, and his father operated greenhouses, pp. 1102-07
which would figure prominently in Roethke's work. Roethke was educated at the University of Michigan and, briefly, Harvard University. In 1935, he was hospitalized for the first of several mental breakdowns. From 1947 until his death, he taught at the University of Washington, where his students included the poets Richard

man Hunt, he formed the short-lived but influential Pre-Raphaelite Brotherhood. During the 1850s, Rossetti moved away from the naturalism of the Pre-Raphaelites toward aestheticism. He

Lost Son and Other Poems (1948). According to joined a coterie of unconventional thinkers—

Roethke, these poems trace the spiritual and including the designer and poet William Morris, personal history “of a protagonist (not ‘I’ person- the painter and designer Edward Burne-Jones, ally but of all haunted and harried men).” and the poet Algernon Swinburne—whose work **2 1 2 4 / B I O G R A P H I C A L S K E T C H E S**

set a new standard of taste and thinking and Siegfried Sassoon (1886-1967), *pp. 1317-* influenced the Aesthetes and Decadents of the *20*

next generation, including the writers Walter Siegfried Sassoon was born in Kent, England, Pater and Oscar Wilde.

and attended Clare College, Cambridge. For several years, he divided his time between Lon- Muriel Rukeyser (1913-1980), *pp. 1537-* don, where he moved in fashionable literary circles, and his family’s country estate, where he *39*

Muriel Rukeyser was born in New York City. lived as a leisured Edwardian gentleman. At the She attended Vassar College—where she, the outbreak of World War I, he enlisted and went poet Elizabeth Bishop, and the novelist Mary

to the front with the Royal Welch Fusiliers.

McCarthy founded the

Known as ” M a d Jack” for his acts of reckless

Student Review—and

Columbia University. Her first book of poems, *Theory of Flight* (1935), used imagery from her studies at Roosevelt Aviation School. She taught being “deliberately prolonged by those who have writing at the California Labor School in Berkeley, California, and later at Sarah Lawrence College the Craiglockhart War Hospital (authorities claimed he was suffering from “shell shock”), biographies of the mathematicians Willard where he befriended the poet Wilfred Owen.

Gibbs and Thomas Harriot and Republican pres-

Although Edward Marsh included some of Sassendential candidate Wendell Willkie, collections soon’s early work in his anthologies of Georgian

of literary criticism, and children’s books. She poetry, these poems bear little resemblance to also translated the work of Gunnar Ekelof, Ber-the fierce war poems of *The Old Huntsman*

toolt Brecht, and Octavio Paz. Social and political (1917) and *Counter Attack* (1918). A prolific issues were her primary concern, and her phrase diarist, he wrote seven volumes of (sometimes “no more masks!” became a rallying cry for fictionalized) autobiography. He was received

inists, including the poets Adrienne Rich and into the Roman Catholic Church in 1957 and Anne Sexton.

regarded himself at the end of his life as above all a religious poet.

Carl Sandburg (1878-1967), pp. 1252-53

Gjertrud Schnackenberg (b. 1953),

Carl Sandburg was born in Galesburg, Illinois. pp. 2000-2005

He left school after the eighth grade, but later

Gjertrud Schnackenberg was born in Tacoma,

attended Lombard College. His first collection

Washington. She attended Mount Holyoke Col-

of poetry, *Chicago Poems*, was published in lege and earned early admiration for her writing.

1914 and was followed by several highly She has traveled extensively, has lived in Rome, acclaimed and immensely popular volumes, and currently resides in Boston. A highly allusive including *Cornhuskers* (1918), which docu-poet, Schnackenberg fuses her personal history

ments Sandburg's war experience, *Smoke and* with that of Dante in her book *A Gilded Lapse Steel* (1920), and the book-length poem *The of Time* (1992) and revisits the myth of Oedipus *People, Yes* (1936). Sandburg was a leading fig-in her book-length poem *The Throne of Labda-*

ure in the Chicago Renaissance, along with the

cus (2000).

architect Frank Lloyd Wright, the novelist Theodore Dreiser, and the poets Vachel Lindsay and

James Schuyler (1923-1991), pp. 1683-84

Edgar Lee Masters. In the 1930s, Sandburg

became active in the Socialist movement. He James Schuyler was born in Chicago and raised devoted thirty years to the study of Abraham

in Washington, D.C., and western New York

Lincoln and traveled the country in search of

State. He was educated at Bethany College.

folk songs and ballads, which he collected as

After living in Italy during the 1950s, he settled

in New York City. Like the poet Frank O'Hara,

The American Songbag (1927). He also wrote

novels and children's stories.

Schuyler worked at the Museum of Modern Art,

served on the editorial board of *Art News*, and

was deeply influenced by the practices of avant-

Robyn Sarah (b. 1949), pp. 1956-58

garde artists. In addition to poetry, he wrote

Robyn Sarah was born in New York City, to three novels, all of them comedies of manners.

Canadian parents, and grew up in Montreal.

She has a degree in music from the Conserva-

Vikram Seth (b. 1952), pp. 1994-96

toire de Musique et d'Art Dramatique du Que-

Vikram Seth was born in Calcutta, India, and

bec and in philosophy from McGill University.

educated at Corpus Christi College, Oxford;

Cofounder, with Fred Louder, of the literary Stanford University; and Nanjing University.

press Villeneuve Publications, she has taught His first volume of poems, *Mappings*, appeared English at Champlain Regional College for over

in 1980, and his 1985 collection, *The Humble* twenty years. An essayist and reviewer, she has *Administrator's Garden*, won the Commonwealth Poetry Prize (Asia). He published his first well as of poetry. She lives in Montreal.

novel, *The Golden Gate*, in 1986, but it was his

BIOGRAPHICAL SKETCHES / 2125

epic, award-winning *A Suitable Boy* (1993) that around 1610, and during his later years he brought him international fame.

That was fol-worked mainly in the genres of romance and

lowed by *An Equal Music* in 1999. A prolific

tragicomedy. When he died, no collected edition

reviewer, he has also written a travel book, *From*

of his works had been published; the First Folio,

Heaven Lake: Travels through Sinkiang and a collection of his plays (but not his narrative *Tibet*; a series of animal stories in verse for chil-poems or sonnets), appeared in 1623.

dren, *Beastly Tales from Here and There*; and an

opera libretto, *Arion and the Dolphin*, which was

Percy Bysshe Shelley (1792-1822),

performed at the English National Opera in pp. 863 - 93

1994.

Percy Bysshe Shelley was born near Horsham,

Sussex, to a well-to-do, conservative family. In

Anne Sexton (1928-1974), pp. 1764-65

1810, he went to University College, Oxford, but

Anne Sexton was born in Newton, Massachu-

was expelled in his first year for refusing to

setts, and attended Garland Junior College. Following the birth of her first child, in 1951, she with a classmate. He married a schoolgirl the suffered the first in a series of mental breakdowns, which culminated in her suicide, in where he worked for a number of social causes 1974. Sexton began writing poetry in earnest in 1957. She studied under Robert Lowell and social philosopher William Godwin. Shelley fell in love with Godwin's daughter, Mary Wollstonecraft Godwin (author of the novel *Frankenstein*), and eloped to Europe with her. Byron joined them in Switzerland in 1816 and followed high schools, at mental institutions, and at colleges and universities (including Harvard, Oberlin, and Boston), she coauthored three children's books with Kumin. Sexton is often considered a prime example of what came to be called the Confessional school of poetry, friends did not reflect public opinion at large, although she also wrote nonautobiographical poems, based on legend and fairy tale.

philosophical ideas and his unorthodox lifestyle, Shelley had few admirers in his lifetime. An avid William Shakespeare (1564-1616), student of H u m e and Plato, he was deeply influenced by skeptical empiricism and idealism; he *pp. 257 - 77*

We know less about Shakespeare's life than we know about that of almost any other major English writer. He was born the third of eight

children in Stratford-on-Avon. His father, John, held fast to his faith in the redeeming powers of love and the imagination.

was a maker of gloves who became an alderman and a bailiff before suffering financial troubles. J a m e s Shirley (1 5 9 6 - 1 6 6 6) , *pp. 390 - 91*

Shakespeare's mother, Mary Arden, was the daughter of a rich farmer and brought land to

cated at Merchant Taylors' School. He went on

the marriage. Shakespeare probably attended to St. John's College, Oxford, and St. Catherine's Stratford grammar school, but received no

education at Merchant Taylors' School. He went on to receive a university education and was referred to as an

ecclesiastical clergy, he served in St. Alban's and taught

“upstart crow” by one of the better-educated at the town's grammar school from 1623 until

“university wits” when he arrived in London, in

1625, but lost his position there when he converted to Catholicism in 1624—25. Returning to London, he began a career as a dramatist with Anne Hathaway; they had a daughter in 1583 *The School of Compliment* (later, *Love Tricks*; and twins, Judith and Hamnet, in 1585. For 1625). This was the first of thirty-six plays he most of his career, he was an actor and share-wrote, many for the Cockpit Theatre, until 1640, when he succeeded Phillip Massinger as principal playwright of the most successful theatrical company of his time. He principle dramatist for the King's Men. Shirley's quickly gained a reputation as "the most excellent" English dramatist in both comedy and tragedy in the style of (Francis) Beaumont and (John) Fletcher, and dramatized patriotic debates such as *The Contention of Ajax and Ulysses for the Armour of Achilles* (1658), but Shirley also composed masques such as *The Triumph of Peace*, rapid succession his tragic masterpieces *Hamlet*, commissioned by the Inns of Court in 1634, and *Othello*, *King Lear*, *Macbeth*, and *Antony and Cleopatra*. He apparently retired to Stratford fortunate in finding employment as a school-

2126 / BIOGRAPHICAL SKETCHES

teacher during Oliver Cromwell's Commonwealth, but his luck did not long outlast it; he

died of exposure during the Great Fire of London. Philip Sidney was born at Penshurst, in Kent,

England, to an aristocratic family that included among its poets Sidney's brother Robert, his sister Mary, and his niece, Mary Wroth. His

Jane Shore (b. 1947), pp. 1952-54

mother, also Mary, was the sister of Queen Elizabeth I's

Jane Shore was born in Newark, New Jersey, sometime favorite, Robert Dudley, earl and educated at Goddard College and the University of Leicester, and his father, Sir Henry, had

served the queen as lord deputy of Ireland. After

Radcliffe Institute from 1971 until 1973. During

attending Shrewsbury School with his friend in the mid-1970s, she taught at Harvard Uni-

(and later, biographer) Fulke Greville, Sidney

Spenser—where one of her colleagues was the spent time at Oxford and Cambridge. From poet Elizabeth Bishop, a clear influence on 1572 until 1575, he traveled in Europe, during Shore—and she now teaches at George Washington University, which time he established a firm friendship with

University of Cambridge. The author of four volumes

Hubert Langue, who encouraged his zealous

of poetry, among them *Happy Family* (1999), Protestantism. When in 1580 Queen Elizabeth she lives in Washington, D.C., and in Vermont.

considered marrying a French Catholic, Sidney criticized the idea in a letter and was consequently banished from court. He spent his

Mary Sidney (1561-1621), pp. 225-30

enforced "idleness" composing poetry; his

Mary Sidney was the third of eleven children

famous work of literary criticism, the *Defense of*

born to Sir Henry Sidney and his wife, Mary. *Poesy*; and two versions of his pastoral romance, *Well-educated at home*,

Mary became proficient

the *Arcadia*, which was dedicated to his sister

in Latin as well as in French and Italian; Mary and which she published after his death between 1575 and 1577, she acquired a courtly

in a widely read version that conflates his first education by serving, as her mother had before

text, the *Old Arcadia*, with his unfinished revi-

her, as a lady-in-waiting to Queen Elizabeth I.

sion, the *New Arcadia*. Legendary in life and

In 1577, she married Henry Herbert, the second

death as the quintessential Elizabethan gentle-

earl of Pembroke. As a patron of letters and man, Sidney was in reality more marked by the inspiration to poets ranging from Edmund Spen-

"great expectation" he mentions in one of his ser to Isabella Whitney, Mary Sidney Herbert sonnets than by political or romantic success.

made her country estate, Wilton, into an intellectual center. His *Astrophil and Stella*, the first great sonnet sequence in English—like his other poetic brother, Philip, probably wrote his *Defense of Poesy* there along with portions of his *Arcadia*, published until after his death—uses (and revises) the second version of which was unfinished Petrarchan conventions to record various experiences of unfulfilled desire. These include, but first version to his sister, and in 1590 she published a composite version of the two texts, an enormous work known as *The Countess of Pembroke's Arcadia*. Sharing with Although she was briefly engaged to Sidney, in her brother a hope that England would become

1581 she married Lord Robert Rich; Sidney was a defender of Protestantism in Europe, Mary married to Frances, daughter of the powerful worked after his death to complete a series of

courtier Sir Francis Walsingham, in 1583, the verse translations of the Psalms that he had same year he was knighted. Sidney was granted begun; having revised the forty-three psalms

a chance to fight for Protestantism in the Low that he had finished, she composed another 107

Countries after being made governor of Flush-
in a wide variety of meters and forms. Mary ing (an English
possession in the Low Coun-articulated some of her own
religious beliefs not
tries) in 1586. He died of gangrene from a
only in her versions of the Psalms but also in her
wound in the leg.
translation of Du Plessis Mornay's *Discourse of
Life and Death* and in her rendering, in terza
Charles Simic (b. 1938), pp. 1891-93
rima, of Petrarch's *Triumph of Death*. In 1591,
she published her
Charles Simic was born in the former Yugoslavia
Antonie, a translation of a
French play by Robert Gamier. Her original and raised there
during the Nazi occupation. At verse often appears under the
"handmaidenly" age eleven, he emigrated to the United States
cloak of translation and even, perhaps, under with his family.
Simic was educated at the Uni-others' names: some critics
have argued for her
versity of Chicago and New York University.
authorship of the "Lay of Clorinda" long attrib-
Besides serving in the United States Army, he
uted to Spenser and published in
has worked as a bookkeeper, an accountant, a
Astrophil, the
elegy for Philip Sidney that Spenser dedicated
house painter, and a salesman. Since then, he
to Mary.
has taught at California State College and the

University of New Hampshire. In addition to
BIOGRAPHICAL SKETCHES / 2127

many volumes of poetry, he has published sev-

Christopher Smart (1722-1771), *pp.* 678-

eral collections of essays and has translated a

86

number of European poets into English. His Christopher Smart
was born in Kent, England, poems' mystery and sense of
danger derive in

and educated in Durham and at Pembroke Col-

lege, Cambridge, where he became a fellow. He

from the tragic events of the past century, espe-

was a brilliant classical scholar, but began to

cially World War II.

exhibit symptoms of obsessive behavior, includ-

ing a compulsion to public prayer. After moving

to London in 1749, he won prizes for poetry, but

L. E. S i s s m a n (1 9 2 8 - 1 9 7 6) , *pp.* 1766-68

his illness worsened, and he was several times

L(ouis) E(dward) Sissman was raised in Detroit,

committed to the lunatics' ward at St. Luke's

Michigan. After graduation from Harvard Uni-

Hospital, where he divided his time between

versity, he held a series of odd jobs: shelving writing,

gardening, and his cat, Jeffry. In 1758, books in a library,

editing copy in a New York

he was transferred to a private institution at

publishing house, working on John F. Kennedy's

Bethnal Green. Released in 1763, he declined first Senate campaign, and selling vacuum into poverty, and in 1770 was remanded to the cleaners and Fuller brushes. In 1956, he began

King's Bench debtor's prison, where he died.

a successful career in advertising. In 1958, after William Butler Yeats regarded Smart's *A Song to*

a ten-year hiatus, he began to write poetry in

David as the inaugural poem of the Romantic

earnest, and he published prolifically from that

period. Smart's other well-known work, *Jubilate*

time until his death, from Hodgkins' disease. In

Agno, which he referred to as his "Magnificat,"

addition, he wrote regularly for *The Atlantic* was, like *A Song to David*, composed during *Monthly*. He lived in Boston nearly all his adult

Smart's confinement, but was unpublished until life. Although his illness was a primary subject, 1939.

Sissman treated personal material with irony, urbanity, wit, and grim cheer.

Charlotte Smith (1749-1806), pp. 711-15

Charlotte Smith (nee Turner) was born in London and brought up on her family's estates: Big-nor Park, Sussex, and Stoke Place, Surrey.

John Skelton (1460-1529), pp. 90-97

Raised by her maternal aunt after the death of Skelton often referred to himself as "poet laure mother in childbirth in 1753, she began

reate,” a title conferred on him by the universi-
writing poems at age six. Educated at schools in
ties of Oxford and Cambridge in 1490 and 1493,
Sussex and London, she married, at age fifteen,
respectively. Trained in Latin and in rhetoric, he
Benjamin Smith, the son of a wealthy merchant
was ordained a priest and subsequently served
in the West Indies trade. They had twelve chil-
as a tutor for the future king Henry VIII. After
dren, one of whom died in infancy and two of
writing a satire on court life, *The Bowge of* whom died in
childhood. Benjamin was impris-Court, in 1498, he became
rector of the parish

oned for debt in 1783, and Charlotte shared
church of Diss, a town in Norfolk. While at Diss
some of the eight-month sentence with him. On
(from approximately 1502 until 1511), Skelton
his release, the family fled to France to escape
apparently kept a mistress and fathered chil-
creditors. Charlotte’s first collection, *Elegiac*
dren; he also wrote his comic lament “Phillip
Sonnets and Other Essays, was published in
Sparow” and “Ware the Hawk,” which 1784, went through
numerous editions, and was denounces the actions of a
neighboring priest

translated into French and Italian. While in
who pursued his quarry, a hawk, into the sanc-
France, she translated Antoine-Fran[^]ois Pre-
tified space of Skelton’s church. Both in its vost’s *Manon*
Lescaut, which she published in (highly original) form and in

some of its content,
1785 but subsequently withdrew over accusa-
this poem anticipates Skelton's later attacks on
tions of plagiarism. The Smiths separated when
Henry VIII's chancellor, Cardinal Wolsey; Wol-
they returned to England, and Charlotte become
sey's desecration of monastic spaces are the a prolific writer,
publishing three collections of object of Skelton's comic
invective in long poetry, six children's books, and ten novels,
poems such as *Speak Parrot*, *Why Come Ye Not*
including *The Old Manor House* (1793), which
to Court, and *Colin Clout*, all from the early was admired by
Sir Walter Scott. Continual lit-1520s, when Skelton was living
at the Abbey of
igation over her father-in-law's estate as well as
Westminster, protected by the laws of sanctuary
family sorrow and misfortune plagued her all her
from Wolsey's (and perhaps also the king's) life. Benjamin
Smith predeceased Charlotte by anger. Skelton also wrote *The*
Turning of eight months, dying in a Scottish debtors'
Eleanor Rummie, a satiric portrait of an ale-
prison. A posthumous collection of her work,
wife; a morality play, *Magnificence*; and a num-
Beachy Head; with Other Poems, was published
ber of short lyrics including the ironic song in 1807.
"Mannerly Margery Milk and Ale." The "Skel-
tonic" style that he invented typically blends
Stevie Smith (1902-1971), pp. 1439-43
high and low diction in short rhymed lines con-
Stevie Smith was born Florence Margaret Smith

taining from two to five beats.

in Yorkshire, England. She was raised by an aunt

2128 / BIOGRAPHICAL SKETCHES

in the north London suburb of Palmers Green

Irvine (from which he earned an M.F.A.), he

and lived there for the rest of her life. A secretary

taught at San Diego State University and the

in the magazine publishing house of Newnes,

University of Cincinnati before settling at the

Pearson, Ltd for thirty years, she retired in 1953

University of California at Berkeley from 1979

following a severe breakdown and devoted the

to 1996. In addition to poetry, he has published

rest of her life to writing. Her first volume of

a memoir, books for children, and a collection

poetry, *A Good Time Was Had by All*, was pub-

of essays on poetry, and he has edited a book of

lished in 1937 and was accompanied by her own

recollections and stories about California.

comic illustrations. This was followed by six

more collections and three novels. She was Robert Southwell

(ca. 1561-1595), awarded the Queen's Gold Medal for Poetry

in

pp. 223-24

1969.

Robert Southwell was born in Harsham, Nor-

wich, England, to a Roman Catholic family, and

W. D. Snodgrass (b. 1926), *pp. 1731-34*

was educated at the Jesuit School in Douai,

W(illiam) D(eWitt) Snodgrass was born in Wil-
France, accepted for the Jesuit novitiate in
kinsburg, Pennsylvania, and raised in Beaver Rome, and
ordained in 1585. Despite the law of Falls, Pennsylvania,
where he began undergrad-1584 forbidding English-born
subjects who had
uate studies at Geneva College before entering
taken Catholic orders since the queen's acces-
the navy. He served in the Pacific during the last
sion to remain in England longer than forty days,
months of World War II. He later studied at the
on pain of death, Southwell returned to England
University of Iowa, where he attended Robert
to minister to Catholics in 1586. In 1589, he
Lowell's poetry workshops. Snodgrass has held
became chaplain to Ann Howard, countess of
teaching appointments at a number of univer-
Arundel, whose husband had been imprisoned,
sities, including Cornell, Rochester, Wayne and to whom
Southwell addressed his *Epistle of State*, Syracuse, Old
Dominion, and Delaware.

Comfort. In 1592, Southwell was arrested while
In 1959, he published *Heart's Needle*, a revolu-
saying Mass, tortured, imprisoned in the Tower,
tionary work credited, along with Robert Low-
and finally executed. He was beatified as a mar-
ell's *Life Studies* (published the same year), with
tyr in 1929 and canonized in 1970. He wrote
spawning the so-called Confessional school of
religious prose and verse in both Latin and

at University College, Ibadan, and Leeds Uni-

Buddhism. Upon his return to the United States, he has taught at the Universities of States, he settled in a remote community in the

Lagos, Ibadan, and Ife, and lectured all over the Sierra Nevadas. He taught at the University of world. In the late 1950s, he worked as a reporter California at Davis from 1966 until his retirement for the B B C . From August 1967 to October 1969, he was imprisoned as a political prisoner by the Federal Military Government of Nigeria.

like sharp blows on the mind,” he arranges An exceptionally prolific writer, Soyinka has

“tough, simple, short words” into abbreviated published poetry, novels, autobiography, critical lines. He has translated from ancient and modern essays, an anthology of African poetry, and

ern Japanese and wrote a memoir in the Japanese form of a poetry-and-prose travel journal. He was founding director of Masks Theatre, the Orison Theatre, and the Guerrilla

Gary Soto (b. 1952), *pp. 1996-97*

Theatre Unit of the University of Ife. He was awarded the 1986 Nobel Prize for Literature.

has worked as a field hand and in a tire factory, and he often writes about working-class Mexi-

Stephen Spender (1909-1995), pp. 1505-

can Americans. Educated at California State 07

University, Fresno (where he studied with Philip

Stephen Spender was born in London and

Levine), and the University of California at attended

University College, Oxford, where he **B I O G R A P H I C A
L S K E T C H E S / 2 1 2 9**

became friends with the writers W. H. Auden,

belief that the queen was mismanaging affairs

Christopher Isherwood, and Louis MacNeice, in Ireland may
have contributed to the some-with whom he shared an interest
in left-wing times critical ways in which he represented her
politics. In 1937, he joined the British Comin *The Faerie
Queene*. Elizabeth was the name

munist Party and traveled to Spain to write prop-

not only of the queen whom he “shadowed,” but

aganda for the Spanish Republicans’ fight

also of his wife; she is figured in his sonnet

against Fascism, but soon grew to feel that Com-

sequence *Amoretti* and also in his two marriage

munism was intolerant of individual vision and

poems, *Epithalamion* and *Prothalamion*.

freedom of expression. In the 1930s, he, Auden,

MacNeice, and Cecil Day Lewis were dubbed

G e r t r u d e S t e i n (1 8 7 4 - 1 9 4 6) , pp. 1248-50

by critics the “Pylon” school, after Spender’s

Gertrude Stein was born in Allegheny, Pennsyl-

poem “The Pylons,” for their conspicuous use of

vania, and raised in Oakland, California. She

industrial imagery. During World War II, he was educated at Radcliffe College, where she served with the Fire Service and in the Foreign

studied with the psychologist and philosopher

Office. From 1945 to 1947, he was literary William James (whose theories about conscious-counselor to U N E S C O , and for the next twenty-

ness influenced her deeply) and at Johns Hop-

five years he traveled and lectured in the United

kings University, where she studied medicine. In

States. He was coeditor of the journals *Horizon*

1902, she and her brother, Leo, moved to Paris

and *Encounter*. In addition to writing his own and established a salon that attracted the most poetry, he translated from Spanish, German, prominent avant-garde artists of the day, includ-and Greek. He was knighted in 1983.

ing Pablo Picasso, Georges Braque, and Henri

Matisse. In 1907, she began a relationship with

Edmund Spenser (1552-1599), pp. 159-

Alice B. Toklas (which led to Stein's wryly titled

and popular *Autobiography of Alice B. Toklas*),

205

and, apart from Stein's very successful lecture

Edmund Spenser was born in London, to a fam-

tour of the United States in 1934, they resided

ily of modest circumstances, and educated at the

permanently in France. Stein's work—in prose,

Merchant Taylors' School. After studying as a poetry, drama, and autobiography—was highly

“poor scholar” at Cambridge, Spenser served as

experimental (she was called “the M a m a of secretary to several prominent men, including Dada”). Her reputation as a stylist and arbiter of the powerful earl of Leicester, uncle of Spenser, great in her day, has continued to grow. Spenser’s friend Sir Philip Sidney. In 1580, he was appointed secretary to the lord governor of Ireland, whose job it was to defend the English settlement there against the Irish “rebels” who Wallace Stevens was born and raised in Read-objection to English rule of their land. Spenser

Wallace Stevens (1879-1955), pp. 1256-69

ing, Pennsylvania. After attending Harvard University for three years, Stevens moved to New York City, where he went to law school, worked in a number of law firms, and associated with prominent artists, including the poets William Carlos Williams and Marianne Moore. In 1916, national poet of England, and he consciously he went to work for the Hartford Accident and modeled his career on that of Virgil, the great poet of imperial Rome. Like Virgil, Spenser remained in Ireland, as civil servant, settler, and

landholder, for the rest of his life, and in 1596 York City, where he went to law school, worked in a number of law firms, and associated with prominent artists, including the poets William Carlos Williams and Marianne Moore. In 1916, national poet of England, and he consciously he went to work for the Hartford Accident and modeled his career on that of Virgil, the great poet of imperial Rome. Like Virgil, Spenser remained in Ireland, as civil servant, settler, and

landholder, for the rest of his life, and in 1596 York City, where he went to law school, worked in a number of law firms, and associated with prominent artists, including the poets William Carlos Williams and Marianne Moore. In 1916, national poet of England, and he consciously he went to work for the Hartford Accident and modeled his career on that of Virgil, the great poet of imperial Rome. Like Virgil, Spenser remained in Ireland, as civil servant, settler, and

landholder, for the rest of his life, and in 1596 York City, where he went to law school, worked in a number of law firms, and associated with prominent artists, including the poets William Carlos Williams and Marianne Moore. In 1916, national poet of England, and he consciously he went to work for the Hartford Accident and modeled his career on that of Virgil, the great poet of imperial Rome. Like Virgil, Spenser remained in Ireland, as civil servant, settler, and

landholder, for the rest of his life, and in 1596 York City, where he went to law school, worked in a number of law firms, and associated with prominent artists, including the poets William Carlos Williams and Marianne Moore. In 1916, national poet of England, and he consciously he went to work for the Hartford Accident and modeled his career on that of Virgil, the great poet of imperial Rome. Like Virgil, Spenser remained in Ireland, as civil servant, settler, and

landholder, for the rest of his life, and in 1596 York City, where he went to law school, worked in a number of law firms, and associated with prominent artists, including the poets William Carlos Williams and Marianne Moore. In 1916, national poet of England, and he consciously he went to work for the Hartford Accident and modeled his career on that of Virgil, the great poet of imperial Rome. Like Virgil, Spenser remained in Ireland, as civil servant, settler, and

landholder, for the rest of his life, and in 1596 York City, where he went to law school, worked in a number of law firms, and associated with prominent artists, including the poets William Carlos Williams and Marianne Moore. In 1916, national poet of England, and he consciously he went to work for the Hartford Accident and modeled his career on that of Virgil, the great poet of imperial Rome. Like Virgil, Spenser remained in Ireland, as civil servant, settler, and

landholder, for the rest of his life, and in 1596 York City, where he went to law school, worked in a number of law firms, and associated with prominent artists, including the poets William Carlos Williams and Marianne Moore. In 1916, national poet of England, and he consciously he went to work for the Hartford Accident and modeled his career on that of Virgil, the great poet of imperial Rome. Like Virgil, Spenser remained in Ireland, as civil servant, settler, and

landholder, for the rest of his life, and in 1596 York City, where he went to law school, worked in a number of law firms, and associated with prominent artists, including the poets William Carlos Williams and Marianne Moore. In 1916, national poet of England, and he consciously he went to work for the Hartford Accident and modeled his career on that of Virgil, the great poet of imperial Rome. Like Virgil, Spenser remained in Ireland, as civil servant, settler, and

tially wrote in the mode of pastoral, publishing president in 1934. His quiet life, in an upper- in 1591 his *Shepherd's Calendar*. Chaucer was class neighborhood in Hartford, Connecticut, another of Spenser's main sources of inspiration seemed in sharp contrast with the cosmopolitanism and vitality of his poems. Both sensuous Ariosto and Torquato Tasso. Ariosto's *Orlando* and philosophical, Stevens's work continues to *Furioso* (1516) provided, in its blending of epic be hugely influential. His first book, *Harmonium* (1923), is considered one of the major important model for Spenser's *The Faerie* debuts in American poetry. His work of the *Queene*. That poem's first three books, published in 1590, were well received, and in 1596 abstract, included the long poem "Notes toward Spenser republished the poem with three additions: a Supreme Fiction." Poetry was the supreme fictional completed books and a portion of a section, as he also wrote in his important prose work *The Necessary Angel* (1951).

of the poem he described, in a prefatory letter to Walter Raleigh, as designed to fashion a gentleman by illustrating twelve moral virtues in Anne Stevenson (b. 1933), pp. 1841-49

was born in Cambridge, twelve books. He received a modest royal pen-England, to American parents, and raised in the

sion after the first three books of *The Faerie* United States, primarily in Cambridge, Massa-Queene were published, but he never received a

chusetts, and New Haven, Connecticut. She post at court nor the royal recognition he had was educated at the University of Michigan, hoped for. His disappointed expectations and his where she studied with the poet Donald Hall. In

2130 / BIOGRAPHICAL SKETCHES

the early 1950s, she worked as a schoolteacher, committed suicide by drinking poison. Like

and in 1956 settled in England, where she other “Cavalier” poets who supported the cause taught at a number of institutions and held sev-of Charles Stuart, Suckling embodied the

eral fellowships. She was the founder of the courtly quality of *sprezzatura*, in which the most Poetry Bookshop at Hay-on-Wye, Wales. Her highly refined and polished style is disguised as publications include a study of Elizabeth effortless effusion. His literary reputation was Bishop, a biography of Sylvia Plath, and several

established by 1637, when his satirical mock-radio plays. Her best-known collection, *Correballad The Wits (or Sessions of the Poets)* was *spondences*, is a sequence of epistolary poems sung before King Charles I. The next year, his interspersed with journal entries recounting her tragedy *Aglaoura* proved a theatrical success. family history.

Poems such as “Song” (“Why so pale and wan, fond lover?”) and “A Ballad upon a Wedding” are

Trumbull Stickney (1874-1904), pp. 1250-
collected in *Fragmenta Aurea* (1646).

52

Trumbull Stickney was born in Geneva, Swit-

May Swenson (1913 - 1989), pp. 1540-43

zerland, and spent his early years abroad. He May Swenson
was born in Logan, Utah, to a was educated by his father, a
Classics scholar,

Mormon family. After graduation from Utah
until he entered Harvard University, and he later
State University, she moved to New York and
became the first American to earn a Ph.D. at the
worked with the Writers' Project of the Works
Sorbonne. He taught Greek at Harvard Univer-
Progress Administration. From 1956 until 1966,
sity for one year, then died suddenly, of a brain
she was an editor at New Directions Press. In
tumor. Although during his lifetime he pub-
addition, she was a visiting professor at many
lished only one book, *Dramatic Verses* (1902), colleges and
universities. She translated from he left much work in
manuscript, and the poet

the Swedish, most notably the poems of Tomas

William Vaughn Moody, a friend of Stickney Transtromer. Her
high-spirited poetry, like that from Harvard, helped assemble a
posthumous

of her friend Elizabeth Bishop, is marked by a
collection.

keen interest in the natural world.

Mark Strand (b. 1934), pp. 1863-65

lections is his book-length poem *Dark Harbor* appointed dean of St. Patrick's Cathedral in (1993), which obliquely recounts a journey of

1713. Despite his staunch conservatism, he
the mind through memory and into the afterlife.

became an ardent champion of Irish resistance

In 1990—91, he was poet laureate of the United
to English oppression. Best-known for *Gulliver's*
States.

Travels (1726), the only piece of writing for
which he was paid, he was a prolific author of

Sir John Suckling (1609-1642), *pp.* 452-
poetry, prose, pamphlets, letters, dialogues, and
58

satires.

John Suckling was born into an old Norfolk,

England, family, through which he inherited Algernon Charles
Swinburne (1837-1909), great estates. Educated at Trinity
College, Cam-*pp.* 1146-52

bridge, he traveled in Holland and was knighted

Algernon Charles Swinburne was born in Lon-

on his return in 1630. He was part of the 1631
don and attended Balliol College, Oxford, where
embassy to Germany, returning the next year to

he became a friend of the poet and Pre-

court and a life of dissipation. In 1639, he Raphaelite painter
Dante Gabriel Rossetti, the fought on the (losing) Royalist side
against the

painter and designer Edward Burne-Jones, and

Scots, and in 1641 levied a force to free the

the designer and poet William Morris. Swin-
imprisoned earl of Strafford. The conspiracy, burne introduced
the phrase *art for art's sake* named the "Army Plot," was
uncovered, and into the English aesthetic lexicon in an 1862
Suckling fled to France, where he might have
review of the French poet Charles Baudelaire's

BIOGRAPHICAL SKETCHES / 2131

Les Fleurs du Mal. He became an adherent of
Cambridge, where he met Arthur Henry Hal-

Baudelaire's aesthetic, until, in 1867, he met lam, whom he
later immortalized in *In Memo-Giuseppe Mazzini, whose
fervor for Italian inde-*

riam (1850). Tennyson began to write when a
pendence from Austrian rule caused Swinburne
child, largely to escape the oppressiveness of his
to repudiate *art for art's sake* and turn to politi-
home life, made miserable by his father's drink-
cally motivated poetry. He wrote prolifically, and
ing and violence. He published some of his best-
his work, which characteristically explores the
known poems, such as "Mariana" and "The

relationship between pleasure and pain, love Kraken," when
he was only twenty; in "Mari-and death, shows the influence
of sources as

ana," he displays his early, and enduring, gift for
diverse as the Marquis de Sade, the Bible, Greek
using objects and landscapes to convey states of
drama, and the Border Ballads.

mind and particular emotions. Between 1833,
the date of Hallam's death, and 1843, when

Allen Tate (1899 - 1979), *pp. 1417-21*

Tennyson received an annual government pen-

Allen Tate was born in Winchester, Kentucky.

to support his writing, he was especially

He was educated at Vanderbilt University, hard-hit by the melancholia that would plague where he roomed with the poet Robert Penn

him all his life and so dominate his poetry. In

Warren and was affiliated with the Fugitive the wake of Hallam's death, his work assumed a movement. Along with Warren, and Vanderbilt

decidedly darker note. He expressed his grief

professors John Crowe Ransom and Donald abstrusely in poems such as "Ulysses" and Davidson, Tate later joined the Agrarians, who

"Break, Break, Break" and directly in *In Memo-*

called for an agriculturally based Southern *riam*, a series of 131 quatrain stanzas, which economy and championed traditional Southern

Tennyson began within days of Hallam's death

values. In 1924, he moved to New York to and continued to write over a period of seven-embark on a literary career; the poet Hart Crane

teen years. With the publication of this great

lived in his household for a time. In 1928—29, elegy, he finally attained the public recognition Tate lived in England and France, and spent

long denied him and earned sufficient money to

time with fiction writers Ford Madox Ford, marry Emily Sellwood after a ten-year on-again, Ernest Hemingway, and F. Scott Fitzgerald. He

off-again courtship. In 1850, he succeeded Wil-

later taught at, among other schools, Princeton

liam Wordsworth as poet laureate, and nine

University, New York University, and the University of Minnesota. In addition to poetry, he published biographies, a novel, and several collections of criticism.

lections of criticism.

Dylan Thomas (1914-1953), pp. 1566-73

Edward Taylor (ca. 1642-1729), pp. 536-

Dylan Thomas was born in the Welsh seaport of Swansea. Ignoring his father's advice to attend

Edward Taylor was born in Leicestershire, university, he left

school in 1931 to embark on England, but migrated to Massachusetts in a literary career. After working at the local news-1668. After graduation from Harvard University

paper, he headed for London in 1934. His first

in 1671, he served as the minister of Westfield,

volume, *18 Poems*, appeared that year. He

Massachusetts, then a frontier town. Taylor worked as a broadcaster, prose writer, poet, and published some poems in his lifetime, but most

lecturer, and this varied career necessitated his

of his writings remained in manuscript when he

traveling through the United Kingdom, Europe,

died; the poems were preserved by Ezra Stiles,

and the United States. He died in New York City

Taylor's grandson and the president of Yale.

during a reading tour, his excessive drinking and

Only in 1937 was a selection of Taylor's poems

generally riotous lifestyle hastening his early death but also responsible, in part, for the burning in 1960. A Puritan who believed in salvation by grace alone, Taylor adhered to tradition (specifically, the Old New England Way) in matters of church practice. In addition to occasional recorded in New York before his death and rere-pieces, he composed *Preparatory Meditations*, corded a year later in Britain by Richard Burton.

whose starting points are images from biblical texts, and the series *God's Determinations* was also greatly despised. The New Apocalypse *Touching His Elect; and the Elect's Combat in* writers took him as a model; the Movement writ-Their Conversion, and Coming up to God in ers, including Philip Larkin, were said to have *Christ: Together with the Comfortable Effects* formed in reaction to the excesses, personal and *Thereof*.

poetic, of Dylan Thomas and his admirers.

Alfred, Lord Tennyson (1809-1892),

Edward Thomas (1878-1917), pp. 1253-56

pp. 982-1009

Edward Thomas was born in the London suburb of Lambeth and educated at Lincoln College, England. He was educated at Trinity College, Oxford. His arduous biographical, critical, and

2132 / BIOGRAPHICAL SKETCHES

review work often left him drained and Henry David Thoreau (1817-1862),

depressed, but he was forced to be prolific in

pp. 1045-46

order to support a growing family. He began to

Henry David Thoreau was born and lived nearly

write poetry in 1914 with the encouragement of

all his life in Concord, Massachusetts. He was

the poet Robert Frost, whom he greatly admired.

educated at Harvard University, where the poet

After joining the army in 1915, he was killed in

Jones Very was his tutor. After graduation, he

battle at Arras on Easter Monday 1917. Tho-

worked briefly as a schoolteacher. He lived in

mas's *Poems* (1917) was published under his the household of

Ralph Waldo Emerson, his pseudonym, Edward Eastaway. It

was followed

chief literary champion, for a time and became

by *Last Poems* (1918) and *Collected Poems* active in

Emerson's Transcendentalist club.

(1920), which appeared in his own name. His

From 1845 until 1847, Thoreau lived in a

wife, Helen, published two evocative memoirs of

wooden hut at Walden Pond, an experience he

their life together.

documented in the celebrated prose work *Wal-*

den (1854). A rugged individualist and observer

of nature, he regarded moral law more highly

R. S. Thomas (1913 - 2000), pp. 1544-46

than civil law, as demonstrated in his refusal to pay poll and church taxes and in his early support for the as yet unpopular abolition movement. His most famous essay, "Resistance to Bangor, and theology at St. Michael's Theological College, in Llandaff. Ordained in the Anglican Church, he served at Chirk, Denbighshire, works published anonymously, and his full-length book *Cape Cod* was not published in its entirety until after his death. Most of his poetry

Welsh in college to communicate with his Welsh parishioners and to gain a deeper understanding

inence in *The Atlantic Monthly* and elsewhere

of Welsh culture. Throughout a long life, he published a new volume of poetry every two or

is especially prized today for his environmental-

three years and edited anthologies such as *The*

ist approach to nature.

Penguin Book of Religious Verse. He was

awarded the Queen's Gold Medal for Poetry in 1964.

Chidiok Tichborne (d. 1586), *p. 151*

The Tichbornes were an old, probably pre-Conquest family of Hampshire, England, and

James Thomson (1700-1748), *pp. 649-51*

were pious Catholics. Chidiok Tichborne was

James Thomson was born in Ednam Manse, interrogated on several occasions on suspicion Kelso, Scotland, and educated at Jedburgh of "popish practices" (i.e., attending Mass) and School and Edinburgh University, preparing for

in 1586 was involved in a plot led by Anthony Babington against the life of Queen Elizabeth I.

After abandoning his studies, he

tried to make a living as a writer in London, Tichborne was arrested and sentenced to be where he became friendly with the leading writ-hanged and disemboweled. Imprisoned in the

ers of the day, including John Arbuthnot, Tho-

Tower of London, he is said to have written his *mas Gay*, and Alexander Pope. "Winter," a short, "Elegy" on the eve of his execution. Tichborne's

blank-verse poem, appeared in 1726, and "Sum-

speech from the scaffold and his poem of fare-

mer" and "Spring" in 1727 and 1728, respec-

tively. *The Seasons*, which collected all three and Jacobean periods.

with "Autumn," was published in 1730. In 1731,

Thomson accompanied Charles Talbot, son of

Charles Tomlinson (b. 1927), *pp. 1746-49*

the solicitor-general, on the Grand Tour, which Charles Tomlinson was born in Stoke-on-Trent, provided the inspiration for his patriotic poem *England*, and educated at Queens' College, Cambridge, where he studied with the poet

Wales, who awarded him a pension. Further patronage came through the poem *Britannia* taught at a London school for a number of years (1729), together with sinecures such as the and worked as a private secretary in Italy before surveyor-generalship of the Leeward Islands. joining the faculty of the University of Bristol in Thomson's *Alfred, a Masque* (1740) includes the

1957. He has also taught at various institutions famous song "Rule Britannia," also attributed to in the United States. From the start, Tomlinson his friend David Mallet. His *Seasons* was one of identified more strongly with the American the most popular and influential poems of the poetic and artistic tradition (he is also an accomplished artist) than with the British. *Some Americans* (1981) offers a vivid personal record of his verse) to nature, and ushering in the period of debt to American modernism and of his efforts topographical poetry and the "cult of the picturesque." The translator (with the late Henry Gifford) of

BIOGRAPHICAL SKETCHES / 2133

Versions from, Fyodor Tyutchev (1960) and *Cas-*
home in Greenfield, Massachusetts. Tucker-

tilian Ilexes: Versions from Antonio Machado man's one
published volume of poems was well (1963), Tomlinson has
edited *The Oxford Book*

received by the best poets of his day, including
of Verse in English Translation.

Emerson, Longfellow, and Tennyson, yet his
name fell into obscurity until the twentieth cen-

J e a n T o o m e r (1 8 9 4 - 1 9 6 7) , pp. 1398-1400

tury, when his work was rediscovered by the poet

Jean Toomer was born in Washington, D.C. He

Witter Bynner. Among the poems not published

was raised by his mother and maternal grand-

during Tuckerman's lifetime are three sonnet

father, P. B. S. Pinchback, who had served as

sequences.

acting governor of Louisiana during Reconstruc-

tion. Toomer attended several colleges, but John Updike (b.
1932), pp. 1846-47

never received a degree. He spent much of his

John Updike was born in Reading, Pennsylva-

early adulthood in New York City; his work was

nia, and raised in nearby Shillington. He was

both influenced by and influential on the Har-

educated at Harvard University and studied

lem Renaissance. In 1921, he taught in Sparta,

drawing at the Ruskin School of Drawing and

Georgia, where he gathered material for *Cane Fine Arts*, in Oxford, England. Upon his return (1923), a mosaic of poetry, prose, and drama on

to the United States, he joined the staff of *The* black themes, and the work on which his reputation stands. In his later years, Toomer wrote fiction and reviews. In 1957, he and his family moved from New York City to Ipswich, Massachusetts, where he concentrated wholly on writing and had become a Quaker—but was unable to find a publisher for his work. He also left unpublished highly acclaimed contemporary American fiction, plays, and an autobiography.

ers, Updike has published many novels (most notably his series about the character Harry Thomas Traherne (1637—1674), *pp.* 5 31 — “Rabbit” Angstrom), short stories, plays, poems,

36

essays, and reviews of both literature and art.

Thomas Traherne was the son of a Hereford, England, shoemaker and his wife—who, it is thought, died when Thomas and his brother Mona Van Duyn were young, leaving them to be brought up by

Mona Van Duyn (b. 1921), *pp.* 1629-32

thought, died when Thomas and his brother Mona Van Duyn were born in Waterloo, Iowa.

She was educated at the University of Northern
Philip Traherne, a wealthy innkeeper who was
Iowa and the University of Iowa at Iowa City.
twice mayor of the city. Thomas was educated
She has taught at, among other schools, the
at Brasenose College, Oxford, and became rec-
University of Iowa, the University of Louisville,
tor of Credenhill, Herefordshire, in 1657. He and Washington
University. From 1974 to was ordained in 1660, the year
before taking his
1978, Van Duyn and her husband, Jarvis Thur-
M.A. In 1669, he was made B.D., probably in
ston, edited *Perspective: A Quarterly of Litera-*
recognition of his *Roman Forgeries* (which *ture*. Generally
writing about ordinary people exposed ecclesiastical forgery of
documents), and the realities of their lives, she also finds and
appointed chaplain to Sir Orlando Bridge-inspiration in current
events, literature, and phi-
man, lord keeper of the Great Seal, after which
losophy. She was poet laureate of the United
he lived in London. His *Christian Ethics* States in 1992 - 93
.
appeared a year after his death, but his poems
and prose meditations remained unknown until
Henry Vaughan (1621-1695), pp. 490-98
the early twentieth century, when manuscript
Henry Vaughan was born in Newton-upon-Usk,
volumes began to be discovered and published.
Breconshire, the son of a Welsh gentleman and
His *Centuries of Meditation* was probably writ-

his wife, and the twin of Thomas, who became ten during his time at Credenhill, when he was a natural physician, or alchemist. Henry part of a religious circle led by Susanna Hopton, attended J e s u s College, Oxford, and went on to a High Anglican who converted for a time to London to study law, but was deflected by the Catholicism and to whom Traherne dedicated

civil war. He may have fought for the Royalists the *Centuries*.

before returning to Breconshire, where he seems to have taken up medicine, perhaps in the Frederick Goddard Tuckerman

1640s. A poem in his first collection (1646), (1 8 2 1 - 1 8 7 3) , pp. 1086-8 7

“Upon the Priory Grove,” records his courtship

Frederick Goddard Tuckerman was born in Boston of Catherine Wise, whom he was to marry and

ton, Massachusetts, to a distinguished New whose younger sister, Elizabeth, became his sec-England family. He was educated at Harvard ond wife. The collection is almost entirely sec-University (where the poet Jones Very was one

ular, as was his second, *Olor Iscanus* (1651), but

of his tutors) and Harvard Law School. In the

his third, *Silex Scintillans* (1655), and his sub-

late 1840s, Tuckerman gave up the law to study

sequent work, is of religious and devotional

his first loves: astronomy, botany, and poetry. He

nature. An interest in Hermeticism appears in

lived a retired and scholarly life at his family several poems, which allude to theories found in **2 1 3 4 / B I O G R A P H I C A L S K E T C H E S**

his brother's treatises on the subject. Vaughan

University and M.A. and Ph.D. from the Uni-

acknowledged George Herbert as a significant versivity of Iowa.

From 1936 until 1939, she was influence, writing that

Herbert's "holy life and

employed by the Writer's Project of the Works

verse gained many pious Converts (of whom I

Progress Administration in Iowa, where she

am the least)."

struck up a mutually beneficial association with

her coworker the novelist and, later, poet Rich-

J o n e s V e r y (1 8 1 3 - 1 8 8 0) , *pp. 1044-45*

ard Wright. She subsequently worked as a social

Jones Very was born in Salem, Massachusetts.

worker, reporter, and magazine editor and

He was educated at Harvard College, then taught at Livingston

College, West Virginia became a tutor in Greek while he

pursued a State College, and Jackson State College (now

degree at the Divinity School. In 1838, after a

University). In addition to poetry, she published

conversion experience, Very repudiated Unitar-

a biography of Wright and a collection of auto-

ianism for a rigorous mysticism and felt com-

biographical essays. Her poems, set in a South-

pelled to surrender himself completely to the

ern landscape, sometimes call upon African

will of God. Remanded to an asylum for evalu-

Americans to take action against oppressive
ation at the request of his colleagues, he was
social conditions.

declared sane and released, after which he
retired to his parental home, in Salem, where he
E d m u n d Waller (1 6 0 6 - 1 6 8 7) , pp. 3 9 3 - 9 4

lived a scholarly and reclusive life. In the eigh-
Edmund Waller was the eldest son of a wealthy
teen months following his release, Very wrote
landowner in Hertfordshire, England, and his
some three hundred poems, including a mystical
wife. Educated at Eton and King's College,
sonnet sequence. His one published collection,
Cambridge, he became a Member of Parliament
Essays and Poems (1839), was edited by Ralph
at age sixteen and swiftly gained a reputation as
Waldo Emerson. Very's work fell into obscurity
a brilliant orator. In his thirties, he courted
until the twentieth century, when it was redis-

Dorothy Sidney, granddaughter of Robert Sid-
covered by the poet and critic Yvor Winters.
ney and grandniece of Philip and Mary Sidney;
he addressed her under the poetic name "Sac-
D e r e k W a l c o t t (b . 1 9 3 0) , pp. 1820-29
charissa" (Sweetness). After participating in the
Derek Walcott was born on the island of St.
philosophical circle around Lucius Cary at
Lucia, in the British West Indies, and educated

Great Tew, Oxfordshire, he changed his political stance from Parliamentarian to Royalist. His part in a plot to secure London for the king was to Trinidad, where he has worked as a book discovered in 1643, but he avoided execution by reviewer, an art critic, a playwright, and the a confession and an eloquent plea for clemency.

artistic director of a theater workshop. He has

Exiled, he traveled in France, Italy, and Swit-

also been poet-in-residence at a number of zerland with his friend John Evelyn until 1651, American colleges and universities and has when he was allowed to return to England; received a MacArthur Award. At once flamboy-

although he wrote in praise of Oliver Cromwell,

ant and disciplined, poems such as his wittily

he regained a place in Parliament after the Res-

titled *A Far Cry from Africa* proclaim his divided

toration and advocated religious toleration. Wal-

roots, as a black poet writing from within both

ler's first known poem, commemorating Prince

the English literary tradition and the history of

Charles's escape from shipwreck (ca. 1625), is

a subject people. He has since proved the truth

an early example of the use of heroic couplets

of Yeats's statement that "out of the quarrel with

in English. His *Instructions to a Painter*

ourselves we make poetry." Isolation is Walcott's

appeared in 1666. John Dryden was among his

theme; and as with Yeats, the writing and producing of plays has increased the emotional and style.

dramatic range of his poetry. The movement of

Another Life (1973) and *Midsummer* (1984) is Robert Penn Warren (1905 - 1989), freer, more flexible than that of earlier work, but

pp. 1456-60

Walcott's language still has the accuracy and

Robert Penn Warren was born in Guthrie, Kentucky. He was educated at Vanderbilt University.

American contemporaries—the natural heir of the University of California at Berkeley,

his friend Robert Lowell. In 1992, following the Yale University, and Oxford University. At Van-

publication of his verse epic *Omeros*, which is associated with the Fugitives, a transposes elements of Homeric epic from the

literary group whose members included professors John Crowe Ransom and Donald Davidson the Nobel Prize for Literature.

and fellow student Allen Tate. He later became a member of the Agrarian movement. Warren

Margaret Walker (1915 - 1998), *pp. 1516-* taught at, among other schools, Vanderbilt;

Louisiana State University, where with Cleanth
Margaret Walker was born in Birmingham, Ala-
Brooks he cofounded the influential *Southern*
bama. She received her B.A. from Northwestern
Review; the University of Minnesota; and Yale.

BIOGRAPHICAL SKETCHES / 2135

In addition to poetry, he wrote *Brother to Drag-*
lished a poem in a Boston newspaper in 1767.

ons (1953), a verse drama; fiction (his novel *All*

In 1773, they sent her to London with their son,
the King's Men won the Pulitzer Prize in 1946);

in the hope of strengthening her frail constitu-

and criticism. A textbook he cowrote with tion. She published
a collection of poems during Cleanth Brooks, *Understanding*
Poetry, influ-her stay, but returned after a few months when

enced generations of students. In 1986, he was

her mistress fell ill. Freed on her return, she

named the first poet laureate of the United married John
Peters, a free black man, in 1778; States.

after bearing and burying three children, she

died in poverty and obscurity. Influenced by

Isaac Watts (1674-1748), *pp.* 589-94

John Milton and Alexander Pope, she charac-

Isaac Watts was born in Southampton, England,

teristically wrote in rhymed iambic-pentameter

and educated in the city's grammar school and

couplets or the ballad form, often using highly

the Nonconformist academy at Stoke Newing-

artificial diction. Like other Puritan colonial

ton. His father was a clothier who later became
writers, however, she employed an emotionally
a Nonconformist schoolmaster. Watts became
restrained, highly accessible, “plain” style for
minister of Mark Lane Chapel, London, in poems on religious
subjects.

1702; when overwork led to illness in 1712, he
moved into the household of Sir Thomas and Walt Whitman
(1819-1892), pp. 1060-86

Lady Abney, where he remained the rest of his

Walt Whitman was born on Long Island, New
life. Although he wrote theological and educa-
York, and raised in Brooklyn. He left school at

tional works, Pindaric odes, blank verse, and age eleven and
worked as an office boy, a experimental poems such as “The
Day of Judg-printer’s apprentice, and a teacher before estab-
ment,” which is in English Sapphics, he is lishing himself as a
journalist affiliated with sev-chiefly remembered for his
Divine Songs for eral prominent New York newspapers. In
1862, *Children* (1715) and four collections of hymns.

moved by the scenes he witnessed while staying

The volume *The Psalms of David Imitated in the* with his
brother (a wounded Union soldier) in *Language of the New
Testament* (1719) contains Washington, D.C., he spent several
months vis-some of the most famous hymns in English. iting
and nursing Civil War veterans. This work Watts wanted his
poems to “elevate” readers “to

found its way into his 1865 poetry volume,

the most delightful and divine Sensations” and

Drum-Taps. After the war, Whitman worked

to provide models of appropriate Christian briefly at the
Department of the Interior—he responses to trial and

difficulty.

was fired for being the author of the “scandalous” *Leaves of Grass* (1855)—and for several years at the office of the attorney general. After Charles Wesley (1707-1788), pp. 652-55 Charles Wesley was born at Epworth Rectory, suffering a debilitating stroke in 1873, he moved to his brother’s home in Camden, New Jersey, Lincolnshire, England. Like his older brother John Wesley, the founder of Methodism, he was where he remained until his death. In *Leaves of Grass*, the masterpiece that he revised for several decades, Whitman assumed the mantle of the public poet; his preface to the 1855 edition calls Edward Oglethorpe, governor of the colony, but “the United States themselves” his subject.

returned to England the following year. When Poetry that celebrated the body and sexuality, the established Church charged him with “irregularity,” he became an itinerant minister. For His prosody proved as controversial and ultimately as influential as his subject matter. He is preaching and helping groups of believers to usually considered, along with Emily Dickinson, found churches. He retired in 1756 due to poor

the most important of nineteenth-century Amer-

health and lived out his last years in Bath and
ican poets.

London. An accomplished poet who wrote on a
variety of subjects—including love, marriage, Isabella
Whitney (fl. 1567-1573), *pp. 146-and family life—he is best-*
known as an extraor-

50

dinarily prolific hymn writer, publishing some
Isabella Whitney was born into a middle-class,
sixty-five hundred hymns in his lifetime, many
Reformist family and apparently had two broth-

of which remain popular today.
ers (one of whom published a collection of
poetry) and several sisters. Almost nothing is
Phillis Wheatley (ca. 1753-1784), *pp. 719-*
known of her personal life, although it is

23

thought that by 1600 she had married and
Phillis Wheatley was born in Africa, sold into
begun raising two children. Of the three books
slavery, and in 1761 shipped to the slave market
of poetry published by English women during
in Boston. She was bought by John Wheatley, a
the sixteenth century, two are hers. *Copy of a*
prosperous tailor, for his wife, Susannah. The
Letter Lately Written in Meter, by a Young Gen-

family gave Wheatley a good education and *tlewoman: to Her*
Unconstant Lover. With an encouraged her writing talent, and
she pub-Admonition to All Young Gentlewomen, and to

2136 / BIOGRAPHICAL SKETCHES

All Other Maids in General to Beware of Men's

and has a particular facility for depicting dra-

Flattery (1567) contains both the letter matic situations.

described and the gentleman's reply; *A Sweet*

Nosegay or Pleasant Posy, Containing a Hundred William Carlos Williams (1883-1963), and Ten Philosophical Flowers (1573) was the pp. J 2 7 2 - 8 3

first book of poems ever published by an En-

William Carlos Williams was born in Ruther-

glishwoman. The "flowers," which render folk

ford, New Jersey. In 1906, he earned an M.D.

and Christian wisdom in ballad-stanza form, from the University of Pennsylvania, where he have not yet been republished in their entirety.

met the poets Ezra Pound and H. D. In 1910,

he opened a pediatrics practice in Rutherford,

John Greenleaf Whittier (1807-1892),

where, except for a year's "sabbatical" in Europe,

he lived and practiced medicine for the rest of

pp. 957-60

his life. Although strongly established in Ruth-

John Greenleaf Whittier was born into a Q u a k e r

erford, Williams was hardly provincial. He

family on a farm near Haverhill, Massachusetts.

moved in New York's avant-garde circles—along

Except for a year's study at Haverhill Academy,

with the poets Marianne Moore and Wallace

he received little formal education. With the

Stevens—and was affiliated with several short-help of literary-minded friends, Whittier found lived but influential journals. In addition to a number of jobs with small newspapers. In the poetry, he wrote fiction, drama, and essays. Williams was an early proponent of Imagism, a movement he valued for its stripping away of turned his full attention to writing, often on conventions. Later, he declared himself an Objectivist. Williams called on his contemporaries to create a distinctly American art, firmly recollective idyll on his childhood. Several of his poems were set to music and became popular hymns, but his reputation rests on the *Paterson* (1946—58), is a five-volume poem that recounts the history of poems that capture the essence of preindustrial Rutherford and nearby Paterson and transforms life in the villages of New England. it into the locus of modern humanity.

Richard Wilbur (b. 1921), pp. 1632-41

Greg Williamson (b. 1964), pp. 2023-25

Richard Wilbur was born in New York City and

Greg Williamson was born in Columbia, Ohio, educated at Amherst College and Harvard University and raised in Nashville, Tennessee. He holds degrees from Vanderbilt University and the University of Wisconsin at Madison, as well as from Johns Hopkins University, where he now teaches in the Writing Seminars. The author of *The Beautiful Changes*, published in 1947; since that early success, he has become known as one of America's major formalist poets. An acclaimed writer for children and lit-
erary essayist, he is also a translator, and his rhymed versions of Moliere, in particular, have won him international esteem. He was poet laureate of the United States in 1987—88 and has taught at many institutions, including Harvard, (1947-1980), pp. 549-53

John Wilmot was born at Ditchley, Oxfordshire, Wellesley College, Wesleyan University, and England, to a Cavalier hero and a devout Puritan mother. After attending Wadham College, Oxford, he toured Europe, returning in 1664. He quickly became a favorite of King

C. K. Williams (b. 1936), pp. 1869-72

Charles II and a leading member of the court

Charles (Charles) Kenneth Williams was born in New-

“wits.” At age eighteen, he abducted the heiress

ark, New Jersey. He was educated at Bucknell

Elizabeth Malet and was consequently impris-

College and the University of Pennsylvania. He

oned in the Tower of London. He married her

established a poetry-therapy program for emo-

eighteen months later, having regained his posi-

tionally disturbed adolescents, served as a con-

dition by serving courageously in the second

tributing editor to *American Poetry Review*, and Dutch War

(1665). His time was then divided ghostwrote articles on

psychiatry and architec-between family life in the country and
life in

ture, before beginning an academic career. Hav-

London with a number of mistresses, including

ing taught at a number of colleges and Elizabeth Barry, a

popular actress. According to universities, he now teaches at

Princeton Uni-Samuel Johnson, Rochester “blazed out his

versity and lives part of each year in Paris. In youth and health

in lavish voluptuousness” (he addition to poetry, he has

published transla-claimed that he went five years without

being

tions, including Sophocles’ *Women of Trachis* sober); and by

his early thirties, drink and vene-and Euripides’ *The Bacchae*.

Williams writes real disease were exacting a price. He

consulted almost exclusively in long and discursive lines

a number of theologians, including the royal

BIOGRAPHICAL SKETCHES / 2137

chaplain, Gilbert Burnet, who wrote a highly leger, he served in the Intelligence Corps of the popular pamphlet describing Rochester's renun-U.S. Army, in Italy. Having further studied at

ciation of skepticism and conversion to Christ-
the University of Iowa (under Donald Justice)
tianity. A friend of many poets including John
and in Rome, he published his first book, *Six*

Dryden and Aphra Behn, Rochester was *Poems*, in 1965. He
has taught widely, at several renowned both as a satirist and as
the author of

institutions in Italy and at the University of Cal-
erotic, sometimes pornographic, poetry, much
ifornia at Irvine. He now lives in Charlottesville,
of which was meant to be circulated in manu-
Virginia, where he has been on the faculty of the
script. He also wrote dramatic prologues and
University of Virginia since 1983. He is known
epilogues, imitations and adaptations of classi-
both for his erudition (Italian and East Asian
cal authors, and dramatic poems of self-analysis
literature are among the influences in his
both comic and grim.

poems) and for his attachment to rural life and
landscape, especially that of Appalachia.

Eleanor Wilner (b. 1937), *pp. 1879-82*

Eleanor Wilner was born in Cleveland, Ohio. James Wright
(1927-1980), *pp. 1749-51*

She was educated at Goucher College and Johns

J a m e s Wright was born and raised in Martin's

Hopkins University, from which she received a
Ferry, Ohio. Upon graduation from high school,
Ph.D. A lifelong civil rights and peace activist,
he joined the army and was stationed in occu-
she worked as a newspaper reporter, as a feature
pied Japan. After his military service, he
writer at a radio station, and as a consultant to
attended Kenyon College, where he studied with
the Maryland State Commission on the Aging
the poet John Crowe Ransom, and the Univer-
before beginning an academic career. She has
sity of Washington, where he studied with the
taught at many institutions, including the Uni-
poet Theodore Roethke. He later taught at the
versity of Chicago, Northwestern University, University of
Minnesota and Hunter College.

and Smith College. She currently teaches at Influenced by the
psychologist Carl Jung, the Warren Wilson College and lives
in Philadel-Expressionist poet Georg Trakl, and South
phia.

American Surrealists Pablo Neruda and Caesar
Vallejo, he developed a style of juxtaposing dis-
William Wordsworth (1770-1850), pp. 763-
parate images and relying on the subconscious
805

mind to intuit connections between them. He
William Wordsworth was born in Cockermouth,
was also a poet of social concerns, often writing

Cumberland, in the north of England's Lake of the working class.

District, and was educated at St. John's College, Cambridge. A walking tour of Europe in his early twenties brought him into contact with the Judith Wright (1915-2000), pp. 1577-80

first throes of the French Revolution, whose Judith Wright was born in Armidale, New South Wales. He supported until the onset of the Terror.

Wales, Australia, and was educated at the Uni-

Upon his return to England, he settled with his universities of Sydney and Queensland. Active in

sister, Dorothy, in the Lake District, where, the antiwar movement of the 1960s, she later apart from some few brief travels, he remained

became a conservationist, and she ascribed her for the rest of his life. In 1795, he met the poet

interest in the environment to working the land

Samuel Taylor Coleridge, with whom he pub-

at her family's estate at Willamumbi during

lished *Lyrical Ballads* (1798), one of the most World War II.

Wright made her home at Mount important and innovative works in the history of

Tambourine, Queensland, for many years, but

English literature. In his later years, he grew moved to an animal preserve near Braidwood, increasingly conservative,

and many former dev-New South Wales. She wrote prolifically in a

otes accused him of apostasy, but his poetry number of genres, including poetry, criticism, remained both popular and influential—so fiction, and children's fiction. She was awarded influential and so formative of modern ideas the

Queen's Gold Medal for Poetry in 1992, and about poetry that the scope of his achievement

her *Collected Poems, 1942—1985* was published is easily overlooked. In his preface to the second in 1994.

edition (1800) of the *Lyrical Ballads*, Wordsworth attacks the poetic diction and elaborate

Kit Wright (b. 1944), pp. 1946-47

figures of speech characteristic of eighteenth-

Kit Wright was born in Kent, England, and educated at New College, Oxford. He was a lecturer much pains to avoid it as others take to produce in Canada before becoming, in 1970, education it," and advocating the "language really used by officer at the Poetry Society in London, a post men." He succeeded Robert Southey as poet laureate in 1843 and completed a fully revised,

was Fellow Commoner in Creative Art at Trinity six-volume edition of his work before his death.

College, Cambridge. His first volume of poems, *The Bear Looked over the Mountain* (1977) won Charles Wright (b. 1935), pp. 1865-68

the Geoffrey Faber Memorial Prize. His collection *Hoping It Might Be So* (2000) brings Tennessee. After his graduation from Davidson College together poems spanning nearly thirty years. He

2138 / BIOGRAPHICAL SKETCHES

is also a prolific writer for children and a broad-
eyn. Said to have been Wyatt's mistress, Boleyn
caster.

is almost certainly an allegorical referent of
Wyatt's poem "Whoso List to Hunt" and perhaps
Richard Wright (1908-1960), pp. 1502-03

of other poems. Released soon after her execu-
Richard Wright was born in Rucker's Planta-
tion—which he witnessed through a grate from
tion, Mississippi, the child of a sharecropper and
his own cell in Bell Tower of the Tower of Lon-
the grandchild of slaves. He was raised by vari-
don—Wyatt fell from royal favor again in 1541,
ous relatives across the South before moving to
when he was accused of treason; and in 1554,
Chicago, where he wrote for the Federal Writ-
during the reign of Q u e e n Mary, his son, Tho-
ers' Project. He became a member of the Com-
mas Wyatt "the younger," was hanged for trea-
munist Party and an editor of *The Daily Worker*.
son. It was probably to avoid any associations to
Fame came to him on the publication of his
Wyatt's son that Richard Tottel left Wyatt "the
best-selling novel, *Native Son* (1940). In 1942, elder's" name
off the title page of the famous he left the Communist Party
and moved with his

anthology of "songs and sonnets" that he pub-
family to Paris, where he became active in Afri-

lished in 1557, the last year of Mary's reign.
can nationalism. Widely regarded for his novels
Although Tottel praises the "weightiness of the
but living in illness and poverty, he turned, in
deepwitted Sir Thomas Wyatt the Elder's verse"
his final year, to an early love, poetry, and wrote
in the preface and includes ninety-seven of
thousands of haiku.

Wyatt's poems in the first edition of the anthol-
ogy, the title page mentions only Wyatt's
M a r y Wroth (1 5 8 7 - 1 6 5 1 ?) , pp. 347-53
younger poetic imitator, Henry Howard, "late
Lady Mary Wroth was born into an aristocratic
earl of Surrey." Tottel regularized the meter of
family. Her mother, Barbara Gamage, a first
many of Wyatt's poems and added titles to them,
cousin of Sir Walter Raleigh, was praised by Ben
but most also survive in manuscript versions,
Jonson for ensuring that her children were "well
some written and corrected in Wyatt's hand;
taught." Wroth's father, Robert Sidney, her they exhibit a great
variety of tones, forms, and uncle, Philip Sidney, and her aunt,
Mary Sid-rhythms. As a translator of Petrarch, Wyatt
ney, were all poets. Her arranged marriage to Sir
introduced the sonnet form to English; he also
Robert Wroth was unhappy; after his death in
enriched English literature with satiric verse
1614, she had two children by her lover and
epistles modeled on classical and Italian poems.

cousin, William Herbert, third earl of Pembroke and Montgomery. In 1621, she boldly published *Elinor Wylie (1885 - 1928)*, pp. 1310-11

The Countess of Montgomery's Urania, addressed Elinor Wylie (nee Hoyt) was born in Somerville, to her lover's wife. Like Philip Sidney's *Arcadia*,

New Jersey, to a prominent family. Apart from a sonnet on which it is modeled, this long prose romance college preparatory course, she was educated at home, learning French, German, and drawing.

and meters. Appended to the romance is a sonnet sequence, *Pamphilia to Amphilanthus*, similar

A socialite who courted scandal when she left her husband and child, she lived at various times

similarly modeled on Sidney's sonnet sequence, in England, New York City, and Washington, *Astrophil and Stella*, but with a male love-object

D.C., and counted the writers Dorothy Parker, Ernest Hemingway, Edmund Wilson, and Edna

The *Urania* caused a scandal because it contained thinly veiled satire of well-known court

St. Vincent Millay among her friends. In addition, her work brought her the respect of prominent writers such as W. B. Yeats, who admired

like her pastoral verse play, *Love's Victory*, was her poems, and William Faulkner, Max Beer-

not published. Ben Jonson dedicated *The Alche-*

dedicated *The Alche-*

bohm, and Aldous Huxley, who praised her *fiction* to Wroth and, in a sonnet addressed to her, tion.

praised her poems for making him a “better lover, and much better poet.”

William Butler Yeats (1865-1939),

pp. 1188-1211

Thomas Wyatt (1503 - 1542) , *pp. 126-36*

W. B. Yeats was born in Sandymount, Dublin,

Thomas Wyatt was born at Allingham Castle, to a lawyer turned portrait-painter and his wife, Kent, England, and educated at St. John's Col-both of English Protestant stock, though both

lege, Cambridge. He held various positions at

families had lived in Ireland for several genera-

court and served on diplomatic missions to tions. He studied painting at the Dublin Met-France, Spain, and Italy. Although he was ropolitan School of Art before turning his full knighted in 1535, his position as a courtier was

attention to literature. Yeats's childhood and

never secure. Imprisoned in 1534 for brawling

early manhood were spent in Sligo, London, and

and perhaps for sexual misconduct (he had sep-

Dublin, and each contributed something to his

arated from his wife), he was again imprisoned,

development. In Sligo, he acquired a knowledge

after a quarrel with the duke of Suffolk, in 1536.

of the peasantry's life and vigorous folklore. In

Some have linked this imprisonment also with

London in the 1890s, he met the important

the fall of Henry VIII's second wife, Anne Bol-
poets of the day. In Dublin, he was influenced

B I O G R A P H I C A L S K E T C H E S / 2 1 3 9

by the currents of Irish nationalism and, Gonne (whose
estranged husband had been exe-although often disagreeing
with those who cuted as a leader of the Rising) that "tragic
dig-wished to use literature for crude political ends,

nity had returned to Ireland," Yeats returned. To

nevertheless learned to see his poetry as con-

mark his new commitment, he refurbished and

tributing to a rejuvenated Irish culture. His work

occupied the Norman tower, on Lady Gregory's

falls into three main periods. In the first, he

land, that was to become one of the central sym-

wrote dreamy poems and plays, laden with bols of his later
poetry. In 1917, he married a poetic diction, many of them
expressing his love

woman who, over the next twenty years, would

for M a u d Gonne, a beautiful actress and violent

prove so sympathetic to his imaginative needs

nationalist, who persistently refused to marry that the
automatic writing she produced for sev-him. His reading of the
German philosopher eral years (believed by Yeats to have been
dic-Friedrich Nietzsche in 1902 prompted him to

tated by spirits) gave him the elements of a

abandon the subservient posture of the courtly

symbolic system that he later worked out in his

lover, as his work in the theater was making his

book *A Vision* (1925, 1937). This system

writing less ornate and more colloquial. The sec-

prompted the later and greater poems of his
second period saw him involved—with Lady Greg-
third period, those of *The Tower* (1928) and *The*
ory and J. M. Synge—in the 1904 founding of
Winding Stair (1933). In 1922, Yeats was
the Abbey Theatre and its subsequent rise and
appointed a senator of the recently established
decline. He was becoming a national figure.
Irish Free State, and the following year he was
Three public controversies moved him to anger
awarded the Nobel Prize for Literature.
and to poetry: the first was over the hounding of
“the uncrowned king of Ireland,” Charles Stew-
art Parnell; the second, over Synge’s play *The*
Cynthia Zarin (b. 1959), pp. 207 3-7 5
Playboy of the Western World, in 1907; the third,
Cynthia Zarin was born in New York City and
over the Lane pictures, a collection of modern
raised on Long Island. She was educated at Har-
French paintings not housed in Dublin due to
vard College and Columbia University. Artist-in-
lack of funding, in 1913. In each, the cause for
residence at the Cathedral of St. John the
which he fought was defeated by representatives
Divine, in New York City, she is a versatile writer
of the Roman Catholic middle class; at last, bit-
of nonfiction and has published several chil-
terly turning his back on Ireland, Yeats moved

dren's books as well as three volumes of poetry. to England. Then came the 1916 Easter Rising, She has taught at the Columbia School of Journalism by members of the class and religion nalism and Princeton University, and is a staff that had so long opposed him. Persuaded by writer for *The New Yorker*.

P E R M I S S I O N S A C K N O W L E D G M E N T S

Adcock, Fleur: "The Ex-Queen Among the Astronomers," "Poem Ended by a Death," and "The Soho Hospital for Women"

from POEMS 1960-2000. Copyright © 2000 by Fleur Adcock. Reprinted by permission of the publisher, Bloodaxe Books Ltd.

Ali, Agha Shahid: "The Dacca Gauzes" from THE HALF-INCH HIMALAYAS. Copyright © 1987 by Agha Shahid Ali.

Reprinted with permission of Wesleyan University Press. "Lenox Hill" from ROOMS ARE NEVER FINISHED by Agha Shahid Ali. Copyright © 2002 by Agha Shahid Ali. Used by permission of W. W. Norton & Co., Inc.

Ammons, A. R.: "The Arc Inside and Out," copyright © 1971 by A. R. Ammons. "The City Limits," copyright © 1971 by A. R. Ammons. "Corsons Inlet," copyright © 1963 by A. R. Ammons. From THE SELECTED POEMS: EXPANDED EDITION by A. R. Ammons. "Pet Panther," copyright © 1983 by A. R. Ammons. From LAKE EFFECT COUNTRY by A. R. Ammons. "All's All," copyright © 1996 by A. R. Ammons. From BRINK ROAD by A. R. Ammons. Used by permission of W. W. Norton & Co., Inc.

Armitage, Simon: "The Shout" from THE UNIVERSAL HOME DOCTOR. "The Two of Us" and excerpt from "Killing Time" from SELECTED POEMS. Reprinted by permission of David Godwin Associates for the author and Faber & Faber Ltd.

Ashbery, John: "Brute Image" from HOTEL LAUTREAMONT. Copyright © 1992 by John Ashbery. "Soonest Mended" from A DOUBLE DREAM OF SPRING. Copyright © 1970, 1969, 1968, 1967, 1966 by John Ashbery. "The Painter" from SOME TREES. Copyright © 1956 by John Ashbery. "Paradoxes and Oxymorons" from SHADOW TRAIN. Copyright ©

1980, 1981 by John Ashbery. Reprinted by permission of Georges Borchardt, Inc. for the author. "Ode to Bill" from SELF-PORTRAIT IN A CONVEX MIRROR by John Ashbery, copyright © 1974 by John Ashbery. Used by permission of Viking Penguin, a division of Penguin Group (USA), Inc. All poems published in Great Britain by Carcanet Press, Ltd. and reprinted by the publisher's permission.

Atwood, Margaret: "At the Tourist Center in Boston" from SELECTED POEMS 1966-1984 by Margaret Atwood. Copyright

© 1990 by Margaret Atwood. Reprinted by permission of Oxford University Press Canada. "You Begin" from SELECTED

POEMS II: POEMS SELECTED AND NEW, 1976-1986 by Margaret Atwood, copyright © 1987 by Margaret Atwood.

Also published in SELECTED POEMS 1966-1984, copyright © 1990 by Margaret Atwood. Reprinted by permission of Houghton Mifflin Co., Oxford University Press Canada, and Time Warner Books UK. All rights reserved. "Up" and "Flowers" from MORNING IN THE BURNED HOUSE by Margaret Atwood. Copyright © 1995 by Margaret Atwood. Reprinted by permission of Houghton Mifflin Co., McClelland & Stewart Ltd. The Canadian Publishers, and Curtis Brown Group Ltd., London on behalf of the author. All rights reserved. "This Is a Photograph of Me" from THE CIRCLE GAME by Margaret Atwood, copyright © 1968, 1998 by Margaret Atwood. Reprinted with the permission of House of Anansi Press, Toronto.

Auden, W. H.: "As I Walked Out One Evening," copyright © 1940 and renewed 1968 by W. H. Auden. "Twelve Songs, IX,

Funeral Blues,” copyright © 1940 and renewed 1968 by W. H. Auden. “Twelve Songs XII, O Tell Me the Truth about Love,” copyright © 1940 and renewed 1968 by W. H. Auden. “Lullaby (Lay Your Sleeping Head, My Love),” copyright © 1972 by W. H. Auden. “Spain 1937,” copyright © 1940 and renewed 1968 by W. H. Auden. “Musee des Beaux Arts,” copyright © 1940 and renewed 1968 by W. H. Auden. “In Memory of W. B. Yeats,” copyright © 1940 and renewed 1968 by W. H. Auden. “In Praise of Limestone,” copyright © 1951 by W. H. Auden. “The Shield of Achilles,” copyright © 1952 by W. H. Auden. “September 1, 1939,” copyright © 1940 and renewed 1968 by W. H. Auden. “Their Lonely Betters,” copyright © 1951 by W. H. Auden. From COLLECTED POEMS by W. H. Auden. Used by permission of Random House, Inc. and Faber & Faber Ltd.

Baraka, Amiri: “An Agony, As Now” from THE DEAD LECTURER by Amiri Baraka. Copyright © by Amiri Baraka. “In Memory of Radio” from THE AMIRI BARAKA READER. Copyright © by Amiri Baraka. Reprinted by permission of SLL/

Sterling Lord Literistic, Inc.

Baxter, James K.: “Wild Bees,” “East Coast Journey,” and “New Zealand” published in COLLECTED POEMS OF JAMES

K. BAXTER, ed. J. R. Weir, Oxford University Press, Australia and New Zealand, 1979. Reproduced by permission of J. C.

Baxter.

Bernstein, Charles: “frequently unasked questions,” “why we ask you not to touch,” and “this poem intentionally left blank” from WITH STRINGS (Chicago: Univ. of Chicago Press, 2001). Used by permission of the author. “Of Time and the Line” from ROUGH TRADES (Los Angeles: Green Integer Books, 1991), pp. 42-43. Copyright © 1991 by Charles Bernstein. Reprinted with the permission of the publisher.

Berryman, John: From “Homage to Mistress Bradstreet” and “A Sympathy, A Welcome” from COLLECTED POEMS 1937-1971 by John Berryman. Copyright© 1989 by Kate Donahue Berryman. Dream Songs #1, #4, #14, #29, #40, #145, #324,

#382 from THE DREAM SONGS by John Berryman. Copyright © 1969 by John Berryman. Copyright renewed 1997 by Kate Donahue Berryman. Reprinted by permission of Farrar, Straus, & Giroux, LLC and Faber & Faber Ltd.

Betjeman, John: “Death in Leamington,” “The Arrest of Oscar Wilde at the Cadogan Hotel,” “East Anglian Bathe,” and “False Security” from COLLECTED POEMS by John Betjeman. Copyright © 1958, 1962, 1970, 1979 by John Betjeman.

Reproduced by permission of John Murray Publishers.

Birney, Earle: “Bushed” and “The Bear on the Delhi Road” from THE COLLECTED POEMS OF EARLE BIRNEY. Used by permission, McClelland & Stewart Ltd. The Canadian Publishers.

Bishop, Elizabeth: “The Armadillo,” “Casabianca,” “Filling Station,” “The Fish,” “In the Waiting Room,” “The Moose,” “One Art,” “Sandpiper,” and “Sestina” from THE COMPLETE POEMS 1927-1979 by Elizabeth Bishop. Copyright © 1979, 1983 by Alice Helen Methfessel. Reprinted by permission of Farrar, Straus and Giroux, LLC.

Blunden, Edmund: “Forefathers” and “1916 seen from 1921” from SELECTED POEMS, ed. by Robyn Marsack (1982).

Reprinted by permission of Carcanet Press Ltd.

Bly, Robert: “Waking from Sleep” from SILENCE IN THE SNOWY FIELDS by Robert Bly, Wesleyan University Press, 2140

PERMISSIONSACKNOWLEDGMENTS / 2141

1962. Copyright © 1962 by Robert Bly. Reprinted with his permission. “Johnson’s Cabinet Watched by Ants” from THE

LIGHT AROUND THE BODY by Robert Bly. Copyright © 1967 by Robert Bly. Copyright renewed 1995 by Robert Bly.

Reprinted by permission of HarperCollins Publishers Inc.

Bogan, Louise: “Juan’s Song,” “Man Alone,” “Medusa,” “Night,” “Roman Fountain,” and “Song for the Last Act” from THE

BLUE ESTUARIES by Louise Bogan. Copyright © 1968 by Louise Bogan. Copyright renewed 1996 by Ruth Limmer.

Reprinted by permission of I ,irr.tr, Straus & Giroux, LLC.

Boland, Eavan: “That the Science of Cartography Is Limited,” “The Dolls Museum in Dublin,” and “The Pomegranate “from IN A TIME OF VIOLENCE, copyright © 1994 by Eavan Boland. Reprinted by permission of W. W. Norton & Co., Inc. and Carcanet Press Ltd.

Brathwaite, Edward Kamau: “New World A-Comin’, 1, 2” and “Ancestors 1, 2, 3” from ARRIVANTS: A NEW WORLD

TRILOGY (1973) by Edward Kamau Brathwaite. Reprinted by permission of Oxford University Press (UK).

Brooks, Gwendolyn: “kitchenette building,” “my dreams, my works, must wait till after hell,” “the birth in a narrow room,” “the rites for Cousin Vit,” “The Bean Eaters,” “We Real Cool,” “Medgar Evers,” and “Boy Breaking Glass” from BLACKS

(Chicago: Third World Press, 1987). Reprinted with permission of the author.

Brown, George MacKay: “The Old Women,” “Haddock Fisherman,” and “Shroud” from SELECTED POEMS 1954-1983

by George MacKay Brown. Copyright © 1959, 1965, 1971 by George MacKay Brown. Reproduced by permission of John Murray Publishers.

Brown, Sterling A.: “Slim in Atlanta,” copyright © 1932 by Harcourt Brace & Co. Copyright renewed 1960 by Sterling A.

Brown. “Chillen Get Shoes,” “Conjured,” and “Bitter Fruit of the Tree,” copyright © 1980 by Sterling A. Brown. From THE COLLECTED POEMS OF STERLING A. BROWN, ed. by Michael S. Harper. Reprinted by permission of HarperCollins Publishers, Inc.

Brownjohn, Alan: “Common Sense” from COLLECTED POEMS 1952-83 by Alan Brownjohn. Copyright © 1983 by Alan Brownjohn. Reprinted by permission of Rosica Colin Ltd.

Bunting, Basil: Excerpt from “Briggflatts: An Autobiography” from COMPLETE POEMS of Basil Bunting (2000). Reprinted by permission of Bloodaxe Books Ltd.

Bynner, Witter: “Chinese Drawings: A Philosopher,” “Haskell,” “More Lovely than Antiquity,” and “The Wintry Mind” from SELECTED POEMS by Witter Bynner. Copyright © 1978 by The Witter Bynner Foundation. Reprinted by permission of Farrar, Straus & Giroux, LLC.

Campbell, Roy: “The Zulu Girl” and “The Sisters” from THE COLLECTED POEMS OF ROY CAMPBELL. Reprinted by permission of Francisco Campbell Custodio and Jonathan Ball Publishers/A. D. Donker Publishers.

Carson, Anne: “IV” from THE BEAUTY OF THE HUSBAND by Anne Carson, copyright © 2001 by Anne Carson. “New Rule” and “Sumptuous Destitution” from MEN IN THE OFF HOURS by Anne Carson, copyright © 2000 by Anne Carson.

Used by permission of the publishers, Alfred A. Knopf, a division of Random House, Inc. and Jonathan Cape, a division of The Random House Group Limited.

Causley, Charles: “Armistice Day,” “At the British War Cemetery, Bayeux,” and “Eden Rock” from COLLECTED POEMS

1951—1975 (Macmillan). Reprinted by permission of David Higham Associates.

Christopher, Nicholas: “The Palm Reader” and “Far from Home” from 5° AND OTHER POEMS by Nicholas

Christopher.

Reprinted by permission of the author.

Clampitt, Amy: "Beach Glass," "Beethoven, Opus 111," "The Sun Underfoot among the Sundews," and "The Cormorant in Its Element" from THE KINGFISHER by Amy Clampitt, copyright © 1983 by Amy Clampitt. "Syrinx" from THE COLLECTED POEMS OF AMY CLAMPITT by Amy Clampitt, copyright © 1997 by the Estate of Amy Clampitt. Used by permission of Alfred A. Knopf, a division of Random House, Inc. and Faber & Faber Ltd.

Collins, Billy: "Litany," copyright © 2002 by Billy Collins, from NINE HORSES by Billy Collins. Used by permission of Random House, Inc. and SLL/Sterling Lord Literistic, Inc. "Japan" from PICNIC, LIGHTNING by Billy Collins, copyright

© 1998. Reprinted by permission of the University of Pittsburgh Press.

Cope, Wendy: "Bloody Men," "Flowers," "Valentine," and "Serious Concerns" from SERIOUS CONCERNS. Copyright ©

1992 by Wendy Cope. Reprinted by permission of Faber & Faber Ltd.

Corn, Alfred: "Navidad, St. Nicholas Ave." from THE WEST DOOR by Alfred Corn. Copyright © 1988 by Alfred Corn.

Reprinted by permission of the author. "A Conch from Sicily" from PRESENT by Alfred Corn. Copyright © 1997 by Alfred Corn. Reprinted by permission of Counterpoint Press, a member of Perseus Books, LLC.

Corso, Gregory: "Marriage" from THE HAPPY BIRTHDAY OF DEATH, copyright © 1960 by New Directions Publishing Corp. Reprinted by permission of New Directions Publishing Corp.

Crane, Hart: "At Melville's Tomb," "My Grandmother's Love Letters," "Proem: To Brooklyn Bridge," "To Emily Dickinson,"

“Voyages I, II, III, IV, V, VI” from COMPLETE POEMS OF HART CRANE by Hart Crane, ed. by Marc Simon. Copyright © 1933, 1958, 1966 by Liveright Publishing Corp. Copyright © 1986 by Marc Simon. Used by permission of Liveright Publishing Corp.

Creeley, Robert: “Bresson’s Movies” from MIRRORS, copyright © 1983 by Robert Creeley. Reprinted by permission of New Directions Publishing Corp. and Marion Boyars Publishers. “I Know a Man,” “Heroes,” and “The World” from THE

COLLECTED POEMS OF ROBERT CREELEY, 1945-1975. Copyright © 1983 by The Regents of the University of California. Reprinted with the permission of the University of California Press.

Cullen, Countee: “Heritage,” “Incident,” and “Yet Do I Marvel” are from the Countee Cullen Collection, Amistad Research Center at Tulane University. Reprinted by permission.

Cummings, E. E.: “All in green went my love riding,” “the Cambridge ladies who live in furnished souls,” “Spring is like a perhaps hand,” “next to of course god america i,” “since feeling is first,” “somewhere i have never travelled, gladly beyond,”

“anyone lived in a pretty how town,” “may i feel said he,” “who are you, little i” from COMPLETE POEMS: 1904-1962

by E. E. Cummings, ed. by George J. Firmage. Copyright © 1923, 1925, 1926, 1931, 1935, 1938, 1939, 1940, 1944, 1945, 1946, 1947, 1948, 1949, 1950, 1951, 1952, 1953, 1954, © 1955, 1956, 1957, 1958, 1959, 1960, 1961, 1962, 1963, 1966, 1967, 1968, 1972, 1973, 1974, 1975, 1976, 1977, 1978, 1979, 1980, 1981, 1982, 1983, 1984, 1985, 1986, 1987, 1988, 1989, 1990, 1991 by the Trustees for the E. E. Cummings Trust. Copyright © 1973, 1976, 1978, 1979, 1981, 1983, 1985, 1991 by George James Firmage. Used by permission of Liveright Publishing Corp.

2142 / PERMISSIONS ACKNOWLEDGMENTS

Curnow, Allen: “Landfall in Unknown Seas” from COLLECTED POEMS 1933-1973. Copyright © 1973 by Allen Cumow.

Reprinted by permission of Penguin Books (NZ) Ltd.

Davie, Donald: “Remembering the Thirties,” “The Fountain,” and “Time Passing, Beloved” from COLLECTED POEMS

(1983). Reprinted by permission of Carcanet Press Ltd.

Davison, Peter: “Equinox” and “Peaches” from THE POEMS OF PETER DAVISON by Peter Davison, copyright © 1995

by Peter Davison. Used by permission of Alfred A. Knopf, a division of Random House, Inc.

De la Mare, Walter: From THE COMPLETE POEMS OF WALTER DE LA MARE (1969, 1970) by permission of The Literary Trustees of Walter de la Mare and the Society of Authors as their representatives.

Dickey, James: “The Lifeguard” from DROWNING WITH OTHERS. Copyright © 1961 by James Dickey. “Buckdancer’s Choice” and “Sled Burial, Dream Ceremony” from BUCKDANCER’S CHOICE. Copyright © 1965 by James Dickey.

Reprinted with permission of Wesleyan University Press.

Dickinson, Emily: Dickinson poems are reprinted by permission of the publishers and the Trustees of Amherst College from the following volumes: THE POEMS OF EMILY DICKINSON, Thomas H. Johnson, ed., Cambridge, Mass.: The Belknap Press of Harvard University Press, copyright © 1951, 1955, 1979, 1983 by The President and Fellows of Harvard College; THE POEMS OF EMILY DICKINSON: VARIORUM EDITION, Ralph W. Franklin, ed., Cambridge, Mass.: The Belknap Press of Harvard University Press, copyright © 1998 by The President and Fellows of Harvard College; THE POEMS OF

EMILY DICKINSON: READING EDITION, Ralph W. Franklin, ed., Cambridge, Mass.: The Belknap Press of Harvard University Press, copyright © 1998, 1999 by The President and Fellows of Harvard College.

H. D. (Hilda Doolittle): “Helen,” “Sea Rose,” “Sea Violet,” “The Walls Do Not Fall, 1” and “Wine Bowl” from COLLECTED

POEMS, 1912-1944, copyright © 1982 by The Estate of Hilda Doolittle. Reprinted by permission of New Directions Publishing Corp. and Carcanet Press Ltd.

Douglas, Keith: “Aristocrats,” “Gallantry,” “On a Return from Egypt,” and “Vergissmeinnicht,” from THE COMPLETE POEMS: THIRD EDITION by Keith Douglas. Copyright © 1998 by The Estate of Keith Douglas. Reprinted by permission of Farrar, Straus & Giroux, LLC and Faber & Faber Ltd.

Dove, **Rita:** “Parsley” and “Dusting” from SELECTED POEMS, Pantheon, © 1993 by Rita Dove. Reprinted by permission of the author. “The Bistro Styx” from MOTHER LOVE by Rita Dove. Copyright © 1995 by Rita Dove. Used by permission of the author and W. W. Norton & Co., Inc.

Dufault, Peter Kane: “A Letter for All-Hallows (1949),” “A First Night,” and “Burden” were first published in THE NEW YORKER. Reprinted with the permission of the author.

Duffy, Carol Ann: “Warming Her Pearls” from SELLING MANHATTAN. Copyright © 1987 by Carol Ann Duffy. “Prayer”

from MEAN TIME. Copyright © 1993 by Carol Ann Duffy. Reprinted by permission of Anvil Press Poetry. “Little Red Cap” and “Anne Hathaway” from THE WORLD’S WIFE. Copyright © 1999 by Carol Ann Duffy. Reprinted by permission of the publishers Faher & Faber, Inc., an affiliate of Farrar, Straus & Giroux, LLC and Pan Macmillan, London, UK.

Dunn, Douglas: “Thirteen Steps and the Thirteenth of March” from ELEGIES. Copyright © 1985 by Douglas Dunn. “A Removal from Terry Street” from TERRY STREET.

Copyright © 1969 by Douglas Dunn. “In the Grounds” from BARBARIANS. Copyright © 1979 by Douglas Dunn. Reprinted with the permission of Faber & Faber Ltd.

Dylan, Bob: Lyrics to “Boots of Spanish Leather” by Bob Dylan. Copyright © 1963 by Warner Bros., Inc. Copyright renewed 1991 by Special Rider Music. All rights reserved. International copyright secured. Reprinted by permission.

Eberhart, Richard: “The Fury of Aerial Bombardment” from COLLECTED POEMS 1930-1986 by Richard Eberhart. Copyright © 1960, 1976, 1987 by Richard Eberhart. Used by permission of Oxford University Press, Inc. and the author.

Eliot, T. S.: “Little Gidding” from FOUR QUARTETS, copyright © 1942 by T. S. Eliot and renewed 1970 by Esme Valerie Eliot, reprinted by permission of Harcourt, Inc. “Journey of the Magi” and “The Hollow Men” from COLLECTED POEMS

1909-1962 by T. S. Eliot, copyright © 1936 by Harcourt, Inc., copyright © 1964, 1963 by T. S. Eliot, reprinted by permission of Harcourt, Inc. and Faber & Faber Ltd. “The Love Song of J. Alfred Prufrock” and “The Waste Land” from THE COMPLETE POEMS AND PLAYS 1909-1950. Reprinted by permission of Faber & Faber Ltd.

Elizabeth I: “Ah Silly Pug, Wert Thou So Sore Afraid” from “A Lost Poem by Queen Elizabeth I” by L. G. Black, TIMES LITERARY SUPPLEMENT, May 23, 1968. Reprinted by permission of The Masters of the Bench of the Inner Temple.

“The Doubt of Future Foes” from POEMS OF QUEEN ELIZABETH I (Providence, Rhode Island: Brown University Press, 1964), edited by Leicester Bradner. Copyright © 1964 by Brown University/University Press of New England. Reprinted with the permission of the University Press of New England.

Empson, William: “Legal Fiction” and “Missing Dates” from COLLECTED POEMS OF WILLIAM EMPSON, copyright © 1949 and renewed 1977 by William Empson, reprinted by permission of Harcourt, Inc. and Chatto & Windus c/o The

Random House Group Ltd.

Erdrich, Louise: "Birth" from BAPTISM OF DESIRE by Louise Erdrich. Copyright © 1990 by Louise Erdrich. Reprinted by permission of HarperCollins Publishers, Inc. "The Butcher's Wife" and "I Was Sleeping Where the Black Oaks Move"

from JACKLIGHT by Louise Erdrich. Copyright © 1984 by Louise Erdrich, reprinted with the permission of The Wylie Agency, Inc.

Fenton, James: "A German Requiem," "Dead Soldiers," and "God, a Poem" from CHILDREN IN EXILE by James Fenton.

Copyright © 1985 by James Fenton. Also published in THE MEMORY OF WAR AND CHILDREN IN EXILE: POEMS 1968-1983. Copyright © 1983 by James Fenton. "In Paris With You" from OUT OF DANGER. Copyright © 1993, 1994 by James Fenton. Reprinted by permission of Farrar, Straus & Giroux, LLC and Peters Fraser Dunlop on behalf of James Fenton.

Ferlinghetti, Lawrence: "Sometime During Eternity ..." from A CONEY ISLAND OF THE MIND, copyright © 1958 by Lawrence Ferlinghetti. Reprinted by permission of New Directions Publishing Corp.

Fitzgerald, Robert: "Figlio Maggiore" from SPRING SHADE: POEMS 1931-1970, copyright © 1961 by Robert Fitzgerald. Reprinted by permission of New Directions Publishing Corp.

Frost, Robert: From THE POETRY OF ROBERT FROST, ed. by Edward Connery Lathem. Copyright © 1936, 1942, 1944, 1951, 1956, 1958 by Robert Frost, copyright © 1964, 1967, 1970, 1975 by Lesley Frost Ballantine, copyright © 1916, **P E R M I S S I O N S A C K N O W L E D G M E N T S / 2 1**

4 3

1923, 1928, 1947, 1969 by Henry Holt and Co. Published in Great Britain by Jonathan Cape. Used by permission of Henry Holt and Co., LLC and the Estate of Robert Frost and The Random House Group Ltd.

Gascoyne, David: "Yves Tanguy" and "Ecce Homo" from COLLECTED POEMS (1970) by David Gascoyne. Used by permission of Oxford University Press (UK).

Ginsberg, Allen: Part 1 from "Howl," copyright © 1955 by Allen Ginsberg, "To Aunt Rose," copyright © 1958 by Allen Ginsberg, "A Supermarket in California," copyright © 1955 by Allen Ginsberg. From COLLECTED POEMS 1947-1980 by Allen Ginsberg. Copyright © 1984 by Allen Ginsberg. Reprinted by permission of HarperCollins Publishers, Inc. and Penguin Books Ltd.

Gioia, Dana: "Prayer" and "The Next Poem" from THE GODS OF WINTER by Dana Gioia. Copyright © 1991 by Dana Gioia. Reprinted with the permission of Graywolf Press, St. Paul, MN 55114.

Gluck, Louise: "Gretel in Darkness" from THE HOUSE ON THE MARSHLAND from THE FIRST FOUR BOOKS OF POEMS by Louise Gluck. Copyright © 1968, 1971, 1973, 1974, 1975, 1976, 1977, 1978, 1979, 1980, 1985, 1995 by Louise Gluck. "Vita Nova" from VITA NOVA by Louise Gluck. Copyright © 1999 by Louise Gluck. "The Garden," p. 16

from THE WILD IRIS by Louise Gluck. Copyright © 1993 by Louise Gluck. Reprinted by permission of HarperCollins Publishers, Inc. and Carcanet Press Ltd.

Graham, Jorie: "The Geese," "At Luca Signorelli's Resurrection of the Body," and "The Surface" from THE DREAM OF

THE UNIFIED FIELD: POEMS 1974-1994 by Jorie Graham. Copyright © 1995 by Jorie Graham. Reprinted by permission of HarperCollins Publishers, Inc. and Carcanet Press Ltd.

Graves, Robert: "Love Without Hope," "In Broken Images," "Warning to Children," "The Persian Version," "To Juan at the Winter Solstice," and "The White Goddess" from COMPLETE POEMS (2000), by Robert Graves. Reprinted with the permission of Carcanet Press Ltd.

Greenlaw, Lavinia: "Skin Full," "What's Going On," and "A World Where News Travelled Slowly" from A WORLD WHERE

NEWS TRAVELLED SLOWLY. Reprinted by permission of Faber & Faber Ltd.

Guest, Barbara: "Twilight Polka Dots" from FAIR REALISM (Los Angeles: Green Integer Books, 1989), pp. 55-56.

Copyright © 1989 by Barbara Guest. Reprinted with the permission of the author and publisher. "Roses" from SELECTED

POEMS. Copyright © 1995, 1993, 1989, 1976, 1973, 1968, 1962 by Barbara Guest. Reprinted with the permission of the author.

Gunn, Thom: "All Do Not All Things Well, Black Jackets," "From the Wave," "A Map of the City," "The Missing," "My Sad Captains," and "On the Move" from COLLECTED POEMS by Thom Gunn. Copyright © 1994 by Thom Gunn.

Reprinted by permission of Farrar, Straus and Giroux, LLC and Faber & Faber Ltd.

Gurney, Ivor: "To His Love," "The Silent One," and "First Time" from COLLECTED POEMS OF IVOR GURNEY (1982), ed. by P. J. Kavanagh. Reprinted with the permission of Carcanet Press Ltd.

Hall, Daniel: "Mangosteens" by Daniel Hall first appeared in THE NEW REPUBLIC, Dec. 6, 1993. Copyright © 1993 by Daniel Hall. Reprinted by permission of the author. "Love-Letter-Burning" from HERMIT WITH LANDSCAPE, copyright

© 1990 by Daniel Hall. Reprinted by permission of Yale University Press.

Hall, Donald: "Exile" from THE ALLIGATOR BRIDE: POEMS NEW AND SELECTED by Donald Hall. Copyright © 1983

by Donald Hall. Reprinted by permission of the author.

"Independence Day Letter" from WITHOUT: POEMS by Donald Hall. Copyright © 1998 by Donald Hall. "Prophecy"

from THE ONE DAY by Donald Hall. Copyright © 1988 by Donald Hall. Reprinted by permission of Houghton Mifflin Co. All rights reserved.

Hamer, Richard, tr.: “Riddles 1, 2, 3,” “The Wife’s Lament,” and excerpt from “The Seafarer” from A CHOICE OF ANGLO-SAXON VERSE. Copyright © 1970 by Richard Hamer. Reprinted with the permission of Faber & Faber Ltd.

Harrison, Tony: “On Not Being Milton,” “Classics Society,” “Them & [uz] I & II,” “A Kumquat for John Keats,” and “The Heartless Art” from SELECTED POEMS, 2nd ed. Copyright © 1984, 1987 by Tony Harrison. Reprinted with the permission of Gordon Dickerson.

Hass, Robert: “Tahoe in August” from HUMAN WISHES by Robert Hass. Copyright © 1989 by Robert Hass. Reprinted by permission of HarperCollins Publishers, Inc. “Meditation at Lagunitas” from PRAISE by Robert Hass. Copyright © 1974, 1975, 1976, 1977, 1978, 1979 by Robert Hass. First published by The Ecco Press in 1979. Reprinted by permission.

Hayden, Robert: ” ‘Mystery Boy’ Looks for Kin in Nashville,” “Night, Death, Mississippi,” copyright © 1962, 1966 by Robert Hayden. “Mourning Poem for the Queen of Sunday,” copyright © 1966 by Robert Hayden. “Paul Laurence Dunbar,”

copyright © 1978 by Robert Hayden. “Those Winter Sundays,” copyright © 1966 by Robert Hayden. From COLLECTED

POEMS OF ROBERT HAYDEN by Robert Hayden, ed. by Frederick Glaysher. Copyright © 1985 by Emma Hayden. Used by permission of Liveright Publishing Corp.

Heaney, Seamus: From BEOWULF, tr. by Seamus Heaney. Copyright © 2000 by Seamus Heaney. Used by permission of W. W. Norton & Co., Inc. and Faber & Faber Ltd. Excerpt from “Clearances,” “Digging,” “A Dream of Jealousy,” “The Forge,” “Fosterling,” “Punishment,” “The Settle Bed,” “The Skunk,” “The Skylight,” excerpt from “Squarings,” excerpt from

“Station Island,” and “Two Lorries” from OPENED
GROUND: SELECTED POEMS 1966-1996 by Seamus
Heaney.

Copyright © 1998 by Seamus Heaney. “Casting and
Gathering” from SEEING THINGS by Seamus Heaney.
Copyright

© 1991 by Seamus Heaney. Reprinted by permission of Farrar,
Straus & Giroux, LLC and Faber & Faber Ltd.

Hecht, Anthony: “Death the Painter,” copyright © 1995 by
Anthony Hecht. Reprinted by permission of the author. “A
Hill,”

“The Ghost in the Martini,” “Still Life,” and “The Dover
Bitch” from COLLECTED EARLIER POEMS by Anthony
Hecht, copyright © 1990 by Anthony E. Hecht. Used by
permission of Alfred A. Knopf, a division of Random House,
Inc. and the author. “The Book of Yolek” from THE
TRANSPARENT MAN by Anthony Hecht, copyright © 1990
by Anthony E. Hecht.

Used by permission of Alfred A. Knopf, a division of Random
House, Inc.

Hill, Geoffrey: “The Laurel Axe” and “Lachrimae Verae” first
published in TENEBRAE (1978), copyright © 1978, 1985 by
Geoffrey Hill. “Veni Coronaberis,” “The Distant Fury of
Battle,” and “The Guardians” first published in FORTHE
UNFALLEN (1959), copyright © 1959, 1985 by Geoffrey
Hill. “September Song” first published in KING LOG (1968),
copyright

© 1968, 1985 by Geoffrey Hill. VI, VII, VIII first published in
MERCIAN HYMNS (1971), copyright © 1971, 1985 by
Geoffrey Hill. From NEW AND COLLECTED POEMS,
1952-1992 by Geoffrey Hill. Copyright © 1994 by Geoffrey
Hill.

Published in Great Britain in COLLECTED POEMS by
Geoffrey Hill. Reprinted by permission of Houghton Mifflin
Co.

and Penguin Books Ltd. All rights reserved.

2144 / PERMISSIONS ACKNOWLEDGMENTS

Hine, Daryl: "Letting Go" and "Riddle" from POSTSCRIPTS by Daryl Hine, copyright © 1990 by Daryl Hine. Used by permission of Alfred A. Knopf, a division of Random House, Inc.

Hollander, John: "Swan and Shadow" from TYPES OF SHAPE (New Haven: Yale Univ. Press, 1991). Reprinted by permission of the author. "Adam's Task" from SELECTED POETRY by John Hollander, copyright © 1993 by John Hollander.

"An Old-Fashioned Song" and "Variations on a Fragment by Trumbull Stickney" from TESSARAE AND OTHER POEMS by John Hollander, copyright © 1993 by John Hollander. Used by permission of Alfred A. Knopf, a division of Random House, Inc.

Hope, A. D.: "Imperial Adam," "Australia," "Advice to Young Ladies," and "Inscription for War" by A. D. Hope from COLLECTED POEMS 1930-1970. Reprinted by permission of Curtis Brown Pty Ltd.

Housman, A. E.: "Crossing Alone the Nighted Ferry" and "Here Dead Lie We Because We Did Not Choose" from THE COLLECTED POEMS OF A. E. HOUSMAN. Copyright © 1936 by Barclays Bank Ltd., © 1964 by Robert E. Symons,

© 1965 by Henry Holt and Co. Reprinted by permission of Henry Holt and Co., LLC and The Society of Authors as the Literary Representative of the Estate of A. E. Housman.

"Loveliest of Trees, the Cherry Now," "Reveille," "When I Watch the Living Meet," "To an Athlete Dying Young," "Is My Team Ploughing," "On Wenlock Edge the Wood's in Trouble," "From Far, from Eve and Morning," "With Rue My Heart Is Laden," "Terence, This Is Stupid Stuff . . . , "

"Astronomy," "Epitaph on an Army of Mercenaries," "Crossing Alone the Nighted Ferry," and "Here Dead Lie We Because We Did Not Choose." Reprinted by permission of

The Society of Authors as the Literary Representative of the Estate of A. E. Housman.

Howard, Richard: “Nikolaus Mardruz to his Master Ferdinand, Count of Tyrol, 1565” first appeared in THE YALE REVIEW, 83, #3 (July 1995). Copyright © 1995 by Richard Howard. Reprinted by permission of the author.

Hughes, Langston: From THE COLLECTED POEMS OF LANGSTON HUGHES by Langston Hughes, copyright © 1994

by The Estate of Langston Hughes. Used by permission of Alfred A. Knopf, a division of Random House, Inc. and Harold Ober Associates, Inc.

Hughes, Ted: “The Thought-Fox,” “Wind,” “Pike,” “Theology,” Examination at the Womb Door,” “Daffodils,” and “Platform One” from COLLECTED POEMS by Ted Hughes. Copyright © 2003 by The Estate of Ted Hughes. Reprinted by permission of Farrar, Straus, & Giroux, LLC and Faber & Faber Ltd.

Hugo, Richard: “The Lady in Kicking Horse Reservoir,” copyright © 1973 by Richard Hugo. “The Way a Ghost Dissolves,”

from MAKING CERTAIN IT GOES ON: COLLECTED POEMS OF RICHARD HUGO by Richard Hugo. Copyright© 1984 by The Estate of Richard Hugo. Used by permission of W. W. Norton & Co., Inc.

Jackson, **Laura** Riding: From THE POEMS OF LAURA RIDING. Copyright © 2001 by the Board of Literary Management of the late Laura (Riding) Jackson. Reprinted by permission of Persea Books, Inc. (New York).

Jacobsen, Josephine: “Bus,” “The Primer,” and “Hourglass” from NEW AND SELECTED POEMS by Josephine Jacobsen.

Copyright © 1974 by Josephine Jacobsen. Reprinted with the permission of the author.

Jarrell, Randall: “The Death of the Ball Turret Gunner,” “Eighth Air Force,” “A Field Hospital,” “A Front,” “A Man Meets a Woman in the Street,” “Next Day,” and “90 North” from THE COMPLETE POEMS by Randall Jarrell. Copyright ©

1969, renewed 1997 by Mary von S. Jarrell. Reprinted by permission of Farrar, Straus & Giroux, LLC and Faber & Faber Ltd.

Jeffers, Robinson: “Hurt Hawks” from SELECTED POEMS, copyright © 1927 by R. Jeffers, renewed © 1955 by Robinson Jeffers. “Shine, Perishing Republic,” “Boats in a Fog,” “The Purse-Seine,” and “Birds and Fishes” from THE SELECTED POETRY OF ROBINSON JEFFERS. Copyright © 1924, 1925, 1928, 1937, 1954 and renewed 1949, 1953, 1956 by Robinson Jeffers. Copyright © 1963 by Steuben Glass. Reprinted with the permission of Jeffers Literary Properties.

Jennings, Elizabeth: “One Flesh” and “My Grandmother” from COLLECTED POEMS 1953-1985 (Carcenet Press Ltd.). Reprinted by permission of David Higham Associates.

Justice, Donald: From NEW AND SELECTED POEMS by Donald Justice, copyright © 1995 by Donald Justice. Used by permission of Alfred A. Knopf, a division of Random House, Inc.

Kiivanagh, Patrick: “Sanctity,” excerpt from “The Great Hunger,” “Epic,” and “Canal Bank Walk” from COLLECTED POEMS (N.Y.: W. W. Norton & Co, Inc., 1964). Copyright © 1964 by Patrick Kavanagh. Reprinted with the permission of Devin-Adair Publishers, Inc., Old Greenwich, CT 06830.

Kees, Weldon: “What the Spider Heard,” “Robinson,” “When the Lease Is Up,” and “For H. V.” reprinted from THE COLLECTED POEMS OF WELDON KEES, ed. by Donald Justice, by permission of the University of Nebraska Press. Copyright © 1975 by the University of Nebraska Press. Copyright © renewed by the University of Nebraska Press.

Kenney, Richard: “Aubade,” “Apples on Champlain,” and “Sawmill” from ORRERY. Copyright © 1985 by Richard

Kenney.

Reprinted by permission of the author.

Keyes, Sidney: “War Poet,” “Elegy,” and excerpt from “The Foreign Gate” from COLLECTED POEMS OF SIDNEY KEYES, ed. by Michael Meyer (Routledge, 1988). Reprinted by permission of David Higham Associates.

Kinnell, Galway: “First Song” from WHAT A KINGDOM IT WAS by Galway Kinnell. Copyright © 1960, renewed 1988 by Galway Kinnell. “The Correspondence School Instructor Says Goodbye to His Poetry Students” and “After Making Love, We Hear Footsteps” from THREE BOOKS by Galway Kinnell. Copyright © 1993 by Galway Kinnell. Reprinted by permission of Houghton Mifflin Co. All rights reserved.

Kinsella, Thomas: “Ancestor,” “Tear,” and “Another September” from POEMS 1956-1973. Copyright © 1956, 1968, 1979

by Thomas Kinsella. Reprinted with the permission of Wake Forest University Press.

Kipling, Rudyard: “Tommy,” “Recessional,” and “Epitaphs of the War” from RUDYARD KIPLING’S VERSE: DEFINITIVE

EDITION. Reprinted with the permission of A. P. Watt Ltd. on behalf of the National Trust for Places of Historic Interest of Natural Beauty.

Kizer, Carolyn: “The Erotic Philosophers” from COOL, CALM & COLLECTED: POEMS 1960-2000. Copyright © 2001

by Carolyn Kizer. Reprinted with the permission of Copper Canyon Press, P.O. Box 271, Port Townsend, WA 98368-0271.

Koch, Kenneth: “To My Twenties” from NEW ADDRESSES by Kenneth Koch. Reprinted by permission of the Kenneth Koch Literary Estate. “Energy in Sweden” from ONE TRAIN by Kenneth Koch (N.Y.: Alfred A. Knopf, 1994). Copyright

© 1994 by Kenneth Koch. “Permanently,” “You Were Wearing,” and “Variations on a Theme by William Carlos

Williams”

**PERMISSIONS A C K N O W L E D G M E N T S /
2 1 4 5**

from THANK YOU AND OTHER POEMS (N.Y.: Grove Press, 1962). Copyright © 1962 and renewed 1990 by Kenneth Koch. Reprinted by permission of the author.

Komunyakaa, Yusef: “Banking Potatoes,” “The Smokehouse,” and “Sunday Afternoons” from MAGIC CITY. Copyright ©

1992 by Yusef Komunyakaa. “Facing It” from PLEASURE DOME. Copyright © 2001 by Yusef Komunyakaa. Reprinted with the permission of Wesleyan University Press.

Kunitz, Stanley: “He,” “Robin Redbreast,” and “Touch Me” from THE COLLECTED POEMS by Stanley Kunitz. Copyright

© 2000 by Stanley Kunitz. Used by permission of W. W. Norton & Co., Inc.

Larkin, Philip: “Church Going” and “Born Yesterday” from THE LESS DECEIVED by Philip Larkin by permission of The Marvell Press, England and Australia. “Ambulances,” “Aubade,” “An Arundel Tomb,” “The Explosion,” “For Sidney Bechet,”

“MCMXIV,” “Sad Steps,” “Talking in Bed,” “This Be The Verse,” “The Trees,” and “The Whitsun Weddings” from COLLECTED POEMS by Philip Larkin. Copyright © 1988, 1989 by the Estate of Philip Larkin. Reprinted by permission of Farrar, Straus & Giroux, LLC and Faber & Faber Ltd.

Lawrence, D. H.: “Snake,” “Elemental,” “Self-Protection,” “Trees in the Garden,” “The English Are So Nice!” “Andraitx

—

Pomegranate Flowers,” “Bavarian Gentians,” and “The Ship of Death” from THE COMPLETE POEMS OF D. H.

LAWRENCE by D. H. Lawrence, ed. by V. de Sola Pinto and F. W. Roberts, copyright © 1964, 1971 by Angelo Ravagli and C. M. Weekley, Executors of the Estate of Frieda Lawrence

Ravagli. Used by permission of Viking Penguin, a division of Penguin Group (USA), Inc.

Layton, Irving: “The Birth of Tragedy,” “Berry Picking,” and “The Cold Green Element” from THE COLLECTED POEMS OF IRVING LAYTON. Used by permission of McClelland & Stewart Ltd. The Canadian Publishers.

Lee, Li-Young: “Persimmons” from ROSE. Copyright © 1986 by Li-Young Lee. “Out of Hiding” from BOOK OF MY NIGHTS. Copyright © 2001 by Li-Young Lee. Reprinted with the permission of BOA Editions Ltd.

Leithauser, Brad: “Old Bachelor Brother” from THE MAIL FROM ANYWHERE by Brad Leithauser, copyright © 1990 by Brad Leithauser. “The Buried Graves” and “In Minako Wada’s House” from CATS OF THE TEMPLE by Brad Leithauser, copyright © 1986 by Brad Leithauser. Used by permission of Alfred A. Knopf, a division of Random House, Inc.

Levertov, Denise: “Caedmon” from BREATHING THE WATER, copyright © 1987 by Denise Levertov. “Scenes from the Life of the Peppertrees” and “Triple Feature” from COLLECTED EARLIER POEMS 1940-1960, copyright © 1957, 1958, 1959, 1960, 1961, 1979 by Denise Levertov. “O Taste and See” from POEMS 1960-1967, copyright © 1964 by Denise Levertov. “Tenebrae” from POEMS 1968—1972, copyright © 1968 by Denise Levertov. Reprinted by permission of New Directions Publishing Corp. and Pollinger Ltd.

Levine, Philip: “They Feed They Lion” and “You Can Have It” from NEW SELECTED POEMS by Philip Levine, copyright

© 1991 by Philip Levine. “The Simple Truth” from THE SIMPLE TRUTH by Philip Levine, copyright © 1994 by Philip Levine. Used by permission of Alfred A. Knopf, a division of Random House, Inc.

Lewis, Alun: “All Day It Has Rained” from RAIDER’S DAWN by Alun Lewis. Copyright © 1941 by Alun Lewis.

“Song” and

“Goodbye” from HA! HA! AMONG THE TRUMPETS by Alun Lewis. Copyright © 1945 by Alun Lewis. Reprinted by permission of HarperCollins Publishers Ltd.

Lewis, C. Day: “Two Songs” and “Where are the War Poets” from THE COMPLETE POEMS OF C. DAY LEWIS, published by Sinclair-Stevenson (1992), copyright © 1992 in this edition, and the Estate of C. Day Lewis. Reprinted by permission of Random House Group Ltd.

Longley, Michael: “Gorse Fires” and “Ghetto” from GORSE FIRES. Copyright © 1991 by Michael Longley. “The Linen Industry” from POEMS 1963-1983. Copyright © 1983 by Michael Longley. Reprinted with the permission of the author and Wake Forest University Press.

Lorde, Audre: “Coal” from UNDERSONG: CHOSEN POEMS OLD AND NEW by Audre Lorde. Copyright © 1973, 1970, 1968 by Audre Lorde. Used by permission of W. W. Norton & Co., Inc. and Abner Stein Ltd. “Echoes” from THE MARVELOUS ARITHMETICS OF DISTANCE: POEMS 1987-1992 by Audre Lorde. Copyright © 1993 by Audre Lorde. Used by permission of W. W. Norton & Co., Inc. and Abner Stein Ltd. “From the House of Yemanjá” from THE BLACK UNICORN by Audre Lorde. Copyright © 1978 by Audre Lorde. Used by permission of W. W. Norton & Co., Inc.

Lowell, Robert: “The Quaker Graveyard in Nantucket” and “Mr. Edwards and the Spider” from LORD WEARY’S CASTLE, copyright © 1946 and renewed 1974 by Robert Lowell, reprinted by permission of Harcourt, Inc. and Faber & Faber Ltd.

“Epilogue,” “For the Union Dead,” “Harriet” (p. 607), “My Last Afternoon with Uncle Devereux Winslow,” “Skunk Hour,”

and “Water” from COLLECTED POEMS by Robert Lowell. Copyright © 2003 by Harriet Lowell and Sheridan Lowell.

Reprinted by permission of Farrar, Straus & Giroux, LLC and Faber & Faber Ltd.

Lowry, Malcolm: "Delirium in Vera Cruz" and "Strange Type" from *SELECTED POEMS OF MALCOLM LOWRY*, ed. by Earle Birney with the assistance of Margerie Lowry. Copyright © 1962 by Margerie Lowry. Reprinted by permission of City Lights Books. "The Wild Cherry" and "Eye-Opener" from *THE COLLECTED POETRY OF MALCOLM LOWRY*, ed. by Kathleen Scherf. Copyright by The Estate of Malcolm Lowry. Reprinted by permission of SLL/Sterling Lord Literistic, Inc.

MacCaig, Norman: "Kingfisher," "Summer Farm," and "Return to Scalpay" from *COLLECTED POEMS* by Norman MacCaig, published by Chatto & Windus. Used by permission of The Random House Group Ltd.

MacDiarmid, Hugh: "Another Epitaph on an Army of Mercenaries," from *SELECTED POETRY*, ed. by Alan Riach and Michael Grieve. Copyright © 1992 by Michael Grieve. Reprinted by permission of New Directions Publishing Corp. and Carcanet Press Ltd. Excerpt from "Lament for the Great Music" and excerpt from "In Memoriam James Joyce" from *COMPLETE POEMS*, ed. by Michael Grieve and W. R. Aitken (1993). Copyright © 1993 by Michael Grieve. Reprinted by permission of Carcanet Press Ltd.

MacLeish, Archibald: "Ars Poetica" and "The Snowflake Which Is Now and Hence Forever" from *COLLECTED POEMS*

1917-1982 by Archibald MacLeish. Copyright © 1985 by The Estate of Archibald MacLeish. Reprinted by permission of Houghton Mifflin Co. All rights reserved.

MacNeice, Louis: Excerpt from "Autumn Journal," "The Sunlight on the Garden," "Bagpipe Music," "London Rain," and

"Star-Gazer" from *THE COLLECTED POEMS OF LOUIS MACNEICE*, ed. by E. R. Dodds. Published by Faber & Faber Ltd. Reprinted with the permission of David Higham Associates Ltd.

2146 / PERMISSIONS ACKNOWLEDGMENTS

MacPherson, Jay: "The Swan" and "A Lost Soul" from
POEMS TWICE TOLD: THE BOATMAN AND
WELCOMING

DISASTER. Copyright © 1981 Oxford University Press.
Reprinted by permission of Oxford University Press Canada.

Mahon, Derek: "A Disused Shed in Co. Wexford," "In
Carrowdore Churchyard," and "Girls on the Bridge" from
COLLECTED POEMS by Derek Mahon (1999) and "The
Window" are reprinted by kind permission of the author c/o
The Gallery Press, Loughcrew, Oldcastle, County Meath,
Ireland.

Martinez, Dionisio D.: "In a Duplex Near the San Andreas
Fault" and "What the Men Talk About When the Women
Leave the Room: Steiglitz" from BAD ALCHEMY by
Dionisio D. Martinez. Copyright © 1995 by Dionisio D.
Martinez. Used by permission of W. W. Norton & Co., Inc.

Maxwell, Glyn: Excerpt from "Letters to Edward Thomas"
from THE BREAKAGE by Glyn Maxwell (Faber & Faber,
1988).

Copyright © 1988 by Glyn Maxwell. Reprinted by permission
of Zachary Shuster Harmsworth on behalf of the author.

Meredith, William: "The Illiterate" and "Rhode Island" from
EFFORT AT SPEECH: NEW AND SELECTED POEMS by
William Meredith, published by TriQuarterly
Books/Northwestern University Press in 1997. Copyright ©
1997 by William Meredith. All rights reserved. Used by
permission of Northwestern University Press and the author.

Merrill, James: "Arabian Night" from COLLECTED POEMS
by James Merrill, ed. by J. D. McClatchy and Stephen Yenser,
copyright © 2001 by the Literary Estate of James Merrill at
Washington University. Used by permission of Alfred A.
Knopf, a division of Random House, Inc. "The Broken
Home," "The Victor Dog," "Lost in Translation" from FROM
THE FIRST

NINE: POEMS 1946-1976 by James Merrill. Copyright ©
1981, 1982 by James Merrill. Reprinted by permission of the

Estate of James Merrill. "The Book of Ephraim: C" from THE CHANGING LIGHT AT SANDOVER by James Merrill.

Copyright © 1976 by James Merrill. Reprinted by permission of the Estate of James Merrill.

Merwin, W. S.: "Losing a Language" from THE RAIN IN THE TREES by W. S. Merwin, copyright © 1988 by W. S. Merwin.

"Whoever You Are" from THE RIVER SOUND by W. S. Merwin, copyright © 1999 by W. S. Merwin. Used by permission of Alfred A. Knopf, a division of Random House, Inc. "The Drunk in the Furnace," "Odysseus," and "Separation," copyright

© 2003 by W. S. Merwin. Reprinted with permission from The Wylie Agency.

Millay, Edna St. Vincent: "First Fig," "Second Fig," "Euclid Alone Has Looked on Beauty Bare," "Spring," "I, Being Born a Woman and Distressed," "The Buck in the Snow," "I Dreamed I Moved among the Elysian Fields," "Ragged Island," and

"Armenonville" by Edna St. Vincent Millay. From COLLECTED POEMS, HarperCollins. Copyright © 1922, 1923, 1931, 1950, 1951, 1954, 1958, 1982 by Edna St. Vincent Millay and Norma Millay Ellis. All rights reserved. Reprinted by permission of Elizabeth Barnett, literary executor.

Momaday, N. Scott: "Headwaters," "The Eagle-Feather Fan," "The Gift," and "Two Figures" from THE GOURD DANCER by N. Scott Momaday. Copyright © 1976 by N. Scott Momaday. Reprinted by permission of the author.

Montague, John: "Like Dolmens Round My Childhood, the Old People," "Old Mythology," "The Trout," and "All Legendary Obstacles" from COLLECTED POEMS by John Montague (1995). Reprinted by kind permission of Wake Forest University Press and The Gallery Press, Loughcrew, Oldcastle, County Meath, Ireland, on behalf of the author.

Moore, Marianne: "Poetry," "No Swan So Fine," "The Fish," "A Grave," "To a Steamroller," copyright © 1935 by Marianne

Moore, copyright renewed 1963 by Marianne Moore and T. S. Eliot. "What Are Years?" copyright © 1941 by Marianne Moore, copyright renewed 1972 by Marianne Moore. "Nevertheless," "The Mind Is an Enchanting Thing," copyright ©

1944 by Marianne Moore, copyright renewed 1972 by Marianne Moore. Reprinted with the permission of Scribner, an imprint of Simon & Schuster Adult Publishing Group, and Faber & Faber Ltd. from THE COLLECTED POEMS OF MARIANNE MOORE. "To a Chameleon" from THE COMPLETE POEMS OF MARIANNE MOORE, copyright © 1954

by Marianne Moore, renewed. "The Steeple-Jack" from THE COMPLETE POEMS OF MARIANNE MOORE, copyright © 1951, 1970 by Marianne Moore, renewed 1979 by Lawrence E. Brinn and Louise Crane, Executors of the Estate of Marianne Moore. Used by permission of Viking Penguin, a division of Penguin Group (USA), Inc. and Faber & Faber Ltd.

Moraes, Dom: "Kanheri Caves" and "Rendevous" from "Two from Israel" from IN CINNAMON SHADE: NEW AND SELECTED POEMS (2001) by Dom Moraes. "Snow on a Mountain" from COLLECTED POEMS 1957-1987 by Dom Moraes. Reprinted by permission of Carcanet Press Ltd.

Morgan, Edwin: "Strawberries," "King Billy," and "The Dowser" from COLLECTED POEMS. Copyright © 1982 by Edwin Morgan. Reprinted with the permission of Carcanet Press Ltd.

Moss, Howard: "Tourists" from NEW SELECTED POEMS by Howard Moss (1985). First published in A SWIM OFF THE

ROCKS by Howard Moss. Copyright © 1976 by Howard Moss. "The Persistence of Song" from SELECTED POEMS of Howard Moss. Copyright © 1971 by Howard Moss.

Muir, Edwin: "Adams's Dream," "Childhood," and "The Return of the Greeks" from COLLECTED POEMS by Edwin

Muir, copyright © 1960 by Willa Muir. Used by permission of Oxford University Press, Inc. and Faber & Faber Ltd.

Muldoon, Paul: “Why Brownlee Left” from WHY BROWNLEE LEFT. Copyright © 1980 by Paul Muldoon. “Meeting the British” from MEETING THE BRITISH. Copyright © 1987 by Paul Muldoon. Reprinted with the permission of Wake Forest University Press and Faber & Faber Ltd. “Milkweed and Monarch” and “Third Epistle to Timothy” from POEMS

1968-1998 by Paul Muldoon. Copyright © 2001 by Paul Muldoon. Reprinted by permission of Farrar, Straus & Giroux, LLC and Faber & Faber Ltd.

Murray, Les: “Noonday Axeman” and “The Quality of Sprawl” from THE VERNACULAR REPUBLIC by Les A. Murray.

Copyright © 1983, 1987, 1988 by Les A. Murray. Reprinted by permission of Persea Books, Inc. and Carcanet Press Ltd.

“Once in a Lifetime, Snow” and “Morse” from RABBITER’S BOUNTY by Les Murray. Copyright © 1992 by Les Murray.

Reprinted by permission of Farrar, Straus & Giroux, LLC and Carcanet Press Ltd. Published in Great Britain in COLLECTED POEMS by Les Murray (1998).

Nash, Ogden: “The Cow,” “Reflections on Ice-Breaking,” “Requiem,” “Columbus,” and “The Turtle,” copyright © 1930, 1931, 1938 by Ogden Nash, renewed. Reprinted by permission of Curtis Brown, Ltd. from VERSES FROM 1929 ON and Andre Detusch Ltd., c/o Carlton Books from CANDY IS DANDY: THE BEST OF OGDEN NASH.

Nemerov, Howard: “The Goose Fish,” “A Primer of the Daily Round,” “The Blue Swallows,” “Boy with Book of Knowledge,”

“A Cabinet of Seeds Displayed,” and “Strange Metamorphosis of Poets” from THE COLLECTED POEMS OF HOWARD

NEMEROV, copyright © 1977 by Howard Nemerov. Reprinted by permission of Margaret Nemerov.

Nicholson, Norman: "Halley's Comet" from COLLECTED POEMS by Norman Nicholson. Reprinted by permission of Davis Higham Associates Ltd. "To the River Duddon" is reprinted by permission of Faber & Faber Ltd.

PERMISSIONS ACKNOWLEDGMENTS / 2147

O'Brien, Sean: "Cousin Coat" from COUSIN COAT: SELECTED POEMS, 1976-2001 by Sean O'Brien and "Welcome, Major Poet!" from DOWNRIVER by Sean O'Brien. Reprinted by permission of the publisher Pan Macmillan, London, UK.

O'Hara, Frank: "Why I Am Not a Painter," from COLLECTED POEMS by Frank O'Hara, copyright © 1971 by Maureen Granville-Smith, Administratrix of the Estate of Frank O'Hara. Used by permission of Alfred A. Knopf, a division of Random House, Inc. "The Day Lady Died," "How to Get There," and "Ave Maria" from LUNCH POEMS by Frank O'Hara.

Copyright © 1964 by Frank O'Hara. Reprinted by permission of City Lights Books.

Olson, Charles: "Merce of Egypt" and "Variations Done for Gerald Van de Wiele" from COLLECTED POETRY OF

CHARLES OLSON, tr. and ed. by George Butterick. Copyright © 1987 Estate of Charles Olson (previously published poetry), © 1987 University of Connecticut (previously unpublished poetry). Reprinted with the permission of the University of California Press.

Ondaatje, Michael: "Driving with Dominic in the Southern Province We See Hints of the Circus" and "House on a Red Cliff" from HANDWRITING by Michael Ondaatje, copyright © 1987 by Michael Ondaatje. Used by permission of Ellen Levine Literary Agency/Trident Media Group and Bloomsbury Publishing PLC. "Letters and Other Worlds" from THE

CINNAMON PEELER, copyright © 1979, 1989 by Michael Ondaatje. Reprinted by permission of Alfred A. Knopf, a

division of Random House, Inc. and Ellen Levine Literary Agency/Trident Media Group.

Ormond, John: “Cathedral Builders” and “Lament for a Leg” from CATHEDRAL BUILDERS AND OTHER POEMS by John Ormond (1991). Reprinted by permission of Glenys Ormond Thomas.

Ormsby, Eric: “Starfish” and “Skunk Cabbage” from COASTLINES by Eric Ormsby. Copyright © 1992 by Eric Ormsby.

Reprinted by permission of ECW Press, Toronto, Canada. “Origins” from FOR A MODEST GOD by Eric Ormsby. Copyright © 1997 by Eric Ormsby. Used by permission of Grove/Atlantic, Inc.

Page, P. K.: “Stories of Snow” and “Deaf-Mute in the Pear Tree” from THE HIDDEN ROOM (in 2 vols.) by P. K. Page (Erin, Ontario: The Porcupine’s Quill, 1997). Reprinted by permission of the publisher.

Palmer, Michael: “I Do Not” from THE PROMISES OF GLASS, copyright © 1999 by Michael Palmer. Reprinted by permission of New Directions Publishing Corp. “Of this cloth doll which” from FIRST FIGURE, copyright © 1984 by Michael Palmer. Reprinted by permission of the author.

Parker, Dorothy: “Unfortunate Coincidence,” “Resume,” and “One Perfect Rose” from DOROTHY PARKER: COMPLETE POEMS, published in Great Britain in THE COLLECTED DOROTHY PARKER. Copyright © 1999 by The National Association for the Advancement of Colored People. Reprinted by permission of Penguin, a division of Penguin Group (USA), Inc. and Gerald Duckworth & Co. Ltd.

“Pearl”: Excerpt from PEARL, by anonymous, ed. and tr. by Sara de Ford and others. Copyright © 1967 by Harlan Davidson, Inc. Reprinted by permission.

Pinsky, Robert: “Essay on Psychiatrists, IV and V” from SADNESS AND HAPPINESS, copyright © 1975 by Princeton University Press. Reprinted with the permission of the author and the publisher. “ABC” from JERSEY RAIN by

Robert Pinsky. Copyright © 2000 by Robert Pinsky. “A Long Branch Song” and “The Street” from *THE FIGURED WHEEL: NEW AND COLLECTED POEMS 1966-1996* by Robert Pinsky. Copyright © 1996 by Robert Pinsky. Reprinted by permission of Farrar, Straus & Giroux, LLC.

Plath, Sylvia: “Ariel,” “Elm,” “Tulips,” “Morning Song,” “Lady Lazarus,” and “Daddy” from *ARIEL* by Sylvia Plath. Copyright

© 1961, 1962, 1963, 1965 by Ted Hughes. Copyright renewed. From *ARIEL* by Sylvia Plath. Reprinted by permission of HarperCollins Publishers, Inc. and Faber & Faber Ltd. “Colossus” from *THE COLOSSUS AND OTHER POEMS* by Sylvia Plath, copyright © 1962 by Sylvia Plath. Used by permission of Alfred A. Knopf, a division of Random House, Inc.

and Faber & Faber Ltd.

Porter, Peter: “A Consumer’s Report,” “An Angel in Blythburgh Church,” and “An Exequy” from *COLLECTED POEMS*.

Copyright © 1983 by Peter Porter. Reprinted with permission of the author.

Pound, Ezra: “Portrait d’une Femme,” “The Garden,” “A Pact,” “Ts’ai Chi’h,” “In a Station of the Metro,” “The River-Merchant’s Wife: a Letter,” “Hugh Selwyn Mauberley: Life and Contacts,” “Medallion,” and “The Seafarer” from *PERSONAE*, copyright © 1926 by Ezra Pound. Canto I and Canto XLV from *THE CANTOS OF EZRA POUND*, copyright

© 1934, 1937, 1940, 1948, 1956, 1959, 1962, 1963, 1966, and 1968 by Ezra Pound. Reprinted by permission of New Directions Publishing Corp. and Faber & Faber Ltd.

Pratt, E. J.: “Come Not the Seasons Here” and “From Stone to Steel” from E. J. Pratt, *COMPLETE POEMS*, ed. by Sandra Djwa and R. G. Mayles. Copyright © 1989 by University of Toronto Press. Reprinted with permission of the publisher.

Raine, Craig: "The Onion Memory," "A Martian Sends a Postcard Home," and "For Hans Keller" from COLLECTED POEMS, 1978—1999 by Craig Raine. Reprinted by permission of David Godwin Associates on behalf of the author.

Raleigh, Sir Walter: "Fortune Hath Taken Thee Away, My Love" from "A Lost Poem by Queen Elizabeth 1" by L. G. Black, TIMES LITERARY SUPPLEMENT, May 23, 1968, 535. Reprinted by permission.

Ramanujan, A. K.: "Snakes," "Breaded Fish," and "Self-Portrait" from THE STRIDERS by A. K. Ramanujan (1966). Reprinted with the permission of the Estate of A. K. Ramanujan.

Randall, Dudley: "Ballad of Birmingham" from POEM COUNTERPOEM by Margaret Danner and Dudley Randall (Detroit: Broadside Press, 1969). Copyright © 1966 by Margaret Danner and Dudley Randall. Reprinted with the permission of Dudley Randall.

Ransom, John Crowe: From SELECTED POEMS, 3rd ed., revised and enlarged by John Crowe Ransom, copyright © 1924, 1927 by Alfred A. Knopf, Inc. and renewed 1952, 1955 by John Crowe Ransom. Used by permission of Alfred A. Knopf, a division of Random House, Inc. and Carcanet Press Ltd.

Reed, Henry: "Chard Whitlow" and "Lessons of War 1, 2" from COLLECTED POEMS of Henry Reed (1991), ed. by Jon Stallworthy. Reprinted by permission of Oxford University Press (UK).

Rich, Adrienne: Parts 1 and 8 of "Eastern War Time" from AN ATLAS OF THE DIFFICULT WORLD: POEMS 1988-1991 by Adrienne Rich. Copyright © 1991 by Adrienne Rich. "Modotti" from MIDNIGHT SALVAGE: POEMS 1995-1998 by Adrienne Rich. Copyright © 1999 by Adrienne Rich. "Aunt Jennifer's Tigers," copyright © 2002, 1951 by Adrienne Rich. "Snapshots of a Daughter-in-Law," copyright © 2002, 1967, 1963 by Adrienne Rich. "Orion," copyright © 2002 by

Adrienne Rich. Copyright © 1969 by W. W. Norton & Co., Inc. “A Valediction Forbidding Mourning,” copyright © 2002

2148 / PERMISSIONS ACKNOWLEDGMENTS

by Adrienne Rich. Copyright © 1971 by W. W. Norton & Co., Inc. “Diving into the Wreck,” copyright © 2002 by Adrienne Rich. Copyright © 1973 by W. W. Norton & Co., Inc. from THE FACT OF A DOORFRAME: SELECTED POEMS

1950-2001 by Adrienne Rich. Used by permission of the author and W. W. Norton & Co., Inc.

Robinson, Edward Arlington: “Richard Cory,” “George Crabbe,” “Reuben Bright,” “Miniver Cheevy,” “The Mill,” “Mr.

Flood’s Party” are reprinted with the permission of Scribner, an imprint of Simon & Schuster, Adult Publishing Group, from THE COLLECTED POEMS OF EDWIN ARLINGTON ROBINSON by Edwin Arlington Robinson (N.Y.: Macmillan, 1961).

Roethke, Theodore: “Root Cellar,” copyright © 1943 by Modern Poetry Association, Inc. “Child on Top of a Greenhouse,”

copyright © 1946 by Editorial Publications, Inc. “My Papa’s Waltz,” copyright © 1942 by Hearst Magazines, Inc. “The Lost Son,” copyright © 1947 by Theodore Roethke. “Elegy for Jane,” copyright © 1950 by Theodore Roethke. “The Waking,”

copyright © 1953 by Theodore Roethke. “I Knew a Woman,” copyright © 1954 by Theodore Roethke. “Wish for a Young Wife,” copyright © 1963 by Beatrice Roethke, Administratrix of the Estate of Theodore Roethke. “In a Dark Time,”

copyright © 1960 by Beatrice Roethke, Administratrix of the Estate of Theodore Roethke. From THE COMPLETE POEMS OF THEODORE ROETHKE. Used by permission of Doubleday, a division of Random House, Inc. and Faber & Faber Ltd.

Rukeyser, Muriel: "Ballad of Orange and Grape" by Muriel Rukeyser. Copyright © 1973 by Muriel Rukeyser. "Night Feeding"

by Muriel Rukeyser. Copyright © 1951 and renewed 1979 by Muriel Rukeyser. "Rondel" by Muriel Rukeyser. Copyright

© 1973 by Muriel Rukeyser. From A MURIEL RUKEYSER READER, ed. by Jan Heller Levi. Used by permission of W. W. Norton & Co., Inc. "Boy with His Hair Cut Short" by Muriel Rukeyser. Copyright © by William Rukeyser.

Reprinted by permission of International Creative Management, Inc.

Sandburg, Carl: "Chicago" from CHICAGO POEMS, copyright © 1916 by Holt, Rinehart and Winston, Inc. and renewed 1944 by Carl Sandburg, reprinted by permission of Harcourt, Inc. "Grass" from CORNHUSKERS by Carl Sandburg, copyright © 1918 by Holt, Rinehart and Winston and renewed 1946 by Carl Sandburg, reprinted by permission of Harcourt, Inc.

Sarah, Robyn: "Courtney, Mentioned in Passing, Years After" and "Relics" from QUESTIONS ABOUT THE STARS (Brick Books, 1998). Reprinted with permission of the author.

Sassoon, Siegfried: "They," "The General," "Glory of Women," "Everyone Sang," "On Passing the New Menin Gate" from COLLECTED POEMS OF SIEGFRIED SASSOON by Siegfried Sassoon, copyright © 1918, 1920 by E. P. Dutton.

Copyright © 1936, 1946, 1947, 1948 by Siegfried Sassoon. Used by permission of Viking Penguin, a division of Penguin Group (USA), Inc. and by kind permission of George Sassoon. "Christ and the Soldier" (1973) is used by kind permission of George Sassoon. Copyright © Siegfried Sassoon.

Schnackenberg, Gjertrud: "Darwin in 1881" and "Supernatural Love" from SUPERNATURAL LOVE: POEMS 1976-1992

by Gjertrud Schnackenberg. Copyright © 2000 by Gjertrud Schnackenberg. Reprinted by permission of Farrar, Straus & Giroux, LLC and Bloodaxe Books Ltd.

Schuyler, James: "Freely Espousing" and "Shimmer" from COLLECTED POEMS by James Schuyler. Copyright © 1993 by the Estate of James Schuyler. Reprinted by permission of Farrar, Straus & Giroux, LLC.

Seeger, Pete: "Where Have All the Flowers Gone?" Copyright © 1961 (Renewed) by Sanga Music, Inc. Reprinted with the permission of Sanga Music, Inc. Used by permission. All rights reserved.

Seth, Vikram: From THE GOLDEN GATE by Vikram Seth, copyright © 1986 by Vikram Seth. Used by permission of Random House, Inc.

Sexton, Anne: "The Truth the Dead Know" from ALL MY PRETTY ONES by Anne Sexton. Copyright © 1982 by Anne Sexton, renewed 1990 by Linda G. Sexton. "And One for My Dame" from LIVE OR DIE by Anne Sexton. Copyright © 1966 by Anne Sexton, renewed 1994 by Linda G. Sexton. Reprinted by permission of Houghton Mifflin Co. and Sterling Lord Literistic, Inc. All rights reserved.

Shore, Jane: "High Holy Days" from THE MINUTE HAND (Amherst: University of Massachusetts Press, 1987). Copyright

© 1987 by Jane Shore. Reprinted by permission of the publisher.

Simic, Charles: "Prodigy" and "Watch Repair" from CHARLES SIMIC: SELECTED EARLY POEMS. Copyright © 1999

by Charles Simic. Reprinted by permission of George Braziller, Inc. "A Book Full of Pictures" from HOTEL INSOMNIA by Charles Simic, copyright © 1992 by Charles Simic, reprinted by permission of Harcourt, Inc. "Cameo Appearance"

from WALKING THE BLACK CAT, copyright © 1996 by Charles Simic, reprinted by permission of Harcourt, Inc.

Sissman, L. E.: "Dying: An Introduction, IV and V" and "A Deathplace" from NIGHT MUSIC: POEMS by L. E. Sissman,

ed. by Peter Davison. Copyright © 1999 by The President and Fellows of Harvard College. Reprinted by permission of Houghton Mifflin Co. All rights reserved.

Smith, Stevie: From COLLECTED POEMS OF STEVIE SMITH, copyright © 1972 by Stevie Smith. Reprinted by permission of New Directions Publishing Corp. and the estate of James MacGibbon.

Snodgrass, W. D.: From HEART'S NEEDLE by W. D. Snodgrass, copyright © 1959 by William Snodgrass. Used by permission of Alfred A. Knopf, a division of Random House, Inc. and The Marvell Press. "Mementos, 1" from AFTER EXPERIENCE: POEMS AND TRANSLATIONS, copyright © 1967 by W. D. Snodgrass. Reprinted with permission of the author.

Snyder, Gary: "Four Poems for Robin" from THE BACK COUNTRY, copyright © 1968 by Gary Snyder. Reprinted by permission of New Directions Publishing Corp. "Instructions" from MOUNTAINS AND RIVERS WITHOUT END by Gary Snyder. Copyright © 1996 by Gary Snyder. Reprinted by permission of Counterpoint Press, a member of Perseus Books, LLC. "Above Pate Valley" from RIPRAP AND COLD MOUNTAIN POEMS, copyright © 1959 by Gary Snyder, is reprinted by permission of Avalon Publishing Group and the author.

Soto, Gary: "The Soup" and "Not Knowing" from NEW AND SELECTED POEMS by Gary Soto. Copyright © 1995 by Gary Soto. Used with permission of Chronicle Books LLC, San Francisco. Visit ChronicleBooks.com.

Soyinka, Wole: "Telephone Conversation," copyright © by Wole Soyinka. Reprinted by permission of the author.

Spender, Stephen: "I Think Continually of Those Who Were Truly Great" by Stephen Spender, copyright © 1964 by Stephen Spender, "Ultima Ratio Regum," copyright © 1942 and renewed 1970 by Stephen Spender, from SELECTED POEMS

**PERMISSIONSACKNOWLEDGMENTS /
2149**

by Stephen Spender. "Seascape," copyright © 1947 by Stephen Spender, from POEMS OF DEDICATION by Stephen Spender. Used by permission of Random House, Inc. and Ed Victor Ltd.

Stein, Gertrude: From "Stanzas in Meditation" from STANZAS IN MEDITATION AND OTHER POEMS. Used by permission of the Estate of Gertrude Stein, through its Literary Executor, Mr. Stanford Gann, Jr. of Levin & Gann, P.A.

Stevens, Wallace: From THE COLLECTED POEMS OF WALLACE STEVENS by Wallace Stevens, copyright © 1954 by Wallace Stevens and renewed 1982 by Holly Stevens. Used by permission of Alfred A. Knopf, a division of Random House, Inc. and Faber & Faber Ltd.

Stevenson, Anne: "Temporarily in Oxford" from THE COLLECTED POEMS 1955-1995 (Bloodaxe Books, 2000) and

"Arioso Dolente" from GRANNY SCARECROW (Bloodaxe Books, 2000). Reprinted by permission of the publisher.

Strand, Mark: "Always" from THE CONTINUOUS LIFE by Mark Strand, copyright © 1990 by Mark Strand. Part XVI and XX from THE DARK HARBOR by Mark Strand, copyright © 1993 by Mark Strand. "The Prediction" from SELECTED

POEMS by Mark Strand, copyright © 1979, 1980 by Mark Strand. Used by permission of Alfred A. Knopf, a division of Random House, Inc.

Swenson, May: "Motherhood" from NATURE by May Swenson. Copyright © 1994 by The Literary Estate of May Swenson.

Reprinted by permission of Houghton Mifflin Co. All rights reserved. "Cardinal Ideograms" from THE COMPLETE

POEMS TO SOLVE by May Swenson. "Waterbird" and "Goodbye, Goldeneye" from IN OTHER WORDS by May Swenson. Used with permission of The Literary Estate of May Swenson.

Tate, Allen: "Ode to the Confederate Dead" and "The Swimmers" from COLLECTED POEMS 1919-1976 by Allen Tate.

Copyright © 1977 by Allen Tate. Reprinted by permission of Farrar, Straus & Giroux, LLC.

Thomas, Dylan: "The Force That Through the Green Fuse Drives the Flower," "The Hand That Signed the Paper," copyright

© 1939 by New Directions Publishing Corp., "After the Funeral," copyright © 1938 by New Directions Publishing Corp.,

"The Hunchback in the Park," copyright © 1943 by New Directions Publishing Corp., "A Refusal to Mourn the Death, by Fire, of a Child in London," "Fern Hill," copyright © 1945 by The Trustees for the Copyrights of Dylan Thomas, "In My Craft or Sullen Art," copyright © 1946 by New Directions Publishing Corp., "Do Not Go Gentle into That Good Night," copyright © 1952 by Dylan Thomas, and "The Conversation of Prayer," copyright © 1967 by The Trustees for the Copyrights of Dylan Thomas, from THE POEMS OF DYLAN THOMAS. Reprinted by permission of New Directions Publishing Corp. and David Higham Associates.

Thomas, R. S.: "Welsh Language," "The View from the Window," "On the Farm," and "Lore" from COLLECTED POEMS, reprinted by permission of J. M. Dent, a division of The Orion Publishing Group, as the publisher.

Tomlinson, Charles: "Farewell to Van Gogh," "The Picture of J.T. in a Prospect of Stone," "Mr. Brodsky" from COLLECTED

POEMS (1987) and "Ararat" from THE RETURN (1987). Reprinted by permission of Carcanet Press Ltd.

Toomer, Jean: "Face," "Georgia Dusk," "Harvest Song," "Portrait in Georgia," "Reapers" from CANE by Jean Toomer.

Copyright © 1923 by Boni & Liveright, renewed 1951 by Jean Toomer. Used by permission of Liveright Publishing Corp.

Updike, John: "V.B. Nimble, V.B. Quick" from COLLECTED POEMS 1953-1993 by John Updike, copyright © 1993 by John Updike. Published in Great Britain in HOPING FOR A HOOPOE by John Updike. Used by permission of Alfred A.

Knopf, a division of Random House, Inc. and Victor Gollancz, a division of The Orion Publishing Group, as the publishers.

"I Missed His Book, But I Read His Name" from COLLECTED POEMS 1953-1993 by John Updike, copyright © 1993

by John Updike. First published in TELEPHONE POLES AND OTHER POEMS by Deutsch 1963, Hamish Hamilton 1993, copyright © 1961, 1993 by John Updike. Used by permission of Alfred A. Knopf, a division of Random House, Inc.

and Penguin Books Ltd.

Van Duyn, Mona: "Letters from a Father" and "Falling in Love at Sixty-Five" from IF IT NOT BE I by Mona Van Duyn, copyright © 1959 by Mona Van Duyn. Used by permission of Alfred A. Knopf, a division of Random House, Inc.

Walcott, Derek: "The Gulf" from THE GULF AND OTHER POEMS by Derek Walcott. Copyright © 1970, renewed 1998

by Derek Walcott. Used by permission of Farrar, Straus & Giroux, LLC and Jonathan Cape c/o The Random House Group Ltd. "XXVII" from Midsummer, "A Far Cry from Africa," "The Glory Trumpeter," "Nights in the Gardens of Port of Spain,"

and "Adios, Carenage" from "The Schooner Flight" from COLLECTED POEMS 1948-1984 by Derek Walcott.

Copyright

© 1986 by Derek Walcott. Reprinted by permission of Farrar, Straus & Giroux, LLC and Faber and Faber Ltd. Excerpt from OMEROS by Derek Walcott. Copyright © 1990 by Derek Walcott. Reprinted by permission of Farrar, Straus & Giroux, LLC and Faber & Faber Ltd.

Walker, Margaret: "Since 1619" and "Childhood" from THIS IS MY CENTURY: NEW AND COLLECTED POEMS by

Margaret Walker. Copyright © 1987 by Margaret Walker.
Reprinted by permission of The University of Georgia Press.

Warren, Robert Penn: “Bearded Oaks,” “Masts at Dawn,”
“Evening Hawk,” and “There’s a Grandfather Clock in the
Hall”

from THE COLLECTED POEMS OF ROBERT PENN
WARREN. Copyright © 1998 by Estate of Robert Penn
Warren.

Reprinted by permission of William Morris Agency, Inc. on
behalf of the Estate of Robert Penn Warren.

Wilbur, Richard: “Piazza di Spagna, Early Morning,” “A
Baroque Wall-Fountain in the Villa Sciarra,” “Love Calls Us
to the Things of This World,” and “A Plain Song for
Comadre” from THINGS OF THIS WORLD, copyright ©
1956 and renewed 1984 by Richard Wilbur, reprinted by
permission of Harcourt, Inc. “Advice to a Prophet,” copyright
© 1959 and renewed 1987 by Richard Wilbur, and “Junk,”
copyright © 1961 and renewed 1989 by Richard Wilbur, from
ADVICE TO A PROPHET AND OTHER POEMS, reprinted
by permission of Harcourt, Inc. “First Snow in Alsace” from
THE BEAUTIFUL CHANGES AND OTHER POEMS,
copyright © 1947 and renewed 1975 by Richard Wilbur,
reprinted by permission of Harcourt, Inc. “Cottage Street,
1953” from THE MIND-READER, copyright © 1972 by
Richard Wilbur, reprinted by permission of Harcourt, Inc. and
Faber & Faber Ltd. “Zea” from MAYFLIES: NEW POEMS
AND TRANSLATIONS, copyright © 2000 by Richard
Wilbur, reprinted by permission of Harcourt, Inc.

Williams, C. K.: “Repression” and “Snow: II” from FLESH
AND BLOOD. Copyright © 1987 by C. K. Williams. “The
Question” from DREAM OF MIND. Copyright © 1992 by C.
K. Williams. These poems were published in SELECTED
POEMS by C. K. Williams. Copyright © 1994 by C. K.
Williams. Reprinted by permission of Farrar, Straus & Giroux,
LLC and Bloodaxe Books Ltd.

Williams, William Carlos: “Danse Russe,” “Portrait of a
Lady,” “The Red Wheelbarrow,” “Queen-Anne’s-Lace,” “This

Is Just to Say,” “Poem,” “The Yachts” from COLLECTED POEMS: 1909-1939, vol. 1, copyright © 1938 by New Directions 2150 / P E R M I S S I O N S A C K N O W L E D G M E N T S

Publishing Corp. “A Sort of a Song,” and “Asphodel, That Greeny Flower, Book I” from COLLECTED POEMS 1939-1962, vol. 2, copyright © 1944 by William Carlos Williams, “Landscape with the Fall of Icarus” from COLLECTED POEMS 1939-1962, vol. 2, copyright © 1953 by William Carlos Williams. Reprinted by permission of New Directions Publishing Corp. and Carcanet Press Ltd.

Williamson, Greg: “Double Exposures, III and XXV” and “New Year’s: A Short Pantoum” from ERRORS IN THE SCRIPT, copyright © 2001 by Greg Williamson. Reprinted with the permission of The Overlook Press. “Outbound” from THE

SILENT PARTNER by Greg Williamson. Reprinted with permission of the author and Story Line Press (www.storylinepress.com).

Wilner, Eleanor: “Reading the Bible Backwards” and “High Noon at Los Alamos” from SARAH’S CHOICE (Chicago: University of Chicago Press, 1989). Reprinted by permission of the author.

Wright, Charles: “Quotations” from APPALACHIA by Charles Wright. Copyright © 1998 by Charles Wright. “As Our Bodies Rise, Our Names Turn into Light” from CHICKAMAUGA by Charles Wright. Copyright © 1995 by Charles Wright.

“Chinese Journal” and “Homage to Claude Lorrain” from THE WORLD OF TEN THOUSAND THINGS: POEMS 1980-1990 by Charles Wright. Copyright © 1990 by Charles Wright. Reprinted by permission of Farrar, Straus & Giroux, LLC.

Wright, James: “A Note Left in Jimmy Leonard’s Shack,” “A Blessing,” and “Speak” from ST. JUDAS. Copyright © 1959

by James Wright. Reprinted by permission of Wesleyan University Press.

Wright, Judith: “Woman to Man,” “Train Journey,” “Eve to Her Daughters,” and “Request to a Year” from *A HUMAN PATTERN: SELECTED POEMS* (ETT Imprint, Sydney, 1996). Reprinted by permission of the publisher.

Wright, Kit: “A Love Song of Tooting,” “Mantles,” “My Version” from *HOPING IT MIGHT BE SO* by Kit Wright (Leviathan, 2000). Reprinted by permission of the author.

Wright, Richard: Reprinted from *HAIKU: THIS OTHER WORLD* by Richard Wright, published by Arcade Publishing, New York, N.Y. Copyright © 1998 by Ellen Wright. Reprinted by permission of the publisher and John Hawkins & Associates, Inc.

Yeats, W. B.: “Sailing to Byzantium,” “Leda and the Swan,” “Among School Children,” copyright © 1928 by The Macmillan Company; copyright renewed 1956 by Georgie Yeats. “Byzantium,” “Crazy Jane Talks with the Bishop,” copyright © 1933

by The Macmillan Company, copyright renewed 1961 by Bertha Georgie Yeats. “Lapis Lazuli,” “Long-Legged Fly,” “The Circus Animals’ Desertion,” “Under Ben Bulbin,” copyright © 1940 by Georgie Yeats, copyright renewed 1968 by Bertha Georgie Yeats, Michael Butler Yeats, and Anne Yeats. Reprinted with the permission of Scribner, an imprint of Simon & Schuster Adult Publishing Group, from *THE COLLECTED WORKS OF W. B. YEATS, VOLUME 1: THE POEMS*, Revised, edited by Richard J. Finneran. Rights in the British Commonwealth excluding Canada were granted by A. P. Watt Ltd. on behalf of Michael B. Yeats.

Zarin, Cynthia: “The Ant Hill” and “Song” from *FIRE LYRIC* by Cynthia Zarin, copyright © 1993 by Cynthia Zarin. Used by permission of Alfred A. Knopf, a division of Random House, Inc.

Every effort has been made to contact the copyright holders of each selection. Rights holders of any selection not credited

should contact W. W. Norton & Co., Inc., 500 Fifth Avenue, New York, NY 10110, for a correction to be made in the next reprinting of our work.

Index

ABC, 1916

After the dread tales and red yarns of the Line,

A Bird, came down the Walk -, 1116

1372

A born salesman, 1764

After the Funeral, 1567

About suffering they were never wrong, 1471

Afterwards, 1162

About the Shark, phlegmatical one, 1055

After you finish your work, 1538

About twilight we came to the whitewashed pub,

Ah, Ben!, 360

1702

Ah, did you once see Shelley plain, 1019

Above Pate Valley, 1816

Ah, fading joy, how quickly art thou past!, 500

Above the fresh ruffles of the surf, 1411

Ah in the thunder air, 1289

A boy who played and talked and read with me, Ah silly pug, wert thou so sore afraid, 143

1753

Ah Sun-flower, 744

A brackish reach of shoal off Madaket, 1 592

Ah! think'st thou, Laura, then, that wealth, 713

A breath leaves the sentences and does not come

Ah what avails the sceptered race, 831
back, 1744
Aiken, Conrad, 1370
A broken ALTAR, Lord, thy servant rears, 367
Airy spirits, you who love, 707
A broken-down hotel on an inhospitable sea, *Ajax*, 390
1974
Alas! for Peter, not a helping hand, 730
Absalom and Achitophel: A Poem, 501
Alas, have I not pain enough, my friend, 213
A card table in the library stands ready, 1720
Alexandreis, 554
accentual meter, 2 0 2 9
alexandrine, 2 0 4 2
accentual-syllabic meter, 2 0 3 0
Ali, Agha Shahid, 1958
Accept, thou shrine of my dead saint, 363
A line in long array where they wind betwixt green
According to Brueghel, 1283
islands, 1073
A Clock stopped -, 1113
Alison, 18
“A cold coming we had of it, 1359
A little East of Jordan, 1112
a commingling sky, 1683
All around the altar, huge lianas, 1879
A construed entity too, 1701
All Day It Has Rained, 1573

Acquainted with the Night, 1237
“All Do Not All Things Well,” 1772
Across the millstream below the bridge, 1625
All Greece hates, 1312
A curious knot God made in paradise, 537
All human things are subject to decay, 517
Adam Lay I-bounden, 79
All I know is a door into the dark, 1900
Adam Posed, 562
All in green went my love riding, 1392
Adam scrivain, if evere it thee bifalle, 70
alliteration, 2029
Adam’s Curse, 1190
All kings, and all their favorites, 299
Adam’s Dream, 1338
All Legendary Obstacles, 1785
Adam’s Task, 1776
All others talked as if, 1680
Adcock, Fleur, 1849
All saints revile her, and all sober men, 1404
Adieu, farewell, earth’s bliss, 283
All’s All, 1701
Adieu, New-England’s smiling meads, 719
All the new thinking is about loss, 1919
Adlestrop, 1253
All things within this fading world hath end, 464
Adonais, 879
Also I love him: me he’s done no wrong, 1550

Advice to a Prophet, 1637
Altar, The, 367
Advice to Young Ladies, 1483
Altermann, sipping wine, reads with a look, 1884
Aeolian Harp, The, 805
Although, great Queen, thou now in silence lie,
Affliction (I), 369
458
A fox may steal your hens, sir, 595
Although it is not yet evening, 1659
After Apple-Picking, 1231
Always, 1863
After great pain, a formal feeling comes -, 1117
Always so late in the day, 1863
After hot loveless nights, when cold winds stream,
Always the setting forth was the same, 1743
1436
A man adrift on a slim spar, 1221
After Making Love We Hear Footsteps, 1742
Amarantha sweet and fair, 473
2 1 5 1
2 1 5 2 / I N D E X
Ambulances, 1655
Apology for Writing So Much upon This Book, An,
Ammons, A. R., 1695
499
Among School Children, 1200
apostrophe, 2 0 7 0

Among twenty snowy mountains, 1260
Apparition, The, 295
Amoretti, 190
Apples on Champlain, 1955
Amor Mundi, 1134
April again, and it is a year again, 1644
A moth ate words; a marvellous event, 11
April is the cruellest month, breeding, 1344
Amours de Voyage, 1051
A quavering cry. Screech-owl?, 1534
A mouth. Can blow or breathe, 1541
Arabian Night, 1727
A mouthful of language to swallow, 1752
Ararat, 1748
A movie of Robert, 1707
Arc Inside and Out, The, 1699
An Agony. As Now., 1857
A repeating fly, blueback, thumbthick—so gross,
An agricultural labourer, who has, 1829
1605
anapestic meter, 2 0 3 0
Are They Shadows, 235
A narrow Fellow in the Grass, 1125
Argument of His Book, The, 354
A nasty surprise in a sandwich, 1965
Ariel, 1842
A Nation of trees, drab green and desolate grey, *Arioso Dolente*, 1848

1481

Aristocrats, 1621

An axe angles, 1638

Armadillo, The, 1519

Ancestor (Kinsella), 1757

Armenonville, 1385

Ancestors (Brathwaite), 1806

Armistice Day, 1590

Ancient person, for whom I, 553

Armitage, Simon, 2 0 2 1

And call ye this to utter what is just, 225

Arnold, Matthew, 1087

And Did Those Feet, 746

A Route of Evanescence, 1126

And If I Did What Then?, 144

Arrest of Oscar Wilde at the Cadogan Hotel, The,

And me happiest when I compose poems, 1530

1461

—and not simply by the fact that this shading of,

Arrivants, The: A New World Trilogy, 1803

1938

Ars Poetica, 1381

And now, at last, all proud deeds done, 1784

Artillery, 378

And One for My Dame, 1764

Arundel Tomb, An, 1650

Andraitx—Pomegranate Flowers, 1290

Ashbery, John, 1736

Andrea del Sarto, 1034

As he knelt by the grave of his mother and father,

And, the last day being come, Man stood alone,

1980

1250

A short service, to be sure, 1681

And then went down to the ship, 1306

As I came to the edge of the woods, 1242

Anecdote for Fathers, 780

As I in hoary winter's night stood shivering in the

Anecdote of the far, 1260

snow, 223

A New Year's white morning of hard new ice, 1969

As I listened from a beach-chair in the shade, 1479

Angel in Blythburgh Church, An, 1787

As imperceptibly as Grief, 1125

An incident here and there, 1315

A single flow'r he sent me, since we met, 1391

An infant quirk of a pine, 1929

As I one evening sat before my cell, 378

An ingenuity too astonishing, 1613

As I sd to my, 1705

Annabel Lee, 981

As it fell out on a holy day, 112

Anne Hathaway, 2008

As I Walked Out One Evening, 1468

Anniversary, The, 299

As I was walking all alane, 102

Announced by all the trumpets of the sky, 942

Askew, Anne, 140

A Noiseless Patient Spider, 1085

As kingfishers catch fire, dragonflies draw flame,

An old, mad, blind, despised, and dying king—,

1167

871

Ask me no more where Jove bestows, 385

Another Epitaph on an Army of Mercenaries, A slumber did
my spirit seal, 790

1379

A small wheel, 1891

Another September, 1757

A snake came to my water-trough, 1286

Another Sonnet to Black Itself, 346

As once, if not with light regard, 674

Answer, The, 565

A Sonnet is a moment's monument,—, 1106

Anthem for Doomed Youth, 1386

As Our Bodies Rise, Our Names Turn into Light,

Ant Hill, The, 2013

1867

Any body can die, evidently. Few, 1916

Asphodel, That Greeny Flower, 1276

anyone lived in a pretty how town, 1396

As Rochefoucauld his maxims drew, 577

A peels an apple, while B kneels to God, 1624

As some brave admiral, in former war, 549

A poem should be palpable and mute, 1381

As some fond virgin, whom her mother's care, 621

*Apology for the Revival of Christian Architecture in
assonance, 2037*

England, An, 1835

As the cat, 1275

I N D E X / 2 1 5 3

As the team's head brass, 1255

Ballad of Birmingham, 1855

A strife is grown between Virtue and Love, 216

Ballad of Orange and Grape, 1538

Astronomy, 1179

ballad stanza, 204 1

Astrophil and Stella, 213

Ballad upon a Wedding, A, 454

A sudden blow: the great wings beating still, 1200

Ballad Which Anne Askewe Made and Sang When

As virtuous men pass mildly away, 306

She Was in Newgate, The, 140

A sweet disorder in the dress, 355

Banking Potatoes, 1950

As we get older we do not get any younger, 1563

Banks o' Doon, The, 759

Atalanta in Calydon, 1146

Baraka, Amiri, 1856

At childhood's end, the houses petered out, 2008

Barbarians in a garden, softness does, 1927

At dinner, she is hostess, I am host, 1108

Barbault, Anna Laetitia, 705
Athenian Garden, An, 1251
Barely tolerated, living on the margin, 1737
At Henry's bier let some thing fall out well, 1551
Baroque Wall-Fountain in the Villa Sciarra, A,
At home, in my flannel gown, like a bear to its floe,
1635
1552
base rhythm, 2 0 3 2
A thousand martyrs I have made, 549
basic forms, 2 0 3 9
At length, by so much importunity pressed, 641
Batter my heart, three-personed God; for You, 320
At Luca Signorelli's Resurrection of the Body, 1976 *Battle-*
Hymn of the Republic, 1054
At Melville's Tomb, 1410
Bavarian Gentians, 1291
At school I loved one picture's heavy greenness—,
Baxter, J a m e s K., 1701
1908
Beach Glass, 1609
At the British War Cemetery, Bayeux, 1590
Beachy Head, 715
At the end of the garden walk, 1531
Bean Eaters, The, 1587
At the round earth's imagined corners, blow, 319
Bearded Oaks, 1456
At the Tourist Center in Boston, 1894

Bear on the Delhi Road, The, 1447

At what time Jacob's race did leave of Egypt take,

Beautiful Young Nymph Going to Bed, A, 575

226

Beauty of the Husband, The, 1970

At Woodlawn I heard the dead cry, 1495

Beat! Beat! Drums!, 1072

Atwood, Margaret, 1894

Because he was a butcher and thereby, 1213

Aubade (Kenney), 1954

Because I could not stop for Death -, 1119

Aubade (Larkin), 1658

Because you will suffer soon and die, your choices,

A.U.C. 334: about this date, 1483

1911

Auden, W. H., 1465

Beethoven, Opus 111, 1610

Audible trout, 1924

Before the Birth of One of her Children, 464

Auld Lang Syne, 753

Beggar's Opera, The, 594

Aunt Jennifer's Tigers, 1791

Behn, Aphra, 540

Aunt Rose—now—might I see you, 1714

Behold her, single in the field, 803

Aurora Leigh, 948

Bells for John Whiteside's Daughter, 1367

Australia, 1481

Below the thunders of the upper deep, 984
Author to Her Book, The, 465
Bent double, like old beggars under sacks, 1387
Autumn Journal, 1487
Beowulf, 2
Autumn resumes the land, ruffles the woods, 1835
Berg, The, 1056
Ave Maria, 1730
Bermudas, 476
Avenge, O Lord, thy slaughtered saints, whose Bernstein,
Charles, 1967
bones, 418
Berryman, John, 1546
Awake, my St. John! leave all meaner things, 623
Berry Picking, 1532
A ward, and still in bonds, one day, 490
Betjeman, John, 1460
A week ago, when I had finished, 1994
Between my finger and my thumb, 1899
A wind is ruffling the tawny pelt, 1820
Birches, 1223
A woman's face, with nature's own hand painted,
Birds and Fishes, 1323
260
Birney, Earle, 1447
A woman wired in memories, 1799
Birth, 2006
Axe-fall, echo and silence. Noonday silence, 1885

birth in a narrow room, the, 1586
ay, ay! ... stutrer Demosthenes, 1873
Birth of Tragedy, The, 1530
Ay, beshrew you! by my fay, 90
Bishop, Elizabeth, 1515
Bishop Orders His Tomb at Saint Praxed's Church,
Back out of all this now too much for us, 1244
The, 1014
Badger, 893
Bistro Styx, The, 1988
Bad Luck Card, 1432
Bitter Fruit of the Tree, 1428
Bagpipe Music, 1486
Bitter Withy, The, 112
Baillie, Joanna, 760
Bix to Buxtehude to Boulez, 1719
Bald heads forgetful of their sins, 1193
Black beauty, which above that common light, 346
2 1 5 4 / I N D E X
Black Jackets, 1770
Burns, Robert, 7 4 7
Black maid, complain not that I fly, 366
Bush, 1492
Black reapers with the sound of steel on stones, *Bushed*, 1447
1398
Busy old fool, unruly sun, 295
Black Riders and Other Lines, The, 1220
But anxious cares the pensive nymph oppressed,

Blake, William, 7 3 2
614
Blame Not My Lute, 131
Butcher's Wife, The, 2005
blank verse, 2 0 3 9
But do not let us quarrel any more, 1034
Blessed Damozel, The, 1102
But love whilst that thou mayst be loved again,
Blessing, A, 1750
231
Bloody Men, 1947
But peace, I must not quarrel with the will, 450
Blow, Blow, Thou Winter Wind, 273
But where they may return with honor's grace, 352
Blue Girls, 1368
Bynner, W i t t e r , 1269
Blue Swallows, The, 1625
By now when you say *I stop somewhere waiting for*
B l u n d e n , E d m u n d , 1404
you, 1745
Bly, Robert, 1 7 0 4
Byron, Lord (George Gordon), 8 3 3
Boats in a Fog, 1321
By the lake at Armenonville in the Bois de Bou-
Bogan, Louise, 1 4 0 6
logne, 1385
Boland, Eavan, 1 9 3 8
By the rude bridge that arched the flood, 941

Bonny Barbara Allan, 107
By the shores of Gitche Gumee, 954
Book Full of Pictures, A, 1892
By this he knew she wept with waking eyes, 1107
Book of Ephraim, The, 1725
Bytwene Mersh and Averil, 18
Book of Thel, The, 737
Byzantium, 1202
Book of Yolek, The, 1672
Boots of Spanish Leather, 1854
Cabinet of Seeds Displayed, A, 1627
Born Yesterday, 1648
Caedmon, 1680
Borough, The, 730
Caedmon's Hymn, 1
Boy Breaking Glass, 1589
Caelica, 206
Boy's Answer to the Blackmoor, The, 366
caesura, **2 0 2 8**
Boy with Book of Knowledge, 1626
Call the roller of big cigars, 1256
Boy with His Hair Cut Short, 1537
Cameo Appearance, 1893
Bradstreet, Anne, 458
Campbell, Roy, 1436
Brag, sweet tenor bull, 1421
Campion, Thomas, 278
Brahma, 945

Canal Bank Walk, 1453
Brathwaite, E d w a r d K a m a u , 1803
Candy, 1437
Brave infant of Saguntum, clear, 337
Can I not sin, but thou wilt be, 361
Breaded Fish, 1802
Can life be a blessing, 501
Break, Break, Break, 994
Canonization, The, 296
Break of Day in the Trenches, 1373
Canterbury Tales, The, 17
Bresson's Movies, 1707
Cantos, The, 1306
Bridge, The, 1415
Can we not force from widowed poetry, 388
Briggflatts, 1421
canzone, 2046
Bright Star, 940
Cardinal Ideograms, 1541
Broken Appointment, A, 1154
Care-charmer Sleep, son of the sable Night, 232
Broken Home, The, 1716
Careful observers may foretell the hour, 569
B r o n t e , Emily, 1046
Carew, T h o m a s , 385
Brooke, R u p e r t , 1324
Carol of Agincourt, A, 84
Brooks, Gwendolyn, 1586

Carried her unprotesting out the door, 1587
Brown, George Mackay, 1627
Carrion Comfort, 1169
Brown, Sterling A., 1 4 2 6
Carroll, Lewis, 1135
Browning, Elizabeth Barrett, 9 4 7
Carson, Anne, 1969
Browning, Robert, 1 0 0 9
Casabianca (Bishop), 1515
B r o w n j o h n , Alan, 1 8 2 9
Casabianca (Hemans), 899
Bruisingly cradled in a Harvard chair, 1766
Castaway, The, 702
Brute Image, 1740
Casting and Gathering, 1906
Bryant, William C u l l e n , 9 0 2
catalectic, 2 0 3 0
Buckdancer's Choice, 1663
Cathedral Builders, 1681
Buck in the Snow, The, 1384
Cattle out of their byres are dungy still, lambs,
Bunting, Basil, 1421
1911
Burden, 1666
Cause you don't love me, 1432
Buried Graves, The, 1998
Causley, Charles, 1590
Burning Babe, The, 222

Cavalry Crossing a Ford, 1073

INDEX / 2155

Cavendish, Margaret, 499

Come away! come, sweet love!, 119

Caxtons are mechanical birds with many wings,

Come In, 1242

1943

Come live with me and be my love, 256

Celts, The, 1441

Come, madam, come, all rest my powers defy, 312

Certain things here are quietly American—, 1827

Come, my Celia, let us prove, 331

Chambered Nautilus, The, 974

Come Not the Seasons Here, 1270

Channel Firing, 1157

Come on, my partners in distress, 653

Chard Whitlow, 1563

Come sleep, Oh sleep, the certain knot of peace,

Charge of the Light Brigade, The, 1005

215

Chaucer, Geoffrey, 19

Comes not the springtime here, 1270

Chicago, 1252

Come to me in the silence of the night, 1128

“*Childe Roland to the Dark Tower Came*,” 1020

Come to your heaven, you heavenly choirs, 223

Childhood (Muir), 1336

Come, worthy Greek, Ulysses, come, 233

Childhood (Walker), 1577
common meter, 204 1
Child of Distress, who meet'st the bitter scorn, 706
Common Sense, 1829
Child on Top of a Greenhouse, 1494
Communication Which the Author Had to London,
Children, if you dare to think, 1401
Before She Made Her Will, A, 146
Chillen Get Shoes, 1428
Complacencies of the peignoir, and late, 1257
Chinese Drawings, 1270
Complaint to His Purse, 69
Chinese journal, 1866
complement, 2 0 5 5
Christ and the Soldier, 1317
Composed upon Westminster Bridge, September 3,
Christmas is my name, far have I gone, have I
1802, 795
gone, have I gone, 122
composite forms, 2 0 4 6
Christopher, Nicholas, 1973
Comus, 415
Church Going, 1649
Conch from Sicily, A, 1930
Circus Animals' Desertion, The, 1207
Concord Hymn, 941
Cities burn behind us; the lake glitters, 1686
concrete poetry, 2 0 5 1

City in the Sea, The, 976
Condemned to Hope's delusive mine, 664
City Limits, The, 1698
Condemn me not, I make so much ado, 499
Clampitt, Amy, 1609
Conjured, 1429
Clare, John, 893
Consumer's Report, A, 1786
Classics Society, 1873
contend in a sea which the land partly encloses,
clause, 2 0 5 6
1275
Clay is the word and clay is the flesh, 1451
Convent Threshold, The, 1130
Clearances, 1905
Convergence of the Twain, The, 1156
Clear water in a brilliant bowl, 1266
Conversation of Prayer, The, 1570
clerihew, 2 0 4 6
coordinate, 2 0 5 7
Clod & the Pebble, The, 742
coordinating conjunction, 205 7
Close by those meads, forever crowned with flow-
Cope, Wendy, 1947
ers, 610
Corinna, pride of Drury-Lane, 575
closed couplet, 2 0 4 0
Corinna's Going A-Maying, 356

closed forms, 204 8
Cormorant in Its Element, The, 1614
Closed like confessionals, they thread, 1655
Corn, Alfred, 1929
Cloud, The, 874
Coronet, The, 475
Cloud-puffball, torn tufts, tossed pillows | flaunt
Corpus Christi Carol, The, 83
forth, then chevy on an air-, 1071
Correct but cautious, that first night, we asked,
Clough, Arthur Hugh, 1051
1725
Coal, 1858
Correspondence School Instructor Says Goodbye to
Cold as No Plea, 1440
His Poetry Students, Tke, 1741
Cold Green Element, The, 1531
Corso, Gregory, 1807
Cold in the earth—and the deep snow piled above
Corsons Inlet, 1695
thee, 1047
Cottage Street, I 953, 1640
Cold snap. Five o'clock, 1954
Could our first father, at his toilsome plow, 562
Coleridge, Samuel Taylor, 805
Counting the Mad, 1684
Coleridge received the Person from Porlock, 1441
couplet, 2040

Colin Clout, 92

“Courage!” he said, and pointed toward the land,

Collar, The, 379

988

Collins, Billy, 1917

Courtney, Mentioned in Passing, Years After, 1956

Collins, William, 613

Cousin Coat, 1992

Colossus, The, 1836

Cow, The, 1437

Columbus, 1438

Cowley, Abraham, 470

Come Away, Come Away, Death, 275

Cowper, William, 695

2 1 5 6 / I N D E X

Crabbe, George, 723

Deeper than sleep but not so deep as death,

Cramped like sardines on the Queens, and sedated,

1537

1660

Definition of Love, The, 480

Crane, Hart, 1410

Dejection: An Ode, 828

Crane, Stephen, 1220

De la Mare, Walter, 1225

Crashaw, Richard, 468

Delia, 230

Crazy Jane Talks with the Bishop, 1204

Delight in Disorder, 355
Creeley, Robert, 1705
Delirium in Vera Cruz, 1503
Cromwell, our chief of men, who through a cloud,
Denial, 374
417
Deo gracias, Anglia, 84
Cross, 1431
Description of a City Shower, A, 569
Crossing Alone the Nighted Ferry, 1180
Description of Cooke-ham, The, 288
Crossing Brooklyn Ferry, 1066
Description of the Morning, A, 568
Crossing the Bar, 1008
Deserted Village, The, 686
Crossing the street, 1716
Design, 1240
Cross of Snow, The, 956
Desire, though thou my old companion art, 218
Crown of Sonnets Dedicated to Love, A, 351
Destruction of Sennacherib, The, 834
Crucified Lord, you swim upon your cross, 1834
Dialogue between the Soul and Body, A, 477
Cruelty has a Human heart, 741
Dickey, James, 1661
Crying and crying, 1502
Dickinson, Emily, 1110
Cuckoo Song, The, 15

Did I, my lines intend for public view, 556
Cullen, Countee, 1443
Didst thou not find the place inspired, 453
Cummings, E. E., 1392
Digging, 1899
Cupid and My Campaspe, 207
Digging a new, 1957
Curnow, Allen, 1528
dimeter, 2 0 3 2
curtal sonnet, 2 0 4 4
Ding-Donging, 1426
Cyriack, Whose Grandsire, 419
Dinner Guest: Me, 1435
Dirce, 832
Dacca Gauzes, The, 1958
Directive, 1244
dactylic meter, 2 0 3 0
direct object, 2 0 5 5
Daddy, 1840
Dirge, 390
Daddy would drop purple-veined vines, 1950
Disabled Debauchee, The, 549
Daffodils, 1814
Disappointment, The, 541
Dalliance of the Eagles, The, 1078
Disarmed with so genteel an air, 565
Daniel, Samuel, 230
Discipline, 382

Danse Russe, 1272
Display thy breasts, my Julia, there let me, 358
Dark Harbor, 1864
Distant Fury of Battle, The, 1831
Darkling Thrush, The, 1155
Disused Shed in Co. Wexford, A, 1921
Darwin in 1881, 2000
Divine Image, A (Songs of Experience), 741
Daughters of Time, the hypocritic Days, 946
Divine Image, The (Songs of Innocence), 735
Davie, Donald, 1641
Diving into the Wreck, 1797
Davison, Peter, 1751
Divorced, but friends again at last, 1942
Day Lady Died, The, 1728
Dodgson, Charles Lutwidge, 1135
Day of fudgment, The, 589
Does the Eagle know what is in the pit?, 737
Days, 946
Does the road wind up-hill all the way?, 1129
Dead, The, 1044
dogwood flakes, 1512
Dead Man's Dump, 1374
Dolls Museum in Dublin, The, 1939
Dead Soldiers, 1961
Done Is a Battle, 89
Deaf-Mute in the Pear Tree, 1584
Don fuan, 837

Dear Eustatio, I write that you may write me an

Donne, John, 293

answer, 1051

Do Not Go Gentle into That Good Night, 1572

Death, 384

Do not weep, maiden, for war is kind, 1221

Death, be not proud, though some have called Don't talk to me
of love. I've had an earful, 1966

thee, 320

Doomsday, 1311

Death in Leamington, 1460

D'Orleans, Charles, 77

Death is in your house, but I'm out here, 1877

Double Exposures, 2024

Death of the Ball Turret Gunner, The, 1553

double syntax, **206 1**

Deathplace, A, 1767

Doubt of Future Foes Exiles My Present foy, The,

Death Sentence, The, 1440

142

Death the Painter, 1673

Douglas, Keith, 1620

Death, thou wast once an uncouth hideous thing,

Douglas Tragedy, The, 97

384

Dover Beach, 1101

I N D E X / 2 1 5 7

Dover Bitch, The,] 668

Elegy for Jane, 1499

Dove, Rita, 1985

Elegy XIX. To His Mistress Going to Bed, 312

Down a broad river of the western wilds, 901

Elegy VII, 311

Downhill I came, hungry, and yet not starved, *Elegy upon the Death of the Dean of Paul's, Dr.*

1254

John Donne, An, 388

Down in Atlanta, 1426

Elegy Written in a Country Churchyard, 669

Dowser, The, 1619

Elemental, 1288

Dowson, Ernest, 1211

Eliot, T. S., 1340

Do ye, o congregation, 391

elision, 203 0

dramatic monologues, 204 0

Elixir, The, 383

dramatic poetry, 202 7

Elizabeth I, Queen, 142

Drayton, Michael, 235

Elliot, Jean, 677

Dream of fealousy, A, 1902

Elm, 1839

Dreams fled away, this country bedroom, raw, Emerson, Ralph Waldo, 941

1757

Emperor of Ice-Cream, The, 1256

Dream Songs, The, 1548
Empson, William, 1463
Dream Variations, 1431
end rhymes, 1031
Drink to me only with thine eyes, 331
end-stopped lines, 2 0 3 4
Driving with Dominic in the Southern Province We
Energy in Sweden, 1693
See Hints of the Circus, 1935
England! Awake! Awake! Awake!, 747
Droning a drowsy syncopated tune, 1429
England in 1819, 871
Droning autumn rain, 1503
England's Dead, 897
Drummer Hodge, 1154
English Are So Nice!, The, 1290
Drunk in the Furnace, The, 1743
English sonnet, 204 3
Dryden, John, 500
enjambment, 2 0 3 4
Dufault, Peter Kane, 1665
envoy, 204 5
Duffy, Carol Ann, 2 0 0 7
Epic, 1453
Dulce Et Decorum Est, 1387
epic poetry, 2027
Dunbar, Paul Laurence, 1222
Epilogue, 1605

Dunbar, William, 86
Epistle from Mrs. Yonge to Her Husband, 643
Dunciad, The, 638
Epistle to Dr. Arbuthnot, 626
Dunn, Douglas, 1927
Epistle to Miss Blount, 621
Diirer would have seen a reason for living, 1331
Epitaph, 526
During Wind and Rain, 1160
Epitaph on a Hare, 696
Dusk, 1775
Epitaph on an Army of Mercenaries, 1180
Dusting, 1987
Epitaph on Elizabeth, L. H., 328
Dying: An Introduction, 1766
Epitaphs of the War, 1182
Dying Speech of an Old Philosopher, 833
Epithalamion, 195
Dylan, Bob, 1854
Equinox 1980, 1751
Erdrich, Louise, 2005
Eagle, The, 1004
Erotic Philosophers, The, 1688
Eagle-Feather Fan, The, 1861
Essay on Criticism, An, 596
Earth has not anything to show more fair, 795
Essay on Man, in Four Epistles, An, 623
Earthly Paradise, The, 1143

Essay on Psychiatrists, 1913
East Anglian Bathe, 1462
Eternity, 746
East Coast journey, 1702
Euclid Alone Has Looked on Beauty Bare, 1383
Easter 1916, 1194
Evangeline, 951
Eastern War Time, 1799
Evening Hawk, 1459
Easter Wings, 368
Even now that care, which on thy crown attends,
Eberhart, Richard, 1450
226
Ecce Homo, 1581
Even now there are places where a thought might
Echo (C. Rossetti), 1128
grow—, 1921
Echoes (Lorde), 1860
Eve of St. Agnes, The, 907
Echo of the clocktower, footstep, 1972
Every day a wilderness—no, 1987
Ecstasy, The, 307
Every Friday morning my grandfather, 1806
Eden Rock, 1591
Every October millions of little fish come along the
Eighth Air Force, 1553
shore, 1323
Eldorado, 980

Everyone Sang, 1319
Elegies (Dunn), 1928
Everyone suddenly burst out singing, 1319
elegy, 204 8

Eve to Her Daughters, 1579

Elegy (Keyes), 1644

Examination at the Womb-Door, 1813

Elegy, An (Jonson), 335

Exequy, An, 1788

2 1 5 8 / I N D E X

Exequy to His Matchless, Never-to-Be-Forgotten First Fig,
1382

Friend, An, 363

First having read the book of myths, 1797

Exile, 1753

First Love, 895

Experience, though noon auctoritee, 39

First Night, A, 1666

Explosion, The, 1657

first paeon, 203 5

Expostulation and Reply, 763

First Snow in Alsace, 1632

Ex-Queen Among the Astronomers, The, 1849

First Song, 1740

Eye-Opener, 1504

First Time In, 1372

eye rhymes, 203 8

Fish, The (Bishop), 1516

Ezekiel Saw the Wheel, 1059
Fish, The (Moore), 1328
Fit of Rhyme against Rhyme, A, 332
Fable, A, 566
FitzGerald, Edward, 961
Face, 1398
Fitzgerald, Robert, 1507
Facing It, 1949
Five A.M., the Fourth of July, 1756
Faerie Queene, The, 165
Five hours, (and who can do it less in?), 572
Fair is my love, and cruel as she's fair, 231
Five years have passed; five summers, with the
Fair lovely maid, or if that title be, 548
length, 765
Fair seedtime had my soul, and I grew up, 781
Flat on the bank I parted, 1785
Fair Singer, The, 480
"Flawless" is the word, no doubt, for this third of
"Faith" is a fine invention, 1113
May, 1492
Falling in Love at Sixty-Five, 1631
Flea, The, 309
falling meter, 2 0 3 1
Flee fro the prees and dwelle with soothfastnesse,
False Security, 1463
69
Fame is a bee, 1127

Fletcher, John, 345
Fame's pillar here at last we set, 361
Flood-tide below me! I see you face to face!, 1066
Far back when I went zig-zagging, 1795
Flower, The, 380
Far Cry from Africa, A, 1820
Flowers (Atwood), 1896
Farewell (Clare), 896
Flowers (Cope), 1948
Fare Well (De la Mare), 1226
Flowers of the Forest, The, 677
Farewell (sweet Cooke-ham) where I first obtained,
Fog over the base: the beams ranging, 1554
288
Follow Thy Fair Sun, 279
Farewell, thou art too dear for my possessing, 264 *foot*, 2 0 3 0
Farewell, thou child of my right hand, and joy, 323
For a good decade, 1743
Farewell to America, A. To Mrs. S. W., 719
Force That Through the Green Fuse Drives the
Farewell, too little, and too lately known, 523
Flower, The, 1566
Farewell to the bushy clump close to the river, 896
Forefathers, 1404
Farewell to Van Gogh, 1746
Foreign Gate, The, 1645
Far from Home, 1974
Forerunners, The, 381

Farmer's Bride, The, 1216

Forge, The, 1900

Fate, 946

Forget Not Yet, 131

“Father, father, where are you going?”, 736

For God's sake hold your tongue, and let me love,

Father of all! in every age, 635

296

Father studied theology through the mail, 1892

For Hans Keller, 1944

Fayre is my love, when her fayre golden heares,

ForH. V. (1901-1927), 1559

194

For I can snore like a bullhorn, 1742

Fear No More the Heat o' the Sun, 276

For I will consider my Cat Jeoffry, 625

Feathers up fast, and steeples; then in clods, *Forsaken Garden*,
A, 1150

1643

For Sidney Bechet, 1648

Features unseen embers and tongs once worried,

For That He Looked Not upon Her, 144

1727

For the Union Dead, 1603

Feel for your bad fall how could I fail, 1547

For three years, out of key with his time, 1298

Felix Randal, 1168

Fortune hath taken thee away, my love, 158

feminine rhymes, 2037
Forty-two years ago (to me if to no one else, 1490
Fenton, James, 1961
Fosterling, 1908
Ferlinghetti, Lawrence, 1606
found poetry, 2050
Fern Hill, 1571
Fountain, The, 1643
Field Hospital, A, 1554
Four Poems for Robin, 1817
Figlio Maggiore, 1507
Four Quartets, 1360
Filling her compact & delicious body, 1548
fourteener, 2033
Filling Station, 1517
Fowls in the Frith, 19
Finch, Anne, Countess of Winchilsea, 556
Fragments, 1252
Fine Knacks for Ladies, 119
Fra Lippo Lippi, 1026

I N D E X / 2 1 5 9

Framed in her phoenix fire-screen, Edna Ward,
Get up! get up for shame! the blooming morn, 356
1640
Ghetto, 1911
“*Frater Ave atque Vale*,” 1008
Ghost in the Martini, The, 1669
“Fred, where is north?,” 1238

Gift, The, 1861
Freely Espousing, 1683
Gift Outright, The, 1243
free verse, 2048
Gilbert, W. S., 1144
Freneau, Philip, 716
Ginsberg, Allen, 1708
frequently unasked questions, 1968
Gioia, Dana, 1972
Fresh spring the herald of loves mighty king, 193
Girls on the Bridge, 1924
Friend of the wretched! wherefore should the eye,
Give him the darkest inch your shelf allows, 1212
714
Give me more love, or more disdain, 387
Friendship between Ephelia and Ardelia, 563
Give me my scallop-shell of quiet, 153
From epigram to epic is the course, 1626
Glanmore Revisited, 1908
From fairest creatures we desire increase, 257
Glasses with cold sleep and dazzled by the moon,
From Far, from Eve and Morning, 1177
1578
From harmony, from heavenly harmony, 524
Glooms of the live-oaks, beautiful-braided and
From low to high doth dissolution climb, 804
woven, 1163
From my mother's sleep I fell into the State, 1553

Glory be to God for dappled things—, 1167
From narrow provinces, 1 523
Glory of Women, 1319
From plane of light to plane, wings dipping *Glory Trumpeter,
The, 1821*
through, 1459
Gluck, Louise, 1931
From Stone to Steel, 1271
Go and catch a falling star, 294
From the Flats, 1162
God, A Poem, 1965
From the hagg and hungry goblin, 124
God moves in a mysterious way, 695
From the House of Yemanja, 1859
God of our fathers, known of old, 1181
From the pier, at dusk, the dim, 1998
Go Down, Moses, 1057
From the Wave, 1771
God's Grandeur, 1166
Front, A, 1554
God will have all or none; serve Him, or fall, 361
Frost at Midnight, 810
Go, for they call you, shepherd, from the hill, 1089
Frost, Robert, 1227
Golden Gate, The, 1994
Fuel filler cap, 1819
Goldsmith, Oliver, 686
Fidl Fathom Five, 211

Go, lovely rose!, 393
Full many a glorious morning have I seen, 261
Gone, I say and walk from church, 1764
Full Moon, 1310
Goodbye, 1575
Funeral, The, 309
Goodbye, Goldeneye, 1543
Further in Summer than the Birds -, 1124
Goodbye, lady in Bangor, who sent me, 1741
Fury of Aerial Bombardment, The, 1450
Good Friday, 1613. Riding Westward, 317
Futility, 1390
Good Heav'n, I thank thee, since it was designed,
566
Gaily bedight, 980
“Good-morning, good-morning!” the General said,
Gallantry, 1622
1318
Garden, The (Gluck), 1931
Good-Morrow, The, 293
Garden, The (Marvell), 484
Goose Fish, The, 1623
Garden, The (Pound), 1296
Gorse Fires, 1911
Garden of Love, The, 744
Go sad or sweet or riotous with beer, 1627
Garden of Proserpine, The, 1148
Go, smiling souls, your new-built cages break, 468

Gascoigne, George, 144
Go, soul, the body's guest, 154
Gascoigne's Lullaby, 145
Go wailing verse, the infants of my love, 230
Gascoyne, David, 1580
G r a h a m , Jorie, 1975
Gasholders, russet among fields. Milldams, marl-
Granted, we die for good, 1267
pools, 1833
Grass, 1253
Gather ye rosebuds while ye may, 357
Grasshopper, The, 474
Gay, John, 594
Grass resurrects to mask, to strangle, 1831
Geese, The, 1975
Grave, A, 1330
General, The, 1318
Graves, Robert, 1400
General Prologue, The (to *The Canterbury Tales*), Gray,
Thomas, 666
19
Great Hunger, The, 1451
George Burns likes to insist that he always, 1967
Green Grow the Rashes, 747
George Crabbe, 1212
Greenlaw, Lavinia, 2015
Georgia Dusk, 1398
Green, Matthew, 645

German Requiem, A, 1963

Gretel in Darkness, 1931

Get up and Bar the Door, 110

Greville, Fulke, Lord Brooke, 206

2 1 6 0 / I N D E X

Grey over Riddrie the clouds piled up, 1618

Helen, thy beauty is to me, 975

Grieve, Christopher Murray, 1376

Hellas, 892

Groping back to bed after a piss, 1656

Helpless like this, 1803

Gr-r-r—there go, my heart's abhorrence!, 1010

Hemans, Felicia Dorothea, 897

Guardians, The, 1832

He may our prophet, and our tutor prove, 352

Guest, Barbara, 1616

Hence loathed Melancholy, 402

Gulf, The, 1822

Hence vain deluding Joys, 405

Gunn, Thorn, 1768

Henry in Ireland to Bill underground, 1551

Gurney, Ivor, 1371

heptameter, 2 0 3 3

Gut eats all day and lechers all the night, 328

Herbert, Edward, 346

Gypsies, 894

Herbert, George, 367

Her body is not so white as, 1273

Haddock Fishermen, 1628

Here at the seashore they use the clouds over &

Had we but world enough, and time, 478

over, 1608

haiku, 2 0 3 5

Here Dead Lie We Because We Did Not Choose,

Haiku: This Other World, 1 502

1180

Hail to thee, blithe Spirit!, 876

Here Follows Some Verses upon the Burning of Our

Hair—, 1398

House fuly 10th, 1666, 466

Hair—braided chestnut, 1399

Here from his prominent but thankfully, 1999

Half a league, half a league, 1005

Here in Kansas is a school, 1269

Hall, Daniel, 1 9 9 0

Here in the scuffled dust, 1733

Hall, Donald, 1753

Here is the place; right over the hill, 957

Halley's Comet, 1 562

Here lies Jonson with the rest, 360

Hand That Signed the Paper, The, 1567

Here lies, to each her parents' ruth, 323

Hanging from the beam, 1054

Here lies, whom hound did ne'er pursue, 696

Hap, 1152

Here she lies, a pretty bud, 358

Happy are men who yet before they are killed, Here they went
with smock and crook, 1404

1387

Here, where the world is quiet, 1148

Happy those early days! when I, 492

Her eyes the glowworm lend thee, 359

Happy ye leaves when as those lilly hands, 190

Heritage, 1443

Hardy, Thomas, 1152

Hero and Leander, 238

Harlem, 1433

Heroes, 1705

Harlem Sweeties, 1432

heroic couplet, 2 0 4 0

Harriet, 1605

heroic quatrain, 2 0 4 1

Harrison, Tony, 1872

Her planted eye to-day controls, 946

Harry, whose tuneful and well-measured song, 416

Herrick, Robert, 354

Harvest Song, 1399

Her Triumph, 334

Haskell, 1269

He runs before the wise men: he, 1454

Hass, Robert, 1919

He saw her from the bottom of the stairs, 1228

Hatred and vengeance, my eternal portion, 704

He's gone, and all our plans, 1371

Have you dug the spill, 1432
He sipped at a weak hock and seltzer, 1461
Having been tenant long to a rich lord, 367
He stirs, beginning to awake, 1554
Hayden, Robert, 1533
He thought he kept the universe alone, 1243
Haystack in the Floods, The, 1139
He who binds to himself a joy, 746
H. D. (Hilda Doolittle), 1311
He would declare and could himself believe, 1242
He, 1545
hexameter, 2 0 3 2
Headwaters, 1861
Hid by the august foliage and fruit of the grape-
Heaney, Seamus, 1899
vine, 1328
Hearing one saga, we enact the next, 1641
High Holy Days, 1952
Hear me, O God!, 333
High Noon at Los Alamos, 1881
Hear the voice of the Bard!, 740
Hill, A, 1667
Heartless Art, The, 1877
Hill, Geoffrey, 1831
Heart's Needle, 1731
Hill Summit, The, 1107
Heavy, heavy, heavy, hand and heart, 1679
Hill Wife, The, 1235

Hecht, Anthony, 1667
Hine, Daryl, 1868
He clasps the crag with crooked hands, 1004
His clumsy body is a golden fruit, 1 584
He disappeared in the dead of winter, 1472
His Golden Locks Time Hath to Silver Turned, 221
He found her by the ocean's moaning verge, 1109
His Prayer to Ben Jonson, 358
He holds a volume open in his hands, 1626
Hog Butcher for the World, 1252
He invented a rainbow but lightning struck it, 1447
Holiday squeals, as if all were scrambling for their
He is quick, thinking in clear images, 1400
lives, 1815
Helen, 1312
Hollander, John, 1775
I N D E X / 2 1 6 1
Hollow Men, The, 1356
Humpty Dumpty's Explication of Jabberwocky,
Holmes, Oliver Wendell, 974
1136
Holy Sonnets, 318
Hunchback in the Park, The, 1568
Holy Thursday [I.], 734
Hurt Hawks, 1321
Holy Thursday [II.], 741
Hush little Lily, 1428
Holy Willie's Prayer, 750

Hymn to God My God, in My Sickness, 322
Homage to Claude Lorraine, 1865
Hymn to God the Father, A (Donne), 321
Homage to Mistress Bradstreet, 1546
Hymn to God the Father, A (Jonson), 333
Home Burial, 1228
Hymn to Intellectual Beauty, 864
Home-Thoughts, from Abroad, 1017
Hope, 1046
I, 1858
Hope, A. D., 1481
I Am, 896
“Hope” is the thing with feathers -, 1114
—I am a gentleman in a dustcoat trying, 1367
Hopkins, Gerard Manley, 1166
I am a little world made cunningly, 318
Horatian ode, 2048
I am a lonely being, scarred by swords, 10
Horatian Ode, An, 486
I Am a Parcel of Vain Strivings Tied, 1045
Hot Sun, Cool Fire, 221
I am a reaper whose muscles set at sundown. All
Hourglass, 1492
my oats are cradled, 1399
House of Life, The, **1106**
iambic meter, 2030
House on a Red Cliff, 1935
I am inside someone, 1857

House Was Quiet and the World Was Calm, The, I am not a painter, I am a poet, 1730

1267

I Am of Ireland, 19

Housewifery, 540

I am poor brother Lippo, by your leave!, 1026

Housman, A. E., 1173

I am still hurt, Plin, 1665

Howard, Henry, Earl of Surrey, 137

I am the man who looked for peace and found,

Howard, Richard, 1778

1647

How changed is here each spot man makes or fills!,

I Am the Very Model of a Modern Major-General,

1095

1144

How do I justify this stanza?, 1995

I am: yet what I am none cares or knows, 895

How do I love thee? Let me count the ways, 947

I Asked a Thief, 745

Howe, Julia Ward, 1054

I, being born a woman and distressed, 1383

How fresh, oh Lord, how sweet and clean, 380

I bought a dollar and a half's worth of small red

Howl, 1708

potatoes, 1763

How like a man, is Man, who rises late, 1504

I bring fresh showers for the thirsting flowers, 874

How like an angel came I down!, 532
I called you because I could not stand alone, 1666
How like a winter hath my absence been, 265
I can feel the tug, 1900
How lucky that I ran into you, 1694
I cannot find it, 1503
How many dawns, chill from his rippling rest, I can't forget,
1634
1415
I Care Not for These Ladies, 278
How many paltry, foolish, painted things, 237
I caught a tremendous fish, 1516
How many years since 1619 have I been singing
I caught this morning morning's minion, king-,
Spirituals?, 1576
1166
How much better it seems now, 1972
I celebrate myself, and sing myself, 1060
How Pleasant to Know Mr. Lear, 1043
Ich am of Irlonde, 19
How should I praise thee, Lord! how should my
I chopped down the house that you had been sav-
rhymes, 372
ing to live in next summer, 1693
How sleep the brave who sink to rest, 673
I couldn't do it again, 1931
How Soon Hath Time, 410
I cry I cry, 1439

How strange it seems! These Hebrews in their *Idea*, 236
graves, 952
Idea of Order at Key West, The, 1264
How strongly does my passion flow, 545
I Did but Prompt the Age, 417
How sweet I roam'd from field to field, 732
I did not live until this time, 530
How to Get There, 1729
I Do Not, 1937
How vainly men themselves amaze, 484
I doubt not God is good, well-meaning, kind, 1446
How well do I recall that walk in state, 1087
I Dreamed I Moved among the Elysian Fields, 1384
Huffy Henry hid the day, 1548
I dreamed this mortal part of mine, 354
Huge vapors brood above the clifted shore, 712
If all the world and love were young, 152
Hughes, Langston, 1429
If aught of oaten stop, or pastoral song, 615
Hughes, Ted, 1810
If but some vengeful god would call to me, 1152
Hugh Selwyn Mauberley, 1298
If by dull rhymes our English must be chained, 916

Hugo, Richard, 1674

If Cynthia Be a Queen, a Princess, and Supreme,

Human emotions and cognition, 1968

157

2 1 6 2 / I N D E X

I felt a Funeral, in my Brain, 1115

I'll tell thee now (dear Love) what thou shalt do,

If ever two were one, then surely we, 465

301

If he from heaven that filched that living fire, 237

I looked across the rollers of the deep, 1087

If honor to an ancient name be due, 528

I Look into My Glass, 1153

If, in an odd angle of the hutment, 1553

I loved you first the time I saw you last, 1868

If, in the month of dark December, 833

II Penseroso, 405

If I should die, think only this of me, 1327

I made a posy, while the day ran by, 377

If it form the one landscape that we, the inconstant

I make a pact with you, Walt Whitman—, 1296

ones, 1477

I met a traveler from an antique land, 870

If I were giv'n to mirth, 'twould be more cross, 350

I met the Bishop on the road, 1204

“If no love is, O God, what feele I so?, 67

I'm going to try and overcome my limitation—,

I found a dimpled spider, fat and white, 1240

1949

If poisonous minerals, and if that tree, 319

I Missed His Book, but I Read His Name, 1846

If the red slayer think he slays, 945

I'm Nobody! Who are you?, 1113

If there exists a fie//—the case is cfear—, 717

Imperfect Enjoyment, The, 551

If the year is meditating a suitable gift, 1578

imperfect rhyme, 203 8

If thou dislik'st the piece thou light'st on first,

Imperial Adam, 1482

355

Implies that some therefore, 1772

If when my wife is sleeping, 1272

Impromptu, 637

If, whittier and dumper, gross carver, 1699

I'm scared a lonely. Never see my son, 1550

I grew up bent over, 1892

In a coign of the cliff between lowland and high-

I had a picture by him—a print, I think—on my
land, 1150

bedroom wall, 1865

In a Dark Time, 1501

I had a small, nonspeaking part, 1893

In a Duplex Near the San Andreas Fault, 2009

I had come to the house, in a cave of trees, 1406

In /Esop's tales an honest wretch we find, 566

I had heard, 1747

In all those stories the hero, 1705
I have a boy of five years old, 780
In an Artist's Studio, 1129
I Have a Gentle Cock, 82
In a solitude of the sea, 1156
I Have a Young Sister, 81
In a somer seson, whan softe was the sonne, 71
I have been here before, 1105
In a stable of boats I lie still, 1661
I have been one acquainted with the night, 1237
In a Station of the Metro, 1297
I have done it again, 1843
In Broken Images, 1400
I have eaten, 1274
In Carrowdore Churchyard, 1921
I have heard that hysterical women say, 1024
Incident (Cullen), 1446
I have lived in important places, times, 1453
Indeed I must confess, 471
I have met them at close of day, 1194
Independence Day Letter, 1756
I hear a river thro' the valley wander (Hollander),
independent clause, 205 7
1777
Indian Burying Ground, The, 716
I hear a river thro' the valley wander (Stickney),
Indian Emperor, The, 500
1252

Indian Woman's Death-Song, 901

I heard a Fly buzz - when I died -, 1121

I ne'er was struck before that hour, 895

I hear that since you left me, 1947

I never lost as much but twice -, 1110

I held it truth, with him who sings, 996

In Flanders Fields, 1225

I hold my honey and I store my bread, 1586

In her storefront living room—, 1973

I imagine this midnight moment's forest, 1810

In Honor of that High and Mighty Princess, Queen

I joy to see how in your drawn work, 193

Elizabeth, of Most Happy Memory, 458

I kenning through astronomy divine, 536

In idle August, while the sea soft, 1825

I Knew a Woman, 1500

In Italy, where this sort of thing can occur, 1667

I Know a Man, 1705

In May, when sea-winds pierced our solitudes,

I know I am, 1435

941

I know that I shall meet my fate, 1193

In Memoriam A.H.H., 996

I know the bottom, she says. I know it with my *In Memoriam*
[*Easter 1915*], 1254

great tap root, 1839

In Memoriam fames foyce, 1380

I know what the caged bird feels, alas!, 1224

In Memory of Radio, 1856
I laugh til! my jaw unhinges, 2015
In Memory of W. B. Yeats, 1472
I leant upon a coppice gate, 1155
In Minako Wada's House, 1998
I like a look of Agony, 1115
In My Craft or Sullen Art, 1 572
I like a ship in storms was tossed, 594
In 1935, the year I was born, 1866
I like the fox shall grieve, 596
Innocent decision: to enjoy, 1678
I like to see it lap the Miles -, 1117
In Nunhead Cemetery, 1218
Illiterate, The, 1608
In old Minako Wada's house, 1998
I'll tell thee everything I can, 1137
In Paris with You, 1966

I N D E X / 2 1 6 3

In pious times, ere priestcraft did begin, 501
I saw the best minds of my generation destroyed
In Praise of Limestone, 1477
by madness, starving hysterical naked, 1708
Inscription for a War, 1485
I saw the spiders marching through the air, 1596
Inscription in a Beautiful Retreat Called Fairy I scarce believe
my love to be so pure, 300
Bower, 707
I see them crowd on crowd they walk the earth,

Insensibility, 1387

1044

Inside the veins there are navies setting forth, 1704

I shall never get you put together entirely, 1836

In silent night when rest I took, 466

I Sing of a Maiden, 79

In sixth grade Mrs. Walker, 2011

I sing of brooks, of blossoms, birds, and bowers,

In spite of all the learned have said, 716

354

Instructions, 1819

I Sing the man that never equal knew, 554

In such a night, when every louder wind, 563

I sing the tree is a heron, 1511

Intellect, 945

I sing this song about myself, full sad, 11

internal rhyme, 203 7

I sit in one of the dives, 1474

In the dungeon-crypts, idly did I stray, 1048

Is It Possible, 130

In the falling snow, 1 502

Is it you standing among the olive trees, 1865

In the Grounds, 1927

I slept under rhododendron, 1817

In the hickory scent, 1950

Is My Team Ploughing, 1175

In the last minutes he said more to her, 1905

I sought a theme and sought for it in vain, 1207

In the long, sleepless watches of the night, 956
I stand upon a hill and see, 1769
In the silence that prolongs the span, 1770
“Is there anybody there?” said the Traveller, 1225
In the stillness after dawn we two, 1751
Is this a holy thing to see, 741
In the Waiting Room, 1521
Is to leave all and take the thread of Love, 351
In this little urn is laid, 360
I stood with three comrades in Parliament Square,
In this strange labyrinth how shall I turn, 351
1590
In this world, the isle of dreams, 361
I strove with none, for none was worth my strife,
In Time of “The Breaking of Nations,” 1161
833
In Tooting, the tomato, 1946
I struck the board and cried, “No more, 379
Into these loves who but for passion looks, 236
I swive as well as other do, 552
intransitive, 205 5
Italian sonnet, 204 3
Introduction (“Hear the voice of the Bard!”— It could take
from Monday to Thursday, 2016
Blake), 740
I tell thee, Dick, where I have been, 454
Introduction (“Piping down the valleys wild”— It has a hole in
it. Not only where I, 1979
Blake), 733

I that have been a lover, and could show it, 344
Introduction, The (Finch), 556
I that in heill was and gladness, 86
In unexperienced infancy, 534
I, the poet William Yeats, 1198
In vain, in vain,—the all-composing hour, 638
I Think Continually of Those Who Were Truly
In vain to me the smiling mornings shine, 673
Great, 1505
In vain you boast poetic names of yore, 637
I think of the Celts as rather a whining lady, 1441
inversion, 2062
I think very well of Susan but I do not know her
Invisible, chimerical, 1869
name, 1249
Inviting a Friend to Supper, 326
I thought of walking round and round a space,
In wet May, in the months of change, 1788
1906
In what estate so ever I be, 82
I thought once how Theocritus had sung, 947
In Worcester, Massachusetts, 1521
It Is a Beauteous Evening, 794
In Xanadu did Kubla Khan, 809
It is a clearing deep in a forest: overhanging
I on my horse, and Love on me, doth try, 216
boughs, 1704
I placed a jar in Tennessee, 1260

It is a God-damned lie to say that these, 1379
I put your leaves aside, 1248
It is an ancient Mariner, 812
I reckon - When I count at all - , 1120
It is June, it is June, 1290
I remember the clumsy surgery: the face, 1559
It is like the first and last time I tried a Coleman,
I remember the dread with which I at a quarter
1631
past four, 1463
It is morning, Senlin says, and in the morning,
I remember the neckcurls, limp and damp as ten-
1370
drils, 1499
It is not a range of a mountain, 1249
I resemble everyone, 1803
It is not what they built. It is what they knocked
Irish Airman Foresees His Death, An, 1193
down,1963
irregular forms, 2 0 4 8
It is the clay that makes the earth stick to his
I said in my youth, 1491
spade, 1218
is an enchanted thing, 1335
It is the sound of lions lapping, 1492
I saw a Ship of martial build, 1056
It is true, as someone has said, that in, 1864
I saw eternity the other night, 493

It is 12:20 in New York a Friday, 1728

2 1 6 4 / I N D E X

It is yourself you seek, 1407

I would to Heaven that I were so much clay, 837

It little profits that an idle king, 992

I wrote: in the dark cavern of our birth, 1504

It mounts at sea, a concave wall, 1771

I, too, dislike it: there are things that are important

Jabberwocky, 1135

beyond all this fiddle, 1329

Jackson, Laura (Riding), 1425

It's a question of altitude, or latitude, 1740

Jacobsen, Josephine, 1491

It's a spring morning; sun pours in the window, *Japan*, 1917

1688

Jarrell, Randall, 1552

It seemed that out of battle I escaped, 1389

Jeffers, Robinson, 1320

It semes white and is red, 85

Jennings, Elizabeth, 1735

It's no go the merrygoround, it's no go the rick-

Jerusalem, 747

shaw, 1486

Jewish Cemetery at Newport, The, 952

It's raining on black coal and warm wet ashes, Job Davies,
eighty-five, 1545

1909

John Anderson, My Jo, 754

It's the first night, I suppose, 1666

Johnson, Samuel, 655

It's very cold, Catherine is bundled in a coat, a *Johnson's Cabinet Watched by Ants*, 1704

poncho on top of that, high boots, gloves, 1870 Jonson, Ben, 323

It Was a Lover and His Lass, 274

Jordan (7), 373

It was a Maine lobster town—, 1602

Journey of the Magi, 1359

It was hot. A size too large, 1952

Juan's Song, 1407

It was in and about the Martinmas time, 107

fubilate Agno, 678

It was many and many a year ago, 981

Judges, who rule the world by laws, 592

It was not I who began it, 1579

fudging Distances, 1565

It was taken some time ago, 1894

funk, 1638

It was the dingiest bird, 1454

Just as my fingers on these keys, 1262

I've a pile of memories on my other, 1968

Justice, Donald, 1684

I've heard the lilting at our yowe-milking, 677

Just like as in a nest of boxes round, 500

I've heard them lilting at loom and belting, 1448

Just now the lilac is in bloom, 1325

I've known rivers, 1430

Just off the highway to Rochester, Minnesota,
I wake and feel the fell of dark, not day, 1170
1750

I wake to sleep, and take my waking slow, 1500
Just when our drawing-rooms begin to blaze, 697
I walk down the garden paths, 1245

I walked where in their talking graves, 1590
Kanheri Caves, 1883

I walk through the long schoolroom questioning,
Kavanagh, Patrick, 1450
1200

Keats, John, 905

I Wandered Lonely as a Cloud, 801

Kees, Weldon, 1559

I wander thro' each charter'd street, 744

Kenney, Richard, 1954

I want a hero: an uncommon want, 837

Kentucky water, clear springs: a boy fleeing, 1419

I wanted so ably, 1706

Keyes, Sidney, 1644

I wanted to go down to where the roots begin, 1926

Killigrew, Anne, 554

I was angry with my friend, 743

Killing Time, 2021

I was going up to say something, 1757

Kind pity chokes my spleen, brave scorn forbids,

I was sent in to see her, 1758

314

I Was Sleeping Where the Black Oaks Move, 2006

King Billy, 1618

I weep for Adonais—he is dead!, 879

Kingfisher, 1510

I went for a walk over the dunes again this morn-

King, Henry, 363

ing, 1695

Kinnell, Galway, 1740

I went into a public-‘ouse to get a pint o’beer, 1181

Kinsella, Thomas, 1757

I went to the Garden of Love, 744

Kipling, Rudyard, 1181

I whole in body, and in mind, 147

kitchenette building, 1586

I will arise and go now, and go to Innisfree, 1190

Kizer, Carolyn, 1688

I will rise, 1313

Knight and Shepherd’s Daughter, The, 113

I will strike down wooden houses; I will burn alu-

Koch, Kenneth, 1691

minum, 1753

Komunyakaa, Yusef, 1949

I wish that I had spoken only of it all, 1250

Kraken, The, 984

I wonder, by my troth, what thou and I, 293

Kubla Khan, 809

I wonder do you feel today, 1040

Kumquat for John Keats, A, 1875

I wonder, Duddon, if you still remember, 1561

Kunitz, Stanley, 1454

“I won’t go with you. I want to stay with Grandpa!,”

1597

La Belle Dame sans Merci, 917

I work all day, and get half-drunk at night, 1658

Lachrimae, 1834

I would not paint - a picture -, 1116

Lady in Kicking Horse Reservoir, The, 1675

I N D E X / 2 1 6 5

Lady Lazarus, 1843

Life, friends, is boring. We must not say so, 1549

Lady Lost, 1369

Lifeguard, The, 1661

Lady of Shalott, The, 984

Life! I know not what thou art, 706

Lady’s Dressing Room, The, 572

Light-winged Smoke, Icarian bird, 1046

Lake Isle of Innisfree, The, 1190

Like a convalescent, I took the hand, 1903

L’Allegro, 402

Like a painting it is set before one, 1544

Lamb, The, 734

Like a skein of loose silk blown against a wall, 1296

Lament for a Leg, 1681

Like as the armed knight, 140

Lament for the Great Music, 1376

Like as the waves make towards the pebbled shore,

Lament for the Makaris, 86
262
Lamia, 918
*Like Dolmens Round My Childhood, the Old Peo-
Landfall in Unknown Seas*, 1528
ple, 1783
Landing of the Pilgrim Fathers in New England, Like the
foghorn that's all lung, 1614
The, 898
Like to the Indians, scorched with the sun, 248
Landor, Walter Savage, 831
limerick, 2 0 4 6
Langland, William, 71
Linen Industry, The, 1910
Lanier, Sidney, 1162
Lines (Composed a Few Miles above Tintern Abbey),
Lanyer, Aemilia, 284
765
Lapis Lazuli, 1204
Lines Written during a Period of Insanity, 704
Larkin, Philip, 1648
Linger not, stranger; shed no tear, 1485
Last night, ah, yesternight, betwixt her lips and *Listeners, The*,
1225
mine, 1211
Litany, 1918
Late April and you are three; today, 1732
Little Black Boy, The, 735
Latest Decalogue, The, 1052

Little Boy Found, The, 737
Law makes long spokes of the short stakes of men,
Little Boy Lost, The, 736
1463
Little Brown Baby, 1223
Lawrence, D. H., 1284
Little Gidding, 1360
Layton, Irving, 1530
Little Lamb, who made thee?, 734
Lay your sleeping head, my love, 1465
Little Red-Cap, 2008
Lazarus, Emma, 1172
Lo! Death has reared himself a throne, 976
Leafy-with-love banks and the green waters of the
Lodge, Thomas, 222
canal, 1453
Lo I the man, whose Muse whilome did maske,
Lear, Edward, 1041
165
Leda and the Swan, 1200
London, 744
Lee, Li-Young, 2011
London, 1802, 795
Legal Fiction, 1463
London Rain, 1489
Leithauser, Brad, 1998
Long Branch Song, A, 1914
Lenox Hill, 1959

Longfellow, Henry Wadsworth, 951
Lessons of the War, 1564
Long-Legged Fly, 1206
Let it no longer be a forlorn hope, 468
Longley, Michael, 1910
Let man's soul be a sphere, and then, in this, 317
Long Love, That in My Thought Doth Harbor, The,
Let me not to the marriage of true minds, 266
126
Let me pour forth, 300
long meter, 204 1
Let Observation, with extensive view, 656
Long neglect has worn away, 1046
Let others sing of knights and paladins, 232
Long time he lay upon the sunny hill, 1336
Letter for All-Hallows (1949), A, 1665
Look in thy 1 glass and tell the face thou viewest,
Letters & Other Worlds, 1933
258
Letters from a Father, 1629
Lorde, Audre, 1858
Letters to Edward Thomas, 2016
Lord, how can man preach thy eternal word?, 373
Letter to Her Husband, Absent upon Public Lord Randal, 100
Employment, A, 466
Lord's lost Him His mockingbird, 1533
Let the bird of loudest lay, 270
Lord, who createdst man in wealth and store, 368,

Let the snake wait under, 1276
Lord, with what care hast thou begirt us round!,
Letting Go, 1868
369
Let us go then, you and I, 1340
Lore, 1545
Levertov, Denise, 1677
Losing a Language, 1744
Levine, Philip, 1761
Lost, The, 1044
Lewis, Alun, 1573
Lost in Translation, 1720
Lewis, C. Day, 1448
Lost Son, The, 1495
Lie, The, 154
Lost Soul, A, 1831
Life (Barbault), 706
Lotos-Eaters, The, 988
Life (Herbert), 377
Louse Hunting, 1374
2 1 6 6 / I N D E X
Love bade me welcome: yet my soul drew back,
Map of the City, A, 1769
385
Margaret, are you grieving, 1068
Love Calls Us to the Things of This World, 1633
Mariana, 982
Love in fantastic triumph sat, 540

Mark but this flea, and mark in this, 309
Love in my bosom like a bee, 222
Marlowe, C h r i s t o p h e r , 2 3 8
Lovelace, R i c h a r d , 4 7 2
Marriage, 1807
Love-Letter-Burning, 1990
Marshes of Glynn, The, 1163
Loveliest of Trees, the Cherry Now, 1173
Martian Sends a Postcard Home, A, 1943
Love lives beyond, 894
Martinez, Dionisio D., 2 0 0 9
Love Me Little, Love Me Long, 117
Marvell, Andrew, 4 7 5
Love on the Farm, 1284
Mary Hamilton, 108
Lover, The: A Ballad, 641
masculine rhymes, 2037
Love's Alchemy, 303
Massachusetts Bay Psalm Book, The, 391
"Love seeketh not Itself to please, 742
Masts at Dawn, 1457
Love set you going like a fat gold watch, 1837
Maxwell, Glyn, 2 0 1 6
Love's Growth, 300
may i feel said he, 1395
Love Song of f. Alfred Prufrock, The, 1340
May I for my own self song's truth reckon, 12
Love Song of Tooting, A, 1946

M c C r a e , John, 1225

Love, That Doth Reign and Live Within My Meanwhile,
somewhere in the state of Colorado, *Thought*, 137

armed to the teeth, 2021

Love's the boy stood on the burning deck, 1515

Medallion, 1306

Love (III), 385

Medgar Evers, 1588

Love Without Hope, 1400

Mediocrity in Love Rejected, 387

Loving in truth, and fain in verse my love to show,

Meditation at Lagunitas, 1919

213

Meditation 8, 536

Lowell, Amy, 1245

Medusa, 1406

Lowell, Robert, 1 5 9 2

Meeting the British, 1980

Lowry, M a l c o l m , 1503

Melville, H e r m a n , 1054

Lucifer in Starlight, 1110

Mementos, I, 1734

Lucks, My Fair Falcon, 133

Memorabilia, 1019

Luini in porcelain!, 1306

Memory lifts her smoky mirror: 1943, 1799

Lullaby, 1465

Men at Forty, 1685

Lully, lullay, lully, lullay, 83
Men call you fayre, and you doe credit it, 194
Luxurious man, to bring his vice in use, 482
Mending Wall, 1227
Lycidas, 410
Merce of Egypt, 1511
Lying apart now, each in a separate bed, 1735
Mercian Hymns, 1833
Lyke as a huntsman after weary chace, 192
M e r e d i t h , George, 1107
Lyke as the Culver on the bared bough, 195
M e r e d i t h , William, 1608
Lyly, John, 207
Merrill, J a m e s , 1716
lyric poetry, **2028**
Merry Margaret, 91
M e r w i n , W. S., 1743
M a c C a i g , N o r m a n , 1508
Methought I Saw, 419
M a c D i a r m i d , H u g h , 1376
Methought I saw my late espoused saint, 419
Mac Flecknoe, 517
Methought I saw the grave where Laura lay, 151
M a c L e i s h , Archibald, 1381
Mew, Charlotte, 1216
M a c N e i c e , Louis, 1485
Midnight. June, 1923. Not a stir except for the
M a c P h e r s o n , Jay, 1830

brough and brouhaha, 1981
Madame, ye been of alle beautee shrine, 68
Midnight. The wind yawing nor-east, 1628
M a h o n , Derek, 1921
Midsummer, 1827
main clause, 2057
Midwinter spring is its own season, 1360
Make me, O Lord, thy spinning wheel complete,
Milkweed and Monarch, 1980
540
Mill, The, 1214
Maldiver Shark, The, 1055
Millay, E d n a St. Vincent, 1382
Man, 376
Milton, 746
Man Alone, 1407
Milton, J o h n , 3 9 4
Mangosteens, 1991
Milton! thou shouldst be living at this hour, 795
Man looking into the sea, 1330
Mind Is an Enchanting Thing, The, 1335
Man Meets a Woman in the Street, A, 1556
Mine—by the Right of the White Election!, 1118
Mannerly Margery Milk and Ale, 90
Mine eyes have seen the glory of the coming of the
Manner of Her Will, & What She Left to London,
Lord, 1054

and to All Those in It, at Her Departing, The, 147 *Mine Own
john Poins*, 134

Mantles, 1946

Miniver Cheevy, 1213

I N D E X / 2 1 6 7

Missing, The, 1774

My dress is silent when I tread the ground, 10

Missing Dates, 1464

My father at the dictionary-stand, 2003

Mr. Brodsky, 1747

My father's body was a globe of fear, 1933

Mr. Edwards and the Spider, 1596

My first thought was, he lied in every word, 1020

Mr. Flood's Party, 1215

My Galley, 127

Mr. Over, 1439

My God, I heard this day, 376

Mrs. Snow, 1583

My God! I know, I feel thee mine, 652

Mock on, Mock on, Voltaire, Rousseau, 745

My Grandmother, 1735

Mock Song, The, 552

My Grandmother's Love Letters, 1410

Modern Love, 1107

My head, my heart, mine eyes, my life, nay, more,

Modotti, 1800

466

Momaday, N. Scott, 1861

My heart aches, and a drowsy numbness pains, 935

Monody, 1057

My heart has made its mind up, 1948

monometer, 2 0 3 1

My Heart Leaps Up, 796

monorhyme, 2 0 4 1

My heart, my dove, my snail, my sail, my, 2014

Montague, John, 1783

My Last Afternoon with Uncle Devereux Winslow,

Montagu, Lady Mary Wortley, 639

1597

Mont Blanc, 866

My Last Duchess, 1012

Moore, Marianne, 1328

My life closed twice before it's close, 1127

Moose, The, 1523

My Life had stood - a Loaded Gun -, 1122

Moraes, Dom, 1883

My lizard, my lively writher, 1501

More and more lately, as, not even minding the

My long two-pointed ladder's sticking through a

slippages yet, the aches and sad softenings, 1869

tree, 1231

More, Hannah, 707

My Lord recalls Ferrara? How walls, 1778

More Lovely than Antiquity, 1270

My Love is of a birth as rare, 480

More then most faire, full of the living fire, 190

My Lute Awake!, 129
Morgan, Edwin, 1618
My mistress' eyes are nothing like the sun, 267
Morning Song, 1837
My mother bore me in the southern wild, 735
Morris, William, 1139
My mother had two faces and a frying pot, 1859
Morse, 1890
My old man's a white old man, 1431
Moss, Howard, 1659
My own heart let me more have pity on; let, 1170
Most glorious Lord of lyfe that on this day, 192
My Papa's Waltz, 1494
Most of It, The, 1243
My pensive Sara! thy soft cheek reclined, 805
"Mother dear, may I go downtown, 1855
My prime of youth is but a frost of cares, 151
Motherhood, 1540
My Sad Captains, 1771
Mothers of America, 1730
" 'Mystery Boy' Looks for Kin in Nashville," 1535
Mother to Her Waking Infant, A, 760
My Sweetest Lesbia, 278
Mother, who read and thought and poured herself
My swirling wants. Your frozen lips, 1796
into me, 1848
My Version, 1947
Mourning Poem for the Queen of Sunday, 1 533

Mourn, mourn, ye Muses, all your loss deplore,
Naked she lay, clasped in my longing arms, 551
546
Naming of Parts, 1564
Move him into the sun—, 1390
Nashe, Thomas, 282
Moving from Cheer to Joy, from Joy to All, 1555
Nash, Ogden, 1437
Mower against Gardens, The, 482
Nature, That Washed Her Hands in Milk, 156
Mower to the Glowworms, The, 483
Nature's lay idiot, I taught thee to love, 311
Much have I traveled in the realms of gold, 905
Nature, which is the vast creation's soul, 527
Much Madness is divinest Sense -, 1121
Nautilus Island's hermit, 1601
Muir, Edwin, 1336
Navidad, *St. Nicholas Ave.*, 1929
Muldoon, Paul, 1979
Near the dry river's water-mark we found, 1749
Murray, Les, 1885
Negro Speaks of Rivers, The, 1430
Musee des Beaux Arts, 1471
Neither Out Far Nor In Deep, 1240
Musical Instrument, A, 950
Nemerov, Howard, 1623
Mutability (Shelley), 864
Nepenthe, 713

Mutability (Wordsworth), 804
Neutrality Loathsome, 361
Mute is thy wild harp, now, O Bard sublime!, 711
Neutral Tones, 1153
My attention is a wild, 1700
Never Again Would Birds' Song Be the Same, 1242
My bands of silk and miniver, 1310
Nevertheless, 1334
My black face fades, 1949
Never until the mankind making, 1569
My brother comes home from work, 1761
New Colossus, The, 1172
My candle burns at both ends, 1272
New Heaven, New War, 223
my dreams, my works, must wait till after hell, 1586 *New Rule*,
1969

2 1 6 8 / I N D E X

New World A-Comin', 1803
Now as I was young and easy under the apple
New Year's: A Short Pantoum, 2024
boughs, 1571
New Zealand, 1703
Now as I watch the progress of the plague, 1774
Next Day, 1555
“No water so still as the, 1333
Next Poem, The, 1972
Now Go'th Sun under Wood, 15
Next to my own skin, her pearls. My mistress, 2007

Now hardly here and there a hackney-coach, 568

“next to of course god america i, 1394

Now in thy dazzling half-oped eye, 760

Nicholson, Norman, 1561

Now it is autumn and the falling fruit, 1291

Night (Bogan), 1409

No worst, there is none. Pitched past pitch of grief,

Night, The (Vaughan), 497

1169

Night, Death, Mississippi, 1534

Now sleeps the crimson petal, now the white, 995

Night Feeding, 1537

Now that I am fifty-six, 1538

Nightingale, The, 211

Now that I have your face by heart, I look, 1408

Night Piece, to Julia, The, 359

Now that the winter's gone, the earth hath lost,

Nights in the Gardens of Port of Spain, 1821

386

Night, the black summer, simplifies her smells, Now thou hast
loved me one whole day, 294

1821

Now we must praise heaven-kingdom's Guardian,

Night, welcome art thou to my mind destrest, 349

1

*Nikolaus Mardruz to his Master Ferdinand, Count Now Winter
Nights Enlarge, 281*

of Tyrol, 1565, 1778

Nudes—stark and glistening, 1374

MCMXIV, 1653

Nuns Fret Not at Their Convent's Narrow Room,

1916 seen from 1921, 1405

796

90 North, 1552

Nymph's Reply to the Shepherd, The, 152

Nobody heard him, the dead man, 1440

No Coward Soul Is Mine, 1050

O'Brien, Sean, 1992

Nocturnal Reverie, A, 563

Obscurest night involved the sky, 702

Nocturnal upon St. Lucy's Day, Being the Shortest octameter, 2

0 3 3

Day, A, 304

octave, 2042

Noel, noel, noel, 80

ode, 2048

No, it does not happen, 1801

Ode (Emerson), 943

No longer mourn for me when I am dead, 263

Ode (Gray), 668

nominal syntax, **2061**

Ode (Wordsworth), 796

No more be grieved at that which thou hast done,

Ode, An (Prior), 568

261

Ode for Him, An, 360

No more of talk where God or angel guest, 425

Ode on a Distant Prospect of Eton College, 666

No more walks in the wood, 1776

Ode on a Grecian Urn, 938

No, no, go not to Lethe, neither twist, 937

Ode on Melancholy, 937

Non sum qualis eram honae sub regno Cynarae, *Ode on the Poetical Character*, 674

1211

Ode to a Nightingale, 935

Noonday Axeman, 1885

Ode to Bill, 1739

Noon in the intermountain plain, 1861

Ode to Death, 714

No Second Troy, 1191

Ode to Evening, 675

Nostalgia on the Lakefronts, 1686

Ode to Himself, An, 336

No Swan So Fine, 1333

Ode to Psyche, 933

Note Left in jimmy Leonard's Shack, A, 1749

Ode to the Confederate Dead, 1417

Not every man has gentians in his house, 1291

Ode to the West Wind, 872

No, the serpent did not, 1813

Ode Written in the Beginning of the Year 1746,

Nothing would sleep in that cellar, dank as a ditch,

673

1493

Odysseus, 1743

Not, I'll not, carrion comfort, Despair, not feast on

Of all the causes which conspire to blind, 596

thee, 1169

Of asphodel, that greeny flower, 1276

Not Knowing, 1997

Of A' the Airts, 752

Not like the brazen giant of Greek fame, 1172

off-rhyme, 2 0 3 8

Not marble, nor the gilded monuments, 262

Of heaven or hell I have no power to sing, 1043

Not mine own fears, nor the prophetic soul, 266

Of man's first disobedience, and the fruit, 421

Not my hands but green across you now, 1675

Of Many Worlds in This World, 500

Not only how far away, but the way that you say

Of Mere Being, 1268

it, 1565

O for that warning voice, which he who saw, 422

Not Waving but Drowning, 1440

Often beneath the wave, wide from this ledge,

Not with more glories, in the ethereal plain, 607

1410

Nou goth sonne under wode—, 15

Often in summer, on a tarred bridge plank stand-

noun phrase, 2061

ing, 1701

I N D E X / 2 1 6 9

Of thee, kind boy, I ask no red and white, 452
One day the amorous Lysander, 541
Of the Last Verses in the Book, 393
One day the Nouns were clustered in the street,
Of this cloth doll which, 1936
1691
Of this worlds Theatre in which we stay, 192
One face looks out from all his canvases, 1129
Of Time and the Line, 1967
One Flesh, 1735
Oft in My Thought, 78
On either side the river lie, 984
O Goddess! hear these tuneless numbers, wrung,
One must have a mind of winter, 1256
933
On English Monsieur, 325
O golden-tongued Romance with serene lute!, 905
One ought not to have to care, 1235
O Grammar rules, o now your virtues show, 217
One Perfect Rose, 1391
Oh, but it is dirty!, 1517
On First Looking into Chapman's Homer, 905
Oh! Death will find me, long before I tire, 1324
On Gut, 328
Oh, For a Bowl of Fat Canary, 207
On Hellespont, guilty of true love's blood, 238
Oh! for imperial Polydamna's art, 713
On Imagination, 722

Oh Galuppi, Baldassare, this is very sad to find!,
Onion, Memory, The, 1942
1017
Only a man harrowing clods, 1161
O'Hara, Frank, 1728
Only joy, now here you are, 218
Oh, I'm sailing away my own true love, 1854
On My First Daughter, 323
Oh Mistress Mine, 275
On My First Son, 323
Oh, to be in England, 1017
On Myself, 566
Oh Wert Thou in the Cauld Blast, 760
On Not Being Milton, 1872
Oh when the early morning at the seaside, 1462
onomatopoeia, 2 0 3 7
"Oh where are you going with your love-locks flow-
On Passing the New Menin Gate, 1320
ing, 1134
On Playwright, 325
Oh, who shall from this dungeon raise, 477
On Shakespeare, 401
Oil-slick, slack shocks, ancient engine, 1955
On Sitting Down to Read King Lear Once Again,
O king of terrors, whose unbounded sway, 562
905
Old Bachelor Brother, 1999
On Spies, 324

Old Eben Flood, climbing alone one night, 1215
On the Baptized Ethiopian, 468
Old Eddie's face, wrinkled with river lights, 1821
On the day of the explosion, 1657
Older, more generous, 1861
On the Death of Dr. Robert Levet, 664
Old-Fashioned Song, An, 1776
On the Death of the Late Earl of Rochester, 546
Old Mythologies, 1784
On the Farm, 1545
Old Vicarage, Grantchester, The, 1325
On the Late Massacre in Piedmont, 418
Old Women, The, 1627
On the long shore, lit by the moon, 1623
Olney Hymns, 695
On the Morning of Christ's Nativity, 394
Olson, Charles, 1511
On the Move, 1768
O! Mankind, 86
On the Sonnet, 916
"O'Melia, my dear, this does everything crown!", *On the Welsh Language*, 528
1156
On This Day I Complete My Thirty-sixth Year, 862
Omeros, 1827
On thy stupendous summit, rock sublime!, 715
O my love's like a red, red rose, 759
On Wenlock Edge the Wood's in Trouble, 1176

On a Columnar Self -, 1121
On winter mornings, 1502
On a Return from Egypt, 1622
open forms, 2048
On a starred night Prince Lucifer uprose, 1110
—Or, conversely, hungers, 1610
On a tree by a river a little tom-tit, 1146
Origins, 1926
On Being Brought from Africa to America, 720
Orion, 1795
Once I am sure there's nothing going on, 1649
Ormond, John, 1681
Once in a Lifetime, Snow, 1887
Ormsby, Eric, 1925
Once more the storm is howling, and half hid,
O Rose, thou art sick, 742
1196
O stagnant east-wind, palsied mare, 1268
Once, my braids swung heavy as ropes, 2005
O Taste and See, 1678
Once riding in old Baltimore, 1446
Others abide our question. Thou art free, 1087
Once their fruit is picked, 1640
O thou, my lovely boy, who in thy pow'r, 267
Once upon a midnight dreary, while I pondered,
O Thou that in the heavens does dwell, 750
weak and weary, 977
O Thou, that sit'st upon a throne, 680

Once upon a time there was an Italian, 1438
O thou that swing'st upon the waving hair, 474
Ondaatje, Michael, 1933
ottava rima, 2 0 4 1
One Art, 1527
Our God, Our Help, 591
One by one they appear in, 1771
Our lives avoided tragedy, 1687
One Day, The, 1753
Our sardine fishermen work at night in the dark of
One day I wrote her name upon the strand, 194
the moon; daylight or moonlight, 1322

2 1 7 0 / I N D E X

Outbound, 2023
Phillip Sparow, 94
Out of burlap sacks, out of bearing butter, 1761
Phoenix and the Turtle, The, 270
Out of Hiding, 2013
Piano, 1285
Out of the bosom of the Air, 956
Piazza di Spagna, Early Morning, 1634
Out of the Cradle Endlessly Rocking, 1073
Piazza Piece, 1367
Out of Your Sleep Arise and Wake, 80
Picture of Little T.C. in a Prospect of Flowers, The,
Outside, although November by the clock, 1766
481
Out walking in the frozen swamp one gray day,

Pictures from Brueghel, 1283

1232

Pied Beauty, 1167

Oven Bird, The, 1233

Piers Plowman, 71

Over the rim of the glass, 1669

Pike, 1812

Over these blunted, these tormented hills, 1883

Pile the bodies high at Austerlitz and Waterloo,

Owen, Wilfred, 1386

1253

O what can ail thee, Knight at arms, 917

Pillar of Fame, The, 361

O where ha' you been, Lord Randal, my son?, 100 *Pindaric ode, 2 0 4 8*

O wild West Wind, thou breath of Autumn's being,

Pink and a bit soft-bodied, with a somewhat jazzy,

872

1914

Owl, The, 1254

Pinsky, Robert, 1913

Owl and the Pussy-Cat, The, 1042

Piping down the valleys wild, 733

Ozymandias, 870

Pla ce bo, 94

Plain Song for Comadre, A, 1635

Pact, A, 1296

Platform One, 1815

Page, P. K., 1583
Plath, Sylvia, 1836
Painter, The, 1736
Platonic Love, 471
Palmer, Michael, 1936
Playwright, convict of public wrongs to men, 325
Palm Reader, The, 1973
Poe, Edgar Allan, 975
Pamphilia to Amphilanthus, 347
Poem (Williams), 1275
pantoum, 2 0 4 6
Poem Ended by a Death, 1850
Pantoum of the Great Depression, 1687
Poems of Our Climate, The, 1266
Paradise Lost, 420
Poem to Mr Thomas and Mr Frost, 2016
Paradoxes and Oxymorons, 1739
Poetical Sketches, 732
pararhyme, 2 0 3 8
poetic license, 2 0 3 8
Parish Register, The, 723
poetic syntax, 2 0 5 3
Parker, Dorothy, 1391
Poet of Nature, thou hast wept to know, 863
Parsley, 1985
Poetry, 1329
Parting, without a Sequel, 1368
Poison Tree, A, 743

Part otter, part snake, part bird the bird Anhinga,
Pomegranate, The, 1941
1542
Poor eyes be blind, the light behold no more, 349
Passing Away, Saith the World, Passing Away, 1133 Poor soul,
the center of my sinful earth, 269
Passionate Man's Pilgrimage, The, 153
Porphyria's Lover, 1009
Passionate Shepherd to His Love, The, 256
Pope, Alexander, 596
past participle, 2 0 6 7
Portent, The, 1054
Past Ruined Ilion Helen Lives, 832
Porter, Peter, 1786
Past second cock-crow yacht masts in the harbor
Portrait d'une Femme, 1295
go slowly white, 1457
Portrait in Georgia, 1399
Patience, Though I Have Not, 128
Portrait of a Lady, 1273
Patterns, 1245
Pound, Ezra, 1295
Paul Laurence Dunbar, 1536
Pratt, E. J., 1270
Peaches, 1752
Prayer (Duffy), 2007
Pearl, 75
Prayer (Gioia), 1972

Pearl, the precious prize of a king, 75
Prayer (I), 371
Peele, George, 221
Prayer for My Daughter, A, 1196
Penelope for her Ulisses sake, 191
Prayer, the church's banquet, angels' age, 371
pentameter, 2 0 3 2
Pray thee, take care, that tak'st my book in hand,
perfect rhyme, 2 0 3 8
323
Permanently, 1691
predicate, 2 0 5 5
Persian Version, The, 1402
Prediction, The, 1863
Persimmons, 2011
Prelude, The (Wordsworth), 781
Persistence of Song, The, 1659
Pressed by the moon, mute arbitress of tides, 711
Peter Quince at the Clavier, 1262
Primer, The, 1491
Pet Panther, 1700
Primer of the Daily Round, A, 1624
Philips, Katherine, 526
Princess, The, 994
INDEX / 2 1 7 1
Prior, Matthew, 566
Regeneration, 490
Prisoner, The, 1048

relative adverb, 2057
Prodigy, 1892
relative pronoun, 2057
Professor, publisher, and critic, 1995
Relic, The, 310
Prologue, The, 462
Relics, 1957
Prologue Spoken by Mr. Garrick, 655
Remember, 1128
;prose poetry, 2050
Remember how we picked the daffodils?, 1814
Prospect of Heaven Makes Death Easy, A, 590
Remembering the 'Thirties, 1641
Provide, Provide, 1241
Remember me when I am gone away, 1128
Psalm 58 (Massachusetts Bay Psalm Book), 391
Remembrance, 1047
Psalm 58: Si Were Utique (M. Sidney), 225
Remorse - is Memory - awake -, 1122
Psalm 58 (Smart), 684
Removal from Terry Street, A, 1927
Psalm 58 (Watts), 592
Renoir, whose paintings I don't much like, 1867
Psalm 114: In Exitu Israel? (M. Sidney), 226
Renunciation - is a piercing Virtue -, 1123
Psalm 114 (Massachusetts Bay Psalm Book), 392
repeton, 2046
Psalm 114 (Smart), 685

repeton couplet, 2 0 4 6
Psalm 114 (Watts), 593
Repression, 1869
Publication - is the Auction, 1123
Request to a Year, 1578
Pulley, The, 379
Requiem, 1437
Pulling up flax after the blue flowers have fallen,
Resolution and Independence, 790
1910
Resume, 1391
Punishment, 1900
Retreat, The, 492
Purse-Seine, The, 1322
Return of the Greeks, The, 1337
Puzzle faces in the dying elms, 1535
Return to Scalpay, 1509
pyrrhic meter, 2031
Reuben Bright, 1213
Reveille, 1173
Quaker Graveyard in Nantucket, The, 1592
rhetorical question, 2062
Quality of Sprawl, The, 1888
Rhode Island, 1608
quantitative meter, 2036
Rhodora, The, 941
quatrain, 2041
rhyme royal, 2 0 4 1

Queen and Huntress, 345
Rhyme, the rack of finest wits, 332
Queen-Anne s-Lace, 1273
Rich, Adrienne, 1791
Question, The, 1870
Richard Cory, **1212**
Question Answered, A, 746
Riddle (Hine), 1869
Quotations, 1867
riddles, 10
Right now I am the flower girl, 1896
Ragged Island, 1385
Rights of Woman, The, 705
Rag of black plastic, shred of a kite, 1543
Rime of the Ancient Mariner, The, 812
Rain, 1255
Ring Out Your Bells, 212
Raine, Craig, 1942
“Rise up, rise up, now, Lord Douglas,” she says, 97
Raleigh, Sir Walter, 151
rising meter, 2031
Ramanujan, A. K., 1801
rites for Cousin Vit, the, 1587
Randall, Dudley, 1855
River-Merchant’s Wife, The: a Letter, 1297
Ransom, John Crowe, 1367
Road Not Taken, The, 1232
Rape of the Lock, The, 604

Robin Redbreast, 1454
Raven, The, 977
Robinson, 1560
Razors pain you, 1391
Robinson, Edwin Arlington, 1212
Read and committed to the flames, I call, 1872
Roethke, Theodore, 1493
Reader, enough of this apology, 1996
Roman Fountain, 1408
Reading the Bible Backwards, 1879
Rondel, 1538
Reapers, 1398
Room on a Garden, A, 1268
Receipt to Cure the Vapors, A, 642
Root Cellar, 1493
Recessional, 1181
Rosalind's Madrigal, 222
Reconciliation, 1078
Rose Aylmer, 831
Redemption, 367
Rose-cheeked Laura, 280
Red Red Rose, A, 759
Rose, harsh rose, 1311
Red Wheelbarrow, The, 1274
Rosenberg, Isaac, 1373
Reed, Henry, 1563
Roses, 1616
Reflections on Ice-breaking, 1437

Rossetti, Christina, 1128

refrain, 2045

Rossetti, Dante Gabriel, 1102

Refusal to Mourn the Death, by Fire, of a Child in

Rotate the husband and expose a hidden side. A

London, A, 1569

letter he wrote from Rio de Janeiro, 1970

2 1 7 2 / I N D E X

Roundelay between Two Shepherds, A, 235

Senlin: A Biography, 1370

Row after row with strict impunity, 1417

sentence, 2055

Row us out from Desenzano, to your Sirmione *Separation*,
1744

row!, 1008

September 1, 1939, 1474

Rubaiyat of Omar Khayyam of Naishapur, The, 961 September
has come and I wake, 1487

Ruined Cottage, The, 768

September rain falls on the house, 1520

Ruined Maid, The, 1156

September Song, 1832

Rukeyser, Muriel, 1537

Serious Concerns, 1949

Rule which by obeying grows, 945

sestet, 2042

run-on lines, 2 0 3 4

sestina, 2045

Sestina (Bishop), 1520

Sacrament of the Altar, The, 8 5
Seth, Vikram, 1994
Sad Steps, 1656
Settle Bed, The, 1907
Safe in their Alabaster Chambers - (first version),
Seven threads make the shroud, 1628
1 1 1 1
Sexton, Anne, 1764
Safe in their Alabaster Chambers - (second ver-
Shadows in the Water, 534
sion), 1112
Shakespeare, 1087
Safe upon the solid rock the ugly houses stand,
Shakespeare, William, 257
1382
Shall I compare thee to a summer's day?, 259
Sailing to Byzantium, 1199
shaped poetry, 2 0 5 0
St. Agnes' Eve—Ah, bitter chill it was!, 907
She died in the upstairs bedroom, 1460
Salutation, The, 531
“She done put huh little hands, 1429
Salve Deus Rex Judaeorum, 284
She Dwelt among the Untrodden Ways, 789
Samson Agonistes, 450
She has finished and sealed the letter, 1368
Sanctity, 1450
She is as in a field a silken tent, 1241

Sandburg, Carl, 1252
She kept an antique shop—or it kept her, 1735
Sandpiper, 1518
Shelley, Percy Bysshe, 863
Sand pyramid, size of a child, each September, She looked
over his shoulder, 1479
2013
She may count three little daisies very well, 1248
Sarah, Robyn, 1956
Shepherdess Calender, The, 159
Sassoon, Siegfried, 1317
She said: the pitying audience melt in tears, 618
Satire III, 314
She sang beyond the genius of the sea, 1264
Saturday, 639
She sat on a shelf, 1540
Sawmill, 1956
She sat up on her pillows, receiving guests, 1928
Say Not the Struggle Nought Availeth, 1053
She Walks in Beauty, 834
scansion, 2028
She Was a Phantom of Delight, 802
Scenes from the Life of the Peppertrees, 1677
She was thinner, with a mannered gauntness, 1988
Schnackenberg, Gjertrud, 2000
Shield of Achilles, The, 1479
Scholar-Gypsy, The, 1089
Shiloh, 1055

Scholars, The, 1193
Shimmer, 1684
Schooner Flight, The, 1825
Shine, Perishing Republic, 1320
Schuyler, James, 1683
Ship of Death, The, 1291
Science! true daughter of Old Time thou art!, 975
Shirley, James, 390
Scorn Not the Sonnet, 804
Shore, Jane, 1952
Seafarer, The, 12
short meter, 2 0 4 1
Sea Rose, 1311
Shot down from its enskied formation, 1787
Seascape, 1506
Should auld acquaintance be forgot, 753
Sea Similized to Meadows and Pastures, The: the Should I get married? Should I be good?, 1807
Mariners, to Shepherds: the Mast, to a May-Pole:
Shout, The, 2022
the Fish, to Beasts, 499
Show me, dear Christ, thy spouse so bright and
Season of mists and mellow fruitfulness, 939
clear, 320
Seasons, The, 649
Shroud, 1628
Sea Violet, 1312
Shut in from all the world without, 958

Second Coming, The, 1196
Shut, shut the door, good John! (fatigued, I said),
Second Fig, 1382
626
Seeger, Pete, 1853
Sick Rose, The, 742
See! Here, My Heart, 86
Side by side, their faces blurred, 1650
See how they hurry, 1976
Sidney, Mary, 225
See the chariot at hand here of Love, 334
Sidney, Sir Philip, 208
See with what simplicity, 481
Sigh No More, 274
Self-Portrait, 1803
Silently my wife walks on the still wet furze, 1532
Self-Protection, 1288
Silent Noon, 1106
I N D E X / 2 1 7 3
Silent One, The, 1372
So Cruel Prison, 139
Silken Tent, The, 1241
Softly, in the dusk, a woman is singing to me, 1285
Silver Swan, The, 121
Soho Hospital for Women, The, 1851
Simic, Charles, 1891
So I would hear out those lungs, 1663
Simple Truth, The, 1783

Soldier, The, 1327

Simply by sailing in a new direction, 1528

Soliloquy of the Spanish Cloister, 1010

Since brass, nor stone, nor earth, nor boundless

Solitary Reaper, The, 803

sea, 263

Some are plain lucky—we ourselves among them,

since feeling is first, 1394

1831

Since I am coming to that holy room, 322

Some days, although we cannot pray, a prayer,

Since laws were made, for every degree, 596

2007

Since 1619, 1576

Some days in May, little stars, 1914

Since there's no help, come let us kiss and part,

Some men never think of it, 1948

238

Someone said my name in the garden, 2013

Sing, cuccu, nu. Sing, cuccu, 15

Some say that love's a little boy, 1470

Sing lullaby, as women do, 145

Some that have deeper digged love's mine than I,

Sin (I), 369

303

Sir Patrick Spens, 103

Some things that fly there be-, 1110

Sissman, L. E., 1766

Some things we do take up a lot more time, 1739
Sisters, The, 1436
Something there is that doesn't love a wall, 1227
Sith Cynthia is ascended to that rest, 284
Sometime During Eternity ... , 1606
Sitting between the sea and the buildings, 1736
somewhere i have never travelled, gladly beyond,
Skeltonic verse, 2047
1395
Skelton, John, 90
so much depends, 1274
Skimming lightly, wheeling still, 1055
Song, A ("Ask me no more where Jove bestows"—
Skin Full, 2015
Carew), 385
Skirting the river road, (my forenoon walk, my *Song*
Bewailing the Time of Christmas, So Much rest,), 1078
Decayed in England, A, 122
Skunk, The, 1902
Song for a Dark Girl, 1432
Skunk Cabbage, 1926
Song for St. Cecilia's Day, A, 524
Skunk Hour, 1601
Song for the Last Act, 1408
Slave Trade, The, 709
Song ("Go and catch a falling star"—Donne), 294
Sled Burial, Dream Ceremony, 1664
Song ("Go, lovely rose!"—Waller), 393

Sleepless as Prospero back in his bedroom, 2000
Song (“How strongly does my passion flow”—
Sleep-walking vapor, like a visitant ghost, 1671
Behn), 545
Slim in Atlanta, 1426
Song (“How sweet I roam’d from field to field”—
Slowly the poison the whole blood stream fills,
Blake), 732
1464
Song (“Love a child is ever crying”—Wroth), 350
Slow, Slow, Fresh Fount, 344
Song (“Love in fantastic triumph sat”—Behn), 540
Slumber Did My Spirit Seal, A, 790
Song: Love Lives Beyond the Tomb, 894
Smart, Christopher, 678
Song (“Love what art thou? A vain thought”—
Smiling Mouth, The, 77
Wroth), 353
Smith, Charlotte, 711
Song (“My heart, my dove, my snail, my sail, my”—
Smith, Stevie, 1439
Zarin), 2104
Smoke, 1046
Song of a Young Lady to Her Ancient Lover, A, 553
Smokehouse, The, 1950
Song of Hiawatha, The, 954
Snake (Lawrence), 1286
Song of Myself, 1060

Snakes (Ramanujan), 1801
Songs and Ballads, 745
Snapshots of a Daughter-in-Law, 1791
Songs of Experience, 740
Snap tempered tooth chips, 1956
Songs of Innocence, 733
Snodgrass, W. D., 1731
Song (“Sweetest love, I do not go”—Donne), 298
Snowbound: A Winter Idyl, 958
Song (“The first month of his absence”—Lewis),
Snow-Flakes, 956
1574
Snowflake Which Is Now and Hence Forever, The, Song: To Celia (I), 331
1382
Song: To Celia (II), 331
Snow Man, The, 1256
Song to David, A, 680
Snow on a Mountain, 1883
Song. To My Inconstant Mistress, 387
Snow-Storm, The, 942
Song (“When I am dead, my dearest”—C. Rossetti), 1128
Snub-nosed, bone-fingered, deft with engraving *Song* (“Why so pale and wan, fond lover?”—Suck-tools, 1673
ling), 452
Snyder, Gary, 1816
Song: Woo’d and Married and A’, 762

2174 / INDEX

sonnet, 2042

Starfish, 1925

Sonnet (Brooke), 1324

Star-gazer, 1490

Sonnet (Gray), 673

Stasis in darkness, 1842

Sonnet, A (D. G. Rossetti), 1106

Station Island, 1903

Sonnet of Black Beauty, 346

Steal Away to Jesus, 1058

sonnet sequence, 2044

Steeple-Jack, The, 1331

Sonnets from the Portuguese, 947

Stein, Gertrude, 1248

Sonnets (Shakespeare), 257

Stella's Birthday, 570

Sonnets, Third Series (Tuckerman), 1086

Stella, since thou so right a princess art, 220

Sonnet—To Science, 975

Stella, think not that I by verse seek fame, 220

Sonnet to the Noble Lady, the Lady Mary Wroth, A,

Stevenson, Anne, 1847

344

Stevens, Wallace, 1256

Sonnet II (Suckling), 452

Stickney, Trumbull, 1250

Son of the Ocean isle!, 897

Still Life, 1671
Soonest Mended, 1737
Still to Be Neat, 341
Sooty Season, The, 137
Stolen Child, The, 1188
So there stood Matthew Arnold and this girl, 1668
Stop all the clocks, cut off the telephone, 1470
Sorting out letters and piles of my old, 1734
Stopping by Woods on a Snowy Evening, 1237
Sort of a Song, A, 1276
Stories of Snow, 1583
So. The Spear-Danes in days gone by, 2
Strand, Mark, 1863
Soto, Gary, 1996
Strange Meeting, 1389
Soul's joy, bend not those morning stars from me,
Strange Metamorphosis of Poets, 1626
216
Strange power of song! the strain that warms the
sound -poetry, 205 1
heart, 709
Soup, The, 1996
Strange room, from this angle, 1851
Southwell, Robert, 223
Strange Type, 1504
So We'll Go No More A-Roving, 836
Strawberries (Morgan), 1618
So we must say Goodbye, my darling, 1575

Straws like tame lightnings lie about the grass,
Soyinka, Wole, 1862
1508
Spain 1937, 1466
Streaked and fretted with effort, the thick, 1914
Spare, gen'rous victor, spare the slave, 567
Street, The, 1914
Speak, 1750
subject, 2055
Specially for me, she had some breaded, 1802
subordinate clause, 2057
Spender, Stephen, 1505
Success is counted sweetest, 1111
Spenser, Edmund, 159
Suckling, Sir John, 452
Spenserian sonnet, 2 0 4 3
Sudden Light, 1105
Spenserian stanza, 2042
suffixes, 2054
Spies, you are lights in state, but of base stuff, 324
Summer Farm, 1508
spirituals, 1057
Summer is late, my heart, 1455
Spleen, The (Finch), 558
Summer's Last Will, 282
Spleen, The (Green), 645
Summer's Night, A, 1222
Split the Lark—and you'll find the Music—, 1124

Sumptuous Destitution, 1969
spondaic meter, 2031
Sunday Afternoons, 1951
Sports and gallantries, the stage, the arts, the *Sunday Morning*,
1257
antics of dancers, 1321
Sunday shuts down on this twentieth-century eve-
Sprawl is the quality, 1888
ning, 1537
Spring, The (Carew), 386
Sundays too my father got up early, 1533
Spring (Millay), 1383
Sunlight on the Garden, The, 1485
Spring and Fall, 1168
Sun Rising, The, 295
Spring is like a perhaps hand, 1393
Sunset and evening star, 1008
Spring, the sweet spring, is the year's pleasant king,
Sun Underfoot Among the Sundews, The, 1613
282
Supermarket in California, A, 1713
sprung rhythm, 2034
Supernatural Love, 2003
Squarings, 1909
Surface, The, 1979
Stand close around, ye Stygian set, 832
Surprised by Joy, 804
Standing aloof in giant ignorance, 906

Swan, *The*, 1830
Stand Whoso List, 134
Swan and Shadow, 1775
stanza, 2040
Swear by what the sages spoke, 1208
Stanzas (Byron), 862
Sweet Auburn! loveliest village of the plain, 686
Stanzas (Smith), 713
Sweet day, so cool, so calm, so bright, 375
Stanzas in Meditation, 1248
Sweet Echo, sweetest nymph, that liv'st unseen,
Stanzas Written in Dejection, Near Naples, 870
415

I N D E X / 2 1 7 5

Sweet Nosegay, A, 146
The, 1930
Swenson, May, 1540
The airport coffee tastes less of America, 1822
Swift, Jonathan, 568
The annals say: when the monks of Clonmacnoise,
Swimmers, The, 1419
1909
Swinburne, Algernon Charles, 1146
The apparition of these faces in the crowd, 1297
syllabic meter, 2035
The archivist in us shudders at such cold-, 1990
syllables, 2035
The art of losing isn't hard to master, 1527

syllables, **2028**

The Assyrian came down like the wolf on the fold,

Sympathy, 1224

834

Sympathy, A Welcome, A, 1547

The awful shadow of some unseen Power, 864

Syrinx, 1614

The bed we loved in was a spinning world, 2008

The Bible is an antique Volume-, 1127

Tables Turned, The, 764

The Bishop tells us: "When the boys come back,

Table Talk, 1267

1318

Tahoe in August, 1919

The blasts of Autumn as they scatter round, 712

Take, Oh, Take Those Lips Away, 345

The blessed damozel leaned out, 1102

Talking in Bed, 1654

The blue jay scuffling in the bushes follows, 1768

Tam O'Shanter, 754

The boy stood on the burning deck, 899

Task, The, 697

The breaking waves dashed high, 898

Tate, Allen, 1417

The bride she is winsome and bonny, 762

Taylor, Edward, 536

The broken pillar of the wing jags from the clotted

Teach me, my God and King, 383

shoulder, 1321

Tear, The (Crashaw), 468

The burned and dusty garden said, 1251

Tear (Kinsella), 1758

The Bustle in a House, 1126

Tears, idle tears, I know not what they mean, 995

the Cambridge ladies who live in furnished souls,

Telephone Conversation, 1862

1393

Tell all the truth but tell it slant-, 1126

The child between them on the street, 1732

Telling the Bees, 957

The cold remote islands, 1409

Tell me not, sweet, I am unkind, 473

The Colonel in a casual voice, 1622

Tell me, thou gentle shepherd swain, 235

The conversation of prayers about to be said, 1570

Temper, The (I), 372

The cow is of the bovine ilk, 1437

Temple, The: Sacred Poems and Private Ejacula-

The critics say that epics have died out, 948

tions, 367

The crocus armies from the dead, 1836

Temporarily in Oxford, 1847

The curfew tolls the knell of parting day, 669

Tenebrae, 1679

The darkness crumbles away, 1373

Tennyson, Alfred Lord, 982

The demolition crew are petulant, 2015

tercet, 2040

The dog stops barking after Robinson has gone,

“Terence, This Is Stupid S t u f f ... ,” 1177

1560

terza rima, 2040

The doubt of future foes exiles my present joy, 142

tetrameter, 2032

The dowsed coals fume and hiss after your meal,

Thanatopsis, 903

1672

That bony potbellied arrow, wing-pumping along,

The eagle is my power, 1861

1614

Thee for my recitative, 1085

That civilisation may not sink, 1206

The end of everything approaches, 1311

That dream, her eyes like rocks studded the high,

The English are so nice, 1290

1883

The everlasting universe of things, 866

That is no country for old men. The young, 1199

The eyeless labourer in the night, 1577

That kingfisher jewelling upstream, 1510

The eyes open to a cry of pulleys, 1633

That Nature is a Heraclitean Fire and of the comfort

The fairest day that ever yet has shone, 1044

of the Resurrection, 1171

The ferry wades across the kyle. I drive, 1509
That neither fame nor love might wanting be, 324
The first month of his absence, 1574
That night your great guns, unawares, 1157
The fleet astronomer can bore, 374
That note you hold, narrowing and rising, shakes,
The flowers left thick at nightfall in the wood,
1648
1254
That poets are far rarer births than kings, 325
The flower that smiles today, 864
That's my last duchess painted on the wall, 1012
The force that through the green fuse drives the
That there should never be air, 1616
flower, 1566
That the Science of Cartography Is Limited, 1938
The forward youth that would appear, 486
That time of year thou mayst in me behold, 263
The Frost performs its secret ministry, 810
That Whitsun, I was late getting away, 1652
The glories of our blood and state, 390
That would be waving and that would be crying, The grace of
Tullies eloquence doth excell, 1873
1265
The guns spell money's ultimate reason, 1505

2 1 7 6 / I N D E X

The hand that signed the paper felled a city, 1567
There is delight in singing, though none hear, 832

The harbingers are come. See, see their mark, 381

There is my country under glass, 1894

The Heart asks Pleasure - first -, 1120

There is no mirror in Mirissa, 1935

The house was quiet and the world was calm, 1267

There is one story and one story only, 1402

The hunchback in the park, 1568

There lived a wife at Usher's Well, 105

The Hun so loved the cry, one falling elephant's,

There's a certain Slant of light, 1114

1959

There's a Grandfather's Clock in the Hall, 1458

The illustration, 1328

There sat down, once, a thing on Henry's heart,

The instructor said, 1434

1549

Their Lonely Betters, 1479

There's blood between us, love, my love, 1130

Their sense is with their senses all mixed in, 1108

There, there where those black spruces crowd,

The keener tempests come: and, fuming dun, 649

1385

The king sits in Dumferling town, 103

There Was an Old Man in a Tree, 1042

The lake was filled with distinguished fish pur-

There Was an Old Man Who Supposed, 1042

chased, 1617

There Was an Old Man with a Beard, 1041

The land was ours before we were the land's, 1243

There was a roaring in the wind all night, 790

The lights off, the clock glowing 2:10, 1996

There was a shepherd's daughter, 113

The little boy lost in the lonely fen, 737

There was a time when meadow, grove, and

The mad are predators. Too often lately they har-
stream, 796

bour, 1834

There was a young belle of old Natchez, 1437

Them & [uz], 1873

There was Dai Puw. He was no good, 1545

The man whose height his fear improved he, 1588

There was such speed in her little body, 1367

Theme for English B, 1434

There were never strawberries, 1618

The merchant, to secure his treasure, 568

There were three ravens sat on a tree, 101

The middle of the night, she's wide awake, care-

There will be more of this, 1944

fully lying as far away as she can from him, 1870

The roaring alongside he takes for granted, 1518

The miller's wife had waited long, 1214

The room itself. The women. The absence of

The moon is a poor woman, 1645

women, 2010

"The most beautiful girl in the college," 1956

The sea is calm tonight, 1101

The name of the product I tested is Life, 1786
These are the absolute top of the line, 1991
The nightingale, as soon as April bringeth, 211
These are the original monies of the earth, 1627
The night is dewy as a maiden's mouth, 1222
These, in the day when heaven was falling, 1180
Then it was dusk in Illinois, the small boy, 1740
These little limbs, 531
The noble horse with courage in his eye, 1621
These unshaped islands, on the sawyer's bench,
The nurse-life wheat within his green husk grow-
1703
ing, 206
These were my neighbors. It's a big group pose:,
The oaks, how subtle and marine, 1456
2024
The old South Boston Aquarium stands, 1603
The silver swan, who living had no note, 121
Theology, 1813
The skunk cabbage with its smug and opulent
The only legend I have ever loved is, 1941
smell, 1926
The Owl and the Pussy-cat went to sea, 1042
The sky, lazily disdaining to pursue, 1398
The palm at the end of the mind, 1268
The sky unrolls like a rug, 1867
The pear tree that last year, 1684
The smiling mouth and laughing eyen gray, 77

The people along the sand, 1240
The snow came down last night like moths, 1632
The peppertrees, the peppertrees!, 1677
The snow falls deep; the forest lies alone, 894
The petals fall in the fountain, 1296
The soote season, that bud and bloom forth brings,
The plunging limbers over the shattered track,
137
1374
The Soul selects her own Society -, 1118
The price seemed reasonable, location, 1862
The splendor falls on castle walls, 994
The princes of Mercia were badger and raven. The stellar sea
crawler, maw, 1925
Thrall, 1833
The straggled soldier halted—stared at Him—,
The rain of London pimples, 1489
1317
The rain set early in tonight, 1009
The sun is warm, the sky is clear, 870
There are no stars to-night, 1410
The sunlight on the garden, 1485
There are some days the happy ocean lies, 1506
The sunlight was falling. A part, 2024
There comes a moment in her veins, 1270
The tattered Hungarian tent, 1935
There Is a Garden in Her Face, 282
The time is come, I must depart, 146

There Is a Lady Sweet and Kind, 121
The time you won your town the race, 1174
There is a land of pure delight, 590
The trees are coming into leaf, 1656
There is a parrot imitating spring, 1985
The trees are in their autumn beauty, 1192
There is a singer everyone has heard, 1233
The tulips are too excitable, it is winter here, 1838
There is a timbre of voice, 1860
The turtle lives 'twixt plated decks, 1438

I N D E X / 2 1 7 7

The unpurged images of day recede, 1202
This day, whate'er the fates decree, 570
The veteran Greeks came home, 1337
This feast-day of the sun, his altar there, 1107
The vicious winter finally yields, 1733
This house has been far out at sea all night, 1811
The Wain upon the northern steep, 1179
This Is a Photograph of Me, 1894
The waves, like ridges of plow'd land, are high, 499
This Is fust to Say, 1274
The whiskey on your breath, 1494
This is the forest primeval. The murmuring pines
The white violet, 1312
and the hemlocks, 951
The whole place airier. Big summer trees, 1908
This is the month, and this the happy morn, 394
The wind billowing out the seat of my britches,

This is the ship of pearl, which, poets feign, 974
1494

This is the time of year, 1519

The wind doth blow today, my love, 104

This is the world we wanted, 1931

The wind flapped loose, the wind was still, 1105

This Living Hand, 940

The wind suffers of blowing, 1425

This Lime-Tree Bower My Prison, 807

The winters close, Springs open, no child stirs, This morning,
flew up the lane, 1369

1546

This motley piece to you I send, 645

The wisest scholar of the wight most wise, 214

This one was put in a jacket, 1684

The witch that came (the withered hag), 1241

this poem intentionally left blank, 1968

The woods decay, the woods decay and fall, 1006

This poem is concerned with language on a very

The world is, 1678

plain level, 1739

The world is charged with the grandeur of God,

Thomas, Dylan, 1566

1166

Thomas, Edward, 1253

The World Is Too Much with Us, 802

Thomas, R. S., 1544

The worlds are breaking in my head, 1580

Thomson, James, 649

The world's great age begins anew, 892

Thoreau, Henry David, 1045

The wounds are terrible. The paint is old, 1939

Those blessed structures, plot and rhyme—, 1605

The wretched Flavia, on her couch reclined, 639

Those in the vegetable rain retain, 1583

Th' expense of spirit in a waste of shame, 267

Those long uneven lines, 1653

"They," 1318

Those transparent Dacca gauzes, 1958

They Are All Gone into the World of Light!, 494

Those were the days, 1693

They are not long, the weeping and the laughter,

Those Winter Sundays, 1533

1211

Thou art indeed just, Lord, if I contend, 1172

They are waiting for me somewhere beyond Eden

Thou art not, Penshurst, built to envious show,

Rock, 1591

328

They climbed on sketchy ladders towards God, Thou Black,
wherein all colors are compos'd, 346

1681

Thou fair-hair'd angel of the evening, 733

They'd latch the screendoors, 1951

Though authors are a dreadful clan, 1846

The year revolves, and I again explore, 724

Though beauty be the mark of praise, 335
They eat beans mostly, this old yellow pair, 1587
Though I am Young and Cannot Tell, 341
They Feed They Lion, 1761
Though loath to grieve, 943
They Flee from Me, 127
Thought-Fox, The, 1810
They flee from me, that sometime did me seek, 127
Though the unseen may vanish, though insight
They fuck you up, your mum and dad, 1657
fails, 1635
The young, having risen early, had gone, 1832
Thoughts about the Person from Porlock, 1441
They said to my grandmother: “Please do not be
Thou hast made me, and shall thy work decay?,
bitter,” 1428
318
They say the first dream Adam our father had, Thou ill-formed
offspring of my feeble brain, 465
1338
Thou, paw-paw-paw; thou, glurd; thou, spotted,
They serve revolving saucer eyes, 1849
1776
They shut me up in Prose -, 1119
Thousand Martyrs, A, 549
They sing their dearest songs—, 1160
Thou shalt have one God only; who, 1052
They that have power to hurt and will do none,

Thou sorrow, venom elf, 538

265

Thou still unravished bride of quietness, 938

They throw in Drummer Hodge, to rest, 1154

Three Ravens, The, 101

They who in folly or mere greed, 1449

Three Summers since I chose a maid, 1216

They will wash all my kisses and fingerprints off

Three weeks gone and the combatants gone, 1620

you, 1850

Three Years She Grew, 789

Think not this paper comes with vain pretense, 643

Through that pure virgin shrine, 497

Thin little leaves of wood fern, ribbed and toothed,

Throw away thy rod, 382

1086

Thus piteously Love closed what he begat, 1109

Third Epistle to Timothy, 1981

Thy praise or dispraise is to me alike, 324

Thirteen Ways of Looking at a Blackbird, 1260

Thyrsis, 1095

This Be The Verse, 1657

Thy various works, imperial queen, we see, 111

2 1 7 8 / I N D E X

Tichborne, Chidioc, 151

Tonight, grave sir, both my poor house, and I,

Tightly-folded bud, 1648

326

Time Passing, Beloved, 1643
Toomer, Jean, 1398
Timor Mortis, 82
To Penshurst, 328
T i s the year's midnight, and it is the day's, 304
To Robert Browning, 832
'Tis time this heart should be unmoved, 862
To Rosamond, 68
Tithonus, 1006
To see both blended in one flood, 468
Titwillow, 1146
To show the lab'ring bosom's deep intent, 721
To a Chameleon, 1328
To sing of wars, of captains, and of kings, 462
To a Lady: She Refusing to Continue a Dispute with
To Sir Henry Cary, 324
Me, and Leaving Me in the Argument, 567
To Sir Toby, 717
To a Locomotive in Winter, 1085
To S. M., a Young African Painter, on Seeing His
To Althea, from Prison, 472
Works, 721
To Amarantha, That She Would Dishevel Her Hair,
To speak in a flat voice, 17 50
473
To stand here in the wings of Europe, 1622
To a Mouse, 748
To the Evening Star, 733

To an Athlete Dying Young, 1174
To the Fair Clarinda, Who Made Love to Me, Imag-
To a Skylark, 876
ined More Than Woman, 548
To a Steam Roller, 1328
To the Immortal Memory and Friendship of That
To Aunt Rose, 1714
Noble Pair, Sir Lucius Cary and Sir Henry Mor-
To Autumn, 939
ison, 337
To a Waterfowl, 902
To the Infant Martyrs, 468
To be a poet and not know the trade, 1450
To the Lord General Cromwell, 417
To Be Carved on a Stone at Thoor Ballylee, 1198
To the Memory of Mr. Oldham, 523
Toccata of Galuppi's, A, 1017
To the Memory of My Beloved, the Author Mr. Wil-
Today as I hang out the wash I see them again, a
liam Shakespeare, 342
code, 1975
To the Muses, 732
Today I found the right fruit for my prime, 1875
To the Poor, 706
Today I pass the time reading, 1917
To the Reader, 323
Today we have naming of parts. Yesterday, 1564
To the River Duddon, 1561

To Death, 562
To the Same Purpose, 533
To draw no envy, Shakespeare, on thy name, 342
To the shade of Burns, 711
To Elizabeth, Countess of Rutland, 325
To the Sour Reader, 355
To Emily Dickinson, 1416
To the Thrice-Sacred Queen Elizabeth, 226
To Find God, 362
To the Virgins, to Make Much of Time, 357
To fling my arms wide, 1431
To turn a stone, 1881
To Fool or Knave, 324
Touching your goodness, I am like a man, 1608
To have known him, to have loved him, 1057
Touch Me, 1455
To Helen, 975
Tourists, 1660
To him who in the love of Nature holds, 903
To what purpose, April, do you return again?, 1383
To His Conscience, 361
To Wordsworth, 863
To His Coy Mistress, 478
To you, my purs, and to noon other wight, 69
To His Love (anonymous), 119
Traherne, Thomas, 531
To His Love (Gurney), 1371
Train Journey, 1578

To His Scribe Adam, 70
transitive, 2055
To Homer, 906
Trees, The, 1656
To John Donne, 326
Trees in the Garden, 1289
To Juan at the Winter Solstice, 1402
trimeter, 2032
To live in Wales is to be conscious, 1544
Triple Feature, 1678
To Lucasta, Going to the Wars, 473
trochaic meter, 2030
To make a final conquest of all me, 480
Troilus and Cressida (Dryden), 501
To Marguerite, 1088
Troilus and Criseide (Chaucer), 67
To Mercy, Pity, Peace, and Love, 735
Trout, The, 1785
To Mr. Henry Lawes, 527
Truth, 69
To Mr. H. Lawes, *On His Airs*, 416
Truth-loving Persians do not dwell upon, 1402
To Mistress Margaret Hussey, 91
Truth the Dead Know, The, 1764
Tomlinson, Charles, 1746
Ts 'aiChi 'h, 1296
Tommy, 1181
Tuckerman, Frederick Goddard, 1086

Tom o' Bedlam's Song, 124

Tuckett. Bill Tuckett. Telegraph operator, Hall's

To My Dear and Loving Husband, 465

Creek, 1890

To My Excellent Lucasia, on Our Friendship, 530

Tulips, 1838

To My Twenties, 1694

turn, 2042

INDEX / 2179

Turning and turning in the widening gyre, 1196

Valediction Forbidding Mourning, A (Donne), 306

Turtle, The, 1438

Valediction Forbidding Mourning, A (Rich), 1796

Twa Corbies?, The, 102

Valediction of the Book, A, 301

'Twas brillig, and the slithy toves, 1135

Valediction of Weeping, A, 300

'Twas mercy brought me from my pagan land, 720

Valentine, 1948

'Twas on a Holy Thursday, their innocent faces Van Duyn,
Mona, 1629

clean, 734

Vanity of Human Wishes, The, 656

'Twas on a lofty vase's side, 668

Vanity (I), 374

'Twas Summer and the sun was mounted high, 768

Vanity, saith the preacher, vanity!, 1014

Twelve Songs, 1470

Variations Done for Gerald Van De Wiele, 1512

Twilight Polka Dots, 1617

Variations on a Fragment by Trumbull Stickney,

Twirling your blue skirts, travelling the sward,

1777

1368

Variations on a Theme by William Carlos Williams,

Twitched in her belly, or he raised a fist, 1 507

1693

Two Figures, 1862

Vaughan, Henry, 490

Two from Israel, 1884

V. B. Nimble, V. B. Quick, 1846

Two in the Campagna, 1040

Veni Coronaberis, 1836

Two Lorries, 1909

Vergissmeinnicht, 1620

Two loves I have of comfort and despair, 269

verse paragraphs, 2 0 4 0

Two roads diverged in a yellow wood, 1232

Verses on the Death of Dr. Swift, D.S.P.D., 577

Two Songs, 1448

Very, Jones, 1044

Tyger, The, 743

Very few people know where they will die, 1767

Tyger! Tyger! burning bright, 743

Victor Dog, The, 1719

View from the Window, The, 1 544

Ubi Sunt Qui ante Nos Fuerunt?, 16
Vigil Strange I Kept on the Field One Night, 1071
Ulcerated tooth keeps me awake, there is, 1629
villanelle, 2045
Ultima Ratio Regum, 1505
Vine, The, 354
Ulysses, 992
Virtue, 375
Ulysses and the Siren, 233
Vision upon the Fairy Queen, A, 151
Under Ben Bulben, 1208
Vitae summa brevis spem nos vetat incohare longam,
Under the bronze crown, 1635
1211
Under the Greenwood Tree, 273
Vita Nova, 1932
Under the separated leaves of shade, 1556
Voice, The, **1160**
Under the Waterfall, 1159
vowel rhyme, 2038
Undesirable you may have been, untouchable, *Voyages*, 1411
1832
Unfortunate Coincidence, 1391
wade, 1328
Unhappy pen and ill accepted papers, 233
Wake! For the Sun, who scattered into flight, 961
Universal Prayer, The, 635
Wake: the silver dusk returning, 1173

Unjustly I've imposed upon my friends, 2024
Waking, The, 1 500
Unquiet Grave, The, 104
Waking from a nap, 1502
Unreal tall as a myth, 1447
Waking from Sleep, 1704
Unto the boundless Ocean of thy beauty, 230
Walcott, Derek, 1820
Up, 1898
Walker, Margaret, 1576
Up, black, striped and damasked like the chasuble,
Walking with you and another lady, 1902
1902
Walk the horses down the hill, 1560
Updike, John, 1846
Waller, Edmund, 393
Up from the bronze, I saw, 1408
Walls Do Not Fall, The, 1315
Up-Hill, 1129
War is Kind, 1221
Upon a Child That Died, 358
Warming Her Pearls, 2007
Upon a Spider Catching a Fly, 538
Warning to Children, 1401
Upon a time, before the faery broods, 918
War Poet, 1647
Upon Ben Jonson, 360
Warren, Robert Penn, 1456

Upon Julia's Breasts, 358
Waste Land, The, 1344
Upon Julia's Clothes, 359
Watch Repair, 1891
*Upon My Lady Carlisle's Walking in Hampton Court
Water*, 1602
Garden, 453
Waterbird, 1542
Upon Prue, His Maid, 360
Waterfall, The, 496
Upon the Infant Martyrs, 468
Watts, Isaac, 589
Upon Wedlock, and Death of Children, 537
Waving Adieu, Adieu, Adieu, 126 5
Up! Up! My Friend, and quit your books, 764
Way a Ghost Dissolves, The, 1674
Urania, 353
Way Down South in Dixie, 1432
2 1 8 0 / I N D E X
We are the hollow men, 1356
What the Men Talk About When the Women Leave
We are things of dry hours and the involuntary plan,
the Room, 2010
1586
What the Spider Heard, 1559
Weary Blues, The, 1429
What though they conquer us?, 1270
Weather-Cock Points South, The, 1248

What thoughts I have of you tonight, Walt Whit-
Weeps out of western country something new, 1586
man, for I walked down the sidestreets under the
Weep You No More, Sad Fountains, 120
trees with a headache self-conscious looking at
Wee, sleeket, cow'rin, tim'rous beastie, 748
the full moon, 1713
We finished clearing the last, 1816
What was he doing, the great god Pan, 950
We have sat here in too many poetry readings,
Wheatley, Phillis, 719
1993
When all the others were away at Mass, 1905
Weigh me the fire; or canst thou find, 362
When a man hath no freedom to fight for at home,
We lay red roses on his grave, 1536
862
Welcome, Major Poet!, 1993
Whenas in silks my Julia goes, 359
Well! If the bard was weather-wise, who made, 828
When beauty breaks and falls asunder, 1407
Well then; I now do plainly see, 470
When by thy scorn, O murd'ress, I am dead, 295
Well, they are gone, and here must I remain, 807
When chapman billies leave the street, 754
Welsh Landscape, 1544
When Daisies Pied, XII
We met the British in the dead of winter, 1980

“Whenever I plunge my arm, like this, 11 59
We must look at the harebell as if, 1380
Whenever Richard Cory went down town, 1212
We passengers ride backward on the train, 2023
When first thou didst entice to thee my heart, 369
We put a prop beneath the sagging bough, 1504
When for the thorns with which I long, too long,
We Real Cool, 1 588
475
Were beth they biforen us weren, 16
When forty winters shall besiege thy brow, 258
Were I laid on Greenland’s coast, 595
When God at first made man, 379
We sat together at one summer’s end, 1190
When His Excellency Prince Norodom Chantar-
We shall sleep-out together through the dark, 1748
aingsey, 1961
Wesley, Charles, 652
When I a verse shall make, 358
Western Wind, 84
When I consider everything that grows, 259
We stood by a pond that winter day, 1153
When I Consider How My Light Is Spent, 418
West-Running Brook, 1238
When I do count the clock that tells the time, 258
We watched from the house, 2006
When I Have Fears, 906
We Wear the Mask, 1223

When I Heard the Leant 'd Astronomer, 1071

We went out, 2022

When I lie where shades of darkness, 1226

When that April with his showres soote, 19

When, in disgrace with fortune and men's eyes, 260

What are we first? First, animals; and next, 1108

When in the chronicle of wasted time, 265

What Are Years?, 1334

When in the sun the hot red acres smoulder, 1436

What art thou, Spleen, which ev'ry thing dost ape?,

When I see birches bend to left and right, 1233

558

When Israel came from Egypt's coast, 685

What bright soft thing is this?, 468

When Israel did depart th'Egyptians from among,

What can it avail, 92

392

What dire offense from amorous causes springs, When Isr'el,
freed from Pharaoh's hand, 593

604

When I was a child I new red miners, 1 577

What Friendship is, Ardelia show, 563

When I Was Fair and Young, 142

What happens to a dream deferred?, 1433

When I Watch the Living Meet, 1174

What, have I thus betrayed my liberty?, 215

When Learning's triumph o'er her barbarous foes,

What heartache—ne'er a hill!, 1162

655

What is Africa to me, 1443

When Lilacs Last in the Dooryard Bloom'd, 1078

What is it men in women do require?, 746

When Lovely Woman Stoops to Folly, 686

What is our innocence, 1334

When Love with unconfined wings, 472

What large, dark hands are those at the window,

When men shall find thy flower, thy glory pass,

1284

231

What Length of Verse?, 210

When midnight comes a host of dogs and men, 893

What needs my Shakespeare for his honored bones,

When my devotions could not pierce, 374

401

When my grave is broke up again, 310

What on Earth deserves our trust?, 526

When my love swears that she is made of truth,

What passing-bells for these who die as cattle?,

268

1386

When night's black mantle could most darkness

What's Going On, 2015

prove, 347

What Should I Say, 132

When science starts to be interpretive, 1288

What should one, 1746

When she tells him about the lump in her breast,
What summer proposes is simply happiness, 1919
2009

I N D E X / 2 1 8 1

When That I Was and a Little Tiny Boy, 276

Whoever You Are, 1745

When the fierce north wind with his airy forces,
Who has ever stopped to think of the divinity of
589

Lamont Cranston?, 1856

When the hounds of spring are on winter's traces,
Who owns these scrawny little feet? Death, 1813
1146

Who says that fictions only and false hair, 373

When the Lease Is Up, 1 560

Whose broken window is a cry of art, 1 589

When the Present has latched its postern behind

Whose is this horrifying face, 1581

my tremulous stay, 1162

Whose senses in so evil consort, their stepdame

When they were wild, 2006

Nature lays, 219

When Thou Must Home, 280

Whose woods these are I think I know, 1237

When thou, poor excommunicate, 387

Who shall doubt, Donne, where I a poet be, 326

When to Her Lute Corinna Sings, 280

Whoso List to Hunt, 126

When to the sessions of sweet silent thought, 261
Who will in fairest book of Nature know, 217
When we for age could neither read nor write, Who will
remember, passing through this Gate, 393
1320
When We Two Parted, 835
Why, asks a friend, attempt tetrameter?, 1995
When You Are Old, 1190
Why Brownlee Left, 1979
When you come, as you soon must, to the streets of
Why don't people leave off being lovable, 1288
our city, 1637
Why I Am Not a Painter, 1730
When you consider the radiance, that it does not
Why is my verse so barren of new pride, 264
withhold, 1698
Why should I blame her that she filled my days,
Where are the War Poets?, 1449
1191
Where dips the rocky highland, 1188
Why so pale and wan, fond lover?, 452
Where dost thou careless lie, 336
why we ask you not to touch, 1968
Where has tenderness gone, he asked the mirror,
“Why, William, on that old gray stone, 763
1503
Wife of Bath's Prologue and Tale, The, 39
Where Have All the Flowers Gone?, 1853

Wife of Usher's Well, The, 105
Where, like a pillow on a bed, 307
Wife's Lament, The, II
Where she lived the close remained the best, 1674
Wilbur, Richard, 1632
Where the Bee Sucks, There Suck I, 277
Wild Bees, 1701
Where the remote Bermudas ride, 476
Wild Cherry, The, 1 504
Where they will bury me, 1847
Wild nights - Wild nights!, 1114
Whether on Ida's shady brow, 732
Wild Swans at Coole, The, 1192
Which I wish to say is this, 1249
Willed down, waited for, in place at last and for
While my hair was still cut straight across my fore-
good, 1907
head, 1297
Williams, C. K., 1869
While the south rains, the north, 1664
Williams, William Carlos, 1272
While this America settles in the mold of its vul-
Williamson, Greg, 2023
garity, heavily thickening to empire, 1320
Will it last? he says, 1382
While you walk the water's edge, 1609
Will there be time for egg-nogs and eclogues, 1559
White as the sacrament, in my grandmother's house

Wilmot, John, Earl of Rochester, 549
the mantles, 1946
Wilner, Eleanor, 1879
White Goddess, The, 1404
Wilt thou forgive that sin where I begun, 321
White-habited, the mystic Swan, 1830
Wind, 1811
White Island, or Place of the Blest, The, 361
Windhover, The, 1166
White Knight's Song, The, 1137
Window, The (Mahon), 1923
White sky, over the hemlocks bowed with snow,
Windows, The (G. Herbert), 373
1384
Wind Suffers, The, 1425
White the October air, no snow, easy to breathe,
Wine Bowl, 1313
1729
Winters at home brought wind, 1887
Whither, 'midst falling dew, 902
Winter uncovers distances, I find, 1270
Whitman, Walt, 1060
Wintry Mind, The, 1270
Whitney, Isabella, 146
Wish, The, 470
Whitsun Weddings, The, 1652
Wish for a Young Wife, 1501
Whittier, John Greenleaf, 957

With blackest moss the flower-plots, 982

who are you, little i, 1397

With how sad steps, Oh Moon, thou climb'st the

Who decrees a great epoch? The meridian of Green-
skies, 214

wich, 1827

With my forked branch of Lebanese cedar, 1619

Who died on the wires, and hung there, one of With old hours
all belfry heads, 1426

two—, 1372

With Rue My Heart Is Laden, 1177

Whoever comes to shroud me, do not harm, 309

With what deep murmurs through time's silent

Whoever hath her wish, thou hast thy *Will*, 268
stealth, 496

2 1 8 2 / I N D E X

Woman much missed, how you call to me, call to

Yes, I remember Adlestrop—, 1253

me, 1160

Yesterday all the past. The language of size, 1466

Woman's Constancy, 294

Yet Do I Marvel, 1446

Woman to Man, 1577

Yet is there hope: then Love but play thy part, 347

Wonder, 532

Yet once more, O ye laurels and once more, 410

Wood-Pile, The, 1232

Ye tradefull Merchants that with weary toyle, 191

Woodspurge, The, 1105

Yet there is no great problem in the world to-day,

Word over all, beautiful as the sky, 1078

1376

Word's gane to the kitchen, 108

You are my secret coat. You're never dry, 1992

Wordsworth, William, 763

You are the bread and the knife, 1918

World, The (Creeley), 1706

You Begin, 1896

World, The (Vaughan), 493

You Can Have It, 1761

World Where News Travelled Slowly, A, 2016

You did not come, 1154

Wouldst thou hear what man can say, 328

You do not do, you do not do, 1840

Would you believe, when you this monsieur see,

You little stars that live in skies, 206

325

You love us when we're heroes, home on leave, 1319

Wright, Charles, 1865

You must not wonder, though you think it strange,

Wright, James, 1749

144

Wright, Judith, 1577

You, once a belle in Shreveport, 1791

Wright, Kit, 1946

Your absence has gone through me, 1744

Wright, Richard, 1502

Your ashes will not stir, even on this high ground,

Written after Swimming from Sestos to Abydos, 833

1921

Written in October, 712

Your endless torments that my rest oppress, 348

Written in the Church Yard at Middleton in Sussex,

Your footprints of light on sensitive paper, 1800

711

Your hands lie open in the long fresh grass—, 1106

Written Near a Port on a Dark Evening, 112

Your mind and you are our Sargasso Sea, 1295

Wyatt, Thomas, 126

Your thighs are appletrees, 1273

Wyatt Resteth Here, 138

Your words my friend (right healthful caustics)

Wroth, Mary, 347

blame, 214

Wylie, Elinor, 1310

You saved me, you should remember me, 1932

Youth's the season made for joys, 595

Yachts, The, 1275

you've seen a strawberry, 1334

Years and years ago, these sounds took sides, 1906

You wake up filled with dread, 1898

Yeats, William Butler, 1188

You were the one for skylights. I opposed, 1908

Ye congregation of the tribes, 684

You Were Wearing, 1692

Ye distant spires, ye antique towers, 666

You who desired so much—in vain to ask—, 1416

Ye flowery banks o' bonie Doon, 759

You would think the fury of aerial bombardment,

Ye Goatherd Gods, 208

1450

Ye learned sisters which have oftentimes, 195

Yves Tanguy, 1580

Ye living lamps, by whose dear light, 483

Yes, crazy to suppose one could describe them—,

Zarin, Cynthia, 2013

1913

Z ea, 1640

Yes, injured Woman! rise, assert thy right!, 705

zeugma, 205 3

Yes! in the sea of life enisled, 1088

Zulu Girl, The, 1436